

VIVAT

REGINA

THE  
ANNALES OF  
ENGLAND.

Faithfully collected out of  
the most autenticall Authors, Re-  
cords, and, other Monuments of  
Antiquitie, lately corrected, encrea-  
sed, and continued, from the first in-  
habitation vntill this present  
yeere 1601.

A circular ink stamp from the Biblioteca de la Academia de la Historia in Madrid. The text "BIBLIOTECA DE LA ACADEMIA DE LA HISTORIA" is arranged in a circle around the center. In the middle, the word "MADRID" is printed.

JOHN STOVV citizen  
of London

Printed at London by  
R. Ralfe Newbery.

**Cum privilegio Regiæ maiestatis.**

EDWARDVS. iiii.

REX-ANGL

ET FRAN.





2176:91

TO THE RIGHT REVEREND  
FATHER IN GOD MY LORD ARCH-  
BISHOP OF CANTERBVRIE, PRIMATE AND ME-  
TROPOLITANE OF AL ENGLAND, AND ONE OF  
her Maiesties most honorable priuie Councell,

IOHN STOVV wisheth increase as well of  
*all beaunty graces, as worldly  
blessings.*



IT IS NOW NIGH FORTY  
yeeres (Right reuerend Father)  
since I first addressed al my cares  
and cogitations to the studie of  
Histories and search of Antiqui-  
ties: the greatest part of which  
time I haue diligently imploied  
in collecting such matters of this  
kingdome, as I thought most  
woorthie to be recommended

both to the present and succeeding age. These laborious  
collections in so long a time haue now at length grown in-  
to a large volume, which I was willing to haue committed  
to the presse, had not the Printer, for some priuate re-  
spects, been more desirous to publish Annales at this pre-  
sent. Wherein I haue condescended to him to publish  
these, which I submit to your gracious and graue conside-  
ration, and to the censure of the courteous Reader and  
learned Antiquaries: relying wholly vpon this comfort,  
that the truth and credit of my Authors is in no point in-  
iured, how simple and naked soeuer the stile may be iud-  
ged. Neither doe I doubt but they may haue free passage  
in the world, if they be countenanced vnder your honora-

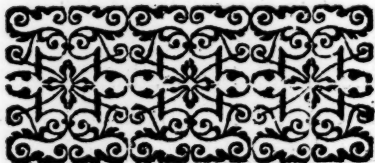


14  
THE EPISTLE DEDICATORIE.

ble name and protection. Vnto whom I offer, and with al dutifull affection I dedicate both my selfe and them: being hereunto induced, both for that your woorthy predecessor, and my especiall benefactor Archbishop PARKER animated me in the course of these studies, which otherwise I had long since discontinued; and also that your great loue and entire affection to all good letters in generall, and to the Antiquities in particular hath beene so singular, that all which like and loue good studies, doe iustly esteeme you their principall and gracious patrone.

Thus hoping of your fauourable acceptance of this,  
as but part of that which I intended in a  
more large volume, I humbly  
take my leaue.

London this 24. of Nouember 1600.





# To the gentle Reader.



*Amongst other Bookes which are in this our learned age published in great numbers, there are few, either for the honestie of the matter, or commoditie which they bring to the Commonwealth, or for the pleasantnes of the study & reading, to be preferred before the Chronicles and Histories. What examples of men deserving immortallitie, of exploits woorthy great renowne, of viciuous liuing of the posteritie to be imbraced, of wise handling of weightie affaires, diligently to be marked and aptly to bee applied: what encouragement of Nobilitie to noble feates, what discouragement*

*of vnnatural subjects from wicked treasons, pernicious rebellions, and damnable doctrines: to conclude, what perswasion to honestie, godlines and vertue of all sorts, what dissuasion from the contrarie is not plentifully in them to bee found? So that it is as hard a matter for the Readers of Chronicles, in my fantasie, to passe without some colours of wisdome, inuitements to vertue, and loathing of naughty facts, as it is for a well fauoured man to walke vp and downe in the hote parching sunne, and not to be therewith sun-burned. They therefore which with long studie, earnest good will, and to their great costs and charges haue brought hidden Histories from duskie darkenesse to the sight of the world, and haue bene diligent obseruers of Commonwealths, and noted for the posteritie the fleeting maners of the people, and accidents of the times: deserue (at the least) thanks for their paines, and to be misreported of none, seeing they haue laboured for all. I write not this to complaine of some mens ingratitude towards me (although iustly I might) but to shew the commodities which ensue of the reading of Histories, that seeing they are so great and so many, all men would (as they ought) employ their diligence in the honest, fruitfull, and delectable perusing of the same, and so to account of the Authors, as of men carefull for their Countrie: and to confesse, if neede require, by whome they haue taken profite.*

*Note that the vngratefull back-biter slayeth three at once, himselfe by his owne malice, him that crediteth his false tales, and him that he backbiteth.*

*It is nowenigh forty yeeeres since (I seeing the confuse order of our late English Chronicles, and the ignorant handling of ancient affaires) leauing mine owne peculiar gaines, consecrated my selfe to the search of our famous Antiquities. What I haue done in them before time, the former editions of my Summarie, and other my Chronicles, as also of other mens, wherein I haue bestowed no small labours, may well testifie, but how farre (be it spoken without arrogancie) I haue laboured for the truth more than some other, this last edition (an abstract of a farre larger worke which I haue gathered, and meant to haue published) will evidently declare. Wherein, that I differ from the inordinate and unskilfull collections of other men, it is no matter well, seeing that I do not fully agree with my selfe, as some malicious persons haue fondly.*

## The Preface to the Reader.

fondly charged me: but let it be considered, that there is nothing perfect at the first, and that it is incident to mankind to erre and slippe some times, but onely the point of fantastickall fooles, to perseuer and continue in their errors. Wherefore, seeing that the perusing of ancient Records and best approoued Histories of all times (not without great difficultie obtained) doe not onely mooue me, but for their authority drine me to acknowledge both mine and other mens errors, and in acknowledging to correct them, I trust to obtaine thus much at your hands, that at the least you will call to remembrance a most gentle and wise lawe of the politike Persians, wherein it was enacted, that a man accused to be in their lawes a trespasser, and found guilty of the crime, should not straightway be condemned, but after a diligent inquirie and search of his whole life and conuersation (no slander imputed unto him as of importance), if the number of his laudable facts did counteruaile the contrarie, he was full quit of the trespassse. The same law doe I wish the Readers of these my Chronicles to put in re, that if the errors be not so plentifull, as Histories truly alleadged, they will beare with them: for as I promised, so haue I tried all matters woorthy of immortallitie, by the certaine touchstone of best allowed Historiographers: and yet notwithstanding, some faults by misprinting haue escaped the correction, which easily may be seene and amended by the diligent Reader.



# Authors out of whom these Annales are collected.

**A**bra Floratenfis.  
Abraham Hartwell.  
Abraham Ortelius.  
Adam Bremenfis.  
Adam Merymouth.  
Aethicus.  
Alfridus Beuteracenfis.  
Alfridus Rualenfis.  
Andreas Theuit.  
Alexander Neckham.  
Alexander Euellham.  
Amianus Marcellinus.  
Antonius Archiepifcopus.  
Antiquitates Britan. ecclef.  
Antiquitates Glafconie.  
Antiquitates Calenda Bristow.  
Antiquitates S. Pauli London.  
Annales de Hede.  
Annales El en fis.  
Annales de Aquitania.  
Andrew borde.  
Anthony Afcham.  
Anthony Anthonie.  
Arnolds Chronicle.  
Arbor Succelforua.  
Asterius Menautenfis.  
Aurea Hiftoria.  
Baptifta Platina.  
Beda de gefis Anglorum.  
Blondus.  
Brute Bonke.  
Canterburie Records.  
C.rodacus Lancuanenfis.  
Celars Commentaries.  
Capitolinus.  
Cato Regia.  
Chro acadie Dorobernia.  
Chronica Chronicorum.  
Chronica de Burgo S. Petri.  
Chronica de Dunstable.  
Chronica de Wigmore.  
Chronica de Bury.  
Chronica de Dunmow.  
Chronica de Eaton.  
Chronica de Tewkesbury.  
Chronica Glafconie.  
Chronica de Eoufham.  
Chronica de Tintern.  
Chronica de Tinnmouth.  
Chronica Petri Colleg.  
Chronica Bristow.  
Chronica Croxon.  
Chronica de Colchefter.  
Chroniques de Normandis.  
Chroniques de Britanie.  
Chronica Colleg. Reg. a Oxon.  
Chronica de Hantenprice.  
Chronica de Holland.  
Chronica de Bromholme.  
Chronica S. Abani.  
Conradus Mendensap.  
Cornelius Tacitus.  
Cornelius Martius.

Conftitutiones de London.  
Dion Cafius.  
Dorotheus.  
Edmond Haddenham.  
Edmond Hamden.  
Edmurus Dorobernenfis.  
Enguerant.  
Encomium Emmae.  
Epifto'a Bonifacij.  
Eufebius.  
Eutropius.  
Eulogium.  
Eneas Siluius.  
Erasmus Roterdam.  
Edward Hall.  
Edmond Campion.  
Freculphus.  
Fortunatus Prifca.  
Floriacenfis Wigornenfis, and  
Flores H. Floriarum, I haue caufed to  
be Printed.  
Flaccus Albinus.  
French Pamphlet.  
Francu Guiccardine.  
Galfridus Monemutacenfis.  
Galfridus Pinfalfe.  
Galfridus Parerius.  
Gervasius Dorobernenfis.  
Gervasius de Mappa mundi.  
Gervasius Tib. rienfis.  
Gesta Aubain Albani.  
Gildar Sapient.  
Giraldus Cambrenfis.  
Giraldus Cornubienfis.  
Guilhelmus Molmeburienfis.  
Guilhelmus Nouoburgenfis.  
Guilhelmus Thiorie.  
Guilhelmus Conuentrenfis.  
Guilhelmus Riffanger.  
Guilhelmus Bihole.  
Guilhelmus Lambart.  
Guilhelmus Camden.  
Guilhelmus Swinbroke.  
Guilhelmus Hemingford.  
Guilhelmus Gemticenfis.  
Guilhelmus Tailor.  
Guilhelmus Paffon.  
Guilhelmus Shepshed.  
Guilhelmus Baker.  
Guilhelmus Dunthorn.  
Georgius Lilus.  
Georgius Caundisb.  
Guilhelmus Packington.  
Geoffrey Chaucer.  
Gocelinus Moni Berrin.  
George Maior.  
Guilhelmus de W. lulum.  
Guilbertus Haddon.  
Hirodon.  
Henricus Hurr ngdonenfis.  
Henricus Kington Leccitrenfis.  
Henricus Blandford.  
Heftor Beccinus.

Historie of Lois duke of Orleans.  
Hugo de Peterboron.  
Hunfrey Lhuid.  
Henry Bradshaw.  
Henry Archer.  
Iacobus Bergomas.  
Iacobus Laffabous.  
Ingulphus.  
Iohannes Salifburienfis.  
Iohannes Hannile.  
Iofephus.  
Iohannes de Vigney.  
John le Tylour.  
Iohannes Beuer.  
Iohannes Rowland.  
Iohannes Mandemis.  
Iufine.  
Iohannes Roufe.  
Iohannes Maior.  
Iohannes Bale.  
Iohannes Fordon.  
Iohannes Capgrau.  
Iocelinus de Brakelawd.  
Iocelinus Furnenfis.  
Iohannes Leilandus.  
Iohannes Leonffer.  
Iohannes Taxior.  
Iohannes P. ke.  
Iohannes Beuteracenfis.  
Iohannes Euerfden.  
Iohannes Blackman.  
Iohannes Truklow.  
Iohannes Lewenclaj.  
Iohannes Prington.  
Iohannes Brompton.  
Iohn Currar.  
Iohn Vowell.  
Iohannes Frumentarius alias W. baag.  
hamsted.  
Iohn of London.  
Iohannes Gower.  
Iohannes Belandus.  
Iohn Frofart.  
Iohn Audley.  
Iohannes Fortefw.  
Iohn Keftall.  
Iohn Skelton.  
Iohn Caius.  
I. fcriptores Gloceft.  
Iohn Lidgate.  
Iohn Harding.  
Lampidus.  
Leger Edwards Regis.  
Liber conftitut. London.  
Liber Kenetham.  
Liber Danulmenfis.  
Liber Norwicefis.  
Liber Tufherienfis.  
Liber S. Martini magni.  
Liber Lamboni.  
Liber Caen in Normandis.  
Liber Reffenfis.  
Liber Trinitatis London.



*Liber Colne.*  
*Liber Mona. Ely.*  
*Liber Bermondsey.*  
*Liber pont. London.*  
*Liber Glocestrensis.*  
*Liber Warwicensis.*  
*Liber S. Marie de Southwarke.*  
*Liber Kenelworth.*  
*Liber Berewel.*  
*Liber Eborum.*  
*Liber Richemont.*  
*Liber S. Barthol. Smithfield.*  
*Liber Collegii S. Petri.*  
*Liber Edendon.*  
*Liber Eastmyster.*  
*Liber Maier. & Vic. London.*  
*Liber Ewelwe.*  
*Liber Lichfield.*  
*Litus Giraldus.*  
*Liber Theokesbury.*  
*Lodowicus Vanc.*  
*Marianus Scotus.*  
*Martinus Polonus.*  
*Mathew Paris, I have caused to  
be Printed.*  
*Mathew Westmonasteriensis.*  
*Mathew Parkern.*  
*Marlin.*  
*Melkin.*  
*Moniment in Colchester.*  
*Nemius.*  
*Nicephorus.*  
*Nicholas Trevium.*  
*Nicholas Vpton.*  
*Nicholas Perren.*  
*Nicholas Bromfield.*  
*Nicholas Bubwich.*  
*Old Records.*  
*Oracula Sibel.*  
*Orosius.*  
*Osiernus de Clere.*  
*Parliament Records.*  
*Pausanias.*  
*Panegyricus Constantio dictus.*  
*Paulus Orosius.*  
*Paulus Diaconus.*  
*Paulus Aemilius.*  
*Paulus Iovius.*  
*Petrus de Ikham.*  
*Petrus Rami.*  
*Petrus Piccolomus.*  
*Peter Balthazar.*

*Perce de Longest.*  
*Philippus Cornutus.*  
*Pliny.*  
*Polycraticon.*  
*Ponicus Varunius.*  
*Polidorus Virgilius.*  
*Petrus & Baldinus.*  
*Quadrilogium.*  
*Radulphus de Diceto.*  
*Radulphus Niger.*  
*Radulphus Baldoke.*  
*Radulphus Cogshall.*  
*Rannulphus Higden.*  
*Record. ecclesie de Asiphe.*  
*Registrum nans Mona.*  
*Registrum fratrum minorum.*  
*Registrum monast. de Hyde.*  
*Registrum de Woodbradge.*  
*Registrum de ponte Rosen.*  
*Registrum de Clerkenwell.*  
*Registrum monast. de Burie.*  
*Registrum monast. S. Alland.*  
*Record. ecclesie Christi Cantuar.*  
*Registrum monast. Cantuarie.*  
*Registrum fratrum Carmelitarm.*  
*Registrum Maiorum London.*  
*Registrum movast. de Batail.*  
*Registrum de Garter.*  
*Richardus Cirencevrensis.*  
*Richardus Somersel.*  
*Richardus Dimens.*  
*Richardus Canonicus.*  
*Rogerus Housten.*  
*Records of Donmow.*  
*Roger de Windover.*  
*Richard Hakluit.*  
*Roger Wall.*  
*Radulphus Volasteranus.*  
*Robert Iuelcace.*  
*Robertus Gaguin.*  
*Robertus Glocestrensis.*  
*Robertus de Aueburie.*  
*Reinwels Testament.*  
*Robertus de Brane.*  
*Robert Fabian.*  
*Robert Greene.*  
*Richard Turpin.*  
*Scala Temporum.*  
*Scala Mundi.*  
*Speculum Historiale.*  
*Sebastian Munster.*  
*Sigobertus Gimblacensis.*

*Scala Chronicon.*  
*Simon Duboumet.*  
*Salinus.*  
*Simeonius.*  
*Smart Falconer.*  
*Spartianus.*  
*Sulcardus.*  
*Sirabo.*  
*Sorgemus.*  
*Socrates.*  
*Theodoreus.*  
*Tunus Lint.*  
*Thomas Castleford.*  
*Thomas Clifford.*  
*Thomas Sprote.*  
*Thomas de Wikes.*  
*Thomas Walsingham, I have caused  
to be Printed.*  
*Thomas Rudburne.*  
*Thomas Delamora.*  
*Thomas Yale.*  
*Thomas Elmham.*  
*Thomas Eliot.*  
*Terullian.*  
*Thomas Smith.*  
*Thomas Wall heralt.*  
*Thomas Hocliue.*  
*Thomas Moore.*  
*Thomas Lanquet.*  
*Thomas Cooper.*  
*Thomas Churchyard.*  
*Thomas Fenner.*  
*Vita Brini.*  
*Vita Aldelmi.*  
*Vita Erkenwaldi.*  
*Vigetim.*  
*Vita Albani.*  
*Vita Edwardi.*  
*Vita Guilelmi Longocamp.*  
*Vopiscus.*  
*Vox Clamantis.*  
*W. Parvus.*  
*Wolfgangus Laxus.*  
*William Norwell.*  
*William Caxton.*  
*William Beare.*  
*William Patten.*  
*William Segar.*  
*Tpodigma Neustrie.*  
*Zozimus.*

# A Table of the principall matters contained in these Annales.

## A

<b>Archflames,</b>	18
Alban martyred. 45. Albans builded.	89
Albans towne spoiled by <i>Falcatus</i> . 264. by the barons	265
Ailesford.	56. 118
Andreddeage.	58
Arthur. 58. his tale.	60
Austin in England. 65. threatneth the Britains. 66. decea-	67
sed.	67
Andrewes in Rochester founded. 65. Rochester besieged.	103
103. Castle builded.	103
Atulbrough.	76
Adultry punished.	86
Articles for the Church.	88
Abbeies spoiled.	100
Andres walde.	103
Apuldore.	104
Alfride king.	101
Athen.	118. 120
Abbot of S. Albons his policie against D. W.	134
Ancient lawes of England remaine in kent.	137
Ancient Charters.	144
Abbey of S. Albons new builded.	157
Abbot of Glasterbury murdered his monkes.	161
Abbot of S. Augustine some time a souldier.	183
Abbey of Chelster.	185
Anselmus Archbishop of Canterbury. 185. deceased.	194
Angle-Aye an Isle.	186
Archbishop of Yorke with his crosse cast out.	202
Adrian Pope an Englishman his epistle to H. the 2.	211
Arthur Duke of Britaine taken & murdered in prison.	247
Albert de Vere Earle of Oxford.	248
Army into Wales.	251
Apostata circumcised.	268
Abbot of Westminster put to his shifts.	269
Archbishop of Canterbury visiteth Saint Bartholmewes in	
Smithfield.	286
Augustine friers.	286
Abbey of Hailes.	287
Alexander king of Scots came into England	290
<i>Allaine de la Zouch</i> slaine.	303
Arthurs bones remooued.	306
Aueland Colledge.	331
Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford.	346
Abbey of Bury spoiled.	351
Alice Pierce. 437. banished.	444
Arendall a knight drowned.	448
Aldermen knighted.	463
Archbishop of Yorke fled the Realme.	485
Armes of E. the confessor. 4. Martilets.	501
Archbishop of Canterbury banished.	513
Alexander Poole slaine.	607
Against defacers of Monuments.	615
Adam Molles Bishop of Chichester murdered.	638
Alexander Eden theriffe of Kent.	647
Articles betwixt King Henry the sixt, and Richard Duke of	
Yorke.	679
Aldermen of London knighted.	706
Archbishop of Yorke spoiled and sent to prison.	708
Alcocke Bishop of Ely.	806
Allome deare.	811

Archers sent against the Moores, and to aide the Dutcheffe	
of Sauoy.	818
Andrew Barton a Scottish pyrate.	820
Army into Bilcay against the French.	821
Augustine doctour of physicke.	937
Abbeies visited. 963. small houses suppressed.	964
Articles of Religion deuised by the king.	965
Abbot of Whaly and other executed.	968. 973
Abbeies suppressed.	970
Anabaptists bare figots and were brent. 971 brent.	974
Abbey of S. Albons surrendered.	973
Army into France.	988
Anne Askew and other brent.	997
Admirall of France came to London.	997
Arden murdered.	1020
An Arian brent.	1021
Ambassadours to Rome. 1059. to Calcis.	1060
Abbot of Westminster.	1063
Ambassador from Roussa and Muscouia.	1064
Ambassadours from Swethen.	1083
Aide given to the Scots against the French.	1085
Ambrose Earle of Warwike lauded at Newbawen.	1022.
deceased.	1263
Ambassadours from Muscouie.	1123
Anne Sanders. Anne Drewry hanged.	1143
Aide into Scotland against the castle of Edenbrough.	1143
yeilded to the English.	1145
Agnes Bridges, and Rachel Pudar counterfeited to be posses-	
sed.	1148
Anabaptists Dutch men. 1149. banished, brent.	1151
Ambassadour into Denmarke.	1170
Albertus Alafes.	1174. 1175
Ambassadour from the king of Denmarke.	1203
Almes houses founded by the Merchant taylers.	1271
Ambassador from Poland.	1299
Ambassador from Denmarke.	1300
Ambassadors into France.	1302

## B

<b>B</b> ritaine described page 1. named England.	99
Bridge at London.	2.
Bishops in Wales.	7
Bishops in England.	1
Bruce. 11. his line extinguished.	16
Bambrough.	13
Bathe or Bathes. 15. Bathon hill.	59
Banner downe.	60
Bangor. 15. Monastery.	66
Bloud rained.	15
Brother traytor to brother.	13. 16
Belinus. 16. Gate.	18
Brennus.	16. 17
Bricaines barbarous. 22. Warriors 27. Haines, their state.	63
57. wasted.	24
Britaine house in Holland.	
Bishops of London. 37. reprove the King.	
Britaines placed in France.	47. 49
Blibrough.	73
Barking.	79
Bonsface to Ethelwald.	85
Bensington.	95
Bloud rained.	98
b	Battails

# THE TABLE.

Battails at Affindowne, 101. at Chipinham, 100. against the Welch men.	107	thereth him.	421
Battaille at Lewes, 296. at Eufham, 298. at Fankirke in Scotland, 318. at Chesterfield, 300. at Striuelen, 333. at Halidownehill, 359. on the sea, 391. at Poyters, 408. on the sea, 426. at Cressly, and of Durham, 380. at Halidownehill, 531. at Shrewsbury, 532. at Otarborne, 482. at Vernome in Perche, 598. at S Albons the first, 660. the 2, 686. at Wakefield, 654. at Mortimers crosse, 685		Burley belonging to the B. of Norwich.	464
Battaille at Northampton, 678. at Chepam, 693. at Theobury.	704	Bull against the Cleargy for their temporalities.	479
Beaufleere.	104	Barly solde for xij d. the quarter.	482
Brimsbery.	107	Blanke Charters, 515. burned.	526
Burton vpon Trent.	115	Buth Bagot and Greene.	509
Bishop of Durham slaine.	158	Blowbeard hanged.	638
Bishops and Abbots charged with keeping of soldiers.	163	Burdeaux yielded to the English.	654
Permondicy in Southwarke.	160	Florchesthield.	671
Battaille Abbey.	165	Banbery field.	700
Bishop of Durham the kings Chancellor in great danger of death.	187. 188	Barnet field.	703
Bloud the likenesse thereof in a spring.	189	Banarets made.	706
Bishoppicks solde for money.	195	Bowrnes brast out.	707
Bridges ouer the riuer Lee at Stratford.	197	Basifer betrayed his master, the duke of Buckingham, which duke was beheaded.	779
Hedford besieged.	207	Beacons set vp and watched.	801
Boxley in Kent.	211	Blackheath field.	802
Bucker Thomas Chancellor, 216. archbishop of Canterbury, 220. fled the Realme, 221. restored, and slaine.	223	Brightshamsted in Suffex brent by the French.	831
Barnards castle.	224. 260	Banqueting house prepared in Calcis defaced, the canuas heauen blowne away.	857
Blacke booke of the Exchequer.	225	Broad scale of England left at Calcis.	898
Bread allowed for 100. men, xij. pence.	226	Bread scarce at London.	904
Beuerley brent.	231	Boners head broken.	936
Bones of Arthur found.	235	Birth of Lady Elizabeth.	957
Baynards castle throwne downe.	254	Bishops preach against the pope.	961
Barons of England sworne to Pandolph the Legate, 255. require the charter of liberties, 257. excommunicated, 258. sent for Lodowicke.	259	Bible in English in euery parish church.	970
Barons ouerthrowne at Lincolne. the City spoyled.	265	Blocke houses builded.	972
they tooke their voyage to Ierusalem.	266	Bale monies coyned.	988
Beneuolence to H the third.	268	Beneuolence demanded.	990
Bedford castle besieged.	271	Boleigne yielded to the French.	1019
Barons threat H. the third.	273. 276	Booke of Common praier.	1027
Butlers at coronation.	278	Bridewell giuen to the citie of London.	1038
Bale coine.	284	Bishops restored.	1036
Byggot Earle of Norfolk.	284	Barge of Grauesend ouerturned.	1043
Barons in armour.	253. 339	Beefe and mutton sold by waight.	957
Bocland Abbey.	305	Blazing sture.	1062
Blacke friers.	305	Pishops deprived.	1082
Bridges borne downe.	308	Burle in Cornhill builded.	1117
Boston burned.	311	Bull from Rome hanged on the B. of Londons gate.	1129
Breach at Ratheshithe.	316	Banqueting house at Westminster.	1166
Brewmarsh Castle.	316	Bay salt ys. the bushell.	1049
Bartram nephew to Gasfions.	332	Beare garden fall of a scaffold killed eight persons.	1173
Bruse beheaded.	337	Bren Oroioke of Ireland, 1267. executed.	1269
Barwike betrayed, 338. Barwike taken by the Scots, 404. and againe by the English, 401. by the Scots, 448. lost and woone againe, 477. Scottes besieged Barwike and Rocksborow.	580	Bridges at Cambridge, at Ware almost borne downe.	1278
Bakenings set vp.	345		
Bailie resigned the crowne of Scotlande to Edwards the third.	358		
Barbican at London.	363		
Blacke Prince his oration, 409. returning with his prisoners, 415. prince of Aquitaine, 418. deceased.	429		
Beards of Englishmen shauen.	415		
Benchamps buried in Pauls.	416		
Bastard brother disheriteth the lawfull brother and murdereth him.			

C

Countries or shires.	I
Cornwall.	8
Canterbury.	14
Chesse a game.	16
Cesar Julius.	21. 22
Christians in Britaine, 34. persecuted.	36
Chester.	35. 107
Colchester.	35. 106
Churches ouerthrowne.	44
Constantine first christened Emperoz.	46
Councell at Nice.	47
Constantinople.	47
Craford.	56
Cilcester.	59
Camelot castle.	60
Chertsey.	79
Credo and Pater noster in English.	88
Crowland.	88
Cups	



# THE TABLE.

Cups of brasse.	91	Commons of Bery executed, their towne amerced.	353
Cerdike shore.	94	Challenge of combat by <i>Turnbull</i> .	359
Cirencester.	95.103	Copland rooke the king of Scots.	381
Church yardes.	98	Commodities of peace.	384
Chastity preferred.	101	Caleis woon 380 like to haue been lost.	387
Cleargy slaine in praiser.	118	Charter hou'e by London.	385
Combat for the kingdome.	118	Cow fat for xvi d.	393
Combat at Reading.	221	Corne brought from Ireland.	398
Challenge of combat by <i>Turnbull</i> .	389	Carcason in France brent.	404
Combat before king <i>Edward</i> the third, 392. at Westminster.		Cobham college.	419
448. 477 at Yorke.	517	Councell against <i>John</i> of Gaunt.	433.435
Combat fought in Smithfield.	609	Chaucer sent into France.	437
Combat in Smithfield, 630. 635. at Shine.	795	Commissions into Essex. <i>T. de Brampton</i> .	451
Combat appointed at Westminster.	1132	Commons of Essex spoile the archbishops house at Lamb-	
<i>Canute</i> the Dane, 118. king of fourre kingdomes.	119	heath, and brent the mann or of Highbery.	Ibid.
Clements church without temple barre.	121	Commons of Essex assembled at Biltrica.	467
Castles at Nottingham and Yorke, 143. at Wisbech, 148.		Custome of Wales.	472
at Leedes in Kere, 150. at Oxford, 150. at Durham, 150		Chiefe Iustice taken and executed.	487
at Northampton, 155. at Rochester, 157. New castle		Crueltie of Scots.	489
vpou Tine, 160. Tutbery, 160 at Storriford, 166. at Grant-		Colledge and hospitall at Pontfract.	543
bridge.	184	Colledge of Fodringay.	551
Colledge S. Martin in London.	165	Cardinall of Winchester.	605
Creeples gate of London.	165	Cow for xiiid. a sheepe for one peny.	616
Councell at Salisbury.	185	Caleis besieged.	617
Carlisle Citie and castle.	185	Colledge at Tatshall.	618
Colchester S. Johns a monastery.	193	Commotion at Norwich.	630
Conspiracie against king W.	193	Colledge and hospitall at Higham.	630
Conspiracie against king <i>Henry</i> the fourth, 530 against king		Cane deliuered to the French.	637
H. the fourth by the archbishop of Yorke, 539. disco-		Colledge at Wye in Kent.	657
uered, 564. against king H. the 5.	56	Coine enhaufed.	695
Conspiracie at Abingdon, 610. at Couentry.	876	Church robbers hanged, burned and pressed to death.	717
Castles at Bristol and Cardiffe.	195	Crosby place.	744
Chichester brent.	196.231.	<i>Colingborne</i> making a libell, was executed.	780
Cireceter Abbey founded.	197	Citie of Granado woon from the Moores.	795
Cardinal inuayeng against priests concubines, was detected		Commotion in Cornwall.	801
of whordome.	201	Colledge at Rotherham.	806
Carlisle a Bishopricke.	204	Cupbord of plate.	809
Creede in English.	219	Chappell of H. the seuenth at Westminster, 810. his se-	
Canterbury brent.	224	pulchre.	814
Castles raised by H. the second.	225	Coine altered.	811
Castle at Ongar in Essex.	227	Cap of maintenance sent to H. the seuenth.	811
<i>Cadwalen</i> Prince of Wales trayterously slaine.	228	Cap of maintenance to H. the eight.	831
Crux Roisia, or Roiston, 236. hospitall there.	250	<i>Charles</i> Brandon duke of Suffolke married lady <i>Mary</i> sister to	
Colledge at Lambheath.	242	<i>Henry</i> the eight.	834
Corne deere.	248	<i>Charles</i> the fift Emperour came to London.	868
Colcheffe: besieged.	259	Court to heare complaints of the poore created.	847
Croxton abbey.	262	Cardinall <i>Campagus</i> came into England.	852
Councils at Oxford and Cambridge.	264.268	<i>Charles</i> the fift Emperour came into England.	855
Castles yeilded to Lewes.	264	<i>Charles</i> duke of Suffolke entered France with a power.	874
Castles at Chartley and Beestone builded.	268	<i>Charles</i> D. of Burbon reuoluted from the French king.	875
Christ counterfeir.	268	Cardinall <i>Campagus</i> came to London.	908
<i>Constantine</i> with oether hanged.	269	Cardinall <i>Wolsey</i> departed from Yorke place.	919
Carucage granted.	271.278	Cardinall <i>Wolsey</i> at Putneth.	920
Charter of liberties confirmed, 271. cancelled.	272	Cardinall indighted in pramunire.	926
Conuers in house in Chancelor lane.	276	<i>Collet</i> deane of Pauls.	933
Couetous archbishop of Yorke.	277	Card-nall <i>Wolsey</i> sickeneth, 988. dieth.	940
Corne full of vermin.	277	Cleargie condemned in pramunire.	942
County of Chester came to the king.	279	Conclussions against the kings marriage.	942
Cambridge schollers burne houses.	286	Cooke boyled in Smithfield.	943
Castle at Kingstone and at Townebridge taken.	296	Coiners and clippers executed.	943
Castle of flint.	305	Christs church priory suppressed.	944
Carlisle burned.	312	Crosse in Cheape new guilded.	950
Charing Crosse and oether.	313	Chautries their names taken.	963
Canon law taught in Cambridge.	317	Countesse of Salisbury beheaded.	978
Children eaten, and theues in prison deuoured.	336	Curse from Rome.	980
Cardinals robbed in England.	336	Charterhouse monkes executed.	962.963
Castles fortified.	345	Commotion in Lincolnshire appeased.	966

# THE TABLE.

Commotion in Yorke shire. 966. of the rebels there. 967.	968 978	Ditch about London.	235
Chuntries, collidges, hospitals giuen to H. the eight. 992	992	Dunstable spoyled by the Barons.	265
Commotion in Somerset shire and Lincolne shire, Cornwall and Deuon, also at Norwich.	1005	Delacresse Abbey.	268
Commotion in Yorke shire, rebels executed.	1006	Darkeresse in Pauls church.	274
Church plate and iewels called into the kings hands.	1029	Dauid of Wales rebelled.	307
Coines new.	1041	Draue the staffe.	321
Cardinall Poole.	1043	Dogs flesh good meate.	335
Conspiracie against Queene Mary.	1044	Dagworth knight.	337
Commotion in Kent by sir T. Wyat. 1044. Wyat strengthened with the queens ordinance. 1045. came into Southwark. 1046. went out of Southwark. 1047. into S. James field. 1049. taken, beheaded.	1050	Disension at Oxford. 329. townsmen indighted.	400
Carthaged in Cheape.	1054	Dearth of corne.	423, 622
Cardinal Poole came into England. 1057. archbishop.	1062	Disension in Pauls church.	432
Craumer Archbishop of Canterbury Brent.	1062	Disension at Oxford.	485, 490
Conspiracie to haue robbed the Exchequer.	1062	Dearth of corne here, relieved from beyond the seas.	491
Charles lord Sturton executed.	1067	Dolphin of the sea came to London bridge.	492
Conspiracie in Norfolk.	1063	Dukes created.	513, 604
Calcis besieged, and taken by the French.	1069	Dukes of Surrey and Excester executed.	526
Corne and wood deare.	1073	Duke of Gloucester condemned after he was dead.	512
Conference appointed.	1077	Dermouth invaded by the French.	535
Church seruice in the English toong.	1082	Duke of Burgundy enamoured on the Countesse of Salisbury.	599
Citizens of London mulctred at Greenwich.	1082	Duke of Gloucester goeth into Folland, chalengeth the combat. 601. married Eleanor Cobham, 602. fell at debate with the Bishop of Winchester.	603
Commissioners appointed.	1082	Dogor Lamode.	672
Church Images burned.	1082	Disgracing of a knight Ralph Gray.	693
Churches in London smitten by tempest.	1083	Duke of Somerset and other beheaded.	694
Coines of silver monies.	1094, 1096	D. Godard preached at Pauls crosse against K. Edward.	701
Captaine Randall knight marshall of New hauen his pitifullnesse.	1111	Doctor Shames sermon at Pauls.	757
Charles James crowned king of Scots.	1119	Duke of Buckingham oration.	758
Cardinall Capisian came into England.	1122	Drie sommer.	804
Conspiracie in Norfolk.	1129	Duke of Buckingham his gowne.	808
Cassimere received.	1159	Dudley arraigned. 816. executed.	818
Crosse in Cheape defaced.	1167	Dearth and death in England.	865
Charles L. Howard, L. Chamberlaine, L. admirall.	1186	Disgracing of a knight of the Garter.	863
County Holcke shot into the mouth.	1237	Duke of Bourbon champion for Henry the eight.	877
Christopher Hutton L. Chancellor.	1241	Duke of Suffolke his speech to the Cardinals.	918
Campe at Tilbery in Essex. 1244. Queene Elizabeth went to the campe.	1259	D. of Norfolk to the Cardinal. 927. his bitter words.	931
Cepinger and other preached in Cheape.	1264	D. of Baier and Pallegraue of Rhine came into Engl.	973
Commissions for inquisition to be made.	1267	Drie sommer.	977
Coyners executed.	1280	Dampers and Champan of the kings gard hanged.	978
Charles Howard created earle of Nottingham.	1301	Duke of Norfolk came to Scotland.	981
Calcis returned French.	1302	Dunee and Cloyster of Pauls pulled downe.	1004
Corne of great price.	1279	D. of Somerset sent to the towes. 1022. condemned.	1023
Charles Blunt L. Mountioy towards Ireland lieutenant.	1305	beheaded.	1024

## D

Dvnbretaine.	13
Douer. 61. spoyled.	317
Dorchester.	95
Danes arrived. 98. spoyled London. 99. east England. 115. their tyranny. 116. invade England.	146
Drunkards condemned.	113
Durham a Bishops sea.	114
Dane gilt. 122. discharged.	124
Danes invade England, and are compounded with. made claime to the crowne of England. 147. invade England.	156, 163
Domes day booke.	159
Diuels appeared to men.	189
Dunstable towne and priorie.	193

## E

Edenborough.	11
Elutherus his Epistle.	36
Edilbert first Saxon baptized.	65

Edil

## THE TABLE.

East Angles.	72	Edward the fourth elected king in S. Iouis field, took on	
Edward the king martyred.	76	him the kingdom. 688. 689. crowned. 690. fate in the	
East Saxons.	76	kings bench 691. his journey into Scotland. 691. taken	
Eouefham.	85	prisoner, he pardoned and beheaded. 701. fled beyond	
Egelsburge.	95	teas 702. landed at Rouenpoine. 703. pardoned many	
Egretham.	95	and cut off their heads. 704. his passing into France. 709.	
Edburge poy'oned her husband.	98	banquered the Maier of London and Aldermen. 720.	
Engliſh Schoole at Rome.	99	deceased	721
Exceſter. 102. a biſhops ſea. 114. 124 beſieged 143	207	Edward <i>Mortua teſte</i> Earle of Northumberland made mar-	
Erhelinge.	103	queſſe Mountaine.	694
Egbrightſ ſtone.	103	Earle of Warwike his houſe keeping.	700
Edeſbery.	107	Edward the ſit.	722
Edwine deprived of his kingdome.	108	Earle of Northumberland ſlaine.	794
Edgar crowned at Bath 109 his oration. 110. ſtate of the		Exceſter beſieged.	803
church in his time. 113. Wolves deſtroyed. 109. Kings		Edward <i>Plantagenet</i> beheaded.	805
eightrowed <i>Edgars</i> .	113	Edmond de la Poole Earle of Suffolke and his brother fled in-	
Edrike of Stratton.	115. 117. 118. 119	to Flanders.	807
Edmondsbery. 120. brent.	257	Edmond de la Poole earle of Suffolke ſent to the Tower.	811
Edmund Conſſor. 122. healed the kings euill. 128. he ſawe		<i>Emſon</i> and <i>Duday</i> ſent to the Tower.	815
the diuell dance.	125	<i>Emſon</i> arraigned and attainred 817. executed.	118
Engliſh men giuen to drinking, and not to prayer.	131	Edward Howard lord admiral drowned.	813
Edwine and Mercere againſt king William.	148	Edmond de la Poole beheaded.	823
Fies of men put out.	152. 154	Euill May day at London. 849. three Queenes obtained	
Earthquake.	160. 204. 221. 284. 285. 179. 303	pardon for the Londoners.	851
Hy made a Biſhops ſea 195. beſieged.	258. 288	Edward duke of Buckingham beheaded.	863
Earle of Glouceſter <i>Roberts</i> .	195	Example of pride and arrogancie	941
Earthquake.	197. 199. 217	Earles of Eſſex and Oxford deceased.	973
Eaton Nuns.	222	Earle of Killare and five of his Vnclcs executed.	968
Engliſh men tranſported into Ireland.	223	Edmond <i>Queeneſ</i> knight arraigned for ſtriking a man in the	
Exchequer at Northampton.	290	court.	978
Exchequer and Kings bench at York.	321	Edenbrough brent.	987
Exchequer at York.	339	Earle of Hertford ſent into Scotland.	992
Earle maſhall W. died.	267. 275	Engliſh men put to flight by the Kingraue.	995
Engliſh Tewes.	287	Edward the ſixt. 999. crowned. 1000. deceased.	1029
Elephant ſent into England.	289	Earthquake.	1021
Edward the firſt crowned 304 went into Wales 308. lay in		Edward Courtney created earle of Deuon, ſent to Fodering-	
the caſtle at Granbridge. 315. entered Wales. 316. woon		hay.	1056. 1041
Be wiſke. 317. died.	327	Earles of Northumberland & Weſtmerland rebelled. 1123	
Edward Carnarwan prince of Wales.	310	rebels rent the Bible 1124. proclaimed traytors. 1124	
Edward the ſecond. 327. crowned. 328. againſt his Barons.		Earth moving.	1131
329. hee ſendeth for <i>Gauſtine</i> . 330. his wife and eldeſt		Earle of Lincolne Embaſſador into France.	1137
ſon into France. 344. the king ſlicth. 246. reſigneth the		Earle of Northumberland beheaded.	1139
crowne 348. his miſery, crowned with hay, ſhauen with		Engliſh men ſent to Viſitar in Ireland.	1139
cold water. 350. muſthered.	352	Earle of Darby Edward deceased.	1140
Elham manor in Kent.	332	Earthquake. 1149. 1163. in Dorceſtſhire.	1173
Earle Warren excommunicate.	336	Example of forſecrite.	1159
Earle Harouelt cheape corne.	337	Edmond <i>Campton</i> Teſtit and other executed.	1169
Earle of Carlele 341 degraded and executed.	342	Edmond Grindall Archbiſhop of Canturbury.	1174
Ely an Ile commended.	341	Earle of Northumbry. found to haue murdered himſelfe. 1182	
Edward the third crowned. 353. his title to France. 354. hee		Earle of Shiewsbury <i>Gilbert</i> , embaſſador into France. 1290	
woone Barwike. 359. entered Scotland. 360. founded			
kings hall in Cambridge. 365. made Vicegerent of the			
empire, invaded France. 367. entered Scotland. 372.			
ſlayed into Normandy.	377		
Elſing ſpire.	359		
Elſtounſter founded.	439		
Earthquake.	472. 604		
Earle of Arundale arraigned in the Parliament. 511. be-			
headed.	512		
Earle of Warwike arraigned.	513		
Emperor of Conſtantinople came into England.	529		
Earle of Cambridge indighted.	565		
Engla. d made one of the ſue nations.	575		
Earle of Arondale wounded in France.	615		
Edward Cobham 627 did penance.	628		
Edmond duke of Sommer ſent to the Tower. 657. Captaine			
of Calcis. 658. fled to Guines.	673		



# THE TABLE.

Frost great.	248.	277.	302	Glastenbury. 34. 97. brent.	230
Feete and hands of men cut off.			269	Gurmoncheifer.	63
Friers minors arrived here.			271	Gloucester. 85. spoyled by the Welch. 285. brent.	200.
Fifteenth of all mens goods to the king.			271	Castle taken. 253. besieged.	255
Fishes monstrous.			280	Glasing to the Saxons.	93
Friers of the sacke.	315.	321		Guy of Warwicke.	107
Friers Carmelites in Oxford.			334	Godwine his petigrew. 115. dieth.	126
Fight on the sea with the French.			369	Gillingham forrest.	117
Florens of golde coyned.			373	Guarnorus le Rich.	155
Feast of S. George at Windsor.			890	Gawens bones found.	166
Founders of the Garter.			391	Glamorgan and Morganocke.	180
French king prisoner in England releas'd. 417. died in king-			419	Godwine Sands.	189
land.			419	Grantbridge described. 184. burned.	215
Frost great 8. moneths.			419	Giles church at Crippe gate.	191
Fobbing, Curringham and Samford in Essex assembled.	451			G. Mauddeule earle of Essex slaine.	212
Flemmings beheaded.			459	Gerendon.	222
Frier tormented to death.			475	Giffrey earle of Britaine died.	230
Frier in strange forme appeared.			484	Giffrey Ridle the proud Bishop of Ely.	233
Fable reprod.			494	Giffrey Archbishop of Yorke, drawne from the aluter to prison.	235. 256
French king in danger to be breut by his trayt'rous brother.			495	Gascoigne subdued.	271
Frier stout, the diuell appeared in likenesse of a frier.	530			Giffith of Wales.	283
Fifteenes granted to the king.			537	Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester.	283
Fray in S. Dunstons church.			575	Grauelend Bishop of London.	321
Foway brent.			665	Gilbert earle of Gloucester.	333
Flemish merchants with their wares banished England.	748			Guisnes. 383. gotten by the English.	394
Falle accusers committed to prison.			816	Groates and halfe groates.	393
Flodon field.			826	Grauelend brent by the French.	449
French king taken prisoner.			878	Guns invented.	449
French Craier chased to the Tower.			908	Great taxe the cause of great rebellion.	449
Frier forrest brent.			969	Greenefield beheaded.	459
Fier in Roodelane.			969	Gouernors of this realme. 13. appointed.	481
Frith brent.			962	Gnats fight a great batraile.	490
Frier houles suppressed.	962.	970		Geffrey Chaucer Poet.	529
First fruites and tenths given to the king.			962	Gods house at Newelme in Oxford shire.	639
Fier at Elsing spittle.			980	George Duke of Clarence, and the earle of Warwike fled in to France, and againe landed at Plimouth.	701
Falle accuser set on the pillory.			991	George duke of Clarence, the earle of Warwike and other restored Henry the sixt. 702. Duke of Clarence agreed with his brother. 703. attainted by parliament. 716. put to death.	717
First and second fals monies.	1021			Great Harry a shippe made.	822
First fruites and tenths restored to the cleargie.	1061			Great payment to Henry the eight.	822
Falle accuser set on the pillory, and brent in both the cheekes.			1062	Golden rose sent from Rome to Henry the eight.	876
First fruites and tenths granted to the crowne.	1075			Gardiner Secretary to H. the eight.	918
Fall of the base monies.			1094	Gold enhaunsed.	886
Felton and others executed.			1130	Gerard Fitz Gerard deputy of Ireland.	891
French Embassadors.			1138	Giffith Clarke Vicker of Wanworth and other executed.	922
Frost great.			1140	Going to Landarfe.	984
Fish monstrous.			1148	Galleies taken from the French.	995
Flies in February.			1149	Great watch at midsummer.	1003
Family of loue.			1151	Gernsey and Ierrey invaded by the French.	1005
Four children at a burden.			1152	Grise a counterfeit phyfion punished.	1020
Ferry at Lambheath drowned.			1163	Great feare upon small occasion.	1025
Francis Drake his voyage.	1164.	1165		Grey friers church in London made an hospitall.	1026
Furberghers first voyage to Catay. 1152. second voyage.			1160	Gilbert Pot punished in Cheape.	1030
1154. third voyage.			1170	Gun shot at the preacher.	1056
Francis Throckmorton executed.			1187	Gun shot out of a ship into the court at Greenwich.	1064
Francis Russell earle of Bedford deceased.			1187	George Sammers murthered.	1141
Francis Drake his voyage to S. Domingo.			1187	George Browne hanged.	1142
Ferdinando Earle of Darby deceased.			1275	Gunpowder blew vp houles.	1174
				Ground and trees sunke and swallowed vp.	1187
				Gunpowder house blewne vp.	1241
				Gates of Paules Church blowne open.	1263

G  
Vindolen Queene.  
Germany.  
Glamorgan.  
Grantham.

Hambur

# THE TABLE.

## H

<b>H</b> Vmbar a Ruer.		Hospitall at Leicester.	358
Heraulds.		Henry earle of Lancaster died.	377
Helen mother of <i>Constantine</i> .		Hoy.	383
Hofsted.		Harlots apparell appointed them.	388
Honorius archbishop deuided his prouince into parishes.	68	<i>Hugh Caluclay</i> . 437. his iourney towards Boloigne.	445
Hereford.	75	<i>Hastings</i> burnt by the French.	444
Hunstantone.	76	<i>Henry Spencer</i> Bishop of Norwich, his boldnesse against the rebels.	464
Hereford.	89	<i>Henry</i> duke of Hereford accused the duke of Norfolk. 514.	
Hubbellow.	101	a combat granted them at Conentry, both banished. 515	
Hadley.	103	<i>Henry</i> duke of Hereford returned into England.	517
Hokenorton.	106	<i>Henry</i> the fourth crowned. 524. conspiracie against him.	
<i>Hugoline</i> the kings chamberlaine.	129	525. inuadeth Scotland. 527. escapeth great danger.	
<i>Harold</i> son to earle <i>Gadwaine</i> tooke on him the kingdome.		530. went into Wales. 531. writeth to the Pope. 546.	
130. his standard.	131	ayded the duke of Burgundy. 551. gaue ayde to the duke of Orliance.	556
<i>Harding</i> son to <i>Ednothus</i> .	143	Hospitall at Rome for English men.	546
<i>Hereward</i> made knight. 144. tooke the Ile of Ely. 148. char-		<i>Henry</i> Prince of Wales strangely disguised visiteth his father being sicke.	553
ted the abbot of Peterborow, and tooke <i>two Talbots</i> .	154	<i>Henry</i> the first. 557. crowned. 559. he heareth al suites. 559.	
<i>Henry</i> the first borne in England.	145	Richmount, Shene, and Sion built. 559. kept the field by	
Hands and fette cut off.	152. 154	<i>S. Giles</i> without Olbborne. 561. builded at Kenelworth,	
<i>Hilbert</i> Lacie lord of Pontfraet.	156	sayled into Normandy. 562. Proclamation in his hoste.	
Hereford monastery burned.	157	565. Herleste surrendered to him. 568. wan the bataille	
Hospitall at Chetham in Kent.	157	at Agen court. 570. arrived at Douer. 574. he besieged	
<i>Herlewin</i> married <i>Arlote</i> .	161	Cane. 578. won it. 579. he besieged Louars, and Pontle-	
Hospitall of <i>S. Iohn</i> at Harbaldowne.	178	arch, and Roane. 585. hee besieged Melune. 590. hee	
<i>Henry</i> the first crowned. 190. sayled into Normandy. 192.		died.	593
put out the eies of his elder brother. 193. sayled into		Halfe pence of <i>Ianus</i> forbidden.	574
Normandy. 197. he made peace with France, his children		<i>Henry</i> the first king of England and of France. 595. crown-	
drowned. 199. builded castles in Normandy. 201.		ed. 609. crowned at Paris. 611. he went against the re-	
troubled in his sleepes. 203. in danger of drowning. 204.		bels of Kent. 643. he went to Killingworth. 644. rode	
measures reformed.	190	into Kent with an army. 648. fled into Scotland. 690.	
He died. 205. his issue.	206	taken. 695. restored. 702. sent to the Tower. 703. mur-	
<i>Hugh Lacie</i> founded Lanthony.	192	thered. 705. his exercises while he liued.	706
Hyde of land taxed iii. s. to the king.	194. 242.	<i>Henry</i> duke of Warwick.	635
Hospitall at Keper.	222	<i>Humphrey</i> duke of Gloucester died.	635
Hospitall <i>S. Croffe</i> .	204	Harlow Castle won.	700
Hospitall <i>S. Katherine</i> by the Tower.	212	<i>Henry</i> earle of Richmond landed at Milford hauen. 783. won	
<i>Henry</i> the second crowned. 216. he went against the Welch,		the bataille at Bosworth, was crowned in the field. 787	
reedified castles. 217. lord of Ireland. 223. curseth him-		married <i>E.</i> daughter to <i>Edward</i> the fourth. 789. sayled	
selfe and his sons, and died, his treasure, his issue.	232	into France, and besieged Boloigne. 796. lodged in the	
<i>Henry</i> of Essex. 217. overcome.	221	Tower. 799. rode to <i>Paulus</i> on <i>Saint Georges</i> day. 811.	
<i>Henry</i> the kings sonne crowned. 223. rebelled. 224. recon-		died.	813
ciled. 229. died.	230	Hospitall of the Sauoy.	813
<i>Heracles</i> patriarche of Hierusalem.	230	<i>Henry</i> the eight. 814. crowned. 815. speares appointed to	
Honorable buriall forbidden to aduouterous women.	235	waite on him. 816. besieged Turwine. 823. besieged	
<i>Hugh Bruce</i> rebelled.	246	<i>Turney</i> . 825. procureth <i>Maximilian</i> the emperor to war	
Hedges burned and ditches made plaine ground.	250	vpon the French. 848.ooke shipping towarde Caleis.	
Homage of freeholders.	250	856. landed at Caleis and rode to Boloigne. 944. mar-	
Hospitall <i>S. Thomas</i> in Southwarke,	256	ried lady <i>Anne</i> Boloin. 946. preparation for hir coro-	
<i>Henry</i> the third crowned at Gloucester. 263. at Westminster		nation. 947. crowned. 953. beheaded. 965. married lady	
267. exacteth money of the Londoners. 272. feasted		<i>Lane Seimor</i> . 965. married lady <i>Anne</i> of Cleue. 973. was	
the king of Scots. 274. retained <i>Pictauians</i> . 276. in dan-		diuorced. 977. married lady <i>Katherine Howard</i> . 977. be-	
ger. 280. sayled into Normandy. 282. forced to sel his		headed. 980. his progress to Yorke. 980. king of Ire-	
plate and jewels. 285. fate in the Exchequer. 290. taken		land. 980. married lady <i>Katherine Par</i> .	984
prisoner. 296. deceased.	304	<i>Henry</i> the 8. went to Boloigne. 989. Boloigne yeelded. 990	
<i>Hubert</i> the Iusticiar earle of Kent accused. 272. 274. sent to		<i>Henry</i> the 8. wrote against <i>Luiber</i> . 865. king <i>H.</i> in danger of	
the Tower. 276. died.	282	drowning.	881
High waters.	278. 282	Hampton Court builded.	885. 536
Heitford Castle.	28	Hospitall of <i>S. Iohn</i> of Hierusalem suppressed.	974
High waters.	287. 288. 472.	Holy maide of Kent. 959. 960. headed.	961
Halfpenny coyned.	306	<i>Henry</i> duke of Richmond died.	966
Hot sommer cheape graine.	313	Hollanders condemned for heretikes.	963
<i>Hugh Spencer</i> . 329. 333. banished, executed.	347. 339	Houfe blowne vp with gunpowder.	986
<i>Henry Lacie</i> earle of Lincolne.	331	<i>Hadington</i> brent.	987
Heardmen and women pretend a voyage to Ierusalem. 338		Haile Stones strange.	991. 1170

Henry

# THE TABLE.

<i>Henry Howard</i> Earle of Surrey arraigned and beheaded. 997	997	<i>John Philpot</i> of London. 435. his oration. 440. 447. his	435
<i>Henry</i> the 8. his gift to the Citie of London. 997. died. his	997	good seruice. 449. deccaded.	476
tombe made	998	<i>John Minstlarworsh.</i>	436
Haddington besieged and taken.	1003	lurers heads chopped off.	451
Hospitals given to King E. the first.	1002	<i>John Tyler</i> of Dartford slew a collector.	452
Holds lost in Scotland.	1013	Iustices, Lawyers and lurers beheaded.	453
High altar in Pauls pulled downe.	1019	<i>John Ball</i> a wicked priest chaplain to the rebels. 453. taken	453
Houle blowne vp with gunpowder.	1025	brought to S. Albons, his doctrine. 468. sermon and li-	468
<i>Henry Gray</i> duke of Suffolke beheaded.	1053	bels. 469. hanged. 473 commons of Kent came to black	469
<i>Henry Stewart</i> Lord Darnley married the Queene of Scots.	1118	heath. 453. into Southwarke and to London, brent the	453
1115. was murdered.	1118	Sauoy.	454
Hey sold by waight.	1121	<i>John Newton</i> sent to <i>Wat Tyler</i> .	460
High waters drowned many.	1130	<i>John Causendish</i> slew <i>Wat Tyler</i> .	401
<i>Hall</i> and <i>Wilkeson</i> executed.	1140	<i>John Wraw</i> a rebell. 463. hanged.	472
Horie stealers hanged.	1176	<i>John Causendish</i> lord chiefe Iustice, the Prior of Pery and o-	463
<i>Henry</i> earle of Darby his Emassage into France.	1178	ther beheaded by the rebels.	463
<i>Henry Sidney</i> knight deccaded.	1203	<i>John Lister</i> of Norwich serued by knights. 464. his end. 465	465
Horie-men and foote-men trayned and mustered at Lon-	1304	<i>Jacke Straw</i> his confession at the ga. lowes, and purpote of	465
don.	1304	the rebels.	465

## I

<i>Yreland.</i>	18	<i>John Newton</i> that bare the kings sword.	461
<i>Jerusalem</i> 47. woon by the Christians. 187. taken by the	187	Iustices arested as they sate in parliament.	486
Saracins.	231	Iusting in Smithfield.	491. 496
Ithancester.	78	Iewe baptized at London.	492
Tewes brought into England. 137. raunfomed. 251. spoy-	257	Ile of Man purchased by <i>W. Scrope</i> .	495
led.	257	<i>John Hawkwood</i> , his aces, life, and death.	496
<i>Ing</i> , <i>Baynard</i> lady of Donmow.	192	Irish people to auoide England.	498
James at Bristow a priory.	195	<i>John</i> of Gaunt duke of Lancaster returned out of Gascoigne	502. died.
Ipswich besieged.	214	Iusting on London bridge.	504
<i>John</i> the kings son, lord of Ireland, ware a crowne of pea-	230	Iusting and fasting.	515
cocks feathers.	230	Iusting in Smithfield. 549. in the Tower of London.	669.
<i>John</i> Earle Morton. 233. vsurper of the kingdome. 235. re-	239	in Smithfield.	698
belled 237. his submission.	239	<i>John Gower</i> Poet.	527
Tewes slew themselves.	234	Ile of Man given to the earle of Northumberland.	524
<i>John</i> Earle Morton lord of Ireland, procured an othe of all	242	<i>John Benet</i> Woolman beheaded.	575
men. 242. leased on the kings treasure, tooke on him the	243	<i>John</i> Lord Talbot layed into Normandy. 614. slaine.	615
dukedome of Normandy. 243. elected king of England,	245	<i>John</i> Duke of Bedford Regent of France.	615
crowned, prophetic of him 244 diuorced from his wife,	245	<i>John de la Poole</i> Duke of Suffolke.	636
married another. 245. summoned to the French kings	247	<i>Jacke Cade</i> Captaine of Kent. 640. headed.	647
court. 247. moued to repentance, tooke an othe. 255.	248	<i>John</i> Holland duke of Excester sent to Pontfract castle.	663
resigned the crowne, abloued. 256. layed into Britain.	256	<i>John</i> Markham lord chiefe Iustice.	690
256 returned, cross. d to Ierusalem. 257. inuaded the	262	<i>John</i> Dauby had his hand smitten off in Chespe.	691
lands of his Barons 259 sleth. 260. died.	267	lurers false, set on the pillory.	699
<i>John</i> de Courcy earle of Vlltar.	268	<i>John</i> Typtote Earle of Worceller cruell.	701
<i>Isabell</i> mother to H. the third went into France.	275	<i>John Vere</i> Earle of Oxford kept S. Michaels mount.	708
Tewes Synagoge in London.	277	Iusting at Shine.	795
Tewes at Norwich stole a childe.	277	Inclosures about London pulled downe.	804
<i>Isabell</i> filter to H. the third married to the Emperor.	371	Iusting in the Tower of London. 807. Iusts.	831
Iusting at Rochester. 287. at Reading and at Langley.	253	<i>James</i> king of Scots betrothed to <i>Margaret</i> daughter to <i>Henry</i>	810
Tewes hanged. 189 drowned. 291. spoyled for Vlunie. 253.	313	the seuenth 809. married.	813
executed. 305. 311. Synagogue destroyed. 308. banished	321	lurers for money.	829
England.	420	<i>James</i> king of Scots besieged Norham. 826. slaine at Bram-	871
Tewes Synagogue.	322	stone.	871
Iustices com mitted to the Tower 312. punished.	339	Ile of Rhodus besieged by 5 Turks. 869 yeilded to the.	871
<i>John</i> lord Fury.	345	<i>John</i> Russell.	877
Tewes and Leapers poysoned waters.	368	<i>John</i> Taken.	877
<i>Isabell</i> the queene sent into France. 344. returned.	369	Iustes at Greenwich.	885
<i>John</i> Shordich knight.	415	Iudge <i>Shelley</i> .	927
<i>John</i> of Gaunt boiue.	418	Iusting at Westminster. 957. at Greenwich. 964. at West-	961
Iusting at Linc. Inc. 84. at Windfore. 386 at Woodstock	397	minster.	961. 974. 1166. 1167
400. in Smithfield.	398	<i>John</i> Neshollon, or <i>Lambert</i> brent.	971
Iusting in Smithfield.	398	<i>John</i> Fisher Bishop of Rochester beheaded.	983
<i>John</i> duke of Lancaster chalenged to combat.	398	Iron pieces first cast.	983
Ireland yeilded come to England.	398		1000

# THE TABLE.

<i>John Dudley L. Admirall brent Trayport.</i>	992	<i>Ley a River.</i>	104	
<i>Iohns church by Smithfield blown vp with gun powder.</i>	1004	<i>Leicester repayed.</i>	107. brent.	224
<i>I. Dudley E. of Warwike against the rebels at Norwich.</i>	1006	<i>London bridge.</i>	124. of timber. 221. with arches of stone.	225
<i>Iam butcher brent.</i>	1019	<i>Page.</i>	225. 250	
<i>Iohn Rogers brent.</i>	1059	<i>Lincolne a Bishopricke.</i>	165. brent.	200
<i>Jnogo de Can.</i>	1059	<i>London and Paules church brent.</i>	165. 204	
<i>Iohn Brasford burned.</i>	1060	<i>London with the bridge brent.</i>	207. besieged.	266
<i>Iohn Throckmorton and other executed.</i>	1062	<i>Lightening at Winchelcombe.</i>		182
<i>Iohn Lord Burke murdered.</i>	1270	<i>Lewes in suffex.</i>		185
<i>Iohn Parret knight arraigned.</i>	1271	<i>Line of the Saxons restored.</i>		216
<i>Iohn Tuckering Lord Keeper.</i>	1271	<i>Lefuole in Surrey.</i>		227
		<i>Lewis king of France came into England.</i>	227. offered at T. Bickers thrine.	228
<b>K</b>		<i>Legate from Rome</i>	251. Pandolph.	255
<i>Kings deuoured by beafts.</i>	13	<i>Lewis arruied in England.</i>	Scots did homage to Lewis.	260.
<i>Kinenshore.</i>	58	<i>his power vanquished.</i>	agreed, & returned, Douer Castle	260. 266
<i>Kentish Saxons.</i>	64	<i>besieged.</i>		260. 266
<i>Kencheffer.</i>	74. 75	<i>Leopards sent to H the third.</i>		278
<i>Kensham Abbey founded.</i>	195	<i>Legate put to his shifts.</i>		279
<i>Kenselworth Priory and Castle.</i>	195	<i>London liberties leased.</i>	288. taken by the Earle of Glo-	302
<i>Knighten guilde, now Portefoken ward.</i>	196	<i>cester.</i>	302. Riot in London.	302
<i>King Iohn deceased.</i>	252	<i>Ludlow Castle taken.</i>		297
<i>King of Ierusalem came into England.</i>	270	<i>Legate accursed the Barons.</i>		301
<i>Kenselworth Castle besieged.</i>	300. yeilded.	<i>Letures of Diuinity in Grantbridge.</i>		313
<i>Kings palace at Westminster brent.</i>	318	<i>Londoners rising to meete the Queene.</i>		320
<i>King E. the third besieged Turney.</i>	returned into England.	<i>Leedes Caille besieged.</i>		339
<i>entred the Tower.</i>	371	<i>Lunday an Ile described.</i>		346
<i>King E. besieged Calcis.</i>	380. yeilded. 383. elected king	<i>Late haruett.</i>		358
<i>of Almaine.</i>	384	<i>Library in Oxford.</i>		377
<i>King E. sayled towards Flanders.</i>	387. into France. 400. in-	<i>Laibaltie by Gwines.</i>		396
<i>uaded Burgundy.</i>	416. borrowed sums of money. 423.	<i>Lawes pleaded in the English toong.</i>		419
<i>dieth.</i>	438. his issue.	<i>Leonell Duke of Clarence marrieth.</i>	his wedding feast.	422
<i>Kings three came into England.</i>	419	<i>Page.</i>		473
<i>Knights of the starre.</i>	397	<i>Lightning and thunder.</i>		481
<i>King of Ermony came into England.</i>	480	<i>Londoners fled without cause.</i>		485
<i>Kings bench and Chancery remooued to Yorke.</i>	495	<i>Lords came to the king in the Tower of London.</i>		499
<i>King Richard his conquest of Ireland.</i>	the same described.	<i>Libell against the Cleargy.</i>		576
<i>500. sayled to Calcis.</i>	505. sayled into Ireland.	<i>Lord Strange and his wife did penance.</i>		672
<i>returned.</i>	518. betrayed.	<i>Ludlow spoiled.</i>		677
<i>Kings Colledge in Cambridge.</i>	624	<i>Lords fled the Realme.</i>		679
<i>Knights of the bathe.</i>	695	<i>Lord Scales murdered on the Thamis.</i>		760
<i>Kentish men robbed Flemings.</i>	702	<i>London the kings especiall chamber.</i>		789
<i>Knights made.</i>	713	<i>Lone to Henry the 7.</i>		807
<i>King of Castile landed in England.</i>	811	<i>Langton B. of Winchester.</i>		807
<i>King and queene of Denmarke arruied in England.</i>	874	<i>Lady Katherine of Spaine arruied in England.</i>		871
<i>Katherine Damager diuored</i>	947. deceased.	<i>Lady Hungerford hanged.</i>		968
<i>King H. iupreme head of the church.</i>	942	<i>Lincolnshire men executed.</i>		961
<i>Knights of the Bathe.</i>	949	<i>Latimer preached at Bristow.</i>		961
<i>Knights made at Liech.</i>	987	<i>Lords sworn to the succession.</i>		962
<i>Kets hanged as r. bels.</i>	1013	<i>Lord Dacres of the North arraigned and acquitted.</i>		979
<i>Kentishmen pardoned.</i>	1053	<i>Leonard lord Gray beheaded.</i>		986
<i>King Philp and Cardinall came to Paules Crosse and heard</i>	the Serman.	<i>Lithe spoiled.</i>		1005
<i>Henry.</i>	1058	<i>Lord Sheffield slaine.</i>		1019
<i>King E. the fixt counterfeit.</i>	1060. 1062	<i>Liberties of Southwarke purchased.</i>		1022
<i>King Philp went into Flanders.</i>	1061. returned into Eng-	<i>Liberties of the Suiyard leased.</i>		1029
<i>land.</i>	1067	<i>Lady Jane proclaimed.</i>		1043
<i>Ag. burned at Norwich.</i>	1261	<i>Latin seruice.</i>	1041. in the church.	1061
		<i>Land waters great.</i>		1115
<b>L</b>		<i>Lady Lineaux sent to the Tower.</i>		1138
<i>L Legion of souldiers.</i>	14	<i>League with France confirmed.</i>		1146
<i>Leicester.</i>	15	<i>Land waters bare downe houfes.</i>		1177
<i>Lewes.</i>	11. 16. 18	<i>Londoners receive the queene.</i>		1182
<i>Lond. fortified.</i>	103	<i>Londoners trayned vp with shot</i>	4000.	1203
<i>Lich. 1.</i>	82. 92. 107	<i>League with the Scots.</i>		1203
<i>Lincolne and E. founded.</i>	91	<i>Lotterie at London.</i>		1263
<i>Library of King.</i>	93	<i>Lodowick Grinnell pressed to death.</i>		1263
<i>Lugubere.</i>	95	<i>Londoners flighted by fiers.</i>		1263
				Marocds

# THE TABLE.

## M

<b>M</b> arreds borne.	
<i>Mordred</i> slaine.	
Maurdine.	
Mercians.	
Medeshamsted.	
Medeswell.	
Malmesbury.	
Monkes brent.	
Medway River.	
Milton.	
Mersey an Iland.	
Maldon.	
Manchester.	
Malmesbury built.	
Murrian of cataille.	
Mens flesh eaten for hunger.	
Monasteries rifled.	
Monkes of Ely to W. Conqueror.	
Money paid by waight.	
Man an Ile subdued.	
May Querrey in Southwarke.	
Merton priorie.	
Money makers punished.	
<i>Maud</i> the emperesse returneth into England. 202. fled. 210.	
besieged. 211. fled into Normandy. 212. deceased.	
Men contended with women for length of haire.	
Marleborow besieged.	
<i>Miles</i> Earle of Hereford fled.	
Malmesbury towne and castle woun by <i>Henry</i> son to <i>Maud</i>	
the Emperesse. 214. adopted by king <i>Stephen</i> . 214. <i>Eustace</i>	
king <i>Stephens</i> sonne died.	
Monkster strange.	
Mint in Ireland.	
<i>Matild</i> the faire poysoned.	
<i>Morgan</i> a bastard elected Bishop of Durham.	
Mountferrill Castle.	
Montgomery castle founded.	
Measures amended.	
Mary hospitall at London.	
Marshall <i>Gilbert</i> .	
Mart at Westminster.	
Marke of gold or silver.	
<i>Magnus</i> king of Man.	
<i>Manfell</i> one of the kings chaplains feasted the king.	
<i>Mary</i> Constable of Gloucester.	
Monmouth Castle rased.	
Mercers chappell in London.	
Monasteries rifled.	
Mortalitie of men.	
<i>Mortimer</i> sent to the Tower. 340. 342. breaketh out of the	
Tower. 344. apprehended. 356. headed.	
Men brent in a Church. 3000.	
Markes.	
Maioir of London feasted foure kings.	
<i>Mandeville</i> deceased. 425. his Epitaph.	
Mewes by Charing Crosse.	
Men of Ric spoyle <i>Peters</i> hauen in France, and fetch their	
bell out of Normandy.	
<i>Mercer</i> a Scot tooke ships of Scarberow.	
Murther in the Church of Westminster.	
Mannor in Essex belonging to the Prior of S. Johns spoy-	
led.	
Marshall of the Marshallsey beheaded.	
<i>Michael</i> de la Pole Chancellor and earle of Suffolke. 480. de-	
ceased.	
Maioir and Sheriffes of London committed, and the Lon-	
doners called before the king &c.	
<i>Man delin</i> a priest counterfeited king <i>Richard</i> , was execu-	
ted.	
Monstrous fights at Bedford.	
Many men hanged and some brent for rebellion.	
Men forswore the land.	
Mayden of Godin France.	
Men hanged and their liues saued.	
Mountford Captaine slaine.	
<i>Markham</i> chief Justice, lost his office for doing iustice.	
<i>Morton</i> Archbishop of Canterbury.	
Men brought out of the new found Ilands.	
Masse chaines of gold.	
<i>Mary</i> sister to H. the eight married to the French king. 832	
<i>Margaret</i> queene of Scots came into England. 847. retur-	
ned.	
Marriage of <i>Henry</i> the eight in question. 908. argued in	
open court.	
Marchionesse of Pembroke.	
Mulster great at London.	
<i>Mary</i> Querres Priory made a parish church.	
Men of 40 l. land knighted.	
<i>Mary</i> king <i>Henries</i> sister deceased.	
Mewes by Charing Crosse brent.	
Maide boyled in Smithfield.	
Moriar pieces cast for shooting wilde fier.	
Men brent in the Hedgehogge.	
<i>Mary</i> Rose drowned.	
Mulleborow field.	
Martiall law.	
Mulster of horsemen before king <i>Edward</i> .	
Monstrous fishes.	
Merry disports at Christmas in the Court.	
Mutcouie voyage.	
Marriages three at Durham place.	
Men drowned at London bridge.	
<i>Mary</i> proclaimed queene at Norwich, preparation against	
her. 1030. <i>John</i> Duke of Northumberland sent against	
her. 1031. proclaimed at London. 1033. crowned. 1041	
Marriage of king <i>Philip</i> and queene <i>Mary</i> .	
Men brent at Stratford.	
<i>Margare</i> and <i>Marquess</i> of Baden. 1116. returned.	
<i>Martin</i> Bullocke hanged.	
<i>Mathew</i> Parker Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.	
Men hanged at Barret.	
<i>Maibew</i> Hamont brent at Norwich.	
Mounseur D. of Aniou.	
Mise deuoure grassie.	
Man hanged for dead and liued after.	
Marshall of London fir <i>T. Wilford</i> .	
Meanes for intreacie of peace to be had.	

## N

<b>N</b> orthumbers.	
<i>Natanled.</i>	
Normans of name came in with the Conqueror.	
<i>Norman</i> lands given him.	
Normans valiant. 168. their faces shauen.	
Normandy payned for 6666 pounds.	
Northam Tower builded.	
Nottingham brent 209. besieged.	
Northwich increased. 214. spoyled. 301. perished by	
figr.	
Notwich	



# THE TABLE.

Norwich Minster brent. 223.	Riot at Norwich. 303.	wal-	Penham.	117
led. 321.	brent.	620	Pauls Church in London new founded. 166.	Pauls cross.
Night-walkers in London murdered men.		225	291. the new Wirke.	334
Normandy yielded to the French.		248	Priory of S. John of Jerusalem.	190
Noble men disherited by king John.		253	Priory of Clerken well.	191
New castle burned. 285.	drowned.	367	Priory and hospital of S. Bartholmew.	191
Newham in Devonshire.		222	Priory of the Trinitie in London.	194
Northampton besieged.		255	Parke ad Woodstocke the first in England.	197
New coyne of golde.		551	Pater noster in English sent from Rome.	220
Nicholas Burde laine.		623	Publicans whipped.	221
Normandy lost by the English.		638	Price of wines.	244
Newbery spoyled.		677	Peter of Ponfract. 252. 255. hanged.	256
Norwich defaced with fier.		813	Peter of Saucy. 205. Richmond. 281. keeper of Dover.	282
New Testament printed in English.		932	Popes war robe brent.	283
Nicholas Carew knight beheaded.		971	Pestilence. 284. 291. Peace.	904. 418. 423. 717. 800
New hauen in Sussex invaded by French.		992	Pirates hanged.	285
New coynes of gold and silver.		1022	Parliament at Salisbury. 196. at Gidington.	231
Nicholas Throckmorton knight arraigned.		1055	Parliament at London. 285. called Mad. 291. at Westminster	
Necessitie of the poore relieved.		1060	291. at the new Temple. 292. at Winchester. 299. at	
Nicholas Bacon L. Keeper deceased.		1160	Kene worth. 301. at Marleborow. 302. at Gloucester.	
Noble men of France arrived in England.		1167	306. at Adon Burel. 300. at Gloucester. 311. at Yorke	
Naunwich brent.		1176	318. at Stebenheath. 318. at Carlile. 323. at Northamp-	
Nauy to the sea.		1245	ton. 328. at London. 330. 335. 343. at Yorke. 341. at	

O

Oppressors hanged.	20
Oundall.	84
Oxford Universitie.	105
Outlaws.	144
Odo Bishop of Bayon. 161. 162. put in prison.	163
Order of knight hood amongst the Saxons.	164
Othe to Maud the Emperesse.	202
Oney by Oxford.	203
Oxe fat xij. d. the piece. 226. sixtie spent at a dinner.	288
Outlaws in England.	234
Oxford forsaken. 250. townes men, and schollers at discorde.	255
Oxford in discord.	317
Othe to the king.	292
Oney North.	307
Oliuer Ingham.	345
Officers remooved from the kings Court.	486
Owen Glouderdew and the Welch men rebell. 527. tooke Mortimer.	531
Olde Castle fir John taken. 581. his answer.	582
Owen Tenthir prisonor.	620. 670
Order of Fealt.	714
Order taken against enclosures.	858
Orations and answers.	909
Owle bridge borne downe.	1115
Owlesry brent, Milnall brent.	1119

P

Pisces.	19	Priefts became theeues.	319
Pickering.	19	Peace with France.	419
Prodigious signes.	20	Peter pence forbid den to be paid.	417
Pelagius.	49. 52. 53	Priefts officers to the king.	420
Pisces wall.	51. 81	Parish churches in England, common opinia reprovod.	420
Portefimo th.	58	Page.	424
Pauls in London founded.	65. 77	Pembrooke earle taken prisoner.	426
Pend. his song.	81. 55	Procession of the Londoners.	436
Peterborow. 84. burned.	192	Fekilence in the North.	448. 490. 491. 542
Priory of Stanes.	64	Pride of West Tiler, his answer to the doubled maker, and	460
Peter, c. cc.	97	to the king.	



[illegible]

# THE TABLE

<i>Richard earle of Cornwall.</i>	272.	<i>king of Almaine.</i>	290.	<i>Robert Pakington murdered.</i>	967
<i>taken prisoner.</i>	296			<i>Roads made into Scotland.</i>	985
<i>Robert and Roger Bacon.</i>	276			<i>Rebels executed.</i>	1017
<i>Robert Grosfeld.</i>	283.	288		<i>Rolph a Vane and other knights executed.</i>	1025
<i>Robert Bacon.</i>	285			<i>Ridley and Latimer burnt.</i>	1061
<i>Rot of sheepe in England.</i>	305			<i>Religious houses suppressed.</i>	1082
<i>Round table at Kenilworth.</i>	306.			<i>Royall exchange.</i>	1131
<i>Rhodes woun by christians.</i>	374			<i>Rogues burned through the eare.</i>	1137
<i>Richard de Bery B. of Durham.</i>	376			<i>Rowland Grey Earle of Kent deceased.</i>	1141
<i>Risefanke.</i>	383			<i>Robert Dudley Earle of Leicester transported over to Flushing.</i>	1189.
<i>Robert Kyles.</i>	396.	416.	446	<i>installed and the states sworn.</i>	1193.
<i>Richard the second.</i>	439.			<i>deceased.</i>	1259
<i>he took the Tower of London.</i>	453.			<i>he rayled a power and rode into Kent.</i>	466.
<i>entred Scotland.</i>	478.			<i>renewed his othe of coronation.</i>	488.
<i>received into London with great joy.</i>	493.			<i>went into Ireland.</i>	498.
<i>Rice a towne in Suffex burnt.</i>	442				
<i>Rokes borow burned by Scots.</i>	443				
<i>Rebellion in England.</i>	451.	86.			
<i>Robert Belkin pe Justice.</i>	451				
<i>Rebels mured up in a cellar at the Sauoy, brake vp the fleet, burnt Fleetstreete, spoyled the Temple, murder one other in their drunkenesse.</i>	455.				
<i>went to Westminster, brake vp Newgate, behead many, besiege the Tower of London, burnt the hospitall of Saint Iohn by Smithfield.</i>	456.				
<i>commande the King to come to them, they enter the Tower, set out the Archbishop.</i>	457.				
<i>beheaded him and other.</i>	468				
<i>Robert Trissilian Justice fare at Chelmsford.</i>	479				
<i>Robert Vere Marquesse of Diueline.</i>	481				
<i>Rochester bridge beaten downe.</i>	482				
<i>Rochell wine for xij. s. iij. d. the tunne.</i>	486				
<i>Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland and other banished.</i>	543				
<i>Roylston burnt.</i>	543				
<i>Robert Kyles died.</i>	546				
<i>Rochester bridge.</i>	550				
<i>Robin Mend market.</i>	615.	622			
<i>Richard Duke of Yorke Regent of France.</i>	620				
<i>Richard Beauchampe Earle of Warwike.</i>	622				
<i>Richard witch burnt at Tower hill.</i>	628				
<i>Roger Bolinbroke.</i>	637				
<i>Roane yeilded to the French.</i>	644.				
<i>Rebels of Essex pight their fieldes on the miles ende.</i>	646				
<i>pardoned.</i>	648				
<i>Rebels in Kent and Suffex executed.</i>	648				
<i>Richard Duke of Yorke pretended title to the crowne.</i>	648.				
<i>his declaration.</i>	649.				
<i>his letter to the king.</i>	650.				
<i>his submission and oth to the king.</i>	653.				
<i>his practise.</i>	656.				
<i>married to London.</i>	657.				
<i>attainted.</i>	673.				
<i>his othe.</i>	681.				
<i>slaine at Wakefield.</i>	684				
<i>Robert Poynings sworde bearer to Iacke Cade proclaymed traytor.</i>	666				
<i>Reginald Peacocke B. of Chichester.</i>	667				
<i>Robert of Riddal.</i>	700				
<i>Richard Duke of Gloucester went with an army into Scotland.</i>	719				
<i>Richard the third elected king in the Guild hall of London.</i>	763.				
<i>crowned.</i>	767.				
<i>slaine.</i>	787				
<i>Richmount and Paynards Castle new builded.</i>	807.				
<i>Richmond fiered.</i>	811.				
<i>gallery full.</i>	812				
<i>Regent of England and a shippe burnt.</i>	822				
<i>Richard Hun hanged in Lollard Tower.</i>	833				
<i>Rome sacked.</i>	879.	887.	889		
<i>Register booke in euery church.</i>	970				
<i>Rode of Grace shewed at Paules.</i>	969				
<i>Richard Farmer in the pramanire.</i>	975				
<i>Ralph Ewars his good seruice.</i>	967				

S

<i>Scotland.</i>	3
<i>Seuerne a Riuer.</i>	13
<i>Shafte-bury.</i>	14
<i>Stamford.</i>	15
<i>Seuernes wall.</i>	39
<i>Stonehenge.</i>	59
<i>South Saxons.</i>	69
<i>Seceleley.</i>	70
<i>Stoneflac.</i>	71
<i>Soham.</i>	73
<i>Sutton Wallis.</i>	74
<i>Scourtford.</i>	77.
<i>Sebbaking.</i>	79.
<i>buried in Paules.</i>	80
<i>Sirenes shals.</i>	82
<i>Scriptures to be read.</i>	88
<i>Segitwald.</i>	88
<i>Shereborne.</i>	97
<i>Selley.</i>	97
<i>Starres blasfing.</i>	98.
<i>186.</i>	196
<i>Sudbery.</i>	104
<i>Stafford.</i>	107
<i>Shrewsbury.</i>	107
<i>Saxons described, their apparell.</i>	139
<i>Sigand Archbishop deposed.</i>	147
<i>Scots inuade England.</i>	149.
<i>did homage.</i>	150.
<i>spoyled Northumberland.</i>	157
<i>Synod at Windfor.</i>	150
<i>Symon Sewliz.</i>	155
<i>Shrewsbury in Shropshire.</i>	157
<i>Salisbury the olde Minster.</i>	183
<i>Shireborne.</i>	200
<i>Stephen crowned king.</i>	106.
<i>taken prisoner.</i>	209.
<i>deliuered by exchange and fled.</i>	211.
<i>died, his issue.</i>	215
<i>Scots inuade Northumberland.</i>	208.
<i>their king taken prisoner.</i>	224
<i>Stanford besieged.</i>	214
<i>Sheepe fatte 4 d. the piece.</i>	226
<i>States created.</i>	244
<i>Sterling money.</i>	239
<i>Scots did homage.</i>	246
<i>Stephen Langton elected Archbishop of Canterbury and England interdicted.</i>	249.
<i>releated.</i>	256
<i>Stortford Castle ouerthrowne.</i>	251
<i>Stephen Archbishop of Canterbury and other complaine of king Iohn to the Pope.</i>	253.
<i>returned.</i>	256
<i>Strangers banished.</i>	267

Subsidie

# THE TABLE.

Subsidie demanded and denied.	275	Sir <i>Iohn Gates</i> and <i>fir T. Talmer</i> beheaded.	1039
Salisbury brent.	277	Subsidie pardoned.	1041
Statutes of Metron.	278	Spirit in a wall.	1056
Salisbury new.	279	<i>Siluer Bolton</i> brought to the Tower.	1057
<i>Symon Mountford</i> earle of Leicester. 279. slaine.	298	Spaniard hanged.	1061
Schollers did penance.	279	Subsidie granted.	1118
Sanoy place in London.	284	Souldiers transported into Ireland.	1121
sheepheards pretended a voyage to Ierusalem.	287	Ships sent to the seas.	1131
Strangers banished.	291	Sir <i>T. Sackville</i> tent into France.	1119
Scutage paid 291. of euery knights fee.	310	<i>Shon Onale</i> slaine.	1169
Starre blasing.	297	Starre strange appeared.	1159. 1165.
Scots did homage.	314	Sicknesse at Oxford strange.	1154
Sterling money.	329	<i>Stubs</i> and <i>Page</i> lost their hands.	1168
Scotland subdued.	320	Seminaries executed.	1170
Somerton Castle.	331	<i>Somerville</i> and <i>Arden</i> arraigned and executed.	1176
Scots invade England, burne the suburbs of <i>Yorke</i> . 338.	341	Seminaries executed. 1177. banished. 1188. executed. 1203. 1239. 1259. 1263. 1270. 1274. 1303.	1201
ouercome. 377. entred Northumberland.	473	Souldiers transported to the low Countries.	1187
Spoile in England.	479	Sicknesse and death strange at Excester.	1202
States created & knights made. 363. 630. 632. 636. 637. 690. 83c. 1114. 1136. 1139		Service in Ireland by <i>fir Richard Bingham</i> .	1204
Southampton spoyled.	365	Souldier throwne from an high tower.	1236
Survey of the whole realme.	373	Spanish fleet discovered. 1249. flieth. 1255. overthrown.	
Serpent in Oxford shire.	387	Page.	1158
<i>Stephen</i> Chappell at Westminster.	398	Sermon of thankesgiuing.	1259. 1260
Subsidie of Woles.	419. 488	Souldiers sent into France.	1271
Sir <i>Symon Burley</i> commissioner in Kent, sent a man of Graues end to Rochester Castle and the people rose for his deliuerance.	451	Saylers executed at the Tower wharffe.	1271
<i>Symon Burghley</i> and many other committed to prison, beheaded.	487	Souldiers pressed on Easter day, sent to Dover, and discharged.	1281
Scots invade England.	531	Ships prepared to the seas and men trayned for the warres by the Londoners.	1304
subsidie granted.	600. 605		
strangers to be lodged within English hostes.	600		
strangers to pay to the king.	622		
Sandwich spoyled by the French.	664		
spanish ships taken by the earle of Warwike.	669		
statute against stuffed garments.	692		
sheepe transported.	696		
Sir <i>Thomas Cooke</i> his troubles.	697		
Shores wife one of E. the 4 concubines prisoner in Ludgate.	752		
750. begged ere she died.	752		
Stoke field.	790		
Sanctuary men executed.	799		
Shine the kings mannor brent.	804		
<i>Sebastian Gabato</i> his voyage.	804		
Shoemakers sonne fayned to be Earle of Warwike.	805		
Sir <i>Iohn Wallepo</i> brent Trayport.	831		
Strangers in London their number misl. ked.	848		
Sweating sicknesse.	852		
Subsidie great to H. the eight.	873		
Sir <i>Ralph Sadler</i> .	925		
Sir <i>Iohn Russell</i> .	925		
States created.	932. 971. 1000. 1016. 1022		
Suite to Rome forbidden	932. 946		
S. James hospitall made the Kings house.	943		
Stout Frier tolde the preacher he lied.	943		
Subsidie of iij. s. the l. lands, & xij. goods, & 4. fiftens.	974		
Seauen persons executed.	977		
Sheriffes of London sent to the Tower.	981		
<i>gomersei</i> herault killed.	983		
subsidie great.	984		
getwees put downe.	995		
Scutveers sent out.	1003		
<i>Stephen Gardiner</i> sent to the Tower. 1004. his letter.	1012		
deputachi. 026. L. chancellor. 1041. his library & goods spoyled. 1047. deceased.	1061		
Sweating sicknesse.	1021		

## T

Tham's a river.	2
Trent a River.	3
Tonge Castle.	55
Tilbery.	78. 44
Theoksbury.	85. 191
Tamworth.	88
Tenthe given to the Church.	99
Tocester.	106
Thilwall.	107
Trench cast about London.	117
Tower of London builded.	157
Theenes punished.	165
Tempest of winde at London overthrew 600. houses.	182.
thunder.	246. 247. 495
Thamis and Medway dried vp.	196
Templars knights.	198
<i>Theobald</i> Archbishop of Canterbury shut vp in prison.	213
Toades devour a man.	228
Templars slaine and headed.	231
Taxe iij. s. euery plow land.	245
Taxe iij. marks & halfe of a knights fee.	248. 251. 252. 316
Taxe greuous.	534. 543
Thunders and lightnings.	249
Tempests. 270. 276. at Middleron.	320
Tower of London fortified.	280
Templars on great glory.	281
Templars apprehended. 328. condemned.	331
Tempest at sea 287. of winde.	418
Tempest of thundering.	287
Tenthes granted.	309
Turniament forbidden.	320
Traylebaston.	322. 340. 371
Tanners tonne claimed the crowne.	335
Theenes in habit of friers.	337

Thomas

# THE TABLE.

Thomas of Lancaster beheaded.	340	Wury forbidden.	305
Turnament at Hertford 357. in cheape.	358	Wituals prized.	335
Tower Royall in London.	463	Wfe of Guns.	444
Three schismaticall Popes.	564	Wfford Earle of Suffolke, lacky to sir Roger de Bein. 464. died	464
Tower of Greenwich.	619	Wodainly.	471
Thomas Walde Equeie pardoned.	636	Victorie against the Irish.	1165
Tower of London besieged.	678	Voyage to Portingale.	1263
The Brake or Racke in the Tower.	697	Wulfinghamton brent.	1264
Tower of London yeilded to the maior of London.	702	Wurly youthe. executed at the Tower hill.	1280
Thomas the ballard Faulconbridge besieged London.	704		
beheaded.	707		
Thomas Burdet beheaded.	715		
T. Burdet equire of Arrow.	719		
Truce with Scotland.	781		
Tree of common wealth.	791		
Thomas Wolsey Cardinall his ascending, &c.	818		
T. Wolsey suppressed priories.	814		
T. Cromwell his counsell 922 his comfort. 924. 925. his ri-	880		
gging. 930. 946. 962. 966. knight of the Garter. 968.	976		
Earle of Essex. 974. beheaded.	963		
T. Moore chancelor. 931. discharged. 943. beheaded.	944		
Tower of London repaired.	943		
Thomas Audley L. Chancelor.	970		
T. Beckes shrine taken downe and his bones brent.	969		
Thomas lord Howard sent to the Tower. 966. died.	979		
T. Fines lord Dacres of the South arraigned.	985		
Termes kept at S. Albons.	1016		
Thomas Howard D. of Norffolke and H. earle of Surrey sent	1067		
to the Tower.	1069		
Thomas L. Grey beheaded.	1073		
T. Stafford tooke Scarborough Castle, beheaded.	1073		
Termes at Westminster small.	1073		
Treatie of peace about the deliury of Calcis.	1108		
Tempest at Nottingham.	1113		
T. Fuch knight drowned.	1115		
Termes kept at Hertford.	1123		
Thamis frozen ouer.	1123		
T. Howard D. of Norffolke sent to the Tower.	1126		
Thomas Earle of Suffex Lieutenant in the North against the	1152		
rebels, the earle of Warwike sent against them, they fled,	1161		
rebels executed at Durham. 1125. Leonard Dacres fled in-	1161		
to Scotland. 1125. Earle of Suffex made a iourney into	1168		
Scotland.	1170		
Tilt boate drowned.	1174		
T. Apetre his trayterous fact.	1204		
Thomas Bromky lord Chancelor.	1241		
Two men of strange stature.	1271		
Termes kept at Hertford.	1271		
Thomas Ratcliff Earle of Suffex deceased.	1272		
Thomas Cauendish his voyage.	1288		
Thomas Bromley L. Chancelor died.	1299		
Thames nigh void of water.	1305		
Tilt boate drowned.			
Termes kept at Hertford.			
Triumph at London for good successe on the sea and at			
Cadez.			
Tempest in the Church of Wels.			
Tilt boate drowned.			

## V

V. Inyardes in Britaine.	43
V. Julia and the virgins.	49
V. Iserceller.	84
V. Iser flew his fonnas.	84
V. Iseru Spalcorne.	129
Vicount of Milaine his confession.	261

## W

Wales.	6
Winchester. 14. Monastery. 96. Spoyle. 100. Bishop	210
his saying. 110. brent.	18
Waies notable.	44
Walbroke.	56
Wepped Acete.	71
Wight an Island.	78. 128
Westminster.	85
Worcester.	89. 107
Winchelcombe.	94
Wel Saxons.	97
Wodnesbury.	98
Wels a Colledge. 97. a Bishops sea.	106
Ware. 104. builded.	106
Wodnesfield.	114
Wulfinghamton. 106. Colledge founded.	106
Wicham.	107
Wigmore.	107
Warwike.	107
Watersbury.	114
Warwell. 110. Warwell founded.	211
Wilton. 128. brent.	
William Duke of Normandy arrived in England. 130. crow-	
ned 135. his othe. 136. conquered Ely. 152. he waited	
France, and fell sicke. 167. his gift to the Abbey of Cane,	
his words before his death, and Confession. 167. he held	
nor England by right of inheritance, but by conquest, he	
commendeth his prelates, counsellers his children. 171.	
of his sonne Robert, commendeth William, gift to Henry	
and words to him. 172. his sons left him, to helpe them-	
selues, he releaseth all prisoners except his brother Odo,	
his sodaine decease. 174. body despoyled left naked, bur-	
ied by a poore fouldier. 175. towne of Cane fiered, ser-	
mon at his buriall, his buriall forbidden till his graue	
were purchased. 176. his last farewell with a foule fauor,	
and could not bee found vncorrupted. 500. yeeres after	
his death (as some haue fabuled) his monument defaced,	
bones broken and dispersed, his issue. 177. his treasure	
giuen to the poore.	178
William Bishop of London, his Epitaph.	142
Weremouth burned.	149
W. his offering at Ely.	152
Wichford in Grantbridge shire.	152
Waltheof or Walden beheaded.	154
William Conqueror curseth his sonne Robert. 157. his ora-	
tion to his Nobles.	162
Water floods.	165. 189
Wels a Riuer by London.	165
Walbroke.	165
Westminster hall.	187
William Rufus, crowned, price of his hosen iij. s. his nobles	
rebell. 178 abuses of his time. 179. he inuadeth his elder	
brother Robert, his brother H. inuadeth him. 182. he inua-	
ded Wales, his cruelte. 185. his worde. 189. slaine. 189	
W. Earle Moriton disinherited.	192
Windsor	

# THE TABLE.

Windfor towne and Castle. 194. Colledge. 205. wine made at Windfor.	205	<i>William de La Poole</i> Duke of Suffolke banished and murdred.	639
Warwike with the Colledge.	201	<i>William Alceoth</i> B. of Salisbury murdered.	647
Worcester Citie and Monastery brent.	196	Wheate for xij. the quarter.	957
Warham Castle besieged.	211	<i>Walter Walker</i> beheaded for a word speaking.	689
Wallingford besiege. i.	209. 212	<i>William Stanley</i> beheaded.	799
Worcester brent and wasted. 209. besieged.	213	<i>William Capell</i> put in suite.	800
Waltham Abbey.	226	Wine, salt, and wheate cheape.	805
<i>William Longshampe</i> B. of Elv. 234. put to his shifts.	236	Weathercocke of Pauls blowne downe.	811
<i>William</i> with the beard, seditious, a false accuser of his brother, &c.	240	Warre betwene the Emperour and French king.	864
<i>William Longespe</i> Earle of Salisbury.	241	Waters great.	886
Welch men did homage. 250. invade England, their pledges hanged.	252	Wauering of newfangled multitude.	920
Wrastling at London, a tumult there.	269	<i>Folsey</i> Cardinall sick. 929. lay at Richmond 933. his last Maundy. 934. prepared for his translation. 935. arre.	937
Women monstrous.	284	sted.	937
<i>Winchelsey</i> drowned.	287	<i>William Fitz William</i> knight, treasurer of the kings house.	934
Wales subdued to the lawes of England.	287	Westminster and Bristow made Bishopricks.	980
Worcester besieged.	255	White meates licensed to be eaten in Lent.	983
Westcheape in London brent.	297	Wight invaded by the French.	992
Water floods.	307. 311. 361. 538	<i>William Foxley</i> slepe more then 14. daies, and as manie nights.	995
Wales subdued, deuided into shires.	309	Weathercocke of Pauls.	1043
Windfor Castle burned.	316	<i>William</i> lord Howard lieutenant of the Citie.	1046
<i>W. Wales</i> of Scotland.	322	<i>William Thomas</i> executed.	1050
Wheate forbidden to be made into malt.	336	<i>William Flower</i> brent at Westminster.	1059
<i>Walter Stapleton</i> B. of Excester beheaded.	346	Warre with France.	1068
Wooll forbidden to be transported.	364	<i>William Giffrey</i> a fayned Christ whipped.	1095
<i>William de la Po'e</i> made knight Banaret.	368	<i>William Pawlet</i> lord treasurer deceased.	1136
Wight assailed by the French.	370. 534. 535	<i>William</i> lord Howard Baron of Effingham, lord priuy seale deceased.	1140
<i>William Monacute</i> Earle of Salisbury crowned king of Man.	373	<i>William</i> lord Somerset Earle of Worcester sent into France. 1140. robbed on the sea.	1141
Wooll granted to the king.	375	<i>Walter Deuereux</i> Earle of Essex sent into Ireland.	1146
<i>Walter Mauny</i> knight. 385. deceased.	425	died.	1153
<i>Walter Bentley.</i>	396	Water floods great.	1162
Wooll Staples in England. 398. at Calcis. 418. in England.	423	<i>William Bruster</i> and <i>Mary Brems</i> smouldred to death.	1173
Page.	416	<i>W. Perrey</i> executed.	1180
Windfor Castle enlarged.	416	Wall falling slew five persons.	1187
<i>Winchelsey</i> Inuaded by the French.	416	Women brent in Smithfield.	1271. 1275. 1279
<i>Vicham</i> B. of Winchester. 421. deprived. 429. 431. reauereth. 436. Chancellor of England. 489. his Colledge.	538	Winds great.	1274
Page.	428	Water floods great.	1277
Whot sommer.	428	<i>W. Cicell</i> lord treasurer deceased.	1303
<i>Wicliffe Iohn</i> 431. 450. died, and his letters testimoniall of him from Oxford.	474	Winds boisterous.	1305
Wight taken by the French.	443		
<i>Winchelsey</i> defended from the French. 443. taken by them.	449		
Wheate and wine cheape.	448		
Whirecote to ride in.	457		
<i>William Vvalworth</i> Maior of London arrested <i>Vval</i> Tiler and wounded him. 461. relieved the king, and was knighted.	462		
Water floods.	495		
Westminster hall repayed.	514		
Witch of Eye brent.	628		
<i>William Lichfield</i> preacher.	636		

Y

**Y**Orke builded. 13. cathedrall Church. 91. Yorke besieged. 259  
 Younger brother beguileth the elder (sco.) 192  
 Yorke minster burned. 207 Citie brent. 227  
 Yarmouth and Dunwich spoyled. 308  
 Yarmouth. 316  
 Yorke monastery repayed. 227  
 Yorke minster burned. 655

F I N I S.



# A BRIEFVE DESCRIPTION OF ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, WALES, AND CORNWALL.



RITAINE, or Brutanne which by two names is called England and Scotland, is an Iland in the Ocean Sea, situate right over against France: one part of which the Englishmen do inhabit, another part Scots, the third part Welshmen, and the fourth part Cornishmen. All they either in language, conditions, or lawes, doe differ among themselves.

England (so called of Englishmen, which did winne the same) is the greatest part, and is divided into xl. Counties, which wee call Shires; whereof tenne (that is to say) Kent,

fourte Counties of Shires,

Sussex, Surrey, Southampton, Barkshire, Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, Somersetshire, Devonshire and Cornwall, doe containe the first part of that Iland: which part bounding toward the South, standeth betwene the Thames and the Sea.

From thence to the river of Trent, which passeth through the middle of England be sixtene shires, whereof the first sixe (standing Eastward) are Essex, Middlesex, Hartfordshire, Suffolke, Northfolke, and Cambridge shire: the other ten which stand more in the middle of the Country are these: Bedforde, Huntingdon, Buckingham, Oxford, Northampton, Rutland, Leicesters, Nottingham, Warwick, & Lincoln. After these there be sixe which border Westward vpon Wales, as Gloucester, Hereford, Worcester, Shropshire, Stafford, Chester, & Cheshire. About the middle of the Region lie Darbshire, Yorkshire, Lancashire, and Cumberland. On the left hand toward the West is Westmerland. Against the same is the Bishopricke of Durham, & Northumberland, which boundeth vpon the North in the Marches of Scotland.

These shires be divided into xlii. Bishopricks, which by a Greke worde, be called Dioceses. Of which Dioceses, Canterburie hath Kent. Rochester hath part of Kent. London hath Essex, Middlesex, and part of Hartford. Gloucester hath Sussex. Winchester hath Hampshire, Surrey, & the Isle of Wight. Salisbury hath Barkshire, and Wiltshire. Exeter hath Devonshire and Cornwall. Bath and Wells hath Somersetshire. Worcester hath Worcestershire, and part of Warwickshire. Gloucester hath Gloucestershire. Hereford hath part of Shropshire, and Herefordshire. Couentrie and Lichfield hath Staffordshire, Darbshire, part of Warwickshire, & part of Shropshire. Lincoln which is the greatest, lying betwene the Thames and Humber, hath Lincoln, Leicesters, Huntingdon, Bedford, Buckingham, and the residue of

A.

Hartford.



Hartfordshire. Ely hath Cantabriggeshire, and the Isle of Ely. Norwich hath Suffolke and Norfolk, and part of Cantabriggeshire. Oxford hath Oxfordshire. Peterborough hath Northamptonshire and Rutland. Wiltshire hath Wiltshire. And this is the prouince of the Archbishop of Canterburie, which is the Primate of all England, with Wales. The Archbishop of Yorke, hath Yorkeeshire, Nottinghamshire, and a p[ar]ce of Lancashire. The Bishop of Durham hath the Bishopricke so commonly called, and Northumberland. Chester hath Cheshire, most part of Lancashire, Richmond, part of Flintshire, and part of Denbighshire. Carlisle containeth Cumberland and Westmerland: and this is the other Prouince of the Archbishop of Yorke, which is another Primate of England, & was of long time also Primate of all Scotland: but these Dioceses take their names of the Cities where those Seas bee placed, the chiefe whereof, is London, where in the beginning was the Archbishop's See, but afterwarde transposed to Canterbury, a citie in Kent, placed in a soile amiable and pleasant.

The Riuer of  
Thames.

London standeth in Middlesex, on the North side of the Thames. That most excellent and goodlie Riuer hath first the name of Isle, and beginneth in Coteswolde in Gloucestershire, about a mile from Elibery, and as much from the hie way called Fosse: and it taketh first the name of Tamise, nere to Dorchester byrge, where the Riuer Came and the foresaid Isle meete, and so with a maruellous quiet course it passeth by London, and then breaketh into the French Ocean by maine tydes, which twise in foure and twentie houres space both ebbe and flowe more then threescore miles, to the great commoditie of travellers, by which all kindes of Marchandise be easily conueied to London, the principall store and staple for all commodities within this Realme. Upon the same Riuer is placed a stone byrge, a worke verie rare and marvellous, which byrge hath (reckoning the draw byrge) twentie arches made of fouresquare stone, of height threescore foote, and of breadth thirty foote, distant one from another twentie foote, compact and ioined together with vaults & cellers: Upon both sides be houses builded, y<sup>e</sup> it seemes rather a continual street then a byrge.

London byrge.

The Ocean sea doeth bound England, the first part of Brytaine, East and South, Wales & Cornwall West. The Riuer of Tweede diuident England and Scotland, North. The length of the Ilande beginneth at Portsmouth in the South part, and endeth at Tweede in the North, containing 220. miles.

This Realme aboue other is most fruitfull on this side Humbye: for beyond it is fuller of mountaines. And although to the holders of that Countrey a farre off, it maie seeme plaine, yet it is full of manie hilles, and those for the most part volde of trees, the balles whereof bee verie delectable, inhabited for the most part by noble men, who according to ancient and olde order, desire not to dwell in Cities, but nere vnto balles and riuers in seuerall villages, for auoiding of vehement windes, because that Ilande naturally is stormie.

The Riuer of  
Humber.

Humbye hath his beginning a little on this side Yorke, and by and by runneth Southward, and then holdeth his course Eastward, and so into the maine sea, greatly encreased by the riuers of Paine and Trent.

Trent

Trent beginneth a little from Stafford, running through Darbithire, and Leicesterhire, passing by Lichfield and Nottingham on the right hand, and Dune on the left hand: so that both those Riuer doe make an Ilande which is called Auxolme, and then ioyning together on this side Kingstone vpon Hull, a goodly marchant towne, they fall into Humbze: by which Riuer they may arrive out of France, Germanie and Denmarke.

The Riuer of Trent.

England is fruitfull of beasts, and aboundeth with cattell: whereby the inhabitants be rather for the most part grassers then plowmen, because they giue themselves more to feeding, then to tillage. So that almost the third part of the Countrey is employed to cattell, Dore red and fallowe, Goates, (whereof there be store in the North parts) and Conies: for euerie where there is solly maintenance of those kindes of beasts, because it is full of great woods: whereof there riseth pastime of hunting, greatly exercised, specially by the Nobility and Gentlemen. (Andrew Bourd saith, there be more Parkes in England then in all Europe beside.)

Andrew Bourd.

Scotland another part of Bytaine, (whereof in this place I haue thought god to treat at large, that no further mention of the situation thereof might be made hereafter) beganne sometime at the hill called Grampius, now called Grantelbeine stretching to the furthest coast Northward, but after the ouerthrowe of the Pictes, it beganne at the Riuer Tweede, and sometimes at the Riuer of Tyne, the fortune of warres altering the same, as it doeth all other thinges. Therefore the length of Scotland from Tweede to the furthest coast, is esteemed to be 480. miles: but as Scotland is longer then England, so it is narrowe, and endeth like a wedge. For the mountaine Grampius is euill fauoured and craggie, which Tacitus in the life of Iulius Agricola doth remember, pearcing through the bowels of Scotland, from the coast of the Germanie sea, that is to say, from the mouth of the Riuer of Dee to the Irish sea, euen to the lake of Lomunde, which lieth betwene that countrey and the same hill.

Scotland.

The Riuer of Tweede (which springeth out of a little hill, not farre beyonde Roxborough) is mingled with the Germanie Ocean, ioyning Southwarde with that countrey which is called the Marches, being the East boundes betwene England and Scotland. The saide Riuer of Tweede separateth the Marches from Northumberland, the furthest Countrey of England, hauing prospect to the Germanie sea, the chiefe towne whereof is Barwicke, now in possession of the English.

Cornelius Tacitus.

The Westerne limit of Scotland whilom was Cumberland, which the Riuer of Solue diuideth from Annandale. Betwene these two Regions the Cheviot hilles appeare. Next to the Marches Pictland bordereth, now termed Loughdean, bounding vpon the East, a verie hillie Countrey, barreine almost of anie trees. The most famous townes of the same bee Dunbarre, Haddington, Leith, Northbertwicke, and Edenborough the Kings seafe, where also is the Castell of Maydens, a verie strong and defensible place. The same citie the riuer of Forthera (commonly called the Frith) doth water & passe by: which being caried into the Germanie Ocean, maketh great armies of meres, commonly called the Scottis sea: wherein besides other is the Iland

of Saint Columbe, by name called Aemonia. The same riuer againe deuidenth from Loughdean a countrey adioyning (abundant of all thinges) called the Fife, in which countrey are many townes, as Donfermile, Cupre, but the notable towne of Saint Andrew, specially famous for the Vniuersitie, and beautified with the Sea of the Archbishop and Primate of all Scotland. On the other side towardes the Irish side Southward, is Nidisdalia, so called of the Riuer that passeth thereby, where be the strong townes of Douglass and Donriese.

Vpon the South adioyneth Galloway, more abundant of fodder for Cattel, then of Wheate, where is the Towne of Candida Casa, now called Whitherne, and the ancient Temple of saint Ninian, adorneed also with an Episcopal Sea. In those partes besides the towne of Wighton is a lake of a wonderful nature, because the one side in Winter doth freeze, and the other not. By that standeth the countrey of Caricta, once renowned with the Towne Caricton, whereof perchance it toke the name. Aboue Caricta towardes the West, is Elgoria (by which name Ptoleme calleth the countrey) bordering vpon the Ocean, wherein is the lake Lomunde, which is verie broad and large, containing manie Ilands, situate at the foot of the mountaine Gantelsbeine, eight miles from the castell of Donbryton, besides the riuer Bodotria, now named Leuinus, entring into the Riuer of Glota or Glude. Here some do contend that the name of Bodotria is not well applied to Leuinus, because it appeareth by Cornelius Tacitus, that Bodotria and Glota haue sundry passages into the sea, and are clearely disremp tne from the other, as Leuinus and Glota, are not: wherefore they iudge rather the Riuer now called the Frith to be that which of old time had to name Bodotria, and to proue the same they adde many other reasons, which here I omit. But a good space on this side Grampius riseth the Riuer of Taus, the greatest in all Scotland, taking his name of a lake from whence it springeth, which falleth by Atholia and Calidonia by manie places, but chiefly by Perthum now called Saint Johns towne, and lastly by Dundee, in time past called Alestum, and there breaketh into the German sea, and at the mouth forceth great estuaries or armes of the sea, whereof Tacitus maketh mention. Against Taus is Anguise, which by meanes of that riuer is fertile and prosperous, and is deuident from Fife.

To the same vpon the North adioyneth Athol, not the barrenest countrey, as well for water as for plentie of soile. On the other side Arguile sheweth it selfe, which being full of lakes, yieldeth greater plentie of fodder then fruite, whose bittermost bounds stretch so farre, as Ireland is not distant past sixtene miles, about which the promontorie or foreland called Lands head standeth. That coast whilome the Silures did inhabite, as Polidor gathereth by these wordes of Plinie in his 4. booke, the 16. chapter.

Ireland being situate ouer against Brytaine, is distant from the nation of Silures by the shortest cut twentie miles. Howbeit, some other, for that it is manifest by the same Plinie in the same Chapter, and also by other writers, that Brytaine was not in his time well knowne so farre North, suppose hee meant not by this, that the Silures should inhabite Arguile, but rather South.

Wales,

Wales, from whence the passage ouer was better knowne (and as hee might haue vnderstanding) shortest. Where also as well Tacitus as Antoninus seeme to place that people.

Betwene Argile and Leniox Westward lieth the Countrey of Sterling, so called by a towne there. Here the Forrest of Calidonia began on the left side, which within stretcheth farre and broad. This Forrest sometimes bredde white Bulles, long maned like Lyons, which were so wilde as they could not bee tamed, but because the flesh was pleasant and daintie to the mouth, the whole race of them almost is extinguished. There likewise is the Castle of Calydene, situate by Taus called Doucheldine. From a little hill of the Forrest riseth Glouca, or Cluid, which by a broad channell falleth into the Irish Ocean, for stayed in a manner by the bankes of the mountaine Grampius, it slideth into the Sea by great tides, so (as witnesseth Tacitus) the Romanes thought it to be another Island. Of that riuer the Dale was called Gloteuale, which Countrey that Riuer runneth by; and in the same is the Citie of Glasco, a goodlie vniuersitie.

Againe towards the East is layned the Countrey of Anguish and Merne vpon the Sea coast, wherein Fordune by situation is verie strong, and for the reliques of S. Palladius the Scottishe Apostle, famous.

Of the same side of Scotland, is the Countrey of Marre, garnished with a Citie called Aberdone, standing betwene the two riuers of Dona and Dea, with a Schoole also adorne. Then followeth Morrey, which the two notable Riuers doe compasse about, called Nessa and Spea. At the mouth of this last Riuer, standeth the Towne of Elgin, about the banks whereof be huge woods replenished with all sortes of wilde beastes. There is a Lake also called Spina, frozen with plentie of Swannes: but in the middle part standeth the broad Country of Rossia, now called Beane Rozen, stretching to the bittermost angle euen to both the Seas, and the further it goeth Eastward, the better it is inhabited. In the same is a bosome of the Sea, now and then so conuenient for Sailers, as commonly it is called the port of Health, (or the Hauen of Safety) and the towne Thana. The breadth of the Island is verie short, for falling into the forme of a wedge, it is scant xxx. mile ouer, which defended with three promontories like towers, repelleth the great waues and surges of the Sea: and inclosed with two gulfes, which those promontories doe inclose, the entries be quiet and calme, and the water peaceable. The strait of that land is at this day called Cathanes, coasting vpon the Sea Deucalidon.

Thes much of the particulars of Scotland. But the same is in euerie place full of good Hauens and nauigable entries, Lakes, with Marthes, fountaines, verie full of fish, and mountaines, vpon the tops whereof be pleasant plaines, yielding great store of grasse, and plentie of fodder for Cattell, woods likewise full of wilde beastes. That part of the land is well sustained with commodities, and therefore the people hard to be vanquished at any time, by reason the woods and Marthes be at hand for refuge, and hunger eased with venison and fish. Without Scotland in the Irish Seas, are manie Islands nowe discovered, to the number of one hundred and fourtie: some of these in



length are thirtie milles, but in breadth not aboue twelue. Amongst them is Iona beautified with the Tombes of the Scottish kings. The Ilanders generally speake Irish, which declareth them to take their originall of the Irish nation. Beyond Scotland toward the North, be the Isles of Orkades, which (as Ptolomie saiesh) bee threescore in number, some lying in the Deucalidon Sea, and some in the Germane Ocean, the principall of which Ilandes is Pamonia, because it is a Bishoppes Sea, and is vnder the gouernement of Scotland. The Ilanders vse the Gothes speech, which argueth them to proceede from the Germanes. They be tall of stature, but verie healthie and lustie of bodie and minde, liuing verie long, although their chieffest foode is fish, for the land almost continually beset with cold, in many places is not able to beare corne, and generally almost without treé or bush. Beyond the Orkades be the Ilandes of Scotland, vnder the king of Scots obedience, and beyond those standeth Thule, in the frozen sea now called Iseland, to which our merchants repaire for fishing once euerie yeare in the Summer. And thus much haue I to saie of the site of Scotland: now of the nature and manners of the people.

The Scots which inhabite in the Southerne part, be well nurtured, and liue in good ciuillie, and the most ciuill vse the English speech. And for that wood there is geason and scant, their common felwell is of a blacke stone, which they dig out of the earth. The other part Northerne, and full of mountaines, a verie rude and homely kinde of people doth inhabite, which are called the Red-shankes or wilde Scots. They be clothed with a mantell and thirte saffroned after the Irish maner, going bare legged to the kiné. Their weapons are bowes and dartes, with a verie broad sword and a dagger, sharpe only at the one side. All speake Irish, feeding on fish, milke, cheese, and flesh, hauing a great number of Cattell. The Scots differ from the English in lawes and customes, because they vse the ciuill lawe as almost other Countreies doe. The English haue their owne lawes and edictes. In certaine other conditions they be not farre vnlike, but their language is one, their habite and complexion like, one courage in battel, and in the Nobilitie one desire & pregnancie in hunting. The Countrey houses bee narrowe, couered with strawe and reede, wherein the people and beastes doe lodge together. Their Townes besides Saint Johns Towne are unwalled, which is to be ascribed to their animositie and hardnesse, firing all their succour and helpe alwaie in the ballancie of their bodie. The Scottes are verie wise, as their learning declareth. For to what soeuer Art they do applie themselves, they easily profite in the same. But the idle and slothful, and such chieflie as thum and auoide labour, liue in great poverty, and yet will not sticke to boast of their nobilitie & gentrie, as though it were more seemely for the honest to lacke, then comely (by exercise of some honest Arte) to get their liuing. But the Scots generally be deuoute obseruers of Religion. And thus much of Scotland.

Wales.

Wales the third part of Brytaine lieth vpon the lefte hand, which like a Promontorie or forcland, or an Ile (as it were) on euerie side is compassed with the maine sea, except it be on the Southeast part with the Riuer of Sa-  
byne,

brine, commonly called Seuerne, which diuideth Wales from Englande, although some late writers affirme Hereford to be a bound betwene Wales and England, and say, that Wales beginneth at Chepstowe, where the Riuer Wye (augmented with an other Riuer called Lugge) passing by Hereforde, both runne into the sea, which Riuer riseth in the middle of Wales out of that hill (but vncertaine whether out of that spring that Sabine doth,) for euen to that place there goeth a great arme of the sea, which passing through the land westward, on the right hand leaueth Cornewall, and on the left Wales: which Topographie or description, although it bee newe, yet I thought good to followe. Therefore Wales is extended from the Towne of Chepstowe, where it beginneth almost by a straight line a little aboue Shrovsburie, euen to Westcheffer Northward. Into that part, so manie of the Brytaines as remained aliuie after the slaughter and losse of their Countrey, at the length being driuen to their thistles, did repaire, as ancient writings report, where partly through refuge of the mountaines, and partlie of the woods and marshes, they remained in safetie: which part they enjoy euen to this daie. That land afterwards the Englishmen did call Wales: and the Brytaines the inhabitants of the same, Walshmen: for amongst the Germanis, Walshy man, signifieth a stranger, an alien, an outborne or strange man, that is, such a one, as hath a contrarie language from theirs, for Wal in their tongue is called a stranger borne, as an Italian or Frenchman, which differ in speech from the Germaine, Man signifieth *Homo*, which is a man in English. Therefore Englishmen, a people of Germanie, after they had wonne Brytaine, called the Brytaines, which escaped after the destruction of their Countrey, after their Countrey manner, Walshmen, because they had another tongue or speech besides theirs: and the lande which they inhabited Wales, which name afterward both to the people and Countrey did remaine. By this meane the Brytaines with their kingdome lost their name. But they which affirme that name to be deriued of their King or Quene, without doubt be deceiued. The Countrey soile towards the sea coast, and in other places in the vailles and plaines, is most fertile, which yeldeth both to man and beast great plentie of fruite and grasse: but in other places for the most part it is barraine and lesse fruitfull, because it lacketh tillage: for which cause husbandmen doe liue hardly, eating Oaten cakes, and drinke milke mixt with water. There be many Towns and strong Castles, and foure Bishopricks, if the Bishopricke of Hereford bee counted in England, as the late Writers declare. The first Bishopricke is Meneue, so called of Meneua, which at this day they call Saint Dauid, a Citie verie auncient, situated vpon the sea coast, and boundeth Westward toward Ireland. Another is Landaffe, the third Bangor, and the fourth Saint Asaph, which bee vnder the Archbishop of Canterburie. The Walshmen haue a language from the Englishmen, which (as the saie that fetch their pedegree from the Troians) doth partly sounde of the Troian antiquitie, and partly of the Greeke. But howsoeuer it is, the Walshmen do not pronounce their speech so pleasantly and gently as the Englishmen do, because they speake moze in the throte: and contrariwise, the Englishmen rightly fol-

This arme of the Sea, as I iudge, is now called Aust, where is a passage betwene the village of Aust and Chepstow.

Giraldus Cambrensis.

Foure Bishops in Wales.



folowing the Latines, doe expresse their voice somewhat within the lips, which to the hearers seemeth pleasant and swete. And thus much of Wales, the third part of Brytaine.

Cornwall.

Now followeth the fourth and last part of Brytaine named Cornwall. This part beginneth on that side which standeth toward Spaine Westward: Toward the East, it is of bredth fourescore and ten miles, extending a little beyond S. Germain, which is a verie famous village, situate on the right hand vpon the Sea coast, where the greatest bredth of that Countrey is but twenty miles: for this parcell of land on the right hand is compassed with the coast of the maine Sea: and on the left hand with that arme of the Sea, which (as before is declared) parteth the land, and runneth by to Chepstow, where the countrey is in forme of a horne: For at the first it is narrow, and then groweth broader a little beyond the said towne of S. Germain. Eastward it bordereth vpon England: West, South, and North, the maine sea is round about it: it is a very barren soile, yielding fruit more through trauell of the tillers and husbandmen, then through the godnesse of the ground: but there is great plentie of Lead and Tinne, in the myning and digging whereof doth specially consist the liuing and sustentation of the inhabitants. Their tongue is farre dissonant from English, but it is much like to the Walsh tongue, because they haue many words common to both tongues: yet this difference there is betwixen them, when a Walsh man speaketh, the Cornish man rather vnderstandeth many words spoken by the Walshman, then the whole tale he telleth; whereby it is manifest, that those three people doe vnderstand one another, in like maner as the Southern Scots doe perceiue and vnderstand the Northern. But it is a thing very rare and maruellous, that in one Island there should be such variety of speeches. Cornwall is in the Diocesse of Exeter, which was once thought to be counted the fourth part of the Island, for the contrarietie of the language. Afterwards the Normans, which constituted a kingdome of al those 3. parts, reckened Cornwall to be one of the Counties or Shires of the Countrey. Thus much of the particular description of Brytaine, that the whole bodie of the Realme (by the members) maie bee the better knowne to some peraduenture that neuer heard the same before.

Scrabo l. d. a.

The forme of the Island is Triquetra, or three cornered, hauing three corners, or three sides: two whereof, that is to say, the corner toward the East, and the other toward the West (both extending Northwards) are the longest.

The third side which is the South side, is farre shorter then the other: for the Island is greater of length then of bredth. And as in the other two partes is contained the length, even so in the last, the bredth, in which place the bredth beginneth: and so continuing from the South part to the North, it is but narrow. The first and right corner of which Island Eastward, is in Kent, at Douer and Sandwich. From whence to Calais or Boloigne in France, is the distance of thirty miles. From this Angle, which is against France, to the third Angle, which is in the North in Scotland, the maine whereof boundeth vpon Germanie, but no land scene, (and there the Islande is like vnto a wedge euen at the very Angle of the lande in Scotland,) the length is seauen hundred miles. Againe,

gaine, the length from this corner at Douer in Kent, to the uttermost part of Cornwall, being S. Michaels mount (which is the West part or West Angle) is supposed to bee three hundred miles. From this left Angle being the West part and the uttermost part of Cornwall, which hath a prospect towarde Spaine, in which part also standeth Ireland, situate betwene Brytaine and Spaine to the North Angle in the further part of Scotland, in which part the Island doeth end, the length is eight hundred miles, in which part there be very good hauens, and safe harboroughes for shippes, and apt passages into Ireland, being not past one daies sayling: but the shorter passage is from Wales to Waterford, a towne in Ireland vpon the Sea coast, much like to that passage betwene Douer and Calais, or somewhat more: but the shortest passage of all, is out of Scotland. From this last Angle to Hampton, which is a towne vpon the sea coast, with a haven so called toward the South, and therefore called Southampton, betwene the Angles of Kent and Cornwall, they do measure by straight line the whole length of the Island, and doe saie, that it containeth eight hundred miles, as the breadth from Meneua or S. Davids to Parmouth, which is in the uttermost part of the Island towardes the East, doth contains two hundred miles, for the breadth of the Island is in the South part, which part is the front and beginning of the land, and endeth narrow, or as it were in a freight. So the circuite or compasse of the Island is, 1800. miles, which is 200. lesse then Caesar doeth reckon or accompt.

Of

# Of the first habitation of this Iland, a short note to the Reader.

Genes. 10.



Lodouicus Vines,  
Gasparus Varre-  
rius,

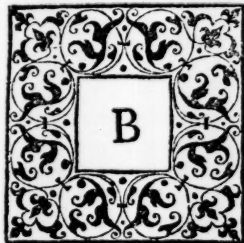
Nicol. Perotus.  
Lilius Giraldus.  
Solinus,

Here it is recorded by the sacred and most auncient Historie, that after the vniuersall flood, the Isles of the Gentiles were diuided by the posterity of Iapheth the son of Noah, we doubt not but this Isle of Brytaine was also then peopled by his progenie, the history of whome, as it is to bee wished and appertinent to this purpose, so sith it is irrecoverable, not onely vnto vs, but also to other nations, I thinke it better to say nothing therein, then to set downe here Samoths, Magus, Sarron, Druys, and Bardus for his successours, which are vpholden and boulstered onely by the credite and authoritie of a newe small pamphlet falsely forged, & thrust into the world vnder the title of the ancient Historian *Berosus*. For that is the censure of all the best learned as concerning our common *Berosus*, which at his first appearing, about one hundred yeeres since, was partly suspect by *Lodouicus Vines*, afterward conuincd to be fabulous by the learned *Gas. Varrerius*, in a seuerall Treatise, and nowe vniuersally reiected of all skilfull Antiquaries, as a meere fable, vnworthy the name of *Berosus*. Therefore I dare not ground the beginning of our Historie vpon the credite thereof, vnlesse I would be preiudiciall to the truth, whereunto I leuell all my indeuour. I hope it shall be sufficient in this History for the Brytaines time, to follow the authoritie of the receiued Brytish History, which *Geoffrey* Archdeacon of *Monmouth* translated out of the Brytish tongue about 400. yeeres since, beginning with Brute, who after the progenie of Iapheth seemeth to be first discouerer, namer, and Ruler of this land. Yet before we enter into the Historie of Brute, it shall not bee impertinent to note here, that whereas *Pomponius Mela* mentioneth that one Hercules killed Albion a giant about the mouth of Rhosne in France, many learned men haue iudged the said Albion to haue ruled here, (sith the Greeke monuments doe alway call this Isle *Albion*.) and after his death that Hercules came hither, *Lilius Giraldus* writeth, An ancient Altar also containing the inscription of a vow found in the vttermoost North part of Brytaine 1500. yeeres since, as *Solinus* reporteth, plainly prooued that *Vlysses* the renowned Græcian in histenne yeeres trauels, after the sacking of Troy, arriued in this our country.

And thus much is found onely in approued Histories, as concerning Brytaine before the arriual of Brutus.

The

The race of the Kinges of Brytaine after the common  
*receiued opinion since Brute, &c : and in the margent are pla-*  
 ced the yeeres before Christ his birth, when euery King began  
 their raignes, till *Cunobelinus*, in whose time Christ the Sauour  
 of the worlde was borne, and then following, the  
 yeeres from Christ his birth are  
 placed,



R V T E the sonne of Syluius, the sonne of Ascanius  
 the sonne of Aeneas, after the death of his father,  
 being banished into Greece, deliuered there the  
 remnant of the Trojans from the long captiuitie,  
 wherein they were detained vnder the Grecians,  
 with whom he departed thence for to seeke some ha-  
 bitation: and associating to him selfe Corineus with  
 his Trojans whom he found in the waie, after a  
 long and wearie iourney, and manie notable ades  
 atchieued in Aquitaine, hee arrived in this Iland.

1108  
 Gausride.

which was called Albion at a place now called Totnes in Deuonshire, the  
 yeere of the world, 2855. the yeere before Christes natiuitie, 1108. wherein hee  
 first beganne to raigne, and named it Brytaine (as some write) or rather after  
 his owne name Brutaine, as Aethicus that wonderfull Philosopher (a Scy-  
 thian by race, but an African by Countrey) translated by Saint Hierom aboue  
 a thousand yeeres past, termeth both it and the Isles adiacent *Insulas Brutani-*  
*cas*. And for more proofe of this restored name, not onely the said Philosopher  
 (who trauelled through many landes, and in this land taught the knowledge of  
 mynerall workes) may be alleadged, but sundrie other, as the Sibils Oracles,  
 wherein the name of the Brytaines is written with y that is the Grekes lit-  
 tle u, which Oracles although they were not the Sibils owne worke, as some  
 suspect, yet are they verie auncient indade, and that they might seeme more  
 auncient, vse the most auncient name of Countreies and peoples. And some  
 English writers more then two hundred yeeres since, vsuallie doe name it  
 Brutaine, and not otherwise, through a large historie of this lande, translated  
 out of French. Brute builded the citie of new Troy, now called London, hee  
 stablished therein the Trojan lawes, and gaue the uttermost Westerne part  
 of the Realme to his companion Corineus, of whose name it was called Co-  
 rinea, and to this daie Cornetwall. Iohn Harding saith, that Brute bare  
 Gules, two Lyons rampant endorsed Or. Also a banner vert, a Diana  
 of gold fitchel crowned and inthronized, that were Aeneas armes, when he en-  
 tred the land of Latins. Iohn Han-wile in Archirenio, and Nicholas Vpton, and  
 other our auncient Heraults saie hee bare Or, a Lyon passant, Gules, &c.  
 Spanie are desirous (saith Aeneas Siluius) to knowe howe the name of He-  
 raults came first in vse, who first ordeined them, and what office, and authoritie  
 they beare amongst men. Of the which thing I once stood in doubt my selfe:  
 but

Aethicus

Oracula Sibij

I. Mandeuil.

Iohn Harding.

Iohn Hanwile.  
 Nicholas Vpton.

Aeneas Siluius.

Beginning of  
Heraulds.

but as the nature of man is to desire knowledge of many things, and seeking to be satisfied therein, I found in the reuestrie, or treasure of S. Pauls Church in London, (in anno 1451.) an olde historie written (as the Title did specifie) 600. yeres before. Which if it be true, it may both satisfie my desire, and others in the premises: the Authour of the booke, was Thucydides the Grecian, but the translation name was not therein noted: but truly it was right eloquently set forth in the Latine tongue. The content of the wordes I doe not now well remember, but the tenure of the sentence, was well nere in this sort, as I shall declare, Heraulds be they, which our Elders were wont to call Heroes, that is to saie, those which were greater or surpassing all men in maiestie, and yet inferiours to the gods. For whom the people of antiquity did perceiue to be notable, and surmounting all others in his acts, and feates, renowned in vertues, and friendly, or gracious vnto them: him would they magnifie and craie in the highest degree, and as it were, with their good wordes make them consins to God almightie, placing them amongst the Gods, if it so were, that they had wrought some miraculous feate aboue the common course of nature. But if there were no such miraculous or wonderfull deedes, but that through their vertues they seemed wonderfull and honourable: then thought they to call such persons, not altogether gods, nor yet simple men, but inuented out a meane worde and name for them, calling them Heroes, as it were halfe gods. And of this worde Heroes or Heros, groweth by corruption of vse this name Herald. Albeit some saie that those Heroes were olde souldiers, that had spent all the age welnoure in the warres: out of the which sort the Heraulds ought to be chosen, and so the terme Herald seemeth to bee a Dutch worde, and to sounde as much as an olde souldier, or man of war. But the first that begunne and ordeyned this order, was Dionysius, the which was the first also that invaded India with an armed power, and gathered the rude people there together, which liued in woodes and desertes like wilde beastes, feeding on leaues, barks of trees, and rawe fleshe: teaching them to liue after a ciuile order and fashion: also to build Townes and villages, to worship the gods, to till and plow the earth, to plant vineyards, and make wine, to weare apparel, to anoint and trim their bodies, and to be short, to liue after a humaine maner. And now following the common opinion, after Geoffrey Monmouth.

Brute diuided the whole Island among his three sonnes, which hee had by Inogen his wife, Loecine, Camber, and Albanaet. Vnto Loecine he gaue the middle part betwixt the Humber and Seuerne, which of him was called Loegria. To Camber he gaue all the region beyond Seuern, which of him toke the name of Cambria, and is now called Wales. To Albanaet he gaue all the landes beyond Humber, which of his name was called Albania: after which partition he deceased, when he had reigned foure and twenty yeres, and was buried at new Troy.

**L**oecine, the eldest sonne of Brute, reigned twentie yeres: hee chased the Hunnes, which invaded this realme; and pursued them so sharply, that many of them with their king, were drowned in a river which then parted England and Scotland. And for so much as the king of Hunnes, named Humber, was

1084.  
Geoffrude.



was there drowned, the river is til this day named Humber. This king Locrine had to wife Guendoline, daughter of Corineus, Duke of Cornwall, by whom he had a sonne named Madan. He also kept as Paramour, the beautiful Lady Estrilde, by whom he had a daughter named Sabine. And after the death of Corineus, he put from him the said Guendoline, and wedded Estrilde: but Guendoline repaired to Cornwall, where she gathered a great power, and fought with King Locrine, and slew him. He was buried at new Troy. She drowned the Lady Estrilde, with her daughter Sabine in a river, that after the young maidens name is call Seuerne.

How Humber took that name.

Seuerne.

Guendoline the daughter of Corineus and wife to Locrine (for so much as Madan her sonne was too young to gouerne the land) was by common assent of all the Brytains, made ruler of the whole Isle of Brytan, which she well and discretely ruled, to the comfort of her subjects, fifteen yeares, and then left the same to her sonne Madan.

1064  
Guendoline a Queene raigned.  
Gaulhide.  
Flores Historiar.

Madan, the sonne of Locrine and Guendoline, was made ruler of Brytaine: he vsed great tyzanny among his Brytons: and being at his disport of hunting, he was deuoured by wild Wolves, when he had reigned xl. yeares. He left two sons, named Memprius and Manlius.

1049  
The king deuoured by Wolves.

Memprius, the sonne of Madan, being king, by treason slew his brother Manlius, after whose death he liued in more tranquillitie, where though he fell in sloth, and so to lechery, taking the wives and daughters of his subjects: and lastly, became so euill, that he sought his wife and concubines, and fell to the sinne of Sodomitie with beasts, whereby hee became odible to God and man. And going on hunting, hee lost his companie, and was destroyed of wilde Wolves, whereof the land was then full, when he had reigned twentie yeares.

1009  
A traitor to his brother deuoured of wilde beasts.

Ebranke, the sonne of Memprius, was made ruler of Brytaine, he had xx. wives, of whom he receiued xx. sonnes, and xx. daughters: which were sent by their fathers to Alba Siluius, the fourth king of Albanois in Italy, to be married to the Albanes. This Ebranke first after Brutus attempted to inuade France with an armie, as Iacobus Bergomas saith in his first of his Chronicles, and Iacobus Lessabeus in the description of Henault affirmeth the same, and that he was driuen backe by Brunchildis Lord of Henault with no small losse of his men. Aslaracus the second sonne of Ebranke, with the rest of his younger brethren 18 at the least, by the aide of Alba Siluius, conquered all Germanie, which was then no great matter, for then Europe was verie small inhabited, saue onely about the Sea coasts, as Dalmatia, Italie and the coasts of France, as in reading the histories may easily be seene how the East people at sundry times came swarming into Europe. Of these brethren had Germanie the name, a *Germanis fratribus*, that had subdued it. Ebranke was a founder of manie Cities (sayeth Bergomas) as Alclud in Albania (nowe Scotland) which is after Hector Boetius, Dunbretaine, but other thinke the same to be cleane destroyed. He made the Castell of Maidens called Edebrough. Hee made also the Castell of Wamburgh. In the xlii. yere of his raigne he builded Maybzanke, since by the Saxons called Chozwike, now corruptly Worke, wherein

989  
Gaulhide.  
Flores Historiar.

Iacobus Bergomas,  
Iacobus Lessabeus.

Germanie took the name of Ebranke his sons, who conquered the same.  
Bergomas,  
Hector Boetius

Dunbretain,  
Edebrough,  
Wamburgh,  
and Perth builded.

wherein he builded a Temple to Diana, and set there an Archflame, and was there buried when he had reigned lx. yeres.

John Rouse saith hee builded Caier Penuir, after it was called Bellicustum, at length Caier Bosla, Wyddoben, and Drenforde, of a certaine Forde, which John Leiland calleth Ihs, in English Dule, and saith it is now called Drenforde for Wyddforde.

929

**B**RUTUS 2. the eldest sonne of Ebranke, succeeded in the kingdome, and for that his father had receiued such a repulse at the handes of Brunchildis Lorde of Henault, he in reuenge thereof invaded Henault with a great armie in the Fennes and Marshlande at the mouth of the Riuer Scaldis (of olde time named Stodus) and encamped himselfe vpon the Riuer Pania, where betwene Brutus and Brunchildis, was foughten a strong battaile in that place, which to this day is called Csam-huges, of the station and campe of Brutus; as Iacobus Lessabeus wisteth in his description of Henault. This Brute of his lusty courage was surnamed Wyddeshielde, hee reigned xii. yeres, and was buried at Porke.

Iacobus Lessabeus.

917

Henry Bradshaw.

**L**EILL the sonne of Brute Greeneshielde, being a louer of peace, builded Carlelle and repaired Carleon, which was since by the Romaines reedified, when a legion of souldiers was sent thither, and by them named The City of Legions, now called Chester, of the auncient building with baulkes and towers, each house like a Castell, which sometime had bene of great pleasure. A legion of the Romaines (as Vigetius reporteth) contained 6000. warriours or moe: which legion was deuided into tenne bandes, but the first passed all the rest, both in number of souldiers, and also in estimation: for this bande bare the Eagle, which was the chiefest standarde of the Romaines. This first bande contained 1105. footemen, heavy armed horsemen 132. and was named *Cobors milliaria*, that is to saie, a companie of a thousand and moe souldiers. This bande is the head of all the legion: whensoever they must fight, these begin the battaile, and are first set in order in the front of the battaile. The second bande containeth 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen of heauie armour, and this bande is called *Cobors quingentaria*, that is to saie, a companie of 500. and moe souldiers. The third bande likewise hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The fourth bande hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The fift bande hath as manie. These five bandes are set in aray in the first battaile. The first bande hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The seauenth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The eighth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The ninth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The tenth hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. These tenne bandes make a full and perfect legion, containing, 6100. footemen, and 726. horsemen. King Leill in the ende of his reigne fell to sloth and lust of the bodie, by meane whereof ciuill strife was raised, and not in his daies ended. Hee reigned xrb. yeres, and was buried at Carlelle alias Chester.

Canterburie.  
Winchester,  
and Shaftesbury  
built.

**R**Vdhudibras, alias Cicuber, the sonne of Leil, builded Caergant, of the Englishmen called Canterburie, (that is to saie, the Court of the Kentishmen) Caerluent, now Winchester, and Caerlepton now called Shaftesbury.

burie, wherein he builded three Temples, and placed in the same flames. He reigned xxx. yeres.

**B**ladud the sonne of Rudhudibras, who had long studied at Athens brought with him foure Philosophers, to keepe schoole in Brytaine: for the which hee builded Stamford, and made it an Uniuersity, wherein he had great number of scholars studying in all the seuen liberall Sciences: which Uniuersitie dured to the coming of S. Augustine. At which time the Bishop of Rome interdicted it for heresies that sel among the Barons & Brytains together mixt, so saith Harding. He builded Caer Badon or Bath, and made there a temple to Apollo, and placed there a flame: he made also the hote Bathe, and practised his necromancie: hee decked himselfe in feathers, and presumed to sit, but by falling on his temple, he brake his necke, when he had reigned xx. yeres.

**L**ere sonne of Bladud succeded his father. He builded Caer Lair vpon the Riuer of Soze, now called Lyecester, and made there a Temple of Ianus, placing a flame to gouerne the same. He had three daughters, Gonoril, Regan, and Cordeilla, which Cordeilla for her vertue and wisdom towards her father, succeded him in the kingdome. When he had reigned xl. yeres hee deceased, and was buried vnder the channel of the Riuer Soze, within Leicester. This vault vnder the earth was built in honour of Ianus Bifrons. There all the workmen of that Citie, when the solemnitie of the daie came, begunne all things that they had to do the yere following.

**C**ordeilla, the youngest daughter of Leire, succeding her father, was sozebered by her two nephues, Morgan of Albany, and Cunedagius of Camber and Cornwall, who at the length tooke and cast her in prison: where shee being in dispaire of recouering her estate, Actue her selfe, when shee had raygned v. yeres, and was buried at Lyecester.

**M**organ, the eldest sonne of Dame Gonorilla, claimed Brytain, and warred on his nephew Cunedagius, that was king of Camber (that now is Wales) & of Cornwall: but Cunedagius met with Morgan in Wales, & there slew him: which place is called Glamorgan til this day. And then Cunedagius was king of al Brytain. He builded a Temple of Mars at Perche, that now is S. Johns towne in Scotland, & placed there a flame: hee builded another of Minerva in Wales, which now is named Bangor. The thirde hee made of Mercurie in Cornwall, where he was bozne. He reigned xxxiii. yeres, and was buried at new Troy.

**R**iuallus, sonne of Cunedagius, succeded his father, in whose time it rained blood 3. daies: after which tempest ensued a great multitude of venemous flies, which slew much people, & then a great mortality throughout this land, caused almost desolation of the same. This Riualus raygned ouer this whole Iland xlvi. yeres, & then deceased, & was buried at Caerbank, & now is York. Rome was builded in Italy, by Remus and Romulus 356. yeres after Brute arrived in this land.

**G**rugustius, sonne of Riualus, succeded in the kingdome of Brytaine, who raygned quietly, but was a common drunkard, wherof followed al other vices. When he had raygned xxxviii. yeres, he deceased, & was buried at York. Scicilius,

863  
Stamford an  
Uniuerstie.

John Hardingt  
I. Rouse.  
John. Bale.  
Bath with the  
hote Bathe  
built.  
The king at-  
tempteth to sit.

844  
Leicester built.

I. Rouse.

805

800

How Glamor-  
ganshire tooke  
that name.  
Saint Johns  
towne builded  
Bangor built.

766  
Blood rained.  
Flores Historiar.

Rome builded.

728

684

Sicilius, brother of Gurgustius, succeeded in the kingdome : of whome is left but little memorie : he reigned xlii. yeres, and was buried at Bathe.

636

Iago or Lago, Cousin of Gurgustius, reigned xvi. yeres : for his euill gouernment he died of a Litargie, and was buried at Pozke.

Iohannes de Vigny.  
Same of  
Chesse deuised.

John de Vigny, in his Booke named The Moralization of the Chesse, saith, that the same game of the Chesse, was deuised by Xerxes the Philosopher, otherwise named Philometor, to repprooue and correct the cruell minde of a famous Tyrant called Euilmerodach King of Babylon (as is supposed) about the yere before Christs birth, 614.

612

¶ Kimmacus reigned liii. yeres, and was buried at Pozke.

559

Flores Historiar.

Orbodug reigned threescore and thre yeres, and was buried at netwe Trop.

496

The brother  
sue the brother,  
and the mother murdered her  
owne sonne.  
Brytes line extinguished.

Ferrex with his brother Porrex, ruled Brytaine fve yeres : but it was not long ere they fell at ciuill discorde for the soueraigne dominion, in which Ferrex was slaine, and Porrex afterwards by his mother, whose name was Idoine, was killed in his bed. Thus cruelly was the blood and house of Brute destroyed, when this Realme by the space of 616. yeres had bene gouerned by that lynage.

After this Realme was deuised with ciuill warres, for lacke of one soueraigne gouernor, untill Dunwallo reduced the same into one Monarchie.

442

The second  
lawes were  
Mulmutius  
lawes.  
Flores Historiar.

Mulmutius Dunwallo, the sonne of Cloten, Duke of Cornwall, reduced this Realme into one Monarchie, being before by ciuill warres and dissension seuered and brought into diuers dominions: he was the first that wore a crowne of gold: he constituted good lawes, which long after were called Mulmutius Lawes. These lawes holy Gildas wrote out of the Brytish speech into Latine. He gave priuiledges vnto Temples, and ploughes, and began to make the foure notable waies in Brytaine. He reigned xl. yeres, leaving after him two sonnes, Belinus and Brennus.

401

Flores Historiar.  
I. Leiland.  
Gaufride.

Belinus and Brennus, sonnes of Mulmutius and Cornouenna, deuised this whole Isle of Brytaine betwene them. Vnto Beline the elder brother was appointed England, Wales, and Cornwall. Vnto the other the North part beyond Humber. This Brennus, a yong man, desirous of glory and dominion, raised warre against Beline. But in the conclusion by the meanes of their mother, they were accorded, and Brennus being wholly giuen to the studie of warre, left his countrey to the gouernance of his brother, and went into France amongst the Galles, where for his excellent qualities he was greatly esteemed, & made of them their soueraigne Captaine, with whom he passed into Italy, sacked Rome, and expelling the Tuscans, builded Millaine, Brescia, Como, Bergamo, Vincenza, Trent, and Verona, which he called after his own name Brennona. After this (as writeth Trogus Pompeius, abridged by Iustine) Brennus leader of the Galles, (he nameth him not a Brytaine) raised an host of 150000. footemen, and 15000. horsemen, and inuaded Macedone againe. Whom when Sophenes sawe how they wasted the Countrey and villages, he met them with his host of Macedones well appointed. But by reason they were fewe, and their enemies many, they were sone put to the worse. Wherefore while the

Trogus Pompeius.

Macedones



acedones being beaten, kept them within the walles of their cities, Brennus like a conquerour, againe whom no man durst shewe his head to make resistance, foraged all the Isles of Macedone. And from thence as though those bottes and spoiles seemed to bafe and simple in his eye, he turned his minde to the Temples of the Gods immortall, malapertly scoffing that the Gods were rich, and ought to depart liberally to men. Therefore hee tooke his journey towards Delphos, setting more by the gaine of the golde that had bene offered to the Gods, then by their displeasure.

The Temple of Apollo at Delphos, is situate in the mount Parnassus, vpon a cliffe on euery side falling steepe downe. Here the confluence of men hath made a populous Citie. Moreover both the Temple and the towne are enclosed with the steepenesse of the rocke. The middle part of the rocke inward is in fashion like a Theatre, by meanes whereof when men make any shouting, or any trumpet is sounded, the same breaketh and redoundeth in such wise vpon the stones from one to another, that the Echo is heard double and triple, the noise resounding farre louder then it went forth. The which causeth the ignorant to stand in more feare, thinking it to be the presence of the Godhead. In the winding of the rocke, almost midwaie to the toppe of the hill, there is a little plaine, and in the same a deepe hole into the ground, which seemeth to giue oracles: out of the which a certaine colde breath ascending vppward, stirreth the mindes of the Prophets into a madnesse, and so compelleth them to giue answer to such as come for counsaile. In the same place therefore, there are to be seene manie and rich giftes of kings and peoples. Wherefore when Brennus came within the view of the Temple, he was in doubt a great while, whether he were better to attempt the matter forthwith, or giue his souldiours that nights respite to rest them. Euridanus and Thessalonus, who for couetousnesse of the pray, had soynded themselves with him, willed to cut off all delate, while their enemies were vnprouided, whereas by giuing them that nights respite, their enemies should perchance get both courage and succour: but the common souldiers of the French men, when after long penurie, they found a Countrey replenished with wine, and all other kinde of victualles, they dispersed themselves in the fieldes, making haucke of all things like Conquerours, by which meanes the Delphians had respite to lay for themselves, and manned the Towne by the helpe of their neighbours, or neuer the Frenchmen could be called from the Wine sat to the standard. Brennus had threescore and fife thousand chosen souldiers of the best in all his host, whereas the Delphians were in all but 40000. fighting men. In disdain of which small handfull Brennus to the intent to sharpen the mindes of his men, shewed them all, what a rich and plentifull praye they shoulde haue. The Frenchmen being by this vouching of their Captaine, or rather by their owne beholding, stirred vp, and also wounded with the wine they had potized in the day before, without respect of any danger ran headlong to the encounter. On the contrarie part, the Delphians putting more trust in God then in their owne strength, resisted their enemies, and that with stones, and what with their weapons, threw the Frenchmen (as they scaled) headlong from the



top of the mountaine. While the two parts were thus striving one with another, sodainelie the Priestesses of all the Temples, and the Prophets, with their haire about their eares, &c. like men distract and out of their wits, came running into the forefront of the battaile, crying out, that while they were all making their supplications to God for aide, they met a young man of beauty and personage, far excellling anie mortall creature, and in his company two Virgins in armor, wherefore they besought them, seeing the gods did garde their standarde, they should not sticke to dispatch their enemies. And therewithall they forthwith perceived that God was present on their side. For both a peece of the mountaine being broken off, by a sodaine earthquake, overthelmed the French hoste, and the thickest of their enemies (not without great slaughter) were opened and put to flight. In the necke where of there ensued a tempest, with haile, thunder and lightning, consuming as manie as were any thing soze wounded. The captaine Brennus himselfe not being able to abide the smarte of his woundes, toke a sword and killed himselfe. Thus farre abridged out of Iustine.

Brennus killed himselfe.

Archflames.  
Foure notable  
waies.  
Belines gate  
builded.  
John Leyland.

Beline in the meane time (saith Gaufride) both in ciuill iustice and also Religion, greatly increased his Realme. He made three Archflamines, whose Seas were at new Troy, Kayzbranke and Kayzlegion. He finished the foure great waies begunne by his father: he subdued and made tributary vnto him Denmarke. In new Troy he made the haven, which at this day retaineth the name of him, called Belines gate: He married his daughter Cambria vnto a Prince of Almaine called Antenor, of whom these people were called Cymbri, and Sycambri.

Florus Historian.

Finally, after he had reigned with his brother and alone xxvi. yeres, he died: and after the Pagan manner, with great pompe was burned, and his ashes in a vessel of brasse set on a high pinnacle ouer Belines gate. He builded Carlheon vpon the riuer Ulke, which since by a legion of the Romanes there placed, was named Caerlegion, now cleane destroyed.

375

Giraldus.

Ireland inhabited.

McGor Boecius.

Gurgunstus sonne of Beline succeded his father. I. Rouse saith he builded Caier Merith, that is, Longcastra: he subdued Denmarke, compelling them to continue their tribute, and in his returne home, mette with a flöete of Waldenses comming from the parts of Spaine, which were seeking for habitations, because their countrey was so populous, and not able to sustaine them, to whom the king granted the Ile of Ireland to inhabite, and to hold the same of him as their Soueraigne Lorde: But the Scots write, that Spaniards arrived before this time in Ireland. This Gurgunstus builded Portheffer and Marwiske in the middle of the Realme (saith I. Rouse.) He reigned xxx. yeres, and was buried at Caerltheon.

356

Mercian lawes  
the third.

Vinchelinus sonne of Gurgunstus, was crowned king of Brytaine. A Prince sober and quiet, who had to wife a noble woman named Mercia, of excellent learning and knowledge. Shee deuised certaine lawes, which long time among the Brytaines were greatlie esteemed, and named Mercian Lawes. This Prince reigned xxxi. yeres, and was buried at new Troy.

Cecilius

**C**ecilus the sonne of Guintheline and Mercia, reigned viij. yeres, (as the Scots write.) In the first yere of his raigne, a people called Pictes, arrived here in Brytaine, & possessed those parts, which now be the Marches of both realmes, England and Scotland. Cecilus was buried at Caerltheon.

350

The Pictes  
first inhabited  
the Marches.

**K**imarus succeeded Cecilus, who being a wilde yong man, and living after his owne lust, reigned but thre yeres, and was slaine as he was hunting of wild beastes.

323

Elanius, called also Danius, was king of Brytaine nine yeres.

321

**M**orindus, the bastard sonne of Danius, beganne to raigne in Brytaine: hee fought with a king who came out of Germanie, and sette him with all his power. Moreover, out of the Irish seas in his time came forth a wonderfull Monster, which destroyed much people: whereof the king hearing, would of his valiant courage needes fight with it, by whome he was cleane deuoured, when he had reigned eight yeres.

311

Gaufride.

**G**orbomannus, eldest sonne of Morindus, raygned xi. yeres: a Prince iust and religious: he renued the Temples of his gods, and gouerned his people in peace and wealth. This Gorbomannus builded Grantham in Lincolnshire. Our English Chronicle saith, he builded both the towines of Cambridge and Grantham: but seeing that Cambridge in ancient Chronicles is called Grant (as it is also Grandchester, Catergrant, and Granthidge) it was an easie matter (as Grammmarians know) to translate Grantham into Cambridge, and so ascribe the building of both Townes to him that builded but one, or neither of them both.

303

Caxton.  
Grantham  
builded.  
I. Roule.

**A**rchigallo, brother to Gorbomannus, was crowned king of Brytaine: he was in conditions unlike to his brother: for he deposed the noblemen, and exalted the vnnoble. He extorted from men their goods to enrich his treasure: for which cause by the estates of the Realme he was deprived of his royall dignitie, when he had reigned v. yeres.

392

The king depri-  
ued.

**E**lidurus, the third sonne of Morindus, and brother to Archigallo, was elected King of Brytaine: a vertuous and gentle Prince, who gouerned his people iustlie. As he was hunting in a forest, by chaunce he met with his brother Archigallo, whome most louinglie he embraced, and found the meanes to reconcile him to his Lords, and then resigned to him his royall dignitie, when he had reigned v. yeres.

286

**A**rchigallo thus restored to his royall estate, ruled the people quietlie and iustlie ten yeres, and was buried at Poike.

282

**E**lidurus ascended, after the death of his brother Archigallo, for his pietie and iustice, by the generall consent of the Brytaines was againe chosen king. But he reigned not passing ii. yeres, for his yonger brethren Vigenius, and Peredurus raysed warre against him, tooke him prisoner, and cast him in prison, where he remained during their raigne.

272

**V**igenius and Peredurus, after the taking of their brother, reigned together seven yeres. Vigenius then died, and Peredurus reigned after alone two yeres. Hee builded the Towne of Pickering in the north partes of Poike-shire.

270

The Towne of  
Pickering  
built.  
Caxton.  
I. Roule.

261 **E**lidurus, the third time was made King, who continued his latter raigne honourably and iustly: but being soze bzused with age and troubles, he finished his life, when he had now lastlie raigned foure yéres.

258 Gorbonian raigned in Bzptaine ten yéres.

248 Morgan guided the Realme peaceably foureténe yéres.

224 **E**Merianus his bzother, when he had typpannously raigned seauen yéres was deposed.

227 **I**Val was chosen king for his iustice and temperance, which gouerned peaceably twentie yéres.

207 Rimo gouerned this realme sixtène yéres, his time was peaceable.

191 Geruncius raigned in Bzptaine twentie yéres.

171 **C**atellus raigned peaceably ten yéres, bee hung by all oppzessours of the spoze, to giue example vnto other.

161 *A good example.* Coilus succéded Catellus, who quietly raigned twentie yéres.

142 Porrex, a vertuous and gentle pzince, raigned siue yéres.

136 Chirimus, through his bzunkennelle, raigned but one yére.

135 Fulgen his sonne raigned two yéres in Bzptaine.

133 Eldred raigned in Bzptaine but one yére.

132 Androgius likewise raigned but one yére.

131 **V**Rianus the sonne of Androgius wholy gaue himselfe to the lustes of the flesh, and raigned thre yéres.

136 Eliud raigned siue yéres, who was a great Astronomer.

124 Dedantius king of Bzptaine raigned siue yéres.

120 Detonus raigned in this land two yéres.

118 Gurgineus raigned thre yéres in Bzptaine.

115 Merianus was king of Bzptaine two yéres.

113 Bladunus gouerned this land of Bzptaine two yéres.

111 Capenus raigned king of Bzptaine thre yéres.

108 Ouinus ruled this land of Bzptaine two yéres.

106 Silius raigned in this land of Bzptaine two yéres.

104 Bledgabredus raigned ten yéres, and gaue himselfe to the studie of spulliche.

94 Archemalus was king of Bzptaine two yéres.

91 **E**ldolus raigned foure yéres. In his time diuers prodigies were seene, as  
*Prodigious signs.* 88 Eglobes of fire, bursting out of the aire with great noise, &c.

86 Rodianus was king of Bzptaine two yéres.

83 Redargius raigned king of Bzptaine thre yéres.

81 Samulius raigned king of Bzptaine two yéres.

78 Penissellus was king of Bzptaine thre yéres.

76 Pyrrhus ruled this land of Bzptaine two yéres.

74 Caporus was king of Bzptaine two yéres.

**D**nellus the sonne of Caporus, a iust and vertuous pzince, gouerned this realme foure yéres.

79 **H**elius his sonne raigned not fullie one yére. Of this pzince the Ile of Ely toke the name, saith Gefsey.

**L**Vd the eldest sonne of Hely succeded his father: he amended his lawes, and toke away all vsages that were naught: mozeouer he repaired the Citie of newe Troy with faire buildings and walles: and builded on the west part thereof, a strong gate, which vnto this time retaineth the name of him and is called Ludgate. Finally, he died, leaving after him two sonnes Androgius, or Auaroins, and Theomantius: who not being of the age to gouerne, their vncle Casibelane obtained the Crowne. London toke the name of Lud, and was called Ludston, as saith Geoffrey.

66  
Lud repaired  
and fortified  
London.  
Flores Historiar.

Ludston, or  
London took  
the name of  
king Lud.

**C**asibelanus, the son of Hely, after the death of his brother Lud, was made gouernour of Brytaine, which ruled xix. yeeres. In the viii. yeere of his raigne, Iulius Caesar comming vnto that part where Caleis and Boloign now stand, determined to make warre into Brytaine, which vntill that time remained infrequented and unknowne of the Romanes. His quarrell was, because that in the warres of France, he persecuted the Frenchmen to haue much succour and aide from thence: And because hee could not vnderstand nor learne the greatnesse or state of the Island, neither what Nations they were which inhabited the same, nor what lawes, customes, or kinde of gouernment they vsed, nor yet what Hauens they had able to receiue any number of shippes, he sent Caius Volusenus before with a galley, to discover as much as he coude, concerning those matters, who within fise daies after returned to Caesar, declaring such things as he had learned by coasting alongst the Shore, for he durst not for feare of the Brytains stirre out of his galley. In the meane space the reame Embassadors from many Cities of the Isle, and deliuered him Hostages, with whome hee sent Comius of Arras, charging him to exhort and perswade the rest of the Cities and Counties to do the like. And he himselfe shortly after hauing prepared lxxx. ships, sailed into Brytaine, where at the first being wearied with an hard and sharp battaile, and after with sodain tempest his navy almost destroyed, he returned again into France, there to winter his men.

58  
Iulius Caesar  
his first voyage  
into England.  
Eutropius.  
Caesars Com-  
mentaries.

The next Spring (which was the yeere before Christ 51.) his nauie being newe rigged and encreased, he passed the Seas againe with a greater armie: but whiles he went towarde his enemies on land, his shippes lying at anchor, were diuened on the sandes, where they sticke fast: or else through beating one against another, with force of the tempest, they were destroyed, so that fourty were lost, the other with much labour were saued. In the meane space Scæua, one of Caesars souldiers, with foure others, who before in a small vessell were conueied to a rocke nere the Isle, and by ebbing of the Ocean being forsaken, a great number of Brytains fell on a few Romans, and some of his companions (though but few) found meanes to returne by boate, but Scæua remained without feare in the middlest of his enemies darts: And with his speare he resisted them, after with his sword he alone fought against many of them, and when he was both weary and wounded, and had lost his helmet and shield, with two light harnesses, he ran to Caesars tents, and asked pardon of the Emperour for his overboldnesse, who not onely forgave him, but honoured him with the office of a Centurion. Upon land Caesars horsemen at the first encounter were vanquished, and Laberius Durus the Tribune slaine in a place now called Cresson

Two voyages  
of Caesar.

Eutropius.



**Chro. Wygmore.** Non wood neare unto Rochester, as saith the Chronicle of Wygmore, At the second conflict, not without great danger of his men, he put the Byttaines to flight, from thence he went unto the riuer Thamis, on the further side thereof

**Cæsars Com- mentaries.** Cassibelanus with a great multitude of people was keeping the bankes, who had set all the sayd bankes, and all the shallowe places, vnder the water with sharpe stakes, euery one of them as bigge as a mans thygh, bound about with lead, & byuen so fast into the bottome of the riuer, that they can neuer be removed, (so sayth Bede and Asker) who affirme that in their times the saide stakes were easily perceiued to remaine as aforesaid. But Cassibelanus and his Byttaines not being able to resist the violence and force of the Romanes, hid themselves in woodes, and with sodaine eruptions of tentimes invaded them: but in the meane time, the Trinobants, which is the strongest Citie welneere of all those contries submitted it selfe, and deliuered hostages to Cæsar, who at their request placed Mandubratius to bee their gouernour, whose father called Immanentius, being chiefe Lord or ruler of the Trinobants, Cassibelane had before slaine, wherewith Mandubratius fled, and comming to Cæsar, not only submitted himselfe, but also was a great meanes (as manie do write) for Cæsar to subdue the rest: yet did Cassibelane send messengers to the foure kinges that ruled in the quarters of Kent, that with all their puissance they shoulde set on the Romans that late hurt them: their names were Cingetorex, Carilius, Taximagulus, and Segonax, who obeying his request were discomfited, and Cingetorex taken, wherewithall Cassibelane being dismayed after manie losses, was constrained to giue pledges, and to agree that Bytaine shoulde become tributarie to the Romans. Thus Bytaine became tributarie to the Romanes, the yere of y world 3913. after the building of Rome 698. before Christs birth 3.

**Julius Cæsar** name with bookins. **Autropius.** **Plinie.** **Suetonius.** When Cæsar like a conquerour, with a great number of prisoners sayled into France, and so to Rome, where after his returne out of Bytaine, hee consecrated to Venus a surcote of Bytaine pearles, the desire whereof partly moued him to invade this Countrey: shortly after he was by the Senate slaine in the Councell house.

**Cæsars Com- mentaries,** touching the barbaricallnes of Bytaines.

Cæsar in his Commentaries describeth the Bytains thus. The inner part (saith he) is inhabited of such, as by witness of their ancient Records were born and bred in the Ile, and the sea coast by such as haue passed thither out of Belgike to fetch booties, and to make war. All the which welneere, are called by the names of the Cities where they were borne, and from whence they first came, remaining there still when the warre was done, and tilling the ground. The country is marackiously well replenished with people, and there be very many buildings, almost like in fashion to the building of Gallia. There is great store of cattell. The coine they vse is either of brasse, or else ringes of yron filed at a certaine weight in stead of money. In the inner parts of the Realme groweth tinne: and in the sea coast groweth yron, but hereof is small store. The brasse that they occupy is brought in from beyond the sea. There is timber of all kinds as in Gallia, sauing beech and firre. They thinke it a hainous matter to taste of a hare, a henne, or a gosse: neuerthelesse they cherish them for their pleasure. The aire is more temperate in those places then in France, & the colde lesser.



Of all the inhabitants of this Ile, the civillest are the Kentishfolke, the which Country marcheth altogether upon the sea, and differeth not greatly from the manner of France. Those that dwell more into the hart of the Realme, for the most part sowe no cozne, but live by milke and flesh, and clothe themselves in lether. All the Byptaines doe die themselves with woad, which setteth a blewish colour upon them, and it maketh them more terrible to beholde in battaile. They weare their haire long, and haue all parts of their bodies sauing y head and the upper lippe. They haue x. or xii. twines a peece, common among themselves, specially brothers with brothers, and parents with their children, but the issue that cometh of them, is accounted his that first married the mother when she was a maide, &c.

**T**heomantius the sonne of Lud, and nephew to Cassibelane, succeeded in the Realme of Byptaine, and reigned quietlie xxiij. yeeres, paying the tribute to the Romans which Cassibelane had granted.

**O**ctavius Augustus desiring to bee like Iulius Caesar his father (for so he alwaies termed him) prepared an expedition into Byptain, but being come forward into France, understanding that the Pannonians lately subdued, rebelled, he turned his power against them, and altered his minde as touching our Countrey.

The fourth yeere after, hee opened the Temple of Ianus at Rome, fullie determining to invade Byptaine, but when he had marched on his way, as far as Ariminum, Ambassadors of Byptaine met him, humbly suing for peace, and submitting themselves unto his obedience and protection. Wherefore he stayed againe to settle some troubles then raised in France.

The yeere following, because the covenants betwene him and the Byptains could not be agreed upon, hee made provision for a third expedition into this Ile, but an actuall rebellion in Wiscay and Sauoy withheld him then also. But shortly after Ambassadors came from Byptaine to Rome, intreating for peace, swearing fealtie in the Temple of Mars, offering giftes in the Capitoll to the Gods of the Romanes: and submitted part of the Ile unto Augustus. Now the Byptaines began first to paie tolles and tribute without grudging, for all wares which they traded, which were for that time, Quorie bores, tongues, otches, and other trinkets of Amber and Glasse. And all here were so quiet, that one band of soldiers and a few horsemen, were sufficient to keepe the Ile in the Romane possession.

**C**ynobelinus, for so is the inscription of his coine, which I haue scene, and read, and therefore corruptly called Kymbeline, the sonne of Theomantius reigned king in Byptaine xxx. yeeres. In the xliij. yeere of his raigne Christ our saviour was bozne in Bethleheim of Juda.

*From this place following, the yeeres from Christ his birth are placed in the Margent.*

**W**hen Caesar Augustus the second Emperour by the will of God had established most sure peace through the world, our Redeemer Jesus Christ berie God and man, was bozne in the xliij. yeere of the raigne of Augustus,

Fr Eusebi.  
Paulus Orof.  
Baptista Platina.  
Martianus Pol-  
lius.

gustus, he beganne to preach the xv. yere of Tyberius, and suffered his passion the xliiii. yere of the same Tyberius, according to the propheties. But here is to be noted, that the first yere of our Lord hath but seven daies, after some computation, for he was borne the xrb. day of December, and the first of Januarie following, began the second yere.

21;

**G**viderius, the first son of Cunobelinus, was ordained king. This man was valiant, hardy, wealthy, and trusted much in his strength. And for that he thought the Romans had their tribute wrongfully, he of great courage denied to paye the same.

Geffrey Mon.  
Humphrey Lluyd.

Wherefore Tyberius the Emperour purposed to come hither in person, but death prevented him. Guiderius reigned xliiii. yeres. Aruiragus, or rather (as the Brytains tearme him) Monrigus, the yongest son of Cunobelinus, & brother of Guiderius was ordained king of Brittain: he slew Hamon neere to a haven of the sea, and thre w him gobbet meale therein, it is now called South-hampton. He strengthened the castel of Dover, & also the castel of Richbourgh, neere unto Sandwich in Kent. He reigned 28. yeres, and was buried at Gloucester.

G. ffy Mon.  
Chro. Douer.

40  
Suetonius.

**A**th the Brittain historie doth here place Aruiragus, yet it is probable that Cunobelinus as yet lived, for about 40. yeres after Christ, Admimus the son of Cunobeline banished out of Brittain by his father, was receiued into protection by Caius Caligula the fourth Emperour, who was then set forwarde with great preparation against Brittain, but when he came into the partes of Holland against Norfolk he staied, writing vaunting letters to the Senate, that all Brittain was yielded unto him, because Admimus had so done. Afterward as though he would immediately fight a field, he cast his men into battels and squadrons upon the sea coast, disposing all his Engines in most warlike manner (no man knowing what he meant) this done, he himselfe in a Galley launched into the sea, and immediately returning, he caused the Trumpets to sound to battaile, and sodainelie commaunded them to gather Cockles and Pusle shells, and the rebwith to fill their helmets, saying, they were spoyles due to the Capitoll, and in these spoyles he greatlie triumphed, as though he had subdued the Ocean. He rewarded his souldiours and returned to Rome, after he had built a high watch Tower in token of his victory against the sea, & ruines wherof are great remaining in Holland, but ouerflowed by the water, & to this day called St Brytons house, in remembrance of this ridiculous expedition against Brittain, by the perswasion of Bericus banished out of Brittain.

Dio. Lib. 59.

The ridiculous  
expedition of  
Caligula into  
Brittain.

Brittain house  
in Holland.

45

Dio.  
Suetonius.

**C**laudius the Emperour dispatched Aulus Plancius with an armie into Brittain, where after diuers conflicts when he had receiued part of the Boduni into his tuition, and had slaine Cataracus and Togodumus sons of Cunobeline, and thereby had made the Brytains more eager to reuenge, he sent for Claudius himselfe, who with great preparation and Elephants came into Brittain to his army, then incamped neere the Thames, with which he passed over into Essex, fought with the Brytaines, obtained the victorie, took the chiefe chiefe of Cunobeline, and all weapons from the Brytaines, and so returned to Rome the sixth moneth after hee set forth from thence, where hee triumphed, surmounting his sonne Brytanicus; to which triumph hee permitted not onelie

the

the presidentes of prouinces, but also certaine banished prisoners to repaire to Rome: and amidst the spoiles taken from the Bytaines, he fired on the top of his pallace a crowne of gold beset with gemmes and forepartes of shippes, in token he had vanquished the Bytish Ocean. He behaued himselfe very courteously towards diuers of his friends, in so much that when Plancius (a notable man) who in his boyage which he made into Bytain, atchieued diuers notable acts, and should triumph for the same, the Emperoz himselfe accompanied him, and (the use being such that with his triumph hee should go vp into the Capitoll) Claudius gaue him the preheminence, and went on the left hand.

At this time Vespasian who was after Emperoz, was sent by Claudius into Bytaine, where he fought 30. times with the Bytaines, subdued to the Roman Empire two worthy nations, aboue 20. towne, and the Ile of Wight.

Ostorius was appointed lieutenant in Bytaine for the Romanes, who at his first entry in the beginning of Winter assaileth the Bytaines, & purposeth to pen them by and include them with riuers & fortifications, wherefore the Iceni made an insurrection, which when he had pacified with some slaughter, he marched against the Gangi, foraging al the countries as he passed, but was forced by new tumults to turne from thē against y Brigants, whome with some slaughter, and promise of pardon, he pacified. Then he made prouision against the Silures which inhabited Southwales, bearing themselves bolde vpon the puissance of Caratacus a valiant Bytaine, who being skilfull of the Countrey, remoued the war into Shropshire, where he fortified amongst craggie mountaines a place strong by situation, where neuertheless the Romans prevailed. The wife, daughter, and brethren of Caratacus were taken, & he flying to Carlismandua a D. ruling in Powleshire, was by her peliuered captiue to his enemies, i.e. yeres after the wars began, who sending him to Rome, was there in open assemblie brought before Claudius, with his wife, daughter, brethren, and friends, and such spoiles as he had been taken from him, where hee (nothing dismayed in spirit or countenance,) spake after this sort to Claudius.

If my moderation of prosperous successes had bene correspondent to my state and nobilitie, I might haue come to this Citie, rather a friend then a captiue: neither you haue disdained to admit me into league, being descended of noble parentage, & soueraine ouer many nations. This present state of mine, as it is villanous toward me, so it is honorable to you. I had horse, men, money, munition, and what wonder is there, If I had lost them but willingly: for if you will rule and raigne ouer all, of necessity all must come into slavery: if I had yielded at the first, neither my fortune nor thy glory had bin renowned, and the obliuion of me had ensued immediately after my execution: but if you save my life, it shall be an everlasting example of your clemency. At these words Claudius remitted his offence, granted him life, & the Senate aduindged Ostorius worthy to triumph: but in the meane time y inhabitants of South-wales to reuenge Caratacus captiuitie intercepted and discomfited certaine bands of the Romans, amidst which new wars, Ostorius tired with trauel, departed this life.

Claudius sent Didius to supply the place of Ostorius now departed, but in the meane time the Silures fought fortunately against the legions which was

50

In Ostorius  
time certaine  
Cities were  
giuen to Cags.  
Duro as a By-  
tish king, and a  
Colonic of Ro-  
manes was  
placed here.

52

Agrippa 3. Hilo.

was vnder the conduct of Manlius Valens. In this time warre brake out betwene Cartimanda Q. of the Brigantes, and Venutius her husband, whome she refused, and matched her selfe with Velocatus his Esquire: whereupon Venutius fauored of the people, assailed her territory, and she succoured by the Romans, after she had intercepted by treachery Venutius brother and allies, fought with him. Where after a sharpe fight, she by the aid of the Romans, prevailed, as also Cæsius Nasica did with his legion against the Brytains in another place: for Didius vsed others in these matters, because he was aged, and onely kept that which others had heretofore conquered.

61 **C**laudius being now poisoned by Agrippina his wife, Nero her sonne obtained the Romane Empire, and about the 7. yeere of his raigne Verennus was appointed lieutenant here, who died within the first yeere of his government, saying that hee woulde haue subdued prouinces, had he suruiued but two yeeres, but about this time great slaughter was here of the Romans.

62 **S**uetonius Paulinus was then sent hither, who at his arriuall purposing to subdue Anglesey, whither many Brytains had withdrawne themselves, hee in vessels with flat keeles ferried ouer his footmen, bringing ouer his horsemen by some foulds, whereas on the shores stood closely together great numbers of Brytans, and among them women gadding vp and downe frantically in mourning wædes, their haire hanging about their eares, and shaking firebrands: the Draydes also casting vp their hands towards heauen thundred out cruell exclamations, with which vncomely sights the Romans at first stood dismayed, but after encouraged by the Generals perswasion, they bust in among them, made great slaughter, got the possession of the Isle, and felled downe the woods consecrated to superstitious vses: two cities belonging to the Romans were taken, 80000. of their people slaine, and the whole Island revolted, and to the Romans reproch, the slaughter was committed by a woman, being foretold then by many strange signes & tokens. For in the court was heard a noyse with much slaughter. In the Theatre a great tumult and much wondring, when there was no man there, that either spake or mourned. Besides, in the ruines of Chames certain houses or buildinges were seene. The Image of the goddesse Victoria in the Temple of Camulodunum (which is Maldon in Essex as W. Camden writeth) turned her backe as though she had yielded to her enemies: the women ranne as mad here and there, saying, and singing, Destruction is at hand.

Finally, betwixt the Island and France, the Ocean sea appeared as it flowed with blood. The occasion of this warre was a confiscation of the Brytans gods, which being remitted by Claudius the Emperour, Decianus Catus their Procurator of the Isle, said that it ought to haue bene reuered. To this cause was added, that whereas against their wils Seneca had lent them forty Sellenes vpon great vsurie) he now with great force and all kind of violence compelled them to pay all the whole summe at one payment, and also perswaded them to make warre on the Romans.

Bunduica of Brytaine, a woman of noble birth, not onely with much honour ruled amongst them, but also was the soueraigne in their wars, and had  
in



in deed a stomacke more manly then womanlike: who hauing gotten together an army of 120000. men, got her vpon her seat made of Parish turnes, after the manner of the Romanes, and being a tall woman, of comely shape, and serene countenance, sharpe voice, with yellowe haire hanging downe to her shoulteres, (Ponticus Virunius saith to her thighs) she ware a great chaine of golde, and had on her backe a coate of sundrie colours, and a platted kirtle. When she was thus apparelled, and had in her handes a great speare, she spake vnto them to this effect.

Ponticus Virunius.

First she commended libertie, shewing them how pouertie with libertie, was farre better then great riches in miserie and bondage: on the other side, with great eloquence she declared the mischiefes and calamities they suffered at the handes of the Romanes, who exacting Tributes of payments, so oppressed them, that much better it were once to die, then long to liue in such extreme slaueerie.

Secondly she reproued them, for not expelling their enemies, as their forefathers had done Iulius Caesar, Claudius and Caligula: And againe she prayed for their present readines to helpe her, and recover their ancient state.

Thirdly, she disabled the Romanes, for that they were fewe, combred with armour, and so faint of courage, that they had rather fight a farre off, then encounter with them by hand strokes: she commended the Bytanes, to be more in number, of greater valour, and farre more able to abide hunger, cold, thirst, raine, winde, heat, &c. she added the vantage of the place, as being at home, where the woods and riuers, lakes, and all other things were well knowne to euerie one of them.

Lastly, she exhorted them to shew themselves as Dogs and wolues among fearefull Hares and Foxes: wherewithall, she let out of her lap a quicke Hare, thereby to learne the euent of her enterprize. The Hare hauing a prosperous passage, all the multitude gaue a great shout, and Bunduica clapping her hands, gaue thanks to her Gods, that she ruled not the Romanes, as did Nero, (who though he were a man, yet was in deede but a woman, for that he sang and plaid on the Harpe) but the Bytains, who esteemed it better to be Warriors then Ploughmen, who, as they had all things in common, so had they both wiues and children, and that hauing a kingdome amongst such a kinde of people, she praised their diuine aides against a spitefull and wicked kinde of men, if they were to be called men, who vsed hote bathes, dainty fare, wine, ointments, lay in soft beds, and were vassals to such a wanton Prince as their Emperour Nero was.

That the Bytans were gentle.

Akinnesse of the Romanes.

Bunduica hauing spoken these and such like amongst her people, withall her hoste she set forward against the Romanes, who at that time were without head or gouernor, for that Paulinus was gone with his armie into Anglesey, (as is before rehearsed,) which is an Island nere Bytaine, by meanes whereof Bunduica toke two of their Cities, and committed the notable slaughter before remembred.

She exercised all kinde of crueltie on such men as she toke. As for the noble women that she gate, she hanged them vp, and cut off their pappes, and

sewed



sewed them to their mouthes: besides this, the stretching their bodles out at length, thrust sharpe stakes cleane through them: all which thinges were done in despight, when they sacrificed and seased in their Temples, but specially in the wood called Andates.

Paulinus, who had now subdued Anglesey, hearing of the foresaid slaughter, returned to Brytaine, yet would he not adventure the fortune of battaile with them, fearing their number, but when he wanted bravaill, and that his enemies approached, he was compelled to abide the battell. Bunduica, who had in her army 230000. men, was her selfe placed in a Chariot, and ordered her men at length: but Paulinus could not stretch his companie so long, for that they were not of ante such number; but at length he deuised his armie into three partes, so that at one time they might fight in sundry places, exhorting them not to be abashed at the multitude of their enemies, for both they and their forefathers, had with lesse number atchieued greater matters, and gotten greater victories. Adding, that now was the time to plaie the men, to enjoy that in quiet, which before their ancestors had won, and recover that which they had lost, or else to liue for euer in miserie and shame. Again, he shewed what crueltie their eses had scene, by those barbarous people, to such as they had ouercome, exhorting them in reuenge thereof to fight manfully, and there was no doubt but the Gods (who were alwaies fauourable to such as had suffered cruelty) would helpe them: and better it were to die fighting valiantly, then with reproch to be taken, and die in their enemies hands like dogges. Finally (saith he) whether we liue or die, Brytaine shall bee ours; for, though the other Romanes lose it, yet shall our bones continually keepe it. When he had thus spoken, the signe of the battell was giuen, and each part prepareth himselfe: the Brytains with great and strange noise, the Romans in silence came so nere, that they might throwe their dartes to them: and perceluing their enemies to approach, with great violence, rushed in amongst them, and brake their aray: but after being compassed with the multitude of their enemies, the battell waxed doubtfull. The light harnessed men began to smite each other, and those of beaute armour together with the horsemen encountred, and the Roman Archers fought against the Brytish Chariots. They which fought without breastplates, were slaine with Darts. This encounter was made in three severall places, and was fought with great courage on both sides. At the last the Romans departed Conquerors, many were slaine in the battaile, and many were taken. Great numbers which escaped, prepared to fight againe, but in the meane space Bunduica died of a disease which shee had, and they mourned, and buried her verie honourably. After those that remained were callic ouercome and dispersed.

Cornelius Tacitus.

Tacitus saith, that Prasutagus King of the Iceni, a Prince of great wealth, appointed, that Caesar and his owne two daughters should inherite his lands, hereby thinking all his life to be more quiet, and being deceased, his wife and daughters should be the more safer by meanes of such protection: but it fell out farre otherwise, for the Centurions gat his Realme, their seruants spoiled his house, beate his wife, and deflowred his daughters: besides, the chiefest men of

of his land were displaced of their inheritances, and handled extremelie. In reuenge whereof Bunduica raised the warre, and committed the slaughter befoze remembred, and at last her armie once ouerthrowen by Paulinus, being afraid to fall into her enimies hands, she poisoned her selfe.

Policletus then a seruauit of Nero, was sent hither to surueie the state of Byptaine, who discharged Paulinus Suetonius of the gouernement.

**P**etronius Turpilianus was sent into Byptaine as a man easie to bee entreated, and being not altogether acquainted with offences of the enimies, was the readier to receyue them to grace: who setting matters in their former stay, and attempting no further, deliuered the Province vnto Trebellius Maximus. Trebellius being both faint hearted and too sluggish, and also vtterlie vnacquainted with experientes of armes, ruled by province with a certain mildnes of gouernement. Now had the barbarous people also learned to wincke at inticing vices, and the ciuill warres of the Romanes then happening, was a cloake to his cowardise: but there presentlie arose discord betwene Roscius and Caelius, legates of the xx. legion, when the souldiours (accustomed to be employed in expeditions) gaue themselues to lasciuiousnes: whereupon Trebellius tooke his flight, and hid his head, to auoide the furie of the armie, and in most base and braslie manner, gouerned (as it were) by entreatie, so as they might seeme to haue compounded, that the souldiours should liue in all liberty, and the Generall at his safetie. This time for a yere and halfe there was deadly ciuill warre among the Romanes for the Empire, betwene Galba, Otho, and Vitellius.

**V**etius Volanus, then was sent hither by Vitellius, he did not vse anie discipline or correction in Byptaine, so as there continued the like slooth and cowardise in the souldiours, toward their enimies, and the Campe still as full of wantonnesse, sauing that Volanus was a good and milde man, and thereby made himselfe beloued where he shoulde haue bene feared. In this time Vitellius aduanced manie souldiours in the Byptaine legions, and Herdonius Flaccus brought vnto him 80000. chosen men of warre out of Byptaine. The Byptaines seeing the Romanes thus encombred with ciuill warre, began to trouble them, wherefoze Volanus would send no succor to Vitellius at his commandement, when Vespasian warred against him for the Empire, and all the Byptaines fauoured Vespasian.

**W**hen as (with the rest of the world) Vespasian had recovered Byptaine, then were there placed great Captaynes, and notable armies, the enimies hope abated, and Petilius Cerealis brought great feare vpon the Byptaines. The Citie of the Brigantes (which was accounted one of the greatest of the land) being by him assailed, he hadde many encounters, and some not without slaughter, whereby hee epyther conquered or assailed a great part of their Countrey.

Iulius Frontinus, a man as worthie and ballant as was possible, took then the charge vpon him, and subdued the nation of the Silures, being both ballant and warlike, notwithstanding the valour of the enimie and difficulties of the places.

64  
Petronius  
Turpilianus.

69  
Aetius Caelianus.

Tacitus.

70

Petilius Cerealis.

Iulius Frontinus.

This

Julius Agri-  
cola.

This was the state of Brytain, and course of the wars, which Agricola found arriving in the middle of Sommer, the souldiers even then beginning to retire to their strengths, and the enemy searching for his most advantage.

The Citty of the Ordoices seldome daies before his arrivall almost wholly defeated a company lying upon their borders. This beginning stirred by the province, serving for an example to them, who coveted the warres, and yet desired to see what was in their new Governour. Agricola, although the Sommer were now well spent, the bandes dispersed all about the province, the souldiers had determined to rest for that yeere, the time being late and inconvenient to commence the war, thinking it would be better to man the places most suspected: yet he determined nevertheless to prevent danger, and gathering together the Standards of the Legions, with a few of his foraine aides, for that the Ordoices durst not take the field, marched forth against them himselfe in the vanguard of his armie, that others might take like courage in the same danger, and put almost that whole nation to the sword: then following his good successe, hee invaded Anglesey, (which Suetonius had before attempted) causing certaine Brytaines that served him, and knewe the shal- lowes and maner of swimming, with horse and harnesse to passe over into the Isle on a sodaine, wherewith the inhabitants were so amazed (who fearing nothing because they sawe no naue) that they submitted the Isle unto him immediately. Now hauing some quietnesse, and perceiving that warre would little preuaile against the Brytaines, if they were insouciously handled, he proposed to cut off all causes of quarrell, and first reforming his own familie, did nothing partially, onely respected the vertue of men, loosened tributes, and behaued himselfe most honourably. And thus much the first yeere.

Tacitus.

When the Sommer began, he assembled his armies, trained his souldiers, foraged the enemies Countries with sodaine inuasions to their great feare, and yet so fauorably, as many Countries willingly yielded unto him, and suffered Castles to be built among them. The Winter following he spent in euill administration, counselling the people privately, and helping them publicly, to build houses, Temples, and Court houses. He procured noble mens children to study liberal Sciences, and then began the Brytaines to conforme themselves to Roman fashions and attyre.

The third yeere he discovered people in the North hitherto unknown, even as far as Tau, terrifying the people, and placing fortresses most wisely to the annoyance of the enemy.

The fourth Sommer he employed getting those Countries which hitherto hee had passed through, euen to Edenborough, Frith, and Cluid, the narrowest space betwene the which waters he fortified.

The fifth yeere by Sea he discovered and vanquished farther nations in the North, and placed garrisons in the coast toward Ireland, wherunto hee also aspired, and to that end retained an Irish Prince with him, that was driven out of his Countrey by ciuill dissention.

But in the Sommer which began the first yeere of his government, he feared the Hauens by a naue for that purpose sent to the Sea, fearing least all those

those nations beyonde had vnited themselves and kept the passages by lande; but after ward he marched forward, his nauie coasting with his army by land, so as sometime in the same Campe, he had horsemen, footemen, and Seamen, lodged together. It was reported by such as were taken prisoners, that the sight of the nauie much astonished the Byptaines as men from whom all refuge was cutte off, the secretes of their Seas being discovered: wherefore determining to trie it with hand blowes the inhabitants of Calidonia with great preparation, although the report thereof were greater (as it often happeneth in vnknown matters,) of their owne accorde, assailed some Castles, and seeing themselves rather to bee assailable then defendantes, put the Romanes in some doubt: whereupon the colwarde pretending pollicie, aduised to retreue on this side Bodotria, rather then to bee diuised there by force, then as in the meane while, Agricola knowing that the enemy would charge him in seuerall troups and companies, and fearing to bee ouermatched and coupled in with number, or decciued by the ignorance of the place, diuided his army into three battels, and so marched forward: which order marked by his enemies, made them alter their purpose, and in the night killing the watch, brake in vpon the ninth legion, halfe a sleepe and halfe affrighted, which (as they took it) was the weakest, and so the fight continued within the Campe till it was day light, at which time the Romanes began to gather courage, and the Byptains were discomfited, so as, had it not bin for the woods and bogges, that victorie had ended the whole strife, after which battell the Roman souldiours grew to be of hauntie courage, crying out to pierce the countrey of Calidonia, that they might finde out the vttermost portes and boundes of Byptaine. The Romanes on the other side, ascribing the praise of this victorie, not to the prowesse of the Roman souldier, but to Fortune and the willnesse of their Captaine, vsed all meanes possible, to hearten vp and arme their youth, bestowing their wiues and children in places of safegard, and by sacrifices and holy assemblies vnite al their Cities together: vpon these resolutions they remoued.

In the beginning of the next sommer which was the viii. yeere of his charge, Agricola sending his fleet before him, which often put a land and spoiled the Countries, thereby causing a great and vncertaine feare: himselfe with a picked army, whereunto he added of the valiantest Byptains, came to the mountaine Grampius, whereon his enemies had encamped, (for the Byptaines nothing quailed by the successe of the former encounter, and expecting nothing but a reuenge, or bondage, learning at length, that common danger is onelie to be resisted with common consent) by leagues and embassages had stirred by the mindes of all the Cities about. Soe were there to be in armes thirtie thousand and vpwarde, vnto which number, the youth, and all such as were of strong and lustie yeeres, euerie man bearing his tokens of praise about him, continually repayed from all sides. When amongst many other Captains, Calgacus a man both in nobilitie and valor aboue the rest, spake to the assembly in this manner: As of ten as I behold the causes of this warre and our necessitie, my minde giueth me great hope, that this day and your mutuall con-

sent



sent shall be the beginning of libertie to all Bypaine; for, every one of you ha-  
 uing tried seruitude, and hauing no other land nor sea, which can saue vs (the  
 Romanes name being at our elbowes) the verie warre and weapons which  
 are the honour of the worthish, must be the onlie safete of the faint-hearted.  
 With these and manie such reasons drawne from the calamitie of their future  
 seruitude, the pride and tyrannie of their gouernors, the sickle friendship of the  
 strangers seruing in their enemies campe, ready to change vpon any high oc-  
 casion, and the present remedie of al misery, which, as he said in the beginning,  
 was onely baliaunce, he so stirred vp all mens minds, that they applauded his  
 Oracion after their manner, with songs and diuers kind of noises. His Ora-  
 tion being ended, as also Agricola his speech to his Souldiours, the two ar-  
 mies beganne to encounter. Agricola placed his battailes in this order: hee  
 made his maine battaile of the strangers (his aides) which were in number  
 viii. thousand, on each side thereof, for wings he placed his horsemen to the  
 number of three thousand, and his legions he caused to garde the trenches of  
 his Campe, that if it were possible, the victorie might be gained without the  
 shedding of Roman bloud, or if his main battaile were broken, they might be  
 gathered againe, and the fight restored by his legions. The battaile of the Byp-  
 taines (to terrifie their enemies, as also to make their brauest thewe,) stood ou-  
 higher ground, so as their baluarde being come vpon the plaine, the rest were  
 on the fote of the hill, their Chariots, in the meane time gallopping by and  
 dooing the felde, making great howles and cries. When Agricola perceiuing  
 the number of his enemies to bee greater then his owne, and fearing to bee  
 charged both on the face and flanke of his battaile at one time, and that ma-  
 nie thought necessarie to haue the legions advanced forwarde, remained not-  
 withstanding firme in his first resolution, causing his battaile to bee some-  
 what drawne in length, himselfe alighted from his horse, and stood on fote  
 before his standards. The first fight was with shotte of arrowes and dartes,  
 during which time, the Bypaines, both skilfullie and couragiouslie with their  
 huge Swords and small Bucklers, either bare or brake the Romanes shotte,  
 and answered them with an infinite number of the like, untill Agricola was  
 perswaded by bands of Hollanders, and Brabanders, that the matter might be  
 brought to swords and hand-strokes, which kinde of fight they were acquaint-  
 ed withall, by long haunting the wars, and the same was verie incommo-  
 dious for their enemies, bearing but small shielde, and vnumcassurable swordes:  
 For the pointlesse swordes of the Bypains, were unfit for a strong, and where  
 they wanted come. Wherefore the Hollanders strake thicke together, and  
 thrust them ouer the Bucklers, wounding them in the faces, and hauing bro-  
 ken that battaile, passed forward towarde them which kept the hill, which  
 scene by the rest of the Romanes bandes, they partly moued by enuie of the  
 others glorie, and partly by heate of their owne courages, cutte in pieces  
 those that they first encountred, leaueing notwithstanding, some halfe dead,  
 and others not touched, for haste to obtaine a perfect victorie. In the meane  
 while, the troupes of the Bypaine horsemen, did take their flight, but the  
 Chariots put themselves pceemeale among the fote bandes, which kinde  
 of



of fight, (at first) seemed somewhat terrible to their enemies, but it long served not their turnes, being assailed with a thicke pzeale of their enemies, and the ground not commodious for the Chariots, nor their riders all of the best. So as at the last, their Chariot horses, coursing vp and downe the felde without guiders, ouertanne many of their owne companie, as they fled for feare from one place to another. The Byptaines, which all this while kept the hill, and came not to the fight, making little reckoning of the small number of the Romanes, beganne by little and little to descend, intending to hemme them in, in the midst of their conquest, which surely they had done, if Agricola, suspecting the same, had not dispatched foure companies of horsemen (which he kept for all sodaines) to encounter with them, who, the more fiercely they assailed, so much the more sharply repulsed them, and sent them to flight: whereupon the deuice of the Byptaines turned to their owne harme. Moreover, by Agricola his commandement the winges of the horsemen were taken from the front of his battell, and were made to charge vpon the battell of his enemies, standing ouer-against them. Then might you behold in the open felde, a greiuous and lamentable spectacle, some followed the chase, some took prisoners, and after killed them to take others. Some the enemies as euerie one thought best, fledde, some in heapes and armed fled from a smaller number: other, though vnarmed, farrped and were slaine: euerie where laie weapons, carcases, and limbs cut off, the ground all bloudie. Sometime the vanquished appoaching neare to Woods, would make head, and entrappe the hedelesse followers, so as, if Agricola had not caused certaine lustie bandes in the manner of a search, and also diuers horsemen, leauing their horse where the Woods were thicke, and other on horsebacke, where the Woods would suffer, to raunge them all about, there might haue bene some betrimment receiued by too much hardinesse. But when the Byptaines saw themselves pursued in order of battaile, they took againe their flight, not in companies as before, nor tarrying one for another, but here and there, euen as men glad to escape, sought long and by wales. Flight and wearinesse of slaughter ended the chase. There were slaine of the Byptaines about tenne thousand: of the Romane armie, thre hundred and fortie, among whom Aulus Accius, Captaine of a bande, whome the heate of his youth, and courage of his horse brought into the hands of his enemies. That night the victors made merrie with the spoile, but the Byptaines wandring vp and downe, men and women lamenting together, relieved and fetcht away their hurt men, assembled together the whole, forsooke their houses, and for anger set fire on them, choosing themselves lurking places, which straight they forsooke againe: some time conceiuing good hope, which straightway quapled againe: and some were knownen to kill their wiues and children, as though they had therein taken compassion vpon them. The next day made the victorie more manifest, in which there was nothing but silence, the hills being then forsaken, and also the houses smoking a farre off.

Agricola sending abroad his espialles, coulde finde no enemy to make head, wherefore Sommer being too farre spent to procede any further in the warre,

warre, hee had his souldiours into the coastes of the Horesti, and there taking hostages, caused his naute to coaste about Bytaine, which at last arrived at the Haven called Trutulensis, afterwarde having bestowed his souldiours in their wintering places, departed Bytaine, and left the prouince in quiet to his succellour.

First Christi-  
ans in Bytaine.  
Nicephorus.

Diuers authors affirme, that about this time, the Gospell of Christ our saviour was first preached in this Iland. Nicephorus a Greeke author in his second booke the 40. Chapter, hath as followeth. Simon bozne in Cana Galilei, who for his seruent affection to his Master, & great zeale be toke by all means to the Gospell, was surnamed Zelotes, he hauing receiued the holy Ghost from aboue, traualled through Aegypt and Affrike, then through Mauritanis and all Lybia, preaching the Gospell. And the same Doctrine he brought to the Occidentall sea, and the Isles called Brytania, &c. And in the third Booke the first Chapter, he saith. The holie Apostles (like as we haue declared already) being dispersed throughout the whole earth, did diuide the prouinces amongst them by lot, to preach the Gospell in. Peter undoubtedly first at Jerusalem, then in Galatia, Bythinia, with the higher Asia, Cappadocia, and all Italie, taught the Gospell: Iohn in Asia, who ended his life there: To Andrew fell the prouinces on the coaste of Eurine, all Scythia, Byzans, Macedonia, and the firme land of Greece: Thomas amongst the Parthians, Indians, and the Ile of Taprobana did publish the Gospell: Another chose Aegypt and Lybia: another the bittermost coastes of the Ocean, with the Isles of Bytaine, &c.

Dorotheus.

Dorotheus writeth thus. Simon Zelotes passing through Mauritanis, and Affrica preached Christ, at length was crucified, slaine and buried in Bytaine, or rather Bythania. Also he saith, Aristobulus, whom the Apostle to the Romans remembereth, was made a Bishop in Bytaine or Bythania. George Maior writeth in a preface, that immediatlie after Christs resurrection vnder Claudius the Emperour, the light of the gospel was kindled in Bytaine by Ioseph of Arimathea that buried the body of Christ. Tertullian writting against the Iewes of those times, saith: The Bytaines inhabitants of places vnknownen to the Romanes, yet did obey and were subiect to the kingdome of Christ. William of Malmesbury, in his booke of the antiquities of Glasseburie, alleageth Freculphus to write in his second booke and fourth Chapter, as followeth: Philip the Apostle, preaching the worde of God in Gaule (nowe called Fraunce) chose out xli. amongst his Disciples, whome hee sent into Bytaine to preach the worde of life, and vpon euerie one of them, he most deuoutly stretched out his right hande: ouer these he appointed for chiefe, his deare friende Ioseph of Arimathea, that buried our Lorde. These (saith Iohn Capgrau, who alleageth Melkin and Merlin) came into this lande the yere of Christs incarnation sixtie thre, in the time of Aruiragus who gaue to them the Ile of Aualon, where they builded an Oratorie of wythen wodes, and after there were buried: which place being since encreased, and newly builded by diuers Princes, was named Glasseburie. For confirmation thereof, King Henry the second (as himselfe in his Charter affirmeth) hauing diligentlie perused the Priviledges and Charters, which hee caused to be presented and read,

Antiquities of  
Glasseburie.  
Freculphus.

Glasseburie  
first Church of  
Christians in  
Bytaine.  
Iohn Capgrau.  
Melkin and  
Merlin.

Charta Regia.

not onely of William the first, of William the seconde, and Henry the first his Grandfather: but also the Charters of the Princes his predecessours, of moze ancient time, to wit, of Edgar, Edmond, Edward, Elfred, Bringwalthius, Kenethwin, Baldred, Ina, Arthur, & that noble man Cudred, & many other Christian Kings beside, also of Kenewalla, sometime a Heathen and Pagan King, concerning the house of Glasenburie found, that in some of those Charters it is called the Mother of Saintes, of some other, the Graue of the Saintes, and that the sayde place was first builded euen by the verie Disciples of Christ themselves, and by them dedicated to our Lorde, as the first place which hee chose to himselfe in this Realme: all which so to be the foresaid King Henry established by his Charter: which Charter my selfe haue seene and read.

**M**arius sonne of Arviragus, an excellent wise man, was ordained King of Brytaine. At this season Rodrike King of the Pictes, (which were people of Scythia) accompanied with the Scots inuaded Brytaine, and spoiled the country with sword & fire, against whom Marius with his knights assembled in al hast, & gaue them sharpe battel, wherein Rodrike was slaine, with a great number of his souldiours vpon Stanefmore, in token of which victorie, there was a stone not farre from Carlisle created, with this inscription, In token of Marius victorie. To them which remained Marius gaue inhabitaunce in the further part of Scotland. And forsomuch as the Brytaines disdained to giue to them their daughters in marriage, they acquainted them with the Irishmen, and married their daughters, and grew in procelle of time to a great people. He repayed, walled, and fortified the citie of Caerlegion, now called Chester. He raygned liii. yeres.

73  
Gaufride.

Flores Historias.

Ran Hig.  
Henry Bradshaw  
Chester repayed.

**D**omitianus the Emperour sent Salustius Lucullus into Brytaine, whome hee shortly put to death, for that he suffered certain lawes to be called Lucullen, after his name. Some write that Cneus Trebullius was now gouernour, here.

94  
Suetonius.

What Lieutenants were in Brytaine for the time of Nerua and Traiane, I find not recorded: but when Adrian was possessed in the Empire, Iulius Seuerus gouerned here vnder him, whom Adrianus called out of Brytaine, to warre against the Iewes, and came hither himselfe in person, pacified the tumultes, reared a wall, which should seperate the barbarons from his subiectes, and returned to Rome.

Iulius Seuerus.  
120

Spartianus.

**C**oilus the sonne of Marius was ordained king, hee was brought vpon euen from his youth in Rome among the Romans, and therfore fauoring them, paid the tribute truly: he builded Colchester, and raigned lv. yeres.

124  
Galfridus.  
Colchester  
builded.

**A**ntonius Pius succceeded Hadrianus in the Empire, and gouerned this prouince by Lollius Urbicus, who ouercame the Brytaines, and rayped another wall of turres to keepe out the Inrodes of the Northerne Brytaines.

139  
Capitolianus.

**A**ntonius Philosophus now ruled the Romane Empire, and Calphurnius Agricola was sent hither with authoritie against the Britains then repining at the Romanes, but with what successe it is not specified.

162

**L**ucius the sonne of Coilus, was ordained King, who in all his actes and Lodes followed the steps of his forefathers, in such wise as hee was of all men loued and deard. He sent his two Embassadors Euanus and Meduinus,

179  
Florent. Wigornij

England recei-  
ued the faith.  
Beda.  
Affer.  
Flores Historiar.  
Liber. S.  
Alaphs.  
Iohn Capgrau.  
Marianus Scotus  
Leshdon Pojke,  
and Carleia.

two learned men in the Scriptures, with his louing letters to Elutherius Bi-  
shoppe of Rome, desiring him to send some deuout and learned men, by whose  
instruction both he and his people might bee taught the faith and Religion of  
Christ: whereof Elutherius beeing verie glad, baptized these two mellen-  
gers, making Euanus a Bishoppe, and Meduinus a teacher, and sent also  
with them into Brytaine two famous Clarkes, Faganus and Deruianus, by  
whose diligence Lucius and his people of Brytaine were baptized and instruc-  
ted in the faith of Christ, Temples were made Cathedrall Churches, and Bi-  
shops placed, where Flamines before had bene: at London, Yorke, and Car-  
lion vpon Wsike, (now saint Dauids in Wales) were placed Archbishops: thus  
far after the common opinion, & writers of that time. True it is that till this  
daie, there remaineth in Somersetshire, in the Denerte of Dunstoe, a parish  
Church, bearing the name of S. Deruian, as a Church either by him found-  
ed, or to him dedicated. To the confirmation whereof, the reuerend Beda  
writeth thus. In the yere 156. Marcus Aurelius Verus, the 14. Emperour af-  
ter Augustus gouerned the Empire, with his brother Aurelius Comodus. In  
whose time Elutherius, a holie man being Pope of the Church of Rome, Lucius  
King of Brytaines wrote vnto him, desiring that by his commandement he  
might be made a Christian: which his request was granted him, whereby the  
Brytains receiuing then the faith, kept it sound and vndeiled in rest and peace,  
vntill Dioclesian the Emperours time. Thus farre Beda of that matter, which  
maie suffice to proue the Christian faith, then to bee receiued here, but Beda  
speaketh nothing of such an Epistle, sent by Elutherius to Lucius, as some haue  
fasthered vpon him, I onelie find the same entered in a booke intituled, Con-  
stitutions, pertaining to the Guildhall of London, misdated in the Latine,  
as the English following sheweth.

Beda falsely  
alleged, by R.  
Crafter.

Epistle of Elu-  
therius to Luci-  
us King of  
Brytaine.  
Lib. Concli. Lon.

Psalm. 45.

The yere after Christs birth 202. Pope Elutherius did write to Lucius  
king of Brytain, for the amendment of the kings and the nobility of Brytain  
as followeth. You required that we should send you the Roman and Imperia-  
ll lawes, y you might vse the in your kingdome of Brytain, but those lawes we  
may disproue, & not the lawes of God. You haue receiued lately through Gods  
godnesse in your kingdome, the faith and law of Christ, you haue there in your  
kingdome both Testaments, out of them by Gods grace, and the aduice of  
your realme take a lawe, and there by patiently gouerne the kingdome. You  
are the Vicar of God in your kingdome, according to the kingly Prophet. The  
earth is the Lordes, and his fulnesse is the whole worlde, and all that dwell there-  
in: and againe, Thou hast loued righteousnesse, and hated iniquitie, therefore  
God (euen thy God) hath annointed thee with the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy  
fellowes. They are the kings children, christian nations, and people of your  
kingdome that line and consist vnder your protection, peace, and kingdome ac-  
cording to the Scripture, as an Hen gathereth her chickens vnder her wings,  
the people, and nations of the kingdome of Brytaine is yours, such as are di-  
uided you should gather them together to the lawe of Christ: his holy Church,  
to peace and con corde: and cherish, maintaine, protect, gouerne, and de-  
fend them from the insurious, malicious and their enemies. Woe be to that  
kingdome,



kingdome, the King whereof is a childe, and the Princes eate early in the morning. I doe not call a King a childe for his youth or minozitie, but for his folie, iniquitie, and madnesse, according to the Kingly Prophet. The bloud-thirstie and deceitfull men shall not outlive halfe their daies. By eating we shall understand Gluttonie; by Gluttonie Lurarie; by Lurarie, all filth, wickednesse and mischief, according to King Salomon: Wisedome will not enter into a spitefull soule, nor inhabite in a bodie subiect to Sinne. A King hath his name of governing, and not of his kingdome, so long you shall be a King, as you rule well, otherwise, you shall not bee so named, and lose that name, which God forbids. God graunt that you may so rule your Realme of Byttain, that you may reigne with him everlastingly, whose Vicar you are in the saide kingdome. To whom with the father, &c.

Psalme, 55.

Sapience, 21

There remaineth in the Church of Saint Peter vpon Cornhill at London, a Table, wherein is written, that Lucius founded the same Church to bee an Archbishops see, and made it the Metropolitane and chiefe Church of his kingdome, which so endured the space of 400. yeres, vnto the comming of Saint Augustine.

The Archbishops names, I finde onely to be set downe by Iocelyn of Furne, in his booke of Bytish Byshops, and not else where. Iocelyn of Furne.

1 Thean (lastly he) was the first Archbishop of London, in the time of Lucius, who builded the saide Church of S. Peter in a place called Cornhill in London, by the aide of Ciran, chiefe butler to King Lucius.

2 Euanus was the second, and he builded a Librarie to the same Church adioyning: and converted manie of the Druides (learned men in the Pagans lawe) to the Christian faith.

3 Cadar was the thirde.

4 Obinus.

5 Conan.

6 Paludius.

7 Stephan.

8 Iltuta.

9 Dedwin.

10 Thedred.

11 Hilary.

12 Guidelinus.

13 Vodinus slaine by the Saxons.

14 Theanus, fled with the Bytaines into Wales, about the yere of Christ 587. Thus much out of Iocelyn of the Archbishops: the credit whereof I leane to the iudgement of the learned: for I read of a Bishop of London (not before named) in the yere of Christ, 326. to be present at the second Councell holden at Arlas, in the time of Constantine the Great, who subscribed thereunto in these wordes: *Ex prouincia Britania ciuitate Londinenſi Reſtitutus Epiſcopus*: as plainlie appeareth in the first Tome of the Councelles. He writeth not him selfe Archbishop, and therefore maketh that matter of Archbishops doubtful, or rather overthroweth that opinion.



Lucius reigned xii. yeres, and was buried at Clocester.

181  
Dion.

Comodus after his father Antonius Philosophus succeeded in the Empire with most cruell tyrannie. In his time the Northern Bytaines burst in through the wall, forayed the Countrey, and slew the Romane General with his souldiers, wherefore Vlpus Marcellus was appointed here a carefull vigilant Captaine: he soze annoied the Bytaines, which were enemies to the Roman state, and purchasing enuie by his vertue, was shortly dismissed.

Lampridius  
Dion.

Then Ceronnis who ruled all vnder Comodus, appointed certaine men of base estate to gouerne the Romane enemies here, therewith the souldiours being grieved, sent 15000. chosen men out of their number to Rome, who accusing him before Comodus to compasse the Empire, for his sonne, was deliuered vnto them, who immediately mangled him and slew his wife with his two sonnes.

Lampridius.

Comodus then sent Holnius Pertinax into Bytaine, and surnamed himselfe Brytanicus thereunto perswaded by flatterers, when the Bytaines were so euill affected toward him, that they would haue nominated some other Emperour against him, and namely Pertinax: but these tumults were appeased by the wisdom of Pertinax, to his great danger, for he was well nere slaine in tumult, and left among the dead, which insury he after seuerally reuenged, and sued for his discharge, being after ward preferred to the Empire.

Ca. irolinus.

Capitolinus.

Clodius Albinus was then sent hither by Comodus, who at the first so greatly esteemed of him, that he honored him with the title of a Caesar, which Clodius refused: but afterwards when a false rumor was dispersed, that Comodus was slaine, hee made an Oration to the legions of Bytaine, impeaching the gouernment of Emperours, and preferring the Senate, whereupon Comodus being charned against him, sent Iunius Seuerus to rule here, and shortly after Comodus was slaine.

194

Pertinax then was chosen Emperour, and within iii. monethes was slaine through the perswasions of Didius Iulianus, who enioyed the Empire two monethes, and the practise of Clodius Albinus, which then returned into Bytain, and (as it seemeth) recovered his former gouernment.

194

Seuerus after the death of Pertinax was saluted Emperour: he immediately slew Didius Iulianus, and because he feared Clodius Albinus with his Bytaine legions, he created him Caesar, and partaker of the Empire, and sent Heraclius to gouerne this Isle: but after he had subdued Niger who also usurped the Empire, he moued warre against Albinus, who passing hence into France with the Bytish armie, encountered with Seuerus neare Lions, and was there slaine. Henceforth Seuerus quietly enioyed the Romane Empire, and made sharpe warres into the Gallerne partes of the world, with great glorie.

209

But returning to Rome, he vnder stood of a war raised in Bytaine. Wherefore he hasted hither with his two sonnes Balsianus and Gera: at his arrivall peace was offered, which he refused, and leaning his yonger sonne Gera to gouerne the prouince, (being the hither part of the Isle) he with Balsianus his eldest sonne entred into the North, & passed the further part of this Ile and without any resistance: yet by ambushes, difficultie of the waie, and other inconueniencies,

ences, he lost 50000. men, and then returned, enforced the enemies to conclude a league, and yeld some part of their Countrey.

At conclusion of which league, when hee and his sonne rid to treat with the Caledonians or Fortherne Byptaines, Bassianus his sonne drawing his sword in the sight of the enemy, was ready to haue slaine him, and had done it, had not some of the companie made an outcrie: yet this fault was remitted.

After this league, the Byptaines of the North resorted to the Emperours Court, where Iulia, Seuerus wife, objected to a woman of Byptaine, the wife of Argentorix the Caledonian, that the Byptish women accompanied with men dishonestly: yea quoth the Byptish woman, wee satisfie the naturall lust in better sort then you Romanes, for wee accompanie our selues openly with the best men, and you commit adulterie closely with the most vile persons. But after this league there was a generall reuolte of the Byptaines against the Romanes, which yet was pacified with great slaughter, and then hee built a wall of turfe, to inhibit the Fortherne Byptaines, from whence then hee returned, at the next lodging, a blacke Horse that serued him, a notable scoffer, met him with a Crowne of Cyprus: he moued with the colour of the man, and the Cyprus (which was then vsed at all burials,) as with signes of euill lucke, commanded the man to be sent awate, wherewith he cried: Thou hast bene all in all, and hast vanquished all, and now of a Conqueror be thou a God. Then coming to the Citie of Pozke (as is supposed,) he was by mistaking brought to the Temple of Bellona: blacke beasts also being ordained for sacrifice, followed him home to his pallace: which things these did then account to be ominous.

Seuerus wal.

Spartianus.

Shortly after he departed out of this life at Pozke, partly through sickness, and partly through griefe conceiued of his sonnes euill demeanour. At his last gaspe he uttered these wordes: I found the state troublesome euerie where, and leaue it quiet euen vnto the Byptaines.

Herodian writeth that in these warres of Seuerus against the North Byptaines, he found their Countrey full of watery Marshes: by those Marshes did the Byptains swim and skirmish with their enemies, being couered with water vnto the Pauell, not caring that men salve the priue parts of their naked bodies. Neither did they know the vse of apparell, but accustomed to compassse their bellies and necks onlie with yron, which they esteemed an ornament and token of riches, as other barbarous people supposed of Golde. They painted their bodies with diuers pictures and formes of beasts, and therefore wore no garment, least the painting should be hidden, being a nation very valiant, and warlike, greedy of slaughter, and content onely with a small target, a speare, and a skin hanging by their naked sides, ignorant of the vse of shirts of maille and helmes, for they reckned the same comberous vnto them, when they should swimme over the lakes, &c.

Herodian.

A grievous disease came vpon Seuerus, being soze appalled with age, so that he was constrained to keepe his chamber and send Antonius vnto the warres: but Antonie not regarding the businesse of Byptaine, endeouored by all means he coule, to win the hearts of the souldiers vnto him, deprauing his brother,

to

to the intent they should onely aide him to the attaining of the soueraigntie. The long maladie of his father, caused him to perswade Iulius to rid the old man out of the world, untill that Seuerus, being consumed, ended his life, who was the most famous of all Emperours in warlike affaires: For none other had obtained so many victories and conquests, either ciuill against his aduersaries, or forraigne against the barbarous nations. Thus deceased hee, after hee had gouerned the Empire the space of xliiii. yeres, leaving his sons for successors in the same: vnto whome he lefte also great abundance of riches, as none of his predecessours had before him done. When Antony had gotten the supreme authoritie, he put to death the Iulians, because they obeyed not his commandement in hastning his fathers death: and slew all his owne and his brothers bringers by and instructors, for that they went about to reconcile them, leaving none aliuie, that was either of dignitie, or had reuerenced his father. The Captaines of the armie hee enticed, to perswade the souldiours to proclaime him onely Emperour: imagining daile manifold mischiefs against his brother: but hee could not win the souldiours good willes. Wherefore Antony, hauing taken truce with the Bytaines, remoued towardes his mother and brother. Their mother laboured to bring them to agreement, wherein also many prudent counsellours earnestly travelled, Antony thereby was induced, rather of force, then good will, to counterfaite lone. After which done, the two brethren gouerning the Empire with equall honour, launched out of Bytaine, and sailed with the reliques of their father toward Rome. For when they had burned the bodie (as was the custome of the Romanes) they carried the ashes, intermedled with pleasant odours, in a Bore of Alabaister to Rome, that it might bee there interred amongst the monuments of other Princes. Themselves led thus their armie, as conquerours of Bytaine, and passed ouer the Ocean vnto the next coast of France, and so halset towards Rome. When they were entred into Rome, all the people crowned with Laurell, receiued, and the Senate welcommed them. For most road the Emperours themselves, clothed in Emperall purple. And next vnto them followed the Consuls bearing the vessell with Seuerus reliques. Which vessell, the people, after they had saluted the new Emperour, did reuerently worship. The Emperours and Consuls being thus accompanied with Princely pompe, caried the same into the Temple, where the diuine monuments of Marcus, and other Emperours are seene. After they had finished the solemne sacrifice, and according to the auncient vsage, celebrated the funerall ceremonies, both the brethren departed into the Emperall pallace: which they deuised betwene them, closed by all backe doores, and priuie passages, and met together only at the outer gates. They chose besides either of them vnto himselfe a sundrie garde, and neuer came together vnlesse it were sometime for a little while to be seene of the people. Nevertheless, first of all, they accomplished the due funerals of their father. For the Romans accustomed to consecrate with immortallitie, such Emperours, as at their death, leane either children, or successors in the Empire behinde them. And those which are endued with that honour, they canonize amongst the Gods. There is through the

the Citie, a certaine dolefull lamentation, mixed with fearefull soie. And they vse to interre the dead corpes verie sumptuously. But then, they haue an Image, made as like the dead Emperoz, as may be. The same, within the porch of the Emperiall Pallace, they laie in a great and high bedde of Iuorie, covered ouer with cloth of golde. The same Image looketh verie pale, like a diseased patient. About the bed on either side, a great part of the daie, do certaine persons sit: that is to wit, on the left side, the Senate, clothed in blacke garments: and on the right side, many matrons. None of these are sene to weare any owtches, or chaines of gold, but being clad with thin white vestures, they shewe the countenance of mourners. And thus doe they continue the space of 7 daies: during the which, enery day the Emperors Physicians do repaire vnto the bedde, and, as though they had felt the patients pulses, declare that hee wareth more sicke then before. Finally, when it seemeth that hee is deceased, certaine of the most noble and worthy young men, of the orders of knightes and Senators, doe take vp the bedde on their shoulders, and carrie it through the streete, called *Sacra via*, vnto the olde market place, where the Romane Magistrates are accustomed to render by their offices. There on both sides, are certaine stages made with steps, vpon the which, on the one side, is a quire of boies, being noble mens sonnes; and on the other side are many beautifull women, singing hymnes and ballades, in prasse of the dead Emperour, measured with diuers lamentable verses. When these are finished, the young men doe take vp the bed againe, and beare it out of the Citie, into the field called *Campus Martius*, in the broadest part whereof, there is created a Tower foure square, with sides of equall height builded of great tybber, like vnto a Tabernacle. The same within forth, is filled with vyle chippes and reedes: and on the outer side, it is hanged with freas clothes of golde, and decked with Images of Iuorie, and sundrie painted pictures. Within it also, is an other lesse Towre, but like in forme, with dore and portalles opened. And euer that, the third and fourth, with manie other romes ascending continually, untill they reach vnto the highest, which is lesse then all the other. A man may compare this building vnto Colozes, which are set in Vauens with fire on the toppes, to direct shippes which saile by night on the Seas, into their perfect portes. The same are commonlie called Phari. Now when they haue put the bed in the second Tabernacle, they gather all kinds of spices and perfumes, with diuers odoriferous frutes, hearbes and wyces, the which they throwe on heapes in the tabernacle. Neither is there anie Nation, Citie, or person, which excelleth in honour or dignitie, but at that time will to the uttermost of his power, most honourably celebrate the last funeralles of the Emperour.

When they haue couched a great heape of spices together, and stuffed the building therewith, all the Roman knightes do ride about the Tower, with a iust course and order to and fro: Chariots are also drayne about, wherein manny so fit clothed in purple, representing the persons of al noble men being magistrates and captaines of Rome.

The ceremonies being thoroughly ended, the successor in the Empire, taketh a byand



a band of fire in his hand, and fireth therewith the tabernacle. After whome, all other that are present, do throwe fire likewise into the same. And immediately, all the building being filled with those drie sticks and spices, beginneth to burne vehemently. Then out of the highest and least towre, as out of a high steeple, is let forth an Eagle, the which they beleue, doth beare the Emperours soule into heauen. And from thenceforth is that Emperour worshipped as the other gods.

From this time to the raigne of Dioclesian, for the space of 72. yeeres, there is nothing recorded in our Histories hitherto published concerning Brytaine; but whereas it is manifest that the soueraigntie of Brytaine rested in the Roman Emperours all that space, I will set them here downe successively.

212  
Herodian.

**A**fter Seuerus, Balsianus surnamed Antonius Carracalla, murthuring his brother Geta, succeeded in the Empire. He was cruell to his people: hee founded the Bath in Rome, which is called Antonians: he was out of measure giuen to sensuallitie, and carnall concupiscence, insomuch, that he espoused his mother in law Iuba. He was murdered by Martialis when he had gouerned six yeeres.

218

Macrinus one yeere.

223

Lampridius  
Victor.

Antoninus Heliogabalus three yeeres.

Alexander Seuerus, who was slaine by his souldiers here in Brytaine, in a battle called Sicila, but other say in France, thirtene yeeres.

236

Julius Maximus three yeeres.

238

M. Antonius Gordianus one yeere.

239

Antonius Gordianus the sonne six yeeres.

245

Julius Philippus the first christian Emperour five yeeres.

250

Decius two yeeres.

252

Trebonianus Gallus, and Vibius Hostilianus two yeeres.

252

Julius Aemilianus foure moneths.

254

{ Licinius Valerianus sixe.

{ Licinius Gallicinus fiftene.

At this time there arose in diuers countries thirtie vsurpers, which are called, the thirtie tyrants, of the which Lollianus Posthumus, Victorianus Tetricius, as it is supposed, kept Brytaine from Gallicinus.

269

Flavius Claudius two.

276

Aurelianus five.

276

Tacitus sixe moneths.

277

Florianus three moneths.

277

Aurelius Probus five yeeres. In which time Bonesus a Brytaine boine, but brought vp in Spaine, fearing lest he should be executed because the Germans had burnt certaine vessels in the Rhene, wherof he had charge, vsurped the Empire with Proculus at Colen, & would haue exempted from the Romanes, Brytaine, Spaine, & part of France, but being vanquished by Probus in a long and sore battaile, he strangled himselfe. Some sedition was then raised in Brytain and appeased by Victorinus, a boine, by whose motion Probus had made him Regent of Brytaine, which was causer of this trouble. This Probus permitted

Vopiscus

the



the Byztains and others that they might haue vines and make wine. After he had raigned five yeres, he was slaine of the souldiours.

**C**arus was created Augustus, hee made Carinus and Numerianus his sonnes Cæsars, to which Carinus he assigned Byztaine, Gaule, Illyricum, Italie, and Spaine, but Carus was slaine by lightning, and the other two within thre yeres space lost their liues.

**D**ioclesian was then chosen Emperour, who adioined Maximianus vnto him in like gouernement.

Carausius was appointed to bee admirall of the Byztaine seas, which were sore troubled by the pirates of the Frankes and Sarons: but when he had oftentimes apprehended the pirates, and neither referued the Prizes, or was accountable for it, neither to the Emperours, nor their deputies, it was suspected, y of set purpose hee permitted those rouers to haue recourse through those seas, to the end hee might risle them, and enrich himselfe. Maximianus therefore sent part of his armie to suppressle him, in which were manie of the Thebane legion, who in this iourney were slaine by his commandement, and made Martires, because they professed Christ. Carausius vnderstanding of the preparation made against him, passed out of Gaule into Byztaine, where byinging the cuntry to his obeyfance, he vsurped the roabe of an Emperour: whereupon they which were sent to surprize him, returned to Maximianus, who then was incumbrd with newe warre in Gaule. In the meane time Carausius built shippes in Byztaine, intercepted certaine companies of souldiours, assembled a great number of barbarous people with spoyle, with hope of whome he purposed to trouble the sea coasts of Gallia and Spaine. Holland also (then holden by certaine Frankes) revolted to Carausius.

Then purposed Maximianus the second time to make warre against Carausius, but by stormy wea ther, and want of Pilotes, he was enforced to defer his purpose. Shortelie after, the two Emperours elected two Cæsars, Valerius Maximus, and Constantius Chlorus, to which Constantius they committed the recovery of Byztaine. He immediatly passing through Gaule hitherward, suddenly surprisid Gessoriacum (now called Bullen) which Carausius had manned, and so stopped the hauen, that it could stand Carausius in no steade. Then building Shippes to passe ouer hither, hee first assayled luckilie the Hollanders, which had revolted to Carausius, and then staying for conuenient winde, hee houerid a while on the sea coast, and in the meane time Carausius was traitterously slaine by Alecdus his familiar friend.

**A**lecdus then vsurped the empire here in Byztaine, against whom Constantine with his former preparation made readie for warre, and launched out in haste, though the wind was contrarie: which when his souldiers vnderstood, they set out also with side winds out of the same and other portes, in such foggy and misty wea ther, that they passed by Alecdus nauie, then houerid about the Ile of Wight, the one not seeing the other. The Romanes as soone as they landed burnt their Shippes, determining eyther to winne, or lose their liues. Which when Alecdus vnderstode, hee left the shore, and prepared himselfe for battaile with his mercenarie barbarous souldiours, in which hee was

Vineyards permitted to the Byztaines.  
282  
Vopiscus.

285

Panegyricon.  
Constantius  
dictus.

292

Alecdus slaine.

slaine

slaine by Asclepiodatus Lord great master of the Emperours house. In this fight none of the Romanes perished, but here all the field was ouer spread with dead bodies of the enimies, among whome lay Alectus himselfe without anye Emperfall ornaments, and scantlie knowne. Other Romane souldiours also which had lost their company in the mist, arriued at London, nowe in the Citie a grea number of barbarous people which escaped from the bat taile, and purposed to haue sacked London. Then when Constantius came a land, the Byztaines with their wiues & children flockt vnto him, and submitted theiueselues toisfullie, being now deliuered out of a long thraldome. This expedition of Constantius into Byztaine is ascribed by some to Maximianus, into which error, a false inscription of the Panegyriks hath led them.

290

**A**sclepiodatus hauing recovered Byztaine, as is before touched, he belaid the Citie of London with a strong siege (saith Geffrey Monmouth) and ere it were long by knightlie force and violence, entred the Citie, and slew the Romane Captain named Linius Gallus, nere vnto a brooke there at that time running, into the which brooke he threw him, by reason whereof it is called in Bytish Nant Gallion, since in the Saxon tongue Gallus or Wallus brooke, and to this day the stræte where sometime the brooke ran, is called Wallbrooke. The Romane Histories speake nothing of this Gallus, but of Galerius, which was ioined in the empire with Constantius, after the decease of Asclepiodatus, & also of the Bytish king Coill, as that he shewd in place conuenient. True it is I grant, that a certaine brooke, dreined, I knowe not from what heads, but much encreased by the moorish groundes, without the Citie of London on the North side, passed through the same Citie southward to the riuer of Thames. And therefore of coming through and from the wall, and so through the Citie, was since called Wallbrooke: which brooke in olde time had in diuers places, Bridges ouer it, as appeareth by inquisition made in Anno. 1300. Elius Russell being Paio: of London, William Jordane, and I. de Beuer then Paissers of those Bridges founde, who were bound to repaire them so oft as needed, and then was the same brooke vaulted ouer with brick, as it now remaineth.

Wallbrooke  
whereof it  
saies that name

301

**C**oill, after Asclepiodatus, (as saith Geffrey) tooke on him the kingdome of Byztaine: Peter de Icham saith this Coill was Duke of Caïre Glou, or Gloucester. But to returne to the Romanes: who had now recovered Byztaine within ten yeres after Carausius first toke it. Dioclesian (saith Eusebius) persecuted the Church of God. In the nænetieth yere of his raygne, hee beganne to ouerthrowe the Churches downe to the grounde, yea, and the very foundations were digged vp, the helie and sacred Scriptures burned to ashes in the open market place, the Pastors of the Church were persecuted. When he had raigned together with Maximianus, who persecuted with him xx. yeres, he deposed himselfe voluntarily, and liued a priuate life. From that time to his end he pined away with diseases: but Maximian hanged himselfe.

Eusebius  
Christians in  
Byztaine per-  
secuted, Church  
over-  
throwne, and  
the Scriptures  
burned.

Bede.

Of this persecution, Bede hath thus: Dioclesian in the East, and Maximianus in the West, raised the tenth persecution, after Nero, against the Christians, he commaunded the Churches to be spoyled, the Christians to be tommen-  
too

fed and killed. Which persecution was both longer, and also crueller then all the other: for whole tenne yeres together it continued in burning the Churches, in banishing the innocents, in murdering the Martyres, and neuer ceased. Besides, among other places, it made Brytaine to bee honoured with the glory of manie holie Martyres, which constantly stode and dyed in the confession of their faith. Among other suffered S. Albane, of whome Fortunatus Prisca in the booke he wrote in the praise of Virginitie, speaking of the Martyres, which from all the coasts of the world came vnto God, saith:

The Martyr  
dome of Albane  
and other in  
Brytaine.

*Albanum egregium fecunda Brytannia profert.*

The fertile land of batefull Brytannie

Bringeth forth Alban a martyre right worthy.

S. Alban for professing Christ, beeing led from the Citty of Verolanium, vnto Holmehurst, since called Derswold wood, where now the Colone of S. Albans is builded, suffered martirdome in the yere of Christ 293. who is specified to be the first Martyr of Brytaine: and shortly after to the number of one thousand Christians were martyred at Lichfield, where Amphabele Instructor of Alban was taken, brought to Verolanium, and there tormented, by sitting vpon his belly, whipping him about a stake, winding his bowelles out of his body, and stoning him to death. The life and martyrdome of these two, to wit, of Alban and Amphabele was recorded and written in Latine at large, by one, who wrote himselfe by none other name, then, of all wretches the simplest man: since by Mathew Paris, a Monk of S. Albane, turned out of Latine prose into French verse, both which Bookes I haue seene, and was since translated out of the Latine and French, into English metre by Iohn Lydgate Monk of Burie.

Iohn Capgrave.

Mathew Paris.

Constantinus beganne his Empire with Galerius, the Empire was diuided betwene them: so that Constantius shoulde possesse Africa, Italie, France and Brytaine: Galerius shoulde haue Illyrica, Asia, and the East parts: which done, they substituted vnder them two Cæsars, Constantius holding himselfe content with the dignity of Augustus, refused to susteine the trouble which he shoulde haue endured through the administration of the affaires of Italy and Afrique: he sought by all meanes howe hee might enrich the people of the Empire. He abolished the superstition of the Gentiles in his dominions, so that after ward Brytaine felt no persecutions. The yere following he passed out of France hither against the Pictes, at which time his sonne Constantine, who then serued Galerius, perceiuing his destruction to be compassed, passed to his father in all haste, houghing and killing all the post horses, which way soeuer he passed, that he might not be pursued, and came to his father the berie houre that he went aboarde to come into Brytaine: but Constantius as soone as hee came to Worke, sodainly sickened, and perceiuing his day to draw neere, when he was asked to whom he would leaue the Empire, answered, to Constantine, and shortly after departed.

Iohn Lydgate.  
305

This Constantius begot Constantine on Helena his host, daughter of Dripodna in Bythinia, as he was passing through þe countrey, being one of the Romane legates, sent into þe east parts: Constantine was created Emperour in France.

Constantine.

311  
Eusebius.

Socrates, li. 2. ca. 2

Constantine surnamed the Great, sonne of Constantius borne in Bithinia by Helena, the Inkeper (saith William of Malmesburie) first consecrated, as is aforesaid: his father being now dead, did with so great sorrow, and shedding of teares solemnize his burfall, that the souldiers hoping he would resemble his father, saluted him Emperour at Poike against his will: but at Rome Maxentius the sonne of Maximianus Herculus, is chosen of the Pretorian souldiers, not to gouerne the Empire, but rather to practise tyrannie.

Maximianus being chiefe Emperour, after he had crowned Emperour Licinius, (by originall a Dane, his ould fellow souldier and familiar friend) departed himselfe rather a tyrant then an Emperour, abusing the spouses of noble personages, slaying manie with the sword, and putting in by other such like practises.

Constantine the Emperour, being certified hereof, denised with himselfe which waies possible he might ridde the Romanes from vnder this grievous poke of seruitude, and dispatch the Tyrant out of this life: Deliberating thus with himselfe, he forecassd also that God he were best to call vpon for aide to wage battaille with the aduersarie. He remembred how that Dioclesian, which wholy dedicated himselfe vnto the seruice of þe hethenish Gods, preuailed nothing thereby: also he perswaded himselfe for certaine, þe his father Constantius, who renounced the Idolatrie of the Gentiles led a more fortunare life, musing thus doubtfully with himselfe, and taking his iourney with his souldiers, I wot not whether, a certaine vision appeared vnto him, as it was strange to behold, so in deepe incredible to be spoken of. About none, the daie somewhat declining, he saw in the skie, a lightsome Pillar in forme of a Crosse, where in these wordes were ingrauen: In this overcome. The which vision so amazed the Emperour, that he mistrusting his owne sight, demanded of them that were present, whether they perceiued the vision: which when all with one consent had affirmed, the wauering mind of the Emperour was settled, with this deuine and wonderfull sight. The night following in his sleepe, hee seeth Christ, which saith thus vnto him: Frame vnto thy selfe the forme of a Crosse after the example of the signe which appeared vnto thee, and beare the same against the enemies, as a fit banner or token of victorie: He being fully perswaded with this oracle, commandeth the victorious signe of the Crosse (which as yet is reserued in the pallace of the Emperour) to be made, and therewith proceededth forwards with great courage, and topning with the enemy, right ouer against Rome, about the bydge commonlie called Bulbia, hee got the victorie, for Maxentius being drowned in the riuer died: it was the seauenth yere of his raigne, when he overcame Maxentius. After these things, when as Lucinius his fellow Emperour, and his brother in lawe, hauing married his sister Constantia, led his life in the East: Constantine enjoying ample benefites receiued at the handes of God, shewed himselfe gratefull in offering of thanks and praises vnto the authoz of all godnes, his practises were these, To deliuer the Christians from persecution: to call againe þe exiled vnto their native soile: to set at libertie such as were in prison: to restore againe the goods of the confiscated, to build againe the Churches that were ouerthrowne: all which

The godly studie and practises of Constantine.



which things he accomplished with great promptnesse of minde. But Licinius persecuting the Christians, Constantine waged battaile against him, & making off by Sea and land, in the end, at Chisopolis a Citie of Bythinia, to witte at the Haven of Chalcedon, Licinius was overcome, and yeldeth himselfe to Constantine.

After hee had repressed the ciuill warres, vanquished the Gothes in manie places, and woon great memorie among the Barbarians, he placed the Byztaines that had done him so good seruice, in a part of France towards the west shoare of the Ocean, hee applied himselfe wholly to the studie of the liberall Artes. He summoned the Sicene Councell, which was helde at Nicaea, a Citie of Bythinia, for the debating of the controuersie about the feast of Easter, & the rooting out of the heresie of Arius. Which Councell being ended, he lived in great tranquillitie and turned himselfe wholly to the building of Churches, as well in other Cities as in that Citie which he called after his owne name, Constantinople. In this Citie he created from the foundation two Churches calling the one of Peace, the other of the Apostles.

Helena the Emperours mother (which of the village Drepane made a Citie, the which afterwards the Emperour called Helenopolis) took her iourne to Jerusalem, which when she found lying waste in a heape of stones, she searched diligently for the Sepulchre of Christ, and at length she found it, but with great difficultie; for as they which embraced the faith of Christ, highly esteemed of that Sepulchre and monument after his passion: so such as abhorred Christian Religion, heaped in that place much earth, and raised great hillocks, and builded there the Temple of Venus, and set vp her Idoll. But when the Emperours mother was made priuie thereunto, she threw downe the Idoll: caused the great heape of earth to be hurled downe, where vnder shee found three Crosses in the grane, one vpon the which Christ suffered: other two, whereon the two theeues ended their lines, together with the table of Pilate, where in he had written that Christ was crucified king of the Iewes: the Emperours mother builded ouer the Sepulchre a gorgeous Church, calling it New Jerusalem, right ouer against that olde and waste Jerusalem. She builded a second Church nothing inferiour to the first, at Bethleem in the hollow rocke, where Christ was bozne. Also the third, vpon the mount, where Christ ascended vnto the Father, manie things she gaue to Churches, and to poore people, she liued goodlie and religiously, and departed this life being fourescore yeres olde: her bodie was buried at Constantinople. Symon of Durham writeth, that shee builded walles about the Citie of London, and the Citie of Colchester.

About this time Octavius, whome Constantine had left gouernour in Byztaine, rebelled, against whome Constantine sent Traherne with a legion of Romans, who (after diuers confidates) was slaine: Gracianus surnamed Funarius was at that time gouernour of the Roman legion in Byztaine.

Constantine at the age of 65. yeres died, and was buried at Constantinople, he left behinde him three sonnes, to wit Constantinus, Constance, and Constans, to succede him in the Empire.

W. Malmes.  
Byztaines place  
in France.

Councell at  
Nicaea.

Constantinople  
builded.

Socrates.

Helena mother  
to Constantine.

New Jerusalem  
builded.

Constantinus.



337

Constantinus beganne his Empire and raigne ouer Byztaine: with him his father Constantine had appointed by his last will, that his two brethren Constant and Constantius should participate and haue their portion of the Empire, but not long after, when Constantinus attempted warre against his brother at Aquileia, and demeaned himselfe vnaduisedly therein, he was slaine, and then was the Empire reduced vnder the government of the two brethren onlie.

340

Constantius then ruled Byztaine, which he administered with great iustice: but after, when he failed of his health, he associated vnto him in stead of friends, euill disposed persons to assist him, through whose euill counsell he declined into horrible vices, by meane whereof, wanting scant tolerable of the inhabitants of the prouinces, he was slaine by Magnentius, who usurped the Empire in France, Spaine and Byztaine.

353

Constantius then had the regiment of Byztaine, who sent hither a Spaniard called Paul, a Notarie by profession, to bring out certaine men of war which had conspired with Magnentius: but he vpon false formises grieuously molested the guiltlesse, fettering and manacling whome he pleased. Wherevpon Martinus then lieutenant in Byztaine, being mooued with compassion, desired him to forbear the harmlesse: but he was so rigorous, that he also charged Martinus himselfe of conspiracie with Magnentius, and was earnest to bring him before the Emperour: whereupon Martinus drawing his sworde smote at him, and because he could not slaine him, he sodainly slewe himselfe, and this Paul embzued with blood, haled a great company (linked in chaines) to the Emperours presence, which were either banished, executed, or attained.

Martinus.

Constantius after this appointed Iulianus to governe Gaule, at which time great spoile was made in Byztaine by the Scottes and Pictes, wherefore Iulianus buisted with warre against the Almaines, sent Lupinus hither with an army, in whose absence Iulianus usurped the Empire: whereof when Constantius heard, he returned from the war (against the Parthians) against Iulianus, and died in the way.

362

Ammianus.  
Marcellinus.

Iulianus (called the Apostata) began his raigne ouer Byztaine and the Empire, a man scene passing wel in the Liberall Sciences, but an earnest aduersarie of Christian religion: he banished Palladius a great and honorable person into Byztaine vpon a suspicion: he sent Alipius who had bene a lieutenant of Byztaine to repaire Jerusalem, but terrible flashes of fire issuing out of the earth, when they laide the foundations, enforced them to leaue their purpose. His Iulian with great preparations made warre vpon the Parthians, he spoiled Assiria, and returning from thence a Conquerour, he was slaine by his enemies, as he pleased vnaduisedly into the battels. After him succeeded in the Empire Iouinian, and held it nine moneths.

365

Valentinian was then chosen Emperour by the souldiours. The Pictes, Scots, Attacotes, and Saxons, grieuously molested the Byztaines. Nectaridius who had the charge of the sea coasts here, was slaine by them, and Balchobandes a great captaine was enclosed by them: wherefore after diuers captaines

taines Theodosius was sent hither, who discomfiting the enemy, and recovering the spoile, entred triumphantlie into London, and the next yeare went into the north, suppressed the enemies, recovered the province, and repaired Cities & fortresses: he oppressed Valentinus an Hungarian, who being banished hither, practised new tumultes, deliuering him to Dulcius to be executed, without any enquire of his confederates, because hee would not renewe the tumulte: which done he returned to Rome. Shortly after Valentinian sent hither Fracmarius (which he before had obtained King of the Succenobants in Germany) to be Marshall of the Almains which serued in Bytaine. And not long after Valentinian died.

Dulcius

Gratian with his brother Valentinian was then created Emperour. Hee to the intent he might better repaire the decayed State of the Empire, made Theodosius a copartner with him in it.

375

Maximus a valiant and worthy man, was shortly after forced here in Bytaine to take the Empire vpon him, who passed into France, and immediately all the Germane legions and Roman souldiours revolted vnto him from Gratian, so that he being destitute of men of warre, fled to Lions, where he was slaine by treason: for Maximus gaue out that Gratians wife was coming to her husband, which Gratian entirly louing his wife, lightly credited, and therefore accompanied with a few, went south to meete her: but in the coach where he supposed to haue founde his wife, was Andragatius a desperate man, who leaping out of the coach killed Gratian.

383

Then Maximus created his sonne Victor a Caesar, and vsed some crueltie against Gratians Captaines. Valentinian being herewith terrified, sent S. Ambrose vnto him to treat a peace, which he accepted, and Theodosius permitted him to vse the title of Augustus. Then he settled himselfe at Trier in Germanie, empowert the Countries round about him, executed certain heretikes called Pisseillians, and then entred into Italy, breaking the peace, & thought to haue intercepted Valentinian, but he with his mother fled to Theodosius, and perswaded him to take reuenge of Maximus. In the meane time Maximus came to Aquileia, all Italic and Affrica submitted themselves vnto him, when sodainly Theodosius coming from Constantinople, moued warre against him, corrupted his souldiours with bribes, and after one or two skirmishes forced Maximus to flee to Aquileia, where his owne souldiours deliuered him to Theodosius, by whose commandement he was shortly after beheaded. Andragatius also who kept the seas, vnderstanding this, drowned himselfe, and Victor the sonne of Maximus was slaine in France by Arbogustes. The Bytaines which serued him returned into France, and settled them in the country there, which is now called Bytaine, so was Bytaine recovered againe to the Romane Empire.

Sigebernus

Bytaine in France.

S. Ursula with the 11000. virgins, which were sent into Bytaine to be married to Conon and his knights, were slaine and martyred of the barbarous people being on the sea. But, as some write, by Attila King of the Hunnes.

The 11000. virgins.

Honorius the sonne of Theodosius succeeded in the Empire, in whose time Pelagius a Bytaine borne, dispartled the venome of his faithlesse doctrine

395  
Pelagius heresie.

doctrine berie farre abroad, holding, that a man might liue well without the helpe of the grace of God: vsing herein the aide of Iulianus of Campania, who was intemperatly stirred with the losse of his bishopricke, to whome S. Austen and other fathers also haue answered in most ample maner, but yet they would not be amended thereby, but being conuicted of their falschode, they rather would encrease it by defending and maintaining it, then amende it by returning to the truth.

This time Marcus was chosen Emperour by the souldiers in Bytaine, fearing the inuasion of the Vandales, but immediatly they slewe him, and elected Gracianus, whom also they murdered within foure moneths.

Then Constantine, a souldier of base estate, onely vpon confidence of his name, was elected here Emperour, who passing hence into France, with all the youth of Bytain, got al the men of warre there to take part with him. Honorius sent therefore Sarus to withstand him, who in a foughten field slewe Iulianian Constantines Captaine, and so pursued Constantine, that he made him take Valenia, wherein he sharply besieged him, untill Gerontius with his Bytaines, and Edebrichus with the Franks raised the siege.

Then Constantine fortified the Alpes and Avene with garrisons, sent Constantine his sonne (whom of a Whorke hee had made a Caesar) with a great armie into Spaine, where he toke, and afterward slewe certaine noble personages allied to Honorius, and returning to his father, left Gerontius to gouerne Spaine. Constantine himselfe then craued pardon of Honorius for vsurping the Empire, saying, that he did it by compulsion, which when Honorius heard, he so well liked of him, that he sent an Imperiall robe vnto him.

In these troubles Bytaine was greatly endangered by Picts and Scots, and sued to Honorius for succour, but he sending them onely Letters, willed them to loke to their owne state. Shortly after Constantine, that was Whorke, was slaine by Gerontius his owne Captaine, at Aenna in France: and Constantine himselfe being besieged at Arles by Honorius Souldiours, entered into holy orders, and fled into the Church, thinking thereby to saue himselfe, but was drawen out from thence, and slaine. Gerontius who had trayterously killed his master, was beset round about with Spaniards in his lodging, wherefore he first slew Allanus his tried friend, then Nunichia his wife, and lastly himselfe, and now Honorius recouered Bytaine. In his time (saith Bede) Rome was destroyed of the Gothes, the 1164. yere after it was builded: after which time the Romans left off to rule in Bytain, almost 470. yeres after that Iulius Caesar first entred the said Ile. The Romanes dwelt within the trench, which as we haue saide, Seuerus drew overthwart the Ilant at the south part, which thing may appeare by the citie, temples, buildes, and pauid streets to this day remaining, notwithstanding they had in possession, & vnder their dominion the farther parts of Bytaine, and also the Islands which are about Bytaine. By means (as is aforesaid) the Romans had vsed to transport with them ouer into France the flower of al the youth of Bytaine, to serue them in their foraine wars, their men of war were consumed, and was not now able to defend themselves against the inuasions of their enemies: wherupon many yeres together they

they liued vnder the opprellion of two most cruell nations, the Scots & Picts: which were of the circuite of Brytaine, but diuided from the land of Brytaine by two armes of the sea, running betwixt them, of the which one from the east sea, the other from the west, runne th in far and wide into the land, though they may one reake to the other. In the middle of the east cræke, there is a city builded called Guidi. Aboue the west cræke toward the right hand standeth a citie called Alcluth, which in their language is as much to say, as the rocke Cluth, for it standeth by a cloud of the same name. The Brytaines then being thus afflicted by þe said nations, sent their embassadors with letters vnto Rome, with lamentable supplications, requiring of them aide and succour promising their continuall fealty, so that they would rescue them against the opprellion of their enemies: whereupon there was sent vnto them a legion of armed souldours from Rome, which comming into the Island, and encountring with the enemies, ouerthrew a great number of them, & drave the rest out of the frontiers of the countrey, and so setting them at libertie, and free from the miserie with which they were before so grienously ouercharged, counselled them to make a wall betwene the two seas, which might be of force to keepe out their euill neighbours: and that done, they returned home with great triumph. Now the Brytaines building the wall which they were bid to make, not of stone, as they were willed, but of turfe, as hauing none among them, that had skill therein, made it so slender, that it serued them to little purpose. This wall they made betwene the two armes or crækes of the sea, many miles long, that where the fence of the water lacked, there by the helpe of the trench they might keepe the countrey from the breaking in of their enemies, of which piece of worke, there remaineth euen vnto this day most assured tokens yet to be seene. This trench begunneth about two miles from the monastery of Abercuring, in a place which in the Picts language is called Penuahil, and in English is called Panwelt, and running out westward, is ended by the city Alcluth. But the former enemies, when they had once perceiued that the Romane legion was returned home againe, forthwith being set on land by boats, invaded the borders, ouercame the country, and as it were beate downe all before them: whereupon Embassadors be sent againe to Rome, beseeching them they would not suffer their miserable Countrey to be vicerly destroyed. Againe, there is sent an other legion, which comming vpon a sodain, made a great slaughter of the enemies, & chased them ouer into their owne country. Then the Romanes tolde the Brytaines, that it was not their case to take any more such trauellous iournies for their defence, and therefore bade them to practise their armour themselves, and to learne to withstand their enemies.

They builded vp a wall of hard stone from sea to sea, right betwene the two Cities, which there were made to keepe out the enemy, in the selfe same place where Severus before had cast his trench, with publike and private charges: the Brytaines also putting to their helping hands, they then builded it eight fote broad, and twelue fote high, right as it were by a line from east to west, as it doth to this day appeare. Which being perfected, they gave the people straight warning to take well to themselves, then teach them to handle their weapons,



and instruct them in warlike seates. Also by the sea side southward, where the ships lay at harbor, least their enemies should land thereabouts, they made by bulwarks along, one somewhat distant from another: and this done, bid them farewell, as minded no more to reforme. At this time almost all the treasure of Bytaine was hid vnder ground, or transported ouer into France.

As soone as they were gone, the Scots and Idians hauing intelligence that they had made promise they would come no more, they taking heart of grace, retorne againe to their businesse: and first, all that was without the wall, they tooke for their owne. After that, they giue assault vnto the wall, where the Bytaines were with grables pulled downe, and otherwise so assaulted, that they leauing both the Cities and the wall also, were dispersed and put to flight, the enemies following, killed and slayed more cruellie then euer they did before, whereupon being driuen out of their owne houses, and possessions, they fall a robbing and spoyling one the other of them, so farre forth, that all the whole country was brought to that exigent, that they had none other sustenance, but that they got by hunting and killing of wilde beastes.

408

**T**heodosius the younger, sonne of Arcadius, succeeded his uncle Honorius, and appointed Valentinianus his cousin, Emperour in the West partes.

At this time, Timotheus here in Bytaine, vnder a pretence of religion, and great continence, drew many into a dangerous heresie.

Chrysanthus the son of bishop Martian, a Consull of Italy was made vice-roy and Lord deputy of Bytaine: he was afterwarde made Bishop of Constantinople.

446

Now the poore remnant of the Bytaines directed letters to Aetius, whereof this was the beginning: To Aetius thrise Consul, the mourning of the Brytains. In the proesse of which Epistle, they thus set forth their pittifull estate. The barbarous enemy driuerh vs vpon the sea: the sea againe vpon the enemy: betwene these twaine riseth two maner of deaths, either we are killed or drowned. And yet for all their suite, they coulde obtaine no aide of him, as he which had then both his hands full of busines and battaile at home with Bleda and Attila, Kings of the Hunnes.

Delagian  
heresie.

The Delagian heresie being brought in by Agricola, the sonne of Seuerianus a Delagian bishop, about this time did sore corrupt the faith of the Bytaines, but the Bytaines being neither willing to receiue their lewd doctrine, as blasphemous against the grace of God, neither able to refute their wily and wicked persuasions, they deuised this wholesome counsell, to take for aide of the Bishops of France, against these their spiritual enemies. And they calling a common counsell, consulted among the miselues, whom of the all it were best to send to help their neighbors faith. By the assent of them all there was chosen two worthy prelates, Germanus Aquisodorenfis, and Lupus Bishop of the Citie Trecaffa, which should passe ouer into Bytaine to confirme them in the faith, which with readie obedience accepting the commandement of the synode, tooke shipping thitherward, and had prosperous winde, which set them a shoare in place where they themselves desired. Whether a great multitude of people be-  
ing



ing assembled, receiued the Priestes of God, and the worde of God was preached by them, not onely in their Churches, but also in the open streets, and in the Countrey, in such sort, that in all places both the sound and faithfull were confirmed, and they that before swarued out of the right faith, were amended. The Authoꝝ and head professors of this hereticall error, lay lurking all this while, and much spited to see the people daily to fall from them. After long aduise ment bled, they take vpon them to trie the matter by open disputation, which being agreed vpon, they come forth richly appointed, gorgeously apparelled, accompanied with a number of flattering fauourers. The people were present both to see and iudge the matter. The parties were sette unlike of condition: on the one side was the faith, on the other, mans presumption: on the one side, mekenesse, on the other side, pride: on the one side, Pelagius, on the other, Christ. First of all Germanus and Lupus gaue their aduersaries leaue to speake, which vainely occupied both the time and cares of the people with naked wordes. But after the reuerend Bishoppes powred out their words confirmed with Scriptures out of the Gospelles and Apostles. Thus the vanitie of Heretikes was conuited, and falsehood conuited, so that at euery oblation, they were forced to confesse their error, not being able to answer them: but after their departure, the heresie beganne againe to reuiue. Wherefore Germanus returned into Brytaine with Seuerus, banished the heretikes, and restored the faith.

Pelagians heresie confuted.

The end of the Romans gouernment in Brytaine.

*Brytaines and Saxons.*



He Brytaines continued in doubtfull war with the Scots and Pictes, sometime bearing away the victorie, and sometime leauing it to the enemie. But considering the ambitious minds of men, and fearing least some should blurpe the kingdome at home, while they were detained with warres abroad, thought god to appoint ouer them some king: and so with one consent they elected Vortiger.

Vortiger reigned in Brytaine, in whose time hunger more preuailing against the Brytaines, droue many of them to yeld themselves into the hands of their enemies. Other there were which could neuer be brought thereinto, but from the hilles and hazels where they lurked, many times invaded their enemies, as trusting so much the more in the helpe of God, how much the lesse hope they had of aide of men, and by such meanes, first of all both resisted and ouerthrew them, which many yeeres together had liued by the spoile of the Countrey, whereby for the time they dꝛe to home ward with shame enough, intending not long after to returne.

The Pictes then, and long time after, kept themselves quiet at home, saue onely they woulde nowe and then make inuasions into the lande, and dꝛue away booties of cattell. After that they dꝛe to a quietnesse, there ensued

such plentie of graine as neuer was seene the like before, as farre as any man could remember, whereof the people grew to loose and wanton living, where of al manner of lewdnesse followed, specially crueltie, hate of trueth, and lone of lying, insomuch, that if any were gentler and moze given to trueth then o-ther, the other would worke him all the hurt and spite they could. This did not onely the Seculars, but also the Cleargie, and the heads thereof, giuing the- selues ouer to drunkennesse, pride, contention, enuie, and such other, casting from them the yoke of Christ.

In the meane season, a bitter plague befell among them for their corrupt living, consuming in short time such a multitude of people, that the quicke were not sufficient to burie the dead: and yet for all that, the remnant remain- ed so hardened in sinne, that neither their friendes death, nor feare of their owne, could cure the murreine of their soules, which daily perished through their sinnefull living: whereby a great stroke of Gods vengeance ensued vpon the whole sinnefull nation: for being now infested againe with their old neigh- bours the Scottes and Pictes, they deuised with themselves what was best to doe, and where they might seeke rescue to withstand and repell the feare of the Northerne nation: and they agreed all with their king Vortiger, to demand aide of the Sarons beyond the Seas, which thing doubtlesse (saith Bede) was done by Gods owne appointment, that the people might be thereby plagued, as by the ende it manifestly appeared.

W. Malmes.

The people of the English or Sarons, being sent for of the said king into Brytaine, landed here in three long ships, and by the kings commandement, were appointed to abide in the east part of the land. And the Ile of Thanet was giuen to them, they to defend their countrey like friends: but indeed, as it pro- ued after ward, minding to destroy the Countrey as enemies. Wherefore in- counting with the Northerne enemy, the Sarons had the better, whereof they sending word home into their Countrey, as also of the fruitfulnessse of the land, the Sarons sent ouer a great nauy and number of men better appoin- ted for the warres, which being now ioined with the former band, grew to a stronger army then all the power of the Brytaines was able to overcome. Those by the Brytaines were allowed a place to dwell among them, with that condition, that they should warre for them against their enemies, for wages of the Brytaines.

These Sarons, English, and Iutes that came from beyonde the Seas, were three of the strongest Nations in Germanie. Of the Iutes came the people of Kent, and the Ile of Wight, and also they in the prouince of West Sarons are called Iutes right ouer against the Ile of Wight. Of the Sar- ons (that is, of the Region now called olde Sarons) descended the East Sar- ons, the South Sarons, and the West Sarons. Of the English descended the East English, the Mercies, and the Northumbers. The chiefe Captaines of the Sarons are saide to be two brethren, Hengist and Horsa. This Hen- gist (saith Geoffrey Monmouth) on a tyme required of King Vortiger, so much ground as mought be compassed with a thong of a bulles skinne, there- upon to build a place to rest in, which the king granted, where Hengist built a Castell,

Castell, which hee called *Thong Castell*, and therein feasted King *Vortiger* with great royaltie, and when night was come that the king shoulde go to rest, *Rowen* the daughter of *Hengist* by commaundement of her father, came with a cuppe of gold in her hand, and kneeling before the king, said to him, *Wassalle*, and he againe, by counsell of an interpreter, answered, *Drinke haile*: at which time king *Vortiger* seeing the beauty of this *Rowen*, hee was enamoured, and desired to haue her to wife, which was graunted by her father on condition, the king shoulde giue him all the country of *Kent*, for him and his people to dwell in, which the king willingly, but vnadvisedly graunted, and espoused the *Damocell*.

*Thong Castell in Kent.*

*Thong Castell* in *Kent*, is now a small village, little more then halfe a mile from *Sidingbozne*. The ditches, and the keepe hill of *Thong Castell* appeare in a little wood a two slight shote south from *Thong Church*. *Thong* is a mile from the mouth of *Spelton creeke*, and about halfe a mile from *Spelton towne*, if passage were through the *Parishes* the next way.

For the loue that *Vortiger* bare to *Rowen* the *Saron*, he was diuorced from his lawfull wife, by whom he had thre sonnes, for which deede, welnere all the *Bytaines* forsooke him.

*Vodine* Archbishop of *London*, a man of singular deuotion and good life, by the aduise of *Vortimer*, went to *Vortiger*, and saide to him, that hee had not done as a christian Prince, in departing from his lawfull wife, and taking another woman, whose father was an enemy to the christian faith, and also went about to conquer the Crowne of *Bytaine*. Then saide *Vortiger*, I was not wise when I brought the *Sarons* to help me against mine enemies, but I was more vnwise, when I was taken with the inordinate lust of the daughter of *Hengist*, I knowe that mine Empire will be terrible, except I repent me with speede and turne to God.

Archbishop of London repro-  
ueth the king.

*Hengist* hearing *Vortiger* make this lamentation, blamed him, for that hee belaued the perswasions of a prophane man, of fained life (as he termed him) and forthwith slewe the good Archbishop *Vodine*, and many other priestes, and religious persons. All the Churches in *Kent* were polluted with blood, the *Spuns*, with other religious persons, were by force put from their houses and goods, and constrained to pollution of their bodies.

Archbishop of London slaine.

The *Bytaines* considering the daillie repaire of the *Sarons* into this Realme, shewed to their king the leoperdy that might the reof ensue, and aduertised him of the danger, but all was in vaine: for *Vortiger*, by reason of his wife, bare such fauour to the *Sarons*, that he would in no wise heare the counsell of his subiects, therefore, they with one minde depriued him of his royall dignitie, when he had raigned sixe yeres, and ordained to be their king *Vortimer* his eldest sonne.

**V**ortimer pursued the *Sarons*, and by his martiall knightthode fought against them foure battelles, besides diuers skirmishes, untill at length he was poisoned by the means of *Rowen* his stepmother, after he had raigned sixe yeres. The first battell *Hengist* and *Horse*, who were (saith *Bede* the sonnes of *Wigliffe*, whose father was *Vecta*, whose father was *Woden*, fought

454

Ægelfthorpe, or  
Ælfstord in  
Kent.

Hyorsted in  
Kent.

Catigerne  
slaine.

Craford in  
Kent.

Weppe's fleete

W. Malmes.

The Saxons of  
the Brytaines  
slaine at a ban-  
quet.  
The king taken  
prisoner.

with Vortimer, and his byrther Catigerne in a place called Ægelfthorpe, now Ælfstord in Kent: and notwithstanding that Horfe was slaine in this bartel, yet Hengist bare away the victory. Bede saith that Horfe was buried in east Kent, where his tombe or monument, bearing his name was in his time to be seene. And true it is, that in Kent is a place, to this daie called Hyorsted, about two miles from Ælfstord, in the parish of Chesham, where the people of that countrie say the said Horfe was slaine. There was also slaine in the same battaille at Ægelfthorpe Catigerne brother to Vortimer, whose monument remaineth till this day, on a great plain heath in the parish of Ælfstord, & is now corruptly called Cits cotihons, for Catigerne. (I haue my selfe in companie of diuers worshipfull and learned Gentlemen behelde it in Anno 1590.) and is of foure flat stonnes, one of them standing byrigh in the middle of two other, inclosing the edge sides of the first, and the fourth laid flat aloft the other thre: and is of such height, that men may stand on either side the middle stone in time of storme or tempest, safe from wind and rain, being defended with the bredth of the stonnes, as hauing one at their backes, one on eyther side, and the fourth ouer their heades. And about one coites cast from this monument lieth an other great stone, much part thereof in the ground, as fallen downe where the same had bene fied.

The second battaille Hengist and Eske fought with the Brytaines in a place called Crecanford, or Craford in Kent, of the Brytaines many perished by the sword, the rest of them abandoned Kent altogether, and with great feare fled to London.

The thirde battaille, Hengist and Eske fought with the Brytaines in a place called Weppe's fleete, that is to saie, the fleete of Weppe, where they killed Dukes or Captaines of the Brytaines, with manie other, whereas on the partie of the Saxons there was one onelie man slaine, whose name was Weppe.

The fourth battaille was fought by Hengist and Eske against the Brytaines, nere to a þowe called Colmore, the which was soe fought by the Saxons, and long continued with great danger to the Brytaines, because that the said þowe inclosed a part of their hoste so strongly, that the Brytaines coule not approach to them, being beaten off with the enemies shotte, albeit in the ende, the Saxons were put to flight, and manie of them drowned in the same þowe.

450

Vortiger obtained againe the kingdome, & shortly after Hengist, which was chased into the Ile of Manet, entred the land with a number of Saxons, but when he heard of the great assembly the Brytaines had made against him, he treated for peace, which in fine was concluded. Shortly after Hengist (by a guile which before he had deuised) bid his sonne in law, and three hundred of his Nobles unto a feast or banquet, where when he had ouerlaid his guests with ouermuch wine, he fell to quarrelling, and with taunting talke, pinched euerie one of them, and straight fell to fighting, where through the Brytaines were slaine euerie one. The king was taken prisoner, and forced to giue for his ransom, Kent, Sussex, Suffolke, and Northfolke. This murder of the Brytaines



taines was on the plaine of Salisbury. Then Hengist beganne his dominie on ouer Kent, & Vortiger fled into Wales, and builded there a Castell, of which building, and long let of the same, and of his Prophet Merlin, Geoffrey Monm. and others speake many things. Great companies of the Saxons daily flocked into this land, and grew so strong, that the people of the countrey which sent for them, stood in great feare of their puissance, for those Saxons had taken league with the Idids, & began to turne their force vpon the Brytaines: and to be short, the fire once kindled in the lands of the Pagans there, tooke lust reuenge of the wickednes of the people, raging first vpon the cities and country next adjoining, after from the east sea to the west, ouerwhelming all the whole land without resistance: both publike and private houses were overthrowne to the ground: the priests were slaine standing at the altar: the bishops with their flock were murdered, without respect of their dignity, nor there was any that would bury the slaine: some of the miserable leauings being taken in the hills, were there killed: other being sterued with hunger, were faine to craepe out of their caues, & buy their victual at their enemies hands, with sale of their libertie for euer, if yet they were not killed out of hand: other fled ouer the seas with an heavy hart: other carrying still in their country in feare of death, and lacke of food, liued full miserably in the mountaines, woods, and cliffes. Aurelius Ambrose, and Vher (brethren of Constantine that was before slaine in France) landed with a nauie of ships at Eotnes, made warre vpon Vortiger, and burned him in his castell in Wales, when he had secondly reigned sixe yeeres.

Hengist king  
of Kent.  
Bede.

A miserable  
state of the  
Brytaines.

**A**urelius Ambrose was ordained king of Brytaine, in whose time the Brytaines by little and little began to take strength and courage vnto them, comming out of their caues in which they lurked before, and with one consent, calling for heavenly helpe, that they might not for euer be bitterly destroyed, they hauing for their captaine and leader, the foresaid Ambrosius Aurelius, assembled themselves togither, and prouoking the victors to fight, through Gods assistance atchieued the victorie, and from that day forthward, were the men of the country. Now the enemy had the victorie, untill the yeere that Bathe was besieged, where they gaue their enemies a great overthrow, which was about the foure and fortieth yeere of their comming into the land. But of this wee shall speake more hereafter.

466.  
Bede.  
W. Malmesb.

Of this Ambrosius, William Malmesburie writeth thus: Surelie, euen then (saith he) the Brytaines had gone to woracke, if Ambrosius, who onelie and alone of all the Romanes, remained in Brytaine, and was Monarch of the Realme, after Vortiger, had not kepte vnder the proude Barbarians, with the notable trauaille of the warriour Arthur. Now it followeth in Geoffrey, that this Ambrosius caused Churches to be repaired, which had bene spoiled by the Saxons: hee caused also the great stones to be set on the plaine of Salisbury, which is called Stonehenge, in remembrance of the Brytaines that were slaine and buried there, in the reigne of Vortiger, at the banquet, and communication of Hengist with the Saxons. This ancient monument is yet to be seene, and is a number of stones, rough and of a gray colour, 25. foote in length, and about 10. foote in breadth, they are layned.

W. Malmesb.

Stonehenge  
beside Salis-  
bury.



ned by two and two together, and euerie couple sustaineth a third stone lying ouerthwart, gatewise, which is fastened by the meanes of tenons that enter in to mortaises of those stones, not closed with anie cement. It appeareth, that there hath bene three ranks going round as circles one within another: where of the uttermost and largest, containeth in compasse about 300. fote, but the other ranks are decayed, and therefore hard to reckon how many stones there be.

Geffrey mon.  
Giral. Cam.  
Gerua Doro.

The Chronicles of the Brytains do testifie, that whereas the Saxons, about the yere of our Lord 450. had slaine 480. of the Brytaines Nobility by treason, and under colour of a treaty, Aurelius Ambrose now King of the Brytains, desirous to continue their memorie, with some worthy monument, caused these stones to be set vp in place of their murder and buriall, the which stones hadde bene first brought from Affrike into Ireland, and placed on Pounte Kyllare, and from thence by the industrious meanes of Merlin, were conueyed to this place to the foresaide end. There are about this place, certaine litle hilles, or banks, vnder the which are found sometimes bones of bigge men, and peces of armor, also not far from thence remaine old ruines of the maner of a fortreffe, which the Romans (as it is not unlike) did build there in times past.

Kingdome of  
the South  
Saxons.  
Marianus.  
Kimenshore.  
Andredfleage.  
Mercreds borne.

Alla, and his three sonnes, Kimon, Plineing, and Cissa, came into Brytaine with three ships, and landed with them, in a place called Kimenshore, and there slewe manye of the Brytaines, forcing the rest to make their flight into a wood called Andredfleage, this Alla fighting with the Brytaines in a place now called Mercreds Borne, or Mercreds Rilear, slewe many of them, and put the rest to flight.

Andredsester.

Alla and Cissa his sonne, after long siege, brake into the Citty of Andredsester, and slewe the inhabitants from the greatest to the smallest.

Portesmouth.

Porte, and his two sonnes, Byda, and Moegla, arrived in Brytaine with two ships, in a place called Portesmouth, and there slewe a yong gentleman, one of the nobilitie of the Brytaines, and diuers others.

The same yere two Dukes, to wit, Cerdic and Kenric, his sonne came into Brytaine with v. ships, and arrived in a place called Cerdics shore, the same day they fought with the Brytaines, and put them to flight, Cerdic and his son Kenric slewe Natanland king of the Brytaines, and 5000. men, of whose name that countrie as far as Cerdics ford, was called by the name of Natanleed.

Aurelius Ambrose, being poysoned died when he had reigned 32. yeres, and was buried at Stonehenge, then called Chorea Gigantum.

498  
Gaufride.  
Arbor Succes.

Vther Pendragon, so called, for that hee caused alwayes a Dragon to be born before him in his battailes, was crowned king of Brytain: he vanquished Orta and Oza at Windgate by Coquet Riuer. He was enamored vpon Igren the Dukes wife of Cornwall, and to obtaine his vnlawfull lust, made warre vpon her husband Goilen, and slewe him in battaile at Duuilioc. On her he begate Arthur. He reigned xliiii. yeres, and was buried at Stonehenge.

516  
Nennius.

Arthur the sonne of Vther borne in Cornetwall, at the age of xv. yeres was crowned king of Brytain, as some say at Caerleon, other at Winch. one old nameles pamphlet saith at Cilicester, by Dubricius Archbishop of Legions.

This

This Citie of Cilceſter in Bꝛytiſh is called Caerſegent, and was ſituate nere Reading. It was ſo called, for that Conſtantiꝛ, the ſonne of Conſtantine the great dyed there: his Sepulchꝛ might once haue bene ſeene there beſides the Citie, as the letters engrauen on it in ſtone did declare. Thus farre the ſaid nameleſſe authoꝛ.

Sea. Cro.

The Towne of Cilceſter is yet to be ſeene in Hamſhire, euen in the verie edge of it, as the byoke deuſedeth, it is 6. miles oꝛ moꝛe from Reading, and containeth within the wall of ſtone about 80. acres of ground, deuſided into thꝛee fieldes, beſide the ground about the manner place it ſelfe, and the Church. The wall is about 2. miles compaſſe, with foure places where gates haue bene, on the which wall grow ſome Dakes of 10. cart loades the pece, the ground within the wall is almoſt leuell with the toppe of the ſame wall, but without, the wall is 6. oꝛ 7. fote of height, aboue the ground within the wall at this preſent is one farme houſe, and a pariſh Church, the pariſhioners whereof dwell without the Towne, there is in digging and plowing much Romane money found, the ground there beareth good corne, ſaue in ſome place, the corne being marueiloꝛs faire to the eye, and ready to ſhew perfecter, it decayeth. The lands of the towne, after the conqueſt came to one Blewich, & then one of the Blewichs leauing no heꝛe male, the land not entailed to the heꝛes generall, came by marriage to one Peter de Cuſance Knight: and after to one Edward Baynard, comming out of the houſe of the Baynards of Eſſex, whoſe name is now obſcured there, thus much of Cilceſter. And now againe to Arthur, who, as is repoꝛted, toke to wiſe Guineuer, couſin to Cador Duke of Cornwal, and daughter to the king of Biſkay. Of this king Arthur there be many fabulous repoꝛtes, but certaine he was (ſaith W. of Malmesbury) a Prince moꝛe woꝛthy to haue aduancement by true hiſtoꝛies, then false fables, being the only prop and byholdeꝛ of this his countrey.

Cilceſter an ancient Citie.

Leyland.

Sea. Chron.

W. Malm.

Anna. Hiſt.

Nennius.

In the beginning of his raigne, Lotho and Conradus his allies, enuying his proſperity, made war againſt him, but he valiantly vāquiſhed them with their Pikes and Scots, and at his pleaſure appointed them a gouernoꝛ named Angiſel. He fought xii. battels againſt the Saxons, and alwaies bare away the victorie. Theſe battels (ſaith Nennius) were fought in places following.

The firſt battell was fought in the mouth of the water Gleyne oꝛ Gledy.

The ſecond, third, fourth, and fiſt, ne vnto the riuer Douglaſſe, which is in the Countie of Lincol.

The ſixt vpon the riuer Baſſus.

The ſeuenth in the Wood Caldon, oꝛ Carcoſſe Caldon.

The eight beſide the Caſtell called Guinen.

The ninth at Caſcelien in Wales.

The tenth by the ſea ſide, in a place called Trachenriſh, oꝛ Riſthorwode.

The eleuenth vpon a hill named Agned Cathergonten.

The twelfth at ſ hill oꝛ towne of Bath, then named Batten-hill, where many moꝛe were ſlaine by ſ force of Arthur, for he alone (ſaith W. Mal.) hauing the image of our Lady ſowed vpon his armor, ſet vpon 900. of his enemies & with an incredible ſlaughter put the to flight. But now concerning this Bath before mentioned

Bath oꝛ Bathon-hill.

tioned

tioned, it is to be noted, that Bath in Somersetshire standeth lowe, compassed about with hills, wherby it is evident, that either it is remoured from that place where it stood in Nenius time, or els that y<sup>e</sup> place whiche he called Badonicus mons, was not this towin it selfe, as Leiland and other coniecture, but some other high place néere, which is not unlikely, for at this day withyn a mile of it, ener a towin called Bannae downe, which is so called, either corruptly for Bathen downe, or els in memozy of the Banners displayed there, Banner downe, and seemeth to me both vpon the sight of the place, and report of such as haue gathered caps full of mens teeth in following the plow there, to be the same that Nenius (corruptly called Gildas) or Bede meaneth, though Polidor mistakes it for Blanche-moore. Thus much for Badon hill: now to the historie.

Afterward Arthur raised the siege which the Saxons had planted about Lincolne, & slew them in great numbers. On the other side (saith W. Mal.) though the English Saxons were tossed with y<sup>e</sup> variable dalliance of fortune, yet they did alwaies supply their armies when they were decayed with their countrymen which came to him, and therefore with the better courage they ran vpon the weapons of their enemies, & when the inhabitants by little and little quailed and gaue ouer, they spread themselves through the whole Island. Gods pleasure being so, in whose hand & power the alteration and change of al kingdomes is, and doth consist, but these things came to passe in procelle of time and yeres.

Arthur hauing abated the rage of the Saxons as is aforesayed, and reduced his countrey to quietnesse, he constituted the order of the round table, into the which order he only retained such of his nobilitie as were most renowned for vertue and chualtrie. This round table he kept in diuers places, especiallie at Carlion, Winchester, and Camalet in Somersetshire. This Camalet somtime a famous towne, or castle standeth at the South end of the Church of South Cadbury, the same is situat on a very for or hill, wonderfully strengthened by nature, to the which be two entrings by, by very steepe way, one by north, another by South west. The very rate of the hill, whereon this fortresse stood, is more then a mile in compasse. In the vpper part of the top of the hill be foure ditches or trenches, and a balky wal of earth bettwixt euery one of them. In the very toppe of the hill aboue all the trenches, is Magna area or campus, of 20. acres or more, where in diuers places men may see foundations, and rudor of wals. There was much darkis blew stone, that people of the billage there by hath caried away. This top within the vpper wal being more then 20. acres, hath often bene plowed, and borne very good corne, much gold, silver, & copper of the Romans coines hath bin found there in plowing, & likewise in the fields about the roots of this hill, with many other antique things especially by East.

There was found in the memozy of men a horse shoe of silver at Camalet. The people can tell nothing there but that they haue heard say y<sup>e</sup> Arthur much resorted to Camalot. The old Lord Hungarford was owner of this Camalot, since, Hasting Earle of Huntingdon by his mother, &c.

There is yet to be seene in Denbigh shire, in the parish of Llanfanan, in the side of a stonie hill, a place compasse, wherin be foure and twenty seats for men to sit in, some lesse, and some bigger, cut out of the maine Rock by mans hand, where

W. Lamb.  
Banner downe

Berthues  
round table.

Camalet castle.

Leyland.

where children and young men, comming to seeke their Castell, use to sit, and  
plate: they commonly call it Arthures round Table.

While Arthur was valiantlie occupied in his wars beyond the Seas, (where  
he wrought many wonders, as some haue written, but far unlike to be true.)  
Mordred, to whome he had committed the gouernement of Brytaine, confede-  
rating himselfe with Cerdicus first king of the West Saxons, traiterously be-  
surped the kingdome, of which treason, when relation came to Arthur, hee spee-  
dilie returned into Brytain, and at Richborow nere to Sandwich, gaue battel  
to him, and wanne the fiede. Anguise of Scotland, Gawin and Cador were  
there slaine: then pursuing him into Cornetwall, gaue him battel there againe  
by the Riuer of Alaune, of some histories called Cablan, where Mordred was  
slaine. And Arthur being deadly wounded, was conueied to Glasseburie,  
where he died on the xxi. day of May, in the yere of Christ 542. and was there  
buried after he had victoriously gouerned this Realme 26. yeres, hee gaue  
Brentmarth (saith Rowse) with other possessions to the value of 500. Parks, to  
the Abbeie of Glasseburie.

Flores Hillorian.

Mattallat  
Douer.

Woddes  
slaine.  
Anci. glaseo.  
gualter couen.  
Antiqui. glast.

More then 600. yeres after his death, to wit, about the yere of Christ 1189.  
which was the last yere of the reigne of king Henry the second, his bodie was  
founde, buried in the Churchyard, betwixt two pillars, xvi. fote deepe vnder  
ground, but those that digged the ground there to find his body; after they had  
entred about 7. fote deepe into the earth, they found a mightie broade stone,  
with a leaden Crosse fastened to that part which laie downewardes towardes  
the corpes, containing this inscription.

*Hic iacet sepultus rex Arturius in insula Aualonia.*

This inscription was grauen on that side of the Crosse which was next to  
the stone, so that till the Crosse was taken from the stone, it was not sene. His  
body was found, not inclosed within a tombe of stone, but within a great tree  
made hollowe like a trough, the which being digged vp and opened, therein  
was found the bones of Arthur, which were of a maruellous bignesse, as Giral-  
dus Cambrensis, a learned man that then liued, reporteth to haue heard of the  
Abbot of Glasseburie, of whome he was enformed that the shin-bone of Ar-  
thur being set vpon by the leg of a very tall man, came about his knee the bredth  
of three fingers. The skull of his head of a wonderfull bignesse, in the which  
head there appeared the prints of x. wounds or mo: all the which were growne  
into one seame, except onely that whereof hee died, which being greater then  
the other appeared verie plaine. Also in opening the tombe of his wife Guine-  
uer, that was buried with him, they found the tresses of her haire whole and per-  
fect, finely platted, of colour like to gold, but being touched fell to dust: the Ab-  
bot of that house (sometime Prior of Bermondsey) was named Henry Bloys,  
and was nephew to king Henry the second, by whose commandement the bu-  
riall of Arthur was searched for and found. Whose bones, with the bones of  
Guineuer his wife being found, were remoued into the newe great Church,  
(for the old was burned in Anno, 1171.) and there buried in a faire Tombe of  
Marble, laying the bones of the king at the head of the Tombe, and the bones  
of the Quene at his fete toward the West. The Crosse of leade with the in-  
scription,



scription, as it is found, and taken off the stone, was kept in the treasure or reuester of Classenburie Church, till the suppression thereof, in the reigne of King Henry the eight.

542  
Brute booke.

Constantine kinsman to Arthur, and sonne to Cadur Duke of Cornewall, was ordained king of Brytaine, and reigned thre yeres.

Mordredes  
children slaine.

Gildas.  
Arbor successi.

This man was by the two sonnes of Mordred greivously bereaved, for they claimed the Land by the right of their Father, but after manie barbailes they fled, the one to London, the other to Winchester, which Cities they obtayned, and toke them: but Constantine followed, and subdued, and toke the foresaid Cities, and one of the young men hee found in an Abbey at London, slew him nere the Altar cruellie, and buried him nigh Vnder Pendragon, at Stonehinge. The other young man he found at Winchester, and slew him, flying into the Church of S. Amphibalus.

Aurelius Conanus a Brytaine, raised most all warre against Constantine the king, and after soze fight slew him in the field, when he had reigned thre yeres, and was buried at Stonehinge.

545

Aurelius Conanus, Nephewe to Arthur, was Crowned King of Brytaine.

He cherished such as loued strife and dissention within his Realme: and gave light credence to them which accused other, were it right or wrong.

Flores Historiar.

Hee imprisoned by strength his Uncle, which was right heire to the Crowne. He reigned thre and thirtie yeres.

The fife king  
dome of the  
Saxons.

578  
Gildas.  
Gaufride.

The kingdome of Northumberland began first in Brytaine vnder a Saxon named Ida.

Vortiporus the sonne of Conanus, was ordained King of Brytaine, a vicious king, and cruell tyrant, who put from him his wife, and kept her daughter for his Concubine. In diuers battels hee discomfited the Saxons. He reigned foure yeres.

581

Malgo Pulcher Canonus of Northwales, began his reigne ouer the Brytaines, and gouerned them fve yeres.

Gildas.

This Malgo was in proportion of body, greater then all the Dukes of Brytaine, but he delighted in the foule sin of Sodomie. He slew his first wife, and then toke to wife his owne brothers daughter.

586

Caraticus began to rule the Brytaines. This man loued ciuill warre, and was odible both to God and to his subiectes. They moued the Saxons (being accompanied with Gurmundus king of Ireland) to make warre vpon Caraticus, in such wise, that hee was fayne to take the Towne of Cicester, where they assaulted him soze, and fired the corne, by tying fire to the winges of Sparrowes, that he with his men fledde from thence into Wales: by which meanes, hee lost a great part of his dominion, and ended his life, when hee hadde reigned thre yeres.

Sea. chro.

This Gurmund burned by the land of Brytaine from sea to sea, and the more part of that Ile called Leogrea he gaue to the Saxons. The Brytaines gaue place, and fled into the West partes of Cornewall, into Wales. Theanus Archbishop of London, and Thadeocus Archbishop of Poike, when their Churches were



were all destroyed to the ground, they with their Cleargie fled into Wales, and many of them into little Brytaine. This plague came on the Brytaines for their countousnesse, rauine, and Lecherie. Gurmund builded Gurmundchester.

Gurmonche-  
ster builded.

613

Paulus Diaconus

Cadwane Duke of Northwales, was made soueraigne of the Brytaines, who gaue strong battel to Ethelfride king of Northumberland, and forced him to intreate for peace: After which concord being made, they continued all their life time louing friends. He reigned xxiij. yeeres.

The kingdome of the East Saxons began vnder Erchenwinus, about the yere of Christ, 614.

Six kingdome  
of Saxons.  
Seuenth king-  
dome of Sax-  
ons.

The kingdome of Mercia, or middle England, began vnder Penda, 626.

635

Cadwalin, the sonne of Cadwane, reigned ouer the Brytaines, he warred strongly vpon the Saxons, and made Penda king of Mercia tributarie to him: He reigned xliiii. yeeres, and was buried at London, in a Church of S. Martine nere vnto Ludgate, which Church was then newe founded, and builded by the Brytaines, in Anno, 677.

685

Cadwalladar (saith Gefsey) was ordained king of the Brytaines, and ruled only liij. yeeres: he banquished and slew Lothier king of Kent, & Athelwold king of south Saxons: and then forsaking his kingly authoritie, hee went to Rome, there to be christened, who after became a Monk, and was buried in S. Peters Church at Rome. He was last king of Brytaine, (saith Gefsey) but Bede thewesth, that Lothier king of Kent was slaine by Edrike, who succeeded him in that kingdome of Kent, and Ethelwold he saith was slaine by a Saxon called Ceadwalla li. of the West Saxons, which Ceadwalla went to Rome, and was there buried as ye may read in the historie of the West Saxon kings.

Now are we come to the time wherein God (who for the sinnes of the people translateth kingdomes) dispossessed the Brytaines of their ancient habitation, and rule of this land, who by the victorie of Saxons were enforced, either to miserable seruitude, or diuened into the Westerne partes of the Isle, now called Wales and Cornwall, (where they now inhabite,) or els to their countrey men the Brytaines in France. They also called the Brytaines Walshmen, as who should say strangers, that vse an vnknown tongue. This happened in the reigne of Ceadwalla king of the West Saxons, whome Gefsey Monmouth calleth Cadwalladar king of the Brytaines about the yere of Christ, 685. when the Brytaines being waisted with ciuill dissention, pestilence and famine, lost all that small that they had long time painfully kept, and were couched in a corner. Thus much for the Brytaines, and now shall be shewed the reigne of the Saxons, who enioying the fertile soile of this Realme, parted it in pcesse of time into seauen kingdomes: Kent, Southsex, East-angles, East-saxons, Mercia, Northumberland, and West-saxons, which the learned call the Heptarchie of the Saxons, of which kingdomes, I purpose (for auoyding of confusion) to treat severally, setting downe the limits of these Countreies, with the succession, actes, and ciuill battailes of their pettie kings, vntill the time that this Heptarchie, or gouernment of seauen, was reduced to a Monarchie, or regiment of one.

Kentish

456



Ent the first kingdome, possessed by the Saxons, contained that countrey that stretcheth from the East Ocean to the river of Thamis, hauing on the South-west side Southrey, on the West London, and upon the North-east the said river of Thamis. It hath the Archbishoppiche of Canterbury Metropolitane and primate of al England, and the Bishoppiche of Rochester, and had kings as followeth.

**H**engist the sonne of Widgils, the sonne of Vicia, the sonne of Wecta, the first sonne of Woden & Frea, was the first of the Saxons that made him selfe king of Kent, as before ye haue heard, eight yeres after his first entring into this Iland, in the yere from Christs birth 456. He reigned xxxiii. yeres, and died honorably sayth Marianus, others haue written, that by the counsell of Elded B. of Glocester, Edell Duke of Glocester caused his head to be cut off, at Conesborow. But this hath no likelihod of truth, for certaine it is, that Robert base sonne to Henry the first, was made the first Earle of Glocester, and Henry the eight made the first Bishop of Glocester.

490

**E**ske or Vske, succeeding his father Hengist, reigned peaceably twenty foure yeres.

Otta sonne of Eske reigned xxi. yeres.

514

Emericus the sonne of Otta reigned xrb. yeres.

536

562

W. Malmes.

**E**thelbert the sonne of Emericus had the gouernment of this kingdome, by the space of lxx. (or after Beade, lvi.) yeres. This Ethelbert in the beginning of his raigne being but a childe, was troubled with warres on euerie side, that he could hardly defend his owne coasts. In his first battaile against Ceauline king of the West Saxons & Cutha his sonne, he was forced to make his flight into Kent, hauing two of his Dukes Oslauc and Cnebbero slaine in a place called Guibaduni: but when he came to moze age, and was moze cunning in warre, in short space he ouercame all the kingdomes of the Saxons round about him, saue the Northumbers. And to the ende hee would haue acquaintance with foraine princes, he made affinity and alliance with the king of Fraunce by the marryng of his daughter Berta, a Christian woman, to whom he permitted to vse the lawes and rites of her Countrey, and to haue a Bishop, whose name was Letardus, to remaine with her, for her better instruction in the lawes of God. By this means the barbarous and Heathen Saxons keeping company with the French, did agree to haue all one lawe and like customes: besides this, the chaste and vertuous life of Letardus the Bishoppe, and the other French, which came with the Quene; changed the kings minde vnto the knowledge of Christ, whereby it came to passe, that afterward hee did so soone geue place to the preaching of Augustine. At this time (sayeth Beade) the Wyrtaines being at quiet, little regarding the stormes past in their fathers daies, and hauing respect onely to the present prosperous estate in the which they then liued, were so set to breake all good orders of truely and iustice, that

Beade.

that scant any token or remembrance thereof remained, but only in a few, among many other of their doings, which their owne Historiographer Gildas, doth lamentably set forth in writing (he saith) of them thus) that they neuer took care to preach the Gospell of Christ vnto the Angles and Saxons, which inhabited the land among them. But yet the goodnes of God prouided for the said nation of the Angles, much more worthy preachers, by whom they might be brought to the faith.

In the yere 596. Pope Gregorie moued of godlie inclination in the hundred forty and seuen yere after the arrivall of the Angles in Brytaine, sent Augustine, Melitus, Iustus and Iohn, with sundrie other Monkes that liued in the seate of S. D. D., to preach the Gospell, to the nation of the Angles in Brytaine, which landed in the Isle of Thanet, and were first receiued by Ethelbert king of Kent, whom they conuerted to the Christian faith with diuers of his people in the 34. yere of his raigne: and king Ethelbert delaying no time, gaue vnto Augustine the Citie of Canterburie, who furthered thus by the king, receiued at his handes an olde Church, sometime founded there by the faithfull Romanes, and dedicated the same to our Saniour Iesus Christ, which since was called Austins

Gildas.

Marianus;  
Floriacen.  
Bede.Augustine came  
into Brytaine.  
Ethelbert was  
the first Christi-  
an king of the  
Saxons.S. Augustines  
at Canterburg  
builded.

Augustine consecrated Melitus and Iustus Bishoppes, and appointed Melitus to preach vnto the East Saxons, who with their king Sebert the nephew of king Ethelbert, at the preaching of Melitus receiued the word of life.

King Ethelbert founded the Church of Saint Paul in London. Iustus was made Bishop of Rochester, where Ethelbert builded for him and his successors the Church of S. Andrew.

S. Pauls in  
London found-  
ed.S. Andrewes  
in Rochester  
founded.  
Bede.

This yere 603. died Pope Gregory the first, upon the first of March, being the seconde yere of Phocas the Emperour, after hee had gouerned the Romanee Sea 13. yeres, 6. monethes, and 10. daies, after whome succeeded Sabinian the first.

About this time (saith Bede) Augustine (by the aide of king of Ethelbert) called together the Bishoppes and Doctors of the greatest prouince and neere to him, which were the Brytaines, to commune with him, in a place which to this daie is called Augustines Wake, as yet woulde saie the power and strength of Austin, being in the borders of the Vicians and West Saxons. There hee beganne with brotherlie admonition (saith Bede) to perswade them to peace, and Catholike vnitie with him, and to communicate with him for Gods sake the labour of preaching the Gospell to the Heathen of England: for as yet they kept not the Easter Sundae in due time, but from the fourteenth to the twentieth Mone, which compt is concluded in compasse of eightie foure yeres. They vsed moreover, manie other things contrarie to the vnitie of the Church, which when they had bene with long discourse declared, and these men, neyther for prayers, rebukes, or threats of Augustine and his companie woulde giue their assent, but rather preferred their owne traditions before all other Churches which throughout the worlde, agreed with Augustine in Christ. Whereupon Augustine fell to prayer, and also restored a blinde man to sight (saith Bede) which the Brytaines

Augustine ex-  
horteth the Bry-  
taines to a vni-  
tie with him.

Second Synode

Monastery of Bangor.

The Bypaines counsell to an Anchorite.

March. 13.

Austine requir-eth 3. thinges of the Bypaines

The Bypaines refuse Austine to be their Archbyschop, or so obey him in any thing. Austine threat-eth the Byp- saines.

coulde not doe, and therefore confessed indeede that to bee the true waie of righteousness which Austine had preached and shewed them, but yet they saide they coulde not alter their olde customes without the consent of their Cleargie and people. They desired therefore to haue a seconde Synode of a greater multitude. Which when it was appoynted to bee so, there came by report seven Bypaine Byschoppes, and many other well learned men, especially out of their greatest Monasterie of Bangor, where at that time Dinoh was Abbot.

These men beeing nowe readie to goe to the foresayde Synode, came first to a certayne holie and wise man (which liued there about an Anchorites life) to aske his counsell, whether they ought at Austines preaching and exhortation leaue their traditions or no, who aunswared them: if (quoth he) hee bee a man of God, followe him. But howe shall wee proue (sayde they) that hee is a man of God? The Anchorite aunswared, our Lorde saith, take on you my yoke, and learne you of me, for I am milde, and humble of heart: it is likelie that himselte beareth the yoke of Christ, and will offer you the same to beare; but if he be curst and proude, it is certaine, that he is not of God, neither must we much esteeme his wordes.

Then they enquired of him howe they might knowe whether this Austine were proude or not, marie (quoth hee) prouide ye that hee with his companie come first to the place of the Synode, or Councell house. And if when ye approach nere, he ariseth courteously to you, thinke ye that hee is the seruant of Christ, and so heare ye him obedientlie; but if hee despise you, nor will bouchsafe to rise at your presence, which are the moze in number, let him likewise bee despised of you.

And truelie as this Anchorite bade them, so did they, for it happened that when they came thither, Austine was alreadie there, and sate in his chayre, which when they saue, straightwaie waring wroth, they noted him of pryde, and therefore endenoured to ouerthwart and gaine say whatsoener he proposed, his Orat ion chiefly was thus: Although deare brethren in many other points ye doe contrarie to our custome, or rather contrarie to the custome of the vniuersall Church of Christ; yet notwithstanding, if ye will in these thre things consent vnto me: that is, to celebrate the Easter in due time, to accomplish the ministerie of Baptisme, according to the Romane and Apostolike Church, and last of all to preach with vs to this English nation the worde of our Lorde, all your other Ceremonies, Rites, and Customes, though they bee contrary to ours, yet we will willingly suffer, and bee contente to beare with them. But they answered, they would doe none of the thinges requested, neither would account him for their Byschoppe: saying nate, if hee would not so much as rise to vs, cruelie the moze we should now subiect our selues to him, the moze would hee hereafter despise vs, and set vs at naught. To whome Austine the at fullie prophesied, that if they would not take peace, and bee at accord with their brethren, they should receiue and seele warre from their enemies. And if they would not preach to the Englishmen the waie of life, they should suffer at their hand, and by their power the vengeance of death, which thin



thing came to passe afterwarde, as shall bee shewed in the raigne of Edilfride King of the Northumbers.

The saide yere of Christ 603. also died Augustine the Archbyschop, the xxvi. day of May, after the decease of Saint Gregory, two monethes, two weekes, & two daies. And after him selfe had bene consecrated Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, epght yeres, five monethes, and 21. daies, but before hee deceased, he ordained Laurence to succede him in the Archbyschoppicke, which hee saue in his life time the rather perfourmed, least that after he was deade, the state of the Church (being as yet but rude and latelie conuerted) might begin to waue and fall, if it shoulde haue lacked a pastour or ruler neuer so little a while: his bodie was for a time layde in the porch of the forenamed Church of Saint Peter and Paul, because the Church was not yet finished nor dedicated, but shortly after the dedication of the same, (which was done by Laurence his successor) hee was translated into the Church, and layde on the North side thereof decentlie. And vpon his Tombe was written this Epitaph. *Hic requiescit Dominus Augustinus Dorobornensis Episcopus primus, &c.* Here resteth blessed Augustine, the first Archbyschoppe of Dorobornia, who being sent hither of his lie Gregory, Byschoppe of Rome, and strengthened of God by the working of miracles, conuerted king Ethelbert and his people from the worshipping of Idoles, to the faith of Christ, and fulfilling in peace the dayes of this office, he died the 26. day of May, in the raigne of the same king Ethelbert.

Augustine the  
Archbyschop  
deceased.

Goceolini mona-  
bartiniani.  
Epitaph of  
Augustine.

The noble king Ethelbert, making prouision for them that shoulde come after, brought the lawes of his countrey into the mother tongue, thereby to rewarde the good accordingly, and to withstand the wicked by seuerer meanes, and left nothing whereof his posteritie needed to doubt in any matter, and then after his temporall raigne, which he had kept most gloriouslie ouer the Kentish Saxons, the space of 54. (or after Bede 56.) yeres, he entred into the eternall blisse of the kingdome of heauen vpon the foure and twentieth day of February being the eleuenth yere after that he had receiued the faith of Christ, and the ninetenth yere after S. Augustine with his company were sent to the English nation to preach: he was the third king, and reigned ouer all the South prouinces, which are separated from the North by the Riuer of Humber, and the borders adioyning thereunto. King Ethelbert being married to the Ladie Bertha a Christian woman, and daughter of the king of France, receiued of her a sonne named Edbald, (who married Emma the daughter of the king of France) and a daughter named Ethelburge other wise called Tate, that was married to Edwin king of Northumberland, which Edwin was conuerted to the faith by Byschop Pauline. The place of king Ethelberts burfall was in Saint Martines parish within the church of the blessed Apostles Peter and Paul neere Canterburie, on the North side of the same church, which he builded from the ground as before is declared, where also the noble Ladie Quene Bertha his wife was buried before him, and the byshop Lucardus that came out of France with her, and vpon his graue was left this inscription.

W. Malmes.

Register Cantuar.  
W. Thorne.

*Rex Ethelbertus hic clauditur in poliandro.*

*Fenapians certus Christo meat absque meandro.*

E 2.

Edbald



**E**dbald when he had taken vpon him to rule the Realme, and stood no longer in awe of his father, he did not only refuse to accept the faith of Christ, but was also polluted with such a fornication as the Apostle witnesseth neuer had been heard of among the Gentiles, which is, that he had married his fathers wife, with the which two haynons facts he gaue occasion to his subjects to returne to their former filth, which vnder his fathers raigne for fauour or for feare of the king had yielded to the lawes of christian faith, & chastity: but the scourge of God, and vengeance from heauen wanted not to the punishment of this vnfaithfull king, for he was plagued with often frensie of minde, and raging forie of an vncleane spirit, but by Laurence Archbishop of Canterbury, he was at length conuerted from his Idolatry, and vnlawfull sinne, and was turned againe to the faith, and being baptizd, he endeoured to maintaine the state of the Church in all points to the bittermost, he builded a Chappell within the Monastery of S. Peter and Paul, and gaue to that Monastery a great portion of land, he is said to be the first founder of Fulkstone in Kent, but I haue seen no Charter thereof, he raigned 25. yeres, and was buried by his father in the Monastery of S. Peter and Paul.

640

**E**Rcombert the sonne of Edbald by Emma his wife, hee first suppressed the Temples of the Idoles, and because his people were giuen to excess, commanded a solemn fast of fortie daies long, to bee obserued throughout all his kingdome, and raigned twentie fve yeres. It is recorded in the antiquities of Christs Church in Canterburie, that about this time Honorius Archbishop of Canterburie diuided his prouince into Parishes. Which Honorius decessed in Anno 693. when hee had sate Archbyschoppe twentie yeres.

The prouince  
of the Archbys-  
shopricke of  
Canterbury  
diuided into  
parishes.

667

W. Malmes.

**E**Gbert his sonne succeded, whose quiet government for a long season was afterward defaced by the cruell murder of Ealbert, and Egelbright his cousins Germans, whom either he slew himselfe, or procured to be slaine by a traitor named Thunor: he raigned nine yeres.

The Ladie Dompneua next true heire to the Crowne from Edbald, erected a Monasterie called Winster in the Isle of Thanet, and became first Abbesse there.

674

**L**Orharius succeded his brother Egbert, who being assaulted oftentimes by Eadrike the sonne of Egbert, in a cruell fight was shot through with a dart, whereof he died vnder his Surgeons hands, when hee had raigned thirtene yeres, and was buried with his predecessors kings, in the Monastery of Peter and Paul by Canterburie.

**E**Dricke the sonne of Egbert, within the space of two yeres lost both life and kingdome. After his death the kingdome being sometime gouerned by blaspers, and sometime by forreiners, began to decay.

The Kentishmen, by casting of fire, did cruellie burne Moll the brother of Cedwall King of the West Saxons, and twelue of his knights with him: wherewith Cedwall being moued to furie, did miserable harrie and spoile all Kent, so that by the space of fve yeres, there was no king in that Countrey.

Withredus

**W**ihredus the sonne of Egbert purchasing peace with money, was then established king, in which state he behaved himselfe very honourably, both in peace and warre. He founded the Monastrie of Saint Martin at Doner, and reigned xxxiiij. yeres, with whom king Swebhearde reigned jointly in one part of his kingdome.

698

**E**gbert the sonne of Wichred walked in his fathers ordinances, and had like successe, and reigned threë and twentie yeres.

737

The yere 729. two dreadfull Starres appeared, the one before the Sunne rising, the other after the Sunne setting, both which appeared in the moneth of Januarie, the space of 15. daies, and carried with them the likenesse of a bundle of fire against the North, and somewhat towards the West, at which time the Pagans infested France and Spaine.

**E**lbert his brother succeeded, in whose time the Citie of Canterburie (as is to be thought) was burned by chance: he reigned not xi. yeres, and was buried in the Monastrie of Peter and Paul at Canterburie.

754

**A**lricke the thirde sonne of Wichred ruled Kent after his brethren, and was vanquished in a fought fielde against Offa king of the Mercians: he reigned foure and thirtie yeres, and was the last of the line or succession of the kings of Kent.

765

**E**lbert or Egbert otherwise called Pren, then usurped the kingdome, and denied warre against the Mercians, by whom he was taken prisoner, and not long after released, but the Kentishmen would not receive him, Cuthred then usurped, and bare a title of a Kentish king for the space of eight yeres.

799

**B**alred the heyre of Cuthred then tooke on him the Princely dignitie, but Egbert king of the West Saxons so discomfited him in battell, that he fled over the River of Thamis, and forsooke his kingdome, when he had reigned xi. yeres, and was neuer heard of afterward, whereby this kingdome of Kent was united to the kingdome of the West Saxons.

807

The yere 829. Wilfred Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and was buried in Christes Church in Canterbury, when he had late 27. yeres, after whom succeeded Fleogild.

## South Saxons.



**S**outhsex the second kingdome, contained the Countiees of Southsex and Surrey, which had on the East side Kent, on the South side the Sea, on the West side Hampshire, and on the North the river of Thamis: it containeth the Diocesess of Chichester, and part of Winchester.

**A**le the eight from Woden, with his threë sons Cimen, Pleneing, and Cissa, came into Bytaine with 3. ships, & landed in a place called Almenstowe, and there slew many of the Bytains, & forced the rest to make their flight into a wood which is called Andredseage. Afterward fighting with the Bytaines in a place nere unto Sparcades burne, slew many of them, and put the rest to flight.

478

flight. When he and Cissa his sonne after long siege, brake into the City of Andreds Cester, and slew the inhabitants from the greatest to the smallest, and so began the kingdome of Southser: he reigned xxxvi. yeres.

514

Cissa his sonne succeeded, he built the cite of Cissacesler now called Chichester, & named it after his owne name, he reigned, as it is said, lxxvi. yeres.

590

Bede.  
First christe-  
ned King in  
Southser.

Thelwulfus (whose Bede nameth Edelwach) was christened in the p<sup>ro</sup>uince of the Mercies, in the presence and at the exhortation of St. Wulfhere, who also at the font was his godfather, and in signe of that adoption, gaue him two p<sup>ro</sup>uinces, that is to say, the Isle of Wight, and the p<sup>ro</sup>uince of Manures, in the West part of England.

Wilfride the Bysshoppe came to the p<sup>ro</sup>uince of the South Saxons, vnto them did he minster the wo<sup>o</sup>rde of Faith, by the permission and great reioicing of the king. This Bysshop christened the chiefe Lordes and knightes of the Countrey: and the rest of the people at the same time, or soone after were christened by other Priestes. The Quene Ebba was christened in her Isle which was in the p<sup>ro</sup>uince of the Vicians: for shee was the daughter of Eanfride, who was Eanheres brother, there were both Christian men, and all the people. But all the p<sup>ro</sup>uince of South Saxons had neuer before that time heard of the name of G O D, nor the faith. Yet there was in that countrey a certaine Monke, a Scot boine, named Dicub, which had a very little Monastery in a place called Bosanham, all compassed about with woods and the sea, and therein v. or vi. brethren seruing G O D in humble and poore life, but none of the people there did giue themselves either to followe their life, or heare their preaching: but when Bysshoppe Wilfride came and preached the Gospell vnto them, he deliuered the people not onlie from the perill of damnation, but also from an horrible murrain of tempo<sup>o</sup>rall death, for in 3. yeres before, it had not rained in all those quarters, whereby a famine destroyed the people by heapes, in so much that diuers times 40. or 50. in a company being famished for hunger, would go together to some rocke or sea banke, and cast themselves all downe, either to be killed with the fall, or drownded in the sea: but on the same day they receiued baptisme and faith, there fell a plentifull shoure of rayne, therewith the earth florished again. This Bysshop also taught the people there to get their sustentance by fishing.

Sellee Monas-  
tery in South-  
ser.

605

Edilwach gaue vnto Bysshop Wilfride the land of 87. tenementes, where he might place his company, the name of the place was Seolesey. In this place he founded a Monasterie, to be his Episcopall See.

Ceadwall a valiant young man of the West Saxons, being banished from this Countrey, came with an hoste of men and slew King Edilwach, wasted that p<sup>ro</sup>uince, cruelly murdered and spoiled euery where. Edilwach reigned xxx. yeres.

And soone after Ceadwall was taken out by two Captaines of the Kinges, Bertham and Anthun, which from that time did holde and kepe the Dominion of that p<sup>ro</sup>uince, the chiefe of which two, was afterwarde slaine of the same Ceadwall, (being then king of the West Saxons,) and the p<sup>ro</sup>uince subdued and brought into more greivous subiection then it was before. Againe Ine that reigned

reigned after Ceadwall oppressed it with like misery & bondage many yeres, whereby it came to passe, that the people of Suffer in all this time could haue no Bpshope of their owne: but were saue (their first Bpshope Wilfride being called home to Worke) to be vnder the Dioces of the Genises which belonged to the West Saxons, as many as were in the territozie of Selsey.

After that Ceadwall had thus obtained the kingdome of the West Saxons, hee tooke the Isle of Wight also, which was so altogether giuen to the worshipping of Idoles, that he intended bitterly to banish and drive out thence all the olde native inhabitants, and to put people of his owne Countrey in their place. For though he was not yet at that time baptized, and regenerate in Christ, yet he bound himselfe with a vow, that if he tooke the Island, he would giue vnto God the fourth part thereof, and of all the pray. Which thing he so performed, that Bpshope Wilfride happening to bee there at that time, a man of his owne countrey, he offered and gaue the same vnto him, to the vse and seruice of our Lord. The said Island contained as the English did rate it, *The Isle of Wight.* 1200. tenements, whereof was giuen to the Bpshope, the possession of the land of thre hundred tenements, which portion the Bpshope gaue and committed to one of his Clarke named Bermen, and appointed ther to a Priest named Hildila, to minister the worde and baptisme of life to all that would bee saued. Two children of the bloud Royall, being brethren to Drualde King of that Island, being fledde into the next prouince of the Vites, where they had hidden themselves in a place called Stonestat, were betrayed and found out, whome *Stonestat.* the king commanded to be put to death. Which thing when a certaine Abbot named Cimerberh had heard of, whose monasterie was not far from thence, at a place called Redford, he came to the king, and desired him that if hee would *Redford.* needs haue the children put to death, yet they mought first receiue the Sacraments of Christs Church. The King granted his request, and then hee tooke and Catechised them in the faith of Christ and washed them with the font of Baptisme, made them sure in perfect hope to enter the kingdome euerslasting, then were they put to death by the hangman, when after this order all the prouince of great Byptaine had receiued the faith of Christ, the Isle of Wight receiued the same also: In which notwithstanding, because of the misery and state of foraine subiection, no man tooke the degree of the Ministerie and place of a Bpshope, before Daniel, who was Bpshope of the West Saxons, and of the Genises, Suffer and Hamphshire.

The situation of this Isle is ouer against the mids of the South Saxons and Genises, the sea comming betwene, of the breadth of thre miles, which sea is called Selent: in which, two armes of the Ocean Sea, that brake out from the maine South Sea about Byptaine, doe daily meete and violently runne together beyond the mouth of the Riuier Homelen, which runneth along by the Countrey of the Vites that belong to the prouince of the Genises, and so entrench into the foresaid Sea, and after this meeting and struing together of the two Seas, they goe backe and slowe againe into the Ocean from whence they came.

Polue at length (saies Bede) it was determined by a decree in a Synode, *Suffer and Hamphshire* *note, vnder.*



node, that the prouince of South Saxons, which to that date appertained to the Dioces of Winchester, where Daniel was Byschoppe, should haue a Sea and Byschoppe of their owne seuerally, whereupon Cadbert Abbot in the Monasterie of Byschoppe Wilfride was made and consecrated first Byschoppe of that Dioces.

After his death Ceolla took the Byschoppicke vpon him: after whose departure the Sea shode vacant many yeeres.

## East Angles.



East Angles the third kingdome, contained the Countreies of Norfolk and Suffolke, Cambridge, and the Isle of Ely, which had on the East and North sides the Sea, on the West, Saint Edmondes Dyke, with a part of Hertfordshire, and on the South side Essex. It containeth the Dioces of Norwich and Ely.

492

Vffa the eight from Woden first King of the East Angles, reigned seauen yeeres.

499

¶ Titulus reigned xx. yeeres.

519

W. Malmes.

Redwaldus the tenth from Woden, as men write: this is hee that for the favour of Edwine, killed Edelfrith king of Northumberland. The same Redwalde was by the perswasion of Edwine baptized, but in vaine, for after by his wifes counsell he fell from the faith againe, his sonne Dorwaldus in pure and incorrupted Christianitie was slaine by the heathen Rochbert. Redwaldus reigned xxx. yeeres.

554

Erpenwalde sonne to Redwaldus, succeeded in the kingdome of the East Angles, reigned xii. yeeres.

569

Sebert brother to king Carpewalde, took vpon him the kingdome, a man in all pointes learned, and most Christian, who whilst his brother was yet living, being himselfe banished into France, was there baptized and instructed in the faith, of which faith he laboured to make all the Realme partakers, as soone as hee came to the Crowne. To whose good inducement, Byschoppe Felix did greatly applie himselfe. Who when hee came from Burgundy (where hee was borne) into Bytanie to Honorius the Archbyschoppe, and had obtained licence of him to preach the worde of God vnto the foresaid East Angles, his zeale and vertuous desire proued not in vaine, for he found in that nation plenteousnesse of fruite, and encrease of people that beleued him. For he brought all this prouince vnto the faith, and workes of iustice, and in the ende to rewarde of perpetuall blessednesse, according to the abodement of his name, which in Latine is called Felix, and in our English tongue, Happie, he was made Byschop of Dunmoeke, or Dunwich, an ancient Citie in Suffolke now so decayed, and as is supposed more then halfe swallowed by in the Sea.

East Angles  
received the  
faith.

Felix Byschop  
of Dunwich.

Liber III.

The common fame, and report of the inhabitants is, that before the towne came



came to decay, there belonged therunto two and fiftie deuine houses, as Parish Churches, Pryories, Hospitales, and Chappels, as manie Abbadys, and as manie toppe Shippes. But certayne it is, as appeareth by manifest and founde recoorde which I haue seene, that euen of late time, there was within the sayde Towne fire parish Churches, two houses of Friers, an house which had bene of Templars, two Hospitales, and thre Chappelles, foure of these parish Churches are now of late swallowed vp in the Sea, and but two of them remaining on the land, to wit, Saint Peters, and all Saintes. The men of Dunwich desiring succour for their Towne against the rage of the sea, affirme that a great pce of a Forrest, sometime thereby, is deuoured and turned to the use of the Sea.

There hath bene a Pynt, manie men of that Towne can yet shew of the coines, which are sterling pence, with this inscription, Ciuitas Dunwic, twenty of which pence waighed an ounce, 12. ounces a pound Troy, and so being xx. s. in money, was both a pound in payment, & also a pound in waight, as is aforesaid. This City was gouerned by a Maior and thre Bailiffes besides inferiour officers, Felix their first Byshop fate 18. yeres, and ended his life there in Anno 649, and was buried at Seham, a place where sometime a great famous monastery stode replenished with religious persons, vnder their Abbat Warfred, which house was founded by a Noble man named Lutingus, and was wholie subuerted by the Danes: the bodie of Felix was removed to Ramseie. Byshop Felix founded a Church at Radham, which was also amongst other destroyed by the Danes. Felix also founded Scholes at Felixstowe, now called Fishkesto. After Felix succeeded Thomas, a Deacon, borne in Germany, hee fate five yeres. After him Beretgillus surnamed Bonifacius, a Kentish man borne, fate seuentene yeres. After him succeeded Bisi, who diuided the Sea into two Byshoprickes, to wit, Dunwich, and Helmbam. Thus much for Dunwich.

Seham, now called Soms  
four miles  
from Ely.

Radham.

Felixstowe.

Sebert the king being desirous to followe the godlie order which he had seene in France, set vp Scholes in his kingdome (by the ayde of Felix, whome hee had taken out of Kent for that purpose) appointing masters and teachers to bring vp children in learning and vertue, after the manner of the Kentishmen. This Sebert was so inflamed with the loue of heauen, that leaving at the last all affaires of his Realme to the gouernement of his cousin Egrike, he became a Monk, and entred a monasterie by him builded, wherein hee bestowed his time in diuine studies, and contemplation: but the vplandish Englishmen with their old Captaine Penda, invaded his dominions, so that his people after long resistance, finding themselves too weake, they pluckt Sebert out of the monastery, and brought him against his will vnto the field, whereof the cruell heathen people he was killed, with king Egrike, and the whole armie discomfited, about the yere of Christ 652.

**A**nna the sonne of Ewide brother to Edwald succeeded Egrike, and was likewise slaine by the furie of Penda, Captaine of Marches, or Vplandish Englishmen, then heathen and vnchristened people, when he had reigned ninetye yeres, and was buried at Wilsburgh, in which place also

637

Wilsburgh.

was buried his sonne Firminus, but was after translated to S. Edmundsbu-  
rie. He had issue by his wife Herefwida daughter to Herericus the nephew of  
Ardwine king of Northumbers, sister to Hilda, Etheldred, Ethelburga, and  
Saxburg. Etheldred daughter to Anna founded the Church of Saint Peter  
in the Ile of Ely, in the yere of Christ 674, placing there an hundred persons  
of both sexes, vnder monasticall habite, and she her selfe became their first Ab-  
besse. This Countrey of Ely is a prouince of the East English, and contay-  
neth about two hundred households, and is compassed on eche side, as an Island  
round about with fens or waters: and so that many Geles are taken there,  
some suppose the said Ile to be called Ely: but other thinke the same to take  
name of Willowes, whereof the Ile aboundeth. The ground here is verie  
plentifull of all kinde of fruites, full of pleasant woods and vines, replenished  
with manie kindes of wilde beastes, fowles and fishes, &c.

Athelhere brother to Anna, succeeded, and both hee and Penda were slaine  
by Oswin king of the Northumbers, and that deserueth, because he had  
ayded Penda against his owne brother, and his kinsman.

Adelwaldus his brother succeeded him with like fortune, and left the king-  
dome to Aldulfus, Elohworldus and Hisberna, sonnes of the same Athelhere.

Ethelbert succeeded him: he had by his wife Laonorie a sonne named E-  
thelbert.

790

Ethelbertus his son succeeded in the kingdome of the East Angles. This  
Eman in his youth much profited in learning, not giuen to voluptuous plea-  
sures, but to praesers, almes, and other good workes, hee was profounde in  
counsell, mercifull in iudgement, and sober in speech, he was at length per-  
suaded to marry, for increase of children, whereunto he assented. At length,  
Offa king of the Mercies, vsing deceit, when strength failed, for this king E-  
thelbert, promised him manie great things, but when he had got him into his  
Palace, which was at Sutton Wallis three miles from Hereford North-  
ward vpon Luggie in Herefordshire, by the counsaile of the said Offas wife,  
for ambition of his kingdome, caused his head to be stricken off, by one Grim-  
bert a familiar to king Offa, on the eighteenth daie of Maie: his bodie was  
buried on the banke of the river Luggie, where now standeth the parish Church  
of Maudine. And so Offa vnjustly invaded and obtained the kingdome of the  
East Angles: but when a Virgin named Alfride, daughter to Offa, whom  
Ethelbert should haue married, vnderstode thereof, shee willed his seruants  
to haste them into their Countrey, for their Master was beheaded. And being  
taught by the Holy Ghost, propheted to her mother in this manner, quoth  
she, Thy sonne shall not liue thre yeres, and the kingdome shall be vnstable,  
and thou thy selfe shalt not liue in the confession of God ouer thre moneths,  
but shalt be possessed with a wicked spirite, and shalt eate thine owne tongue,  
and die an euill death: And it followed (saith mine Autho) as the Virgine  
had spoken: which Virgine vowed to liue a religious life, and became an An-  
cresse at Crowland.

When king Offa heard hereof, he repented him, and caused the bodie of E-  
thelbert to bee remooued to Hereford thre miles from Kenchetter, and foure  
miles

Iohn Capgrau.

Giraldus Cam-  
brensis.  
Osherr de Clere.  
Sutton Wal-  
lis.

Maudine.

Kenchetter.

miles from Sutton Wallis, where afterward ouer him was builded a goodly Church by king Milfride, which Church he endowed with great possessions, and made the same a Bishops See: since which time the Church is dedicated to the said Ethelbert.

At Sutton Wallis there appeareth yet notable ruines of some ancient and great building, and therefore great likelihood that it was sometime the mansion house of king Offa, at such time as Kencheſter ſtoode, or else Hereford was a beginning. Spaurdine village is about a mile from Sutton Wallis, and hard by is a hill whereas men ſaie Saint Ethelbert was beheaded. At this village is now a faire Church dedicated to Ethelbert. I thinke he was ſlaine at Sutton in king Offas house, but y name of Spaurdine ſeemeth to expreſſe the martyrs hill.

Kencheſter thye miles from Hemelſorth Weſtward, a mile from the banke of the river. There was a pallace of Offas (as ſome ſay) the ruines yet remaine, there hath bene found ditches and ſlojes. This towne is farre more ancient then Hereford, it ſtandeth on the ſame ſide of the river the, and thye miles or more about Hereford, and was in the Romans time, as appeareth by many things, eſpecially by antique mony of the Caſars very often found with in the towne, & in plowing there about, the which, the people there calleth dwarfe money. The compaſſe of Kencheſter hath bin by eſtimation as much as Hereford, excepting the Caſtell, the which at Hereford is very ſpacious: peeces of the walles and towres yet appeare from the foundation: the people of Hereford haue ſetcht much awaie from thence to build withall. The place where the towne was, is all ouergrowne with brambles, hazles, and like ſhrubs, there hath been found in our time Byztaine byicks, conduites for water, ſtoned pavements, peeces of golde, and other ſtrange things. To be ſhort, of the decay of Kencheſter Hereford roſe and flouriſhed.

The towne of Hereford is large and ſtrongly walled. Also having a maine Caſtell, hard by the riſe of the: the Caſtle is thought nigh as great of circuit as Windſore. The dungeon of the Caſtle is high, and ſtrong, and in the dike not farre from it is a faire ſpring called Saint Ethelberts well. With in the Caſtle in digging hath bene found bones of men of great bigneſſe, and harde by in the riſe of the banke alſo is found the like bones: the wall of the towne is compaſſed with a dike, alway filled with moriſh water deſcending into it: this water reſoſteth to the bottome of the. There be in the town ſoure pariſh Churches, one being the Cathedrall Church of a very ſtrong building. S. Ethelbert was buried there (but ſince the Welchmen deſtroyed the Towne in king Edward the Confeſſors time, his Reliques haue not bene ſene there) there be in the ſuburbes two pariſh Churches, there hath bene a cell of blacke Monkes, and two houſes of friars black and gray. Some ſay that this towne toke the name of an olde ſord or paſſage over the, not farre from the caſtle: ſome ſay it was called Fernelege, or Fernehill: and the place where the cathedrall church now is, was a chapell of our Lady called Fernelege. Thus much for Hereford.

After Ethelbert, few men of might raigned in eaſt England, by means of the violence.

violence done by the Mercians, untill Edmund boine in Saronie, in the Citie of Nozhenberge sonne to king Alkemon and Quene Syware. In which time reigned in East Angle a king named Offa, who minding a voyage to the holy land, took his journey through Saronie, there to visite his cousin Alkemon, and his nephew Edmond, which Edmond hee adopted to be his heire of East Angles. So we so it happened, that the saide Offa, having accomplished his voyage at the holy sepulture, and returning, deceased at Port Saint George, having before sent his ring to Edmond, making him gouernor of the East Angles, his father Alkemon provided him of men famous by experience, both in armes and gentleness; he had also clearkes circumspect & wise, to counsell him, he stufed his ships with men and victuall: which thing done, and leaue taken of his father and mother, he sailed, and landed in East England, at a place called Haydenboure, where falling on his knees, he made deuoute prayer vnto God, that his comming thither might be to him acceptable, and to all the country profitable. And not farre from thence he builded a royall Coloze, which to this day is called Hunsstone, which betokeneth swetnesse and great might: there he helde his householde nigh one yere, and then remoued to Aethelbrough, where he remained one whole yere, and learned his Psalter in the Saxon tongue, which Boke was reserued in the Reuestrie of the Monasterie of Saint Edmundsbury, till the same Church was suppressed in the reigne of King Henry the eight, as I haue bene credibly informed.

870

Edmond reigned xv. yeres, in whose time Hinguar and Hubba, Danish Kings, entring the prouince of the Northumbers, raged ouer all the same, and made great spoiles. Hinguar having gotten a great pray, left Hubba, and with hispany sailed into East Angle, and arriued at a certaine City thereof vnawares to the Citizens, set it on fire, and slew both man, woman and child. This wicked Hinguar took Edmond king of that prouince, in a village then called Heglisdune, nere to a wood bearing the same name, where this holie Edmond being constant in the Christian faith, was first by the Pagans beaten with bats, then scourged with whips, he still calling on the name of Iesus: his aduersaries in a rage shot him full of shafts, and then smote off his head and threw it into a bush: after which time the Angles ceased to reigne in the East Angle, but the same was possessed by Danes, till fiftie yeres after, that Edward the sonne of Etheldred did expulse the Danes, and toyned that prouince, and also the East Saxons, to his kingdome of the West Saxons.

I. Prington.

Hunsstone.

Aethelbrough.

Aferius.

Albo Flori.  
accusis.King Edmond  
cruelly marti-  
red by the  
Danes.

## East Saxons.



After the fourth kingdome contained Essex, Middlesex, and Hertfordshire, being bounded on the East, with the Germane Ocean, on the South with the riuer Thames, on the West with Colne, and on the North with Stowe, which at this date parteth Suffolke from Essex: it containeth the diocese of London.

Erchenwine,



Erchenwine, the eight from Woden, from whom all the Saxons derived their genealogies, first erected this Countrey to a kingdome, which neuer the lesse he held as feodarie to the kings of Kent, who were as yet the very soveraigns of the whole Countrey from Thames to Humber. And as we have specified, Voriger yielded seizon to Hengist for his deliuerie, when 50000 of the Brittaines were slaine on Salisbury plaine, and he taken prisoner.

527

Sledda the sonne of Erchenwine succeeded his father in the government, and so establish the state more sure, married Ricula the daughter of Ermenich king of Kent, and enjoyed his government so quietly, that he inuolued small matter to Historiographers.

587

Ebert the sonne of Sledda by Ricula, ruled this kingdome after his father. The second yere of his raigne, which was the yere of Christ 604 Augustine Archbishop of Canterbury, consecrated two Bishops, the one named Miletus, the other Iustus, Miletus here appointed to preach to the people of the East Saxons, which are separate from Kent with the riuer of Thames, & are fast ioyned to the East sea, whose chiefe Citie is London, a princely port towne, of many people, arriving thither by sea and land. Howe as soone as this province, by the preaching of Miletus, had receiued the word of truth.

603

Ethelbert king of Kent builded in the Citie of London S. Pauls Church, wherein Miletus and his successours were appointed euer after to haue their Sea. Iustus was ordained Bishop of Rochester in Kent, where king Ethelbert builded the Church of S. Andrew the Apostle, and gaue many goodly giftes to the Bishops of both Churches. Which Ethelbert in his Charter to the Church of S. Paul, hath these wordes: *Edilbertus Rex, Deo inspirante, pro anima sua remedio dedit Episcopo Miletio terram qua appellatur Tillingham ad monasterium sine solatium scilicet S. Pauli. Et ego Rex Ethelbert ita firmiter concedo tibi præsuli Miletio potestatem eius habendi & possidendi, ut in perpetuum in monasterij utilitate permaneat, &c.*

Ebert first christian king of the East Saxons.

Saint Pauls church in London founded.

Afterward king William the first, surnamed Conquerour, by his Charter, confirming the lands giuen by the saide Ethelbert king of Kent, to the saide Church of Saint Paul in London, hath these wordes: *Wilhelmus Rex Anglorum omnibus fidelibus suis Francis & Anglis de Middlesex salutem. Sciatis, quod concedo Deo & sancto Paulo suisque seruitoribus 24. hidos quos Rex Ethelbertus dedit ecclesie sancti Pauli in xta ciuitatem London, quando eam fundauit, in perpetuum liberam esse, & solutas & quietas de Dane-gildis & omnibus alijs gildis, & ab omni expeditione, & ab omni opere, & volo, & firmiter precipio, ut bene & honorifice, & in pace teneant, & ne aliquis super hoc eis iniuriam vel contumeliam faciat. Teste Lanfranco archiepiscopo, &c.* Moreover, besides this confirmation aboue saide, the same king William gaue vnto the Church of Saint Paule in London, and vnto Mawrice then Bishopp thereof, the Castele of Stortford, or Stourforde in Essex, and all thinges which belonged thereto, and namely, the land which William the Deacon, and Ralphe his brother held of the king. Thus much for the foundation of Saint Pauls Church in London, founded by Ethelbert king of Kent, and confirmed by king William the Conquerour.

Stortford in Essex.

King



Westminster  
founded.  
Sulcardus.

T. Walsingham.

616

Dece.

Thencester  
and Tilberie  
Citties in Essex.

Ralph Cogshall.

King Sebert, by the perswasion of king Ethelbert his uncle, and through the preaching of Miletus, hauing embraced Christianitie, was baptized by the same Miletus, and immediately, to shewe himselfe a Christian, built a church to the honour of Saint Peter, on the west side of London in a place, which because it was ouergrowne with thornes, and enuironed with waters, the Saxons at that time called it Thorney, and now of the monasterie, and west situation thereof, is called Westminster. In this place long before was a temple of Apollo (as Sulcardus writeth) which being ouerthrowne with an earthquake, Lucius then built thereon a Church for the Christians. Sebert (when he had reigned thirtene yeres) died, and was buried in the Church which he had built, with his wife Aethelgoda, whose bodies manie yeres after, to witte, in the time of Richard the second (saith Thomas Walsingham) were translated from the olde Church to the newe at Westminster, and there entered.

Serred, Seward and Sigbert, sonnes of Sebert, jointly (as it saimeth) then ruled Essex, men wickedlie giuen, irreligious, and deadly enemies to the Christian profession: who presumed contemptuously to the Table of the Lords supper, being not baptized: and because Miletus would not permit them to be partakers of the christian sacrament, they expelled him from his See at London, but shortly after Serred encountering with the West Saxons, was slaine with both his brethren by king Kinegles.

Sand left the same to Sigbert his kinsman.

Sigbert sonne to Sigbalde, brother to Sebert, then ruled in Essex, bee by the perswasion of Oswy king of Northumbers, abandoned all superstition, and became a christian, and tooke an holie man Ced with him, who did mightily beate downe errors, and wanne many by preaching the christian religion in his dominions, whereupon Ced was by Finan consecrated Bishop of the East Saxons, and then proceeded with more authoritie in his function, ordering priestes and Deacons in all places of Essex, but especialy at Thencester and Tilberie.

This Citie of Thencester, stode on the banke of the river Pante, that runneth by Maldene in the Hundred of Dansey, but now that Citie is drowned in Pante, so that nothing remaineth but the ruines of the Citie in the said river. Tilberie standeth on the Thames side.

In the good proceedings of Sigbert, he was slaine by a kinsman of his own, vpon none other occasion, but for that he vsed too much clemencie towards his enemies, as the murderers themselves confessed.

Swidhelin son of Sexbald succeeded then in his regiment, who was baptized by Ced in a towne of the kings called Rendlesham in East England: Edelwald king of the East Angles, brother to Anna, was his godfather at the font.

Sigher then ruled with Sebba or Sebbi, although they were also vnder the allegiance of Wulshere king of the middle Englishmen. This prouince being visited with a great plague and mortalitie, Sigher with the people over whom he ruled, forsaking Christs religion, fell to Apollasse, for both the king himselfe,

himselfe, and many of his people, as well of the Nobles as of the meaner sort, beganne to renue their temple, which had stood desolate, they too: shipped their goods, as though they could by that meanes haue escaped the mortalitie. But Sebbi, his companion, with all vnder him, perseuered deuotely in the faith, and he ended his life in great felicitie, as we shall hereafter declare. Wulhere the king vnderstanding part of his dominions to fall from the faith, so: to call them backe againe, sent vnto them Iarumanus the bishop of Litchfield, succesor to Trunihere, who by much labour and diligence, being a man of great vertue, painefull and zealous (as a certaine Priest waiting then vpon him, and helping him in preaching the Gospell reported vnto Bede) brought them to the faith againe, both the king and all his people, so that abandoning, and throwing downe their Temples and Altars, they opened againe the churches, confessed gladly the name of Christ, and chose rather in hope of resurrection to die, then in the filth of idolatrie to liue. Which being so brought to passe, their priestes and instructors returned home with much ioy and comfort.

Theodore Archbishop of Canterbury appointed Erkenwald to be bishop of the East Saxons in the citie of London. This Erkenwald, in the yere of Christ 677. before he was made bishop, had builded two godly monasteries, one for himselfe at Crotsey in the Ile of Crote in Surrey, by the riuer of Thames: and another for his sister Edilburge, in a place called Werching in Casser, for his sister Ethelburge she was first Abbas there. Sebbi king of the East Saxons (as is aforesaid) a man very deuout and godly, being giuen to often prayer, and charitable almes giuing, esteeming the solitary and monasticall life, before all the riches and honors of a kingdome, which kind of life he had long time before taken, & had giuen by his kingdome, had not his wife refused to be separated from him. And therefore some men thought (as it had bene often said) that a man of such a nature and well disposed minde, was more mete to be made a bishop then a king. Now when this souldier of the Ecclesiasticall kingdome had passed a xxx. yeres in his temporall raigne, at length he died: but first he admonished his wife, that then at the least they should wholly giue themselves both together to serue God, whereas they could no longer now enioy or serue the world together. Which thing, when he had with much ado obtained of her, he came to þe bishop of Londō, named Waldhere, who had succeded Erkenwald, and at his hands receiued the habite of religion, which hee had long desired, to wit, of a Monk, for at that time were Monkes in the Church of S. Paule in London, as writeth Radulphus Dediceto and other.

To this Bishop he brought a great summe of money to be bestowed and giuen to the poore, reseruing nothing at all for himselfe, but rather desiring to remaine poore in spirite for the kingdome of Heauen. And when he perceived the day of his death to be at hand, because his foresaide sickness grewe still vpon him, for the princely and hantie courage that he had, he beganne to feare least at his death, through bitter paine, he might hap, either to vtter with his mouth, or with his body do any thing that were not decent for his person, he sent for the bishop of London, where he also then continued, and desired him that at his departing out of this world, there should be no more present but him-  
selfe.

Chertsey and  
Barking  
founded.

King Sebba  
a Monk in  
Pauls  
Church.  
Radul Dediceto.

King Sebbi  
buried in  
Bailes church  
at London.

selfe, and two of his Chaplaines : which thing when the Byshop had promised gladlie to do, the third day after he gaue vp the ghost, and was buried in a coffin of stone, and laid in the Church of the blessed Apostle Saint Paul, by whose good lessons he had bene taught to labour, and long for the ioyes of Heauen.

Sigheherd sonne of Sebbi, then reigned ouer the East Saxons for a time, and after him his brother Seofride.

Seofride sonne to Sebbi, and brother to Sigheherd, reigned next successuclie, of whome I find nothing recorded of his age.

Rich. Ciceffe.

Offa the sonne of Sigheherd then ruled this prouince, hee enlarged with building, and enriched with lands the Church of Westminster, and then forsaking his wife Geneswede Pendaes daughter, lands, kinne, and countrey, he went to Rome with Kenred king of Mercia, and Edwine Byshoppe of Worcester, and there in a Monkes coule ended this life, leaving Selred to rule his country.

718  
Ri. Grincastri.

Selred (whome other call Colred) peaceable after Offa reigned in Essex thirtie yeres, and at length was slaine.

748

Suthred after Selred was slaine, reigned in Eastsex : but Egbert king of the West Saxons, the very yere that hee conquered Kent, subdued also this Suthred, & annexed Essex to his kingdome: yet London with the countrey continuing about it, came not in subiection to the West Saxons, but obeyed the king of Mercia, as long as that kingdome continued.

Sigehrike and Sigehard after ward aspired to the kingdome of the East Saxons, but with no good successe, and so that kingdome ceased.

### Mercians.



Mercia the sixt kingdome and greatest of the other, contained Gloucester, Hereford, Chester, Stafford, Worcester, Oxford, Warwicke, Darby, Leicester, Buckingham, Southampton, Nottingham, Lincoln, Bedford, Huntington, and part of Hartford shires. It had on the West side, the river Dee fast by Chester, and Seuerne fast by Shyonslebery vnto Wytholw: in the East, the East sea : in the South, Thames vnto London : in the North the river Humber, and so Westward, downe to the river Merce, vnto the corner of Wyllyhall.

This kingdome of Merce in the beginning was departed into three partes, into West Mercia, middle Mercia, and East Mercia : it containeth the diocesses of Lincoln, Worcester, Hereford, Coventry and Lichfield.

586

Creda (the elcuenth from Woden) first king of the Mercies reigned tenne yeres.

595

Wibba his sonne reigned twenty yeres.

616

Ceorlus his sonne reigned ten yeres.

626

W. Malmes.

Penda the sonne of Wibba, a man actiue in wars, a frantike and most wicked man, toke on him the kingdome of the Mercies, when he was fiftie yeres olde : he shooke the Cities, and disturbed the borders of the kings, that were

where his owne countrey men boꝛne : hee ſlew Edwin and Oswald, kinges of Northumberland, (where Oswald was ſlaine is now ſituate the Towne of Oswaltre, which of him toke that name) he alſo ſlew Siebert, Egfride, and Anna, kinges of the Eaſt Angles, which all were of holie life and conuerſation : hee baniſhed Kenwallus king of Weſt Saxons, but in the ende, himſelfe was ſlaine by Ofwin which ſucceeded Oswald his brother, when hee had raygned thirtie yeres.

**P**eda the ſonne of Penda, ſucceeded in part of the kingdome which was called middle England, who comming after to Ofwine king of Northumberland, requirred his daughter Alſede to wife, which ſute he obtained, vpon condition he woulde receiue the chriſtian faith, and be baptized : and ſo hee receiued Baptiſme at the hands of Biſhop Finan, in a famous Towne of the kinges called Ad murum, by the Brits wall, twelue miles from the Eaſt Sea, from whence he returned home with 4. prieſtes, notable for learning and vertue, which ſhould inſtruct and baptize his people. Theſe preached the worde of God, and were gladly heard, thereby manie daylie, as well noble, as of the baſe ſorte, renounced their filthie idolatrie, and were baptized. Neither king Penda father to the yong Prince did wiſh and the preaching of the Goſpell in his dominion, but perſecuted ſuch as bare the names of chriſtians, and liued not accordingly, ſaying, that ſuch men were wretched which regarded not to ſerue the God in whom they profeſſed to beleue. Theſe things began thus two yeres before the death of Penda.

Ad murum by  
Barwin.

A notable ſay-  
ing of a heathen  
Prince.

In theſe daies king Ofwine, after often and cruel inuaſions of the heathen tyrant Penda, forced of neceſſitie offered manie and moſt precious iewels, with an infinite ſumme of treaſure, to redeme quiet and peace to his Countrie, but the barbarous tyrant, purſuing his deadly enterpriſe, and proteſting bitterly to extinguiſh the whole nation from the higheſt to the loweſt. King Ofwine called to God for help againſt his enemies, vowing, that if he had the upper hand, his yong daughter ſhould be conſecrated to God in perpetuall virginitie, and twelue ſarme places with the land, ſhould be conuerted to the erecting of monaſteries. Then preparing himſelfe to battell, with a vertie ſmall armie, the army of the heathen reported to be thirtie fold as manie, hee overcame them : and this is to be noted as a great helpe to the Chriſtians, that whereas the field was fought nigh to the riuer Zuruent, the ſaide riuer did at that time ſo overflowe the banks and fieldes about, that in the ſight of the heathen more were drowned then perſiſhed by the ſword. And thus was king Pendaes power overcome, and himſelfe ſlaine, when he had raygned or raged cruellie thirtie yeres. This Penda (ſaith Ingulphus) had ſonnes that were moſt deuout maintainers of Chriſtian religion, to wit, Peda, Viſere, Ethelred, Marwald, and Mercelini, and daughters, Kinisburge and Kenelwith, both for holie conuerſation excelling. The ſoreſaid battell was fought by king Ofwine, in the countrey of Neſd, the thirtieenth yere of his raygne, the yere of Chriſt 659. the ſixteenth date of Nouember. Ofwyne hauing obtained this victorie, rendered due thanks therefoꝛe to God, gaue his daughter Elſede to be brought vp and conſecrated to perpetuall virginitie, and alſo the twelue poſſeſſions promiſed hee performed.

Ingulphus.



The Lady Elfrida entred the monastery of Harts-eye, to bee brought by vnder Hilda the Abbess, and after ward builded for her selfe a monastrie in a place called Strethshalt thirty miles from Poike, and was there buried.

Oswine now reigning ouer the Mercies, and ouer the South people of Englands, subdued also the Dales, for the most part, to his allegiance: he founded Lichfelde, and procured it to be a Cathedrall Church of that prouince: Dwina was first Byshop of Mercia, also of Lindesferne, for there were then so fewe Priests, that one Byshop was compelled to gouerne two prouinces. This Dwina was a Scottissh man, and gouerned the Church of Lichfield two yeere, and died at Jfepping. The seconde Byshoppe was Cellach, a Scot, who ere long lette his Byshopricke, and went to Lindesferne. The thirde was Thrumhere an Englishman, who was also Abbot of Ingethling, a monastery builded there this king Oswine was slain. The fourth was Iariman. The fift was Cedda, who was buried at Lichfield, though hee had founded an Abbey at Lindsey, in a place called Ctheare. The sirt was Winfrothus. The seueneth Sexulfus a great builder of Peterborough Abbey: after these decease, two Byshops ruled the prouince or kingdom of Mercia, to wit, Winifrede at Chester, and Heda at Lichfield, after Winifred was relected: and Hidda safe alone, and died in the yeere of Christ 721. &c. Nowe concerning the name of Lichfield, Iohn Rouse saith there was in Bytaine a great number of Christians, which hearkened to the preaching of Amphibale (instruder of Albon) martyzed and slayne in a place at Lichfelde, called *Cadauerum campus*, a place of dead bodies, &c. This towne, for the most part, standeth vpon a lowe and equall ground, onely the close and the cathedrall church, with a long strate, that lieth north on the bydge of the Towne, is somewhat vpon a high ground: there is no token that euer the Towne was walled: a ditch was made in a part of the Towne by Langton Byshop of Lichfelde. There hath bene a castell of auncient time, but no part of it standeth: the place of the ditch is sene, and is yet called Castel-felde. In the maine Towne, which is a faire large thing, be thre parish churches, S. Maries, a right beautifull peere of worke, in the verie market steepe, whereas was a Guilde or brotherhood, begunne about king Edward the thirde time, and since much encreased by one Heywood, Deane of Lichfield: Saint Nicholas in the Southeast ende of the Towne: Stowe Church in the East ende of the Towne, whereas is Saint Ceddes Well, a thing of pure water, where is sene a stone in the bottome, on the which (some saie) that Cedde was wont to stande and praye. At this stone Cedde had his Oratory in the time of Vlfere king of the Mercians: at which time, all the countrie about Lichfelde was a Forrest and wildernesse. There was an house of Saint Iohn in the verie South ende of the Towne, where in was a Master and Fellowes. Smith Byshop of Couentrie and Lichfelde, in king Henrie the seuenths dayes, and after wardes Byshop of Lincolne, beganne a newe foundation at this place, setting vp a Master, two Priests, and tenne pore men in an Hospitall, hee set there also a Scholemaster and an Usher to teach a Grammar schole. King Henrie the seuenth gaue vnto it an olde Hospitall called Denhall in Wyreball in Cheshire, with the landes

Strethshalt  
towne.

Lichfield found-  
ed, and made  
a Bishops see.

Lindsey.

I. Rouse.

Lichfield.



and the impropriation of Burton Church in Wyzehall: there was an house of gray Friars in the Southwest parte of the Towne, Alexander Bpshp of Lichfield was the founder of it. There commeth a conduite of water out of an hill to the Towne, and hath two cascadelets, one in the East wall of the Friars close, and the other about the market place, besides water to serue the close and the Prebendes houses. There was a faire olde Crosse, enuironed with steppes in the Market place: Denton Deane of Lichfelde compassed this Crosse with eight faire Arches of stone, making a rounde vault ouer them for market folkes to stande vnder in, it did cost him a hundreth and thyscore poundes. The North part of Lichfield is diuided from the South part with thre pondes or lakes, whereof both the two first lying by West, are nothing so great as the thirde that lyeth by East: there bee diuers Springes in these poles, but the principall Spring is a brooke that entereth into them and feedeth them, comming from Dwe about a mile and halfe by West from Lichfield: the first westward pole is diuided from the second pole by a great maine causeway, walled on eche side with stone, and in this causeway be Arches of stone for the water to issue into the second pole: and this causeway serueth to come out of the South part of the Towne into the North. This causeway was last made by Lang on Bpshp of Lichfield. There is also a stone causeway, and an issue for the water betwixt the second pole and the third, leading out of the Towne hard to the South gate of the close of the Cathedrall Church: and on the East side of it, is a faire Mill, this causeway is little more then a quarter so long as the first. The third pole that lyeth by West, is a verie faire thing, and plentifull of fish, and goeth in length about halfe a mile or euer the whole water be drawne into a narrowe bottome, that thre milles lower goeth into Trent, by the right riue.

The Cathedrall Church of Lichfield being first erected by king Oswyne, was of later times renouated and dedicated to Saint Mary and Saint Cedde. The whole close of the cathedrall church was newly ditched and walled by Bpshp Langton, and he made one gate of a maiestie, and great strength at the West part of the close, and an other, but a lesse gate, at the Southeast part of the close: he made also the Bpshps pallace, at the East end of the close: he made Cokeshall castle, Shobozowe manour place, and the pallace by Strond at London, besides many other great actes, he was treasurer to king Edward the first. The Prebendaries in the close be very faire builded. The Choristers haue a goodly house lately builded by Bpshp Blythe. Fairewell a small priorie of Nunnes, suppressed by Thomas Wolsey Archbishop of Yorke, and giuen to Lichfield, in recompence of a pension that should haue bene giuen out of his college in Exford, was impropriate to the Choristers of Lichfield. The Librarie, at the North west part of the Cathedrall Church was erected by Thomas Haywood, Deane of Lichfield. The glorie of the Church is the worke of the West ende, that is exceeding costly and faire. There be thre pyramides or steeples of stone, two at the west ende, and one in the middell of the church. That parte of the Towne that lyeth by North the great causeway or bridge, is but one faire stræte in length. And thus much for the Citie of Lichfield: all

which sprang of the Monasterie there. King Oswyne gaue to Peda sonne to Penda, because hee married king Oswynes daughter as is afore shewed, the kingdome of the South marches, divided by the riuer of Trent from the north marches.

Hugo de Peter-  
borow.  
Peda the first  
Christian king  
of Mercia.

Peda nowe king of Mercia, beeing also the first Christian king of that kingdome, beganne to plant Christianitie, throwing downe, and destroying the Idoles, and erecting Churches of Christian Religion. Among the which, hee beganne the foundation of Medeshamstede, nowe called Peterborough; but hee reigned not long, for hee was trayterouslie slaine, by the means of Al-  
fiede his wife, in the feast of Easter in the yere of Christ 657. And king Os-  
wyne thre yeres after his great victorie ouer the cruell Pagan Penda, the Ro-  
bilitie of the Mercians Iumin, Eaba, and Eadbert rebelled against him, aduan-  
cing to the Crowne Vlfere brother to Peda.

662

Vlfere brother to Peda, earnestly preferred christianity, which his brother had begunne, but he was the first (saith William of Malmesburie.) that through the sinne of Symonie, solde the Bishopricke of London vnto Wyna.

Worcester.

I reade in a Legar Booke of the Monasterie of Peterborough, that Vlfere king of Mercia, remaining at his Castell of Worcester in Staffordshire, and vnderstanding that his sonne Vlfade, had led his brother Regin to Chad (vnder colour of hunting) by whome they were both instructed in the Christian faith, and had receiued Baptisme, hee by perswasion of Werebode, goeth to the Quatre of the Holie man, where finding both his sonnes in deuout contem-  
plation, hee killed them with his owne handes, whose Bodies Ermenhelde the Quene their mother did burie in a Sepulture of stone, and in proceesse of time, caused a Church of stone there to bee builded: which place was after called Stones, by reason of the stones which the multitude brought thither for the building thereof, when they came to frequent the place.

Wlfere slew his  
owne sonnes.  
Story of  
stones in Staf-  
fordshire

Medeshamstede  
or Peterborough.

But Vlfere after, repenting thereof, destroyed all the Temples of the Idoles, and in place of them did build Churches and Monasteries, among the which hee bestowed great cost on Medeshamstede, enriching it with large pos-  
sessions.

Medewell.

This Church standeth in the Prouince of Gertwyr such as inhabite the Fennes, and make not bee come vnto, except on the East side: on the South side whereof doth run the Riuer of Penne. in the midst of the which course is a place, as it were, a Whirlepoole, which is so deepe and colde, that in the Summer none can swimme or dree to the bottome, and yet it is neuer frozen in the Winter: for (as they saie) there is a fountaine, out of the which issueth water, which place the Ancients did name Medewell, of which the Monasterie built hard by was called Medeshamstede, which the thre brethren, Peda, Vlfere, and Ethelred, the sonnes of Penda, with their sisters, Kenesburg, and Keneswith, and king Oswyne did build from the foundation. But Peda in the yere of Christ 675. with the deuout multitude, by the help of Sexulfus first Abbot there, began this monastery, & laid y foundation there, of such stones as 2. yoke of oxen could scarce draw one of them, which stones were sene when the monasterie

monastery was burned. This Church was destroyed by the Danes, as all other monasteries were, & so remained 96. yeres, til the time that Ethelwald bishop of Win. coming into a place called Undal or Dundal, begā there to make a new foundation, but after coming to Spedishamsted, which he found desolate, by the helpe of king Edgar and Adolphus his Chancellour, hee did newe repaire the monastery there: and the monastery at Dundal was made a parish church. In Anno 1117. this monastery of Spedishamsted with the whole Towne was burnt, but in the yere after begunne to bee newe builded by Abbot Iohn from the foundation, and the Monkes entred againe in the yere 1140. King Vikere raigned 17. yeres, and was buried at Lichfelde: Eiminelde his wife, after his decesse became a Nun at Cly, vnder her mother Sexburg.

**E**thelred brother to Vikerus succeeded in the kingdome of the Mercians: he obtained a Bishops See to be in the citie of Worcester: Bosellus was first Bpshp there: Egwinus was the second. This Egwinus, by the helpe of Kenredus king of the Mercies founded the monastery of Cutham, in a place then called Couetham, of the Shepherdes field and house, purchased by the said Bpshp. The Towne in the Saxons time was called Hothesholme. About the same time two Noblemen Odo and Dodo founded the priory of Tetwelsburte. Also Osricke Duke of Gloucester founded the monasterie of Gloucester, then for nuns: since the same is a Bishops See. Ethelred became a Monke at Bardoney in Lincolneshire, when he had raigned 30. yeres.

**K**inredus sonne to Wolfenus, in the v. yere of his raigne went to Rome, & became a Monke in the Church of S. Peter the Apostle, where he continued in fasting, praise, and almes giuing, untill his dying daie.

**E**lred the sonne of Ethelred, who as he was maruellous in prowesse against Cina of the West Saxons, so was he miserable by untimelie death, for hee raigned not past 8. yeres, and was buried at Lichfield.

**E**thelbald raigned in continuall peace many yeres, and then by the procurement of Beruredus, was slaine of his owne subiectes. Unto this Ethelbald Boniface, the second Bpshp of Atriche in Holland, after Archbshp of Penz upon the Rhene an Englishman borne, who was afterward martyred, for the profession of Christ and his holie Gospell, sent an Epistle, of the which I will here set downe a pce to bee seene, for that it sheweth partlie the state of that time then present, and serueth for example in time to come.

**T**his most deere Lord, and to be preferred in the loue of Christ aboute all other kings of England, Edaldus, Boniface Archbshp, the Germane Legate, perpetuall health of charitie and loue in Christ. We acknowledge before God, that wee did reioice to heare of your prosperitie, your sayth and god workes: and wee bee sozry when we heare any thing that goeth against you, eyther in successe of warre, or in danger of your soule, for we haue heard, that you forbiddeth and robbery, that you loue peace, defende the widowe and the poore, for the which wee giue God thanks: but in that you refuse lawfull marriage; which if it were to the preferring of chastitie, it were commendable: and sith you wallow in lecherie and adultery with Virgins consecrate to God, it is both shamefull and damnable, for it doeth confounde you renoune, both

Dundali in  
Northampton-  
shire.

675  
Bishops See of  
Worcester.  
Ex Carta.  
Cutham.

Lib. Tewkt.  
Tetwelsburte.  
Monastery of  
Gloucester  
Inscriptions  
Gloucestris.

706

710

718

Chronicle of  
Holland.  
Ro. Mal.

Epistle of B.  
niface to E.  
thelbald.

Aduoutrie among Infidels punished by Death.

before GOD and man, placing you among Idolators, because you violate the Temple of GOD. Wherefore my deare sonne repent, and remember how filthy a thing it is, that thou, who by the gift of God reignest ouer so many nations, shouldst to the great displeasure of God, make thy selfe a bondslau to thine owne fleshly lust. We haue heard also, that the more part of noble men and people of the Mercians, by thine euill example, haue lost their lawefull wiues, and haue defiled the wiues of other, and also Virgins, which, howe farre it differeth from all good order and honestie, let the Lawes of strange Nations teach you: for in the ancient Countrey of the Saxons (where was no knowledge of GOD) if either a maide in her fathers house, or being married to an husband, were become an aduoutresse, she should be strangled by her owne hand closed to her mouth, and the corrupter should be hanged vpon the pit where the aduoutresse was buried. If she were not so used (her garments being cut awaie downe to the girdlestræde) the chaste Patrones did scourge and whippe her, and picke her with kniues, and so was sent from Towne to Towne, where other fresh and new scourgers or whippers did meete and whip her, untill they had killed her. Likewise the Comedians, who are the most uncleane kinde of people, had this manner of vsage with them, that the husband being dead, the woman, together with the dead body should cast her selfe headlong into the fired stacke or pile of wood prepared for the burning of their bodies. If therefore the Gentiles (not knowing God) had so great zeale to chastitie, how much more (my deare sonne) is it to be required at thy handes, who art a Christian and a King? Haue therefore compassion of thine owne soule, and spare the great number of the people, that by thy fatherly example yet meate beware to offend God, for whose soules thou shalt giue an account. Consider also, that if the English Nation, despising lawfull matrimonie, doe encrease by aduoutrie, (as the Frenchmen, Italians, and also the verie Pagans doe cast in our teeth and vphrayde vs withall,) of such confusions and copulations, shall spring by a peackish dastardlie people, which shall despise God, and with their wicked qualities vndoe the Countrey, as it came to passe to the Burgundians, the people of Prouance, and the Spaniards, whome the Saracens haue manie yeres assaulted for their sinnes which in times past they had committed. Besides this, it is tolde vs, that you take away priuiledges of Churches, and thereby giue euill example vnto your noble men to doe the like: but I pray you remember howe terrible vengeance God toke vpon the kings your predecessors, which committed such offences as we rebuke you for.

A wicked spirite came vpon Solredus your predecessor, which was a defiler of Virgins, and a breaker of Ecclesiasticall Priuiledges, for sitting roially among his Barons at a dinner, the Diuell plucked awaie his soule without confession of his sinnes. The Diuell also drewe in such a rage, Ofredus king of the Northumbers, which was guiltie of the same crimes, that with a vile death he lost both kingdom and life in his lustie young age. Also Charles king of Fraunce which ouerthrowe Churches, and altered the Church money to his owne vse, was consumed with a long torment and fearefull death.



It followeth therefore (my deare beloued sonne) that with fatherlie and earnest prayers wee beseech you, that you will not despise the Counsell of your fathers which diligentlie doe admonish your Highnesse, for nothing is more commodious to a good king, then willingly to amend such faults when hee is warned of them, as Salomon saith, Who so loueth Discipline, loueth himselfe. Therefore (my deare sonne) declaring our aduice, we beseech you by the liuing God, by his sonne Iesus Christ our Lord, and by his holie spiritte, that you will remember howe transitorie this present life is, and howe short and momentane the pleasure of this fleshie flesh is, and how vile and shamefull a thing it is, that man shall leaue euill examples to his posteritie for euer: beginne therefore to frame your life in better waies, and amend the errors of your youth, that you may obtaine praise with men in this life, and eternall glorie in the life to come: Take with your Highnesse well to fare, & to encrease in all godnesse.

Whereouer, the same Bonifacius sent an Epistle of the like tenor vnto Cuthbert Archbishop of Canterbury, adding thereunto, that he should rebuke the Clerkes and Runnes for their finenes, and pompe of apparel and garments. He also willed Cuthbert not to maruaile that he medled with other mens matters, nor to thinke it no part of his charge, to deale with the English Nation, but to vnderstand that Gregorie Bishop of Rome had bounde him, by the Sacrament whise receiued, to let him vnderstand, of the maners and vsages of the Nations about him: which indede (he saide) he woulde doe, if his gentle admonition toke not good successe.

The Epistle of Boniface to Ethelbalde toke such effect, that Ethelbalde forthwith sending to the Archbishop Cuthbert, and other his Cleargie and nobilitie, by their counsell, amongst other things he caused to be published, as followeth:

I Ethelbalde King of the Mercians, foreséeing that I ought to prouide for the kingdome euerlasting, and the remedie of my soule, that I may deliuer it from the bondage of sinne. And forasmuch as Almightie GOD, by his mercifull clemencie, without anie of my deserts going before, hath giuen me the Scepter of the kingdome, gladly therefore will I render vnto him of the things which he hath giuen me, and for this cause I giue this gifte by my life time.

That all Churches of my kingdome shall be discharged of all manner of tribute, in wozkes, and burdens, except it be in the building of Towers, Castles, and Bridges, which cannot be released vnto any. Whereouer, that seruitours of Monasteries and Churches, shall haue their owne proper libertie in the profite of woods, & of fieldes, and shall not be bound to giue any reward vnto the King or Princes, except they will, but shall be free that they maie serue God, &c.

This Countell or conuocation was holden by Cuthbert the Archbishoppe of Canturburie, and the other Bishoppes and Prelates, in the yere of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ, seven hundredeth, fourtie, and seven, and was in the thre and thirties yere of Ethelbalde king of the Mercians, who then

W. Malmes.  
Articles for  
the Church of  
England.

was present with his Princes and Dukes, where when there was assembled out of diuers provinces of Brytaine, Bishops and other spiritual persons, and the writings of Pope Zacharie were read in two partes, therewith he did admonish the people of England to liue more continently, and threatened that the despisers of his commandements should be excommunicated: whereupon the Bishops and Prelates agreed vpon certaine Articles, as followeth:

That the Prelates should liue more carefully and warne their subiects.

That they should liue in one peaceable mind, although they liued separate in bodies.

That euery yeere they should visite their parishes and charge.

That euery one in his iurisdiction warne the Abbots and Monkes to liue orderly, and the Bishops not to oppresse their subiects, but to cherish them.

That they also see that the Monasteries, the secular men that can not be taken away, be decently ordered.

That none be admitted to orders, vnlesse his life before be well examined.

That the reading of holy Scriptures be frequented in the Monasteries,

That the Priests be not buyers and sellers in worldly affaires.

That the Priests receiue no reward for baptizing of children and other Sacraments.

That they learne and teach in English the Lordes prayer and the Crede.

That al do finish their ministry after one & y same maner in their churches.

That they sing seruice in the Churches with sober voice.

That the solemnization of our Lord, and the byrth daies of Saintes be solemnized at one and the same time.

That the Sunday be kept honourably holy.

That intercession be made for kings and rulers, &c. In all xxx. Articles.

Ethelbald founded the Monasterie of Crowland, and because the marish of this Crowland, as the very name declareth (for it signifieth crudy ground and myrie) was not able to beare a stone building, the forenamed king caused many and mighty piles of Oake to bee dyuen into the ground, and commanded hard earth to be brought thither nine miles off by water in boates, from the higher ground, and to be mingled with the marish, and in this sorte he laid the foundation, and finished the Church of stone.

When Ethelbald had reigned xli. yeres, fighting against Cuthred, in the war not prudentlie begun, vpon Segiswald, or Secondone (as some say) thre miles from Tamworth, he was slaine of the tyrant Barred, and was buried at Kipendine or Kipon, at that time a famous monasterie.

Eraredus the murderer of Ethelbald did nothing worthy the remembrance, but was slaine by Offa, and had an end mete for a traitor.

Offa nephew to Ethelbald succeeded: hee toynd battell with Kineulfus King of the West Saxons, and got the victorie. He sent for Ethelbert king of the East Angles, promising great things by flatterie, but when he had gotte him to his Pallace, hee caused him to be beheaded, and then vniustlie invaded the kingdome of the East Angles, as is shewed in the raigne of the East Angles.

Holy Scrip-  
tures to be read  
in the Church.

The Lordes  
prayer & Crede  
in English.

The monastery  
of Crowland  
founded.

Segiswald by  
Tamworth.

749

Vita Albani.

He

He caused the reliques of S. Alban to be taken up, and put in a Shrine adorned with golde and precious stones, and builded there a Princely Monasterie, endowing the same with lands by his Charter, dated the yeere of Christ, 793. in the yeere of Offas raigne, 33. in the famous place called Celchyth, with the witnesse of himselfe, his sonne Egfride, 9. kings, 15. Bishops, 10. Dukes, &c.

S. Alban  
builded.

He founded the Abbey of Bath.

He translated the Archbishops Sea to Lichfield.

He made a Dike betwene Wales and the Kingdome of the Mercies, which ditch extendeth by South from the partes about Wysslow, over the mountains of Wales, and so North toward Flint, and under a hill of coale, even to the mouth of Dee, or the North Sea, which dike is yet to be seene, and manifestlie appeareth in diuers places. He raigned xxxix. yeeres, and died at May, and was buried in a Chappell which then stode on the banche of the River Use, without the towne of Bedforde. Which Chappell with the Sepulture of the king, the said River hath swallowed up, whose tombe of lead (as it were some phantastieall thing) appeareth often to them that seeke it not, but to them that seeke it (saith Rouse) it is insensible.

Egbertus or Ecfride his sonne raigned one yeere. Alcuine writ to Osbert of the Mercians, that the noble young Ecfride died not so soone for his owne faultes, but because his father was a great shedder of blood.

796

Kenulfus, Nephewe in the fifth degreé unto Penda, warred on the Kentish Saxons, punished their Countrey very sore, and caried away bound their king Egberthus, but not long after, when he had builded a church at Winchelscombe, on the day of the dedication thereof, he deliuered him, declaring a worthy example of clemencie. He founded the church of S. Ethelbert in Hereford, and raigned xxxiii. yeeres.

Flaccus Albinus.

796

W. Malmes.

Winchelscombe  
founded.

Bishops (as at  
Hereford  
founded.

820

Enelmus sonne to Egbertus a childe of seauen yeeres, was innocentlie slaine by his sister Quenda, whereby he obtained the name of a Martyre.

Ceolwulfus, brother to Kenulfus, raigned one yeere, and was expelled by Bernulfus.

820

Bernulfus in the third yeere of his raigne was overcome by Egbertus King of West Saxons at Elyndune.

823

Leucus after hee raigned two yeeres, was oppressed by the East Angles.

824

Wichlafus, being at the first subdued by Egberth, raigned xiii. yeeres, paying to him and his sonne a tribute.

826

Berthulfus raigned xiii. yeeres, in the same estate, till at the last he was chased beyond the Seas, by the sea-rovers of Denmarke.

829

W. Malmes.

Birdredus paying the Tribute, enjoyed the same twentie yeeres, and then he being deposed, and driven out of his Countrey, fled to Rome, and there was buried at the English Schole. Then that kingdome was by the Danes deliuered to Ceolwulfus, and in fewe yeeres after that, Alphred the Nephewe of Egberth gave it. So the kingdome of the Mercies fell awate in the yeere of Christ. 875.

852

Northum-

## Northumbers.



The first kingdome was of the Northumbers, which contained Lancashire, Dorsetshire, Cumberland, Westmerland, Northumberland. It had on the West the Sea, by South the River of Humber, and so downeward toward the West by the endes of the Shires of Nottingham and of Darby, unto the River of Merce, & hath the Diocesses of Dorke, Durham, and Carlisle.

At the beginning, it was devided into two kingdomes, Bernitia, and Deira. Bernitia stretched from Edenborough Frith to Tine: and Deira, from Tine to Humber, but these two were shortly united.

W. Malmes.

When Hengist had established himselfe in Kent, he sent his brother Otha, and his sonne Ebusam to possesse the North partes of Brytaine, where many times they put the men of that prouince to flight, and for the space of ninetie nine yeres, they and their successours ascribed to themselves the names of Dukes, and bare themselves vnder the kingdome of Kent, but in the yere of Christ. 547. the yere after Hengistes death 60. that Dukedome was changed into a kingdome.

547

Ida, the ninth from Beldegus, and the tenth from Wodden, continued rliii. yeres in the kingdome of Deires.

559

Alla his successor of the same kindred, but by another line, strongly advanced his kingdome x. yeres.

In his time, children of Northumberland were caried to bee solde in the Market at Rome, where when the Citizens beheld them, and wondred at their comelienesse and beautie of face, amongst other, Gregory the Archdeacon of the Apostolicall seate being one, asked of what Nation they were, unto whome it was answered, that they were the children of English men, of the prouince of Deires, and subiect to Alla their king, but were Paimims, whereunto Gregory said, they shall be taught to sing Alleluia there, during the raigne of Alla ouer the Deires.

¶ Adda the eldest sonne of Ida raigned ouer the Bernitians vii. yeres:

¶ Elappea siue yeres:

¶ Theodwald one yere:

¶ Fræthulfe seuen yeres:

¶ Theodrike seuen yeres:

¶ Aethelfride two yeres, and all in the life of Bernitians.

582

W. Malmes.

Aethelrike, the sonne of Ida, raigned in both prouinces of Deirie and Bernicia siue yeres.

587

Marianus.  
Floriacenfis.

Ethelfride, brother to Ethelricus, made greater spoile of the Brytaines, then all the kings of the Angles, and vnpeopled and subdued more of their Countries, and made the same tributary and habitable for Englishmen: wherefore Aadan king of the Scots being greatly moued with this happie successe came against him with a mighty army, but was overcome and put to flight of a few Saxons, which battell was fought by Ethelfrich, in a place called Degfastan,



fallen, in the xi. yere of his raigne, and in the first yere of Phocas the Emperour, which was the yere of Christ, 603.

This king also not long after this time, leuyed a newe power, and according as Augustine the Archbyschop of Canterburie had before spoken, marched toward the Citie of Legions, which of the Bytaines is called Cairlegion, and there first slew 1200. Monks, assembled to make prayer unto God, for the good successe of their Souldiours in the battaile: and afterwarde he ouerthrew the whole power of the Bytaines host. He was slaine by Redwald king of the East Angles in a battaile nere vnto the Riner which is called Zole, in the yere of Christ 616. when he had reigned xxviii. yeres.

Edwyne succeeded Ethelfride, and dyoue out the seuen sonnes of king Ethelfride.

In Anno 626. Paulinus being the thirde Byschoppe of Rochester, was constituted by Iustus then Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, to be Byschoppe ouer the Northumbers, and sent by Eadbald to Edwyne the king of that nation, with his wife, being the daughter of king Ethelbert, and sister of the said king Eadbald.

A certaine desperate fellow, named Eomer, was sent vnto king Edwyne, by Guicheline king of the West Saxons, who came vnto him on Easter daye, and hauing a naked weapon vnder his garment, assailed the king, but Lilla his seruaunt thrust himselfe before the stroke, yet notwithstanding the king was with that stroke wounded through the bodie of his faithfull seruant.

The same night the Q. his wife was deliuered of a daughter, which vppon Whitsonday next after, was the first that was baptized of Paulinus the Byschop, and named Eanfleda.

In the yere of Christ 628. Edwyne the most mightie king of the Northumbers, and his people, receiued the word of God, at the preaching of Paulinus the Byschop: this was done in the xi. yere of his raigne, and in the 230. yere after the arrivall of the Angles in Bytaine.

Edwyne gaue vnto Paulinus a Byschoppes See in the Citie of Yorke, and began the Cathedraall Church of S. Peter there, which Church was after finished by king Oswald his successor, after this, in encreasing of the Christian faith and heauenlie kingdome, his earthlie possessions did wonderfullie encrease, for he first of all the Angles brought Bytaine whollie vnder his subiection, sauing the kingdome of Kent.

Edwyne in the 17. yere of his raigne, and the 48. of his age, was slaine in a battaile which he fought at Headsfelde, with the most valiant Paganim Penda king of the Mercies, and Ceadwalla king of the Bytaines. Paulinus the Byschoppe builded the great Church at Lincolne. In the raigne of king Edwyne, such was the peace and tranquillitie through all Bytaine, which waite soener king Edwines dominions lay, that a weake woman might haue walked with her new borne babe ouer all the Island without anye damage. Moreover for the refreshing of waifaring men, he ordained Cups of yron or brasle, to be fastned by such cleare Welles and Fountaines as did runne by the waies side,

617

First Christian  
king of Northumberland.  
Marcanus.  
Floriscen. W.

Cathedraall  
Church of  
Yorke founded.

Lincolne Church  
founded.  
Bede.

Cups of brasle  
by the waies  
side.

which

which cuppes no man durst touch further then to his owne present vse and necessitie, for the loue and good will they bare to their Prince, who was for the time of his raigne so honoured and loued, that the triumphant banners were borne before him, not in warre onely, but in peace to, where soeuer he went abroad.

After the death of Edwine, the kingdome of Northumberland was againe diuided.

633 **O** Sriche sonne of Elfrike, who was Edwines vnckle, succeeded in the gouernance of Deira. And Eanfride the son of Ethelfride, ruled the Bernicians: but both these forsaking the Christian profession, wherein they were instructed, yielded themselves to be defiled with the filth of Idolatry: but this Apostasie was reueaged by Cedwall king of the Brytaines, who slew them both, & with tragicall slaughter spoiled Northumberland.

634 **O** Swald brother to Eanfride, then gouerned this kingdome, who with a small armie ouercame the Brytaines, and slew Cedwall their king at Deniscburne. He sent for Aidan a Scot to aduance the Christian Religion among his people, assigning to him the Isle of Lindisfarne or holie Island, for his Sea. He greatly enlarged his kingdome, reconciled the Deirians and Bernicians, which did deadly hate one another: And when he had reigned vntill pæres, was slaine in a cruell battell at Maserfelde, by Penda king of Mercia, and canonized a Saint.

642 **O** Swine brother to Oswald, succeeded: he buried the head and armes of Oswald, which Penda commended to be hanged vpon poles. His gouernment was greatly disquieted by inuasion of the Mercians, rebellion of his owne son Aelfride, and insurrection of Adilwald sonne to Oswald. He murdered Oswy, the sonne of Ofrike, who ruled Deira, being traitterously deliuered vnto him at Ingethling, where afterward a Monasterie was created. But at length he deliuered his Countrey from foraine inuasion, banquished the Mercians with Penda in a fought fielde, nere the riuer Felnet, brought them to his subiection, and caused them to be instructed in the Christian faith.

He builded a Church among the Mercians called Lichfelde, and procured the same to be a Bishops see, in Anno, 657.

Duina was first Bishop there of Mercia, and also of Lindesierne: for there were then so fewe Priests, that one Bishoppe was compelled to gouerne two Provinces. King Oswine ended his life quietly, when he had reigned xxxij. pæres.

670 **E** Ghide his lawefull sonne, then inherited Northumberland: he deposed Wilfride of the Bishopricke, and appointed two Bishops ouer the Northumbers. Mildred, otherwise called Eheldred, his wife would by no meanes accompany with her husband, but continued a Virgine, and after he had bin married twelue pæres, tooke at the handes of Wilfride the batle and habite of a Nunne, and built the Monasterie of Ely, where she was Abbesse.

Egfride her husband fought a battell with Edilfride king of Mercia, but after they were reconciled by Theodore the Bishop. Then turning his power against Ireland, he sent Berce thither, who miserably destroyed the selp people.

Liber Lichfield.  
T. Rudburne.

Lichfelde  
Church a Bishops  
see founded.

ple. But the yere following, he marched against the Pides contrarie to the good counseile of S. Cuthbert, whom hee made Bishop) & was slaine by them in an ambush, in a place called Neetanmere, when he had reigned xv. yeres, and was buried in S. Columbes Island.

**A**lfride, bastard sonne of Oswine, succeeded after his brother Egfride. Hee did repaire the decayed state of Northumberland, but could not recover all that Pides, Scots, and Brittaines toke from the Northumbers at the death of his brother. He reigned xix. yeres. 685

**O**sfred his sonne, a child of eight yeres succeeded, who, when he had wickedly reigned xi. yeres, was murdered by his kinsmen Kenred and Osricke. Kenred, when he had slaine Osfred, ruled Northumberland two yeres. 704

**O**sricke obtained the kingdome after xi. yeres, and elected Ceolnolph brother of Kenred to be his successor. 715

**C**eolnolph reigned in this province with great pietie, and victorie blisse yeres, and then forsooke the state of a king, and toke the habite of a Monk in the holie Island. 728

Benedict, who first brought Masons, Painting, and Glasing into this Realme to the Saxons, flourished at this time. Beda also that famous learned man, lived at this time, who dedicated his historie of the Church of England to the forenamed Ceolnolph. Glasing brought among the Saxons. Beda famous.

**E**gbert, cousin germane to Ceolnolph, reigned in Northumberland twenty yeres peaceably, and then foraking the worlde, entered into Keligion, and became a Monk: his brother bearing the same name, was Archbishop of York, which See he greatly advanced, and founded there a most worthy Librarie, replenished with all good Authors. 736 W. Malmes. Librarie at York.

**O**swulf succeeded his father, who was slaine by the people in the first yere of his reigne. 757

**M**ollo then toke the regiment, and after xi. yeres was traiterously murdered by Alcred. 758

**A**lcred reigned after him xi. yeres, and was enforced by the people to leaue the Countrey. 769

**A**thelred or Etheldred the sonne of Mollo, was advanced to the regiment of Northumberland by the people, and the fifth yere after was by them deprived. 780

**A**lfswold then was proclaymed king of Northumberland, and when hee had reigned xi. yeres, was slaine by his subjects: he lieth buried at Haulstald. 785

**O**srede, the sonne of Aclerede then succeeded, but the first yere he was deprived. 796

**A**thelred or Etheldred, who was before deposed, now recovered the kingdome, and when he had ruled foure yeres, was also miserably slaine. After his death, this kingdome decayed, and was pittifullly ransacked by ciuill scottion, and foraine inuasions, for the space of 30. yeres, in which space, there ruled here without title of kings.

¶ Eardulfe,

¶ Alfswold,

¶ Alfwold,  
 ¶ Eandred,  
 ¶ Eihelred,  
 ¶ Readulfe,

¶ Osbert, which two last, to wit, Readulfe, and Osbert, were slaine at Worke, by the Danes, in a place yet to this daie called Elle Crofte, because Elle was there also slaine.

This Osbert ransished a Ladie of his Countrey, wise to Bernebokard, in reuenge whereof, the same Bernebokard fleeing into Denmarke, returned againe with the Danes Hinguar and Hubba, and arrived in holy Island, and so came to Worke, and there slew king Osbright, and Elle the newe elected king of Northumberland.

800 ¶ Egbert king of the West Saxons, then obtained Northumberland.

**R**icfy then usurped it, and after him Cuthred, from whome Sircicke the Dane got it, vnto whome king Achelstane the Monarch gaue his daughter in marriage.

T. Oterborne,  
 John Currar.

Thus ended the race of the kings of Northumberland, & was since counted an Earldome, the succession of the Carles whereof set downe by T. Oterborne, I ouerpasse for breuitie, as also the names of Castles & Forts, in the said county, with the owners, set downe by John Currar, to the number of 78.

#### West Saxons.



The seauenth kingdome was of the West Saxons, which contained the Countreies of Barkeshire, South-hampton, Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, Somersetshire, Devonshire, and Cornwall, and hath Diocesses, Bath and Wells, Sarisburie, and Excester: hauing on the East side Southser, on the North side Thames, on the South and the West the Sea Ocean.

This kingdome, although it toke beginning long after the first comming of the Saxons, yet the same endured longest, and overcoming all the other kingdomes, brought them againe to one Monarchy.

**C**erdic, the tenth from Woden, with his sonne Kenrike, and other Saxons in five shippes, in Anno Christi, 499. landed in Bytaine, at a place called Cerdikeshore, and slew Natanleod king of the Bytaines, and slew thousand men, of whose name the Countrey as farre as Cerdikeshord, was called by the name of Natanleod. From thenceforth hee kept the Bytaines in great quiet, for they thought not god to stirre, where they wanted hope to preuaile.

519

**C**erdike and Kenrike beganne to raigne as kinges, and the same yere they fought with the Bytaines in a place called Cerdikeshorde, and departed vanquishers.

After that, they fought with the Bytaines in a place called Cerdikhege. These two kings to wit, the father and the sonne, toke the Isle of Wight, and gaue



gave the same to their Nephewes, Stufte and Withgare, and ſetwe the Byptains in a place called Withgarberg. He raigned 17. yeres. Withgare the Nephew of Cerdic was king of the Isle of Wight, and was buried at Withgarberg, or the Citie of Withgar in the Isle of Wight.

**K**enrike the son of Cerdic fought with the Byptaines at Searesberige, and afterwards at Beranbrige, and at both times put them to flight, and raigned 22. yeres. 526

**C**aulne the son of Kenrike tooke upon him the kingdome of the West Saxons. 560

In the beginning of his raigne he discomfited Ethelbert king of Kent, and ſetwe his 2. Dukes, Oslawe & Cnebban at Wibbandune. Afterward his brother Cutholfe vanquished the Byptains at Bedford, and wan from them the towne of Liganburge, Egelsburge, Wenſington, and Egneſham.

Liganburge.

Sixte yeres after, Ceaulin ſlew 3. kings of the Byptaines, Commeaile, Condidan, and Fariemeile, at Deorham, and tooke thre Citieſ from them, Gloceſter, Cirenceſter, and Bathanceſter.

After he fought with the Byptains at Fethanleah, in which he had the victorie, but loſt his ſonne Cutha: for now his fortune changed, and when hee had raigned 33. yeres, he was overcome at Wodnesbeoſhe, or Wannes ditch in Wilthire, and expelled out of his kingdome by the Byptains, by the meanes of Cealrike his brother Cuthas ſonne, that now rebelled againſt him, and expelled him the kingdome, when he had raigned 33. yeres.

Tho. Redborne  
Leyland,

Cealrike the ſonne of Cutholfe ruled the West Saxons 5. yeres.

**C**eolnulf ſonne of Cutha before named ſucceeded, who had continuall wars either with the Engliſhmen, with the Byptains, with the Scots, or with the Brits, and laſtly moved war againſt the South Saxons, and there died, when he had raigned 14. yeres.

591

598

**K**inegilſus the ſonne of Cealrike ſucceeded. He brought his hoſt againſt the Byptains into Beandune, and there ſlew of them 2046.

611

He alſo fought with Penda king of Mercians nere unto Cirenceſter, and after made peace with him.

Marian.  
Floria. Wigor.  
Cirenceſter baptiſ.  
720.

And ſhortly after in the yere of Chriſt ſix hundred thirty five, by the preaching of Berinus, king Kinegilſus, and all his people receyved the Chriſtian faith, to whome king Oſwald was Godfather at the Font, of which kinges, the ſayde Berinus had graunted to him the Citie of Dorcheſter, & builded there an houſe of Canons for his Biſhoppes ſee. Kenegilſus raigned ſanen and twenty yeres.

Vita Berini.

Dorcheſter a  
Biſhops ſee.

**G**uicheline the ſonne of Kinegilſus was baptizd by Berinus the Biſhoppe, in the Citie of Dorcheſter, and deceaſed the ſame yere.

638

**C**berinus the ſonne of king Guicheline, was baptizd at Dorcheſter, by Berinus the Biſhop, who was his Godfather at the font. He raigned liii. yeres. About this time Honorius Archbiſhoppe of Canterburie deuised his prouince into pariſhes.

639

**K**ennewalcus the ſon of king Kenegilſus, tooke on him the kingdome of the West Saxons.

643

De

Winchester  
a Bishops see.  
Bathelburg  
builted.  
Vera Adelm.

He founded the Cathedral Church in Winchester, placing there a Bp.  
Thops Sea.

He gave Meydulfus burgh to Aldelmus the Abbot, there to build a Monastery.  
Afterward being infested with warres by Penda King of the Mercians, be-  
cause he had forsaken his wife, sister of the said Penda, was by him driven out  
of his kingdome, and fled to Anna king of the East Angles, where he was bap-  
tized of Bishop Felix, and after was restored to his kingdome by the helpe of  
the forenamed Anna. He reigned xxx. yeres. After whom Quene Sexburgeo  
his wife gouerned a while. She founded a Monasterie of Nunnes in the Isle  
of Shepey, and became her selfe a Nunne, and after Abbess of Cely.

673 **E**lscwinus Nephew to Kinegillus succeeded, hee fought a battaile against  
Wulfere king of Mercia, in a place called Bidanheafod. He reigned two  
yeres.

676 **K**eenewinus, sonne to Kinegillus, chased the Bytains euen to the sea shore,  
and reigned ix. yeres.

685 **C**eadwalla, Nephew to Ceauline succeeded in the kingdome.

Marianus. He selfe Berthune Duke of the South Saxons, and brought that prouince  
vnder grieuous bondage.

After that, he & his brother Mull wasted Kent, and subdued the Isle of Wight,  
which till that time was giuen to Idolatry, wherof he purged them, giuing the  
fourth part thereof to Bishop Wilfride, who appointed Preachers to conuert the  
people of that Isle to Christianitie. Ceadwalla once againe spolling the coun-  
treys of Kent, his brother Moll, and xii. of his knightes were slaine by fire cast  
vpon them, after which time, euen before he was baptized, hee gaue for the  
tenth to God all the pray and spoiles he had gotten to his owne vse: in whome  
(saith Malmesbury) although we praise his affection, we allow not the example:  
for it is written, that who so offereth the sacrifice of poye folkes god, doth as it  
were sacrifice the sonne in the sight of his father.

W. Malmesbury

After this he went to Rome, when Sergius was Pope, he was there baptized  
on Easter Euen, the yere after Christs birth, 689. and falling sicke he died on  
the 20. day of Aprill, and was buried honorably in S. Peters Church, with an  
Epitaph in Latine verse, and another in Latine prose, which made be Engli-  
shed thus.

Ceadwalla bu-  
ried at Rome.

Here Ceadwall is buried, otherwise named Peter, king of the West Sax-  
ons, who died the 20. of Aprill in the second indiction, and liued 30. yeres, or  
thereabouts, when that noble and mightie Prince Iustinian was Emperour of  
Rome, and had reigned 4. yeres in the Empire, and Sergius a true paterne of  
the Apostles, had late 2. yeres in Peters seate.

687 **H**ee reigned among the West Saxons, a noble man, of great power & wile-  
dome, and therewith balliant and hardie, in seates of armes very expert: he  
maintained such warre against the Kentish Saxons, that he constrained them  
to seke and intreat meanes of peace, giuing to him for the same great gifts  
30000. Mancas (pieces of gold so named.)

After.

Floriacensis.

This hee was the sonne of Kenred, the sonne of Ceadwolde, brother to Keada-  
wold, and sonne to Chenling, sonne of Kenri, sonne of Cirdic, the first king of the

the West Saxons. This man was more for his industrie and naturall prowesse, then for his succession of the right line, called to be King. He was a Patroner of strength and manlinesse, an image of wisdom, and his like was of no man knowne at that time, for religion in profession, and framing himselfe thereafter in his living.

About the 26. yere of his raigne he fought a great battell against Celred king of Mercia, at Wodnesburie. And the same yere he inuaded the South Saxons with a mightie armie, and slewe in battaile Anthon King of the South Saxons, and ioined that kingdome unto his. He builded a Colledge at Wells, dedicating it to the honour of God, and Saint Andrewe the Apostle, in the yere of Christ 704. which Church was since translated into a Bishopps See, by Kenulphus king of the West Saxons. He new builded the Abbey of Glaffenburie, in a fenny place out of the way, to the end the Monks mought to much the more giue their mindes to heavenly things, and chiefly vnto the contemplation meete for men of such profession; this was the fourth building of that Monasterie. Besides which the said king did also erect a Chappell of gold and siluer (to wit garnished) with ornaments and vessels likewise of gold and siluer, to the building of the which Chappell, he gaue 2640. pounds of siluer, and to the Altar, 264. pound of golde, a Chaleis with the pattern, tenn pound of gold, a Sencar eight pound, and twenty Pancas of gold, two Candlesticks, twelue pound and a halfe of siluer, a Litar for the Gospell booke twenty pound, and 60. Pancas of gold, vessels for water to the Altar, thirtene pound of golde, a Basen eight pound of gold, an holy water Bucket xx. pound of siluer, Images of our Lord, our Ladie, and the twelue Apostles 175. pound of siluer, and 28. pound of gold, a Pall for the Altar, and ornaments for the Monks, of gold and precious stones subtilly compacted, all which treasure he gaue to that Monasterie. In the yere of Christ, 705. Hedda Bishop of the West Saxons departed this life, after whose death, king Ine caused that bishopricke to be diuided into two parishes, the one to Winchester which he gaue to Daniel, the other, to wit Shireborne, was giuen to Aldethelme, where he ruled foure yeres.

Wodnesburie.

Colledge of Wells.

Glaffenburie new builded with a Chappell of gold and siluer.

Beale. Bishopricke at Shireborne.

Also Eadberte Abbot, was made Bishop of Selsey by Chichester.

This Ine king of the West Saxons, was the first that caused the mony called  $\text{p}$  Peter pence to be paid to Rome, & this was called the kings almes, & was leuted in this maner, enery man that had 30. pennisworth of good of one maner cattel in theire house of their owne proper, should giue a peny at Lammas yere. And when he had gouerned the West Saxons by  $\text{p}$  space of 37. yeres, by the earnest labor of his wife Ethelburge, he left this worldly kingdome to his cousin Ethelard, and went to Rome, and there ended his life in pious estate.

Ethelard kinsman on the fathers side to Ine, succeeded in the kingdome, notwithstanding Oswald a yong man of the kings blood did disturbe the beginning of his raigne, for he stirred by rebellion among the inhabitants, but not long after, he died, and then Ethelard raigned quietly vntill. yeres.

Chrede his kinsman made warre on Ethelwald king of Mercia against the Byptaines, and had of them the victorie.

Bishopricke at Selsey or Chichester. Peter pence paid, and how leuted.

Blasing Stars.

In his time there appeared 2. blasing Stars, casting as it were burning brands towards the North. He reigned xvi. yeres.

Antiqui. Britan.  
Ecclesi.  
Buriall in  
Churchyards.

The Englishmen buried not the bodies of their dead in Cities, untill the time of Cuthbert Archbyschop of Canterburie, who procured of the Pope that in Cities there shoulde bee appointed Churchyards, for Honorius when hee deuided his prouince into parishes, appointed not to them Churchyardes for buriall.

757  
W. Malm.  
Sca. Cro.

Sigebert was king of the West Saxons. He was cruell and tyzannous towards his Subjects, and changed auncient Lawes and Customes after his owne lust and pleasure, and because a certayne Noble Man some deale sharpe aduertised him to chaunge his manners, hee put him to cruell death; and for so much as hee continued in his malice, and would not amend, hee was depriued of all kinglie authoritie, and lastlie as a person forlorne, wandring in woods, and hiding himselfe in caues of wild beasts, he was slaine in Andreds Walde by a Swineheard, whose Lord & master called Cumbra, he had wrongfully put to death, when he had not raigned one yere.

A tyrant came  
to a miserable  
end, and shame-  
full death.

757

**K**Enulphus of the blood of Cerdicus, appeased certaine murmours and grudges that were amongst the people, for the deposing of his predecessour Sigebert.

Epishops sea at  
Wicks founded.

He founded the Cathedrall Church of Wicks. As he haunted a woman which he kept at Herton, he was slaine by the treason of one Olio, the kinsman of Sigebert late king, when he had raigned nine and twentie yeres, and was buried at Winchester.

786

**B**rihticus of the blood of Cerdicus, was made king of West Saxons, a man more desirous of peace then of warre.

He married Eadburga the daughter of Offa king of Mercia, by whose power hee expelled Egbert, that was an vnder king in the Lordship of the West Saxons.

Blood rayned.

In his time it rayned blood, which falling on mens clothes, appeared like Crosses.

The Danes  
first aertued in  
this land.  
Marianus.

In An. 800. the Danes arrived in the Ile called Portland, but by the puissance of Brihticus, and other kinges of the Saxons, they were overcome at Teignemouth, driven backe, and compelled to auaide the land.

The king poisoned  
by his wife.

Brihticus was poisoned by his wife Ethelburga, when hee had rayned 17. yeres, and was buried at Warham. For this dede the Nobles ordained that from thenceforth the kings wives shoul not be called Quænes, nor suffered to sit with them in place of estate.

After a wicked  
life followed a  
miserable end  
to Quene Ead-  
burga.  
Houegem.

Eadburge with infinite treasure fledde into France, where offering a great portion of her golde to king Charles of France, hee sayde vnto her, chouse Eadburge whome thou wilt haue to thy husbance, mee or my sonne: and shee answered, if chouse be graunted me, I chouse your sonne, because he is yonger then you: then (quoth Charles) if thou hadst chousen me, thou shouldest haue had my sonne, but because thou hast chousen my sonne, thou shalt haue neither him nor me: and then gaue to her a Monasterie, wherein she professed her selfe a Nunne, & became there Abbesse a few yeres, but afterwards committing a  
bultery



duftery with a lay man, and cast out of the Monastery, she ended her life in poverty and miserie, as of many that haue seene her we heard, saith mine Author; Asserius,

**E**gbrichus obtained the gouernement of the West Saxons. Hee tamed the Welchmen, banquished Bertulphus king of the Mercians at Hellenbune, and subdued to his obeyfance the Kentish Saxons, East Saxons, and Northumbers. He caused the brazen Image of Cadwaline king of the Brytains to be thowne dolone, and this land no more to bee called Brytaine, but Angla or England. He was crownded at Winchester.

In the 33. yere of his raigne the Danes arrived at Lindesferne, and fought with the Englishmen at Carham, where two Bishops, two Earles, & a great number of the English people were slaine. Two yeres after the Danes arrived in West Wales, where Egbricht overcame them at Pengisfendon. In Anno 832. the Danes spoyled the Isle of Shepey in Kent, and yet were they expelled out of the Isle of Thanet. Hee raigned ouer the most part of England the space of seuen and thirtie yeres and seuen monethes, and was buried at Winchester.

**A**ethelulfus the sonne of Egbrichus, late Bishop of Winchester, (sayeth John Brompton Abbot of Iaruaux) began his raigne ouer the most part of England. He tooke to wife Osburge his Butlers daughter, and after her Ludich, daughter to the king of France, and had by his first wife 4. sonnes, which were kings after him.

In his time there came a great army of the Pagan Danes with 350. ships into the mouth of Thamis, and so to London, spoyled it, and put to flight Beorhtulf King of Mercia, with all his power which came to bid them battaile: Then the Danes went with their armie into Southy, where Adhelulfus with his sonne Adhelbald, and a great armie came against the foresayde Danes, and at a place called Aolea they fought a cruell battell, where in the most part of the Danes were slaine.

The same yere Adhelfane the sonne of Adhelfus, and Calchere the Earle slew a great army of the Pagans at Sandwich in Kent, and tooke nine of their shippes.

Adhelulfus sent his sonne Alfride to Rome with a great number of noble men and other, at which time Pope Leo confirmed the sayd Alfride, and tooke him to his son by adoption, and also consecrated him king.

This Adhelulfus did make the tenth part of his kingdome free from tribute and seruice to the king, and gaue it to them that did serue Christ in the Church: and the same yere hee went to Rome, where hee repayed the English Schoole, which was first founded by Offa king of the Mercies. He confirmed that graunt of the Peter Pence to Rome, and as hee returned home through France, he tooke to wife Ludich, the daughter of Charles the bald king of France.

In the meane season, his Sonne Adhelbald rebelling, usurped the kingdome, so that when Adhelulfus returned, hee was forced to deuide the kingdome, and to take the woyle part. Hee raigned eightene yeres, and was

After.

802

W. Malm.

Scol. cron.

Brytaine first named England.

Danes arrived here.

Sca. cron.

839

W. Malmes.

I. Brompton.

Aredus Riual. Danes spolie London.

Sca. Cro.

Tenth giuen to the Church by king Adhelulfus.

English schoole at Rome repayed.

buried at Winchester, where sometime he had bene Bysshoppe (elected belike) but was after the decease of his father, of necessity taken from thence & made king.

857  
Flori. Wigor.

**A** Dhelbald reigned after his father: against God, and the wretchedness of Chyristianitie, yea, and contrarie to the custome of all Pagans, he presumed to his fathers marriage bedde, and with great infamie, married Iudith the French kinges daughter. He reigned after his father li. yeres, and was buried at Shirborne.

860  
Danes invade  
and spoile Win-  
chester.

**A** Thelbricke, brother to Athelbald, took under his dominion Kent, Southrey and Suffer.

In this time, the great Armie of the Pagans invaded and spoiled the Citie of Winchester, who when they returned with a great preie, towardes their Ships, Osike Earle of Hampton, and his folke, and Adhelulfus the Earle with Barkeshire men, met them, and farre from any Towne they foined battle, where the Pagans were slaine in everie corner, and the Chyistians kept the field.

Danes make a  
league, and  
breake it.

The Normans and Danes made a firme league with the Kentishmen, who promised them monie to keepe the league, but notwithstanding the Pagans brake pyllie out of their Castels by night, and spoiled all the East partes of Kent.

866

Ingulphus.

Humberstane.  
The Abbeys  
of Bardney,  
Croyland, Pe-  
terborough, and  
other spoiled.

Athelbrict reigned five yeres, and was buried at Shirborne. Etheldred brother to Adhelbrict, received the kingdome of the West Saxons. In the first yere of his raigne, a great Haup of Pagans came into England, and remained all the winter in the kingdome of East England.

The Pagans departed out of Northumberland, came to Nottingham, and there wintered, but Beorde gathering a great armie against them, strengthened besides with Etheldreds power king of the West Saxons, forced them to leave Nottingham, and to go back againe to Forke, where remaining til winter was passed, they then passed over by Boate into Lindsey, and coming by to Humberstane, spoiled the whole Countrey, they destroyed the most famous and auncient Monasterie of Bardney, slaying all the Monkes without mercie, they ranging the Countrey, slew the Abbot and Monkes of Croyland, and fiered their Church, with the houses belonging to the Monasterie. At Medishamstede or Peterborough, they made the like slaughter, hanoche, and spoile, and so proceeding toward Huntingdon, praying and spoling the Countrey, euen unto Grantbridgeshire, and to the house of Funs in the Isle of Ely, where they murdered all, as well women as men. Thus entering into East Angle, they slew the most valiant Earle Walketulus, and all his companie that resisted. The king also of the same prouince, holie Edmond they took, bound him to a stake, shotte him full of Arrowes, and strake off his head, by meanes whereof they possessed all east England, and sojourned there all the winter.

The yere 871. the said army of the Danes came to Reading a towne of the kinges situate on the South side of the Riuer Thamis in Barkeshire, and there two of their Carles with a great power rode forth to spoyle the Coun-  
tris,

trie, in the meane time, the other cast a trench betwene the Thamis and Cinnun or Kynet, on the right side of the same Tolone, with whom Ethelwolfe Earle of Warkeſhire did meete in a place called Engleſfield, (or field of the Engliſhmen) where one of the Carles being ſlaine, and the reſt chaſed awaie, the Chriſtians obtained the victorie.

The Chriſtians within 4. daies fought a battell with the Paganes, in Aſſendune, but the Paganes divided themſelves into two battells, for then they had two kings, which when the Chriſtians ſaw, they likewiſe divided their army into two companies.

It was determined that king Ethelred with his battell, ſhoulde go againſt the two Pagan kings with their battell, and that his brother Aelfred with his armie ſhould ſet on al the Pagan dakes and their army. All things thus ordered, when the king tarried long in his prayer, and the Paganes being readie prepared, came to Chipenbane where the battell was pitched, Aelfred ſeeing hee muſt either retire, or ſet on his enemies beſore his brother did come, he ſtraightwaies ſet upon them, though the place of battell was unequal, for the Pagans had gotten the higher ground, and the Chriſtians brought their battell from the valley. There was in that place one onellie thorne tree, verie ſhort, about which tree the battells met and joined, where when they had a long time fought, Hubba one of the kings, 5. Carles, and many thouſands mo of the Paganes being ſlaine, the other were chaſed.

A great heape of ſtones was laide copped by where Hubba was buried, and the place called Hubbeſtow.

This being done, king Etheldred and his brother Aelfred together after gathered their power againe to fight with the Pagans at Baſing, where after a long and ſore battayle, the Paganes had the victorie.

After this battayle, came another armie of Paganes from beyond Seas, and loyned with the firſt.

When king Etheldred had reigned 6. yeeres, he was ſlaine of the Paganes at Whittingham, & buried in the monaſtery of Minburne, with this Epitaph:

*In hoc loco quieſcit corpus ſancti Etheldredi regis Weſt Saxonum martyris, qui Anno Domini. 872. 23. die Aprilis, per manus Dacorum Paganorum occubuit.*  
His armes a croſſe Florie.

An. 870. Saint Ebbe Abbeſſe of Coldeſingham, 61 miles North from Berwick, cut off her noſe and upper lip, and perſwaded all her ſiſters to do the like, that they being odible to the Danes, might the better keepe their Virginitie, in deſpite where of the Danes burned the Abbey, and the Nunns therein.

Aelfred being in Warkeſhire, at a village called Wanting, the 4. ſon of Aethelwolfe, receyved the gouvernement of the whole Realme, and within one moneth after, with a very ſmall number fought a ſharpe battell againſt the whole armie of the Paganes, in a place called Wilton (which lyeth on the Southſide of the River Wiſſy, of which River the whole ſhire taketh his name) and after they had fought a great part of the daie, the Pagans fledde, but ſeeing the ſeiveneſſe of them that purſued, they ſet themſelves in battaile againe, and got the field.

Battle at Aſſendune.

Battle at Chipenbane, Sea. Cro.

Hubbeſtow. Sea. Cro.

Paganes vanquiſhed.

Sea. cron. Marianus Scotus

Flores Hiftoriar. Chaffity beſore bragie preferred, a rare example.

872 Marianus Scotus Florentii. Cro. Aſſer. Speculum Hiſt. Wilthire. Ricardus Circi ceſtrenſis.

The West Saxons made a league with the Pagans, upon condition they should depart out of their Countrey.

The next yere they wintered at London, & made league with the Mercies.

The next yere they wintered at Lindeſey, which was in the kingdome of Northumberland.

Burgoredus  
Brath.

The next yere, at Ripendune: they constrained Burgoredus king of Mercies, to flee beyond the seas, who went to Rome, where he died, and was buried in the ſchole of the Saxons.

The Pagans ſubduing the whole kingdome of the Mercies, which they committed to Ceonulfus: The next yere one part of 5 Pagans wintered in Northumberland neere to the River Tine, ſubdued the whole Countrey: the other part went with Guthram, Osketellus, and Amandus, three kings of the Pagans, to Grantbridge, and wintered there.

Exceſter.

The yere ſollowing, the Pagans going from Cambridge in the night, entered the Caſtel of Warham, where there was a Monaſterie of Nuns, ſituate betwene two rivers Fraſe and Trent, in the Countrey called in the Saxon Thornſeta, a moſt ſure ſeat, except the Weſt onely, where it ioyneth to the land, with whom king Aelfrede made a league that they ſhould depart his kingdome, but contrary to their othe, they rode into Deuonſhire, to Exceſter, and there wintered.

Honkes and  
other religious  
people burnt.

Hinguar and Halfdene with 23. ſhips, came out of Northwales, where they had wintered, and like fierce Wolves had ſhed much Chriſtian blood: ſetting fire to diuers Abbeies, and made them equall with the ground, neuer kingdome or countrey ſuffered greater calamity, at the hands of any nation, then did the Engliſh, eſpecially the Honkes and religious women, for them they burnt in their houſes, or otherwiſe tormented them to death.

The next yere 120. of the Pagans ſhips were drowned at Suanaung: And king Aelfrede purſuing an armie that went by land to Exceſter, toke of them pledges, and alſo an oth to depart with all ſped.

Aſſer.  
Spe. Hiſto.  
Ri. Cirea.

In the yere ſollowing the Danes came to Chippingham, a mannoz of the kings, ſituate on the left ſide of Wilthire, and there wintered, compelling many of the Weſt Saxons to leaue their Countrey and to go beyonde the ſeas: the reſt that remained they ſubdued. King Aelfrede himſelfe was oft times brought into ſuch miſery, that none of his people knew where he was become. On a time being forced to hide himſelfe with a Cowheard in Somerſetthire, as he ſate by the fire, preparing his bowe and ſhaftes, the Cowhardes wiſe baking bread on the coales, threw the kings bowe and ſhaftes aſide, and ſaid, thou fellow why doeſt thou not turne the bread which thou ſeeſt burne, thou art glad to eate it ere it be halfe baked. This woman thought not that it had bin king Aelfred, who had made ſo manie battels againſt the Danes, and gotten ſo manie victories. For God did not onely vouchſafe to giue him victorie ouer his enemies, but alſo to be wearied of them in the ſight of his owne people, to the end he ſhould know there is one God of all, to whome all knees ſhall bow, and in whoſe handes the hearts of kings conſiſteth. The brother of Hinguar and of Healden, who had wintered in Mercia, and had made great ſlaughter  
of



of the Christians, sayled with 23. ships into Deuonshire, where doing great mischief, he and the most part of his people were slaine, the rest escaped by flying to their ships. In this battel among many rich spoiles was taken a banner or ensigne called Reafan, which among the Danes was had in great estimation, for that it was imbroidered by the three sisters of Hinguar and Hubba, the daughters of Lodbroke. King Aelfred made a castell in Aethelingei, from thence he went to Petram Egebrichti, which is on the East side of the chase called Sal nudum, in Latine *Silua magna*, the great wood: there met with him all the inhabitants of Hampshire, which when they sawe the king, reioyced as though he had been risen from death to life.

The ensigne of the Danes was a Raum. Alredus Riwall.

Aethelingei, the noble Island. Eabright's Mount.

The king with his armie went to Echandune & fought against the Pagans where he made great slaughter, and pursued the rest to their Castell, who after short daies desired peace, gaue pledges and toke oth to depart this realme: and Gythram their king receiued baptisme hard by Ethelesingcy, in a place called Alce, whom Aelfrede receiued to be his God-sonne.

Gythram king of Danes christened. Ethelesingcy.

Fulham. Marianus Scotus

In the yere 879. the Pagans went from Chipnan to Strencester, & there remained one yere after. The same yere a great army of Pagans came from beyond the Sea, and wintered at Fullanham hard by the Riuer of Chamis.

The next yere, the Pagans went from Cirestres to the East English, denuding that Countrey among them, and there inhabited. The Pagans that wintered at Fullanham, went into East France.

In the yere 885. an army of Pagans came into Kent, and besieged the citie of Rhoseceaster, which lyeth on the East side of the riuer Medowege, and beseye the gate of the same citie they made a strong Castell, but Aelfrede with a great army chased them to their ships.

Rochester besieged. The Castell builded. Midway.

The next yere Aelfrede restored, and honorably repayzed the Citie of London (after it had been among other Cities destroyed with fire, and the people killed by,) he made it habitable againe, and committed it to the custodie of his son in law Adhered Earle of the Mercies, vnto whom before he had giuen his daughter Ethelseda. And now vnto king Aelured, all the English, Mercians, Kentishmen, South and West Saxons (which before were in captiuitie vnder the Pagans) willingly came and submitted themselves.

Afferius. Floriacen. London builded and made habitable. Marianus Scotus

In the yere 890. Gythram the king of the Pagans (whose name in his baptism was changed to Aethelstane) died, he was buried in the Kings towne called Heableaga in Suffolke among the East English.

Hadley.

In the yere 892. the great armie of the Pagans, came from the East kingdome of France vnto Adbon, and from thence with 250. ships into Kent, arriving in the month of the Riuer Limene, which riuer runneth from the great wood, which is called Andreads Weald, from whose mouth foure miles into the same wood they drew their ships, where they destroyed a Castell, and fortified another more strong, in a place called Apultrens, now Apuldor. This wood was from the East to the West. 120. miles in length and more, in breadth 30 miles.

Andreads weald in Suffolke and Hampshire.

The same yere, Hastings came with 80. shippes into the mouth of Chamis, and made a strong towne called Spiddleton in the South side of the Chamis, and another on the North side, called Beandæte.

Spilton. Beandæte

The yere following, the Citie of Porke was taken by the Normans, but Seber the Bpshp, by Gods prouision escaped.

Fernham

The same yere also Aelfred fought against the Normans at Fernham, in Kent, in the parish of Aelfstord, where he slew them, wounded their king, and chased the remnant through the Thames into Caister, whereby many of them were drowned, they which escaped fled to an Island called Breklesep, situate in a streame of the Riuer Colne.

Aelfrede hearing that a great number of the Pagans were arrived at Exanceastre, he toke with him a great armie, and by battaile overcame, and chased them awaie.

Beauflete  
taken from the  
Pagans.

In the meane season Adhered Earle of the Mercies, and the Citizens of London with other came to Beauflete, & besieged the Castle of the Pagans, and brake into it, where they toke exceeding rich spoiles of gold, siluer, horses, and garments, among which was taken the wife of Hastings and his two sons, which were brought to London, and presented to the King, who commanded them to be restored againe. But Hastings came againe into Beauflete, and repayed the Castle, which they had broken downe. From thence hee went to Seabridge, and there builded a strong Castle: there was ioyned vnto him the armie that remained at Apulzane, and other that came from the East English, and from the Northumbers, who altogether spoiled and robbed, till they came to the banke of Seuerne, and there at Bultingatune, they made a strong towne, but by Adhered Earle of the Mercies, and other, they were besieged, and shortly through famine forced to come out, where many on both sides were slaine, but the Christians had the victorie.

Seabridge.  
Apulzane.

Florentil. Cro.  
Marianus Scorus

In: of Mercy.  
By, a river  
that bare ships  
vnto Caister.  
Asterus.

In the yere, 895. the Pagans wintered in a little Isle called Merfig, in the East part of Essex, situate in the sea, and y same yere they sayled by the Riuer of Thames, after by the Riuer of Algea, and twenty miles from London began to build a Fortresse. In the summer following, the Londoners and other neere adioynning, did take to destroy the fortresse of the Danes, but they being put to flight, king Aelfrede pitched a field not farre from the Citie, least the Pagans should take away the Harvest of the Countrey, and viewing the riuer one daie, perceived that the Chanell might bee in one place dammed by, that the Danes should not get out their shippes, he forthwith commanded on both sides of the riuer a damme to be cast, and deuised that riuer into 3. streames, so that where shippes before had sayled, now a small boate could scantily rowe, which when the Pagans perceived, they leauing their wines and ships, flee a soote to Quatbridge, and there building a fortresse, lodged there the Winter following, whose shippes the Londoners bying, some to London, the other they brake downe and destroyed.

Now called  
Cotmarbridge,  
or Cartwal-  
bridge.

Anno 897. the Pagans came from Quatbridge, part into East England, part into Northumberland: some got them shippes and sayled into France. After all these verations, by the cruell Danes committed, followed far greater, the space of thre yeres, by death of cattell, and mortalitie of men: twentie Danish shippes were taken being Pyrates, and the Pyrates slaine or hanged on the gallowes.

The

The victorious Prince, the studious provider for widowes, orphans and poore people, most perfect in Saxon Poetrie, most liberall, endued with wisdom, fortitude, iustice, and temperance, the most patient bearer of sickness, wherewith he was daily bered, a most discrete searcher of truth in executing judgement, a most vigilant and deuout Prince in the seruice of God, Alfrede, the xix. yere and first moneth of his raigne, departed this life, the xliiii. daie of October, and is buried at Winchester, in the new Monasterie of his foundation. He founded a Monastery of Monkes at Etwilngsey, and an other for Nunnes at Shaftesbury. He ordained the hundreds and tenths, which men call Centuaries and Cupings: hee sent for Grimbald to come into England, that by his aduise he might erect the studie of good learning, cleane decayed. By the counsell of Neotus, hee ordained common scholes of diuers Sciences in Orenford, and turned the Saxon lawes into English, with diuers other Bookes.

He established good lawes, by the which he brought so great a quietnesse to the country, that men might haue hangd golden bracelets and iewels, where the waies parted, and no man durst touch them for feare of the lawe. He caried euery the Psalter in his bosome, that when he had any leasure he might read it ouer with diligence.

He diuided the foure and twenty houres of the day & night into thre parts: he spent 8. houres in writing, reading, and praying: eight in prouision of his bodie: and eight in hearing and dispatching the matters of his subiects. Hee diuided his yereleu reuennues into two parts, and the first he diuided into thre: one part he gaue to his seruants, the second part to his workemen which were occupied in building, the third part to strangers. The second part of the whole he deuided into foure parts, the first part therof he gaue in almes to the poore, the second to Monasteries by him founded, the third to Scholes which hee had erected, and gathered of manie both noble mens and other mens sons of his nation, the fourth part he distributed to the next monasteries in al the English Saxon. Alfwido wiife to king Alfrede founded the Monasterie of Nunnes in Winchester.

Edward surnamed Senzor, the son of Aelfred, was crowned and annointed king at Kingstone, and shortly after Adhelwoldus, cousin germane unto king Edward, revolted and went to the army of the Pagans, who forthwith chose him to be their king in Northumberland.

Ioannes Leoaser in his thirde Booke of the description of Africa, writeth, that about this time (to say) about the yere of our Lord 905. the Englishmen at the perswasion of the Gothes, besieged the great Citie Argilla in Barbary, which the Affricans call Arella, being 70. miles distant from the streight of Marrocho southward, hoping thereby to withdraue the Saracens out of Europe, where they fought with so great courage and good successe, that they swanne the said towne, and so ransacked it with fire and sword, that scant one escaped there, and the Towne laie desolate and without inhabitantes for the space of thirtie yeres. Wee account this to haue happened in the aforesaid yere, because the Authour, after the fashion of the Saracens, doth reuerse it

Drake of king  
Alfred.

Alfred decreased

Floriensis.  
Reg. Hig.  
Scol. cron.  
Regist. Hyde.  
T. Rudburne.  
Chinre: sic  
in Erford.  
Marianus coram.  
Regist. Hyde.

Asterius.

Marianus Scorus.

900

Speculum histor.  
Rt. Ciren.  
Adhelwoldus  
revolted.

In. Leoaser.

to the 314. yere of Mahomets Hegira, which by conference of their places doeth seeme to beginne in the yere of our Lord 591. which number being added, doe bring forth 905.

Achelwoldus king of the Pagans brought a great army from Casser, and the East English, which robbed and spoiled through all Mercia, and the West countrey, untill they came to Cerikelade, and there went over the Thames, and took great spoiles about Wadney.

King Edward gathered an army and went toward the Danes, but while he tarried for his army out of Kent, Adhelwolfe king of the Danes came upon him with a great power, and bade him battell, wherein Cochrus, and Adhelwolfe kings of the Pagans were slaine.

Wodnesfeld  
in Stafford-  
shire Wilfrum  
Hampton.

In the yere 910. a battell was fought at Wodnesfeld, a mile north from Wolfrum Hampton in Staffordshire, where Cowilfus and Healdene kings of the Pagans, with many Carles and nobles were slaine, but of the common people innumerable.

Aethred Carle of the Mercies died, and king Edward took into his Dominion London and Drenford, and all the Countrey adioyning thereunto.

In the yere 913. by the kings commandement, at Hertford, betwixt the riuers of Omeran, Benefician, and Legian, in the north side a Citie is builded.

Hokenorton.

In the yere 914. the Pagans of Northumberland, and Leicestershire, in the countie of Dorsete took spoiles, and in the kings towne called Hokenorton, and in many other places they slewe many people, and returned home againe: another army of the Danes, being horsemen, were sent into Hertfordshire, towardes Legeston, with whom the men of the countrey encountred, and slaying manie of them, put the rest to flight, taking their horses and armour, with a great pray. King Edward leauing certaine to build a citie in the south part of the riuer Ligra, to wit, the towne of Ware, with more part of his army went into Essex, and encamped at Healdune, where hee tarried till a towne was builded at Witham.

The towne of  
Ware builded.  
Waldon in  
Essex.  
Witham.

In the yere 915. a great naule of Danes sayled about the west countrey, and landed in diuers places, taking great prayes, and went to their shippes againe. The king for strengthening of the Countrey, made a Castell at the mouth of the water of Auon, and another at Buckingham, and the third fast by, that is, on either side of the riuer's course one, & then went into Northampton and Bedfordshires, and subdued the Danes there, with their leader called Turketil.

Eoccester.  
Wigmore.

King Edward builded or newe repayed the Townes of Eoccester and of Wigmore.

Cogshall.  
Colchester in  
Essex.

In the yere of our Lord 918. the Kentish, Southy, and East Saxons, besieged Colchester, and wanne it by force, and slewe all therein, a few excepted that escaped by flight. The same yere king Edward went to Colchester with an armie, repaired the walles, and put a great garrison of souldiers into it.

The next yere died the noble Princesse Elfeda (wife to Etheldredus Duke of



of Mercia) and was buried in the Monastery of Saint Peter, which her Lord  
and she before had builded in the towne of Gloucester, which Monasterie was  
after thz towne to the ground by the Danes, but Aeldredus Byschoppe of Worke  
and of Worcester, made there an other, which is now the chiefest Church in  
the Towne.

This noble woman Elfreda, redified the Citie of Chester, she repaired the  
Towne of Tamworth, beside Lichfield, Stafford, Warwike, Shrewsburie,  
Warrisburie, Elloburie, Legeceaster, with a Towne and Castell in the north  
ende of Mercia, vpon the Riuer of Merce, that is called Runcorne: she builded  
a Bridge ouer Seuerne called Bimbsberie Bridge, &c.

When she had once assayed the paines that women suffer in traauiling with  
childe, she euer after refused the embracing of her husband, saying it was not  
seemely for any noble woman to vse such fleshy liking, wherof should insue so  
great sorow and paine: she tamed the Welshmen, & in diuers batfels chased the  
Danes, after whose death, Edward held that prouince in his owne hand.

King Edward builded a newe towne against the old Towne of Nottingham  
on the south side of the riuer of Trent, and made a bridge ouer the said riuer be-  
twene the two townes: he subdued the kings of Scotland & Wales: he builded  
a towne in the north end of Mercia, by the riuer of Merce, and named it Chil-  
wal, and repaired the towne of Manchester: after all which deeds by him done,  
he deceased at Farinodon, and was buried at Winchester in the newe church,  
which his father Alfred had builded when he had raigned xliiii. yeres.

**A** Delstane, after the death of Edward Senior his father, was crowned at  
Kingstone by Athelmus Archbyshop of Canterbury. His coronation was  
celebrated in the market place vpon a stage erected on hie, that the king might  
be seene the better of the multitude. He was a prince of worthy memory, val-  
iant and wise in all his actes, and brought this land into one monarchie: for hee  
repelled bitterlie the Danes, and quieted the Welshmen. He caused them to  
paie him yereleie tribute twentie pound of gold, three hundred pound of siluer,  
and two thousande five hundred head of neate, with houndes and halukes to a  
certaine number.

And after that he had by batell conquered Scotland, he made one Constans  
tine king of Scots vnder him, adding this princely word, that it was more ho-  
nour to him to make a king, then to be a king. He made seuen coining mints  
at Canterburie, foure for the king, two for the Archbyshop, and one for the Ab-  
bot: at Rochester three, two for the king, and one for the bishop: besides these,  
in London viii. in Winchester vi. in Lewes ii. in Hastings two: in Chichester  
one: in Hampton two: in Warham two: in Excester two: in Shaftsburie ii.  
and in euery good Towne one Coiner.

He founded S. Germanes in Cornewall, which was since a Byschops See:  
he founded S. Petrocus at Bodmin: he founded Wilton priory, Glouceston and  
Spichelney. He walled the citie of Excester with squared stone, of which Citie  
more shall be shewed in my larger Booke.

In this time Guy earle of Warwike, in a combate, slew Colbrond the Da-  
nish Giant in Hyde meade, nere vnto Winchester.

Athelstane

Henry Bradshaw  
Reynul. Hygden.

Chester.  
Tamworth.  
Lichfield.  
Stafford.  
Warwike.  
Shrewsburie.  
Warrisburie.  
Elloburie.  
Legeceaster.  
Runcorne  
towne and Cas-  
tell, and Bimbs-  
berie with the  
bridge builded.  
Marianus Scotus.  
W. Thorne.  
Hen. Hunting.  
Alfredus Riual.  
Chilwal builded.  
Manchester  
repaired.

924.

Alfredus Beueria.  
Io Leiland.  
Spe. Hiltor.  
Ri. Cirenc.  
W. Malmes.

Cant. Record.  
W. Lambert.  
Saxon Lawes.

T. Rudborne.  
Girardus Cer-  
nubius.

Guy of War-  
wike slew Col-  
brond.

John Lydgate.  
940

Marianus;

Jo. Tactar.

W. Malmes.

946  
Spe. Histo.  
Ri. Circa.

Marianus,  
Cantuar.  
Record.

Affer.

A vicious King.  
W. Malmes.  
Speculum Hist.  
Ri. Cicercest.

The King de-  
picted.

Athelstane reigned xv. yeeres, and was buried at Malmesburie.

**E**dmund the brother of Adelstane took upon him the government of this Realme, whose short raigne took from him the renoune of most high praises that should haue redounded to this posterity: for he was a man disposed of nature to noblenesse and iustice: he took out of the Danes hands the towne of Lincolne, Nottingham, Darbie, Leicester, and Stanford, and brought all Mercia to his dominion: he expelled the two kings, Anlafus the sonne of Sichricus, and Reginald the sonne of Cuthbert, out of Northumberland, and subdued the Countrey to his dominion. He granted the priuiledge vnto S. Edmund, in which the limites of the towne of Edmundsburie are contained.

On Saint Austines day, in the kings towne named Duclechurch, the king (whil实现 he would haue saued his Seluar from the hands of a wicked theefe called Leof) was slaine, when he had reigned v. yeeres, and vii. moneths, and was buried at Glassebury.

**E**ldred succeeded Edmund his brother: for his sons Edwyne and Edgar were thought too yong to take on them so great a charge. He took on him but as protector, but afterwards he was crowned at Kingstone.

This Eldred had the earnest fauor of the commons, because he was a great maintainer of honestie, and also most abhorred naughty and unruly persons: for his expertnesse in feates of armes, he was much commended, whereby he quieted and kept in due obedience the Northumbers and Scots, and exiled the Danes.

He placed the Bpsh of Cornwall at S. Germans, where it continued till the time of Edward, next before the conquest, in whose time it was translated to Excester.

In the yeere of our Lorde, 951. hee committed to prison Wolfstane, Archbpsh of Dorke in Luthaberie, because hee often had bene accused to haue commanded manie Citizens of Thetford to be slaine, in reuenge of the Abbot Adelme vniuile by them slaine: he was a yeere after released, and restored to his See.

King Eldred builded Spich at Abindone, gaue great landes, and confirmed them Charters with seales of golde.

He reigned nine yeeres, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church at Winchester, in the olde Monasterie.

**E**dwyn succeeded his vnckle Eldred in the kingdome: hee was crowned at Kingstone, of whome is left no honest memorie, for one heinous act by him committed in the beginning of his raigne.

In the selfe day of his coronation, hee sodainelie withdrew himselfe from his Lords, and in the sight of certaine persons rauished his owne kinswoman, the wife of a noble man of his realme, and afterward slew her husband, that he might haue the vnlawfull vse of her beauntie. For which acte, and for banishing Dunstane, hee became odible to his subiects: and of the Northumbers, and people of middle England, that rose against him, was deprived, when hee had reigned foure yeeres. Hee died and was buried in the new Abbey of Winchester.

Edgar

**E**dgar the Peaceable, brother to Edwyne, was crowned at Bath. He was so excellent in iustice, and that in correction of vices, as well in his Magistrates, as other subiects, that neuer before his daies was used lesse felonie by robbers, or extortion or byberie, by false officers. He chastised the great negligence, conetousnesse and vicious living of the cleargie, and brought them to a better order. Of stature he was but little, yet of minde valiant and hardie, and verie expert in martiall pollicie. Dunstane was ordained Metropolitane and Primate of England, by whome, and other wise men the king being instructed, did in euerie place oppresse euill persons, reproued rebels under sharpe correction, the iust and modest man he loued and cherished, Churches that had bene destroyed, hee repaired; casting out of monasteries secular Priests, and gathered together companies of Monkes, and of Nunnes, giuing good admonition to the Pastors, whome he appointed to haue rule ouer them. He was in his government discret, ciuill, liberall, gentle, mercifull and valiant; in warres hardie, defending with warlike power the right of his kingdom, bringing his people vnder the obedience of their gouernours, framing his Magistrates to iustice, ordaining rightfull lawes, whereby hee enioyed a quiet kingdom, so that hee needed not to prouoke other to warre, nor anie warre was procured against him, but kept the boundes of his kingdom, so long as he liued, with prudence, fortitude, iustice, and temperance: not onely the Princes of the Isles being tyrants stood in feare of him, but also the kings of manie nations, hearing of his wisdom, and valiancie, did all honour him. Hee caused Widwall king of Wales to paie him, in name of tribute, three hundred Molues yearely (or rather their skinnes) which thing when he had performed for the space of three yeeres, the fourth yeere, was none there to be found.

959  
King crowned  
at Bath.  
Alfredus Benetia.

Marianus.

Molues de-  
stroyed in En-  
gland.

King Edgare prepared a nauie (as diuers authors haue written) of three thousand and sixe hundred shippes, of the which, after Easter euery yeere, one thousand two hundred, he appointed to come into the East part of the realme; one thousand two hundred into the West parts, and one thousand two hundred into the North parts: This number of shippes being incredible, per aduenture one author following another, the first being deceived by mistaking the same, the rest haue erred, but William Thorne a Monke of S. Augustines by Canterburie, setteth downe the whole number of ships to be 300. and this hath a more likelihood of truth. But to the matter, with the East nauie, he sayd into the West, and sending that backe, hee would saile with the West nauie into the North, and that being sent backe, with the North nauie he would saile into the East partes; and after this sort, hee used to saile round about the whole Island euerie somer, by the which doing, hee prouided for the defence of his kingdom against strangers, and praised himselfe, and his people in exercises of warre.

Marianus.

In the winter season and spring of the yeere, hee trauesled through all the parts of his Realme, diligently searching howe the lawes and statutes were obserued by the Lords, and men of greatest authoritie, least the poore should be oppressed, by the mightie and rich men.

Thus

Thus Edgare notwithstanding his manifold vertues before rehearsed, was reported (saith W. Malmesbury) to be a cruell Prince, and also giuen ouermuch to the lustes of the flesh, and for example they saie, that Edgare hearing tell, that Orgare Earle of Deuonshire had a daughter of passing beauty, named Alfred, he commanded Ethelwold an Earle, and also his secretarie to go looke vpon her, and so to prouide, that if she were according to the common bruted fame, she mought bee his wife. Which Ethelwold toke his iourney, and founde it to be true: whereupon, (being himselfe taken with her loue) learning his message from the king vndone, he laboured to obtaine her to bee his wife: and returning to the king, reported the damosell to be such a one as passed not the common beauty of women, and therefore not mate for so great a State as he: So that after, when the king had set his loue vpon another, Ethelwold obtained the saide damosell in marriage, to his owne destruction, for when the fame of her passing beauty was spread through the whole realme, the king desiring to see her, and by deceit to deceiue the deceiuer, shewing a great countenance to the Earle, appointed a daie to go looke on the woman, which he heard so much commended.

The Earle being in great heauinesse, went before to his wife, and desired her that she should, for the safegarde of his life, disfigure her selfe with some homely apparell, and otherwise as she might: but she breaking promise with her twetched husband, dyessed her selfe in a glasse as curiously as she mought, omitting nothing that mought tempt the king, and prouoke his desire, and according to her meaning it came to passe; for the king no sooner sawe her, but he was taken with her loue, and to obtaine his purpose the sooner, shewing a good countenance to the Earle, hee called him to go with him to hunt in the wood of Marwell, where he shot him through with an arrowe, into the which place, a bastard sonne of the dead Earle came, euen as the deed was done, whom the king asked, how he liked such hunting, who (as men saie) made this answer, I like it well, my Lorde, that liketh you: with which saying he so appeased the kings angrie mind, that the king neuer loued any man better then him, and made amends to the sonne for the cruell act against his father. The king toke Ladie Alfred to wife, and she builded an house of Nuns in the same place where her first husband Ethelwold was slaine.

Marwell  
founded.

26. of Winche.  
after his saying.

963. Ethelwald Bpshop of Winchester, in a great famine, solde awaie all the sacred vessels of his Church for to relieue the almost starued people: saying that there was no reason, that the sencelesse temples of God should abound in riches, and liuely temples of the holie ghost lacke it.

Aueredus  
Rinalensis.

The yere 969. king Edgare, gaue commendement to Dunstane Archbishop of Canterbury, Ethelred Bpshop of Winchester, and Osbold Bpshop of Worcester, that expelling secular Priests out of the great Monasteries, builded through Mercia, they should place Monkes, and to that effect he made the like Oracion as followeth.

Oracion of  
Edgare.

Because our Lord hath magnified his mercie to worke with vs, it is meet (most reuerend fathers) that with worthe worke, we answer his innumerable benefites: for neither by our owne worde possesse we the earth, and our owne



olwe arme hath not saued vs : but his right hand , and his holie arme ; for that he hath bene pleased with vs : méete therefore it is , that we submit both our selues and our soules to him , that hath put all thinges vnder our fete ; and that we diligently labour that they whome he hath made subiect vnto vs maie be made subiect vnto his lawes . And truely it is my part to rule the lastie , with the lawe of equitie , to doe iust iudgement betwixt man and his neighbours , to punish church robbers , to repressse rebels , to deliuer the weakie from the handes of his stronger : the poore and needie from them that spoile them . And it also belongeth to my care , to haue consideration to the health , quietnesse , or peace of the ministers of the church , the flocke of Monkes , the companies of Virgines , and to prouide the thinges needefull for them . The examining of those manners belongeth vnto you , if they liue chastly , if they behaue themselves honestly towards them which be abroad , if in diuine seruice they bee carefull , if in teaching the people diligent , if in feeding sober , if moderate in apparell , if in iudgement they bee discræte : If ye had cured these thinges by prudent scrutine ( by your licence I speake & reuerend fathers ) such horrible and abhominable thinges of the clearkes had not come to our eares . I omit to speake , that their crowne is not large , nor their rownding conuenient , but wantonnes in apparell , insolencie in behauiour , filthinesse in wordes , doe betray the madnesse of the inward man . Furthermore , howe great negligence is there in the diuines , when in the holy vigils , they will scarce vouchsafe to be present ; when at the holie solemnities of the diuine seruice , they seeme to be gathered together to plaie and to laugh , rather then to sing ?

I will that which good men lament , and euill men laugh at , I will speake with sorrowe ( if so bee it maie be spoken ) how they stowe in banquetings , in drunkennesse , in chambering and wantonnesse , that now clearkes houses maie be thought to bee brotheli houses of harlots , and an assembly of players . There is dice , there is dauncing and singing , there is watching till midnight , with crying and sholoting . Thus the patrimonie of kinges , the almes of Princes , yea , ( and that more is ) the price of that precious blood is ouerthrowne . Hane our fathers , therefore , for this purpose emptyed their treasures : for this intent , hath the kings exchequers by withdrauing of manie reuenewes bene ginen : hath the kings bountifullnes given landes and possessions to Christian Churches for this ende : that Clearkes harlots should be pampered with delicious dainties , that riotous guests maie be prepared for , that houndes , and halokes , and such like toiles maie bee gotten ? Of this the soultours crie out , the common people murmure , the iesters & scoffers sing and daunce , and you regard it not ; you spare it , you dissemble it : Where is the sworde of Leuie , and zeale of Symeon , which killed the circumcised Sichinites being the figure of them that defile the Church of Christ , with polluted ades , abusing Jacobs daughter as a harlot : Where is the spirit of Moyses , that spared not his householde himselfe , worshipping the head of the Calfe : Where is the dagger of Phinies the Priest , who killing him that played the harlot with the Madianite , with this holy emulation pacified Gods wrath : Where is the

spirits :

spirite of Peter, by whose power couetousnesse is destroyed, and Simon shall be, relie condemned: Endeouor to imitate *Dei* Priestes, in God: It is time to rise against them that haue broken the lawe of God. I haue Constantines, you haue Peters sword in your handes, let vs ioine right handes, let vs couple sword to sword: that the Leapers maie be cast out of the Church, that the hallowed place of our Lord maie be purged, and the sonnes of Leuie may minister in the Church, who saide to his father and mother, I knowe you not, and to his brethren, I am ignorant of you. So to carefully I beseech you, least it repent vs to haue done that that we haue done, and to haue giuen that wee haue giuen, if we shall see that not to bee spent in Gods seruice, but on the riotousnesse of most wicked men, through unpunished libertie. Let the reliques of holie Saintes, which they scoorne, and the reuerende Altars before which they rage, moue you. Let the marvellous deuotion of our auncestors moue you, whose almes the Clarke furie abusethe.

My Great grandfathers father Echelwulfus (as you knowe) gaue the tenth part of all his landes to Churches and Abbeles: my great grandfather Alfrid of holie memorie, thought not meete to spare his treasures, his patrimonie, no coses, no reuenewes that he might enrich the Church: my graund father, the olde Edward, holwe much he gaue vnto the Churches, your fatherhood is not ignorant. It becommeth you to haue in remembrance, with what gifts my father and uncle enriched Christs Altar. *Dei* Dunstane, father of fathers, beholde, I praye you, the eles of my father shining on thee, from the bright coast of heauen, beare his complaining wordes with a certaine pitte thundering in thine eares. Thou *Dei* my father Dunstane! Thou gauest me wholesome counsell to build Abbeies and Churches, thou wast my helper and fellow worker in all things. Thee I elected as a shepheard, father and bishop of my soule, and keeper of my manners, when did I not obey thee? what treasure did I preferre before thy counsels? what possessions despised I not, thou commanding me: If thou thoughtest mete to giue anie thing to the poore, I was ready. If thou iudgedst anie thing to be giuen to Churches, I deferred not. If thou complainedst any thing to bee wanting to Monkes or Clarke, I supplied. Thou saidst that almes was euerslasting, and none to bee more fruitfull then that which was giuen to Abbeles and Churches, wherewith Gods seruants maie be sustained, and what remaineth maie be giuen to the poore.

Deceitfull almes, worthy price of the soule! *Dei* whole some remedie for our sinnes! which from the Priestes Leman sinketh in the little skin of a strange mouse, which adozeth her little eares, which garnisheth her small fingers, which trusteth by her delicate bodie in silke and purple. Beholde *Dei* father the fruit of mine almes, and the effect of thy promise. What wilt thou answere to this complaint? I know, when thou dost see a theefe, thou runnest not with him, neither hast thou put thy portion with adulterers. Thou hast rebuked, thou hast intreated, and blamed them, wordes are condemned, thou must come to stripes, and thou shalt not want the kings authoritie. Thou hast here with thee *Dei* venerable father Echelwold Bishop of Winchester, Thou hast the reue-

rend

rend Bp̄late of Worcester Oswold: to you I commit this businesse, that both by bishopy censure, and kingly authoritie, with holmes and male, be cast out of the Church, and they that live in order brought in.

King Edgare, hauing restored and new founded fortye seuen Monasteries, which before his tyme had bene destroyed by the Danes and other Pagans, and intending to continue that his intent till the number of fifty were accomplished, he confirmed the Monasterie of Worcester, which Oswold then Bp̄shop of Worcester, by the kings consent, had enlarged, and made it the cathedrall church of that shire.

Ethelwold Bp̄shop of Winchester, renewed the Monasterie of Ely, and Edgare confirmed his foundation, with great priuiledges, as by his Charter may appeare.

Moze concerning the state of the Church of England in those daies maye appeare by the wordes of Edgare in his Charter to the Abbey of Malmesbury, which are to this effect: All the Monasteries in my Realme, to the outward sight, are nothing but worme eaten, and rotten timber and boordes: and that worse is, within they are almost emptye and void of deuine seruice.

The Danes and all other people in England, vsed the vice of great drincking. The king therefore by counsell of Dunstane put downe manie alehouses, and would suffer but one in a village or towne, except it were a greatborough: hee ordained certaine cuppes with pinnes or nalles, and made a law, that whosoever dranke past that marke at one draught, should paye a certaine paine.

Alwinus Alderman Earle of East Angles, kinsman to king Edgar, founded the Abbey of Ramsey: King Edgare confirming the same on Christmas daie, the yere of our Lorde God nine hundred seuentie and foure, in the presence of all the Nobilitie. The same yere was an earthquake through all England.

Edgar being at Chester, entered the Riuer of Dee, hee toke the rule of the helme, and caused eight kings to row him vnto Saint Johns Church, and from thence vnto his pallace, in token that he was Lord and king of so many prouinces. The names of the 8. kings were, Rinoch king of the Scots, Malcolme of Cumberland, Macone king of Man and of many Ilands, Dufnal king of Demetia or South Wales, Siferth and Huwall kings of Wales, Iames king of Galatway, and Iukil of Westmerland. King Edgare reigned xvi. yeres, and was buried at Glaffenbury.

By his first wife Egghede (as some doe write) or by a religious hotarie, as some other doe write, he had issue Edward surnamed the Martyr, who succeeded after his father. His wife Elfrith daughter to Ordgarus, Duke of Deuonshire, he receiued another sonne named Ethelred, and a daughter named Wolfrith.

Edward the sonne of Edgar was crowned at Kingstone, by the handes of Dunstane Archbishop of Canterburie, and Oswald Archbishoppe of York. This man might well bee compared to his father for his modestie and gentleness, so that he was woorthely fauoured of all men, except onely of his stepmother

W. Malmesbury Church of England the state thereof.

Against quaffing.

Laws against drunkards.

Ramsey founded.  
Ex charta regis.

Eight kings rowed king Edgar.  
Flouacensis.  
John Pike.  
Eulogium.  
W. Malm.  
Alfrid. Beuer.  
Speculum histor.  
Ri. Cirencester.  
Rog. Houed.  
Flores Historiar.  
Reynulf. Hynd.  
Henry Bradshaw.  
Edmerus.  
Osbernus.  
Antonius Arch.  
Marianus Scottus.

975

John Pike.  
W. Malm.  
Alfredus Beuer.  
Speculum histor.  
Ri. Cirencester.  
Flores Historiar.

mother, and other of her alliance, which ever bare a grudge against him, for so much as she desired to have the governance of the Realme for her owne sonne Ethelred.

The king murdered.

This Edward while he was hunting in a forest (by chance) lost his company, and rode alone to refresh himselfe at the castle of Corfe in the Isle of Dorset, there, by counsell of his Stepmother Elfrida, he was traiterously murdered as he sat on his horse, when he had reigned iii. yeres. He was buried at Wareham, and after at Shaftesburie. Elfred did after that take great penance, and builded ii. Monasteries of nuns, Almesburie and Warewell: in which Warewell she after liued a solitarie life till she died.

Warewell and Almesburie built.

978

W. Malmes.  
Speculum Hist.  
Ri. Cirencestr.

Ethelred commonlie called Unreadie, the sonne of king Edgar, by his second wife Elfred, was crowned at Kingstone. But because he came to the kingdome by wicked meanes, and by killing his brother, hee could neuer get the good will of the people, who had conceived an ill opinion of him: of this arose ciuill wars within the Realme, and often dissention and discords, as well of the Nobles as of the common sort.

T. Rudburne.

In the yere 982. a great part of the City of London was burnt, which City at this time had most building from Ludgate toward Westminster, and little or none where the hart of the city is now, except in diuers places was heuising, that stode without order: so that manerities, as Canterburie, Poike, and other in England, passed London in building: but after the conquest it encreased, and now passeth all other.

Asterius.  
Flux of men,  
and murdrine  
of cattell.  
Byshops sea at  
Excester.

988. Dunstane Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterburie. Ciricus Byshop of Sarum succeeded.

A disease not knowne in England in time past, to wit, feuers of men, with the fire, and murdrine of cattell killed many.

In the yere 994. king Ethelred erected a Byshops sea at Excester.

The same yere Anlaf king of the Norwales, and Sweyne king of Danes on the date of the nationie of our Lord, in rebell. Galleis came by to London, which they attempted to breake into, and to set on fire: but they were repulled, not without their great detriment and losse by the Citizens. Whereupon they being driuen with force, leauing London, set vpon Easters and Kent, by the Seacoasts burnt towne, and wasted the fieldes, without respect of sexe or age killed all, and wasted with fire and sword all that they might carry awaie. At length being pacified with a tribute of 16000. poundes departed to their ships, and wintered at Southampton.

Byshops sea of  
Durham.

In the yere 995. a Comet appeared. The Byshopricke of Lincolne or Holie Island was remoued to Durham: and there Aldwine the Byshop first builded a small Oratory of wretched wandes or hurdles, where the body of Cuthbert rested for a time, till a larger Church were builded.

Alfrune  
Hampton.

In the yere 996. the Lady Alfrune widow sometime wife to Athelme duke of Northampton, obtained licence of king Ethelred to giue lande to the church which she had founded at Hampton in Staffordshire where by the said town of Hampton toke the addition of Alfrune, and so was called Alfrunehampton.



In the yere 1002. king Ethelred caused all the Danes in England to be shaine upon the daie of Saint Brice. The same yere Villicus Spoie founded a Monasterie at Burton upon Trent. King Ethelred confirmed this foundation in these wordes: 1004. Indictione. 2. horum testimonio septentium quorum nomina inferius annotata cernuntur.

The Danes  
murthere d.  
Burton upon  
Trent.

Ego Ethelred rex Anglorum, hoc donum perpetuum diti aut libertate.

Ego Ethelstan filius regis.

Ego Eadbright filius regis.

Ego Edmund filius regis.

Ego Aedred filius regis.

Ego Ading filius regis.

Ego Aidgar filius regis.

rit. Archbishops and bishops, rit. Abbots, lit. Dukes, &c.

In the yere 1003. Swaine king of Denmarke with a great armie invaded England with fire and sword: 1004. they fought a great battell at Thetford, against Viskettell Earle of East Angles.

In the yere 1006. The deceitfull Edrike of Straton, hade the noble Duke Alshelmus to a banquet at Shzobsbury, from whence he had him out to hunt, where a certaine Butcher of Shzobsbury named Goodwin Bozthurd, whome Edrike long before had hyed, leapt out of a place, where he had laine in waite for him, and withedgely slewe Alshelmus. And within a while after, his sonnes, Wulfegus, and Wegate, by cominadement of the king Ethelred, at Coham, where the court then lay, had their eies put out.

Edrike of  
Straton Duke  
of Mercia and  
his brethren.

In the yere 1007. king Ethelred made Edrike of Straton duke of Mercia, and gave to him his daughter Edina to wife. This Edrike the son of Egelricus was but a man of low kinred, to whome neuertheless, his eloquent tongue had purchased riches and nobility: willy he was of wit, pleasant of speech, and passed all men in those daies in enuite, falsehode, pride, and crueltie, he had to his brethren Britricus, Alficus, Beda, Agelricus, Agelwardus, Agelmarus, father to Godwine Duke of West Saxons.

Edregret of  
Godwine.

In the yere 1009. Swaine king of Denmarke, with the Danes fought a great battell against Viskettell at Kengemoze.

In the yere 1010. The army of Danes march through the wood called Cliston to Drford, which towne they bzent & destroyed. Then marching about into East Angles, spoiled that country, bzent Thetford, Grantbydige. Then they spoiled the shires of Hertford, Buckingham, and Bedford. Then they wasted Northamptonshire, Wiltsire, &c. The Danes hauing spoiled the East Angles as is afore thewed, Ailwine byshop of Helmhams, brought the bodie of king Edmund from Bedeslwozth through Eastser, ouer Stratfordbydige, and so to London in at Criplegate, (a place so called of cripples begging there) at which gate (it is said) the bodie entring, myracles were wrought, as, some of the lame to go byright praying God. The body of king Edmund rested for the space of thre yeres in the parish church of S. Gregory, adioyning vnto the cathedrall church of S. Paul, from whence it was conueyed backe againe to Stapleford in Eastser, and so to Bedeslwozth, now called Bery in Suffolke, where it

The Danes  
spoil'd East  
Angles.

thop Ailwyne builded for him a new Church.

In 1011. East Angles, East Saxons, Middlesex, Bedfordshire, Dorsetshire, Grantbridgehire, halfe Huntingdonshire, and Northamptonshire: and on the south side of Thames, Kent, Surrey, Southsex, Southampton, Wiltshire, and Berkshire, being destroyed with sword and fire, king Ethelred required peace with the Danes, promising to them stipendes and tribute: to the which they feiningly assented, but yet they neuer left their cruelties: at length they besieged and destroyed Canterburie, and for that the Archbyschoppe Elfegeus would not yelde to them, he was first imprisoned there, and after conuicted to Greenwich, and there stoned to death. Christs Church is spoiled and burnt: the Monkes with all other men are tentred, i.e. of euery x. being put to death, the tenth suffered to liue in miserie: the number of them that were left aliuie, was 4. monks, & of lay people 800. so that the number slain was 36. monks, & 8000. of the lay people.

In the yere 1012. they toke tribute of 48000. poundes, and at the last, after diuers overthowles giuen to the men of this Islande, they possessed the same, and put king Ethelred to flight, constraining him to liue in exile among the Normans.

This Ethelred had two wiues, Ethelgina an English woman, and Emma a Norman: of the first he had two children, of which, sauing of Edmund, who succeeded him in the kingdome, it were nothing to our purpose to speake: of the second that was Emma sister to Richard Duke of Normandie, there were borne two sonnes, to wit, Edward and Alured. And that I doe here (contrary to that is commonlie vsed) set Edward before Alured as elder brother, I am moued therunto by no small authoritie, which I haue taken out of the Historiographers of that age, out of Gemeuicensis, a most diligent writer of genealogies, and one other Authour, who in his commentarie written in prayse of Emma the Queene, affirmeth, that Edward was the elder brother, whome I do the better beleue, because it is not like, that he seeing the thinges with his eyes, shoulde mistake the matter, especiallie writing to the D. who was mother to them both.

Swanus in the meane time subdued all Englande, and the people for feare yelded vnto him on euerie side, ouer whome most cruellie he triumphed. But not long after he departed this life at Geinburge, and left Canutus his sonne successor in the kingdome.

Ethelred hearing that Swanus was dead, leauing in Normandie with Duke Richard his Sisters Sonne, Emma his Wife, and the Children that hee had by her, returned with all speede into Englande with Edmund his Sonne by his first Wife, being then at Mans state, and by the truifinesse of his owne men, and the ayde of the Normans, moued warre against his enemy.

Canutus finding himselfe unable to match with him, went into Denmarke, minding to returne hither immediatly againe.

Ethelred being, contrary to his expectation thus restored to his kingdome, shewed great cruelty vpon the Danes that remained in England, sparing neither

The Danes destroyed Canterburie.

Tyranny of the Danes in England.

Recon. eccle. Cant. Marianus, Floriasensis.

Ethelgina and Emma wiues to Ethelred, Alured and Edward the son of Ethelred.

W. Gemeuicensis, Eucrom. Emma.

ther m  
rons t  
gainst  
sword  
ed, wh  
Pauls  
E Dn  
who  
waies  
Can  
south  
all his  
with a  
and fo  
ted to  
so bal  
wals  
left to  
spede  
with  
Dof  
he ou  
Aff  
nure  
Shen  
ecuti  
cause  
and A  
Sou  
was  
and b  
to fig  
ton,  
certa  
hold  
head  
the C  
after  
carr  
abor  
King  
Dul  
the l

ther man nor woman, young nor olde. Therefore Canutus being herie distressed to reuenge the same, prepared a new army, and came into England against Etheldred with all speed he coule, raging wide and side with fire and sword. Etheldred in the meane season, whether by sicknesse or for sorowe, died, when he had reigned 38. yeres, and was buried in the north Ile of Saint Pauls Church in London.

To. Tactoz:  
W. Mamef.  
Alfredus Beuerl,

Edmond the son of Etheldred by his first wife, succeeded in the kingdome, who (whether it were for the great strength of his bodie, or for that hee always used to go in armour) was surnamed Ironside.

1016

Canute in the meane time, with all his nauie came vp to London, & on the south side the Thames, he caused a trench to be cast, through the which he caused all his ships to be towed or drawne into the west side of the bridge. And after with a deepe and large trench and siege they compassed the Citie round about, and so shut by all going in or out, of all manner of persons: and after attempted to haue wonne it by assault, but that would not serue, the Citizens made so valiant resistance, that in the end, the enemies were repulled farre from the walls: whereupon the siege for a time being dismissed, part of the army being left to keepe the ships, the other part went into the West Saxonie, with such speed, that they gaue no leisure vnto king Edmund to gather his arme, notwithstanding, with that small army which he had, he boldly met with them in Dorsetshire, and joining battell with them at Penham nere to Gillingham, he ouercame them, and put them to flight.

A trench cast,  
and ships towed  
about the south  
end of London  
bridge.

Gillingham  
forest in Dor-  
setshire.  
Penham.

After this, king Edmund determining manfully to giue battell vnto Canute with a greater hoste then before, mette with his army at a place called Shereffane in Worcestershire, where he in the foreward fiercely fought, executing the office both of a hardie souldiour and valiant Captaine. But because Edrike of Straton, the offe named Traitor, and the beloued Almaricus, and Algarus the sonne of Meaninus, which ought to haue ayded him with the Southamptonshire men and Wiltshire men were of the Danes party, hee was soe wearied, but yet the first day of the battell, the fight was so extreame and bloodie, that both the armies were so wearied, they were not able longer to fight.

The next day the king had ouerthrowne the Danes, but for Edrike of Straton, who seeing the Englishmen haue the better hand, he cutte off the head of a certaine man, named Osmearus, like to king Edmund in face and haire, and holding it vp, cried out, that the Englishmen fought in vaine, and held by the head, saying: Your master king Edmund is dead, slie as fast as you can: which the Englishmen had no sooner heard, but they were readie to slie. But shortly after vnderstanding the king to bee alive, they tooke courage againe, and are carried vpon the Danes, and beate downe a great number of them. After this about midnight Canute commanded his people to depart with silence, and hauing toward London, went to their ships, and shortly after besieged London. Duke Edrike sued for pardon, and obtained it.

King Edmund hastned toward London, and deliuered the Londoners from the siege, chaling the Danes to their ships.

About two daies after, king Edmund passed ouer the Thames at Brentforde, but passing the river manie of his men were drowned. He encreasing his armie, hastied toward the West Saxons. And the Danes againe go vp to London, but coulde there profite nothing: wherefore going from thence with their nauie, they enter the riuer of Aine, and passe into Mercia, there to fetch spoiles, slaying all they met, and burning Townes, and so laden with spoyle returne unto their shippes. After this their souldiers passe in shippes into the riuer of Medway, but their horsemen take prayes vpon the land.

Nelthorpe in  
Kent.

Eden in  
Essex.

King Edmund againe passed the Riuer of Thames at Brentforde, entered Kent, and fought with the Danes at Otford, and put them to flight: and if the false Edrike had not staied him at Caglethorpe or Nelthorpe, hee had that daie gotten the full victorie. To see shortly, the first and last battell was at Assenden in Essex, nere to Rochford, here he put his army into three battells.

Bishop, Abbot,  
and Cleargie  
saue in prayer.

Combate for  
the kingdome.  
England  
deuided.

1018  
The Danes  
possessed all  
England.

The Kings  
children con-  
nected into  
Sweden.

In the meane time Canute bringing his men into order, a foie battell was fought, and manie slaine on both sides. But Edrike perceiuing the Danes to giue ground, he with his power fledde, as he had promised to Canute, and so king Edmund and the English armie had the worst: there was slaine in that battaille, Duke Alfrike, Duke Godwine, Visekerrell Duke of East Angles, Athelwardus Duke, sonne to the Duke of East Angles, Athelwine called Gods friend, a duke: and almost all the companie of the English nobilitie. Cadnoth also bishop of Lincolne, sometimes Abbot of Ramsay, and Wolfey the Abbot, which were come together with their clergie to pray to God for the souldiers that fought, were slaine. And Edmund went almost alone on foote to Gloucester, where he gathered a newe foie to set vpon his enemies, but Canute pursued him as he fled. And hauing prepared their armies, both the kings themselves attempted to fight hand to hand for the right of the kingdome in the Isle of Mania in Seuerne, in the which combate, they both being wearied, fell to a couenant to deuide the same, so that the one halfe of the kingdome should be vnder Canutus, and the other halfe vnder Edmund, which Edmund not long after died at London, slaine by the treason of Edrike of Straton, and was buried at Glasseburie, leauing Edmund and Edward his children very young.

Canutus the Dane, taking an occasion, because in the couenant that was concluded concerning the deuiding of the Realme, no assurance was made for the children of Edmund, he chalenged all England to himselfe alone by lawe as they call it, of growing to, which was a most easie thing for him to doe, because there was no man that durst erect himselfe as patrone to defende the childrens right and title, and by this subtilie and craftie interpretation of the couenant the Dane got the Monarchie of England, and slawe the brother of Edmund, and conuicted the children farre awaie out of England, least they shoulde at anie time be brought againe and receiue their right. Some say, they were sent to a certaine man that was a Prince in Swethland, there to be dispatched out of the wale: and that the Prince vnderstanding they were kings children,



childzen, spared them, contrarie to the credite and trust that was committed unto him: which appeareth to bee true, in that the same forraine Lorde kepte and brought vpp the childzen honorable, the yongest of which, whose name was Edward, did afterwarde marrie Agatha, the daughter of Henrie the fourth, Emperour of Rome, of whome he had many childzen, of which we shall speake hereafter. And the other, which was the elder brother, whose name was Edmund, died without childzen.

Agatha the  
Emperours  
daughter the  
wife of Ed-  
ward.

In the meane season Canutus, because he had no heire that lawfully might succede him in his kingdome (for Harolde and Swaine were begotten of a concubine) partlie that he might establishe in time to come the kingdome that he had gotten vnto his owne kindred that came by lawful succession; and partlie that he might purchase to himselfe the friendship of the Englishmen, and of the Normans, procured to haue giuen him in marriage Emma, the widow of king Etheldred, who at that time was with Edward and Alured her Sonnes in exile with Duke Richard in Normandie, which marriage seemeth to bee made euen by Gods prouidence, who had determined to restore the common wealth in England, whereby, as by the Lawe and Title of Recouerie, and returne out of exile, the monarchie of all England, which the Danes had taken from the Englishmen, and had possessed fere and twentie yeeres and more, did returne agayne to the Englishmen that were the right heires. For Emma concluded marriage with the Dane, vpon condition that the kingdome of England shoulde remaine vnto none other but vnto the childzen that were begotten of her, if anie of them did remaine alieue: by reason of this marriage, shortly after the did beare Canutus a sonne of his owne name, commonly called Hardy Canutus.

Harolde and  
Swaine concu-  
bines childzen.

Marriage  
made vpon  
condition.

This second name was giuen him because of his great courage, like as his brother Harolde was named Harescote, that is to saie, Lightscote, because of his notable swiftnes of fote.

How 2. names  
were giuen to  
kings.

By this affinitie and alliance, the Danes became of the more strength and power. He kept the Englishmen in his seruice so long as he liued.

At the feast of Christmasse, king Canute being at London, commaunded the traytour Edrike of Stratton to bee put to death in his Wallace closelis for feare of tumulte. Some saie, hee was tormented to death with firebrands and linkes: some saie one waie, some another, but dispatched hee was: for the king feared, through his treason to be circumuented of his kingdome, as his predecessors had bene before, to wit, Ethelred and Edmund. His bodie hee caused to bee layde forth on the wall of the Citie, there to remaine vnburied, to bee seene of all men. With him also were slaine, Northman a Duke, son to duke Leofwinus brother to Leofricus, and Ethelwardus the son of duke Egelmere, and Brithricus sonne of Elfegus prince of Deuonshire: these died without fault (sayeth mine Authour.) The king made Leofike Duke in his brothers place, and helde him afterwarde verie deare. King Canute subdued the Scots, whereby he was king of Englande, Scotlande, Denmarke, and Norway.

Edrike of  
Straton the  
traitor was  
died.

Marianus.

Canute king of  
4. kingdoms.

After that, king Canutus went to Denmarke, and so to Rome, and re-

turned againe into England, where hee kept good iustice all his life, and did many charitable deedes: whereof more shall be spoken in my larger Chronicle.

S. Edmunds  
burie newe  
founded and  
priviledges  
graunted.

Record Exche-  
quer, y. 32.  
of H. 3.

John Lydgate.

Abendune  
in Essex.

Henry Hun-  
tington.

Canute founded anewe the Monastery of Saint Edmund at Bury, restoring to the same, the donation which Edmund king of the West Saxons had given to Saint Edmund the king and Martyr, who was there buried: he displaced the secular Priests for their dissolute life, and placed there an Abbot with Monks, he gave to them many great livelodes, and made a ditch onerthwart Newmarket heath, it is now by some called, the Duielles ditch, to enclose the lands sometime belonging to king Edmund, and discharged the same of all tribute.

King Edward the Confessor, since that time, not onely confirmed the same liberties of S. Edmund, but also gave to Abbot Baldwin a Stampe, and authority to haue an exchange or mintage, and to coine in his Monasterie: And more to encrease their franchise, gave the manour of Mildenhall and holtone, with eight hundreds to their possession (saith John Lydgate) and true it is, that I find in recozd, the franchise of Saint Edmundsbury, to containe these hundreds following, Blackbozne, Kilsbridge, Thedwardster, Babbar, Colford, Ethingo, Lackeford, and Erning halfe hundred. Thus much for the liberties of that Colone. Now Baldwin a Monk, of Saint Dionys, physician to the said king Edward, being made Abbot of Bury in the space of nine and twenty yeres, erected a newe Church of stone, by licence of William Conquerour, brought from Cane in Normandy, landed at Ratlisden, and from thence brought by land to Bury: the foundation was accomplished, and the bodie of the Martyr, was translated out of a chappell called Rotund, into a chyrine prepared for him in the new Church of Bedyswozth or Bury, in the yere of our Lord God 1095. Thus much for Bury.

The church which king Canute, and Earle Turketell builded on the hill of Assen in Essex, was dedicated with great honour, of Wolstane Archbishop of Dorke and other bishops, the king and nobles being present.

Hee appointed to be king of Norway Swanus his sonne (as was saide) by Alfgine daughter to Arhelme Duke of Northampton, and Lady Vulfrune: but other saide hee was a Priestes sonne. He also appointed his sonne Hardicanutus by Emma to bee king of Denmarke, and deceased at Shaftesburie, when hee had reigned twentie yeres, and was buried in Saint Swichins at Winchester. After whose decease and buriall, Queene Emma made her abode there.

Henry of Huntington of this Canute hath as followeth: Men (saith hee) doe speake of the great deedes that hee did: first, that he married his daughter to the Emperour Conradus: that he went nobly to Rome, and came againe with pretious giftes: that he set his fete on the sea strand while the sea was flowing, and commanded the Sea not to rise, to wet his Lordes fete or clothes: but the Sea keeping his olde course, rose, and wet both his fete and his thighes: whereupon the king started away, and saide: All men shall wete and knowe, that the power and might of kings is vaine, and vanitie: and that none

none is worthy to haue the name of king, but hee that hath all thinges subiect to his commandement and lawes. And after this, this Canutus neuer bare Crowne vpon his head, but hee set the same vpon the head of the Crucifix at Winchester. Peter Picauti, once chancelloz of Paris, saith, that the custome to hang by the armour of kings and noblemen, and other in churches, sprang of that this Canutus refused to weare his crowne, and offered the same as is shewed.

Peter Picauti

**H**arold, for his swiftnesse called Harefoote, whome Canutus had by a Concubine Alice of Hampton, a Shoemakers daughter (affirming himselfe to be sonne of Canutus, and Alfgina the Earle of Northhamptons daughter) slept not vpon the occasion and opportunitie offered, but vsing the force of the Danes that dwelt in England, inuaded the realme, while his brother Hardicanute governed in Denmarke.

1038

Peter de Icham.  
Marianus.  
Floriacens.

He toke from his mother in law Emma, the most part of the riches and treasure that Canute his father had left her, and then with consent of the great lords beganne to raigne, but not so mightily as his father Canutus did, for a more lust heire Hardicanutus was looked for, whereupon the kingdome was deuided, the North part to Harold, and the South to Hardicanute.

Edward and Alfred Sons to king Ethelred, with manie knights, came out of Normandy, to see their Mother at Winchester, which sore troubled the mindes of many great men, who bare more fauour to king Harold. Especially Godwyne Earle of Kent, faining to receiue Alfred as a friend, came to meete him, but in the end put him in prison, part of his company he put in fetters, and after put out their eyes. Of some hee caused their skinne to be plucked ouer their eares, chopping off their hands and fete. Some he commaunded to be sold, and diuers were murdered at Gilsford.

Queene Emma hearing of this dealing, shee sent her sonne Edward backe againe into Normandy.

After this, Alfride was conueied to the Ile of Ely, where his eyes being first plucked out, hee was deliuered to the Monkes to be kept prisoner there, where shortly after hee departed this life, and was buried in the south Ile of the west part of the Church. Because Hardicanutus delaied to come ouer being sent for, hee was vtterlie reiected, and Harold, who before was king of the Mercies and Northumbers, was chosen king of all England, who shortly after expelled his mother in law Emma out of the Realme. Hee reigned three yeres, died at Oxford, and was buried at Westminster, and after at S. Clements without Templebar at London.

**H**ardycanutus the lawfull begotten Sonne of Canutus and Emma, as some as hee had gotten his fathers kingdome, fetched home his mother out of exile: and in reuenge of displeasure that was done to her, and of the murder of his brother Alured, hee commanded the carcasle of Harold to be digged out of the earth, and to be throwne into the Riuer of Thames, where by a fisher it was taken vp, and brought to the Danes, who buried it in a church yard, which they had at London.

1041

This is supposed to bee S.  
Clementes Church without Templebarre.

Whith done, the king appointed eight markes to be paid to euerie sailer in his

his name, and twelue markes to euery pilote or maffer, which tribute was to be paid of all England, so grieuous, that scarce any was able to beare it.

Shortly after, he sent for Edward the sonne of Etheldred his brother on the mothers side, to come into England, and embraced him with a loue and fauor. Being at a marriage feast pleasantly drinking with the Wife and other persons, in the midst of his cups he fell sodainly downe to the ground, and so remaining dumbe, departed this life the thirde yeere of his raigne, and was buried by his father at Winchester.

1043  
Alfredus Beuerl.  
I. Route.

Edward borne at Ilip besides Oxford, the son of Etheldred, whome Hardicanutus had sent for into England at the age of almost fourty yeeres, was by the helpe of Godwine crowned at Winchester.

Dane gilt.

This Edward for his excellent holinesse, is vntill this day called Saint Edward, who so soone as he had gotten his fathers kingdome, of his owne free will released the tribute of fourtie thousand poundes called Dane gilt, which the English people, euen from the vertie beginning of the raigne of the Danes, was compelled to paye to thre kings euery yeere. He was also the chiefe author and cause, that the law which we call the common Law, was first brought vp, being gathered together out of the lawes and ordinances of foure nations, which were receiued when the Island was subiect to diuers regiments and gouernances, to witte, of the Mercies, of the West Saxons, of the Danes, and of the Northumbers. He was hard to his mother, because she was hard to him in his minority, and also suspected with Alwine bishop of Winchester, whom he put in prison by counsell of Robert Archbishop of Canterburie: but after his mother had purged her selfe, Alwine was deliuered, and Robert the archbishop conueied himselfe out of England. He toke to wife Edgitha, the daughter of Earle Godwine, who was a Virgin most chaste, in whose breast there was a Schoole of all liberall Sciences (saith William of Malmesbury.) And for a further testimony of the said Quene, Ingulphus writeth thus: Vnto this Edward was giuen to wife, the daughter of Earle Godwine, a very beautiful Damosell, vertie well instructed in learning: and for behaviour, and the rest of her life, a virgin most chaste, & for humility most holy, named Edgitha, in no point fauouring of her father or brothers barbarousnes, but milde and modest, faithfull and honest, enemy, or hurtfull to no bodie: whereupon this verse was spoken of her:

The first coming  
up of the  
common lawe.  
Mercies, West  
Saxons,  
Danes, and  
Northumbers.

Sca. cro.

W. Malm.  
Ingulphus.

*Sicut spina rosam, genuit Godwinus Editham.*

I haue seene her (saith Ingulphus) often, when being yet but a boie, I came to see my father, dwelling in the Kings Court. And often, comming from Schoole, when I mette her, she would appose mee touching my learning and lesson, and falling from Grammar to Logicke, wherein she had some knowledge, would subtilly conclude an argument with me, and by a hand maid giue thee or foure pennes of money, and send me vnto the place where I should receiue some viduals, and so be dismissed.

Now concerning this Edward, he was borne in England, as is afore shewed, but brought vp in Normandie, and continuing there a long time, was in a  
manner



manner become French, bringing hither, and drawing out of Normandy herie manie, whom he promoted to diuers dignities, and exalted aboue measure. Among whome chiefly was one Robert a Monk of Gemtesence, made by him first Bishop of London, and after Archbishop of Canterbury. And William the kings Chaplaine made bishop of Dorchester.

Then beganne the whole land vnder the king, and other Normans brought in, to leaue off the English rites, and in manie things to imitate the maners of the French. All the noble men tooke it to be a great point of gentrie in their courtes to speake the French tongue, to make their Charters and dedes after the manner of the French, and to bee ashamed of their olde custome and vse, as well in this, as in many other things. But here of more in another place.

He sent for home into England his nephew Edward the sonne of king Edmund his brother, who by reason of his long absence out of the countrey, was commonly called the Outlawe. This is that Edward the sonne of king Edmund surnamed Ironside, which remained aliue, whome Canutus when hee had gotten England, had sent into Sweden with his brother. He knowing the aduise of his vnckle, came againe into England, and brought with him Agatha his wife, and Edgar, Margaret, and Christian his children, bozne in Paris nonla, in hope of the kingdome, where hee liued but a while. Thus Saint Edward being disappoynted, both of his nephew and his heire, for that Edward the Outlaw was both by nerenesse of blood, and by lawfull succession right heire vnto the kingdome, without delaie pronounced Edgar the Outlawes sonne, and his great nephew, to be heire of the kingdome, and gaue him to surname Adeling, which name in those daies was peculiar onely to kings children, which were bozne in hope and possibilitie of the kingdome: for this word Adeling, in the English tongue is as much to say, as Prince or Lord, the contrarte of which word is Vnderling, that is to say, a seruant or bondman: or, according to the Welch speech, Adeling signifieth heire: but because this Edgar was but young of yeeres, and within age, by his testament he made Harolde the sonne of Godwine (a stout man both in warre and peace) Regent, untill the young Edgar should bee of age to receiue the kingdome, and that then hee should be made the king: which thing Harolde with a solemne othe promised to see so performed and done. Notwithstanding, he like a Traytour (by force of armes) immediately after the death of Edward, refused the name of Regent, and pronounced himselfe king, which thing shortly after brought destruction both to himselfe, and to all England.

The significacion of the word Adeling.

Alfredus Beuerl, Speculum Hist. R. C. C. Flores Historiar.

In the yeere of our Lorde one thousand fortie and five, King Edward gathered a mightie nauie into the Hauen of Sandwich, against Magnus King of Norway, that meant to haue come into England, but through the warres that Swanus king of Denmarke moued against him, his tourney was broken off.

In the yeere of our Lord one thousand fortie and sixe, Leuingus Bishop of Worcester, Devonshire, and Cornewall deceased: and the bishopricke of Exeter and Cornewall was straight giuen to Leofrike Baron the kings Chamberlain.

The names of the Bishops of Exeter.

Chancelour.

cellour. And Alfredus a Sonke of Winchester was made Byshop of Worcester.

Magnus king of Norway, sonne to Vlanus, hauing chased Swaine king of Denmarke out of his realme, subdued that kingdome to himselfe.

In the yere 1047. Swaine king of Denmarke sent Embassadors to king Edward, requiring of him a naue against Magnus king of Norway, but none were sent.

In the yere of our Lorde 1048. Magnus being dead, Swaine recovered Denmarke, and Harold Haruager sonne to king Swadus of Norway, returned into Norway, and shortly after sent Embassadors vnto king Edward, offering to him peace and amitie, which hee accepted, and promised the like againe.

A great earthquake chanced on the first of March: a mortalitie of men and beasts followed, and lightning bent vp towines, and corne in the fields, where through rose such a dearth, that one horse load of wheate was solde for five shillings.

In the yere 1049. the Irish pirates with 36. ships entring into the mouth of Senerne, arrived in a place called Wiltstapham, and with the help of Grif. fish king of Southwales, spoiled about those coastes, and did much mischief. After this the saide Grif. fish, and those Irish pyzates toyning their powers together passe ouer the river Wite, and bent Dumenham, and slew all that they there found. Against whome Aldredus byshop of Worcester, and other of Worcester and Herefordshires hastily went, but the Welshmen whome they had in their company, sent messengers to Grif. fish, willing him to make speed against the Englishmen, which hee did, and slew many of them, and put the rest to flight.

In the yere 1050. Edfine Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, in whose tome the king placed Robert a Normane, late bishop of London, a great enemy to Duke Godwine, as shall be shewed in my larger Chronicle.

This yere king Edward and Edgitha his wife translated the bishops Sea from S. Germanes at Crispington, and placed the same at Excester: the king laying his right hand vpon the Altar of S. Peter, instituted one Leofrike bishop there, whom the king taking by the right hand, and the Queene by the left hand, called him in his bishops seate, in the presence of sixe dukes, and manie other noble men: at which king Iohn established, confirmed, and augmented by his Charter, the first yere of his raigne.

In the yere 1051. when the earth yielded not her fruites after the accus. and fertileness, but famine consumed very many inhabitants, insomuch that through dearth of corne, and want of bread, many thousands of men died: the good king Edward moued with compassion ouer the poore, released for ever all England of the most grieuous tribute called Dane Gilt. It is reported that the kings clemencie was moued to compassion, vpon occasion as followeth. When his eratores (for so were they then called) or treasurers (as we call them) had collected that grieuous tribute called Dane gilt, and brought it into the kings chamber, the king being called to see the heape of so great treasure, was

at

Towines bent  
by lightening.  
Great dearth  
of wheate.

Excester a Bi-  
shops see.  
Ex charta,  
Histon, Ecd.

Ingulphus.

The Dane Gilt  
discharged.

at the first beholding thereof much afraid, protesting, that he did see a Diuell dancing vpon the hespe of money, and making ouermuch ioy. And thereupon gaue comāndement, it should be forthwith rendered againe to the former owners thereof, & of so cruell an exaction, he would not keepe one farthing, but released the said tribute for euer. Eustace Earle of Bulloigne the elder, which had to wife Goda the sister of king Edward, arrived at Dover in Kent with a fewe ships, in the which Godwine whilst his souldiers rashly toke vp their Armes, they slew one of the towne-men, in reuenge whereof, not onely the quarreller, but other of his company, with many of the Towne were slaine, which doing so much offended Godwine Earle of Kent, that hee assembled a great power out of all his Countreies, of Kent, Sussex, and Wessex, and his eldest sonne Harold out of his Earldomes of Hereford, Gloucester, Hereford, Somerset, and Barkshires, & his son Swaine out of Essex, East England, Huntingdon and Cambridg shires, so that he had a great armie, wherewith he marched towards Gloucester, where the king then lay, vnto whom he sent messengers to denounce warre, except he would deliuer Eustace, and his fellow Normans and Boloni-ans, which held a Castell vpon the Cliffe of Dover: but king Edward when he vnderstoode that the armies of Leofrike Earle of Chester, Siward Duke of Northumberland, and Ranulph Earle of Hereford were comming to his aide, he answered stoutely, that hee would in no wise deliuer Eustace or the other demanded. But after this, Godwines armie entring into Gloucester, it was there agreed, that at a date appointed, the king and Earle Godwine should meete at London: & thus departing for the time, the king increasing his army, led the same to London, and Godwine with his power came to Southwarke on the other side of the riuer Thames into his own house, but there because his army by little & little slipped from him, he fled, and the king forthwith pronounced him, with his five sonnes, to be banished, who straightwaies with his wife, and two of his sonnes came to Thorney, where his Shippe being laden with gold, siluer, and precious things, he sailed toward Flanders: his other sonnes toke ship at Wyssow, and sayled into Ireland.

Marianus;

The king forsaketh his wife Quēne Edgitha for displeasure conceiued against her father duke Godwine, and sent her with one maiden vnto Wilton, in no honourable wise, where she was committed to the custody of the Abbesse, William of Malmesbury addeth, that her goods being taken from her to the uttermost farthing, she was sent to Wilton thre to bee kept vnder the kings sister, least whilst all her parents were in sorrow for their Countrey, she alone should rest in ease: but a namelesse author, that wrote a booke intituled Vita Edwardi, which he dedicated to the same Edgitha writeth thus. The king pretending this honest cause of diuorce, that in the Monasterie of Wilton, where she had bin brought vp, she should be, to quiet such troubles of the realme. Thus therefore with kingly honor, and princely company (yet sorrowfull) shee was brought to the bondes of the Monasterie of Wilton, where almost one whole yere in prayers and teares she expected the day of comfort.

Vita Edwardi.

At this time the most noble Earle, or Duke of Normans, William, with a great traine came into England, to king Edward, whom the king honourably receiuing,

king Edward  
did see the Di-  
uell dance.

W. Malmes.

receyving, and for a while keeping him, caried him about to his Cities, and kinglie Castels, and with condigne humanity shewed, at length gaue him many giftes, and dismissed him to his owne, but of the succession of the Realme, hope as yet or mention betwene them was not made.

William a Norman the kings Chaplaine toke vpon him the Bishoppicke of London.

1052

Emma late wife to the kings, Etheldred and Canutus, and mother to two kings, Hardicanutus and Edward, departed this life at Winchester, on the first of March, and was there buried.

Griffith king of Wales wasted a great part of Herefordshire, against whom, the men of that country & Normans out of the castel, went; but Griffith obtained the victory, slaying many of them, and toke a great pray.

In the next yere, Harold and Leofwine, sonnes of Earle Godwine, returning out of Ireland, entred Seuerne, arriued with many Ships in Somerset and Dorsetshires, spoiled manie Townes in the Country, slew many people, and returned with pray, then they saile about Portsmouth, &c.

Earle Godwine landed in Kent, gathered a power, sayled to the Isle of Wight, waisting along the Sea coastes, till his sonnes Harold and Leofwine came with a flauie, which being come together, they take their course vppon the Riuer of Thamis, came to Southwarke, and there staid for the tide, and then weighed by Anchor, and finding none that offered to resist them on the byldge, they sailed by the south side of the riuer, & his armie by land, placing it selfe vpon the banks side, made shew of a thicke and terrible battaile.

London by Dge.

After this, the flauie turned toward the North shore, as though it woulde haue compassed in the kings flauie: but they that were with the king, and with Godwine, abhorred to fight against their owne kindred and countrymen, wherefore a peace was made, Godwine with his sons were restored to all their former honoz, and the Normans were banished the land. Such as had given the King evil counsel against the English, a few excepted, as Robert the deacon & his son in law, Richard fits Scroby, Alfride the kinges sewer, Anfridus surnamed Geereffet, and other whom the king before the residue loued, & had been faithfull to him and his people, these were permitted to remain in England. Rob. Archbishop of Canterbury, Wil. Bishop of London, Wilsa B. of Lincoln & other Normans with much ado passed the sea, but Wil. bishop of London, for his honest conseruation being shortly called back again is restored to his bishoprick. Osberne Pentecoste, and his fellow Hugh yielded by their Castelles, and by licence of Earle Leofricus went through his Earldome into Scotlande, and were receiued of Machuta king of Scots.

Marianus;

1053

Refeshment to Griffith king of Southwales, for the often prayers which hee had taken at Belenden is gaue by commandement of king Edward, and his head sent to the king being then at Gloucester.

On the second day of Pasch, Earle Godwine as he sate at meat with the king, being suddenly stricken with a grievous sickness, he shanke downe down in the seat where he sate, which his sonnes, Earle Harold, Tosti, & Girthe be holding, bare him into the kings chamber, hoping that he shoulde haue reconered, but

Duke God.  
time dietb.  
Vita Edwardi.  
Marianus.  
Simon Duncl.  
Alfrid Beuer.



but when his strength failed him, on Thursday following he died in miserable torment, and was buried in the olde Monasterie of Winchester, whose Dukedome his sonne Harold toke vpon him, and his Carledome is giuen to Algarus the sonne of Leofricus Earle of Chester, thus hath Flurens of Winchester. Now to adde somewhat out of Vita Edwardi, Duke Godwine (saith he) and his sonnes being reconciled to the king, and the Countrey being quiet, in the second yere after, died the said Duke of happye memorie, whose death was the sorrow of the people, him their father, him the nourisher of them and the kingdome, with continuall weeping they bewailed: he was buried with wondrous honoꝝ in the old Monasterie of Winchester, giuing to the same Church giftes, ornaments and rentes of lands. Harold succeeded in his dukedome, which was a great comfort to the whole English nation, for in vertue both of bodie and minde he excelled all people, as an other Iudas Macchabeus, and was a friende to his Countrey, diligently supplying his fathers place, and walking in his steppes, that is to saie, in patience, mercie, and affabilitie to well willers, but to disquiet persons, theues and robbers, with a Lyons countenance he threatened his lust feueritie, thus much out of the auncient monument intituled Vita Edwardi.

Touching his issue (saith William Malmesbury) Godwine in his first age had to wife the sister of Knute king of England, Denmarke, and Norway, of whome hee begate a sonne, which when he was past his childe age, whilst hee proudly did ride vpon an horse, which the king his grandfather had giuen him, the horse bare him into the River of Thamis, where he was drowned, his mother also was slaine with a thunderbolt. After her he married another, by whome he had sixe sonnes, to wit, Harold, Swaine, Tostine, Woolnod, Girthe, and Leofwine, &c.

Siward Duke of Northumberland, ouercame Machute king of Scots, and made Malcolme the king of Cumberlands sonne king of Scots.

Siward Duke of Northumberland departed this life at Dorke, and was buried in the Monasterie of Golmanho, dedicated to S. Olave the Martyr, which he had builded.

Griffith king of South Wales, and Algare spoiled the Monasterie of Hereford, slew the Canons and bent the whole Citie. Duke Harold repaired, but Remelinus the Bishop redified it of his owne proper expences.

Cito Edgare son to king Edmund Ironside, by procurement of his uncle king Edward came into England, out of Hungarie, where he had long remained, being now sent by the Emperour honorably accompanied together with his wife Agatha, and their issue to wit, Edgar Adeling, Margaret and Christian, king Edward was purposed to haue made this Edward his heire of his kingdom, but he died, of Edgar Adeling his son ye shall heare more in the raigne of W. Conquerour, Margaret his daughter was married to Malcolme king of Scots, by whom she had issue, sixe sonnes and two daughters, Edgar, Alexander, David, Edmond, Ethelred, and Edward, three of the which were kings, to wit, Edgar, Alexander and David, Matild their sister married to H. Beauclarke king of England, her sister Marie was married to Eustace Earle of Boloigne,

1054

1055

1057

of

of Matild, came a daughter named Matild the Emperesse, mother to king Henry the second, Mary had a daughter named Matild also, married first to the earle of Mauricaine, and after vnto king Stephen.

King Edward founded the Colledge of Saint Marie Orie in the Countie of Deuon: hee gaue vnto it the Village of Odozege, being of the Citie of Rhoane.

Griffith king of Wales was killed by his owne people, his head with the head of his Ship, and his armour was sent to Earle Harold, which he straightwaie bringeth to king Edward.

Without the walles of London, vpon the riuer of Thamis, there was a little monasterie with a few Monks vnder an Abbot, here the king intended to make his Sepulchre, he commanded therefore, of the tenths of all his rentes the worke to bee begun euen from the foundation, which happilie proceeded till the same was finished, he also caused the Parish Church of Saint Margaret to bee newe builded without the saide Abbey Church, for before the saide Parish Church stode within the olde Abbey, in the south Ile: This Church of Saint Margaret that king Edward builded, continued till the daies of king Edward the first, at what time the staple of wools was at Westminster, and then the parishioners and staplers builded a new the said Church of S. Margaret, the great chancel excepted, which was now lately made before by the Abbot of Westminster. The D. also hauing beene brought vp in the auncient Monasterie of Runnes at Wilton, which Church was but of wood, began there a princelie worke of stone, and seruentlie persisted till the same was in princelie sort finished, dedicated, and indowd it with large possessions in Anno 1065.

This king Edward of famous memory (saith mine Author) before the date of his natiuitie was elected of God, who perseuering in chastitie, led all his life dedicated vnto God in true marriage, wherefore as we haue knotone proued by god and sufficient men being witnesses, God greatlie glorified him in his life with wonderfull signes, amongst the which, this that followeth was one. A yong woman married, but without children, had a disease about her iawes, and vnder her cheek, like vnto kernels, which they termed akoznes, and this disease so corrupted her face with stench, that shee coulde scarce without great shame speake to anie man, this woman was admonished in her slepe, to go to king Edward, and get him to wash her face with water, and she should be whole. To the Court she came, and the king hearing of this matter, disdained not to do it, and hauing a basin of water brought vnto him, he dipped his hand therein, and washed the womans face, and touched the diseased place, and this he did oftentimes, sometimes also signing it with the signe of the Crosse, which after he had thus washed it, the hard crust of skinn was softened and dissolued, and drawing his hand by diuers of the holes, out of the kernels came little wormes, whereof they were full, with corrupt matter and blood, the king still pressed it with his handes to bring forth the corruption, and disdained not to suffer the stench of the disease, vntill he had brought forth all the corruption with pressing, this done, he commanded her a sufficient allowance euery day for all things necessary, vntill she had receiued perfect health, which was within a weeke after,

and

1061  
S. Mary D.  
tery.

1064

Westminster.  
T. Clifford.

Vita Edwardi.  
Milton.

King Edward  
healed a wo-  
man of a dis-  
ease in her  
choate, since  
called the  
kings cuill.  
Vita Edwardi.  
W. Malmes.

and whereas she was euer before barren, withyn one yere she had a childe by her husband. And although this thing seeme strange, yet the forsmans said that he often did the like in his youth, when he was in forsmandoy.

Next after this, mine authoys affirme, that a certaine man named Vlsunius Spilcorne, the sonne of Vlmore of Nutgarshall, who when he becomed timber in the wood of Wimbrellena, laying him downe to sleepe after his sore labour, the blood and humours of his head so congeled about his eyes, that hee was thereof blind, for the space of 19. yeres, but then (as he had bene mowed in his sleepe) hee went wolwarde, and bare footed to manie Churches, in euerie of them to pray to God for helpe in his blindness, and then last of all hee came to the Court, where a long time hee stood at the entrie of the kings Chamber, an earnest suiter, till at the length the king bearing of the blindmans dreame, hee said, by our Lady Saint Mary, I would doe much with a good will, if it would please God through me to haue mercie vpon the poore wretch, and thus being giuen to it by his seruants, he laid his handes & the water vpon the blind mans eyes, and straightway the blood dropped plentifully from him, and being healed, he cried with a cherefull voice, I see thee, O king, I see thee, O king. Thus having recovered his sight, he kept the kings Pallace at Windsor a long season (for there hee was healed) after king Edward was dead, and decessed in the reigne of William Conquerour.

King Edward sickening on Christmas Eve, decessed on the fourth of Januarie, and was buried at Westminster, on the day of Epiphantie, when he had reigned 23. yeres, 6. monethes, and odde daies.

Alluridus Riualensis writting the life and death of this king, reporteth him to be a man bold of pryde, a lover of peace, a vanquisher of Ire, a contemner of couetousnes, &c. And for example he writteth, that as king Edward on a time lay waking in his bedde, it chanced that his Chamberlain or Steward, taking monie out of one of the kings coffers, lest the same coffer open after him, and went his wates about the kings businesse, which thing being espied of a yong fellow that was wont to wait on the kings table to beare away empty vessell, he came to the coffer, thinking the king had bene a sleape, and thus a great quantitie of monie into his bolome, and going awaie laid it where he thought best, and comming againe did the like, but when he came the thirde time, and that the king knew (as was thought) that his Chamberlaine was at hand, and willing the theefe to be boyde of danger, Thou art importunate saide the king, if thou wilt beleue me, take that thou hast, & get thee hence, for by Gods mother, if Hugelin come (for so was his Chamberlains name) he will not leaue thee one pennie, whereupon the yong fellow ran his way, and was neither bitered nor pursued by the king, and behold, when the Chamberlaine came, and perceived much monie to be gone through his negligence, he was in such sorow, that his sighes and other noyse that he made betwixt him, whereupon the king rising, and seeming not to knowe the matter, asked what hee asled to bee so troubled, which when the Chamberlaine had tolde what had happened, hoide thy peace said the king, happily he that hath taken it hath more neede then we haue of it, let him haue it, that which remaineth is enough for vs.

Alunus  
Spilcorne.

1066

Alured. Riual.

Hugelin the  
kings Cham-  
berlaine or  
Treasure.

1066  
The yeere of our  
Lord beginneth  
here at Christ-  
mas.

Rog. Houed.  
Simon Danel.  
Gualter Cousen.

William Con-  
querour cousin  
to king Ed-  
ward by the  
mothers side.

William duke  
of Normandie  
arrived at  
Demesey in  
Suffe.  
Castels of  
Demesey, and  
Hastings built.  
Ed.

The Normans  
sawes at Hauen.  
Englishmen  
Hauen all sawe  
the wyppes lip.

Girthe brother  
to Harold.

**H**arold, the eldest sonne of Godwine, Earle of Kent, hauing obtained faith of the nobilitie toke the Crowne, and that hee might in some behalfe seeme to make the young Edgar amends for the wrong he had done him, gaue him the Carle dome of Orford, and so from a king, he made him an Earle. But in the meane season England began to bee tossed & turmoiled with wars within and without: for the disheriting of the right heire is alwaies wont to be the beginning of ciuill wars.

The 24. day of Aprill, a Comet appeared, not onelie to the people of this land, but also in other parts of the world seauen daies. Toftus enuying (as men saide) the prosperitie of his brother, stirred by troubles in the Realme, for hee joining himselfe to Harold the king of Norway, assaulted England in twarlike sort, both by Sea and Land. Whose attempt whiles Harolde of England prepared to withstand, William Duke of Normandie, who notwithstanding hee was a bastard, was of kinne to Saint Edward in the third and fourth degree of consanguinitie, seeing a conuenient time and occasion offered to take the kings dome in, gathered a nauy of 896. ships, and came into Engl and with a beie well appointed armie, alledging, that by all right and title it was due to him, by the gift of king Edward his kinsman, and also by the couenant that was made, and by oth established betwixt Harold and him. Hee landed at Demesey, nere vnto Hastings in Suffe, on the 28. daie of September, where in going out of the ship, the dukes foote slipped, but he recovered it well enough, and one of the souldiers that were next him, cried vnto him, & said, Oh Duke thou hast gotten Engl and, and thou shalt be king: he fortified there a peece of ground, and intrenched it, leauing there a competent number of his men to keepe the same, went then to Hastings, where he built another fortresse, notwithstanding hee restrained all his host from rousing, and by the space of fiftene daies, hee kept himselfe so quietly, that a man would haue thought he had meant nothing lesse then to haue warre.

Harold, notwithstanding he was bare of men by reason of the battel that he had fought against Toftus and the menne of Norway, yet hearing of Williams comming cuen so bloody as he was in his armour he went towards Hastings, being garded with a very small company of souldiers, his fatal destinies so directing him forward headlong. Notwithstanding hee sent out before, them that should spy and view the number and force of the enemies, which when they were percelued to be among the Dukes tents, Duke William caused them to be led about the tents, and then made them good there, commanding them to be sent home to their Lord safe without harme. When they were returned agayne, Harold asked them what tidings they brought, and they with long commendation extolled the clemencie of the Duke, and in good sadnesse declared that all the host almost did seme to be priests, because they had all the ir face & both their lippes shauen. For the Englishmen did leaue their wypper lips vnshauen, with the haire growing alwaies, which thing also Julius Caesar in his commentaries declareth to be an heathen fashion of the old Bytains.

The king laughing at their follie, saide, they be no Priestes but men of warre, valiant in armes and stout in courage, Girthe his brother tooke the

two: de



woꝛde out of his mouth, and saide, soasmuch as the Normans be of such great force, me thinketh it were not wisely done of you to ioine battel with them, you cannot denie but that with oꝛ against your will, you made vnto him an othe, wherefoꝛe you shoulde do moze wiselye, if you keepe you out of this present necessity and strait, and do but onely leoparde vs, and let vs abide the daunger to make a shew of battaile, wee which neuer sware to him maie suffice draw our weapons in defence of our Country, you may lustily assist, and rescue vs if we sle, and you maie auenge our death, if wee be slaine. But such was the hardnesse of Harolde, that he woulde giue no good eare vnto his counsaile, because he thought it shame and reproch to turne his backe vnto any danger whatsoever, and with the same indiscreetenes, he draue away a monke that was duke Williams Ambassadoꝛ, onely he wished that God would be iudge betwixt duke William and him.

The Monke brought 3. offers, to wit, that either Harolde shoulde vpon certain conditions giue ouer the kingdome, oꝛ to be king vnder duke Wil. oꝛ else y in the sight of both the armies, they two shoulde try the matter with the sword betwixt them, fo: Duke William chalenged the kingdome (as hee sayde) because king Edward by the counsaile of Sigand Archbshoppe of Canterbarie, of Earle Godwine, and Earle Swardus, had giuen it vnto him, (a thing vnlke to bee true) if Harolde would denie this, hee offered to stande to the iudgement of the sea Apollolike.

Of which meslage, the Ambassadour had none other answer giuen then I told you, whereupon he departed, and encouraged the hartes of his countrymen to bat taile.

Then the foute Captaines on both sides set in order their battalles, according to the fashon of their Countries. The Englishmen (as was reported) when they had spent the whole night in drincking, singing and dauncing, not sleeping one winke, in the morning, without delay fell vpon their enemies, all the footemen with their poleaxes being intrenched with their targets before them, made a ranke that nothing coulde enter vpon them, which thing without doubt shoulde haue bene fo: their safegarde, if the Normans had not fained as though they would haue fled, and by that meanes caused them to break the arraie wherein they had set themselves. The king himselfe stode a fote by the St andard, and his brethren Girthe and Leofwine with him, to the ende that in such a common perill and leopardy, no man shoulde once thinke to fle oꝛ run away. Duke William after he had got the victoꝛy, sent this standert to the Pope, which was made after the shape & fashon of a man fighting, wrought by sumptuous art with gold & pretious stones: on y other side the Normans gaue themselves to acknowledging their sins, and to praier al the night, & in the morning they communicated the lords body. The footmen with their bowes & arrowes defended the first front, & the horsemen were set in the rearward deuided into two wings. D. William then with a loud voyce, declaring vnto them that God would be with them, because his quarrell was iust and good, called fo: his armour immediatly, and through the tumult and hasty running of his seruants, he put his coat of fence on the wꝛong way, to wit, the inner side outward, at which

Office made  
by Duke Will.  
to H. Harolde,  
challenge of  
Duke Williams

Englishmen  
more giuen to  
drincking then  
to praier.

Standert of  
king Harolde.

chance he laughed, and turning the right side outwards, said the pwoles of my dukedome shall bee turned into a kingdome. When they beganne to sing the songs of Rowland, to the intent that the example of that man of armes should inflame them that should fight, then after they had called to God for aide, they beganne the battell, fought fiercelie, neither of both parts giuing place till the daie was farre spent, which thing when duke William did perceyue, he gaue his men counsaile to make as though they would flye, & to withdrawe themselves out of the fieelde, by which deuice the ranke of the Englishmen was broken, and whyles they meant to smite their enimies on the backes, the Normans turned themselves in good order, and set vpon the Englishmen, being disperfed and out of array, and so put them to flight. Thus the Englishmen died a faire death in defence of their country, and yet they were not slacke in reuenging of themselves, for they stood hard to it, and made great slaughter of them that pursued them, for having gotten a hill, they overthrew the Normans into the valley, as they courageously did cline to attaine the said hill, and with their dartes which they shot, and stones which they cast vpon the Normans, that were vnder them, with small labour beat them al into the bottome. Also the Englishmen with a speedy, and to them well knowne passage, running through a certaine ditch, did overthrow so many of their enimies following them, that with the dead bodices, they made they balley even with the higher ground, thus it continued all that whole daie, that one while the English, another while the enimies had the better, so long as Harold was aliu, but in the closing of the evening, when he by the shot of an arrowe (which pierced his haine) was killed, the Englishmen fled awaie in the night season: one of the souldiours when Harold was slaine, did cut him in the legge with a sword, for the which deede duke William blaming him for his cowardline and shamefull act, put him out of the wars. Also duke William while he shewed his fiercenes in euerie place, three of his best hozes were slaine vnder him that day, the power of God so defending him that the enimie did drawe no blood of his bodie, notwithstanding the number of dartes throwne at him. The two brethren of king Harold, to wit, Gerthe & Leofwine were there slaine, with almost all the Nobles of England, and the Normans had the victorie, especially (saith Rowle) by meanes of their wooden bowes and arrowes (which the Englishmen had not then in vse) for Duke William commanded his men that some of them should shote disrealie forwarde, and other some vppward, by reason whereof, the arrowes shot vppward, destroyed the Englishmen as they scouped, and the arrowes shot disrealie afore, and wounded them that stood vpright. And king Harold himselfe (ballantly fighting) as afore is said, was shot through the haines, whereof he died, when he had reigned nine monethes and odde daies. This battell was fought nine miles from Hastings in Southeser vpon the 14. day of October being Saturday, in the yere of Christ 1066. There was slaine of Englishmen 67974. saith I. le Tailour in his history of Normandy, or 47944. after other. And of the Normans 6013. besides such as were drowned.

This was (saith Mathew Paris) the dolefull destruction of this swete and pleasant lande, the kinges whereof (meaning the Saxons) at their first coming,

Marston;

1. Rowle.

Siebertus.  
W. Gemincen.  
Gualter Cowen.  
1. Woodbridge.  
1. le Tailour.

Chronicle of  
Normandy.

ming, with barbarous countenance and gesture, in warlike sort, provoked all men to malice and hatred towardes them, who overcame all men by warre and subtiltie: but after they had receyved the Christian faith, and by little and little applyed their diligence vnto Religion, they neglected the exercise of armour, for the kings did change their habite, and some at Rome, and some in their owne Countrey, sought to change their tempoꝛall kingdomes for euerlasting kingdomes: and many which at their life time embraced worldly things, did yet distribute their treasures vnto all the works of mercy: but afterwards when charitie wayed colde, all their studie and trauaile in religion slacked, and then came the destruction of the inhabitantes: first at the comming of the Danes, and now in the expulsiō of the Englishmen by the Normans: for the noble men giuing themselves to gluttonie and lecherie, did not goe to the Church in the morning, as Christian men vse to doe, but lying in their Chamber dallying with women, did heare the Masse hastily rattel by diuine service. The Clerkes also that had taken orders, if one had learned but his Grammar, euerie one wondꝛed at him, the Monkes made a mocke of their rule, and were both finelie apparelled, & metelie well fed. The common people were brought to bee a pzale to the mightier sort, so that either their goods were souked from them, or else what was worse, their bodies were sent into farre Countries, to increase the riches of the great men that oppressed them, many when they had fulfilled their lust, and had got their maides with child, they sent them out to bee common harlots, all men in generall gaue themselves to drinking and gulfing, and in that kind of exercise they continued sometimes night & day. These vices made the Englishmen effeminate, & womanish, wherof it came to passe, that running headlong against Duke William, they lost themselves and their country, with one, and that an easie and light battaile.

The description  
of the Barons.  
Mathew Paris.  
W. Malmeſ.  
Flores. autorian.

To conclude, the Englishmen were then apparelled in garments to the mid knee, their haire rounded, and their beards shauen, all saue the vpper lip, their armes adozned with golden bracelets, and their skin marked, painted, and printed, at meat they forced themselves to sarfet, and dranke til they vomited, these last qualittes they dealed to them that overcame them, but I would not (saith mine author:) you should thinke I speake these euilles of all Englishmen, for I know that many of the Cleargie, did simply obserue the path of holinesse, and also of the lay people that did endeavour to serue God, &c.

Apparell of the  
English

When Duke William had gotten the full victory, he caused his men that were slaine to be buried, and also gaue leaue that if any man would they might burie their enemies in like manner, he gaue the body of Harold vnto Haroldes mother, at her request, taking no money, although by messengers she offered much, thus she receiuing his bodie, buried the same at Waltham in Cambridgeshire, in a Colledge which hee himselfe had founded to the honour of God and Saint Crosse, and had placed there a Deane and xi. Canons.

The death of Harold being knowne, Edwin and Morcar, two brethren of great towardnes, Charles, the one of Mercia, the other of Northumberland, which with their people had withdrawn themselves from the battaile, came now to London, and sending the Queene Edgitha, the late kinges sister vnto

the city of Chester, they solicited the citizens to erect either of them to the kingdome, which enterprize of theirs being frustrated, they departed into Northumberland, supposing that Duke William would neuer haue come thither. The rest of the nobles with the Citizens of London would haue erected Edgar the nephew of Edmond Ironside to the kingdome, and promised with him to giue a new batteile to Duke William, but through the danger that was at hand, and the discorde that was among themselves, they did neyther. So that the Englishmen if they had agreed together, might haue reformed the decay of their Countrey, but whilst they would haue none of their owne Countrey men to be king, they brought in a stranger. In this meane time Duke William determining to passe to London, turned south of the right waie, ouer the West coastes of England, wasting and destroying through Suffex, Kent, Surrey, Hampshire, & Barkeshire, till he came to Warringsford, or Wallingford, from thence he passed ouer the Riuer of Thamis, commanding his army to settle themselves there for a while, from thence he passed through Oxfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and Hertfordshire, not ceasing to burne townes, and to slaie the people, till he came to Berkeham, or Berkehamstede, where staying for a time, (for cause as shal be shewed) thither came to him Aldred Archbyschop of Dork, Wolstane Byschoppe of Worcester, Wilshire Byschop of Hereford, Clito Edgare, and all other the noble men about London, with many other, who altogether submitted themselves giuing pledges, and sware fealtie vnto him, with whome also he made a league, but not withstanding he permitted his men still to burne townes, and to take spoyles.

W. Gemitien.

Th. S. Albari  
Abbot of Saint  
Albones his  
policie against  
duke William.

The cause that Duke William staied at Berkehamstede, was this, there was at that time an Abbot of Saint Albones named Frederike, who when he hearde of duke William his comming into Hertfordshire, hee caused the woods belonging to his Church round about Saint Albones, and so in the waies towardes London to be felled, so that no man could passe that way for the trees that were layde crosse one ouer an other, and thus this Abbot for the time, kept his Monasterie from spoiling, for duke William coulde not come there, but was forced to coast about, to the Castell of Berkehamstede (as is afore sayd) whither vnder suretie he sent for Fretherike the Abbot, and demanded of him, why such felling of woods was made about him more then in other places: whereunto Frederike answered, and said, I haue done but as becommeth me, for if the Spirituall persons throughout this land had done their endeavour against thee as they mought and ought to haue done, it shoulde not haue bene in thy power to haue entered the land so farre: quoth duke William, is the spiritualitye of England of such power? If I may liue and enioy that which I haue gotten, I will make their power lesse, and especially I mind to begin with thee. The Abbot perceiuing hee had saide too farre, as soone as hee coulde departed home to his monasterie, where calling a chapter of his brethren, he told them of duke William, what he had said, and then taking his leaue of them, departed and went to the Isle of Gely, from whence he neuer returned to his Abbey.

When Gyffmaste approached, Duke William marched with all his armie towardes London, whose scouts comming together before him, to see the manner



manner and behaviour of the people, found them assembled in the streets, determined to resist Duke William with all their might; but when the Duke came thither, he made a great slaughter of the Citizens, till perceiving themselves not able to resist him, they submitted themselves, and gave pledges unto him.

And thus ended the reign of the Saxons, who were first sent for by Vortiger king of the Brytaines, as is aforesaid, about the yere of our Lord 450. and had continued sometimes in wars with the Brytaines, then with the Danes, and now with the Normans the space of 600. yeres.

*Verses of the Blazing Starre, which appeared on the 24. of Aprill  
last before passed, as is shewed.*

A thousand sixe and sixtie yere, it was, as we doe read,  
when that a Comet did appeare, and Englishmen lay dead.  
Of Normandy Duke William then, to England ward did saile,  
who conquered Harold with his men, and brought this land to baile.

## ¶ King William the Conquerour.



William Duke of Normandy, surnamed *Annoreg. 1.*  
Conquerour, Bastard sonne of Robert the  
first, Duke of that Duchie, and cousin ger-  
mane unto King Edward on the mothers  
side, hauing slaine King Harold, and ob-  
tained the victory in the battaile nere vnto  
Hastings in Sussex, on the 14. day of  
October being Saturday, in the yere of  
our Lorde 1066. And also now hauing ob-  
tained the Citie of London (as is aforesaid  
shewed) was there both by the Normans  
and English men chosen and proclaymed  
king on Christmasse day, which that yere  
fel on the Sunday, and forthwith the same

1067

day crowned, not by Stigand Archbishop of Canterburie and Primate of all  
England, who refused (as some saide) to crowne him William, for that by blood  
and crueltie hee had obtained the kingdome; but other affirme, that William  
would not take the crowne at his hands, because hee was chalenged of Pope  
Alexander, not to haue receiued the Pall Canonically, Robert a Norman,  
some time from London by king Edward translated to be Archbishop of Can-  
terburie, as then liuing: wherefore Aelred Archbishop of Yorke, associating  
vnto him Wulston Bishop of Worcester, and Walter Bishop of Hereford,  
with others of the nobilitie of England, annointed and crowned him king at  
Westminster: but before he was consecrated the Archbishop requested an oide,  
W, Malmes.

Deh of King  
William.

which he took on the Altar of S. Peter, where he promised before the Cleargie, and all the people, to defend the holy church of God, the Pastors thereof, and all the people subiect vnto him, he should iustlie gouerne: he should ordaine good lawes, and obserue true iustice, and to the bittermost of his power to withstand all rapines, and false iudgements.

Normans  
beards alwaies  
shauen.

This William was of a good stature, prowde of Port, verie coslie, and bigge bodied, with a cruell countenance, and a balde forehead, his bearde alwaies shauen, for so was the custome of the Normans, he had great strength in his armes, so that manie did wonder at him, because no man coulde draw his bowe, which hee would bende sitting on his horse backe, stretching out the string with his fote: hee made great and coslie feastes vpon high and principall daies, keeping his Christmas offering at Gloucester, his Easter offering at Winchester, and his Whitsun offering at Westminster, in eche place being crowned, and this he vsed euerie yeere so long as he continued in England. He caused all his nobles of what estate soeuer they were to come to those feastes, to the ende that the Embassadors of forreine countries might wonder at the sight of such a multitude of people and preparation of delicate, and daintie fare, and hee was at no time more courteous, or ready to grant pardon to anie that had offended, then at such times, onely couetousnesse of money was the thing, whereof he mought worthily be blamed.

Thomas Spot-  
Wil. Thorne.

King William took his iourney towardes the Castle of Douer, to subdue that, and the countie of Kent: which when the Archbishop Stigand, and Eglefine the Abbot of Saint Augustines (being as it were the chiefeest Lordes and gouernours of all Kent) did perceiue and consider, that the whole Realme was in an euill state, and that whereas in this Realme of England, before the comming of the foresaide Duke William there were no bondmen, now all, as well noble men, as the common people, were without respect made subiect vnto the perpetuall bondage of the Normans, taking an occasion by the perill and danger that their neighbours were in, to prouide for the safeguard of themselves and their Countrey, they caused to assemble at Canterburie all the people of the Countie of Kent, and declared to them the perils and daungers imminent, the miserie that their neighbours were come into, the pride and insolencie of the Normans, and the hardnesse and grieue of bondage and seruile state: whereupon all the people rather choosing to ende their infortunate life, then to submit themselves to an vnaccustomed yoke of seruitude and bondage, with a common consent determined to maete duke William, and to fight with him for the lawes of their Countrey. And the foresaide Stigand, the Archbpy. Shoppe, and the Abbot Egelsin, choosing rather to die in battaile, then to see their nation in so euill an estate, being encouraged by the examples of the holy Macchabees, became Captaines of the armie. And at a date appointed all the people met at Swanescombe two miles west from Grauesende, and being hidden in the woods, lay patiently in waite for the comming of the foresaid Duke William. And because it can not hurt to be very wary in such cases, they agreed before hande, that when the Duke was come, and the passages on euerie

side

she stopped, to the end he should no waie be able to escape, euerie one of them, as well horsemen as footemen, should brace bowghes in their handes. The next daie after, when the duke was come into the fields & territories nere unto Swanecombe, and saue all the Countrey set and placed round about him, as it had bene a stirring and moving word, and that with a meane pace they approached and drew nere unto him, with great discomfiture of minde hee wondered at that sight. And as soone as the Captaines of the Kentishmen sawe that Duke William was inclosed in the middelt of their armie, they caused the Trumpets to be sounded, their banners to bee displayed, and theyr downe their bowghes, and with their bowes bent, their swordes drawne, and their speares and other kinde of weapons stretched forth, they shewed themselves ready to fight: Duke William and they that were with him, stood (as no marvaile it was) soze astonied, and amazed, and hee which thought that he had already al England fast in his fist, did now dispaire of his owne life. Therefore on the behalfe of the Kentishmen were sent unto Duke William, the Archbishop Scigand, and Egellin Abbot of Saint Augustines, who tolde him their message in this sort.

My Lorde Duke, beholde the people of Kent cometh forth to meete you, and to receive you as their liege Lord, requiring at your hands the thinges which pertaine to peace, & that under this condition, that all the people of Kent may enjoy for ever their ancient liberties, and may for evermore use the lawes and customes of their Countrey, otherwise they are ready presently to bidde battaile to you, and them that be with you, and are minded rather to die here altogether, then to depart from the lawes and customes of their Countrey, and to submit themselves unto bondage, whereof as yet they neuer had experience. The Duke seeing himselfe to be drawn into such a strait and narrow pinch, consulted a while with them that came to him, prudently considering, that if he should take any repulse or displeasure at the handes of this people, which be the key of England, all that euer hee had done before, should be undone againe, and of no effect, and all his hope and safetie should stand in daunger and leopordie: not so willingly as wisely hee graunted the people of Kent their request. So when the covenant was established, and pledges given on both sides, the Kentishmen being ioyful, conducted the Normans (who also were glad) unto Rochester, and yielded up to the Duke, the Earle dome of Kent, and the noble Castle of Dover. Thus the ancient liberties of England, and the lawes and customes of the Countrey, which be the coming of Duke William out of Normandy, were equally kept throughout all England, bee (through this industrie and earnest travell of the Archbishoppe Scigand and Egellin Abbot of Saint Augustines) remaine inuolubly observed untill this day, onely in the County of Kent. Thus saith Thomas Spor, after him William Thorne.

King William brought the Iewes from Boone to inhabite here: he receiued homage, oth of fidelitie, and pledges of the nobles, and commanded that in euerie towne and village a bell should be rung euerie night at eight of the clocke, and that all people should then put forth their fire and candle, and goe to bedde,

which

The ancient liberties and lawes of England, remaine in Kent only.

Jewes brought into England. Fire and light for them to the Englishmen.

which order was obserued through this Realme during his raigne, and the raigne of William his sonne. Thus were the English men forced to imitate the Normans in habite of apparell, shauing off of their beardes, seruice at the table, and in all other outward gestures.

The Historiographers of that time accompted the yere to begin at Christmas, after which accompt then beganne the yere 1067. but after the accompt of England nowe obserued, the yere beginneth not till the twentieth of March following.

And now because those houses maie not be forgotten vnto whom king W. disposed the landes and possessions of this Realme for their good seruice, I haue thought good to publish the names of them as heretofore I haue done, out of the Chronicles of Normandy, gathered by William Tayleur of Abbeane.

To wit, Odo Bishoppe of Baion: Robert Earle of Mortaigne: These two were brethren to Duke William by his mother: Bandonni de Buillon: Roger Earle of Beaumont, that was surnamed with the Beard, of him came the linage of Mellent.

The Chroni-  
cles of Nor-  
mandy writ-  
ten in French  
by Guillem  
Tayleur.

Guillam Maller  
Guilliam Fitz Osberne  
Le sire de Môrfort sus  
Rille.  
Guillam de vielz Pôr  
Neel de saint Saeur le  
vicont.  
Le sire de Feugiers  
Henry sire de Ferrers  
Le sire Dambemare  
Guilliam sire de Romare  
Le sire de Lichare  
Le sire de Tonque  
Le sire de la Mare  
Le sire de Nehabon  
Le sire de Piron  
Le sire de Beaulon  
Le sire Damnon  
Le sire de Soteuile  
Le sire de margneuille  
Le sire de Tankeruille  
Eustace Dambleuille  
Le sire de Magneuille  
Le sire de Grimsuille  
Guillam Crespin  
Le sire de saint Martin  
Guillam de Moulinous  
Le sire de Pins  
Gieffray sire de Mayenne

Affroy de behunt  
Affroy & Mauigr. de  
Cartaict.  
Guillam de Garennes  
Hue de Gournay sire le  
de Bray.  
Le conte Hue de Dournay  
Enguement le Laigle  
Le vicont de Tournars  
Richart Donnemchni  
Le sire de Biars  
Le sire de Saligny  
Le Boutellier daubegny  
Le sire de Marre  
Le sire de Vetry  
Le sire de Lacy  
Le sire du vall Darie  
Le sire de Tracy  
Hue sire de Montfort  
Le sire de Piigny  
Hamon de Brayen  
Le sire de Spinay  
Le sire de Port  
Le sire de Torchy  
Le sire de Iort  
Le sire de Riuers  
Guilem Moyon  
Raoul Tesson de Chig-  
nelois.

Rogier Marmion  
Raoul de Gael  
Aue Neel de Biars  
Parnel du Monstier  
Bertram le Tort  
Hubert Robert  
Le sire de Seukee  
Le sire de Dormal  
Le sire de Brenal  
Le sire de saint Iehan  
Le sire de Bois  
Le sire de Homme  
Le sire de Sauffay  
Le sire de Cailly  
Le sire de Semilly  
Le sire de Tilly  
Le sire de Romely  
Martell de Basqueuill  
Le sire de Praux  
Le sire de Gonyes  
Le sire de Sainteaulx  
De Mullox

*These Arabers of the  
vale of Rueill, and of Bre-  
tueill, and of manie other  
places.*

Le sire de sein & Saen  
Le sire de la Rimer  
Le sire de Salnarille



Le sire de Tony	Guillem de Colombiers	Le sir de Cambray
Eude de Beaugien	Hue sir de Bollebec	Le sir Dauncy
Le sire de Ollie	Richard sir Dorbec	Le sir Fonteney
Le sire de Sacy	Le sir de Donnebos	Le counte Dcureux
Le sire de Valfye	Le sir de trois gros	Le sir de Roberchil
Le Bisquams de Chaymes.	Le sir Mont Fiquet	Alan sergent Counte de Britaigne.
Le sire de Sap	Hue le Vigot alias Bigot de Maletot.	Le sir de saint Wallery
Le sire Duglossé	Le sir de la Haye	Le counte Deden
Le sire de Nime	Le sir de Bracy	Gualtar Guisart, counte de Longeuille.
Le sire de Blamuille	Le sir de Moubray	Le sir de Scouteuile
Le sire de Bremon	Le sir de Say	Le counte Thomas Danbinal.
Le vidam de Partenay	Le sir de Lafert	Guillem de Hoimes & Darques.
Raoul de Mormont	Bonteuillam Tronsebours.	Le sir de Barreuile
Pierre de Bailleul	Guillem Patris de la land.	Le sir de Breante
Sir de Fescamp	Hue de Mortemer	Le sir de Freanuile
Le sir de Beaufault	Le sir Donuiller.	Le sir de Panilly
Le sir de Tillieres	Le sir Donnebant	Le sir de Clere
Le sire de Pacy	La sir de saint Cler.	Tostam dubeck
Le seneschall de Torchy.	Robert le sirz Herneys duke Dorlians.	Le sir de Mangny
Le sir de Gacy	Le sir de Harecourt	Roger du Mont
Le sir de Douilly	Le sir Creuecure	Gomeri Comes,
Le sir de Sancy	Le sir de Dancourt	Almary de Touaers.
Le sir de Tourneur	Le sir de Brunetot	
Le sir de Praores		

*Beside a very great number of knights and esquires that were under them. Thus farre out of the Chronicle of Normandy, the other following are taken out of a Table sometime in bataille Abbey.*

Aumerle	Albeny	Bonylayne	Broune
Audeley	Asperemound	Barbayon	Beke
Angilliam	Betram	Berners	Bowlers
Argentoun	Burtecourt	Braybuf	Banestre
Arundell	Bæhus	Brand	Belomy
Auenant	Byseg	Bonuile	Belknappe
Abel	Bardolf	Burgh	Beauchamp
Awgers	Bassier	Buithy	Bandy
Angenoun	Bohun	Blundell	Broyleby
Archer	Bayliffe	Breron	Bunel
Asperuile	Bondeuile	Belasyse	Belot
Amonerduile	Barbason	Bowser	Beufort
Arey	Becc	Bayons	Baudewine
Akeny	Bures	Bulmere	Burdon

Berteuyley

Berteuyley	Clarell	Dela Pole	Fitz Morice
Barre	Camuine	De la Lind	Fitz Hughe
Buffcuile	Chaunduyt	Dela Hill	Fitz Warren
Blunt	Claruaus	De la Wate	Faunuile
Beawper	Chantilowe	De la Watche	Formay
Bret	Colet	Dakeny	Formiband
Barret	Cressy	Dauntre	Frison
Barnuale	Courtenay	Defnye	Finer
Barry	Constable	Dabernoun	Fitz Vrcy
Bodyt	Chaucer	Damry	Furniuall
Berteuile	Cholmelay	Daucros	Fitz Herbert
Bertine	Corneuile	De la Vere	Fitz Iohn
Belew	Champeney	De Liele	Gargraue
Bushell	Carew	De la Warde	Graunson
Beleners	Chawnos	De la Planch	Gracy
Buffard	Claruuile	Danway	Glaunuile
Boteler	Champaine	De Hewfe	Gouer
Botuile	Carbonell	Disard	Gascoyne
Brasard	Charles	Durant	Gray
Belhelme	Chareberge	Drury	Golofer
Braunche	Chawnes	Estrange	Grauns
Bolesur	Chawmont	Escutaule	Gurly
Blundel	Cheyne	Escriols	Gurdon
Burdet	Cursen	Engayne	Gamages
Bagot	Conell	Euers	Gaunt
Beawpount	Chayters	Esturney	Hanfard
Bools	Cheyne	Foluile	Hastings
Belesfroun	Cateray	Fitz Water	Haulay
Barchampe	Cherecourt	Fitz Marmaduk	Hufie
Camos	Chaunuile	Fibert	Herne
Canuile	Clereney	Fitz Roger	Hamelyn
Chawent	Curly	Fitz Robert	Harewell
Chancy	Clyfford	Fanecourt	Hardel
Couderay	Deanuile	Fitz Phillip	Hecker
Coluile	Dercy	Fitz William	Hamound
Chamberlaine	Dine	Fitz Paine	Harecord
Chambernounge	Dispencer	Fitz Alyne	Iarden
Cribet	Daniel	Fitz Raulfe	Iay
Corbine	Denyse	Fitz Browne	Ianuile
Corbet	Druell	Foke	Iasparuile
Coniers	Deuaus	Freuile	Karre
Chaundos	Dauers	Faconbrige	Karron
Coucy	Doringfels	Frissel	Kyriell
Chawothe	Darell	Filioll	Le strange
Claremaus	Delabere	Fitz Thomas	Leuony

Latomere	Mandute	Punchardon	Traynel
Loueday	Manle	Pynchard	Taket
Logenton	Malory	Placy	Talbot
Leuel	Merny	Patine	Tanny
Le Scrope	Muffet	Pampillion	Tibtoxe
Lenare	Menpincoy	Poterell	Truffell
Litterile	Mainard	Pekeney	Turbeuile
Lucy	Morell	Peruinke	Turuile
Lislay, or Liele	Morley	Penicord	Totet
Longspes	Mountmartin	Quincy	Tauers
Longschampe	Myners	Quintine	Torel
Lastels	Mauley	Rose	Tirell
Lind-Sey	Mainwaring	Ridle	Totels
Loterel	Mantell	Rynel	Tauerner
Lindsey	Mayel	Rous	Valence
Longuaile	Morton	Ruffel	Vancord
Le Vawfe	Neuile	Rond	Vauafour
Loy	Neumarche	Richmond	Vender
Lauc	Norton	Rocheford	Verder
Le dispenser	Norbet	Reymond	Verdon
Marmilou	Norece	Seuche	Aubrie de
Moribray	Newborough	Seint Quintine	Vere
Moruile	Neele	Seint Omer	Vernoune
Manley	Normanuile	Seint Amond	Venables
Malebranche	Otenel	Seint Leger	Venoure
Malemaine	Olibef	Soueruile	Verland
Mufchampe	Olifaune	Sanford	Verlay
Mufgraue	Oyfell	Somery	Vernois
Menilebillers	Oliford	Seint George	Verny
Mortmaine	Oryoll	Seint Les	Vilan
Mufe	Pigot	Sauine	Vmframuile
Marteine	Percy	Seint Clo	Vnket
Mountbocher	Perecoun	Seint Albine	Vrnall
Maleuile	Perfhale	Seint Barbe	Wake
Mountney	Power	Sandeuile	Walenger
Maleherbe	Paynel	Seint More	Warde
Mufgros	Pecche	Seint Scudemor	Wardebus
Mufard	Peuerell	Towrs	Waren
Mautrauers	Perot	Toget	Wate
Merke	Picard	Talybois	Wateline
Murres	Pudsey	Tuchet	Wateuile
Montague	Pimeray	Truffor	Woly
Mantalent	Pounsey	Trusbur	Wyuell

This yere through the great sute and labour of William the Norman, then  
 bishop of London, king William granted the charter and libertties to the same  
 William.

Therefore the  
Bayer and  
Citizens of  
London re-  
paired to Pauls.

Epitaph of  
William by-  
shop of London.

William Byshop, and Godfrey Portgreue and all the bourgeois of the Citie of London, in as large sort as they enjoyed the same, in the time of S. Edward before the conquest: in reward thereof, the Citizens haue fired on his graue, being in the middlest of the great West Ile of S. Pauls church in London, this Epitaph following:

*G*uilielmo viro sapientia & vita sanctitate claro, qui primum dino Edwardo regi & confessori familiaris, nuper in episcopum Londonensem erectus, nec multo post apud inuictissimum principem Guilielmum Anglia regem eius nominis primum, ob prudentiam fidemque singularem in consilium adhibitus, amplissima huic urbi celebrissima priuilegia ab eodem impetrauit: Senatus populûsque Londonensis bene merenti posuit. Sedit Episcopus Annos 20. Decessit anno à Christo nato 1070.

*Hæc tibi, clare pater, posuerunt marmoracines,  
Præmia non meritis æquiparanda tuis:  
Namque sibi populus, te Londoniensis amicum,  
Sensit, & huic urbi non leue præsidium,  
Reddita libertas duce te, donat æque multis,  
Te duce, res fuerat publica muneribus.  
Diuitias, genus, & formam breuis opprimat hora,  
Hæc tua sed pietas, & benefacta manent.*

The same in  
English.

**T**H William a man famous in wisdom and holines of life, who first with S. Edward the king and Confessor being familiar, of late preferred to be bishop of London, and not long after for his prudence and sincere fidelitie, admitted to be of counsell with the most victorious Prince William king of England, of that name the first, who obtained of the same great and large priuiledges to this famous citie: The Senate and citizens of London to him ha- uing well deserued, haue made this. He continued Bishop twenty yeeres, and died in the yeere after Christ his natiuitie 1070.

These Marble monuments to thee thy Citizens assigne,  
Rewards (O Father) farr vnfit to those deserts of thine.  
Thee vnto them a faithfull friend, thy London people found,  
And to this towne, of no small weight, a stay both sure and sound:  
Their liberties restorde to them, by meanes of thee haue beene,  
Their publike weale by meanes of thee, large gifts haue felt and seene.  
Thy riches, stocke, and beauty braue, one houre hath them suppress,  
Yet these thy vertues and good deedes, with vs for euer rest.

Marianus,  
Ypodigma.  
Neustr.

W. de Wiliam.

King William (leaving his brother Odo byshoppe of Bayon, and William Fitz Osborne whome he had made Earle of Hereford, to be wardens of Eng- land) returned into Normandie, which at that time was bent to shake from him. He took with him, Edgar Etheling, Stigandus archbishop of Canterburie, Frederike Abbot of S. Albons, Egelnothus Abbot of Glasenburie, Edwin Duke of Mercia, Morcarus Duke of Northumberland, Walden Earle of North- hampton



hampton and Huntington, Roger late Earle of Hertford, Renulph Earle of Cambridge, Gospatrike Earle of Cumberland, Gualter the son of Siward, and many other nobles of England, thinking they would be truer to him in a forreine countrey then in their owne : by their diligence he subdued the rebelling Normans.

When winter was at hand, king William returned, and set an imposable tribute on the English men.

William Conquerour gave to Geoffrey Magnaule the Earldome of Essex, to the which Earldome, of aunient right belonged bearing of the kings standard, saith the Chronicle of Waltham.

After this, going into Devonshire, he besieged Excester, which the Citizens and other Englishmen held against him. The Countesse Githa mother of king Harold, and sister to Swano king of Denmarke with many other fleeing out of the Citie escaped, and got them over into Flanders, and the Citizens yielded to the king.

Mathild wife to king William came forth of Normandie, and on Whitson-daye, was consecrated Quene by Aldred Archbishop of Yorke, Marleswine, Gospatrike, and other noble men of Northumberland, to anoyde king Williams rough and boisterous dealing, and fearing to bee put in ward, taking with them Edgar Etheling, with his mother Agatha, and his two sisters, Margaret and Christian, went by sea into Scotland, where they were received, and well entertained of Malcolme king of Scots, who took Margaret the sister of Edgar to wife. King William with an army went to Nottingham, and there builded a Castell. He also went to Yorke, and there caused two Castles to be builded, and put in them garrisons: he commanded also Castles to be made at Lincoln, and in other places. Whiles these things were in doing, Godwine and Edmund furnished the Great, sons to king Harolde, returning forth of Ireland, landed in Sommersetshire, where Ednothus that was master of the horse to king Harolde, mette them with a great army, and fighting with them was slaine amongst many other. The two brethren having got the victorie, toke manie great prizes in Cornewall and Devonshire, and returned into Ireland.

It was the practise of king William to put the Englishmen into all places of danger, by that means to weaken their force : for against certaine English men that after the battel at Hastings fled into Denmark & Ireland, and came againe the third yere after with a great power, he set an English captain with an hoste of Englishmen, so both the armies fought, and brought the victorie to the king : the strangers were chased into Ireland, but with great slaughter of themselves, and losse of their capitaine Ednothus, a man excellent in the time of the English men, both at home in his own countrey, and also abroad. He was the father of Harding, who lived in the time of king Henry the second. Thus when the power of the lay people was overthrowen, he also established, that no Clarke of the English nation should be suffered to come to any promotion. He abhorred much the gentlenesse of Knouth which sometime had bene king of England, for that he restored the m, whome he had overcome, unto all their

Excester besieged.

Anno reg. 1.  
1068  
Ypodigma.  
The king of  
Scots married  
Margaret sister  
to Edgar.

Castles at  
Nottingham  
and Yorke  
builded.

Harding the  
sonne of Ed-  
nothus.

promoted.

promotions and honours: whereby it came to passe, that when hee was dead, the inhabitants did easily expulse the strangers, and challenge theire olde right, and title.

Ingulphus.

Hereward re-  
turneth into  
England.

Hereward  
made knight.

But king William deposing them, distributed the Earldomes, Barones, Bishoppikes and dignities to his Normans: onely Hereward afoze mentioned in the yere of our Lord 1062. had reward with a prosperous end. For being in Flanders, and hearing, that the realme was subdued by strangers, and that his fathers inheritance (his father Leofrike being dead) was given to a Norman, and that his mother a widow was much troubled and injured, cometh with spede into England with his wife Thurfride, and gathering together a companie of his kindred, chased them out of his fathers inheritance. Then goeth to his uncle by the fathers side, then Abbot of Peterborough, and first making confession of his sinnes, and absolution received, watcheth all night in the Church, in prayers and fasting, and the next daie offered his sword upon the Altar: and after the Gospell, the Abbot put the same halowed sword about Herewards necke, with a benediction, and communicating the holy mysteries of Christ, from thenceforth remained a lawfull souldiour or knight.

Ancient deedes.

This custome of consecration of a souldiour, the Normans abhorred: and not onely this custome, but manie other they did alter and change: for the English men making deedes and charters, which to the time of king Edward had bene firme, by the subscriptions of the faithfull with Crosses of Golde, and other holie seales, the Normans did condemne those charters and deedes, and appointed them to make their charters and deedes firme, with a printe, set upon waie by the speciall Seale of euerie one, vnder thre or foure witnessers.

At the first, many farmes and manors were given by bare wordes without writing: onely with the sword of the Lord, or his headpiece, with a horne, or standing goblet: and manie tenements, with a quill, with a horse combe, a bow, or arrow, to wit in the beginning of his raigne: but in the yeres after this manner was changed. They did so much abhorre the very speech, that the lawes of the land were pleaded in the French tongue. And boies in Scholes were taught their letters, and principles in Grammar in French, and not in English, &c.

Outlawes.  
A customes.

Among the lawes of William Conquerour, there is one of the Church as followeth. If any man breake the peace of the Church violently, he is in the iurisdiction of the bishops to haue iustice, but if the partie that is guiltie, flee from it, or arrogantly refuse the Bishops order, the king within forty daies shall be enformed of it, who will presently take suretie of him, that he shall satisfie God first, and then the king: but if within thirtie daies hee can not bee found, the king by the wordes of his owne mouth shall outlawe him, and if after he be found, and maie be kept, he shall bee deliuered to the king alure, or els his head if hee defend himselfe, for hee beareth the head of a Wolfe, after the daie of his outlawie, this is the generall law concerning outlaws.

This

This yere Henrie the kings sonne was boine in England: his other sons, Robert, William and Richard were boine beyond the seas in Normandy, before he conquered England.

Anno reg. 3.  
Henry the  
first boine.

King William gaue to Robert surnamed Cumin, the Earldome of Northumberland, of whose coming thither, when the men of that country heard, they made the themselves ready to forsake their houses, and to shift for themselves abroad: but sodainly there fell such abundance of snow, and roughnes of weather, that they could not in any wise flee, wherefore they took a device and concluded, either to flee the realme, or else to die all together for the libertie of the country. The which thing when the Bishop of Durham vnderstande, hee went out to meet the earle, and exhorted him to turne backe againe: but he suffering his souldiers to robbe and spoile, woulde not heare any counsell of health, but forthwith entred Durham with seuen hundred men, spoiling like enemies through the house of Durham every where that they listed for the time, which lasted not long, for on the next morning early the men of Northumberland being gathered together, burst open the gates, and running by and downe, slawe all that they found in that Citie, that took part with the Earle, whereby al the streets were filled with bloud and dead bodies: some there were that defended the entrie of the house, wherein the Earle was, and had thought to haue saued himselfe, but the other by fire endeuoured to burne the house, with al that were therein, whereby the west tower of the church was burnt, but through the wind that then blew out of the East, the church escaped burning: notwithstanding the house yet burning as it began, some of them that were within were burnt and other some, whilst they burst out to saue themselves, were immediately slaine, so that the Earle himselfe was dispatched, and all his souldiers sauing one that hardly escaped being wounded. King William taking great displeasure with these doings of the Northumbers, directed a certaine Duke with an army, to reuenge the slaughter of Earle Robert: but when they were come to Aluerton, and was in the next morning setting forward towarde Durham, there arose such a darkenesse of weather through thicknesse of clouds, that they could vnneth see one another, so that they could not find their waie, whereupon they returned, and so it came to passe, God hauing pittie vpon them, that they heard of the departure of their enemies before they heard of their coming towards them.

1069

Lib, Duncelm.

About the same time, by the testimonie of an old Chronicle in the Librarie Lib. Richmond, at Richmond, King William gaue such a gift of lands as followeth:

I William king, the third yeere of my raigne,  
Giue to the Norman Hunter, to me that art both life and deere,  
The Hop and the Hopton, and all the boundes vp and downe,  
Vnder the earth to hell, aboute the earth to heauen,  
From me, and from mine, to thee, and to thine,  
As good, and as faire, as euer they mine were:  
To witnes that this is sooth, I bite the white waxe with my tooth,  
Before Iugge, Mawde and Margery, and my youngest sonne Henry,  
For one bow and broad arrow, when I come to hunt vppon Yarrow.

King William  
gaue lands to  
the Norman  
hunter.

Lib. Ebor.  
The Danes in-  
uade England.

Some what before the feast of the natiuitie of our blessed Ladie, Harold and Canutus sonnes to Swamus king of Denmarke, Earle Esborne, Earle Turkel-lus, Christerne their bishop, and many other, with 204. ships comming forth of Denmarke, landed in the mouth of the riuer Humber, where Clito Edgar, earle Waltheus, and Merleswine, with many other, and the naute which they had as-sembled came to them, of whose comming Aldred Archbishop of Yorke being verie sorrowfull, made earnest intercession to almighty God, that he might not see the bitter ruine and destruction of his countrey, sell sick, and ended his life in the yere next following, as shall be shewed.

The eight day after the landing of the Danes, to wit, on the nineteenth day of September, the Normans that kept the Castle of Yorke, fearing least the houses that were nere to the Castle should be a furtherance to the enemies, to fill up the ditches, beganne to set fire on them, and to burne them up: which fire encreasing too exceedingly, invaded all the Citie, and consumed the Monas-terie of S. Peter, together with the city, but this acte was grievously reuenged on them very speedily, for before all the city was burnt, the Danish navy came, to wit, on the Monday, being the 21. of September, and breaking the castles, the same day slew above 3000. Normans, sauing William Mallet and his wife, two of their children, and fewe other: which done, they returned to their ships with innumerable booties. Which doing, when it was signified to the king, he forthwith assembled an army, & hasted with an angry minde towards Northumberland, not ceasing to waste that Countrey all that winter, to kill men, and to doe all the mischief that was possible. In the meane time, mes-sengers being sent to the Danish Earle Esborne, king William promised to giue to him no small summe of money, and to permit his army freely to take victuals, by the sea coast, with this condition onely, that winter being past, hee should depart without battell. Esborne being too greedy of golde and siluer, not without great shame, yielded to his requests, and departed without more claime of this kingdome for that time.

King William  
compoundeth  
with the Danes  
to depart with-  
out battaile.

By reason that the Normans had wasted England in Northumberland, and in certaine other places in the yere before, nowe this yere, and the next that followed, such a dearth encreased through all England, especially through Northumberland, and the countries next adioyning, that men were faine to eate horse flesh, cattes, dogges, and mans flesh: for all the land that lay betwixt Durham and Yorke, laye waste without inhabitantes, and people to till the ground, for the space of nine yeres, except onely the territorie of Saint Iohn of Beverlake.

A great dearth  
so that mans  
flesh was eaten  
of men.

When Eglefine Byschoppe of Durham hearde of the comming of King VVilliam, hee and the elders taking aduise together, fledde to the Church of holy Iland: but in the meane season the kings armie being scattered through- out all places whatsoever betwixt Tese and Tine, found nothing but emp- tie houses euerie where: and then was burnt the Church of Saint Paule at Parrolo.

Anno reg. 4.  
1070

The Church of Durham being bereft of all ecclesiasticall service, was lesse like a desert, but Lent being at hand, when peace was made, the bishop retur- ned



ned againe, and entred the church the first of Aprill, where he found the Image of the Crucifer cast to the ground, and altogether spoiled of the ornaments. Though the counsell of William Fitz Osberd Earle of Hereford, and certaine other, in the Lent season king William caused the monasteries of all England to be searched, and the money which the richer sort of the English people, for the cruell spoiling which they saw in him had laide by in the same Abbeies, he caused to be brought into his treasure. Roger of Wendouer saith, he bereaved all the Monasteries and Abbeies in England, of their golde and silver, sparing neither Chalis nor Shrine, appropriating the said monasteries and Abbeies to himselfe: he brought under knights service, all those Bishopricks and Abbeies that held baronies, which had bene free from all secular bondage, appointing them how many souldiers they should finde him and his successors in time of warres.

Marianus.

Monasteries  
ruined.

R. Windouer.

A great counsell was holden at Winchester by commandement of the king, who also was present at the same, Pope Alexander consenting therunto, sent by his Legates Eumenius bishop, and the Priests, John and Peter Cardinals of the sea Apostolike, who exhibited there his authoritie. In which counsell Stigand Archbishop of Canterburie was degraded for thre causes, to wit, because he did possesse unlawfully the bishopricke of Winchester, together with his archbishopricke, and because that whilst the Archbishop Robert was yet living, he had not only taken vpon him the archbishopricke, but also in celebrating of diuine service, for a time vsed the Pall, which remained at Canterbury, when he was expelled unlawfully by violence out of Englande, and after received the Pall of Benedict, whom the church of Rome did excommunicate, for that hee had invaded the Apostolike See by money. His brother also Agelwine Bishop of the East Angles, and diuers Abbots were there degraded by the kings meanes, that other of his nation might be placed in their roomes, for the confirmation of his kingdom, many, aswell Bishops as Abbots, who for no evident cause were deprived of their honour, and by the king vnto their lines end holden in prison.

Marianus.  
Stigand Arch-  
bishop of Can-  
terburie is de-  
posed.

When the feast of S. Iohn Baptist was at hand, Earle Esborne with his navy which had wintered in Humber, (according to appointment made) returned into Denmarke, but his brother Swain king of Denmarke banished him that realme, for the money which (against his will, and the will of the Danes) hee had receiued of king William: whereby it appeareth, that Swaine K. of Denmarke surceased not his claime to the crowne of England, as some haue affirmed, namely in a table, vntruly intituled, The true portraiture of the countenances, and acties of the Kings of England, &c. collected by T. T. wherein his wordes be these, Will. of Normandie, &c. took the crowne vpon him by election of the estates (the contrarie whereof is true) then seeking to stoppe titles, he imprisoned Edgare Echeling, the onely true heire of the Saxons blood, and by meanes of Ethelbert Archbishop of Hamborow, for money procured Swaine king of Denmarke to surcease the claime of the Danes; hauing thus established his affaires, &c. which erreur the saide T. T. hath framed by misinterpreting of his Authour Adam Bremensis, whose wordes be these: *Inter Suen & Ba-*

Earle Esborne  
returned to-  
ward Den-  
marke.The Danes  
made continu-  
all claime to  
the crowne of  
England many  
yeeres, as by the  
history follow-  
ing may ap-  
peare.Adam Bre-  
mensis.

*ardum perpetua contentio de Anglia fuit, licet noster pontifex muneribus Guilielmi per suafus, inter reges pacem firmare voluerit.* Which is to be Englished thus: betwene Swene and the barlard, there was continuall contention, although our Bishop being perswaded with the gistes of William, would haue established peace betwene the kings. Marke how little this authour scrueeth to his interpretation, and now to our historie.

King William having placed a Canon of Bayon, named Thomas the elder, in the Archbishops See of Poike, doth also now call for Lanfranke Abbot of Cane in Normandie, that was a Lombard, borne in the citie of Papia, a man skillfull in science, prudent in counsell and gouernment of thinges, and for religion and life most holie, him he made Archbishop of Canterburie. This Lanfranke being consecrated archbishop of Canterburie, he consecrated Thomas Archbishop of Poike, but not before he had made profession of subiection to the said Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie, which the said Thomas was obeyed by the king to do, and did before his consecration.

Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie being in such fauour with king William, that the same William thought not good to deny any thing that he requested, procured by his industrie that the said king left his euill custome of selling his prisoners, which he toke in Ireland: which was a thing hardly granted to him, and to Wolstane Bishop of Worcester, the gaines that the king had by the sale of these Irishmen was such.

The Carles, Edwine of Mercia, Morcare of Northumberland, Siward surnamed Bran, Eglewine Bishop of Durham, with many knights and souldiours, both of the cleargie and lay people, fearing that king William would put them in prison, secretly fled out of the court, and for a time rebelled against him, till they perceiued the thing they had taken in hand, went not well with the m, and then Carle Edwine determining to goe to Malcolme king of Scots, was in the way thitherward slaine through treason of his owne people.

Eglewine bishop of Durham, Carle Morcare, Siward surnamed Bran, and Hereward, a right valiant person, with many other, went into woods and wild places of the countrey, because they were not able to abide the force of king William: and after they had done much harme in many places, at the last, they came into the Ile of Ely by boate, and chose there a place in the fennes, they make Hereward their Captaine of the warre, where hee did manie warlike feates, so often overcoming his enemies, so manie times deluding them, that he deserved perpetuall commendations, for as long as he could, he sustained the ruines of his countrey decaying.

Whereof when as king William was aduertised, hee gathered a great power, marched thitherward, and stopped their going out of the Ile on the East side thereof, and caused a bridge or causeway of two miles in length to be made in the West part. Hee also (saith Roger of Wendouer) builded a Castle from the ground vpp, in a place called Wilsbech. Whereupon they of the Ile perceiuing themselves so inclosed, they raised a fforte or Castle of turkes and timber in the marshes, which by the inhabitantes of that countrey, is called the Castle of Hereward: this castle they raised against the assaulting

An. reg. 5.

1071

W. Malmes.

Edwine and  
Morcare with  
other rebella-  
gainst king  
William.

R. Windouer.

Edwine Carle  
of Mercia  
slaine.

Hereward.

Wilsbech Ca-  
stle builded.  
Hereward ca-  
stle builded.

assaulting of the kings hoste, and fought with their enemies many daies together. From thence the king went to the castle of Grantbridge, from whence, as the necessitie of the time required, set forth diuers companies to besiege and trouble the next places vnto the Ile, for the king himselfe was called vnto other businesse, and enforced to repaire into Normandie, to speake with Philip king of France. In the meane time Hereward, and the nobles of England obtained by price, which they were not able to doe by prayer, and won the Scots to take their part against the Normans. And also the Danes fauouring them, did greatly desire to triumph ouer the Normans. Further, there were within the Realme great commotions on euerie part, as well by the Normans, as other against the king, by perswasion of Earle Rasse de Walser, calling Hereward into that faction, and others the nobles of England, as Morcar, Ethelm, Waltheum, Siward, and Edgare. At which time Hereward leauing the Ile of Ely, committed to him for safegard, went towards the English, to whom a valiant company of young souldiers did ioyne themselves, which no man durst encounter.

Malcolme king of Scots with an innumerable multitude of Scots, passing through Cumberland, and turning aside towards the East, did cruelly forrage all Westdale, and the places nigh adioyning: but when they came to a place called Hundresfeld, after they had there slaine certaine noble men of the English nation, the king of Scots sent home part of his army laden with spoiles. Then he set vpon Holderneshe and destroyed the same with a sodaine desolation: then raging through the grounde of Saint Cuthbert of Durham, he cruelly depriued all men of their goods, and manie of their liues. At the same time also did he consume with fire, the Church of Saint Peter at Weremouth, and diuers other Churches, with them that were thither fledde to saue themselves. And whiles the saide Malcolme rode about the riuer bankes, delighting his eyes with the cruell actes committed against the English people: it was tolde him that Edgar Etheling with his sisters of the blond royall, and manie other noble men, banished from their lawfull inheritance, were arrived at that haue: he came to them, and shaking hands with them, gaue them and all theirs licence with his assured peace to dwell in his kingdome as long as they would.

Besides these robberies of the Scots, Gospatrike of Northumberland did assaile Cumberland, and made there great slaughter and burnings, and after returned with great bottie, to a strong fortreffe at Babbanburgh, where hee with his fellows inclosed themselves: for at that time Cumberland was vnder the iurisdiction of king Malcolme, who when he heard what was done by Gospatrike, he charged his souldiours to spare none of the English nation: whereupon, pitifull it was to beholde, olde men, and women, some were killed with swordes, some pierced with speares, the young babes taken from the mothers pappes were cast vp into the aire, and falling downe againe, were receiued on their speares, and then the speare shaftes striken into the ground in a bushment together: but the young men and maidens, such as were thought meete to labour, were bound, and forced to be slaves. Malcolme beholding the teares of

Ro. Hounded.  
The Scots  
inuaide Eng-  
land.

Church at  
Weremouth  
burned.

these, to encrease his tyrannie, commanded them to be scourged in their going forward.

Ex tab. Olney.  
Annoreg. 6.

Castle at Leeds  
in Kent build-  
ed.  
Orford Castle  
builds.  
Cro. Olney.

1072

W. Malmes.  
R. Wendover.

I knowe  
wherein was  
prooued that  
the archbishop  
of Yorke should  
be subiect to the  
archbishop of  
Canterburie.

At this time (saith Houeden) Scotland was so replenished with bondslaves, men and women of the English nation, that no village or cottage could be found without them.

The Castle of Leeds in Kent was builded by Creuicure, a noble man, a Norman.

The Castle of Orford was builded by Robert de Olly the first, a noble man that came into England with king William the Conquerour.

Also William Earle Warren, that came in with William the Conquerour, and married Gundred daughter to the saide William, this yere founded the Priorie of Lewes in Sussex.

This yere, by the commaundement of Pope Alexander, and consent of King William the Conquerour, in the presence of the saide king, his bishops, Prelates, and nobilitie, the title of Primacie, the which Lanfranke Archbishoppe of Canterbury did claime ouer the Church of Yorke, and concerning the ordering of certaine Bishops, whome men were vncertaine vnto which Archbishoppe they shoulde especially belong, was examined and tried out: where, by the authoritie of olde Writings it was prooued and declared, that the Church of Yorke ought to bee subiect vnto the Church of Canterbury, and ought faithfully to obey the same, in all matters pertaining vnto Christe an Religion, as being Primate of all England. And the Archbishop of Canterbury, as Metropolitane, graunted the Archbishop of Yorke and his successors, to haue vnder their iurisdiction, the bishopricke of Durham, that is to saie, Lindisferne, and from the great Riuer of Humber vnto the uttermost part of the borders of Scotland, and also all whatsoever doeth appertaine to the parish of Yorke vpon the side the Riuer, so that if the Archbishop of Canterburie doe summon a counsell in any place, the Archbishop of Yorke and all his Suffraganes, Subiects and Clerkes shall be there present at his commaundement, and shall be obedient vnto his canons and orders, &c. at Windsor.

King William  
went into  
Scotland, and  
Malcolme  
king of Scots  
did homage  
vnto him.

King William having in his companie Edrike surnamed Syluaticus, or Wilde, marched towarde Scotland with a nauie by Sea, and with an armie of horsemen by land, to haue subdued Scotland, for that Malcolme had in the yere last before passed, so cruelly desolated the borders of his kingdom.

In the which iourney, when king William came vnto Durham, hee entered the Church with great deuotion for to pray, and afterwarde hee inquiring of the life and conuersation of the Confessor Cuthbert, and also of the antiquitie of that Bishopricke, hee confirmed all the Liberties of that same Church, &c.

This being done, King William went into Scotland, against whome King Malcolme came vnto a place called Aberinthey, and became his man. And after king William depriued Gospatrike of his Earledome, laying vnto his charge, that he had consulted with them that helpe the Earle Robert Co-



men of Durham, and that hee was among the enemies, when the Normans were slaine at Hoxhe: who being erpulsed, Walcheus was extolled unto that Earledome, being bre vnto him both by father and mother, for he was the son of Earle Siward by Elfred the daughter of Aldred sometime Earle.

At the same time when king William returned from Scotland, he builded a Castle at Durham, wherein the Bishop might keepe him and his safe, from such as made assautes. Castle at Durham builded.

This yere Eglewine Bishop of Durham, who had bene by king William committed to prison first at Abindune, and since at Westminster deceased, and was buried there in S. Nicholas chappell.

King William went into Normandie, which Duke dome was then rebellious against him, but with strong hand he subdued the Citie of Mayne, and the whole Countrey, especially by the helpe of Englishmen, whome he applied in these affaires, they spoiled the cities, to wnes, vineyards, and corne fields, whereby they greatly weakened and empouderished that prouince. Clito Edgar at this time came south of Scotland, and passing through England, went into Normandy, and was there agreed with king VWilliam. Annoreg. 7.  
1073  
R. Wendouer.  
Clito Edgar.

About this time the Monkes of Ely, seeing the miseries of themselves, and of the whole Island, determined to trie the kings clemencie, for there was such a dearth in the land, as the like had not bene seene, for al prouision being spent, many thousands died through hunger, since it was now the seventh yere since they had bene besieged, wherfore taking their iourney to Warwike a famous towne, they came to the king with great reuerence, commending themselves, and all that they had to his clemencie. Thurstan and his Monkes standing befoze king William, beseeched him for the mercy of God to turne his displeasure from their Citie, promising faithfully hereafter to obey him. The Abbot said, that if the king would restore vnto the Abbey their possessions, violently taken from them, hee might haue sure entrance into the Ile: which the king granted, and commanded William de Warren, and Gilbert de Clare, that they shoulde become pledges for the same. Whereupon the Abbot conferred with them about the regathering together of their possessions, who (going after to his owne) did first instruct Gilbert de Clare, and Earle VVarren of the manner of the rebellion, willing them not to feare for the often repulse of the enemies, for they shoulde haue his counsell and helpe, whereby the king might vnderstand that the power of the enemies was weakened. The Monkes of Ely submit themselves to king William.

Whereupon the king began to triumph, as though he had already got the victorie: hee assembled therefore as great an armie as he could both of horsemen and footemen, he toke his iourney to Ely, he prepareth his engines, layeth siege to the place which was of most defence, and daily laboured to ouerthrow that which Canutus neither with wit, or strength, with policie, or sword could at any time subdue.

At length, though with difficulty wonderful to be declared, he safely brought his army nêrer then anie one thought he could haue done, which was euen to the waters of Ely, the Normans passed Cotinglade, neither did it grieue the king first to passe ouer many riuers, although he was almost drowned at the point

King William in perill at drowning at point Gate.

King William  
conquered the  
Ile of Ely.  
Wens eyes put  
out, and their  
hands and  
feete cut off.

point Gale: hee ceased not for marshes or other neuer so dangerous, till the sounding voice of victorie quickly dyaue the enemies out of the Island, but the Normans compassing the enemies, did in a moment slae a thousand of them, wherefore the king as soone as he had entred the Island, went about the mores, marshes, and crooked waies, and doth with siege inclose the whole company of his enemies. These armed men are brought forth, first the Captaines, then the better sort of the other, whereof he imprisoneth some, and put out the eyes, cut off the hands and feete of other some, and suffered the multitude of the common people to depart.

King William  
his off. ring to  
S Etheldred  
of Ely.

In this Ile he found abundance of beaſts and cattell manifolde to recompence his slaime horses and other domages. Edwine is taken, and with him many persons of name & power, who were bound in streit prison, but Worcester was escaped: forthwith the king sent a great company to keepe the gates of the monastery, to the end the Monks with crosses and other ceremonies should not make him, and entreate for pardon at his hand, whereunto hee must needs haue graunted. Wherefore when he came to the monastrie, he stode aloofe from the tombe of Saint Etheldred, and hurled a marke of golde vpon the Altar. Which done, and hauing placed a garrison within the walles of the Monkes: he disposed of Grantbidge, Huntington, and Bedford shires, committing them to such men as he had brought out of France: and likewise placing a strength of Frenchmen in the Castle of Alrehed, he went out of the Island, the same way by which he entred into it: there was no disaine service since that vnto the xxvii. of Daober, the time was so troublesome. After the king was departed, the Church doores were fast locked: and Gilbert de Clare entered the monastery to see the monks places of offices, in the end came into the refectory, & finding the Monks at dinner, said to them, Oh wretches and slothfull persons, had you none other time to dine in, but whilst the king remained in your Church: With which wordes they all rising, ranne to the Church: but when they found not the king there, they were greatly troubled: wherefore hauing no hope but in God, they required Gilbert de Clare, that by his meanes they might obtaine a firme peace, which in the ende taking vpon him to doe, he went to the king, and with great difficultie obtained the same: with condition, that when the Monkes came befoze him, they should by prayer or price pacifie his displeasure against them,

King William  
lay at Wich-  
ford.

Money paid  
by weight.

This done, he brought the Monkes befoze the king to Wichford, where he then sojourned, who being with much adoe brought in fauour with the king by the saide Gilbert, and other noble men, promised seven hundred markes of silver. For the providing whereof, the Monkes were enforced to spoile and sell the treasures and ornaments of their Church, and then repayre to Grantbidge to paze that money to the kings officers: but one groat being lacking of the said summe, by the deceit of such as did tell it, the waight was not tust, by so much. Whereof when the King had vnderstode, hee was greatly offended with them, denying vnto them all manner of hope of ante further peace. Whereupon they were dynen to make an other composition of a thousand markes, for the which they were saue for to spoile, and to sell whatsoeuer

whatsoever other kind of ornaments that were left, and yet notwithstanding, lacked that peace which they so much sought, and so dearly bought. Walter bozne at Exetere, was elected by the king, and then consecrated Bishop of Durham.

King William the Conquerour with a great power of Englishmen went into Normandie, which rebelled, and subdued it, spoiling the cities, townes, vineyardes, &c.

W. Malmes.  
Annoreg. 8.  
1074

Gregorie the seventh, Pope, excommunicated all committees of Symonte, and reuocued married Priests from executing diuine Service, whereof rose great troubles in England.

Radulph whom lately before king William had made Earle of Herefolke and Suffolke, or, as some write, of the East Angles, now he took to wife (against the kings commaundement) the daughter of William Fitz Osbert, sister to Roger Earle of Hereford, and celebrating most royally the marriage feast, with a great multitude of noble men at Erningham in Gantebidge shire, concealing a pride of his marriage, for that his wife was the kinges kinswoman, even upon the marriage daie, when the feast was solemnly kept, and the riotous superfluity of the Englishmen was entred into the Normans throates, the guests being drunken and full of wine, with a long circumstance of words, he opened his minde and purpose, whereunto the guests consented with a great shout. There was Roger Earle of Hereford, Radulphes wifes brother: there was Waldeous Earle of Northampton and Huntingdon, and many other, who all conspired the kings death. But on the next morrow, when the heat of the wine was digested, and the mindes of some of them came to better temper, the most part of them repented of that they had promised, and slipping away from the feast, Waldeous as soon as hee could went to Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury, and took penance for his othe which he had receined against his will, and through his aduise went to the king, then being in Normandie, and opening the matter vnto him, yielded to his mercie. The other Nobles proceeding in their begunne conspiracie, went to their Castles, and raised their people to open rebellion. But Wolsane Bishop of Worcester, with a great bande of men of warre resisted the Earle of Hereford, so that hee might not (passing the River of Seuerne) come to Earle Radulph at the appointed place with his campe, in whose companie was Aglewine Abbot of Guelham, with his people, hauing called to his aide Vrse Sheriffe of Worcester, and Walter de Lacie with their men, and other multitudes of common people.

Conspiracie  
against king  
William, by  
Radulph Earle  
of Herefolke  
and Suffolke.

Ure Sheriffe of  
Worcestershire.  
Walter Lacie.

But Odo Bishoppe of Bayon, and Godfrey Bishop of Constance assembling a mightie armie as well of Englishmen as of Normans, came to encounter Earle Radulph being encamped at Gantebidge, where earle Radulph perceiving that his enterpryse wanted force, fearing the number of them that came against him, he secretly fledde from thence to Northwich, where committing the Castle to his wife and knights, he getteth himselfe to shippe, and fled into little Brittain, whom his enemies pursuing, slew all those of his men that they might come to: and after this they besiege the Castle, till that peace

was.

was granted, and licence to the Countesse and her people to depart the realme, and so she followed her husband.

king William  
returned out of  
Normandy.

Eies put out,  
hands cut off,  
etc.

R. Wendenor,  
Crute the Son  
of Swaine  
king of the  
Danes, his na-  
me against  
England.

These things being done, the king in the haruest returning forth of Normandie, put Earle Roger of Hereford in prison, wherein hee remayned all the dayes of his life: and all the Welshmen that had bene at the marriage, hee caused to haue their eyes put out, their handes cut off, hanged on gibbets, or to be banished at the least. Earle Waltheofus also was committed to prison, although that hee went to the king, and had obtayned of him a promise of pardon.

Crute the sonne of Swaine, and Hacon the Earle came out of Denmarke with two hundred ships full of men of warre: but when they hearde that their santoners were overcome, and banquished, they turned their backs, and sailed into Flanders, and durst not fight with king William: but William of Malmesburie saith that king William did likewise by the earle Hacon, as befoze he had by the earle Elborne.

Anno reg. 9.

1075  
W. Malmes.  
Iohn of Lond.

Edgitha late Quene of Englande, wife to king Edward, called (of some) the Simple, or (of other) Confessor, daughter to Duke Godwine, and sister to Harold late king of England, departed this life at Winchester, whose corps, by the kings commandement was brought to Westminster, and there by her husband solemnely enterred: shee had a Tombe of silver and golde curiouslie wrought. This Quene Edgitha professed on her death bed, that notwithstanding shee had bene maried yeres twise unto king Edward, yet now shee died a pure virgine.

Ingulphus.

King William banished certaine rebelles, others hee dismembred, as by putting out their eyes, and chopping off their handes. The earles Waltheofus, and Roger, by iudiciall sentence, hee condemned unto moze stricke prisons.

Hereward cha-  
sed the Abbot of  
Peterborough.  
Hereward  
tooke Iuo Tal-  
bois and ranso-  
med him.

At this time (saith Ingulphus) Brand, Herewards uncle, Abbot of Peterborough, being dead, succceeded Thorold a stranger, by the gift of king William, which thing Hereward taking in ill part, that a stranger should rule over his kintred, he invaded Peterborough, and chased awaie the Abbot. And though in the sayde Abbots defence, Iuo Talbois a most mightie Norman, and by the gift of king William made Lord of all Helland in Lincolneshire, Hereward tooke the sayde Iuo in open battell, and set him free for a great summe of money. To this Iuo Talbois king William had giuen to wife Lucie, the sister of the earles Edwyne and Morcare, with all the landes and tenementes that to the said earles had appertained.

A wicked wife  
hasteneth the  
death of her  
husband.

At this time moreover, to encrease the calamitie, happened the cruel beheading of earle Waltheof or Walden: and although Lanfranke Archbyschoppe of Canterburie his Confessor, affirmed him to be free from the conspiracy and faction, and that if it chanced him to die in that case, he should for his innocencie be counted a martyre, yet his most wicked wife, coueting to be married anewe, did most hainously hasten the death of her husband. Certaine Normans also gaped after his Carle domes, namely of Northampton, and Huntingdon, and Iuo Talbois Earle of Angew, most greedy to make those landes and tene-  
mentes



mentes his owne, by bloodshedding, this innocent and harmlesse man was beheaded without the Citie of Winchester, vpon the last day of the moneth of May, and was there basely buried, in a place, where since was builded the chapel of Saint Giles: but fiftene daies after by permission of the king, his body was conueied vnto Crowland, and was there honorably buried. Iudith Earle VValcheofs widow, after the decease of her husband, with her two daughters, had the Lordshippe of Huntington giuen to her in the name of a dowyte, and there made their abode, vntill such time as the king was willing to marrie her to a knight borne in France, named Simon Syluaticus or Seintliz. For hither came two brethren to the aide of the king, and to serue him with forty soldiers horsemen, their names were Guarnerus le Riche, and Simon de Seintliz, and their fathers name was Ranulph le Riche, after whose death the eldest son, Guarnerus went backe into his natie Countrey, and succeeded in his fathers possessions: but Simon the younger sonne remained here with the king, vnto whom the king gaue the Towne of Northampton, and the Hundred of Jackesley, hee builded the Castle of Northampton, and also the Abbey of Saint Andrewes there. The king would haue giuen vnto him Iudith the widowe of Earle Walcheofs, but she refused him, because that hee halted on the legge: in wrath whereof, king William bestowed vpon him the whole honour of Huntington, and so was he called Earle of Northampton and of Huntington, &c.

Simon  
Seintliz.

Guarnerus le  
Rich.

Castle of  
Northampton  
builded.

This yere mine ofte alleadged Authour Ingulphus, was by the kinges gift made Abbot of Crowland, whch Ingulphus, of himselfe, and his vocati- on to the Abbacie of Crowland writeth thus: I Ingulphus, an humble seruant of God and Saint Guthlake, and of the monastery of Crowland, borne in Eng- land, and of English parents, in the most beautifull City of London, for to at- taine to learning, I was first put to Westminster, after ward to Oxforde to studie. When I had profited in reading Aristotle aboue manie mine equals in age, I studied also Tullies Rhetoriques: waring elder, loathing the base estate of my parents daily more and more, I desired to leaue my father and mothers house, and to be in kings and princes pallaces, to be attired in silkes and go- gious apparell. And beholde, noble William, nowe our king of England, then Duke of Normandie, came to London, to talke with his cousin king Ed- ward then king of England, with a great traine attending vpon him, vnto whome I soone toynd my selfe, thrusting forward, to dispatch all businesse arising, I became in a little time knowne to Duke William, and was of him herie well beloued, and with him I sayled into Normandie, there was I made his Secretarie, I ruled the whole court of the Duke at my pleasure, to the en- uie of manie.

Ingulphus  
borne in Lon-  
don, brought  
vp in learning  
at Westmin-  
ster and at Ox-  
ford, made ab-  
bot of Crowland.

At length it was rayfed, that many Archbishops and Bishops of the Em- pire, and many other Princes would go to Ierosalem, I among other, as well souldiers as clerkes, with the licence of my Lorde the Duke, prepared my selfe. Comming vnto Constantinople, wee did conference to the Empe- rour Alexes, &c. Departing from thence through Italia, wee fell into the hands of Arabian robbers that tooke from vs much money: wee came at the length

to

to Jerusalem, where the Patriarke Sophronius receiued vs honourable, and brought vs to the Church of the holie Sepulture, and so to other places. In the spring returning home by Rome, and so into Normandie, I hasted to the Abbey of Fountauill, where I receiued the habite of a Monke, meaning to purge and amend, as the grace of the holy Ghost inspired mee, the offences of my youth, and ignorances, &c. At what time duke William understanding of the death of king Edward his cousin expected a fauourable wind in the port of Saint Walarike, to saile ouer into England, I presented vnto him the Abbots gift, to wit, twelue yong men chosen on Horsebacke and armed, with an hundred markes towards his expences in that voyage, and I returned to the Monasterie. After certaine yeres Walkereus Abbot of Cropland was deposed of his office; King William sent to the Abbot of Fontauill for me, &c. To London I came to the king, there inuicled of the staffe and pallioll office of Cropland Monastery, and consecrated on the day of the natiuity of our Lord. On the day of the conuersion of S. Paul I first came to Cropland, and was installed, 1075.

The king passing ouer the sea, went into little Brytaine, and besieged there the Castell of Dolence, belonging to earle Ralph, but Philip king of France came with a great power vpon them, and tooke all victualles from them, so that king William was forced to leaue his siege with the losse of manie souldiours and horses, with much other substance: and not long after king William made peace with them.

An. reg. 10.

1076

R. Windower.

Walter Bysshop of Durham, contrary to his Bysshoplike dignity intermedled himselfe with secular and worldly matters, and bought of king William the earledome of Northumberland, and then playing the part of a Shyriffe, set in a secular and lay court, determining of matters, extorting infinite Summes of money, as well of the poble men, as of the others of that same Province, &c.

A great frost.  
T. Castleford.

The earth was hard frozen from the first day of Nouember, vntil the midd of Aprill.

Hilbert Lacie  
Lord of Pont-  
fract.

King William the Conquerour gaue the Castell, with the Towne of Pontfract, and the lande lying thereabout, to Hilbert Lacie a Norman, the which Castell, Towne, and lands before the Conquest belonged vnto one Richarde Achnalde, who had issue Ailricke, who had Swayne, who had Adam, of whome came two daughters, one of the which two daughters was married vnto Gawfride Neuell, and the other vnto Thomas Brough, but neyther of them had ante parte of the Towne or landes about the Towne of Pontfract, Robert Sonne to Hildebert Lacie founded the Priore of Pontfract.

An. reg. 11.

1077

About the same time, Robert the kinges sonne, vnto whome, when as hee had conquered Englanche, hee had giurn the Dukedome of Normandie, in the presence of Philip king of France, because now he his Father woulde not suffer him to possesse the Dukedome of Normandie, the saide Robert went into France, and by the ayde of the same King Philip, committed great robberies, and tooke great praies in Normandy, and burned Townes  
and

and ſetwe the people, doing no ſmall veration vnto his father, ſo that king William the Conquerour fighting a battaile againſt his ſonne Robert befoze the Caſtell of Gerdozte in France, was vnpoſed himſelfe, and his ſonne William was wounded, and manie of his familie were ſlaine. Wherefoze king William the Conquerour curſed his ſonne Robert, the which curſe hee felt euidentlie befoze hee dyed, for there did nothing prosper with him.

William Conquerour curſeth his ſon Robert.

Paul a Monk of Cane, is made Abbot of Saint Albones, who in ſhort ſpace by the counſell and ayde of Lanſtanke Archbiſhop of Canterburie, he builded verie trimmelie a newe Church and Cloyster thre, and all offices, and adourned the ſame Church with manie good Bookes, and rich ornaments.

An. reg. 12.

1078

Abbey of Saint Albons newe builded.

This yere on Palme Sundae about the ſixt houre, the aire being clere and faire, a great Starre appeared, and was ſene of manie nere vnto the Sunne,

This yere Malcolme king of Scottes, on the ſixteenth of Auguſt, with an army waſted Northumberland vnto the riuer of Tyne, ſetwe manie, and toke great prizes, and ſpoile of the Countrey, which they returning, conueried into Scotland.

The Scots ſpoile Northumberland.

Alſo in the ſame yere the Cathedraall Church of Hereforde was burned by Gryffith the Prince of Wales, and Algar ſon vnto Leofrike Earle of Mercia.

Marianus. Church of Hereforde burned.

Roger de Beſme, or Mongomerie, founded of an olde Church in the Suburbes of the Towne of Serobſburie an Abbey of blacke Monkes, dedicated vnto God, Saint Peter, and Paul: he made Fulchardus his ſonne firſt Abbot there. Hee alſo placed Monkes at Wenloke, in the Priorie ſometime founded by Milbrough ſiſter to Mildred, and by Leofrike Earle of Cheſter for Nunnes.

Serobſbury.

Edmond Hamden.

Gundulphus Biſhop of Rocheſter was ſurueour of the great workes of the Tower of London, which Tower was builded by the commandement of king William. And this Gundulphus founded the Abbey of Maudſling in Kent for nuns: he builded part of the Caſtell of Rocheſter, and founded the Hoſpitall of Saint Bartholomew without the Eaſt gate of that Citie, which is in ſome Records called Chetham, &c.

Tower of London builded. Rocheſter caſtle builded. Hoſpitall of Chetham, &c.

Walter Biſhop of Durham, borne in Lorraine as is aforeſaide, is ſlaine by the Northumbers, in a place called Gateſhed, in reuenge of a Noble man named Leulfus, befoze ſlaine by meanes of the Biſhoppes Chaplaine named Leofwinus. The ſayde Leulfus in manie partes of England intoyed great poſſeſſions by right of inheritance, but becauſe the Northmans euerie where practiſed their cruelty, he got himſelfe with all his family to Durham, he had to wiſe Algiſtha, daughter to Earle Aldred, of whome hee begate two ſonnes Vred and Morcare.

An. reg. 13.

1079

Marianus.

This Leulfus was ſo beloued of the Biſhoppe, that without his counſell, hee would doe nothing of anie great weight, for the which cauſe the Biſhoppes Chaplaine Leofwinus greatly hated the ſaid Leulfus, and therefore on a time go-

ing.

ing out of the court house, or mete hall called vnto him Gilbert, a man to whom the byshop had committed the earledome of Northumberland vnder him to be gouerned, he requiſed him to reuenge his diſpleaſure againſt the ſaid Leulfus, and as ſone as he could to put him to death, which hee performed in this manner, gathering together his men of warre, one night went vnto the billage where Leulfus dwelt, and there in his owne houſe, together wiſh all his family, ſlew him, which thing being knowne, the Byſhoppe ſoze bered in diſpleaſure there wiſh, toke his hode from his head, threwe it to the ground, and ſaide to Leofwine his Chaplaine, theſe thinges are done by thy meanes Leofwine, and therefore I will that thou know for certaine that thou haſt killed me, and al my familie wiſh the ſword of thy tongue. Hauing this ſaid, he got him ſtraight into the Caſtell, and forthwiſh ſending meſſengers through Northumberland, he cauſed to be declared to all men, that he was nothing priuie to the death of Leulfus, but was now deſirous to baniſh his ſlaier Gilbert and all his fellows in that action, and for himſelfe he was ready to purge himſelfe according to the Eccleſiaſtical lawes. This being ſignified, the Byſhop and the friends of him that was ſlaine, profeſſing to be at peace together, appointed a day and place of meeting together, where they might eſtabliſh a more firme peace; now when the day came, they met at the place appointed, but the Byſhop reſuſing to talke wiſh them abroad, abode in the Church thereby wiſh his Cleargy and knights, and when the talke was began, once or twice he ſent out to them of his counſailers, to make an attonement, but they would not agree, becauſe they beleued that Leulfus was ſlaine by the Byſhops conſent, for the night after the ſlaughter of Leulfus, not onelie Leofwine did receiue Gilbert and his complices into his houſe familiarlie, but alſo the Byſhoppe did the like. Whereupon, all thoſe that were found out of the Byſhops place they ſlew, berie ſelue excepted, that gate a waie by flight, which thing perceiued by the Byſhoppe, he to ſatiſfie the furie of his enimies, commanded his conſin Gilbert (whoſe life was ſought) to depart out of the Church, whome as hee went, the men of armes followed wiſh ſpeare and ſword, till they had ſlaine him and all the ſe enimies, ſparing onlie two Engliſhmen that were ſeruants to the Byſhop, they alſo ſlew Leofwine the Deane of Durham, and other of the Prieſtes, as they coulde finde them out of the Church. When the Byſhop perceiued that by no meanes the ſe fury might be pacified, except the head of the autho: were cut off, he beſought Leofwine to go forth, which when hee coulde not get him to doe, hee went himſelfe to the Church doores, and beſought them to graunt him his life, which when they reſuſed to doe, hee couering his head wiſh the ſkirt of his garment, went forth, and ſtraightwaies wiſh the enimies ſwordes hee was diſpatched out of his life: after this they bade Leofwine come forth, but hee would be not, whereupon they ſet the Church walles and rouſſe on fier, which hee continued a while, but when he felt the bitter flames about him, and began to ſmart, he lept out, and being cut in peeces, ſuffered for his wickednes.

This deteſtable ſlaughter of the Byſhop was committed on the 14. daie of May, when he had ſate Byſhop nine yeeres, and two monethes, the Monks of Warrow ſailed to the place, toke the bodie of their Byſhop into their ſhippe, which

Byſhop of  
Durham ſlaine.

Lib. Dunelm.



which body they could hardly know for the number of woundes, being also spotted of his garments, the body they carry to their Monasterie, which being translated thence to Durham, was there buried, but with no such solemnities as other Bishops had bene buried, for his murderers roused up and downe all the Citie, and assaulted the Castell, but could not preuaile; whereupon at length they disperfed themselves here and there, and were consumed with many calamities, wandring like runnagates, and banished people, for when king William had knowledge of these things, he sent his brother Odo Bishop of Bayon, and manie Nobles of his realme with a great army, to destroy Northumberland, who whilst they sought to reuenge the death of the Bishoppe, brought all that land to desolation, many of the saely people that remained at home, they either commanded to be beheaded, or otherwaies to be dismembred, many being violently charged, were forced to ransom themselves with money.

Northumberland againe spotted.

The said Odo took certaine ornaments of the Church, among the which there was a Bishops staffe, marueilous for the matter and workmanship, for it was made of Saphyre stone, who hauing set a garrison in the Castell returned.

This yere was finished the booke named Domes day, or Domus Dei, being a perfect suruey of the whole land, which booke remaineth in the kings Exchequer at Westminster, of the which booke making thereof, Ingulphus writteth thus.

An. reg. 14.  
1080  
Domes date booke, a register of the whole realme, howe many acres of land, &c. Ingulphus.

King William for the taxing of his whole lande, took this order in all England, there was not an hide of land, but he knewe the valewe thereof, and the possessor also, neither metrenor place there was, but it was valued in the kings role, the rents and profits, the possession and the possessor, were made manifest and knowne unto the king, according to the fidelitie of taxors, which being chosen out of euerie Countrey, taxed or seised their owne Territories, or made their owne rent role. These men well willers and friends to our Monasterie, weighed not our Monasterie to the full pise, nor to the true measure thereof, preventing and prouiding vpon zealous affection towarde vs, for the kinges taxations, and other burdens that after might befall.

This role is called the role of Winton, and of the Englishmen for the generalitie thereof, containing wholie all the tenements of the whole land, it is named Domesdate. Such a role and very like, did king Aelfred once set forth, in which he taxed all the land of Englande by Shires, Hundreds, and Tythings.

And this role, as is before noted, was called the role of Winton, because it was laide in Winchester to bee kept. Which Citie was the head of the West Saxons kingdome, comming vnto him by inheritance: At this time among all the particular kingdomes of England most noble and famous. In this role of Winchester, so most of all called, because it was made after the example of the other, were taxed and set downe, the Earledomes, Hundreds, Tythings, Woods, Parks, and all Farmes, in euery territozy, or precinct, howe manie carneates of lande, howe manie ploughlandes, and acres, what pastures and fennes, or marishes, what tenements and tenants were contained, &c. Thus much Ingulphus.

The Role of Winton.

The

Lib. Bermond.

The Boke of Bermondsey, saith this Boke was laid by in the kings Treasury (which was in the Church of Winchester, or Westminster) in a place called Domus Dei, or Gods house, and so the name of the boke, therefore called Domus Dei, and since shortly, Domes day.

New Castell  
vpon Eire.

The same yere king William sent his sonne Robert into Scotland against Malcolme, but when he was come to Eggesbith, hauing in no point atchieued his enterprise, he returned againe, and builded the new Castell beyond the river of Tyne.

William By-  
shoppe of Dur-  
ham.An. reg. 15.  
1081

After that five monethes were past, since the murdering of Walter Byshoppe of Durham, William Kairliffe Abbot of Saint Vincents was by king William chosen to be Byshop of Durham, the 9. of Nouember, and on the thirde of Iamurie hee was consecrated at Glocester, by Thomas Archbyshop of Poike, the king being present, and all the Byshops of the realme, for he was an excellent man in wisdom, learning and vertue, and therefore welbeloued of all men.

Lib. Turburi.  
Turbury Ca-  
stell and Bp-  
ry builded.

Henry Carle Ferrers founded a priorie within his Castell of Turbury.

The late newe Church was founded and builded in Anno 1407. when the Normans were put out, and the Priors allants suppressed.

William Archbyshop of Roane, held a councell at Lisbon, king William being present with manie other Princes and Byshops.

Earthquake.

A great earthquake, and roaring out of the earth was heard in the first of Aprill, about the third houre of the night.

Bermondsey in  
Southwarke.  
Lib. Bermond.

Alwine Child a citizen of London, founder of the Monastery of S. Sauour at Bermondsey in Southwarke besides London, in the Countie of Surrey, by licence of king Wil. gaue vnto the Monks de charitate there, diuers rentes in the citie of London. William Rufus after ward gaue them the maner of Bermondsey, and builded them a new Church.

Queene Ma-  
tild deceased.

Matild the Queene, Daughter to Baldwin Carle of Flanders, and wife to King William deceased, King William had manie children by this Matild, whereby shee prouoked him to loue her, certaine it is a little variance was growne betwene them in their latter yeres, for his sonne Robert, whome men said his mother, out of the kings coffers did maintaine with a warlike power, but king William himselfe declared that the fauour of matrimontall loue was not diminished by that, whereas she died 4. yeres before him, he did honour her with rofall obsequie and funeralles, and did with teares mourne for her death manie daies after, and from that time forth (it was said) he abstained from all voluptuousnesse: The Queene was buried at Can in Normandie in the Monasterie of Runnes, which she had founded and dedicated to the holie Trinitie,

Richard the  
kings son died.

Richard the kings sonne Duke of Beorn died in the new Forrest, and was buried at Winchester with this Epitaph, *Hic iacet Ricardus Filius Whilelmi senioris Beornie dux.*

An. reg. 16.  
1082

This Richard King Williams seconde sonne was a goodly ladde, and such a one as of his age did attempt great matters, in whome his noble father had a very good opinion: but a bitter death did sone deuour him in his yong age,  
men

men said that the Dêre in the new Forrest, by reason of a cloude or mist of infected aire, got a disease of gozing, and so spoiled him. This new Forrest is a place which king William the father of Richard, had laid wast, overthrowing townes, villages, and Churches, by the space of 30. miles and more, bringing the same into a chafe for dère, an horrible thing it was to see, that where before men did inhabite and dwell, and where God was honozed: now Dêre, Goates, and such other kind of wild beasts do wantonly course about, & not so much as made to the use of men. Wherefore it is declared for certaine, that in the same Forrest, William his son, and his nephew Richard the son of Robert Duke of Normandy, did by the seuerer iudgement of God find their death, Wil. with an arrow that was shot in his breast, and Richard had his neck broken, or as some say, as he rode through the wood on horse backe, he was hanged by by the chaps upon the bough of a tree.

New Forrest  
in Hampshire.

King William in his life time shewed great fauour vnto his mother, who before his father was dead, had married a certain man of mean substance called Herlewinus of Canteruile, by him king William had brethren, one named Robert, whome he made Earle of Mortou, a grosse and dull witted man: The other brother was called Odo, who when he was Duke, he promoted to the Bp. shoppicke of Bayon, and when he was king, he made him Earle of Kent, he being a man of subtil wit, was vnder the king Vice- lord of al England, after the death of William fitz Osberne, insomuch that hee being wonderfull craftie and subtil in heaping vp of treasure, and one of a maruellous obstinacie, being absent from the citizens of Rome, had almost bought the Papacy by stuffing the bagges of straungers with letters and money. And (by reason of the opinion, that all men had of him, that he should go to Rome to bee Pope) all matters of controuersie throughout the whole Realme were brought vnto him, which matter the king toke verie euill, and laid him in prison as shall be shewed in place conuenient, saying that he would not apprehend the Bishop of Bayon, but that he would apprehend the Earle of Kent, his seruantes being constrained thereunto with threats, he wated such plenty of golde, that the heape of yellow mettall did excede the opinions of all men: moreover, mane bagges full of grounden gold were drazoned out of Riuers, which hee had buried in certaine places.

Herlewine  
married Arlot  
mother to king  
William.

Odo Bishop  
of Bayon.

William Bishop of Durham, by licence of the King and the Nobles of the Realme, went to Rome and obtained of Pope Gregorie the seventh, to bring the Monks from Parrow, and Wermouth into the Cathedrall Church of Durham, he gaue to them lands, Churches, ornaments &c. all which king William confirmed by his Charter.

An. reg. 17.  
1083

A wicked sedition arose betwene the Monkes, and Thurstane the abbot, the Abbot of Glasenburie, which Thurstane king William had taken forth of the Monasterie of Cane in Normandie, and (being a man furnished with no wise dome) made him Abbot of Glasenburie. This man among other his felowes, despising the song called Gregories song, began to counsell the Monkes to learne the song of one William of Festamps, and to sing it in the Church, which to doe when they refused, as they that had bene euer used not onelie

Marianus.  
Thurstane  
Abbot of Glasenburie slew  
his Monkes.

in this, but in other service of the Church to follow the manner of the Romane Church, suddenly on a day with a company of armed men, (the Monkes not aware thereof) brake into the chapter house, and the Monkes flying through excessive feare into the Church, even to the high Altar, the men of warre pursuing with their darts and arrowes, shot, not sparing to hit the Crosse, Images and Chyrces, and ran one Monke through y<sup>e</sup> body with a speare, as he embraced the altar, and so slew him, an other was slaine with an arrow, lying as it were hidden vnder the altar, the other constrained of necessity, defended themselves with soymes and candlesticks of the Church, so that although they were sore wounded, they draue all the men of armes behinde the quere, and so it fell out, that two being slaine, 14. were hurt of the Monkes, and some of the men of armes, were hurt also, this matter coming to iudgment, because it was found that the Abbot was in all the blame, the king remoued him, and set him in his house againe in Normandy, manye of the Monkes were bestowed in Bishops houses, but after the Conquerours decease, the Abbot got his Abbey againe, at his sonne William Rufus hands, buying it with 500. pound of siluer, and wandring through the possessions of the Church, certaine pères together from the Monasterie, ended his life miserably as he well deserued.

An. reg. 18.

1084

Odo Bp.  
Bishop of Bayon.

About this time many tempests raging in this world, certain Southsaiers of Rome declared, who should succede vnto Hildebrand in the Popedom, they affirmed after the decease of Gregorie, Odo to bee Pope of Rome. Odo Bishop of Bayon, hearing this, who (with his brother) governed the Normanes and Englishmen, little esteeming the power and riches of the West kingdome, vntlesse by right of the Popedom, he might largely rule all the inhabitants of the earth, he sendeth to Rome, he buyeth a pallace, he seeketh out the Senators, whome with great giftes giuen he soyne with him in amitie, and his pallace he adorne with much cost, and superfluous trimmings, he sendeth for Hugh earle of Chester, and a great company of the chiefe knights, and hartely prayeth them to goe with him into Italy: and the prodigall man, vnto his praers addeth great promises. They, for that the Normans were light, and desirous to see foraine Countries, straightwaies assented vnto the presumptuous Bishoppe, to whome the Princesdome of Albion, and Normandie sufficed not, and consented also to forsake their huge lundes, which they possessed in the West Climate, and promised by their faith to accompany the foresaide Prelate beyond the Riuer of Doo. Prudent king William, when he heard of such great preparation, allowed not thereof, but thought it to bee hurtfull to his kingdome, and many others, wherefore he hastily sayleth into England, and suddenly vnloked for in the Ile of Wight met with Odo the Bishoppe, now desirous with great pompe to saile into Normandie, and there the chiefe of his Realme being gathered together in the kings hall, the king spake in this sort.

Vita W. Con.

King William  
returneth from  
Normandy to  
the Ile of  
Wight.

This Oration  
to his nobles,

Excellent Pères, hearken my wordes diligently, and I beseech you giue vnto mee your wholsome counsaile. Before I sailed ouer the Sea into Normandie I commended the gouernment of England to my brother the Bishop of Bayon.



In Normandie manie haue risen bp against me, and, as I may say, inward friends, and foraine foes haue invaded mee, Robert my sonne, and certaine younglings, whome I haue brought bp, and to whome I haue giuen armes, rebelled, and my false clientes, and bozdering enemies cleaued vnto them, but they profited nothing, God whose seruant I am, defending me: neither yet obtained they any thing of mine, but prou in their wounds.

They of Angeow gathered together against me, whom with feare of preparation to warres I pacified, with these businesses I haue bene prouoked beyond the Sea, and there I haue staide long, and laboriously haue giuen all my endenour to publike commodities. In the meane time my brother hath greatly oppressed England, and hath spoiled the Churches of their lands, and rents, hath made them naked of the ornaments giuen by our predecessours, and hath seduced my knights, who ought to defend England against the Danes, Irishmen, and other enemies ouertroublesome vnto me, and condemning me purpose to traine them out beyonde the Alpes into foraine kingdomes, an ouer great dolour grieneth my heart, especiallie for the Churches of God which he hath afflicted.

Christian kings that haue reigned before mee, haue loued the Church of God, with honours and gifts of manie kindes, they haue enriched it, wherfore now (as we beleue) they rest reioycing with a happy retribution in a pleasant seate. Adelbert, and Edward, Saint Oswald, Althulph, Aelfred, Edward the elder, and Edgar, and my cousin and most deare Lozde Edward haue giuen riches vnto the holy Church the spouse of God, and my brother to whom I haue committed the gouernement of the whole kingdome, violently plucketh away their goods, cruelly oppresseth the poore, with a vaine hope, sleaeth alwaie my knights from me, and hath exasperated the whole Realme, by oppressing it with vniust tarations. Consider you toozthly what is to bee done hereupon, and I beseech you insinuate it vnto me.

And when all they fearing so great a personage, doubted to pronounce sentence against him, the valiant king saide, hurtfull rashnesse is alwaies to bee repressed, oftentimes heretofore hee straued against his father, and then likewise stomached for certaine follies, presently departed awaie to the king of France, &c. now the king committed his said brother Odo to prison, where he remained about the space of foure yeres after, to wit, to the death of king William.

King William taketh of euery hysde of land throughout England 6. shillings, *An. reg. 19.* and then sayled ouer into the parts beyond the Seas.

Canute king of Denmarke, with a mightie paue by the assistance of his father in lawe Robert Earle of Flanders, was ready to haue come into England, whereupon king William byping Soulesours out of all fraunce, manie thousandes of footemen and archers, and taking some south of Normandie, in the harvest time returned into England, and denided his Soulesours throughout the Realme, charging the Bishoppes, Abbots, Carles, Barons, Sheriffes, and prepositiours to find them meat and drinke, but after, when he was deridde that his enemies were hanged, and let of their purpose, hee sent

Odo Bishop  
of Bayon put  
in prison.

1085  
Canute king  
of Denmarke  
prepared to  
invade Eng-  
land.

Bishops, Ab-  
bots &c. charged  
with the care-  
ping of soul-  
sours.

Three of the  
kings Chap-  
laines made  
Bishops.

An. reg. 20.  
1086

King William  
made Henry  
his son knight  
The order of  
knighthoode  
among the  
Saxons.

backe part of his armie, part he kept with him all winter, and in the seass of the Nativitie he helde his Court at Gloucestre, where unto thre of his Chaplaines hee gave thre Bishoppiches, to Maurice the Bishoppiche of London, to William that of Thetforde, and to Robert the Bishoppiche of Chester.

King William caused all England to bee described, to understand what land everie of his Barons did possesse, how manie knightes fees, how many plough landes, howe manie villans, how many beastes, or cattell, yea how much readie money everie man possessed within his kingdome, from the greatestt to the least, and howe much rent everie mans possession might yeelde, thus the land was replete with manie mischiefes, that came of this doing.

In the Whitson weeke king William honoured his sonne Henry at Westmister, where he then held his Court, with the order of knighthood, which order of knighthood, how the same was ministred I read not, but as Willelmus Ingulphus, In time of the Saxons before the conquest of the Normanes, The English mens custome was, that he that should be consecrated to lawfull warfare, should the evening going before the daie of his consecration, to some Bishoppe, Abbot, Monke, or Priest, contrite and compunct, make confession of his sinnes, and absolued, should continue all night in the Church, and give him selfe to praers, deuotions, and afflictions: And on the morrowe hearing the deuine seruice, should haue a sword put about his necke, and communicating at the same seruice the holie mysteries of Christ, should thenceforth continue a lawfull knight, which custome of consecrating a knight the Normans despised.

Shortly after king William commanded that Archbishops, Bishops, Abbots, Carles, Barons, Vicounts, with their power of men of armes should meete him on the first daie of September, at Salisbury, whither when they were come, hee caused the men of armes to sweare to him fealtie against all men.

The same yere Clito Edgar with licence obtained of the king passed the sea with 200. men of armes, and went into Apulia, whose sister Christine entred into the Monasterie of Rumsey and was made a Nunne.

R. Windover.

When the Normans had accomplished the will and pleasure of their Lord vpon the Englishmen, & that there was scantly any noble man left of the English nation to beare any rule ouer them, but was come to passe y it was a reproch to be called an Englishman: There sprang vp wicked tolls, & customs, & the more people spake of equitie, the more wrong was done. Those that were appointed Iusticers were the authoers of all vnrighteousnesse, who so ever did take a Were or a Goate had his eyes put out, and no man durst speake against it, so: the cruell king loued wild brasses, as though he had bene father of them, and by wicked counsell he brought to passe, that where men were wont to inhabite in townes and villages, and where God was wont to be honoured, there all kinde of wilde beastes did sport themselves, so that men saide for certaine, that for the space of more then xxx. miles, god profitable cozne ground was turned

turned into a chase for wild beasts: this was called the new Forrest in Hampshire, wherein be 9. walks, 9. keepers, 2. rangers, a bow bearer, and the Earle of Arundale is lord Warden by inheritance. In building of Castles this king excelled all his predecessors. Normandy came to him by inheritance, Genemania he got by force of armes, he made Armonica or Britain obedient unto him, in England he reigned alone, Scotland and Wales he subdued, he loud peace so well, that a young warch might without daunger carrie a burden of golde through all places of England safe.

John Leyland.  
Roger of Wind.

Thernes so punished, that all people might passe safe.

King William hauing giuen unto Remigius a Donke of Ffistmce, the Byschoppicke of Doychester, he nowe minding that the Byschoppes seat stood in a small Citie, whereas in the same diocesse was the citie of Lincolne, which seemed to be more mete for his seate, he bought lordshippes in the top of the hill, and builded there a Church, and not withstanding that the Archbishop of Dozke affirmed that place and Citie to bee part of his Diocesse, Remigius not regarding his words proceeded and finished the work which he had begun, and when he had finished the same, he adorneed it with Clarkes that were approued both in learning and manners: he was but small of stature, but stout of hart, brown or darke of colour, but cleare and excellent in woorkes: hee was once accused of treason to the king, but a certain seruant of his, by iudgment of the fierp sword, purged him, and returned him to the kings fauour.

Byschoppicke of Doychester re-mooued to Lincolne.

Judgement by the fierp sword.

There was a great water flood through abundance of raine, so that diuers hilles being softened fell, and overwhelmed manie villages. About the same time king Wil. had builded the Abbey of Battail in Soller, on the place where he ouercame Harold, in which place he set Monkes, and dedicated the Church to the holie Trinitie, and to Saint Martin. He also founded Selby Abbey in Doychester, and the Priorie of Saint Nicholas at Excester, and the Abbey of Saint Stephen in the Citie of Cane in Normandy, where he was buried, hee gaue priuiledges to Saint Marins le Grand in London (which Church was founded before the conquest, by Ingelricus and Edwardus his Brother, cousins to king Edward the Confessour) hee also gaue to that Colledge all the lande and more, without the Posterne called Creeples gate of London, on eyther part of the Posterne, that is to saie, from the North corner of the Wall, as the Riuer of the welles there remapning depart the same Poore from the wall, to the running water which entereth the Citie (to wit, through the wall, and so through the Citie, though vnder grounde, to the Riuer of Thamis, and is called Walbrooke, of coming through and from the wall.) The description of king Williams scale, with the names of the testies, (among the which is R. firz Gilbert prince, Willi. Weller prince, Atakus the kings Chancellour, &c.) I omit for breuittie.

Water floodes. Battayle Abbey, and other builded.

Colledge of S. Martin le grand.

Creeples gate of London.

The riuer of the welles came down from and by Clarks wel, and so by Old-boine to the Thamis. Walbrooke, of coming through and from the wall of the Citie. Famine and death of men. Marianus. London and S. Pauls Church burnt.

This yere was a great death of cattell, and a sore disemperature of the aire, wherenpon a great mortalitie of men happened, so that manie dyed first of the feuers, and after of famine.

In the meane time a deuouring fire spread abroad ouer almost all the principall Cities of Englande, the Church of Saint Pauls in London was burnt, with the more part of the Citie, which fire beganne at the entrie of the Walles

Vita Ikenwald.  
A new founda-  
tion of  
Pauls church.

Stotford Ca-  
stle in Essex.

gate, and consumed to the East gate. Maurice then Bishop of London, afterward began the foundation of the new Church of S. Paul, a worke that men of that time indged would neuer haue bene finished, it was to them so wonderfull, king William gaue toward the building of the East end of this church, the choice stones of his Castle, standing nere to the banke of the riuer of Thamis, at the West ende of the Citty; he also gaue to God and Saint Paul, and to Maurice the Bishop and his successors the Castle of Stotford with all the appurtenances, namely the lande which Will. Diacon, and Radulph his brother, held of him, that they maie possesse it for euer.

After Maurice, Richard his successor did also wonderfully increase the same Church, purchasing of his owne cost the large streets about it, where were wont to dwell manie lay people, which ground hee began to compasse about with a strong wall of stone and gates.

King Henry the first gaue to the saide Richard Bpsh of London so much of the mote or wall of the Castle on the Thamis side, to the South, as should bee needefull to make the saide wall of the Church, and so much as should suffice to make a way without the wall on the North side, &c. It should seeme that this Richard inclosed but two sides of the saide Church, or Cemiterie of Saint Paul, to wit, the South and the North sides, for king Edward the second graunted that the Churchyard should be inclosed with a wall, for the murders, and robberies that were committed there. And when the Citizens of London claimed the East part of the Churchyard to be the place of their assembly to the folkemote, and that the great steeple at that time there situate, was to that vse, that all the inhabitants of the City might heare. They claimed also the West side, that they might assemble themselves together with the Lozde of Baynards Castle, for vniuers of their Armour in defence of the Citty. This matter was in the Towre of London referred to Heruins de Stanton and his fellowe Justices Itenerantes, but I finde not the iudgement of that controuersie, wherefore it is like the Church preuailed, for the wall even to this time continueth, although now on both sides hidden with dwelling houses.

An. reg. 20.  
1087

Satwens  
bones found  
of great length.

This yere in a prouince of Wales called Rose, was found the Sepulchre of Wawyn or Gawen, upon the sea shore, hee was sisters sonne to Arthur the great king of the Brytains, being as is affirmed by many of the length of xliiii. foote, he reigned in the partes of Brytaine, which to this day (saith Windouer) is called Walwyth, a most famous man in war, and in all manner of ciuillitie, as in the ades of the Brytaines is declared.

The Bpsh of Stigand of Chichester, Scoland Abbot of S. Augustines at Canturburie, Alsius Abbot of Bath, and Thurstan Abbot of Wyssor, deceased.

This yere king William remaining in Normandy, being at variance with Philip king of France, continued there a long while, whose patience the saide Philip did (as men saide) abuse, with these or like wordes.

The king of England lieth at Noanc, and keepeth his chamber as women doe when they be deliuered of childe, and nourisheth his fatte belly, with which talke king William being offended, saide, when after my chilobirth I goe to Church,



Church, I will offer a thousand candles with him, swearing by Gods resurrection and his brightnes, &c.

King William  
or the  
King William  
was in France.

About the latter end of August, king William in a great displeasure entered France, where he wasted and spoiled all as he passed.

Last of all he slered the city of Speure, & burnt it with our Lady Church, and two Anchors that were inclosed there, who perswaded themselves they ought not to forsake their house and came in such extremitie, whereat the king rejoycing, cheered his men to feed the fire, and came himselfe so nere, that with the heate of his harnesse he got a disease, and to the increase of his sickenes (it was said) his horse leaping ouer a ditch, did burst the inner part of his bellie, with the paine whereof he was sore afflicted, and returned to Roane, where shortly after he ended his life.

King William  
fell sicke to the  
death.

This wise noble man feeling himselfe grievouslie diseased, deferred not to do good unto himselfe in time to come, & also to many others, wherefore he commaunded all his treasure to bee distributed vnto Churches, poore folkes, and ministers of God, and politikelie assigned howe much hee woulde giue vnto every one, and commanded the same to bee writtten out by notaries before him.

Amongst the which giftes I finde that hee gaue to the Church of Saint Stephen in Cane, and the Donks there, two manors in Dorsetshire with their appendantes, one Manor in Devonshire, one other in Essex, manie hides of land in Barkeshire, some in Dorsetshire, and a mansion house in Woodstrate of London, with manie auowsons of Churches, but speciallie to be noted, he gaue his Crowne and ornaments to the same belonging, to the saide Church, which hee before had founded, for the redeming of the which Crowne and kingly ornaments, king Henry the first, sonne to the said Conquerour, gaue to the saide Church of Saint Stephen, the manor of Widdeton in Dorsetshire. King William also sent great summes vnto the Cleargie of Speure, that thereby the Churches which he had burned, might be repaired,

List of King  
William to the  
Abbey of Cane  
in Normandy.

Of keeping faith and iustice, of holding the lawe of God, and peace, of obseruing the priuiledges of the Churches and Statutes of the fathers, hee admonished all those that were present, and his sayings worthy to bee remembered, mixed sometime with teares, hee eloquentlie uttered in this sort.

Liber vite Will  
Conquerour.

Being laden with many and grievous sinnes (O Christ) I tremble, and being readie to be taken by and by vnto the terrible cramination of God, I am ignorant what I should do, for I haue bene brought vp in the seates of armes, even from my childhod, I am greatly polluted with effusion of much blood. I can by no meanes number the euils which I haue done, this 64. yeeres, wherein I haue liued in this troublesome life, for the which I am now constrained without stafe to render an accompt to the iust iudge.

Modes of  
William the  
Conquerour  
before his death

King William  
64 yeeres old.

When as my father (of his owne free will going into banishment) committed vnto me the Dukedome of Normandy, I was but a tender boie, that is to wit, of eight yeeres olde, from which time, euen vntill this present I haue alwayes sustained the weight of armour, and haue gouerned the same Duke-

Confession of  
W. William

dome almost 56.yēeres, in great danger of enemies. Those whome I haue gouerned, haue often latbe snares for mee, and wickedly haue brought vnto me domages and great iniuries.

The Normans  
valiant if they  
be wel gover-  
ned, otherwise  
readie to all  
mischiefe.

Turchetill my nourisher, and Osberne Herfastus sonne, the Dapifer or Sewer of Normandy, and Earle Gilbert the father of the Countrey with many other necessary for the common wealthe, they haue fraudulently slaine, with these things therefore I haue tried the faith of my Countrey: oftentimes in the night for feare of my kinsfolke, I haue bene secretly caried by my vnckle Gualter out of the principall chamber, and brought vnto little houses and lurking corners of poore men, lest by those traytors that sought my death I should be found: The Normans if by a good and hard gouernement they bee ruled, they are most valiant, and in doubtfull thinges inuincible, they excell all men, and for their strength, they contend to ouercome all their enemies. Wherwise they teare in pieces and consume one another, for they couet rebellions, they desire seditions, & are ready to al mischief, let them therefore be constrained with a strong censure of gouernement, and with the yble of discipline compelled to walke by the path of iustice, for if at their pleasure, without a yoke they be permitted to go, like a wilde vntamed Asse, they and their prince shall be ouerwhelmed with penurie and reprochfull confusion. And this I haue lately learned by manye trials, my neighbours and kinsmen that ought by all meanes to defend me against all moztall men, with often conspiring haue risen vp against me.

Guy Harold the duke of Burgundy his son by my aunt Adaliza rendred me enill for good, for I receiued him courtesally comming out of a strange countrey, and honoured him as a brother, and gaue vnto him Tiernoun and Briquand, not a little part of Normandie, he hath derogated much from me both in his wordes and aces, detesting and declaring me to bee a bassard, to degenerate and to be vnto this gouernement, and as an enemy hath defamed mee, what néede I say more, he hath falsified his faith vnto mee, he hath rebelled against me, and my Péeres, Ranulph of Bayon, and Haimo Teothed, and Nigel of Constantine, and many other more he hath withdrawen from me, and hath constrained them by his wicked perswasions to be persured persons with him, vnmindfull therefore of his homage and fidelitie which he ought vnto me, he is went about to take all Normandie from me.

Thus therefore being yet without a beard I was constrained to take vp armes against him, and in the plaine at Dalesbune to fight against my kinsman and owne seruant.

Then God assisting me, betwene Cane and Argfers I ouercame my enemies, who by Gods appointment being ouerthrowen, I freely possessed my fathers right.

That done I besieged a fort of Bayon, and therein included Guy soze wounded, and fled from the battell, nor I suffered him to depart with them untill I had expelled him as a common enemy out of Normandy, and obtained all his strong holds. Not long after this an other grievous aduersitie came vnto me, for my vnckles Malgerius Archbischoppe of Roane, and William his brother, to  
whome

whome I had frælie giuen Arches and the Carledome of Calegſi, condemned me as a baſtard, and called Henry the king, and Engelram Carle of Pontine againſt me. Preſently after I had heard of ſuch rumors in Conſtance I entred into the Seyne, many rumors diſſwading me, and ſent beſore me to Arches a ſelue ſouldiours which were moze ſeruenter to fight, and I folloved after not with a great army, & beſieged the ſtrong fort, but beſore I could come vnto the Countries betwæne the two Riuers, Sedan and Gerene, my ſouldiours had preuented Carle Engelram haſting to enter the Caſtle, and had ſlaine him manfully fighting, (for he was a moſt ſharpe ſouldiour) and had put to flight all his companies.

Thoſe of the Caſtle I byſeled with an harde beſieging, and forced the periured Carle to exile, neither yet permitted I him in all his life to returne to that which hee had loſt. And alſo the ſroward Prelate that was neither deuout to God, nor truſtie vnto mee, I deposed by decre of the Pope from his Byſhoppes ſeate, and placed for him Maurice the venerable Ponke, whome God gaue vnto me from the city of Florence in Italie. Henry delighted with his kingly power, & hot with warlike boldneſſe, and greatly pricked forwarde with the derogations of mine enemies oftentimes hath endeouored to treade me vnder as one vnarmed, and by many meanes to feare me, and to appoint vnto me vnlaſſfull faces. Often with a huge armie he hath entred my land, but hee neuer reioyced of the praiſe of my ſpolles, hee often entred my lands, but hee neuer merie, nor without ſhame returned home to his owne; many ſtrong men he brought hither with him, whome for that by my ſworde and my ſouldiours (two worth the griefe,) they were ſlaine, he neuer caried back againe. Heretofore king Henry ouermuch inflamed againſt mee, deuised his huge hoſt into two partes of France, that he might oppreſſe our landes with a double burſting in with violence, for hee himſelfe brought an armie of eight hundred ſotemen into Troyenne Diocelle, that they might deſtroy all euery vnto the Riuer of Some, and the other companie hee committed to Odo his brother, and to Raynold of Clarimount, and to two Conſuls Raſe of Pontdesſire, and Widon of Pontine, that by the ſhallow places, they ſhoulde ſone enter into Normandie, and inuade Drani Calcegi, and the whole Towne of Roane, and ſhould utterly deſtroye with ſword, fire, and robbing, euery to the Sea.

This therefore I vnderſtanding, on the other ſide, I went forwarde, not ſuggiſſly, againſt the kinges tentes, and repoſed my ſelfe and my ſouldiours by the ſhore of Some, and whereſoeuer hee endeouored to deſtroye my lande with weapons and ſworde, I prepared a repproch, but Robert Carle of Ankeuſe, and Roger Mortimer, with other moſt tried ſouldiours I ſent againſt Odo, and his legions, who then almoſt at Caſcus, which is called the dead Sea, they met with the Frenchmen, the companies on both partes being prouided, a terrible battell was fought, and on both partes great effuſion of bloud, for euery where there were moſt valiaunt fighters, and euery vnto death ignorant to ſie, here were the Frenchmen for deſire of gaining, there ſtrike the Normans with a ſeruant hope of eſcaping, and defending themſelues.

selues and their dwelling houses, at the last God helpeth, the Normans vanquished, and the French men fledde away. And this battaile they had beyond Some in Winter, befoze Lent, the eight yere after the battaile at Valesdonne.

Then Wido Earle of Pontine was taken, and Odo with Raynold and others that were lustie in quicknesse of fote were dyuen away, Raulphe also the Earle had likewise bene taken vnlesse Roger the Prince of my warre had supported him, for lately he had done homage vnto him.

Therefore in such necessitie he requited him with a faire competent seruice, when he protected him thre dates in his Castle, and after permitted him to go safe home to his owne, for this offence I cast Roger out of Normandie, but a little after, being reconciled vnto him, I restored him the rest of his honours, yet the Castle of Mortimere, wherein he kept mine enemy, by right, as I suppose, I toke from him, but I gaue it to William de Warren his kinsman and lawfull vassall.

Wido Earle of Bayon I held in prison so long as it pleased me, and after two yeres I receiued againe homage of him, with such honour, that from thenceforth hee should alwaies be faithfull vnto mee, and shoulde euerie yere giue vnto me Souldiers seruice, wherefoer I commanded with an hundred Souldiours.

This done I gaue him great rewardes, and so honoured, sent him away in peace. After this fight ended, by and by as I certainly had tried the rumours, I sent by Ranulph of Deen those things that had chanced on the farther side of Some vnto the king of France, which thing hee hearing, straightwaies rose vp, and with his hoise speedely fledde, and neuer after did lie one night in my land, and thus euen from my childehood with innumerable pressures on euerie side I haue bene letted, but by the grace of God, I haue bene honourably deliuered from them all.

Therefore I was made hatefull to all my neighbors, but God assisting me in whom alwaies I put my trust, I was overcome of none.

This oftentimes haue the Bytaines, and them of Angeow, and Cenomania grieuously tried.

Godfrey Martell Earle of Ansoy, and Conan Prince of the Bytaines, and Robert Frise Prince of Naterell, haue laide waite to entrap me by many subtilt inventions, but God keeping mee, they were neuer satisfied of their desire.

A Royall Diademe that neuer any of my predecessors did beare, I haue gotten, which only heauenly grace, not right of inheritance hath giuen to me. What labours, and perillous confidates I haue sustained beyond the Seas against those of Ercester, Chester, and the Northumbers, the Scottes, the Gaules, Norwegians, and Danes, and against other aduersaries that endeuoured to spoile me of the Realine of England it were hard to declare, in all which the lot of victorie hath come vnto mee: And although manly greedynesse vpon such triumphes reioycesth, yet inwardly a carefull feare pricketh and byteth mee, when I consider that in all those, cruell rashnesse hath raged.

Where-

king William  
held not Eng-  
land by right  
of inheritance.



Wherefore I humbly beseech you, O Priests, and Ministers of Christ, that you will commend me to the almighty God, with your prayers, that hee will forgive me my sins, wherewith I am greatly pressed, and by his unspeakable mercy, will make me safe amongst his.

My treasures I command to bee given to the poore and to Churches, that those thinges that haue bene heaped up by wicked doers, maie bee disposed to holy uses of the Saints, for you do remember howe sweetely I haue loued you, and how strongly against all emulations defended you.

The Church of God, that is do wit, our mother, I neuer violated, but in euerie place where reason requested did willingly honour, I haue not solde Ecclesiasticall dignities, simonie alwaies detesting I haue reieted in election of Pastors, I euer searched out the merite of life, and his learning of wisdom, and so nere as I could committed the gouernment of the Church to the most worthy.

And this maie bee faithfully proued in Lanfranke Archbischoppe of Canterburie, this in Anselme Abbot of Becco, this in Gerebert of Fontanesh, and in Durand Trearne, and in manie other Doctors of my kingdome, whose famous praises (as I suppose) sounding in the vitermost corners of the earth may be tried.

King William  
commendeth  
Lanfranke,  
Anselme, and  
other Doctors  
his counsellors.

Such fellowes I chose to talke with, in the fellowship of these I found truth and wisdom, and therefore reioycing I wished euer to enjoy their counsels. Fine Abbeyes of Monkes, and one of Nunnes, which by my fathers were founded in Normandy, I helping by the assistance of God haue encreased, and with augmentations of many things, which I haue given them they are gloriously magnified.

Moreouer, in the time of my gouernment, seuentene Monasteries of Monkes, and sixe of holy Nunnes are builded, where great seruaice vnto God, and much almes to the poore is daily bestowed for the loue of the chiefeest king. With such camps Normandy is fenced, and in these fortres let the yonglings learne to fight against the deuill, and vices of the flesh. Of these truly either I by Gods inspiration haue bene builder and founder, or els a feruent helper, and well willing interder.

All things also which my Noble men in lands or rentes, haue given to God and his Saintes for their spirituall health in Normandie and England I haue courteously granted, and the Charters of the giftes, I haue freely confirmed with princely authoritie against all emulations and troubles.

These studies I haue followed from my first yeres, these I leaue vnto my hetres to be kept in all times. In this, my children, follow me continually, that here and for euer before God and men, you may be honoured.

This chieflly, O you (my very bowels) I warne you that you continually cleaue vnto the companie of good and wise men, and bee obedient to their gouernment in all things if you will long gloriously prosper. It is the doctrine of godly wisdom, to discern good from euill, to keepe iustice at all times, and with all force to thinne wickednesse, to saue and helpe the sicke and poore, to suppress and banquish the proud and vnjust, and to bidle them from troubling

King William  
his counsell  
to his children.

bling of the simple, to frequent deuoutly the holy Church, and aboue all things to leue the wooshipping of the diuinity, and to be obedient without any wearinesse day or night, in aduersitie and prosperitie vnto the law of God.

King William  
of his sonne  
Robert.

England not  
king William  
by inheritance  
but by conquest

The Duke dome of Normandie before I fought against Harold in the bale Senlac, I granted vnto my sonne Robert, for that he is my first begotten, and hath now receiued homage almost of al the Barons of this country: the honoꝝ granted cannot be taken away again, but without doubt I know that truly it will be a miserable region that shall be subiect to his dominion or gouernment: for he is a proud and foolish knaue, and to be long punished with cruell fortune.

I doe constitute none heire of the realme of Engl and, but commend it vnto the euertlasting creatoꝝ whose I am, and in whose hands be all things, for I possessed not such an honoꝝ by right of inheritance, but by the instinct of God, and with much effusion of mans blood I toke it, and the perjured Harold being slaine, or his fauourers dyluen away, I made it subiect to my dominion.

The naturall sonnes of the Realme I hated more then right required, the Noble men and bulgare sort I cruelly vexed, manie kinidly I disherited, innumerable, especiallie in the Towne of Porke, with hunger and sword, I brought to death, for the which the Countrey men beyonde Humber toke in against mee the armie of the King of Sweueland, and slew Robert of Cumlin, with a thousand soldours within Duresme, and other of my Nobles and most approued young Schollers in diuers places. Wherefore moued with an immoderate rage, like a wood lyon, I hasted vnto the southerne English men, their houses, their coꝝne, and all their prouision and household stuffe I commaunded to be burned, and great dꝝoues of beastes, and flocks of sheepe euerie where to be killed: therefore I punished with the sword of such horrible hunger the multitude of both sex, and so manie thousandes both of yong and olde of the most beautifull Countrey (Oh woe wooꝝth the grieve) I cruelly killed. The offices therefore of this Realme, that with so manie sinnes I haue obtained, I dare not giue to anie but to God, lest after my death, they be made yet worse by my occasion. William my sonne, who alwaies from his first yēeres hath sticked vnto me, and according to his power hath willingly obetied me in all things, I wish in the Spirit of God long to liue in health, and if it be Gods will, happely to flourish in the thꝝone of the Kingdome. These and many such like wordes William spake, and an amazemente invaded the standers by, that politikely measured things to come.

King William  
commendeth  
his sonne  
William.

King William  
gife to his  
sonne Henry.

Words of king  
William to his  
sonne Henry.

After that Henry the yonger sonne heard nothing to be giuen vnto him of the kingly treasure, lamenting with teares, he saide vnto the king: And what (father) doe you giue vnto me? To whome the king saide, Five thousand poundes of sluer out of my treasure I giue vnto thee. To this Henrie saide, What shall I doe with that treasure, if I shall not haue a dwelling place of habitation: Wherevnto his father answered, Be of a patient minde my sonne, and comfort thy selfe in God, quietlie suffer that thy elder brother goe before thee. Robert shall haue Normandie, and William England, thou in thy time shalt haue all the honour that I haue gotten, and shalt excell thy brethren in riches and power. These wordes thus spoken, the king searing left

lest in such a wide Realme sodaine trouble should arise, wrote a Letter vnto Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie, and being signed with his owne seale, gaue it vnto William Rufus his sonne, commanding him presently to saile ouer the Sea into England, and that done, he kissed and blessed him, and speedilie directed him to take the Crowne, who in short time came to the pozte called Whitland, and there he heard his father to be dead. Henry also hastied diligently to receiue the nominated summe of money, and to call necessary fellows, in whom he might trust.

King William  
his sonnes  
left him and  
sought to helpe  
themselves to  
his possessions.

In the meane time, the Physicians, and the kings seruantes that kept the languishing Prince and the Nobles that came to visite him, beganne to speake vnto him for the prisoners that hee kept in holde, and humbly besought him to haue compassion vpon them, and to release them. To whome hee saide, Morcare the noble English Earle I haue long kept in prison, and that vniustlie, but it was for feare, lest by him, if he were at libertie, the Realme of England should bee troubled. Roger also of Britole, for that he verie stubboznelly raged against me, and prouoked Raulph of Guadar his sisters sonne and manie others against me, I haue straitely kept in prison, and swozne, that in my life he should not come forth. So many I cast in prison deseruing it, through their owne perversitie, and sundrie others mo, for feare of sedition to come; for this is the rule of righteousness, as the diuine Law by Moses given vnto the gouernours of the world requireth, that the wicked be oppressed, lest they destroy the innocent. But now being at the point of death, as I desire to be saued, and absolved by Gods mercie from my sinnes, so I presently command all prison doores to be opened, and all prisoners except my brother, the Bishop of Bayon, to be released, and for the loue of God to be freely dismissed, that hee may haue mercie on me. Notwithstanding, I haue decreed that they depart out of prison with this condition, that first for more securitie they giue their othe to the officers of the common wealth, that they will by all meanes keepe peace in England and Normandie, and according to their power manfully resist all aduersaries of the same.

All prisoners  
to be released  
except his  
brother Odo.

And when Robert Earle of Mortou heard his brother to be commaunded by the kings sentence to perpetuall prison, he greatly sorrowed: for Herliwinus of Canteruill toke vnto hisse Herlewine duke Roberts concubine, of whom he begate two sonnes, Odo and Robert. And Duke William, who afterwards was king, enriched his father in late with manie great honours in Normandie and England, and set vp with great possessions his sonnes, Ranulph whom he had gotten of an other wife, and Odo and Robert, his brothers by the mother: for after that hee had for small offences expelled out of Normandie William surnamed Werelenge Earle of Mortou, sonne vnto Earle Megenis, hee gaue the Earledome of Mortou vnto his brother Robert Herliwinus sonne.

Herlem Duke  
Roberts con-  
cubine.

Hugh also Bpshope of Bayon sonne of Ralfe Consule, being dead, hee granted the foresaid Prelates dignity to his brother Odo, whom afterwards in England he made ruler of the Earledome of Kent. To conclude, him, for his excessiuenesse (as before is plainly related) king William toke in the

King William  
of Odo Bysshop  
of Bayon.

He of Might, and kept foure yeres in prison, neyther yet at his death for his insolencie woulde release him. Therefore the foresaide Carle of Portom greatly sorrowed, and for his brother both by himselfe, and by his friends humble intreated, and with praiers wearied the languishing king. And then manie had earnestlie desired him for the Bysshop of Bayon, the king wearied with the requestes of so many, said: I maruell that prudentlie you shew not, whom, or what a man he is, for whom you intreate: do you not aske for such a man, as latelie hath bene in appearance, a contemner of religion, and a crafty stirrer of sedition: haue not I corrected him now these foure yeres? a Bysshoppe, who ought to haue bene a most iust gouernour of the Englishmen, and was in dede the worst oppressor of the people, a Donke, and a destroyer of Abbeies. In deliuering a seditious person, you doe euill, and desire a great herte vnto your selfe, it is plainly sene, that my brother Odo is light, and ambitious, following the desires of the flesh, and vnumerable cruelties, and he will neuer bee brought from badworke, and hurtfull vanities. And this I haue in manie thinges tryed, therefore I haue imprisoned, not a Bysshoppe, but a tyrant, and without doubt the destruction of manie thousandes. These thinges I speake, not of hate as an enemie, but as a father of the Countrey, I prouide for the Christian people, for if he behaued himselfe chastlie and modestlie as of very right becommeth a Priest and Minister of God, a greater ioie woulde bee at my heart then I can declare. Cuerte one promising the amendment of the Bysshop. The king said againe, Will I, nill I, your petition must be graunted, for that I being dead, sodainelie a vehement mutation shall bee of all thinges. Against my will I graunt, that my Brother bee deliuered out of prison: but knowe you, that by him death, or a great impediment shall bee brought to manie. From Baldricke also the sonne of Nicholas, for that he foolishly leste my seruice, and without my licence went into Spayne, I toke all his landes for a punishment; but now, for the loue of God, I restore them to him agayne. A better young Souldiour in armes then hee is, I suppose is not to be founde, but hee is prodigall and light, and wandereth to dyuers places.

Thus King William, although greued with ouermuch paines of the inward partes of his bodie, yet effectually enioyed his wit and liuelie speech, and vnto all demanders gaue prompt and profitable counsell of matters of the realme.

The sodaine  
decease of king  
William.

To conclude, the Ides of September on a Thursdaie, the Sunne now clearing spreading his beames throughout the round world, the king raised vp, hearde the sounde of the great bell in the Metropolitane Church, and asking wherefore it sounded, his seruantes answered, Sir, it ringeth now to prime of our blessed Ladie. Then the king with great deuotion lift vp his eyes vnto heauen, and holding abroad his handes, sayde: I commend my selfe to our blessed Ladie Mary mother of God, that shee by her holie praiers maie reconcile mee to her most deare sonne our Lord Iesus Christ. And these words spoken, hee presently yeldd by the ghost, on the ninth day of September, when he had reigned twentie yeres, eight monethes, and sixtene daies, at the age of threescore



thys score and foure yeres. The chiefe Jhyptions, and others that were present with them that had kept the king all the night without groaning or calling, now seeing him vpon a sodaine to haue presentlie departed, were greatly astonished, and made almost madde. Furthermore, the richer sort of them straght, taking their Horses, departed a waie, and hasted home to defend their owne. The inferiour sorte, or clientes also, seeing their Maister in such sort to haue departed, snatched a waie the armour, bestell, apparrell, linnen, and all the kinges household stuffe, leauing the kings dead bodie almost bare in the stowe of his house, fledde a waie. Beholde, I praye you, what wooldie fidelitie is, euerie one as a kite snatched what hee coulde of his stuffe, and presentlie fledde a waie with their praye. Impietie therefore (Iustice falling downe) impudentlie commeth forth, and exerciseth rauenous pillage vpon the reuenger of rauenous pillers.

The amasidnes of the beholders of the kinges death, and thei flying.

The kinges dead body spoiled and forsaken.

The same of the kinges death steepe abroad, with swift wings, and wyde and broad brought soie or feare to the heartes of the hearers. For the death of king William the vrie selfe same daie that hee died at Roane, was vnto his kinned in Rome, and Calabria also shewed, as after wards by them in forman die it was trucly related. Trucly the euill spirite greatlie reioiced, when hee sawe the seruants that vehemently gaped to snatch and take away al by death of the Iudge to be free. O wooldy pompe! how contemptible art thou, because thou art euer vaine and slippery? Rightly thou maist be compared to a bubble in the water, that in a moment so proude selfe by thy selfe, and sodainlie thou shalt be brought into nothing. Behold the mightie prince vpon whome aboute a hundred thousande Souldiours willinglie waited, and whome manie Countries with trembling feared, now is in his owne house by his owne seruantes shamefullie spoiled, and from the prime, vnto the thirde houre left vpon the bare ground. For the citizens of Roane hearing of the death of the prince were greatlie feared, and almost all like drunken men, were so troubled, as if they had seene a multitude of enemies to be nere vnto the Citie, euerie one departed from the place where hee was, and asked counsaile of his wife, or his companions that hee mette, what were best to doe. Euerie one either carryed or decreede to carrie their goods from one place to another, and with feare hid them, lest they shoulde bee founde. At the last, the religious men, Priestes, and Monkes, gathering their powers and senses together, or dayned a procession, and decentlie went forward vnto Saint Gervasius Church: and according vnto the custome of holy christians commended the soule of the king to God.

Same of the kinges death suddenly spread.

Example of wooldy pompe.

Then William the Archbysshop commanded that his body shoulde bee carryed to Cane, and there in the Church of Saint Stephen the first Martyr, which hee had builded shoulde bee buried. But his brethren and kinsmen were now gone from him, and all his seruants had wickedly left him as a barbarous person, wherefore there was not one of the kinges knights to be found that would take care for the requies of his bodie.

Then Harluinus a certayne countrey knight, being pricked with his owne god nature, manfullie, for the loue of God, and honour of his countrey, take vpon

king William's body forsaken of all his professed friends and followers.

A certayne poore knight prepareth for the kinges buriall.

King William  
his body con-  
ueied to Cane,  
where the same  
was honorablie  
receiued.

The Towne of  
Cane fiered by  
casualtie.

Sermon at the  
kings buriall.

Buriall forbid-  
den to the dead  
king.

Place of buriall  
for the king  
purchased.

upon him carefullie to see the kinges funerall solemnized. Therefore the priests with ointmentes, and carriers of the dead bodie, and a Waggon hee hyed at his owne proper costes, they carried the dead bodie of the king to the hauens of Sone, and putting it in a Shippe, by Sea and drye lande, brought it vnto Cane. Then the Lord Gislebert Abbot, with the couent of Monkes reuerentlie came forth to mete the corpes: to whome, weeping, and praying, cleaued the whole multitude of the Clergy and laity: but presentlie peruerse for tune powred out vpon al together a great terrour, for straightwaies a terrible fire burst out of a certayne house, and cast by huge flames, and hurtfullie inuaded a great part of the towne of Cane. All the Clearkes therefore, with the laie people run to repress the fire, only the Monkes ended the office begun, and singing, brought the kinges bodie to the Abbey Church.

To conclude, to bury this great duke and father of the country were gathered together al the bishops and abbots of Normandy, of the which was William Archbysshop of Roane, and manie other Bysshops and Abbots which were long to name.

All they came together at the solempne funerall of the famous King, and buryed him in the Presbyterie betwene the quier and the Altar. The masse ended, when the Coffin was now set in the earth, but the bodie yet remained on the Baxe: The great Gislebert Bysshoppe of Ebozzen, went vp into the pulpet, and eloquentlie pronounced a long Sermon of the magnificence of the dead king that he valiantly had enlarged the bounds of Normandy, and had extolled his Countrey more then all his predecessours, peace and iustice he kept throughout all his dominions. Thieves and robbers hee manfullie chastised, with the rule of righteousnesse, and the secular Priests, Monkes, and vnarmed people hee stronglie fenced with the Sworde of vertue. The Sermon ended, and for pittie manie weeping and protesting his words to be true, he requited the people with this additiō, for that no man mortall can liue in this life without sinne, in the loue of GOD wee praye you all for the dead Prince, that you will make intercession for him vnto Almighty God, and if he haue offended anse you, charitable to forgiue him.

Then Anselme fitz Arthur rising from the companie, with an high voyce uttered such a plaint. This ground whereon you stande, was the floze of my fathers house, the which that man for whome you doe make intercession, when as yet he was Duke of Normandy, violentlie toke from my father, and all right denied, mightilie sounded this house. This ground therefore I challenge, and openlie reclaime, and in Gods behalfe I forbid that the bodie of the taker awaie by violence be couered in my earch, neither yet shall he be buried in my inheritance.

After that the Bysshops and other noble men heard this, and vnderstood by his friendes, who testified him to haue saide true, they sent for the man, and all violence set aparte, mollified him with gentle prayers, and made peace with him: for, for the place of his buriall, they presently gaue him thre score shillings, and for the rest of the ground which hee claimed, they promised him an equiualent price, and so in a small time, for the saluation of their speciall friende whome they

they loued, they made an agrément, and (by the consent of Henry his sonne) 100. pound of siluer was giuen. Further, when the bodie should bee put in the tombe or coffin, and was violently pressed, that the same, through the folle of the rough masons, was shorte, and streight, his fat belly (not botwelled) cracked, and an intollerable stinke filled the standers about, and the rest of the communalitie, so that the smoake of frankencense, and other gummies or spices, copiously ascending from the sensars preuailed not to exclude the worse smell: wherefore the Priests hastned to finish the burfall, and presentlie with feare to get them to their celles. And thus haue I truly shewed the fall of the Duke, and not a vaine Comedie, to make men laugh: which also sufficeth to proue, that the bodie of king William coulde not bee found vncorrupte more then foure hundred yeres after the same was buried (as some haue fabuled) neither yet his bodie to be of eight fote length: for then, such as wrote of his life, raigne, and description, would so haue noted, who all agree in one, that he was a man of meane stature, bigge bellied, &c. And last of all, for a full confuting of the saide fable, when his restlesse bones, which so hardly had obtained entombing (as ye haue heard) did afterward as vnluckely againe lose it in the yere of Christ, 1562. to wit, when Chastillon, conducting the remnant of those that escaped at the battell of Dreax, toke the Citie of Cane, certaine sauage souldiours, as well English men as others accompanied with foure Captaines, did beate downe, and bitterly desace the noble tombe and monument of that renowned Conquerour, and victorious king, pulling out all his bones, which some of them spitefullie threwe away (when they could not finde the treasure they falsely surmised had bene laide vppon there) and others, to wit the English snatches, euery one to haue some peece of them, not making anie wonder of them, as they would haue done, if the same had exceeded the length and bignesse of mens bones of latter yeres, where as in deed, there was no such thing noted in them, as I haue bene certainly informed by English men of good credite, who were present eye-witnesses at the spoile of that monument and bones, and brought some part of them into this realme. Theuic maketh mention of this matter in his vniuersall Cosmographie writing of Cane.

king William  
by burking of  
his body, gaue  
his farewell  
with a foule  
saour.

The body of  
king William  
could not be  
found vncor-  
rupted 500.  
yeres after  
his death.

Monument of  
king William  
deteced, and  
his bones dis-  
perced.

Andreas Theuic.

Now to speake of the issue of this noble Conquerour, whereof I haue before, partly touched: He had by Matild his wife daughter to Baldwine Earle of Flaunders, Robert surnamed Curthos, as some write, but as saith Cornelius Martin, and Peter Balhazar, in their booke of the Carles of Holland, Courteaise, to wit in English, short thighe, who after his father was Duke of Normandie. Richard that died young in the new forrest, as he was a hunting in the place where his father had ouerthrowne Churches, and Townes to make harbour for beastes, hee was buried at Winchester, on whose monument, hee was written Duke of Boloigne. William surnamed Le Rouse, or the Red, who succeeded in the kingdome of England. And Henry, vnto whome he gaue 5000. pound of siluer out of his treasure (as yee haue heard before.) He had daughters, Cicilie Abbess of Cane. Constance married to Allan Earle of Bytaine. Adela wife to Stephen Earle of Bloys. Margaret promised

Issue of Will.  
Conquerour.

Cornelius  
Martin.  
Peter Balhazar.

promised to Harold king of England. And Aelianor betrothed to Alfonso king of Gallia.

William the Redde fetched from Winchester the treasure, which all the pères of his fathers raigne had bene gathered, and gaue the golde to the Monasteries, and to the parish Churches, euerie one five shillings of siluer, and to euery borough towne he gaue an hundred pounds to bee dealt to the poore. He also adorne a memorisall of his father with a great heape of siluer, and golde, and pretious bones.

## William Rufus.

Anno reg. 1.



William le Rouse or Redde the third sonne of William Conquerour, beganne his raigne the ninth daie of September, in the pèere of our Lozde 1087. and was crowned at Westminster by Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie, the first daie of December. He was of person a square man, red coloured, his haire somewhat yallowe, his forehead foure square like a windolwe, his eyes not one like the other, not of anie great stature, though somewhat big bellied, he was variable, inconstant, couctous and cruell, hee burdened his people with unreasonable fares, pilled the rich, and oppressed the poore, & what he thus got, he prodigally spent in great banquetting and sumptuous apparel, for he would neither eate, drinke, or weare any thing, but that it cost vnmearsurably deere. As for example it was in those daies written (and for vs now to be noted) that in a morning his Chamberlaine bringing him a new paire of hosen, hee demanding what they cost, and the chamberlaine answering three shillings, the king being wroth, said, Away beggar that thou art. are those meēt hose for a king to weare, bring me a paire of a marke, or thou shalt sore repent it; then his chamberlaine fetcht an other paire that were much worse then the first (for a better paire could not be got) and said they cost a marke, wherewith *h.* William was well pleased. Thus farre haue I noted the saying of *h.* William, because it importeth the simplicitie of apparel in those daies used, so farre different from the exesse of this present time.

R. of Glocest.  
S. Albons chron.

The best paire  
of hose three  
shillings.

1088  
The nobles  
rebell.

W. Malmes.

An. reg. 2.  
1089  
Hospital of  
Saint Iohn  
and Warbal-  
downe.

Odo bishop of Bayon, and Earle of Kent, with his brother Robert Earle of Mortaigne and Hereford, and almost all the nobles of England, raised war against king William, and would haue had Robert his eldest brother to be king: but king William by faire words pacifying some of the principall conspiratores, besieged the residue in the Castle of Rochester (which Odo Earle of Kent had lately repayed) and with much labour lastly overcame them.

Lanfranke archbishop of Canterbury deceased. He renewed the great church of Canterbury, restoring xrb. manours to the same. He repaired the walls of that Citie, builded two Hospitals, the one of Saint Iohn, the other at Warbal-downe. He restored the church of Rochester from foure secular Clearkes, to fiftie Monkes. He alwaies attended his Booke, and travelled to correct the

corrup.



corruption of Writers. He was a great benefactor to the Abbey of S. Albons, giving towardes the reparations thereof 1000. markes, and also got Redborne to be restored thereunto. Moreover by his testament he gaue to that church a hundred pounds of siluer, besides ornaments.

When Lanfranke was dead, king William kept in his owne handes the Churches and Monasteries of England, after their Pastours were dead, making great spoile, and letting them out to farme to such as woulde giue most for them.

This king William, so long as Lanfranke liued, seemed to abhorre all kinde of vice, so that hee was accounted a mirrour of kings: But now when Lanfrank was dead, he first shewed himselfe for a while variable, as it were, betwixt vice and vertue, and after, to wit, toward his later daies, all inbend of vertue waxing colde, the heate of vices increased in him, he set his mind to cracing: and one Ranulph a Clarke (or Secretarie) a man of base kindred, by his faire tongue and subtill wit, being come to promotion, did picke forward his covetous heart. This Ranulph was a poller of the rich, and an undoer of the poore, a confiscator of other mens inheritances, an incivill lawyer, the king woulde ofte laugh at him, and say, he was a man alone, which could compasse his matters so well to please his Master, he being the Author: Churches were set to sale, so soone as the Incumbent was dead: for straightway this Ranulph was sent to take inventorie of all that was found, and the same to be confiscate to the kings use, and inquirie was then made for one meete to be set in the place of the Bpshop, Abbot, or other deceased, not for their worthinesse, but for their money that woulde giue most, who at the length shoulde haue that promotion naked and bare, notwithstanding they paid deare for it. There was no man rich but Collectors of money, no clerks but men of law, not of conscience, no Priests but Harpours. What crime soever any man had committed, so soone as he did appeale for the kings aduantage by accusing other, he was heard, yea the rope was taken from their neckes. The courtiers deuoured the substance of the husbandmen their tenants: When the laying out of haire, and the superfluitie of garments was found, the tenderesse of the body, and wrestling with women, nice going, with dissolute behaviour was in vze, there followed the court a number of effeminate persons, and great companies of ruffians, whereby the same court was not a place of maiesty, but a brothell house of vnlawfull things, such as ought to be abolished.

This was a token of great insolencie in the king, that when the Jewes at London came to him, and brought him presents, he encouraged them to fight against the Christians, swearing by Lukes face, that if they did ouercome, he woulde become one of their secte.

On the eleuenth day of the moneth of August, about thre of the clocke in the afternone, a great earthquake made all England afraide, with a terrible wonder, so that all buildings did (as it were) leape vpward, and immediatly set themselves in their olde place: after the which there followed great scarcity of graine, and late haruest of coyne, so that the same was scarcely inned at S. Andrewes tide.

Mathew Paris.  
G. Lilly.

W. Malmes.

Abuses of this  
kings time.

King William  
and othe. and  
unfaithfulness.

Earthquake.

An. reg. 3.  
1090

Robert de Ollie the second, founded the Priore of Diney besides Orford.

King William being desirous to take Normandie from his eldest brother Robert, and to bring it vnder his dominion, he first bought the castle of S. Valery of one Walter, and the castle of Albemarle of Odo, and put into them men of armes to waite Normandy. Which thing being knowne to duke Robert, he sendeth messengers vnto his soueraigne Philip king of France, requirring him to come to alde him in Normandie, who indeede shortly after brought a great power, and besieged one of the forenamed Castles, wherein king William had placed a number of men of armes. Of which siege when king William vnderstode, hee sent ouer no small portion of money vnto king Philip, requirring him to withdraue his siege, who receiuing the money returned home.

The winning  
of Glamorgan  
and Morgannoke  
moued out of  
the Welch  
mens hands.

About this time, one Iustinus sonne to Gurguntus Earle of Glamorgan, and Morgannoke, refusing to obey Rhesus, sonne to Theodore Prince of South Wales, sent Aeneas sonne to Gedinorus, sometime Lord of Demetia into England, to take muster of souldiers, and there receiued a great army, vnder the conduct of one Robert Fitzhamon, and topning with other rabbles out of Went and Breccints, met with Rhesus in Blacke hill, and there slew him, and so paying the Englishmen their wages, discharged them. But they taking regard vnto the goodnesse of the soile, and the great bariance which was then amongst the Welchmen, as in foretime the Sarons had done, they turned their force of armes against those which had intertained them, and sone displaced them wholy of all the champion, and the best of the Countrey, which Robert Fitzhamon diuided amongst twelue knights which he brought with him, reseruing the better part to himselfe, who building there certaine Castles, and joining their power together, defended their farmes and Lordships which they had taken and possessed, whose heires peaceably enioy the same vnto this date: but Iustinus scarcely reserued to himselfe and his, the hillie Countrey. The names of the twelue knights were these :

- 1 William Lowdon.
- 2 Richard Granuille.
- 3 Paganus Turberuile.
- 4 Robert Saintquintine.
- 5 Richard Siward.
- 6 Gilbert Vmfreuill.
- 7 Roger Berkerowle.
- 8 Reynald Sully.
- 9 Peter Soore.
- 10 John Fleming.
- 11 Oliuer Saint Iohn.
- 12 William Easterling : now for shortnesse called Stradling.

Thus was the Lordshippe of Glamorgan and Morgannoke won out of the Welchmens handes, which Lordshippe contained in length from Rimid bridge on the East side, to Pallekuan in the West side seauen and twentie miles. The breadth from the haue of Aberthawe on the South side,

to

to the confine of Brecknockshire, about Spoyleis Castle, is two and twentie miles.

In this prouince are nere vpon a river of the same name Pontfaine, that is to say, Stonebridge, sometimes called Cowbridge, Lantwid, Wenny, Dintwid, tostones, and castles, besides Caer Phil, a most ancient Castle and fortress, which by report was erected by the Romans, and Caerdd the principall town of the shire, standing vpon the river Tase, Englishmen terme it Cardif or Cardife. Also, within the body of the said Lordship were eightene Castles, five and thirtie knights fees: a halfe, that held of the same Lordship by knights seruice, besides a great number of freeholders. Also, the saide Lordship being a Lordship Marcher, or a Lordship Royall, and holden of no other Lordship, the Lordes thereof, euer since the winning of the same owing their obedience onely to the Crowne, haue vsed therein *Iura regalia* with the triall of all actions, as well reall as personall, and pleas of the crowne, with authoritie to pardon all offences, treason onely excepted.

Humfrey Llwyd

How to returne to king William: he in this meane time making warre against his brother Robert duke of Normandie, toke the Castles of Walerike and of Albemarle, then sending his souldiours into his brothers country, he began to spoile and robbe. But through the diligence of friends, agreement was made betwene them, vpon condition, that Robert his brother should giue vp into the kings hands, the castles that he had gotten of him, to wit, the countie of Dwe, the Abbey of Fescampe, the Abbey of S. Michaels Mount, and Herefbourgh, &c. And those Castles which were reuolted from the duke in the countie of Paine, with the Castles which stood against him in Normandie, the king should subdue them, and restore them to the duke, and all the lands in England pertaining to the Normans, which for their loyalty to the Duke they had lost, he should restore to the Normans. Also he should giue to the duke so much land in England as was couenanted betwene them. Moreover, it was agreed, that if the Duke died without issue male, the king should be his heyre: and in like case, if the king died without lawfull issue male, the Duke should be his heyre. Which couenants were confirmed by the othe of twelue Barons on the kings part, and as many on the Dukes part.

king William  
inuaideh Ro-  
bert his elder  
brother.

In the meane time Henry yonger brother to the king and Duke, with a power of men of armes entred Saint Michaels Mount, and wasted the kings landes, taking prisoners, and robbing other. Wherefore the king and Duke with an army besieged mount Saint Michael, all the Lent season, oft times fighting with their brother Henry, where they leste both men and horses, but preuailed little. The king on a time comming out of his paullion, and seeing the enemies a far off riding in a brauerie, he alone rode against them, and set vpon them, thinking that no man durst be so bolde as to withst and him: but straight way his horse was slaine vnder him, and himselfe oralone by the one fote: and when the knight that had ouerthrowne him, toke his sword in his hand to smite him, he cried out, Hold thy hand knave, I am the king of England. The whole company of men of armes knowing his voice, straight way they reuerently toke him vp from the ground, and brought him another horse:

Henry inua-  
deh his elder  
brother.

Henry inua-  
deh his elder  
brothers lands.  
king William  
foole hardie,

and hee looking for no stirrope, sprang upon the horse backe, and with an angrie countenance beholding all that stood about him, said: Who was it that ouerthrowne me? And the knight which had done the dede, saide: I not thinking that you had bene the king, but a knight, did ouerthrow you. With the which answer the king being pleased, swore by Lukes face, thou shalt be my knight, and shalt bee witten in my white Booke, with the reward of a worthy knight.

Malcolme did  
homage to  
king William.

Malcolme king of Scottes, with a great armie invaded Northumberland, meaning if he had sped well to proceede further, but he was disappointed in his first attempt, notwithstanding he returned with great praises. Whereof when king William vnderstoode, hee returned into England with his brother Robert, and shortly after with no small naup and army of horsemen and footmen, he went into Scotland to invade king Malcolme, but before he could come thither, almost all his naup was drowned, and many of his horsemen perished through hunger and colde. King Malcolme mette with king William, which when Duke Robert behelde, he called to him Clito Edgar, whome king William had expelled out of Normandie: vpon trust of whose helpe, he made peace betwixt the two kings, with condition, &c. Duke Robert also pacified the kings wrath against Clito Edgar.

Tempest of  
lightning at  
Winchell-  
combe.

On the nineteenth of October, a vehement stroke of lightning, shaking the steeple of the Abbey at Winchellcombe, made a great hole in the stone work thereof nere to the toppe, rent one of the beames in the church, and brake downe to the ground the head of the Crucifer with great violence, and brake the right legge of the same Crucifer, the Image of our Lady also, that stood by the crosse, being shaken with the blowe, fell to the ground. Also a great smoake afterwards with a maruellous filthy smell filled all the church, which continued long after: although the Monkes with holy water, and incenses, went about the houses of the Monasterie, singing Psalmes, &c.

Tempest of  
wind at Lon-  
don, more  
then fire burn-  
ed houses  
blowne downe.

And on the seventeenth day of Nouember, a mighty tempest of wind out of the South west, beat downe in London fire hundred and six houses, and shaken the Churches, especially the Church of Saint Mary Bowe in Cheape, where the winde brake in with such a vehement force, that two men were therewith slaine in the Church, and the roose being raised with the beames thereof were carried in the ayre a great while, and at the last fire of the saide beames were broken with their fall so fast into the ground, that there appeared of some of them the seventh, and of some the eight part, to wit, but foure foote aboue the ground: which beames or rafters were seauen and twentie or eight and twentie foote long, which was a wonderfull thing to see them so pierce the ground (not paied then with stone) and there to stand in such order, as the workemen had placed them on the Church, vntill such time as they were cut euen by the ground. The Tower of London was also broken, &c. When king William had repaired such Castles as the Scottes had impeached, and builded the newe Castle vpon Tine, hee returning south of Northumberland, came through Mercia into Worcester, and kept the Duke with him till Christmas, but he wou'de not performe any promise made with him, which the Duke taking grieuously passed out

New Castle  
vpon Tine  
builded.



ouer into Normantie with Clito Edgare the twentieth three of December.

Osmond Bishop of Salisbury founded the Cathedrall Church of old Salisbury and on the morrow after the dedication thereof, the steeple was fiered by lightning.

1091  
Dire S. hie  
burne Bunker.

W. Thorne.

A souldier be-  
c me a monke,  
and was Ab-  
bot of Saint  
augustines.

Annoreg. 5.

This yere deceased Wido the 42. Abbot of S. Augustines by Canterbury. After whose buriall, the monkes of S. Augustines went to king William to ob-  
taine licence to chosse a new Abbot, which request was not onely denied them by the king, but he also charged them vpon a great paine, not to elect any, saying, that he would holde in his hands, all the spirituall livings in the whole realme, and would dispose of them at his pleasure: so the Monkes of Saint Austines returned frustrate of all hope heauily. Now it happened at the same time, there was in that Monasterie a certaine Monke, in religion young, but graue in discretion, a Norman borne, and king Williams kinsman, by name called Hugh de Floriaco. This Hugh hauing bene a valiant souldier, had long serued king William the elder, and the saide king William Rufus, as well in Normantie, as in England. Hugh, as yet by profession a souldier, on a certaine time comming to Canterbury with king William Rufus, vpon deuotion did visit S. Augustines church, where by Gods speciall grace, ranshed with the loue of God, and delighting in the chaste life of the Monkes, he would not goe out of the limits of the monastery before he had procured to be made a monke and brother of the said monastery. Which being granted, the said Hugh went into Normantie, distributed his goods vnto his kinsmen, and to the poore, because he had no wife nor childe, and returned vnto the monastery, and put on the monkish habite, and so remained a Monke. The Abbot Wido being dead (as it is said) at the last it was decreed that two circumspect Monkes, toge ther with the said Hugh, who had scarce continued one yere of probation should be sent to the king to procure his fauour by prayer or price, that he would graunt them licence to elect an Abbot. When these presented themselves vnto the kings sight, and saide his cousin, who in time before had serued him in the bannerie of a souldier, to be now cloathed in habite of a monke, he was so dismayed in minde, that gushing out with teares he said, I doe grant you this cousin of mine to be your Abbot, and at your petition I doe giue him the gouernement of the Abbey of Saint Augustine, neither do I permit you to chosse any other, whom, butt he you doe presently receiue, I will shortly burne your Abbey to ashes. Then the Monkes seeing no remedy, submitted themselves to the kings will in the premises. But the foresaid Hugh long time refused the honour, saying, that he was as well vntowthy, as insufficient, because he was a man in a manner vnlettered, and one that had verie little skill, as wel in religion, as in ecclesiasticall ordinances, but the king and the monkes forced him to accept the honour offered. neither did the king suffer him to depart from the Court before he were consecrated Abbot, which was done in the kings Chappell at Westminster, by Maurice Bishop of London. This Abbot did manie laudable actes to the great commoditie of that church. King William moued warres against the Welshmen, but preuailed not, for he lost many of his best knights, and much cattell, as well at this time, as at other.

1092

The towne of  
Cambridge  
described.

Castle at  
Grantbridge  
builded in the  
time of Will-  
iam Conqueror.

John Bisshope of Welles a Turon bo:ne, by consent of king William for a gre at summe of money translated his bishops sea to Bathe.

This yere a noble man of the Ro:mans blond named Bicot, *vicecomes* of shershe, at þ request of Hugolin his wife, founded a church to the honoz of God & S. Giles, nere into the castle of Cambridge, but afterward, to wit, in an. 1102, the Chanons were remoued to Barnwell, by Paine Peuerell. The Towne of Cambridge toke name of a fair large bidge, made ouer the riuer Grant there running, and so named Grantbridge (corruptly Cambridge :) it encreased by mean of this bidge, which was the ruine of Grantcesser, sometimes a famous citie, situate little moze then a mile from Grantbridge. The Castle was builded in the first yere of William Conquerour, as maie appeare by the description in Doomes day Booke in the Erchequer, which hath thus. The borough of Grantbridge defended it selfe for one hundred in the time of Edward the 1s. In this borough haue bin, and yet are 1. wards: in the first ward are 54. mansions, of them 2. be waisted: In this first warde Alan hath 5. burgesles that pay nothing, þ earle Sporton hath 3. mansions of the land of Audichel: and there be 3. burgesles, which in the time of Edward the 1s. paid 5. shillings and 8. pence halfe peny, at this day they pay nothing: Ralfe of Bant hath 3. burgesles that pay nothing. Roger seruant to Bishop Remigius hath 3. burgesles that paie nothing, Erchingor hath 1. burges that paie nothing: this ward was accounted in the daies of King Ed. for 2. wards, but for the castle 27. houses were throtton doun. In the second ward were 48. mansions in the time of king Ed. thereof 2. be waisted, of them 13. yeld nothing, the other 32. pay all customes, Earle Allan hath of them 5. burgesles that yeld nothing, and 9. remaine in the hands of the Englishmen. In the thirde ward were 41. mansions, of them 11. be waisted, the other 30. pay all customes. In the fourth ward were 45. mansions, of them 24. be waisted, the other 21. pay all customes, In the fift ward were fiftie mansions, one of them is waisted, all the rest pay the customes. In the seuenth ward were 37. mansions, 3. of those 37. Frenchmen haue, and pay nothing. In the eight ward were 37. mansions, a Priest holdeth one & paie nothing, 3. are waisted. In the ninth ward were 32. mansions. In the tenth ward were 29. mansions, 7. of them are waisted, but yet they defend themselves. The customes payable for this towne were 7. pounds by yere. And for Landgable 7. pounds, and 2. oves and 2. pence. The burgesles in the time of king Edward lent the sheriffe their carts thise in the yere: now they are demanded nine times. They found neither boates nor wagons in the time of 1s. Edward, which they doe now by custome set vpon them. They claime of the Earle Picot a common pasture, which he hath taken from them. The same Picot hath made there thre Millles, which taketh away the pasture, and destroiethe manie houses, and one Mill of the Abbot of Ely, and an other of the Earle Allan, the Millles yelde nine poundes the yere. The same Earle Picot hath of the heriot of the Lagemans scuen poundes, and one palfrey, and one knights armor. Alurike Godricson when he was sheriffe had of one of them twenty shillings for a heriot. Thus much Doomes day for Grantbridge, thereof moze shall be said in place conuenient.

Hugb

Hugh Lupus earle of Chester, sent into Normandy for Anselme, by his countsell to build an Abbey of S. Werbridge at Chester.

Abbey of  
Chester.

King William lying sicke at Gloucester, and thinking he should haue died, his Barons put into his head, his promise to God and the world, that he would amend his life. And forthwith he gaue vnto Anselme Abbot of Becco, the archbyschoppicke of Canterburie; and to Robert Bloet, his chancelor, the byschoppicke of Lincolne. But when the king had recovered his health, he repented him that he had not sold those byschoppicks for a great peece of money.

Anselme Arch-  
byschoppe of  
Canterburie.

Malcolme king of Scots comming into England was met withall, and slainely slaine, with his son and heire also, by Robert Mowbray Earle of Northumberland.

William Waren first earle of Surrey, and Gundred his wife, founded the abbey of Lewes in Sussex.

An. reg. 6.  
Lewes in Sus-  
sex.

King William builded againe the Citie of Carlisle, which was destroyed by the Danes 200. yeres before: hee also builded a Castell there, and out of the South parts of England sent men to inhabite.

1093  
Carlisle Citie &  
Castle builded.

This yere was a great famine: and after, so great a mortallitie, that the quicke were scante able to burie the dead.

King William made great wars in Normandy against his brother Robert, through the which both Englands and Normandie were sore oppressed with exactions.

The Welchmen spoiled the Citie of Gloucester, with a part of Shrewsbury and won the Ile of Anglesey to their subiection.

The Citie of  
Gloucester  
spoiled by  
Welshmen.

The Byschoppicke of Chester was translated to Norwich, by Herbert being Byschop there, sometime Abbot of Ramsey.

An. reg. 7.  
1094

King William sent his brother Henry into Northumberlande with a great power, because Robert Mowbray Earle of that country refused to come to the kings court: the countrey was spoiled, the Earle was taken, and many were disherited, some had their eyes put out, &c.

King William with a power entred Wales, but not being able to follow the Welchmen among the hills, he builded two Castellles in the borders, and returned.

King William  
invaded  
Wales.

Great preparation was made by the Christians to go against the Infidels at Jerusalem: Peter the hermite being their first leader, and after Godfrey of Lorraine, called Godfrey of Bolloigne.

An. reg. 8.  
1095

In a Councell holden at Salisbury, William de Owe was accused to the king of treason, who whiles hee provoked his accuser to fight with him in combat, by the kings committment his eyes were plucked out, and his stones cut off. Many innocent men were also accused, of which number was William de Aluerie, a man of goodlie personage, godfather to the king, his Auntes sonne, and his seler, yet the king commanded him to be hanged: which William making his confession to Osimond Byschoppe of Salisbury, was first whippid throughout by all the Churches of the citie, who dealing his garments to the poore, went naked to hanging, bloodying his flesh with often kneeling vpon the stones: and at the place of execution, he satisfied the Bishop and people, saying,

Councell at  
Salisbury.  
Cruelty of W.  
Rufus.

saying, So God helpe my soule, and deliuer it from euill, as I am guiltlesse of the thing that I am accused of: and after the Bpshp had commended him to God, he was hanged.

*Annoreg. 9.*

1096

Marianus.  
Normandy  
painted.  
Blazing Star.

Robert duke of Normandy toke his iourney towards Jerusalem, and laid the dukedome of Normandy to gage to his brother king William for 6666. poundes of silver. Paulus Aemilius saith 13600. pound.

The 22. of September, a blazing starre was scene, and for the space of 40. daies after, the greatest bush thereof pointed toward the east, and the lesser toward the west. There were also starres scene, which did, as it were, shoute out daies one at another.

The Dukes Godfrey, Beamond, and Robert besieged the Citie of Nice with fire thousande horsemen, and tenne thousande footemen, and toke the same, with the wife of Soliman, and his donnes. They also toke the Citie of Antioch.

*An. reg. 10.*

1097

King William  
went against  
the Welshmen.

The Church of the holie Trinitie in Norwich was founded by Herueus, being first Bpshp there.

King William returned out of Normandy into England, and after Easter with an army of horsemen & footemen, went the second time into Wales, that he might kill all the male kinde there, but hee could not kill or take one of them, notwithstanding of his owne people hee lost diuers, and also manie horses.

Clito Edgar  
sent against the  
Scots.

After this king William sent Clito Edgar into Scotland with an army, that he might make his cousin Edgar the son of king Malcolme king, and expulse Donwalde, which had inuaded the kingdome.

*An. reg. 11.*

Abbots dyed.

About the feast of Saint Andrew, king William went into Normandy, and shortly after, to wit, in the monethes of December and January, deceased the Abbots of S. Edmundsbury, of Abindune, of Peterborow, of the new monastery at Winchester, and Waltherus Bpshp of Winchester.

Peter Pigani.

1098

This yere king William builded Westminster hall.

King William making great warres in Normandy, subdued to his dominion the city of Paris, and a great part of that prouince: but in the meane time with taxes, exactions, and tributes, he did not only poule, but shauie and slay the Englishmen.

Ile of Anglesey  
besieged, and the  
Welshmen  
slaine.

Hugh Earle of Chester, and Hugh Earle of Shrewsburie assailed the Ile of Anglesey with an armie, and slew manie Welshmen, whome they toke in it, and some they dismembred, by cutting off their handes and stoness, and putting out their eyes: and a certaine Priest called Kenredus, a man of great yeres, of whome the Welshmen toke their counsell, for all matters that they toke in hand, they drew him out of the Church, pulled out one of his eyes, and cut out his Tongue.

Magnus king  
of Norway sub-  
dued the Ile of  
Man.

The same time Magnus king of Norway, the sonne of Olauus, the sonne of Harold Haruager, when he had subdued to his dominion the Isles of Orkney, and of Man, with a few shippes hee arriued in the Ile of Anglesey, but when he would haue come a land with his vessels, Hugh earle of Shrewsburie with manie armed men of warre on the sea shote him, and as it was then repor-

ted,



ted, by a shafte he was stricken: he ended his life, and his brother Robert de Bel-  
laine succeeded in his Carle dome.

The Princes of the pilgrimes with their armies toke their journey toward  
Jerusalem, besieged it, and toke it on the tenth of July, placing there a king,  
and a patriarke, and afterward fought with the Souldan of Egypt (who besie-  
ged them in Jerusalem) and overcame him.

King William being returned out of Normandie into England, kept his  
feast of Whitson-tide very royally at Westminster, in the new hall, which hee  
had lately caused there to be builded, the length thereof was 270. foot, and 74.  
foot in breadth: and when he heard men say that the hall was too bigge, and too  
great, he answered and saide, This Hall is not bigge ynough by the one halfe,  
and is but a bed chamber, in comparison of that I minde to make. A diligent  
searcher might yet finde out the foundation of the Hall, which he had purposed  
to build, stretching from the River of Thames, even unto the common high  
way. As writeth H. Huntington, he chalenged the inuestiture of Bishops, he  
pillaged and shamed the people, with tribute, especially to spend about the Towre  
of London, and the great Hall at Westminster.

King William having transferred into his treasure three hundred pounds  
by yere forth of the Bishopricke of Durham, and five moneths being past of  
the fourth yere, from the death of William Bishop of Durham, gave the Bp-  
shopricke to Ranulph, who for certaine excellent parts about the king was na-  
med the kings Chaplain, but some have written that he gave the king a thou-  
sand pound for that Bishopricke. This Ranulph was first familiar with Mau-  
rice bishop of London, but falling at variance, because the Deanry was taken  
away from him, he went to the king in hope of a higher place, in which point  
his hope was not deceived, for being admitted, and having a good wit and rea-  
die tongue, in short time he obtained to be preferred afore all other estates of  
England, who being called to be Procurator or Chancellor of the whole realme,  
did many times behaue himselfe so proudly, abusing his authoritie, that he lit-  
tle esteemed to offende many, who laboured with continuall accusations to  
cloud the clere minde of the king toward him, whereof when they failed with  
vaine labour, they imagined how to haue killed him. For which cause, one  
Gerald, armed with audacitie and deceit of other, taking a boate with a selve  
persons, met with the Chaplaine Ranulph at London, humbly requesting him  
that he would make speed unto his Passer Mauricius Bishop of London, lying  
very sicke at his house upon the river of Thames, who being almost ready to  
depart the world, greatly desired to speake with him. In affirming the truth  
whereof, he had brought a boate for him from his Passer, wherein hee might  
more speedily be carried.

Ranulph suspecting nothing, entred the boat with a selve of his companie,  
which boat Gerald with a straight course directed in the middle of the streame  
unto the sea: and when the Chaplaine demanded why they rowed so long, and  
did not turne to the shore, they sayned that the port was further off, where they  
should haue convenient place to land.

In the meane time the Chaplaine perceiving a great shippe to lie at an-

An. reg. 12.

1099

The Christians  
wan Jerusalem

Westminster  
hall.  
T. Woodbridge.

Mathew Paris.

Lib. Dunelm.

Ranulph Bp-  
shop of Dur-  
ham  
The kings  
chancellor.

The kings  
chancellor in  
great danger  
of death on the  
sea.

The kings  
chancellour  
cast the great  
and p:fuile  
Scales into the  
sea.

tho; in the midst of the fhoude, which, as it seemed, alwayes for his coming, did presentlie suspect the deuise of their deceit. And being transported vnto the suspected Shippe, in the which was harboured a great number of armed men, perceiving no hope to escape, hee cast the Ring which he wore on his finger into the Sea: and his Secretarie did throwe his Seale into the midst of the fhoude, lest through those Seales the state of thinges might be disturbed by counterfeyte processes, and Writtes set forth by the deceyuing enemye. After this his men are set ouer, being first bounde with an othe, not to disclose anie thing of the stealing awaye of their Master.

Nowe the Shippe leauing the Riuer, with hoisted sailes, entred the deepe Sea, directing their course towardes the South, and Ranulph sitting in the foreparte of the Shippe. There arose a contention among the Shipmen for the manner of his death: and two are chosen forth, either to heaue him into the sea, or to knocke out his braines, who shoulde for rewarde obtaine those garments wherewith hee was clothed: of which persons, when the one woulde haue his roabe or hypermost garment, and the other woulde also possesse the same, this contention protracted time of his death. At length there sodaynelie arose a fierce winde from the South, which troubled the Sea from the verie bottome, and the Heauens were couered with darkenesse. Which tempest so tossed the Boate hither and thither, that they coulde neyther goe forwarde, nor returne backe againe to land. And when the Mast and Cables were broken, the Ship was not onelie carried on the water, but she also carried in her the water, nothing being moze certaine then death to them all, which they looked for, onelie such was the course of the Sea, that the Shippe was returning to the place from whence she came, and yet the waues beating her backe, the murderers, a new determine for the death of the chaplaine, lest he escaping shoulde reuenge such iniurie.

But one which was next to Gerald in the Shippe, abhorring this wickednes, and being nere to the Chaplaine with sorrowfull repetition sayde, But alas, Ranulph, thou shalt now be murdered, but if thou wilt pardon me this wicked conspiraite, I will stand by thee to thy defence, as a companion of thy life or death. Whereunto he (as he was alwaies bold spirited) with great noise calling vpon him, saide: What dost thou thinke Gerald? What dost thou request of vs? Thou art my man, thou owest faith to me, call backe thy mind from the wicked dede thou intendest, demaunde what thou wilt, for I am he that giue moze then thou canst demaunde. Then Gerald, not so much allured by words, as feared with the authoritie of the man, did consent, and bringing him out of the Shippe, nowe beaten to the shore, did procure him honourable furniture, at his owne house. But not trusting the former promises, he procured his owne safetie by banishment into perpetuall exile. Ranulph therefore calling knights together, is brought to London with manie armed men, and a great noise of people, to the astonishment of all men, supposing him to haue bene slaine, he as then was sodainly resumed, and set againe as executor of the kings affaires, and receiued the Bishoppicke of Durham, being consecrated in the Church of

The kings  
chancellour  
escapeth death  
and is made  
B. of Durham.

Saint Paul in London.

The

King William being a hunting in the new Forrest, word was brought him that his people were besieged in Daine: he forthwith took shipping, though he were vehemently perswaded to the contrary, for that there was at that time a great tempest: to whome he answered, he neuer heard that anie king was drowned. At this time he got more honour then euer he did in all his life, for he chased his enemies, and returned with victorie.

King William's  
courage,  
and his words.

This yere, as well in Scotland as in England, on the third day of Nouember the sea brake in ouer the banks of the Thames and other riuers, drowning manie towne, & much people, with innumerable numbers of oren and shepe: at which time, the lands in Kent, that sometime belonged to Duke Godwyne, Earle of Kent, were couered with sandes and drowned, which are to this daie called Godwyne sandes.

An. reg. 13.  
Hector Boetius.  
Great watte  
floods.

Godwyne  
sandes.

Osmond Bpshope of Salisburie deceased.

King William returning out of Normandy, kept his Christmasse at Gloucester.

1100

The Monastery of Gloucester, which Abbot Scile had builded from the foundation, was now dedicated.

W. Malmes.

This yere many strange things came to passe, the diuell did visible appeare vnto men, and sometime spake vnto them.

Diuels appeare  
d to men.

Moreouer, in the Towne of Finchhamsted in Barkshire, nere vnto Abindune, a spring did continuallie by the space of fiftene daies flowe plentifulle with blood (or the likenesse thereof) so that it did colour and infect the next water brooke vnto it. Of which thinges, when men tolde the king thereof, he laughed them to scozne, and gaue no credite to them, neither yet to his owne dreames, nor the visions that other men told him of.

A spring ran  
the likenesse of  
blood.

King William on the morrowe after Lammas daie, hunting in the new Forrest of Hampshire, in a place called Chozengham, where since a Chappell was builded, sir Walter Tirell shooting at a deere, vnawares hit the king in the breast, that he fell downe stark dead, and neuer spake word. His men especially that knight got them away, but some came back again, & laid his body vpon a Colliers cart, which one selte leane beast did draw vnto the Citie of Winchester, where he was buried on the morrow after his death, at whose buriall, men could not wepe for soie.

King William  
slaynt.

This king was taken out of this world in the midst of his vnrightheousnesse, who being wicked to his owne people, and to strangers, was most wicked to himselfe. The countries about him he prouoked with wars, and England was so miserably oppressed vnder him, that it could not recouer, for he and his traine spoiled and subuerted all thinges.

William Rufus  
troubled  
the lands about  
him with wars,  
and oppressed  
his owne people.

He died in the yere of Christ, 1100. and in the 13. yere of his raigne, on the second day of August, when he had reigned 12. yeres 11. moneths, lacking eight daies, and was buried at Winchester, in the Cathedraall Church or Monasterie of Saint Swichen, vnder a plaine flatte marble stone, before the lecture in the quere, but long since his bones were translated in a Coffer and laide with king Knutes bones. He gaue vnto the Monkes called de charitate in Southwarke, the great newe Church of Saint Sauour of Bermondes-eye, which

which he had caused to be builded for them, and also his manors of Bermondsey it selfe, with all the pertinances, and confirmed vnto them all whatsoeuer Alwyn Child their first founder, Robert Bysshop of Lincolne, (who also gaue to them the towne of Charleton) or other had giuen vnto them.

Lib. Bermond.

He also of an olde Monasterie of Monkes in the Citie of Yorke, founded an Hospitall, and dedicated it to Saint Peter, for the sustentation and finding of the poore as well men as women, which Hospitall was since greatly augmented by king Stephen, and by him dedicated to Saint Leonard.

## Henry Beauclerke.

Annoreg. 1.  
Io. Roule.



Tho. Rudborne.  
W. Malmes.

Gerua. Doro.

Henry, the yongest sonne of William Conquerour, borne in England, at a place called Selby in Lincolneshire, brother to William Rufus, and the first of that name, for his learning called Beauclerke, brought vp in the studie of the liberall artes at Cambridge, chiefly through the trauaile of Henry Newborow Earle of Marwike, (who appeased all debates of that time to the contrarie) obtained the dominion ouer this Realme of England, and began his raigne the second of August, in the yere of our Lord 1100. and was crowned at Westminster on the first day of August, by Maurice Bysshope of London, because at that time Anselme Archbishop of Canterburie, was by persecution of William Rufus exiled.

This Henry was a noble Prince, strong and mighty of body, high of stature, and amiable of countenance, blacke haired, and that somewhat long about the cheykes, faire eyes, broad breasted, well in flesh, full of merie conceits. Hee was excellent in wit, eloquent in speech, and fortunate in battaile, and for these thre hee had thre notable vices, Couetousnesse, Crueltie and Lecherie.

Hee married Mawde the daughter of Malcolme and Margaret, King and Queene of Scots, of whom he begate William and a daughter named Mawd. At the beginning of his raigne, he restored the state of the Cleargie, asswaged the grievous paiments, reduced againe Saint Edwards lawes, and amended them. He put out of his Court all nice and wanton persons.

Measures re-  
formed.

He reformed the olde vntrue measures, and made a measure by the length of his olone arme, which was then called Vno, an Elle, and now the same is called a yard, or a mettwand, &c.

Use of fire and  
lights restored.

He restored to his subiects the vse of lights in the night, which lights and also fire, had been forbidden by his father to be vsed, after the ringing of a bell, at eight of the clocke at night.

Edgar king of the Scots did homage to this Henry.

History of S.  
John of Hieru-  
salem.

This yere Iordan Briuer Baron, the sonne of Raufe, the sonne of Brian Briuer, founded the house of Saint Iohn of Hierusalem, nere vnto London, by Smithfield.



The same Jordan gave 14. acres of ground lying in the field next adjoining unto Clerkenwell, to build thereupon a house of nuns, wherein he with Muriel his wife, were both buried in the Chapter house.

Robert Shorthose Duke of Normandie, the kinges eldest brother, which was now returned from Hierusalem, made warre upon his brother Henry for the Crowne of Englant, who assembled a strong armie, and landed at Portesmouth; but by mediation a peace was made, on condition, that Henry shoulde pay 3000. marks pærelie to duke Robert: and if the one died without issue, the longer liuer should inherit. Winchester was bzent the 17. of May, and Gloucester was bzent the 20. of May.

Robert Fitzham, who came with the Conquerour out of Normandie, with Sibell his wife, sister to Robert Belasine Earle of Shrewsburie, founded anew the Church of Thenekeburie, with the offices thereto belonging, and enriched it with large possessions, and was there buried.

Robert de Belasine Earle of Shrewsburie, eldest Sonne to Roger Mountgomerie, strengthened the Towne and Castell of Shrewsburie, so did hee the Castels of Wiggenorth, Lichile, and Arundell, with victualles and armed men against king Henrie: but the king being warned thereof, he gathereth his power and besiegeth Wiggenorth, which Towne was yelded unto him. And this being knowne to them of Arundell, they forthwith submitted the miselues, with condition, that their Lord Robert de Belasine, might be permitted to passe to passe into Normandy. Also they of Shrewsbury sent the keies of their castell, and pledges of their obedience, and then Robert, with his brother Eustace and Roger of Hoptiers assured this land for ever.

This yere the Priorie and Hospitall of S. Bartholomew in Smithfield was begun to be founded by Rahere (a man of a singular and pleasant wit, & therefore of many called the kings iester and minstrel) in a place which before had bene a marshy ground, a common laittato of al ordure & filth, & the place where felons and other transgressors were executed. This Rahere joined unto him a certain old man named Alfune, that had (not long before) builded the parish church of S. Giles, nigh a gate of the city of London, then called Creple's gate: this man he bled as a counsellor & companion in his building of the Church and Hospitall, and the one of them, to wit, Rahere, became the first Prior of that priory, & the other, to wit, Alfune, became hospitaller or prior for the poore, & went himselve daillie to the Shambles, & other markets, where he begged the charitie of deuout people for their reliefe, promising to the liberrall giuers (alleaging testimonies of holy scripture) reward at the hands of God.

King Henry inuested two of his Chaplaines, Roger his chancelor, in the Bp. Shopicke of Salisburie, Roger his Larder, in the Bpshopricke of Hereford, at Westminster.

King Henry gaue the earledome of Leiceſter to Robert Bearnont earle of Arment, that came in with William Conqueror. This Robert new founded the colledge of secular Chanons in the castell of Leiceſter, before by wars defaced. Robert the second surnamed de Bosu, his son Earle of Leiceſter, and Amicia his wife, for Robert his father, and Isabell his mother, founded an Abbey to the honour

1101

An. reg. 2.

Thenekeburie  
builded.

1102

Earle of  
Shrewsburie  
rebelled.

An. reg. 3.

Priorie and  
hospitall of S.  
Bartholomew.Saint Giles  
at Creple gate  
of London.

1103

Robert Bearnont,  
Earle of  
Leiceſter.

Donger bro-  
ther beguileth  
the elder.

An. reg. 4.

Lanthony by  
Gloucester.

Donnmoth in  
Eber.

1104

William earle  
of Porton dis-  
herited.  
W. Malmes.

of God, and the virgin Mary, in the meadowes without the north gate of Lices-  
ter for Canons Regular, naming the same Church *S. Mary de prato*, in *Anna.*  
1144. he indoweth it with lands, &c. Robert duke of Normandie comming into  
England, through the subtiltie of king Henry his younger brother, released to  
him the tribute of thre thousand marks of silver, which he should haue receiued  
yêrelie.

Hugh Lacy founded the monasterie of *S. Iohn at Lanthony*, the Chanons  
of which place were since translated by Miles, high constable, and earle of Here-  
ford, to a place nere vnto Gloucester, then called *Hide*, since called *Lanthony*.

Luga Baynard ladie of little *Donnmoth*, caused Maurice Bishop of London to  
dedicate the church of *Donnmoth* which she had founded, and the same day she  
gaue to it halfe a hide of land. This lady Luga was late wife to Baynard, that  
first builded Baynards castell in London.

William earle of Porton was disherited of all his lands in England, and all  
his castels made leuell with the ground, and the countrey soe bereft with the  
kings eractions.

Now the flames of wars being translated into Normandie, prevailed there,  
being kindled by the assemblies of traitours, as with fire which catcheth in all  
things that is about it. Normandie is a patient sufferer of mischieses, though  
it be no large region: it doeth tolerate sedition verie long, and by restoring of  
peace ariseth into a fertile state of substance, letting out the bosomeaker  
into France with free passage. Contrariwise, England doth not suffer re-  
bels long. Robert de Belasme earle of Shrewsbury comming into Normandy,  
having confederates of his wickednes, among whom was W. Morton, the son  
of Robert the kings vnkle, who from his childhood euer enuied the glory of Hen-  
ry, for not content with two earledomes of Porton in Normandie, & Cornwall  
in England, he required the earledome of Kent, which his vnkle Odo held, bring-  
ing so presumptuous, y he would say, he would not put on his vpper most garment,  
except he might obtain of his vnkle his desired possessions. But the k. delaying  
him with subtil answeres, did not onlie denie him that which he demanded, but  
began to challenge from him such things, as he said, he held vnlawfully: where-  
vpon the said William being disherited of all his landes in Englande, in a rage  
got him into Normandie, where besides the basine assaults he made against the  
kings Castels, he raged against Richard Earle of Chester, the sonne of Hugh,  
inuaading, taking, and spoiling such things as appertained vnto him, who was  
then but a child in yêres, and in the kings wardship.

There appeared about the Sun foure circles, and a blazing star.

An. reg. 5.

1105

King Henry  
sailed into  
Normandy.

King Henrie raised a great armie, and passed the Sea into Normandie, a-  
gainst his brother Robert, and got the Towne and Castell of Cane, and bent  
Bapon, with the Church of *S. Mary*, by the help of the President of Angcow, &  
many Castels more he wan, whereupon the Priories of Normandie submitted  
themselves vnto king Henry. The Flemings hauing a great parte of their  
countrey dyuoned, came vnto England, and obtained a place to inhabite in,  
nigh the Riuer of Twede, but afterward they were remoued thence, and sent  
into West Wales.

Endo Wapifer or Selwer to king Henry, founded the Monasterie of Saint John in Colchester of regular Chanons of Saint Austens rule, commonly called blache Chanons, and this house was the first that ever was erected in England of that order. King Henry hauing set things in an order in Normandie, he sailed and returned into England, that hee might increase his strength and retorne againe.

An. reg. 6.  
S. John of  
Colchester.

Robert duke of Normandy came to his brother at Northampton, and friendly required him to beare brotherlie loue toward him, but king Henry feeling his conscience accusing him, for obtaining the kingdome by defrauding of his elder brother, and fearing men more then God, first hee reconciled the nobles of the Realme with faire promises, thinking afterwards to make amends for his great wrongs, by founding of an Abbey, which he purposed to build.

1106  
An. reg. 7.

The Duke returning into Normandy, the king followed with a great power, where betwene them were manie fore battayles fought, but at the last the valiant and most stout man Robert was taken, and William earle of Mortou, Robert de Belesme, William Crispine, & other, to the number 400. men of armes, but Robert de Belesme escaped, when hee sawe that manie of his men were taken.

This yere appeared a blazing starre, from thre of the clocke till nine, and on the Maundie Thursdaye was seene two full Moones, one in the East, and another in the West.

The first Chanons entred into the church of our Lady in Southwarke called S. Mary Ouery, founded by William Poundlarge knight, and William Dancys Normans, William Gifford Byschoppe of Winchester assisting them in that worke. Algodus was first Prior there.

S. Mary Oury.

When king Henry had set in order Normandie according to his pleasure, he returning into England, brought with him his brother Robert, and William of Mortou, and put them in perpetuall prison: from whence shortly after duke Robert deceluing his keepers, sought to scape, but he was taken as he fled, sitting on his horse in a deepe mire and tough clay where he stucke fast: and by his brothers commaundement had his eyes put out, and kept straiter till his dying daie, which was about 26. yeres after, when hee pined awaie for sorowe and grieue of mind.

1107  
An. reg. 8.  
A. Henry put  
out the eyes of  
his elder brother  
Robert.

It appeareth by the private historie of Dunstable, that in the toining of the two high wales of Watling and Ikening, there were great woods, which were felled by king Henrie. to repesse the euilles that were there committed by one Dunne, a most famous theefe of that time, of whom the place was called Dunstable, the said king therefore built there a Boroow, by the which he also erected a pallace for himselfe, making the Burgeses there as free as any other Burgeses of the Realme were, to the which towne the king granted both faire and Market.

Histo. Dunst.  
The towne  
and Priory of  
Dunstable.

And this yere he began there to build a faire church or priory, placing therein regular Chanons, and gave to Peter the first Prior, and his successors there serving God, the towne of Dunstable and 4. cultures of land about the towne, with great priuiledges, as appeareth by his Letters Patents, this Priory was

Record.

valued

Towne and ca.  
ple of Windsoze.

valued at the generall suppression to dispend by the yere, 344 li. 14 s. 3 d. 10.  
Also this yere king Henry began to builde the newe Castell with the Chapell and Towne of Windsoze, on the hill, one mile from the olde Towne of Windsoze.

1108

Pylopie of the  
Trinitie in  
London founde  
ded.

This yere Maurice Byschoppe of London, Robert Fitzhamon, Roger Bigot, founder of the monasterie of Spokes at Hertford, Richard de Reduers Counsellors to the king, Milo Cispin, and many other Noble men of England deceased, Richard de Bewmes was elected Byschoppe of London, and was consecrated by Anselme at Bageham, Gundulphus Byschop of Rochester deceased, after whome succeeded Radulphus.

Gerard Archbyschop of Yorke deceased at Southwell, when he had late archbyschop 7. yeres, and almost 6. moneths, and was buried at Yorke. Thomas the younger, the kings Chaplaine, prouost of Beverlake succeeded.

Flemings sent  
into Wales.  
An. reg. 9.

This yere the Byschop of the holy Trinity, within Aldgate of London, was founded by Matild the Quene, in the parishes of Mary Magdalene, Saint Michael, Saint Katherine, and the holy Trinitie, all which are now but one parish of Christs Church: in old time called holy Rode parish: she gave to the same Byschop the port of Aldgate, with the stocke thereto belonging, which was of her demaines, and is now called Aldgate ward.

King Henry with sundrie expeditions brought vnder him the Welshmen, and to pull downe their stoutnes, he sent al the Flemings that inhabited England thither, which Fleminges of late were come hither, when a great part of Flanders was drowned, & also in time of his father, by alliance of his mother, in so much, that though their greate multitude they seemed grieuous to the realme: wherefore he sent them al with their substance and kindred into Rose in Denbrokehire, a countrie in Wales, as into a finch, that he might cleanse the realme of such noisome people, and also suppress the wildnesse of the enimie: and not long after hee made expedition thither, compelling the Welshmen to giue him for pledges the sons of the Nobility, with some money, and much cattell, and returned.

1109  
Three shillings  
of euery hide of  
land to the king

Henry Emperour of Rome, sent Messengers into England, requiring to haue Mawde the kings daughter giuen him in marriage, which was granted by the king, who then tooke thre shillings of euery hide of lande through England.

Canterburie  
recordes.  
Anselme Arch-  
bishop of Can-  
terburie de-  
ceased.

The 21. of Aprill Anselme Archbyschop of Canterburie deceased, and on the next morrow after being on thursday was buried at Canterburie, when he had late archbishop 12. yeres, being of the age of 76. yeres, he bestowed on Christs Church in Canterburie much money, as well in building, as in ornaments, he wrote many bookes vpon the holy scriptures, he was twise expelled the realme, at the first for thre yeres, and wanted the whole profits of his Byschoppicke. The seconde banishment was almost foure yeres long, and liued onellie two yeres after the second restoring. After whose decease, King Henrie assumed the custome of his father, and brother, and inuadeth as well the possessions of the archbishop of Canterburie then void, as of al, & anie that fell void. And putteth extremely in execution the decrees of the Synode at London, touching priests



twines, exacting of them great sommes of money, and at the last without respect, alloweth imposition in that respect vpon euerie Church, which diuers therein not guilty did euill like, and much curse. The archbishoppe was bold, after the death of Anselme five yeres and five daies, the king receiuing the reuenues, as from the beginning. He made saleable all spirituall promotions, selling to his Chaplaine Ragnolph the byshoppe of Durham for a thousand pounds, and Harbert losing the byshoppe of Hereford, &c.

Byshopps & other spirituall promotions sold for money.  
*An. reg. 10.*

Richard the tenth, and last Abbot of Ely deceased, and was buried among his predecessours at Ely. This Richard beeing a man of great wit, perceiving that the ancient priuiledges of his house were daily violated, by sundrie great personages, especiallie, by the Byshop of Lincoln, who challenged episcopall iurisdiction ouer the house, notwithstanding that the same was clearly exempt thereto by their auncient priuiledges, went to the king, and dealt with him in such sort, that he obtayned his regall consent, to chaunge the Abbey into a bishoppe: vnto the which place was named for the first bishop one Harueus then bishop of Bangor. And because there was yet no prouince assigned, where this new bishop should haue iurisdiction, the king sent for the Byshop of Lincoln Robert, and of him obtained, that the countrey then called Grantbydge might bee his prouince, and gaue vnto the Byshop of Lincoln the manor of Spaldwicke, in recompence of the iurisdiction which hee before had ouer the countie of Grantbydge, and so Harueus was placed in the Byshoppe.

Lib. Eli.

Ely made a bishoppe.

A Comet appeared after a strange fashion, for it was risen out of the east, and ascended upwards.

1110

A great Earthquake was at Shrewsbury, and the water of Trent at Nottingham was dried vp from one of the clocke, till thre, by the space of a mile, that men might passe ouer the channell drye shod.

*An. reg. 11.*  
Floriacen.  
Earle of Glocester.  
Castles at Bristow and Cardiffe.  
Saint James at Bristow.  
Bensham.

King Henry married Robert his bassarde sonne to Mawde, daughter and heire to Robert Fitzham, and made him the first Earle of Glocester, who after builded the Castles of Bristowe and Cardiffe, with the Priorie of Saint Iames in Bristowe, where his bodie was buried. And his sonne Earle William began the Abbey of Bensham.

1111

King Henry went into Normandy to make war against the earle of Angew, which kept Normaine against the kings will, and spoiled the whole countrey.

*An. reg. 12.*  
Mathew Paris.  
Cro. Dun.

William Baynard, vnder whose Ladie Iuga helde the title of Dunmow, by misfortune lost his Baronie, and king Henrie gaue it whole to Robert Fitz Richard the sonne of Gilbert Earle of Clare, and to his heires, together with the honour of Baynards Castell in London, and the appurtenances. This Robert was Cupbearer or Butler to the king. Robert Fitz Richard married Mawde de Saint Licio, Ladie of Bradham, the gaue two partes of the towne of Bradham to the Chanons of Dunmow.

Robert Fitz Richard.

1112

About this time, Geoffrey Clinton, Treasurer and Chamberlaine to king Henry the first, founded the Priorie at Kenelwoth of regular Chanons, Geoffrey Clinton the younger, confirmed to the Chanons all which Geoffrey his father gaue them, except those landes which his father reserved, to make his Castell and Parke on in Kenelwoth.

*An. reg. 13.*  
Kenelwoth Priorie and Castell founded.  
Lib. Ken.

Mathew Paris.

This yere was a sharpe Winter, great dearth and mortalltie of men, and murraine of beastes of the field, and also of the house, and a great destruction of fowles.

1114

An. reg. 13.  
Floriacen,  
Cro. Hauten-  
price.

The Citie of Worcester, the chiefe Church, the Castell and all other buildinges, one of the Monkes, with two servants, and fiftene Citizens, were all burnt the twentieth daie of Iulij. The Cathedral Church of Excester was new builded, by William Warwast Bishop of Excester, he also founded the monastrie of Blimpton in Deuonshire.

The king subdued the Welchmen.

1114

An. reg. 14.  
Quene daughter to Henry the first, married to Emperour. Thames and Medway dyed bp. Tho. de Wike. Walter. Couen. John Taxtor. William Shepheard. Lib. Rossensis. Chichester burnt. A blazing star.

The king caused all his nobles to sweare to William his sonne, whome hee had by Quene Marilde. He also gaue his daughter Matild, the being but five yeres old, vnto Henry the Emperour, she was married to him at Aents, and there consecrated Emperesse.

The tenth of October, the riuer of Medway, by no small number of miles, did so faile of water, that in the midst of the Chanell the smallest vessels and boates could not passe. The selfe same daie the Thames did suffer the like lack of water, for betwene the Tower of London and the Bridge, and vnder the bridge, not onelie with horse, but also a great number of men and children did wade ouer on foote, which defect of water did endure the space of two daies.

The city of Chichester, with the principall monastery was burnt.

There was manie stormes, and a blazing Starre.

Thomas Archbpshop of Poike deceased, and Thurston the kings Chaplaine is elected to that See.

1115

An. reg. 16.  
Liber Trinitatis  
Knights  
Gild, nota.  
Portoken  
warde.

This yere through an hard Winter, almost all the Bridges in Englande were bozne downe with yce.

Edgar sometime king of England graunted vnto thirtene knights a portion of ground without the walles of the City of London, left voide in the East part of the same Citie, together with a gilde, which he named Knighten Gilde, that noim is called Portoken warde, and now the Church of the holie Trinity being founded within Aldgate of London by Matild thern Quene, as is afore shewed. The successors of those knightes, to witte, Radulphus Fitz Algede, Winiardle Douershe, &c. Gaue the foresaide landes called Knighten Gild, to the same Church: but Othowerus, Accoliuillus, Otto, and Geffrey Carles of Caister, Constables of the Towre of London by succession, withheld by force a portion of the same land, that is to say East Smithfield, nere to the Towre, to make a vineyard, and would not depart from it by any meanes til the second yere of king Stephen, when the same was adiudged and restored to the church of the holie Trinitie.

1116

First Parliament  
ment at Salis-  
burie.

This yere on the 19. day of Aprill k. Henry called a councell of all the states of his realme, both of the Prelates, Nobles, and Commons, to Salisburie, there to consult for the good gouernment of the common Wealth, and the wayghable affaires of the same, which Councell taking the name and fame of the French, is called Parliament. And this doe the Historiographers note to bee the first Parliament in England, and that the kings before that time were neuer wont to cal any of their commons or people to councell or lawmaking, &c.

King

King Henry sayled into Normandy with a great army against the king of France, who with the Earle of Flanders, and other went about to make William sonne to Robert Courtoise Duke of Normandy, but at king Henries arrival, they returned home without honour. King Henry lay at Roane, and had great cractions out of England.

An. reg. 14.  
Cro. Petre.

This yere king Henry began the foundation of the Abbey of Cercesster, or Churnecheester, which standeth vpon Thurne riuer. There was in this place before the Conquest, a faire and rich Colledge of Prebends, Reimodus Chancelor to king Edward the Confessor was Deane of this house, and buried in the body of the church of Churnecheester, as appeareth by his Epitaph on his tombe. King Henry also builded there the hospitall of S. Iohn, &c.

Cercesster Ab.  
bey founded.

The Towne of Peterborough with the stately Church there, was burned downe to the ground. Also the Citie of Bath was burnt the same yere.

Peterborough  
burned.

In March was exceeding lightning, and in December thunder and hable: and the Moone at both times seemed to be turned into blood. 1117

The Priorie of Herton beganne to be founded in Anno 1092. by Gilbert a Norman, Earle of Surrey, Cambridges, and Huntingdon, this yere he put Chanons regular there vnder Prior Robert.

1117

Herton priory.

This yere in Lombardy was an Earthquake, continued forty daies, which overthrowe many houses, and that which was marvellous to be seene, a towne was moued from his seate and set a good way off.

Tempest and  
Earthquake.  
Floriacca.

King Henry had Morcard king of Ireland, and his successeurs so obedient vnto him, that they would do nothing but what he commanded.

King Henry for his pleasure desired the wonderfull things of other Countreies, as Lyons, Leopards, Linces, and Camels, of the which England hath none, craving them from kings, with great pleasure, hee had a Parke called Woodstocke, in which he kept such strange things, he put there amongst other, a beast called Strix, or other wise called a Porpentine sent him from William of Mountpillar, which beast amongst the Affricanes is counted as a kinde of Hedgehogge, couered with pricking byssles, which they shote out naturally on the dogges that pursue them, &c.

Anno reg. 18.  
Wild beasts in  
Woodstocke  
parke.

Mathilde the Quene wife to king Henry of England, deceased at Westminster, and was there buried in the Keuestrie of Saint Peters Monastrie. She was in her tender yeres brought vp amongst the Nunnes at Winchester and Rumsey, in the exercises of learning and vertue. She founded the Priorie of Christes Church within the East gate of London, called Aldgate, with an Hospitall of Saint Giles in the fielde, without the West part of the same Citie.

1118  
Mathilde the  
Qu. deceased.

Mathew Paris.  
Mathildas  
hospitall.

This Mathilde, when she sawe the waie to be dangerous for them that traualled by the Olde foerde ouer the riuer of Lue (for she her selfe had bene well washed in that water) caused two stone bridges to bee builded, in a place one mile distant from the Olde foerde. Of the which, one was situated ouer Lue at the head of the towne of Stratford, now called Bowe, because the bridge was arched like vnto a bow, a rare piece of worke, for before that time the like had neuer bene seene in England. The other ouer the little brooke,

Bridges, and  
an high way  
made ouer the  
riuer of Lue at  
Stratford.

come

commonly called Chancellebridge. She made the Kings high waie of grauell betwene the two bridges. Moreover, she gaue Chanons, and a Mill, commonly called Wiggon Mill to the abbesse of Barking, for the repaying of the bridges and high waie. But afterwarde, Gilbert de Mountfichet builded the Abbey of Stratford in the marishes, the Abbot wherof by giuing a piece of money, purchased to himselfe the Chanons and Mill aforesaide, and couenaunted to repaire the bridges and waie. Till at length, hee laide the charge vpon one Godfrey Prat, allowing him certaine loanes of bread daily, that he should repaire the bridges and way. Who being holpen by the aide of traauellers, did not onely performe the charge, but also was a gainer to himselfe: which thing the Abbot perceiuing, he withholdeth from him parte of the bread promised. Whereupon, Godfrey demaundeth a tole of the wayfaring men, and to them that denied, hee stopped the waie, till at the length, wearied with toyle, hee neglected his charge, whereof came the decay and ruine of the stone bridges and way.

Now concerning these three middle bridges of Luc, of the which, two be builded of stone, they be proper to three milles: whereof, one the Maister of S. Thomas of Acres in London made, the other the Masters of the Bridgehouse of London, two of them which belong to Esher, the Abbot of Stratforde is bound to repaire. The third the Bridgemasters of London, for the land was created the 37. of Henry the third.

*An. reg. 19.  
knights of the  
Temple.*

About this time, certaine noble men of the horsemen being religiously bent, bound themselves in the hands of the Patriarke of Hierusalem, to serue Christ after the manner of regular Chanons, in chastitie, and obedience, and to renounce their owne proper will for euer. Of which order, the first was the honourable man Hugh Paganus, and Gawfride de Saint Andemare: and there at the first, they had no certaine habitation, Baldwin king of Hierusalem graunted them a dwelling place in his pallace by the Temple, and the Chanons of the same Temple gaue them the stræte thereby to build their houses of office in, and the Patriarche, the King, the Nobles, and Prelates gaue them certaine reuenues out of their Lordships. Their first profession was for safeguarde of the Pilgrimes, to keepe the waies, against the lying in waite of thæues. About 10. yeres after, they had a rule appointed them, and a white habite by Pope Honorius, at that time, where they had bene nine in number, they began to increase into great numbers.

Afterward in time of Pope Eugenius, they had Crosses of red cloth solwed on their vppermost garments, to be knowen from others thereby: and in short time, because they had their first mansion hard by the Temple of our Lorde in Hierusalem, they were called knights of the Temple.

1119

This yere deceased Robert Beaumont Earle of Leicester, and William earle Morton was deliuered out of the Tower of London.

Many fore battels were fought in France, and Normandie, betwene the king of England, and of France.

King Henry made peace with Fulco the Earle of Angetwe, taking his daughter to bee wife to his sonne William, whome he had now made inheri-

tour



four of all his kingdomes. After that, by the aduice of all his Lords, hee made peace with the king of Fraunce, and with the Earle of Flaunders: in the which peace, his sonne William toke Normandie into his possession, to hold the same of the king of France.

Peace with  
France.  
An. reg. 20.

This yere was a great Earthquake in manie places of Englande, on the eight and twentie daie of September, about the thirde houre of the daie.

1120  
Earthquake.

King Henry in the euening of the 24. day of Nouember, minding to returne into England, loosed from land at Barbeclote, and the wind brought him perouslie to his kingdome.

An. reg. 21.

But William his son, somewhat more then 17. yeres of age, who through his fathers kingdomes, lacked nothing but the name of a king, commanded an other ship to be prepared for him, all the yong sons of the nobilitie flocking thither for the company of him, as their play-fare: and the sailers also tippled with too much wine, in lustines bragged that they would quicklie leaue the other behind, that went out before them. So in the darknes of the night, the youth lacking wisdome, and ouercharged with drinke, discharged the ship from the land: the sailer swift as an arrow, and cutting through the dauncing floods, by the negligence of the drunken sailers, dashed vpon a rocke about water, not far from land. The poore soules rose with great crie, bestirred them with the ironned stauces, long labouring to get the shippe from the rocke: but fortune was against them, bringing their paines to no purpose: so the side of the shippe, leaning against the rocke, cracked, and the broken Sterne hung downe: now it did cast some into the sea, and the water comming in, drowned other, when with casting out a boate, the kings sonne was taken in, and might haue bene saued by returning to land, had not his base sister the Countesse of Perche, being sling with death in the great ship, craued her brothers helpe. He moued with pittie, commanded the boate to be rowed to the shippe, that he might take in his sister, and straightwaie the Boate did sinke, being ouerladen with the great companie that leaped in, and so drowned them all, onelie one clothe escaped, which swimming all night vpon the wast, shewed all the chaunce of the tragedie in the morning. There was neuer Shippe so miserable to England, nor so famous abroad. There was drowned with William, Richard the kings other Sonne that hee begate before his kingdome, of one of his Subiectes. Richard earle of Chester, & his brother Orwele the kings sons Tutor, the Countesse of Perche, the kings daughter named Marie, and his niece the Countesse of Chester, sister to Theobald, William Bigot, Geoffrey Riddle, Walter de Curcie, Geoffrey Archdeacon of Hereford, and also manie the best knightes, and Chaplaines that were in the Court, and noble mens sonnes fit to be knights, to the number of 160. persons, they came together to shew the kings son sport, or do him ante seruice they could: but they made the miserie the more, that they could not bee easilie founde, for searchers being placed all along vpon the sea coasts, found scantlie one of them. For the bodie were gone to be sode to the Monsters of the Sea.

W. Malmes.  
The kings child  
then drowned.

King Henrie married Adalifa, daughter to Godfrey Duke of Lozan. at

King Henry  
married the  
duke of Louans  
daughter.

1121

Ely on the third day of January, who was consecrated and crowned at London in the feast of Whitson tide.

King Henry prepareth a great armie against the Welchmen, and came to Dolweland: which when the Lords of the land, Meridith Apblichin, and the three sons of Cadogan, Eneon, Madoc, and Morgan saw, they sent to Griffith ap Conan prince of Northwales for succour: which he denayd them, for that he had made peace with the king.

Thus they having no hope of aide from him, purposed to defend themselves within their owne lande after the best manner they coulde, setting men to defend the straites, whereby their enemies must needs passe. And as it chanced, the king himselfe with a small number, came unto one of those defended places, for his whole armie had gone a further way about, because of their cariages.

An. reg. 22.

At whose coming, the men which kept the straites, skirmished with the kings men, and having the vantage of the ground, slew some, and wounded many, amongst the which, the king himselfe was smitten with an arrowe on the brest, wherewith hee being wonderfully abashed, sent to parley with them that kept the passage, and at length being agreed with them for a thousand head of Cattell, returned into England.

Reading Abbey founded.

H. Henry having suppressed an house of Nunnes in the towne of Reading, founded by Elfele mother in lawe to king Edward the martyr, founded there an Abbey of Blache Monkes to the honor of God, our Ladie, and Saint Iohn Evangelist.

1122

The Citty of Gloucester burnt

The Citty of Gloucester with the principall Monasterie, was burnt againe, as it before had bene in the first yere of this kings reigne.

Radulphus archbishop of Canterburie, died at Canterburie, on the twentieth day of October, and on the third day after, he was buried there.

An. reg. 23.

Sherborne made an abbey.

Also Iohn bishop of Bath, deceased, and was buried at Bath.

The same yere, Sherborne and Horton, were ioyned together, and made an Abbey by the gift of the king, and of Roger bishop of Salisbury.

1123

King Henry having kept his Christmas at Dunstable, went from thence to Barkhamstead, having in his company his Chauncelloz named Ranulph, he had bene sicke the space of twenty yeres, and yet notwithstanding was prompt to all euill, delighting in oppressing innocents: and as he brought the king home, minding to have lodged with him, in the verie top of the hill that the kings Castle stood on, he fell from his horse, and ended his life in great misery five yeres after. And Robert Blothe Bishop of Lincoln, in the moneth of January, whilest at Woodstock he sate on horsebacke talking with the king, he began to stynke downe speechlesse, and being brought to his lodging, died sodainly.

The citty of Lincoln burnt. Ciro, Peterbo.

The Citty of Lincoln for the most part was consumed with fire, which raged in such violent and furious manner, that it deuoured sundrie men, and women, and did so much harme besides, that no man was able to report it unto other, this happened on the 18. day of June.

William de Corboyle Prior of Saint Dunstons in Essex, was by the king appointed

pointed to be archbishop of Canterbury, and was consecrated there on the 16. of februarye. The bishopricke of Bath was giuen to Godfrey the Duanes Chaplaine. And Alexander Archdeacon of Salisburie, was made Bishop of Lincolne.

King Henry sayled ouer the seas into Normandie, at which time, Robert Carle of Millaine went from the king: Wherefore the king besieged his castle called Pount Andomo, and the same time he builded a great broad and high wall about the towne of Roane: he repayed the castle of Cane, he also fortified and made inuincible the castles of Arches, Cisors, Falace, Argentine, Donfront, Orine, Ambros, Pantroy, Juta, and the towne of Mernon.

He also builded the Castle of Warwike.

Henry Carle of Warwike, and Margaret his wife, founded the Colledge of Saint Mary in the towne of Warwike, and Roger de Belemunde his sonne Carle of Warwike, and Aelin his wife, translated the same Colledge out of the Castle of Warwike into the parish Church of Saint Mary, in An. 1123. At that time were nine Parishes in Warwike, Saint Sepulchre, Saint Hellens, of these twaine were made one Priore of Saint Sepulchre: Alhalowes, S. Michael, Saint John, Saint Peter, S. Lawrence, Saint James, these five last were ioyned to Saint Maries, in Ann. 1367. Saint Nicholas. Thus much for the towne of Warwike, whereof moze shall be spoken in my larger booke.

Robert Carle of Mellene, ioyning to him Hugh de Mountfort his sisters sonne, and Hugh Geruase his sonne, entred by force of armes into Normandy, but William de Tankerville the kings chamberlaine, setting his men of armes in aray, fought with them, toke them and brought them to the king, who committed them to strasse prison at Roane.

William Archbishop of Canterbury, as the king commanded him passed the seas, but to what purpose mine author declareth not.

Money makers throughout all England, being taken with false money, had their right hands cut off, and also their priue members. After this, by changing of the money, all things became most deare, whereof a right sore famine ariseth, and afflideth the multitude of people euen to death.

Henry the Emperour died, and was buried at Spire with his grandfather, Lotharius the 98. Emperour succeded.

John Cremenis Priest cardinall, by the kings licence came into England, and for the time of his abode here, lodged in the Bishops pallace, and in Abbeies, not without great gistes and rewards taking of them, he keeping a solemne Synode: Councell at London, when he had there most severely entreated of Priests concubines, saying, that it was much wickednesse, to rise from an harlots side, to consecrate the bodie of Christ: And hee himselfe the same day had consecrated the body of Christ: After the which, in the euening, he was detected of whoredome, the matter was so plaine, that it could not bee denayed, and thus hee turned his great honour, into the greatest shame that might be.

Henry the Emperour being dead, Mawde the Emperesse returned to her father

Roger Wind.  
King Henry  
builded castles  
in Normandy.  
An. reg. 24.

Warwike with  
the Colledge.

11b. Warca.

Henr. Hunting.

An. reg. 25.

Money ma-  
kers punishd.  
1125

Roger Wind.  
An. reg. 25.  
A Cardinall,  
imprisoning a  
gainst priests  
concubines  
was detected of  
whoredome.

1126.

That the  
Emperesse re-  
turned into  
England.

Floriacen.

An. reg. 27.  
Archbishop of  
Poike with  
his Crosse cast  
out of the kings  
chappell.

Othe to Haue  
the Emperisse.

ther king Henry, and dwelt with the Quene in her chamber, because she was suspected of her husbands death. For he went awaie by night, and chose to live in povertie.

King Henry held his court with great magnificence in his Castle of Winton, and there assembled all the nobilitie of his Realme, where when the archbishop of Poike would haue crowned the king equally with the archbishop of Canterburie, by the iudgement of all men he was repelled, the bearer of his Crosse, together with the Crosse, was thowne out of the kings Chappell: for it was affirmed that no Metropolitane out of his owne prouince might haue any Crosse borne before him. The feast being ended, the king with all the states of the realme together came to London, and there at the kings commandement, William the Archbishop, and the Legate of the Romish Church, and all other bishops of the English nation, with the nobilitie, took an othe to defend against all men the kingdome to his daughter, if she surtuied her father, except that before his decease he begate some sonne to succede him.

The king also graunted to the Church of Canterburie, and to William and his successours, the custodie and Constablie of the Castle of Rochester for euer.

The Archbishop of Canterburie assembled a councell of Bishops, Abbots and other Prelats at Westminster, where they determined many causes concerning Ecclesiasticall busines: & the king with his councell confirmed them.

1128

King Henry of England being beyonde the Sea in Normandie, had great wars against William Earle of Flanders that was his nephew.

King Henry with a warlike armie invaded France, because Lewes king of France did defend William Earle of Flanders, the kings nephew, and lodging at Hesperdune, the space of eight daies, as safe as he had been in his own Realme. He kept the king of France, from giuing helpe to the saide Earle of Flanders.

There came a certaine Duke out of Germanie who was named Theodoric, with a warlike power into Flanders through the procurement of King Henry, to take his part and iolne with him: but Earle William with a small companie, through his inuincible manhode, with his bloudie sword did cleaue and bzeake their great bat taile, and caused them to flie: but when this William besieged the Castle of Angew, or Alhurst (as other haue) against king Henry, so that it should haue been yeilded vnto him, through one wound in his hande, he died, but not without immortal fame.

An. reg. 29.

Ranulph bishop of Durham deceased, he raised the wals of the bodie of the Church of Durham vnto the roose, hee translated the bodie of Saint Cuthbert into that new Church, he compassed the citie of Durham with a wall, he continued diuers bankes along the riuer of Tyne, and built a great stone bidge vpon the same riuer with arches. He also built a Castle vpon a steepe hill called Dozham, vpon the riuer of Tyne, to resist the enemies. He built the Hospitall of Beper, and the bidge of Framwelgate. After the death of this Ranulph, the Bishopricke of Durham was committed to two Barons, Iohn de Maunde-vile and Geffrey Excomband the elder, to the vse and profite of the king,

Tower of  
Dozham built.  
and the  
Hospitall of  
Beper.

1129  
Lib. Dunelm.



King, for the space of foure yeres and eleuen moneths.

King Henry returned out of Normandie into England.

And in the first of August, the king beganne a great counsell at London, in the which counsell, by authoritie of the Pope, the feast of the Conception of our Ladie was confirmed, the which counsell of the Clergie, (throughe the simplicitie of the Archbishoppe of Canturburie) were by the king decelued, for they graunted the king to haue the execution of Justice concerning the fornicarie of Priestes, for their keeping of concubines which the Bishoppes afterwards repented too late: but they could not helpe it. For the king toke infinite summes of money of Priestes, and suffered them to doe what they would.

About this time, men forgetting their byrth, transformed themselves by the length of their heares into the habite of women kinde. One of the knightes of the Realme, a man very proude of his long heare, at the length stricken in conscience, it seemed vnto him in his sleepe, that one did choake him with the heares of his head (for all men were shauen of their faces.) Wherefore, being awakened, he caused forthwith the superfluitie of his heares to bee cut off. Which example toke place througheout all England for the time, and almost all the knightes were contented to haue their heares cut off. But one yere was scarcely past, when all that thought themselves courtiers, fell into the former vice, & so contended with women in their long heares, that when they were decayed, they knitte about their heads, certaine roles, and coverings, being ignorant, or forgetting the Apostles saying. Let it be a reproch vnto a man, if he endeouour to haue his heares grow long.

Men contend  
with women  
in long heares.

This yere Robert de Olley and Edith his wife, founded the Priorie of Dore by Drfoze.

Dore by  
Drfoze.

The seventh of May the Citie of Rochester, in presence of the king was soze defaced with fire.

1130

King Henry gaue his daughter Matild the Emperesse, to Geoffrey Plantagenet Earle of Angeu, to be his wife.

An. reg. 31.

King Henry in the moneth of August passed the sea into Normandie, where he remained for a time.

1131

This yere King Henry returned into England. And Matild the Emperesse also, the same yere, and calling a great assembly of noble men at Portsmouth, the former othe was renewed by them that had receiued it before.

A great murraine of cattell went ouer all England, so that the like had not bene seene in many yeres.

King Henry beinge soze troubled ofte times in his sleepe, declared the same vnto Grimbalde his Philition, the effect whereof was, that some time it seemed to him, that he sawe a great multitude of husband men with their rusticall toles stande about him, threatening him, for wrongs done by him against them: Sometimes hee seemed to see his knightes and souldiours in armour, threatening him. Sometimes the Bishops, Abbots and Clergie, with their pastorall staves threatening him: Which sight so feared him in his sleepes, that oftentimes he rose naked out of his bed, toke weapon in hand,

King H. soze  
troubled in  
his sleepes.

and

and sought to kill them, he coulde not finde. Grimbalde his Byschop being a notable wise man, expounded his dreames by true coniecture, and willed him to reforme himself with almes and p̄aier, as Nabuchodonosor did by the counsell of Daniel.

In the moneth of June, when King Henry was entred his shippe to returne into England with his traine, the sea was sore troubled, so that the shippe was in manner ouerwhelmed with the flondes, and the winde was contrarie vnto him, so that seeing death at hand, hee vowed that the tribute called Dane gilt, should not for 7. yeres be exacted. He also vowed to repent him of his forniere life, to reconcile himselfe, and euer after to obserue iustice.

The eight of October, a Comet appeared, and was seene fixe daies together.

1132  
Byschoppicke at Carlisle.  
King Henrie made a Byschoppicke at Carlisle, and made Athulph, Byscop of S. Oswald his confessor bishop there, he placed there Canons regular and indowed it with manie honours.

Henry the sec-  
cond boyne.  
Mawde the Emperesse did beare a son to Gessery Plantagenet, earle of Angew her husband, and named him Henry, which when the latter father knew, he called his nobles together at Orford, where he kept his feast of Easter, in his newe hall with great roialty: He there ordained, that hee and her heires should succede him in the kingdome.

An. reg. 33.  
London with  
Dowles burnt.  
The 14. day of May, a great fire beginning at Gilberts house in West Cheape of London, consumed a great part of the same city, from thence Eastward to Aldgate, with the priory of Canons of the holy Trinite there, and many houses of office thereto belonging, and Westwarde to Ludgate, consuming the great Church of S. Paul, &c.

Hospitall of S.  
Crosse.  
Henry Bloyse Byschop of Winchester, new builded the hospitall of S. Crosse, nere vnto Winchester, which Hospitall had of olde time bene spoiled by the Danes.

The second daie of August there was great darkenes in England, the Sun became like the Mone in the third quarter. And the same daie manie Starres appeared.

1133  
Great Earth-  
quake.  
The 4. daie of August earlie in the morning, in manie parts of England an earthquake was felt, so that it was thought that the earth woulde haue sunke vnder the fete of men, with such a terrible sound, as was horrible to heare. The King at that time of the eclips, passed ouer the sea into Normandy: but neuer returned againe aloue into England.

An. reg. 34.  
In the Moneth of Nouember, the city of Worcester as of times before was burned and sore defaced by fire.

Gessery the kings Chancellor was made Byschoppe of Durham, and Haruie the first Byschop of Ely being dead, Nigelus the kings Treasurer was made bishop there.

1134  
Robert Court-  
quene dyeth.  
An. reg. 35.  
Matild the Emperesse brought forth a son named Gessery. This yere, when our Lorde Iesus, who willett not the death of a sinner, had giuen vnto Duke Robert of Normandie a sufficient space of repentance, wherein to humble himselfe, that is to witte, almost 30. yeres, which time hee liued

liued in blindnes of eyes, and also in strait pison in the Castle of Cardiffe, he died and was buried at Glocester.

Godfrey Bishop of Bath deceased on the 16. of August. After whom succeeded Robert a Fleming by kinde, but borne in Normantie.

King Henry remaining in Normandy, upon a day did eate Lampreies, whereof he took a surseite, and deceased the first day of December, Anno 1135. when he had reigned 35. yeeres 4. monethes: his bowels, bryaines, and eyes, were buried at Roane, the rest of his bodie was powdered with salt, and wrapped in Bulles hides, because of the stincke, which poysoned them that stode about him. The Physition which being hyred with a great rewarde to cleaue his head to take out the bryaine, with the stincke thereof died, so that he enioyed not the rewarde that was couenanted. Thus among a great manie that king Henrie slew, this Physition was the last.

King Henry was buried at Reading, which he had founded. He also founded the Priorie of Dunstable, hee conuered a rich Colledge of Prebends in the Towne of Cirencester, into an Abbey of Chanons regular: hee also builded there an Hospitall of Saint Iohn: and new builded the Castle of Windsor: upon the hill, with a Colledge there, one mile from the old towne of Windlesore. King Edward the third builded much of this Castle, encreased the number of Chanons in the Colledge, adding to the 8. Chanons, a Deane, and 15. Chanons more, and foure and twentie poore impotent knightes, and other Ministers, as appeareth by his Charter dated the two and twentieth of his reigne, hee founded there the order of the Carter. King Edward the fourth took from the Colledges of Eton, and Cambridge founded by king Henry the first, almost a thousand pound by yere, and gaue to Windlesore. He also builded the faire newe church now used, saue onely the toppe and rooſing, which was since finished by the Lord Reinold Bray, and other knightes of the Carter. In place of the olde Colledge church, king Henry the seventh builded a Chappell, where he meant to haue bene buried: but altering his minde, lest the same vnfiniſhed, and builded his Chappell at Westminster, he made the faire causeway betwene Windlesore and London. King Henry the eight made the outer gate-house, which is called the Erchequer of the Honour, where hath bene, and yet continueth a moneth court, kept by the Clarke of the Honour and Castle, for the pleas of the forrest and honors. In which, amongst other thinges, is to be seene the yereley account, of the charges, of the planting of the Vines, that in the time of king Richard the second grewe in great plenty within the litle parke, as also of the making of the wine it selfe, whereof some part was spent in the kings house, and some parte solde to his profite, the tythes whereof were payde to the Abbot of Maltham, then parson both of the olde and new Windlesore.

King Edward the first beganne to bring water to the Castle: Quene Marie brought it thither in conduits, the house was before serued by welles: shee also for her parte, added the lodgings for the almes knightes, and placed there to the number of twelue, for there had not bene anle of manie yeres before, to wit, in the memoire of men then liuing, whereby it was supposed, neuer a

1135

*An. reg. 36.*  
Death of king  
Henry.  
Mathew Paris.

Colledge at  
Windsor founde-  
d.  
Iohn Leyland.

*Wine made at  
Windsore,  
as in other  
partes of this  
reallme.*

ny to haue béene there. But true it is, I haue read in the Tower of London, a patent, graunted by Edward the fourth, in the two and twentieth yéere of his raigne, to one Thomas Crabbe Esquire, to be admitted one of the almes knights at Windlesoze. Quéene Elizabeth hath also much enlarged with buildings the saide Castle. All which, whether you regarde the wholesomenesse of the ayre, and beantie of the soyle, or the beauty, strength, and situation of the place, or the pleasant pastime arising out of the Forrest, chase, and fourteténe parkes that wayte vpon it, or the good neighbourhode of the rich Riuer of Thames that runneth by it, I haue thought it good to set downe thus much.

This Henry the first also builded the manor of Woodstocke, with the parke, which he walled with stone seven miles compasse, destroying for the same, diuers villages, churches, and chappels. This is the first parke that euer was in England; he placed there, besides great store of beere, diuers strange beastes to be kept and nourished, such as were brought or sent to him from farre countries, as Lyons, Leopards, Linces, Porpentines, &c. By his example, Henry Earle of Warwicke, made his parke of Madgenoke, nere vnto Warwicke, since called the old parke. He had issue by Matild his first wife, a sonne named William, that was drowned in the Sea, and a daughter named Matild, whome with her sonne he appointed to inherite the Crowne and Realine. He had also issue by his concubines, a sonne named Richard, and a daughter named Mary, which were both drowned with their brother William, Robert sūz Roy, whome he made Earle of Gloucester, Reginald afterward made Earle of Cornewall, in the first yéere of the raigne of king Stephen, a daughter married to Alexander king of Scots, and other.

Rad. Dedeceto.

W. Malmes.

## King Stephen.

An. reg. 1.  
W. Malmes.  
Floriacens.  
gerual. Doro.  
Ypodigma.



Stephen Earle of Poxtun, and of Boloigne, sonne to the Earle of Bloys, and Adela, William Conquerours daughter, and nephew to king Henry the first, claymed the kingdome in the month of December, Anno 1135.

He comming into England, was repulled by them of Doner, shut out by them of Canterbury, but receiued of the Londoners, and pæres of the land, admitted king, and crowned at Westminster on S. Stephens day, by William Archbishop of Canterbury, Henry by

Bishop of Winchester, and Roger bishop of Salisburie.

This was a noble man and hardy, of passing comely fauour and personage, he excelled in martiall pollicie, gentlenesse and liberality toward all men, especially in the beginning: and although he had continuall war, yet did he neuer burden his commons with exactions: but vniuersally, and contrarie to his othe made to Mawde the Empresse, daughter to king Henry, he took on him the crowne of England.

A fire



A fire kindled in the house of one Ailward nere unto London stone, consumed Eastward to Aldgate, and Westward to S. Erkenwalds chyrche in Pauls church. The Annales of Bermondsey, say, that London brydge was also at that time burned: which might well be, for then, and long before, there was a brydge of timber, as before I haue touched. And farther, to confirme the same, I finde in the Annales of Bermondsey, that in *anno Christi* 1122. the 22. yere of king Henry the first Thomas Arderne gave to the Monks of Bermondsey the church of S. George in Southwarke, &c. with five shillings rent by the yere out of the land of London brydge.

Flemings entred into Denonshire, and besieged the Castle of Excester a long time, which Baldwine de Reduers held against them, but at length when they within the Castle wanted necessary things to live by, they compounded.

Baldwine with his wife and children are disherited and expelled the land. From hence king Stephen went to the Ile of Wight, and took it from the said Baldwine de Reduers.

A battell was fought at Coher, betwixt Normans and Welchmen, where a hundred and sixtene persons on both sides were slaine, whose bodies lay in the fieldes, and were horribly torne and deuoured of wolues.

After this were made great eruptions by the Welchmen, who destroyed churches, towne, castles, corne, cattell, slew men, women, and children, rich and poore, or sold them in foraine countreies.

In October a sore battell was fought at Cardigan, in the which, such slaughter of men was made, (that the men except which were ledde awaie captiue,) were of women taken and led away, that there remained to the tenth a thousand, their husbandes with their small children partly drowned, partly bent, partly slaine, so that the brydge being broken ouer the riuer of Tinde, there was a brydge made of mens bodies and horses drowned.

In March king Stephen passed the Sea to subdue Normandie, where hee took manie Cities and strong Castles, and made peace with the King of France.

The third of June Saint Andrewes in Rochester was bent, with all the Citie, and the bishops and monkes stalles in the church. And on the fourth day of June S. Peters the Archbishops See in Poike, S. Maries without the walles, and an Hospitall which the Archbishop Thurstone had builded, with 39. other Churches: also the Trinitie church in the suburbs of the same Citie, within a small time after were bent. Also S. Peters Church at Bathe, and all the Citie, the 27. day of June was bent. And the same moneth the Citie of Leogere was consumed with fire.

England began to fall into great troubles, which caused king Stephen to returne out of Normandy before he had finished his businesse there, so that he came ouer into England in the moneth of December.

King Stephen besieged Bedford and wonne it, then he went with a strong power into Northumberland, where he staid not long, but went to Gloucester, where the citizens receiued him with great reioycing. Miles the kings constable brought him into the kings pallace there, where all the citizens were to

1136

Lib. Trinitatis.  
Lib. Bermond.  
London with  
the brydge  
bent.

Excester  
besieged.  
Ger. Dorob.

Battell against  
the Welchmen.

An. reg. 2.

1137

Ypodigma.  
Rochester bent  
Richard Diuient.

Saint Peters  
in Poike bent.

An. reg. 3.

1138

King Stephen  
besieged Bed-  
ford.

to him swoyne. From whence he went to Hereford, because that he heard the Castle was holden against him: and on Whitsonday hee late crowned in the church of Hereford. When they that kept the Castle sawe the kings polwer to increase, they yielded themselves. The king toke also the Castle of Weibhelege, which Geoffrey Talbot had helde against him.

The same daie that the king departed out of Hereford, all beyond the river of Wye was bent by the said Geoffrey.

The king returned to Oxford, where he toke Roger the bishop of Sarum, with the bishop of Lincoln, and his sonne Roger: the bishop of Ely escaping, went to the castle of Eves, and kept it against the king: but at length it was deliuered.

The same time Robert Earle of Gloucester renounced his allegiance to king Stephen, fortified Bissowe, and other castles. Also Miles the kings constable revolted.

Wherefore the king besieged the castle of Bissowe, but at length being wearied, he turned to other of the earles castles, and seeing his enemies still increasing, hee called out of flanders men of warre with William de Ypres their leader, whose counsell he chiefly followed.

An. reg. 4.

The same yere Roger bishop of Salisburie, a great builder of Castles and houses, departed this life. There was found in his coffers fourtie thousande markes of silver, besides much golde, and diuers iewels that came to the kings hand, so that he had gathered treasure, but wist not for whom.

Loceline a knight of Lincolnshire, hauing to his son one Gilbert, whome for some imperfection of his lims, he thought vnmete for the world, made him a Priest, gaue him a benefice in a towne of his owne in Lincolnshire called Semperingham. This man was author of a religious order, which were called Gilbertins, and began in the raigne of k. Stephen, he inclosed within one house both men and women, but severed them by such high wals, that the one neither saw, nor heard the other. This order in his life time encreased to x. houses, containing in all to the number of 700. brethren, and 1500. sisters.

1139

David king of  
Scots invaded  
Northumber-  
land.

The Nobles sent for Mawd the Emperesse, promising her the possession of the realme according to their othe made to her. In the meane time, David king of Scots, promising to recouer the crown of England for the Emperesse Mawd his niece, in most cruell wise invaded Northumberland, where, by Thurstone Archbisshop of Yorke, the Steward being set vp at Aluerton, the Scots had an ouerthrow at Tonton, more then foure miles Northwest from Aluerton, and were slaine aboue ten thousand, on the 22. day of August.

In the moneth of July Robert Earle of Gloucester returned into England with his sister the Emperesse, and a great army, which arrived at Portsmouth. The Emperesse was receiued into Arundell castle by Adelize late wife to king Henry, as then wife or concubine to William Earle of Arundel.

Earle Robert went to Wallingforde, and thence to Gloucester, and raised those countries.

Marleborow  
besieged by  
king Stephen.

The king helde his siege before Marleborough, but aduertised of the Emperesse arrival, he hastened towards Arundel, where being by faire speech pacified, he

he commanded his brother Bishop of Winchester to bring the Empresse unto Bistow, and he himselfe followed earle Robert with his armie. The Empresse staid at Bistow till October, and then went to Gloucester, her coming thither being knowne, Miles the high Constable, and many other Nobles took part with her against king Stephen.

The king besieged Wallingford castell, but profited not, and therefore raising a Towre of wood before it, stuffed it with men of war, and went to win the castell of Salisburie.

The army of earle Robert won the citie of Worcester, bent the most part of it, and laden with the spoile, departed thence.

The shiriffe of that citie, in reuenge hereof, destroyed the towne of Sudley, and with the spoile thereof returned to Worcester.

After this the king with a great armie, came from Oxford to Worcester, where he gaue the honour of high Constablershippe (being taken from Miles of Gloucester) unto William the sonne of Walter Beauchampe, shiriffe of Worcester, and then returned to Oxford, and so to Salisburie.

The king went to Reding, and after with his armie towards Else, but the Bishop fled to Gloucester, to earle Robert, and the king won the castell of Else, and spoiled Bigellus the bishop (who was fled to the Empresse) of all that to him appertained, and then returned.

Robert earle of Gloucester with a great power invaded the towne of Nottingham and spoiled it: the Townes men were taken, slaine, or bent in the Churches whereunto they fledde. One of them more rich then the others was taken and led to his owne house by his takers, to shewe them where his treasure lay: hee bringing them into a lowe Sellar, whilst they were busie to breake open lockes and coffers, hee conuied himselfe awate, and shutting the doores after him, set fire on the house: and so the theues to the number of thirtie, were bent, and by reason of this fire all the Towne was set on fire, and bent.

King Stephen besieged Lincolne against Ranulph Earle of Chester, but Robert Earle of Gloucester, came with a greater power, and rescued the same, chased the kings army, and took him prisoner on Candlemas day: first he was had to Gloucester, and after to Bistow, and there committed to prison, and put in prisons.

The Empresse reioicing at this her good hap, departed from Gloucester, and came to Cicester, with Bishops, Barons, and other in great number, from thence she went to Winchester, where met her Lords spirituall and temporall in great number, the city with the Towre and Crowne of the realme was deliuered into her hands.

The Bishop of Winchester, that was k. Stephens brother, accursed all that stood against the Empresse, and blessed those that took her part. From thence she departed to Wilton, where the archbishop of Canterbury came and saluted her. When Easter was past, she went to Reding, where she was rescued with all the honour that might be: thence she went to Oxford, where the castell was deliuered unto her by Robert de Olly: then went she to S. Albons, and was

King Stephen  
besieged Wallingford.

Worcester  
bent and  
spoiled.

An. reg. 5.

1140

Nottingham  
bent.

An. reg. 6.

1141  
King Stephen  
taken prisoner  
at Lincolne.

receiued with all honour. Here the citizens of London came and yelded the citie to her, whereupon she went to London, and so to Westminster, where she being receiued with procession, remained certaine daies, taking order for the state of the Realme, and there she gaue the Bishopricke of London to Robert de Sigello a Monk of Reding.

King Stephens wife, and many Peeres of the realme, made suite to the Emperesse to haue the king restored to libertie, and not to the kingdome, promising to perswade with him to become a Monk, but she would not heare. The Bishop of Winchester requested her to giue vnto Eustace his nephew, King Stephens son, his fathers Earledome, but it would not be. The citizens of London required her to restore King Edwards lawes, but she being puffed vp with pride, would not grant their request, whereupon they conspired to take her prisoner: but she aduertised hereof, fledde with shame, leaving behinde her all her furniture of household and apparell.

Henry Bishop of Winchester, casting which way to deliuer his brother, perswaded the Londoners to aide him. The Emperesse got her to Oxford, and from thence to Gloucester, and thence with her assured friend Miles again to Oxford: & because she trusted most in him, she to do him honor, gaue him the earledome of Hereford. And now hauing got a great army, about Lammas went againe to Winchester, and lodged in the Castle there. The Bishop abashed of her so daime committing, departed out at one Gate, as she came in at another. He getting a great army, with the helpe of the Londoners besieged the citie, and the second of August committed the Citie to the fire, with the which, the Punnie, and houses of office, with more then twenty churches (some wite fortie) and a great part of the city, with the monastery of S. Grimbald, and the houses thereto belonging, were brought to ashes.

About the exaltation of the Crosse, the Emperesse being wearied of long siege, got her to horsebacke with her brother Reginald earle of Cornewall, and many other. Erle Robert followed with a great number of lords and knights, but the bishops men setting on them, slew and toke a great number.

The Emperesse fled to the castle of Lutegerhall heauie and almost dead for feare: from thence she was brought to the Castle of Mies, and from thence to Gloucester, bound in a horse-litter like a dead carcasse.

Erle Robert being pursued, was taken at Stobbysdige with erle Waren, & many other, and presented to the queene, as then new entred into Winchester.

Erle Robert was deliuered to William de Ypres, who put him in prison in the castle of Rochester.

Miles erle of Hereford hardly escaped, and came to Gloucester almost naked.

The bishops men bzent the monastery of Punnies at Warwel, &c. the books and ornaments of the Punnies were taken and borne away, and men slaine euen before the Altar. These things thus done, the bishops wrath was somewhat appeased, but his couetousnesse encreased, so that being prompted thereto by the Prior of the newe monastrie in Winchester lately bzent, he toke off of the Crosse that was burnt five hundred pounds of silver, & thirtie marks in golde, thre crownes, with as manie seates of fine Arabike golde, set with precious

Winchester  
bzent.

The Emperesse  
fledde.

Erle of Gloucester  
taken.

Erle of Hereford  
fled.



precious stones: all this he laide vp in his owne treasure.

King Stephen and Earle Robert being straitly kept, at length through mediation of friends, a peace was concluded, that they should bee deliuered, the king to his kingdome, and the Earle to his libertie.

Geoffrey Mandeuile fortified the Tower of London: and Robert Bishop of London was taken at Fulham by Geoffrey Mandeuile.

Geoffrey bishop of Durham deceased, when he had late bishop of Durham 13 yeres: he builded the Castle of Aluerton, which he gaue to his nephew William, whom he toynd in marriage with the Earles niece of Albemarle.

The king and earle being set at libertie, did not onely reuue, but multiplie their malice: the king repayed his power and expences, the Earle went over the Sea to Geoffrey Earle of Anslow, whom he found occupied in warres against certaine of his subjects of Anslow, so that he could not come into England with him: whereupon he taking Henry, eldest sonne to Geoffrey Earle of Anslow, and Mawd the Emperesse, with certaine chosen men of armes, returned into England.

King Stephen hearing that earle Robert was gone out of the realme, and the Emperesse to lie at Oxford, with a great power came and besieged her two moneths space.

Earle Robert with Henry sonne to the Emperesse, and other his complices, landed at Warham, where he besieged the castle, which was defended by Hubert de Lucie, who at length yielded the same. In the meane time, the Emperesse seeing that she was void of all helpe, with a womanish subtilty deceiued the kings scout-watch, closhing her selfe and her company, five in number, all in white, and vpon a night went over the Thames on foote, which was then hard frozen, and white with snow: that night she went to Wallingford, and the Castle of Oxford was yielded to the king. After the winning of Warham castle, Robert went to visit his sister the Emperesse, who was not a little ioyfull to see him and her young son Henry, which Henry remained at Bristow for the space of foure yeres, and there was brought vp in learning.

King Stephen after the robbing of many churches, burning and robbing of towne and villages by the hands of the Fleming souldiers, he and his brother Henry bishop of Winchester, builded a castle of the Dunry at Wilton, to repress the incursions of them of Salisbury. Earle Robert the first of July fell suddenly vpon them in Wilton, and set the towne on fire. The king with the bishop fled with shame, the earles men toke the kings people, and sackt his plate and other things: there were taken of the kings men verie many, and among other, William Martell sewer to king Stephen, who was sent to Wallingford, there to be kept prisoner: William de S. Barbara was made bishop of Durham.

Miles earle of Hereford died and his eldest son Roger succeeded him.

William of Wyres founded Worley Abbey in Kent.

King Stephen toke Geoffrey Mandeuile Earle of Essex, at Saint Albons: which Geoffrey could not be set at libertie till hee had deliuered the Tower of London, with the Castles of Malden and Plym. When the Earle was thus

D 2.

spoiled

King Stephen  
and Robert  
Earle of Glo.  
cester deliuered  
by exchange.  
Alfridus Beuerla.

An. reg. 7.

1142

The Emperesse  
besieged.Warham ca.  
stle besieged.  
The Emperesse  
fled.  
Genuasius.

An. reg. 8.

1143

Wilton burnt.

King Stephen  
killed.An. reg. 9.  
Worley.

1144

Genuas. Dora.

Geffrey Mans-  
deuile earle of  
Essex slaine.

spoiled of his holdes, hee tooke the church of Ramsey, and fortified it: as hee besieged the castell of Burwell, he was smitten in the head with a dart, wherof he died. Robert Marmion was also slaine at Coventry, and Ernulphus earle Mandeuiles sonne, that held Ramsey Church as a fortress, after his fathers death, was taken and banished.

An. reg. 10.

1145

Wallingford  
besieged.

King Stephen besieged Wallingford, but could not prevaile. The earle of Chester was reconciled to the king, and was at this siege with him, but shortly after when he came to the Court, the king lying at Northampton, hee was taken and kept prisoner, till he had renoued the castell of Lincolne and other fortresses, whereupon he was the kings enemie euer after.

An. reg. 11.

1146

Geffrey earle of Anisot, and now duke of Normantie, sent foure noble men with furniture of warriours to Robert earle of Gloucester, requesting him to sende ouer his sonne Henry, and if naede required, hee would send him backe againe with all speede. The earle agreeing to his request, brought the yong Henry to Warham, where he tooke shipping towarde his father, of whome he was iustfullie receiued, there he abode two yeres, and foure monethes. In the meane time earle Robert deceased, and was buried at Bistow, in the quier of the Church of S. James, which he had founded.

Robert Earle  
of Gloucester  
deceased

An. reg. 12.

1147

An. reg. 13.  
The Empresse  
went into Nor-  
mandy.

King Stephen entred Lincolne, and there ware his Crowne, after whose departure from thence, the earle of Chester came to recover the town, but could not bying his purpose to passe, the citizens shewed such defence. The Empresse being wearied with the discord of the English nation, went ouer into Normandy, choosing rather to sit vnder the defence of her husband in peace, then to suffer so manie displeasures in England. King Stephen banished Theobald Arch-bishop of Canterbury, and the archbishop interdicted al the land that was subiect to the kings dominions, till peace betwene them was made.

1148

An. reg. 14.  
S. Katherins.  
W. Dunthorne.  
Lib. Trinitatis  
London.

The N. lay at S. Austens in Canterbury, because she was desirous to see the Abbey of Feuersham finished, which she & her husband had begun to build: she also builded the hospital of S. Katherin by the Towre of London, for poore brethren and sisters. Robert Fitz. Harding sometimes Pastor of Bistowe, whose father was a Dane, hauing founded the Monasterie of Saint Augustine in the towne of Bistow, this yee placed Chanons there, which foundation was after confirmed by king Henry the second.

1149

Roger Houeden.

In the moneth of May, Henry the Empresse sonne, with a great companie of cholen men of armes and other came into England, vnto whome forthwith manie Castles and strong holdes were deliuered, and hee made a newe coine, which was called the Dukes coine, and not onlie he, but also all the potentates of the Realme, as well byshops, as earles and barons, had each one his owne coine: but after ward the duke did inhibit the most part of these coines. The Duke taking with him Ranulph earle of Chester, Roger earle of Hereford, and diuers other, he went to David king Scottes, of whome he was iustfullie receiued, & made knight. When king Stephen heard, that David king of Scots, with his strength, and Henry son to the Empresse with his westerne Lords, were together at Carlile, he came to Porke with a great army, for feare they shoulde attempt any thing against that Citie, and so late there the moneth of August:

at

at length the one partie as well as the other departed: but Eustacius the kinges son being made knight, exercised many cruelties in the lands of the earles, that toke part with Henry the Emperesse sonne.

Henry the Emperesse son, being made knight, sailed into Normandy. *An. reg. 15*  
 gland was full of trouble and noise of war, set forth to fire and rapine, through  
 discord betwixt king Stephen, and certain earles that toke part with Henry the  
 son of the Emperesse. *1150*  
*Ex charta regis*

Robert earle Ferrers, founded the Abbey of Merinall.

Geffrey Plantagenet earle of Anslow, and duke of Normandie deceased, and left his son Henry to be his heire.

A divorcement was made betwene Lewis king of Fraunce, and Elianor his Quene, because they were a kin in the 4. degre. Moreover, she was defamed of adultery with an Infidell, &c. *An. reg. 16.*  
*1151*  
*Mathew Paris.*  
*Genual. Dorca*  
*Worcester*  
*besiged.*

King Stephen besieged the Castell of Worcester, which hee could not winne the last yere, and when he sawe now also that hee could not obtaine his purpose, he builded two Castellles before the same, stuffing them with garisons, and went from thence, but by counsell of Robert Earle of Leicester, the kinges castellles were overthrowne, and the castell besieged, delivered from danger.

Henry Duke of Normandie, toke to wife Elianor, sole daughter and heire to William Duke of Aquitaine, shee was first married to Lewes, the seventh of Fraunce, by whome shee had two daughters, whereof, Mary the eldest, was married to Henry the Large, earle of Champaigne: Ales the second, to Theobald, earle of Bloys. Lewes king of France, was divorced from Elianor, and yet was not content with this second marriage, because hee was loath, that anie other should beget sonnes by her, whereby his daughters might bee disherited. *An. reg. 17.*  
*1152*

King Stephen called a Parliament at London, declaring to Theobald archbishop of Canterbury, and the other bishops, howe he would utterly disherite Henry duke of Normandie, and confirme his owne sonne Eustace to be his successor by crowning him king: but the Pope had sent a commandement to the Archbishoppe, prohibiting him to crowne king Stephens sonne, because his father had usurped the kingdom, contrarie to his Othe. Which thing (as was thought) was brought to passe by the subtil policy of Thomas Becket, a Chappaine borne in London.

King Stephen and his sonne, being not a little offended the rewliss, caused the bishops with their Primate to be closed up in an house, threatening with terrores to extort of them, that which with prayers or price they could not obtaine. The Archbishop stode standing in his purpose, some of the Bishops through feare went from him, at length the archbishop by a marvellous hap escaping, got over the Thames, and so to Dover: and thence transporting over the seas, escaped the threats of the king and his son, and deprieved his sonne of his coveted honour. *Archbishop*  
*but by in pri*  
*son.*

Quene Mawde deceased at Baningam castel belonging to Alberik de Vere, Earle of Posfolke, and was buried at Feuerham in Kent.

Notwich increased  
Chronicle of  
Bromholma.

An. reg. 18.

The people of Notwich obtained of the king to haue coroners and bailiffes; for before that time, they had no other officer, but a Sergeant for the king that kept Courts, and after this, that is to say, in the seuen and thirtieth yere of Henry the third, they had licence to inclose that towne, with ditches got of sundrie hundzeds, &c. William de S. Barbara Bpshope of Durham deceased, when he had late Bpshope there 9. yeres.

1153  
Palmesburie  
Castell and  
Towne wonne  
by Henry Duke  
of Normandie.

Henry duke of Normandy furnished with an army, came into England, and at his first comming wan the castell and towne of Palmesburie, from thence forth Robert the noble earle of Leicester, beganne to take the dukes part, and to furnish him with things necessary, 30. castels or mo (through his counsell with them that kept them) submitted themselves to the duke. At length it was decreed, that the king should talke with the duke touching peace to be had: and so they met in a place where the Thames was most narrowe, the one standing on the one side, and the other on the other. After long talke they returned, the duke to his men, and the king to his, and so laying downe weapon, euery man departed in peace. The Towne of London, and the Castell of Windsoze, were deliuered to Richard de Lucy to be safely kept.

Polyconicon.  
John Sarisb.  
John Taxtor.  
Mathew Paris.

Eustace the kinges sonne was angrie with his father, for agreeing to this peace, and therefore in a rage departed from the court towards Cambrydge, to deströie that Contrey. Comming to S. Edmundsbury, he was there honorablie receiued and feasted, but when he could not haue such monie as he demanded, to bestow among his men of warre, he went awaie in a rage, spoiling the corne in the fields belonging to the Abbey, and carried it into his castels thereby: but as he late him down to dinner, he fell mad vpon receiuing the first moyse, and miserablie died, and was buried at Fenerham.

Eustace king  
Stephens son  
died.

Stamford,  
Nottingham,  
and Ipswich  
besieged.

Ex charta regia.

An. reg. 19.

King Stephen  
adopted Henry.

Elianor wife to duke Henry did beare him a son named William, which was a name proper to the dukes of Aquitaine and Anjou.

The duke besieged Stamford Castell, and wan it, and then he went to Nottingham and wanne that. The king in the meane time besieged Ipswich and wanne it. At length, thorough the great laboz of the archbyschop of Canterbury, and the other bishops, the king commanded the nobles to meet at Winchester, where the duke beeing receiued with great iöie, the king, in sight of all men adopted him his sonne, and confirmed to him the principality of all England. The duke receiued him in place of a father, granting to him all the daies of his life to entöie the name and seate of the kings preheminance.

William Archbyschop of Yorke, about the feast of Pentecoste, died at Yorke of poison, as some supposed, and was buried in his Cathedraall Church of Saint Peter.

1154

Duke Henry in the Octaues of the Epiphanie, came together with the king to Oxford, where the earles and barons by the kinges commandement swaie fealtie to duke Henry, sauing the kings honoz so long as he liued. This assurance being made, they departed asunder, but shortly after they met againe at Dunstable, there to intreat of the state and peace of the kingdom.

Shortly after duke Henry with king Stephen and certaine Lords of England came to Canterburie, and from thence to Dover, where they had communication



nification with Theodrike Earle of Flanders, and the countesse the dukes Aunt. When the king and the Duke had dismissed the Earle of Flanders, and were turning towards Canterbury, the slaughter of the Duke was prepared by a conspiracie of the Flemings which enuied both the Duke and peace: but behold, sodainly the kings yonger son William priate with the conspirators, on Barham Downe fell off his horse, and breaking his legge, he gathered all the company about him in sorrow. The Duke in the meane time vnderstanding the appointed treasons got him to Canterburie, and so escaped his enemies hands: from thence by Rochester and London, he came to the sea, and passed ouer into Normandie.

Hugo de Purcaco, treasurer of Poike and Archdeacon of Winchester, was made bishop of Durham.

In October the king met the Earle of Flanders againe at Douer, and talked with him.

After the earle was dismissed, the king was taken with a sodaine paine of the flake passion, and with an olde disease of running of the Emmerodes, and there in the house of the Monkes died the five and twentieth of October, when he had reigned eightene yeres, tenne moneths, and odde daies. He founded the Abbeies of Cogshall in Essex, of Furnesse in Lancashire, and Feuersham in Kent, where his bodie was buried for the time, but since the suppression of that house, for the lead that inclosed his bodie, the same bodie was throwne into the next water. Hee founded an house for Nunnes at Carew, and an house of Nunnes at Higham, foure miles from Grauesend. He also founded an Hospitall by the West gate of Poike, whereunto he gaue all the oates that had bene used to be gathered betwixt the river of Trent and Scotland, for finding of the kinges houndes, which was foure and twentie sheaues of cuerie plowland by yere, he appointed the Deane and Chanons of S. Peters church in Poike, to gather them to the reliefe of the said Hospitall, and caused Nigell Prior of Poike to deliuer that place by the west wall for to receiue the poore and lame, &c. Matild his wife founded the hospitall of Saint Katherine by the Tower of London, in a portion of land, which pertained to the Priorie of the holy Trinity in London, but then purchased with the Mill, by exchange of five poundes the yere land out of the kings manors of Bzaking. He had issue first a

King Stephen  
Died.  
Gerua. Dero.  
Rad. Cogshall.

Issue of King  
Stephen.

John Flete,  
Prior of West-  
minster.

*Deregun genere pater hic Geruasius ecce,  
Est & defunctus, mors rapit omne genus.*

## King Henry the second.

*An. reg. 1.*

Enry the second, son of Geffrey Plantagenet and Mawd the Em-  
prelle, at the age of twenty thre yeres, beganne his raigne  
ouer this Realme of England, the five and twentieth daie of  
October, in the yere of our Lozde 1154. hec was crowned at  
Westminster the seuententh daie of December, by Theo-  
bald Archbishop of Canterbury: he was somewhat red of face,

short of body, and therewith fat: of spech reasonable, well learned, noble in chi-  
ualrie, and fortunate in battell, wise in counsell, one that loued peace, liberall  
to strangers, but hard to his familiars: vnstedfast of promise, giuen to plea-  
sure, and a wedlocke breaker: by his manhood and pollicie the crowne of Eng-  
land was much augmented, with the annering of Scotland, Ireland, the Isles  
of Orcades, Byptaine, Poytiers, Guyen, and other prouinces of France.

Thomas Becket Archdeacon of Canterbury, was made the kings Chancel-  
lor, and was now in such fauour, that he was accounted the kings gouernor,  
for he was chieflie directed by him in all things.

Genua. Doro.

1155

Flemings bot-  
ted out of Eng-  
land.

He held his Christmas at Bermondsey, where hauing conference with his  
nobles, for the state of the kingdome, hee promised to banish all strangers.  
Whereupon William of Pyres, and all the Flemings that had flocked into  
England, fearing the indignation of the new king, departed the land. And  
the castles that had bene builded to pill the rich, and spoile the poore, were by  
the kings commandement, and counsell of his Chancellour throtone downe.  
The king visiting the citie of Yorke, in that countrey receiued diuers castles  
into his hands, namely amongst other he toke the Castle of Scarborough, from  
William earle of Albemarle.

In March Quene Elianor did beare a son at London called Henry after his  
father.

Line of the Sa-  
fons restored.  
Genu. Dorob.  
Rad. Dediceto.

King Henry was sonne to Mawd the Emprele, whose mother was Mawd  
Quene of England, wife to king Henry the first, and daughter to Margaret  
Quene of Scots, who was daughter of Edward, which he begate of Agatha,  
the sister of Henry the Emperour.

Edward was the sonne of king Edmund named Ironside: whose father was  
king Etheldred, whose father was the peaceable king named Edgar, the son of  
Edmund, the son of Edward the seignior, the sonne of Alured, &c.

*An. reg. 2.*  
Genu. Dorob.

1156

A counsell was holden at Wallingford, where the nobles were sworne to  
the king and his issue.

King Henry went ouer into Normandie, to whome then he was at Roane,  
came Toricus earle of Flunders with his wife the kings aunt, that he mought  
reconcile vnto him Geffrey his brother, which was then come thither also for  
that purpose: but Geffrey not accepting the pointes offered by the king, they  
departed without any agreement, Geffrey expelling Hoel out of Byptaine,  
toke the Citie of Baunts, by yeelding of the citizens. And king Henry after-  
ward

ward with long siege took the Castles of Spirable, and Chiron, which Geoffrey his brother had helde, whereupon there was a peace concluded betwixt them, that the king should giue to Geoffrey, euery yere a thousand pound of English money, and two thousand pound of Angelew; and thereupon the third Castle called Rowdune was yelded to the king, and so was the disention appeased, and king Henry obtained homage, and pledges of all Aquitaine, and Gascoigne, and prepared to returne towards England.

This yere Quene Elianor brought forth a daughter named Matild. And the same yere died William the kings eldest sonne, and was buried at Reding.

King Henry coyned new money, which onely was currant in this Realme, *An. reg. 5.* and all other coines were forbidden.

Conon Earle of Richmond comming out of England into Bytaine, took the Citie of Redonens, expelling Eudo, which Conon afterward was receiued as Duke ouer almost all Bytaine. *Nicholas Tre.*

King Henry hauing overcome his brother Geoffrey returned into England, & then with an army went against the Welchmen, where he selled their woods, fortified the castle of Rudland, and recovered many strong holdes. He recified the castle of Basingworke, &c. but he lost many of his men, for Henry of Essex that bare the kings standard, as he was assailed amongst his enemies, let fall the standard to the ground, which incouraged the Welchmen in such sort, that the king being sore distressed, had much ado to saue himselfe, and was faine to flie: of whose part, Eustace fitz Iohn, and Robert Curcis, two worthy knights, with others other noble men and gentlemen were slaine. After that Owen incamped and intrenched himselfe at Bzantpne, and skirmished with the kings men daily. And in the meane while that the king was fortifying the Castle of Rudland, his nauy which was guided by Madoc ap Meridich prince of Idowesse, anchored in Man or Anglesey, and there spoiled two Churches, and part of the Ile, but as they returned, were all slaine. In the incane time there was a peace concluded betwixt the king and the prince.

1157  
King Henry  
went against  
the Welchmen.  
Recified ca-  
stles.  
Henry of Essex.

Quene Elianor brought forth a son named Richard, at Orford in the kings pallace there, which pallace was since made a church of white Friers.

William Earle of Gloucester was taken by the Welchmen in the Castle of Cardise. *Giraldus Camb.*

On Christmas day, king Henry wore his Crowne at Worcester, where, after celebrazion of diuine seruice, he set his Crowne vpon the Altar, and neuer wore it after. *1158*

King Henry went into France, and at Paris was topfully receiued of king Lewis, who required to haue his daughter Margaret to be married to his sonne Henry, which suite he obtained, and king Henry obtained, that as Seneschall to the French king hee might enter into Bytaine, and call afore him such as made warre one against another, to appease them, whereby he brought the Citie of Poaunts to his dominion.

An earthquake happened in many places through England: and the river of Thames was dyed up, that at London mē might walk ouer the same drye.

Quene

*An. reg. 5.*  
Ypodigma.  
1159  
Geruafius

Queene Elianor brought forth a sonne named Geffrey.

A new coppe was made in England. King Henry toke rescue of the Englishmen, the summe whereof grew to 12400. pounds of silver. Of other countries subiect to him hee gathered also an infinite exaction, and then passed toward Holouse with an huge army, and besieged that Citie from Midsummer till Hallontide. There were with him Malcolme king of Scots, and a certaine king of Wales, and al the Barles and Barons of England, Normandy, Aquitaine, Anjou, and Gascoine: but Lewis the French king so defended that city, that the kings purpose was frustrate, and the siege raised: and after great good peace and concord betwixt them made, a great discord shortly after followed.

*An. reg. 6.*  
1160  
Geruaf. Doro.  
*An. reg. 7.*

King Henry returned from Holouse, and Henry the king of Englands son, not 7. yeeres olde, married Margaret the French kings daughter, that was not yet 3. yeeres olde.

In this meane time the king, although he were much troubled with wars, yet was he not blindefull of Ireland. For directing his messengers to Rome with the letters of abuses, gotten at the councill of Cassels, he also obtained by their suite, of Pope Adrian (an Englishman by birth) a p̄uiledge, both to haue the dominion of the Irish people, with his authoritie and consent, and also to instruct them in the rudiments of faith and ecclesiasticall rites, after the order of the church of England. Which p̄uiledge, being sent over into Ireland, by Nicholas of Wallingford, then B̄ior of Elnesbury, and afterward Abbot, and also by William Fitz Adelme, Immediately there was a synode of B̄yshops assembled at Waterford, wherein it was read in publike audience, with generall consent of all, by Iohn B̄yshop of Salisbury, afterward B̄yshop of Chartres, who was sent to Rome for that purpose, and by him the foresaide Pope Adrian sent a ring of golde to the king of England in token of the inuestiture, which was incontinently laide by with the p̄uiledge in the arches of Winchester. Wherefore, I thought it not superfluous to set downe here the tenure of that p̄uiledge, but first a word or two of Pope Adrian, because I haue saide, he was an English man, his name was Nicholas Breake-speare, borne at Langley in the Countie of Hertford, sonne to Robert a younger brother of the house of Breake-speares, which Robert after the death of his wife, professed himselfe a Monk of S. Albons, leauing his son to prouide for himselfe. This young man passed into France, was thorne a Monk, and after chosen Abbot, went to Rome, was consecrated B̄yshop of Alba, made Cardinall, sent Legate to the Forwaies, where he reduced that nation from Paganisme to christianitie, and after returned to Rome, when Anastasius was dead, he was chosen Pope, by the name of Adrian the fourth, and now followeth the p̄uiledge.

Giraldus Cam.

The licence of Pope Adrian the fourth, to king Henry the second to enter Ireland, out of an ancient written booke intituled, Topographia Hibernia, &c. by Giraldus Cambrensis, and dedicated to the said king Henry the second.

Adrian Pope  
his Epistle to  
king Henry.

Adrian B̄yshop, seruant of the seruants of God, to his dære sonne, the most excellent king of England, health and Apostolike Benediction, your highnes resolution in the laudable, and fruitfull spreading abroad your glorious name on earth, and in obtaining the reward of eternal felicitie in heauen, while you determine



determine like a Catholike Prince to enlarge the boundes and limits of the church, to declare to the vblearned and rude people, the truth of the Christian faith, and to roote out of our Lordes ground the plants of wickednesse; and towards the performace thereof, you require the counsell and fauour of the Apostolike seate: In which action, with how much the more graue counsell, and deepe consideration, you doe procede, so much the more fortunate successe therein (God assisting you) we nothing doubt you shall haue, for that alwaies they are wont to attaine to a good and happy ende, which take their beginning from the zeale of faith, and loue of true religion. For Ireland, and all other Islands, to the which Christ the sonne of iustice hath giuen light, and which haue receiued the instructions of the Christian faith, there is no doubt but they doe appertaine and belong to the right of Saint Peter and the holy church of Rome, which also your excellencie acknowledgeth: wherefore how much the more plentifully we do seate in them the faithfull plant, and graffe the bud acceptable to God, so much the more doe we see that shall bee more strictly required of vs in our inward thoughts: You haue signified to vs (most deere son in Christ) that you will enter into the Ile of Ireland to subdue that people vnto lawes, and that there you will enterprize the plantes of vices, and that you will paie a pærcely pension of one penny for euerie house there to S. Peter, and that you will preserve the rightes of the churches here, whole and inuolated. And we following with a great fauour your gotly and laudable desire, doe gratefully accept, and willingly consent that you do enter into that Island to enlarge the bounds of the Church, to restraine the course of wickednes, to correct manners, to plant vertue, and augment the Christian religion, and that you doe put in execution those things that shall appertaine to the honour of God and saluation of that land, and the people there shall receiue you honourably, and as their Lord shall reuerence you, the churches right remaining sound, and no way infringed, and alwaies reseruing to S. Peter, and the holy church of Rome, the pærcely pension of euerie house there. If therefore you bring that to passe, which in your mind you haue conceiued, indeno: to informe that nation in god manners, and couet as well by your selfe as by others to instruct such as you perceiue capable in this faith, in this word, and in this life, that the church there may be adorneed, the religion of the Christian faith may be there planted, and may there rest, and that those things that pertaine to the honour of God and saluation of soules be so ordered and disposed of, that of God you may receiue the full measure of euerlasting reward, and in earth obtaine a glorious name for euer.

This that followeth is adioyned to the former Epistle of Pope Adrian the fourth, being an English man, witten to king Henry the second.

I beleue in God Fadir almighty shipper of heuen and earth,  
 And in Ihesus Crist his onlethi son vre Louerd,  
 That is iuange thurch the holy ghost: bore of Mary maiden,  
 Tholede pine vnder Pounce Pilat, picht on rode tree, dead and yburid,  
 Licht into helle, the thridde day from death arose,  
 Steich into heauen, sit on his fadir richt honde God almighty,

Petrus,  
 Andreas,  
 Iacobus.  
 Iohannes.  
 Thomas.  
 Iacobus Alpha.

Then

Philippus.  
Bartholomeus.  
Matheus.  
Simon.  
Thadæus.  
Mathias.

Then is cominde to deme the quikke and the dede.

I beleue in the holy gost,

All holy chirche.

Mone of alle hallwen: forgiuenis of sine,

Fleiss vprising,

Lif withuten end, Amen.

*Est symbolum triplex, sc. illud qui in prima dicitur sc. quicumque vult. Et illud est Athanasij patriarchæ Alexandrinæ. Aliud quod dicitur in missa, sc. Credo in unum deum. Et illud fuit sanctorum patrum in Niceno concilio. Tertium quod est commune omnium fidelium, & illud ex 12. apostolorum continens 12. articulos fidei,*

*Pater noster in Anglico.*

Vre fadir in heuene riche,

Thi name be halijd euer iliche,

Thou bring vs to thi michil blisse,

Thi will to wirche thu vs wisse,

Als hit is in heuene ido,

Euer in earth ben hit al so,

That holi bred that lasteth ay,

Thou send hit ous this ilke day,

Forgiue ous all that we hauith don,

Als we forgiuet vch other mon,

He let vs falle in no founding,

Ak scilde vs fro the soule thing, Amen.

*Ex siluestri Giraldo Cambrensi, in sua Topographia Hibernia ad regem Angliæ Henricum 2.*

1161

Mathew Earle of Bolonia married Mary abbesse of Rumsey, daughter to king Stephen, and had with her the countie of Boloigne.

Thomas Wikes.  
I. Beucila.

Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and the church of Canterbury was bolde one yere, one moneth, and foure tene daies: he had late Archb. shop 22. yeres. and was buried at Canterbury.

Mathew Paris.

Thomas Becket archbishop of Canterbury.

King Henry caused all his subiectes to sweare fidelitie to his sonne Henry concerning his inheritance. Thomas the kings Chancellour toke his othe, first, sauing his fidelitie to king Henry the father, so long as hee liued. This Thomas was elected Archbishop of Canterbury, and when he was consecrated, he forthwith refused to deale any moze with matters of the court, renouncing the chancellorship, &c.

An. reg. 8.

1162

Wilh. Noubour.  
Ralph. Cogshall.

There came into England 30. Germanes, as wel men as women, who called themselves Publicans: their head and ruler named Gerardus, was somewhat learned, the residue verie rude. They denied matrimonie, and the sacraments of baptisme, and the Lords supper, with other articles. They being apprehended, the king caused a councell to be called at Orford, where the said Gerard answered for all his fellows, who being pressed with Scriptures, answered concerning their faith, as they had bin taught, and would not dispute thereof. After they could by no meanes be brought from their errors, the bishops gaue sentence against them, and the king commanded that they shoulde be marked

marked with an hote yron in the forehead, and whipped, and that no man should succour them with house-rome or otherwise: they took the ir punishment gladly, their captaine going before them, singing, Blessed are ye when men do hate you: they were marked in the forehead, and their captaine both in the forehead and the chinne. Thus being whipped and thrust out in the winter, they died with colde, no man relieuing them. Quene Elianor brought forth a daughter at Keane, and named hig Elianor, after her owne name.

Publicans  
whipped.

Robert de Mountfort accused his nére kinsman Henry of Essex of high treason before the nobilitie, affirming that he in an expedition into Wales, in a narrow and hard passage at Colleshell, most fraudulently threw a wafe the kings standart, and with a loud voice pronounced him to be dead, and turned back those that came to the kings succour. (Indeed the foresaid Henry of Essex was perswaded that king Henry was slaine, which undoubtedly had come to passe, if Roger Earle of Clare had not with quick speed come to with his retinue, & raised againe the kings standart, to the incouraging of the whole army.)

An. reg. 9.

1163

Joceline of  
Baceland.

Henry withstood the foresaid Robert, and denied all his accusations, whereby, in proccesse of time, the matter came to be tried by combate. They mette at Reding to fight, in an Isle nére to the Abbey. Thither also came much people, to see what end the matter would come to. And it chanced, that when Robert had manfully polvored out many and heauy strokes, Henry turning reason into rage, toke vpon him the part of a challenger and not a defender, who, whil实现 he manfully strooke, was more stoutly stricken againe, and indenoring to conquer, was conquered himselfe: he being overcome, fell doونه for dead, and when he was thought to haue been slaine, at the instance of such of the nobilitie as were of kinne to him, it was granted vnto the Monkes there that his body should be buried, but afterwards he reuiued, and hauing recouered his health, became a Monke in that place.

Combate at  
Reding.

Henry of Essex  
is overcome

Flores Historiar.

London bridge was new made of timber, by Peter of Colechurch a Priest Chaplaine.

An. reg. 10.  
London bridge  
made of timber.

Malcolme the Scottis king, and Refus prince of Southwales, and other, did homage to king Henry and his sonne Henry at Westminster.

1164

Gervasius Dorob.  
A counsell at  
Claringdon.

A Councell was holden at Claringdon, in the presence of the king, and the Archbishops, Bishops, Lords, Barons, &c. wherein was recognised, and by their othes confirmed many ordinances, so long here to recite, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury being swozne to the same, shortly after soze repented, and fled the realme, and went to the court of Rome.

The 26. day of January was a great earthquake in Ely, Suffolke, and Suffolke, so that it ouerthrewe them that stood vpon their serte, and made the bells to ring in the steeple.

An. reg. 11.

1165

An earthquake.

The king hauing seized into his hands all the Archbishops goods and rents, and banished all his kinsmen, women and children, Randol de Biot had the custody of the archbishopricke: this man was very cruell against the Archbishop.

Mathew Paris.  
Gervas. Dorob.

The king led an innumerable army against the Welchmen, of Flemings, Scots, Pias, Anslowans, and other, but with so great a multitude he could not overcome them.

Rad. Cogshall.

The

The Welchmen took the castell of Cardigan.

In a certaine assiege at Wydenozth, against Hugh de Mortimere, when the king was shotte at by one of the enemies, a valiant man Hubert de Saint Clere Constable of Colchester, did thrust himselfe betwixt the king, and the danger of the stroke, and so receiued death for him, whose onlie daughter the king taking into his custodie, hee gaue her in marriage to William de Languale, with her fathers inheritance, who begate on her a son, bearing the name and surname of his Grandfather.

An. reg. 12.  
1166

State.

The king passed ouer into Normandie, and there holding a Councell, appointed a collection to bee made through all his Countreies, two pence of the pounce of inuencable goods for the first yeere, and one pennie the pounce for foure yeeres after: the same to bee receiued likewise of arable landes, and of vines, so that the charges and cost of them be not reckoned. Also euery man hauing a house, and the value of a pounce, shall giue a pennie, and he that hath not the value of a pound, but some office agent, shall giue a penny, this to be the reliefe of the cast parts.

An. reg. 13.  
1167

The same yeere D. Elianor did beare a son named Iohn.  
Robert sonne to William Earle of Gloucester deceased.

The warre was renewed betwixt the king of England, and the French king, for the city of Tholouse: and Mathew earle of Bulloigne, brother to Philip earle of Flanders manned 6. hundred ships, to haue come into England, but by such preparatton as Richard Lucy gouernor of England made, he was stopped wel ynough.

An. reg. 14.  
1168

Iohn Textor.  
Geru. Dorob.  
Ypodigma.

Mawde king Henries daughter was married to Henry duke of Sarony.  
Conan earle of little Byptaine died, and left for his heire a daughter named Constance, which hee had by the king of Scottes Sister, which Constance king Henrie married to his sonne Geoffrey, and traunapling earnestlie to set all things at peace and quiet in Byptain, reconciled unto himself both the cleargy and the laitie of that Countrie.

An. reg. 15.  
1169

Sca. Cro.  
Gerendon.  
Leicester and  
Eaton.  
Sca. Cro.  
Giraldus Cam.

Robert de Boscue earle of Leicester dyed, hee founded the Monasteries of Gerendon of Donkes: of Leicester called Saint Marie de Prat of Chanons regular: and Eaton of Nuns, was founded by Amicia his wife, daughter of Ralph Montford.

King Henry caused the castell of Warwike to be builded.

Deruntius the sonne of Morcardus, called Macke Murgh king of Lepnster, being expelled out of his kingdome, came into Gnyen to king Henry humblelie requirring aid for his restitution, who vnderstanting fully the cause therof, gaue fre licence to all Englishmen that would, to aid the said Deruntius: whereupon he returning into England, couenaunted with Richard earle of Chesfowe, to giue him his daughter in marriage, and with her the succession of his kingdome, so that he would helpe him in the recovery of it: and shortly after hee promised to Robert Fitz Stephen, and Mawrice Fitz Gerald large reuenues in Ire-land for the like helpe.

An. reg. 16.  
1170

King Henry helde his court at Nants, where the bishops and Barons of Byp- taine being present, swaie their fidelitie to the king, and to his sonne Geoffrey:  
and



and then the king sailed into England, but manie of his company were drow-  
ned by the waite. Giraldus Cam.

Robert Fitz Stephen first of all Englishmen after the conquest entred Ire-  
land the first day of May, with 390. men, and there toke Waterford in the behalfe  
of Deruntius. Englishmen  
transported  
into Ireland.

King Henry caused his sounne Henry bozne at London to be crowned by the  
hands of Roger Archbysshop of Doreke, as he thought to the great quietnesse of  
himselfe and his realme, but it proved farre otherwise: the young king receiued  
the fealties of the earles and barons. Henry the  
kings son  
crowned.

Thomas archbysshop of Canterbury, by the mediation of Pope Alexander, and  
Lewes the king of France, was restored to his see of Canterbury, and returned  
from exile.

In the moneth of September, Richard earle of Chepflow, surnamed Strong-  
bow, sailed into Ireland with 1200. men of war, and by force toke Waterford  
and Dublin, and married Eue, Deruntius daughter. Gualter Couen,

Thomas Becker Archbysshop of Canterbury, in his church at Canterbury, the  
28. of December was slaine by William Tracy, baron of Baines and Boston,  
Reginold fitz Vrse, Hugh Moruult, and Richard Briton knights. An. reg. 17.  
1171

There was sene at Saint Osythes in Caister a Dragon of a maruellous  
bignesse, which by mouing burned houses. Death of Tho-  
mas Becker.  
Chro. Colchest.  
Ex Record.

King Henry returned from beyond the seas, and landed at Portsmouth in the  
moneth of August.

King Henry hauing caused Richard earle of Chepflow to giue into his hands  
all the land which he had conquered in that realme, toke ship at Penbroke, and  
sailed thither, where the king of Conach, Deruntius king of Doreke, Morice king  
of Methe, the king of Wziel, Duuenald king of Mery, Duuenald king of Li-  
merike, Machachelin, Ophelon, Machaleny, Othnethely, Gillemehelmach, O-  
cadecie, Ocaruell, with other princes, and the bishops, submitting themselves  
and theirs to the king of England and his successors, builded for him a greate  
pallace at Dublin, where he held his Christmas. King Henrie  
Lord of Ire-  
land.  
Gesta. Abbat.  
S. Abani.  
Regist. Mon.  
S. Abani.  
Cimphrius.

The church of Norwich, with the houses thereto belonging was burnt, and  
the Monkes were disperkled. An. reg. 18.  
Giraldus Cam.  
Rad. Cogshall.  
Gervaf Dorob.  
The Church of  
Norwich burnt:  
1172.

The king returned into England on Monday in Easter weeke, and about  
the ascension tide sayled into Normandie.

At Andouer a Priest praying before the Altare, was stricken with thun-  
der and slaine.

Askeuote one Larke and his brother were burnt to death with the lightning.

King Henrie the sonne, with his Wife, the French kings daughter, were  
both together crowned at Winchester the seuen and twentieth daie of August,  
by the hands of Rosrod Archbysshoppe of Roane. Thus was hee twice crow-  
ned, (as ye haue hearde.) Chro. Colchest.

King Henrie the elder was assayed of the death of Thomas the Archbysshop  
upon his othe made, that hee was not pryncie to it, but that those Malefac-  
tours tooke occasion to kill him by certayne wordes which the King in his  
anger vnadvisedly spake. Gervafius.  
An. reg. 19.  
1173  
Ypodigma.

King

King Henry married the eldest daughter of Hubert Earle of Mortoun, with his son John surnamed Without-land.

He also made Mary the sister of Thomas Becker Abbess of Berking.

Henry the  
younger re-  
belled.

Henry the younger rebelling in Normandie against king Henry his father, manie Carles and Barons fledde over to him, whereby diuers strong battels were fought, as well in England as in Normandie, Poytow, Copen and Byslawe.

There tooke part against the father, Lewes king of France, William king of Scots, Henry, Geoffrey, and John his sons, Robert Earle of Leicester, Hugh of Chester, and others.

John Tector.

An. reg. 20.

Robert Earle of Leicester with three thousand Flemings comming into England, arrived at Walton, and after were receiued by Earle Hugh into Framlingham Castle. They burnt the castle of Hagoneth, the citie of Norwich, &c. but by Richard de Lucy the kings Justice, both hee, his wife, and as manie Normans and Frenchmen as were with him were taken, but the Flemings were all slaine, or drowned. This battell was fought without the Towne of Saint Edmondsburie, nere to a place called Saint Martins of Farneham.

William king of Scots with many Flemings entring into England, wan the Castles of Appleby, Wrough, and Wridehow.

1174  
Leicester burnt.

Barnards  
Castle.

King of Scots  
taken prisoner.  
Gernaf Dorob.  
Scal. cron.

King Henry the elder, returning into Englande, in short time subdued his Rebels. The citie of Leicester by his commandement was burnt, the walles and Castle rased, and the inhabitants sparkled into other citie. Robert de Scoteuile, Radulph de Mandeuile, Barnard Bayllole, of whome Barnards Castle tooke the name, and William de Vescy came to Newcastle, and after tooke king William prisoner, and sent him to London, from whence king Henry tooke him and the Earle of Leicester with him into Normandie, and there imprisoned them at Roane, where king William compounded for his ransome, and after was deliuered at Porke for 4000. pound. The nobles of Scotland came no nerer than Pembles in Scotland to meete with their king, therefore he tooke with him many of the younger sonnes of noble men in Englande that bare him good will, and gaue them landes in Scotland, which he tooke from such as were Rebels to him there. The names of those Gentlemen that he tooke with him, were Bayelliol, Brewse, Souilly, Mowbrey, Saintclere, Hay, Giffard, Ramsey, Lanudell, Bisey, Berkeley, Wellegen, Boys, Montgomery, Valx, Colenille, Friser, Grame, Gurlay, and diuers other.

Gernaf. Dorob.  
W. Thorne.  
Canterburie  
burnt.

The first day of December, Christs Church in Canterburie was burned, with certaine houses of office in the court.

King Henry the son, with his brethren, and other, were reconciled to king Henry the father.

An. reg. 21.

The Archbishop of Canterburie, held a Councell in S. Peters at Westminster on Sundate before the Ascension day, at which Councell were present all the suffragan Bishops of his Province, Worcester excepted, that was sick, and so excused himselfe, and the Bishop of Norwich which was deceased.

1175  
Rog Houed.

A brother of the Earle Ferrers was in the night priuily slaine at London, which

which when the king understood, he swore that he would be avenged on the Citizens: for it was then a common practise in the citie, that an hundred or more in a company of young and old, would make nightly inuasions upon the houses of the wealthy, to the intent to robbe them, and if they found any man stirring in the Citie within the night, they would presently murder him, in so much, that when night was come, no man durst adventure to walke in the streets. When this had continued long, it fortuned that as a crew of yong and wealthy Citizens assembling together in the night, assaulted a stone house of a certaine rich man, and breaking through the wall, the good man of that house having prepared himselfe with other in a corner, when he perceived one of the thēnes named Andrew Bucquinte to leade the way, with a burning brand in the one hand and a pottle of coales in the other, which he assayed to kindle with the brande, he slewe upon him, and smote off his right hand, and then with a loud voice cried thēnes, at the hearing whereof the thēnes took their flight, all saying he that had lost his hand, whome the good man in the next morning deliuered to Richard de Lucy the kings Justice. This thēne upon warrant of his life, appeached his confederats, of whom many were taken, & manie were fled, but among the rest that were apprehended, a certaine Citizen of great countenance, credite, and wealth, surnamed Iohn the olde, when hee could not acquite himselfe by the Watar dome, offered the king for his life 500. markes, but the king commanded that he should be hanged, which was done, and the citie became more quiet.

Night watchers  
in London, did  
murder all  
they met.



Gual. couen.

The kings of England both father and sonne did eate and drinke at one table, lay in one chamber, and went together to visite the Tombe of Thomas late Archbishop of Canturburie, accomplishing indeede the peace which they had promised.

Eu. reg. 22.  
1176

The king caused to be razed and overthrowen the Castles of Huntingdon, Walton, Groby, Tutbury, Hay, and Tress, with many other, in reuenge of the harme the Lordes of them had done to him.

Castles razed.

This yere, or rather in the yere 1173. after Rouse of Warwike, the stone brydge ouer the riuer of Thamis at London, was began to be founded, in place where befoze had bin a brydge of timber, first builded and long since repaired by a colledge of Priests, which colledge stood there now &c. Marie our ties church standeth, in Southwarke. The king assisting this work of the brydge, a cardinal late Legate here, and Richard then Archbishop of Canturburie, gaue one thousand marks towards the same foundation. The course of the riuer for the time was turned another way about, by a trench cast for that purpose, beginning in the East about Radoise, and ending in the West about Battersey.

London brydge  
founded with  
arches of stone.  
Lib. S. Mar. ouer.  
Iohn Leyland.

This yere was compiled a booke of the orders and rules of the Exchequer, now commonly called there the Blace booke: the authour whereof (as diuers affirme) was Geruasius Tilberienis nephew to king Henry the second. In this booke is described the reason and cause of the first institution of the same court, & why it was called Scaccarum, the names of the officers resident in the same, as wel on the higher side, called the Chequer, as on the lower called the Receipt, or treasurie, their places and duties incident to the same, their priuiledges and

Geruasius Til-  
berienf.  
Blace booke  
in the Excheq-  
quer.

dignities, with diuers of their fees. The order & forme of making tallies, rolles, writs, and other like. The maner of accounts, & payments of rents vsed in those daies, whereof some were payed in mony, & some in victuals, pyld according to the valuation of the mony of that time, whereof mine Author maketh mention. For prouision of the kings household vsed within his owne remembrance (as he saith) from the time of H. Henry the first, wherein the officers of the kings household reducing their victualles into an estimate of money, did value for a measure of wheat to make bread for the seruice of 100. men, i. shilling: for the carcase of a fat Ox, i. shilling: for a fat sheepe 4. pence: for the prouender of 20. horses 4. pence: many other speciall notes there are contained in these booke worthy of memozy, which for breuity I ouerpasse.

In March the king called a Conuocation of the Cleargie at London, when the Popes Legate was set, and the Archbyschoppe of Canterburie on his right hand, as primate of England, the Archbyschop of Yorke disdaining to sit on the left hand, came and swopt him downe to haue thrust his taile betwixt the Legate and the archbyschop of Canterbury, which archbyschoppe beeing loathe to remoue, the other sette his buttocke in his lappe, but he had vnneth touched him with his bumme, when the Bishops and othr of the Cleargie and Laitie stept to him, polled him, threwe him to the grounde, and began to laie on him with fistes and batres, so that the archbyschop of Canterburie (pelding god for euill) was faine to defend the other Archbyschoppe, who with his rent Coape got vp, and atwaie straght to the King with a greate complaynte: but when the truth of the matter was once knowne, he was well laughed at for his remedie.

Allowance of  
bread for an  
hundred men,  
xii. pence.  
for a tat ore.  
xii. pence.  
A fat sheepe,  
iiii. pence.

I. Reuerla.

An. reg. 23

Ypodigma.

Richard Strongbow earle of Cheshew, deceased, and was buried at Dublin in Ireland.

William earle of Arundell also deceased, and was buried at Wymondham.

William earle of Gloucester, because he had no son to inherite his lands, and being loth to distribute them amongst his daughters, he made Iohn the kings son his successor.

Cron. Tinneut.  
Waltam Abbey

1177

Ypodigma.  
Geruahu.

A shewe of blood raigned in the Ile of Wight two houres space.

The Church of secular Chanons at Waltam in Essex, founded by Harolde, was by the K. commandement new builded and regular Chanons placed there, to the number of 24. Richard the first augmented it, and so did Henrie the third, with faires and Markets, a Faire for seven daies, and at Epingburie a Market euerie Sundae, and a Faire for thre daies. This Abbey at the generall sorrey, and surrender, was valued to dispend yerelie 900. pound, 4. shillings and 4. pence.

Rosamond con-  
cubine to king  
Henry.

Rosamond the faire daughter of Walter, Lord Clifford, Concubine to Henry the second (poisoned by M. Elianor as some thought) died at Woodstock, where H. Henry had made for her an house of a wonderful working, so that no man or woman might come to her, but if hee were instructed by the king, or such as were right secrete with him touching the matter. This house after some was named Labyrinthus, or Dedalus worke, which was thought to be an house wrought like vnto a knotte in a garden, called a Maze, but it was commonlie saide,



saide, that lastly the Quene came to her by a clewe of thredde, or silke, and so dealt with her, that she liued not long after, but when she was dead, she was buried at Godstow, in an house of Nunnes, beside Oxford with these verses vpon her tombe:

*Hic iacet in tumba, Rosa mundi, non rosa munda,  
non redolet, sed olet, qua redolere solet.*

In English thus:

The rose of the world, but not the cleane flowre  
Is now here grauen, to whom beauty was lent,  
In this graue full darke now is her bowre,  
That by her life was sweete and redolent,  
But now that she is from this life blent,  
Though she were sweete, now foully doth she stinke:  
A mirrour good for all men that on her thinke.

*An. reg. 24.*

After the death of this Rosamond, King Henry toke praisly the daughter of Lewis king of France, (that was married to his sonne Richard Earle of Pop, tow) for his Leman, and had practised for a diuorce betwixt him and Elianor his Quene: whereupon followed great discord betwixt the king of England, and of France: but L. Henry sayling ouer into Normandie, the L. of France and he, had talke together, and entred into amitie.

Ludouicus Viues

Richard Lucy the Kinges Justiciar laide the foundation of the conentual Church in the honour of S. Thomas, in a place which is called Westwood, otherwise Lefnes, in the territorie of Rochester.

1178

This Richard Lucy builded the Castle of Anger in Essex, in the diocesse of the Bishop of London.

Lefnes.  
Gervasius.  
Walter Couen.  
Gerv. Tilberien.

The Citie of Yorke was bzent.

On Christmas day at Drenhall, in the territorie of Derlington, in the Bishopricke of Duresme, the earth lifted vp it selfe in the maner of an high Tower, and so remained from the spring of the day immouable, vntill the euening, and then fell with so horrible a noise, that it feared the inhabitants thereabout, and the earth swallowed it vp, and made there a deepe pitte, which is seene vntill this day. For a testimonie thereof, Leyland saith, he saw the pittes there commonly called Hel-kettles.

*An. reg. 25.*

1119

Cron. Timmoth.

The tenth day of Aprill the Church of Saint Andrew in Rochester, with the whole towne was consumed with fire.

Richard de Lucy chiefe Justice of England deceased in the Abbey of Lefnes, which he had builded, and where hee had changed his habite, and was be- come a Monke.

Richard Lucy  
chiefe Justice  
di. d.

The 19. day of August at night, y<sup>e</sup> Moone was eclipsed, which was seene of L. Henry and his company, as he rode all night, to make the king of France comming into England, to visit the tombe of Thomas Becket the Archbishop.

The king of  
France came  
into England.

On the 21. day of August, Lewis king of France entred into Englande, which neither hee, nor any his predecessors had euer done, and king Henry of England meeting him, as he entred out of shippe.

P 2.

On

A precious  
stone called the  
Regal of France  
offered to Tho.  
Beckers byine.

On the 27. of August, both the kings came to Canterbury, where they were with due honour receiued of the Archbyshop Richard, and other Byshoppes of England, the Couent of Canterburie, and a multitude of Noble men. Lewes king of France offered vpon the Tombe, and to the byine of Thomas Becker a rich Cuppe of golde, he gaue also that renouens precious stone, that was called the Regall of France (king Henry the 8. put the same in a ring, which he wore on his thumb) he gaue to the Monk by his Charter one hundred measures or tunnes of wine, to be payde them yearly at Paris in France, he continued all one night in watching and prayer at the tombe, and in the morning required to be made a brother there, and was admitted. Then king Henry shewed the saide king Lewes all the treasure of his Realme, which he and his predecessors had gathered together, but the Frenchmen refrained from taking of gifts, but taking leave of the king, receiuing some thinges in token of amitie, returned to Douer, and so ouer into France.

Cadwallan a  
prince of  
Wales.

An. reg. 26.

1180

Cadwallan a prince of Wales, being accused, was brought to appeare before the king, but clearing himselfe, as he went homeward vnder the kings safe conduct, was slain, which thing redounded greatly to the kings dishonour, notwithstanding he professed to be ignorant thereof.

Ro. Housden.

The Traporites or Usurers in England were grieuously punished for corrupting the coyne, the which besides other verations, were fettered two and two together, and carried in carts to the kinges court, there to receiue their iudgement.

An. reg. 27.

1181

Itinerarium  
Cambrie Giral.  
A man deuoured  
by Coads.

A new coine was made in England, by commandement of king Henry the father, it was made rounde, but not without great burden to the poore inhabitants of the Realme. He put all the coiners in England to great ranfome, for corrupting of the old money.

Geffrey the kinges bastarde son, resigned the Byshopricke of Lincolne, and was made the kinges Chancellor.

Genasius de  
nappa mundi.

This yere Giraldus Cambrensis wrote his Booke of the description of Wales, wherein hee noteth to haue happened in his time, in the Province of Kemmeis, a yong man (borne in those parts) to be so persecuted with Coads, as if all within that country had come crawling together to ber him, and when innumerable numbers of them were killed by those that kept him, and other of his friends and kinsmen, yet came they still as if they had sprong like Hydras heads numberlesse: at length when his friendes were wearied with watching, they caused him in a Coffin to be hoisted by into an high tree that was shyed of all the boughes, and made smooth: but there was hee not preserued from his venemous enemies, which assaulted him, creeping vpp into the tree, till they had eaten him to the bones that he died, his name was Scifillus Elker her (that is) long legge.

An. reg. 28.

1182

Warnewell with the Pryory, nere vnto Cambridge, was fired and brent.

King Henry at Waltham, in presence of his nobles of the Realme did liberally assigne to the aid of the holic land 42000. marks of silver, and 500. marks of gold, which was worth in money 47333. pound, 6. shillings, 8. pence. This being done, he went ouer into Normandie, at which time also Henry, duke of Saronie,

Saronie, the kings sonne in law, was by the Emperoz banished, and came in to Normandie to the king, and brought with him the Dutchesse, and his two sonnes Henry and Otho, and the king receiving them, did liberally finde them all things necessary for their maintenance. *H.* Henry remaining in Normandie, made his Testament, giving amongst other Legacies, much to houses of Religion. Also to the marriage of poore maides of England, he gave 300. marks. To the marriage of poore maides in Normandy, 100. markes, and to the like in Angew, 100. markes. *An. reg. 29.*

King Henry the father kept his Christmas at Cane in Normandy, with his three sonnes, King Henry the yonger, Richard Earle of Poitou, and Geoffrey earle of Byspaine: there was also Henry Duke of Saronie, with his wife and their children, the Archbishops of Canterbury and Bolaine, with other bishops, earles and barons in great number. Here would *H.* Henry the father, that his sonne Henry the young king, should have received homage of his brethren, Richard earle of Poitou, and Geoffrey earle of Byspaine, whereunto the earle of Byspaine did not stay to graunt, but the Earle of Poitou bitterly refused to doe it, saying it was not convenient so long as their father lived, to acknowledge any superiouritie to his brother: for as the fathers inheritance was due to the eldest sonne, so he had to claime the lands which belonged to his mother. This deniall much offended his brother the young king, whereupon Richard departed from the Court in great displeasure, and coming into Poitou, he began to fortifie his Castles, that he might be in a readinesse to stand at defence for his safeguard, if his father or brethren should come to pursue him. But not long after, king Henry the sonne, by counsell of his father followed him, being also encouraged thereunto by the earles and Barons of Poitou, which for the sharpe and cruell government of earle Richard hated him. And shortly after commeth their brother Geoffrey with a great armie in aide of his brother the young king, insomuch that earle Richard not knowing how to shift the present danger, sent to his father for aide. Who being sorry to see such unnaturall dealing amongst his sonnes, gathered an armie, and came forthward, and did so much, that all the three sonnes came to Angeres, and there swore to be obedient to their fathers will. Whereupon a day was appointed them to meete at Wyzable. In the meane while, king Henry the sonne obtained licence of his father to goe vnto Limongs, vnder pretence that hee might there labour to reduce both his brother Geoffrey, and the Barons of Guyen to quietnesse, but all was dissembling, so that when their father followed with an armie, and came to Limongs in steed of receiving him with honour, they shot at him, so y<sup>e</sup> they pierced through his uppermost armour, &c. At length, when *H.* Henry the yonger, and his brother Geoffrey had done against their father what they could, & yet could not obtaine their purpose, for that their power was far incomparable to their wills, *H.* Henry the yonger, through indignation and displeasure, fel into a grieuous sickness, in a villiage called Partell, not far from Limongs, where his father lay at siege. At the first he was taken with an extreme feauer, and after followed a sure, where through perceiving himselfe in danger of death, he sent to his father, confessing his trespasses, requir-  
ing

King Henry the  
younger decea-  
sed.

An. reg. 30.  
1184

ring him of forgiveness, and also to come to him, but the father fearing to com-  
mit himself into the hands of such ungracious persons, as were about his son,  
refused to come at him, sending him his ring in token of his blessing, and as it  
were a pledge or witness, to signify that hee had forgiven him. The young  
king receiving it with great humilitie kissed it, and so ended his life, without  
issue. Thus was the disobedient child cut off, as it had bene a weavers thread,  
at the age of 28. yeres, his body being wound in those linnen clothes, that at  
his coronation were imbued with holie Crisme, hee was roialite buried at  
Roane, in the Cathedral Church.

King Henry returned into Englande, and sent manie men of warre into  
Wales, for the Welshmen emboldened by the kings absence, had broken forth  
and slaine manie Englishmen.

Glaffenbury  
brent.

The Abbey of Glaffenbury was bent, with the whole Towne and Church  
of Saint Iulian.

An. reg. 31.  
1185

Heraclius the  
Patriarke.  
Geraul. Dorob.

Heraclius Patriarch of Jerusalem came to king Henry, desiring him of aid  
against the Turks, but the king because of the crueltie of his sons, was coun-  
selled not to leaue his dominions in hazard, and to go so far off: therefore hee  
promised the Patriarke 50000. marks of silver.

New Temple.

This Patriarke dedicated the church of the new temple, then first builded,  
in the West part of London, by the knights Templars in England, he also de-  
dicated the Priorie of S. Iohn of Jerusalem by Smithfield.

John the kings  
son, Lord of  
Ireland.  
Ypodigma.

King Henry sent his sonne Iohn into Ireland, that he might be made Lord  
thereof. The Pope sent him a Crowne of Peacocks feathers, bzarded with  
Golde.

This yere died Hugh Mortimere founder of Wigmore Abbey. M. Elianor  
at the suit of the Archbyschop of Canterburie was released out of prison in the  
which she had remained almost xii. yeres.

Richard Archbyschop of Canterbury, deceased at Hawling, in the Dioces of  
Rocheester, then he had late xi. yeres.

The Emperesse  
deceased.  
House of Glar.  
saith, she deca-  
sed at Roane,  
in anno. 1167.  
and was buried  
in the Monaste-  
ry of Becca in  
Normandy.

Mawde the Emperesse, mother to H. Henry the second deceased, she founded  
the Abbey of Bordesley, and was buried at Reading, with this Epitaph.

*Ortu magna, viro maior, sed maxima partu,  
Hic iacet Henrici filia, sponsa, parens.*

The daughter, spouse, and Parente ke, of Henry lyeth here,  
Great of parentage, higher by marriage, most high by childbirth deere.

An. reg. 32  
1186

Geffrey Earle  
of Bytaine  
died.  
Giral. Cam.  
Mathew Paris.  
Reg. Houed.  
Iohn Textor.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Danfront in Normandy, and shortly af-  
ter, came to a communication with the king of France, at the which time hee  
toke a solemne oth, that he would deliuer the Ladie Alice, the king of France  
his sister (whome he had yet in his custodie) vnto his son Richard earle of Poyn-  
told in marriage.

Geffrey earle of Bytaine the kings son of England, died at Paris, about the  
beginning of August, and was there buried. He left issue 2. daughters which he  
had by Constance (daughter to Conan earle of Bytaine) who also at the time of  
his death was great with child, and after brought forth a son named Arthur.



A great earthquake threwo downe many buildinges, amongst the which the Cathedrall Church of Lincolne was rent in peces the 25. of Aprill.

The Cathedrall Church of Chichester, and all the whole citie was bzrent the 20. of October: king Henry gaue Constance, Countesse of Byrtain, mother of Arthur, to Ranulph earle of Chester to be his wife.

Chichester bzrent.

Þære into Orfoerde in Suffolke, certaine fishers of the sea toke in their nettes a fish hauing the shape of a man in all pointes, which fish was kept by Bartlemew de Glaunvile, Custos of the Castell of Orfoerde, in the same Castell, by the space of six monethes and moze for a wonder: he spake not a word. All manner of meates he gladlie did eate, but most greedilie rawe fish, after he had crused out all the moisture. Oftentimes he was brought to the Church, where he shewed no tokens of adozation. At length when hee was not wel liked to, he stalle away to the sea, and neuer after appeared.

An. reg. 33.

1187

A fish like a man.  
Ralph. Cogshali.  
Monument in  
Colechester.

Saladine chiefe prince of the Saracenes won a great battell against the christians, and toke Guido king of Jerusalem with the Crosse that Christ died on, and all the christians were either slaine or taken. There escaped among other, Theodoricus Agastus of the knights Templar, notwithstanding 230. of his brethren were beheaded, that had been taken prisoners: besides 40. that were slaine. The city of Jerusalem was taken, by composition euerie man to giue ten besants, euery woman v. euery child i. All the rest to the number of 14000. men and women became subiect to perpetuall bondage.

Knights Templar. slaine, and beheaded.

The kings of England and of France met betwixt Gisors and Tye, where they toke on them the Crosse, and diuers other with them. The king of England landing at Winchelsea, hasted towards Portsmouth, where at Sedington, about eight or ten miles from Portsmouth he held a Parliament, about the voyage into the holie lande, where manie Articles concerning that voyage were concluded, and the whole Realme troubled with paying of tithes toward that voyage. The Christians were appoynted to paie about thyscore and x. thousand pounde, and the Jewes thyscore thousand, without any delay: but by meanes of a discord that fell betwixt the two kings, that voyage was staied.

An. reg. 34.

1188

Parliament at Sedington.  
Richard Southwell.  
Roger Houeden.  
Gual. couen.

The Towne of Beuerley, with the Church of Saynt Iohn there, was bzrent the twentieth of September.

Beuerley bzrent.

An. reg. 35.

Gerusalem.

1189

The kings of England and of France, with Richard earle of Poystow, the Legate, and the archbishops of Canterbury, Roane, Rhenes, and Burges, met at Pantis the ninth day of June. There Philip the French king required, that his sister which had bene kept in England two and twentie yeres, might be restored vnto earle Richard as his wife, and earle Richard desired the same, but king Henry denied this request, and so they departed asunder, and got them to armour. The French king, and Earle Richard pursued the king of England so hart, that he was forced to yeld to al the requests, as wel of the French king, as of his sonne Richard. This was done at Gisors, and so departing came to Agai. When all matters were accorded, as is aforesaid, betwene the two kings of England and of France, the king of Englande required of the king of France to haue all the names deliuered him in writing, which had promised to take part against him, and were ioined as confederates with the king of

Lodouicus Vives  
Death of king  
Henry the 2.  
Richard canbr.

sa. Henry cur-  
seth himselke  
and his sonnes.

Monasteries  
founded by H.  
Henry.

Issue of king  
Henry.

Roger Wind.

France, and earle Richard, which request was granted, and when the roble was presented vnto him, he found his sonne Iohn the first person that was named in the register, wherewith he was so sore troubled, and disquieted in his minde, that comming to Chinon, he felt such griefe hereof, that he cursed euen the very day in which he was borne, and gaue his sonnes Gods curse and his, the which he would neuer release, although he was admonished to do it by manie Bishops, and religious persons. Whereupon being brought to such extremity as ye haue heard, he was taken with a grievous sicknesse, which bringing him to bitter desperation of returning to health, he finally departed this life on the 6 day of July, in the yere 1189. and the 61. of his age, when he had reigned 34 yeres, 7. moneths lacking 11. daies, and was buried at Founteuerard in a monasterie of Nunnes, which he had founded. He had also founded the Priories of Stanley, of S. Martin in Dover, and of Basingwarke, he made of an olde Colledge of secular Chanons, an Abbey of regular Chanons at Waltham in Essex. He builded many Castles in England, and he beganne the stone brydge over the river of Thames at London. Hee left in his treasure more then a hundred thousand markes.

He had issue by Elianor his wiue, William that died young, Henry that was crowned king, and died before his father, Richard that reigned next after him, Geoffrey Duke of Brytaine, that died before him (but left issue Arthur and Elianor) and Iohn that after the death of his brother Richard, toke on him the kingdom, disheriting his nephewes Arthur and Elianor the true heires: daughters he had Matilde, married to the Duke of Saxonie, Helene Quene of Castile, and Ioane Quene of Spaine.

This king, when he was carried forth to be buried, was first apparelled in his princely robes, hauing his crowne on his head, gloues on his hands, and shoes on his feet, wrought with golde spurs on his heeles, a ring of gold on his finger, a scepter in his hand, and a sword by his side, and so was laid covered, hauing a pleasant countenance, which when it was told to his sonne Richard, hee came with all speede, to see him, and as sone as hee came nere him, the blood gushed out of the nose of the dead corpes in great plentie, euen as if the spirite of the dead king had disdained, and abhorred the presence of him, who was thought to be the chiefe cause of his death, which thing caused the said Richard to weepe bitterly, and he caused his fathers bodie to be honourably buried at Founteuerard as is afore said.

## King Richard Cueur de Lion.

An. reg. 1.



Richard the first borne at Oxford, for his balsantnes surnamed Cueur de Lion, or with the lions heart, the third son of Henry the second, began his raigne the sixth day of July, in the yere of our Lord 1189. at the age of 35. yeres.

He was bigge of stature, with a merrie countenance. To his

his souldiers fauourable : bountifull to his friends : to strangers a grieuous enemy : hard to be pleased : desirous of warre : abhorring idleness.

Elianor the olde Queene, mother to Duke Richard, who at the commandment of her husband, had bene long kept in prison, was set at libertie. And then she with the Lordes of the Realme abode the kings comming at Winchester, where Geoffrey Ridle the proud Bishop of Ely fell sicke, and departed this life in estate, leauing in his coffers great treasure, to wit, 3060. markes of silver, and 205. markes in gold, which was bestowed on the new kings coronation, for the bishops soule.

Lib. III.  
Bishop of Ely  
deceased.

Duke Richard hauing receiued Adelisa, or Alice his wife, vpon suspicion that she had bene dishonested whiles she was in his fathers custodie, sent her home with her Dowrie, hauing concluded a marriage with Ladie Berengaria, daughter to Geruas king of Navarre, he returned into England, and landed at Southampton the twelfth of August, and on the fourteenth was receiued into Winchester, with him also came his brother Iohn, vnto whome hee gaue the Earldomes of Hereford, of Cornwall, Dorset, Summerset, Nottingham, Derby, and Lancaster, with the Castles of Warleborough, and Ludgershall, with the forrest, and the appurtenances, the honors of Wallingford, Tickhill, and Epe, to the value of foure thousand markes by yere. Hee also gaue him in marriage with Isabel his second wife, daughter to Robert Earle of Gloucester, the Earldome of Gloucester, although Baldwin Archbishoppe of Canterbury forbade the marriage, because they were Cousins in the third degree of consanguinitie. To Robert earle of Leicester, he restored all his lands, which had bene taken from him. He came to London, and on the thirde of September, was crowned at Westminster, by the hands of Baldwin Archbishop of Canterburie.

John Earle  
of Hereford.

He commanded that no Jewes nor women should be at his Coronation, for feare of enchantments which were wont to be practised : for breaking of which commandement, many Jewes were slain the same day. For the Jewes dwelling about London, and other partes of the Realme, being there assembled, meaning to honour the same Coronation with their presence, and to present to the king some honorable gifte, one of them was stricken by a Christian, who alleadged the kings commandement to keepe them backe, which some of the vnruely people perceiving, supposing it had bene the kings commandement, fell vpon the Jewes with staves, bats, and stones, beate them to their houses, and after assailing their houses, set them on fire, and burnt them in their houses, or slew them at their comming out.

The Archbishoppe of Canterburie being sore offended with Earle Iohn the kings brother, for taking to wife Isabel Countesse of Gloucester, his cousin in the thirde degree, wrote a threatening letter to the same Iohn, commaunding him not to touch the virgine, and to appeare at a peremptorie day before him to answer the matter. The 15. of December at Wipwell, in presence of the king, the Archbishop and prelates were elected, Geoffrey de Lucy to the see of Winchester, Richard Archdeacon of Ely, the kings treasurer, to the see of London, Hubert Walter to Salisbury, William Longshampe, the kings

Chaw

Ro. Housden.

Chancellor to Cly, and Geoffrey the B. ballard brother, to the sea of Porke, B. Richard gaue, or rather solde, the Castles of Berwik and Hokesburgh to the Scottish B. for the summe of 100. marks esserling: he also sold to Hugo de Puteaco B. of Durham, his own prouince for a great piece of mony, & created him earle of the same, and then said in game, I am a wonderous craftie man, I haue made a new earle of an old bishop. He sold the Priory of Conentrie, to Hugh Bishop of Chester, for 100. marks, which Hugh with a power of armed men, inuaded the Priorie, chased the Prio: away, brake the Monkes, lamed some, cast some into prison, and spoyling the other, byzou the mabwaite, bzake the butches of the Church, bzent their Charters and priuiledges.

The king also sained to haue lost his signet, and made a new, and then caused to be proclaimed, that who so euer would safely enioy those thinges which before time they had enuoyed, should come to the new seale, threby it came to passe, that many which could not finde him in England, went ouer sea to finde with him at his pleasure.

John Maior.  
Outlawes in  
England.

In this time were many robbers and out-lawes, among the which, Robert Hood, and little John, renowned theues, continued in woods, dispoyning and robbing the goods of the rich. They killed none but such as would inuade them, or by resistance for their owne defence.

The saide Robert entertained an hundred tall men, and good archers, with such spoiles and thesses as he got, vpon whome foure hundred (were they neuer so strong,) durst not glue the onset. He suffered no woman to be oppressed, violated, or otherwise molested: poze mens goods hee spared, abundantlie relieuing them with that, which by thesse hee gotte from Abbeies & the houses of riche Carles: whome Maior blameth for his rapine and theft: but of all thesses hee affirmeth him to bee the Prince, and the most gentle thesse.

1190  
Gouernour of  
England  
William Bl.  
hop of Cly.  
B. Rich tooke  
his voiage ouer  
to Ierusalem.  
Genasius.  
Ypodigma.

King Richard betooke the guiding of this lande to William Longshamp Bishop of Cly, Chancellor of England, and the foure and twentieth day of February, he toke his scrippe and staffe at Canterbury, and the 6. of March toke the Sea at Dover, and transported ouer.

The second of Iuly the two kings of England and of France met at Tow:ers, and from thence set forward on their iourney towards Ierusalem.

The Towne of Spawling in Kent with the Runnery was consumed with fire.

Jewes slue  
themselues.

The Jewes in the townes of Norwich, Saint Edmundesburie, Lincoln, Stamfords faire, and Linne, were robbed and spoyled. And at Porke to the number of 500. besides women and children, entred a towne of the castle, which the people assailing, the Jewes profered money to be in safety of their liues, but the Christians would not take it: whereupon their men of law said to them, it is better for vs to die for our lawe, then to fall into the hands of our enemies: and they all agreeing to that Counsell, cutte the throates of their wiues and children, and cast them ouer the walles on the Christians heads: the rest due they locked vp in the kinges lodging, and burnt both the house and themselves.

Geoffrey



Geffrey Archbifhoppe of Dorke, returning from Rome, and now consecrated, arrived at Dover with his traine, whome Mathew de Clare by the commaundement of the kinges Chanceliour, entring with violence into the Church of Saint Martins, dyew from the Altar, and so caried him to prison. Baldwin Archbifhoppe of Canterbury deceased at the Siege of Acres, and was there buried.

William Bifhop of Ely, builded the pfter wall about the Tower of London, and caused a deepe ditch to be made about the same, thinking hee coulde have caused the river of Thamis to go round about it, but hee bestowed great cost in vaine.

King Richard subdued the Ile of Cypzus, and then toyning his power with Philip the French kinges in Asia conquered Acon, where there grew betwene the two kings a grievous displeasure: for which cause Philippe himselfe departed thence, and comming into France, invaded the Countrie of Normandie.

John brother to king Richard, tooke on him the kingdome of England in his brothers absence. He raised powers of men and with small adoe won the Castles of Nottingham and Tickhill.

Robert Earle of Leicester died in his journey to Hierusalem.

King Richard restored to the Christians the city of Joppa, and in many battels put the Turkes to great sorow.

The bones of the most famous king of Bytaine, Arthur, were founde at Glaffenburie, in a goodly olde Sepulchre, about the which stood two pillars, in which were letters written, which, by reason of the great barbarousnesse of the language, and the foulennesse, no bodie could reade: upon the sepulture was a croffe of lead, whereon was written, Here lyeth the noble king of Bytaines Arthur.

Hugh Bifhop of Lincolne, came to the Abbey of Runnes called Godstow, betwene Orford and Woodstock, and when he had entred the church to pray, he saw a tombe in the middle of the quire, covered with a pall of silke, & set about with lightes of ware. And demanding whose tombe it was, hee was answered, that it was the tombe of Rosamonde, that was sometime Leman to Henry the second of that name, king of England, who for the loue of her had done much good to that Church. Then quoth the Bifhop, take out of this place the harlot, and bury her without the Church, least Christian Religion should grow in contempt, and to the ende that through example of her, other women being made afraid, may beware, and keepe themselves from unlawfull and aduoutous company with men.

William Bifhop of Ely, did commonly ride with 500. horses, and grieved Abbeyes by meane of his lodging with them: he withstood John the Kings brother, who said, he wist not if his brother Richard were alive or not. To whome the Bifhop answered, if King Richard be yet living, it were vntruth to take from him the Crowne. If he be dead, Arthur the elder brothers sonne, must enioie the same.

King Richard exchanged Cypzus, with Guy of Lefingham, for the Kingdome.

Archbishop of  
Dorke drawn  
from the Altar  
to prison.  
Ralph, Cogshall.

An. reg. 2.  
W. Dunthorne.  
A ditch made  
about the tower  
of London  
Rich Southwell,  
Mathew Paris,  
Rog. Houed,  
Galfred. Vinifal.

Arbor, successions.  
John the kings  
younger brother  
disrupts the  
kingdome.

1191  
The bones of  
Arthur the  
Bytaine found

Honorable buriall forbidden  
to aduoutous women.

An. reg. 3.

John the kings  
brother rebelled.

1192

Ex annalib. Elic.  
Vitz G. Iango.  
Cam.  
Ro. Houeden.  
The byshop put  
to his bylles.  
Genial. Dorob.

dome of Hierusalem: therefore the king of Englande a long time after, was called king of Hierusalem.

The Byshoppe of Ely Legate to the Pope, Chancellour of Englande, and Governour of the Realme, was forced to take the Tower of London for his refuge, wherein Earle Iohn besieged him, at length the Byshoppe getting licence to depart, went to Dover, but hee was there forced to sweare that hee woulde not departe the Realme: yet beeing in a marvellous disquietnesse of mind, he put off his mans apparrell, and put on womans, meaning soe to escape, whilst hee goethe bype and doونه on the shoze, bearing a Webbe of clothe on his arme as though hee woulde sell it, still waiting for a ship, a sort of women pulled off his kerchiefe, and thyete him to the grounde, and after beate him, and byelwe him along the sandes, whereupon greate crye breeing made, the Burgesse ranne, and with much ado, gotte him from among them, and kept him streightlie till he had obtained licence to depart the Realme.

An. reg. 4.

Byshop at Crux  
Roisia, or Rois-  
font.

Then the Archbyshop of Roane, with the consent of earle Iohn, toke upon him the rule of the law, as Vicechancellour.

A certaine Ladie named Roisia, daughter to Paine Peuerell, or Countesse of Norfolke (as shee might bee both) hauing in the ratgne of king Stephen, raysed a stone Crosse in the kings high waie, on the North limites, by the which hartfordshire soyreth on Cambridg shire, which Crosse was then called Crux Roisia of Roisia. Polwe Eustachius de Marke Knight, Lorde of Arceles about this time, founded thereby a Priorie in honour of God and Saint Thomas, for Chanons Regular. After which time, there were manie houses built, by meanes whereof the Towne beganne to rise, and by little and little to encrease, so that in place of Crux Roisia, it is called the Towne of Roisia, or Rospowne. Unto the which king Richard graunted a faire, and a market, with other Liberties. This Priorie was since renewed, and augmented by Radulph de Runcesser, and other: so that at the suppression, the same was valued at 80. pounds, sixtene shillings. There was an hospitall of S. Iohn, and S. James, Apostles, also suppressed and valued but at 5. li. 6. s. 10. pence.

1193

An. reg. 5.  
Richard taken  
prisoner.

King Richard having knowledge that Philip of France invaded Normandie, and that Iohn his brother had made himselfe king of England, made peace with the Saladine for thre yeres, and with a small company returning homeward, was taken prisoner by Leopold Duke of Austria, who brought him to Henry the Emperour, and there kept him in prison a yere and six moneths. He was enured for his basiancy, in that he had thewed more prouise of his prowesse, than all the other had.

Wolfan Lazius.  
King Richard  
of England  
bulld the  
wals of Vienna.

Wolfangus Lazius in his booke de Romano Imperio, affirmeth that Leopold of Austria, when he had taken king Richard, for so ne iniurie done to the house of Austria, he compelled him to build the wals about Vienna, the chiefest citie of Austria, the which wals within our memory defended all Germany from the inuasion of the Turke.

The rumour being spread that R. Richard was taken as ye haue heard, forthwith

with the French king and earle Iohn made a great conspiracy together, meaning to take the kingdom of England, hereupon a great number of Flemings were assembled at Witland, ready to come ouer, but their messengers being taken, their treason was betrayed.

Earle Iohn  
rebelled a-  
gainst king  
Richard.

Elianoꝝ the olde Duene caused the Sea Coastes to bee watched ouer against Flaunders, but notwithstanding Earle Iohn came secretly into Englande to raise the Welchmen and Scottes, but the king of Scottes would not aid him. The Welchmen in the partes about Kingstone and Windsoꝛe toke pꝛaies abroad.

The French king entred Normandie, founde small resistance, wan diuers townes, Gisors was deliuered to him, then he hastned towarde Roane, and besieged it, but through the great industry of Robert earle of Leicester, he profited little there, and so returned into France. Earle Iohn perceiving his treason was discovered, fortified his castles, and passed ouer into France, and joined with the French king.

King Richard sent for his mother and the archbishop of Roane to come vnto him to Almain, being now in great hope to be deliuered, & in the meane time the archbishop of Canterbury was made regent of England.

Ambassadors were sent from Philip king of France, and the like from earle Iohn to the Emperoz, offering great sums, vpon condition that king Richard might remaine still in prison, vntil the feast of S. Michael next comming, or els to deliuer him into their hands. The Emperoz shewed these letters to K. Richard, which gaue him into great dispaire of deliuerance.

The kings friends intreating for his deliuerance, his rancome was set at 100000. pound, to witte to the Emperour 100000. markes, to the Emperesse 30000. markes: and to the duke of Austrich 20000. marks: whereupon commandement was directed from the Kinges Iustices, that all Bishops, Prelates, Carles, Barons, Abbots, and Priors, should bying in the 4. part of their reuenues towarde the kings rancome, and besides this, the Cleargy brought in their golden and siluer chalices, and stored their trines, al which was coined into money.

The kings ran-  
some.  
Geruaf. Doro.  
Rad. Cogshall.

This imprisonment of king Richard was procured by Sauaracus Bishoppe of Bath and Glasseburie, to the intent to haue Glasseburie abbey, to be vntied to the seate of this Bishopricke, for confirmation whereof I thought good to set downe the beginning of the Certificate of Henry the thirde to the Pope in this sort.

Significauit Sanctitati nostræ Henricus Dei gratia, Rex Angliæ, quod cum Filius memoriz (rege Richardo auunculo suo in carcere in Alemania detento) sc. quondam Bathonijs Episc. per ipsum cuius carcere Dominus Rex tenebatur, Abbatiam Glaffen. &c.

The order of the Differencies did giue their woll for one peere, &c. all the money gathered for the kings rancome, to remaine in the custodie of Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Bishop of London, William earle of Arundell, Hameline earle of Waren, and the Mayor of London.

Mathew Paris.  
Reg. Houed.

The king was restored to libertie, the most part of his rancome being paid, and

Record. canon.

and pledges left for the residue. In the meane time letters were intercepted of Earle Iohn which hee had sent into England touching treason, one Adam of Saint Edmond Clearke, being sent by earle Iohn, to psonde that his Castle might be fortified against King Richard, came to London, and dined with Hubert Archbishop of Canterburie, where he bragged of Earle Iohns prosperitie, and familiaritie with the French king, for the which being suspected, he was after dinner apprehended by the Mares of London, who toke from him his letters, and deliuered them to the Archbishops of Canterburie, who on the next morrow called a Councell of the Earles and Barons, and shewed them the letters, whereupon they all consented that Earle Iohn should bee dispossessed of all his land in England, and that his Castles should be besieged. The same day the same Archbishop and Bishops excommunicated earle Iohn and al his fauourers, which troubled the peace of the kingdome. And forthwith the Archbishop besieged the Castle of Warleborough, which belonged to Earle Iohn, and toke it. After this he besieged Pottingham Castle.

1194  
Godfr. Vinifalt.  
Geru. Dorob.  
R. Richard the  
second time  
crowned.  
*An. reg. 6.*

The king taking ship at Antwerp, landed at Sandwich, on the 12. of March, shortly after he besieged the castle of Pottingham, and wan it, and after that the Castle of Ekehill, and then rode to Winchester, where hee was againe solemnly crowned on the xviij. of Aprill. After this he called into his hanes, all such things as hee had either giuen or solde by patentees or otherwise, by which meanes he got a great summe of money.

Robert Earle  
of Leicester ta-  
ken prisoner.

King Richard hearing that the king of France had besieged Mernais, hee toke the sea together with his mother Quene Elianor, on the tenth of Aprill, and transported ouer into Normandy, and arrived at Harflew with 100. ships fraught with men, horse, armour, &c. The king of France hearing hereof, plucked by his tents, lest the siege, and departed. King Richard herewith entering the French dominions, sent three bandes of Souldiours towarde Male Ruell, and went himselfe vnto Lochis, and besieged the Castle and wanne it: about the same time Robert Earle of Leicester issuing south of Roane in hope to worke somewhat, vnadvisedly in the landes of Hugh Gourney he fell within danger of his enemies, who toke him prisoner with oth'r of his company, king Richard wanne the strong castle of Taylebridge by surrender, hee wan by force the citie of Engolisme, and other holdes: at length a truce was taken for a time.

1195

King Richard being in Normandie kept his Christmas at Roane, whilst both the king of Englande and Fraunce were bent to trie their malice by dint of sword, there came messengers to eche of them from the Pope, exhorting them to peace, but they preuailed not, for as soon as the truce was ended, they got them to the field, King Richard drawing toward Ilesdune, a towne in the confines of Burie, from thence he went to Bassen, and toke the Castle there, then went hee to a towne called Pouen court, this he besieged and it was yielded.

In the meane time the k. of France besieged Albramarle, whereupon R. Richard came to raise the siege, & there was a sharpe fight, but the English men wearie with trauaile of their iourney, and being rashly entred into the battel, were



were not able to endure the French mens violence, and so not without great losse, were constrained to retye.

King Richard sent messengers to the Pope, complaining vpon the Duke of Austrich, for misusing of him and his, as they came by distresse of weather through his Countrey: whereupon the Pope ercommunicated the Duke, and entreated him to release the covenants that hee constrained the king to make and to send home the pledges: but the duke refused this order, contemning the Popes authoritie, who shortly after hauing broken his legge, and in extreame anguish ended his life, and was kept vnburied till his sonne had released the English pledges that lay in hostage for the money behind of Ia. Richards raunsome, and further sware to stand to the iudgement of the Church for that offence of his Father.

Thus were the pledges restored, and the residue of the money behind released, which thing to king Richard was both pleasant and profitable, for taking occasion thereof to amend his former life, into a better order, he put away his Concubines, and toke him to his wife, whom of long time he had not known. Moreover, the Emperour gaue to the Cisterian Monkes, 3000. markes of silver, parcell of king Richards raunsome to make silver censars in euery church of that order, but the Abbots refused the gift, being a portion of so vngodly and wrongfull gaine, at which thing king Richard greatly marvelled at the first, but after commended the Abbots in their doings chiefly for shewing that they were boide of the accustomed gradineesse, that men noted to haue bene in them.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne gaue to the king a thousand markes for his mantle of Sables, which his predecessors were wont yarely to haue giuen them by the king. *An. reg. 7.*

Robert Earle of Leicester, offered to the king of France for his raunsome a thousand markes sterling, and to quit claime to him and his helres for ever, the right which he had to the castle of Basay, with the appurtenances, but for that they were still continued, there was no answer giuen. *Starling money.*

King Richard hauing refreshed his souldiours, went to Milligto, and by assault tooke it at the first brunt, and made it leuell with the ground. After this, there was a motion made for peace betwixt the two kings, being now wearied with long wars. Whereof, when Earle Iohn was aduertised, hee beganne to doubt, lest by agreement made, he might be betrayed by the king of France, vpon covenants passing betwene them, and therefore determined to commit his whole safety to his naturall brother: whereupon comming to king Richard hee besought him of pardon for his offences, and though hee had not dealt brotherly towards him, yet, that he would brotherly forgieue him his rebellious trespass. Upon whose submission, and by the intreating of Elianor his mother and other, in the ende king Richard did not onely pardon him his life, but vpon his othe, restored him to the Earldomes of Poitouaigne in Normandie, and Gloucester in England, with the honor of Eye, the Castles except, and in recompence of his other earldomes, his brother gaue him yarely 8000. pounds of Angiow money. *Submission to Earle Joh.*

King

King Richard pardoned Hugh Nouant bishop of Couentry, and restored him to his bishopricke for the summe of 5000. markes of silver; but Robert Nouant his brother, died in the kings prison at Douer.

Set with the  
beard.  
Roger Howeden.  
W. Parnus.  
John Textor.  
Gernaf. Dorob.  
Cant. Record.  
Gualter Cosen.

William Fitz Osbert a citizen of London; poore in degré, euill fauoured of Chape, but yet verie eloquent, moued the common people to seke libertie and freedom, and not to be subiect to the rich and mighty, by which meanes he drew to him many great companies, and with all his power defended his poore mens cause against the rich. 52000 Londoners he allured to him to be at his deuotion and commandeiment.

1196

The king being warned of this tumult, commanded him to cease from these attempts, but the people still followed him, as they before had done: he made to them Orations, taking for his theme this sentence, *Haerietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus saluatoris*, which is to say, Ye shall drawe in ioy, waters out of the welles of your Sauour. And to this he added: I am (saide he) the Sauour of poore men, y<sup>e</sup> be poore, and haue assayed long the hard hands of rich men. I cleaue y<sup>e</sup> wholesome water forth of my welles, and that with this, for the time of your visitation is come. This William was commanded to appeare before the kings counsel to answer for himselfe in such causes as should be laid against him, where he appeared, but with such a multitude of people, that the Lordes were afraid, and remitted him with pleasant wordes for the time, appointing some priuily when he was alone to apprehend him. He toke the steeple of Bolve Church in Cheape, and fortified it with munition and vidualles. The archbishop of Canterbury then being at London with other Iustices sent to him, and willed him to come forth of the church: he should haue his life saued: but hee refused to come forth, wherefore the Archbishop talking with the citizens of London called together a great number of armed men least anie surce should be made.

Ralph Higden.

The Saturday therefore being the Passion Sunday euen, the steeple and church of Bolve were assaulted, and William with his complices taken, but not without bloodshed, for he was forced by fire & smoke to forsake the church: he was brought to the Archbishop in the Towre, where he was by the Judges condemned, and by the héeles drawne from thence to a place called the Elmes, and there hanged with nine of his fellowes. Where because his fauourers came not to deliuer him, he forsoke Maries sonne (as he termed him) and called the diuell to helpe and deliuer him.

A false accuser  
of his elder bro-  
ther, in the end  
was hanged:  
God amend o<sup>r</sup>  
shortly send,  
such an end to  
such false be-  
lievers.

This counterfeit friend to the poore, who named himselfe to be the sauiour, perswading them against the rich, was a man of an euill life, a murderer, who slew a man with his owne hands: a fornicator, who polluted Bolve Church with his concubine: and amongst other his detestable facts, one that had falsely accused his elder brother of treason, which elder brother had in his youth brought him vp in learning, and done many things for his preferment. Yet after the death of this wicked malefactor, the simple people honored him as a Martyr, inso much that they steale away the gibbet whereon he was hanged, and pared away the earth, that was be-bledd with his blood, and kept the same as holy reliques, to heale sicke men.

King

King Richard granted licence vnto Philip his chaplaine late made Bpshop of Durham, to coine money in his Citty of Durham, which liberty none of his predecessours had enioyed of long time befoze. Robert earle of Leicester gaue Philip king of France two thousand markes of siluer, and the quite claime of his Castle of Passley, for his liberty, and to be cleane released.

An. reg. 8.  
Roger Hoveden.

Philip king of France, besieged Albemarle, and at length won it, and raised it downe to the ground, and king Richard gaue vnto him three thousand markes of siluer, for the rancome of his men of armes, and other taken in that fortesse. After this the king of France won Poncourt, and earle Iohn toke the castle of Camages.

Reg. Hoved.

About the same time king Richard gaue vnto his nephew Otho, the Earle, dome of Poitou. Also, as the countesse of Bytaine, the mother of Duke Arthur came into Normandie, to haue spoken with king Richard, Reinulph earle of Chester, her husband meeting her at Pontowson, toke her as prisoner, and shut her vp within his Castle of S. James de Beuinemar: and when her son Arthur could not find meanes to deliuer her out of captiuitie, hee ioined with the French king, and made great hauocke in the lands of his vncke king Richard. Whereupon the king gathered a mightie power, and invaded Bytaine, cruelly wasting that countrey.

This yere died William Earle of Salisbury, the sonne of Earle Patrike, whose daughter and heire, king Richard gaue in marriage together with the Earle dome of Salisbury vnto his base brother surnamed William Longespe.

Et Longespe  
base sonne to  
Henry the se.  
cond.

The Welshmen brake forth and did much hurt by spoiling of the marches. The Archbishop of Canterbury calling together an army hasted thither, besieged the castle of Dolie, and toke it, and chased the enemies, established peace, and returned.

1197

Rise ap Griffeth the Welch king departed this life: after whose departure there fell discord betwix his sonnes for the succession, till Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury went to the marches of that countrey, and made an agreement betwixt them.

King Richard and the Earle of Flanders confedered together. The French king entring vnwarily into Flanders, was intercepted and taken by the erle of Flanders, but giuing pledges vpon couenant to make peace, he was suffered to depart.

An. reg. 9.

The eight day of September they met at Lille, where, by mediation of the Archbishop of Canterbury, they toke a truce. The Archbishop of Roan returned from Rome, where he had complained on king Richard for taking from him a plot of ground, whereon he builded a strong Castle, but at the request of the archbishop of Canterbury, the king gaue him in recompence, the towne of Depe.

The Welshmen on the marches toke booties, and did much hurt, but Hubert the archbishop of Canterbury being lord chiefe Justice, lieutenant, or warden of England, found meanes to resist them, so that they being fought with, were overthowen, and 5000. of them slaine. The Archbishop hauing got this victorie, returneth to London, where calling together a great number of the

1198  
Gernafius.

nobles

nobles of the land, he resigned his office of being head ruler, in whose place the Lord Geoffrey fitz Peter succeeded in August.

*An. reg. 10.*

100. acres of  
land to an hide.

Mathew Paris.

Colledge at  
Lambeth.

1199

King Richard  
wounded to  
death.  
Paulus Aemilius.  
Guale. Couen.  
Ralph. Cogshall.  
Gaufrid. Vinefale.

King Richard took of every Carucate plough land, or hide of land through Englond five shillings. Commissioners were appointed in every shire, with the assistance of the Sherriffes, to see the same assessed, and rated after 100. acres of land to a hide, according to the custome. The French king was intercepted by the army of king Richard, so that with much ado he escaped into Cyprus, his army was dispersed, and almost an hundred knights taken, beside other common souldiours, without number. The Charters which the king had before made with his new seale were changed.

Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, through the procurement of the monkes of Canterburie, and by the commaundement of the Pope, brake downe even with the ground the Chappell or colledge at Lambeth which his predecessours had founded, and he had finished in the honour of Thomas Archbishop of Canterburie.

King Richard turned his army against the Barons of Poictow that rebelled against him, he set their cities and towne on fire, spoiled their country, & slew many of his aduersaries cruelly, at the last came to the dukedome of Aquitaine, and besieged the Castle of Chalme, and brought it to that, that they with in offered to yelde vppon conditions, but hee would not so receiue them, but would haue them by force: whereupon a certaine young man named Bertram de Gordon, standing on the castle wall, leuelled a quarell out of a crossbow, and smote him with a venoured dart in the left arme or shoulder: which stripe the king little regarded, but invading the castle, took it, and put the souldiours in prison. Of this wound aforesaid, he died the 6. of Aprill, in the yere of our Lord 1199. when hee had reigned 9. yeres, and 9. moneths, and was buried at Fonteueraud at his fathers seate, whom he confessed he had betrayed, his hart was buried at Roane, in testimonie of the love hee had euer borne vnto that citie, for the stedfast loyalty he had alwaies found in the citizens thereof, and his bowels at the foresaid Chalme.

## King Iohn.

*An. reg. 1.*



John Earle of Mortoun, and Lord of Ireland, aged 34. yeres, a person of an indifferent stature, but of melancholy complexion, after the decease of king Richard, took vnto him, and retained all the knights and souldiours which had serued his brother, he kept them in wages, and promised them large giftes. Whereouer, he sent Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, William Marshall, and Geoffrey fitz Peter chiefe Justice into England, to proclaim his peace to be kept amongst the rest of the Nobles of the Realme. These, when they came into England, caused all men to sweare to be true to Earle Iohn, and so went forward to Northampton, where they called together all those nobles,



bles, whome they doubted, and promised in the name of Earle Iohn, that hee shoulde reſſore vnto them, and to all men, their right: and vpon that condition they gaue to him their fidelities. Also they ſent worde by Eustace de Vefcy, to William king of Scots, that earle Iohn at his returne into England ſhould content him for all his right which hee claymed in England, and therefore willed him in the meane ſeaſon to be faithfull to the ſaid Earle, and to keepe his peace, which hee promiſed, by which meanes all ſtrife and debate in Englande was appeaſed.

Whileſt theſe things were a doing in England, earle Iohn went to Chinon where king Richards treaſure laie, which treaſure, with the Caſtle, was deliuered to him by Robert de Turnehame. But Thomas de Furneis deliuered vnto Archure Duke of Byſtaine, the citie and Caſtle of Angiers, for as well by him, as by all other the nobles and pères of the countreies of Angiew, Paine, and Turon, Archure was receiued as their ſoueraigne Lord. Moreover, Conſtancia mother to the ſaid Archure, deliuered him to the king of France at Turon: whom he ſent to Paris to be kept, and tooke into his hands all the Caſles and Cities that appertained to the ſaid Arthur: but Earle Iohn and Elianor his mother, came with a great army to the Citie of Paris, and won both it and the Caſtle, deſtroyed all the ſtone houſes there, and carried the citizens away captiues. This being done, Earle Iohn entring into the countrey of Anſow held his Caſſer at Beaufort, and on the morrow after, he ſent Quene Elianor and Marchadius vnto the Citie of Anſow, who with a warlike power ſpoyled it, and carried the citizens away captiues.

Earle Iohn  
tooke the kings  
treasure.

In which meane time earle Iohn came to Roan, and there by the miniſterie of Walter Archbiſhop of Roan, he was giſt with the ſword of the dukedome of Normandy, in the Cathedraſſall church, where the Archbiſhop before the high altar, did ſet a Crownet of golde vpon his head, artiſcially made with Roſes of golde, &c. Duke Iohn ſware vpon the holy Euangelists to defend the Church and liberties thereof, to ſee Juſtice miniſtered to the people, good lawes put in execution, and euill lawes ſuppreſſed.

Earle Iohn  
Duke of Normandy.

Then Iohn Duke of Aquitaine ſayled ouer into England, and arrived at Shorham on the ſixe and twentieth daie of Maie, and came to London on the Aſcenſion euen, where the Archbiſhops, Biſhops, Carles, Barons, and other being preſent, Hubert Archbiſhop of Canterbury ſtanding vp in the middell of them all, ſaid in effect as followeth:

Our diſcrete wiſedomes doe knowe (right honorable) that by moſt reaſon none ought to ſuccede in the kingdome, except by the vniuerſall conſent of the whole realme (praying for the grace of the holy gholt) he be choſen according to the excellencie of his qualities and behantour, by the example of the firſt appointed king Saul, whome our Lord appointed vnto his people, not being the ſon of any king, neither of the progeny of any king. Likewiſe, after him, he made David king, the ſonne of Iſhai, who was a ſtoute man, apt and mete for the worthy dignitie of a king, and that becauſe he was holy and humble, ſo that he which doth in ſuch ſort excel in prowelle all other in the kingdome ought to be choſen to gouerne the ſame: but if there be any of the kings linage that

Archbiſhop  
of  
Canterbury.

John Duke of  
Normandy &  
heir king of  
England.

doth excell other, we ought to be readie to elect and chose him. This I speake touching the noble Duke Iohn, brother to our late excellent king Richard now deceased, which had none bettre proceeding of his bodie. Which Duke Iohn appeareth plainly vnto vs, to be both wary and stout, whom the refoze beseeching the holy ghost of his grace, we doe with one consent elect and chose, as being both of the same worthines, and also of the same blood and kinde: that king Richard was of.

Roger Wend.

This archbishop indeede was a man of deepe vnderstanding, a singular pillar of stabilitie, and of incomparable wisdom, so that no man was so bold as to make any reasoning of the matter at that time, because they knowe well enough that he did not without cause define in such sort of this thing: wherefoze the Duke Iohn, and all other there present did accept of the choise, crying, *Vivat Rex*. But afterwards, the archbishop being demaunded, why he made this election, he answered, and said, that by certaine Oracles, and by the gift of propheticie, he was certified, that this Iohn should once take to himselfe the realme and crowne of England, and should bring the same into great confusion: wherefoze, to the end he should not haue so much occasion to bring these thinges to passe, he saide, that he was so to be elected to the kingdome, though the same by succession of inheritance belonged not to him, and so he set the crowne vpon his head, and annointed him king at Westminster in Saint Peters church, vpon the Ascension day, which was the five and twentieth day of Maye: he was swozne to loue the catholike church and ordinances thereof: to keepe and defend the same harmlesse from the inuasion of euill disposed persons: to disanull peruerse lawes, and erect good lawes, and according to the same to minister true iudgement throughout his kingdome.

Prophecy of  
king Iohn.

John Duke of  
Normandie  
crowned king  
of England.

The same day king Iohn inuested William Marshall with the sword of the earledome of Striguile, and Geoffrey fitz Peter with the earledome of Essex, and they serued that day at the table with their swordes girt to them. Also Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, was made Lord Chancellour of England.

States created.

Whilest these thinges were in doing in England, Philip king of France with an army, brake into Normandy, and toke the citie of Euerr, the towne of Argues, and diuers other places from the English, and passing forth into Spaine, recovered that countrey. Also the Bytaines, wanne the townes of Cozney, Butevant and Genfoline: they toke also the city of Angiers, &c. Which being signified to king Iohn, he went ouer into Normandy, where many submitted themselves to him: but a truce was taken betwixt the king of France and him, vntill the 26. of August. In the meane time, king Philip of France made Arthur Plantagenet duke of Bytaine, knight of the field, and receiued of him homage for Aniove, Boitiers, Turon, Maine, Bytaine, and Normandy: for the which the said king Philip promised by othe to aide him in reuerie thereof.

John Duke of  
France bound  
by othe to aide  
duke Arthur.

Price of wines.

King Iohn made a law, that no tunne of Rochell wine should be sold dearer then xx. shillings, of Aniove for xxiii. shillings, & of France xxv. shillings, and not aboue, vntill the same were of such principall goodnes, that some for their vse would giue xxvi. shillings liii. pence for the tun, and not aboue in any case.

A gallon (by retale) of Roshel wine to be sold for iiii. pence, the gallon of white wine not above vi. pence. It was also ordained, that in euery citie, towne and place where wine was sold to be sold, there should be xii. honest men sworn to haue regard that this assise should not be broken: and if that they found any Tintner that should sell any wine by small measures contrary to the same assise, his body should be attached by the Shriffe and detained in prison, till order was taken for his further punishment, and his goods seized to the kings use: and the like punishment was appointed for such as should sell by the tunne, hogthead, or otherwise, contrary to the assise.

Philip king of France, and Iohn king of England met betwixt the castles of Mtaplun, and Butenant, where they agreed upon a peace, that king Iohn should quite claime vnto the French king, and his heires for ever, all Milgeu, sin, Gisors, and other castles. Also king Iohn gaue in marriage with his nere Blanch, daughter to Alphonse, king of Castile, vnto Lewis, sonne and heire to Philip king of France, all the castles which the same Philip had taken in Poymandy, that is to say, Tienon, Dassep, Puery, and Bonancoxt, and many other cities, townes, castles, &c. besides to king Philip 30000. markes. King Philip then released Arthur to king Iohn, and receiued of him homage, for Brittanyne and Richmond, both kings swore to obserue this peace firme with their seale for ever.

I 200

Philip of France disineth duke Arthur to his enemy.

An. reg. 2.

A tere.

A tere of iiii. s.

euery plow land.

King Iohn hauing made peace beyond the seas, returneth into England, where he requireth an aide of his realme to pay the thirty thousand marks, and edict was made, that euery plow land should paie thre shillings, which troubled the land sore, considering the exchequer that went afore, which was for euery knights fee two marks, which before time was neuer but twenty shillings. King Iohn went ouer, and hauing paid his thirty thousand marks to the king of France, he was there by the hands of Helias Archbishop of Burdeaur, and the Bishops of Poitiers, and Scone, diuorced from his wife Isabell, daughter to Robert Earle of Gloucester, because of nearnesse of blood, as touching her in the third degree: And then he married Isabell daughter to Americ Earle of Angouleme; which Isabel before Hugh surnamed Brunc Earle of Marches had taken to wife.

King Iohn diuorced from Isabel his wife, married another Isabel.

This being done, King Iohn returned with his new wife, and crowned her Quene at Westminster on the eight of October. And the same day king Iohn commaunded Hugh Neuill chiefe forester, and the other foresters to warne all the Monkes of the Cisteriaun order throughout England, that from the Decretanes of Saint Michael, vnto the Quindem, they should remoue all their hoxses, their swine, and other cattell whatsoeuer off the forest ground: and if any were after found vpon the forest ground, they should be sold to the kings use. The monkes prouided for themselves, and patiently bare the kings displeasure.

The archbishop of Canterbury sent to all the Abbots of that order, aduising them to mete the king at Lincolne on the xv. of Nouember, that being together, by his helpe they might attempt to appease the kings mode, they did as they were willed. The archbishop counselled them, the nexte day to mete the

king without the city, and to humble themselves vnto him, but they thought not this to bee the best waie, lest those that rode before the king should abuse them.

King of Scots  
did homage to  
king Iohn.

The next day king Iohn talked with William king of Scots that was come to Lincolne, with Roeland Lord of Galloway, and many other noblemen, to doe homage to the king.

The next day the Archbishoppe moued the king in the matter touching the Abbots, but the king willed him not to bere his spirits, for he meant that day to be let blood.

On Sunday next following, the archbishop caused the abbots to come into the kings presence at masse time: wherupon, after the king had heard masse, and comming forth of the church, the Archbishop besought him to heare their sute, and then they falling downe at the kings seate, besought him to haue pity vpon them: the king commaunded one to bring the Abbots into his chamber, and he with the Archbishop, bishops, and Nobles went into the same chamber before them, where, when they had sate a while, the king rose vp, and went into an inner chamber, there to conferre with the noblemen, such as pleased him; and after comming forth, called for the archbishop and certaine other bishops, with whome he talked secretly: and after the Abbots being called, the king appointed the Archbishop to declare vnto them his pleasure, which was, that although the king had shewed himselfe in wordes to be offended with them, yet he neuer meant hurt to that order, and now had put away all rancour and malice towards them: herewith they fell downe on the ground, and gaue humble thanks to the king, and withall, the archbishop inferred, that the king requested them to forgive him: and the king herewith fell downe, watering his cheekes with teares, and they likewise at his seate. The Archbishop, after both partes were vp on their seate, said, that the king required, that by their intercession he might be made a brother in the chapter of the Cisteriaur, and that they would procure him to be admitted: Wherevpon, the king, he saide, minded to build a house of that order, that he might be had in memorie, and would be a patron and defender of their order. The Abbots being greatly reioiced, departed, praising God.

1201

King Iohn going into Ireland toke a great piece of money there, and returning into England, was crowned together, with his Quene at Canterbury on Easter day.

King Iohn with Isabel his Quene sailed into Normandie, fell in communication with Philip king of France, where they agreed so well, that they passed together into France, where king Iohn was honorably receiued at Saint Denys, and into Paris, &c.

An. reg. 3.  
Hugh Brune  
rebelled.

A nobleman of Aquitaine named Hugh Brune, rebelling against king Iohn invaded diuers parts of the prouince, because the king had maried the daughter of the Earle of Angoulesme, whome the said Brune had assied, and had in his custodie, wherefore they passed ouer, and restrained the rebelles from their attempts.

Prodigma.  
Tempests.

The sixe and twentieth of June there arose a cruel tempest of thunder, lightning,



ning, and haille, with a belement raine, that destroyed corne, castell, men, and houses, by burning them, &c.

The tenth of July, another tempest much like to the former hapned, so that the medowes could not be mowed, and the hay that was downe, was carried away by the outrageous course of waters that ouerslowed the ground, great numbers of fishes through the corruption of the waters died, manie bridges bozne downe, corne and hay carried away, and many men drowned, so that al men thought a new deluge had bene come.

King Iohn sharply warred vpon the Earle of March, Hugh Brune, and the earle of Que his brother, who being not able to resist, they complained to Philip king of France, as to their soueraigne and chiefe Lord, who sent oft times to king Iohn, mouing him to cease from vexing them, but that woulde not serue: wherefore he was sommoned by the nobles of France as duke of earle of Aquitaine and Anisw, to come vnto the court of the French king, and to stand to the iudgement of his peres, all which king Iohn denied: whereupon the same court adiudged him to be depriued of all his lands, which he of his predecessors helde of the king of France, &c.

King Philip forthwith assembled an army, and innaded the castle of Buteuant in Normandy, which Richard had builded, he rased it to the ground. He toke the land of Hugh Gorney, and all the Castles thereabout. He toke the Castle of Albemarle, with the countie of Que, and all the land to Arches, none resisting him. Also Arthur earle of Byptaine being made knight by the French king, whose yonger daughter he had affianced, he being but sirtene yeres old, went to Hugh Brune, and Geoffrey of Lucingham, and with two hundred and fiftie knightes, besieged the Castle of Pirable, in which Queene Elianor his Aunt was inclosed: but king Iohn came with a power, and deliuered his mother from danger. He toke there his Nephewe Arthure, William de Brawsa, Geoffrey de Lucingham, Hugh Brune, Andrew Caueny, Saluaricus de Mauleon, and diuers others.

Great thunder and lightning, with haille as bigge as hennies egges, &c.

The waters increased, and did much hurt in England: Arthur earle of Byptaine, from Falaise was brought to Roan, and put in the Tower vnder the custody of Robert de Veypont, where shortly after he was dispatched of his life, some say by the handes of his vncke Iohn.

The king of France innaded the castles of Normandy, toke Lille, Dandele, with the Castle, and the vale de Ruell, in the which were Robert fitz Walter, Sayer de Quincy, and manie other. Hee toke the strong Castle vpon Seine, builded by King Richard, which had bene valiantly kept by the constable of Chester.

Among many other that found themselves agreeded with the shamefull murder of duke Arthur, sonne to Geoffrey duke of Byptaine, king Iohns elder brothers sonne, and therefore rightfull heire to the crowne and realme of England, was Iohn Courcy the valiant conqueror, and earle of Ulster in Ireland: Which being brought to the kings eares, he cast the saide Courcy into the Tower of London. But the matter fell out hotter betwene the king of France

1202

Ralph Cogshall.  
An. reg. 4.

King Iohn  
sommoned to  
the French  
kings Court.

Arthur earle  
of Byptaine  
taken.

1203

Paulus Aemilius.  
Of Iohn de  
Courcy a valiant  
and hardy  
man.

and *h.* Iohn (as ye haue heard) so that the king of France bereft him of all the lands that he held in the fee of the Crowne of France, and among other matters, he sent hither a mighty man, who should try that quarrel with an English champion by combat: To undertake the which, the king moued Courcy, who stoutlie answered him, that in his quarrell, whose murderous vile minde, cowardlines, traiterous conditions, and tyrannicall gouernement deserued not the aduenture of losing one droppe of blood, hee woulde not fight one stroke, but for the honour of the realme, wherein many a good and honourable man liued, to his great griefe, he would willingly leopord his life, and cherefully accept the combat, yea with a gyant. But no harme was doone, for the French man, as soone as he sawe the mightie lims, and fierce countenance of Courcy, went awaie.

King Iohn doubting treason in his owne men, in December returned into England, where he gathered great aids of money.

1204.  
Rad. Cogshall.  
*An. reg. 6.*

Allerike de  
Here Earle of  
Oxford.

Elianor daughter to the earle of Poitiers, that had bene wife to Lewis king of France, and after to *h.* Henry the second of Engl. and departed this life, and was buried in Fontenerard.

King Iohn gaue to Allerike de Vere the earledome of Oxford, and made him earle, by girding him with the sword. King Iohn sent Ambassadors to treat a peace with the *h.* of France, but he, because the world went with him, would not agree in anye wise, except Arthur might be deliuered to him alive, or if hee were dead, he would haue his sister in marriage with all the lands on that side the Seas.

Normandie  
yielded to the  
French.

Shortly after he toke Falaise, Caen, and so forth all the countrey to Barflos, Charburgh, and Dunfront, Roane, Wernoll, and Arches: and so prouide Normandy, Anisow, Byptaine, Maine, Poitow, and Borsaigne, were within a short time deliuered to king Philip.

Lib. Bernewell.

King Iohn married Iane his bastard daughter to Lewlin prince of Wales, and gaue with her the Castell and Lordship of Clingmore, in the Marches of Southwales.

Robert Fitz Parnell earle of Leicester died without issue, and then Simon de Mountford, and Sayer de Quincy, diuided the earledome betwixt them, because that Sayer de Quincy, and the father of Simon Mountford had married the sisters of the said Robert.

Great frost.  
1205  
Dearth of  
corn.

The foureteenth daie of Januarie beganne a frost, which continued till the two and twentieth daie of March, so that the ground coulde not be tilled, whereof it came to passe that in summer following, a quarter of wheate was sold for a marke of siluer in manie places of England, which for the moze parte in the daies of king Henry the second, was sold for twelve pence: a quarter of beanes or pease for halfe a marke: a quarter of oates for fortie pence, that were wont to be solde for foure pence. Also, the money was so lowe clipped, that there was no remedie, but to haue it reued.

*An. reg. 7.*

Iohn Tector.  
Great tax.

King Iohn gathered great armies of men to haue gone ouer the Seas, but being sailed onward of his boiage, he returned againe, and toke escuage, two markes and a halfe of euerie knightes fee through Englande, pretending a quarrell

quarrell against his barons, because they would not follow him into the parts beyonde the Seas.

The earle of Salisburie, the kings brother, Gessrey the kings son begot on a concubine, and manie other knightes, were gone ouer before, but al in vaine: the charges was inestimable that had bene layde out about the preparation made for this iourney.

Great thunders and lightnings bursting out of the clondes were scene, so that men thought that the day of Doome had bin come, many men and women were destroyed, beside cattell, and houses that were overthrowne, and burned. The corne in the fields was beaten downe with hailestones as big as gowse eggs.

About Maidstone in Kent, a certaine monster was found, stricken with the lightning, which monster had an head like an asse, a belly like a man, and all other parts farre discordant from any one living thing. This dead bodie no man might turneth come nere unto for fench.

King Iohn toke the thirtieth part of all moueable goods, both of lay and religious throughe England, at which all men murmured.

The 27. day of January a great wind overthrow many houses and trees, and a great snow destroyed manie beasts.

The monkes of Canterburie, by the aduise of the Pope, elected Stephen Langton to be their Archbishop, and then Pope Innocent intending to obatine the fauour of king Iohn towards this election, because hee knewe that hee did make diligent search for precious stones, sent him an eloquent Epistle, with diuers precious Jewelles, which were of king Iohn well accepted: and Stephen Langton was consecrated at Rome. Then the Pope sent letters to king Iohn, humble exhorting him to receiue the saide Stephen Archbishop of Canterburie, beeing thereunto canonicallie elected, the rather because hee was an Englishman borne, and a doctor of diuinitie, &c. But king Iohn being greatlie offended with the promoting of the saide Stephen, sent men in armour to expell the monkes of Canterburie, to the number of thre score and foure out of the Realme, and condemned them of treason, the monkes went into Flaunders, and their goods, and lands of their church was confiscate. Also king Iohn sent threatening letters to the pope, whereunto the pope made a large answere.

M. Isabel vpon the first of October was deliuered of her first son at Winchesster, and named him Henry.

The 23. of March, William Bpshof of London, Eustachius Bpshof of Ely, and Malgor Bpshof of Winchester by the popes commandement executed the interdiction vpon the whole Realme, and they ceased throughe all England from ministering of Ecclesiasticall sacraments, sauing to them that were in perill of death, and baptisme to children. All the bodie of them that died, were buried like dogs in ditches and corners: Manie Bishops, especially they that pronouncd the interdiction, fled the Realme.

The king set all the bishopricks and abbetes in the realme into the custody of lay men, and commanded all Ecclesiasticall reuenues to bee confiscated. Also doubting lest the Pope shoulde excommunicate him by name, or discharge the nobles of England of their allegiance towards him, he laid holde vpon them, specially

1206

Ralph Cogshall.

An. reg. 8.

Gessrey the

kings bale son.

Great thun-

ders, light-

nings, and halle

A strange

monster.

1207

An. reg. 9.

Mathew Paris.

1208

England in-

terdicted.

Nic. Trinet.

Mathew Paris.

Rad. Cogshall.

An. reg. 106.

Mathew Paris.

ſpecially ſuch as he had in ſuſpition, and toke pledges of them. King Iohn requiring to haue the ſons of Will. de Brauſe, his wiſe made anſwere, the would not deliuer them vnto him, who had already ſaine his owne nephew Arthur, for which ſpeech, both William de Brauſe and his wiſe, were ſaine to ſite into Ire-land.

Philip biſhop of Durham deceased, and was buried by the hands of lay men without the church and churchyard, becauſe the land was interdicted. The Biſhops that executed the interdiction, had their houſes ouerthrowne, their woods cut downe, and their manors deſtroyed by the kings commandement.

W. Packington,  
1209

Richard the kings ſecond ſon by Iſabel his wiſe was borne.

By the procurement of Stephen Langton archbiſhop of Canterbury, licence was granted to the conuentuall churches in Englande to celebrate diuine ſer-vice once euerie weeke, but the white monks had not this priuiledge, becauſe they had diſobeied the interdiction.

Erchequer at  
Northampton.

The Erchequer was removed from Weſtmiſter to Northampton by the kings commandement. Hee alſo gathered a great armie, and went towarde Scotland as far as the caſtell of Northam, where the king of Scottes came to him, and treated a peace, for the which he gaue 1000. marks of ſilver, and deli-uered his two daughters for a pledge.

Chro. Dun.  
Hedges burned  
homage of  
freeholders.

By the kings commandement, throughout all the foreſtes of England, all the ditches were made plaine ground, and the hedges bent. After this he toke homage of all freholders, and ſware all men to his allegiance from twelue yeeres old vpward. The Hoſpitall of S. Iohn and S. James at Crux Roſeoz Roſſone Croſſe was founded the 10. yeere of king Stephen.

Welſhmen did  
homage.

The Welſhmen came to Woodſtocke, and did homage vnto the king, which was neuer heard tell of beſore.

An. reg. 11.

A clark of Oxford by chance killed a woman, and then ranne away, where-fore his three chamber ſellowes which knewe nothing of the matter, were han-ged at the towneſende, which cauſed three thouſande maſters and ſchollers to forſake the vniuerſitie of Oxford, ſo that there tarried not one in that vniuerſi-tie, but ſome went to Cambridge, ſome to Keding, ſome to Oxſidſtone to ſchole, and left Oxford emptye.

Oxford ſoſa-  
ken.

Rad. Cogſhall.

A prodigious ſight was ſene one morning in the beginning of Lent, the clouds ſeemed to fight with the Sun, from the Sun riſing, till one of the clocke of that daie.

London byſtope  
builded of ſtone  
Ex lib. Pontis  
Londinenſis.

The arches and ſtone Bridge ouer the Thames at London, hauing bene three and thirtie yeeres in building, ſince the foundation thereof was layde, to witte, in the yeere of Chriſt 1176. and the 22. of Henrie the ſeconde, was this yeere finiſhed by the worthy Merchantes of London, Scile Mercer, William Alman, and Benet Botewright. Maſter Fowle a learned man, laſt Bzioz of S. Mary Oueries Church in his life time, reported, that at the firſt, beeing no bridge at London, but a ferrie, the ferrier and his wiſe deceaſing, left the ſame ferrie to their daughter, a Maiden named Marie, who with the gods leſte by her parents, and the proſites which came by the ſaide ferrie, builded a Houſe of Alſers, which is the vpper moſt end of S. Maries church aboue the quier, where

Saint Mary  
Oueries.

Iohn Leyland.



he was buried, vnto the which house thee gaue the ouersight and profite of the same ferrie: but afterwarde the house of Sisters was conuerted vnto a Colledge of priests, who builded the brydge of timber, and from time to time kept the same in reparations, but considering the great charges in repairing, lastly by the great aide of the Citizens of London, and others, they builded the same of stone. King Iohn gaue certaine vacant places in London to builde on, the profit thereof to remaine towarde the charges of building and repairing of the same brydge. A Mason being master worke man of the Brydge, builded from the foundation the chappell on London brydge, of his owne proper expenses.

The king commanded all the Iewes both men and women to be imprisoned and grieuouslie punished, because he would haue all their mony, some of them gaue all they had, and promised more, to the ende they might escape so manie kinds of torments as he did put vpon them, for euery one of them had one eye at the least pulled out: amongst whome, there was one, which being tormented many waies, would not ransome himselfe, till the king had caused euery daie one of his great teeth to be pulled out by the space of 7. daies, and then he gaue the king 10000. markes of siluer, to the end they should pull out no more.

Jewes ransomed.

1210.

King Iohn at that time spoiled the Iewes of 66000. markes.

In the moneth of June, the king ledde an Armie into Irelande, expulsed Hugh Lacy, and brought all Irelande vnder his subiection. He caused the lawes of England to be executed there, and money to bee coined according vnto the waight of English money, and made there both halpence and farthings: he returned with great triumph in the moneth of September, and then raised a great tare vpon all the religions in Englande, whome hee caused to paie such a ransome, and to spoyle their Churches, that the summe came to an hundred thousande pounces, besides fourtie thousande pounces of the white monkes.

An. reg. 12.

A mint in Ire-  
land.  
Euge.  
Nich. Triuet.

Another sight betwixt the Sun and the cloudes was sene.

Matild a noble woman, wife to William de Brawse, and his sonne and heire William, perished miserablie with famine in the castell of Windsor. William her husband changing his apparell, passed ouer the sea at Shorham, and shortly after died at Gorbolle, and was buried at Paris.

I. Reuerla.  
Ralph Cogshall.

The bishop of Londons castel called Stotford, is ouerthelone, and the kings house at Wzitle in Essex is builded.

Stotford cas-  
tell.

1211

The king went into Wales against Lewlin his sonne in law, that had married his bassard daughter, with a great force, euen to Snowdon, and subdued all the princes and nobles, without any gaine-saying. He toke eight and twenty pledges for their subiection, and returned. When he came at Portsmouth, there met him messengers from the Pope, Pandolph and Durand, which came to make an vnite betwixt the king and the Byshop of Canterburie with the Monkes which were banished, but the king graunting their retourne, denied to make them anie amendes for their losse which they had sustained, or to restore their goods which he had confiscated, so that the Ambassadors returned without anie end concluded.

Army into  
Wales.  
Mathew Paris.

Legates from  
Rome.

An. reg. 13.

After

A great tace.

After this, the king toke of euery knight which was not with him in Wales, two markes of siluer of euery shield.

Pope Innocent absolued all, both princes and other, which pertained to the crowne of England, from their fidelitie and subiection to king Iohn, and commanded them to eschue his company.

Gualter Couen.

A herd of Harts comming forth of the forrest, leapt all into the Sea at the mouth of Senerne.

Archbishop of  
Poike deceased.

Geffrey archbishop of Poike, bastard brother to king Iohn, because he would not giue his consent vnto a tace of the thirtieth penny of all mens goods, departed this realme in the yere 1207. whose possessions were forthwith seized into the kings hands, and now 5. yeres after his banishment, he ended his life beyond the seas: after whose decease the sea was void by the space of 4. yeres.

Lib. Bernewell.

William king of Scotland being aged, was not able to quiet the inner parts of his realme, troubled with sedition, wherefore he fled vnto the king of England, and committed himselfe, his kingdome, and onely sonne vnto his protection, who making the young man knight, went into those parts with an army, and sending forth his men into the inner parts of that kingdome, hee toke Cuthred Mac William Captaine of the sedition, and hung him on a paire of gallowes, for he was of the olde ancient race of the Scottish kings, who assisted with the aide of the Irish and Scots, did exercise long enmitie against the moderne kings of Scotland, as his father Donald had done before him, sometime secretly, sometime openly: for the moderne kings of Scotland confesse themselves to be rather Frenchmen, as in stocke or lineage, so also in manners, language, and apparell, and hauing brought the Scots vnto extreme seruitude, they admit onely Frenchmen into familiaritie and seruice.

1212

Welshmen in-  
naded Eng-  
land.  
Pledges  
hanged.

The Welshmen toke diuers Castles of the king of Englands, cut off the heads of all the souldiers, burned many towncs, and with a great pray returned without any harme.

The king gathered a great army, minding utterly to destroy all the coastes of Wales, but when he came to Pottingham, he caused eight & twenty pledges of the Welshmen to be hanged, and immediatly after, whilst he sat at meate, there came a messenger, that brought him Letters from the King of Scots, informing him, that he should be betrayed; and likewise also came another messenger out of Wales, from the kings daughter, wife to Lewline king of Wales, certifying him of the same conspiracie, that is to say, that if he did not leaue off and desist from that he had begun, his nobles would either kill him themselves, or else betray him to his enemies to be killed.

Wherefore, when the king came backe to London, he sent messengers to all the great men whome he suspected to be vntrue to him, and demanded pledges of them, who daring not disobey the kings commandment, sent to him their sonnes, nephewes, and kinsfolke to be at the kings pleasure.

Peter of Pont-  
frelle.

About this time in the prouince of Poike, there was an Heremite named Peter of Pontfrelle, who was also called the Wolfe, because hee had declared vnto many diuers strange things that were to come. This Heremite prophesied openly of king Iohn, and said, that vpon the Ascension day next comming, there

there should be no king, nor from thenceforth, but he said the crowne should at that day be translated to another. Whereof, when the king heard tell, he commanded this Heremite to be brought vnto his presence, and demanded of him, whether the king should die as that day, or no, or else, in what order the king should be depriued of his raigne. The Heremite answered, I knowe this most certainly, that at that day, thou shalt not be king: and if I be found a liar, then doe with me what ye will. And the king said it should be euen so, as thou hast saide, and so committed him to William de Hartcourt to keepe, and he kept him in streight prison, vntill he sawe the end.

There were at that time manie noble men in England, whose wiues and daughters the king had oppressed, and othersome, whome with extreme exactions hee had brought into great pouertie, and othersome, whose parents and friends the king had banished, and had turned their inheritance vnto his own vse: so that king Iohn had almost, as many enemies as hee had nobles, and great men, and the report was that they did send their writing and charter to the king of France, sealed with their seales, wherein they promised him, that if he would come and invade England, they would receiue him, and crowne him with honour.

About this time, Stephen Archbishop of Canterburie, William Bishoppe of London, and the Bishop of Ely, went to Rome, and informed the Pope how many enuious deedes king Iohn with great contumacie had done against God and his holy Church: wherefore they humbly besought him to helpe and succour the church of England, which now was in great danger. Whereupon the Pope determined, that king Iohn should be deposed, and another more worthy set in his place: Toward the execution whereof, the Pope wrote his letters to king Philip of France, willing him to expulse the king of England, and he should for euer possesse the kingdome.

The tenth daie of Iuly at night, a marvellous and terrible chance happened, for the Citie of London vpon the South side of the riuer of Thames, with the Church of our Lady of the Chanons in Southwarke being on fire, and an exceeding great multitude of people passing the bridge, either to ertingualty and quench, or else to gaze, beholde, sodainly the north part, by blowing of the South winde was also set on fire, and the people which were euen now passing the bridge, perceiving the same, would haue returned, but were stopped by fire, and it came to passe, that as they staied, or protracted time, the other end of the bridge also, namely the South end was fired, so that the people thronging them selues betwixt the two fires, did nothing else expect or looke for then death. When came there to aide them many ships and vessels, into the which, the multitude so vndiscerately pressed, that the ships being drownded, they all perished: it was said, through the fire and the shipwrack, that there were destroyed about thre thousand persons. William Packington writeth, that there were found in part or

halfe burnt thre thousande bodies, besides those that were quite burned that could not be found.

King Iohn disherited some noble men without iudgement of their paires, and he would haue destroyed Ranulph Earle of Chester, for that he reproched him.

Archbishop of  
Canterburp  
and other bis-  
shops com-  
plaine of king  
Iohn.

An. reg. 14.  
London bridge  
perished with  
fire.  
Ex record. S Ma-  
ria de Southw.

Arbor successiva  
Gual. couen.

W. Packington.

1213  
Noble men  
disherited.

him with this, that he should use the wife of his brother Geoffrey Earle of Britaine, whome Ranulph earle of Chester had married, and from whome Ranulph was divorced by the counsell of king Iohn, and the said earle had married the daughter of the earle Ferrers.

King Iohn being now in extremity, and minding to impute the fault to them that would not appease his fury aforesetyme, reprehended sometimes one, and sometimes another of his nobility as traitors, calling them iealous, whose beds (as he bragged) he had defiled, and defloured their daughters.

The Chronicle of Dunmow saith, this discord arose betwixt the king and his barons, because of Mawde called the Faire, daughter to Robert Fitz Walter, whome the king loved, but her father would not consent, and thereupon ensued warre throughout England. The king spoiled especiallie the Castell of Baynard in London, and other holdes and houses of the barons. Robert Fitz Walter, Roger Fitz Robert, and Richard Mounte Fitchet passed over into Fraunce, some also went into Wales, and some into Scotland, and did great damage to the king. Whilset Mawde the Faire remained at Dunmow, there came a messenger unto her from king Iohn about his suit in love, but because she would not agree, the messenger poisoned a boiled or potched Egge against she was hungry, whereof she died, and was buried in the quier at Dunmow.

At this time also king Iohn subtilly, to excuse himselfe withall, demanded and obtained of all religious persons, a writing, wherein they acknowledged, that they had willingly given the king al that he had with violence taken from them.

About this time, the king of France wasted the king of Englandes landes beyonde the Seas, and the king of England likewise wasted his: but at the length a truce was taken, and an arme of the Sea being betwixt either hoste, there was a Knight in the Englishe hoste that cryed to them of the other side, willing some one of their knightes to sust a course or twaine: whereupon without state, Robert Fitz Walter made himselfe readie, ferried over, and got on his horse without anie man to helpe him, and beeing readie against the face of his enimie, at the first course hee stroke the other so hard with his great speare, that horse and man fell to the ground, and when his speare was broken, he went backe againe to the king of France: by Gods tooth (quoth king Iohn) he were a king in dede that had such a knight. Roberts friendes hearing that, kneeled downe, and saide, O king he is your knight, it is Robert Fitz Walter: and the next daie he was sent for, and was restored to the kings fauour, and by his meanes peace was concluded, and he received his lininges, and had leave to repaire his castels, &c. Thée the most forcible and valiant knightes of England in those daies were Robert Fitz Walter, Robert Fitz Roger, and Richard Mount Fichet.

King Iohn caused a great armie to be gathered at Douer in the Lent season, and gathered together a great naue of Ships, and whilset he remained about the Sea coast with his force to withstande the French king when hee shoulde come, there arrived two brethren of the Temple at Douer, which came to the king and in friendlie manner saide unto him: Wlce bee sent unto thée (most mightie

Lib, Roffens.  
Gualt, Couen,

Chron. of Dun.  
Mawde the  
faire, daughter  
to Robert Fitz  
Walter.  
Baynards Cas-  
tell throwne  
downe.  
Robert Fitz  
Walter fledde  
into France.  
Mawde the  
faire poisoned.

Robert Fitz  
Walter his  
ballancie.

Robert Fitz  
Walter resto-  
red to the kings  
fauour.

mightie  
your rea-  
a certain  
Church,  
Home to  
the  
them col-  
long aft-  
the most  
a great  
come ou-  
there co-  
land, w-  
hauing  
and good  
The  
the Rob-  
thereby  
the last  
make n-  
geance  
himselfe  
you ma-  
ged and  
your en-  
hede th-  
able to  
With  
things.  
second,  
about t-  
feared,  
would  
fourth,  
cording  
kingly  
les, his  
Pandul-  
dolph,  
Carles  
ture th-  
them to  
day, the  
uer, the  
king



mightie king) in the behalfe of Pandolph, who for the commoditie of you & of your realme desireth to haue talke with you, for he hath to propound vnto you a certaine forme of peace, where by you may be reconciled to God, and to the Church, notwithstanding that you be condemned by sentence in the court of Rome to be deposed from the title of your realme.

When the king had considered well the message of those templars, he gaue them commaundement to cause Pandolph to come ouer vnto him. And not long after, Pandolph came to the king at Douer, and said vnto him: Behold, Pandolph the Legate. the most mightie king of France lieth with an invincible number of ships, and a great multitude of knights, horsemen and footemen in the haven, ready to come ouer to invade, and depose you, as a rebell vnto God, and vnto his Pope: there come with him also the Bishops that of late were banished out of England, with the clarkes and lay men, to the end, that whether ye will or no, they hauing the French king to their captaine, they may receiue their bishopricks and goods.

The king of France also doth boast that he hath Charters almost from all the Nobles of England of their allegiance and subiection vnto him, so that thereby he doubteth not but to bring his purpose to passe. Nowe therefore at the last looke to your owne commoditie, that you may come to repentance, and make no delay to reconcile you to God, whom you haue prouoked to take vengeance vpon you. For if you make assurance, that for his sake, which humbled himselfe for you, you will humble your selfe to the iudgement of the Church, you may recouer your realme: from which, for your contumacie you be adiudged and condemned by the court of Rome to be deposed. Nowe therefore that your enemies doe not resolue ouer you, turne into your owne heart, and take heed that you doe not bring your selfe into such a distresse as you shall not be able to ridde your selfe out againe.

With these words King Iohn was moued to repentance, chiefly considering 4. things. The first, for that he stood excommunicate the space of five yeres. The second, he feared the coming of Philippe king of Fraunce, which lay round about the Sea coastes with a great force, prepared to depose him. Thirdly, he feared, that if he should loine battell with his enemies, the nobles of England would either leaue him in the field, or deliuer him to his enemies. And the fourth, which he feared most, was because Ascension day was at hand, when according to the prophetic of Peter the Hermitte, he should lose both his life, and kingly authoritie, both spirituall and temporall. For these and such like causes, King Iohn being fallen into desperation, did followe the perswasion of Pandolph, and toke his othe vpon the Euangelists, that in the presence of Pandolph, he would stand to, and obey the iudgement of the Church, and 16. of his Barons and Nobles did sweare the same, and couenanted that if he peradventure should repent him of his othe, they would compell him, so much as lay in them to performe it. Thus on the 13. of Maie, on Sunday before Ascension day, the King and his Nobles, Barons, and Nobles, mette with Pandolph at Douer, where with one consent they agreed vpon a forme of peace.

King Iohn, and Pandolph, with the Nobles of the Realme, came together

at

R. Iohn resign-  
ed the crowne  
of England.

at the house of the knights of the Temple, by the toton of Douer, on the xv. day of May, being the Ascension Euen, where the king, according as sentence was giuen at Rome, did resign his Crowne, with the realmes of England and Ire- land into the Popes handes: whose Vicegerent at that time was Pandulph a, foresaid; and when he had made this resignation, hee gaue the aforesaid king- domes to the Pope, and to his successors, and confirmed his gift with a Char- ter, dated the 15. of May, in the 14. yeeres of his raigne. When the Ascension day was past, he commanded the foresaid Peter the Hermite to be fet out of the castle of Corke, to be bounde to a Horse-taile, drauone through the streets to Warham, and there both he and his son to be hanged on a gibbet.

Pierce of  
Pontefraae.  
An. reg. 15.

Stephen Lang-  
ton returned.

The 17. of August, Stephen Langton Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, and all the other that were banished, arriued at Douer, and wente to Winchester to the king, who meeting them in the waie, fell flatte vpon the earth before their feete, and with teares beseeched them to take pittie on him, and of the Realme of England. The Archbyschop and Byschoppes likewise, with teares tooke him vp from the ground, and brought him vnto the doores of the Cathedraall church, and with the Psalmc of Misericere absolved him: then the king toke an othe to call in all wicked Lawes, and to put in place the Lawes of king Edward. Di- uine seruice being ended, the king, the archbishop, bishops and nobles, dyned al at one table.

The king ab-  
solved.

Lib. Bermond.  
S. Thomas  
Hospital.

Richard Pztor of Bermondsey, builded an house (against the wall of the said house of Bermondsey) called the Almozor Hospitall of conuerts and chyldren, in the honour of Saint Thomas.

Gilo de Brawse the son of William de Brawse, receiued all his Fathers inher- itance into his custodie, together with his Nephew, till the child came to law- full age.

Morgan a ba-  
rard elected  
Byschoppe of  
Durham.

Morgan Prouost of Beuerley, brother to R. Iohn was elected byshop of Dur- ham, but he comming to Rome to be consecrated, returned againe without it, for that he was a bastard, and R. Henry father to R. Iohn, had begotten him of the wife of one Radulph Bloeth, yet would the Pope haue dispensed with him, if he would haue called himselfe the son of the knight, and not of the king. But he vying the aduise of one William of Lane his Clarke, answered, that for no worldly promotion, he would deny the kings blood.

Lib. Bermond.  
A ditch about  
London.  
Chro. Dun.

The fiftenth of October, was begun by the Londoners, the ditch without the wals of London, of 200. fote broad, causing no small hinderance thereby to the Chanons of Chylis Church nere vnto Aldgate, for that it passed through the ir ground.

Byschop chiefe  
Iustice.

1214

Geffery Fitz Peter dieth, chiefe Iustice of England, and the Bishop of Win- chester in that office is placed, the nobles of Englad murmuring, that a stran- ger bozne, should be made ruler ouer them.

Interdiction  
releaseth.  
Nic. Triuet.

Pope Innocent sent his letters to Nicholas bishop of Tusculane his Legate, to releaseth the interdiction, which had continued 6. yeeres, 3. monethes, and 14. daies.

King Iohn  
saileth into  
Bytaine.

The seconde date of Iulie, king Iohn sayled towarde Bytaine, intending to besiege Mountes, in the which warres hee had the aide of Ocho the Empe-  
rour,

roure, and of the Dukes of Louaine, Brabant, and Hollande, of Reignolde Carle of Boloigne, and Ferrandis Carle of Flaunders, so that there was a greate ffielde fought, in which the French King escaped narrowlie, but being rescued, hee tooke the foresayde Carles, put Hugh de Bones to flighte, and drove the Emperour out of the ffielde, and then a Truce was taken betwixt King Iohn and the king of Fraunce for five yeeres, by the Popes commandement, as some saie, but as other saie, this truce was agreed by meanes of 6000. marks, which the king of England gaue, fearing to incounter with the great multitude of Frenchmen.

King Iohn having finished his warres beyond the Seas, as y<sup>e</sup> have heard, came ouer into England, about the fourteenth of Nouember. And the same time the Carles and Barons of the Realme, especiallie them of the North, came to talke with the king, hee being then at Saint Edmundesburie, but their intent was not only to talk with him, as well appeared: for after they had a long season handled the matter among themselves, they brought forth the charter of king Henry the first, which they had receiued of Stephen the Archbish, wherof we haue made mention here before. And so they came together into S. Edmonds Church, where the chiefest of them beganne, and they all sware by the High Altar, that if the king would not graunt the foresayde Lawes and Liberties, they would make warres against him, and withdraue themselves out of his allegiance, vntill hee did with his Seale confirme and ratifie the same. And they consented all on this, to come to the king after Christmas, and in the meane season they would provide themselves both of armor, horses, and munition.

Fishes of vnwonted shape were taken in England, for they were armed with helmets and shields, in outward shape they resembled, and were like vnto armed knights, sauing that they were far greater in proportion.

Almost the whole towne of S. Edmondsburie was consumed with fire.

The king being lodged in the newe temple at London, there came to him, the foresaid noble men in warlike order, demanding of him to confirme the Liberties of king Edwards Lawe and other: the king requiring respitte till Easter, was faine to put in sureties the Archbyschop of Canterburie, the Byschop of Ely, and other, to satisfie all men in that behalfe, and then the Noble men returned. The king in the Church of Saint Paul at London, at the hands of William Byschop of London, took on him the signe of the Crosse of the holie Land, by meane thereof to be in the better safeguard: the earles of Chester and Darby did the like. In the Easter weeke the noblemen in armor met at Stamford, and after at Barkeley, whither came to them from the king, the Archbyschop of Canterburie, William Marshall with other, to demaund of them what they would haue confirmed, and the nobles deliuered to them a scedule, confesning the olde Lawes and customes, which except the king would graunt, they would take the castles of his lands, and so compell him.

The 17. daie of Maie being Sundate, the Barons came to London, and entered through Aldgate, in the seruice time, where they tooke such as they knewe fauoured the king, and spoiled their goods. They brake into the Houses of the

King Iohn returned into England.

The Barons require the Charter of Liberties.

S. Edmondsburie burnt. Iohn Textor. The barons in armour.

1215  
King Iohn crossed to Jerusalem.

An. reg. 17.

Treasures spoiled in London. Gualt. Couca.

Masses of Lon-  
don repaired.  
Rad. Cogshall.

the Jewes, and searched their Coffers, to suffice their olone purses that had bene long emptie. After this Robert fitz Walter, and Geoffrey de Maundeuill Earle of Essex, and the Earle of Gloucester, chiefe leaders of the armie, applied all diligence to repaire the gates and walles of the cite, with the stones of the Jewes broken houses. The Tower of London yet held out, though there were fewe within to defende it. When it was noyced that the Barons had London, all (except the Earles of Warren, Arundell, Chester, Pembroke, Ferrers, and Salisbury, and the Barons, William Brewer with other) went to those Barons that were against the king, who called themselves the Armie of God, whereby such a feare came on the king, that hee durst not peepe out of Windsor Castle: at length he appointed to meete with the Barons in a meddowe betwixt Stanes and Windsor, which appointment hee obserued, and there graunted the liberties, without anie difficultie, the charter whereof is dated: Given by our hand in Kunningmede, betwixt Stanes and Windsor, the 16. of June, the 17. of our raigne, vnto which, all the whole Realme was sworne.

Mathew Paris.  
The same treaty  
the Barons.

Whiles the Barons returned home, the king being left almost alone, hee sent Pandolph the Legate with other to Rome, to the ende that by the Apostolicke authoritie, he might make frustrate the purpose of the Barons. Also hee sent Walter Bishop of Winchester, and Iohn Bishop of Norwich, with other, vnto the Realmes next adioyning, to procure him souldiers, promising them lands, and large possessions: By meanes of Pandolph, the Pope disanulled the foresaide Charter and liberties graunted, and also excommunicated the Barons. By the other messengers were procured a great number of men of war, which landing at Douer, the king forthwith besieged Rochester, coueting to burne the Bridge, that no aide should come to the besieged: but Robert Fitz Walter defended the Bridge, and quenched the fire, neuertheless after long assault the castle was yielded.

The Pope ex-  
communicated  
the Barons.  
Rochester be-  
sieged.

Strangers  
drowned.  
Mathew Paris.

As a great number of strangers were on the Seas, minding to haue landed at Douer, to haue ayded the king against his Barons, through a sudden tempest they were all drowned, so that about the coast of the Sea, was cast vp such a multitude of men, women, and children, that the aire was soze infected with their putrified bodies: It was saide that of forty thousand, there escaped not one alive. The king had promised to this people, the Countreies of Norfolk, and Suffolke.

Rad. Cogshall.

King Iohn deuised his army, the one halfe whereof he put vnder the leading of Sauarike de Maulion a Poitouin, Fulco a Norman, the Earle of Salisbury his bastard brother, Gerard de Sotingham a Fleming, and Walter Buc a Breabander. He himselfe went against the Northerne men. Sauarike besieged the castle of Plashy, that belonged to Geoffrey Maundeuill, the other gaue them felnes to waste the Countrey about.

Rad. Cogshall.  
Lib. Bernewell.

On Christmas day they spoiled the Abbey of Eilsey, and caried away much treasure that there was laid vp in trust by diuers of that countrey. On Petowares day they did the like at Cogshall Abbey.

The Isle of Ely  
besieged.

From thence they went to Saint Edmondesbury, and so to the Isle of Ely, which



which Ile they besieged, because diuers knightes and Ladies were fledde thither with their substance: and those robbers entring the Isle, spared neither sere nor state, but by tormentes compelled them to tell where their treasure lay.

About the Epiphanie Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, and other, returned from beyonde the seas, bzinging with them one and forty ships laden with souldiers: and about the feast of the Purification of our Ladie they besieged Colchester Castle, but hearing that the Barons that were at London made hast to come and succour the Castle, they went backe to Saint Comon, desburie.

The king with his army was long time on the Scottis Seas, and oftentimes inuaded the Lands of his Barons in those coasts, burning their Castles, and spoiling their goods, in which expedition he went so farre, that it was not well known what was become of him, insomuch, that he was nopsed to be dead, and secretly buried at Reding.

King Iohn invaded the lands of his Barons.

Geffrey Mandeuill died at London of a wound received in inslking: he was buried in the Pryorie of the Trinitie at London.

The Pope excommunicated the Barons by their pecoliar names, but the Chanons of S. Paul in London, and many other Ecclesiasticall persons, with the Barons that remained at London, appealed against this sentence, taking exceptions against it, as pronounced by false suggestion.

The Barons excommunicated.

The Barons sent Sayre de Quincy and other, to Philip king of France, earnestly requesting him to send his sonne Lewis into this Realme, promising to make him king thereof, which the French king refused to doe, till the Barons had sent him foure and twenty pledges of the best mens sons in the kingdome, and then hee sent them aide. Gwalo the Legate was sent from the Pope into France, to forbid Lewis to go into England, but his perswasions nothing prevailed, wherefore he excommunicated them. Also the Abbot of Abingdon, renewed the excommunication against the Barons, the citizens of London, and the French, which came to their aide. About Midlent the king besieged the Castle of Colchester, and after a few daies it was deliuered to him by the French men that kept it, with condition that they might depart free, with all that belonged to them, and that the Englishmen should be suffered to depart vpon reasonable ransom, notwithstanding the Englishmen he put in streight prison. After the R. had taken Widingham castle, belonging to Robert de Vere Earle of Orford, he made haste to besiege London, but the Londoners set open their gates, and were ready to make with the king ten miles off the city: the king vnderstanding their bolones and multitude, he withdrew himselfe, but Saumarie de Malone, being suddenly set vpon by the Londoners, losing many of his men, was sore beaten and wounded almost to death.

The Barons sent for Lodo. wike.

1216

Colchest taken.

The Northren Lords recovering their strength, besieged Porke, at length receiuing aboute a thousand markes granted truce to the Citizens, till the Octaues of Pentecost.

Porke besieged.

The Londoners also toke the 65. ships of Pirates besides innumerable other that were drowned, that had besieged the coasts on the riner of Chamis.

Lewis arrived  
in England.

King Iohn  
fleeth.  
*An. reg. 18.*

Douer castle  
besieged.  
W. Packington.

King of Scots  
did homage to  
Lewis.

Barnards Ca-  
stle.

Holy woorfolk.

In the meane time the king hauing knowledge that Lewis meant to come into England, he sent ouer to the French king, the Bishoppe of Winchester, William Marshall the elder, and other, to try if they could perswade the French k. to stay his son from that iourney, but they returned without audience. The king therefore marching along the Sea coast fortified his Castles, and getting pledges of the fine Ports, gathered a great multitude of ships of Parmonth, Linne, Dunwich, and other hauens, fraught them with men of warre, and determined to encounter the Frenchmen by Sea, when they came to arrive in England, but by tempest that arose from the North, those shippes were brouled, drowned, or driuen into the South parts of the sea, Lewis hauing al his power ready at Caleis, Chauling, and Whitland, the Northeast winde comming about, he set forward toward England, and with some difficulty, because it was a side winde, he landed at Stonar, in the Isle of Thanet, the 21. daie of May. From which place he directed his Epistles of title and claime, &c. as are set downe in my larger History. King Iohn being then at Douer, because his soldiers were strangers, durst not go against Lewis, but fledde towards Olford. Lewis went straight to Canterbury, where he receiued both castle and citie into his subiection, and after all the other castles in Kent, Douer only excepted: then came he to London, where he was honorably receiued of the Nobles and Citizens, who altogether sware fealty to him, and did him homage at Westminster: after this taking the castles of Rygat, Guldfofd and Fernham, he hastid forward to take the king, who as he heard was at Winchester, and had raised by the Standard of the Dragon, as he had meant to giue battell to Lewis, if he came to offer it. But when king Iohn heard that Lewis approached, he laide downe his Dragon, set fire on foure parts of the citie and fledde. The Citizens quickly quenched the fire and went forth to meete Lewis, receiuing him fully into their Citie, and sware fealtie to him. Here came to him in manner all the Carles and Barons of the Realme: then taking the castle of Olfham, and the Tower of London, he returned into Kent, and the 22. of July he besieged the castle of Douer, and continued the same till the 14. of October: then Hubert de Brugh and Gerard de Scoting, being not able longer to abide the assaults, obtained truce, that they might send to king Iohn for succour. Whilste this siege remained, king Iohn went about the land, consuming with fire and sword the possessions of the Barons.

Alexander king of Scots hauing subdued to Lewis all Northumberland, sauing Barnard castle, with the Barons of the North, came vnto Canterbury to Lewis, and did him homage, for that which he ought to hold of the king of England, and as he came towards Lewis with a great army, for feare of king Iohns power, as he passed by Barnard castle, which was in the fee of Hugo de Balioll, in the County of Holywarke folke, he with his Nobles of that countrey went round about the Castle to see whether it were wreake in any place, and assaultable, and a certaine archer within the Castle shot a dart, and smote Eustach de Veslay vpon the fore head, and pierced his braine, so that he died immediately. This Eustach was a noble and mighty man, and had married the k. of Scots sister, so that the king, and the noble men were sore abashed: and then

the

the king of Scots had done his homage, he returned home into his countrey.

About this time it chanced that the Viscount of Melin a noble man of France, which came with Lewis into England lay very sicke in the Citie of London, who when he knew that death approached, called to him certaine of the Barons of England, unto whom he declared in effect as followeth: I am forie brethren, for your subuersion, and desolation, whereof you know nothing: for Lewis and sixtene of the Carles and Barons with him haue sworne, that if it be his chance to subdue England, and to be crowned king, he would banish out of the realme for euer, al these which now doe take his part, and persecute king Iohn, as traitors to their king, and will rote all their kindred out of the earth, and to the ende, you shall not doubt hereof to be true, I which now lie here a dying, vnder perill of my soule, affirme this to be true, and that I was one that did sweare the same with Lewis. Now therefore from henceforth prouide for your owne commoditie, and profit, and kepe this secret which I haue told you, and when he had said this, he died. The Barons perceiuing what danger they were in by Lewis, who had giuen to the French men the lands and castles which pertained to the Barons, and when anie murmured against Lewis, he cast in their teeth, that they were traitors, &c. they believed what the noble man had told them. This did also much increase their heauinesse, that they were euerie day excommunicated, and depriued of all earthly honour, so that they were in great anguish both of body and soule: Wherefore many deuised how to returne into the alleageance of king Iohn.

The Viscount  
of Melin his  
confession.

The king marched through Norfolk and Suffolke, till he came to Linne, where the Colonelmen receiued him with great ioy, and honoured him with large giftes, there he appointed Sauarike de Malion to bee Captaine, who beganne to fortifie the Colone: but here (as it was false) filling his belly too much, as he was thereto greatly giuen, he gotte a surfeit, and therewith all fell into a flure. Afterward taking his iourney towardes the North, in the water which is called Millstreme (they saide) hee lost sodainely all the Cartes and chariots, with his treasure, and precious princely vessel, and furniture of his chappell, which he set most by, for the earth opened in the midst of the waues on the marshes, and the whirlepit of the depe so swallowed by both men and horses, that none escaped to bring king Iohn tydings. The king with his army going before, escaped very narrowly, and men said, that night he lay at the Abbey of Swinshene, where he remained two daies, and there (as men supposed) he toke such heauines of heart for the losse of his treasure in the washes, that he was taken with an extreame ague, and began to be verie sore sicke, the pernicious greedy eating of peaches, and drinking of new cider, increased his sickness, and kindled the heate of the ague the more strongly, notwithstanding in the very breake of the day, with great paine, he went to the castle of Slesford in Lindsey, belonging to the Bish. of Lincoln. There he was let blood (saie some) but so it happened, that about this time, to wit, on the 14. of Octob. Hub. de Burgo & Gerard de Soing, being not able longer to abide his assaults of Lewis & his complices, obtained of him truce, that they might send to King Iohn for succour, which messengers, when they were come to Slesford and had declared their

case, that is, that except he would rescue them in the castle of Doner, the same must be deliuered by to Lewis: his disease with griefe conceived there at, increased much, so that on the next morning, he could scantly on horsebacke come to the castle of Newmarke, which castle also belonged to the said Bish. of Lincoln, in which place the sickness so increased in the space of 3. or 4. daies, that he took the counsell of his Confessor, and receiued the Sacrament at the hands of the Abbot of Crorton, and then he made Henry his eldest sonne, the heire of his kingdome, causing all that were about him to sweare to him, and sent Letters sealed with his own seale, to all the Sheriffes of England, & castle keepers, willing them to be attendant and diligent to the said Henry. When these things were thus done, the Abbot of Crorton asked him if he should chance to die, where he would haue his body buried: To whom the king answered and said, I commit my soule to God, and my body to S. Albane, and afterward, to witte, in the night which followed next after the feast of S. Luke, he departed this life in the said castle of Newmarke, from whom his seruants taking al that was about him fled, not leauing so much of any thing (worth the carriage) as would couer his dead carcase. At the time of king Iohns death, there came to him messengers of certaine Barons of England, to the number of 40. with letters requiring to haue come againe to his peace, & allegiance, but he lying in the extremities of death coulde not giue attendance to them, he deceased on the nineteenth of October, Anno 1216. when he had reigned 17. yeres, five moneths, lacking eight daies, at the age of 51. yeres. The Constable of the castle, caused the kings body to be bowelled by the Abbot of the Chanons at Crorton, which Abbot was expert in Physicke, and also at that time, the kings Physition, to the end it might be the more honourably caried, his bowels being powdered, were buried in the Abbey of Crorton, vnto the which Abbey, king Iohn had on his death-bed giuen tenne pound the yere of god land for ever, his body was honourably conueyed to Worcester, and there buried in the Cathedral Church, nere vnto the body of Bishop Vllane.

In Leicestershire  
were Chanons.  
In Stafford-  
shire were C.  
stercian monks.

Thus haue I set downe the life (though much abridged) and death of king Iohn, after the writing of Rog. Windouer, Rad. Niger, Rad. Cogshall, a namelesse Chanon of Barnewell, Mathew Paris, and other, who all liued when the king reigned, and wrote for that time what they saw, or heard credibly reported. Notwithstanding, I thinke good (as heretofore) to set downe concerning his death, as is reported by a namelesse Authour, a continuor of Geoffrey Monmouth, in the raigne of Edward the third, and since increased, printed by William Caxton, and therefore called Caxtons Chronicle. This booke (I saie) and other after-commers report, that king Iohn was poisoned by a Monk of Swinested abbey in Lincolnshire, for saying that if he might liue halfe a yere, he would make an halfe penny loose of bread, worth 11. shillings, &c. as ye may reade in the said common English Chronicle. But to conclude, howsoeuer he died, certaine it is, that he reigned with trouble ynough, as by the premises may appeare.

Issue of king  
Iohn.

He had issue two sonnes, Henry and Richard, and three daughters, Isabel the Emperesse, Elianor Duene of Scots, and Iane: Geoffrey a base sonne gotten on  
a con



a concubine, Richard and other: hee founded the Abbey of Botwley, in the new forrest in Southamptonschire: the Monasterie of Farendon, and the Monasterie of Hales Owen in Shropshyre, he reedified Godstow by Oxford, & Worcester hall by Warwike, and increased the Chappell of Lincolnborough, &c.

Farendon,  
Bates, God-  
stow, and Linc-  
colnborough.  
Ex charta regia.  
Ioh. Rouse.

## King Henrie the third.



HENRIE borne at Winchester, the eldest sonne of Iohn, of the age of nine yeeres, began his raigne the nineteenth of October, in the yere 1216. hee was crowned at Gloucester on the 28. day of October, by Peter Bishop of Winchester, and Jocelyne Bishop of Bathe, in the presence of Walo the Legate, Syluester Bishop of Worcester, William Bishop of Co-

An. reg. 1.

uentrie, and many other Prelates, Isabell the Quene, Ranulph Earle of Chester, William Marshall Earle of Pembroke, William Earle Ferrers, William de la Bruere, Sauaric de Maulion, Iohn Marshall, Philip de Albineto, with the Abbots and other in great number: being crowned by common consent, the Government of the king and kingdome was committed to the Legate, to the Bishoppe of Winchester, and to William Marshall Earle of Pembroke. These thinges being knowne abroade, those that were of the contrary part, toke great indignation thereat: and because there should be no hope left to the new king to preuaile against them, they toke a solemne oath, and swore they would neuer holde any lande of any heire of king Iohn; but the Legate maintaining the kings part, admonished, prayed, and commanded them that were disobedient to the king, to doe the like as he did, he calling a councell at Wyke, caused the bishops and prelates to incline to his part: notwithstanding, Lewis did what he could to the contrary, spoyling their goods, and possessions, yet could he not get one of the prelates to doe him homage, or feaultie. William Marshall Earle of Pembroke perswaded the Viscountes, Castle keepers, and other to doe their seruices to the young king Henry, promising them great gifts, and large possessions, whereby they serued king Henry much more faithfully then they did L. Iohn his father, for they thought y<sup>e</sup> the iniquity of the Father ought not to be imputed vnto the son. This did also greatly encourage them, when they vnderstood that every Sunday Lewis and his complices were excommunicated: Lewis and the Barons being not able to winne Douer Castle, determining therefore to subdue the smaller castles first, they remooued their siege, and came to London where on the first of Nouember, the Tower of London was deliuered to them. From thence Lewis with the Barons went and besieged the Castle of Hartford, from the twelfth of Nouember, till the first of December, on which day the castle was yelded: about the same time his men had won the Isle of Ely, all except a fortefse within the same, wherin the kings people were inclosed. The citie of Lincolne also being won againe by his partakers, & the castle besieged, Lewis wēt to Barkhamsted, and besieged the

the castle there. In time of which siege, there went out of the castle certaine knights and souldiers, who with violence entred vpon the Barons, toke their Chariots with their carriages, and the Standard of William de Mandeuill, and returned into their castle therewithall: but in the end, after long siege, by the kings commandement, they yielded the castle to Lewis on the 20. of December.

On the next morning Lewis came to Saint Albons, and demanded of the Abbot to doe vnto him homage, which the Abbot refused; but Lewis swearing he would set the Abbey on fire, the Abbot after manie threats, by the perswasion of Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, fined himselfe and the whole towne for 80. markes of siluer. Which being done, Lewis returned to London: And a truce was taken till the Octaues of the Epiphanie. The feast of Christmas being past, the truce yet continuing, Lewis called his fauourers vnto a Councell at Cambrydge, and the Gouvernors of the king called the like councell at Drford. All these laboured to haue compounded vpon a peace, or at the least to haue prolonged the truce, but when truce could not be prolonged, Lewis besieged the Castle of Heddingham, and at one selfe same time, the saide Castle, and also the Castle of Wyforde were both rendered, and so likewise were the Castles of Norwich and Colchester, for to haue the truce continued till a moneth after Easter: And by this meanes all the Cast partes of England fell to Lewis.

1217  
Councells at  
Cambrydge, &  
at Drford.

Castles of He-  
dingham, Wy-  
ford, Norwich  
and Colchester  
yielded to Le-  
wis.

Castle of  
Mount-sozell.

In this meane space, to wit, on the 20. day of January, the knights and souldiers of the Castle of Mount-sozell in Leicestershire went out to robbe, which when the knights and souldiers of Nottingham vnderstood, they met & fought with them, toke tenne of their knightes, fourtene of their souldiers, slew thre of them, and returned.

The towne of  
S. Albons  
spoiled by  
Falcatus.

The 22. of Januarie, Falcatus de Brent, a wicked robber, hauing gathered a number of ruffians out of the Castles of Drford, Northampton, Bedford, and Windsor, came to the abbey of S. Albons in the euening, spoiled y<sup>e</sup> towne, toke men, women and children, and bound them verie sore, and slew some, so that the Abbot to saue the abbey and towne from burning, was faine to giue to Falcatus one hundred pound of siluer.

A truce taken.

About this time, the ambassadours of Lewis, which were at Rome about his busines there, did giue him to vnderstand, that except he went out of England, the sentence of excommunication, which Walo the Legate had pronounced against him, should be confirmed by the Pope, vpon Maundie thursday: for this cause therefore truce was taken betwene Lewis and king Henry vntill one moneth after Easter, all thinges to remaine in state as they then were.

Philip king of France called his sonne Lewis by spectall commandement, to returne into France, vnto a councell at Lyons, to be holden about Midlent, which thing the English men toke heauily, but hee refusing an othe on the Euangelists to returne before the truce should be expired, they were somewhat pacified. He being passed ouer, straight way William Earle of Salisburie, William Earle of Arundell, William Earle Warren, and many other, reuoluted to the kings side. Also William Marshall reclaimed William his eldest sonne

come unto the kings allegiance: and thus became the part of Lewis weakened very much, and the kings power was greatly increased: And being divided into divers places, they besieged many castles at one time, recovering the castles of Marlebozow, Fernham, Winchester, Cicester, and other which they demolished.

In the feast of Easter, by procurement of William Marshall the elder, Ra-  
 nulphe Earle of Chester, William Earle of Albemarle, William Earle Ferrers,  
 Robert de Veteriponte, Brienus de insula, William de Entelope, Philip de Mere,  
 Robert de Gangy, Falcatus de Brent, with his Castle keeper and manie other  
 were gathered together, to besiege the Castle of Mount-forsell in Leicester  
 shire, the chiefe keeper of which Castle was named Henrie de Braybrooke, who  
 sent to Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, then at London with the  
 French men, and requiring him to come to their aide: whereupon the saide  
 Earle of Winchester, to whome the Castle belonged, went to Lewis, then  
 lately returned out of France, requiring him to sende some aide to remove  
 the siege, and so a power was sent out of London 600. knights, and 20000. ar-  
 med souldiers, they had for captaines, Earle Patricius, the marshal of France,  
 Sayer de Quincy, Robert fitz Walter, and other, who marching forward, spoiled  
 S. Albons, the church at Rindborne, Dunstable, and so forth, toward the north,  
 to raise the siege before Mount-forsell; but Ranulphe Earle of Chester, and other  
 left off their siege, and went to the Castle of Potttingham. The Barons a-  
 foresaid finding the siege to be removed, they march toward Lincolne, where  
 Gilbert de Gaunt and other had laide siege: they assaulted the Castle sharpe-  
 ly, but W. Marshall the elder sent thither a great power, such as would bee  
 in this place so long to write, and therefore I referre the same to my larger  
 booke. But to be short, these with much difficultie brake the gates of the Citie  
 of Lincolne, and entring the towne, they boldly smote upon their enemies,  
 and fought there a cruel battell, wherein the kings part so unhorsed the barons,  
 that they slewe and toke the most part of them: which being done, the kings  
 company fell upon the earle of Berch, & smote him through the braines, so that  
 he fel downe dead. Thus when the greatest part of the French men were slaine,  
 the residue toke them to flight, the Barons on the kings side following them  
 that fledde, toke manie in the chase, amongst the which was taken Sayer de  
 Quincy Earle of Winchester, Henry de Bohune Earle of Hereford, Gilbert de  
 Gaunt whome Lewis had lately made Earle of Lincolne, Robert fitz Walter,  
 Richard de Mountfichet, William de Mowbray, William de Bellocampo, William  
 Manduite, Almaricus de Hacary, Roger de Craffe, William de Caluile, William  
 de Rose, Robert de Resperle, Radulph Chanduite, and many more. The kings  
 souldiers spoiled the citie to the bare wals. This battell was fought on the 19.  
 daie of Aprill.

Mount-forsell

S. Albons.  
 Rindborne and  
 Dunstable  
 spoiled by the  
 Barons.

The Barons  
 overthrown  
 and taken at  
 Lincolne, and  
 that city spoiled.

On the next morrow there came news to the king, that the castle of Mount-  
 forsell was forsaken: whereupon the Shireffe of Potttingham shire was comman-  
 ded to lay the same flat with the ground.

Lewis through this misfortune that fell to him at Lincolne, fell in despaire  
 of any good end to come to his purpose, and therefore sent messengers to his  
 father,

Castle of  
 Mountforsell  
 overthrown.

father, and to Blanch his wife, who forthwith dispatched to him a power  
 But the coasts by Will. Marshalls commandement were kept. And now upon  
 S. Bartholomews day the Apostle the navy of Frenchmen were committed to  
 the wicked man Eustach the mayne or monke, to be conducted to the aid of Le  
 wes then being at London. These being entred into the sea, had a faire winde,  
 which dyaue them vpon the English coast: where when they were sailed a great  
 waite on their volage, Hubert de Burgo, and the y of the ports, espying them to  
 be twentie shippes, and a great number of smaller vessels, and galleies well  
 armed, they durst not ioine battaile with them on the sea, hauing the mselues  
 not past fortie Galleies and Shippes, but hauing the aid of the kings Souldi  
 ours, fell stoutlie vpon them on the backe part, made great slaughter of them.  
 The Englishmen also had Galleies with yron hokes, which gotoged the Shippes  
 of their enemies, whereby they were drownded in a moment, there was a cruell  
 fight betwene them, but the Frenchmen in thosce space were vterlie vanquish  
 ed: Eustach le Moyne was slaine by Richarde a bastarde sonne of king Iohn.

Lewes of  
 France his  
 power of  
 French vanqui  
 shed.

London besie  
 ged.

King Venle  
 and Lewes a  
 gree vpon arti  
 cles.

An. reg. 2.

These thinges beeing thus doone, William earle Marshall besieged the Ci  
 ty of London round about, as wel by water as by land, so to cause them within  
 to yelde: therupon Lewes beeing in so greate a straitte, gaue vnderstanding  
 to the Legate, and to earle Marshall, that he woulde bee ruled by their Coun  
 sell in all thinges vpon condition, that sauing his honour, and auoiding slauin  
 der of his men he might haue peace conuenient: therenpon both parties met, &  
 talked together, nere vnto the towne of Stanes, hard by the riuer of Thames,  
 H. Henry, the Legate, the Marshall, and many other on the one part, and the said  
 Lewis, the barons, & noble men on the other side, where by the operation of gods  
 grace, they did soule agree to the forme of peace on the xi. daie of September.  
 First Lewis & the excommunicate persons of his side, did sweare by the holy E  
 uangelists, they should stand to the order and iudgment of the church, and should  
 be faithfull, &c. Lewis returned into France. From the benefit of the absolution  
 and peace were exempted, Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and all of the Clergie,  
 which had borne ante fauor to Lewis, and the Barons, were all deprived from  
 their benefices by the Legate.

Lewis returned  
 into France.  
 The cleargie de  
 priued of their  
 benefices by the  
 Legate.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne, gaue 1000. marks to the Pope, and 100. marks  
 to the Legate; whose example many other did follow.

1218  
 Barons of  
 England tooke  
 their journey  
 toward Jerusa  
 lem.

This yere deceased William Vernon Earle of Deuonshire. Ranulph  
 Earle of Chester, Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, William de Albe  
 neto Earle of Arundell, William Earle Ferrers, with the Barons, Robert  
 Fitz Walter, Iohn Constable of Chester, and William Harcourt, with a greate  
 traine, toke their journey toward Jerusalem. Walo the Legate being sent for  
 by the pope to returne, departed toward Rome with an infinit quantity of mo  
 ney gotten by one meane or other, and Pandolph elected Bishop of Norwiche  
 succeeded Legate. About this time king Henry did obtaine, and gate the proper  
 scale of the realme into his custodie.

An. reg. 3.

1219

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, to whome Peter Bishoppe  
 of Winchester ministred all things necessarie.

This yere died Hugh Bishoppe of Hereforde, Hugh Foliothe Archdeacon of  
 Salisbury,



Salisbury, William Marshall Earle of Pembroke, Gouvernour of the kings person and Realme, and David Earle of Huntingdon, brother to William king of Scots, William Marshall was honourably buried at London in the new Temple, vpon the 15. of Aprill, concerning whome a certaine Versifier made these verses:

*Sum quem Saturnum sibi sensit Hibernia: Solem*

*Anglia: c Mercurium Normannia: Gallia Martem.*

He was a noisome tamer of the Irish men, & honor vnto the English men, he had bene a merchant vnto the Normans, for he had purchased many things in it: vnto the Frenchmen he was a warrior, and an invincible knight. He left after him five sonnes, and five daughters, which daughters were thus married. Mawd to Hugh Bigot, Ioane to Warren de Mounthensy, Isabell to Gilbert de Clare, Sibill to William Earle of Darby, and Eue to Will. de Bruse, betwixt which five, all his great inheritance was after diuided, for all his sonnes died without issue, and were euerie one after other Earles of Pembroke. After the death of William Marshall, the king remained in custodie of the Bishop of Winchester.

About the same time, Lewis sonne to Philippe king of Fraunce, at the instance of his Father, went with a great army to the City of Tolouse, there to assaile the Heretikes called Albigenes, but hee preuailed nothing at all against them.

In the siege of that city, Simon Mountfort earle and captaine of Lewis army was slaine, and at another castle not far off, was slaine the brother of the said Simon, for the death of which two noble warriors, great lamentation was made, and Lewis returned againe into France without any victorie.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Warleborough.

About midlent Pandolph the Legate called a counsell at London, the archbishops, bishops, Abbots, and other being present, the Abbot of Welles was consecrated Bishop of Ely. Vnto the which Councell Robert sometime Abbot of Eborney brought the Popes letters, which commanded his Legate Pandolph and Steph. Archb. of Canterbury, that they should see the King to be newly crowned, because his first coronation, by reason of the troubles, was not so solemnly done as was decent: Whereupon order was taken, and on Whitunday he was crowned at Westminster by Stephen Langton archbishop of Canterbury.

Ralph Earle of Chester returned from Damata in the siege whereof hee had set forth himselfe and his people, with most large expenses, whereby hee wanted praise and honour before God and men: But Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, with Robert fitz Walker and other arriving at Damata, after the same was wonne, died there.

This yere on Whitson Euen, was the new worke of our Ladies chappel at Westminster begun, King Henry being the founder, who laid the first stone.

Proclamation was made, that all strangers should auoide the realme, except such as came with Merchandise, and to make sale of them vnder the kings safeconduct.

Ranulph the third Earle of Chester, Lincoln, and Richmond, and Lorde of A little

all earle of Barre shall died.

Chro. Tint.  
Tho. Rudborne

Caradacus.

An. reg. 4.

1220

King Henry newly crowned.

An. reg. 5.

All strangers to auoide the realme.

Castles of  
Chartley and  
Berkston built  
by  
Abbey of Dela-  
cresse.

1221  
Nichas. Triu.  
Antiq. Calend.  
in Brissolia.

A beneuolence.  
Nic. Triuer.

Isabel the k.  
another went  
into France.

An. reg. 5.

1222  
Proruinciall  
Councell.  
Radulph. Cogsh.  
Gualter Couen.  
Lib. Bermond.

An Apostate  
bient.

A counterfait  
Christ.

Radulph Cogsh.

Gualt. Couen.  
Nic. Triuer.

little Brittain, came out of the holy land into England, and builded the castles of Chartley, Berkstone, and the Abbey of Delacresse.

William of S. Maries Church, byshop of London, did of his owne free will resigne his bishopricke, the moxow after the connerfion of S. Paul, Eustach de Fawconbridge then treasurer of the Erchequer, was elected bishop of London, whose election was confirmed by Pandolph the legate. And the same Pandolph ceased from executing the office of legate, and returned to Rome.

The Friar Preachers, thirtene in number were sent into Englande, and hauing to their Prior: Gilbert de Fraxineto in companie of Peter de Roch Bish. of Winchester came to Canterburie, and there presenting themselves before the Archbishop Stephen, he commanded the said Prior to preach before him, and liked him so well, that he euer after loued their order. On Saint Laurence daie they came to London, and so to Orforde on the daie of the Assumption, in whose hono: they builded an Oratorie, and also those Scholes which since were called S. Edwards scholes, in whose parish they toke a place and there for a time remained, and after that remoued to the place without the wals, which the king assigned them.

King Henry subdued the Welshmen which rebelled.

The noblemen graunted to the king two markes of siluer of euerie hide of land.

Isabel the kings mother, without making her sonne or his Counsell priue to her purpose, went ouer into Fraunce, and there married with the earle of March Hugh Bronne, vnto whome she had bene betrothed before her first marriage with king Iohn.

King Henry gaue his sister Iane to Alexander K. of Scots, who married her at Forke: and Hubert de Burgh earle of Kent, and chiefe Iustice of England, married the king of Scots sister Margaret, William de Albencro earle of Arundell, died comming from the holy land, who was conueied into Englande, and buried at Wimondham, a Prior of his foundation.

A Proruinciall counsell was holden at Orforde, by Stephen Langton Arch-bishop of Canterburie, and his Suffragane byshops and others, in the conuentuall Church of Osney fiftene daies after Easter, where were degraded a priest and a Deacon, the Priest for homicide, the Deacon for sacrilege and the first committed. Another Deacon offending moze depely, denied the profession of Christian religion, and for the loue he bare to a Jewish woman, caused himselfe to bee circumcised, following the Jewish rites and customs: hee was degraded, and being left as a laie person and Apostata, was condemned and committed to the fire, by the seruantes of Falcatus, wherein he miserablie ended his life. There was also a yong man and two women brought before them, the yong man would not come in anie Church, nor be partaker of the Sacraments, but had suffered himselfe to be crucified, in whome the scars of all the wounds were to be seene, in his hands, head, side, and feete, and hee resolued to be called Iesus of these women and other. One of the women being old, was accused for bewitching the yong man vnto such madnes, and also (altering her owne name) procured herselfe to be called Mary the mother of Christ: They being consult of the se

these crimes and other, were adiudged to be closed by betwene two walles of stone, where they ended their liues in miserie. The other woman being sister to the young man, was let go, because she reuealed the wicked fact.

On Saint Iames daie, the citizens of London kept games of defence and wrestling, nere vnto the Hospitall of Maulde, where they gotte the masterie of the men of the Suburbes. The Bayliffe of Westminster deuising to bee reuenged, proclaimed a game to be at Westminster vpon Lamas day, ther vnto the citizens of London repaired, & when they had plaide a while, the Bailie with the men of the Suburbes harnessed themselves and fell to fighting; that the citizens being foullie wounde, were forced to runne into the Citie, where they rang the common Bell, and assembled the Citizens in great number, and when the matter was declared, euerie man wished to reuenge the fact. The maior of the citie being a wise man and a quiet, willed them first to moue the Abbot of Westminster of the matter, and if hee woulde promise to see amendes made, it were sufficient: But a certaine Citizen named Constantine Fitz Arnulph, willed that all Houses of the Abbot and Bayliffe shoulde be pulled downe, which worde beeing once spoken, the common people issued out of the Citie without any order, and fought a ciuill battaile (for Constantine the first) pulled downe manie houses, and oft times with a loud voyce cryed, in praise of the said Constantine, the soy of the mountaine, the soy of the mountaine, God helpe, and the lord Lodowike.

A few daies after this tumult, the Abbot of Westminster came to London to Philippe Dawbney, one of the kings counsell, to complaine of the iniurie done to him, which the Londoners perceiving, besette the House about, and took by violence twelue of the Abbots Horses awate, cruellie beating of his men, &c. But whyles the foresaid Dawbney, laboured to pacifie the vyrgere, the Abbot gotte out at a backe doore of the house, and so by a boate on the Thames hardlie escaped, the citizens throwing stones after him in greate abudaunce. These things being thus done, Hubert de Burgo, Justiciar of England, with a great army of men came to the towre of London, and sent for the Maior and Aldermen, of whome hee enquired for the principall Authours of this faction. Then Constantine, who was constant in the sedition, was more constant in the answere, affirming that he had done it, and that he had don much lesse then he ought to haue done: The Justiciar toke him and two other with him, and in that morning early sent them to Falcarius by water, with a great number of armed men, who brought Constantine to the gallowes, and when hee sawe the rope about his necke, he offered for his life 15000. marks, but that woulde not saue him: so he was hanged with Constantine his nephewe, and Galside, that proclaimed his proclamation on the 16. of August.

Then the Justiciar entring the Citie with a great army, caused to be apprehended as many as he could learne to be culpable, whose sex and hands he caused to be cut off, which cruelty caused many to flee the Citie.

The king toke of the Citizens srtie pledges, which he sent to diuers Castles: he deposed the maior, appointing a Gardien or keeper ouer the citie, and caused a great gibbet to be made, & after heauy threatnings, the citizens were reconciled.

Comterfaite  
Barz & Chyke

Westling.  
Mathew Paris.

A tumult in  
London.

Chro. Dun.  
Abbot of West-  
minster put to  
his wits.

Chiefe Justice  
entred the citie  
of London with  
an army.

Constantine  
with others  
hanged.

Mathew Paris.  
Ferte and  
hands of many  
cut off.  
Maior of Lon-  
don deposed.

reconciled, paying to the king many thousand marks.

*An. reg. 7.  
Tempests and  
death.*

On holie Good daie was great thunder and lightning throughout all Eng-  
land, and such great floods of water followed, with great windes and tempest,  
which continued till Candlemas, that the yere following wheat was solde for  
twelve shillings the quarter.

*Great tempests  
ouerthrewe  
Churches and  
Castles.*

On S. Andrewes day a great thunder ouerthrewe Churches, Castelles, and  
houses, so that scantle anie bodie escaped free from harine by this tempest. A  
knight and his wife and 8. men of his household, with the fall of his house were  
slaine, in Bilardstune a village in Warwicksheire.

1223

King Henry kept his Christmas at Oxford, and after returned to London,  
In a councell holden at London the Archbysshop of Canturburie and other the  
nobilitie and Barons of the Realme, required the king to confirme the  
Liberties, for the which the warre was moued against his Father, and that  
himselfe at the departing of Lewes out of Englande, sware to obserue:  
whereupon forthwith the king sent his Letters to all the Sheriffes of the  
Realme, commaunding them to inquire by the oathes of twelve lawfull  
men in euerie Countie, what Liberties were in Englande in the time of king  
Henry his Grandfather, and to send the inquisition so made to London 15. daies  
after Easter.

*Radul. Cogshall.  
Great tempests  
at Barnewell  
and Chelms-  
ford.*

As the Bishop of Ely was giuing orders, at Barnwell in the first weeke of  
Lent, there rose such a tempest of raine and thunder, that all in the church were  
readie to fall to the ground, and such flashes of lightning entred the Church,  
that ech man thought it had bene set on fire, and such a filthy stench arose with-  
all, that manie of the compante fell sicke thereof, and hardelie escaped death.  
Likewise whilest the Bishop of London was at Chelmsford giuing orders, a  
greate tempest of winde and raine annoied such as came thither at that time:  
whereof it may be gathered (saith mine author) how highlie God is displeased  
with such as come to receiue orders, to the end they may liue incontinently, and  
at ease, of the stipends appointed to Churchmen, and the offerings of the faith-  
full, giuing themselves to banqueting and uncleannes, and so with vnclean and  
filthie bodie (but more vncleane soules) presume to minister vnto God the au-  
thor of all puritie and cleanness.

*King of Jerusa-  
lem came into  
England.*

John de Brennes king of Jerusalem, and chiefe master of the Hospitall there,  
came into England, and required aid to win Jerusalem, but hauing rich gifts  
giuen him, he returned with small comfort.

*An. reg. 8.  
Tho. Wiker  
Mount Gomer  
castle found-  
ed.*

Leolyn prince of Wales founded the castle of Mountgomery, and there with  
certaine Englishmen, Hugh Lacy and his retinue, in despight of the king, at-  
tempted to constrain William Marshall earle of Pembroke, and other, to yeld  
to them: but the whole countrie rose in armoz, and ouercame them.

1224

King Henry kept his Christmas at Portsmouth, with the Archbysshop, and  
a great number of knightes, but the earle of Chester with other conspiratours  
against the king, kept their feast at Leicester, threatening the king and his iustici-  
ars, for the custodies of lands and castles, which the king required of them. The  
archbysshop of Canturbury and his suffragane bishops, excommunicated all the  
disturbers of the king and Realme.

*Disturbers of  
the king ex-  
communicated.*



The earle of Chester and his complices, perceiving that the king had a greater number of men of armes then they, and also fearing the excommunication, came to the king at Southampton, yielding their Castles and honours which appertained to the crowne. Then the king laid siege about the castle of Bedford, that Falcatus had long kept by strength, which siege he continued by the space of eight weekes, and tooke the Castle on the fifteenth of August, on which daie he caused to be hanged to the number of eightie two men of armes and other Souldiers, Falcatus de Brent, who was fledde into Wales, hearing that the Castell was taken, and his men slain, under the conduct of the Bishop of Couentre, came to Bedford and fell at the kings feet, requiring mercy. The king deliuered him to Eustace bishop of London, and the castle was made an heape of stones. There was granted to the king throughout England two shillings for euerie carucate of land.

Rad. Cogshah.  
Bedford castle  
besieged.

Caruage  
granted.

The friers minours first arrived at Douer nine in number, five of them remained at Canterburie, & did there build the first couent of friers minours that euer was in England: the other foure came to London, and lodged at the preaching friers the space of fiftene daies, and then hired an house in Coznehill, of Iohn Trauers one of the Sherriffes, they builded there little celles wherein they inhabited. The deuotion of the Citizens towarde them, and also the multitude of the friers so increased, that they were by the Citizens remooued to a place in Saint Nicholas Shambles, which Iohn Iwyn Citizen and Mercer of London appropiated vnto the communalitie of the Citie, to the vse of the saide friers, and became himselfe a lay brother.

Grey Friers.  
Regist. Fratrum  
minorum.

William Ioynar builded their quier, Henry Wales sometime Mayor of London, the bodie of the church, Walter Potter Alderman, the Chapterhouse: Gregorie Roklie the Doctar: Bartholomew of the castle made the Refectory.

An. reg. 9.

The fiftenth part of all mens goods moueable within the Realme, as well of the Cleargie as of the Laitie, was granted to the king to ayde him in his right beyond the Seas, and the king granted to the barons and people, the liberties which they long time had sued for: hee caused charters to be made, and sent into euerie cuntry twaine, one of the common liberties, and the other of the forrest.

1225  
Fifteenth.

Great charter  
confirmed.

Richard the kings brother, and his uncle William Longa spey earle of Salisburie and many other, were sent into Gascoigne, who subdued the same, and recovered portiers.

Gascoigne sub-  
dued.

This yere died Hugh Bygot earle of Castangles, or Canbyldgeshire, &c. al whose lands and honours the king appointed to the custody of Hubert de Burgh the Justiciar.

An. reg. 10.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Winchester, from whence hee removed to Marleborow, where he was taken with a grievous sickness, and lay there many daies like to die.

1226.

In the meane season, while the king at Marleborow recovered his sickness, there came to him William de Longa spata, bassarde sonne to king Henry the second, that by gift of king Richard had married Ela the daughter and heire of the earle of Salisburie, who after long and dangerous traualles on the Seas, had

Grievous com-  
plaint made a-  
gainst Hubert  
the Justiciar.

had with much adoe arrived in Cornetwall, he being joyfully receiued of the king, made a grienous complaint of the Justiciar Hubert de Burgo, because, while he was in partes beyond the Seas in the kings seruice, the said Justiciar had sent a lewd man, of base birth, and euill race, to haue committed fornication with his wiife, and would by force haue contracted an adulterous marriage with her. He said further, that except the king did thoroughly punish the Justiciar, for that fact he himselve with disturbance to the whole realme, would seeke to auenge it.

An. reg. 11.  
Tho. Rudborne.

The Justiciar being present, confessed his fault, and with great hopes, and other costly gifts, obtained the earles fauour, so that he bade the said Earle to a dinner, in the which (as men thought) the Earle secretly poysoned, went to his castle at Salisbury, where hee laie sicke, and died, and was buried in the new Cathedral Church of new Salisbury, with this Epitaph:

*Flos comitum Guilielmus obiit stirps Regis: longius  
Ensis vaginam capiti habere breuiem.*

Bishops died.

This yere Richard de Marisco bishop of Durham like an olde persecuter of religious persons, for the maintenance of his most filthy quarrell he picked against them, came with a great rout of men of Lawe towards London, and lodged in the Abbey of Peterborough, after he had daintily refreshed himselfe with costly meates, he went to bed in health, but was found dead in the next morning, he was buried at Durham, when he had saue Bish. nine yeres. Also Benedict bishop of Rochester, and Pandolph bishop of Exeter deceased: unto the which Pandolph succeeded T. de Blundevile, cleark of the kings Exchequer, through helpe of Hubert de Burgo the Justiciar.

The same yere also deceased William Brewer Lord de la Hiche, Loyde of Criminstre in Denonshire, and was buried at Dunkeswell an Abbey which he had founded. He had bene a worthy captaine in the holy land under king Richard.

1227

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Reading, and in the holy daies died William Earle of Essex, for whom many soze lamented, because he was a lustie young man.

King Henry ex-  
acted money of  
the Londoners.

The king blaming the citizens of London, because they had giuen to Lewis the French king (now deceased) at his departure out of England 5000. marks, he compelled them to pay the like summe to him, beside the fiftieth parte of their moueables: and of the burgeses of Southampton he toke 1200. marks.

Charters can-  
celled.

In a counceil at Oxford the king proclaimed, that forasmuch as he was now of lawfull age, he would rule himselfe at his pleasure, and forthwith made all the charters of the liberties & forests to be frustrate, alledging, that they were granted while he was vnder warde of other, and had not power of his owne body: so it followed, that those who would enioy the liberties afore granted, must renue their charters of the kings new seale, with such a price as the Justiciar awarded them.

Richard Earle  
of Cornetwall.

Richard the kings brother returned into England, and was made Earle of Cornetwall at Westminster, Hubert de Burgo was named Earle of Kent.

Sho: 12

Shortly after the Barons declared unto the king, that except he would re-  
foze the charter of liberties of the foresayd, which lately he had cancelled at Dr.  
ford, they would compell him by the sword.

Barons of  
England threat  
the king.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Pozeke, and from thence went straight  
to London, but by the way, finding fault with the measures of coyne, wine,  
and oyle, he brake some of them, and caused other to bee bent, commanding  
greater measures to be made, and the waight of bread to be made heavier,  
and the transgressors to be grievously amerced.

12:8

Measures and  
waights amer-  
ced.

Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury deceased at his manor of Slim-  
don in Suffex, and was buried at Canterbury.

This yere during all the summer were great thunders and lightnings,  
which burned many houses in sundrie places, and slew both men and beastes:  
and in the haruest following, fell great raines which did great hinderance to  
the inning of the coyne.

Great tempests

Eustace Bishop of London deceased, in whose place succeeded Roger Niger,  
a learned man, and of much worthines, a chanon of the church of Saint Paule.

An. reg. 13.

Also Geoffrey de Burgo bishop of Ely deceased, he gaue 200. acres of more  
in the marsh of Wisbich to the augmentation of the Priory of Ely. In whose  
place succeeded Hugh Norwold Abbot of S. Edmundsbury.

1229

King Henry kept his Christmas at Drford, the nobles of the realme being  
there present, where there came unto him the Archbishop of Burdeaur being  
sent from the nobles of Gascoigne, Aquitaine, and Poytow, whome the k. re-  
ceived honorably; there came also other solemne ambassadors out of Norman-  
die of the like arrand, that was to sollicite the king on the behalfe of the noble  
men of those partes, that he would touchsafe to come thither in proper person,  
promising him that they would all come to him with horse, harnesse, and all o-  
ther furniture, and that all the people of those Countreies should stedfastly a-  
bide by him, by whose helpe he might get againe all his inheritance. The king  
taking no other counsell then onely Hubert de Burgo his Justiciar, gaue them  
answere, that he would defer that matter till he saw a better time, and so sent  
away the ambassadors.

Robert de Bingham was made bishoppe of Salisburie, who did stoutly (by  
the helpe of God, the king, and good people) prosecute the building of the new  
church, which his predecesdor Richard Poore lately translated to Durham, had  
begunne.

King Henry dubbed knight, Iohn the sonne of Hubert de Burgo Justiciar of  
England, Richard Weharfet, alias Richard the Great, Deane of Banles, was  
made and consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury.

This yere the Uniuersitie of Paris endured great afflictions and injuries  
at the citizens and lay mens hands, whereupon the k. wrote his letters to the  
maisters and scholers that if they would come into England and there conti-  
nue their study, he would appoint them cities and towne with priuiledges and  
liberties for their abode, as should be to their contentations, 16. of July.

About the feast of S. Michaell the Archangell, the king gathered together at  
Dorismouth, all his nobilitie of England, Carles, Barons, and knights, with

Great promi-  
on to small  
purpose.

Hubert de Burgo in the kings displeasure called older traitor.

*1. reg. 14.*

1230  
King Henry treated the king of Scots at Pojke.

Mathew Paris.  
Darkenelle in Pauls church.

*An. reg. 15.*  
King Henry failed into Bytaine, but lost his time to no good effect.

King Henry returned out of Bytaine with great loss.

so great a power of horsemen and footmen, as never any of his predecessors at any time had the like, where there came unto him out of Ireland, Scotland, and Galloway, that the number was marvellous, thinking to have transported over such a power as were able to have won againe into his dominion all those lands that his father had lost: but when they came to take shipping, they wanted carriage for halfe the army; whereof when the king understood, he imputed al the fault to Hubert de Burgo Justiciar, and openly called him old traitor, casting him in the teeth, that hee had taken five thousande markes of the queene of France, to hinder his purpose, & in his rage, drawing out his sword, would have slaine the Justice, had not the Earle of Chester and other runne betwene, and boyded him away till the kings wrath was appeased.

At that time in the same haven arrived the Earle of Bytaine, who by other was bound to conduct the king into his land: but the said Earle and other persuaded the king to deferre that matter till Easter following, and the Justiciar was made friends with the king.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Pojke with the king of Scots, whome he had bidden to that feast, the Archbishop of that Citie being present, with the Carles and Barons, and a great family. His feast was royally kept three daies: and on the fourth, when the Sermon was ended, the king of Scots returned homeward with divers rich giftes, and king Henry passed towarde London.

Upon the day of Saint Pauls conversion, when Roger Niger bishop of London was at Masse in the cathedrall church of S. Paul, a great multitude of people being there, sodainly the weather waxed darke, that one could scantly see another in y church, and sodainly an horrible thunderclap lighted on the church, that the same was shaken as though it should have fallen, and out of a darke cloude came such lightning, that all the church seemed to be on fire, and such a stincke that all men thought they should have died. Thousands of men and women ranne out of the church, and being astonied, fell upon the ground bolde of all understanding, none of all the multitude tarried in the church, save the bishop and one deacon, which stode still at the high Altar awapting the will of God. And when the ayre was cleansed, the multitude came into the church againe, and the bishop made an end of his masse.

King Henry with a great army sayled into Bytaine, where, after hee had ranged the country, and made many spoiles, besieged the City of Haunts, and did nothing but spend great summes of treasure, the earles and Barons also, seeing that Hubert the Justiciar would not suffer them to do any thing against the enemies, they made baquets & feasts as they were wont to do in England, and tended nothing but eating & drinking: but the poorer sort of men, to maintaine themselves, sold all that they had, and beggered themselves for ever.

King Henry set all things in order for the keeping of the countrey of Bytaine, and so toke shipping, and on the 25. of October landed at Portsmouth, having spent and wasted an infinite summe of money, & given over unto death an innumerable number of noble men, or at the least brought them low with sicknesse and extream poverty. But Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester died

by



by the way as hee came homeward, and was buried at Tewkesbury, whose lands and honours the king granted unto Hubert de Burgo the Justice.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Lambeth, where Hubert the Justice provided all things for the feast, which being ended, the king called the prelates and nobles of the realme to a counsell at Westminster, where hee demanded of them a great subsidy, which would not be granted.

1231  
Subsidy de-  
manded and de-  
nied.

Richard the kings brother married Isabel Countesse of Gloucester, late wife to Gilbert Earle of Gloucester lately deceased, and sister to William Marshall earle of Penbrooke: and the marriage being scantly finished, the said William died, and was buried in the new Temple at London by his father. His brother Richard succeeded him in the Earldome.

William earle  
of Penbrooke  
buried in the  
new Temple.

The 3. of May, the king sent his letters to the townsmen of Oxford, and Cambridge, rebuking them for their over high renting of their houses upon the scholars of the universities: commanding them therfore to temper themselves in their said rents, and that the same be rated according to the aunient custome of the said Universities by two masters, and two burgesses. Likewise the king hearing that the Universities were pestered with many that fained themselves to be scholars, the which were none indeede, he commanded the Sherriffes of Cambridge shire, and Oxford shire to make proclamation that no cleark should abide in any the said Universities, except he liued vnder the discipline and tuition of some master of a scholl, vpon paine of imprisonment of all such as should so remaine in any of the said towncs aboue 15. daies after the proclamation.

Leolin prince of Wales spoiled the lands of the Barons that were on the borders of Wales, wherefore the king gathered a great power at Oxford, and went against the Welshmen, and builded the castle of Mauid, which before had bene destroyed.

Nic. Trivet.  
An. reg. 16.

The Jewes builded a Synagogue at London very curiously, but the christians obtained of the king that it should be dedicated to our blessed Lady, and was since by the same king Henry, granted to the brethren of Saint Anthony of Vienna, and so called Saint Anthonies Hospitall in London, and since annexed to Windsore Colledge, by Edward the fourth, about Ann. 1485. Shortly after which time, the same church of S. Anthony was new builded by John Tate masor of London.

Jewes Syna-  
gogue.

King Henry being informed of the hard dealing of the townsmen of Cambridge against the scholars, in rating their house rents, directed his Writte to the Mayor and Bailiffes, remembryng vnto them the multitude of scholars repairing to their towne for cause of studie, as well from diuers partes beyond the seas, as at home, whereof themselves ought not to be a little ioyfull, considering also that himselfe and his whole realme receiued the rebey great honour and commoditie: And therefore in the ende commaunded them to measure themselves more temperatly in rating their saide houses, to be rated by two masters, and two burgesses, according to the aunient custome of the University, behauing themselves in such wise, as no further clamour came to him for that businesse.

I. Shepheard,  
Record.  
To the townsmen of Cam-  
bridge.

1232

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, Peter Bishop of Winchester, ministering to him all things necessary to the saide feast, did also giue to the king, and to all them that were with him festiual garments.

Ranulph earle of Chester, Lincoln, and Huntingdon, deceased at Wallingford, from whence his bodie was carried to Chester to bee buried. Into this Ranulph succeeded in the Earldome of Chester, Iohn the sonne of Dauid, the brother of William king of Scots his sisters sonne. This Ranulph had foure sisters, the eldest named Matild, married to Dauid an Earle of Scotland, by whome she had this Iohn: the second named Mabel married to the earle of Arundel: the third named Agnes, married to William Ferrers earle of Darby: the fourth named Hauisia, married to Robert de Quincy earle of Winchester.

Hubert the  
chiefe Iusticiar  
sent to the tower

Through many complaints made against Hubert de Burgo, chiefe Iustice of England, the said Hubert fled to the chappell of Bendwood in Essex, where he was taken, and the king sent him to the Tower of London.

Great tempest.

The morrowe after Saint Martins day began thunders very horrible, which lasted fiftene daies. Great harme was done in London by fire, which began first in the house of Dauid Ioner a Lombard.

Historia Aurea.

An. reg. 17.

Ela Countesse of Salisbury widow, founded the monasterie of Chanons at Lacok in Wiltshire, for William Longespey her late husband, and William their sonne and heire.

1233

Pictauians pla-  
ced about the  
king.  
Machew Paris.

The king kept his Christmas at Worcester, where hee removed all his officers and counsellors, as wel bishops as earles and barons, and sent for Pictauians, whome he retained into his seruice, and committed to them the keeping of the castles and his treasures.

The likenes of  
sine Sunnes.

The vii. of April there appeared as it were foure sonnes beside the naturall sunne, of a red colour, and a great circle of cristall colour, from the sides whereof went out halfe circles, in the diuisions whereof, the foure sonnes went forth.

There followed that yere great warre and cruell bloodsheds, and generally great disturbance throughout England, Wales, and Ireland.

Dragons.

In the moneth of June in the south part of England by the Sea coast were seene two great Dragons in the aire, flying and fighting together a whole day, the one chasing the other to the deepe sea, and then were no more seene.

Robert and  
Roger Bacon.

The king being at Oxford, Robert Bacon openly preached against Peter bishop of Winchester, for that he euilly counselled the king to spoile the realme with Pictauians. Also Roger Bacon his brother both earnestly and pitifully perswaded the king to leaue the counsell of the said Peter. Also the Barons sent messengers to the king, requesting that he would put from him Peter Bishop of Winchester, and the Pictauians, or else they would depose him from his kingdome, and create a new.

The Barons  
threat the king.

Houses of con-  
uerts.

The king builded a faire church and many houses adioyning thereunto in the Citie of London, not farre from the olde Temple, but betwixt the old temple and the new: In the which house all the Iewes and Infidels that did conuert to the faith of Christ might haue vnder an honest rule of life sufficient living, whereby it came to passe, that in thoste time there was gathered a great number of conuerts, which were baptised and instructed in the lawes of Christ,

and

and did liue laudably vnder a learned man appointed to gouerne them. He also builded the hospitall of S. Iohn without the east gate of Oxford for sick folke and strangers to be relieved in.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Gloucester, with a very small company, because many nobles were gone from him. At the which time there was such a frost, that the coine was destroyed in the ground, and the rootes of herbes in the gardens: this frost continued till Candlemas without any snowe, so that no man could plow the ground, and all the yere after was vnseasonable weather that barrenesse of all things ensued.

Richard Marshall and Leoline prince of Northwales, with a great force invaded the kinges lands, and destroyed the same with fire & sword, from the coasts of Wales to Salisbury, which towne also they set a fire. By the perswasion of Edmund Archbishop of Canterbury, the king commaunded Peter Bishop of Winchester to go to his bishopricke, and also expelled all the Pictians into their owne Countrey, and making peace with Richard Marshall and Leoline prince of Wales, he called againe his naturall subiectes, and submitted himselfe to their counsell.

Richard Marshall in Ireland raising a warre there, by Geoffrey de Marisco, was slaine and buried at Bilkenny, Gilbert his brother succeded him in the earldome.

This yere was a great dearth and pestilence, so that many poore folkes died for want of victuals, and the rich men were stricken with couetousnes that they would not relieue them, amongst whom is to be noted, Walter Grey Archbishop of Yorke, whose coine being five yeres olde, doubting the same to be destroyed by vermine, hee commaunded to deliuer it to the husbandmen that dwelt in his manors, vpon condition to pay as much new coine after haruest, and would giue none to the poore for Gods sake. And it fortuned that when men came to a great sticke of coine nigh to the towne of Ripon belonging to the said archbishop, there appeared in the sheaves all ouer, the heads of worms, serpents and toads, and a voice was heard out of the coine-moune saying, Lay no hands on the coine, for the archbishop, and all that he hath, is the diuelles; to be short, the Bailiffes were forced to build an high wal round about the coine, and then to set it on fire, lest the venemous wormes should haue gone out and poysoned the coine in other places.

The same yere died Hubert Foliot bishop of Hereford, vnto whome succeded master Robert de Maydenstone, a famous learned man.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster in presence of the bishops and nobles of the realme.

The same yere was brought before the king seven Jewes, which at Norwich had stolen a boie, and kept him from the sight of the Christian people, by the space of one whole yere, and had circumcised him, minding also to haue crucified him in the solemnitie of Easter, as themselves confessed before the king, and were conuicted thereof, wherefore their bodies and goods were at the kings pleasure.

Frederike the Emperour married Isabell the kings sister. The Emperour

Hospitall at  
Oxford.  
Hist. Aurea.

An. reg. 18.  
Ioh. Rouse.

1234  
Great Frost.

Salisbury  
brent.

The Pictians  
and expelled.

Mathew Paris.  
Courtous  
Archbishop.

Coine full of  
vermine.

An. reg. 19.

1235

Jewes stole a  
child at Nor-  
wich.

Isabell the  
kings sister  
married to the  
Emperour

Three leopards  
sent to King Henry

sent to king Henry three leopards, in token of his regall shield of armes, where in three leopards were picture: he also after ward sent him a camell.

Carnage.

The same time king Henry took carnage, that is to say, two marks of silver of euerie knights fee, towards the marriage of his said sister Isabel to the Empersur, with whome he gaue 30000. marks, besides her ornaments, crowne and other goods of inestimable value.

Richard here to the earldome of Gloucester married the daughter of Hubert de Burgo earle of Kent.

S Mary Spital.

An. reg. 20.

Walter Brune a citizen of London, and Rosia his wife, founded the Hospitall of our Lady without Bishopsgate of London, a house of such great reliefe to the needie, that there was founde standing at the suppression a hundred and foure score beddes for the poore well furnished, and the lands thereof were then valued at foure hundred seuentie and eight pounds, five shillings, and six pence by the pèere.

1236

Mathew Paris.  
Hist. Aurea.  
W. Packington.  
King Henry  
married the  
earle of Pro-  
uences daugh-  
ter, Elianor.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester with great ioy and solace, looking for the returne of certaine messengers, whome hee had sent into Prouence to contract a marriage with Elianor the daughter of Raymond Earle of Prouence: she was married at Canterbury by Edmond Archbishop of Canterbury, and crowned at Westminster the twentieth daie of January. To this coronation resorted so greate a number of all Estates, that the Citie of London was scarce able to receiue them. The citie was adorned with silkes, and in the night with lampes, cressets, and other lights, without number, besides manie pageants, and strange deuises which were shewed. The citizens rode to meet the king and quene, being clothed in long garments, embroidered about with Golde and silke of diuers colours: their Horses finelie trapped in arrate, to the number of 360. euerie man bearing golden or silver cups in their hands, and the kings trumpeters before them sounding. The Archbishoppe of Canterbury did execute the office of Coronation. The citizens of London did minister wine as butlers. The citizens of Winchester took charge of the kitchen, and other citizens attended their charges.

The citizens of  
London butlers  
at the corona-  
tion

Ioan the kings Sister, wife to Lewlin prince of Wales died at Hauering in Essex, and was buried at Tarent in Dorset.

High waters.

About this time fell such abundance of raine the space of two monethes, that the Thames overflowed the bankes, causing the marshes about Walsbych to be all on a Sea, whereon the boates and other small vessels were carried with the streame, so that besides cattell, the greatest number of men, women, and children inhabiting those parts were drowned: in the great palace of Westminster men did row with cherries in the midst of the hall, and they rode on Horses backe to their chambers.

An. reg. 21.  
Statutes of  
Merton.

1237

A parlement at Merton, wherein were made the statutes of Merton.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

Richard Pore bishop of Durham, after he had sate bishop twelue yeres, a man of great vertue and profound learning, deceased: he was first Bishop of Chester, then of Salisburie, and then of Durham, hee deliuered the last named from the debt which Richard de Marisco his predecessor had bounde it in, for the summe



summe of 40000. marks. He also did translate the church of Salisburie from a barrain by place, néere to the earles castle, vnto a more competent place, and by the aduise of his excellent artificers, whome hee fetcht out of farre countries laide a wide and large foundation of a new church in a more plentiful soile. To the furtherance of which worke, not only the bishop, but also the king, and manie noble men did put their hands. More, he builded an house of priours named the Charnell at Tarent in Wiltsheire and gaue it to the queene, in which the chiefe her Sepulture. Hee also founded an hospitall for the poore, by the colledge of Glouc in Salisburie.

New Church  
of Salisburie.

John surnamed Scot earle of Chester was poisoned by his wife, daughter to Leoline prince of Wales, and died thereof. The countie came to the king for lacke of heires.

County of Che-  
ster came to the  
kings hands.

An. reg. 22.

Odo cardinall, by the commandement of king Henry came into England as Legate from the pope, the nobles of the realme not knowing the reof till his landing: wherefore manie conceiued great indignation against the king, and said he peruerteth all things, he breaketh promise, law and faith, in all points, and hath married a stranger without our consent, or knowledge of his friends, and naturall subiects: now he giueth a thing, and by and by reuoketh it againe: and nowe secretlie hee hath called in the Legate: it was saide, that Edmund Archbishop of Canterburie did blame the king, especially for calling in the Legate, whereby he knew that great prejudice of his dignitie would ensue, to the great detrimēt of the whole Realme, but the king not regarding the Archbishops counsell or anie other his subiects, would by no meanes call backe what he had intended.

Murmuring a-  
gainst the king.

This yere passed on a stormy and troublesome weather, and very unhealthy, so that no man could remember so many folke to be sicke of the ague.

Simon de Mountfort, son to Simon earle of Mountfort, for doubt that M. Blanch mother to the french king was offended with him, fled into England, and was made earle of Leicester, and Steward of England by king Henry.

Simon Mount-  
fort earle of  
Leicester.

1238

H. Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, and on the morrow after S. Stephens day, he gaue in solemne marriage to Simon de Mountfort, Elianor his sister, Is. Johns daughter, widow of William Marshall earle of Denbroke.

Richard de Clare toke to wife Matilde, the daughter of John Lacy earle of Lincoln.

Odo bone bring lodged in the Abbey of Mney, the Schollers of Oxfoorde slew his master coke, who was also the legates brother, and the legate for feare gate him into the steeple of the church, where he helde him till the kings officers comming from Abingdon, conueied him to Wallingfoorde, where he accused the misdoers.

Mathew Paris.  
Ypodigma.  
Legate put to  
his death.

Odo de Kilkenny, as standerbearer of the schollers, was taken with 12. o. ther, and cast in prison, and long after went from S. Pauls church in London to the Legates house (which was Durham place) bngirded, without gotone, bare-headed and barefooted, whereby the y asked him for giuenes, and then the legate released them to their Vniuersitie.

Schollers did  
penance at  
London  
John Brewer.

A scholler of Oxfoorde slaying himselfe madde, enterprised to haue slaine the

S 4.

King in dan-  
ger.

*An. reg. 23.*  
Nic. Triuet.

1239

Mathew Paris.  
Tower of London  
Ypodigma.

*An. reg. 24.*

1240

Mathew Paris.  
Bulwarke by  
the Tower.

Monstrous  
fishes.

*An. reg. 25.*

1241

King Henry dining  
in Westminster hall,  
placed his  
guests there.

king in his chamber at Woodstocke: but he was taken, and after long imprisonment plucked in peeces with horses at Couentrie.

Simon de Mountfort, whome the king had made earle of Leicester (after hee had agreed with his elder brother earle Almericus for the same earledome) being also steward of Gascoigne, induced the king of England to recognise, that hee would holde of the king of France the land of the Baseles, the chiefe towne whereof is Balon, and was in times past a kingdome of it selfe, and so by acknowledging to be of the fee of the king of Fraunce, excluded the king of Castile, who chalenged the said fee to belong to the king of Spaine.

The tower of London was fortified, which the citizens fearing least it were done to their detriment, complained to the king, who answered, that he had not done it to their hurt, but (saith he) I will from hence forth do as my brother doth, in building and fortifying of Castles, who beareth the name to be wiser then I am.

Quene Elianor bare a son named Edward at Westminster, the 22. daie of June.

The king kept his Christmas at Winchester, where he made Baldwine de Riparis knight, and also earle of Wight, in presence of Richard earle of Cornwall, in whose custodie Baldwine had bene manie yeeres, and had married him to his wifes sisters daughter, the Lady Amicia.

Richard earle of Cornwall, the kings brother, took his journey towards Jerusalem, with many other noblemen of England. Upon S. Georges night, the stone gate and bulwarke which the king had caused to be builded by the Tower of London, was shaken with an earthquake, and fell downe, but the king commanded the same to be builded againe stronger then before. Leoline Prince of Wales deceased, and then betwixt his bastard sonne Griffin, and his legitimate sonne David, nephew to the king of England by his sister, great and greivous destruction rose for the principallitie, but at length Griffin being taken of his brother, was committed to prison.

Spanie strange and great fishes came ashore, whereof eleven were Seabuls, and one of huge bignesse passed by the river of Chamis, through the Bridge at London unhurt, till he came as far as the kings house at Portlake, where hee was killed.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, and many noble men with him, where, when the solemne service was done in the church, the king dining in the great hall of Westminster palace, did there place the Legate in the most honourable place of the table, to wit, in the middlest (which the noblemen tooke in euill parte) the king sate himselfe on his right hand, and the Archbysop of Poike on the left (for the Archbysop of Canterburie Edmund was dead) and then all the prelates and nobles according to their degrees, for so the king would haue it, and did himselfe set the guests.

The fourth day after Christmasse the Legate was by the Pope called home to the court of Rome: whereupon taking his leaue of all the Prelates, he took his journey towards the sea, whome the king with great pompe and an innumerable companie of the nobles, with trumpets sounding before them brought to

to the Seas; so that on the morrow after the twelfth date, the Legate (after the king with great sorrowe for his departure, had embraced him) took shipping, at Dover, at whose departure no man was soze but the king, and such as the Legate had enriched.

About the same time Peter of Sauoy, uncle to the Queene of Englande, to whome the king had given the earldome of Richmond, came into England.

The Jewes were constrained to pay 20000. markes at two tearmes in the yere, or else to be kept in perpetuall prison.

Gilbert Marshall Earle of Penbroke, dyed without the Colone of Hertford, being bruised in turneament, and was buried at London in the new Temple. Walter his brother hardlie obtayned the earldome, because hee procured that turneament, contrarie to the kinges will and pleasure. This Walter dying without issue, his heritage was divided betwixt the sonnes of his first sisters.

The walles and bulwarkes that were newlie builded about the Tower of London (in the building whereof, the king had bestowed more then twelue thousande markes) were againe unrecoverable throwne downe, as it were, with an earthquake, for wch chaunce the citizens of London nothing soze, were much amazed, for they were threatned, that the false walles and bulwarkes were builded in despight of them, to the end, that if any of them would presume to contend for the liberties of the city, they might there be imprisoned, and to the end, that many might be laid in diuers prisons, many lodgings were made there, that no one should speake with another.

The same yere Gilbert Bassett, through the stumbling of his horse, fell in a certain wood, as he went a hunting in the harvest time, and brake all his bones and sinewes, whereof in a few daies after he died, and shortly after his only son being but a child, died, whereby his inheritance came to Fulco Bassett deane of Worcester, brother to the said Gilbert.

Also about the same time John Byseth chiefe forester of England, departed this life.

The Templars in London, at this time in great glory, entertained the nobilitie, foraine Embassadors, and the prince himselve verie often, insomuch, that Mathew Paris crieth out on them for their pride, who beeing at the first so pome, as that they had but one horse to serue two of them (in token whereof they gaue in their scales two men upon one horsebacke) yet sodainelie they wared so insolent, that they disdained other orders, and toyted themselves with noble men.

Radulphus Niger bishop of London deceased, a man of worthy life, excellentlie well learned, a notable preacher, pleasant in talke and countenance, liberrall at his table: he fell sicke at his mannor called Bishops hall in the parish of Stephen heath, one mile east from London, and there died, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul in London. Fulco Bassett Deane of Worcester, succeeded Bishop of London.

King Henry kept his Christmas in the great hall at Westminster, at which time, when tidings came of Richard earle of Cornewalles comming home into

Peter of Sauoy earle of Richmond.

I. Reuerla. Gilbert Bassett shall buried at the new temple. Nic. Triuett.

Bulwarks by the tower. Mathew Paris.

Gilbert Bassett dyed.

The Templars at London in great glory.

An. reg. 25.

1242.

Peter earle of  
Richmond kee-  
per of Dover  
Castle.

into England, Peter of Sauoy Earle of Richmond, vpon Petowères daie, like a discrète man, resigned into the kings hands, the most famous Castles of England, considering he had taken moze vpon him then hee was able to beare, lest any disturbance should arise in the realme by any complaints: hee asked licence of the king to goe to his owne Countrey, but before he had taken shipping, the king sent for him with speede to returne, and against his will hee receiued the Castle of Dover to keepe.

Nicho. Trlu.  
Ypodigma.  
King Henry  
sailed into Por-  
mandie.

King Henry with a great army sayled into Normantie, purposing to reco- uer Poitiers, Guyen, and other Countries, but after manie bickerings, to the losse of Englishmen, he treated a peace.

Eliapor daughter to Geoffrey Earle of Bytaine, and sister to Archure, ended her life prisoner in the Castle of Wyssow, famished to death.

Hugo de Albeneto Earle of Arundel died, and his inheritance was diuided among foure sisters, he was buried at Wilmondham.

An. reg. 27.  
Gernat. Dorob.  
Hubert de Bur-  
go died.

Also Hubert de Burgo Earle of Kent died at his mannour of Banstede in Surrey, and was buried in the Church of the Friers Preachers at London, which Church was then in Holborne, vnto the which Church he gaue his noble pallace at Westminster, which afterwards Walter Grey the Archbishoppe of Poike bought of them, and made it his Anne, since commonly called Poike place, now white hall.

Great floodes.

The Thamis ouerslowed the bankes about Lambeth, and drowned hou- ses and fieldes, the space of fire miles, and in the great Hall at Westminster men took their horsebackes, because the waters ranne ouer all.

1243

King Henry kept his winter in Bardeaur, being so deloded by the Picant- ans and Gascoines, that he was greatly empouerished, notwithstanding all the scutage he had extorted, and treasures that were giuen him, all was spent without profite, for he had lost all his lands and honours as well in Picantia as in Gascoigne.

King Henry having set thinges in order beyond the sea in Gascoigne, took shipping and arriued at Portsmouth in the 25. day of September.

Boniface, sonne to Thomas earle of Sauoy, brother to Peter earle of Sauoy, and vncle to the Quene Eliapor was confirmed Archbishop of Canterburie, and was consecrated at Lions.

Richa. de earle  
of Cornewall  
rooke to wile  
Cincia.

Beatrice Countesse of Poiance and Harbone, mother to the Quenes of England and of France, a comely, wise, and ciail woman, being sent for by the king, arriued at Dover, sumptuously and cosly apparelled, and in great estate, whom the nobles of England receiued with great hono: also the city of Lon- don was gorgeously prepared against her comming: she brought with her her daughter Cincia, to be married to Richard Earle of Cornewall the kings bro- ther, which marriage was celebrated at Westminster vpon the 23. day of No- uember, with great royalty, and compante of noblemen, in somuch that there were tolde 3000. dishes of meate at his dinner. At the which feast, by the deuise of the king, and the said Earle his brother, the brides name was turned, and of Cincia, was called Scientia.

An. reg. 28.  
1244

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Wallingford, where hee finished the bydall



bydall feast of Carle Richard his brother, to the which were bidden almost all the nobles of the realme.

Rainulph de Noua villa Bishop of Chichester, and Chancellor of England deceased on the first of February in his noble pallace at London, which he had builded from the ground, not farre from the Petre Temple, and the house of Conuerts.

Lincolns Inne.

Griffin the eldest sonne of Leoline Prince of Northwales, which was kept prisoner in the Tower of London, deuised subtilly howe to escape: wherefore one night hauing deceiued the watch, made of the hangings, sheets, towelles, &c. a long line, and put himselfe downe from the top of the Tower: but as he was sliding a good pace, with the weight of his body, being a very big man and a fat, the rope brake, and he fell on his necke, whose miserable carcassee in the morning being found by the Tower wall, was a pitifull sight to the beholders, for his head and necke were broken into his breast betwene the shoulders: the king hearing hereof, punished the watchmen, and caused Griffins sonne that was imprisoned with his father to be more streightly kept.

Miserable  
death of Griff.  
kin.  
Mathew Paris.

The king toke of the Citizens of London 1500. markes, for that they had receiued into their citie againe Walter Bokerell, who had bene banished twenty yeres, notwithstanding the citizens had proued that before that time the said Walter and his brother Andrew by their suite to the king, had gotten him to be reconciled and restored to the kings fauour. Robert Grosset Bishop of Lincolne, with other prelates, complained vnto the king of waste made of the church goods, by aliast Bishops and Clerkes of this lande, whereupon they were shortly holden.

Citizens of  
London fined to  
the king

Robert Grosset  
An. reg. 29.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at London with great solemnitie, many nobles being present.

1245

On the xviij. day of January Quene Elianor brought forth an other sonne, named Edmond.

Isabell Bulbecke Countesse of Orford deceased, and was buried in the preaching Friers church at Orford, because she was the foundresse there. Also Baldwin de Riparis Earle of Denonshire deceased in his nonage.

The Popes Wardrobe in the citie of Lions was burned, with all that was therein: and many men did say that the detestable charter of the tribute of England, which king Iohn did make, was burnt in that fire.

Thomas Sprot.  
W. Thorne.  
The Popes  
wardrobe burnt

King Henry being at London, made Richard de Clare sonne to Gilbert de Clare, (so called, because he was borne at Clare in Suffolke, who was already Earle of Gloucester) knight, and to the number of forty. The same Richard de Clare toke to wife the sister of the Earle of March, by whome he had issue Gilbert de Clare.

Gilbert de  
Clare earle of  
Gloucester.

The king enlarged the church of S. Peters in Westminster, pulling downe the olde walls and steeple, and caused them to be made more comely.

An. reg. 30.

Robert Ros otherwisse called Fursan, being made a Templar, died, and was buried at London in the new Temple.

Walter Marshall earle of Penbrooke deceased, and was buried at Tintern, and shortly after, his brother Anselme that succeeded him in the inheritance deceased.

ceased also without issue: and so all the fine sonnes of William Marshall being dead, their heritage was diuided amongst their sisters.

Sauoy place  
builed.

Peter earle of Sauoy uncle to the Quene, whom the king had made earle of Richmond, builed a sumptuous house by the Thamis at London, which place after his name was called, and is to this day, Sauoy, now an Hospitall founded by king Henry the seueneth.

1246

King Henry kept his Christmasse at London, accompanied with many nobles, who had bene with him in Wales.

Bigot earle of  
Norfolke made  
Barthall.  
Harold king of  
Span.

This yere by much intreatie the office of the Marshallshipp, & the honoz thereto belonging, was giuen to Roger Bigot Earle of Norfolke, by reason he married the eldest daughter of the great William Marshall.

King Henry keeping his Easter at London, dubbed knight Harold king of Span, who had done him homage. And at that time certaine of the noblest Welchmen came into the kings allegiance.

Hermosrodice:  
Pontrous.  
An. reg. 31.

In the diocesse of Lincolne, there was a woman of noble birth, welshaunred and beautiful, which was married to a rich man, and did beare him children, she also got another gentlewoman with childe, and begate three sonnes of her one after another, or euer it was knowen: the womens names were Hauisia and Lucia, as Henry Knighton affirmeth.

1247

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, and dined with the bishop on S. Stephens day.

Earthquake.

Upon S. Valentines euen there was a great earthquake in many places of England, especially at London, about the bankes of the Thamis.

Three halfe  
brethren to king  
Henry.

There arrived here in England the three halfe brethren to the king, to witte, Guy de Lusignan, William de Valence, and Achelmar a cleerke, with their sister Alice: this was the issue of Isabel sometime Quene of England, Countesse of March, which she had by Hugh Brune Earle of March. These being wearie of tarrying in Placania, which the Frenchmen had taken, the king went out to mete them, promising them great gifts and possessions, which he after performed more largely then he promised.

The Lady Iane daughter of Gwarin de Moncheney was married to William de Valencia the kings brother on the mothers side, for the said Lady was hette to Gwaren, and was a rich marriage. And Alice daughter to the Earle of March the kings sister on the mothers side was married to Iohn earle Waren.

Castle of Hert-  
ford giuen to  
William Cla-  
rence.  
Bale coine.  
Record of Bery.

King Henry made William de Valence knight, and gave him the Castle of Hertford, and the honoz therunto belonging with great treasure.

The coppe was so sore clipped, that it was thought god to change the same, and to make it baler: Whereupon stampes were grauen, of a new incision or cutte, and being sent to the Abbey of Wary in Suffolke, to Canterbury, Duellen, and other places, forbidding to vse any other stampe then was vled in the exchange or munte at London, all the olde stampes were called in.

Pestilence.  
Mathew Paris.  
An. reg. 32.

A great plague was in England, so that in September there was euery day nine or tenne buried in the churchyard of Saint Peter at Saint Albons, William Earle Ferrers and Matild his wife deceased, and William his sonne succeeded.

King

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester. Beatrice the widow of Raymond sometime Earle of Bouance, came into England, with Thomas of Sarum sometime earle of Flanders, to get some reliefe of the king.

1248

A parliament was called at London, wherein a subsidy was demanded, but as before it had bene divers times.

Parliament at London.

Walter Mancelarke sometime bishop of Carlisle, Robert Bacon, and Richard Fisacle, all preaching friers died this yere, which were the best learned in Divinitie, and other sciences at that time in England.

Robert Bacon.

The parliament beganne againe at London, wherein the king declared that he would not at the appointment of the nobles admit a Treasurer, Chancellor, or Justiciar, whereunto the nobles answered, neither would they impoverish themselves to enrich strangers their enemies, and so the parliament brake off. Wherethrough the king for want of money was faine to sell his plate and Jewels, greatly to his losse: and then the king demanded who had bought it; and being answered, it was solde at London, he saide, I know that if Ottavians treasure were to be solde, the citie of London would suppe it by, and by it those rusticall Londoners (quoth the king) abound in wealth, and call themselves Barons.

Parliament at London.

King Henry forced to sell his plate and Jewels.

The towne of Newcastle upon Tyne, for the most part, with the bridge was burned with an unquenchable fire.

An. reg. 33.  
New Castell burned.  
Earthquake.

Four daies before Christmas was a great earthquake in England, so that the tops of houses were shaken and throwne downe, walles did cleave, and the heads of chimnies and towers were shaken, but the bodies and foundations stirred not.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London, in which solemnitie, Richard earle of Cornwall, went to Wallingford, where with great number he celebrated that feast. And Richard earle of Gloucester, not farre from Gloucester, with no small glory kept the like feast. But the king (the feast of circumcision drawing nere) demanded of the citizens of London new gifts, &c.

1249

The king devising how to exact money from the citizens of London, made a mart at Westminster to last fifteene daies, and commanded that all trade of Merchandise should cease in the Citie those fifteene daies, which the Citizens were faine to redeeme with two thousand pounds. Besides this, the king toke vicuals and wine, where any could be found and paid nothing for it.

Mathew Paris.  
A mart at Westminster.

Two Merchants of Brabant complained to the king at Winchester, that they had bene robbed by men of that countrey, who had taken from them to the value of two hundred markes, which theues they had laine in the Court, whereupon such as were suspected, were taken to be tried, but the countrey purged them by othe, because they were for the most part all infected and given to theuerie: the merchants therefore continuing their suite, saide, that if they could not haue iustice, they would stae so much of English merchants goods in Brabant. Then the king caused twelue men of Winchester to be chosen, who also did quitte them that were accused, which thing when the king did see, he caused those twelue to be imprisoned, and swore, that in short space they should be hanged as accessaries and persuaders, and caused other twelue to

Mathew Paris.  
Strangers robbed, and rates hanged.

be

be empanelled, which last Quest found all, and appeached manie, especially of Hampshire, which were hanged.

Discord at  
Cambridge.

Great dissention arose in Cambridge betwixt the Schollers and Townesmen, so that houses were broken downe and spoiled, and many men wounded and slaine.

An. reg. 34.

In the moneth of June fell great raines, especially about Abingdon, which carried away many trees, houses, beaſts, milles, bridges, and one chappell, not farre from Abingdon.

1150

Mathew Paris.

Mathew Paris.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester with great solemnitie.

The Friers Augustines began to inhabite at Woodhouse in Wales.

Archbishop of  
Canterbury  
visiteeth Saint  
Bartholomewes in  
Smithfield,  
beateeth the  
Subprior and  
Chanons, &c.

Boniface Archbishop of Canterbury in his visitation came to the Priorie of Saint Bartholomew in Smithfield, where being received with procession in most solemn wise, hee saide he passed not upon the honour, but came to visite them: vnto whome the Chanons answered, that they hauing a learned bishop, ought not in contempt of him to be visited by any other, which answered so much misliked the Archbishopspe, that hee forthwith fell on the Subprior, and smote him on the face with his fist, saying, Indéede, indéede, doeth it become you English traytors so to answer mee? Thus raging with others not to be recited, hee rent in pieces the rich coase of the Subprior, trode it vnder fete, and thrust him against a pillar of the Chancell, that hee had almost killed him, but the Chanons seeing, that their Subprior was almost dead, they ranne and plucked off the archbishop with such a violence, that they ouerthrew him backward, whereby they might see that he was armed and prepared to fight.

The archbishops men seeing their maister downe (being all strangers, and their maisters countriemen borne in Prouance) fell upon the Chanons, beat them, tare them, and trode them vnder their fete: at length the Chanons getting away as wel as they could, ranne bloody and myzie, rent and forne, to the bishop of London, to complaine, who bade them goe to the king at Westminster, and tell him thereof: whereupon foure of them went thither, the rest were not able they were so fore hurt: but when they came at Westminster, the king would neither heare nor see them, so they returned without redresse.

In the meane season the whole citie was in an uproare, and readie to haue rung the common bell, and to haue hewed the Archbishop into smal pieces, but he was secretly got away to Lambeth.

The friers of the order of preachers through chysendome, and from Jerusalem, were by a common conuocation assembled together at their house in Holborne by London, to intreat of their estate, to the number of foure hundred, hauing meat and drinke found them of almes, because they had no possessions of their owne. The first day the king came to their chapter, found them meate and drinke, and dined with them. An other day the queene found them meate and drinke, and afterwardes the Bishop of London, then the Abbot of Westminster, the Abbot of S. Albons, the Abbot of Waltham, and so of other.

The king taking inestimable summes of money of all the rich men in his realme, toke of one Aaron a Jew bozne in Poike 14000. marks for himselfe,

and



and 10000. markes for the Quene, and befoze hee had taken of the same Jew so much as amounted altogether to 30000. markes of silver, and 200. markes of gold to the Quene.

3 markes of gold or silver was 8. ounces.

In October the sea flowing twice without ebbe, made so horrible a noise, that it was heard a great way into the land. Besides this, in a darke night, the sea seemed to be on a light fire, and the waues to fight one with another, so that the mariners were not able to saue their shippes: and to omit to speake of other, in one haven called Hureburne, besides small vessels, three noble and famous shippes were swallowed up of the waues. And at Winchelsea, besides cotages for salt, and fishermens boates, bridges and milles, about 300. houses in that towne, with certaine churches, through the violent rising of the sea, were drowned.

Tempests on the Sea.

Winchelsea drowned.

A great earthquake at S. Albons on S. Lucies day.

An. reg. 35.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester without any great roialtie: and the same Christmas day at night, great lightning and thunder happened in the Bishopricke of Norwiche.

1251

Athelmare the kings brother was made Bishop of Winchester, although he were neither of learning, or age sufficient.

In this season Wales was brought to be subiect unto the English Lawes, and that part which ioineith to Glesshire, was committed to the custodie of Alan de Zuche, the which gaue for the same to farme it 1100. markes, whereby hee supplanted Iohn de Grey, which should haue had it for 500. markes.

Wales brought to be subiect to the lawes of England.

The Abbey of Hailes was dedicated, which was founded by Richard earle of Cornewall, the building whereof had cost him 10000. markes: at this dedication was kept a solemne feast, at the which was present, the king, the Quene, and almost all the nobilitie of England spirituall and temporall.

Hailes Abbey.

On S. Dunstons day, a marvellous tempest of thunder and lightning to the terrour of many, beate downe to dust the chimney of the chamber, wherein the Quene and her children then were, the whole house was sore shaken in the castle of Andlesof, where also in the parke, oakes were rent asunder, and turned bywards, mils with their millers, shepe folds with their shepheardes, and plowmen were beaten downe and destroyed.

Great Tempest of thunder and lightning.

About the same time the sea on the coasts of England, rose with higher tides then the naturall course gaue, by the height of 6. fote.

An. reg. 35. High tides. Tusting at Rochester.

On the 8. of December, at a tusting holden at Rochester, the strangers were put to the worse, and well beaten by Englishmen of armes, so that the dishonour which they did to the Englishmen at Barkeley, was now recompensed, whereof sprang great hatred betwixt the Englishmen and the strangers.

The shepheardes of France and Englande take their iourney towarde the holy land, to the number of 30000. but their number banished in short time.

Shepheardes pretend a voyage to Jerusalem.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Dorke, whither came Alexander king of Scots, and was there made knight by king Henry. And on Saint Stephens day, he married the Ladie Margaret, daughter to the king of Englande, where was kept a sumptuous feast, the number of knights that were come thither on the kings part of England, were reckoned to be about a thousand. The king of

1252 King of Scots took to wife Margaret, daughter to king Henry of England.

Æscia

Scots had 60. knights, & a great number of other gentlemen, and did homage to the king of England: this assembly was no small charge to the Archbishop, in feasting them, and their traines, for it was reported that he spent at the first course of one dinner 60. fat oxen.

60. fat Oxen  
spent at a dinner.  
Lib. Eli.

The Cathedral Church of Ely was dedicated, which the Bishop of that sea, named Hugh de Norwood had now builded of his owne proper costs, together with the palace there, the king and the pères of the realme, both spirituall and temporall, being present, who were all feasted in plentiful maner. This Hugh Norwood builded the Bishops palace in Ely, and reedified diuers manors belonging to that house in other places. He builded the new work of the church of Ely, towarde the East, even from the foundation, called the Presbytery, which was finished in the space of seientene pères, with the expences of 3350. pounds 18. s. 8. pence. He also builded the new Tower of timber nere to the Gallean. King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

Church of Ely.  
An. reg. 37.

1253

John Textor.

The king took fourtie shillings of cuerie knights fee, to make his eldest sonne knight. He purchased the tenthes of all spirituall livinges at the Popes hands for five pères, as it had bene in aid of the holie land, but inderde it was to make his sonne Edmond king of Naples and Sicill. The Liberties of London were seized by the meanes of Richarde earle of Cornewall, who charged the Mayor that hee looked not to the Bakers for their sizes of bread, so that the cite was forced to please the earle with 600. markes, and were restored. The king imprisoned the Sherriffes of London in the Tower a moneth and more, and after deposed them of their office, because of the escape of John Offrom, a Clarke convict, that was vnder their ward in Newgate, for the death of a prior that was the kings allie.

Liberties of  
London seized.

Ypodigma.

Great flood.  
An. reg. 38.  
Rob. Grosted.

A great flood happened in Holland, Lindsey, and Holdernes, countries of Englande, the tenth of October, which came vnto Alnigham, wherethrough, a great portion of lande, with houses and people were drowned. Robert Grosted Bishop of Lincolne, in Greeke, Latine, and other languages, did by an Epistle repproue Pope Innocent, affirming, that the preaching Friers, and minozite Friers were infected with heresies. This Robert Grosted deceased at his manor of Bugebenam, he was an Englishman born in Suffolke, whose learning (in Hebreu, Greeke, Latine and other languages) ioined with vertue, and good life, won to him perpetuall commendation, he was a manifest blamer of the Pope, and king, a repprouer of Prelates, a correcter of Monks, a director of Priests, an Instructor of Clerks, a Sustainer of Schollers, a Preacher to the people, a persecuter of vnchast liners, a diligent Searcher of the Scriptures, a Wallet to such straungers as sought preferment in the Realme by the Popes prouisions. In house-keeping liberall, in corporall refection plentifull, and in ministering spirituall soode, deuoute and godlie affected: in his bishops office diligent, reuerend, and neuer wearied, he gaue his booke to the Friers minozs in Oxford.

William de Vescie a noble baron of the North, died in Gascoigne.

1254

King Henry kept his Christmasse in Gascoigne, and the Quene kept her Christmasse at London, where she laye in Childbedde of a daughter named Katherine,

Katherine, and was purified on the Euen of the Epiphanie, making a royall feast: at the which were present, the Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, the Byschoppe of Ely, the earles of Cornewall and Glocester, and manie other Nobles: at which time she sent ouer to her husband for a newyeres gift, the sum of fve hundred markes out of her reuenues, towarde the mainte nauce of his wars.

The Queenes newyeres gift to the king.

Edward the kings eldest son wedded the kings daughter of Spaine Elianor: his father gaue him the earledome of Chester, and the gournance of Guyen and Ireland.

Edward the kings eldest son.

Peter de Egeblanke Bishoppe of Hereford in the court of Rome, seigning himselfe Procurator for the Cleargie of Englande, bounde the small houses of Religion in one hundred or 2. hundred markes the pece, the greater houses in thre hundred, or fve hundred markes the pece: Saint Edmundesburie was bounde in seauen hundred markes, to bee payde to certaine Merchaut strangers, and all this money was collected to expulse Manfred out of Naples, Apulia, and Sicill, which the Pope had giuen to Edmond sonne to king Henry of England.

Radul. de Diceto

Textor.

An. reg. 29.

After king Henry had continued certaine daies at Boloigne, hee toke the Seas and returned into England, landed at Douer in Christmas worke. This iourney into Gascoigne was right costlie, and to little purpose, for the kinges charges amounted to the sum of seauen and twentie hundred thousand pound, besides landes and rents which he bnaduisedlie gaue to those, which little deserued. In two iourneies that king Henry made, the one into Poitowe, which countrey he left, the other into Gascoigne, which he hardly kept, he spent more treasure (saith mine Autho;) then a wise Couerlor would haue giuen for the in both.

I 255  
A chargeable iourney into Gascoigne.

The 5. of June the king by his writ commanded the Shyriffe of Cambridge, shire to see a due obseruation of all such ordinaunces and prouissions, as he before had granted to the vniuersitie of Cambridge, by his letters patents, for the assise of bzead and ale, for house rents, for imprisonment of Clarke, and deliuey of them againe at the Chancellozs commandement.

Lewes king of France sent vnto king Henry of England, for a present, an Elephant, a Beast most straunge and woonderfull to the Englishe people, for that selborne, or neuer anie of that kinde had bene seene in Englande before.

An Elephant sent vnto Eng-land.

The 22. date of Nouember were brought vnto Westminster 102. Ielwes from Lincoln, that were accused for the crucifpyng of a child of 8. yeres, named Hugh, in despite of Christs religion, these were vpon examination sent to the Tower: the murder came out by the diligent search made by the mother of the child: 18. of them that were so brought by to London, were hanged, the other remained long in prison.

Jelwes hanged.

The earles and barons of England, with assent of the prelates, caused proclamation to be made through all Englund, that the Charters of liberties and forrests should be kept, at their instance Boniface archbi. of Canterbury accussed all those that shoulde bzeake them, Lewlyn prince of Wales, gathering a mighty

Nicho. Triu.

An. reg. 40.

mighty band of men, invaded Cheshire, which the k. had latelye given to his son Edw. and destroyed al things with fire and sword, til he came to the gates of the cite of Chester, to repressse whose violence, a ballant and famous knight called Stephen Buncan was sent of the king with an army, who entring the hands of a noble man of Wales called Rife, surnamed Vaghan, that is, little, breting circumvented and beset of his enemies in marshy grounds, was slaine, the remnant of his army likewise either slaine, or taken aliue, and put in bands, fewe excepted that escaped by flight.

Magnus king  
of Dan.

1256

King of Scots  
and his Queen.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester: king Henry made Magnus king of Span knight, and bestowed on him great gifte.

Alexander king of Scottes with Margaret his wiffe, came into England about the beginning of August, who found the king of England at his mannor of Woodstocke, where the king of Scots sported himselfe for a season, and had the lands of the earledom of Huntingdon restored vnto him, and here he did homage to k. Henry. On the feast day of the decollation of S. Ioh. the two kings and queens came to London, where they were honorably receiued and conueyed to Westminster. John Mansill the kings Chaple in besought the two kings and other states to dine with him, whereunto they graunted, where they were intertained with marvellous chere, there were 700. messes serued vp, but the multitude of guests was such, that vnnearth the same sufficed, nor h house could receiue them, so that tents were set vp abroade, the like dinner had not bene made by anye chaplaine before.

One of the k.  
chaplaines sea.  
And two kings.

k. Henry sate in  
the Exchequer.  
Sheriffes fined  
An. reg. 41.

King Henry came into the Exchequer, and there set downe order for the appearance of sheriffes, and byzinging in of their accounts, there was fine marks set on euery sheriffes head for a fine, because they had not distrained euery person that might dispend 15. pound land by yere, to receiue the order of knight-hood, as was to the same sheriffes commanded.

Radul. Baldok.  
New worke of  
Pauls.

1257

This yere the new worke of Pauls, to wit, the crosse ples were begun to be newe builded. k. Henry kept his Christmas at London, and on Childermas day came messengers vnto Richard earle of Cornewall, who declared vnto him that he was elected king of Almaine.

k. of Almaine.

Hugh Bigot chiefe Justice of England, and Roger Thurkelby kept the Courtes in the Guildhall of London, and punished the Bakers vpon the Tomberell, and did manie other things against the lawes of the cite. Richard earle of Cornewall went ouer into Almaine, and was there crowned king of Almaine at Aquisgraine.

Bridges bozne  
downe.  
Textor.  
Walls of Lona-  
den repaired.

An. reg. 42.

The 6. daie of July fell such abundance of raine, that many houses, bridges, and trees were bozne downe. The king caused the wals of the cite of London, which were soze decayed; and destitute of Bulwarkes, to bee repaired in moze seemelie wise then afore they had bene.

Great scarcitie of Beues and horses in England, whereof they were wont to haue many thousands out of Wales yereleyp, and al the Marches were made as it were a desert.

1258

King Henry kept his Christmas at London with great solemnity. For so much as the king had oftentimes promised the restitution of certaine  
ancient



ancient lawes which he neuer performed, the Lords murmuring against him, held a Parliament at Oxford, which was after called the madde Parliament, because manie things were there enacted, which turned to the death of manie Nobles. In confirmation of these acts were chosen twelue Peeres, which had authoritie to correct the breakers of them, the king his brethren, the Noble men and Barons, taking their oathe to see the same obserued. Shortly after, they banished William of Valence, Galfrede, Guidon, and Ailmer the elect of Winchester, al four brethren to the king on the mother side, and other strangers.

Great dearth followed the wet yere passed. A quarter of wheate was solde for fiftene shillings, and 20. shillings, but the worst was, there could be none found for money, where-though many poore people were constrained to eate horse flesh, and barks of trees, but many starued for want of fode: 20000. in London as it was said.

A Jew at Tewkesburie fell into a pyle upon the Saturdaie, and woulde not for reuerence of his Sabbath bee plucked out, wherefore Richard of Clare earle of Gloucester, kept him there till Sunday, at which time hee was sounde dead. The said Richard Clare earle of Gloucester died, and also his brother William, by poison as was thought.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London, with great solemnitie.

Richard Gray Constable of Dover, and Lord Warden of the ports was this yere remoued by the Lord chiefe Justice Hugh Bigot, who toke into his owne hands the custodie of the said castle and ports.

This yere a great mortalitie of pestilence reigned, whereof died many thousands of christian people, amongst whome deceased Fulco Basset bishop of London, and was buried in Pauls church at London.

In a parliament at Westminster, the ordinances made at Oxford with certaine other articles annexed, were read, and ratified by a curse pronounced against the breaker of these statutes, or anie of them. In the same Parliament was granted to the king a taske, called Scutage, to wit, 40. shillings of euerie knights fee throughout England, the which extended to a great sum of money: for as diuers writers affirmed, there were in England in the possession of spiritual and temporal persons more then 40000. knights fees, some sale 60000. knights fees. John Rouse saith, that in the 15. yere of William Conquerour, there were found in Engl and 60211. knights fees, &c. Henry had now taken Scutage since his coronation eleuen times.

The king commanded a generall assemblie at Pauls Crosse in London, where he in proper person commanded the Mayor that the next daie following, he shoulde cause to bee sworne before the Aldermen, euerie stripling of twelue yeres of age or upwards, to be true to the king and his helres kings of England, and that the gates of the city should be kept with harnessed men.

King Henry of England kept his feast of Christmas at Paris in France. Two Romanes struing for Prebends in Pauls church at London, the one killed the other there.

John Duke of Bypaine married Beatrice, King Henry the third his daughter,

Mad Parliament.  
Ypodigma.  
11. Peeres.

Strangers banished.  
Dearth of corn.

Cro. Euesham.

A Jew drowned.

An. reg. 43.  
Ex Record. Tho. Wikes.

1259

Great pestilence.

Parliament at Westminster.

Scutage taken.

Powles crosse in London.  
Oath to the k.

An. reg. 44.

1260

ter, and was made knight, and with him Baldwine de Reduers Earle of the Ille of Wight.

Hugh Bigot  
chiefe Justice.  
W. Packington.

This yere Sir Hugh Spencer was made chiefe Justice of England, and Nicholas of Cly Chancellor to the king, and the Abbot of Peterborough Treasurer of the Exchequer, by ordinance of the Barons.

Parliament.

The king repenting that he had at Oxford graunted such large Liberties and Liberties to the Nobles and people of the Realme by counsell of Edward his sonne, and Richard his brother, hee sent to the Court of Rome to bee absolved of his oath. The Barons and Nobles of the Realme, helde a Parliament at London in the newe Temple, and the king helde himselfe in the Tower of London.

An. reg. 45.  
Newham.

Reignold de Moun, Earle of Somerset and Lord of Dunster, founded the Abbey of Newham in Devonshire.

This yere great strife befell at Cambridge betwene the schollers & townsmen: and likewise betwene schollers and schollers of the north, and south parts. Wherefore the king sent thither Master Giles of Argenton, Master Henry of Wobham, and Master Laurence Broke the 24. of November, authorized by his commission to appeale those tumults: but they bring overmuch extremity to one part, and fauour to another, that commission was shortly after reuoked, and a new charge giuen to Master Nicholas at Tower, and Nicholas Handlo, two of his Justices Itinerants for ceasing of those debates. The contention still continuing at Cambridge betwene the schollers and the townsmen in most hateful manner, manie of the schollers by agreement among themselves departed to Northampton, and there raised a new Uniuersitie by the kings consent, which continued not aboue foure yeres, before it was altered, and the uniuersitie returned home to their olde place at Cambridge.

1261

Uniuersity of  
Cambridge  
remoued to  
Northampton.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Windlesore with his wife, the Quene of England, and his daughter Quene of Scots.

In the moneth of February contention continuing betwene the schollers of Cambridge, and the townsmen, many of the schollers agreed among themselves to depart from thence, to the towne of Northampton, and there to raise a new Uniuersitie. Whereunto the king gaue his consent, and granted them passport, but it was not long ere the Uniuersitie returned to their olde place.

King Henry comming to the Tower of London, fortified it greatly, and caused the gates of the city to be warded, sending forth commandement to his Lords to come to the Tower, and there to hold a parliament, which they denied to do.

An. reg. 46.

The Barons discharged Sir Hugh Spencer, of his office of chiefe Justice; and placed in his roome, Sir Philip Basset without the kings consent.

The Barons discharged the Sheriffes and Justices, which the king had appointed, and they placed other in their roomes.

1262

King Henry with his Quene and Councell, kept his Christmasse in the Tower of London.

On the second Sunday in Lent, King Henry caused to bee read at Pauls crosse, a Bull obtained of Pope Urbane the fourth, as an absolution for him, and for all his that were sworn to maintaine the articles, made in the parliament

ment at Orfoide: then hee with the Quene sayled into Fraunce, to make a small conoord betwene him, and the king of Fraunce for Poimandie, where the composition was, that Poimandie should remaine to the king of France, paying to the king of England and his heires yérelle 30000. poundes Tournois, which is 3000. pound sterling.

The Barons of England (Simon de Mountfort being their chiefe taine) armed themselves against the king, and all this yere howered about London, and other places, without anie notable act of rebellion, saving that they robbed all-ants, and such other persons as they knew to be against their purpose, especiallie they slew the Jewes in all places. There was slaine Jewes at London to the number of 700. the rest were spoiled, and the synagogue defaced, because one Jew would have forced a chistian man to haue paid moze then 2. pence for the vsarie of xx. s. a weeke.

The Barons  
in armour.

Jewes spoiled  
for vsury.

Richard of Clare earle of Glocester, son of Gilbert of Clare, being with king Henry in France, deceased, and was buried at Tewkesbury, and Gilbert his son succeeded him.

W. Packin.

An. reg. 47.

King Henry with his Quene, and counsell, landed at Douer on S. Thomas daye, and kept his Christmas at Canterburie.

Io. Eueriden.

1263

Macy a French  
man Constable  
of Glocest.  
Rob. of Glocest.

Sir Macy de Bescile, a French man, was by the king made Sherriffe and Constable of Glocester, wherewith the Barons beeing offended, they chose to bee Sherriffe, and placed there a knight of that countrey, called Sir William Tracy, which Sir William keeping Court vpon a daie in the Towne of Glocest. Macy the Frenchman, with a number of armed men came sodainly vpon him, dreynt him to the ground, and so to the castle, and cast him in prison, whereof when the Barons vnderstode, they sent Roger Clifford, and Sir Iohn Gifford with a great power to Glocester, who besieged the castle, bzent the bridge, and entred at the last, where they tooke the sayde Macy, with all his compaignie, and for that a Carpenter from the Castle with a quarrell, had slaine an Esquier of the Barons partie, Sir Iohn Gifforde made the same Carpenter to leape from the toppe of the castle, where through hee was cruellied to death. Sir Roger Clifford toke the keeping of the castle vpon him, and sent Macy into the March, Sir Iohn Gifford toke all Macies goods at Shereffstone, and elsewhere.

Glocest castle  
taken by the  
Barons.

Peter de Egblanuch a Frenchman, Bysshoppe of Hereford, was drawne out of his Cathedral Church by Thomas Turberuill, and other, and sent to the Castle of Crdesley, where hee and Sir Macy were both committed to safe ward: his treasure was spoiled, and his Chanons sent to prison, and thus were Frenchmen serued through the lande where they might bee founde, by them that were on the Barons part.

Wich of heref.  
a French man.

Simon de Mountfort with the barons pitched their tents in Isleworth, or Hylleworth parke. The manor of the same Isleworth belonging to Richard king of Almain, was burnt by the Londoners. They also burned another house of his nere to Westminster.

Tho. Wikes.

In this meane while, the king and Quene remained in the tower of London, and when the Quene would haue gone by water vnto Windsor, the

The Quene  
chaſed  
Nic. Triega.

Streets of Lō.  
don chained  
Annales of Hyde.

Londoners getting them to the bridge in great numbers, under the which she must passe, cried out on her, vsing many vile reprochfull words, threwe durte and stones at her, that she was constrained to retorne again to the Towre. The citizens fortified the citie with yron chaines, & drawne ouerthwart their streets, munited the citie, and did maruellous things.

Peace concluded  
betwixt the  
king and his  
barons.

There was a peace concluded betwixt the king and the barons, with these conditions, that Henry, sonne to the king of Almaine, that toke the Barons part, and was in prison, shoulde bee deliuered, that all the kinges Castles throughth Englands shoulde bee put into the Barons handes, that the provisions of Wrotholme shoulde bee kept, and that all Straungers within a certaine time shoulde depart the lande, those except, whose abode the faithfull persons of the Realme with one assent shoulde accept: lastlie, that the Englishmen borne, and such as were faithfull men to the kingdome, shoulde order and rule the businesse of the Lande under the King. But this notwithstanding, certaine knights of the kings part fortified the Castle of Windsoze with victuals and armour. Edward the kinges sonne came to Wistowe, where discord rose betwixt his knights and the Townesmen, so that the Townesmen were minded to haue besieged the Castle: which when Edward understoode, hee sent for Walker Bysshoppe of Winchester that tooke the Barons part, that in his companie hee might goe to the Court of his father, promising to perswade his father to peace. Hereupon going forth with the Bysshoppe, till they came to Windsoze, hee entred the Castle, to the great misliking of the Bysshoppe: but Edward hostile returned, and went to meete Simon earle of Leicester, who with his adherentes were comming to besiege Windsoze Castell. Edward the kings sonne met with the saide Simon about Kingstone, and offered meanes of peace: but Simon trusting to Bysshoppe Walters counsell, deteyned Edward with him, and would not suffer him to departe till the Castell was yielded, they that were within, hauing libertie to depart whither they woulde: and the Straungers that minded to passe the Seas, had safe conducts graunted them. Lewlin prince of Wales confederate with earle Simon, in the meane time wasted the Countrey of Chester, and the marches of the same, and ouerthrew to the grounde the Castles of Diffard and Cannoke. After this, a Parliament was holden at London, in the which, many that had helde with the earle, went to the kinges part, as Henry of Almaine, Sonne to Richard king of Romanes, and other. The kings partie beeing encreased, hee went to Douer, and endeuored to haue gotten that castle out of the earles hands, but hee traualled in vaine.

An. reg. 48.

1264

King Henry kept his Christmas at London with the Q. the king of Almain and many other great estates.

Lewes king of France, through procuring of Boniface Archbysshop of Canterbury (who in politike Sermons at Paris, as well at the Friers preachers, as minozs, declared the doings betwixt the king of England, and the earle of Leicester) toke vpon him to make a peace betwixt them: whereupon the king of England, with his sonne Edward, and diuers other of the English nobilitie, came to Paris about the 22. of Iannarie, but the earle of Leicester, fearing the



the French kinges displeasure for his mothers sake, or some other cause not knowne, staid at home in England and proceeded in his businesse: wherefore Roger Mortimer beganne to deströie the possessions which the earle of Leicester held, against whom the prince of Wales went, and besieged the castle of Radnoze, and brought it to yeeld.

Edward the kings son, after his returne from Paris, about Lent, toke his journey toward the March, and passing by Oxford, the Burgeses shut vp the ir gates against him, whereby he was forced to lie at the kings Hall without the towne till the next morowe and then departed. The schollers of Oxforde being shut within the towne, brake vp the gate that leadeth toward Beaumont, for which dede the Maior sent some of them to prison: and not long after, while the schollers were at dinner, the Maior and Commons with banners displayed, thought to haue spoiled the Clerkes ere they had bene aware, but being espied, the schollers ran together, and with bowes and other weapons slew and wounded the Burgeses and Commons, brake vp manye houses, spoiling the goods, and set the houses of the Portuues (William Spicer and Geoffrey Hencley) on fire, on the Southside of the towne. Moreouer, because the Maior (Nicolas Kingstone) was a Mintener, they brake vp the Mintrie, brake the wines, and spoiled them, for the which fact the king caused the Clerks and schollers to be banished the Uniuersitie.

The Schollers  
and Burgeses  
of Oxord the  
one spoile the  
other.

Clerks of Ox-  
ford banished.

Edward the kings Sonne toke the Castle of Hare and Huntington, belonging to the earle of Hereford, and the Castle of Brecon being also rendered to him, he deliuered to Roger mortimer to keepe, with the territoie adiacent. Robert Ferrers earle of Darbie (who toke parte with earle Simon) besieged Worcester, and entering by the olde Castell, spoiled the Citizens of their goods, and compelled the Jewes to be chysened. The towne of Gloucester, that before was taken by the Barons, was now assailed by Edward the kings sonne, who entered the castle by great force, and in the next morning by meanes of the Bishoppe of Worcester, and Reignolde Abbot of Gloucester, a truce was taken betwixt the Barons in the towne, and the kings sonne in the Castle: but shortly after the Barons fled, and the Burgeses submitting themselves, were some of them hanged, the residue cast in prison, grievouslie ransomed, and the towne destroyed, from whence the kinges sonne departed, spoiling and wasting the countrey (contrarie to his othe made to the Barons) till he came to Oxforde, where he lodged in the house of the Frier preachers, and loined his power with the king his father, who was lately come thither to make his offering to Saint Friswide, (not fearing the superstitious opinion, that if any king entered that towne, the birgin there would be auenged on him.) The king hauing now with him his brother Richard king of Almaine, his sonne Edward, William de Valence his brother on the mothers side, and Iohn Cumyn of Scotlande, with a multitude of Scottisshmen, Iohn de Bailliol Lord of Galloway, Robert le Bruse Lord of Anandale, Roger de Clifford, Philip de Marmion, Iohn de Vallibus, Roger de Laborne, Henry Percy, Philip Basset, Roger de Mortimer, with an armie went and besieged Northampton, and the fourth of Aprill breaking the wal, toke the towne, and in it xv. knights bearing banners, Simon Mountfort the

Worcester be-  
sieged.

Gloucester be-  
sieged.

Northampton  
besieged.

ponger, William de Ferrers, Peter de Mountfort, Baldwyne Wake, Adam de Newmarch, Roger Bartrand, Simon Fitz Simon, Berengario de Wateruile, Hugh Gubion, Thomas Maunfell, Roger Bonteuleyn, Nicol. Wake, Robert de New-  
enton, Philip de Derby, Grimbald de Paunfuent: of whome Simon the ponger  
was sent to Winchester, the residue to other places to be safely kept. Other  
knights of meaner degre were taken, to the number of fourtie, and not a  
few Esquires: from thence the king went towards Nottingham, waisting with  
fire and sword the mannoꝝ places of the Barons, and there hee gathered his  
Lordes and great men.

Rochester be-  
sieged.

Castle at King-  
stone or Ke-  
nington taken.  
Castle at Con-  
bridge taken.

Battell at  
Lewis.

Carle Simon went to London, and from thence to Rochester, which Iohn  
Carle Warren defended, the bridge and first gate thereof when he had won,  
being informed that the king was comming towards London, he left the siege  
and went backe to meete him: but the king turning his wale from London  
toke the castle of Kenington or Kingston, which was the Carle of Glocesters,  
and then going to Rochester, chased away some that remained at the siege, but  
slew many mo: from thence he went to Tonbridge, the castle whereof he toke,  
and the Countesse of Glocester within it: leauing a garrison there, he went  
to Winchester, where he receiued them of the 5. ports to his peace, and passing  
further to Lewis, was receiued into the priory, and his son into the castle, where  
whiles he remained, the barons wrot to him letters, as ye may read in Mathew  
Paris, and Nicholas Triuet: but they taking no effect, the Barons in armes ap-  
proched towards Lewis, inuading the kings people that were gone forth for  
rage, whereof the king being warned, he goeth forth to meete them with his  
armie deuised into three sortes: The first was led by Edw. the kings sonne, ha-  
uing with him William de Valence Carle of Pembroke, and Iohn de Waren  
earle of Surrey and Sussex. The second was guided by Richard B. of Almaine  
with his sonne Henry. The third the K. himselfe had in gouerning. The Barons  
army was deuised into 4. wards. The first ledde Henry de Mountfort with the  
earle of Hereford. The second ledde Gilbert de Clare with Iohn fitz Iohn, and  
William de Mountchance. The third in which the Londoners were, Nicholas  
Segraue. The fourth earle Simon himselfe led with Tho. de Pelueston. Edward  
the kings sonne with his battell brake on his enemies that hee made them to  
giue backe, of whom many were drowned.

The Londoners were put to flight, whom whilste the kings sonne pursued  
for the space of foure miles, he made great slaughter, but being separate from  
the rest of the army, he weakened his part force.

The K. of Al-  
maine taken.

The king Henry  
taken.

In the meane time many of the kings battell were slaine, & the king of Al-  
maine taken in a windmill by sir Iohn de Beuis, so was Robert le Buis and Ioh.  
Commyne, which had brought the Scots. King Henry also hauing his horse  
slaine vnder him, yelded to the earle of Glocester, who sent him prisoner to the  
Priory. Edward returning, is receiued with sharp battel, and the earle Waren,  
William de Valence, Guy de Lusignan, the kings halfe brethren, Hugh Bigot  
with men of armes to the number of 400. habergeons got then the castle of  
Pembrey, and when many were slaine on either side, the Lord Edward riding  
about the towne, found his father in the priory.

In the meane time an assault being giuen to the Castle, which was valiantly defended, the Barons withdrew to the river: whereupon the Lord Edward being greatly incouraged, and hauing gathered his people about him, would haue made a new battell, so that the Barons sued for peace, which by the meanes of the Friers preachers and Priores, was brought to passe, that on the Friday following, the Lordes, Edward and Henry, for their Fathers, of England and Almaine kinges, deliuered themselves to Carle Simon, vpon hope of quietnesse and peace that might bee concluded. On the Saturday the king licenced them that were about him to depart to their houses, and wrot vnto them that were in Tonbyrdge Castle, that they should not molest the Barons, as they returned homewards: but they notwithstanding being in armes, when they heard that the Londoners which were fled from the battell were receiued into Croydon, they hastid thither, & sleying many of them got great spoiles. From thence they went to Wistot, where they remained till Edward the kings son was deliuered. There was slaine in the battell at Lewes, (which was fought on the 12. of May) about 4500. men. About that time a great part of Westcheape in London was burnt by treason.

Edward the  
3. some taken.

Rob. of Glocest  
& Westcheape in  
London burnt.

Carle Simon ledde the king and his sonne Edward about with him till hee had got all the strong Castles of the land into his hands, and then put Richard king of Almaine in the Tower of London, and Edward the kings sonne in Doner Castle.

W. Packin.  
Chro. Glaften.

In the meane time, Roger Mortimer, James Audely, Roger Leyborne, Roger Clifford, Haymo Lestrage, Hugh de Turberuile, with many other, rose against Simon, who to restrain their boldnesse, associating to him the Prince of Wales, entred the Castle of Hereforde, and caused Edward the kings sonne to bee brought thither from Doner: after this he wanne the Castle of Herey, which belonged to the Carle of Hereford, and toke the Castle of Ludlow, and after wasting the lands of Roger Mortimer, goeth towards Pountomerie, and there taking pledges of peace of the said nobles, hee turneth to the South parts, to mete the power, which was saide to come out of France to the kings ayde.

Castle of Lud-  
low taken.

Pope Urbane sent a Legate and Cardinall, the bishop of Sabrine into England, but they might not enter the Realme, the fine portes prohibiting them: whereupon they called certeine English bishops first to Amience, and after to Boloigne, to whom he committed the sentence of excommunication to be pronounced against the citie of London, the fine portes, and all those that troubled the king of Englands peace: but the Bishops dissembled the matter.

This yere about the 20. of June a notable blazing starre appeared, such a one as had not bene sene in that age, which rising from the East with great brightnesse vnto the midst of the Hemisphere drew his streame, it continued till after Michaelmas.

Blazing starre.  
Nic. Trivet.  
Rob. of Glocest.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Woodstocke, and Simon Carle of Leicester kept his Christmas at Kenilworth.

See. reg. 44.

1265

The first of Februarie the king reuoked his grant of the newe vsueritie at Northampton, by reason of great discommodities thereby ensuing to the vniuersitie.

under title of Oxford, whereof all the Bishops of the Realme had giuen him advertisement by their writing.

The earle of  
Glocester for-  
tooke the earle  
of Leiceſter.

Edward the  
kings ſon taken  
from his keep-  
ers.

Caſtle of Mon-  
mouth ſeized.

Battel of E-  
ueham.

Between Simon of Leiceſter, and Gilbert of Gloceſter ſtrife aroſe, for that Simon not only kept the king and other as priſoners, but alſo tooke to himſelfe the reuenues of the kingdome, &c. which ſhould haue bene equally diuided amongſt them, ſo that Gilbert of Gloceſt. departing, ioined to him in league the noble knights of the marches, whome earle Simon had commanded to auoide the realme, but Ioh. de Waren Earle of Surrey and Suſſer, and William de Valence earle of Pembroke, had brought a great power by ſea in the Weſt parts of Wales, & arriving at Pembroke, earle Simon leading the king with him, went to Hereford, where he gathered a great power, to oppreſſe the ſaid knights: but while the prelates laboured for peace, Edward the kings ſonne being in the caſtle of Hereford is permitted to exerciſe himſelfe on horſebacke in a meadow without the city by his keepers, where after he had wearied himſelfe, and mounting on a freſh appointed for that purpoſe, he rode quite awaie, and paſſing the riuer of Welſy, with two knights and foure Eſquires, was followed harde by his keepers: but when they were aduiſed of the Standarts of Rog. Mortimer and Roger Clifford comming to his reliefe, they returned, and he eſcaped to Wigmore. And this chanced in the Whitſon weeke, Lord Edward being thus eſcaped, gathereth an army, confederateth and ſubmitteth to him the Countreies of Hereford, Worceſter, Salop, and Cheſter, with the towneſ, citieſ and caſtles, he alſo winneth by force the citie of Gloceſter, whiche Earle Simon had lately fortified, the towneſmen fled to the caſtle, who 15. daies after yielded it, and departed. The earle of Leiceſter wan the Caſtle of Monmouth, and laiſe it flat with the ground, and entring into the land of the earle of Gloceſter called Glamorgan, meeting with the prince of Wales comming to his aide, they deſtroyed all with fire and ſword.

Edward the kings ſonne hearing that manie of Earle Simons partakers were come to the Caſtle of Kenilworth, taking with him the Earle of Gloceſter, hee departed from Worceſter, and came vpon them at a ſodaine, where hee tooke the Earle of Oxforde, Sir William Mountchaſſe, Sir Adam Newmarch, Sir Walter de Solenle and other: and Simon the ſonne of Earle Simon hardly eſcaped in the Caſtle. The earle of Leiceſter hauing the king with him, returned out of South Wales, and on Lammas day came to Kemſey a place of the Biſhop of Worceſter, and there tarried the next day, Edward the kings ſonne returned from Kenilworth to Worceſter, whoſe returne being knowne, Earle Simon departing from Kemſey, by unhappy chance ſtaied in the towne of Queſham, for on the morrow being the 2. of Auguſt, Edward the kings ſonne departed from Worceſter, paſſing the riuer nere to the towne called Clue, cloſed by the paſſage betwixt earle Simon and Simon his ſonne, who was at Kil-lingworth. In the next morning L. Edward approached nere to Queſham on the one ſide, & Gilbert earle of Gloceſt. on the other ſide, and Roger Mortimer on the two other ſides, wherby earle Simon was ſo enclosed, that he muſt either fight or yeelde: on Fridaie therefore the ſixt day of Auguſt, their armies encountered each other in a large fielde without the towne, where the Carles part

had



had the worst: the Earle was killed in the felds, and Henry sonne to earle Simon, Peter de Mountfort, Hugh Spencer Justice of England, William de Mandevile, Ralph Bassett, Walter Creping, William de Yorke, Robert de Tregoze, Thomas de Hostile, John de bello-campo, Guido de Baylolle, Roger de Roulens, with sir Iohn de Saint Iohn, sir William de Verence, sir Iohn de Inde, sir William Trossell, sir Gilbert Einfield, and other of meaner sort in great number, especially of Welchmen, for almost none of them escaped thence, but they were slaine at Tewkesbury. Lordes taken at Cuesham, sir Vmfrey de Boune, sir Iohn Saint Iohn, sir Simons son, sir Guy, sir Baudwyn Wake, sir Iohn Vessy, sir Henry Hastings, sir Nicol. Segraue, sir Perce and sir Robert, Mountforts sons, and many other, Simon de Mountfort the sonne coming too late to mete his father at Cuesham, turned backe againe to Kenilworth Castle, and the sixt of September he released the king of Almaine, his mothers brother, sir Reimond Fitz Pierce, and many other.

Simon Montfort being slaine, his fauourers toke the Castle of Warwike, beat downe the walls, toke William Manduir, and Alice his Countesse, and sent them prisoners to Kenilworth Castle, where they remained till they had payde 1900. markes.

A parliament was holden at Winchest. where all the statutes made at Oxford were disanulled, and al the goods of them that were against the king seised. London was in great danger to haue bene destroyed by the king, for displeasure he had conceiued against the Citizens, but the Citizens wholly submitted both liues and goods vnto him. Eight persons carrying the same submission toward Windsor, met sir Roger Leyborn knight at Colbrooke, who turned them backe againe, and after they had discoursed the whole matter with him, he willed them to deliuer to him their submission, and he woulde moue the king in it, which thing they did. After sixe daies this knight returned to the Citie, and said the king had receiued their writings, willing them first to take away all the chaines that were in the streets of the Citie, & pul the postes out of the ground that the same were fixed in, and bring both chaines and postes to the Tower of London: then the Mayor with fortye Citizens should the next day following attend vpon the king at Windsor to confirme their writing, and they should go and come safe: in witness whereof he deliuered them the kings letter and seale, for the space of foure daies. The next day the Citizens being at Windsor, attended at the gate untill the king came from hunting, at which time he woulde not once looke on them. After the king was entred, they would haue followed, but they were forbidden: shortly after they were called into the Castle, where they were locked vp in a Tower with homely entertainment: the next daie the king came vnto prince Edward the Mayor and foure Aldermen, the rest were committed to seuerall prisons.

King Henry with Quene Elianor his wife, Richard king of Almaine, and Othobone the Legate kept his Christmas at Northampton.

King Henry came to Westminster and there gaue vnto diuers of his household seruants about the number of threescore households and houses within the city, so that the owners were compelled to agree & redeme their houses and goods, 600 houses in 1264.

Simon de Mountfort slaine.

Lordes taken Lib. Euseb. The body of Simon Mountfort and Henry his son, Hugh Spencer, by licence of the king were buried in the Abbey of Euesham &c. of Almaine deliuered.

A parliament at Winchest.

An. reg. 30.

1266

Pierce Longton, Robert Brune. & Henrie gaue vnto his household seruants, diuers citizens 600 houses in 1264.

ozels to auoyde them: then hee made Custos of the Citie, Sir Othon Constable of the Tower, who chose Bayliffes to bee accountable to him, John Adrian, and Walter Haruy. After this the king toke pledges of the best mens Tonnes of the citie, the which were put in the Tower of London, and there kept at the costs of their parentes. By great labour and suite made, all the foresaide persons which were in Windsor castle, eight onelie except, were deliuered, and the king agreed with the citizens for 10000. marks to be paid, for the leuying of which fine, were tared as well seruantes as householders, and manie refused the liberties of the city to be quit of the charge.

The castle of Dover was yelded to Edward the kings son, into the which hee put Guy de Mountfort to be kept.

King Henry  
banished his  
Aster.

The Countesse of Leicester, wife to Simon Mountfort, yelded the castle of Demsey to king Henry her brother, who shortly banished her the Realme of England for ever. About Alhalowtide the Quene of England returned from beyond the seas, with her came the Legate, named Othobone, who shortly after his comming, in counsell holden at Northampton, accused al the bishops and priests that had ayded earle Simon against the king, especiallie hee cursed by name, Walter of Worcester, Henry of London, and Stephen of Chichester, and the Bishop of Lincoln. Worcester shortly after deceased, the other three went to Rome, and were assolied. The Legate also published the popes Bul, for the tenthes of Churches to be paid to the king for the next yere. Sir Simon the ponger fled from Kenilworth castle to the disherited knightes, who then were in the Isle of Orholme, where he remained not long, for through messengers with false promises, and hostages given by Edw. the kings son, hee forsa- king them went to London to the king and his nobility, but being pryly warned of their guile, he made an escape and got ouer into France.

Robt. of Glocest.

The keeper of Guy Mountfort about Easter being bylbed, let him go, and went with him into France: this Guy went into Lusane, and serued earle Rufus, in whose warre waring famous, hee obtained to haue his daughter in marriage.

Battel of Ethe-  
resfield.

Robert Ferrers Earle of Darbie, Henry Hastings, Baudwyne Wake, John Danuile, and other with their power beeing in the Towne of Chesterfield in Darbyshire, there came against thm John earle Waren, Sir Henry of Almain, sir Waren of Basingborn, and many other knightes, who on Whitsun- euen met without the towne on hunting, Sir Baudwyne Wake, Sir Henry Hastings, Sir Gregorie Caldwell, Sir Iohn Clinton, Sir Roger Maundeuil, Sir Ric. Caldwell, and to the number of 22. knightes al vnder one speare, al which they chased and put to flight: whereof when Sir Iohn Danuile being in the towne had vnderstanding, hee with a small companie rode out, pierced through the hoste, wounding many and escaped. Earle Waren entring the towne slew manie a man, and toke the earle Ferrers, who was sicke of the goutte, and had that date bene leffen blond: him they sent to the Towre of London, from whence but lately he had bene deliuered. Henry Hastings and his companie comming to Kenilworth, founde there Sir Iohn de Eynuile and manie other valiaunt knightes. Sir William de la Knowe, and Sir Iohn de la Ware, had well stored the

Kenilworth  
castle besieged.

the

the Castle of all things necessary. King Henry halting thither, began his siege the morrow after Epiphommer day, which siege continued till Christmas after, for they within the Castle, not fearing his force which was great, sette open their gates, and neuer closed them daie nor night, come who so woulde they came to their cost, so that manie a man was slaine on both sides, and manie were taken and ransomed. At length the Legate, the Archbyschoppe, and two other Byschoppes, came to make accorde betwene the king and the disherited, and also them of the Castle: but the disherites, nor they of the Castle woulde graunt to the kings will, wherefore the Legate accursed them, and all that were of their accord: but they of the Castle, not regarding the Legate nor his cursing, in mockage thereof, clothed a prest their surgeon, Philippe Porpeis, in a coape of white, and setting him on the castle wall, as a white Legate against the red, made him to accurse the king, the Legate, and all their partakers. Whiles this busines lasted at Kenilworth, the disherites toke the Isle of Ely, and strengthened it in such wise, that they held it long: they robbed Northfolke, Suffolke, and Cambridgeshire, they spoiled the city of Norwich, and ransomed the rich men at their pleasure. At Bartholmewide the King held a Parliament at Billington, wherein by his Barons were chosen six persons, which being sworn, chose to them other six, these six to make an accord betwene the king and the disherites: the first 6. were, Walter Gifford bishop of Bath, Nicolas of Ely, bishop of Worcester, and Walter bishop of Excester, Roger de Sumcrey, Robert Walronde, and Alaine de la Souch barons: these 6. chose to them Gilbert earle of Gloucester, Humfrey earle of Hereford, the bishop of S. Davids, sir Iohn Bailiol, sir Philip Basset, and sir Waren de Basingborn, if these six could not agree, the Legate, and Henry son to Richard king of Almain should be Arbiters, these met and agreed at the last.

By the kings commandement, the byshops, Abbots, Bysops, earles, barons, and knights of the realme were assembled at Northampton on the Tuesday next before Alhalowndate, there to vnderstand and confirme by statute what the forenamed twelve states had decreed for the state of the kingdome, which was for the barons, that none should be disherited, but the Countforts and the Fferers, the other should redeme their lands with money, at the hands of them who had the same in possession of the Kings gift, so that none paid above 7. yeres value, nor vnder 3. yeres value, which was the least, & this shalbe assessed according to the quantity of their trespassse. The siege of Kenilworth yet continuing, they within the castell began to be sore troubled with the fire, and also were without hope of succour to come to them, whereupon on S. Thos. day before Christmas they yielded the castle to the king with condition to depart with life and lims, without losse of goods, or imprisonment, and not to be disherited.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Oxford.

Such of the disherited persons, as liked not the ordinance of Kenilworth, whose captaine was Iohn Ciuil, after they had taken the city of Lincoln, & spoiled the Jewes, they fled again to the Isle of Ely, whose comming abroade when the king with a great army had stopped, Edw. the kings son with byldges made of hurdles & bozds, in place conuenient, as the inhabitants thereabout had instructed

The Legate accursed those in Kenilworth castle, and they in the castle accursed him.

The city of Norwich spoiled. Parliament at Kenilworth.

An. reg. 32.

Kenilworth castle yielded.

The earle of  
Glocest. tooke  
the cite of  
London.

Annales of Hyde

Peccers chap.  
viii.

Nic. Trinet.

Peace with  
the Prince of  
Wales.

An. reg. 52.

1268

Riot in Lon-  
don.

Parliament at  
Parlebozow.

An. reg. 53.

1269

Great frost.

Struck him, hee entred vpon the Isle, some of them within yelded them to him, the other being disperfed by flight. Whiles these thinges were a doing a new trouble began, for the earle of Glocester taking part with the disherites, came with an army gathered in Wales, vnto London, the 7. of April: therein he builded bulwarks, cast ditches and trenches in diuers places.

The king gathered an army at Windsor, and the 5. of May, he with an 109. ensignes came towards London, he pitched his tents at Stratford, and tarried there the space of one moneth, where many entreated to make peace.

The 6. of June the earle of Glocester, in peaceable maner rendred the Citty vnto the king againe, and then many that were disherited were reconciled, at the instance of the Legate and the said earle. foure that bare the cognisance of the earle of Darby were put in sacks and cast in the Thamis. Thomas Fitz Theobald and Agnes his wife, sister of Thomas Becket Archb. of Canterburie gaue to the master and brethren of the hospitall, called Saint Thomas of Acres beyond the seas, all the land with the appurtenances that sometime was Gilbert Beckets, father to Thomas Becket, in which land the said Thomas Becket was bozne, to make there a Church.

About Michaelmas the king came to Shrewsbury, to passe into Wales, there to vanquish the prince of Wales Lewline, who had aided Simon earle of Leicester, but he sending to the k. granted him 32. M. li. Sterling to haue his peace, and by the Legates meanes there was restored to the prince, the land of foure Cantredes, which by law of armes the king had taken from him.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster.

Othobone the Legate calling a counsell at London, ordained many things in reformation of the English Church. In which Councell, he absolved Simon de Mountfort earle of Leicester, and other which had bene excommunicate by reason of the troubles passed.

Variance fell betwene the fellowship of Goldsmithes and Taylors of London, causing great ruffling in the Citty, and many men to be slaine, for which riot thirtene of the Captaines were hanged.

The king held a Parliament at Parlebozow, in the which were made the statutes of Parlebridge.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster.

The riuer of Thamis was so hard frozen, from Saint Andzweles tyde, to Candlemas, that men and beastes passed on skote from Lambeth to Westminster, the merchandize was carried from Sandwich, and other hanens to London by land.

Edmond the kings sonne married Auelina, the daughter of William de Albemarle Earle of Holdernes, she was heire both to her father and mother, by reason whereof, he was to haue with her the Countie of Devonshire, and the Lordship of the Isle of Wight, but he deccased befoze both the father and mother, and left all.

A discord was raysed betwene Edward the kings sonne, and Gilbert de Clare Earle of Gloucester, because of the ouermuch familiaritie, which the said Edward was saide to haue with the wife of the saide Earle. And shortly after



after, the Earle of Gloucester took one at Cardiffe, that went about to haue poisoned him.

The thirteenth of October, king Henry did translate with great solemnity, *An. reg. 54.* the body of king Edward the Confessor, that before laye in the side of the quire, where the Monkes did sing at Westminster, into a newe Chappell at the backe of the high Altar, which he had prepared for him of a marvellous workmanship, bestowing on him a new tombe, of thine of golde, on the day of his translation.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester. The prior of Wiltonham was the kings treasurer, Nicholas Leucanor keeper of his Wardrope, and Roger de Wanton was Marshall. *1270*

The Nobles of England, by the kings commandement, assembled at London to treat of diuers matters, amongst the which one was, that all men should before the Justices shewe by what right they held their lands, which matter did much molest the people, untill Iohn Warren Earle of Surrey appeared, who being asked by what right he held his lands, he shewe sodainly out his sword, and saide, by this I holde my Or and fathers lands, and with this I will keepe them. Upon multiplying of words, the Earle made an assault vpon Allen de la Zouch, Lord chiefe Justice of Ireland, before the other Justices of the bench, and cruelly wounded him, whereof he died. And shortly after the same Ioh. earle of Surrey, by the oath of 25. knights at Winchester, affirmed, that he did not commit that fact vpon any pretended malice, neither in contempt of the king, and so for the summe of 1200. marks was reconciled. *Annales of Hyde*  
*Edm. Campion*  
*Tho. Wikes.*  
*1270*  
*Allen de la*  
*Zouch saine.*

Edward the kings sonne with his brother Edmond and many other nobles sayling into Asia against the infidels, by his policy and manly ades so demeaned himselfe, that oftentimes he put the Turkes to great dishonour, for despite thereof they suborned a Saracene to wound him with a venemous dart, whereof he was long sicke. Henry son to Richard king of Almaine as he went through Tuscane, at Miterbe was slaine by Guy de Mountfort. *An. reg. 55.*

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

The steeple of Woto in Cheape fell downe and slewe manie people, men and women, that then were in the Church, or dwelled nere there about. *1271*  
*Wil. Rishanger.*

The 28. of January Richard king of Almaine and Earle of Cornwall, brother to king Henry deceased in the castle of Barkhamsted, and was buried at Hailes an Abbey of his foundation. His sonne Edward succeeded in the inheritance of his Carle dome.

Diuers bournes sodainly brake out of the hollowe places of the earth, and ouerflowed a great part of Canterbury citie, the streame whereof was so swift and violent, that it bare downe buildings and houses, and drowned manie people. *An. reg. 56.*  
*Tho. de Wikes.*  
*W. Thorne.*  
*Lib. Kensham.*

Philip Basset Baron deceased.

In June began a great ryot in the citie of Norwich, through the which the monasterie of the Trinitie was burned, whereupon the king rode downe, and making enquiry for the chiefe doers thereof, caused xxx. of them to be condemned, drawn, hanged and bent. *1272*  
*W. Rishanger.*  
*Riot at Nor-*  
*wich.*

King.

*An. reg. 57.*  
*Lib. Trinitatis.*

*I. Treclon.*

King Henry being sicke, called before him Gilbert de Clare, earle of Gloucester, and caused him to be swozne to keepe the peace of the land, to the behoofe of Edward his son, and then died the sixteenth of November, in the yere 1272. when he had liued 65. yeres, and reigned 56. yeres, and 28. daies, he was buried at Westminster, which church he had newly builded: he left issue by Elianor his wife, Edward his eldest son, vnto whom he had giuen the earledome of Chester, who succeeded him in the kingdome, Edmund his second sonne, vnto whom he had giuen the earledome of Lancaster, and after the death of Simon Mountfort and Robert Ferrers, the Earledomes of Leicester and Darby; and two daughters, Beatrice and Margare.

## King Edward surnamed Longshanke.

*An. reg. 1.*

1273



Edward the first after the conquest, sonne to Henry the thirde, borne at Westminster, surnamed Longshanke, being aged thirtie three yeres, beganne his raigne the sixteenth day of November, in the yere of our Lozde 1272. being then in the partes beyond the sea towards Jerusalem. Of stature he was tall, and nightie of bodie, nothing grosse: his eyes somewhat blacke, and in time of anger fierce, of such noble and valiant courage, that he neuer fainted in most dangerous enterprises: of excellent wit and great towardnesse.

*An. reg. 2.*

1274

*Bishops de-  
ceased.*

The Pope granted to king Edward, the tenth of all Ecclesiasticall benefices as well tempozall as spirituall for one yere, and the like to his brother Edmund for another yere in recompence of their expences made in the Holy land. King Edward with Elianor his Queene kept his Christmas in Gascoigne.

Robert Stichell bishop of Durham deceased when he had sate Bishop foure, fene yeres, he founded the hospitall of Gritham. Vnto whom succeeded Robert de Insula. Laurence bishop of Rochester deceased: vnto whome succeeded Walter Merton, the kings Chancelloz, that founded Mertton Colledge in Oxfozd. Also William Byshop of Bathe and Welles deceased: vnto whome succeeded Robert Burnell. Henry the kings sonne deceased, and was buried at Westminster. Auelicia wife to Edmund, brother to king Edward, Countesse of Albemarle deceased, and William de Howton Abbot of Croxton deceased, who amongst other gifts to that house, gaue a Bible in nine tomes faire written, and excellently well glosed by Solomon Archdeacon of Leicester, and paid for it fiftie markes sterling.

The second day of August king Edward came into England from the Holy land, and on the fiftenth of August, he with Elianor his wife were crowned at Westminster by Robert Kilwarby Archbishop of Canterbury. At this coronation 500. great horses were turned loose, catch them who could.

Alexander king of Scots did homage to king Edward.

The king caused Leoline Prince of Wales to be summoned to his parliament

ment at Westminster, but he would not come, saying, he remembred the death of his father Griffin.

On St. Nicholas euen were great earthquakes, lightnings & thunder, with a huge dragon, and a blazing starre, which made many men soze afraid.

In a parliament at Westminster vsury was forbidden to the Jewes, & that they might be knowne, the king commanded them to weare a tablet the bzedth of a palme vpon their outmost garments. The king also commanded the treasurer and chamberlaine of his Exchequer, to deliuer out of his treasure vnto Giles de Andeward 200. markes, towarde the woorkes of the ditch about the Tower of London, of the fines taken of diuers merchants or vsurers of London. He also ordained, that Bakers making bread lacking weight, assigned after the pyce of Cozne, should first be punished by losse of their bread: the second time by imprisonment: and thirde by the pillory: millers for scaling of cozne, to be chastised by the Tumberell.

A rich man of France brought into Northumberland a Spanissh Cwe, as bigge as a calfe of two yeres, which Cwe being rotten, infected to the countrey, that it spread ouer all the realme. This plague of murrein, continued 28. yeres ere it ended, and was the first rot that euer was in England.

King Edward went towarde Chester, which is in the borders of Wales, that thither Leoline prince of Wales might haue moze free access vnto him: But hee denying to come to doe his homage, the king gathered an host of men, minding to expell the Prince out of his heritage. Hee builded the Castle of Flint, strengthened the castle of Ruthland, and other, against the Welch men.

Amicia countesse of Denonshire, and Ladie of the Isle, founded the Abbey of Bocland, for Gilbert Clare Earle of Glocester and Hereford her father, Isabel her mother, and Baldwin Earle of Denonshire.

John Briton the skillfull Lawper, who was become Priest and Bishoppe of Hereford, deceased, he compiled a booke of the Lawes called Briton.

The eleuenth day of September, there was a generall earthquake, by force whereof, the church of St. Michaell of the mount without Glaffenbury, fell to the ground, and peeces of many famous churches in England fell, by force of the same earthquake.

Gregory Rokesley, and the Barons of London, granted, and gaue to the archbishop of Canterbury Robert Kilwarby, two lanes or waies next the strate of Baynards castle, & the tower of Mountfichet to be destroyed, in the which place, the said Robert builded the late new church of the Blacke Friers with the rest of the stones that then were left of the saide Tower.

Edmund Earle of Lancaster the kings brother married the Duene of Barre.

Elianor the Duene brought forth a daughter named Beringaria.

The statute of Portmaine was enacted.

Michael Tony was hanged, drawne and quartered for treason.

King Edward caused the Barons of the Exchequer, and Iudices of the bench to remoue from London to Wykebury, that he might the better be

Clary forbid.  
den.  
I. Rouse.

An. reg. 3.

1275  
First rot of  
sheepe.  
Hen. of Leicester.  
T. Walsingham.

I. Rouse.  
Castle of Flint.

An. reg. 4.  
Bocland.



1276  
Earthquake.

Cant. Record.  
Ex charta.  
Preaching  
friars church  
foundd by  
Bainards ca.  
ste, befoze  
which time,  
their church  
was in Hol.  
boyn.

An. reg. 5.

1277

*An. reg. 6.*

ing nere to the Welchmen, tame them. He also sent a great army into Wales under the leading of Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne: at which time the king himselfe led an army toward Suffolke and Posfolke, and kept his Caſter at Poswich, returning from thence to London by the sea coast of Suffolke and Eſſer, and shortly after Midſommer carried almost all the ſouldiours of England into Wales, as farre as Camron, and toke Angleſey, whither Leoline came to redẽme it. Finally, a peace was made: king Edward builded a Caſtle at Aberiſwith, and returned into England with great honoz, hauing receiued Leoline Prince of Wales with a kiſſe of peace, brought him vp to London; where after he had kept his Chriſtmas with the king at Weſtminiſter, he departed toward his owne countrey.

Lib Kenſham.

The ſame yere the king gaue to Roger Mortimer, the lande of Barry, and Kidwy, with the Caſtle of Dolozon, the which Caſtle Leoline had founded.

1278

Toward the charges of theſe warres, the twentieth part of all mens goods was granted to the king.

Lib Kenſham.

Leoline Prince of Wales toke to wiſſe the daughter of Simon de Mountford at Wirceſter.

Archibures bones  
reſpoured.

In the month of Aprill, the king, the Quene, and the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, with their traines, toke their iourney toward Glaſſenbury, and there ſoiourned, where y king cauſed the tombe of Arthur to be opened, whoſe bones he cauſed to be remoued out of the ſaid tombe, to behold the length and bignes of them, and then returned towards London.

*An. reg. 7.*  
Parliament at  
Gloceſter.

King Edw. held his parliament at Gloceſter, in the which parliament were certain ſtatutes made, which vnto this day are called the ſtatutes of Gloceſter.

Jewes execu-  
ted.

Walter Merton Biſhop of Rocheſter deceaſed, and was buried at Rocheſter. Reformation was made for clipping of the kings coine, for which offence 267. Jewes were put to execution.

1279  
Round table at  
Killingworth.  
J. Roule.

The worthy ſouldier Rog. Mortimer, at Killingworth, appointed a knightly game, which was called the Round table, of 100. knights, and ſo many Ladies, to the which, for the exerciſe of armes, there came many warlike knights from diuers kingdomes.

John Peckham a Frier Pinoz bozne in Suſſer beſides Letwes, after the reſignation of Robert Kilwarby, was made Archbiſhop of Canterbury.

Walter Gifford Archbiſhop of Poſke deceaſed, and was buried at Poſke, to whome ſucceded William Wickwaine chancelor of the ſame Church.

Jewes hanged.

The Jewes at Northampton crucified a chriſtian boy vpon Goodfriday, but did not thoroughly kill him, for the which fact manie Jewes at London after Eaſter were dꝛawne at horſe tailles and hanged.

First halfe  
pence and far-  
things round.

Whereas before this time, the penny was wont to haue a double croſſe, with a croſſe, in ſuch ſort, that the ſame might be eaſily broken in the middeſt, or into foure quarters, and ſo to bee made into halfe pence, or farthings: which order was taken in the yere of Chriſt 1106. the 7. of H. the 1. it was now ordained, that pence, halfe pence and farthings, ſhould be made round, whereupon was made theſe verſes following:

Pierſe Longtoſe.

Edward



Edward did smite round peny, halfe peny, farthing,  
 The crosse passes the bond of all throughout the ring.  
 The Kings side was his head, and his name written,  
 The crosse side, what citie it was in, coyned and smitten.  
 To poore man, ne to priest, the peny frayes nothing,  
 Men giue God aye the least, they feast him with a farthing.  
 A thousand two hundred, fourescore yeres and mo,  
 On this money men wondred, when it first began to go.

The olde money was not so; bidden to goe with the newe : and besides these moneys, there was coyned groates, containing foure pence the pæce.

The pound of esterling money at this time contained 12. ounces, to witte, fine silver (such as men make into foyle or leaues, and is commonly called silver of Gutherom lane) 11. ounces, 2. esterlings, and one sterling, and the other 17. d. ob. q.; to be alay. Also the pound ought to wey of money, 20. s. 3. d. by account, so that no pound ought to be aboue 20. s. 4. d. nor lesse then 20. s. 2. d. by account. The ounce to wey 20. d. The peny to wey 24. graines, &c.

This pæce was inclosed the first great Parsh at Plumsted by the Abbot of Delsnese: the other part of the same Parsh was inclosed foureteene yeres after in the pæce 1293.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Winchester. He caused his fathers sepulture at Westminster to be richly garnished with precious stones of sapphire, which he had brought out of France for that purpose.

Nicholas de Ely bishop of Winchester deceased, and was buried at Maaurel, unto whom succeeded Iohn de Pontefere. Also Iohn Cheshele Bishop of London deceased: unto whom succeeded Richard Grauesend Archdeacon of Portsmouth: Walter Coade bishop of Excester deceased, unto whom succeeded Peter of Excester a chanon of the same church.

The morrowe after Lammas day, and in the night following was made such an inundation or flowing of waters, that therewith many men, women, and children were drowned, besides beasts in the fieldes, milles, bridges, houses and trees were ouerthrowne: the hay and grasse was spoiled.

On S. Martins euen a great thunder overthrew many houses and trees in England, to the maruailing of many.

The cleargie of England gaue to the king a sixteenth of all their goods for thre yeres.

Edmond Carle of Cornwall founded a new house for students of the order of Cistercians at Driford, he brought thither Ponks from Thame, and for the first gift gaue them the mannor of Erdbington. Robert Burnell Bish. of Bath and Welles the kings Chancelor; dedicated that church, and that day the carle laide the foundation of the new church of North Diney.

King Edward celebrated the feast of Christmas at S. Edmundsbury.

David Lord of Denbigh being reconciled to his brother the Prince Leoline (against whom he had bin a traitor) vpon condition he should neuer after serue the king of England, but become his bitter enemy, laide siege to the Castle of Haywarden and toke therein Sir Roger Clifford (a noble knight) slaying all that

that resisted, and after spoiling all the Countrey, he with his brother the prince laide siege to the castle of Ruthland. The king hearing this, hastid thither with a great army to raise the siege, and in his toyn he celebrated the feast of Easter at the Wife in the Diocesse of Salisburie, from thence he went to Ambzelsbery, there to visite his mother, who remayned in that Monasterie. Which being done, he hastid after his army into Wales, whose coming being heard of, the Prince retired with his army. But in the meane time Ryce the sonne of Malgon, and Griffyth ap Meridith ap Owen, with other noblemen of Southwales, took the castle of Aberistwith, the castle of Flint, of Rutland, and diuers other, spoiling the kings people that inhabited the reaboutes. Whereupon John Peckham Archbyschop of Canterburie, after hee had visited his whole prouince, considering the great warres betwene the king and Lewline, he traualled for the appeasing thereof, first to the king being at Ruthland, then to the prince being at Snowdon: which his whole traualle therein, with the griefe, and causes of those wars he particularly set down word by word in the said archbishops records: all which I receiued at the hands of Doctor Yale, when he was Deane of the Arches, as I haue set downe in my larger Chronicle.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Worcester. From this Christmas till the Purification of our Ladie, there was such a frost and snow, as no man liuing coulde remember the like, where-through, five arches of London bridge, & all Rochester bridge were boyn down, & carried away with the stream, and the like happened to many bridges in England. And not long after men passed ouer the Thames betwene Westminster and Lambeth, and likewise ouer the river of Medway, betwene Stronde and Rochester dyke. Fishes in ponds, and birds in woods died for want of food.

King Edward did celebrate his feast of Easter in the Abbey of Aberconway in Wales.

Pirates of Zeland and Holland about Parmouth and Donwiche, did spoyle and rob whosoever they met, slew many men, and carried away not a few ships with all the goods in them.

The king entred Wales with an army, appointing his footemen to occu-  
pie the enimies in sight, whiles his horsemen in a wing set on the reerebattell: himselfe with a power kept his place, where he pight his golden Dragon, vnto the which as to a Castell, the wounded and wearie might repaire: but David fleeing, the king with his power followed, and as he passed by a wood, there issued out of the same a foure thousand Welchmen, which inuading the kings army, made great slaughter: but at length the king marching through by strong hand, entred the castle of Dre, and took Anglesey, where hee lost Sir Lucas Thany, Sir William Linsey, William de Awdley, Roger Clifford the younger, and 12. other of his chiefeest captaines, 17. young gentlemen, and two hundred footemen.

John Peckham Archbyschop of Canterburie sendeth commandement to the Byschop of London, to destroy all the synagogues of the Iewes within his diocesse.

Leoline prince of Wales came downe from the mountaine of Snowdon, to Spountgomerie,

King Edward  
went into  
Wales.  
An. reg. 10.

1282  
Bridges boyn  
downe.

I. Everden,  
Parmouth  
and Donwiche  
spoiled.

W. Rishenger.  
W. Packinge.

The Iewes  
synagogues  
destroyed.

T. Walsingham.

Spountgonerie, and was at length taken at Bwelth Castell, where using reprochfull words against the Englishmen, Roger le Strange ranne vpon him and cut off his head, leaving his dead bodie on the ground. Sir Roger Mortimer caused the head of Leoline to be set vpon the Tower of London, crowned with a Diadem. This was the end of Leoline, betrayed by the men of Blith: and this was the last Prince of the Brytaines blood, that bare Rule and Dominion in Wales.

The noble man Roger Mortimer died at Kingsteme.

Elianor Quene of England was deliuered of a daughter named Elizabeth, at Ruthland, or Radland.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Ruthland in Wales. He toke the whole treasure of the tenthes, which were granted vnto the Pope, to the reliefe of the holy land into his hands, and to his owne vse, which had bene laid vp in diuers places of England, but he caused the lockes of chestes to be broken vp wherein the money had bene kept.

After the death of Leoline Prince of Wales, his brother David taking his flight, the rest of the Welshmen, as well nobles as other, yielded themselves vnto the king, and then the king subdured all Wales euen to the sea coasts toward Ireland, and all the castles were yielded vnto him. Then he stablished there the lawes of England, and did place Iustices of Peace and other Ministers. Also he placed the Erchequer for Wales at Chester. In the meane time, David being destitute of helpe, wandering in vncertaine places, at length he returned to his owne confusion: for hee was taken with one of his sons, Packington faithfull, of his sons and 7. daughters, at St. Moyses, all which were brought before the King by whose commandement he was committed to the castle of Chester. And afterwards in a parliament at Shrewsbury the saide David was convicted of treason, and was iudged to be hanged and quartered, which was done accordingly. Then the king builded two strong castles, the one at Conrway, (after he had remoued the Abbey at Aberconway to an other place:) the other castell he builded at Cairnarvon. He gave diuers castles to Englishmen. He diuided Wales into shires and hundreds: and so the king passed through all Wales, and annexed it to the crowne of England.

King Edward founded the Abbey of Vale Royall in Cheshire for Cistercian Monkes.

King Edward held a parliament at Adon Burnell, wherein were made statutes, named of that place.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Ruthland in Wales. On St. Stephens date was great thunder and lightnings verie strange. And likewise on Easter day the 9. of Aprill was the like thunders and lightnings, such as men could scarce stand on their feete.

On Saint Marks date, or the five and twentieth date of Aprill, at Cairnarvon in Wales was bozne the kings sonne named Edward vpon this occasion: King Edward albeit hee had brought all Wales vnder his subiection, and a statute made at Ruthland, in the twelfth yere of his Reigne, incorporated and united the same vnto England; yet could he neuer win the goodwills of the

Wil. Rishanger.  
Nic. Bromfield.

An. reg. 11.  
Leoline prince  
of Wales slain.

1283

The tenthes  
granted to the  
reliefe of the  
holy land, the King  
tooke to his  
owne vse.

Wales subdu-  
ed.

Wales diuided  
into shires and  
hundreds.

An. reg. 12.

Parliament at  
Adon Burnell.

1284

Tempests.

Edward the King  
sonne bozne at  
Cairnarvon.

common people of the country to accept him for their prince, unless he would remaine himselfe in that country among them, neither could he bying them to yeeld obedience to any Prince, except he were of their own nation. For the Welchmen having experience of the government of the English officers, and knowing that the king would rule the country by his deputies, could not abide to haue any Englishman to be their ruler: wherefore oftentimes, vpon the kings motion they answered, that they were contented to take for their Prince any man, whom he would name, so that he were a Welchman, and other answer could he neuer get of them by any meanes. Whereupon, having secretly sent for the Q. being then great with childe, caused her to remaine at Carnarvon: and when she was nigh her time of deliuerance, the king being at Ruthin, sent for all the Barons and best men of Wales, to come to him to consult concerning the weale publike of their country; and when they were come, he deferred the consultation, untill hee were certified that the Quene were deliuered of a sonne: Then sending certaine Lordes to the christening, hee called the Welchmen together, declaring vnto them, that whereas they were oftentimes suiters vnto him to appoint them a Prince; he now having occasion to depart out of the country would name them a prince, if they would allow and obey him whom he should name. To the which they answered, that they would so do, if he would appoint one of their nation. Whereunto the king replied, that he would name one that was borne in Wales, and could speake neuer a word of English, whose life and conversation no man was able to detect. And when they all had granted, that such a one they would obey, he named his owne son Edward borne in Carnarvon Castle a fewe daies before. Then the king having the country at his will, gaue Lordships and townes in the midst of Wales vnto English Lords, as the Lordship of Denbigh to Henry Lacy Carle of Lincolne: the Lordship of Ruthen to the Lord Reginald Grey, second sonne to John Grey of Wilton, &c.

Policy of king  
Edward to  
winne the  
Welchmen.

Edward of  
Carnarvon  
prince of  
Wales.

An. reg. 13.

1285  
Westminster  
church finished.

Scutage paid.

Parliament  
at Westmin-  
ster.

An. reg. 14.

1286  
Lib. Reioham.

Laurence Duckett Goldsmith of London was murdered in Botwe Church of Cheape, for the which fact, 28. men were hanged, and one woman burned.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Bristow.

And this yere was finished the newe worke of the church of Westminster, vnto the ende of the quier: by which reason it appeareth to haue bene reedified about the space of fiftie fire yeres since the third yere of king Henry the third.

King Edward toke scutage forty shillings vpon euery knights fee, toward his charges in his voyage against the Welch.

About the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist began a parliament at Westminster, wherein were made the statutes called Additamenta Gloucest.

William Wicwaine archbishoppe of Poike deceased, vnto whome succeeded Iohn Romayne prebender of Lincolne.

King Edward, with Elianor his Quene, kept his Christmas at Orford, where he remained fiftene daies, hee caused Alfred Pator of the Citty, and foure other to be hanged, and Iohn Picot to bee imprisoned, for the death of Walter Lechelade.

After



After the Purification of our Lady, king Edward held a great parliament at Westminster. Parliament at Westminster.

King Edward entred the sea at Dover toward Gascoigne on the 13. of May, passed over into France, came to Anniens with an honorable company, where the king of France Philip le Bewe, for honours sake met him: and after h. Edward did to him homage at Paris, and was present at the parliament.

Hugh Balsam bish. of Ely deceased in his manor of Downham, unto whom succeeded Iohn Kyrkby the kings Treasurer, and deane of Winbozne, Walter Bishoppe of Salisbury deceased, and Henry Brankstone Deane of the same church succeeded.

William Warren son and heire of Iohn Warren earle of Surrey, in a turneament at Croyden, was by the Challenger intercepted, and cruelly slaine. An. reg. 15.

King Edward of England kept his Christmasse in the Ile of Oltron in Gascoigne. 1187

On Newyeres daie at night, as well through the vehemency of the wind, as violence of the sea, the monasterie of Spalding, and many churches were overthrowen & destroyed, not onely at Parmouth, Donwiche, and Ipswich, but also in divers other places of England, adjoyning to the sea especially in the parts called Holland in Lincolneshire, all the whole countrey was for the most part turned into a standing pole, so that an intollerable multitude of men, women, and children were overwhelmed with the water, especially the towne of Boston or Buttolphs towne, a great part thereof was destroyed by reason of wrongs done by Payne Tiptot. Rice ap Meridith rebelled in Wales, and did much hurt, against whome came Edmund the kings brother: and at the siege of Dorslan Castle undermining of the walles, with the ruines were slaine William Mountchensy, Gerard de Insula, bannerets, Humfrey Hastings bachelor, and divers other.

On the 2. day of May, all the Jewes in England were apprehended, by precept from the king being then at Burdeaur, for what cause, it was not known, but they redeemed themselves for 12000. poundes of siluer. And at that time the Jewes had a synagogue at Canterbury. Jewes apprehended. W. Thorne.

A Iusts was proclaimed to be holden at Buttolphs towne or Boston, in the faire time wherof one part of the Iustlers came as Chalengers in the habit of Ponkes, the other as defendants in the habite of Chanons, both these sortes of Iustlers had covenanted, after the Iustles to spoyle the faire: for atchieving wherof, they fiered the towne in three severall places, on the morrowe after Saint Iannes day, that they might more freely spoyle and sacke the residue, and whilst the merchants were busie to save their goods, & to quench the fire, they were slaine downe by the said Iustlers, and their partakers, by this fiering the blacke friers church was brent, and almost the whole towne, so that, as it was said, streames of gold, siluer, and other mettals molten, ran into the sea, as it was moreover said, that all the money in ready coine within England would binneath recompence the losse then sustained. The captaine of which mischief was Robert Chamberlaine Esquier, who was afterward hanged, but would neuer confesse his fellowes.

Iustles at Boston, and that towne burned.

*An. reg. 16.*

On a day as the king and quene sate together in a chamber, a thunderclap entring by the window passed betwixt them both, and slewe two of their household seruants, which stode in their presence.

1288

*An. reg. 17.*  
A hot summer, & cheape graine.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Burdeaur in Gascoigne.

The summer was so exceeding hote this yere, that many men died through heate, and yet wheate was solde at London for thre shillings foure pence the quarter when it was dearest, and in other partes abroad the same was solde for twentie pence, or sixtene pence the quarter, yea for twelue pence the quarter, and in the west and north parts for eight pence the quarter, barly for six pence, and otes for foure pence the quarter, and such cheapennesse of beanes and pease, as the like had not bene heard.

1289

King and Quene returned out of Gascoigne after three yeres and moze.

King Edward of England kept his Christmas at Belegard in the land of Bierne.

The king and Quene after thre yeres, two moneths, and odde daies, being beyond the seas in Gascoigne, arrived at Dover on the fift of August, and remaining a while in Kent, he with his traine lay at Saint Augustines, from whence he passed over into Essex, and on Saint Lamberts day came to Saint Edmundsbury in Suffolke: from thence hee went into Norfolke, and from thence sailed by the Ile of Ely to London, where he was honorably received.

T. de Weyland Justice, committed to the Tower.

Thomas de Weyland the kinges chiefe Justice, being in the kinges lower bench indicted, & by inquisition convicted, upon the discovery of certaine of his seruants which had slaine a certaine person before, and fearing to yield himselfe to the kinges mercie, went to the friar Pinos at Babwell nere unto S. Edmundsbury, where the king so commanding, for certaine daies hee was diligently kept by men of that country, he toke on him the habite of a grey frier, whereupon the king caused him to be better looked vnto, so that at length, after two moneths siege, when all the friers almost were first dispersed into sundrie places, he forsaking his friers cole, went out, and was taken and sent to the Tower.

*An. reg. 18.*

City of Carlisle burned.

Great haste fell in England, and after ensued great raine, that the yere following, wheate was raised from thre pence the bushell, to sixtene pence, and so increased yerele, till it was lastly sold for twenty shillings the quarter.

The citie of Carlisle, the Abbey, with all the houses belonging to the friers minors was consumed with fire.

William de Brassa called the Senioz, deceased at Jfndon, and was buried in the monastery of Sele.

1290

Justices punished.  
Adam Meri.  
Chron. Dun.  
Rad. Baldoke.  
Sca. Cro.  
7. Roule.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Westminster with great solemnity.

King Edward held a parliament at Westminster, wherein the transgressions of diuers Justices were tried out, and punished accordingly: some lost their goods, and then were banished: some, as wel of the bench, as of the assises, were sent to the Tower, which with great summes of money obtained liberty.

Sir Thomas Weyland had all his goods, both moucable and immoucable confiscated and was banished, sir Ralph Hengham, chiefe Justice of the higher bench, offered seuen thousand markes, sir Iohn Loucet Justice of the lower bench thre thousand markes, sir William Bromtome Justice, sixe thousand markes.

Of

Of their clearkes for their redemption: of Robert Littleburie 1000. markes: of Roger Leicester 1000. markes: of sir Salomon Rochester, chiefe Justice of Assises 4000. markes: of sir Richard Boylond 4000. markes: of sir Thomas Soudentone 2000. markes: of sir Walter de Hopton 2000. markes: of Robert Preston 1000. markes: of sir William Saham Justice 3000. markes: of a certaine cleaerke of the court called Adam de Stratton 32000. markes of olde money and new, beside iewels without number, and pretious vessels of siluer, which were found in his house, and a kings crowne, which men said was king Iohns. Whereouer, the king constrained the Justices to sweare, that from thenceforth they should take no pension, fee, or gifte of any man, except onely a breakfast, or such like present.

Hee banished all the Jewes out of England, giving them to beare their charges, till they were out of his realme, the number of Jewes then expulsed, was 15060. persons, whose houses being sold, the king made a mighty masse of money.

All Jewes banished out of England.

The Scottes by their Charter deliuered to king Edward the kingdome of Scotland, with the castles, rights and customes the fourth day of June, that upon due discussing the matter, it might bee knowne who was lawfull heire thereunto.

Record.

The cleargie granted to the king, a tenth of all their goods for one yeere: the king also toke a sixteenth of the temporallties throughout England.

The last day of Aprill Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester & Hereford, toke to wife, Ioane of Acres daughter to king Edward, at Westminster.

The same yeere Iohn duke of Brabant toke to wife Margaret daughter to king Edward of England.

King Edward toke his journey toward Scotland, there to decide of the right heire of Scotland as superiour Lord of that land. But as hee approached to the confines of Scotland, the Quene his wife, being taken with a grievous sickness, departed this life at Herdby a towne nere unto Lincoln, on the eight and twentieth of November, whereupon he returned to conuey the corps towards London, which he did with great sorrow, for he bewailed the losse of her all the daies of his life: she was in her life time a vertuous Lady, modest, pitifull, a lover of the English nation, & as it were a pillar of defence to the whole realme: her bowels were buried at Lincoln, and a tombe erected there, with her armes of Castile thereupon, in our Lady chappell: her body was brought to Westminster, and there buried on the seventeenth day of December. In euerie towne and place in which the bodie of the Q. was staied in the bringing vp to London & to Westminster, the king caused a stately Crosse to be erected, euery one of them being garnished with the Image of the same Q. also with his armes and hirs. The crosses erected were at Charing by Westminster, in Westcheape of London, at Waltham in Essex, at Saint Albons in Hertfordshire, at Dunstable, at Stony Stratford, and Northampton, without the towne south, at Woborne, Grantsham, &c. Whereouer king Edward gaue unto Walter Abbot of Westminster, and to his successors, the manors of Arnoll, and Grasson, with the Hamlets, Culspath, Buley, Buluerly, Wichlakefield, Bonnewaldobey, or

Quene Elizabeth not deceased.

An. reg. 19.

Charing crosse and other builded. T. Clifford.

Downe.

Downton, Dolehay, Putehurst, Longdon, and Wodington : all which were appointed for the keeping of pærelie obites for the saide Quene, and for mony to be giuen to the poze that shoulde come.

1291

Ed. Edward kept his Christmas at Ashuge an Hermitage in Buckinghamshire, founded by Edmund Beauford earle of Cornetwall.

*An. reg. 20.*

Lib. Keinham.

After the feast of Easter king Edward going into Scotland, when he came to Forke, hee tarried there a while, and then Rice ap Meridith before taken in Wales and brought thither, was by iudgement condemned, dzatone through the citie to the gallowes, and there ended his life. On the xi. of May was borne Gilbert de Clare, after earle of Glocester and Hereford, at Theokesberie. The same yere deceased Elianor the kings mother, and was buried at Ambzesburie, where she was bailed.

After this, the king going into Scotland appointed all those that claymed arie right to the Realme of Scotland, that in the feast of S. Iohn Baptist next ensuing, they shoulde appeare before him, to declare plainly by what right they claimed the kingdome.

1292

King Edward at Westminster kept his Christmas, but Gilbert de Clare earle of Glocester with the Countesse his wife, Ioan of Acres the king daughter, kept their Christmas at Clare in Suffolke.

The Pope granted unto the king of Englande, a tenth of all ecclesiasticall goods of Religious persons, onely Hospitallers and Templars excepted, for 6. yeres, towards the recovery of Jerusalem : whereupon a newe taxation was made, through England, Scotland, Ireland and Wales.

Isabell de Douer, Countesse of Arisle, deceased at Chilham in Kent, and was buried in Christs Church in Canterburie.

Roger Bacon a franchiscane, or frier Minor, a learned man of Oxforde deceased, and was buried in the grey friers Church at Oxforde. He compiled and wrote more then fourescore booke, as Bale testifieth.

*An. reg. 21.*  
John Bailliol  
did homage for  
Scotland.  
Records.

After the Feast of Saint Iohn the Baptist, king Edward comming into Scotland, and receiuing the allegiance of them which chalenged the Realme of Scotland, deferring his finall sentence unto the feast of Saint Michael next ensuing. The Messengers of Ericus king of Norway, made their request otherwise then in their petition was declared, which was reade before them, and daie was giuen till Wednesday next after the feast of Saint Martine : but in the ende, to wit, on the eighteenth daie of Nouember, king Edward sate in his Tribunall seate at Berwik, and hauing heard the Assertions of the Com-petitozs of the Crowne of Scotlande, hee adiudged Iohn Bailliol to bee true heire of Scotland, and therefore to enioy the same whole kingdome, with the appurtenances, and assigned him to do him homage, which was performed at Forham the 20. day of Nouember.

1293

King Edward kept his Christmas at Newcastle vpon Tyne, whither came to him the king of Scots. On S. Stephens daie the said king of Scots, Iohn Bailliol by name, did homage to king Edward.

Iohn Peckham Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, deceased on the eight daie of Januarie, and was buried at Canterburie, when hee had sate Arch-byschoppe



by Hoppe thirte ne pæres, foure and twentie weekes, and two daies: he was a verie diligente Preacher, and carelesse of woꝝldlie fauour: he founded a Colledge at Wingham in Kent, foure myles and a halfe from Canterburie.

The 9. of July a great part of the town of Granthidge, with S. Maries church was consumed with fire. Granthidge burned.

The Carmelites or white Friars, that had first planted themselves at Chester, then at Bettenham, this yere came to Cambridge, and builded then a new Church in the parish of Saint Iohn in Milnestrate, and then a Friar of that house named Humfrey obtained licence of W. de Luda bishop of Ely, there to begin a reading of diuinity, and so he read solemnely in his scholes of that house. Diuinitie Lectures in Cambridge.

At the same time also the Chanons of the order of Sempelingham, were diligent in lectures and disputations: these had thir being at Saint Edmundes Chappell, manie houses were destroyed in the Towne of Cambridge for the setting vp of the Colleges, and of the Augustines.

Also about the same time, a certaine order of friars called de penitencia Iesu Christi, beganne to builde them a Church, and other offices ouer against Saint Edmundes Chappell, these bꝛethren de sacco gathered together manie good Schollers, and multiplied exceedinglie, untill the councell at Lions, in the which it was decreed, that from that time forth, there shoulde no more orders of friars beggars be admitted, but the Preachers, Minors, Carmelites, and Augustines, and so from that time the begging friars decreased, and grew to nothing, saue them afoꝛe named. Friars of the sacke.

And this yere king Edward late two daies and two nights in the castle of Cambridge, as befoꝛe that time neuer any king had don, that could be remembred of. The king had then a great stable of hoꝛse at Barnetwell, Adam de Riston being master there. King Edward lay in the castle of Cambridge.

Edmund earle of Leicester & Lancaster bꝛother to king Edward, founded an house of nuns of the order of S. Clare, called the Spinoꝛies in the parish of S. Buttolphs without Aldgate of London.

The 20. of September William earle of Barre toke to wiue Elianor the kings daughter of England at Bissow. Lib Keinham.

King Edward laid hardlie to the charge of the Archbishop of Poꝛke, so that he had excommunicated Anthony Beake bꝛishop of Durham, being then in the kings seruice, and one of his counsell, the archbꝛishop put himselfe to the kings grace, and was pardoned foꝛ 4000. marks. An. reg. 22.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Canterburie.

Thre men had their right hands cut off in Westcheape foꝛ rescuing of a prisoner, arrested by an officer of the citie of London. 1294

King Edward sent Anthony Beke Bishop of Durham, to moue Radulph the emperoꝛ to iolue with him in league. He also commanded an army to be made ready at Portsmouth, from thence to passe into Gascoigne, appointing his nephew Iohn de Brytaine earle of Richmond to be chieftaine ouer the same, ioluing to him Iohn de S. Iohn, and Robert Tiptot pꝛudent knights. the

the keeping of the sea, he set forth 3. severall fleets, appointing the Admirals, to them of Portsmouth and those parts, John de Botecart: to them of Portsmouth, William de Leiborne: to the Westernmen and of Ireland, an Irish knight.

A great taxat-  
on.

There was granted to the king for an aid in these wars, the one halfe of all the goods of the Cleargie, a first part of the Citizens, and a tenth of the Commons goods: the Abbey of Saint Augulines at Canterburie was charged and paid 596. pounds 7. shillings, and 10. pence, and also was charged with 6. horses and all their furniture, towarde the keeping of the sea coasts. There was in all leuted of the Cleargie at that time, to the sum of threescore hundred thousand pounds, according to the account, and as it was valued in Gascoign, to wit, 8. s. sluer to the pound.

A power sent  
into Gascoign.

The kings army passing from Portsmouth, arrived at S. Mathews in Bys-  
taine, they entred the mouth of the river Giron towards Burdeaur, they toke two goodlie walled towne, Burgo and Bleya, and passing before Burdeaur, they came to Lions, where the towne being deliuered to them, they bring thre  
horses to land.

King Edward  
entred Wales.

In the meane space the Welshmen making them Captaines, Madoc, and Malgon, they bzent the castell of Carnaryon, slaying a great number of Eng-  
lish men. King Edward entring Wales, called backe his brother Edmund earle of Leicester, and Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln into Wales, who were ready to haue passed into Gascoigne. The Welshmen with gre at strength came a-  
gainst them, and expelled the earles.

An. reg. 23.  
Lib. Kensham.  
Prisones ali-  
ans taken to  
the kings use.

King Edward toke into his hands all the Prisones allians throughout Eng-  
land, with all their lands and goods any waie arising, committing the same to officers vnder him, allowing to euery monke eightene pence the weeke, and all the ouerplus of their reuenues was appoynted towarde the charges of the kings warres, reteining also to his treasury, the pensions or annuities due to the princippall houses. Also in the same parliament, he obtained agatine of the cleargy and religious persons a loane of mony, to the value of halfe their goods and lands, according to the former exaction of the tenthers, which loane amount-  
ed to 100000. poundes, whereof the Abbot of Wury paid 655. poundes eleuen pence farthing.

Great Taxe.

1295

King Edward in his expedition into Wales kept his Christmas at Aber-  
conway. The 19. of January, together with the night and day following, by the rage of winde with vehemente showers and stormes, such as the like had not bene scene in one hundred yeeres before, all the winter seedes were consumed, as well in Holland as in Herland. At which time the water of Thames ouer-  
flowed the banks, and a great breach was made at Radarhith besides London, and all the grounds about Bermondsey, Lambeth, & Bathil was ouerflowed.

Breach at Ra-  
darhith.

The last of Februarie there sodainlie arose such a fire in the castle of Wind-  
soze, that many officers of the same house were therewith consumed, and many goodly images made to beautifie the building, were defaced and deformed.

Castle of  
Windsoze bur-  
ned.

Castle of Ben-  
marish.  
John Rouse.  
Chron. Dun.

The king passing the water of Conolway, and so forth into Wales with  
an army against the Welshmen, builded the castell of Benmarish, in the Ile  
of Anglesey. The Welshmen were consumed by famine, their woods were  
felled,

felled, and many castles fortified, their captain was taken and brought to London, and so for that time the wars ceased.

The Frenchmen arrived at Dover, spoiled the town, and burnt a great part thereof, amongst other they slew Thomas of Dover, a monk of great holiness.

The king caused all the monasteries in England to be searched, and the money in them to be brought up to London. He also seized into his hands all their laie fees, because they refused to paie to him such a far as hee demanded. Moreover, he caused the wool and leather to be staid in Englaunde, and there followed great dearth of coine and wine.

There rose a great discord at Oxford, betwene the clerkes and lay men, and all because of two barlets of divers countries, which fell out about a small matter, for upon that occasion, some took one part, and some another, and so all were divided into parties; in somuch, that learned and letud by flockemeale ran to the fight, and when the Schollers or clerkes were gone out of their hostles, the laity perceiuing either none, or else verie few to be remaining at home, entered the clerkes lodgings, and carried awoke a great deale and many kinds of stuffe, to the great and unrecoverable damage of the schollers. In this skirmish was slain sir Fulke of Heynsmouth, parson of Wicheham, and manie other on either side. The king hearing thereof, sent Justiciars to restore the peace, and to condempne the murderers, which when they came, forced the Townsmen to pay the schollers 200. pounds for damages done unto them.

Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester and Hereford deceased at Monmouth, and was buried at Tewkesbury amongst his progenitors, on S. Thomas date the Apostle.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at S. Albons.

About the conversion of S. Paul, Edmund the kings brother earle of Lancaster, with Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln, the earle of Warwicke, Robert fitz Walker, and a mighty army taking shipping at Plimouth in Cornwall with 360 ships sailed over into Gascoigne. Edmund the kings brother died there, and was brought over and buried at Westminster. After whose death the English army constrained through lacke of victuals, departed, and brake up siege.

John surnamed Romaine Archbishop of Yorke deceased, to whome succeeded Henry de Newarke, Deane of that Church.

John Bailliol king of Scots, contrarie to his allegiance rebelled, wherefore king Edward hastid him thither, and won the castles of Berwicke, and Dunbar: he slew of the Scots 25000. He conquered Edenborough, where he found the regall ensignes of Scotland, as crowne, scepter and cloth of estate, &c. In his returne he called a parliament at Berwicke, where he received the fealties of all the great men of Scotland, and their homages.

William de Valence earle of Penbrooke was slain by the French at Balon.

This yere was a grete famine in England, chieflie a default of wine, that the same could scarcely be had to minister the communion with in the church.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Ipswich.

Simon a monk of Walden, being notable learned, began to teach the canon law in the Universitie of Cambridge.

Dover spoiled.  
W. Packin.  
Monasteries  
searched.  
W. Shephead.

Oxford be-  
twixt the clerks  
and townes  
men of Oxford.

An. reg. 24.

1296

W. Packington.  
T. Walsingham.

King Edward  
won Berwicke.  
Regalles of  
Scotland.

An. reg. 25.

Lacke of wine  
in England.

1297

Canon law  
taught in  
Cambridge.

King

the keeping of the sea, he set forth 3. severall fleets, appointing the Admirals, to them of Portsmouth and those parts, John de Botecart: to them of Portesmouth, William de Leiborne: to the Westernmen and of Ireland, an Irish knight.

A great taxation.

There was granted to the king for an aid in these wars, the one halfe of all the goods of the Cleargie, a first part of the Citizens, and a tenth of the Commons goods: the Abbey of Saint Augustines at Canterburie was charged and paid 596. pounds 7. shillings, and 10. pence, and also was charged with 6. horses and all their furniture, towarde the keeping of the sea coasts. There was in all leuied of the Cleargie at that time, to the sum of threescore hundred thousand pounds, according to the account, and as it was valued in Galcoigne, to wit, 8. s. bluer to the pound.

A power sent into Galcoigne.

The kings army passing from Portsmouth, arrived at S. Mathews in Bysaine, they entred the mouth of the river Giron towards Burdeaur, they toke two goodlie walled towne, Burgo and Bleya, and passing before Burdeaur, they came to Lions, where the towne being deliuered to them, they bying the ir horses to land.

King Edward entred Wales.

In the meane space the Welchmen making them Captaines, Madoc, and Malgon, they bent the castell of Carnarvon, slaying a great number of English men. King Edward entring Wales, called backe his brother Edmund earle of Leicester, and Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne into Wales, who were ready to haue passed into Galcoigne. The Welchmen with great strength came against them, and expelled the earles.

An. reg. 23.  
Lib. Kensiam.  
Prisoners all  
taken to  
the kings use.

King Edward toke into his hands all the Prisons allans throughout England, with all their lands and goods any waie arising, committing the same to officers vnder him, allowing to euery monke eightene pence the weeke, and all the ouerplus of their reuenues was appoynted towarde the charges of the kings warres, reteining also to his treasury, the pensions or annuities due to the principall houses. Also in the same parliament, he obtained againe of the cleargy and religious persons a loane of mony, to the value of halfe their goods and lands, according to the former exaction of the tenthes, which loane amounted to 100000. poundes, whereof the Abbot of Wury paid 655. poundes cleuen pence farthing.

Great Tere.

1295

King Edward in his expedition into Wales kept his Christmas at Aberconway, The 19. of January, together with the night and day following, by the rage of winde with vehemente howers and stormes, such as the like had not bene seene in one hundred yeeres before, all the winter sedes were consumed, as well in Holland as in Herland. At which time the water of Thames ouerflowed the banks, and a great breach was made at Radarhith besides London, and all the grounds about Bermondsey, Lambeth, & Bathil was ouerflowed.

Breach at Radarhith.

The last of Februarie there sodainlie arose such a fire in the castle of Windsoze, that many officers of the same house were therewith consumed, and many godly images made to beautifie the building, were defaced and deformed.

Castle of Windsoze burned.

Castle of Benmarish.  
John Koufe.  
Chron. Dun.

The king passing the water of Conoway, and so forth into Wales with an army against the Welchmen, builded the castell of Benmarish, in the Ile of Anglesey. The Welchmen were consumed by famine, their woods were

felled,



elled, and many castles fortified, their captain was taken and brought to London, and so for that time the wars ceased.

The Frenchmen arrived at Dover, spoiled the town, and bent a great part thereof, amongst other they slew Thomas of Dover, a monk of great holiness.

The king caused all the monasteries in England to be searched, and the money in them to be brought up to London. He also seized into his hands all their laic fees, because they refused to paie to him such a tax as hee demanded. Moreover, he caused the wool and leather to be staid in Englande, and there followed great dearth of come and wine.

There rose a great discord at Oxford, betwene the clerkes and lay men, and all because of two barlets of divers countries, which fell out about a small matter, for upon that occasion, some took one part, and some another, and so all were divided into parties; insomuch, that learned and letud by flockemeale ran to the fight, and when the Schollers or clerkes were gone out of their hostles, the laity perceiuing either none, or else verie few to be remaining at home, entered the clerks lodgings, and carried a waie a great deale and many kinds of stuffe, to the great and unrecoverable damage of the schollers. In this skirmish was slain sir Fulke of Heymouth, parson of Wichesthorne, and manie other on either side. The king hearing thereof, sent Justiciars to restore the peace, and to condemn the murderers, which when they came, forced the Townesmen to pay the schollers 200. pounds for damages done unto them.

Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester and Hereford deceased at Monmouth, and was buried at Tewkesbury amongst his progenitors, on S. Thomas date the Apostle.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at S. Albons.

About the conversion of S. Paul, Edmund the kings brother earle of Lancaster, with Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln, the earle of Warwicke, Robert fitz Walker, and a mighty army taking shipping at Plimmouth in Cornwall with 360 ships sailed over into Gascoigne. Edmund the kings brother died there, and was brought over and buried at Westminster. After whose death the English army constrained through lacke of victuals, departed, and brake up siege.

John surnamed Romaine Archbishop of Yorke deceased, to whome succeeded Henry de Newarke, Deane of that Church.

John Bailliol king of Scots, contrarie to his allegiance rebelled, wherefore king Edward hastned him thither, and won the castles of Berwicke, and Dunbar: he slew of the Scots 25000. He conquered Edenborough, where he found the regall ensignes of Scotland, as crowne, scepter and cloth of estate, &c. In his returne he called a parliament at Berwicke, where he received the fealties of all the great men of Scotland, and their homages.

William de Valence earle of Penbrooke was slain by the French at Balon. This yere was a gre at famine in England, chieflie a default of wine, that the same could scarcely be had to minister the communion with in the church.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Ipswich.

Simon a monk of Walden, being notable learned, began to teach the canon law in the Universitie of Cambridge.

W. Packin.  
Monasteries  
searched.  
W. Shephard.

Oxford be-  
twixt the clerks  
and townes  
men of Oxford.

An. reg. 24.

1296

W. Packington.  
T. Walsingham.

King Edward  
won Berwicke.  
Regalles of  
Scotland.

An. reg. 25.

Lacke of wine  
in England.

1297

Canon law  
taught in  
Cambridge.

King

King Edward offered to S. Edward at Westminster, the chaire, Scepter and crowne of gold of the Scottis king.

The king increased the tribute of the wolles, taksing for everie Sacke 40. shillings, where befoze that time they payd but halfe a marke.

*An. reg. 26.* The Scots by the instigation of William Walleis rebelled, and put the Englishmen to much trouble, and losse of manie men. In the feast of S. Bartholomew king Edward toke the sea at Winchelsey towarde Flanders, and landed at Swyn, he went to rescue Guy their earle, which was grievously overset by the French king, so that he had won much of his lands, but shortly after a peace was concluded for two yeres.

1298

Kings pallace  
at Westminster  
was burnt.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Gaunt in Flanders, and returning into England arrived at Sandwich on the 11. of March.

The 29. of March, a vehement fire being kindled in the lesser hall of the kings palace at Westminster, the flame thereof being driven with the wind, fiered the monasterie adjoining, which with the palace were both consumed.

Parliament  
at Poike.

The king preparing to repress the rebellion of the Scots, removed the Barons of the Exchequer, and Justices of the bench unto Poike, calling a parliament thither, he appointed his Subjects to be ready with horse and armour at Rokesboto on Midsummer date.

Nie. Triquet,  
T. Wallingham,  
Sca. Cro.  
Battell at  
Faulkirk in  
Scotland.

King Edward wanne the battell of Faulkirk in Scotland, upon Saint Mary Magdalens daye, in which battell was slaine more then twentie thousande Scots, and William Walleis their captaine fled. Anthony Beke, Bishop of Dunelm had at this battell such a retinue, that in his companie were two and thirtie Banners. The towne of S. Andrewes was destroyed, no man there remaining.

Cron. Dun.

The citizens of London hearing of the great victorie obtained by the king of England against the Scottes, made great and sollemne triumph in their citie everie one according to their craft, especiallie the Fishmongers, which with sollemne procession passed through the citie, having amongst other Pageantes and helwes, foure sturgeons gilded, carried on foure horses: then foure Salmons of silver on foure horses: and after five and fourtie knights armed, riding on horses, made like Luces of the Sea: and then Saint Magnus with a thousand horsemen: this they did on Saint Magnus daye, in honour of the kinges great victorie, and safe returne.

*An. reg. 27.*

This yere the king paid to the merchants of Gascoigne 150000. poundes sterling, for his brothers expences there.

This yere deceased William Beauchampe earle of Marlborke, and William de Luda bishop of Ely, unto whome succeeded Ranulph Walpole.

1299

King Edward kept his feast of Christmasse at Cadingham nere unto Beverley, after which time hee removed towarde the South partes of his kingdom.

Parliament at  
Stepenheath.

Humfrey de Boune earle of Hereford deceased, and was buried at Malden. Also John Gifford deceased.

In the beginning of Lent king Edward held a parliament at Stepenheath by London, in the house of Henry Walleis, then Mayor of London, where being

being requested by the earles and barons, that he would confirme the charter of liberties, according to that he had promised in Scotland, after certaine delays, he agreed to their instance, with this addition: The right of our Crowne saved: which words of addition the earles liked not, and therefore departed. But being sent for againe, about the Dintdene of Easter, all things were granted to them at their desire. Whereupon the perambulation of forrests through England was committed unto 3. bishops, 3. earles, and 4. barons, that they might see the execution of iustice done.

This yere was made an act of common counsell for prices of victualles to be sold at London, by consent of the king and nobilitie, concerning the price of poultrie. A fatte Cocke for thre halfe pence, two pullets for thre halfe pence, a fatte Capon for two pence halfe pence, a Goose four pence, a Mallard thre halfe pence, a Partridge for tze halfe pence, a Pasant four pence, a Heron six pence, a Plouer one pennie, a Swanne for thre shillings, a Crane for twelve pence, two Woodcockes for thre halfe pence, a fat Lambe from Christmasse to Shrouetide sixtene pence, and all the whole yere after for four pence.

A sodaine fire inclosed the monasterie of Gloucester; the cloister, belfrey, the great chamber, with other buildings was consumed.

For the establishment of the peace betwene England and France, on the 10. of September, king Edw. took to wife Margaret, sister to Philip le Bewe then king of France: they were married at Canterburie, and the feast was kept there in the great hall of the bishops palace. The king imprisoned his son Edward, because that Walter Langton Bishop of Chester had complained, that the foresaid Edward through counsell of Pierce of Gavestone, a squire of Gascoigne, had broken his parks, and that Edward was led and governed by the foresaid Pierce, wherefore the king did exile the said Pierce for evermore.

Henry Newarke Archbyschop of Yorke deceased, and was buried at Yorke, Thomas Corbridge succeeded him in the Archbyschopricke.

Oliuer Sutton bishop of Lincolne also deceased, unto whome succeeded John de Adarley Chancellor of the same church.

King Edward commaunded that all the manacles and chaines of yron that might be found within the whole Realme, to an inestimable multitude, should be brought into the Tower of London, the cause whereof was utterlie unknowne to his subjects.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Berwiche, and the Quene at Windsor, within the solemnitie of which feast, to wit, upon Saint Stephens day, king Edward made diuers false moneyes, as Crohardes, Dollardes, Rosaries, and others, coined in partes beyond the seas, and uttered here for sterlinges, so that manie thereby were deceiued. These moneyes the king at the first commaunded to be currant for halfe pence, which was but halfe the value they were coined for: but on Easter euen next following, the same moneyes were forbidden throughout all England, and after called in, and new sterling money coined unto his great aduantage. This sterling money was so called of the Easterlings that were the first coiners of siluer of that fineness in England.

King

Price of pultry.

Rob. of Glouc.

W. Packington.  
King Edward  
married.

An. reg. 22.

1300.

Sterling  
money.

A great part  
of Scotland  
subdued by  
king Edward.

Citizens of  
London rising  
to meet the  
Quene.

King Edward made his voyage against the Scottes, wherein he subdued a great part of the land, took the castle of Cirenclun, with other, and made the Lords swear to him fealtie and homage. In the meane while, the Quene on the first of July was deliuered of a son at Brotherton in Yorkshire, not farre from Pontfract, and therefore was he named Thomas of Brotherton. Afterward the Quene was conueyed to London, against whome, the Citizens to the number of 600 rode in one liuerie of redde and white, with the cognisance of their mysteries bordered upon their sleeves, and receiued her foure miles without the Citie, and so conueyed her to Westminster.

The first of October, Edmond Earle of Cornwall deceased without issue, by meane whereof his earledome fell to the kings handes. The king gaue the principalltie of Wales and the earledome of Chester to his eldest sonne Edward.

*An. reg. 29.* King Edward kept his Christmas with his Quene Margaret at Portsmouth, and after held his Parliament at Stamford, (some say at Lincoln) to the which the Barons came with horse and armour, for the purpose as was reported, that they might get of him by force the execution of the Charter of the forest.

1301

Li. Dunmow.

R. Edward  
went into  
Scotland.

A Tournament at Dunstable, *ad carnisprinium.*

In the feast of Pentecost, the truce ended that had bin taken with the Scots, whereupon, about the feast of S. Iohn Baptist, the king of England went with a great army into Scotland, where he spent the ende of Sommer, and also the Winter following, and left many houses there for want of forrage.

The church of Lanthony was burnt.

*An. reg. 30.* Quene Margaret was this yere deliuered of her second sonne, named Edmond at Woodstocke, the 5. day of August.

The 5. of October was borne Thomas the sonne of Raulphe de Mounthermer Earle of Gloucester, and Ioane of Acres the kings daughter.

1302

Parliament  
at London.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Lisheke in Scotland with a puissant armie, but afterward through the earnest suit of Philip king of France, whose sister he had lately married, he granted a truce with the Scots, till the feast of all Saints, and then he returned to London, and about Midlent, called a parliament, wherein he demanded a sikkue, and also fourtie shillings of euerie knights fee.

Elizabeth the kings daughter of England, Countesse of Holland, and Zealand, was ioyned in marriage to Humfrey de Bohun, earle of Hereford, and Essex, son and heire to Humfrey Bohun late deceased.

Turneament  
forbidden.

Turneies, Juffs, barriers, and other warlike exercises, which young Lordes and Gentlemen had appointed for their pastimes in diuers parts of the realm, were forbidden by the kings proclamations.

*An. reg. 31.* After the feast of all Saints, when the truce began to faile with the Scots, R. Edward sent Iohn Segraue knight with an army into Scotland, committing to him the custody of that land as Warden there.

1303

Tho. de la More.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster.

The Scottes rebelling against king Edward, made William Wales their leader



leader, wherefore the king hauing his armie ready, passed by the Castle of Strimling, ouer the whole land, none offering them battell, but fleeing before the sword.

Ex Record.

Richard Grauesend Bishoppe of London deceased, who is reported by some to haue purchased the charters and liberties for the citie of London, in the yere of our Lorde 1392. in the sixteenth yere of king Richard the seconde. The trutheth whereof I haue thought good thus much in this place to note. Ralfe Baldocke deane of Paules succeeded him in the Bishoppicke.

An. reg. 32.  
Adam Meri.  
Grauesend Bishop of London.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Dunfermelin in Scotlande, with the English nobilitie, and when winter was past, he went and besieged the Castle of Strimling, which William Clifford kept the space of 90. daies with sundry ballant assaults: but being able no longer to resist, they put off their shoes, with halters about their necks came forth of the castle and fel prostrate before the king, committing both liues and liues to his mercy, whome the king pardoned of life, but sent them prisoners into England.

1304

Tho. de la More.

The king returning out of Scotland by the citie of Poike, commanded the Courtes of the kings bench and the Exchequer, which had no time remayned at Poike 7. yeres, to be removed to their old places at London.

Courts of R. Bench, and Exchequer at Poike.

John de Waren earle of Surrey and Suffex deceased, after whome succeeded his sonne also, named John, who toke to wife the kings niece, by his daughter Elianor, whome the earle of Barre had married. Also Thomas Corbridge Archbishop of Poike deceased at Lanham, a singular Diuine, hee was buried at Southwell, to him succeeded William Greenfield a chanon of Poike, and chancellor to the king, an eloquent man and pithe in counsell.

R. Edward taking a tallage of all cities, borowes, and towne, the towne of Bissow gaue him 400. pound for a fine, out of their treasure.

An. reg. 33.  
Lib. Kenham.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Lincoln with the Quene his wife, and there he ordained Iustices of Trailebaston against intruders into other mens lands, trucebreakers, extortioners, murderers, and such like offenders, by which meanes the R. treasure was maruellouslie increased. Roger Brabason and Robert de Reuer sate at the Guild hall in London to heare the complaints made concerning the foresaid articles of Trailebaston.

1305  
Dyau the stafe  
Adam Meri.

The Cittizens of Norwich made petition vnto the king, that like as it had pleased him heretofore, to graunte them his helpe and licence certayne yeeres, for the walling about of the towne, which Tearme was now expired, to grant them a longer time, the same being not yet finished: whereupon five yeres were graunted by him and his Parliament at Westminster.

Norwich walled.  
Parliam. Record.

John Leyland writeth that a merchant of Norwich (whome he nameth not) builded a great part, almost halfe of that Wall.

John Leyland.

Robert Fitz Walter requested the king that the Friers of the Sacche (commonlie called De penitencia Iesu) in London, might assigne to the sayde Robert one Chappell of olde time called the Synagogue of the Jewes, nere adjoining to the place of the same Robert, which request was graunted. Robert Fitz Walter his house was then in place there now standeth the Grocers hall,

Friars of the Sacche.  
A Synagogue of the Jewes.

Parliam. recor.

and the synagogue of the Jewes was in place, where nowe is a wine taverne called the Windmill in Lothbury. These Friers lived altogether by begging, and had of late multiplied in number greatly, untill the Councell at Lions, wherein it was decreed, that Friers beggers should receive none into their order, except Grey and white Friers. They were also licensed to enter into religion of larger rule, from the which time forth all mendicant Friers began to decrease, and were in short time brought to nothing, except the Preaching Friers.

Wales in Scotland.

Adm Merino.  
Tho. de la More.

William Wales which had oft times set Scotland in great trouble, was taken and brought to London with great numbers of men and women wondering upon him: hee was lodged in the house of William Delect a Citizen of London, in Fanchurch streete. On the morrow being the even of Saint Bartholomew, hee was brought on horse backe to Westminster, John Segraue and Geoffrey, knights, the Mayor, Sheriffes and Aldermen of London, and manie other, both on horse backe & on foote accompanying him, and in the great hal at Westminster, he being placed on the South bench crowned with Laurell, for that he had said in times past that he ought to beare a crowne in that Hall (as it was commonly reported) and being appeached for a traitour, by Hy Peter Mallorie the kings Justice, he answered that he was neuer traytour to the K. of England, but for other crimes thereof he was accused, he confessed them, & was after headed and quartered. There was opened to the king a conspiracy, wrought by the Archbish. of Canterbury and divers earles and barons against him, at such time as he was in Flanders. The Earle marshall being examined of this, and being not able to purge himselfe, made the king his heire and put him in possession of his landes to haue his grace, and thus doing, the king gaue him againe 1000. pound land by the yere during his life.

An. reg. 34.

1306

King Edward kept his Christmasse at London.

Robert Bruce an Englishman, presuming by the right of his wife to usurpe the kingdome of Scotlande, called a Parliament of the Nobles of Scotland within the Church of the Friers Spinors in Domfries, where hee selve John Comin, because he would not agree to the treason, and shortly after, to witte, in the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady, in the Abbey of Scone, he caused himselfe to be solemnly crowned king by the Bishops of Glasco, and Saint Andrewes first, and the thirde day after by the Countesse of Bolwan, because her brother the Earle of Fife to whome by right of inheritance that office belonged, was then absent in England.

In the feast of Pentecost king Edward honored his eldest sonne, Edward of Carnarvan with the degree of knighthood, and with him also moe then a hundred noble young men, at Westminster.

Trayle Baston.

About the feast of the Nativity of our Lady, the K. went againe into Scotland, with a great armie, having sent his sonne Edward with Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, Robert Clifford, Henry Lacy, and many other noble knightes and Gentlemen, at Whitson tide before, also he sent before him his iudices of Trayle Baston, two and two together into euery city and place into which he would come, giuing them power to kill traytors, and hang perjured

perjured persons, burne such as woꝝke deceite, destroy the wicked and sette Englishmen in their places, and there were taken by them in the space of two moneths by inquisition of Juries, hundreds and thousands, breakers of peace and conspiratours, amongst the which Nigellus de Bruse, brother to Robert de Bruse, was drawne through Berwikke and hanged: moreover Christopher and John Seyton brethren were hanged: the Countesse of Bolwan was closed in a Cage, whose breadth, length, height, and depth, was eight fote, and hanged ouer the wals of Berwikke: the Bishop of S. Andrews and of Glasco, with the Abbot of Scone, were sent to severall prisons in England.

King Edward besieged Simon Frisell in Lylpscho, and toke him and sent him to London Towre, where he found many Scottissh Lords in fetters of prison, amongst whom was Thomas Morham with Herbert his son, and Thomas Roys his Esquier, who were all beheaded: Simon Frisell was hanged, drawne and quartered: Carle Iohn de Achol because he was of the kings blood and an Englishman, was not drawne, but hanged and headed: Sir Ioh. Wallers was sent to the Tower of London and after hanged and headed: Laurence de Megos Esquire was taken at Douer and there beheaded. The earle of Stratherne yielded to king Edward, who condemned him to remaine during his life in prison fetters in the Castle of Rochester.

At this time, and long after, king Edward had Scotland in such good obedience, as he gaue of the landes thereof to his seruants and subiectes in England, with Markets, Fayres, and Warens: amongst others I haue seene vnder the boade seale of the said king Edward a mannor called Kernes in the Countie of Fferface, in Scotland, and nere the furthest part of the same nation Northward, giuen to Iohn Eure and his helres, ancestor to the Lord Eure that now is, for his seruice done in those partes, with market euery Sunday, fayre for thre daies euery yere, at the feast of Saint Michael, and free Warren for the same, dated at Lauercoft the 20. day of October, Ann. reg. 34.

This yere Margaret Quene, second wife to Edward the first, began to build the Quire of the church of the Gray Friers in London, to the building whereof in her life she gaue two thousand markes, and an hundred markes by her Testament: Iohn of Byptaine Earle of Richmond builded the body of the Church: Lady Mary Countesse of Pembroke, Gilbert Clare Earle of Glocestre, Margaret Countesse, Lady Elianor le Spencer, & Lady Elizabeth de Brugh sisters to Gilbert de Clare, gaue great sums of money towarde the same: Richard Whittington, sometime Alderman and Mayor of London founded the Library there, in anno 1421.

King Edward helde his Christmasse at Carlile, with a great multitude of English people, and in the moneth of January next following, he called a great Parliament to be holden at Carlile vpon the Decaues of S. Hillary, to treat of matters concerning the state of Scotland, whereunto were summoned many lords both of the spiritualty and temporality, who either appeared in person or els by pꝛorte. My selfe haue seene and read an ancient register of good authority, containing the names of 87. Carles and barons, 20. Bishops, 61. Abbots, and eight priors, besides many Deanes, Archdeacons and other inferior

Ex charta regia.

Lord Cur.

Regist. frat. m.

An. reg. 35.

1307  
Parliament  
at Carlile.

Parliament records.

Clearkes of the Conuocation. The master of the knights of the Temple, of euerie shire two knights, of euerie Citty two Citizens, and of euerie bozough two Burgesles, &c.

*Bishops.*

Archbishop of Yorke  
Of Lincolne  
London  
Chichester  
Excester  
Hereforde  
Salisbury  
Landaffe  
Saint Aslase  
Bangor  
Saint Davids  
Couentrie and Lichfelde  
Bathe and Welles  
Norwiche  
Rochester  
Durham  
Carlile: and Ely  
Worcester  
Winchester

*Abbots.*

Of Saint Augustine in Canterburie.  
Of Saint Edmond  
Saint Albane  
Westminster  
Waltham  
Euesham  
Saint Marie at Yorke  
Peterborowe  
Ramsey  
Winchcombe  
Glocester  
Bristow  
Malmesburie  
Glastenburie  
Selby  
Cyrcester  
Reading  
Furneys  
Sawley  
Alnewike  
Sainth Ofigh

Barling  
Tupholme  
Biley  
Dale  
Newhus  
Croxtan  
Cokerfande  
Saint Radegound  
Tichfelde  
Torre  
Holmecokthram  
Welbecke  
Hales  
Newe Monasterie  
Iereuall  
Fountaines  
Bella lande  
Melsa  
Kyrkested  
Rupe  
Rughforde  
Valeden  
Grendon  
Stanley in Arden  
Pipwell  
Combe  
Basingwerke  
Crokefden  
Croyland  
Werdon  
Wimondham  
Wauerley  
Chertefey  
Quarrera  
Leteley  
Hyde  
Wendon  
Saint Agathe  
Swineshede  
Stanley in Wilshire  
The Master of the Knights of the Temple  
in England,

*Barons.*



*Barons.*

Edward Prince of Wales	Walter Faulconbridge
Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne	Ralph Basset of Draton
Ralph Mounthermer Earle of Glocester and Hereford.	Roger la Warre
Thomas Earle of Lancaster	John Paynell
Humphrey Bohun Earle of Hereforde and Essex,	Alexander Walliclo
John Warren Earle of Surrey	Hugh Poynts
Edmond Earle of Arundale	Roger Montomere
John Brytaine Earle of Richmond	William Rithre
Guy Bello Campo earle of Warwike	Reignald Grey
Robert Vere earle of Oxford	Walter Muncy
Gilbert Vmframauill earle of Angeos	Robert Scales
Henry of Lancaster	Adam Welles
Aymer of Valence	Almarice de Amando
John Ferrers	William Cantalupo
Henry Piercie	John Engaigne
Hugh Spencer	Gilbert Pechy
Robert Fitz Walter	John Clauering
William Latimer	William Leyburne
Robert Clifford	John Bello Campo of Somerset
Robert mount Alto	William Grandstone
John Hastings	John Extuens
John le Mare	John de Infula
John de Ripaurs	John Sudley
John de Mohun.	Simon Mountacute
Petrus de Malolacu	Walter Tey
Rupart Fitz Pagani	Edmund Hastings
Hugh Curtney	John Lancaster
Edmond Deyncourt	John Saint Iohn
John Saint Iohn of Lageham	Henry Treygoz
Galfride de Geynual	John Louel of Tichmerch
Thomas Furniual	Alan la Zuche
Robert Tony	Henry Teyes
Thomas Berkeley	Nicolas Segraue
William de Bruse	Fulco Fitz Waren
Peter Corbet	John Fitz Reignald
William Marton	Geffrey Camuile
Thomas Multon	William Vauasor
John ap Adam	William Ferrer
John Kyme	Robert Grendon
John Segraue	Edmund Baron of Stafford
Robert Fitz Roger	Ralph Fitz William
Hugh Veer	Thomas de la Roche
	Theobald de Verdon the younger
	William Tucher
	Henrie Hussey.

In this parliament many complaints were made of the oppression of churches and Monasteries, by the Popes Chaplaine named William Testa Archdeacon of Araine in the Church of Conuentrie. The same Clarke was forbidden to vse anie more such extortions, and diuers Statutes were ordained touching religious persons which had their principall houses in other realmes.

There came to this Parliament, sent from the Pope, a Cardinall called Petrus Hispanus, to treat of a marriage betwixt Edward Prince of Wales, and the French kings daughter.

The course of  
Fleete Dike at  
London soze  
decayed, which  
sometime bare  
ships of small  
burden to Hol-  
born-bridge, to  
the great con-  
modity of the  
citie in that  
west part.  
St. Walsingham.

And amongst many other suites made there, Henry Lacy Earle of Lincoln complained, that whereas in times past, the course of water running at London vnder Holborne bridge, and Fleete bridge into the Thamis, had bene of such large breadth and depth, that ten or twelue ships at once with merchandises were wont to come to the foresaide bridge of Fleete, and some of them to Holborne bridge: nowe the same course (by filth of the Tanners and such other) was soze decayed. Also by rapling by of wharffes, but especially by turning of the water, which they of the newe Temple made to their milles with out Baynards Castle, and diuers other perturbations, the saide shippes nowe could not enter as they were wont, and as they ought, wherefore he desired, that the Mayor of London with the Sheriffes, and certaine discrete Aldermen might be appointed to see the course of the said water, and that by oth of honest men all the foresaid hindrances might be remoued, and to be made as it was wont of old time, &c. Which was answered and recorded, that Roger le Brazon, the constable of the tower, with the Mayor and Sheriffes are assigned, that taking with them other honest and discret men, they make diligent search and inquirie, how the said riuer was in olde time, and that they leaue nothing that make hurt or stoppe it: and to keepe it in the same state that it was wont to bee.

King Edward remaining all the winter and summer at Carlisle, disposed manie things of Scotland at his pleasure: but in the meane time Robert le Bruce going about the Countrey, slew manie that would not obey him, and he sent with part of his army two of his brethren, Thomas that was a knight, and Alexander a priest, Deane of Glasco, into another part of the Countrey, that they might allure the people vnto them by gentle perswasions, which (by comming of Englishmen vpon them) were taken, ledde to the Iustices, condemned, hanged and headed at Carlisle.

Ioane of Acres Countesse of Gloucester deceased.

King Edward sent messengers into England, commanding all that ought him seruice to bee ready at Carlisle, within three weekes after the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist: but himselfe being vexed with the bloudie fire, hee sent vnto his sonne that hee shoulde come with speede to heare his last wordes, whome, among other things hee did counsell to bee mercifull, iust, and constant in all his wordes and dedes: hee commaunded him not to bee too hastie to take vpon him the Crowne of England, vntill he had reuenged the injuries done by the Scottes, but rather to stae in those partes, and  
to

to cause his fathers bones (being closed in a chest) to be bozne about with him, till he had gone thoroze all Scotland and ouercome his aduersaries. He also commaunded him to honour his mother, and loue his two bryethen, Thomas earle Marthall, and Edmund Earle of Kent. Whoeuer he charged him on his curse, that he should not presume to call home Pierce of Gaueston, by common decre banished without common fauour: he declared to him also, that he had taken on him the crosse, for the seruice in the holy lande, to the which he had determined to haue gone in person, but troubled with the new and diuers attemples of Robert le Bruse, he was hindered of his purpose, and was constrained, omitting that businesse, to turne the warre into Scotland. 32000. pound of siluer (saith he) I haue prepared for the charges of an hundred knights to go honozably thither with their retinnes: because it is not my happe to perfozme in proper person, what I had intended, let them yet take my heart, and carrie thither, which if they doe, I trust in my God that all things shall prosper with them. I therefore (saith he) doe streightly command the in paine of my curse, that am thy ffather, that the said money be not otherwisse spent.

The king also called vnto him Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne, Guy Earle of Warwike, Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, and Robert Clifford Baron, desiring them to be good to his son, and that they should not suffer Pierce of Gaueston to come again into England, to set his sonne in riot, and the seuenth of July he departed this life at Wigh upon the sands, in the yere 1307. when he had reigned 34. yeres, 7. moneths, and odde daies, and was 68. yeres of age. He was buried at Westminster.

He had issue by his first wife Elianor, daughter to the king of Spaine, five sonnes, to wit, Henry, John, and Alfonse that died without issue, Edward that succeeded him in the kingdome, and Henry that died without issue, and tenne daughters, to wit, Elianor Countesse of Barre, Ioane of Acres Countesse of Glocest. Julian that died yong, Margaret Dutchesse of Brabant, Alice that died yong, Elizabeth Countesse of Hereford, Elizabeth Countesse of Holland, Mary that was a Nunne at Ambresbury, Beatrice that died yong, Blanch that died yong: he had issue by Margaret daughter to Philip king of France his second wife, two sons, to wit, Thomas of Wotherton, and Edmond of Woodstocke Earle of Kent, and one daughter, named Elianor that died yong.

## Edward of Carnarvon.



Edward the second sonne to the first Edward, bozne at Carnarvon, began his raigne the seuenth day of July, in the yere of Christ 1307. he was faire of bodie, but vntedfast of manners, and disposed to lightnes, haunting the company of vile persons, and giuen wholly to the pleasure of the bodie, not regarding to gouerne his common weale by discretion and wisdom, which caused great variance betwene him and his Lords. He toke to be

*An. reg. 1.*

*Chro. Dun.*

of his counsell Patrickke earle of Lincolne, and Othode Granfone with other. He ordained Walter Reignald to be his Chancelour, and caused Walter Langton Byshoppe of Chester, Treasurer of Englands, to bring the king his fathers bodie from Carlisle to Waltham crosse, and then to bee arrested by Sir Iohn Felton Constable of the Tower, and sent to Wallingford, there to be shut vp in prison, and his goods confiscate, because in his fathers life time he had reproved him of his insolent life, &c. He also called out of exile Pierce of Caueson a stranger bozne, which latelie in his fathers daies, had for certain causes bene banished this land. He gave to the saide Pierce the earledome of Cornewall, the Isle of Man, and the Lordship of Wallingford, otherwile assigned to Quene Isabel.

Pierce of Caueson called out of exile.  
Cro Haurenpries  
W. Packington.

Parliament  
at Northampton.

A parliament was holden at Northampton, wherein it was ordained, that his fathers coine, which was counted base, should not be refused upon paine of life and lim, and that a fifthenth of the cleargie, and twentieth part of the goods of the Laitie should be giuen to the king.

Edward the  
first buried.

The 27. of October king Edward the first was buried at Westminster, at the head of Henry the thirde his father, vnto the which Church hee had giuen lands to the value of 100 pound by yeere, twentie pound thereof yerelie to bee distributed to the poore. Anthony Becke patriarche of Jerusalem and Byshop of Durham doing the exequies.

1308

King Edward kept his Christmas at Wyke in Kent, with a great traine of household.

Knights of the  
temple apprehended.  
Thos. de la More.

After the Epiphany of our Lord, all the Templars in England were apprehended and committed to prison in diuers places.

Adam Meri.

The king went ouer into France, and married Isabel the daughter of Philip the faire king of France, at Boloigne the 22. of January. There were present at that marriage Philip king of France, his son king of Navarre, the king of Almain, and the king of Sicile, with manie other. And on the 24. daie of February, king Edward with his Quene were crowned at Westminster, by Henrie Byshop of Winchester, beeing admitted so to do by Robert Archbishop of Canterburie. The king offered first a pound of golde made like a king holding a ring in his hand, and after he offered a marke of gold (which is 8. ounces) made like a pilgrime putting forth his hand to receiue the ring. Sir Iohn Blackwell knight, was thrust to death at his Coronation.

Edward  
crowned.

Chron. Dun.  
Pierce of Caueson ruled  
the king at his pleasure.

The king gaue vnto Pierce of Caueson all such gifts and jewels as had bin giuen to him, with the crownes of his father, his ancessors treasure, and manie other things, affirming that if he could, he should succeed him in the kingdome, calling him Brother, not granting any thing without his consent. The Lords therefore enuying him, told the king, that the father of this Pierce was a traitour to the king of France, and was for the same executed, and that his mother was burned for a witch, and that the saide Pierce was banished for consenting to his mothers witchcraft, and that hee had now bewitched the king himselfe. They besought the king to heare therefore their petitions, which should be both for his owne honor, and for the wealth of his people.

First, that hee would confirm and vse such ancient Lawes and customes,

as



as are contayned in the Charters of the kings his Predecessors: and for that they woulde graunt him the twentieth part of their goods, and bee his true subiectes.

Secondlie, that he woulde take nothing of anie man, but at the price of the owner, the same to be paid for to the bittermost. 2

Thirdlie, that whatsoener was alienated from the crowne, since his fathers death, might be restored thereunto againe. 3

Fourthlie, that hee woulde obserue the oathe hee made before his father, as of the renouing of Peter Gauenston, the prosecuting of the Scottis warre, and that all that was amisse shoulde bee amended, least his enemies reioice at it, &c. 4

That Justice and Iudgement mighte bee done in the Lande, as well to the Rich, as to the Poore, according to the aunctent and olde approued Lawes and Customes of Englande, and that no man shoulde bee restrayned by the kings Witte from prosecuting his Right, or to defende himselfe by Lawe. 5

Then the king taking counsell of Pierce, Hugh Spencer the Treasurer, the Chancellour and others, hee appoynted to answer the Barons at the parliament on Hordale. The barons being departed out of London, the city gates were shutte vp and chained, greate watch kept, and Hugh Spencer made Constable of London. The King with Peter of Gauenston went toward Wallingford Castle with a great companie of souldiers, as well strangers as English, and Hugh Spencer tarried still at London. The Parliament on Hordale was kept, the king and Barons being there when they decreed that the same Pierce should be banished the land to depart on the morrowe after Midsummer date, neuer to returne againe. The king gaue him two and thirtie Townes, and so manie castles in Gascoigne, and great summes of money out of his earle dome of Cornetwall during his life: The king accompanied him to Bristow, sent him into Ireland, assigning him the whole gouernement and reuenues of that countrey.

Hugh Spencer  
Constable of  
London.

An. reg. 2.  
Pierce of Ga.  
uel. banished.

In the feast of S. Michael, Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester toke to wife Matild, daughter to Richard Brugh earle of Ulster, at Waltham, the same day John de Brugh, son to earle Richard was made knight by the king, and toke to wife Elizabeth sister to the sayde Earle Gilbert, in the same place.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Windsoze with greate solemnitie. 1309

The king sent William Lord Latimer with an hundred horsemen to fetch Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln, but he being forewarned, kept himselfe in his castle, and so preuented their purpose, onlie the Lord Latimer and he talked, and so departed.

The king intended to giue Gascoigne to the French king, Scotland to Robert Bruce, Ireland and Wales to others, hoping thereby to haue aid against his Barons. king against his Barons.

Robert Archbishop of Cantebury returned from Rome, and was restored to all his goods.

The

Tho. de la More.  
Ioh. Triklow.  
Gaueston sent  
for by the king  
and returneth.

The king sent for Pierce of Gaueston out of Ireland: he landed at Carnarvon, on the euen of S. Iohn Baptist, the king mette him at the Castle of Flint with great ioy: and gaue to him the earle of Gloucesters sister in marriage, they were married at Barkhamsted, which caused him again to rise in pride, scorning the nobles of the Realme, and to abuse the king, as befoze he had done, in conueying the treasure of the realme into foraine countries, amongst the which treasure, he conueied the table and tressles of gold from the treasure of Westminister, and deliuered them to one Armery of Frisconband to be conueied into Gascoigne. The barons therefore declared to the king, that except he would expel the said Pierce from his company, they would rise against him as against a perjured Prince: whereupon by the aduise of Pierce of Gaueston, the king sent for aide into Gascoigne, to the earle of Foy, and the Viscount of Penoy, and they came with three hundred horsemen through Fraunce, but Philippe the French king imprisoned the chiefe, and slewe and hanged the other. Also, the king of England had word from Robert Bruce of Scotland, and from Robert Fitz Thomas of Ireland, that they would not take part with the king against his Barons, whereupon the king being wroth, fortified Windsoz castle, and began to build towres and other strange things.

Cro. Pet. Colege.  
The Barons  
chert the king.

Chro. Dan.

An. reg. 3.

The Abbot of Saint Denis in France, being sent Legate from the Pope, to demand the Legacie that king Edwards father gaue to the holie Lande, did earnestlie request king Edwards to remoue from him Peter Gaueston, with whose conuersation all the worlde was as it were infected. Then the king appointed a Parliament at Northampton, determining from thence to passe into Scotland: the Barons came to this parliament well furnished, but the king sent them worde hee would not come there, yet at the last he came to Stonie Stratford, whither were sent to him by the Barons, the earles of Warwicke and Clare, who requested him to come for his owne profite, and the commoditie of the Realme: at length he went in the habite of a squire, and the Barons met him without armor, and in the end they louingly embraced and were made friends, and the voyage to Scotland was returned till another time. After Michaelmas, the Parliament was holden at London, unto the which Parliament came Lewes the French kings brother, with the Bysshoppe of Baytowe, from the king of France, to intreat vnitie betwixt the king and his lordes: and there were diuers god ordinaunces made. And once againe, though sore against the kings mind, he caused Pierce to abiure, with condition added by the barons, that if he were found again in any land subiect to the kings dominion, he should be taken as a common enemy, and condemned. This being done, he passed into Flanders, and from thence to other countries, seeking rest, which hee could not find.

Parliament  
at London.

Pierce of Gaueston  
abiured  
the land.

1310

The king kept his Christmas at Windsoz, where Walter Langton Bysshoppe of Chester, and the Bishop of S. Andrewes in Scotland, were released out of prison.

An. reg. 4.  
Tempest at  
Middleton.

The seconde daie of September at night, an horrible Tempest of Thunder happened, so that hedges and trees lost their greenesse, and the Church of Middleton in Dorsetshire, with the Steple, Belles, Dynaments, and all other monuments

monuments of that place, were consumed with the lightning, the Monks being at Mottins.

Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne, Constable of Chester, and Custos of Englande, died at London, in his house called Lincolnes Inne, in Holborne: hee was buried in the new Church (whereof he was founder) of S. Pauls Church, betwixt our Ladies Chappell, and S. Dunstons Chappell, where a faire monument of stone was rayled for him, with his picture in armour crosse legged, as a Templar bolued for the defence of the holie land, and Citie of Ierusalem.

A Prorinciall Councell was holden at London against the Templars in England, vpon heresie & other articles, whereof they were accused, who denied the fact, sauing one or two of them: notwithstanding all did confesse, that they coulde not purge themselves, and therefore were condemned to perpetual penance in severall monasteries, where they behaved themselves verie well.

At Paris in France 54. of the Templars were bent, by the iudgement of Philip the French king.

Pierce of Ganeffon conceiving an affiance in the favour of king Edward, and of the yong earle of Glocester, whose sister he had married, taking with him many strangers, returned into England, and a little before Christmas came to the kings presence, whom the king, forgetting all oathes and promised pacts, received as a heauenlie gift.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Pothe, where Pierce of Ganeffon was present with his Outlandish men, the king reioicing, and beeing in a greate tollitie because he had received him in safetie, all the court and Quene being sorrowfull, because they sawe the king not verie sounde. The mightie men of the land therefore sought howe they might set an ende to the trouble at hande, for they feared to raise warre, and durst not disquiet the king, yet the perill being twised, they founde that so long as Pierce lived, there coulde be no peace in the kingdome, nor the king to abound in treasure, nor the Quene to enjoy the kinges true love. Thus after they had long considered the perilles past, present, and to come, they determined rather to trise all extremities, then to be despised and set at naught by a stranger, they chose a captaine then for their busines to come, Thomas of Lancaster, noble in lineage, valiant in armes, excellent in fame for his maners and iustice, he was son to Edmund earle of Lancaster, and therefore by inheritance earle of Lancaster, Leicester and Ferrers. In proces of time he married the only daughter of the earle of Lincoln, to wit, Henrie Lacyes daughter, whereupon after the earles decease, of a great man, he was made a greater, for he was earle of Lincoln, and of Salisbury, besides the liberties of Pickering, and the honoz of Cockermoze, and other great lands in Wales, and the earledome of Artoys in France.

Anthony Beke Patriarch of Ierusalem, and Bishop of Durham, deceased at Elyham on the 28. of March, after he had sate Bishop 28. yeres and was buried at Durham. Hee encastellated the ancient Pannoz place belonging to the Bishops of Durham at Ankland, he made there the great hall, wherein be divers pillars of blacke marble, speckled with white, and the great chamber with other buildinges there, hee also made the exceeding goodlie Chappell at Ank-

W. Shep.  
L. b. Kaintham.  
His monument  
is fouly defaced  
by bad people,  
and such as de-  
ferred no mo-  
nument for  
goodnes in  
them.  
I. Poule.  
Templars  
condemned.  
Tho. Beke.

Pierce of Ga-  
neffon retur-  
ned into Eng-  
land.

1311

Colledge at  
Ankland.  
Somerton  
castle.

land

Manor of  
Eltham.

land of well squared stone, and founded there a Colledge with a Deane and prebends, and a quadrant in the Southwest side of the Castle for Spinifiers of his Colledge: he builded or repayed castle Barnard, Gainsforth and Cunctise: hee also builded Somerton Castle in Pockeshire, which Castle hee gave to the king, and the manor of Eltham in Kent, which hee gave to the Duene. The king shortly after gave the castle of Somerton to Henry Beaumont. The castle of Ainelwike which William de Vesey had given unto him by the said Bishop, trusting in him, that he would preserve it to the use of the bishops young bastard, and deliver it to him when he came to mans estate, he took money therefore, and sold it to Henry Percy, he had the Isle of man during his life by the kings graunt, Kellow was elect Bishop of Durham.

King Edward with Peter Gausston his companion, went to Poike, where the king was lodged in the pallace of the Archbishop, and Peter in the Castle: they caused the Citie to be fortified, and the walles to be repayed, and sent to Robert Bailliol of Scotland for aide against his Lordes; but Robert made answer, he would not forsoth of Scotland, neither would he disquiet any man: the like answer was made by the Welchmen. The earles assembled at Bedford, Gilbert the younger Earle of Gloucester being one of them was made Custos of England, they came to London, and ordained the Seas to be kept, least Strangers should enter to aide the king.

Lib. Ken. Ham.  
Bartram nephew to Pierce  
of Gausston  
taken.

After Calser Bartram nephew to Pierce Gausston was taken in Cornwall with great treasure which he had conveyed out of the kings Treasure: his ship being tossed with tempest on the Sea, was broken where it was taken, and the treasure was brought to London in Carts.

Ioh. Treklow.  
Pierce of Gausston  
beheaded.  
An. reg. 5.

About this time king Edward for his recreation took the Sea, leaving Peter of Gausston at Poike, whercupon the Barons brought their power, and entered the city of Poike, but Peter fled to Scarborough: then the Barons besieged Scarborough, where they took him, and committed him to the custody of Aymer de Valence earle of Pembroke, who brought him to the manor of Dodington which is betwixt Oxford and Warwicke, and there left him to be kept safe: but the next day in the morning Guy earle of Warwicke with a compagnie of armed men, took him from thence, and brought him to Warwicke castle: after deliberation taken, the earles of Lancaster, of Warwicke, and of Hereford, caused in their presence in a place then called Black Lowe, since Gausers heath, the 19. of June his head to be stricken off: his body by the friers preachers was conveyed to Oxford, and there kept more then two yerres, till the king caused the same to be translated to his manor of Langley, and there in the friers church (which he had builded) to be buried.

Queene Isabel was delivered of her first sonne, named Edward at Windsor, the 13. day of November.

1312  
An. reg. 6.  
Tho. de la More.  
The Roades  
won by the  
Christians.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor.

The knights of the order of S. Iohn Baptist, called S. Iohn of Jerusalem, put the Turkes out of the Isle of Rhodes, & after that wan upon the said Turkes daily for a long time after. This religion was greatly preferred by the templars, whose possession was given to them by a council holden at Aenna.

Robert



Robert de Bruse got againe almost all Scotland, the Castles with munitions (the English Garrisons beeing cast out) he tooke againe into his power. This yere therefore by consent of the Prelates, and certaine Nobles, Hugh Spencer the sonne was appointed the Kings Chamberlaine in place of Peter of Guesclon, whom they the rather preferred, because they knew the King hated him: neuertheless, not long after, by his great diligence, he brought himselfe into the kings fauour. The father of this Hugh being old, was yet liuing, a knight of great vertue, in counsell wise, in armes valiaunt, whose confusion and shamefull end he tooke vnto himselfe by natural loue though disorderly towards his sonne, who was in bodie vertie comely, in spirite proude, and in action most wicked, whose couetousnes and ambition, by the disheriting of Widowes and Strangers, wrought the death of the Nobles, the fall of the king, with the bitter destruction of himselfe and his father.

King Edward kept his Christmas at London.

King Edward gathering a great power, marched towardes Scotland, to breake the Siege of Striuelling Castle, and lodged himselfe and his people there about in the felde on the euen of S. Iohn Baptist: neuer afore that time was seene the like preparation, pride and cost in the time of warre, as affirmeth Robert Paston, a Carmelite Friar, being present, and taken of the Scots, which he sorrowfully bewayled in his Heroycall Verse whiles he was prisoner. The first night (saith hee) ye might haue seene the Englishmen bathing themselves in Wine, and casting their gorges: there was crying, shouting, wastaling, and drinking, with other rioting farre aboue measure. On the other side, ye might haue seene the Scottes quiet still, and close, fasting the euen of Saint Iohn Baptist, labouring in loue of the libertie of their Countrey. On the morrowe, the Scottes hauing gotten the most conuenient place in the felde for victorie, made ditches in the grounde three fote deepe, and the like in breadth, from the right wing of the army, vnto the left, couering the same with weake twiggess or Herdes, and againe ouer with the Turfe and grasse, which was not of strength to beare horsemen. The army of the Scottes being deuised into certaine troupes, stode not farre off from this dike, which was betwixt them and the Englishmen. On the other side, the army of the Englishmen comming out of the West, the sunne rising, casting his beames on their golden Targets, bright helmets, and other armour, gaue such a refection, as was both wonderfull and terrible to beholde. In the first warde were the light horsemen, and heauie coursers. In the second were the Archers, and other footemen, who were appointed for the chase of the aduersaries. In the third was the king with his Bishoppes, and other Religious, amongst whome was Hugh Spencer. The horsemen of the first front making vppon their enemies, soundered with their fore feete into the ditch, and lay there tumbling, abiding the cruelty of the Scots, who comming vpon them, slew some, and tooke a great manie rich men for raunsome. There was aaine Gilbert de Clare Earle of Gloucester, (whome the Scottes would gladly haue kept for raunsome, if they had knowne him, but he had forgotten to put on his coate of armes:) with him was aaine Sir Edmond Manly, Sir Robert Clifford, Sir Paine

Tho. de la More.  
Hugh Spenc.  
the younger.

1313

Tho. de la More.

Battell at  
Striuelling.  
Robert Paston.

Gilbert Earle  
of Gloucester,  
and other nobles  
men aaine to  
Scotland.

Paine Tiptoft, Sir William Marshall, Sir Gyles Dargenton, and many other knights and Esquiers.

An. reg. 7.

There was taken Humfrey de Bohun earle of Hereford, John Segraue, John Clauringham, William Latimer, Sir Roger Northbrooke, bearer of the kinges shilde of Scale: but Sir Ralfe Mounthermer that had married Ioane of Acres Countesse of Gloucester, the kinges sister, being taken, founde such fauour, that his ransom was pardoned, and he returning into England, brought back with him the kinges shilde of scale; but Sir Edmond Manly the kinges steward dworne himselfe in Banockesbozne.

Almost three hundred men of armes were slaine in that place, our Archers killing manie of them, who seeing the Scottes cruellie bent vpon our Hospitall men fallen in the Ditch, shotte their Arrowes with a high compasse, that they might fall betwixt the armour of their Enemies, which was all in wayne: and when they shotte righte forth, they slawe fewe of the Scottes, by reason of their armed bycass, but manie of the Englishmen, by reason of their naked backs.

White friars in Oxford.

The king with the Bishoppes, and Hugh Spencer betooke themselves to flight; in which danger of flying, the king bowed to God, that hee would build vnto the poore Carmelite Friars an house, in the which hee would place 24. Bishops, to be Students in Diuinitie, which he afterward performed in Oxford.

Robert de Bruse caused his prisoners to be ciuillie intreated, and honorable kept, he sent the bodies of the earle of Gloucester, and of the Baron Clifford, to the king of England, remaining then at Berwikke, to be buried at his pleasure, demanding no rewarde for restoring of them. The earle of Gloucester was buried at Tewkesbury, his inheritance was diuided betwene 3. sisters of the saide Earle; the first whereof Hugh Spencer had to wife, the seconde Hugh Audley (whome Pierce de Gaueston before had married) the thirde Roger de Tamary (whome before John de Brugh sonne and heire, to the heire of Viskar in Ireland had married) and so the inheritance of that noble Carle dome was diuided into three baronies.

1314

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor, with many Prelates of the Land.

Chron. Tint.

New worke of Pauls Church.

Ralfe Baldocke bishop of London deceased, who in his life time gaue 2000. marks of silver, toward the building of the newe worke of the Chappell on the South side of our Ladies Chappell in the East end of the church of S. Paul in London, and left much by his Testament to the same worke. And this is to be noted, that in digging the foundation of this worke, was found more then 100. heads of oxen & hyne, which thing confirmed greatly the opinion of those which haue reported, that of old time it had been called the Temple of Jupiter, and that there was the sacrifice of beastes.

The king calling to him the Archbishop of Canterburie, 4. other Bishops and manie Abbots and ecclesiasticall persons, he caused the booke of Pierce de Gaueston to be translated, and honorably buried at Langley, but yet there were not manie of the nobles at his burtall,

The

The morow after Candlemas day there assembled a parliament at London, to treat of the state of the kingdome, and how to bring downe the prices of vic-  
tualls, that were now growen to be so deere, that the common people were not  
able to live. It was therefore ordained, and the kings writs were published for  
prices of victuals, that no Dr stalled or corne-fed, bee sold for more then foure  
and twentie shillings: no grasse fed Dr for more then sixtene shillings: a fat  
stalled Cowe at twelue shillings: another Cowe at tenne shillings: a fat  
Button corne fedde, or whose wall is well growen, at twentie pence: another  
fat Button thorne, at fourtene pence; a fat Hogge of two yeres old, at thre  
shillings foure pence; a fat Gose, at two pence halfe pence, in the citie at thre  
pence; a fatte Capon at two pence, in the Citie two pence halfe pence; a fatte  
Henne at one pence, and in the Citie thre halfe pence; two Chickens a peny,  
in the citie thre halfe pence; foure Pigeons for one pence, in the citie thre Pi-  
geons for a peny; foure and twentie egges a pennie, in the citie twentie eggs  
a pence, &c.

Parliament at  
London.  
Vicuals priced

An. reg. 8.

Notwithstanding the statutes of the last Parliament, the kings Wittes,  
&c. all things were sold dearer then before, no flesh coulde be had, Capons and  
Geese would not be found, Eggs were hard to come by, Sheepe died of the rot,  
Swine were out of the way; a quarter of wheat, beanes, and pease, were sold  
for 20. shillings, a quarter of Malte for a Marke, a quarter of Salt for 35. shil-  
lings, &c.

T. Walsingham.  
Vicuals deere.  
Chro S. Albans.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Chepstow in Sherwood.

1315

John Poydras, a Tanners sonne of Excester, in diuers places of Englande,  
named himselfe the sonne of Edward the first, and sayde, that by a false Nurse  
hee was stolen out of his Cradle, and Edward that now was king, put in his  
place; but shortly after he was convict of his vntreuth, and confessed that hee  
did it by the motion of a familiar spirit which hee had in his house in likenesse  
of a Catte, whome he had serued thre yeres, for the which seruice hee was han-  
ged betwixt Northampton and Killingworth, in a place called the Copse  
thorne.

A Tanners son  
claimed to be  
king.

The king in a parliament at London, gaue the rodde and office of Marshall  
vnto Thomas of Brotherton earle of Norfolk his brother. He also renoked  
the provisions before made for selling of Vicualles, and permitted all men to  
make the beste of that they had; neuerthelesse the dearth encreased through  
the abundance of raine that fell in Haruest, so that a Quarter of Wheat, or  
of Salte, was sold before Midsummer for thirtie shillings, and after 40. shil-  
lings.

W. Paston.  
T. Walsingham.

There followed this famine, a grievous mortallitie of people, so that the  
quicke might vneath burie the dead.

An. reg. 9.  
Mortalitie of  
men.

Robert Fitz Paine deceased, and was buried at Shireborne. Also Guido de  
bello campo earle of Warwicke deceased.

The beastes and cattell also by the corrupt grasse whereof they fedde, died,  
whereby it came to passe, that the eating of flesh was suspected of all men, for  
flesh of Beasts not corrupted was hard to find. Horse flesh was counted great  
delicates: the poore stole fatte Dogges to eate: some (as it was saide) compelled  
led

Dogs flesh  
good meates.

Children were  
eaten.  
Theues in pri-  
son deuour one  
another.

led through famine, in hidde places, did eate the flesh of their owne Children, and some stole others which they deuoured. Theues that were in prisons did plucke in peeces those that were newlie brought amongst them, and greedilie deuoured them halfe aliue. A gallon of small ale was at two pence, of the better, 3. pence, and the best 4. pence.

Wheat forbid-  
den to be made  
into malt.

The Londoners considering that wheat made into malt, was much consumed, ordained, that from thenceforth it should be made of other graine, and also, that a gallon of better ale should be sold for three halfpence, and of small ale for a penie, and not above.

The king according to the statute of London, sent his Writtes through the Realme, commanding, that as well within the Liberties as without, in cities, boroughes, towne and villages, a gallon of ale should be sold for a penie; and that from thenceforth no wheat should be made into malt: which if he had not the sooner caused to be proclaimed, the greatest part of the people should haue perished through famine.

Chro. Dun.  
Earle Waren  
excommunicated.

Earle Waren was excommunicated by the bishop of Chichester for adultery, whereupon the said earle came to the bishop with armed men, and 4. more hady then the rest, threatened the bishop, whereupon the bishops men fell on the m, and took the earle and the rest, and imprisoned them.

1316

King Edward kept his Christmas at Clifton in Sherewood, as he had done the yere before.

Bishops de-  
ceased.

Richard Killow Bishop of Durham deceased, vnto whome succeeded Lewes de Beaumont by the kings appointment, a man meanelie learned, and lame on both feete. The king also made Thomas Cobham Bishop of Worcester, that Sea being void by the death of Walter de Maydenstone. Also Adam de Arleton was made Bishop of Hereford, that Sea being void by the death of Robert de Swinfield. Elizabeth Countesse of Hereford, daughter to R. Edward the first deceased, and was buried at Malden.

The same yere the king took of euerie towne in England, a man to serue in his warres of Scotland, and foure markes of money towards his charges hauing no respect to the greatnes or littlenes of any towne, which seemed to be vndiscretelie done.

T. Wallingham.

There arrived in Englande by the kings request Gauscelinus and Lucas de Flisco, two Cardinales, to make peace betwixt the Realmes of England and Scotland, and to reconcile vnto the king Thomas earle of Lancaster. They brought Bulles from the Pope to excommunicate the Scottes, except they returned vnto peace with the king of England. These Cardinales went into the North parts, to enuall Lodowike Beomond, to whome the Pope (at the kings instance) had giuen the Bishopricke of Durham: and when they came nere vnto the Towne of Derlington, certayne Robbers breaking out of a valley, Gilbert Middleton and Walter Selby being their Captaynes, sodaynelie sette vpon the familie of the Cardinales and of Lodowike on Wiggelseden More, robbed them of their treasure, and carried Lodowike Bishop of Durham to Gospey, where they constrained him to paie a great raunsome: they brought Henry Beaumont to the castle of Kintford, and there kept him till he had paid a great

Two Card-  
inals robbed.



great ranfome: but the Cardinals came to Durham, where they carried a few daies for anfwere of the Scots, and fo vnder the kings conduct they returned to Poike, and left their bufinelle which they came for vndone. Gilbert Middleton after many domages done to the priory of Linnmouth and other, was taken in his owne Caſtle of Pitford, by William Felton, Thomas Hetton, and Robert Hornecliffe, carried to London, and there in the preſence of the Cardinals drawne and hanged.

An. reg. 10.

The 14. daie of February, the king by his charter granted to the ſchollers of the Uniuerſity of Cambridge, that whenſoener the Maſter of the towne ſhall take his accuſtomed othe, he ſhall be ſworne in preſence of the Chancellour of the Uniuerſitie to vpholde and maintaine the liberties and priuiledges of the Uniuerſitie, and the ſame ſhall not maliciously or vndutiſully impugne, and for lacke thereof, the othe to be of no force, but to be againe miniſtered to that effect.

The Cardinals vnder certaine conditions, made peace betwixt the king and Thomas earle of Lancaſter, which conditions ſhortly after were vniuſly broken.

Sir Goſſeline Deinuile and his brother Robert, wiſh two hundred in the habite of Friers did many notable robberies, they ſpoiled the biſhop of Durham's pallaces, leauing nothing in them but bare walls, for the which they were after hanged at Poike.

Theneſe like Friers.

King Edward kept his Chriſtmaſſe at Weſtmiſter, at which feaſt, ſeto of the Nobles were preſent, becauſe of diſcord moued betwixt the king and them, for that he would not obſerue the Articles ſo often demaunded and promiſed.

1317

Margaret, daughter to Philip, ſon to Lewes king of France, wiſe vnto Edward the firſt, deceaſed the 14. of February, and was buried in the middle of the quier of the Grey Friers church at London.

Edward de Bruce the king of Scottes brother, who by the ſpace of three yeres had aſſaulted Ireland, and had crowned himſelfe king, was taken by Engliſhmen, and was beheaded at Dundalke.

Ioh. Trekilow. Edward de Bruce beheaded.

In that battel were ſlaine 29. baronets of Scotland, and ſiue thouſand and eight hundred other, the pſimate of Armakh being chiefe captaine for the king of England.

The 18. of March the king ſent his letters to the Pope Iohn the 22. requirring of him a confirmation of all the ancient priuiledges of the Uniuerſity of Cambridge, which the Chancelloz and ſchollers had of long time enioyed, by the benefit of the popes his predeceſſors, and alſo of his owne predeceſſors the kings of England: whereunto the Pope aſſented, as appeareth by his bull granted in the moneth of Iune following.

This yere was an early harueſt, ſo that all the corne was inneed befoze S. Giles day. A buſhel of wheate that was befoze for 1. ſhillings, was ſolde for 1. pence: and a buſhel of otes that befoze was eight ſhillings, was ſold for eight pence.

Early harueſt cheape corne.

An. reg. 11.

Carle Warren toke the wiſe of the earle of Lancaſter, and ſhut her vp in his Caſtell,

Cassell, for that he said she was betrothed to him before shee was married: the earles had either of them a wife, but neither of them cared for them.

1318

R. Edward kept his Christmas at Beverley with many prelates, lords, and barons, at which time he provided himselfe of a great army, that he might bring down the pride of the Scots, if by any means it were for him profitable, and to deliver England from their eruptions.

Berwike betrayed.

About Midlent the towne of Berwike was betrayed to the Scots, through the treason of Peter Spalding, and other Englishmen, whome the king of Scots caused to be hanged for being traitors to their countrie. The castle held out, till for want of victuals they within were constrained to deliver it into the Scottishmens hands, who wan also at the same time, the castles of Harbottle, Mark, and Midford, so that they possessed the more part of all Northumberland, even to Newcastle upon Tyne, saving certaine castles that were defended against them.

The Scots invaded England Rich South, L. Trecklow.

In May they entred further into the land, burning all before them, till they came to Ripon, which towne they spoiled, and carrying thre daies, they received 1000. marks of those that were got into the church, because they should not put the towne to the fire, as they had done the townes of Rothallerton, and Boroughbidge, &c.

In their returning backe, they burnt Knaresburgh, and Skipton in Craven, and also other afoze them, carrying into Scotland a marvellous multitude of cattell, besides prisoners men and women.

T. Walsingham.  
W. Packington.  
An. reg. 12.

The Northshiresmen gathered together, to the number of 10000. mette with the Scots at the towne of Pitton, tenne miles by Northweast from Yorke, where they lost 3000. men, and were overcome by the Scots. Which when the king heard tel of, he left the siege of Berwick, and hasted to meet the Scots, but they returned another waie.

The Pope ordained, that Parsons should have but one benefice a peece: whereupon patrons straight presented new parsons to the residue.

A murreine of Wyne.

A great murreine of kine hapned, which were so mortally infected, that dogs and ravens eating of the carrion of the kine, were poisoned, and did swell to death, so that no man durst eate anie beefe.

The Scots burne the suburbs of Yorke.  
Adam Meri.  
Herdmens and women go to ward Jerusalem.

The king being at Yorke, the Scots entred England, came to Yorke, and burnt the suburbs of the city, and took sir John of Byttain earle of Richmond prisoner, with manie other.

Many herdsmen and certain women of England, and of other parts of the world, gathered themselves together, and would go seeke the holie Land, to kill the enemies of Christ, as they said: but because they could not passe over the great sea, they slew many Jewes in the parts of Holoune and Gascoigne, therefore many of them were taken and put to death.

1319

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Winchester.

John Sendall bishop of Winchester deceased, unto whom succeeded Reignald de Affer the popes Nuntio. Also John Dalbred bishop of Lincoln deceased, and Henry Burwash prebhelwe to Bartholomewe Badlesmere was chosen to his see.

This

This yere the Pope granted to the king of England, the tenth of alle ecclesiasticall gods for one yere, as befoze he had done the like.

In the moneth of June king Edward went over into France, and came to Amiens, where he met with the king of France, and receined of him the countie of Poytoto. *An. reg. 13.*

The 15. of October the clerks of the Exchequer went toward Poike with the booke called Domes day, and other Records and pzonission that laded 21. carts, but within the space of halfe a yere in the kalends of March they did returne againe to London. *Exchequer kept at Poike W. Paston.*

The same yere the kings Justices sate in the Tower of London, whereupon John Gisors late maior of London and many others fled the city, for things they had presumptionally done, and knewe themselves guilty.

This yere the Lepars were diffamed through all Chyffendome, for that they had couenanted with the Sarazens to poison the Chyistians in all places, which in diuers parts they brought to passe, putting poison into welles, fountaines, pits, and other places: vpon the which diuers of them in Pzonance, and in other parts of France were byent, and the Jewes were detained in pylon for consenting hereunto to them, there died in Almaine for this cause (after some Authoys) about 12000. Jewes. *Jewes and Lepars poisoned waters. Conradus Mendember.*

King Edward kept his Chyffmas at Westmynster with great honour and glozie. *1300*

The earle of Hereford bought of sir Wil. Bruce knight, a portion of land in the Marches of Wales called Colwers.

Roger Mortimer the Uncle, and Roger the Sephewe, not knowing of the foresaid bargain, had also bought the saide ground of the saide William Bruce. Also the Lord Mowbray, who had married the daughter and heire of the sayde William, claymed it by inheritance of his Wisse. Last of all, Hugh Spencer the yonger had bought that land, and put them all out, wherethroughe the foresaid nobles were soze moued, and Humfrey earle of Hereford complayned to Thomas earle of Lancaster, which two earles allured almost all the other earles and barons to take their part. Thomas earle of Lancaster being their capitaine they came to Sherborne, and from thence with Banners displayed, to Saint Albons: from thence they sent to the king being at London, requyryng him to banish the two Hugh Spencers, which were condemned by the communaltie in manie articles: which when the king woulde not grant, the barons came to London, where at length the king graunted their petition, so that Hugh Spencer the elder was banished, but the yonger Hugh fell to spoyling on the sea, taking out of two Dromydas about Sandwich, goods to the value of 40000. poundes. *The barons in armour.*

About the feast of S. Michael, Isabel the quene came from Canterbury to the castle of Leeds in Kent, purposing to haue lodged there that night, but she could not be permitted to enter. *An. reg. 14.*

The king herewith being offended, as being done in contempt of him, calling to him the Commons of Essex and London, besieged the Castle, which belonged to Bartholomew de Badlesmere, who hauing left his wiffe and child. *The elder Spencer banished. T. de la More.*

*Leeds Castle besieged.*

ben therein, was gone with the rest of the noble men to the ransacking of the Spencers goods.

In the meane time they in Leedes Castle despayring of their safegarde, the noble men with their army came to Kingston in the Nigill of Saint Simon and Jude, demanding (by the Bysshops of Canterburie and London, and the Earle of Penbrooke, who were sent betwene them) that the king woulde giue ouer his siege, promising, that they after the next Parliament woulde deliuer the Castle into the kings handes, and become obedient vnto him: but the king would not graunt the noble mens petition, who being returned into other partes, the king with much labour obtained the Castle, and hanging fire of the chiefe of those whom he found therein, he sent the wife and children of Badlesmere to the Tower of London.

1321

Mortimer sent  
to the Tower.

King Edward held his Chrismasse at Cirecester, and after Chrismasse leaving Glocester and Worcester, he with his army went to Shrewsbury and Wigornozth. Both the Mortimers meeting the king, reuerently and peaceably submitted themselves vnto him: but the king sent them both to the tower of London.

Mawrice Barkeley, and Hugh Audley in like sort submitting themselves, he sent to Wallingford Castle.

Humfrey Earle of Hereford, Gilbert Talbot, Raufe Damary, and their adherents, fled into the north to the earle of Lancaster.

About the latter end of February the king gathered an hoste & went against the rebels, and at Burton upon Trent put them to flight. The king pursuing them the 16 of March, the hostes met againe at Bosworthbridge, where Humfrey de Bohune (by a certaine Welchman, who stode vnder the bridge) being thrust into the fundament with a speare, died. There were taken in the field Thomas earle of Lancaster, with the lordes, knights, and other to the number of 65. the rest saving themselves by flight.

These, by the iudgement of Andrew Harkely earle of Carleile, were condemned.

The earle of  
Lancaster be-  
headed, and ma-  
ny other execu-  
ted.

John Treklow,  
W. Packington.

On the two and twentieth of March Thomas of Lancaster was beheaded: Waren de Lile, William Tochet, Thomas Manduit, Henry Bradebourne, William fitz Will. the yonger, and William Cheyney, Barons hanged & quartered at Pontfract: Io. Mowbray, Roger Clifford, Goceline Deinuile, drawn & quartered at Poike: Bartholomew Badlesmere at Canterbury: Henry de Mountfort, Henry Willington at Bristow: Ioh. Clifford, Roger Elinbrough at Glocester: William Kerdise, Henry Chies at London: Francis de Aldham at Windsoz, Thomas Culpeper at Winchelsey, Hugh de Audely the yonger, Iohn de Willington, Robert Talbot, Iohn Maidur, Edmund Heclude, Iohn de Sapy, Robert de Wacheuile, Philip de Labeche, Iohn de Becke, Henry de Laybourne, these ten, and xlii. knights moze were bestowed in diuers prisons.

Chron. of Dun.  
Iustices of  
Trillebaston.

The Iusticiars of Trillebaston in Essex, sate vpon all complaintes, except Amises touching ples of fede landes, and others, in the kings Bench to bee pleaded, who did abstaine their hands from all kindes of giftes, And would not be called to the feasts and banquets of any man.

The



The third weeke after Easter, a parliament was gathered at Pozke, where Hugh Spencer the father was made earle of Winchester, unto whom the king gaue the castle and honoz of Dunnington, which was parcell of the earledome of Lincolne.

T. de la More.  
Parliament at  
Pozke.

About the feast of S. James, the king with a great army entred Scotlande, but the Scots hauing destroyed all afoze, were retired beyond the Scottishe sea. So that the king being oppressed by famine, returned into England, whom the Scottes followed, and in a place of the fozeest of Blackmoze they sette on the king, so that he hardlie escaped.

T. de la More.  
Hen. Blanford.

Additions to  
Nic. Trivet.  
An. reg. 15.

There was taken, the Earle of Richmonde, and the Lozde of Salicico, the French kings Embassadour, and manie other: whereupon the Scottes spoiling all the Countrey, and burning euery to Pozke, they burned Ripon, and slew manie priests of the colledge there: but in Beverley they hurt not a man, for the Burgeses and Chanons did redeeme the same with 400. pounds of sterling monie. And so the Scots by reason of winter made returne, beeing laden with spoiles.

The Scottes  
burned in Eng-  
land to Pozke.

This yere the K. made sir Andrew Herkeley Earle of Carlile, and gaue him lands in the Marches of Scotland.

Andrews Her-  
keley earle of  
Carlile.

This yere the Steple of the Monastery at Ely fell downe in the night, but hurt no person: which Steple was afterwarde twentie yeres and moze in building, ere it were fully finished, and cost in the time of Allaine the sacrist of that church, 2406. pounds 16. shillings and eleyen pence: which Steple is builded by Architecture 8. square, of timber vpon 8. Pillars of stone, and called the Lanthorne. This is accompted one of the foure famous thinges that commendeth the Isle and Church: the other thre beeing the Chappell of our Ladie, the Mill, and the Vineyard. Alicia Lady of the Isle, third wife to Robert Fitz Walker deceased, and was buried nigh to her parents in the church of the friars preachers of Cambridge.

Commendati-  
ons of the Isle  
of Ely.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Pozke, dissembling his losses lately received at the hands of the Scots.

1322

About the feast of the Purification of our Ladie, Andrew de Herkeley late made Earle of Carlile, under colour of peace, sayned that hee woulde marrie Robert Bruce his sister. Whereupon the king reputing him a Traytour, caused him to bee taken by his trustie friend sir Anthony de Lucie, who sent him in yrons straight to London, where he was iudged before sir Anthony de Lucy in this manner. He was ledde to the barre as an earle worthily apparelled, with his sword girt about him, holed, booted, and spurred, &c. Unto whom sir Anthony spake in this manner: Sir Andrew (quoth hee) the king, for thy vallant seruice hath done thee great honour, and made thee earle of Carlile, since which time, thou, as a traitour to thy Lozde the king, leddest his people that shoulde haue help him at the battell of Beighland, auaire by the countrie of Copland, and through the earledome of Lancaster, by which meanes, our Lozde the king was discomfited there of the Scots, through thy treason and falsenelle, whereas if thou haddest come betimes, he had had the victorie: and this treason thou committedst, for the great summe of Golde and Siluer that thou receivdest of

Carle of Car.  
the Degraded.

James Dowglassse, a Scot, the kings enemy. Our Lord the king will therefore, that the order of knight hood, by the which thou receivest all thine honour and worship upon thy bodie, bee brought to nought, and thy state undone, that other knights of lower degree, may after thee be ware, and take example here after truly to serve.

An. reg. 16.

Then commaunded hee to helme his Spurres from his heeles, then to breake his sword over his head which the king had given him, to keepe and defend his land therewith, when he made him Carle. After this, hee let unclothe him of his furred Tabard, and of his Hode, of his coate of armes, and also of his Girdle: and when this was done, Sir Anthonie saide unto him, Andrew (quoth hee) now art thou no Knight but a knave, and for thy treason, the king will that thou shalt bee hanged and drawne, and thine head smitten off from thy bodie: thy bowelles taken out of thy bodie and burned before thee, and thy bodie quartered; and thy head being smitten off, afterward to be set upon London bridge, and thy foure quarters shall be sent unto foure good towncs of England, that all other maie beware by thee. And as Anthony Lucy had saide, so was it done in all thinges, on the last daie of October.

Thetwo Mortimers committed to prison.

In the moneth of Maie the Paioz and communalitie of Cambridge, rose in great multitude against the schollers: In which tumult diuers schollers were maymed, and some slaine, and the Charters of their Priviledges tozned and sholone into the myze in miserable sort: whereupon the king sent thither Master Henry Spigurnell, Master Robert de Malberthorpe and others, with commission to punish the offence.

The second day of August the two Mortimers were adjudged to bee drawne and hanged at Westminister, for diuers robberies and murders which the king laide against them, but no execution of that iudgment was done, by reason of a writ that the king sent to Sir Richard de Swardstone then Constable of the Tower, to stay the iudgement, and the king granted them their lives, to be in perpetuall prison.

1323

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Kenilworth Castle with great glorie.

Truce with  
Scotland.

The 30. day of May Aymer de Valence Carle of Penbroke Hugh Spencer the younger, Robert Baldocke Archdeacon of Middlesex, Sir William Herle knight, William de Aizewine Chanon of Porke, Galside de Scroope, were for King Edward of England sent unto Newcastle upon Tyne, where they met with William Bishophe of Saint Andrewes, Thomas Randolph Carle of Mount, Iohn de Meterh, Robert de Lowther, the father, knights, and maister Walter de Tromant Clarke for the king of Scottes, there to talke of a small peace: but when that would not be, they fell to a truce, which they agreed upon for thirtene yerres, which was proclaimed about the eleuenth of June, dated at Thorpe nere unto Porke.

This yere Philip king of France died, and his brother Charles succeeded him.

About the beginning of August, King Edward being at Pickering, there came Embassas

Embassadours from the new French king, the Lord Benuille and sir Andrew de Florentia, to cite the king to come to do homage for Guyen, Aquitaine, and other lands which he held of him: and though Hugh Spencer the son Lord Chamberlaine, and Robert Baldocke Lord Chancellour, had procured the said Embassadours, not to declare their message vnto the king, yet when they should depart, they did it, admonishing him for to come.

And the said sir Andrew de Florentia being a Notarie, made a publike instrument of the said citation and admonition.

Reginald de Affer bishop of Winchester, deceased, and Iohn de Stratford succeeded in that bishopricke.

The French king made a proccesse against the King of England. And Charles de Valoys vncle to king Charles of France a most deadly enemy to Englishmen, did setze on the dukedome of Anglow, and the County of Poytow to the vse of his nephew the king. Tho. de la More.

At the length going forward to the towne of Wyall, he found it well defended by Edmond of Woodstock earle of Kent, betwixt whom a final truce being taken, to continue until such time as it could be determined betwene both the kings as concerning peace, and the towne being yelded vp, both the armies departed home. An. reg. 17.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Pottingham Castle with great magnificence, glozy and resort of people. 1324

The next Lent in a parliament holden at London, Adam Tarleton bishop of Hereford was accused of treason, but by the Archbishops of Canterbury, Doyke, and Dubline, and their suffragan bishops, he was taken from the bar and had away: notwithstanding inquisition being made by lawfull men of that Country, they found that he had ayded the Mortimers with horse and armour against the king, whereupon all his temporalties were seized into the kings hands. Hen. Blanford, Parliament at London.

In this Parliament the king granted a petition of the Prelate, that all the bodics of the noble men that were hanged on galowes, should be taken down, and buried in ecclesiasticall sepulture.

The king also asked a subsidy of the cleargie and people, for the redẽming of Iohn Byptaine earle of Richmond.

Adam Tarleton Bishoppe of Hereford, being deysied of all his temporall goods, did hate the Spencers deadly, so did Henry Burwash of Lincoln, (whose temporalties by the space of two yers had bene detained in the kings hands) of whom and of other were made these verses:

*Nostri cornuti, sunt consilio quasi muti,  
Et quia non tuti, nequeunt sermonibus uti,  
Sunt quasi confusi, decreto legis abusi,  
Sic perit ecclesia, legis & ipsa via.*

Hen. Blanford,

Our horned Prelates, in counsell are dumme,  
And for feare of displeasure dare not say mumme,  
They are so confounded, with abuse of the Law,  
That Church, and right waye, are brought vnder awe.

In this parliament, the landes, lordships, and possessions of the Templars were giuen to the hospitallers of Saint Iohn of Ierusalem, through the whole realme, to be by them possessed for euer, for the defence of Christendome against the Infidels.

Mortimer of  
Wigmore brea-  
keth out of the  
Tower.

An. reg. 18.

On Lammas day Roger Mortimer of Wigmore, by making a solempne banquet to sir Stephen Segraue constable of the Tower of London, and the other officers, and giuing to his keepers a sleepe drinke, escaped out of the Tower, breaking through the wall, and comming into the kitchen néere adioyning to the kings lodgings, and getting out of the toppe thereof, came vnto a warde of the Tower, and so with the cordes knit ladder: wise, prepared afore hand by a friend of his, got to another warde, and so with great feare got to the Charnis, and with his helper and two mo of his counsell passed the riuer, and auoiding the high waies came to the Sea, and there finding a shippe at Portsmouth, he passed ouer into France to the king there, where he liued long, looking when he might be reconciled to the king of England: his uncle Roger being still kept in filthy prison, the space almost of fife yeres very vncourteously, at length he died, and was buried at Wistow: for the escape of the yonger Mortimer, the king being sore offended, put sir Stephen Segraue out of his constableness of the tower. About the feast of S. Martin, were the Burgeses of London and of other towne attached by a Clarke, named Thomas Neubigging, who purchased a commission of the king, and by force thereof accused many, obiecting against them, that they had conference with sir Roger Mortimer, maintaining and sustaining him, on the other side the Sea, and that they ayded and counselled him to escape out of the Tower, of which inditments the good people did purge themselves, by all the course of law, before the kings Iustices, whereby that Clarke was compted a wicked man, and imprisoned as a false traytor. The king sent Embassadors to the French king, the Bishops of Winchester and of Norwich, with Iohn of Bytaine Earle of Richmond, to take order for the dukedome of Bytain, who after long debatings took a certaine forme of peace with the king.

T. de la More.

1325

The Queene  
sent into  
France.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmasse at Nottingham very nobly and royally, after that the truce had bene confirmed at Poike, betwixt the Englishmen and the Scots, by the graue and wise persons of both the realmes.

King Edward sent the Queene his wife vnto her brother the French king, to establish the peace, who went ouer with a small company. By her mediation a peace was fully finished, to wit, that the king of England should giue vnto his eldest sonne Edward, the dukedome of Aquitaine, and the earledome of Pontieu, and that the French king should receiue homage of him: whereupon Edward the kings sonne went ouer with a competent household about the feast of S. Mathew, and did homage vnder certaine professions, to his uncle the French king.

King Edward  
banished his  
Queene, and  
her sonne.

Whiles the queene with her son remained in France longer then the kings pleasure was, and would not come againe without Roger Mortimer and other Nobles that were fledde out of Englands, and especiallie for the hatred there bare to the two Hugh Spencers, the king in displeasure banished them both, and all



all other that toke their partes: whereupon many fledde ouer the Seas to the Quene, amongst the which was one, a subtil knight, sir Robert Walkefare, who slaying the Constable of Cozse Castle, brake from thence, where hee had long laine prisoner.

Sir Oliuer Ingham knight, whom the yong duke Edward had made keeper of Aquitaine, gathered a great army, and invaded the Prince of Anisow (which the French king contrary to couenants, did withholde) and brought it wholie into the dominion of England.

*Oliuer Ingham.  
An. reg. 19.*

Howeouer, the kings nauy toke 100. shippes of the Normans, and brought them into England, for which cause great hatred grew betwixt the two kings and their realmes.

The quene perceiving that the nobles of France were corrupted with gifts sent out of Englande, so that shee could trust none of them, secretly conueyed her selfe and her son to the earle of Heynald, desiring aide of him: who receiued and intreated her very honourably so long as she remained there.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at S. Edmundsbury sore afrated of the Quenes returne & of those exiled persons that were with her, lest they should with a power of Aliens put him downe from his kingly dignitie, wherefore he ordeined his Castles as well in Wales as in England, to bee furnished with victualles, munitions and men: he also let keepe his riuers and coastes of the Sea, whereof the men of the Cinque portes toke the charge to defend. He also commended, that in euerie Citie, borough, towne corporate, hundred, and wapentake of England musters should be made, and their men to be exercised in armes, both on horsebacke and on fote, so that they might at all times bee ready when any hue and crie should be made, to pursue the Aliens if any came into England. And to this purpose, he ordeined Bikenings or Beacons to be set vp, that the same being fiered might be seene farre off, and thereby the people to be raised.

*1326  
Castles in  
England and  
Wales fort.  
fied.*

*Bikenings  
set vp.*

Isabel the Quene made a marriage betwixt her eldest sonne Edward, and Philip the daughter to William earle of Heynald, and then with her sonne Edward, Edmund of Woodstocke earle of Kent, the kings brother, Roger Mortimer, and many other noble men that fled out of England, and John brother to William Earle of Heynald being captaine, with sspendary knightes, out of Almaine and Heynald, she toke the seas with all her power, which were to the number of two thousand seuen hundred fiftie and seuen men well armed, and arrived at Wrewell, or Wrewell haven besides Hartwich in Essex, about Michaelmasse, thither immediately the Earle Marshall, the Earle of Leicester, the Bishops of Lincolne, Hereford, and Diuelin, and Gly came, and being joined to the Quene, made a great army: the other Bishops specially of Canterbury, ayded her with money. When she had refreshed her army at Saint Edmundsbury, she went forwards pursuing her enemies, whose gods she applied to her owne vse.

*An. reg. 20.  
Queene Isa.  
bell returned.*

The king requested aide of the citizens of London, who made him answere they would with due obedience, honour the king and Quene, and their sonne, who was lawfull heire to the realme, and that they would shutte their gates against

*The king requested aide.*

gainst all forraigne Traytours of the Realme: but they woulde not goe out of their citie to fight, except they might (according to their Liberties) returne home againe the same daie before Sun set: which when the king heard, he forced the Tower of London, and left there his yonger sonne Iohn of Eltham: hee caused also to bee proclaimed that euerie man should resist them that were arrised, and to innade them to the uttermost of their powers (the Quene with her sonne Edward, and the earle of Kent his brother onelie excepted) and whosoever could bring the head of Roger Mortimer, should haue 1000. pound.

Proclamation  
by the king.  
The Quenes  
letters tacked  
on the crosse  
in Cheape.  
Proclamation  
by the quene.

On the other side it was proclaimed in the Quenes behalfe, that all men should haue god peace, except the Disturbers of the Realme, to witte, the Spencers, the Father and the sonne, Robert Baldocke Bishop of Norwich, the kings Chancellor, and their fautors: and whosoever did bring to the Quene the head of Hugh Spencer, should haue 1000. pounds. The citizens of London without respect of any, beheaded such as they toke to be the Quenes enemies, among the which they beheaded one of their own citizens named Iohn Marshal because he was familiar with Hugh Spencer the yonger.

Citizens of  
London tooke  
part with the  
Quene.

Bishop of Ex-  
eter beheaded.

They toke also master Walter Stapleton Bishophe of Excester, and on the fiftenth daie of October beheaded him, and two of his seruants, a squire and a yeoman named William Atwall, and Iohn of Waddington at the Standerde in Cheape, because (as the saying was) hee had gathered a great army to with-stand the Quene: they did also wrest the keyes of the Tower of London out of the Constables hands, and deliuered all the prisoners.

The Ile of  
Lunday.

Tho. de la More.  
Ile of Lunday  
described.  
A. Necham.

The king, Hugh Spencer the yonger, and Robert Baldocke, determined to flee into the Ile of Lunday, which is in the mouth of the riuer Seuerne, two miles in length euerie waie, abounding with pasture grounds, and oates, very pleasant, it bringeth forth Conies verie plentifull, it hath Pigeons and other fowles, which Alexander Necham calleth Canimedes Birdes, hauing greate nestes. Also it ministreth to the inhabitantes fresh springing waters flowing out of Fountaines, although it be on euerie side enuironed with the salt Sea: it hath onelie one entrance into it, in the which two men together can scarce goe in a front; on all the other partes, there is an high hanging ouer of a great rocke, which letteth the passage to this Island as we haue saide: it aboundeth altogether with viualles, and is verie full of wines, oile, hony, corne, bzage, get, salt-fish, flesh, and sea or earth coales.

The king being desirous to saile thither, a contrarie winde did altogether withstand him, whereupon hee scarce auoiding the cruell tempests of the seas, arrived at Glamorgan, and went to the Abbey of Meth, where, trusting so much to the promises of the Welchmen, he did praisilie lurke.

Quene Isabel  
came to Oxford

Adam de Sale-  
ton preached  
at Oxford.

The Quene being now of great power vnder her sonnes banner (persecuting his father) commanted the hoste to go forward in pursuing the king, till at length they were come to Oxford; where, before the whole Winter sitte, the Quene, the yong Duke of Aquitaine, Roger Mortimer, and other noblemen and souldiours, the chiefe deuiser of so wicked a dissension named Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford, made a publike sermon touching the Quenes coming, and cause of the army, taking for his Theame, My head grieueth mee, which

which authoritie he brought to such a question, that a baime and stouthfull head, ought necessarily to bee taken awaie from the administration of a kingdome, neither ought it to be bound with any hurtfull bands of an hypocrite, &c.

After this the quene with her people came to Gloucester, from whence she went vnto Brisfolwe, where Hugh Spencer the elder committed himselfe and all his vnto the mercie of the angrie and outragious woman, who commanded the earle to be bound, and without question or answer to bee drawn and hanged in his armour, taken downe alive and bowelled, his bowelles burned, then his head smitten off, and his bodie hanged vp againe, and after foure daies to be cut all to peces and cast to dogges to be eaten, but his head was sent to Winchester. The quene went to Hereford. The is. with Robert Baldock, and Simon de Reding being taken on the sixteenth of November, was committed to the custody of Hen. earle of Lancaster, who brought him to Monmouth, to Ledbery, and so to Kenilworth castle, where he remained the space of one winter, ordered for his diet no other wise then a king.

Hugh Spencer submitted himselfe to quene Isabel.

Hugh Spencer the elder executed. King Edward taken.

The quene being at Herefords, Edmund earle of Arundell, John Daniell, and Thomas Mochelden were beheaded. Afterward Hugh Spencer the sonne Earle of Gloucester, was by certaine Welshmen, brought bounde before the quene, and without sentence or iudgement, was drawn, and hanged on a gallows thirtie fote high, and after beheaded and quartered on the foure and twentieth day of November, whose head was sent to London bridge, his quarters to foure partes of the Realme. Simon Reding was drawn and hanged on the same gallows, but tenne fote lower: Robert Baldocke, with manie opprobrious words was brought to the Bishop of Herefords prison, where he liued miserablie untill the Purification, and then he was removed to London, and cast into Newgate, where he was so hardly dealt with, that shortly after he died there.

Hugh Spencer the younger executed.

1317

These things being done, the quene with her sonne Edward, Roger Mortimer, and other, went to Wallingford Castle, a little before Christmas, and before the Twelst day they came to London, where the quene with much joy & great rewards was received: for all the nobility of the realme did assemble there being first summoned to come to the Parliament, to bee holden the morrowe after the saide feast of the Epiphanie, where they all iudged that the olde king was not worthish to beare the crowne, but for diuers causes was to be deposed: And that his eldest son Edward was to be chosen king with one whole consent, which consequentie was done, and the election openlie in Westminster pronounced.

The Archbyschoppe of Canterburie did consent to the election, as all other the Byschoppes did the like: whereupon the Archbyschoppe ascending into the Pulpit, preached a Sermon, taking for his theme, *Vox Populi, Vox Dei*, exhorting all the people to praye vnto the king of kinges for the king they had elected. The Sermon being ended, and the people departed, as soone as the quene vnderstode that her sonne was elected king, and her husband deposed, she seemed to be full of sorrow, as it were almost besides her wits; her sons also lamented his mothers heavines, and sware, that against his fathers will he would

woulde neuer take the Crowne . Therefore by common decree on the behalfe of the whole Realme it was ordained, that three Bishops, two Barons, Henry of Leicester, and John earle Waren, 2. abbots, Claffenbury and Dor, two barons, Roger Grey, and Hugh Courtney, two Justices, Sir Geoffrey Scroope, and John de Stanthour, two Barons of the Portes, foure Burgeses of London, 4 knights for the communalitie of the land, &c. shoulde be sent to the king being in Benilworth castle, where they ordained as followeth: John Stratford bishop of Winchester, Adam de Arleton bishop of Hereford, and Henry Bysshop of Lincoln were sent.

The bishop of Winchester and the bishop of Lincoln went before the rest, and talked secretly with the king, together with his Keeper the Earle of Leicester, these three craftily compassed him, counselling him to make resignation of the Crowne to his eldest sonne, promising him no lesse honoz and renowne after the deposition of his royall dignitie, then his princelie estate was wont to haue of all men before. They added also, what a great reward it woulde bee at the hands of GOD, for the peace and quietnes of his subiects, for him to refuse the gouernement of a tempozall kingdome . In the other part they threatened him, that if he would not make resignation, the people withdrauing their homage and obedience, faith and friendship from him, his sonnes also being forsaken, they would crowne another king, none of the royall blood. With these and other promises and threates, the king (not without sobbes and teares) agreed to the aduertisements of the Bishops. Finally, that mischeuous Embassadour Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford, brought to the castle, where in the king was shut vp, the kings other enemies, whome he placed orderlie according to their dignities in the kings chamber, reseruing vnto himselfe the thinges which hee had sought long time before . At length the king comming forth of his secrete Chamber, beeing clothed in a mourning gowne, shewing himselfe to his seruants, knowing the businesse, for which they came, for verie sorrow, beeing as it were, distraught of his wittes, sodanelie swooned, the earle of Leicester, and the Bishop of Winchester did take him vp, being almost dead, and being called to his senses, Adam de Orleton Byschoppe of Hereford declaring the cause of the messengers comming, did adde, that the king shoulde make resignation of the Crowne and realme to his eldest sonne, or else, after that himselfe was refused, hee shoulde suffer them to chuse to their king another fitter man, whome they thought good for the defence of the kingdome.

King Edward  
resigned the  
croune.

The king hearing this, with much mourning answered, that hee was verie soyle, that the Commons had conceiued such wrath and indignation against him, that they disdained to be gouerned vnder his rule, for the which hee asked them forgiveness, and finally added, that hee would be very glad, if they would receiue his sonne to be their king . This resignation was made on the five and twentieth daie of Ianuarie, in the yere of Christ, after the accompt of the Historiographers (who beganne their yere at Christmas) 1327. after the accompt of the Church of Englande 1326. And forthwith in this castle, those messengers did renounce (as touching the realme) all homages and duties due to Edw. of Carnaruan late king of England by the hand of William

Trussell



Trussell knight, he in presence of the aforesaid Lords, had these words following. Unto the, O king, I William Trussell, in the name of all men of this land of England, and prolocutor of this parliament resigne to the Edward the homage that was made to the sometime, and from this time forth deprive the of all kingly power, and I shall neuer be attendant vnto the as king after this time. Then Thomas Blunt knight and Steward of the kings household, by the breaking of the Rod, resigned his office, and shewed that the kings household had free liberty to depart.

After this the messengers returned to the parliament at London, declaring the resignation that was made, and the kings answer more fully then it was made. The Commons of the realme despising old things, willingly receiued Edward of Windsor eldest sonne to Edward of Carnaruan. Also such a great dowrie was assigned to Quene Isabell, that scarce the thirde part of the reuenues of the crowne were left for her son, and his wife quene Philip. Moreover, Quene Isabell, the bishop of Hereford, and Roger Mortimer did appoint for expences to Edward of Carnaruan 100. marks the moneth.

This Edward of Carnaruan, now deprived of his royall Crowne and dignity remained with Henry earle of Leicester his kinsman, lacking nothing but libertie, where hee being shut vp, ledde his life, as if hee had bene a Monk. But the fierce and cruell woman being troubled with manie thinges, taking counsell of her wicked Scholemaster Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford, she had an answer of him, which did not graue her a little, that was, that the Earle of Leicester did take pittie vpon Edward his cousin. Moreover, there was talke throughout the land, that there were couenantes made amongst manie, to take king Edward by force out of the castle of Kenilworth, to the which one friar Preacher, named Thomas Dunhed, and one Clarke were assenting, for which cause he and other were imprisoned at Poike. It was therefore decreed by the cruell woman the Quene, through the subtil denise of her said Scholemaster, that Thomas of Gorney, and Iohn Maltrauers knights, hauing receiued him from the keeping of the earle of Leicester, shoulde carry Edward the olde king about whither they woulde, so that none of his well willers shoulde haue accesse vnto him, or vnderstand where hee made anie long abode.

And to these two wicked Traitors, authoritie was giuen by the highest sort, that into what soeuer part of the kingdome they bent themselves, that all gouernours and keepers of the Castles shoulde suffer them to enioie their offices and Romes during their pleasure, vpon paine of forfeiture of goods, landes, and life, if ante shoulde denie them. By meanes of which authoritie Henry earle of Leicester, through commandement of king Edward the thirde, deliuered the olde king by Indenture to Sir Thomas Barkeley, and Sir Iohn Maltrauers, and they brought him from Kenilworth, to the Castle of Corfe, then to Wiltow, where for a season he was kept shutte vp in the Castell, vntill it was vnderstande by certaine burgeses of the towne, who for his deliuerance conuicted themselves ouer sea. Wherefore in a dark night, the keepers of Edward conuey him thence to Barkeley.

These

Wilkes of  
the second.

These tormentors of Edward exercised towards him manie cruelties, vnto whome it was not permitted to ride, vntlesse it were by night, neither to see a nie man, or to be seene of anie. When he rode, they forced him to bee bareheaded: when he would sleepe, they would not suffer him, neither when hee was hungry would they giue him such meates as he desired, but such as he loathed: euerie word that he spake, was contraried by them, who gaue it out most slanderously, that he was madde. And shortly to speake, in all matters they were quite contrary to his will, that either by colde, watching, or vntwholsome meates, for melancholy, by some infirmite he might languish and die. But this man being by nature strong to suffer paines, and patient thorow Gods grace to abide all griefes, hee endured all the deuises of his enemies, for as touching popsons, which they gaue him often to dyinke, by the benefite of nature he dispatched away.

Edward the  
second crowned  
with hay.

These Champions bzing Edward towardees Barkeley, being guarded with a rabble of hel-houndes, along by the Grange belonging to the Castle of Wyke, where that wicked man Gorney, making a crowne of hay, put it on his head, and the souldiours that were present, scoffed, and mocked him beyond all measure, saying, A prut, auaunt sir king, making a kinde of noyse with their mouthes, as though they had sarked: they feared to be met of anie that should knowe Edward, they bent their iourney therefore towardees the lesse hand, riding along ouer the Parish grounds, lying by the riuer of Seuerne. Moreouer, deuising to disfigure him that hee might not bee knowne, they determined for to haue as well the hate of his head, as also of his beard: wherefore, as in their iourney they traualled by a little water which ranne in a ditch, they commanded him to light from his horse to be shauen, to whome, being set on a moale hill, a Barbar came vnto him with a basen of colde water taken out of the ditch, to shauen him withall, saying vnto the king, that that water should serue for that time. To whome Edward answered, that would they, should they, he would haue warme water for his beard; and, to the end that he might keepe his promise, he began to wepe, and to shed teares plentifully: At length they came to Barkley Castle, where Edward was shut vp close like an anchor. Isabell his wife taking it grieuouly that her husbands life (which she deadly hated) was prolonged, made her complaint to her Scholemaster Adam de Orleton, saying that she had certaine dreames, the interpretation whereof she misliked, which if they were true, she feared lest, that if her husband be at anie time restored to his olde dignitie, that hee would burne her for a Traytor, or condemne her to perpetuall bondage. In like sort the Bishop being guiltie in his owne conscience stood in like feare. The like feare also strooke the hearts of other for the same offence: wherefore it seemed good to many of great dignitie and bloud, as well spirituall as temporall, both men and women, that all such feare should bee taken away, desiring his death: whereupon there were letters colourably witten to the keepers of Edward, greatly blaming them, for looking so slenderly to the king, suffering him to haue such libertie, and nourishing him too delicately.

King Edward  
shauen with  
cold water.

Moreouer, there is a priuile motion made vnto them, but yet in such sorte,

as it might seeme halfe done, that the death of Edward would not bee mistaking vnto them, whether it were naturall or violent. And in this point, the great deceit of Sophisters stode in force, set downe by the Bishop who wrote thus:

*Eduardum occidere nolite timere bonum est.*

Kill Edward doe not feare is a good thing:

Or thus:

To seeke to shed King Edwards blood

Refuse to feare I count it good.

Which sophisticall saying is to be resolued into two propositions, whereof the first consisting of three words, to wit, *Eduardum occidere nolite*, doe not kill Edward, and the second of other three, that is, *timere bonum est*, feare is a good thing, do seeme to perswade subtilly from murthering of the king: but the receivers of these letters, not ignorant of the writing, changed the meaning thereof to this sense, *Eduardum occidere nolite timere*, to kill Edward doe not feare: and afterwards these wordes, *bonum est*, it is good, so that they being guiltie, turned a good saying into euill.

The Bishop being thus determinately purposed touching the death of Edward, and toarily prouiding for himselfe, if by any chance he should be accused thereof, craftely worketh that the authoritie which he gaue by writing, might seeme to be taken expressely contrary to his meaning, by reason of accenting and pointing of the same.

To conclude, the murtherers of Edward hoping to haue sounde both Isabel and the Bishoppe to be their trustie friends, they found them earnest persecutors of their enterpryse, quite denying whatsoeuer they had deuised against Edward, yea, they were greatly busied in deuising most cruell death for them, so that the murtherers being quite dismayed, wist not what to doe: but they read the Letters of Isabel, the Bishoppe, and other conspiratours, being confirmed with their owne handes and seales, which the Bishoppe refused not, but confessed to be his and others, but construed them to an other sense, accusing them to be false interpreters of his Letters, and of his owne authoritie threatened them, vntill hee forced them to runne away. Thus much touching the Letters.

Now when king Edward was brought vnto the Castle aforesaide, hee was courteously receiued by Thomas Barkeley then Lord of the see, who was allowed 100. shillings the day for the time: But after the tormentors had receiued their letters of gouernment ouer the Castle, the said Thomas is commanded to be no familiaritie with Edward: therefore Thomas Barkeley with his wife there departeth thence to other his dwelling places: And Edwards persecution continuing to his death, beganne to take effect. For after this he was shut vp in a close chamber, where, with the stench of dead carcases, laide in a Cellar vnder him, he was miserably tormented many daies together, in such sort, that he was well nigh suffocated therewith. And that paine was almost intolerable vnto him, It appeareth by the complaint he made on a certaine day.

King Edward  
murdered.

day at the chamber window, certaine carpenters then working on y<sup>e</sup> right side therof, hearing the same. But those tyrants perceiuing that this terrible stench was not of a sufficient force to cause the death of this balliant man Edward, one night being the 22. of September, they came rushing in vpon him so dauntlie, as he laye in his bed, with great and heauie featherbeds, bearing in weight as much as 15. strong men coulde beare, wherewith they oppressed and strangled him by smothering. Into whome also they thrust a plummers sodging yron, being made red hot, vp into his bowelles, through a certaine Instrument like to the end of a Trumpet or glister pipe, put in at the fundament, burning thereby his inward parts, prouiding thereby least ante wound being founde in the kings bodie, might cause his tormenters to answer for committing open treason, and therefore suffer iust punishment. In this sort was this brave knight oppressed, crying out with a lowd voice, so that many as well within the castle, as without heard it, perceiuing it to be y<sup>e</sup> crye of one that suffered violent death, which caused manye of Barkley, and also of the castle (as themselves affirmed) to take compassion thereof, and to praye for the soule of him that was then departing the world. And this was the ende of Edward of Carnaruan, being betrayed as is aforesaid: but to colour the matter that they might seeme guiltlesse in this case, Isabel and the bishop of Hereford laboured to cleare themselves by banishing and outlawing of Thomas Gorney, and John Maltrauers, laying as it were all the fault vpon them.

This Thomas Gorney flying to Paris, and there lying hid y<sup>e</sup> space of thre yeres, was at length espied and taken, and as he was brought towards England, there to haue receiued iust and worthy punishment for his deserts, he was beheaded on the sea, fearing that if he had bene brought into England, he would haue accused diuers other great personages. The other, to wit, Iohn Maltrauers, liuing in great contrition and repentance, spent a long time in Dutchland. Thus far out of Thomas de la More, a worshipfull knight, that then liued and wrote in the French tongue what he saw with his eyes, or heard crediblie reported, by them that saw, and some that were actors. All which was (at the said sir Tho. de la Mores request) translated, and more orderlie penned in the Latine tongue, by Walter Baker, alias Swinborne, chanon of Wsney besides Wsford.

Now to conclude this history, of the raigne and end of king Edward the second, called of Carnaruan, for that he was borne there: he was deposed on the 25. of January, in the yere of Christ 1326. when he had reigned 19. yeres, six moneths and od daies, and was murdered on the 21. of September next following, being the feast of S. Mathew the Apostle, in the yere of Christ 1327. whose death was not published till after the feast of all Saints, and he was buried at Glocester on the feast daie of S. Thomas the Apostle, or 21. of December. He had issue by Isabel his wife, Edward, which was elected king, and to whome hee resigned in his life: Iohn of Eltham earle of Cornetwall, that died at the towne of S. Iohn in Scotland without issue: Ioane of the Towre Quene of the Scots and Elianor Countesse of Gueldar, that died young.

King



## King Edward the third.



Edward the third bozne at Windsor, about the age of fourteene yeres, after the deposing of his father, began his raigne the 25. day of January, in the yere of our Lord 1326. after the account of the Church of England. He was crowned at Westminster, on the first day of February, by Walter Reignolds Archbishop of Canterburie. This Prince was endued with passing beauty and fauour, of wit pꝛouident, circumspect, and gentle of nature: of excellent modestie and tem-

*Ann. reg. 1.*

*Tho. dela More,  
Gual. Baker of  
Swinbrooke.*

perance. He advanced such persons to dignities, as did most excell other in innocencie of life. In feats of armes he was very expert, as the noble enterprises by him atchieued doe well declare. At the beginning of his raigne, he was chiefly ordered by his mother Isabel, vnto whom was assigned so great a dowrye, that the third part of the kingdome did scantly remaine to her sonne.

The inhabitants of the towne of Burie in Suffolke, assembled themselves in warlike manner on St. Lukes day last befoze passed, in the twentieth yere of Edward the second, and besieged the abbey of Burie, bzent the gates, beat and wounded the Monks, bare out of the abbey all the gold, silver, ornaments, bookes, Charters, and other writings, with the assay of their coine, stampes, and all other things pertaining to their Mint: and all other goods, as Wasse, Pewster, Iron, Lead, &c. They also bzent many houses about the abbey, and in the towne, pertaining to the Abbot, with his manors in Werton, Wackenham, Rugham, Oldham, Hernigesbury, Pewto, Whipsled, Westle, Riseby, Ingham, Ferneham, Redwell, Haberdon, and others, with all the cozne in the same manors, & bzene away the horses, cren, kine, swine, sheepe, &c. They bzew the Monks out of their Abbey and put them in prisons, & after brought them againe to their Chapter house, where they forced them to search Charters at their pleasure, &c. foz the which facts, the malefactozs were this yere by vertue of the kings commission directed to Thomas Carle of Dorset, Marshall of England, Thomas Bardolfe, and others, apprehended and convicted: nineteene of them were hanged, and one pressed to death. After this, the whole inhabitants of the Towne, foz that they had not stayed the malefactozs of their enterprise in the beginning (as they might haue done) were amerced to pay the Abbot toward his dannages 140000. pound. Fewer the lesse, the Abbot and Couent at the Kings request (who was there present with his Nobilitie) forgaue and remitted to them 122333. pound. The Kings eight pence of the summe: and foz the rest vsed such fauour, that if they truly payd 2000. markes in twentie yeres following, and obserued their covenants foz god order and quietnesse, they forgaue them all the rest.

*Regist. of Burie.  
Ioh. Prieton.  
The Abbey of  
Burp sporis.*

1327.

*Commons of  
Burp sporis  
sed.*

*Burp awers  
in wille  
sed.*

About this time, the like stirre was made against the Monkes of Canterburie: whereof I find recozded as followeth.

*Record, Eccles.  
Christi Cantua.*

King Edward preparing an army into Scotland, commanded the Bailiffes and Citizens of Canterburie, to furnish him twelue horsemen, and send them

to Newcastle, toward which charge, the citizens required aid of the Monks: who answered them, that without the assent of the king and their archbishop, they would not agree therunto, for so much as the kings of England had founded their Church in free and perpetuall almes. Whereupon, William Chylham Baylyffe, and many Commons of the citie, assembled themselves in the Preaching Friers Churchyard, conspired and swore against the Monkes, as followeth.

1 That they would ouerthrow the pentises, windowes, and milne, belonging to the Monkes.

2 That no Citizen should dwell in any house belonging to the Monkes.

3 That all rents belonging to the Monkes of Canterburie should be gathered to the use of the Commons.

4 That no man should lend or sell to the Monkes any victuals.

5 That they should sell all the horses and beasts that came into the citie with carriage to the Monkes.

6 That all such Monkes as came forth of their house should be spoiled of their garments.

7 That a trench should be cast, to stoppe all men from going in or coming out.

8 That every Pilgrime should at his entring, swear that he should make no offering.

9 Also, that every of those commons aforesaid should weare on their finger a ring of gold of those that belonged to Thomas Becket.

Cro. pet. College.

Sir Iohn the Carles brother of Benault, came to helpe Edward the third against the Scots, with five hundred men of armes: which Benawdors and the Englishmen fell out by chaunce on Trinitie Sunday at Poike, where eightie of the Lincolnshire men were slaine, and much of the citie of Poike was burned: and the Englishmen slaine were buried vnder a stone in Saint Clements Churchyard in Foslegate.

Tournier to  
Edward Scots  
land.

The king went against the Scots that were entred England, as farre as Stanhope Marke in Warbale, where they were besieged three dayes, but they escaped. Iames Douglas one night secretly entring the English campe, came nere to the Kings Tent to haue taken or slaine him, but his Chapleins being a bold man and well armed, with some other being slaine, he with much adoe got backe unhurt.

R. Edward  
title to France.

An. reg. 2.

This yeere also king Edward the second was murdered on the 22. of September, as is before declared.

This yeere died Charles king of Fraunce the third brother, which was brother to the Ladie Isabel Queene of England, mother to king Edward the third: by whose death the succession of the kingdome of Fraunce came to the said Edward, but it was vsurped and possessed by Philip de Valoys uncle to the said Charles, who did intrude himselfe by force.

Edward the  
third married.

King Edward married Philip daughter to William Earle of Holland and Benault, at Poike the five and twentieth of Februarie: she was sisters daughter to Philip de Valoys aforesaid.

A. B. C.

A Parliament was holden at North-hampton, in which a shamefull peace was made betwixt the Englishmen and Scots, so that David the sonne of Robert Bruce, scarce seven yeres old, married Ioane of the Tower king Edwards sister, at Berwicke the twelfth of July. Also the king made the Scots charters, the tenour whereof was unknowne to the Englishmen: but all was done as it pleased the old Quene, Roger Mortimer, and James Dowglas. The Scots made many taunting rimes against the Englishmen, for the fond disguised apparell by them at that time used: amongst the which this was fashioned upon the Church doores of Saint Peter toward Stangate:

Parliament at  
North-hamp-  
ton.

Peace with  
the Scots.

Long beards heartlesse,  
Painted hoods witlesse,  
Gay coates gracelesse,  
Makes England thriflesse.

Scottish  
taunts.

Walter Reignolds Archbischoppe of Canterburie, deceased after he had sit Archbischop 13. yeres, 9. moneths, and 20. dayes, and was buried at Canterburie, to whome succeeded Simon Mapham Doct. of Divinitie. Thomas de Cobham Bishop of Worcester also deceased, to whome succeeded Adam de Orleton in that Bishopricke.

In a Parliament at Salisburie, the king made thre Carles, John of Gloucestre his brother Earle of Cornewall, Roger Mortimer Earle of the March, and James Butler of Ireland Earle of Dymond. From this Parliament the Earle of Lancaster, the Lord Wake, Henrie Beamond, Earle of Arthall, and other noble men did absent themselves, not being far off from thence in armor, for the which the king was highly displeased: notwithstanding in Sommer following, they submitted themselves unto the kings mercy, seeking his fauor.

Parliament at  
Salisburie.

Certaine men of this land, to the intent to trie what friends they had in England, craftily deuised that Edward the second king of England was aliue in the Castle of Corfe, but not to be seene in the day time, and therefore they used many nights to make the wyes, & masking with dancing vpon the towres and walles of the Castle, which being perceiued by people of the countrey, it was thought there had ben some great king vnto whom they did these great solemnities: this rumor was spred ouer all England, to wit, that the old king was aliue: whence it came to passe, that the Earle of Kent sent thither a fryer preacher, to try the truth of the matter, who (as it was thought) hauing corrupted the porter of the castle with rewards, is let in, where he lay all the day in the porters lodge very close: and when night was come, he was willed to put on the habit of a Lay man, and then was brought into the hall, where he saw (as he thought) Edward the father of the king sitting royally at supper, with great maiestie. This fryer being thus perswaded, returned againe to the Earle of Kent, and reported as he thought, what he saw: whereupon the Earle said and affirmed with an oath, that he would endeaunour by all the meanes he could to deliuer his brother from prison.

Ed. Edward  
the second by a  
ted to be aliue.

1328.

The same yere at the earnest request of some, the king held a Parliament at Winchester, where, by procurement of the old quene, and Roger Mortimer,

Parliament at  
Win. Chester.

Carle of Kent  
the kings vncle  
beheaded at  
Winchester.

An. reg. 3.

1329.  
Parliament at  
Nottingham.

Roger Mortimer  
apprehended.

the said Carle of Kent, and many other noble men and religious persons, to wit, the prouincials of the white Carmelite Fryers, and of the blacke preaching Fryers, and Fryer Richard Wilton were accused of conspiracie, touching (as it was said) the deliuerie of the Kings father: which matter although it were but deussed fantasie and a mere lye, yet the said Carle for certaine confessions which he made, and for certaine letters which were found about him, was there beheaded. The other, to wit, the prouincials of the Predicants and Carmelites, were banished: but the bishop of London was set at libertie. Robert de Taunton priest, and some certaine Carmelite Fryers and Predicants, were condemned to perpetuall prison. The death of the said Carle was the lesse lamented, because his family and seruants had aboute measure afflicted the Commons, in taking vp thyngs (as they trauailed) at the kings price, paying nothing or very little for it.

There was a Parliament holden at Nottingham, where Roger Mortimer was in such glozy and honour, that it was without all comparison. No man durst name him any other than Carle of March: a greater route of men waited at his heeles, than on the Kings person: he would suffer the king to rise to him, and would walke with the King equally, step by step, and cheeke by cheeke, neuer preferring the king, but would go for most himselfe with his officers: he greatly rebuked the Carle of Lancaster, cousin to the King, for that without his consent he appointed certain lodgings for noble men in the towne, demanding who made him so bold, to take vp lodgings so nigh vnto the queen: with which words the Constable being greatly feared, appointed lodging for the Carle of Lancaster one myle out of the towne: and likewise were lodged the Carle of Hereford, John de Bohune of Essex, high Constable of England, and others. By which meanes, a contention rose among the Noblemen, and great murmuring among the common people, who said, that Roger Mortimer the Quenes Paragon, and the Kings Master, sought all the means he could to destroy the Kings blood, and to vsurpe the Regall State: which report troubled much the Kings friends, to wit, William Mountacute, and other, who for the safegard of the King, sware themselves to be true to his person, and by so vnto them Robert de Holland, who had of long time ben chiefe keeper of the castle, vnto whome all secret corners of the same were knowne. Then vpon a certaine night, the King lying without the castle, both he & his friends were brought by torch-light through a secret way vnder ground, beginning far off from the said castle, till they came euen to the Quens chamber, which they by chaunce found open: they therfore being armed with naked swords in their hands, went for wards, leaving the king also armed without the doze of the Chamber, least y his mother should despise him: they which entred in, slew Hugh Turpinton knight, who resisted them, Master John Neuell of Pozneby gining him his deadly wound. From thence, they went to ward the Quene mother, whome they found with the Carle of March ready to haue gone to bedde: and hauing taken the said Carle, they ledde him out into the hall, after whome the Quene followed, crying, *Bel filz, bel filz, ayes pitie de gentil Mortimer*, Good sonne, good sonne, take pitie vpon gentle Mortimer: for the suspected that



that her sonne was there, though she saw him not. Then are the keyes of the Castle sent for, and every place with all the furniture is yielded up into the kings hands, but in such secret wise, that none without the castle, except the kings friends, understood thereof. The next day in the morning very early, they bring Roger Mortimer, & other his friends taken with him, with an horrible shout & crying (the earle of Lancaster then blind, being one of them that made the shout for joy) towards London, where he was committed to the Tower, and afterward condemned at Westminster, in presence of the whole Parliament on S. Andrewes euen next following, and then drawne to the Elmes, and there hanged on the common gallows, whereon he hung two dayes and two nights by the Kings commaundement, and then was buried in the Gray Friers Church. He was condemned by his Peeres, and yet neuer was brought to answer before them, for it was not then the custome, after the death of the Carles of Lancaster, Winchester, Gloucester, and Kent: wherefore this Earle had that sayd himselfe, which he appointed for other.

The causes of his death laid against him, were these:

First, that he was consenting to the murdering of the Kings father.

Secondly, for that he had receiued a great summe of money, whereby the Kings honour was greatly abated at Stanhope Parke, where he gaue a signe vnto the Scots that they should lie.

Thirdly, for that he caused certaine auncient deeds and Charters to be bent, wherein the king of Scots stood bound vnto the king of England: and especially for that he had caused a contract to be made betwixt the Kings sister, and Dauid the sonne of Robert le Bruce.

Fourthly, that he had vnprofitably consumed a great deale of treasure which he found in the kings treasure, and in the treasure of the Carles of Winchester and Gloucester.

Fifthly, for appropriating vnto himselfe the wardes and marriages of all England.

Sixtly, for being an euill Counsellor to the king, and to the Quene mother, and for being ouermuch familiar with her. There dyed with him his friends Simon de Burford knight, brother to sir William Burford that was Justice, and Iohn Deuereux Esquier, who was desirous to haue made open confession of the kings fathers cruell death, but he could not be suffered so to doe. Iohn Mautreuers was attaint for the death of Edmond Earle of Kent. Thomas Gurney, William Ogle, for murdering king Edward the second. Mautreuers restored the 25. of Edward the third, and the heires of Mortimer in the 28. of the same king.

King Edward, the bishop of Winchester, William Mountacute, and berie few others passed ouer Sea, like as they had bin Merchants, hauing with him scarce fiftene horsemen. He left Iohn of Eltham his brother, Protector of the Realme. He returned againe about the beginning of Aprill, & then held a great Turnament at WERTFORD in Kent. The fiftenth of Iune was boyn vnto h. Edward his first sonne at Woodstoke, who was after named Edward the blacke Prince. The king toke into his hands all the lands assigned to his

An. reg. 4.  
1330.

Turnament  
at WERTFORD. 5  
Edward the  
blacke Prince  
boyn.

*Tournament in  
Cheap at London.*

*Adam Meri.  
Rob. Aueberie.*

mother, and onely left her a thousand pound the yere. About the feast of S. Machy, there was very sollemne Iusting of all the knoute Carles, Barons, and Nobles at London in Cheape, betwixt the great Crosse, and the great Conduite nigh Soper Lane, which lasted thre dayes, where the Quene Philippe, with many Ladies fell from a Stage, notwithstanding they were not hurt at all: wherefoze the Quene toke great care to saue the Carpenters from punishment, and thzough her prayer (which she made on her knees) she pacified the King and Councell, whereby she purchased great loue of the people.

*late Haruest.*

*W. Shep.*

Such a wet Sommer, with exceeding raine was this yere, that the corne in the fiede could not ripe, so that in many places they began not Haruest till Michaelmas. The house of Croxton got not in their wheate till Hallontide, and their Pease not befoze S. Andrewes tide. The Monkes on Allhallow day, and Martlemas day, were serued with Pease greene in the cods, in stead of Peares and Apples.

*Ann. reg. 5.*

*1331.*

King Edward held a sollemne Christmas at Wells in Somersetschire, which he continued till the feast of the Epiphanie, where were many strange and sumptuous shewes made, to pleasure the King and his guests.

In the beginning of August, Edward Bailiol, sonne and heire to John King of Scots, came into England, which Edward had ben befoze that time banished out of Scotland. At his coming, he declared what right he had in the kingdome. Henry Beaumont Earle of Bohune, Gilbert Vmfrueil Earle of Angus, David Earle of Athels, Richard Talbot, Ralph Barch of Staffordre, Fulx Fitz Williams, with many other noble men, affirming they had right of inheritance in Scotland, desired licence and ayde of the King of England, to recover the said kingdome and lands due to them, but the King hauing regard of the peace lately made, and also for his sisters sake Quene of Scots, would not suffer them to leade an armie thzough his land, wherefoze the said Lords getting a flect of shyps, entred the sea, and sayling toward Scotland, landed at Binkhorne, where the Earle of fife, and Robert Bruce, bassard son to Robert Bruce, with ten M. Scots resisted them nere vnto Dunfermeling: but the Englishmen put them to flight, and slew many. After ward, to wit, on S. Laurence day, they had a fore confliat at Gledesmoze, where two thousand Englishmen ouercame fourtie thousand Scots. By reason of the great thzong of the multitude amongst themselves, five Carles, & many other were thzonged to death. On the morow, the Englishmen toke the Towne of S. Johns, well furnished with victuals.

*Edw. Bailiol  
resigned the  
Crown of  
Scotland to  
King Edward  
of England.*

*Hospitall at  
Leicester.*

*John Mandeuill.*

The seuen and twentieth of September, Edward Bailiol was crowned King of Scots, but after ward he resigned it to King Edward of England, and remayned vnder his protection many yeres after.

Henry Earle of Lancaster and Leicester, igh Steward of England, founded the new Hospitall by the castle of Leicester, wherein were one hundred poze impotent people prouided for with all things necessary.

Edward Bailiol, and the foresaid Lords and Nobles continued the warres in Scotland, vnto whome came many other Noble men of the Realme

of England voluntarily, serving of their owne charges, and besieged Berwike.

The King of England gathered a great power, and besieged Berwike, which at length was yielded for want of victualles. During this siege, the Scots fought many wayes to remove the same, leaviing a great armie ouer al Scotland: but coming to the siege, they could not bring their purpose to effect, yet still prouoking the Kings armie to battell: whereupon at length the two armies appoynted to fight, and setting out vpon Halidowne hill, there commeth forth of the Scots campe a certaine stoute Champion of great stature, who for a fact by him done, was called Turnebull: he standing in the midst betwixt the two armies challenged al the Englishmen, any one of them to fight with him a Combat: at length, one Robert Venale Knight, a Dorsetshire man, requesting licence of the King, being armed, with his sword drawne, marcheth toward the Champions, meeting by way a certaine blacke mastiffe Dogge, which waited on the Champion, whom with his sword he sodainly strake, and cut him off at his loynes, at the sight whereof the master of the Dogge flaine, was much abashed, and in his battell more warie and fearefull: whose left hand and head also after ward, this worthy Knight cut off. After this Combate both the armies met, but they fighting scarce half an houre, certaine of the Scots being flaine, they closed their armie (which was in three) all into one battell, but at length flying, the King followed them, taking and chasing them into lakes and pittes, for the space of five miles. There were flaine of them eight Earles, 1300. Horsemen, and of common souldiers 35000. at a place by Berwike, called Bothull, nere vnto Halidon.

In the meane season the Scots had besieged the castle of Bamburgh, in which at that time the Quene was: but when they heard of the victorie aforesaid, they left the siege and fled. The towncsmen of Berwike yielded to the King of England both the castle and the Towne, who placing garrisons there, he sent Edward Bailiol, and other Nobles to keepe the Realme of Scotland. Earle Patricius, in the next Parliament holden at Porke made fealtie, and did homage vnto the King by oath, who receiued of the King for yielding by of Berwike vnto him, many honours and preferments: not withstanding this Earle returned againe to rebellon, who holding Dunbar against the King, was besieged by William Mountacute Earle of Salisburie.

This yere, William Elsing Mercer of London (obtaineing the Kings licence) made a new Hospitall of an old house of Nunnes by Crælegate with in the wall of London, and placing Chanons Regular there, he became their first Prior, endowing the same with Lands for the reliefe of the poore and impotent.

Lewes de Beamount Bishop of Durham deceased on the 28. of September, and was buried at Durham, he builded a wall of stone about the citie of Durham, and a hall with a Chappel at Middleham, vnto him succeeded Richard de Bury by the Kings appointment.

Also Simon Mepham Archbishop of Canterbury deceased about the fourteenth of October, after he had late five yeres, foure months, & was buried at

Challenge of  
combate by  
Turnbull.

Turnbull a  
challenger  
uercome in  
combate.

Battell at  
Halidon hill.

R. Edward  
wan Berwike.

Elsing Spittle,  
John Leyland,  
Lib. Trin.

Canterburie. Into whome succeeded at the kings request Iohn Stratford Doctor of Lawe Ciuill, Bishop of Winchester. And on the first of December, Adam de Orleton, first Bishop of Hereford, then of Worcester, was translated to Winchester.

Edward Baylioll King of Scots, held a Parliament at Callowey, to the which came the noble men of England, and made claime for their lands and possessions which they had in Scotland, and so returned peaceably into their Countrey.

*Ann. reg. 7.*

1333.

Parliament at  
Poike.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Wallingford, and immediately after, the Quene was deliuered of a daughter named Isabel at Woodstocke.

The King summoned a Parliament to be holden at Poike, the same to begin on Monday the second weeke of Lent: to the which Parliament, the king of Scots (called Conquerour) although he were warned to be there, yet he came not, but sent messengers to excuse him, to wit, Henry de Bellemount and William Mountacute Charles, and certaine other Barons and Knights, who signified, that the King of Scots Conquerour could not be there without great danger, for that certaine Scottes lay in the Islands ready to do him damage.

King of Scots  
did homage.

At the feast of Saint Iohn Baptiste, the said king of Scots Conquerour did his homage to king Edward of England at Newcastle vpon Tyne, and not long after that king Edward took homage of the Duke of Brytaine, for the Carle dome of Richmont.

Parliament at  
London.

In a Parliament at London it was told the king, that the Scots had taken Richard Talbot, and six other knights, and had slaine many footmen: wherefore the king took a fiftenth of the Laitie, and a tenth of the Cleargie, to the intent the malice of the Scots might be brized.

Vniuersitie at  
Stamford for  
bidden.

This yere in the moneth of Nouember diuers masters and schollers of Oxford withdrew themselves to Stamford, minding there to haue begunne an Vniuersitie, without licence of the king obtained in that behalfe: whereat the king being offended, did by proclamation utterly forbid it, & suppressed it.

King Edward  
entred Scots  
land.

King Edward went toward the Marches of Scotland, and wintered in those coasts, but understanding that the Carle Daffels was traitterously turned to the Scots, and Henry Bellemount besieged by the Scottes, he entred Scotland, and raised the siege, and then kept his Christmas at Korbrow, to which castle he repaired. Presently after the feast of the Epiphanie, the French king sent messengers to K. Edward, to wit, the Bishop of Aurenges, and certaine Lords, to treat a peace for the Scots, who waited for an answer in England till mid-lent, and then at Nottingham a truce was graunted vnto them till the feast of S. Iohn next comming, that in the meane time a Parliament might be holden of matters concerning peace, and the state of both the kingdomes: in which Parliament holden at Poike, it was decreed that the king should passe with his armie through Scotland, beyond the Scottish seas, the which thing was quickly performed & done: but the Scots desirous to fight a field, they feigned that they would haue peace, to obtaine the which, many came about the feast of S. Michael, and chiefly the Carle of Daffels:

where:

*Ann. reg. 8.*

1334.

Parliament  
at Poike



whereupon it came to passe, that after ward the Earle of Hereford being taken prisoner at Enderburgh, was sent to be kept prisoner in England, and Richard Talbot was ransomed for two thousand five hundred markes, but the Earle of Walsell willing to shewe that he was truly revolted to the king of England, rode against the Scottes at a siege of a certaine castle, and falling into the hands of his enemies, because he would not yield, he was slaine with thirtene of his men.

After the feast of Saint Michael, the king continuing still in the marches of Scotland, was daily entreated by messengers from the French king, concerning some peace to be made.

About the feast of S. Martine, Edward Bohune a noble man, was drowned in the Marches of Scotland: for as he was dining a bottie of Cattell over a riuer, he felt himselfe in daunger, causing his guide to ride before him through the water, where through the smoothnesse of the stone whereon the water ran, his guide not being able to take sure footing fell downe, with his master being armed, and before any helpe could come, they were drowned in the bottome of the channell.

John Archbishop of Canterburie went over the Sea to Philip de Valois King in France, requesting of him the continuance of peace and amitie betwixt the two kingdomes to be maintained. Secondly, that all towncs and castles taken before time by his father, should be restored to the King of England. Thirdly, that the said French King should sweare, neuer to giue aid to the Scottes against the King of England: vnder which conditions, the two Kings of both Realmes should prepare to trauaile towards the Holy Land, and to fight against the enemies of Christ. But the French King accounted the King of England not worthy of his friendship, so long as he continued warres against the Scots his friends, whome he said were iust men. Vnto the second petition he would not other wise consent thereunto, than if all charges were repaid againe which his father Charles de Valois laid out in the warres of Gascoigne. Thirdly, he said, that he was a friend and louer of iustice and equitie, which he would neuer swarue from, neither for friendship, nor affinitie, but he would by all meanes he could, molest and bere all breakers of the peace of the kingdom of Scotland: for (saith he) there shall neuer be perfect peace and quietnesse among Christians, before the King of France sit in place of iudgement for the right of the Kingdomes of France, England, and Scotland.

Vpon Saint Clements night, through abundance of waters, but specially high waters: in the Thames, all the cattell and beasts nere thereunto were drowned, and the land made vnfruitfull by salt waters.

King Edward had a tenth of the Cleargie, and also of the Burgeses, and a fiftenth of the Commons.

About the feast of Pentecost, he held a Parliament at North-hampton, where leauing the Prelates, States, and commons debating about matters, himselfe secretly rode to Berwike, and there taking with him a few men of armes, he went to Saint Johns Towne, which he strengthened with trench and

Edw. Bohune  
drowned.

Ann. reg. 9.  
1335.

Parliament at  
North-hampton.  
Thode la More.

Ro. de Aushbury.

and rampire, and sent his Carles, with the king Conquerour, to make an incrode vpon the Countrey, and to see what Scots they could finde would resist them: but none durst abide their comming, but hid themselves in hills, Woods, and Marishes, and in the meane time many Carles and Barons came, and submitted themselves to King Edward vpon conditions as followeth.

These be the poynts agreed betwixt the Conncell of the Kings of England and Scotland on the one party, and Alexander Mowbrey, Geffrey Mowbrey, Gouffrey de Roos, William Bullocke, and Eustace de Loreyne, hauing full power from David Stravulgi, Earle of Daffels, and Robert Steward of Scotland, to treat, accord, and affirme all poynts enterparled and to be enterparled betwixt the said kings, and the Earle, and Steward, as appeareth by their letters patents of either partie.

First it is accorded that the said Earle Daffels, the great men, and all other of the communalitie of Scotland, which shall come in the same conditions, shall haue life and member, lands and tenements, fees and offices within Scotland, which they ought to haue by inheritance or right, those except, which shall be surprisid by common assent.

Item, that they shall be pardoned of imprisonment, and of all manner trespasses by them done in the Realing of England and Scotland from the beginning of the world, vnto the date of these presents.

Item, the Earle Daffels, and Alexander Mowbrey, shall haue lands, tenements, possessions, and fees in England, which they had at their departure, after the homage done at Newcastle vpon Tyne.

Item, that the franchises of the Church in Scotland shall be maintayned, after the auncient vlage of Scotland.

Item, that the lawes of Scotland in Borough Townes, & Shires, wikes, within the lands of the king of Scotland, be vled after the auncient vlagages and custome of Scotland, as they were vled in the dayes of king Alexander.

Item, that the offices of Scotland be ministred by people of the same Nation, yet notwithstanding, that alwaies the king of Scotland may put such officers in as shall please him, of what nation soeuer they be.

Item, that all those that within the conditions of the Earle Daffels haue lands within the lands of the king of England in Scotland, shall haue againe the same lands, tenements, possessions, offices and fees, as they had them at their departure, after their homage done at Newcastle vpon Tyne, except those that shall be surprisid by common assent.

Item, that if they be empled for their landes and tenements aforesaid, that they haue their defences and recoueries in Court where they ought to haue.

Item, as touching the demaund which the Earle Daffels claimeth, that the king of England ought to acquitte his lands in England which he hath in gage for eight hundred markes, the king neither ought, nor will do it, but as touching the Manor of Wyppingdone, which the said Earle laide to pledge for two hundred and fiftie pounds, it is accorded that if the said Earle do come within  
one

one yeare, after the date of these presents, and will acquite the Panoz, the king shall cause that he have the same Manour.

Item, as touching the Castle and Landes of Chilling, it is accorded that the said Earle be in the same poynt that he was befoze at his departure, and have his reconerte by lawe, and the king promisseth in good faith that he will cause that he may have the land, without delaying either partle. And touching the lands which the sayd Earle claymeth to have in Porsfolke, of the which he hath charters, it is accorded that his charters being seen of the kings Counsell, he will doe reason.

Item, that in case any man surmise treason vpon the saide Earle, he may defend himselfe by his bodie, according to the lawes and vsages of Scotland, and on the marches, and that all those that be within these conditions, have the like graunt.

Item, as to the pardon which William Ramsey knight demaundeth for the trespass by him done to William Lord Mountague, to wete, for beating down his castle of Haghford, the same William shall be ready to doe according to that that shall be aduised by the Kings of England and Scotland.

Item, that the said Stacie de Loraine haue his lands and tenements which he ought to haue within the Realme of Scotland, and if any man haue trespasssed towards him, he shall haue his recovery by law. Witten at Saint Johns Towne in Scotland the 18. of August, Anno 1335.

Philip Quene of England did beare her second sonne named William, at Hatfield, who shortly after died.

About the feast of the Epiphanye, the King and the Archbishop returned out of Scotland, to the burfall of Iohn of Eltham, Earle of Cornewall, brother vnto the King, who deceased at Berwike in the moneth of October, and was buried at Westminster. At which time, the King kept a Parliament at London, which began on the Munday after Saint Mathies day: and on the first Sunday in Lent, he made his eldest sonne Edward Earle of Chester, and Duke of Cornewall. He made also sixe other Earles, Henrie of Lancaster (sonne to Henrie Earle of Lancaster) Earle of Derby, Hugh Audley Earle of Gloucester, William Bohune Earle of North-hampton, William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, William Clinton Earle of Huntingdon, Robert Vfford Earle of Suffolke, to the which Robert he at that time gaue the Panoz of Base-court, in the Parish of Saint Giles without Cræplegate of London, commonly called to this day the Barbicane, because in olde time the same had been a Burgekening, or watch-tower for the citie.

The same day, the King made twentie Knights, to wit, Sir Edward Mountacute, Sir Thomas Somerton, Sir Isle, Sir Darcy Richard, Sir Damuory, Sir Iohn Poultney, Sir de Mere, Roger Banant, Roger Hilary, Sir Bolingbroke, Sir Butterel, Sir Simon Swanland, William Scot, William Bassett, Robert Sodingon, William Zouffes, Sir Cogshall, Roger Sangraule, Thomas de la More mine Authoz, and Iohn Strache.

In the same Parliament it was enacted, that no woll growing within the Realme of England, should be transpoed out of the same, but that it should

Parliament at  
London.  
Dukes and  
Earles created.  
W. Shepshed.  
Tho. de la More.

1336.  
Barbican at  
London.

Wil. Shepshed.  
R. Edward  
made knights.

Tho. de la More.

Woolle forbids  
Dri to bee con-  
uaped after the  
Scas.

Priviledges  
giuen to Cloth-  
workers.

be made into cloth in England, and that all Fullers, Weavers, and Cloth-  
workers of every degree, being sufficiently instructed, and cunning in their  
Art, from what countrey soeuer they came into England, should receiue and  
enjoy certaine priuiledges, yea and moreouer should liue at the Kings char-  
ges out of the Exchequer, vntill they had prouided commodiously to liue by  
their Art. Although this statute seemed at the beginning to be nothing profit-  
table, yet in short time the Art of cloathing encreased so much thereby, that  
it was twentie times more bled than before.

Also it was enacted, that no man should after that time buy any cloth that  
was made beyond the sea, and that none should weare any Furses, but such  
as might dispend one hundred pound by yere.

The 20. of March, the K. granted by his Letters patents power to the  
Chauuncelloz of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, to receiue in his name yereley  
the oathes of the Mayo, Bayliffes, Aldermen, and Burgeses of the towne:  
which euer since hath so continued.

Tho. de la Mare.

After the feast of Saint Michael, a Parliament was holden at London, and  
a Conuocation was assembled by the Archbishop, wherein the Clergie gran-  
ted a tenth for thre yeres, and the Commons a fiftenth, in consideration of  
the Kings warres which was hot in Scotland, and also to resist the French  
King, who made great braggies, and shewed great crueltie, for he outlawed,  
slew, and imprisoned all Englishmen, and confiscated the goods and cattels  
of all that were found in his kingdome of Fraunce, threatening that he would  
be reuenged for his friends the Scots.

Ann. reg. 11.

Moreouer, he let not so much as one towne or castle in the Countie of A-  
quitaine, or of Poytiers, that was not seized into his hands: whereupon King  
Edward sent into Babylon, to take vp all the wolles which Merchants had  
brought thither, and made sale thereof for ready mony. He also wrote letters  
to the French king, exhorting him, that he would continue his old amitie. Sir  
Walker Many being the Ambassadoz for the king of England, and desirous to  
revenge the blood of two Englishmen that were slaine comming a land for  
fresh water, in a certaine Island, called the Isle of Agnes, nigh vnto Flaun-  
ders, he caused all that he found in the said Island to be put to the sword, and  
toke prisoner the Earle of Flanders brother, who was captaine of the Isle.

1337.

Tho. Walling.  
Went to the  
number of  
3000. brient in  
a Church.

Certaine of the Island men being fled into a Church, were brient to the  
number of thre thousand, with the Church and all, by the Welshmen.

The warres being thus as aforesaid begun betwixt the two kingdomes,  
the rumour thereof came vnto the court of Rome, whereupon the Pope sent  
two Cardinals for the reformation and ordering of the peace betwixt the  
two kingdomes: who comming to Westminster, declared before the King  
the cause of their comming: whereunto the K. answered, that although with-  
out all reason they did seeme to restraine him of right and equitie, for that he  
ought to succeed into the kingdome of his forefathers, the which his aduer-  
sarie Philip de Valois did deny him, expelling, murdering, and imprisoning  
his people, and taking away the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and Earldome of  
Poytiers without cause, maintaining the Scots and other rebels against him,

yet



yet these iniuries not withstanding, he was contented if they could take order for the quiet enioying of Aquitaine, and other lres belonging vnto him, which his predeceffors did enioy.

Howeouer, for the dismissing of all aid that the French king should giue vnto the Scots at any time of rebellion, for the which he offered his money, and also the marriage of his eldest sonne, and also to resigne all such rites and interest that he had to the kingdome of Fraunce.

The Cardinals being greatly comforted with this answer, departed, hoping that all warres were now ended. They toke with them Iohn the Archbishop of Canterburie, Richard Bishop of Durham, & Geoffrey Lord Scrope, who all together went on message with the kings answer to the French King, hauing full authoritie to treat and conclude a peace.

These being so reasonable offers, could not pacifie the furious mind of the French King, who reposed great trust in the Scots, hoping by them, and through their meanes, quite to dispossesse, and to disinherite the king of England of all the title he had.

This yere on the 7. of October, King Edward began the foundation of his Colledge in Cambridge, that since was called the Kings hall, but now with Michael house, and Physicke hostell, all made into one by King Henry the 8. is called Trinitie Colledge.

Kings hall in Cambridge.

Also this yere because of the warres with Fraunce, king Edward caused to be confiscated all the goods of the Priories aliens in England, that is to say, such Priories as were selles to any monasteries in Fraunce. He let out the Priories to farme, with all their lands and tenements, and rented them at his pleasure for the space of thre and twentie yeres: in the which time diuers of those Priories were purchased of the king, made free, and againe (as it were) new founded by Englishmen, as Witburie in the Castle, and other: the residue not changed, were in the five and thirtieth yere of King Edwards raigne againe restored to their lands: as shall be shewed when I come to it.

Priories aliens in England their goods confiscated.

An. reg. 12.

The King toke Woll, to a certaine number of sackes, at a low price in euery countrey: the number that was set vpon Staffordshire was six hundred sackes, price nine markes the sacke of good woll: but nothing was paid. First, the Woll was vniuersally taken. Secondly, for the halfe, in whose hands soeuer it were found, as well Merchants as other. And the third time the King toke a fiftieth of the comminalltie, to be paid in woll, price of euery stone (containing fourtene pound) two shillings.

1338.

The King appointed also all the Cozne and glebe lands to serue for his warres.

About S. Margarets day, King Edward, with Quene Philip his wife, and a great armie passed the Seas with a Flaute of five hundred saile of shyps into Flaunders, and so to Cullen.

Rob. Auesbury.

The fourth of October, fiftie Gallies well manned and furnished, came to South-hampton about nine of the clocke, and sacked the towne, the towne men running away for feare: by the breake of the next day they which fled, by helpe of the countrey thereabout, came against the Pyrats, and fought with them:

South-hampton sacked and burnt by the French Pyrates.

them, in the which skirmish were slaine to the number of thre hundred Pyrates, together with their Captaine a young Souldiour the King of Sicils sonne. To this young man, the French king had giuen whatsoeuer he got in the kingdome of England: but he being beaten downe by a certaine man of the countrey, cryed Rancon, not withstanding the husband-man layd him on with his clubbe, till he had slaine him, speaking these wordes: yea (quoth he) I know well enough thou art a Francon, and therefore shalt thou dye, for he vnderstood not his speech, neither had he any skill to take Gentlemen prisoners, and to keepe them for their ranfome: wherefore the residue of those Scennowayes, after they had set the Towne a fire and burnt it by quite, fledde to their Galleyes, and in their flying, certaine of them were drowned. And after this, the inhabitants of the towne compassed it about with a strong and great wall.

The king still maintaining his warres in Fraunce, on the euen of the Annunciation of our Lady, eleuen gallies appoaching to the towne of Harwich, they cast fire therein: the force wherof, by a contrary wind was staled, so that no great harme was done thereby. Furthermoze, in the same yere about the feast of Pentecost, certaine Pyzats of Normandie and Genoa (shipped in Gallies and Pinnaces) made a shew on the Sea about South-hampton, as they would haue come aland, and threathned soze to spoile the towne againe, but perceiuing the townsmen ready to resist them, they returned to the Ile of Wight, but entred not, being put backe by the inhabitants: whereupon they sailed about the sea coasts, seeking to land in places lesse defended, and after came to Hastings, where they bent ffishers cottages, with their boats, and slew many men. Also they made great shewes many times against the Ile of Thanet, Douer, and Fulkestone, but in those places they did little harme, except to poze fishermen: thence they sailed about to the hauens of Cornwall and Deuonshire, doing in all places much harme to the fishermen, and such ships as they found vnmanned, they fiered. At length they entred Pismouth Haven, where they bent certaine great ships, and a great part of the Towne: these were met by Hugh Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, a knight of fourescore yeres old, being accompanied with many souldiours of his countrey, who hauing lost at the first front a fewe of his men which were slaine by the quarels of the French, toynd to fight with them hand to hand, and slaying many of the pyzates vpon drie land, chased the residue which fledde to take their gallies, and being not able to come nigh them by wading, they were drowned in the sea to the number of fise hundred. Fewes being brought to the King lying in Wabant, that diuers Portes of England were spoiled with the Pirates, he declared to his friendes, to wit, the Marques of Juliacense, and a certaine Cardinall, what great causes hee had to reuenge himselfe vpon them, and in the end, was answered by the Cardinall as followeth.

The kingdome of Fraunce (saide he) is compassed about with a threde of silke, which cannot bee broken, by all the strength of the kingdome of England, wherefore my Lord king, you must stay for the coming of the Dutchmen,

The Frenchmen spoyle the towne of Pismouth.

men, and other your friends and confederates, the greater part whereof you now lacke. The King taking great disdain herat, staying nothing at all, said, that he would ride into the land of Fraunce with banner displayed, and that there he would looke for that mightie power of the French men, and that he would either win the same against any man that should withstand him, or else honestly die in the field.

King Edward wintered at Antwerpe, where Quene Philip was deliuered of her third sonne Lionel after Carle of Ulster. The king took vpon him to be Lieutenant of the Empire from the Duke of Bauare, who helde himselfe as Emperour.

R. Edward made Vicegerent of the Empire.

The first day of the assumption of our Lady, a suddaine inundation of water at Newcastle vpon Tyne, surmounted the wall, and bare downe a peece of the Towne wall, a fire pearches in length nere to a place called Wallknew, where 160. men, and seuen Chapleins and women were drowned.

Li. f. Mari. ebo. Rich. South, Newcastle drowned.

In the Vigil of S. Matthy king Edward began to ride with banner displayed, and twelue thousand men of armes, against the French king, burning towns and castles wheresoeuer he came. In the first night being very darke, Geoffrey Lord Scrope one of the kings Iustices, led one of the Cardinals, to wit, Bertrand de Mount Fauentine, of the title of our Lady, vpon into an high Tower, shewing him the whole land about toward Fraunce, for the compasse of fiftene leagues, to be in euery place on fire, (saying these words,) Sir, doth not this silken thred wherewith Fraunce is compassed, seme to you to be broken: the Cardinal answering nothing, fell down as dead for sorow and feare.

An. reg. 13. King Edward invaded Fraunce.

1339.

In this sort King Edward made iourneyes into Fraunce daily, continuing the space of fise weekes, and caused his armie to trauell in such sort, that they destroyed the whole Countrey of Cambay, Tourney, Gernoden, and Landenew, excepting those Cities which were sworn to him, with Churches and Castles. The inhabitants of the Countrey fled, neither was there any man that durst resist his enterprises, although the French King had gathered great armies within the walled Cities, himselfe lying in the strong Towne of Saint Quintines, what time the Babanders had determined to returne home againe, and were entred into their iourney, being forced thereunto, partly by want of victuals, and partly by the coldenesse of Winter which grew on fast.

The French King vnderstanding thereof, began to moue himselfe with his army toward the campe of the King of England, who gladly looking for his coming, called backe againe the Babanders, and hauing receiued Letters from the French king, that he would soyne battell against him, he sent him word backe againe, that he would stay for him thre dayes, wherefore on the fourth day the king looking for the French kings coming, which would come no nerer then two miles off, breaking bridges, and felling of trees, that the King of England might not follow him, he fled to Paris, whereupon King Edward returned by Hononia into Babant, where he continued almost the whole winter.

This thirtieth yeere on the seuenth of September King Edward, at Paris

teime

William dela Poole made knight banneret for his good service to the king.

Record.  
This W. was father to Michael Lord Wingham earle of Suffolk and knight of the Garter, who had issue Michael Earle of Suffolk, who died at Warrewick 1415, left issue two sons, Michael earle of Suffolk that died at Agincourt the 3 of May, without issue, and Will. Lord Marques and afterward duke of Suff. beheaded the 26. of May the 6. Decree of the Flemings.

teine in Fraunce, gaue unto William dela Poole for the succour of money frankly by him lent, and freely brought unto him in the coasts of Brabant, so as thereby his honour was preserved, which otherwise was in daunger greatly to haue been embased, to be honoured with the Militarie girdle, appointing him to keepe, and continue the state and honour of a Banneret: and he gaue him the manors of Burfwike, and Skyp, with the appurtenances of two hundred and forty markes, in part of five hundred markes land yearly, more conueniently to maintaine the same state. And 260. markes yearly to be receiued of the customes in the port of the towne of Kingstone, untill he were provided off two hundred and threescore markes land of purely reuenue. Finally, because William had deliuered him, laying his owne goods and lands in gage, for recovering the kings right in Fraunce, the king graunted, that if he recovered the rights of inheritance in Fraunce, he would further within the realme of Fraunce (in some competent place) giue to him and to his heires, a thousand markes sterling by yeere.

In this winter time, King Edward grew into great friendship with the Flemings, who prepared at all times to shewe their selues as good subiects unto him, swearing to doe homage and fealtie, vpon condition that he would call himselfe king of Fraunce: and in token thereof, would from thenceforth giue armes with flourel-de-luces, for otherwise they durst not obey him, for feare of the Popes curse, which was to be laid vpon them, if at any time they rebelled against the king of Fraunce. Wherefore by the counsell of the Flemings, and consent of his noblemen, he agreed thereunto, and tooke vpon him both the name and armes of the king of Fraunce. He also tooke flaunders vnder his gouernment, the people whereof long after in all matters were to him obedient, as vnto the king of Fraunce Conquerour. Touching the title and armes aforesaid, the french king said to certaine Englishmen sent vnto him: Our cousin (quoth he) doth wrongfully beare quartered armes of England and Fraunce, which matter notwithstanding doth not much displease vs, for that he is descended from the weaker side of our kinne, and therefore as being a bachelor, we would be content to graunt him licence to beare part of our armes of Fraunce: but whereas in his seales and letters patents he nameth himselfe as well king of England as of Fraunce, and doth set the first quarter of his armes with leopards, before the quarter of Lilies, it doth grieue vs very much, making apparant to the beholders, that the little Island of England, is to be preferred before the great kingdom of Fraunce. To whom sir Iohn of Shobich knight, made answer, That it was the custome of men in those dayes, to set the title and armes of their progenitors, before the armes and title of the right descending of their mother: and thus of dutie and reason (said he) doth my Lord the king of England preferre his armes.

King Edward being thus busied, he kept his Christmasse at Gaunt: the Mariners of the Cinque Portes, embarked themselves in pinaces and small boats well appointed, who after the feast of S. Hillarie arrived at Bononie vpon the Sea coast, the weather being so cloudie and darke, that they could scarcely be perceiued to be in the hauen: they bent in the lower towne nine-  
tē

Sir Iohn of Shobich his answer to the French king.

An. reg. 14.



tene galleys and foure great shippes, and twentie small boates with all their tackling, and all such houses as were situate nigh to the sea coast, amongst which was one great house full of oares, sayles, weapons, and other necessaries, sufficient to furnish ninetene galleys, and men for them: at the length in a skirmish betwixt the townesmen and the Englishmen, many of the land men were slaine.

About the beginning of Februarie King Edward returned into England, came vnto Gaunt, where the Quene lay in childbed of her fourth sonne named Iohn, he held a Parliament at Westminster, wherein the Temposaltie graunted him euery ninth sheere of Woll, euery ninth Lambe, and euery ninth sheafe of all sortes of coyne, and the Cleargie gaue him a new tenth.

John of Gaunt  
Parliament at  
Westminster.

1340.

Immediately after Easter, the Carles of Salisburie and Suffolke, being accompanied but with a few men, gaue an assault vnto the Towne of Aile in Flaunders, which Towne was confederate with the French king, but they chasing the Frenchmen too farre within the gates, the Percolices being let fall, they were beset with a multitude of men of armes, and being taken, they were conueyed into France, fettered and shackleed with yron, although they had swoyne to be true prisoners: they were drawne in a cart through the middest of euery citie, towne, village and hamlet, with great shoutes and cries, rayling on them: and at length being brought to the presence of the French king, he would haue most shamefully laine them, had he not been otherwise perswaded by the counsell of the king of Boemia.

The seuenth day of May the king gaue to William Marquesse Juliers, and to the heires of his bodie, the Carledome of Cambridge, with the towne and castle, and twentie poundes by yeare in fee, and created him at Westminster by the girding of a sword, whereof he also made him his charter with the gift of one thousand poundes of yearely rent.

Record.

King Edward kept his Whitsonside at Ipswich, for that he intended from thence to take his passage into Flaunders, but being certified that the French king had sent a great nauie of Spanish shippes, and also the whole fleet of France, to stoppe his passage, he caused his shippes of the Cinque Ports and other to be assembled, so that he had in his fleet great and small two hundred and threescore shippes.

Wherefore on the Thursday before the nativitie of Saint Iohn Baptist, hauing a prosperous wind, he began to sayle, and the next day in the euen of the sayd feast, they escried the French fleet lying in Swine hauen. Wherefore the king caused all his fleet to come to anker.

The next day being the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, early in the morning, the french fleet diuided themselves into three parts, and remoued themselves as it were a mile, approaching towards the kings fleet.

Great fight on  
the sea, against  
the French.

Which when the king perceiued, about nine of the clocke, hauing the wind and sunne on his backe, set forward and met his enemies as he would haue wished, wherewithall the whole fleet gaue a terrible shout, and a shoure of arrowes out of long wooden bowes so powred downe on the French men,

that thousands were slaine in that meeting, at length they closed and came to hand blowes, with pikes, pole-axes, and swordes, and some threw stones from the toppes of shippes wherewith many were brained.

The greatnesse and height of the Spanish shippes caused many Englishmen to strike many a stroke in vaine. But to be shorte, the French shippes being overcome, and all the men spent of the first part, the Englishmen entred and tooke them.

The French shippes were chayned together in such sort, that they could not be separated one from another, so that a few Englishmen kept that part of the fleet: wherefore they set vpon the second warde, and with great difficulty gaue the charge, which being done, was soner overcome then the first, so that the Frenchmen leauing their shippes, many of them leapt ouer boorde.

The Englishmen hauing thus overcome the first and second part of the fleet, and now hauing night drawing on, partly for want of light, and partly so that they were wearie, they determined to take some rest till the next morning, wherefore that night thirtie shippes of the third crew fledde away, and a great shippe called the James of Diepe, thinking to haue carried away a certaine ship of Sandwich belonging to the Bishop of Canturbury was stayed: for the Gallies so slowly defended themselves by the helpe of the Earle of Huntingdon that they saued themselves, and their ship from the Frenchmen. The fight continued all the night, and in the morning the Poymans being overcome and taken, there were found in the ship aboue foure hundred men slaine. Moreover, the King vnderstanding that thirtie ships were fled, he sent fourtie ships well appointed to followe them, ouer the which he made Iohn Crabbe gouernor: but what god speede he had is not knowne.

In the first company of shippes that were taken they found these conquered shippes, the Denis, the George, the Christopher, and the blacke Corke, all which shippes were taken by Frenchmen at Sluce, and carried into Poymandie.

The number of ships of warre that were taken, was about two hundred and thirtie barges: the number of enemies that were slaine and drowned were aboue five and twentie thousand, and of Englishmen about foure thousand, among whom were foure knights, Sir Thomas Mortimer the Kings cousin, Sir Thomas Latimer his sonne, Sir William Butler of Devizes, and Sir Thomas Poynings.

About the same time the Scots came with a great power into England, burning and spoyling all the Marches by fire and sword, and when they were returning with a great bootie of cattell, the common people set vpon them, tooke their bootie, slew many of them, and tooke more then fourescore Scots of good reputation, whom they kept for ransom, for the which fact the people men of the Marches were highly displeased.

About Lammas certaine French pirates gaue an assault to the Ile of Wight and sodainly entred it, but Sir Peter Russell knight, meeting them with the people of that Ile, put them backe againe, and made them to flee,

laying

The French  
assault the Ile  
of Wight.

slaying many of them, in the which skirmish the said knight was wounded whereof he died. These pirats sayled thence toward the coast of Devonshire, and coming to Teignmouth, they set fire on the towne and bent it: from thence they failed toward Plymouth, which towne was so defended, that they could not hurt it, but bent the farmes and faire places high adloping, and toke a knight prisoner, whom they carried with them.

The same yere king Edward besieged Tourney, but upon intreatie made by the French, a truce was taken from Michaelmas till Midsummer, wherefore the king comming to Gaunt in Flaunders, stayed there, looking for money out of England, which came not.

King Edward  
besieged Tour-  
ney.

King Edward with eight of his men, saying that he would ride abroade for his pleasure, secretly came into Zeland, where taking shippe, after he had sayled thre dayes and thre nights, on S. Andrewes day at night about the Cocke crowing, he entered the Tower of London by water, being waited on by the Earle of Northampton, Nicholas Cantilupo, Reignalde Cobham, Giles de Bello Campo, Iohn de Bello Campo knights, and William Killesby, and Phillip Weston priests: early in the morning he sent for his Chancellour, Treasurour, and Iustices then being at London, and the Bishop of Chichester being his Chancellour, and the Bishop of Conentry his treasurour, he put out of office, minding also to have sent them into Flaunders, to have ben pledges for money he owed there: but the Bishop of Chichester declared unto him what danger might insue to him, by the Canons of the Church: whereupon the king dismissed them out of the Tower: but as concerning the high Iustices, to wit, Iohn Lord Stoner, Robert Lord Willowby, William Lord Scharshell, and especially Nicholas de la Bech, who before that time was Lieutenant of the Tower of London, and Sir Iohn Molens knight, with certaine marchant men, as Iohn Poulney, William Poole, and Richard his brother, and the Chancellours chiefe Clarke, to wit, Maister Iohn de Saint Paul, Michell Wache, Henry Stafford, and certaine of the Archequer, as Maister Iohn Thorpe, with many other moe, the king commaunded to be imprisoned, some in one place, some in an other, neither would he suffer them to be discharged thence, till he were thoroughly pacified of his anger conceived for not sending the money which should have served at the siege of Tourney.

King Edward  
returned secret-  
ly into Eng-  
land, and en-  
tered the Tow-  
er by night.

Will. Poole  
and Richard  
his brother.

This yere about Christmas, Henry Bishop of Lincolne, and Geoffrey Lord Scrope, chiefe Iusticiar to the king and his chiefe Counseller died at Gaunt.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Gildford, and after that a great Iusting at Reding. *An. reg. 15.*

Also at Candlemas he kept a great iusting at Langley, for the honour of the noble men of Gasconia, which he trained by there in seates of warre. He made Robert de Bourcier knight Lord Chancellour of England, and Robert Parnike knight treasurer, the one to succede the other. Also he sent out Iusticiars that should sit in every shire, to enquire concerning the collectours of the tenths and fiftenth, and of wolles, and to oversee all officers. And because the Citie of London would not suffer that any such officers should sit as Iustices within their Citie as inquisitors of such matters contrary to their liberties,

Iusting at Red-  
ding and at  
Langley.

Iustice of  
Custialloun,  
forbiden to sit  
in London.

1341.

Parliament  
at London.

liberties, the King provided that those Justices should hold their Sessions in the Tower of London, to make inquisition of the damages of the Londoners: but because the Londoners would not answer there, untill their liberties were fully confirmed, neither any such confirmation could be had either of the King, or his Chaucellour touching Writtes and Charters in the Tower, there rose thereof such a great tumult, that the Justices appointed there to sit, fained that they would holde no Session, till after Easter. Whereupon the King being highly offended for the said tumult, and desirous to knowe the names of them that had rased it, could not understand but that they were certaine meane persons, who claimed their liberties: whereupon the King being pacified of his troubled minde, forgaue all the offences committed by the Londoners, the Justices breaking vp all their sitting touching the said place.

This yere within the quindene of Easter a parliament was holden at London, wherein the Barres and Nobles of the realme, with the commons requested, that the Charter called *Magna Carta*, and *Carta Foresta*, with all other liberties belonging to the Church and kingdome should be obserued, and that the officers and chiefe rulers of the Kings house should be chosen by the pères of the realme, in the parliament: but these petitions the King would not confirme, nor could abide to heare talked of.

About the beginning of the moneth of July, King Edward receiued letters from Lodowike Duke of Banary, vsurper of the Romane Empire, in the which pretending friendship betwixt him and Philip the French King, he signified that those warres which the King of Englande had begun in France, did greatly mislike him, and therefore desired that there should be concord and amitie betwixt the Kings of both realmes, the which to be perfozmed, he offered to bestow some labour, requesting King Edwards letters of authozity thereof to treate and to conclude a truce for one yere or twaine, toward the end of which letter he addeth these wordes: The deputation and lieutenantship which we gaue vnto you, we doe for diuerse and sundry causes reuoke againe. Dated at Frankesford the fourteenth of June in the seuen and twentieth of our raigne, and of our Empire the fourteenth. To the which letters, King Edward wrote an inscription, in sozte as followeth.

To the renowned Prince Lodowike, by the grace of God Romane Emperour, alwayes Augustus, Edward by the same grace King of France and England, Lord of Ireland &c.

An. reg. 16.

1342.

Tho. de la More.

In Edward  
sued Scots  
land.

King Edward kept his Chyristmasse at Kenington besides Lambeth.

This yere Iohn Maluerne, Fellow of Oxial Colledge in Oxfozd, made and finished his booke entituled, *The Missons of Pierce Plowman*.

King Edward gaue the Earledom of Cambridge to Iohn Lord Benault, uncle to Quene Phillip, and after kept his feast of S. Katherine at Newcastell, and his Chyristmasse also. Untill this time David King of Scots threatned to leuse an armie, and to enter the land, whereupon King Edward entred Scotland, and followed after David, who fled before him beyond the Scottis sea, working and spoling all as he went, except Castles and Barishes, in the which the Scottes together with David their King hidde themselves. And

William



William Mountacute Earle of Salisburie, hauing gotten a great flæte, entred an Iland belonging to Scotland, where most victoriously he conquered it, and the same Ile being called the Ile of Man, the King gaue it to the conquerour frankly and freely to be possessed, and caused him to be called and crowned king of that Ile. Then king Edward returning towards the south parts, kept solemne turneaments at Dunstable, being accompanied with two hundred and thirtie knights.

Will. Mountacute Earle of Salisburie, conquered, and was crowned King of Man.

The same yeare was a Parliament at Westmynster, wherein the Archbishop of Canterbury, was reconciled to the king, before whom the Archbishop swore that although the king by his counsell and consent had done homage to the French king for the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and the Carledome of Foy, to w<sup>ch</sup>, yet he neuer consented thereto as to be any hurt or prejudice to the king, or that by his counsell he might incurre sauour, or seeke to please the French King, but for that present time he thought it best to be done, both for the obtaining of peace, and also for the profite of the king and realme.

Parliament at Westmynster.

After this Parliament the king commanded flozences of golde to be made at the Tower of London, that is to say, the penny of the value of five shillings eight pence, the halfe penny of the value of thre shillings foure pence, a farthing worth twenty pence.

Flozences of golde.

In a Parliament at Westmynster, in the moneth of May, the religious men that were possessours of lands, granted to the king, towards the maintenance of his warre, all their iewels and plate, as well siluer as golde, hoxles, carts and wagons, whereupon the kings treasure was notably enriched.

Ann. reg. 17.  
1343.

The same yeare authoritie was giuen to the kings escheaters, to enquire and certifie the Counsell of all such persons, which helde of the king any lands *in capite*, or by any other fee, to the value of one hundred shillings, and that the names of all such should be enrolled and giuen by for record. Also certaine o<sup>th</sup>er were put in authoritie to signifie how many sufficient and able bowmen were in euery shire: also what other sufficient men were able to beare armour for the defence of their Countrey, and to see them practised with such kind of weapon wher in they had best skill: and being thus assembled in all parts of the realme, specially such as were of lawfull age, commaundement was giuen out, that they should be ready at the kings commaundement to fight against their enemies.

A generall summen of the whole realme of England.

King Edward and his nobles perceiving the derogation that was done to the Realme by such reservations, prouisions and collations of benefices, as the Pope practised here in England, wrote to him, requirring, that sith the Churches of England had been founded and endowed by noble and worthy men, to the ende the people might be instructed by men of their owne language, and that hee being so farre off, could not vnderstand the defaultes, yet his predecessours, and he more then had been bled, by diuers reservations, prouisions, and collations made to diuers persons, some strangers, pe<sup>o</sup>ple, and some enemies to the Realme, whereby the money and profits were carried soth, their cures not prouided for, according to the founders minds, they therefore vpon due considerations signified to him, that they

Ro. de Auesbury  
Qual. Heming-  
foord.

could not suffer such enormities any longer, and besought him to reuoke such reseruatiōs, pꝛouisiōs and collatiōs wholy, to auoyde such standers, mischiefes and harmes as might ensue, and that the cures might be committed to persons mēte for the exercises of the same, besēching him further without delay to signifie his intention, sith they meant to bestowe their diligence to remedie the matter, and see that redress might bee had. Given in full Parliament at Westmīnster, the eightēnth of May, in the yeare of our Lord 1343.

Many being called to ayde the King against the Scottes, but not being ready, they contributed their money, where with the King might hire souldiours in place of them that remayned at home. This yeare saith one written booke in French, K. Edward held a great feast at Windsor of 300. knights, and as many Ladies, with great outrage of expences and costs.

*Ann. reg. 18.*

1344.

*The Walling.  
Round table at  
Windsor.*

King Edward caused to be called together a great many of Artificers, to the Castell of Windsor, and began to build an house which was called the round Table, the floore whereof, from the Center or midde poynt into the compass, was an hundred fote, and the whole Diameter two hundred fote, and the circumference thereof is six hundred fote and three quarters.

*Round table in  
France.  
See. cro.*

The same time Philip de Valois King of France, builded a round Table in his Countrey, to the end that he might allure the men of Warre of Germanie and Italie, and so to keepe them from the King of Englands round Table.

*Tho. de la More.*

King Edward in succour of John Mountfort Duke of Brytaine, and of his wife and childzen, who then remained in the kings custody, sent the Carles of Northampton, and of Orford, Hugh Spencer, and Richard Talbot knights, and Master William Killesby Clarke, euery one of them hauing vnder them many men of armes and archers, into Brytaine, who entred thereinto, in despite of all their enemies which resisted them, making many conflicts. They tooke as well walled townes as other, with diuers fortresses and castles, both by assault and surrender, by which meanes they had the whole countrey vnder their subiection, conquering till they came to the towne of Mowles, where Charles de Bloys met them with a great army. Therefore in the champaine ground nigh vnto Mowles, the two armies made great and most stout battell, wherein the worthinesse of both sortes did full well appeare: for they fought so stoutly, that in the first conflict it chanced as the like had not beene seene: for the chiefe Captaines, Charles de Bloys, to whome the French King had giuen the Dukedome of that countrey, and William de Bohune Earle of Northampton, who for the defence of the right of John de Mountfort, naturall heire and Duke of that land, the King of England had made a Generall ouer the armie of the Englishmen, fought so long with hand strokes in the fiede that day, that no man but a liar could giue more praise to the one then to the other. Thre times that day they being wearied on both sides, withdrew themselves to take breath, and then fell to it againe with speare and shield, and sword and target: but in the end the right worthy and stout Charles de Bloys, his men fleeing away, was also forced to flee himselfe,

*Battle at  
Mowles.*

whereupon

whereupon after many slaine on both sides, the victorie sel to the Englishmen.

King Edward sent ouer Henry Earle of Derby, sonne to the Earle of Lancaster his cousin, with more then fise hundred men of armes, amongst whom was the Earle of Penbroke, and Walter de Many, with many Archers into Gascoigne, with Ralph Baron of Stafford Seneschall of Gascoigne, who being come thither, the said Earle made fifty knights of his army, and after many walled towne and castles, making many worthy skirmishes, and at length wonne the Towne of Dagullstone by assault, to the keeping whereof they appoynted Ralph Stafford, after ward they appoynted thre iournepes toward other Townes, as especially to Bigerecke (so called for the strength thereof, and also called the chamber of France) and also to the towne of Saint Iohn de Laruell, and to many other great and strong Townes well fortified, which with great toiles and diuers dangerous assaults they won: where the Earle of Derby and his souldiours vndermining the towers and walles of the said towne, were very soze assaulted by them which defended it.

An. reg. 19.

Ro. Auesbury.  
1345.

Thus he conquered cities, to wnes, castles and fortresses, to the number of one hundred and fiftie, bringing a great part of Gascoigne vnder subiection, euen to Tolouse, vnto the which citie he did no damage, neither to the inhabitants thereof, but that he made them wonderfully afraide: as certaine of them tolde me (saith my author) their feare was such, that the religious people were constrained to beare armour, and the Prior of the Carmelite friers of our Lady of Tolouse, hauing a banner of our Lady in golde set in a fiesle of siluer, displayed the same, prouoking thereby many to take armour.

Tho. de la More.

About the second Sunday in Lent, the earles being fully fraught with booty, prisoners, gold and siluer, they returned towards Burdeaur, where Iohn de Valois, eldest sonne to the French king, being accompanied with a great number of hyed Dutch souldiours, besieged the towne of Agnolwne, and the capitaines thereof the Earle of Stafford and other, so entrenched the same towne, that without great daunger the Englishmen could haue no acesse vnto them, but the Earle of Derby beate away them that besieged the citie, and elsowes new victualled the same, notwithstanding they were not able to raise the siege, because they had so entrenched themselues without the towne, who refusing to fight in the field, would answere, that they came not to pitch a fiesle, but to besiege a towne, wherefoze they continued the same siege vntill the decollation of Saint Iohn, but vnderstanding then that the King of England chased his father Philip very soze to Cressie, and fearing that he should come very late to the ayde of his father, he gaue vp the siege, setting all his tents on fire, and fled in the darke, but the Earle of Stafford with his powre pursued them, cut off their taile, toke a great many of their hozses, and returned.

After this certaine bow-men are mustered in England, appoynted to be sent ouer sea, who conuning ouer, are layde in garrison for defence of the country. Also twentie thousand sackes of wooll are graunted to the King.

20000. Sackes  
of wooll graun-  
ted to the king.

Moreouer, Geoffrey de Harecourt a poorman, came to the King requiring ayde against the French King, who wrongfullie with helde his landes from

him: at his first comming he did fealtie, and sware homage to King Edward, but after ward he revolted.

Richard de  
Burie, Bishop  
of Durham  
deceased. Tho-  
mas of Hat-  
field succeeded.

Richard de Bury deceased at Auckland, when hee had sate Bishoppe of Durham eleuen yeeres, two moneths, and odde dayes, and was buried at Durham, unto whome succeeded Thomas of Hatfield the Kings secre- tary, by meanes of the Kings letters to the Pope: And when certaine of the Cardinales saide, that the saide Thomas was a light person, and a lay man: the Pope answered, truly, if the King of England at this time had made his request for an asse, hee should haue obtained it. But Richard Bury is somewhat to bee remembred for example to other, hee was borne nere Saint Edmundsbury, by his father Sir Richard Angar- uill Knight, and his uncle Sir Iohn Willowby his gouernour he was first set to Grammar schole, and after sent to Oxford, from whence hee was called to teach Edward of Mundlefoze then Prince: after ward this Richard was made principall receiuer to Edward the second in Gascoigne, at such time as yong Edward with his mother fledde to Paris, whose expences beginning to faile, the said Richard came to them priuily with a great summe of money, for y<sup>e</sup> which cause he was pursued to Paris where he lay hid in a steple by the space of seuen dayes. After this he was made Cofferer to Edward the third, then treasurer of the Wardrobe, then clearke of the priuie scale by the space of five yeeres, in the which time, twice he went to Pope Iohn. In the sixe and fortyeth yeere of his age he was consecrated Bishop of Durham, then was he made Treasurer of England, and after Chancellour, since the which time he was sent thise to the French King to claime the kingdome of France, and af- ter that, to Antwerpe and other places in Brabant in embassage by the space of nine yeeres, he was greatly delighted in the company of Clearkes, and had alwayes many of them in his family, among whom were Thomas Bradwar- dine, after ward Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard fitz Ralph Archbishop of Armacham, Walter Burley, Iohn Mandir, Robert Holcot, Richard Kilwington, all of them doctozs of diuinitie, Richard Wentworth or Benworth Bishop of London, and Walter Segraue Bishop of Chichester euery day at his table, he was accustomed to haue some reading: and after dinner daily he would haue disputation with his priuate clearkes, and other of his house, except some by- gent cause had let him. At other times he was occupied, either in seruice of God, or at his booke, weekly he bestowed for the reliefe of the poore eight quarters of wheate made into bread, besides the ordinary fragments of his house. Moreover, in comming or going from Newcastle to Durham, he be- stowed sometimes twelue markes in almes, from Durham to Stockton eight markes, from Durham to Auckland five markes, from Durham to Mid- dleham an hundred shillings, &c. He was so delighted in booke, that he had more (as was thought) then all the Bishops of England besides, he bestowed many rich ornaments on the Church of Durham, he builded an hall or house in Oxford, induing it with reuenues needefull for his schollers. And also pro- uided in a library great store of booke, for the vse of the whole Uniuer- sitye, as the said Bishop writeth himselfe, in his booke entituled, Philobiblos,

Charleins to  
the Bishop of  
Durham, and  
their exercise.

Charitie of  
Richard de  
Bury.



and appoynted the maisters of the Hall to assigne five scholers for keeping of the common library, &c.

Common li-  
brary in Dr.  
soib.

The same yere died Adam Tarleton Bishop of Winchester that had been long time blinde, after whom succeeded William Edendon treasurer of England.

This Edendon founded the monestery of Edendon, the religious byethzen whereof were called Bonhomies.

Lib. Edendon.

The same yere died Henry Carle of Lancaster, father to Henry Carle of Darby, and was buried at Leicester, in the monastery of canons, the King and both the olde and yong Quenes being present, with Archbishops, Bishops, Carles and Barons, in manner of all the land, whose sonne was then in Galcoine doing chivalrous acts.

Henry Carle  
of Lancaster  
deceased.

This yere the Scots, to the number of thirtie thousand, William Douglas being their leader, entred into Westmerland, and byent Carleile, Penrith, with many other towines, wherefore the Bishop of Carleile, with Thomas Lucy, Robert Ogle, and a great number, compassed them in the night season, and with lights and noise so disquieted them, that they neuer durst goe out for victualles, nor giue their bodies to sleepe, but at the last Alexander Stragan stoutely prepared to goe out for victualles, whom the Bishop and Robert Ogle mette, and with a speare thrust him through the body, so that the Scots were sone after overcome and slaine.

Scots entred  
England.

Scots ouers  
come.

The Carle of Portsmouth, and the other Lords in Bytaine committed certaine castels wonne by them in Bytaine, to the safekeeping of the faithfull captaines and souldiours, and then returned into England.

An. reg. 20.

King Edward prepared to make a voyage into Normandy, his navy being ready to transport him from Portsmouth and Worcester, with the Carles of Portsmouth, Arundell, Warwike, Harecourt, Huntingdon, Orenford, and Suffolke, the Bishop of Durham, and Master William Killesby cleerke, euery one of these leading a great army of souldiours well appointed, were imbarqued, and waited for the winde, from the first of June, to the fift of July, and then hauing a god winde, they beganne to make saie with the number of one thousand shippes of burthen and pinaces, and on the thirteenth day of July, they landed at Hogges in Normandy, where on the shoare of the Sea, King Edward made his eldest sonne Knight, and also Prince of Wales, and immediately the Prince made knights, Mortimere, Montacute, Rose, and other.

1346.  
King Edward  
sailed into  
Normandy.

Tho de la More.  
Tho. Walling.  
Ro. de Aue. bery.

The Kings  
sonne made  
Prince of  
Wales.

That night the King lodged in the towne of Hogges, and the next day the towne was byent by the army.

Hogges in  
Normandy

The night following King Edward lodged in Percels. where he stayed five dayes, during which time, all the Countrey, with the Towne of Barbelete, was by his men consumed with fire. From thence they departed to Teloigus, which they set on fire: then they went to Saint combe Mount, which is nigh the sea, and to Sarantam, thence to Serius, and to Saint Lewes, passing along vnto the towne of Tournay, wasting all with fire, and that night the King lodged at Carmalin, then to Gryn, being a religious house belonging

Cane in Aoy  
mande bestes  
ged by Ed-  
ward the third.

belonging vnto Cane, leauing nothing behind them vnspoyled.

After ward they made an assault, and entred the City of Cane, making their entrance by a bridge which was strongly defended.

There was slaine an hundred and thre and fourtie knights, among the which was taken the Carles of Clewe, and Camberlinde Tankerull, with diuers other captaines, and of them of the Citie, were slaine aboue one thousand thre hundred.

At this Citie the armie remained fure dayes, and the spoile thereof they sold to those mariners which followed the coast as the King went. Then they went to the monasterie in the Towne of Toward, a verie strong thing, and well defended. After ward, they came vnto Argons by night, burning still as they went, till they came to the Citie of Licens, where they found the Cardinalles of Clarimount, and of Paples, and one archbishop, who offered the King a treatie of peace, and there the King continued thre dayes, refusing to treate of peace. Then they went to Lascetnoland, and to the Towne of Bzine, and lodged at Pelw Burge, and after at Selesse vpon Segane, and there the Welchmen swamme thzough the water of Segan, and being resisted by the inhabitants, they slewe many of them. Then they passed nigh to the towne and Castell of Pount Darch, being strong places, and not assaultable. This night he lodged at Lury vpon Segan, nigh vnto the good Towne of Louars, which they did burne. After, they passed by the towne and castell of Gallon, which they toke, and bzent, and lodged at Lingeue, which is nigh the good towne and Castle of Vernon, which they touched not, and there they first entred into Fraunce, and the same night they bzent the Castell of Roche Blanch, which standeth on the other side of Segan, and lodged at Fremble vpon Segan. After that they passed by the Towne of Maunt, lodging that night at Dpozne. On the next day they passed to Frigmas, and the next day to the good towne of Dacie, where being a bridge to passe ouer the riuer of Segan, the French had spoyled it, but the King caused it to be redified: and the nexte day they came to Annas, where were thre Armies appointed to keepe the King from passing that way: but he slew thre hundred of them at the first charge, put the residue to flight, and spoyled their tentes, burning thre hundred and two cartes and wagons laden with crossebowes, quarrels, armour and victualles: the King staying there two dayes, they went to Grefle nigh vnto Pountops, then to Antell: the next day they passed by the Citie of Wenneps, which they touched not, and so by Trosolours at the water of Some, where they lodged.

The next day they wanne the towne of Pops, and bzent the castell. From thence they went to Aregnus, then to Achen, where they lodged. The nexte day they came to Poell vpon the sea side, the French men of Dabaille and the countrey came to the swordes side to hinder their passage, with whom the King had a soze conflict, but the enemies were put to the worse, and moze then two thousand slaine, and the Towne of Croptoy taken and bzent, and aboue thre hundred Germaines slaine.

The nexte day they followed the King on the riuer of Some, and on the banks

banks side (where the King with his hoste were lodged) came traueling Philip de Valoys the French King, with the Kings of Boheme and Malegre, leading an armie of men innumerable, diuided into eight great battelles. King Edward sent to the French King, offering him free passage ouer the forde, if he would come and chouse a place apt to fight a field in, but this Phillip went to another place of passage.

Th. dela More.

On the morrow King Edward remoued to Cressfield, where the armie of the French King met him. The King therefore set his sonne the Prince of Wales to gouerne the barward. The middle warde the earle of Porthampton. The thirde he tooke to guide himselfe.

Battell of Cressy.

The armie of the Frenchmen were deuided into nine troupes. The barward was committed to the King of Boheme. The French King commaunded his banner called Milisaine to be set vp, after which time it was not lawful vnder paine of death to take any man to saue his life.

The french banner of milisaine signified no mercie more the fire in oile.

This banner, that it might differ from his standert, had in it lillies of gold very broad.

On the other side, King Edward cammanded his banner to be erected of the dragon, which signified fiercenesse and cruelty to be turned against the lillies.

These armies being thus appointed, stode in the fiede from one of the clocke vntill the euening. About the Sunne setting, after the armies had iusted, they beganne by the sound of Trumpets to giue signe of battaile, but they themselves felt the force of the English Archers, and as for their quarrels, they fell short a great way. Moreouer, their footemen being placed among their owne horsemen, were by them (when they were gauled with the English shotte of arrowes) ouerrunne and troden vpon, that a great outcry was made as it were to the starres, and the whole forme of the array was broken, and they fighting with the English armed men, are beaten downe with polares.

In this so terrible bickering, the Prince of Wales being then but fiftenth yeeres old, shewed his wonderfull towardnesse, laying on very hotely with speare and shelde. This battell dured thre partes of the night, in the which time the Frenchmen gaue fve great assaults against our men, but at the length they being conquered, ran away.

On the morrow, there came foure armies of fresh souldiours to the French side, and making semblance as though their part had suffered no harme, they came against the Englishmen, and gaue them a fresh battell. On the other side, the Englishmen withstood them very stoutely, and after a sharpe conflict they forced their foes to flie, and in chasing of them together with them that were slaine in the conflict, they slewe thre thousand men in the said two dayes. There were slaine in the battaile of Cressie, the Kings of Boheme and of Malozica, the Archbishop of Zantinus, the Bishop of Poypone, the Dukes of Lozaine & Bourbon, the Carles of Alanfon, Harcourt, Aymarle, Sauoy, Poiss, Mountbilliard, Piuars, and of Flanders, with the grand Prior of the hospitall of Fraunce, and 4000. men of armes, beside common souldiours without number.

The

King Edward  
besieged Cal-  
ceis.

The third day after, king Edward passed by the Abbey of Mountney, and the next day they came to the town of Mountney, & from thence to the Punn-  
rie of Saint Joice, and after they passed over a fowde, and came to Newcastie,  
where they stayed two dayes, and from thence they came to Calceis, which  
presently they entrenched to besiege, being the fourth day of September.

Sir Walter  
Wake and his  
sonnes cruellie  
slaine by the  
Scottes.

The french king in this meane time sent a number of Genowayes, and o-  
ther hired foaldicours, vnto David king of Scots, earnestly requesting him  
that he would inuade England with all his foze: wherefore about the 7. of  
October, he with a mighty power entred England, passing along by Ber-  
wikke, which was strongly defended by the Englishmen, and so ranging over  
the forest of Ainelwikke, they wonne a certaine mannour place called Luben,  
belonging to the Lord Walter Wake, who yelded himselfe on condition to be  
ransomed, where (Selby a knight being desirous by law of armes to saue his  
life) he was taken, which when it was known to David, he commanded him  
to be slaine: but Selby intreated for him, that he might be brought alieue to the  
presence of David, who hauing obtained his request, he falleth downe before  
David, requesting his life for ransome, but he was againe adiudged to die. The  
malice of the tyrant was such, that he commanded two of the children of the  
poore knight to be strangled in sight of their father, and afterwards himselfe  
being almost madde for sorrow, was beheaded.

Battell of  
Durham.

From thence the Scots passed forward, waiking along the Countrey,  
wherein were many farmes belonging to the monasterie of Durham, & com-  
ming within two miles of Durham, they tooke certaine of the Monks, which  
they kept prisoners, for their ransome, making covenant with the residue for a  
certaine summe of money and cozne to redeme their mannours from spoy-  
ling. The Englishmen of the marches standing before the face of the enemye,  
William de la Zouch, Archbishop of Yorke, vicegerent to the king in the mar-  
ches, calling together the bishop of Carleile, the Earle of Anguise, the Lord  
Mowbray, the Lord Henry Percy, the Lord Ralph Neuell, Ralph Hastings, with  
all their ayde, together with the archers of Lancashire, went towards the  
armie of the Scots, and on the euen of Saint Luke, met them at a place called  
Bewze Parke, nere Newils Crosse. The Scottissh nation not accustomed to  
flee, withstood them stoutely, and hauing head-pieces on their heads, and tar-  
gets on their armes, preasing sore vpon the Englishmen, they abode the brunt  
of the archers: but the men of armes which were in the forefronts, gaue their  
enemies many deadly wounds. The Marshall of the Scottes, Earle Parike,  
who had the charge of the rereward, when he perceiued his men to be beaten  
downe, he fled away with other that were priuie to his cowardlines: he be-  
ing fled, the residue of the Scottes continuing faithfully with their king,  
stood about him like a round Tower, keeping him in the middle, who so con-  
tinued till there was scarce fortie of them left alieue, of the which not one of  
them could escape a way.

At length David their king valiantly fighting and sore hurt, an Esquire  
of Northumberland, named Iohn Copland toke him, who with eight of his  
seruants rode strait out of the field with the king, and so rode fiftene leagues  
from



from that place, to a castle called Dyalus, the residue about him being taken  
or slaine, the Englishmen pursued the chase after them which were fled, slay-  
ing and taking them as farre as Bndihow and Corbridge. In this great  
battell were taken David de Bruse king of Scottes, the Earle of Mentife, the  
Earle of Fife, the Lord Paleolin Flemming, the Earle Warton, William  
Dowglas, William de Lemington, Walter de Halliburton, John Dowglas, Da-  
uid de Anade, John de Saint Clere, William Mowbray, David firz Robert, William  
de Ramsey, Adam Moygne, John Steward, Roger de Kirkpatrick, John Hume,  
and William Morrey Knights, James Sudelshoure, James Loren, Henry Delker  
Baronets. There were slaine in this battell the Earle of Morise, the  
Earle of Straterne, also Alexander Stragy, John de Halliburton, Henry de  
Ramly, Naso de Ramly, Adam Nilkenfon, Thomas Boid, John Stiward, Allan  
Stiward, David de la Hay, Edward Keth, John Crawford, John de Kinfefey,  
Philip de Maldren, Henry Ramsey, Alexander Morey, Humfrey de Bois, Gilbert  
Inchmarton, Robert Maltallent, and his brother Humfrey Kirkepatrick, John  
Strange, and Patrike Hearing Knights. There were many slaine in the chase,  
but there were no more coate armours found in the maine battell then we  
haue reckened.

King of Scots  
taken by John  
Copland Es-  
quire.

This battell was fought on the seuenteenth of October. The prisoners  
were conueyed to London about Christmasse, David le Bruse except, which  
might not tranell by reason of two deadly wounds in his head with arrowes,  
but the second of Januarie he was brought by, and conueyed from West-  
minster to the Tower of London, in sight of all the people, and there lodged  
in the blacke noke of the sayd Tower, nere to the Constables guard, there  
to be kept. About the feast of S. Mathie the Apostle, the Earle of Fife was at  
Londyalyn, headed and quartered, his head set on London Bridge, his quar-  
ters set by in foure parts of the Realme.

John Copland, that toke David de Bruse king of Scottes at the battell of  
Durham (so so is it called in the Record) for his seruice, king Edward made  
him a banneret, and gaue him for his maintenance in that state five hundred  
pounds by yeare, after this manner, to wit, foure hundred poundes out of the  
custome of the Citie of London, and one hundred pounds out of his custome  
of the Towne of Barwike vpon Twide, untill such time as five hundred  
pound lands by yeare were giuen to him and his heires for euer. And more for  
his good seruice with one hundred men of armes, one hundred pound the yere,  
out of the custome of the kings port of Newcastle vpon Tyne, till the said  
John had, provided for him and his heires one hundred pound land by yere.

John Copland  
rewarded.  
Record.

While these things were done in England, the King was buſied at the  
ſiege of Caleis, which Towne is ſituated in the marches of Artoys, being  
cloſed about with a double wall, and a double ditch. hard on the ſhoze of the  
English ſea, right oueragaſt the caſtle of Douer. And there is belonging to  
the ſame towne an haven, wherein ſhips may lie very ſafe without danger.  
This towne was ſometime with the caſtle thereof very ſtrongly built by the  
force and haliantnes of the Romans, ſo after that Iulius Ceſar had brought  
all France vnder his ſubiection, he built Caleis in Artoys, and the caſtle of

An. reg. 21.

1347.

Tho. de la More,  
Caleis des-  
cribed.

Caleis buſied  
by the Ro-  
mans.

Chept. w

Cales of  
Chepstow in  
Wales, & Dover  
in Kent,  
built by the  
Romans.

Chepstow in Weredocia, or South Wales, and the Castle of Dover in Kent, what time he had conquered Bytaine (as saith mine author,) King Edward cast a ditch about his campe, and laide his naule of ships against Cales haven, to the intent that the Frenchmen should make no invasions upon his shoulours, neither they within receive any victuals by water. The Norman pirates at sundry times took 15. of his ships, whereof some of them they carried away for their owne occupying, the other they bent, and sir Thomas Haclut, with sir William Borton knights, as they were sailing into England, were taken prisoners on the sea. King Edward having fortified the siege, lay without giving any assault, knowing that it was not possible to fight with his enemies without great losse of men, considering the depth of the ditches, and height of the walles: neither would he erect any engines against the towne, for there wanted firme ground whereupon to place them. Besides that, if he should beate downe the walles, yet were the ditches so deepe, and full of salte water let in on every side, that they were able to withstand all the world, with little strength and defence. On that side of the towne on which the Bollomenes were wont to victuall Cales, that is along on the Sea side, and especially when the shippes could not be suffered to passe by Sea, but along the shoare with small boates, the Earle of Portsmouth made a rampire, wherewith he kept away, & beat backe such boates & after ward when the Admirall of France had purposed to come with his ships of war to fight against our English ships that lay at the siege, thinking, y in the meane time, whilest they were in fighting, the small boates should passe to Cales with victuals, the said Earle of Portsmouth meeting with him valiantly, put him to flight.

A rampire  
built at  
Cales.

This siege during in such sort, from the feast of the Nativite of our Lady, all the whole winter, with a great part of the summer, and still waring stronger and stronger. On monday next before the feast of Saint James, the French King came to the castle of Gynnes, with his eldest sonne John, and the Kings sonne of Boheme: and a great power, to have remoued the siege from Cales. Also the Emperour (promising by othe, that he would remoue the siege either by warre or peace, or at the least, he would victuall them that were besieged) came with his army towards the English campe, and lodged scarce a mile from thence, requesting by messengers a treatie of peace. He sent the Duke of Detenes, and the Earles of Bulone and Parminake, who parling with the Duke of Lancaster, the Earles of Portsmouth and Huntington, touching a truce, could not obtaine their consent, whereupon after they had exercised a little warlike iusting, they returned to their Tents. The second day following, the French king offered the king of England a day of battell, which the king on certaine conditions accepted very gladly. In the meane season, they which were besieged, made known their state to the French king by signes and tokens, for at his first coming, they within the towne set up his ancient on the chieffest tower of the castle, and also they set out banners of the Dukes and Earles of France, and a little after the shutting in of the evening, they made a great light on the top of one of the highest towers, which was towards the army of the Frenchmen, & therewithal they made a great

The French  
king came to  
raile the siege  
of Cales.

The French  
king offered  
battell.

great shoute and noyse with trumpets and drummes. The second night they made the like, but somewhat lesse. The third night a very small fire, giuing forth therewith a sorrowfull voyce, signifying thereby that their strength touching the keeping of the Towne, was quite spent and done. And the same night they toke in all their flags and ancientes, except their standart. At the last, the day of battell drew on, against which time, there came out of England and Dutchland, toward the helpe of King Edward 17000. fighting men, whereupon the French King betimes in the morning of the second daye of August, making fire in his tents, fledde, whose taile the Duke of Lancaster and Earle of Northampton cutting off, they slewe and toke many of them.

The French King fleeth.  
W. Newell.

When they of Calais perceiued this, they toke their standart downe, and with great sorrow cast it from the Tower, downe into the ditch, and on the Saturday following, Iohn de Vienna their Captaine, a man very skillfull in warlike affayres, opening the gates of the Towne, came out to the King of England, sitting on a little nagge, for that hee being lame on his fete could not well goe, with an halter about his necke, with the other burgessees and souldiours following on fote, bare headed, and bare footed, hauing halters about their neckes.

Calais perished.

The other how  
Calais was  
perished.

The Captaine comming thus befoze the King, offered him a warlike sword, as vnto the chiefeest Prince of armes amongst all Christian Kings, and as one that had taken that Towne from the mightiest Christian King by noble chualry. Then he deliuered to him the keyes of the towne. Thirdly, he requesteth of him pitie, asked pardon, and deliuered him the sword of peace, wherewith he should giue right iudgement, spare and forbear the humble and lowly, and chasten the proude hearted.

The King receiuing that which was offered him, sent the Captaine with fiftene knights, and as many Burgessees into England, enriching them with large gifts. The common sort of people, and such as he found in the Towne, being somewhat refreshed with the Kings almes, he commaunded to be safe conducted to the castle of Guisnes.

Guisnes.

After the taking of the towne of Calais, the souldiers at the kings commandement toke the Panoz of Parks and of Hop, and with great difficulty: they built in them foyts, setting in order where walles wanted, hoggesheads filled with stones against the enemies, whilest the walles were a building within. Immediately after the taking of Calais, there began in those parts a general pestilence of the aire, comming from the east parts, into many other parts of the world, whereupon it came to passe, that a great multitude of people dyed. This pestilence gaue occasion that certaine Cardinals were sent on the behalfe of the French King, to craue a truce from that time, vnto the feast of Saint Barnabe next following, which was agreed vpon on the eight and twenty of September.

Sparkes.  
Hop.

Bloody aire.

The truce being taken as afoze is saide. King Edward built a Castle at Risbanke, betwixt the towne of Calais, and the hauens mouth, to the intent to keep off al the enemies force of ships from the said towne: he made Captaine

Castle at Ris-  
banke builded.

of

Edward  
returned from  
Caleis into  
England, not  
without great  
danger of  
drowning.

of the towne *Spz* John Montgomery, and thence conueying the Queene and his eldest sonne, with a great company of noble men, he took his iourney towards England by water, and being on the Sea, he was beaten with such a Tempest, that he lost many of his ships, and hardly escaped himselfe, notwithstanding he came on land the fourteenth of October, and so to London.

An. reg. 22.

Commodities  
of peace.

This peace being made, it seemed through England as a new sommer had followed, because of the plentie of all things, for there was no woman of any name, but she had some of the pyses of Cane and Caleis, or of other cities beyond the Seas, whereof the matrones being proud, did bragge in French matrones apparell.

1348.

At the feast of Easter, James Dowglas, who was taken at Durham in the warres, and brought to London with the king of Scottes, was licenced to depart home againe, swearing to the king peace and fealtie, who after warde liuing peaceably in the Marches, and being requested by William Dowglas to ride a hunting with him, was by him comming behind his backe most traitterously slaine.

After Easter, the king held a councell, wherein it was decreed that none of his seruants should take by any victuals of any man against his will, nor but that he payd for it readie money, upon paine to bee punished and banished the court, Richard Talbot high steward of the kings house being appointed to see execution of that proclamation.

Edward es-  
lected King of  
Ainaine.

The Earle of Pents was racked, arreigned, and conuicted, for that contrary to his faith and homage sworn to the king of England, he did againe beare armes against him, and for that fact he was drawne, hanged, and quartered. To this councell came two Carles, and two clearkes sent from the Princes electors, signifying that their election was made to the king, for the dignitie of the kingdome of Ainaine. These messengers the king receiued with due honoz, but answered them, that he would not take so greate honour upon his shoulders, untill he had the crowne of France, due vnto him, in peaceable possession.

Justings at  
Lincolne.

A little after Easter, there were great Justings holden at Lincolne by the Duke of Lancaster, where were present many Ladies, with the Countesse, and also certaine messengers sent from the king of Spaine, for the lady Iane daughter to the king, that should be married to their master the kings sonne, whome her husband meeting, she died of the great pestilence, so that he followed her to the grave.

The same yeere, *R.* Edward with his eldest sonne the Earle of Marwike, and the bishop of Winchest. went to Caleis, from whence the king sent the Duke of Lancaster to Donemere, to receiue in his behalfe fealtie and homage of the earle of Flanders, which thing was by the said earle performed. John Stratford Archbishop of Canterburie deceased, vnto whom succeeded John Vffard Doctor of Law.

Thouls la More.  
Great Pestilence.  
Tho. Waking.

There began amongst the East Indians and Tartarians a certaine pestilence, which at length waied so general, infecting the middle regio of the ayre so greatly, that it destroyed the Saracens, Turks, *Syzians*, *Palestinians*, & the



the Grecians, with a wonderfull, or rather incredible death, in so much that those peoples being exceedingly dismayed with the terrour therof, consulted amongst themselves, & thought it good to receiue the Christian faith & Sacraments, for they had intelligence that the Christians which dwelt on this side the Greekish sea, were not so greatly (more then common custome was) troubled with sickness and mortallitie. At length this terrible slaughter passed o-uer into those Countries which are on this side the Alpes, and from thence to the partes of Fraunce, which are called Hesperia, and so by order along into Germany and Dutchland. And the seventh yere after it began, it came into England, and first began in the towne and ports lonyng on the Sea coasts, in Dorsetshire, where, euen as in other Countries, it made the Country quite void of inhabitants, so that there were almost none left alive.

From thence it passed into Devonshire, and Somersetshire, euen vnto Bristow, and raged in such sort, that the Gloucestershire-men would not suffer the Bishop-men to haue any accesse vnto them, or into their Countrey by any meanes: but at length it came to Gloucester, yea and to Oxford, and London, and finally it spred ouer all England, and so wasted & spoyled the people, that scarce the tenth person of all sorts was left alive: when Church-yards were not sufficient and large ynough to bury their dead in, they chose certayne fields appointed for that purpose.

Gualter Mayny, Lord of Mayny, borne in Cambray, who serued in company of Henry Duke of Lancaster in his great acts of Gascoine and Guisen, after this time made knight of the Garter in England, hauing a respect to the danger that might fall in time of this Pestilence then begunne in England, if the Churches & Church-yards in London might not suffice to burie the multitude, he purchased a pce of ground called Spittle Croft (for that it belonged to the Paster and brethren of S. Bartholomewes Spittle) containing 13. acres and a rodde, without the barres of West Smithfield, & caused the same to be enclosed, and dedicated by Ralph Bishop of London, in the which place in the yere following, was buried more then fiftie thousand persons, as is affirmed by the kings Charters which I haue seene, and also by an inscription fixed on a stone crosse in the same place And in memorie therof, the same Gualter Mayny caused vpon the same ground a Chappell to be builded, & after founded the same to be an house of Charter-house Monkes, in the yere. 1371.

Also about the same time, one Iohn Cory procured of Nicholas Bp: of the Church of the Holy Trinitie neere vnto Aldgate, one toft of ground neere vnto East Smithfield, for the buriall of them that died, that it might be called the Church-yard of the holy Trinitie: which ground he caused to be enclosed, and dedicated by Ralph Stratford Bishop of London, in the which place King Edward the third, by consent of the said Bp: and Couent, founded the abbey of S. Mary of Grace in the yere 1359. placing therin an Abbot and Monke of the order of Cisteraux, which were white monks, and named the place Eastminster.

All lutes and pleading in the Kings Bench, and other places for a season ceased.

Records of the Garter.

Register of the Charter house  
Ex Carta.  
Charter-house Churchyard  
by London.

An. reg. 23.

1349.  
Roule Auebury  
Charter house  
at London  
founded.  
New abbey  
by the tower  
of London  
founded.  
Luxerit Lond.  
Lib. Saltminst.

Northwich.  
Reg of Northwich  
An. recde. Pri.  
Parnmouth.

There few noble men died, among whom departed John Montgomery, and his Ladie: the Lord Cliftesle Captaine of Calets died at Calets, and was buried in the white Friers at London. Of the common people, together with Religious and Clerkes, there died an innumerable sort, for no man but God onely knew how many. There died from the first of Januarie, to the first of July, in the Citie of Northwich 57104. persons, besides Ecclesiasticall Beneficiaries and Dominikes. There was buried in the Church and Church-yard of Parnmouth, in one yeere 7052. men and women, before which time the personage there was worth 700. markes by yeere, and afterwarde was scarce worth forty pound the yeere. This note was certified to King Henry the seventh in the 22. of his raigne, & the same is written on the gates of the Church of Parnmouth. This great pestilence began at London about the feast of All Saints, in the yeere 1348. That time this pestilence had wasted all England, the Scots greatly reioycing, mocked and swore oft times by the vile death of the Englishmen: but the sword of Gods wrath, due and consumed the Scots in no lesse numbers, then it did the other. It also wasted the Welsh men, and within a while passed over into Ireland, where it destroyed a great number of English people that dwelt there, but such as were right Irishmen bozne, that dwelt in the hilly countries, it scarcely touched, so that few of them died therof. This plague continued sometime in one place, sometime in another, untill the yeere of our Lord 1357. the same yeere for a truce or finall peace to be concluded, the Bishop of Northwich, the Earle of Northampton, the Earle of Stafford, Richard Talbot, Walter Mayny knights, sailed over the Sea into France, whom the Frenchmen met peaceably, but they would not agree to a final peace, unlesse that Calets were restored to them againe, which would not be graunted: and the truce which was taken for a yeere was so continued. But the Earle of Flanders, who would not in any case receive conditions of peace, unlesse the French king were quite forsaken, notwithstanding his soleimne oath, not long after entred into Flanders with a great power of Frenchmen, burning & killing where ever he came: but the people of the countrey with a few Englishmen withstood him stoutly, and gaue him a sore skirmish, in the which, beside that many Frenchmen were slain, the earle himselfe was forced to flie, for the which worthy acte, many knightes were made, amongst the which was John de Elebert, an Englishman.

Tulles at  
Windsore.

In the feast of the Patience of S. John, the Quene was purfied at Windsor, where were soleimne Iusts, and running at the tilt, at the which, David king of Scots was present, and the Earle of Glouc, the Lord Tankerull, Lord Charles de Valois, and many other strangers captives, who by the kings licence were permitted to runne also at the tilt, at the which pastime the prize of the field was adjudged to the Earle of Glouc. After in Sommer season, these strangers passed their time in hunting, in the companie of the king, and other nobles of the Realme, at Claringdon in Wiltshirenigh Salisbury, and in diuers other forests.

Whiles the king was thus occupied, the Frenchmen notwithstanding the truce, entred the marches of Britaine, but the sonnes of Sabater, with a few o-  
ther,

ther, who went out a foraging, toke Thomas Dagworth knight, a man of great experience, who but with a few men, to meet sixteen armed men, entred the wood against these robbers, & inuaded them, slaying to the number of three hundred, but at the length being stricken five times in y face with quarels, al his men being first slain, he himself was thrust through y body with a sword.

Sir Thomas  
Dagworth  
slaine.

About the feast of Saint Michael, more then 120. persons of Scotland, and Holland, coming thorough Flaunders vnto London, sometime in the Church of Saint Paul, sometime in other places of the citie, twice in the day, in the sight of all people, from the loynes, vnto the heeles, couered in linnen cloth, all the rest of their bodies being bare, hauing on their heads hats with red crosses before and behind, every one in their right hands a whip with three cords, ech cord hauing a knot in the middest, beate themselves on their bare bloudie bodies going in procession, some of them singing in their owne language, all the other answering them.

Ro. de Auesbury  
Adam Meri.

A bloody pro-  
cession of pub-  
licanes.

The same yere the Earle of Lancaster, the Barons of Stafford & Grey, Roche, also the heires of the Lords Percy and Neuell, and the Lord Furniwall with Bartholmew Burwash, and diuers other, about the feast of all Saintes, passed ouer sea into Gascoigne, to delay the furious wyrore that Iohn de Valois sonne to the French king had made in that Dukedome, greatly spoyling and wasting the same. Also the kings Counsell ordained, that none of the kings iurices during the time of their offices, should receiue any fee, gift, or reward of any man, except it were of the king himselfe.

Also this yere in the Countie of Wyford, nigh vnto a Towne called Chipping Norton, there was found a serpent hauing two heads, and faces like two men, one being shaped after the new tyze of that time: another after the manner of the old attire, and it had great wings, after the manner of a flinder-mouse or Bat. Thomas Bradwarden Archbishoppe of Canterburie deceased, Simon Islip succeeded.

A serpent with  
two heads in  
Wyfordshire.

About the feast of All Saints, king Edward being accompanied with the Carles of Lancaster, and suffolke, and diuers others, passed ouer the seas into Flaunders, and thence leading his armie towards Fraunce, the Frenchmen made meanes vnto him to renewe their truce: and now the Earle of Flaunders submitted himselfe the third time vnto the kings mercie & dominion. Then the king returning toward England, to solemnizate the translation of Saint Thomas the Confessor and Bishop of Hereford, did with his presence and Nobilitie honor the same, to the great expences of Nicholas Cantulupus Baron, and cousin to the said Saint Thomas: during which feast and solemnitie, it was signified to the king by the Secretaries of Emericus of Padua, who was a feed man to the king of England, that on the fourteenth day of Ianuarie next coming, Geoffrey Charney knight, and many other Frenchmen should be receiued into Caleis, vnto whom the said towne was selde by the said Emericus: but the Towne being presently rescued by king Edward, the said Emericus of Padua with other Wenoways continued in Caleis, being maintained there at the costs of the French king against the king of England, when he besieged it, who also after the peelding of it to the king of England,

Ed. Edward  
saileth toward  
Flaunders.

Caleis like to  
hane been bes-  
traped.

being pardoned both of life and limme, from thence forth continued and dwelt as a seed man of the kings in the said Towne for the defence thereof. At that time the said Geoffrey was Lord of Patas, a man more skilful in warfare then any French man in Fraunce. Wherefore he was greatly esteemed, euen to the time of his death. This craftie deuiler induoured by his letters, wherein hee made promise of large giftes of gold, and other sophisticall perswasions, quite to subuert the faith and loyaltie of the said Emericus.

Finally, this craftie deuiler agreed with this false man, that for twentie thousand French crownes he should let in the French men to the Towne, and as much as lay in him, deliuer vp to the French men both the Towne and Castle. This bargaine being most traiterously made, by oath and breaking of the Sacrament betwixt them, yet at this notwithstanding, he wrote letters vnto the king touching the state of the whole matter, but very priuily, how that he was ready to shew friendship to the French men, yet meaning to make frustrate their purpose, where by they should be conuicted of breaking the truce, and also many of them should bee taken to bee ransomed, wherefore King Edward speedily passed ouer, being accompanied with his eldest sonne, the Earle of March, and a few other, comming befoze the time appointed for the peelding of the Towne, certaine daies. Wherefore being come to Caleis, hee laid certaine men of armes within the Trenches which were betwixt the outter gate and the inner parte of the Castle, building a thinne and slender Wall befoze them newly set vp, not made of plasse, but of counter-faite matter, which ioyned to the other Wall, craftily denised and made like the olde woork, so that no man would iudge that any were enclosed therein.

Also hee caused the mainepostes of the drawe bridge to bee sawed almost in sunder, yet in such sorte, that armed horse-men might ride over it: and for the purpose he had a great stone, which was laid vp in a hole made in so: m of an arch, being in the se: repart of the Tower hanging over the Bridge, in which he appointed a faithfull Souldier should bee in due time to throwe downe the said stone vpon the Bridge, that with the fall thereof, the Bridge being halfe cut in two, should bee broken in sunder, and so that hole where the stone was laid, should bee wrought in such sort, that hee within shoulde perceiue through the hole how many did enter in: s: we were made priuile to this practise, neither did many know of the kings presence or of the Prince of Wales, who when they had wrought this feate, secretly conueied themselves into the Towne.

The day befoze the time of deliuerie of this Towne, Geoffrey Cherney sent fiftene of his faithfullest men with the greater parte of the golde which was to be payde, who should also trie the faith of Emericus, and the order of the Castle, who searching euerie where, in euerie Tower and corner which they could finde open, could perceiue nothing contrarie to their liking, whereupon on the next day in the morning, they set vp the French flaggs vnder the highest Tower of the Castle, and the ancients also of Geoffrey, and of other Lords vpon other Towers and places. Then the people



ple of the Towne who kept common watch and ward, not knowing of this secrete deuise, were greatly terrified therewith, inso much that they taking weapon in hand, began to giue a charge against the Castell: by and by the French men who had entred the day befoze, toke Thomas Kingstone, then slaying away, quite ignozant of that which was deuised, and sozeably they set him in the stocks. When certaine of them being sent out to the French men their companions and masters, who lay without in ambushes shewed them the ancients and standard set by, and all to be well, euen as they would haue it, hastening them sozward to come to the defence of the Castle, against the townes men: wherfoze they rising from their lurking places, advanced themselves in pride and bragging, and came by heapes in at the gates of the Castle. The townes men perceiuing this, had much adoe to sozbear their hands from them, had not their chiefe leaders withdzawen them from it, least some danger should haue happened to them that lay hid: by and by those that lay hid closed vnder the arches of the walles, prepared themselves to breake out vpon their enemies. In like sozt also he that with the great stone was shut vp in þe hole, after that he saw so many entred in, esteeming that his fellows were sufficient to ouerthrow them, with that great stone put to his custodie he brake the draw brydge, by the which the enemies had entred in, but being once in could not goe that way out againe: when the stone was thus downe, and had discharged the thing soz the which it was laid by, and the French men deceived by that pollicie, they were enclosed safe ynough. At the noyse of this stone and the brydge that brake, these armed men of whom befoze I spake, breaking downe their counterfaite wall, behinde the which all the deceite was hid, they presently set themselves in order to inuade the French men, bitten to a bitter breakfast. The conflict was sharpe soz a good season, but at the length the enemies being ouercom, yeilded themselves to the pleasure of the Conquerours. They which were without and had not entred, as sone as they perceiued their companions to be deceived, fled, after whom the King with scarce fiftene men of armes and as many archers folloved apace, the runnawayes not knowing what companie would folloze them: many in this chase were wearied, and many mo slaine, and in a small tyme the King ouercame daungerous and great labours: but at length, when it was vnderstood by them that fled, how few there were that chased them, fourescore armed men turned them against the King. I dare not ascribe this boldnesse of the King in chasing of his enemies, to his wisdom, but onely to the stoutnesse of this minde, the which is well known through Gods grace to be brought to good effect by his meanes, though the daunger were neuer so great: soz when he perceiued that the French men had turned themselves to withstand him, he cast away the scaberd of his sword, and comforting his men about him, setting them in good order, exhorted them to play the men lustily. The Archers being placed in the Marsh against the sides of the enemies stood on drie hilles, which were compassed about with quagge myres and foggie places, that neither Horsemen noz fote men might appoche them, but they should rather be drowned in mudde then come nere to hurt them: these also did the King comfort,

Tho. dela More.

saying to them (doe well you Archers) play the men lustily, and knowe that I am Edward of Windsor. When the presence of the King, and necessity of the matter, stirred by their hearts to doe well: the Archers encountering their heads, stripping by their sleeves, bent themselves to bestow their arrowes in such sorte that they might not be lost: and as the Frenchmen drew to wards them, they saluted them after with their arrowes. The armed men of both parts stood in order to fight vpon a long and narrowe causeway, the breadth whereof was not able to receiue scarce twentie men of armes in a front, hauing on both sides thereof the Parish, in the which the Archers were placed, who gawled and wounded their enemies on the sides, fleeing as thicke as haile. The King and his men besoze with the Archers on the side, slew and toke a great many: and many of them stood stoutly to it, till at the length by the comming of the Prince of Wales, the French were put to flight: after a long chase in pursuing the enemies, they returning backe againe to Caleis, numbred those which were fled, as well as those which were taken, and they found, that for the taking of the Castle (as the prisoners reported) there came a thousand men of armes, and sixe hundred armed men, but they which serued, were aboute thre thousand: among them which were taken, was Geffery Charney and his sonne, Edward de Renty, Robert Danquile, Otto de Gulo, the Baron of Martingham, Baldyna Saylly, Henry de Prees, Garinus Baylofe, Peter Renel, Peter Dargemole, Eustace de Riplemount and many other, Lords, Knights, and Baronets, who were chased and ranne away with their attents, as the Lord de Mountmarice, also Laundas, who married the Lady Saint Paul Countesse of Pembroke in England, also the Lord Fenas, the Lord Planckes and another Eustace de Replemount. There were slaine in the skirmish the Lord Henry de Boys, the Lord Archibalde, and many others, whose names the Conquerours were not able to certifie. Thus by pollicie and deuised treason the authours thereof came to death and destruction: neither Eustachius himselfe escaped scotfree from the snarcs, for he within a while after being taken by the Frenchmen, was burned alive with a hot yron, and degraded from the order of Knighthood by the cutting off of his heeles, & depriuing of his tongue by abscission: afterward, he was hanged by, and last of all beheaded and quartered, receiuing iust punishment for his treason and false swearing.

This yere the Lord Furniuaill giuing a rashe enterprize vpon his enemies, was taken prisoner in Gascoigne. Not long after King Edward prepared to make a voyage into France, but the Earle of Lancaster, returning out of Gascoigne, signified that there was a truce taken by him, by reason whercof of the passage prepared by the King was laid aside.

This yere on Saint Georges day, the King held a great and solemne feast at his Castle of Windsor, where he had augmented y<sup>e</sup> Chappel which Henry y<sup>e</sup> first and other his progenitoys Kings of England had besoze created of eight Chanons, he added to those eight Chanons, a Deane, and sixtene Chanons more, and 24. poore and impotent Knights, with other ministers and seruants as appeareth in his Charter, Dated the two and twentieth of his raigne.

Besides

An. reg. 24.

1350.

7 ho. de la More.  
Great feast at  
Windsor of S.  
George.  
1 ho. Walling.  
13 charta regia.

Besides the King, there were other also that were Contributors to the foundation of this Colledge, as followeth.

First founders  
of the noble or-  
der of the Gar-  
ter.  
Records of the  
Garter.

- |  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| 1 The Soueraigne King Edward the third.    | 12 Sir Iohn de Mahune.       |
| 2 Edward his eldest sonne Prince of Wales. | 13 Sir Hugh Courtney.        |
| 3 Henry Duke of Lancaster.                 | 14 Sir Thomas Holland.       |
| 4 The Earle of Warwike.                    | 15 Sir Iohn Grey.            |
| 5 Captaine de Bouch.                       | 16 Sir Richard Fitz Simon.   |
| 6 Ralph Earle of Stafford.                 | 17 Sir Miles Stapleton.      |
| 7 William Montacute Earle of Salisburie.   | 18 Sir Thomas Walle.         |
| 8 Roger Lorde Mortimer Earle of March.     | 19 Sir Hugh Wrochesley.      |
| 9 Sir Iohn de Lisle.                       | 20 Sir Nele Loring.          |
| 10 Sir Bartholomew Burwash.                | 21 Sir Iohn Chandos.         |
| 11 Sir Iohn Beauchampe.                    | 22 Sir Iames de Audley.      |
|  | 23 Sir Othes Holland.        |
|  | 24 Sir Henry Erme.           |
|  | 25 Sir Sechet Dabridgecourt. |
|  | 26 Sir William Panell.       |

All these together with the King were clothed in gownes of Rasse, powdered with garters blew, wearing the like garters also on their right legges, and mantels of blew, with scutcheons of S. George. In this sort of apparell they being bare-headed, heard Masse, which was celebrated by Simon Islip Archbishop of Canterbury, & the Bishops of Winchester and Excester, and afterwards they went to the feast, setting themselves orderly at the table, for the honor of the feast, which they named to be of S. George the martyr, and the choosing of the Knights of the Garter.

First feast of  
S. George.

In the Sommer following, variance rising betwene the states of England and Spaine, the Spaniards beset the Baytaine Sea, with 44. great ships of warre, with the which they sunk ten English ships coming from Gascoigne towards England, after they had taken and spoiled them, and thus their former iniuries being reuenged, they entred into Sluce in Flanders.

King Edward understanding hereof, furnished his nauie of fiftie shippes and Pinaces, forcasting to meete with the Spaniards in their return, hauing in his company the Prince of Wales, the Earles of Lancaster, Northampton, Warwick, Salisbury, Arundale, Huntington, Gloucester, and other Barons and Knights with their seruants and archers, and vpon the feast of the decollation of S. Iohn, about Euen-song time, the Spanies mette at Winchelsea, where the great Spanish vessels surmounting our ships and forres, like as castles to cotages, sharply assailed our men, & stones and quarels flying from the tops, soe and cruelly wounded our men, who no lesse busie to fight alone with launce and sword, and with the foreward manfully defend themselves, at length our Archers pearced their Arbalisters with a further retch then they could strike againe, and thereby compelled them to forsake their place, and caused other fighting from the hatches to shade themselves with tables of the

Ro. de Auesbury.

Battle on  
the Sea.

ships, and compelled them that they w<sup>o</sup>stones from the toppes, so to hide them, that they durst not shew their heads, but tumble downe: then our men entring the Spanish vessels with swords and halberds, kill those they met, within a while make boyde the vessels, and furnish them with English men, untill they being beset with darknesse of the night, could not discern the 27. yet remayning untaken: our men cast anker, stubbing of the hoped battell, supposing nothing finished, whilst any thing remained vndone, dressing the wounded, throwing the miserable Spaniards into the Sea, refreshing themselves with victuals and slepe, yet committing the vigilant watch to the armed band. The night overpassed, the English men prepared (but in vaine) to a new battell, but when the sunne began to appeare, they viewing the seas, could perceiue no signe of resistance, for 27. ships flying away by night, left 17. spoiled in the evening, to the Kings pleasure, but against their will.

The King returned into England with victorie and triumph, the King preferred there 80. Noble ymges to the order of knighthood, greatly betwayling the losse of one, to wit, Syr Richard Goldesborough Knight.

This yere Philip de Valoys French King, deceased, and his eldest sonne John was crowned.

Philip the  
French king  
died.  
Combat before  
King Edward.

Two hyed souldiers of the King of Armenia, came into England, into the presence of the King, where they shewed the letters of the aforesaid King of Armenia, wherewith it was signified that the one of them, to wit, Iohn de Viscount, a man bozne in Cipres, had slanderously charged the other, that is Thomas de la March, a French man bozne, and bastard sonne to Phillip late King of France, saying that the said Thomas should haue receiued of the Turkes a certaine somme of gold, for the betraying the armie of the Christians vnto the Emperour of the Turkes: and for the p<sup>ro</sup>ofe of this slander, this Iohn challenged a combate with the said Thomas, to be tried by the iudgement of Edward King of England, and that by him (as by a most worthy Prince,) all strife should be ended. For this therefore were these two worthy souldiers appointed to fight, which they perourmed within the lisses of the Kings palace at Westminster, on Sunday next following after the feast of Saint Michael, where Thomas, in declaration of his innocencie, in that he was accused of, overcame his enemy, but yet killed him not, for he could not, because he was not able to wounde him being so armed, with any kinde of piercing weapon, except it were in his face, which was bare. For after that they had runne at the tilte, and fought on fote, as they were striving together on the ground, with certaine pickes both short and sharpe, then called Gadlings, being closed in the ioyntes of his right gauntlet, the said Thomas stroke the said Iohn in the face, and soze wounded him: but on the other side Iohn had no such short kinde of weapon, wherewith he might hurt Thomas face, and therefore cryed out aloud most horribly, whereupon by the Kings commaundement the Combate was ended, and the victorie adjudged to Thomas, who gaue the said Iohn, being thus overcome, to the Prince of Wales for a Captiue, and offered hye his owne armour to Saint George, in Saint Pauls Church at London, with great deuotion. These matters being thus finished,



finished, the Cipres man is manumitted and set at libertie as a free man againe. And Thomas thinking boldly to goe into the presence of his brother the French King, toke his iourney thither, and at his comming, found the said King and the Nobilitie of Fraunce, greatly offended, and in indignation against him, for that he agreed that the combate should be tried before the King of England. Wherefore Thomas thinking secretly with himselfe how to winne the false friendship of his brother, being desirous to thew that therein he had done well, among all other things he greatly praised the nobilitie of Edward and his worthie fame spread ouer al the world, and also the iustice which he vsed in iudging, not accepting the person of the man of Cipres, (yea though hee loued the king himselfe very well) neither suffered him to be preferred before me, which am a Frenchman, and brother, and friend to the my Lord King of Fraunce, iudge ouer the sayd King Edward my aduersarie. Also the Earle of Cle highly praised the King of England, for that he had receiued great comfort and commoditie at his hands during the time of his Captiuitie in England, shewing also how farre that good King had banished enuie and hatred from his heart, who at a time of iusting, being in the field at that exercise, and the King also, was commaunded by the King himselfe to beare away the pryce and prycke from them all. These commendations did the French King enuie at, and for indignation, hee most wickedly commaunded the setters forth of those payples to be beheaded. And for to colour the matter the better, hee sayned that the Earle vsed too much familiaritie with the Quene his wife, and that his brother was guiltie of treason against the king of Fraunce, because he committed his cause and the combat to be thus tryed by the iudgement of the King of England. After hee had thus murdered his brother, hee tormented his wife to death by famine, who was daughter of the noble king of Boheme, lately slaine in battaille by Geoffrey.

William Edington Bishop of Winchester, and treasurer of England, a wise man: but louing the Kings commoditie, more then the wealth of the realme and common people, caused a new coyne called a Groate, and halfe Groate to be coyned, but these were of lesse waight then the pence, called Catterlings, by reason whereof victuals and merchandise became the dearer thow to the whole realme.

After the Octaues of the Purification of our Lady, in a Parliament holden at Westminster, Henry Earle of Lancaster was created Earle of Lincoln, Leicester, Derby, Grosnount and Ferrers, and Duke of Lancaster, vnto whom also was giuen great priuiledges, such as neuer any Earle had before his time. Also Lionel of Antwerpe the kings sonne is made Earle of Ulster in Ireland, Iohn of Gaunt his brother is made Earle of Richmond, and Ralph Baron of Stafford, is made Earle of Stafford. Iohn Mautrauers, one of the murderers of Edward the second, was this yeare restored to his lands.

In the Lent following Walter de Maine, and Robert Herle Captaine of Calais, rode into France, making great prayes and doing great damage, brought away great stoepe of beasts, sheepe, and swine, so that at Calais a fat Colwe was scarcely

Groates and  
halfe groates.

Tho. Walsing.  
Historia Aurca.

Parliament at  
Westminster.

1351.

20 fat Colwe  
syrte pence.

scarcely sold for sixtē pence sterling. About Easter the Duke of Lancaster departing from Caleis marched alongst the Sea coasts of Artops, and Picardie, bzent the suburbs of Bulloigne, but assaulting the Towne he prevailed not, for that onely the ladders were too short. Therefore he wasted the Cities of Artois, and the haven, also the townes of Fauconbridge and Staples, and in the same hauens he bzent about 120. ships of diuers moulds. After this burning the champion countrey, he rode vnto Saint Omers, and winning by force many fortresses, with a great pray and many prisoners he returned to Caleis. About the feast of Saint George things prospered well in Calcoine, for the Parthall of France, with a great number of armed men spoiled the countrey about Saint Dangel, where Edmond Rose a possfolke man was Captaine, who with the garrison, valiantly encountered the enemies, slew many of them, and took the said Parthall and many other Nobles of France, chassing aboue 400. Knights.

The same yere the Spanisb ships by a treatie of peace came into England, where the last yere they were restrained, but now a truce was taken for twentie yeres, betwixt England and Spaine, and a truce betwixt England and France for one yere, which the Frenchmen bzaie, by reason of taking the Castle of Guisnes, as in the next yere shall be shewed.

About this season the olde coine of gold was changed into a new, the olde Noble was worth much about the tared rate of the new, and therefore the Marchants bought the olde and conueyed them out of the Realme, to the great losse of the king and kingdome, to the which there was a remedie prouided, by changing of the Stampe.

An. reg. 26.  
1352.

About the beginning of Januarie, the Frenchmen being occupied about the repaying of the wallles of Guisnes towne, being asfoze that time destroyed by the Englishmen, some men of armes of Caleis vnderstanding their doings, deuised how they might ouerthrow the worke, in this sort. There was an Archer named John Dancafer, in prison in the castle of Guisnes, befoze that time taken, who not hauing wherewith to pay his ransome, was let loose, with condition that he should worke there among the Frenchmen. This fellow chanced to lye with a laundress, a strumpet, and learned of her where beyond the principall ditch, from the bottome of the ditch, there was a wall made of two fote broade, stretchig from the rampiers, to the brimme of the ditch within forth, so that being couered with water it could not be sen, but not so downed, but that a man going aloft thereon, should not be wet past the knees, it being made for the vse of fishers: and therefore in the midst it was discontinued for the space of two fote: and so the Archer (his Harlot shewing it to him) measured the height of the Wall with a threde. These things thus knowne, one day slipping downe from the Wall, he passed the ditch by that hidden Wall, and lying hidde in the Marsh till Euening, came in the night nere vnto Caleis, where tarping for the cleare day, he then went into the Towne (for else he might not:) here he instructed them that were greedy of pray and to scale the castle, how they might enter the same: they caused ladders to be made to the length by the Archer appoynted. Thirtie men conspiring together,

The getting of  
Guisnes by the  
English.

together, clothing themselves in black armour without any brightnesse, went to the Castle by the guiding of the said Iohn de Dancaſter, and climbing the wall with their ladders, they ſlew the watchmen, and threw them down headlong beſide the Wall: after this, in the Hall they ſlew many whom the found unarmed playing at the Cheſſe and Hazard. Then they brake into the Chambers and Turrets upon the Ladies and Knights that lay there aſleepe, and ſo were made maſters of all that was within: and ſhutting all their priſoners into a ſtrong chamber, being bereft of all their armour, they tooke out the Engliſh men that had been taken the yere befoze and there kept in priſon, and after they had releued them well with meate and drinke, they made them guardiens ouer them that had them in cuſtodie: ſo they wan all the Fortreſſes of the Caſtle, vnknoyn to them that were in the Towne, (appointed to ouerſee the repayying of the broken walles) what had happened to them within the Caſtle. In the morning they commanded the workmen in the towne to ceaſe from their workes, who thereupon perceiuing that the Caſtle was wonne, ſtraight waies fled, and the new Caſtilians, ſuffered the Ladies to depart on horſebacke, with their apparell, writings, and ornaments, where they ought to hold their ſees: and the ſame day there came from Caleis to their ayde ſuch perſons as they ſent for, by whoſe ayde they kept the Caſtle: and about thre of the clocke there came two Knights, ſent from the Earle of Guiſnes, who demanding a truce, willed to know of them that were thus entred the Caſtle, who they were, to whom they belonged, and by whoſe authority they kept the Caſtle ſo taken in the time of truce, whereunto they answered: that being intruded, they would not declare to any man their purpoſe, till they had tryed a longer poſſeſſion: and therefore on S. Matowice day, the Abbot (the King being buſie in Parliament,) to the Frenchmen being ſent from the ſayd Earle of Guiſnes, declared, how in preludice of the truce, the ſayd Caſtle was taken, and therefore by right of mutuall faith it ought to bee reſtozed vnto them. The king answered, that without his knowledge that enterpriſe was made, and therefore he gaue commandement to his ſubiects, that none of them ſhould deteine the caſtle of Guiſnes, but deliuer it vnto the lawfull Lords thereof. The meſſengers being returned home, and reporting what they had done, the Earle of Guiſnes cometh to the Caſtle, demanding of them within, as at other times, in whoſe name they kept it. Who conſtantly affirming that they kept it in the name of Iohn Dancaſter, hee required to know if the ſame Iohn were the King of Englands liegeman, or would obey him: who answering that hee knew not what meſſengers had been in England: the Earle offered for the Caſtle, beſides all the treasure found in it, many thouſands of Crownes, or poſſeſſions for exchange, and a perpetuall peace with the King of Fraunce. To this they answered, that befoze the taking of that Caſtle they were Engliſhmen by nation, but by their demerites bought for the peace of the King of England, wherefoze the place which they thus held, they would willingly ſell or exchange, but to none ſoner then to their naturall King of England, to whom they ſayd, they would ſell their Caſtle, to obtaine their peace: but if hee would not buy it, then they would

sell it to the King of France, or to whom soever would give most for it.

The Earle being thus shifted off from them, the king of England bought it in dede, and so had that place which he greatly desired. The Fortresse was wont to stop by the passage into the higher Countrey, giuing to some great suerty from the Forragers, that were to issue forth of Caleis. The Counsell of Fraunce therfore wishing to haue that Castle againe, or to builde another of like vtilitie, for the defence of the Countrey thereabouts, they sent for Geoffrey Charney lately redeemed out of English Captiuitie, with authoritie to build and fortifie as followeth.

Lalbastie fortie  
fied.

To them that trauaile from Guisnes to Caleis there was a place on the left hand strong, but decayed, hauing a Church, in which certaine priests were resident, and it was called Lalbastie: this place was so nere to Guisnes, that the Englishmen standing without the gate of their Fortresse might shote to it. This Monastierie of priests might easily be made defensible, for it had high walles like a Castle, and a high towre, and very large for a steeple, and being situate in a marshy ground, it might with small labour be compassed with a ditch. This place the Englishmen had spared for deuotion sake, but till that the foresaid Geoffrey, in breach of truce, with a mightie powre besieged Guisnes, and remoued the priests from the Church, making a Castle of the Church, and fencing the walles with rampire and ditch: and this was about Pentecost, in which season the waters not impeaching him, his people might worke in the parish. They within the Castle therfore being besieged, were vnneth able to come abroade with their boates by the ditches that were full of water, and by the parish unpasseable and also full of water, neither they of Caleis could victuall them by any manner of meane, by reason of the siege, and warding that was kept at Lalbastie. They that were thus besieged, oft times sallied out and fought with them of Lalbastie, but sue very few, sometime with arrowes, and sometime with other weapons: at length, vpon a day appointed, the Calisians, with them of Dye and Parkes on the one part, and they within Guisnes on the other, met, set on their enemies, slew many, chased many, and finally burnt by Lalbastie, and dismantling the walles, made all plaine with the ground.

Lalbastie burnt  
and rased.

This yeare, the Duke of Lancaster going into Spuce, by the aduice and ordinance of the king, his daughter was espoused in England to William Duke of Zeland, eldest sonne to Lewis Duke of Baiuir, that intruded vpon the Romane Empire.

Walter Bentley  
sep. and Robert  
Knolles make  
a hopage into  
France.

About the fiftenth of August, Walter Bentley Captaine, Robert Knolles, and other, in the marches of Bytaine, valiantly encountered their enemies, where in a fight doubtfull for a good while, were slaine the principall Marshall of France, also the Lords of Quintin, of Curtinoke, of Richmont, of Mount Albon, of Leguel, of Launey, of Montbech, of Vile Chastel de la March, & other knights, in number 140. and Bachelers, to the number of 500. whose coatfearmors were brought away: the number of commons were not counted. There were taken the Lord of Bussebeke, sonne of the Marshall Bertram, also Tristram de Malcis, the Lord of Paletret, the Vicount of Comaine,



maine, Geoffrey de Graues, William de la Vall, Charles Darchefill, John de Bruse, and other knights, with Bachelers, about 130. This armie of the French men, vnder the conduct of the said Marshall, of purpose deuised by him, was so beset on the backe halfe, with the strepente of a Montaine, that ste they could not, to the end that hope of flight being taken frō them their courage to fight might the more encrease. There were many of those knights surnamed of the starre, who in their profession had conspired neuer to turne their fearefull backs vpon their enemies, of which number of knights, there were among them slaine and taken, numbed 45. From that dangerous encounter few escaped unhurt, and among other, the foresaid Walter Bentley Captaine was so wounded, who commanded thirtie archers to be condemned, so that in the greatest heate of the fight they fled.

Knights of the  
Starre.

The Earle of Stafford also entred into Gascoigne, where encountering with a great armie of the French men that were issued forth of the fortreffe of Gagent, he discomfited, toke, and chased them: there was taken that valiant knight Bruse Gaude, and seuen knights of the starre. Shortly after, died John Dediaselles, and Thomas Wale, knights of great valour.

The same yere, it being heard that Pirats troubled the Seas, there were seuen ships of warre ordeyned, certaine Pinaces attending vpon them: ouer the which were admirals, Thomas Cooke, and Richard Tottlesham knights, who scoured the seas about the coast of Picardy and Normandy, but before the feast of S. George, they returned as they wished.

Whilist these things were a doing by Sea and Land, Otto sonne to the Duke of Brunswike, the French kings seed man, sent letters to the Duke of Lancaster, being returned out of Spyrce, by y<sup>e</sup> tenour wherof he accused him, affirming that as he returned out of Spyrce by Colein, he maliciously informed the Coloners, that the said Otto went about by stealth to haue taken him prisoner, and to haue presented him to the French king, adding hereunto, that because he neuer went any such taking of him, he was ready in declaration of his good name, by a singular combat onely in the French kings Court, to proue the Duke of Lancaster a lyer touching the said article. The letters were not sealed, and therefore, least it might haue ben thought folly to haue giuen credite to the letter, deliuered by a seruant, the Duke sent vnto Otto two knights to learne the cause of the chalenge, and to demand thereof his letters patents, sealed with his seale of armes, which knights accomplishing the effect of their iourney, and returning with speede, the Duke sent to the French king for a safe conduct for himselfe and his men, and with much adoe obtaining it, he went to Paris, where in the lists, in presence of the French king, the king of Navarre, and the Duke of Burgoyne, and many Peeres, and other of the Realme of Fraunce, he mounted on his steed in seemely wise, ready in all signes, without default, to trie the combat, and so staid till his adversary was ready, and the voyce of the Herault and Cantor to be had by their common oath, for the assurance of his word, and to obey the Law. On the contrary part, the said Otto scarcely was set on his horse, and was not able decently to set on his helmet, nor to walde his speare (or else he sayned)

Otto of Brunswike  
challenged  
with the Duke  
of Lancaster  
before the  
French king  
at Paris.

where

An. reg. 27.

1353.

Parliament at  
Westminster,  
Wherupon ap-  
pointed to  
Barlots.Come brought  
out of Ireland  
into England.S. Stephens  
Chappell at  
Westminster.  
Ex Carta.Staples of  
wool to be  
kept in Eng-  
land.Treatie of  
peace.

Ann. reg. 28

1354.

whose unblaneness being perceived by the French king, the king of Navarre, and other, the king took the quarrell into his hands, whereupon Otto was commaunded first to depart the lists, and so went his way, but the Duke abode still within them. After this, by commaundement of the French king, Otto swore that he should neuer after that day appeach the Duke of Lancaster of that article: and so from thence the Duke returned home by Zeland.

After the Epiphanie, a Parliament was holden at Westminster, wherein an ordinance was made at the instance of the Londoners, that no knowne whoze should weare from thenceforth any hode, except reved or striped of diuers colours, nor furre, but garments reuerfed or turned the wrong side outward, vpon paine to forfeit the same.

This yere, the dearth of Cozne by them of Ireland, and the Irish men that brought in cozne to sell vnto diuers Hauens of the Realme, was asswaged, to the great reliefe of the people.

King Edward altered the Chappell, which his progenitors before had founded of Saint Stephen at Westminster, into a colledge of twelue secular Chansons, twelue Alcars, and other ministers accordingly, and endued it with revenues, to the summe of five hundred pound by yere.

The morrow after Saint Mathies day began a Parliament, wherein it was ordeined that the Staple of wooll before kept in flawnders at Bridges, should from thenceforth be holden in diuers parts of England, Wales and Ireland, as at Newcastle, Poike, Lincoln, Canterburie, Norwich, Westminster, Chichester, Winchester, Excester, Bristow, and Carmarden.

The Earle of Northampton went into Scotland with a great companie of armed men, and archers, where he rode through the marches, and enforced the castle of Loghman, and other fortresses to yeld, and took the Scots that were laid in ambushes. He also held a treatie of peace with the Scots, who gladly would haue redēmed their king, and made a perpetuall peace with the Englishmen, but yet so as the king of Scots should not hold his land of the king of England.

Innocent the first, for the desire of peace, sent the Cardinall of Bononie to Caleis, to heare the treatie of the finall peace betwixt the kingdomes of England and Fraunce, to whom repaired the Counsellors of both Realmes, with full authoritie to treat and constitute the conditions of the same peace, and at length they agreed vpon this point, that the king of England should resigne all his right that he had to the Realme of Fraunce, and remit it to the French king, and should haue therfore the Dutchie of Aquitaine, and the Counties of Artoys and of Guisnes, for him and his successors king of England, without that he should hold the same of the French kings in any manner of wise.

To these conditions the King of England gaue his consent, and for the assurance of the covenants, Embassadors are sent to the Sea of Rome from epyther Realme. On the King of Englands behalfe went the Bishoppe of Norwich, the Duke of Lancaster, the Earle of Arundell, and other knights, who going to Aulnion, there came to them the Archbishoppe of Rohan, the Duke of Burgoine, Geoffrey Chamey, and other of the French Kings

Counsell:

Counsell: all these were receiued in great honour: many Cardinals and Bishops met the duke of Lancaster, who brought him for the space of two miles vnto Auinion, and to the Popes pallace: at length in the Consistorie of the Pope, he with the Cardinalls and Embassadors being present, the causes of their message was declared, and the Embassadors of England requested that the covenants confirmed, which had been concluded at Cales: to whom the Frenchmen answered, that gladly they would haue peace, but touching Aquitaine, and the foresaid Counties, as they said, the French King could not, nor they might giue their assents that the same should be alienated from the entire body of the kingdome, the which, as well the King as they had taken an oth to maintaine, but yet they could be contented that the profitable domination of the said Dutchy and Counties should be deliuered, and come to the King of England, as his Auncesters had Aquitaine, but so yet as the regalitie of the Crowne of France should euer be reserued. The Englishmen requested that these said dominions should be absolutely, and without any condition restored to the King: answer also was made to the reason of the Frenchmen, touching the oth of their King and themselves, whereby they were bound to conserue the integritie of the honour of their kingdome, to wit, that the Pope for the benefite of peace might assoile them from the said oth, and this as to certaine articles premitted, it should be very well done: but yet nothing was done that might be of force to the furthering of the peace. And so the Embassadors without effect returned home, the Bishop of Poerwich excepted, that deceased, and was buried there, to whom succeeded Thomas Percy.

The King of Nauarre through a brawle raised, slew Charles de Spaine, Marshall of France, whereupon to auoide the displeasure and punishment of the French King, he fled into his owne Countrey, sending his vncle vnto the Duke of Lancaster with letters humbly beseeching him that he would come into Poermandie to his aide and defence, and to receiue an oth of fidelitie and amittie of him against al men. The Duke therefore getting licence of the King, assembled together a great nauie at Southampton, where when the Duke was ready to haue made saile, Knights that he had sent into Poermandie, came backe to shew the truth of this business, by whom it was notified to the Duke, that the said King of Nauarre his cousin was reconciled to the King, and so the Dukes voyage was stayed.

The friers Augustines Church in London was redified by Humfrey Bohune Earle of Hereford and Essex, whose body was buried in the quire of the same Church.

A great dissention fell in Orford, betwene a Scholler and a Wintner, for a quarte of wine, so that the Scholler powzed the wine on the Wintners head, and brake his head with the pot, by reason whereof, a great conflict was made betwixt the Schollers of the Uniuersitie, and the lay men of the towne, in the which, many lay men were wounded, and about twenty slaine. These troubles continued the space of two dayes, and then the religious men of the towne labouring to make peace, the lay men pursued a Scholler, & wounded him to death, yet that day the tumult was appeased, but on the morrow, the people

Prior Hugues  
Rimes church  
in London.  
Ro. de Auesbury

Dissention at  
Orford.  
Hystoria Aurea.

of the villages about Oxfoꝛd, being confederate with the lay men of the towne came with great force, and erected a blacke banner, whereupon the Schollers fledde to their Colledges, but the Lay men breaking vp the doores, slew many of them, and thye we them into their pyuies: they cut and rent their bookes, and bare away what they liked. By this meanes the vniuersitie was dissolued, the Schollers (sauing of Oꝛtton Colledge) went vnto their friends, and so continued moze then a yere. Many, both Schollers and Lay men were indited by the kings Iustices, amongst the which, foure Burgeses that had been Pastors of Oxfoꝛd, were sent vnto the Tower of London.

Citizens of  
Oxfoꝛd embred

Road Auesbury

An. reg. 29.  
1355.

About the twentieth of Nouember, King Edward held a Parliament at Westminster, in the which was granted towards the recouerie of his title in France, fiftie shillings of euery sacke of Woll to be transpoted ouer the seas for the space of five yeres then next following, by meanes whereof, the King might daily dispend during the said five yeres, moze then one thousand marks sterling, for by the common opinion, there were moze then an hundred thousand sackes of Woll yerele into fozaine lands transpoted, so that during those five yeres, the said grant extended to 150000. pounds sterling.

Jussing at  
Woodstocke.

Parliament at  
Westminster.  
Road Auesbury

Vniuersitie of  
Oxfoꝛd restoꝛed.

King Edward held a great Jussing at Woodstocke, for honour of the Quene, who was then purifed of her sonne Thomas.

After Easter, in a Parliament at Westminster, the king toke the quarrell of Oxfoꝛd into his hands, and sauing euery mans right, he forgaue the schollers all the whole trespasse, so that in the summer following, the Vniuersitie began againe to flourish, and the king gaue to the Chancellour of Oxfoꝛd the onely view of the assise of bread, ale, and wine, and all other victuals, excludung the Maior utterly from that office. The communaltie of the Towne gaue to the Vniuersitie two hundred and fiftie pounds for amends, sauing vnto them neuerthelesse the actions which they had vnto euery singuler person of the Towne.

Ex Record.

In this Parliament, the procelle of the indgement made against Roger Mortimer Earle of March, was reuoked, deemed erroneous & false, so that the young Roger Mortimer, sonne to Edmond Mortimer, sonne and heire to Roger Mortimer, was restozed to the title and possessions of the Earledome of March, as cousin and heire to his grandfather.

King Edward  
sailed into  
Fraunce.

King Edward being about Sandwich, on his iourney towards Fraunce, and the Prince of Wales at Sutton in Deuonshire, on his voyage towards Aquitaine, looking for a prosperous wind, by the space of foztie dayes or moze, all things else being readie, the French King had his armies diuided in sundie places about in the hauens of Normandie, and other parts, to impeach the landing of the King and Prince, and so long they lay there, that the Frenchmen with their hired loubiours did sowly waste their owne Countrey, and consumed so many thousands of Crownes out of the French Kings coffers vainele, that in the ende he being needie, payde not his people, and so hee was forsaken of them, that when King Edward wasted Fraunce, the French King had not men to encounter him, but fledde before him, as hee followed, burning his owne Townes, and destroying victuals,



tuales, that the king should find neither harboꝝough nor meate.

After the moneth of August, the king of England, and the Duke of Lancaster, with seven thousand armed men, and their retinue, entred France, and by the space of nine daies journey, as they went, waſting all by fire that came in their way, and returning to Calcis, the king heard that the Scots entred by ſtealth, and had taken the Town of Warwike, the Baron of Grayſtroke being in the army with the king, to whom the charge of that Towne had been committed, whereupon the king haſted vnto Warwike, and with in ſiſtēne daies recouered the Towne againe, being deliuered vnto him, life and liberty to depart being giuen vnto them that were found therein.

Warwike taken  
by the Scots.

Warwike taken  
by the  
Englishmen.

After this he paſſed through Scotland vnto the Scottiſh ſea, but becauſe victuals ſayled for his army, the king giuing them licence, they all returned towards England. There followed on the taile of the army, by the ſpace of twelue miles, Robert Herle, Almerike de Saint Edmond, Robert de Hildeſley, and other, whom the Scots in the night ſeaſon found aſleepe and at reſt, doubting nothing of any miſadventure, wherefoze they gaue a cruell aſſault vpon them, with an hideous noyſe and crye, where, after long reſiſtance, Robert de Hildeſley, and Iohn Branceſter knights were taken priſoners, Robert Herle and Almericke hauing much adoe to eſcape, for the ſaid knights perceiuing the Scots to be too ſtrong for them, thought with themſelues, that their Lords being Barons, of whom they held in fee, would redēme them, and ſo wply withdrawing, deliuered them from the Scots captiuitie.

Henry Duke of Lancaſter being appointed chiefe Admirall of the Engliſh ſhawe, landed it at Hogges about the feaſt of Saint Bartholomew, and from thence rode towards Normandie, being accompanied with Philip, brother to the king of Nauarre, who deſired aide of the ſaid Duke, and requeſted him to come to helpe him. At this ſeaſon, the French king hauing the king of Nauarre, Geffrey Harecourt, and diuers other noble men in great ſuſpition, touching the Realine and Kingdome, bidde them all to a feaſt, where he toke the ſaid king of Nauarre, and caſt him in priſon, and murdered the reſt of the noble men, ſauing, Geffrey Harecourt, whom he cauſed to be beheaded with an axe.

The king of Nauarre being thus impriſoned, his brother Philip ſeaſed many Caſtels and holds into his hands which were in Normandy and thereabout, ſtrongly fortifying them with men and victuals, through the help of the Duke of Lancaſter, being manned as well with Engliſhmen, as with the men of the ſame Countrey, to withſtand the Frenchmen.

The ſame time when the king paſſed ouer to Calcis and France, his eldeſt ſonne Prince of Wales, hauing with him the Earles of Warwike, Suffolke, Salisburie, and Arſord, toke ſhipping in the beginning of October at Sutton Hauen in Deuonſhire, and luckily ſayled, and landed at Burdeaur, where he was honourably receiued by the Biſhop and Clergy being accompanied with all the common people in the firſt ſonday of that moneth: The ſonday following, the Prince going out, lodged two miles from Burdeaur, in the Caſtell of Arnoun. On the next day, he paſſed through a freight wood,

and

and

and so through the middle of the towne of Lougan, sometimes walled, but now defaced: and so passing on a long journey, he lost many horses, and came at length to the strong Castell of Wandreit. On Thursday he came to the Citie of Belas, hauing in it a Cathedral Church, and a couent of friers monks. On Friday proclamation was made in the army, that euery man should beare the armes of Saint George, and it was said that his enemies bare the same also. On Satterday he passed to the Castell of Pau, where stand thre castles of thre Lords, wherof one he weth a farre off.

On Friday the twelfth of that moneth, his army passed the lands of Morbiur, which are belonging to the Earle of Flur, this daies journey being long and tedious, hee lost many of his horses in the wast ground called the Launds. Two miles from the towne of Aurule, hee displayed his banners, and diuided his armie into diuers troupes. In the balward, whereto was thre thousand men of armes, were the earle of warlike high Constable, Reignold Cobham, Lord Marshall, Lord Beauchampe, a Somersetshire man, the Lord Clifford, and the Lord Thomas of Hampton, belonging to the Ancients, and with them seuen Barons of Gascoigne. In the middleward, whereto were seuen thousand men of armes, besides Clerkes and Pages, there was the Prince himselfe with a double Antient, the Earle of Oxford, the Lord Bartholomew Burwash, the Lord Iohn de Lile, the Lord Willowby, the Lord le Ware, the Lord Maurice Barkley, sonne to Thomas Lord Barkley then liuing, very olde, the Lord Iohn Bourlers, Lord Iohn Rose the elder of Burdeaur, Capitaine de la Busch, the Lord Camount, the Lord Mountferrant, with their antients. In the rereward was foure thousand men of armes, committed to the charge of the Earle of Suffolke, the Earle of Salisburie, and the Lord Pemers, who led the Vernences: In the whole army was of men of armes, Clerks, Pages, Archers, Bigants, and other, about 60000. men, and this day was Ienken Barefort, and diuers other made knights, and the village of Aurule, with thre other villages (wherof William Lord Raymond was Capitaine) were deliuered by vnto the Prince, whereto he lodged his army, and resting there two daies, as many as would were suffered to go out, and take victuals, and byent their enemies countrey. On Tuesday, they lodged in the towne of Mount Clere, where the Castell belonging thereunto was giuen by to the Prince, and after he left it againe to the Frenchmen, by reason of fire which brake by in the town, whereupon the Prince went out into the field, and lodged in his tentes, euer after refusing to lie in any towne. This day hauing taken thre towne, and burning them, hee made knights Gilotus de Straton, and diuers other. Also Iohn de Lile stricken with a quarrell at Ausage, died. On Wednesday and Thursday he lay still, and on Friday he came befoze the strong towne of Neegeron, where he lodged in his tentes. On Saterdag he came befoze Placence, a very faire town, & a strong, the inhabitants wherof fled away into the Castell, where the Earle of Polesni, and many knights were taken by Capitaine de la Bouch, and the Lord Mountferrant, & de Lonchis, who was that day made knight. On Sunday S. Lukes day, they staid at Elwant, and taking the fort of Gallan, by force, they set it on fire, and burnt it. On Sunday

day casting fire in the towne of Blacence, they passed along, leauing the towne of Beal Marchi on the right hand, and lodged befoze the towne of the Archbishop of Anser, called Le Wafe. On this day Richard Stafford brother vnto the Earle of Stafford, led his men with his Antient towarde the towne: and on the next day being Tuesday, the towne was yelded vnto him, and because it belonged to the Church, the Prince would not suffer any man to enter into it, excepting certaine persons appointed of purpose, for the deliuering of victualles. On Wednesday they leauing the faire towne of Escamout, on the left hand, they came befoze the noble towne of Gerand, belonging to the Earle of Comenge, which was full of armed souldiours, and the Prince lodged in the great monasterie of Bartons, in the which Abbey, there was not so much as one liuing creature found. On Thursday they lay still, doing no harme to the said Abbey. On Friday they went out of the faire and rich countrey of Arminake, and entered the countrey of Ausserike, through the which, the passage was very hard and hilly, and lodged at Saraunt a towne, they set it on fire, contrary to the commaundement of the prince.

All that day, and thre daies following, they passed alongst by the high hills of Aragon. On Saturday, they came to the towne of Saint Poze, where the rereward of the army lodged in a great monasterie of blacke monkes, which were all fled away: the middle ward at Vilfrankes, and the backward at Tremaine: these villages being very rich, and full of victualles, had no man in them, for all the inhabitants were fled.

Sunday the foure and twentieth of October, they passed a certaine sword, and entered into the lands of the Earle of Comenge, which reached vnto Tolouse, but these countreies were wasted with fire and sword, and leaning on the left hand the towne called Sannetere in Ausrike, the passed by the strong Citie of Alibers, where Pope Iohn the two and twentieth remouing the blacke monkes, erected a Bishops see, and they were lodged in a great & rich towne called Sotanco, belonging to the Earledome of Comenge, where was a couent of fraters minors: and burning this towne on Monday they passed through a goodly wide countrey, very plaine, and so came to the tows of Saint Joy, and Saint Liz. On Tuesday they rested: and on Wednesday being the feast of Simon and Iude, the army passed through the riuer of Geround, being a water very fierce, stony and terrible: and againe the same day, through the riuer of Arage, much more dangerous, and came vnto Tolouse: befoze that time, neuer durst any horseman passe ouer these waters, wherfore the people of this countrey being wonderfully made afraid, could not tell what to doe, for being sodainly taken, they could not flee: that night, the prince lodged at Algard, a little towne, one mile from Tolouse. On Tuesday they came vnto the faire and great town called Mount Giffard, being part of the inheritance of the Lord Almerike de la Fossad, the which town the French king had taken from him, because he was the king of Englandes sedeman. Fast by the said towne were twelue Windmilles, the which they set on fire all at once. There were taken two espies, they certified the Prince that the Earle of Arminake was at Tolouse, and the Conneftable of

France at Mount Paban, foure leagues from Tolouse. On Friday, they passed on towards Auinion, by the good towne of Basige, and the Towne called Franke, and the whole armie lodged at the great Towne called Autonet, and the middle ward and rereward lay in one side of the Suburbs, and the halward lay on the other side of the Towne, which the townesmen perceiving, fled everie one.

There were about this town twentie Windmills, which they set on fire. On Satterday the last of October, they lodged in the great Towne called Clastalnanner, where a Church of the Chanons, a couent of Friers Monozs, and another of Carmelites, with an Hospitall, and a village called Les mauns de Pucels, with a couent of Friers Augustines, were all consumed with fire. On Sunday, the feast of All saints, the army rested, out of the which armie, certaine going to take botties, they toke a little Towne, the inhabitants wherof to be spared from spoyling, gaue them ten thousand florens of gold. On Monday they marched along by y<sup>e</sup> townes of S. Mathele Port, and the great Town called Wilkapinch, and from thence, they entered the Countrey of Carkason, & the Prince lodged at a little village called Alse. On Tuesday they came to Carkason, a faire Towne, rich & well built, bigger then London. Within the wals, betwixt the towne of Sanburge, and the City being double walled, there ran a goodly water, which passed vnder a faire stone bridge, at the foote wherof, were foure couents of religious, of the which, the Friers ran not away, but the other fled into the Citie. The whole armie was lodged in the Towne, which abounded with Muscadell, and all other delicate victualles. This day, the sonnes of the Lord Libret, and Maister Bassier, with Rowland Daues, and many other, were made knights.

Carkason in  
France burnt.

On Wednesday and Thursday, the armie lying still in the Towne, and hauing made a truce, they parlied with them of the Citie concerning a peace, the Citizens offering for sauing the Towne from burning two hundred and fiftie thousand of golden Soules: the Prince answered, he came not for gold, but to take Cities and Townes, together with their inhabitants, and the next day commaunded the Towne to be burnt.

On Friday, the Towne being burnt, the armie departed, leaning on the left hand the Castell of Botenake untouched, passing through the champaigne Countrey, burning Townes called la Rustican, and all the countrey therabout.

On Satterday they trauelled through a great wind and dust, leaving on the left hand a great poole of fresh water, being in compasse about xxx. leagues, and is called Casibon. They came to a Towne called Silony, which was yielded to the Prince, and therefore neuer touched: and the Prince was lodged that night at a good towne called Canet. On Sunday the eight day of Nouember, they passed the water of Sandey, partly at the ford called Chastell de Terre, and partly ouer a bridge, and so trauelled betwixt high hills, vnto the great Citie of Parbon, whereof that Countrey taking his name is called Gallia Narbonensis. The Citie was verie strong, and well walled, hauing in it a great Cathedraall Church: also a notable Castle, belonging to the

Bishop



Bishop, a verie strong Tower for the Earle of the same Towne. It had also a Suburbe called a Borough, much bigger, and better built, then the Borough of Carcalon.

In the Borough were foure Couents of religious persons. Betwixt the Borough and the Citie, there runneth a water called Ande, comming from Carcalon, and runneth into the Greekish sea. Betwixt the Citie and the Borough are two bridges of stone, and the third of timber, built with store-houses for diuers Merchandises. The prince was lodged in the house of Carmelite friars. On Tuesday the Borough being set on fire, the armie passing to the waters side, went ouer it in diuers places. From thence, they went and lodged at the Towne and Castell of Ambion. On Wednesday they travelled an euill iourney, and hurtfull to the horse for lacke of water. On Thursday Theodorike Dale, Porter of the Princes chamber, was made Knight: thence the armie passed by a good Town called Almes: the middleward passed vnto the good Towne of the Earle of Aile, called Arnile, where they lodged that night. The Prince lay at the Friers Priours, where was great abundance of Muskabell, being prouided for the Countesse of the Aile, which was all spoiled. This day also, the good Towne of Pipions was destroyed, with the Castle therof called Redote. On Friday, the army passing by a long stonie way, lodged at Lamlan. On Saturday, returning backe toward Gascoigne, they left on their right hand the great pole of Esboue, and Carcalon, and all the iourney that they went befoze, and the reuerward lodged at a good Towne called Abier, and the middleward at Puchfancies, where a Castle being defended, withstood them a season, but at the length was woon, and the Prince lay beyond the Bridge, by a fayze running water, on both sides wherof, the Countrey was spoiled with fire, together with the good Towne of Besaunce where the backward was lodged that night. On Sunday they travelled a long iourney, because the Prince should be lodged in the great Abbey of our Lady de Prolion, where in seuerall Cloysters did liue 100. Predicants, wherunto, the Prince was deuoutly receiued. In the day, the armie set on fire the Towne of Lemins, where there was farre greater Couents of Religious, then at Carcalon. Also, they burnt the faire Towne called Falanges, vnto which Towne belonged one and twentie Windmilles. They burnt also the Townes of Anlard, and Serre, with all the whole Countrey lying thereabouts. On Monday the middleward lodged at the good Towne called Dealpughon, which long time was defended, but at length gotten by force, the Castell wherof yielded, vnto the which Towne and Castell, the Prince commaunded, that no harme should be done by fire. On Tuesday early passing ouer the river of Beseille, they entered into a countrey which was broad. About one a clocke, they came befoze a great Abbey called Bourghbon, where the Earle of Flurens with great joy receiued the Prince, hee being newly escaped out of prison from Paris, where he had laine by the space of two yéars: and the said earle remained from that time faithfull to the Prince. This day they rode in the Lordships and seignories of the same Earle, by the towne of Pafel and Colmon, and on the

right hand they passed by the great towne of Saint Canole, and the high Castell called Hautripe: but on this day they brent nothing for reuerence of the foresaid Carle & his vineyards, but passed againe ouer the water of Arage, leauing also Tolouse as they did at the first, but then one mile on the left hand, and now foure leagues on the right, and the middle ward was lodged in the great towne of Permount, which together with the Castell was brent. On Wednesday, they passed by the Castell of the Carle of Flure called Mounthane, at the foote wherof, all the horsemen passed ouer the great water Geround, & there toke the towne and castell of North, then leauing the riuer of Gerond on the left hand, and so passed vnto the towne of Parconaw, which they toke: then they returned ouer the riuer againe, & toke the strong town of Carbone. On Thursday the army rested. On Friday word was brought to the Prince that the french were by, and had gathered a great force, which they had deuised into fine great battels, being in the field not farre from them, wherupon our me set themselves in battel aray, about one mile from the place where they lodged, and being now ready to fight, some one of the souldiers by chance start a hare, whereupon a great shout was made, which the enemies hearing, they sent out fourty light horsemen, to see what was the cause thereof, who drawing nigh to the English army, and perceiuing them to be set in battell aray, returned backe againe, and declared what they had seene: whereupon presently the whole army of frenchmen fled with great feare. The same day Bartholomew Burwash, John Chandos, and James de Audley, with 24. light horsemen, were appointed scouters, and comming to the taile of the frenchmen, they toke prisoners 32. Knights and Gentlemen, amongst whom they toke the Carle of Comeme, also they slue many Carters, and Wagoners. The Prince lodged in the town of Puwose. On Saturday they marched to the Castle of Dradry, in which Castle the Prince lodged, and in the morning they burnt it. On Sunday the two and twentieth of Nouember, about euening, they perceiued that their enemies were on the other side of the great Hill hard by the great town of Gemount, so that the Englishmen being benighted, sent out 1r. light horsemen, and certaine bowmen vnto the right hand of the towne called Auremount, where finding 400. men of armes of the Constable of Fraunce, they chased them out of the town, and slew and toke many: the middle Ward lodged at Auremount, and the Ward at Colimont. Early in the morning the Wagoners being commanded to remaine in the towne of Auremount, all the residue being diuided into troupes, went into the field, waiting for the comming of their enemies, all in vaine: for the prince taking the towne of Gaimount, was told that his enemies fled away at midnight. On Tuesday the army lodged in the field, and for lacke of water, their horse were faine to drinke wine, wherupon it came to passe, that the next day their horses were so drunke they could not go right forth, and many of them died. On Saint Katherines day, with much adoe they came to water, and leauing the towne of Florence on their right hand, they passed to the great towne called Sillard, and the middle ward was lodged at a towne called Realmount, which they toke by maine force, & therefore brent it. On

Thursday

Thursday they rested. On Friday they traualled a long iourney, by walled towne and strong castles, the middle ward lodged at Serde. On Satterday they passed ouer a certaine Water with great difficultie, and through womes, till they came to a good towne called Melin. On Sunday the pzince rested, and toke homage and oathes of the townsmen. On Monday S. Andrewes day trauellling a long iourney, they came to the town of Tolouise, where were thre Castles. On Tuesday the pzince trauelled to the castle of Melan, where belodged. On Wednesday the pzince came to Regla, where his hozses and Wagons passed through the riuier of Gerond. In this towne of Regla, the pzince appointed diuers Barons and such like to winter in diuers places of the Marches, to the intent they should keepe the inland parts of Gascoigne against the Frenchmen.

An. reg. 30.

The pzince of Wales touching these matters aforesaid, and for other considerations also, caused a new coyne of gold to be made in Gascoigne, being busied himselfe about the repairing of such things as were decayed & throlwen downe. And in this season, there sprang by a foolish fantasie in the French mens heads, that the k. of England was come into Normandy, the cause of which rumour rose by, for that the Duke of Lancaster, after that he had fortified the strong places belonging to the k. of Fawarre, which were in the Ile of Constance & other places, did direct his iourney towards Brytaine, wherof he was newly made chiefe captaine. Another cause was this, Philip brother to the king of Fawarre, came into England, and earnestly craved aid of the king against the French king, who kept his brother in prison, that hee might by force of armes restore all such lands vnto him as were wrongfully withhelden from him, whereupon hee offering to do homage and fealtie, had (of the kings appointment) Miles Stapleton a man of great integritie, and in martiall affaires verie skilfull, him (I say) the king appointed to be his faithfull fellow. These men with two thousand men wel appointed traueling through Normandy, toke towne & fortresses, burning diuers of them, passing along till they came to a castle nine leagues distant from the Citie of Paris: neither did they assake their trauell, untill they had forced their enemies to enter into a pcerely truce. By this meanes a great report and no lesse seare filled the hearts of the Frenchmen, which reporte at length came to the eares of the Pzince lying at Regla, wherefore he gathering all the power hee had with him in his Dukedome, to the intent to mete his Father, which hee must doe by traueilling through Fraunce, hee came at length to Bragetat, where hee was certified that the Earle of Armentia, would after his departure haue spoyled the Countrey, and for that intent had prouided a great band of men: wherefore hee sent backe to the Gouvernour of Gascoigne vnto Bernard de Liber, and other. From thence the pzince went into France through the coastes of Berry and Limon, still encouraging his men against their enemies, sending before him John Chandos, James Dawdeley, and other complices, to trie out the state of their enemies Countrey, least perhaps some crafty ambushmet might sodainly assault our men, afore they were aware. He himselfe remouing his campe euery day, and now being entred into Picautia,

1356.

his espies brought word that the French king had gathered a great armie, being now in Aurelian, who also knew of the princes comming, so he sent out espies to discover our armie, amongst whom Griffin Micco of Chamblay, petie captaine of two hundred men, meeting with other espies, came to his coast: so our espies took the thirty of them, and due the residue, so that there was not one of them left to carry word what was become of their fellows. Our espies proceeded towards Romerentine, where meeting with the Lord Crone, and Lord Bilgand, they set upon them and due them, their chiefe Captains being forced to flee to a Castle, and having taken their lodging in a Towne, the prince commanded that on the morning a great assault should be given to them of the Castle.

The day following our men being all armed, passed through the ditches, and came unto the wals of the Castle, some applied to scale the wal with ladders, some burne the gates, and entring, due a great many of the chiefe men, but the Lords before named fled unto the principall tower of the castle: but the prince determined not to depart, till they that were besieged, were either taken or yielded: at length the Castle being undermined, the men besieged, with all humilitie yielded up the Castle. After this the spies declared that the French king was come down to Turon, to provide armies to go against the Prince, of the which tidings the Prince being glad, he pight his tentes against the French king, but could not passe the river of Leger, by reason of great floods, and the French king had broken all the Bridges, to the intent there should be no passage betwixt the Prince & the Duke of Lancaster, whose armies might wel every night perceiue each others fires in the Campes: but the Prince following alongst the river of Legers Eastward, he pight his tentes nere unto Turon, where looking for the French king foure daies, hoping to fight with him, for that he was distant but one league off, he understood that the French king was rettyed backe to Blamie, ten leagues off: passing ouer by a Bridge the River of Legers at a place used betwixt two strong Townes, and so toward Poitiers. This rettying of the French king certified, the prince returned backe, intending to haue met him in the way, which he could not doe: yet crossing ouer all, as he imagined the nêrer way, he set upon the taile of his enemies, and cut from them the Carles of Anyni and Winters, and also the marshal of Burgony, these being taken, died, as was thought, through the great toyle they had taken: night drawing on, our men gaue themselves to rest in a wood, intending the next day to take their iourney toward Poitiers, and by the way they were certified that the French king, with great provision prepared himselfe to battell, and drew nigh to our tentes: the prince therfore committed the halward of the armie to the Carles of Warwicke and Drford, the middle ward was guided by the Prince, and the reerward was led by the Carles of Salisburie and Suffolke. In all the whole armie of the Prince there was not aboue foure thousand men of armes, one thousand armed souldiours, and two thousand Archers. The pompous nobility of the Frenchmen drew nigh, greatly disdainning the small company of the English men, for they had in number eight thousand fighting souldiours, they had also

seuen



seuen Antients. At this matter a great many of our men murmured, because of late a great part of our army was sent to defend Calcoigne. There was among the Frenchmen a certaine Scot called William Douglas, a man of great force and practise in the warres: this man did the French King make knight, and because he knew he would be a deadly enemy to the Englishmen, he gladly hearkened to his aduices. This William was captaine ouer two hundred Scots: these men vnderstood well that it was the custome of the Englishmen in those dayes to fight on foote, in which point they folowed the Scots, and the Scot also prouoked the French King and other French men to fight in like manner. The French King obeying his foolish counsell, gladly agreed vnto his sayings, whereupon he sent light horsemen into the Citty, that they should suffer no man to make any chase, but onely 500. horsemen wel appointed to come out against the archers, in the beginning of the conflict, and to run them ouer and to tread them vnder their horse feet: but these performed not that which was commaunded them, as it appeared by the sequelle thereof. The armies being set in a readinesse on both sides for to fight earely on Sunday in the morning which was notable sayre, behold there came the Cardinall of Petrargozen, and charged the Prince, in the name of God who was crucified, that it might please him to deferre the warre for a time, both for ecclesiasticall peace, and also for the sparing of Christian blood, and to the end there might be a treatie had of peace, the which he promised should be performed with great honour on both sides. The Prince neither feared nor refused peace but modestly agreed to the request of this Father. All this day now being appointed for the obtaining of peace, the armie of the Frenchmen increased by the number of a thousand men of armes, and also of other. On the morrowe after, the Cardinall came againe from the French King, in his behalfe to request a truce, which should endure for one whole yeere, the which the Prince denyed, yet at the importunate sute of that Cardinall, he graunted a truce to continue till Christmas next comming. Therefore the Cardinall returning to the French King, requested him of pledges for the truce, but the Marshall Dawdenam, Geoffrey de Charney and Douglas the Scot, perswaded him that by common reason it could not come to passe that the Englishmen should at that time preuaile, and especially, because they were but fewe, and in a strange country, and wearied out miserably with their toyle in trauell, and therefore not able to indure so great a number of the Frenchmen of France, who stood in defence of their owne land. The Prince of Wales being certified, that the captaines of the French, would haue no kind of peace, but such as they could get by force of armes, and calling his men together, he made to them an Oracion first in general, and then to his Archers as foloweth: your manhood (saith he) hath binallwaies knowne to me, in great dangers, which sheweth that you are not degenerate from true sonnes of English men, but to be descended from the blood of them which heretofore were vnder my fathers Dukedome, and his predecessor Kings of England, vnto who no labor was painefull, no place inuincible, no ground vnpassable, no hill (were it neuer so high) inaccessible, no tower vnscalable, no army impenetrable, no armed souldiour, or whole host

Prince of  
Wales his  
Oracion.

of men was forinwardable. Their lively couragiousnesse tamed the Frenchmen, the Cipzians, the Syracussians, the Calabzians, & the Palestines, and brought vnder the stiffe necked Scots, & vnruly Irishmen, yea, and the Welchmen also, which could well endure all laboz, Occasion, time, and dangers, maketh of fearefull, very strong an skoute, & both many times of dull witted men make wittie: honour also, and loue of the Countrey, and the desire of the rich spoyle of the Frenchmen, both stirre you vp to follow your fathers steps. Wherefore followe your Antientes, and wholly be intentiue to follow the commandement of your Captaines as well in minde as in body, that if victorie come with life, we may still continue in firme frendship together, hauing alwayes one will, and one minde: but if enuious fortune (which God forbide) should let vs at this present, to runne the race of all flesh, and that we ende both life and labour together, be you sure that your names shall not want eternall fame and heauenly ioy, and we also with these gentlemen our companions, will drinke of the same cuppe that you shall doe, vnto whom it shall be an eternall glozy and name, to haue wonne the nobilitie of France: but to be overcome (as God forbide) is not to be ascribed vnto the danger of time, but to the courage of the men. Hauing spoken these wordes, he perceiued that there was a hill hard by which was planted on the top with hedges and ditches, the inside whercof was very plaine, and a pasture fielde on the one side thereof, with many rough bushes, and on the other side it was all planted with vines, and the residue was plaine, in the top whereof he did imagine the armie of the French to lye betwixt our men and the Hill. There were great and lowe valleys, and a piece of Parish ground. One company of the Prince finding out a narrowe passage, entred the valley and toke the hill, where among the bushes they hid themselves, taking the aduantage of the place. The fielde wherein our men lay, to witte, the barwarde and iniddlewarde, was deuided from the plaine where the French armie lay, with a long hedge and ditch, the one end whereof did reach down to the Parish aforesaid: that of the Hill next the Parish, the Earle of Warwicke kept, Captaine of the barwarde. In the upper part of the hedge, toward the hanging of the hill, there was a great gap, from the which a stoness cast stode our rereward, ouer the which the Earle of Salisbury was Captaine. Our enemies perceyuing our Princes Antient to be displayed, and oftentimes to be remoued from place to place, and by reason of the Hill to be sometime quiste out of sight, they iudged that the Prince fled; yet Douglas the Scot and Marshall de Clarimount, said that it was not so, but Marshall Dawdenam being deceined in his owne opinion, thought otherwise, crying out still to follow & chase the Prince now fleeing, and with him also Douglas, to the intent to gette preferment and a worthy name of his new warfare: But Clarimount to wash away the euill opinion which was conceiued of him touching his fidelitie, was the more beehement to perswade them forward, for vnto them the charge of the barward was deputed: before these went out, the fashion was, certaine to chase and to iusse, against whom certaine that were vnder the Hill of our barward came to meete Marshall Dawdenam, who staying to see the ende of the iussing, kept himselfe from encountering.

encountring. In the meane time Clarimount thinking to come out by the gap in the hedge, and so to come at the backe of our barwarde, and to compasse them in, met with the Earle of Salisburie, who perceiving his coming and purpose, suspected his whole intent, and so they which governed our rearward, making haste to take the gap, and keepe the enemy from passing that way sustained the first charge of the battell. Then began a terrible meeting betwixt the armed men, who laid on load with swoordes and speares, neither did the Archers slacke their dutie, but lying in safe trenches, start by above the ditch and shot over the hedge, prevailing more with their arrowes then they did that fought in armes: thus our rearward slaying the enemies, who came stragling to the gap, and the barward which lay on the hanging of the hill toward the parish being governed by the Earle of Warwike, were alwayes readie and met with the frenchmen, beating them downe. The Archers of the barward were placed in the parish, out of daunger from the Horsesmen, yet for all that they did prevaille there somewhat, for the Horsesmen were appointed to no other purpose, but to overrunne the Archers. The Earle of Orford considering the discommoditie that might ensue thereof, departed from the Princes warde, and leading with him the Archers, set them on the one side of the frenchmen, commaunding them to shote at the hinder parts of the Horses, by meanes whereof the horses being gauld and wounded, fell to tumbling with them that sat on their backs, or els turned backe & ran upon them that followed after, making great slaughter upon their owne masters. The hoesmen being thus beaten backe, the Archers retired towards the place from whence they came, shooting & gawling the sides of the frenchmen which fought right over against them: by this time the force and beate of the battell began to be in prime, when as the Earles of Warwike & Salisburie, like fierce Lions, endeoured of purpose which of them should dung the land of Boyters most with frenchmens blood. Neither was the wise Counseller Thomas Dafford of Suffolke idle at that season, who right worthily in all his acts behaved himselfe, being expert and skilfull in activitie. For he continually running from warde to warde, and into all troupes and companies, comforted and stirred them up with good words to doe well, having a great regard that the youthfull sort of lustie souldiers being too bolde upon their good hearts and courage, should not without regard goe out too farre, and placed the Archers at sundry times to great advantages, and oftentimes as leysure would suffer him, he would encourage by the minds of the souldiers. Clarimount was slaine, William Douglas also being wounded fled, having with him a selve Scottes of his bande, with Archebald Douglas his brother: our men retyring, put themselves in good aray, and our barward and middle warde ioyned themselves together, by and by there marcheth forth a newe armie of the frenchmen, the which the eldest sonne of the french king Dolphin of Aenna, brought forth. The order and aray of this armie was more terrible & fierce then the shew of that which was last oppressed, yet for all that could it not make our men afraid, who were sharpe set, and very desirous of honour, and also of reuenge, both for themselves, and their fellows, which a

little

little before were slaine and wounded. And therefore boldly they goe to ft on both sides, making shewes and noises, crying out, Saint George to barrow, or Saint Denis be for vs. Within a while they were come to fight man to man, and every man ready to die fight now to saue their liues, neither doth the Lion make the wolfe more afraid, or y Tiger is more terrible to the simple beast, then our lusty gentlemen were to their enemies, who chased them, and slue them like as the wolues chase and kill sheepe. And though that this battel withstod our men more then the first, yet, after they had lost a great many of their men, they had such a deuile, that they saued many, & yet, not by running away, but by a faire retreat, which the Frenchmen are accustomed to vse. But our men considering, that the victorie of the fiede was doubtfull, as long as the French King might be in pzeence with his armie, who lay there halfe hid in a Walley, they would not after ward, when they had chased any that fled, goe out of the fiede, but the worthy man Maurice Barkeley, sonne of Thomas Barkley, had no regard thereunto, who for the space off two houres together with his men, neuer spared, but would be still in the forefront of the battell, inuading his enemies with the first. This Maurice being in the middell of the Dolphins gard sowd blowes among them, first with a speare, then with a swozd, and at length being all alone compassed with the multitude, and sorely wounded, he was taken prisoner. In the meane time our men caried those which were wounded of their campe, and laid them vnder bushes and hedges out of the way, other hauing spent their weapons toke the speares & swozdes from them whom they had ouercome: and the archers lacking arrowes, made halt to drawe them from poze wretches that were but halfe dead: there was not one of them al, but either he was wounded or quite wearied with great labour, except 400. me who keeping the chiefe standert, were appointed to mete the French K. The Dolphin being thus put to flight, one came to the French K. and said, my Lord K. the fiede is fallen to the Englishmen, and your eldest son hath withdrawn himselfe: vnto whom the French K. answered with an oth, that he would not that day forsake y field vnlesse he were taken or slaine, and so by that meanes caried away by force: wherefore the antient-bearers are commanded to march for wards, after whom folloved two great companies of armed men into a wide field, the wing themselves to our men, & stroke a great feare into their heartes, in so much that they were out of hope to conquer any more. The which thing a man of great wisdom standing by y Prince signified with a howling voice, (saying alas we poze wretches are ouercome,) but the prince hauing a great trust & saith in Christ, checked him saying, thou liest thou dastardly fellow, for thou canst not say that we can be ouercome as long as I liue. Capitaine de la Buche, a noble man in all affaires as sone as he perceined the armie of the French King, marching forth of their tentes, asking licence of the prince departed away with 1r. souldiours, & a hundred Archers, whom many of our men thought to haue fled away, therefore our souldiours (excepting the chiefe Capitaines) being quite out of hope of victorie, committed themselves wholly to the mercy of God. Then the Prince commanded his Antient bearger Sir Walter Woodland, to march forward toward his enemies,



mies, and with a few fresh men he toynd battell with the great armie of the French King: by and by they sounde their trumpets, one giuing answere to another, they made such a noyse, that the walles of Woypers sounded with the Echo thereof like a wood, in such sort that a man would haue thought that the hills had bellowed out to the vallets, and that the cloudes had giuen forth a most terrible thunder, to the which there wanted no cruel lightnings, whilest the aire shone on the bright armour & speares dashing against shining harness. Then came on the cruell company of crosbowmen making a darknes in the skies with the multitud of quarrels which they shot, against whom came a worthy company of English bowmen: out flies also darts of Ash which met with the enemye a far off: but the French army being full of diuers troupes and many armed men defending their breasts with their shields, passed forward against their enemies: wherefore our Archers hauing emptied their quiers in vaine, being armed onely with swordes and targets, are faine to encounter with them that were laden with armour. Then bestirreth himself the worthy Prince of Wales, cutting and hewing the Frenchmen with a sharpe sword. In the meane time Captaine de la Buche marcheth a compasse about, vnder the hanging of the hill, which he with the Prince a little before forsooke, and priuily compassing about the fildes, at the length cometh close vnder the place where the French Campe lay, from thence he ascended to the toppe of the Hill that way, which the Frenchmen had beaten with their trauaile, and so sodainly breaking forth vnlooked for, and shewing by the ensigne of Saint George that he was our friend, the Prince with great courage giueth a fresh charge on the French armie, being desirous to breake their ranks, before the Captaine aforesayde, should set on the side of the battayle. The Prince lustily encountring with his enemies goeth into the middle of the throng, and where hee seeth most company, there hee layeth about him on every side.

In the meane time on every side, his friends which serued with Captaine de la Buche, were at the backes of the enemies, beating downe and killing without pittie, and the Archers also placed for the purpose shot so thicke, wounding the backes and sides of the Frenchmen, in such sort, that the fourme of the battaile was quite spoiled, neither could they put themselves in order or aray any more. This was the courage of the Prince who at the length thrusteth thorow the throngs of them that guarded the French King, then should you see an Antient begonne to nod and stumble, the bearers of them to fall downe, the blood of haues and Princes ran mingled together into the fountains which were nigh. In like sorte the Boze of Coznewall rageth, who seeketh to haue none other way to the French Kings Standard, then by blood onely: but when they came there, they met with a company of stout men to withstand them, the Englishmen fight, the Frenchmen also lay on, but at length Fortune making haste to turne her wheele, the Prince preaseth forward on his enemies, and like a fierce Lion beating downe the proud, he came to the yelding vp of the French King. The Frenchmen being scattered abroad in the fildes of Woypers perceyuing that the Standard with the  
f. w. j. edeluce

flowedeluce was beaten downe, fled with all speede towards the Towne, which was not farre off: the English men percepuing them to be fleeing, though themselves were either soze wounded oz wearied, followed them in chalc euen to the gates of Doyters, where in a great skirmish and very dangerous, they slew a great number of Frenchmen. At the last our men being called backe by retreat with the sound of trumpet, and assembling togither, there were diuerse pavilions and tents set vp in the fields, and the whole company being thzoughly comforted with this victorie, gaue their whole endeavour to prouide for them that were wounded, for the quiet rest of them that were wearied, for safe keeping of them that were taken prisoners, and for the refreshing of the that were almost famished, until they had full vnderstanding who and how many were wanting: Among them which were found halfe dead, was found the Lord James Dawdley, by reason of his broad buckler, and being caried in the armes of his souldiours, was brought to the Prince lodging, and the Prince himselfe rose from his supper, and came to him, and caused him to be stripped and laid in a soft bed, and being somewhat better com to his remembraunce, the Prince comforted him, swearing to him that he had the French King yelded vnto him, which newes when the languishing Noble man heard, he straightwayes refused. The Prince returning to the French King, willed him not to denie that to be a worthise dede of his that rose from his supper to comfort him that was almost dead, who spared not his owne blood to purchase victorie. After that they hauing had some talke concerning the warres which James Dawdeley made, the French King said that amongst all other Route Champions which valiantly that day behaued themselves, he did greatly wonder at the noble deedes of that Knight, and he spake not much moze in all his supper, but what he spake to the Prince, who comforted his noble pray. Such like words, it is said that the French King spake: Although it be our chance to fall into an euerlasting sorrow, yet for all that we thought it good to refraine from the same by a kind of measure, for though we be vnder subiection by law and right of warre vnder our noble cousin, yet are we not as rascals, oz faint hearted runne awapes, oz taken lying hid close in a corner, but after the manner of the fiede by the ende and successe of warre, where we were as ready to dye as liue for iustice sake. And in the same fiede were many rich men taken, whose liues were reserved for ransome, the faint hearted and lewd chased away, but the worthiest and stoutest were spoiled of their liues. This battell of Doytiers was fought on the ninetenth day of September.

The next day after the battell, all the prisoners were numbred, to wit, the French King, also Phillip his sonne, the Archbishop of Senon, the Earle of Pontue, the Earle of Longuile, the Earle of Ewe, the Earle of Tankerulle, the Earle Daunter, the Earle of Wendadour, the Earle of Slauncer, the earle of Madrimonut, the Earle of Wandome, the Earle of Japny, the Earle Don Martin, the Earle of Selabuse, the Earle of Sasso, Vicount Perbon, the Lord Daubeny, Marshall Daubdenam, the Lord Guinchard de Angle, Seneschal de Seintong, the Lord Poyes Paluinmet, the Lord Leonard de Cusi-

hop,

boy, the Seneſſhal of Woyters, the Lord great Maſter, the chiefe Maſter of the hoſpitall of Spaigne, the Lord of S. Tigre, the Lord Dambopd Seneſſhal of Annar, the Lord Tower, the Lord Wars, the Lord Duruall, the Lord of the towne of Crnel, the Lord Maugeler, the Lord Blanke, the Account de Belſmount, and the Lord of Sulp: there were alſo the bodles founde of many that were ſlaine, as the Duke of Burbon, the Duke Daſſnes, the Conſtable of France, Marſhall de Garimount, the Lord Geſtreſſey de Charney, the Lord Wounce, the Biſhop of Chaloner, the Lord of Laundbas, the Lord Kipemount, the Lord Chaneny, the Lord Jocle, the Lord ſpele, the Lord Auger, the Lord de Mount John, the Lord Dargenton, the Lord Grole, the Lord Ruas, the Lord Rocheſchichelward, the Lord de Wilem. The Prince bought all the priſoners and captiues of them that kept them, and carried them with him to Burdeaur, there to remaine in ſafe cuſtodie, during his abode there.

Edward Prince of Wales returning into England with Iohn the French King, Philip his ſonne, and many other priſoners, arrived at Plimouth on the ſixt of May, and the ſoure and twentieth of May entered London with them, where he was receiued with great honour of the Citizens, and ſo conueyed to the Kings pallace at Weſtminſter, where the King ſitting in his eſtate in Weſtminſter hall, receiued them, and after conueyed the French King to a lodging, where he lay a ſeaſon: and after the ſaid French King was lodged in the Hauop, (which then was a pleaſant place belonging to the Duke of Lancaſter.) In the winter following were great and royall Juſts holden in Smithfield at London, where many knightly fights of armes were don, to the great honour of the King and Realme, at the which were preſent, the Kings of England, France, and Scotland, with many noble eſtates of all thoſe kingdomes, whereof the moze part of the ſtrangers were priſoners.

After this taking of King Iohn of France, Engliſhmen (which beſore were bearded and the haire of their heads ſhort rounded) then uſed long haire on their heads, and their beards to be ſhauen.

Henry Picard Mintner, Maior of London, in one day did ſumptuouſly feaſt Edward King of England, Iohn King of France, the King of Cipres (then arrived in England) David King of Scots, Edward Prince of Wales, with many noble men and other, and after the ſaid Henry Picard kept his hal againſt all comers whoſoeuer, that were willing to play at dice and hazard. In like manner the Lady Margaret his wife did alſo keepe her Chamber, to the ſame intent. The King of Ciprus playing with Henry Picard in his hall, did winne of him fifty marks, but Henry being very ſkilful in that arte, altering his hand did after win of the ſame King, the ſame fiftie markes, and fiftie markes moze, which whē the ſame King began to take in ill part, although he diſsembled the ſame, Henry ſaid vnto him, My Lord a King be not agreued, I couet not your gold but your play, ſo: I haue not bid you hither that I might graue you, but that amongſt other things I might trie your play, and gaue him his money againe, plentifully beſtowing of his own amongſt the retinue: beſides, he gaue many rich gifts to the King and other nobles and Knights, which dined with him, to the great glorie of the Citizens of London in thoſe dayes.

An. reg. 31.

1357.

Edward the  
blacke prince  
returned with  
his priſoners  
into England.Juſts in  
Smithfield.Beards of  
Engliſhmen  
ſhauen.The maior of  
London feaſted  
ſoure Kings.

About

About Hallo wntide, Dauid le Bruse King of Scottes was deliuered from the long imprisonment of xi. yeres, in the castle of Dordham, his ranome being let 100000. markes to be payde the next tenne yeres following.

*Ann. reg. 32.*

1358.

Tho. Walling.  
Robert  
Knowles.

Normandy and Wyrtaine were soze spoyled and wasted by Philip the King of Frauers brother, Iacob de la Pipe, and Robert Knowles, with many other Englishmen which were captaines of that company, who raged in warlike sort in these Countries, the space of thre yeres and moze, contrary to the King of Englands pleasure. This Robert Knowles being a meane man of birth became Captaine of many souldiours, and did many maruellous acts.

Registrum fra-  
trum minorum.

Isabel daughter to Philip the faire, King of France, and wife to King Edward the second, deceased, *apud Rissinges iuxta London* the xxii. of August, and was buryed in the midst of the grey Friers quire at London, in a tombe of Alabastrer.

Castle at  
Windsore  
enlarged.

This yere King Edward began the new building in the castle of Windsor, where he was bozne, for which cause he procured to adorne that place with larger and moze beautifull buildings: he appointed surueyours of this worke William Wicham a prouident and discrete man. But the Kepe then called the round Table was begunne (as afoze is shewed) in the 18. yere of his reigne. The same yere died the noble and famous personages, to wit, Sir Roger Mortimer Earle Marshal of the Kings hoste, and one of his especiallest priuie Counsellours in Burgundy, in the towne of Moneray, he was buried at Alligmoze, Thomas Earle of Orford, Iohn le Grey Steward of England, Geoffrey de Say, and many other. And in the Kings armie that was beyond the sea there died aboue a thousand men of account. Also Geoffrey de Northbriggis Bishop of Chichester deceased, and Robert de Stratton succeded.

*Ann. reg. 33.*

1359.

John Beauchampe  
champe, buried  
in Paules.

Iohn of Gaunt the Kings sonne (by dispensation) toke to wife Blanch, daughter of Henry Duke of Lancaster his kinswoman, Iohn Beauchampe Constable of Douer, warden of the portes, Knight of the Garter (sonne to Edward de Beauchampe, Earle of Marwike, and brother to Thomas also Earle of Marwike) deceased, and was buried on the south side of the middle Ile in the body of Saint Pauls Church in London; a faire Monument of him remaineth there, by many ignorant people, misnamed, to be of Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, who lyeth honorably intombed at Saint Albons.

The French King vnder colour of peace, offered to King Edward Flaunders, Picardy, Aquitaine, and other lands, which the Englishmen had ranged throught and spoyled, for the performance whereof, messengers were sent into France, but the Frenchmen would not performe the offer, wherefore King Edward being angry with a nauie of ships passed the sea to Calets, where diuiding his army into thre parts he committed one company to Henry Duke of Lancaster, another to Prince Edward, and the third he reserued to himselfe, and so passed into Burgundy.

King Edward  
invaded Bur-  
gundie.  
Frenchmen  
scattered at  
Winchelsea.

In the Lent season, the Normans with a small nauy arriued at Winchelsea, and partly brent the towne, and slew such as did withstand them: wherefore the Prelates of England assembled from all parts in armour to with-  
stand



stand than, but when they had prepared themselves to battell, the French were gone, leaving behind them two of their ships, which stuck fast in the land, and 200. of their men.

King Edward with his power rode through France, by Picardy, Artois, Roan, Champaine, & so to Britaine, destroying the countrey before him. And here is to be noted, that the 14. day of April, and the morrow after Easter day, king Edward with his host lay before the Citie of Paris, which day was full darke of mist and haile, and so bitter cold, that many men died on their horse backs with the cold, wherefore unto this day it hath bene called the Blacke Monday. The king of Navarre bered soze the marches of Normandy. Thus was the realme of France miserably beset on all sides. At the last, a final peace was concluded on this condition, that king Edward should haue to his possession, the countreies of Gascoigne, Guyen, Poitiers, Limosin, Valentle, Grantes, Cales, Guisnes, and diuers other Lordships, Castles, Townes, and all the landes to them belonging, without knowledge of any soueraigntie or subiection for the same. This peace being confirmed by writing and by oath, king Edward came into England, and so straight to the towler to see the French king, where he appointed his ransome to be thre millions of floreneces, and so delivered him of all imprisonment, and brought him with great honour to the Sea, who then sailed ouer into France.

It. Edward the 24 of Januarie began a Parliament at Westminster, where the forme of the agreement was read, and allowed of all estates, where the king on the last of Januarie caused his nobles to sweare to hold and keepe the said agreement, especially those as well Prelates as other that were not at Cales, where he swore, and other that were there with him.

And on the first of february following, the king restored to the Priors allens their houses, lands, tenements, &c. as by his patents may appeare in effect as followeth. Edward by the grace of God king of England, Lord of Ire land, and of Aquitaine, to all by these presents, &c. Although the Priorie of mountacute, in the county of Somerset (by reason of the warres betwene vs and France) with all the landes, tenements, fees, aduowsons, together with the goods and cattels belonging to the same, hath ben of late taken into our hands, and by vs farmed & rented forth, as appeareth by diuers patents. Now therfore, since peace is betwixt vs and the Noble Prince, our most deare brother, the king of France, we for the honour of God, and holy Church, restore to the said Prior, the Priorie, with all the lands, tenementes, fees, aduowsons: and whatsoeuer else belonging to the same, to hold the same, in as free manner as they held it before. And withall, forgiue and release all arrerages of rents which might be due vnto vs, by reason of any former grants. In witnesse, &c. the 6. of february the 35. yere of our raigne.

The like letters of restitution had the houses (in the patent) vndernamed, to wit, Northampton, Arundel, Cameringham, Writton, Wissewel, &c. to the number of one hundred and tenne in England, besides them in Ireland, Normandie, and the parts of France. All which houses were cleane suppressed and dissolved, with many moze by king Henry the fift.

Ann. reg. 34.

1360.

blacke  
monday

Peace with  
France.

Tho. Walling.

French king  
released.

Ann. reg. 35.

1361.

Restitution of  
the Priors alle-  
ens.  
Record.

The second  
mortalitie.

A great dearth and pestilence happened in England, which was called the second pestilence, in which died Henry Duke of Lancaster in March at London, and was buried at Leicester, in the Collegiate Church which he had founded, with a Deane, twelue Chanons, Prebendaries, as many Vicars, and other ministers accordingly, and one hundred weake and sick persons, fiftie men, and fiftie women, and fenne other women to tend vpon them that were sick and weake, so that the same colledge and hospitall, at the suppression by king Henry the eight was valued by the yere in lands five hundred ninety and five pounds, seven shillings, and six pence.

Lib. Lichfield.

There died also Reiginald Lord Cobham, & Walter fitz Warren, ballant and famous knights, and five Bishops, to wit, Reiginald of Worcester, Michael of London, Thomas of Ely, John of Lincolne, and Robert of Cicester. To Worcester was preferred John of Barnet: to London, Simon Sudburie: to Ely, Simon Langham: to Lincolne, John Bokingham: to Cicester, William Linlinere.

Leonell Carle of Ulster by his wife, and sonne to king Edward, went into Ireland to encounter the Irishmen that bered the English.

Edward Prince of Wales took to wife by dispensation the Countesse of Kent, daughter vnto Edmond Carle of Kent, brother to H. Edward the second: she had bene before wife vnto Thomas Holland, and before that, she was wife to the Carle of Salisbury, and diuorced from him.

A rout of the great company of the Englishmen were commaunded to depart out of France, and they discomfited in Auverne the Frenchmen, and took diuers prisoners of the nobles of France that had ben afore taken of the Englishmen, and there was slaine Iaques de Burbon, and the Counte of Saluzig. Also a rout of Brittaines, part of the great company aforesaid, were discomfited in Limosin alias Garret, by Wil. Felton knight of England, and at that time Steward of the Countrey for king Edward.

Some tempest  
of wind.

Ann. reg. 32.

1369.

Justing in  
Smithfield.

The king held his Christmas at Windsor, & the xv. day following, a sore and vehement South-west winde brake forth, so hideous, that it ouerthrew high houses, towers, steeles, and trees, and so bowed them, that the residue which fell not, but remained standing, were the weaker.

First staple of  
wool at Calais.

The first five daies of May, at London in Smithfield, were Justes holden, the King and Quene being present, and the most part of the Chivalrie of England and France, and of other Nations, to the which came Spaniards, Cipriets, and Armenians knightly requesting the King of Englands aide against the Pagans that had inuaded their confines. The staple of woles, notwithstanding the oath receiued of the kind of England, and other great men of the land, is sent to Calais.

In the feast of the Apostles Peter and Paule, king Edward at Westminster by his Charter, gaue to the Abbot of Westminster, and couent, two flags of his benison, yereely to be taken in the foreest of Windsor.

Edward the  
kings eldest  
sonne Prince  
of Aquitaine,

Edward Prince of Wales, about the feast of Saint Margaret, at Westminster, in presence of the great men of the Realme, receiued of his father the Principality of Aquitaine, fealtie and homage first made to him, but yet he left

left not the Principalltie of Wales, the Dutchie of Cornewall, the countie of Chester and Kent.

Simon Illip Archbishop of Canterbury did ordaine, that moze should not be given to prestes for their yearly stipend, then thre pounds, five shillings, and eight pence, which caused many of them to steale.

Priests be-  
came thers  
for lacke of  
living.

The sixteenth day of October, began a Parliament at London, which continued till the feast of Saint Brice, the thirtieth of November, on which day the king was bozne, hauing now accomplished the fiftieth yere of his age, whereupon, he pardoned such as were guiltie of treason to his person, released prisoners, reuoked outlawes, and at the petition of the commons, he commaunded pleas to be vsed in English, and not in French, as they had continued since the Conquest. He made Leonell his sonne Earle of Hulster, then being in Ieeland, Duke of Clarence, and his sonne Iohn Earle of Richmond, he made Duke of Lancaster: and Edmond of Langley his sonne, he made Earle of Cambridge, the Parquesse Iuliers before recyted, being dead without issue of his bodie.

Parliament at  
London.  
T. Wallingham.

The lawes to  
be pleaded in  
the English  
tongue.

Record.

In the said Parliament was granted to the king for thre yeres following, five and twentie shillings, and eight pence, of every sacke of wolle to be transported beyond the seas.

Subsidie of  
woolles.

Ioane Duene of Scots, and wife to David Bruce, and sister to king Edward the third, died in the castell of Hartfords, and was buried in the grey Friers Church at London by her mother.

Sca. cro.

Sir Iohn Cobham knight, founded the Colledge of Cobham in Kent, valued at the suppressing at eight and twentie pounds the yere.

Cobham col-  
ledge.

Iain Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor.

Ann. reg. 37.

The French king, the king of Cyprus, and the king of Scots, came all into England to speake with king Edward, who receiued them with great honoz, and gaue them great giftes: the kings of Cyprus and of Scotland returned home shortly, but the French king fell sicke at London, whereof hee shortly after died.

Three kings  
came into  
England.  
The French  
king sicke.

1363.  
Great frost.  
Adam Merim.  
Cro. col. reg. oxo.

A frost in England lasted fro the midd of Septeber, to the moneth of April.

This yere, the Castell of Quinborough was builded by king Edward.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor.

Ann. reg. 38.

The ninth day of April died Iohn king of France, at y Sainoy besides Westminister, through griefe of mind, that the Duke of Angiow one of his pledges had deceiued him, and came not into England, according as he had promised and swozne: His corps was honourably conueyed to Douer, and so to Saint Denis in Fraunce, where he was buried.

1364.  
The French  
king died at  
London.

Charles de Blois with 3600. men of warre fell sodainly vpon Iohn de Mountfort, and William Latimer, whilst they lay in siege before the Towne and Castell of Daurie, and had scarcely with him 1600. of Englishmen, Byssaines and other Nations, and giuing battell one to another, without deliberation, there were slaine, on the Dukes side onely seuen men, and of Charles part were slaine, Charles himself, the Lord Rochford, and William Vango, and Knights and Esquires almost a thousand, there were taken two Carles,

and 27. lordes, and of Scottes balliant men of armes 1500.

*An. reg. 39.* Prince Edward had a sonne bozne at Angolesme called after his fathers name, Edward, but he liued not long, for he died about the age of seven yeres, and, yet not too soone, as it was said.

1365.  
Iustices pur-  
sued.

The same yere king Edward arrested his Iustices Sir Henry Greene, Sir William Skipwith, and many other, for their enoymous vniust dealings, and toke of them great fines for their redemption.

Peter-pence  
forbidden.

The K. commanded that Peter-pence should no moze be gathered nor paid to Rome. S. Peters pence is the kings almes, and all that had 20. peny worth of goods, of one maner cattel in their house of their owne proper, should giue y peny at Lammas: it amounted in all throughe England to 300. marks of siluer.

Simon Ship archb. of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterbury: this Simon Ship founded a Colledge in Oxford, and called it Canterbury Colledge, Simon Langham B. of Ely was translated to Canterbury. In the first yere of whose translation Pope Urban the first made a decre against the heaping together of many benefices, or spiritual promotions by one man, for the execution wherof, he sent commandement to the archb. of Canterbury, and by him to all his suffragans, to certify in wryting the names, number, & qualittes of euery Clerke, benefices or linings within their feneral diocese. And it was found, that at that time the clergie of England excēded all other stattons in bearing of offices about the king and commonweale, in place of Iustice and other, as appeareth by one certificate, which the B. of London then made, of many beneficed men at that time abiding within his diocese, some of them had xx. benefices with cure, and some moze, and some of them had xx. prebends besides other great dignities. As Wil. Wicham, who that yere at the death of Wil. Edington B. of Winchester was made a generall administrator of spiritual and tempozall things pertaining to that Bishopricke, and the next yere was made Bishop of Winchester, this Wicham, besides the archdeaconry of Lincolne, and prouostship of Welles, and the parsonage of Panihant in Deoushire had twelue prebends.

Bishops offi-  
cers to the  
king.

Simon Langham Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancelloz of England.

John Barnet Bishop of Bathe and treasurer of England.

William VVicham Archdeacon of Lincolne keeper of the priute seale.

Dauid Wellar parson of Somertham, master of the Rolles, seruing king Edward in the Chancery fortye yeres and moze.

Tenne beneficed priestes Ciuitians, and masters of the Chancery.

William Mulle Deane of Saint Martins le Grand chiefe Chamberlaine of the Erchequer, recetuer, and keeper of the kings treasure and Jewels.

William Askeby Archdeacon of Northampton, chancelloz of the Erchequer.

William Dighton prebendary of S. Martins, Clearke of the priute seale.

Richard Chesterfield prebend of S. Steuens, treasurer of the kings house.

Henry Snatch parson of Auon or Dundall, master of the kings wardrobe.

John Newenham parson of Fenistanton, one of the Chamberlaines of the Erchequer, and keeper of the kings treasury and Jewels.

John Ronceby parson of Hardwike suruicioz & controller of the kings works.

Thomas



Thomas Biringham parson of Alsey, tresurer to the king for the parts of Gullnes and the marches of Caleis.

John Troys tresurer of Ireland, diuers wales beneficed in Ireland. All these were certified in the diocese of London at that time.

*An. reg. 40.*  
1366.

John Barns translated from Bathe to Ely, and John Harwell made bishop of Bathe.

The third of Aprill was bozne at Burdeaur, Richard sonne to Edward the blacke Prince, which Richard was after king of England by the name of Richard the second.

There was then a priest in England, called William Wicham, who was so great with the king that all things were done by him, & without him nothing was done. And so when the Bishoprick of Winchester was void, the king of England at the desire of the said priest, wrote to the Duke of Burbon, that he would for his sake, make such sute to Pope Urban, that his chaplein might haue the bishoprick of Winchester, promising the Duke in his dosings, to intreat him right courteously for his imprisonment & hostage. When the duke of Burbon saw the B. of Englands messengers & his letter, he was therof right ioyous: and shewed all the manner to the French king, who counselled him to go to the Pope for the same, & so he did, for he went to Auignion to the Pope, who was not as the gone to Rome, & so the duke made his request to the Pope, and he granted him, & gaue him the Bishoprick of Winchester at his pleasure, so that the king of England would be favourable to him in the composition for his deliuerance, that the foresaid William Wicham should haue the said Bishoprick. When the duke of Burbon returned into France, & so into England, and there treated with the king & his counsel for his deliuerance, or he would shew his bulls from the Pope. The king of England loued so well this priest, that the Duke of Burbon was deliuered quite, and paid 20000. Frankes. And so Sir William Wicham was B. of Winchester, and Chancelloz of England.

William Wicham  
bishop of  
Winchester.  
John Froart.

The 4 of May the king made a composition in his Parliament betwene the two Uniuersities of the one part, and the 4 orders of friers mendicants abiding within the same Uniuersities on the other part, which before had continued many yeeres in strife, to the great decay of learning, and much other hurt to both parties.

Edward Prince of Wales, taking compassion vpon Peter king of Spayne, who was diuened out of his kingdome by Henry his bassard brother, entred Spayne with a great puissance, and in a battell at Pazers, the 3. of Aprill, put to flight the foresaid Bassard, ouercame his power, and slew 6000. of his men, where there were taken 60. persons of name, and 2000. of the common soldiours, which done, he restored the said Peter to his former dignitie, and returned home with great triumph & victorie, but not long after, Henry the bassard, whilst B. Peter sat at a table, suddenly thrust him thorow with a speare, and inuaded the land by treason, which by open warre he could not do.

*An. reg. 41.*  
1367.

Tho Wal.  
The Bassard  
brother diuened  
the law full.

The Frenchmen tooke diuers to wnes & castles, in Poytow, that belonged to the king of England, and to the end they might the more effectually deceiue the king of England, the French king sent him word, that he was ready to

The Bassard  
brother murdereth  
the law full.

*An. reg. 42.*  
1368.

pay

pay the residue of his fathers ranfome, & to perfoyme the conditions of peace; also, hee sent him Wines out of Boheme, and other presents, in token of loue: but if so fortun'd whiles the embassadozs were in the kings pcesence, the lamentable newes were brought of the forzible Inuasion of the Frenchmen in Poytow, which when the king heard, he commanded the embassadozs to get them home with their deceitfull presents, to their deceitfull Lord, whose mockes he would not long leaue vnreuenged. The Embassadozs returning home, were met by the men of Caleis, who tooke their wines, and other goods from them.

Subtletie of  
Frenchmen.

Paulus Iouius.  
Leonell Duke  
of Clarence  
marrieth and  
diedh.

In the moneth of Appril, Leonell Duke of Clarence, with a chosen company of the English nobilitie went towards Millaine, there to marry with Violentis the daughter of Galeasius the second of that name, Duke of Millaine, of which marriage Paulus Iouius writeth thus, vpon the life of the said Galeasius: By the meanes of peace being obtained, and Barnabe with no lesse earnest endeavour seeking by force and armes to recouer the Principedome of Bononie, as taken from him by fraud, and detained by insury, Galeasius desired to fortifie himselfe with forraign affinitie, glorious in deed, in princely pompe, but in euent to him and his vnfortunate, matching his sonne Iohn Galeasius with Isabell daughter to Charles the french king, and his daughter with Leonell Duke of Clarence, sonne of the king of England, to whom hauing receiued 200000. florences of gold for a dowry by the marriage of Violentis, the Cities of Monsregalis, and Alba Pompeis submitted themselves. And Isabell which came to Millaine was so troublesome to her father in law, that she cost him 200000. florences, although the yelding of the Towne of Petetars; and the title of that most honourable name had been giuen to her new husband in part of her dowrye. Moreover, at the comming of Leonell, such abundance of treasure was in most bounteous manner spent, in making most sumptuous feasts, setting forth statelie sightes, and honouring with rare gifts aboue two hundred Englishmen, which accompanied his sonne in law, as it seemed to surpassse the greatnesse of most wealthy Princes: for in the banquet whereat Francis Petrarch was present, amongst the chiefeest guestes, there were aboue thirtie courses of seruice at the table, and betwixt euery course, as many presents of wonderous price intermixed, all which Iohn Galeasius, chiefe of the choise youth, bringing to the table, did offer to Leonell.

A most sumptuous feast.

Costly gifts  
giuen.

Fragments of  
a feast suffici-  
ent to serue ten  
thousand men.

There were in one onely course senenty godly hozes, adozned with silke and siluer furniture: and in the other silver vessels, falcons, hounds, armour for hozes, costly coates of mayle, breastplates glittering of masse stele, helmets, and corselets decked with costly cresses, apparrell distinct with costly Jewels, souldiours girdles, and lastly certaine gemmes, by curious art set in gold, and of perple, and cloth of gold for mens apparrell in great abundance. And such was the sumptuousnesse of that banquet, that the meats which were brought from the table, would sufficiently haue serued 10000. men: but not long after, Leonell lining with his new wife, whilest after the manner of his owne countrey, as forgetting or not regarding his change of ayze, hee addicted himselfe ouermuch to vntimely banquettings, spent and consumed with a lingering sicknesse, died at Alba. Afterward Violantis was married to

Othe

Ocho Marques of Mountferat in Italy, who had no better successe then the other, being in the hills of Paucie, stabbed throught of a base hoyskeper, where he likewise died obscurely.

The thirde mortality or pestilence was this yere, whereof died Blanch Duchessse of Lancaster, and was buried in Pauls Church at London.

This yere was a great dearth of Cozne, so that a bushel of wheat at London was sold for two shillings five pence, of Barley twentie pence, of Dates twelue pence.

The 15. of August died Quene Philip, wife to Edward the thirde at Windsor, and was buried at Westminster.

Quenesborough, Kingston upon Hull, and S. Botolphs, alias Boston, were made Staples by Parliament.

The kings sonne Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and Humfrey Bohan Earle of Hereford, with a great armie went into Fraunce, where they little prevailed, because an huge Army of Frenchmen had pitched their Tents vpon the toppe of Chalke hill, nere vnto Caleis, so strongly, that they could not be set on without great losse and damage: but shortly after, Thomas Beauchampe Earle of Warwick, arrived at Caleis with a number of chosen souldiers, at whose coming, the French men leauing their tents and victuals, fled away, neuertheless, he passed forth, spoiling and wasting the Ile of Caws with fire and sword, but as he returned toward Caleis, he fell sicke, whereof he died, and the other captaines returned without honour.

King Edward borrowed of the Prelates and other, many great summes of money, saying, he would bestow the same in defence of the Church & realme, but about Midsummer he sent a great army into France, whereof Sir Robert Knowles was generall, a man, who before time had fortunately handled the beyond sea wars, so long as they were ruled by his counsel: but toward winter, the yong Lords said they ought not to be subiect to him who was not so noble of birth, as they, and so deuising themselves into diuers companies, Sir Robert Knowles departed into Britaine to his owne castles which he had conquered: The Lords being so deuised, the Frenchmen set vpon them, toke prisoners whom they liked, and tooke the residue.

A great part of Gascoigne fell from the prince, because of the strange cractions he laid vpon them: also sickness encreasing vpon him, he returned into England with his wife and his sonne Richard, and resigned into his fathers hands the gouernement of Gascoigne.

The monasterie of Abingdon, five miles from Oxford, was spoiled by them of Oxford, together with the artificers of Abingdon.

In a Parliament at Westminster in the first weeke of Lent, it was ordained that the great Charter & Charter of the forest, should be kept in all points. Also in the same Parliament, the Clergy of the realme granted to the king an aide for the warres in France, of fiftie thousand pound to be paid in the same yere, vnto the leuping of which summe, Chauntries prestes were taxed, according to the leuping that they received by the yere, also final benefices which were neuer taxed, &c. And the Laye of the Lords and Commons also

An. reg. 43.

1369.

The third pestilence.  
Dearth of corn.

Staples of  
Wool.

An. reg. 44.

1370.

The R. borrowed great  
summes.

An. reg. 45

1371.

Mathew Parker.  
Statute parli.  
Parliament at  
Westminster.

The common  
opinion rep<sup>re</sup>  
sented, concer  
ning the num  
ber of parish  
Churches in  
England,

granted to the king the like summe of fifty thousand pound, in aid of the same warres, to be leuied of all the parishes of England, that is to wit, that euery parish should pay 23. shillings 4. pence, the great parishes helping the lesse: supposing (according to the common opinion) that there had been so many parishes in England, that would haue sufficed in such manner to the said summe, By which means w<sup>h</sup> it was directed to all the shires of England, to certifie vnto the king of all the Churches in euery shire, which also made the number of Churches to be examined. And it was found that the said summe of fiftie thousand pound, might not be leuied in manner as was thought. Whereupon the king summoned a great counsell at Winchester, against the fifth weeke of Easter next following, and there was ordained that euery parish should pay five pound 16. shillings, the greater helpe the lesse. And then also was set downe the names of shires, with the number of Churches in euery shire, and the summe that euery shire should pay as followeth.

Shires.	Parishes.	What euery shire did pay.
1 Kent.	393	2279. pound 8. shillings.
2 Surrey.	118	684. pound, 8. shillings.
3 Sussex.	284	1647. pound, 4. shillings.
4 South-hampton.	230	1334. pound.
5 Wiltshire.	239	1386. pound, 4. shillings.
6 Somersetshire.	391	2267. pound, 16. shillings.
7 Dorsetshire.	237	1374. pound, 12. shillings.
8 Devonshire.	381	2149. pound, 16. shillings.
9 Cornwall.	194	1125. pound, 4. shillings.
10 Gloucester.	254	1473. pound, 4. shillings.
11 Herefordshire.	144	834. pound, 4. shillings.
12 Shropshire.	114	661. pound, 4. shillings.
13 Staffordshire.	100	580. pound.
14 Drifordshire.	200	1160. pound.
15 Barkshire.	156	904. pound, 16. shillings.
16 Bedfordshire.	121	701. pound, 16. shillings.
17 Buckingham.	200	1160. pound.
18 North-hampton.	303	1757. pound, 8. shillings.
19 Rutlandshire.	44	255. pound, 4. shillings.
20 Warwick.	283	1061. pound, 8. shillings.
21 Leicestershire.	209	1212. pound, 4. shillings.
22 Nottingham.	164	951. pound, 4. shillings.
23 Derbyshire.	96	556. pound, 16. shillings.
24 Lincolnshire.	627	3636. pound, 26. shillings.
25 Northumberland.	60	348. pound.
26 Westmerland.	32	185. pound, 12. shillings.
27 Cumberland.	96	556. pound, 16. shillings.
28 Lancashire.	58	336. pound, 8. shillings.
29 Norfolk.	806	3674. pound, 16. shillings.



30 Suffolke.	515	2926.pound.
31 Cambridgshire.	172	997.pound, 12.shillings.
32 Huntingdon.	62	535.pound, 12.shillings.
33 London.	110	637.pound.
34 Middlesex.	63	365.pound, 8.shillings.
35 Essex.	400	2259.pound, 18.shillings.
36 Hertfordshire.	136	730.pound, 16.shillings.
37 Wiltshire.	540	281.pound, 12.shillings.
38 Gloucester.	139	806.pound, 4.shillings.
39 Durham.	61	553.pound, 16.shillings.

Summe of all the shires in England, without the City of London, and the Bishoppicke of Durham be 37. and of Parish Churches, 8600. and all the mony amounted unto 50181. li. 8. s. 4. d. Of the which was withholden 181. li. 8. s. by the reason that Parishes in the Countie of Southfolke payde but 112. shillings, 7. d. ob. And the Parishes in the Countie of Devonshire, payd but 112. shillings, 10. d. farthing, for their great poverty, and so was the King answered 50000. pound.

Cheshire a Countie Palantine, came not to this Parliament.

In the Citie of Chester are 10. parish Churches, and in the shire without the Citie, are. 87. parish Churches, besides chappels.

The Bishops were remoued from the Offices of Chauncelloz, Treasurer, and priuie seale, and lay men put in their stead.

This yere deceased the gentle Knight Syr Walter de Maine in the Citie of London, wherof all the Barons of England were right fory, for the truth and god counsaile that they had alwayes seene and heard in him: he was buried with great solemnity in the Monastery of Charterhouse Monkes, which he had founded besides London, and at the day of his Obsequie, there was present the King and al his childzen, with the Prelates, Barons and Knights of England. His lands both in England and beyond the sea sell to the Earle of Penbroke, who had to wife the Lady Anne, his daughter and heire. Also the valiant Knight Sir William Molineux, who had long serued in Fraunce, and was made Knight Banneret by the blacke Prince, at the battell of Passars, now returning out of France died at Canterbury, about the feast of S. Iohn Baptist. Also Sir Iohn Mandeuile Knight, a man worth the memozy, bozne in S. Albons, deceased, this man from his tender yeres so addicted himselfe to study, that therein he accounted a great part of his ioy and felicitie to consist, for he reckoned that his worshipfull parentage little auailed, vnlesse he enabled the same by learned skil, and literature, hauing therfore wel furnished his minde with knowledge in the Scripture, he erected his studie to Physicke, being an Art very seemely and worthy a gentlemanlike nature, but among all other things, his desire was very great to see Asia, and Aphrica, being two mighty portions of parts of the world, furnishing himselfe therfore, he like an other Vlisses, being knowen of verie fewe of his olde acquaintance set forward.

W. Smith.

Sir Walter  
Bany deceased.

Sir William  
Molineux deceased.

Sir Iohn  
Mandeuille deceased.

1 Bale.

In this his voyage he painefullly visited the Countreies of Scythia the greater & the lesser, Armenia, Aegypt, both the Countreies of Libya, Arabia, Syria, Media, Mesopotamia, Persia, Grecia, Illyricum, Tartaria, and other kingdomes: finally hauing attayned the knowledge of diuers tongues, lest the varietie, and wonders of so many and so great things as he had seene with his eyes, and bozne away by memorie, should be utterly drowned in oblivion, he wrote exactly in the Latine, French, and English tongues, these woorkes following, viz. his Itinerarie of thrie and thirtie yeres, of the manerples of the woorld, and the description of Countreies: being returned into England, and noting the cuill abuses of that his age and time, the godly gentleman would say, (in these our times now it may be trulier said then euer afore) that vertue is laid aside, the Church is troden downe, the Cleargie erreth, the deuill raigeth, simony beareth sway, &c.

At length he died at Leiden, the 17. of Nouember, 1371. and was buried in the Abbey of the Williamites, thus farre Bale. To the confirmation whereof Abraham Ortelius in his *Itinerarium*, professing to haue seene the monument of the said Sir Iohn Mandeuill in the citie of Leiden, setteth downe the inscription thus.

Epitaph of Sir  
Iohn Mandeuill.

Here lieth the Noble man Sir Iohn de Mandeuille, otherwise surnamed Knight at the beard, Lord de Campdi, borne in England, a professor of Phisick, a very deuout man in prayer, and a most bountifull bestower of his goods on the poore, who after he had trauielled almost ouer the whole world, ended his life at Leiden, the yeere of our Lord 1371. the seauenteenth of Nouember.

This is the inscription in the stone, sayeth Ortelius, in which there is grauen, the Image of an armed man, with a lion at his fete, with a two forked beard, at his head a hand blessing, with these words in French, You that passe by, for charitie say prayers for me.

The shield of his armes was voyde, they said there was within it a plate, and his armes ingrauen therein, to wit, a Lion Argent, with a red crescent at his breast in a blew field, with a border indented Or: there was shewed his kniues, his furniture for horse, and his spurres, which he vsed in his trauailes through the woorld.

Ann. reg. 46  
1372.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and Edmond Earle of Cambridg, returning out of Gascoigne, brought with them two daughters of Peter late king of Spaine, whom afterwards they toke to be their wiues: the Duke married the elder, named Constance, and from that time wrote himselfe King of Castile.

Battell on the  
Sea.

The Englishmen fought a battell on the Sea with the Flemings, and toke fise and twentie ships laden with salt.

Earle of Pen-  
broke taken  
prisoner.

The Frenchmen besieged Rochell, to the remouing whereof was sente the Earle of Penbroke, with a number of men of armes, vpon whom fell the Spanisli galleie in the Haven of Rochel, who slew and toke the Englishmen, and burnt their Naue. The Earle and many noble men were caried into Spaine, together with the Kings money. King Edward with a great naue entred the seas towards Rochel, to haue rescued the same, but the winde being contrarie, with heauie chere he returned againe, hauing spent in

in this preparation (as it was said) nine hundred thousand pound.

John Duke of Lancaster entred Fraunce with a strong power, and passed through the Realme without battell, but in the desertes and mountaines of Aluerne, for lacke of victualles, many of his armie died: from thence, he went to Burdeaur, and brought scanty forty horses backe with him: it was commonly talked that he lost thirtie thousand horses in that unluckie voyage. It was a great miserie to see the poore state of the men of warre, such as were knights of great wealth in their Countrey, having lost men and horses, were glad to beg from doze to doze, and found no reliefe, for the Countrey was destroyed, and not manured, by reason whereof, such dearth was in that Countrey, that victuals could scant be gotten for any money: the Duke yet wintered there. The tenth of Aprill following, a day of battell was appoynted betwixt him and the Duke of Anjou at Tholouse. In the meane time, truce was taken til the twentieth of May next following, but the King of England knew nothing of it: When the day came, a great power of armed men for the French appeared, the which the Duke of Anjou had assembled, but yet that day passed without battell, to the great shame and reproch of the English, for the Frenchmen said, they were ready in fiesde the day appointed to looke for their coming, that came not at all, wherefore they spake many reprochfull words against the Englishmen, calling them false cowards, and heartlesse. And such was the end of that journey.

*Ann. reg. 47.*  
1373.  
Tho. Walling.

In a Parliament it was graunted that the cathedral Churches should enjoy their elections, & that from thence forth the King should not write against the elected, but should by his letters help towards their confirmation, but this statute toke small effect: but the Cleargy granting a tenth, and the laitie a sixteen, it was paid. John Thursby Archbishop of Poike deceased, he began the new quire of the Cathedral Church of Poike, unto the which in the laying of the first stone, he gave 500. markes, and every yere after whilest he lived 200. pound to the same worke. He also adozned the Lady chappell there with a marvellous workemanship: he fate one and twenty yeres, he died at Thozpe and was buried at Poike, unto whom succeeded Alexander Neuell Canon of Poike. Also John Barnet Bishop of Elye deceased at Bishops Hatfield, and was buried at Elye, unto whom succeeded Thomas Arundell, sonne to Robert Earle of Arundell. Also William Lyne Bishop of Winchester deceased, unto whom succeeded Henry Wakefield.

Parliament

Cathedral church of Poike, repayed or new builded.

John Duke of Lancaster with all his traine of Carles, Barons, Knights, &c. returned out of Gascoigne into England in the moneth of July, after whose departure almost all Gascoigne fell from their alleageance, which they had covenanted of with the King of England, saving Burdeaur and Bayon.

*Ann. reg. 48.*  
1374.

This yere died William Wittelsy Archbishop of Canterbury, at Lambeth, and was buried at Canterbury: the Monkes of Canterbury, (by the Kings licence) made their election, but choosing the Cardinall of England, the King was so offended that he meant to outlawe them, and they were forced to purchase his favour with a great price. Then Simon Tibalde, alias Sudburie, (sonne to Nigellus Tibalde Gentleman of Sudburie in Suffolke)

Doc: ur

Doctor of both Lawes, Bishop of London, was from thence translated to Canterburie, and William Courtney Bishop of Hereford, was translated to London, and the Bishop of Bangor, to Hereford.

John Duke of Lancaster, William Earle of Salisbury, Reignold Lord Cobham, with Simon Sudbury and other, assembled at Bridges to treat a peace betwene the realmes of England and France, where met with them the Duke of Anjou, and many other nobles of France. This treaty continued almost two yeres, and ended without conclusion of peace, but on a truce, which scantly continued one yere.

*Ann. reg. 42*  
1375.

The same time Robert Walsfield Bishop of Salisbury died, after whom succeeded Ralph Arguy, Edward le Spencer deceased in the Castle of Cardiffe, and was buried at Thochesburie. Also John Hastings Earle of Penbrooke, who was taken of the Spaniards, foure yeres since was deliuered by Henry the bastard King of Spaine vnto Bertram Cleyken constable of France, for a certaine summe of money, which the said Henry did owe to the said Bertram, who when he was brought to Paris, and the summe of his ransome was limited to be 6000. franks, the Lombards in Bridges became sureties therfore, and promised payment thereof, but he began to be sicke, so that the Frenchmen fearing least he should die in their hands, or euer they should get his ransome, made haste to bring him to Caleis, notwithstanding he died befoze he came there, and the Frenchmen were deceiued of their purpose.

to hot some  
mer.

The Ile of Constantine was deliuered to the French King, to the great detriment of England, for which cause afterward Sir Iohn Ansley appeached Thomas Cattrington of treason. A great heate was in England, so that many both men and women died thereof.

Good Parlia-  
ment.

A Parliament commonly called the good Parliament, was holden at Westminster, in the which, when a subsidie was demanded, answer was made by Peter de la More, Prolocutor of the Parliament, that the King needed not the substance of his poore Subiectes, if he were well and faithfully gouerned, which he offered to proue effectually, and promised that if it were found that the King had neede, his subiects should be ready most gladly to helpe him according to their power.

1376.

The Knights required to haue the Lord Latimer with other, remoued from about the King, whom they said did giue him euill counsell, which being done, certaine Prelates, Cardes, and other, were ordained to gouerne the King, who then was an olde man, but this endured not long. The commons also requested to haue remoued out of the Kings house, a certaine proud woman called Alice Pierce, who by ouermuch familiaritie that she had with the King, was cause of much mischief in the realme, she exceeding the manner of women, fate by the Kings Iustices, and sometimes by the Doctors in the Consistories, perswading and dissuading in defence of matters, and requesting things contrary to lawe and honestie, to the great dishonour of the King.

Alice Pierce.

Adam Burie  
late Mayor  
Richard Lions  
late Sheriffe, &  
Goldsmith.

Also Richard Lions and Adam of Burie, Citizens of London, were accused by the commons, of diuers fraudes and deceiptes, which they had done to the King: Richard Lions for money did wisely compound and escaped, the



the other conveyed himselfe into Flaunters.

The eight day of June, Prince Edward departed out of this life in the Archbishops Pallace in Canterburie, who was in his time the flower of Chivalrie: he was in the feast of S. Michael the Archangell, with great solemnitie buried at Canterburie in Christs Church, and then King Edward created Richard sonne of Prince Edward, Earle of Chester, Duke of Coznelwall, and Prince of Wales.

Blacke prince  
deceased.  
Adam Merim.

This yere in the moneth of June, the seruants and tenants of the Earle of Warlike maliciously rose against the Abbey and Couent of Guesham, and their tenants, doing their worst to destroy the same for ever, beating their seruants, & killing some of them, & comming to the manors of the Monkes, they brake down the pales of their parks & burnt them, slew their deere, they brake the hedges of the pondes & fish poles, let out the water, toke the fish, and did many other damages, minding to haue destroyed the house, and ouerthrowen the wals if the King had not sent commandement to y<sup>e</sup> Earle to restraine these malefactours, and troublers of the peace, thus for feare of the King, and mediation of frends, a peace was made, but no sufficient recompence, for the damage was much more then y<sup>e</sup> parties were able to make amends for: because of this presumption of the Earle, the King put him out of his counsell, & would not be gouerned by y<sup>e</sup> other Lords that were appointed therunto by parliament, but he sent for the Duke of Lancaster againe to gouerne the realme, by which occasion all they that befoze were banished the Court, came againe, as the Lord Latimere, Alice Pierce, and other, whose counsell he followed euen to the end of his life. The foresaid Alice is made so familiar with the king, as also her companions, that is to say, the Lord Latimere, and Sir Richard Scirie, that at their becke, the King promised all matters of the Realme to be disposed, whereupon they being desirous to be reuenged vpon their accusers, ceased not until by the kings and Dukes authoritie they had gotten Sir Peter de la More, to the kings court, whom without any answer, against all iustice, they sent to the Castle of Newmarke, there to be imprisoned. The Duke now laboured against William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, taking occasion by al wayes & meanes he possibly could to indamage him, at the last amongst other things that he objected against him, he charged him to haue ben false vnto the King, at what time he was Lord chancellor, & although the bishop in declaring of his innocencie was ready to bring forth for himselfe both sufficient reasons and witness, yet notwithstanding he caused him to be condemned without making answer, William Skipwith being Justice, and by the Kings authoritie toke from him all the temporall goods of his Bishopricke, and that he might get the peoples fauour, he moued the King to giue the said goods to the Prince called Richard of Burdeaur, and so he vsed the yong Princes name for his owne helpe. Furthermore, in the Kings name, he forbade the Bishop to presume to come within xx. miles of the Kings presence.

Peter de la More  
imprisoned.

The Duke indomageeth the Bishop of Winchester.

W. Wicham  
Bishop of  
Winchester  
deprived of his  
temporall  
goods.

In the meane time the Kings sicknesse increased, and Whisttons began to dispayre of his recovery, although the foresnamed Alice together with Isabell her daughter did lye by him euery night. The Duke now who determined all matters

How the earle  
of March a-  
voided the de-  
ceite of the  
Duke of Lan-  
caster.

matters of the Realme, commanded Mortimer Earle of Marche to go to Calais, where hauing set al things in order, he should diligently view al the other Castles nere there about, but the Earle as he was a man of a good wit, considered that it was a dangerous time, and that the Duke had an olde hatred against him; more he called to remembrance, how the Duke had binuissly imprisoned Sir Peter de la More, his steward, and had oppressed the Bishop of Winchester whom he had exempted from priuiledge of the kings pardon, and desired to doe the like to him, if he could, he chose therefore rather to lose the rod, then his life, wherefore he restored the rod of his Marshallship vnto the Duke, saying he would not for a small commoditie wzappe himselfe into so great danger.

Henry Percie  
made Marshall  
of England

The Duke reioycing that he might with some honour reward Sir Henry Percie, presently gaue vnto him the rod, and made him Marshall of England, and by this meanes Sir Henry Percie was toynd to the Duke, but incurred as much hatred of the whole communaltie, as he had gotten fauour and loue of the Duke.

An. reg. 51.

The King kept his Christmasse at Havering Aboure, where then for the great infirmittie of his body in his veines he lay sicke.

Parliament  
at London.

The Duke vsing the kings authoritie, directed warrants to al the Lords, & Barons of the Realme, that after Christmas on Monday, 15. dayes after S. Hillary, they should come to the Parliament at London, wherein the matters of the Realme were to be talked of. To this Parliament came Richard of Burdeaur the Prince, with a great number of Noble men, and Knights, whom the Londoners at his coming presented with diuers honourable giftes, and the Duke of Lancaster also, seemed to honoz him aboue the rest, placing him in the Kings seate, & taught him to demaund, that they would giue the King two tenths in one yere, or els of al the marchandise sold in the realme of England for one yere xii. d. of euery pound, of euery firehouse one peny, and of euery knights six, one pound of siluer, & presently the Duke prosecuted the demand, saying that of necessity one of those poynts ought to be granted, for that the enemies had now proclaimed warre, & would inuade the realme. The knights of the Parliament, whom the Duke had made at his pleasure, desired respite y they might deliberately answer him, for all the other knights that in the last Parliament had stoutly stand with the communalty, he had caused to be removed, except twelue whom hee could not remoue, a day was appointed them. Of the greater part, master Hungerford was elected to deliuer their answer, who was a knight very familiar with the duke, and was his Steward. Those few whom we haue said to haue remained, endeouored that Sir Peter de la More might deliuer their answer, and also to answer all objections that should be laid against him in ptesence of the Lords. And further, if he should be found faultie, to submit himselfe to the iudgement of the noble men present, but the knights preualled nothing in their sake. For when one of the knights vided the matter more then other, he was willed to holde his peace, otherwise it might cost him his life. Whilist these things were in handling, a subdole was demaunded for the king of the whole Cleargie. They therefore treating

ting of this matter, first made a common complaint befoze the Archbishop of Canterbury, of the iniury offered vnto their brother William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, which was also iniury vnto them al, and to the whole libertie of the Church, wherfoze they affirmed they would not treat of other matters, vntill all the number of the Cleargie were together, for they pitying his fall, were moued against the Archbishop, thinking him a great hired man for the Duke, and notwithstanding the Archbishop affirmed, the foresaid Bishop to be prohibited by the King, not to come nere vnto his presence, yet least he should be compelled, he sent a commaundement for him, that he should come vnto the Conuocation of the Cleargie at London, who making no delay, came with a small number of seruants, that befoze time was thought to excell all other in multitude attending vpon him, he was ioyfully receiued of his fellow Bishops.

The Cleargie  
requireth the  
renouation of  
the Bishop of  
Winchester.

In the meane time the Duke ceased not with his fellowes to imagine how he might bring that to passe, which he had long conceiued in his minde: for he saw that it would be hard for him to obtaine his purpose, the Church standing in his full state, and verie dangerous to attempt publikely to doe those things, the lawes and customes of London being in force, wherfore he laboured first to ouerthrow, as well the liberties of the Church, as of the Citie: for the which cause, he called vnto him a certaine diuine, who many yeeres before in all his acts in the scholes, had inueyed against the Church, for that he had been deprived by the Archbishop of Canterbury from a certaine benefice that he vniustly (as was said) was incumbent vpon within the Citie of Drford, his name was Iohn Wicliffe, who with his disciples, were of the common people called Lollards, they went bare-footed, and basely clothed, to wit, in course russet garments down to the heeles, they preached, especially against Monks, and other religious men that had possessions, &c. Amongst other things, he deuyed the bishop to haue authoritie to excommunicate any person, and that any Priest might absolue such a one as well as the Pope:

The Duke sent  
for Iohn  
Wicliffe.

T. Walsingham.

That neither the King, nor other secular Lord could giue any things perpetually to any person of the Church:

That (as he affirmed) in the time of William Rufus it was practised in England, for whom, as for other Kings of the Realme (notwithstanding he toke away the Church goods (the Church of England prayeth, which if she do lawfully, then she doth well: and to say she doth it unlawfully, were absurd.

That the temporall Lords (if they had neede) might lawefully take the goods of such religious persons, to releue their necessities, &c. When he had taught these and many other, not onely in the Scholes at Drford, but also had preached them publikely in London, that he might thereby get the fauour of the Duke and others, whom he had found prone to heare his opinion, not onely Lords, but also certaine Citizens of London, (for he was not onely eloquent, but also seemed to contemne temporall goods, for the loue of eternall riches, and therefore his conuersation was with those religious that had no possessions, and adioyned himselfe vnto the begging Friars, approuing their pouertie, and extolling their perfection) The Duke Alay, and Sir Henry Percy

Percy, commended highly his opinions, and entenuored to extoll his learning and honestie of life aboue all other. Who therfore being thus set forth with their fauour, feared not to spread his doctrine, much more then before, going from Church to Church, and preaching his opinions. Whereupon at length, the Bishops wakened their Archbishop, who sent for this Iohn to come and answer to those things that were spoken of him. And the Duke hearing thereof, sent for foure Doctours of Diuinitie, one of enery order of the begging friars, aduertising them, that with a naturall and olde hate, he pursued the religious persons that had possessions, neither was it difficult to compell the willing friars to ayde him in this point.

Disoord in  
Pauls church  
at London.

Iohn Wickliffe was to appeare before the Bishops on Thursday the nineteenth day of February there to be conuicted, for words that he had spoken, who, after the ninth houre, the Duke, and Sir Henry Percy, and diuers other assisters going before him, was brought forth, not only by common sergeants, but also Sir Henry Percy himselfe, who was chiefe Marshal of England being by the way animated by his fauourers, not to feare the Bishops, neither the concourse of the people, seeing that he was walled in with so many knightes and other: he was brought into Saint Pauls Church, where such a multitude of people was gathered together to heare him, that it was hard for the noblemen to passe through & that he might escape death intended him by many Bishops. And first a dissension being raised betwene the noblemen & Bishops, it was thought his answer should haue been deferred. But when the people being gathered round together, stayed to giue place vnto the noblemen, Sir Henry Percy abusing his authoritie, picked forthwards the people, which the Bishop of London seeing, prohibited him to exercise such authoritie in the Church, saying, that if he had knowen he would haue used himselfe so there, he should not haue come into the Church, if he could haue letted him. Which the Duke hearing, and being offended, protested, that he would exercise such authoritie whether he would or not. When they were come into our Ladies Chappell, the Duke and Barons, with the Archbishop and Bishops sitting downe, the foresaid Iohn was also sent in by Sir Henry Percy, and by him willed to sit downe, for because (said he) he hath much to answer, he hath neede of a better seate. On the other side, the Bishop of London affirmed it to be against reason, and also contrary vnto Lawe, that he should sit, who there was cited to answer before his ordinary: hereupon very contumelious words did arise betwene Sir Henry Percy, and the Bishop, so that the whole multitude began to be troubled, and then the Duke began to reprehend the Bishop with slowe words, and the Bishop to turne the like to the Duke againe: whereupon the Duke being angry that he could not in this strife preuaile, sware that he would pull downe both the pride of him, and of all the Bishops in England, and added, thou trustest (said he) in thy parents, who can profite thee nothing. The Bishop answered, I trust not in my parents, nor in the life of any man, but in God, in whom I ought to trust: then the Duke whispering in his eare, said, he had rather draw him forth of the Church by the haire of the head, then to suffer such things at his hand.

The



The Londoners hearing these words, with a loud voice cryed out swearing they would not suffer their Bishop to be thus injured, and that they would rather lose their lives then their Bishop should be dishonestly used in his Church, or pulled out as was threatened. Their furie was the more increased against the Duke, for that the day before in the Parliament at Westminster, the Duke being president: It was requested in the Kings name that from that day forward there should be no more Mayor of London, according to the ancient custome, but a Captaine should be appointed, and that the Marshall of England, as well in the citie as in other places, might arrest such as offended, with many other things, which were manifestly against the liberties of the Citie: which being once heard John Philpot a worthy Citizen arose, and answered, &c.

The morrow after, the Londoners assembling themselves together, took council upon such demands, as the day before the Lords W. of Woodstocke, and Sir H. Percy had had concerning the creation of a Captaine in the Citie, and of the use of the Marshalls office, &c. Besides of the iniurie that was offered to their Bishop, and other matters: and whilst there was great ado and long talke about these things, there entred into the Citie the Lord Fitzwalter, and Guido Brian, whether to know their minds, or for other wise uncertaine, but the commons scarcely held their hands from beating them that came uncalled for, till at the length they had sworne their coming was not for any hurt unto them or the city. The Lord Fitzwalter having gotten saue at the citizens hands, began his Oration, the effect whereof was, that he being by ancient inheritance Standard bearer to the city, was to take iniuries offered unto them, as unto himselfe, & therefore willing them to looke to their defence, they presently took armes, and ranne with great rage to the Marshalls Inn, they brake vp the gates, and dories, brought out a prisoner gyues & al, wherein his feet were fastned, intending to burne them in the midd of the city, Sir Henry Percy is sought for, the armed men ran by and downe, but all in vaine, for that day he and the Duke were to dine with one Iohn of Pyre, but the Londoners knew it not: For they thought that he and the Duke had ben at the Banoy, and therefore with all haste passed thither, but one of the Dukes Knights seeing these things, in great haste came to the place where the Duke was, and after he had knocked and could not get in, hee saide to Hauerland the Porter, if thou loue my Lord and thy life, open the gate, with which words, he got entry, and with great feare hee telles the Duke, that without the gate were infinite numbers of armed men, and vlesse hee take great heede, that day should be his last. With which words, when the Duke heard them, he leapt so hastily from his officers, that he hurt both his legges against the fourme: wine was offered to his officers, but hee would not drinke for haste, he fledde with his fellowe Sir Henry Percy, no man following them, and entring the Thames neuer stinted rowing untill they came to a house nere the Manor of Kenington (besides Lambeth) where at that time the Princesse was, with the yong Prince, before whom hee made his complaint. The Princesse hauing heard their talke, comforted them, promising

Council at  
London a-  
gainst the  
Duke.

sing that she would make a small ende of all those matters.

A priest being  
taken to be the  
D. Percy was  
slaine.

The common people of the Citie not knowing that the Duke was fled, in great fury hastened to the Baner, and a priest chauncing to meete them, asked of some what that busines meant. Wherunto he was answered, that they went to take the Duke and the Lord Percy, that they might be compelled to deliver to them, Sir Peter de la More, whom they uniuersally kept in prison: the Priest said that Peter de la More was a traytour to the King, and was woorth to be hanged. With which words they all cried, this is Percy, this is the traytour of England, his speech betwixt him, though he be disguised in apparel: then ran they all vpon him, striving who should giue him his deaths wound, after they had wounded him, they caried him to prison, where he died. The Bishop of London, William Courtney, hearing that the Citizens hastened to the Baner, left his dinner and met with them, admonishing the to be mindfull of the holy time, (for it was Lent) and for the loue of Christ to leaue off such seditious doings, affirming that he would bring al things that were done against them to good ende. And doubtlesse had not the Bishop asswaged their mad modes, the Duke and the Lord Percy had that day lost their liues, but by the Bishops meanes the matter was pacified for the time, and enery man got him to his owne house. Then were the Dukes armes hanged by reuered in signe of treason, in the most principall streets of the citie, vncertaine by whom: all that ware the Dukes signe or colours, were saue to hide them, conueying them from their necks, into their bosome. The Princeesse (wife to Edward late deceased) desirous to make peace, sent vnto London these Knights, Albert de Vere, Simon Burley, and Lewes Clifford, to perswade them, to make peace with the Duke, vnto whom the Citizens made answer, that they would doe for her hono<sup>r</sup>, whatsoever she had commanded, but yet they enioyned the Knights, to will the Duke, that he should suffer the Bishop of Winchester to come to his answer, and to be tried by his Peeres, and also to permit Peter de la More to answer for himselfe, after the custome of the lawe: and as for the third, they said they would account a traytor wheresoeuer he should be found. The said Knights no other wise then they had heard of the Citizens, reported vnto the Duke with full mouth, wherby they made the Duke very wofull, for wher as they had spoken of a traitor, this (said he) they speake of me, though it be not true.

The Londoners  
goe to the  
King about  
their liberties.

John Philpot.

The Londoners hauing held a councel about this matter, sent of their chief Citizens, either to iustifie, or to excuse that which had hapned, who suing long to come to the Kings presence, being kept backe by the duke, at length the duke tolde them that the King was very euill at ease, and that his sickness might be increased, if that he were moued to anger, by their speech. But the citizens, whose chiefe man and speaker was Iohn Philpot answered the Duke, that they were not come, by any meane to augment the Kings sicknesse, but rather to mitigate his graue, that he might be strong to defend them. Moreover, they said they were charged not to communicate those matters which they had in commission from the citie vnto any other then vnto their liege Lord the King. At length hauing gotten access, they shewed vnto the King,

howe

how it had been published in the Parliament, that it was his will, that contrary to their liberties, the Mayor should be deposed, and a Captaine created, and other matters in the Parliament, which sounded against their liberties. Also they excused themselves of diuers things which had been done, during the time of the commotion of the communalitie of the citie, saying they were not priuate to any such doing, but y amongst so great a multitude, some lewd people had done such things, neither so great a multitude could be moued by the exhortation of the Mayor, when they were once by together. The King being a little cheered by with their comming, answered, that he would not the diminishing of their liberties, no, he was rather ready, if neede were, to augment them, neither did any such resolutions euer come out of his mouth, and therefore, he willed them not to feare, but to returne and appeale the Citizens, and to keepe them in peace.

In the meane space some men ceased not to make rymes in reproch of the Duke, and to fasten them in diuers places of the Citie, whereby the greater fury of the people might be kindled, the Dukes fame blotted, and his name had in detestation. Which thing when the Duke heard, he requested the Bishops to pronounce sentence of excommunication vpon all those that by such rymes maliciously did hurt his fame. The Bishop of Bangor therefore (the Aldermen of the Citie assisting him) publicly excommunicated all those that diffamed the Duke, &c.

Diffamers of  
the Duke ex-  
communicated.

A few dayes after the Duke went vnto the Parliament, that for the causes expressed had been pretermitted: the Duke and noble men being set, they demanded an answer of the knights of the shires, of these things which had bin demanded of them: who answered, that they would to helpe their soueraigne Lord the king grant, not of euery house one penny, but of euery person, man or woman above the age of foureteene yeres one groat throughout England, so that the money should be gathered into the hands of certaine Carles and Barons untill they saw how such a summe should be spent. The cleargie also graunted the like subsidy, for helpe of the king, of euery head, as well religious men as women, as secular priests one groate, if they were not promoted, but of euery religious person promoted twelue pence.

A great subsidy  
granted.

The duke hauing obtained as he desired, the care of al the heads of the whole realme, was not yet quiet, for the injury done against him by the Londoners: wherefore he caused the king to send for the Mayor, Aldermen and Sherriffes of London, who being brought into the kings chamber of presence, (being then at his manour of Shine) they found the king placed in a chaire, not able well to speake, for the griefe of his sickness, & the Archbishop, with other Bishops, the Duke and the kings sonnes with many Lords & men of honour sitting about him. Where after due reuerence made, and silence commaunded, Sir Robert Aston began an oration, perswading the Citizens to confesse their great and hainous offences against the king, and Duke, & to submit themselves to their mercy. Whereunto the Londoners answered, that they had not conspired against the Duke, neither had there been any shamefull thing spoken or done against him that they did knowe of, or consent vnto, which thing they were

Robert Aston  
speaketh for  
the Duke.

ready to pꝛoue before their soueraigne Lord the King, and the Duke himself: Yet not withstanding they affirmed, that they could not stay the folly of the common people, by whom that which had chanced was committed: wherefoze the said Citizens requested the King that he would not punish those that were innocent and ignozant of the fact; but they for reuerence of the King, promised the Duke, that they would indenour themselves to bring in the common people, and to compell them by lawe to make due satisfaction; and moze (said they) we are not able to doe for the Duke, that may be to his honoꝝ. And at this woꝝd, with the Kings will, they were dismissed, full merry when they saluted the Court with their backs.

A procession of  
the Citizens  
of London.

After this the King sent vnto them, secretly commaunding them to call all the Citizens together, and to make one ware Candle or Taper with the armes of the Duke his sonne, in the same Taper, and carry the same in a solemne procession to Saint Pauls Church, there continually to burne before the Image of our Lady, continued at the charges of the citie. The ware Taper therfoze being made, the Citizens by voyce of the crier, are generally called together, at which call, they come to heare the cause of their calling, but the communaltie and those of the pꝛoꝝer sozte contemned to be present at such a procession, and therfoze with indignation euery one departed home to his house, only the worshipful and best sozte of the Citizens make the procession, placing the Taper of ware where they were commaunded. But the Duke not contented with this satisfaction, he threatened the Citizens, and said, that that which they had done was nothing gratefull vnto him, nay said he, it rather redoundeth to my great shame, chiefly, for that while he was aliae and well in health, they had in such sozte offered his armes wrought in a ware Taper.

1377.

On the other side, the Citizens affirmed that they had expressly done that which his father had commanded them, and would haue done any thing that might haue pleased him. To whome the Duke answered, that they knewe his minde, and were not ignozant howe to make satisfaction: with which woꝝdes the Citizens were much troubled, for (quoth they) amongst themselves, he would haue vs to proclaim him King: but this shall neuer be done, and so they departed, woꝝse friends the they were before. And the Duke ceased not till he had put downe Adam Staple Mayor, in whose place Nicholas Brembar was elected, and on the nine and twentieth of March toke his oth at the Tower of London. Also the Aldermen were deposed and other set in their places.

Mayor and  
Aldermen of  
London deposed.

John Min-  
starworth.

Sir John Minstarworth Knight who had trayterously forsaken the English armie, at that time when Sir Robert Knowles was sent to inuade Fraunce, was drawne, hanged and quartered on the 12. of Aprill, his head was set on London bridge, and his foure quarters were sent to foure principall cities of England.

A. Wicham  
B. of Gloucestre  
recouereth  
his temporal.

In the meane tyme William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, seeing the lawes of the land to be handled, not according to iustice, but as it pleased certain persons, and being destitute of all mens helpe, he turned himselfe to woꝝmankind,



makinge, prouiding not onely for himselfe, but also for the oppreſſion and losses of his Church. Therfore, knowing that Alice Piers could do all things that she would, and there was not any man y<sup>e</sup> would in any thing resist her will, he requested her helpe, he offered her money, he promised her great frendship, if she could helpe his Bishopricke forth of such troubles: she promised easly to dispatch his cause, and not refusing that which was offered, went to trie if any sparke of loue yet remained in the King. He therefore that long had been taken with her loue, entiled with her speech, supposed nothing to be denied her now that she asked: against the Dukes will, he commanded his temporallities to beginen vnto him againe, and so the Bishop by right and wrong, recovered that which was lost.

The leuententh of Aprill died the Lady Mary of Saint Paul, Countesse of Penbroke, a woman of singuler example, for liuing to the honoz of God, and glozy of her houle, in relieving poore mens necessities, she spent her goods, that to the Dukes and Princes she shewed examples of good workes: and dying, she gaue all her substance, either to her seruants, or to diuers Churches, but especially to poore people: she founded Penbroke Hall in Cambridge, and named it *Aula Maria de Valence in Anno. 1343.*

About the same time the Earle of Salisburie, and Sir Richard Anglisson a Doyton, the Bishop of Saint Davids, the Bishop of Hereford, Geoffrey Chaucer, (the famous Poet of England,) and other, were sent into France to treat a peace, or at the least a truce for two yere or moze, but they could not obtaine any longer truce, then for one moneth, which they utterly refused. Whereupon they stayed in France about these things, and some thinking they might safely haue passed betwixt Calais and Dover, about fiftie taking ship, were forthwith intercepted by the Galleyes, and were all slaine, two men and two women onely excepted, even in the very sight of the Townesmen of Calais, they being not able to giue them any ayde: Sir Hugh Calueley being at that present time Captaine of Calais, toke this so great an iniurie in very euill part, especially for that it was done, whilest they were yet treating of peace, but he could not helpe it, wherefore forthwith he toke with him a number of the best and chosen out men, and purposing to requite this iniurie, made a roade into France, killing a great number of men, and brought backe with him a great hostie of artillery and cattell, the messengers returned into England, and brought nothing backe with them, but ruine and warre.

King Edward sodden (as it were) with the disease of the Annuli (which time was giuen him of God to the use of penitence) had almost sodainely died, neglecting the benefite of time that God had giuen him, like as he should neuer haue died: trusting the fond fables of the ofte named Alice, when she affirmed, he should recover his health, so that at that time he talked rather of hauking and hunting, then of any thing that pertained to the sauing of his soule, onely he granted pardon of death for offences, throughout his kingdome to the inhabitants. Being now sodainely taken with the day of his death, he began to haue manifest signes thereof: what Alice Pierce they did, any man may iudge,

then by means  
of Alice Piers.

Countesse of  
Penbroke  
died.

Chaucer and  
other sent into  
France.

Hugh Calue-  
ley Captaine  
of Calais.

Alice Pierce  
leaueth King  
Edward.

although we set them not downe in writing, for as soon as the same the King had set foote within deaths doore, she bethought her of sight, yet before she went, that all men might perceiue that she loued not the King for himselfe, but for that which was his, she tooke the ringes from his fingers, which for the royaltie of his Daies he was wont to weare. Thus yelding him such thanks for his fences, she bade him adieu, and so withdore her selfe from him.

Death of king  
Edward the  
third.

The King being thus at the point of death, was left not onely of her the said Alice Piers, but of other the Knights and Esquires, who had serued him, allured more with his gifts then his love. Amongst a thousand there was onely present at that time a certaine Priest, (other of his folkes applying the spoile of what they could lay hands on) who lamenting the Kings misery, and inwardly touched with griefe of heart, for that amongst so many Counsellors which he had, there was none that would minister to him the word of life, came boldly vnto him, and admonished him to lift vp the eyes, as well of his body as of his heart vnto God, and with sighes to aske mercy of him, whose maiestie he well knew he had grienously offended, whereupon the King listening to the words of the priest, although he had a little before wanted the vse of his tongue, yet then taking strength to him, seemed to speake what was in his mind, and then what for weaknesse of his body, contrition of his heart, and sobbing for his sins, his voyce and speech fayled him, and scarce halfe pronouncing this word Iesu, he with this last word made an ende of his speech, and yelded vp the Ghost at his Mannor of Shene, (now Richmound) on the 21. day of Iune, in the yere of our Lord 1377. and the 65. yere of his age, when he had reigned 50. yeres, 4. moneths and odder dayes, whose body was afterwards sollemnely buried at Westminster.

This King surpassed al his predecessours, through vertue graunted to him from aboue, in a certaine excellency of magnanimity of heart, for he neuer feared any thing, or changed countenance for any misfortunate channes when they happened, a noble warrior, and fortunate, for as well by land as by sea, in warlike conflicts he obtained the victorie, gentle, familiar, & courteous as well toward strangers, as his owne countrey men and subiects, deuoute in Gods seruice, for he had the Church and ministers thereof in great reuerence. In woildly cares tractable, prouident in counsell, and discret, in sweetnesse of language affable and meke, in gesture and manners wel ordered and ripe, hauing compassio of the afflicted: in bestowing of benefites very liberal, in abundance of wealth modest enough, in erecting of buildings marvellous curious, bearing losses patiently, giue much to hauking & hunting, to the which, whilest he had time, as the season of the yere gaue, he applied himselfe greatly, he was liberall in gifts, and prodigall in expences, proper of person, in stature neither such as excelled the meane bignes of men, nor yet of the lowest sort, hauing a countenance more reuerent, then was commonly in men, but rather like an Angel, in which did shine such a marvellous grace, that such as dyed of him, hoped the day following for good lucke, he gouerned his kingdome euert til his old yeres valiantly, wisely, and royally. But yet he did not refraine riotous luff.

lust, carnall concupiscence, nor motions, of the flesh, euen in his extreme age, and so (as was thought) so; his intemperancie ended his life the sooner.

He had issue by the Lady Philip his wife, seuen sonnes, Edward the blacke Prince, William of Hatfield that died yong, Leonel Duke of Clarence, Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, Edmond of Langley Earle of Cambridge, and Duke of Poike, William of Windsor; y died without issue, Thomas of Woodstocke Earle of Buckingham, and Duke of Gloucester: and fine daughters, Isabel married to the Lord Coucy, Earle of Bedford, Ioane Quene of Spaine, Blanch that died yong, Mary married to Iohn Mountfort Duke of Bytaine, and Margaret Countesse of Denbroke. He founded Cassminster, commonly called new abbey nere vnto the tower of London, wherein he placed white monks of the order Cisteraux, to the honour of God, and our Lady of grace, according to a vow by him made, being on the seas in great perill, by meanes of a tempest: he founded an abbey for Nunnes at Dertford in Kent, he founded the kings hall in Cambridge for poore schollers, (which hall with others was suppressed by H. Henry the 8. for the foundation of Trinitie Colledge there) he also founded an Hospitall for the poore, and named it Maison de Dieu, or Gods house, in the town of Caleis, he reedified or newly builded S. Steuens Chappell at Westminster, altering the same into a colledge of a Deane, 12. secular Chanons, 12. Vicars, and other ministers & seruants, and indued it with revenues to the value of 500. ponde by yere. He also reedified or almost newly builded the Castle of Windsor. He also augmenting the Chappell there, which his progenitors kings of Englad, had before erected of 8. Chanons, he added to them a Deane and 15. Chanons, 24. poore & impotent knights and other ministers. Quene Mary was the first that brought water to that castle by Conduite, which before was watered by wellles. It remaineth of record which I haue seene, that tithe hath been paid at Windsor for wine pressed out of grapes, that were wonted to grow in the little parke there.

Issue of King Edward the third.

Cassminster founded by King Edward the third.

## Richard of Burdeaux.



Richard the 2. bozne at Burdeaux, the sonne of Prince Edward, being but eleuen yeres old, began his reigne the 21. day of June, in the yere of our Lord God 1377. In beauty, bounty, and liberality, he far passed all his progenitors, but was ouermuch giuen to rest and quietnes, louing litle deedes of armes, and for that he was yong, was most ruled by yong counsell, and regarded nothing the counsels of the sage and wise men of the Realme, which thing turned this land to

Ann. reg. 1.

great trouble, and himselfe to extreme miserie, as is by these verses declared. When this King first began to raaigne, the Lawes neglected were, Wherefore good fortune him forlooke, and th'earth did quake for feare, The people also whom he polde, against him did rebell. The time doth yet bewaile the woes, that Chronicles doe tell,

Vox clamantis, Ioh Gower.

The foolish counsell of the lewde, and yong he did receiue,  
 And graue aduice of aged heads, he did reiect and leaue.  
 And then for greedy thurt of Coyne, some subiects he accused,  
 To gaine their goods into his hands, thus he the realme abused.

On the foresaid 21. of Iune, before the old King was departed, the Londoners hauing certaine knowledge, y he could not liue any season, sent the chiefest and most worthy citizens of their cittle, vnto Kensington, where the pynce and his mother remained, to declare vnto the said pynce their ready minds, & good will to accept him for their true and lawfull King and Gouvernour, Iohn Philpot being especially appointed to do the message, began his Oracion thus.

John Philpot  
 his Oracion to  
 the Prince.

We bring newes, most excellent Prince (which without great sorrows we cannot rehearse) of the vndoubted death of our most inuincible King Edward your Grandfather, who hath kept and gouerned vs, and this kingdome (as I may say) a longtime in quiet peace; and now by the manifest tokens of death in him, he hath ceased to be our Gouvernour: wherefore we beseech you, on the behalfe of the Citizens, and City of London, that you will haue recommended to your good grace, the City your chamber, whom we knowledgely shortly to be our King, to whose rule we onely submit our selues, and bow to your will and pleasure vnder your dominion to serue in word and dede. And that we recite further our message, your reuerence knoweth, your City to be vnspeakably troubled, for that you haue withdrawne your presence from it, which is knowen to be so much at your deuotion, that the Citizens are not onely ready to spend their goods for your sake, but also to leopord their liues. Wherefore we come to your presence, to beseech you that it may please you to remaine there, both to the comfort of vs your citizens, and also to the surety and solace of your selfe. We further beseech you most noble Prince, that you would vouchsafe to make some good and profitable end of the discorde, which lately hath risen throught the malice of some, and not to the commoditie of any, but to the hindzance and discommoditie of many, betwixt our Citizens, and the Duke of Lancaster. To these and other like words vttered by the said Iohn Philpot, it was answered by the Prince, and his counsell, that he would doe his endeavour to satisfie their desire in all things, and so being sent away, they returned bringing glad tidings to their fellow Citizens.

The next morrow there was sent to London, on the Kings behalfe, the Lord Latimer, Sir Nicholas Bond, Sir Simon Burley, & Sir Richard Adderbery, which in name of the new King saluted the citizens with their message of the new King to wardnes, who promised to loue them and their city, & to come to them as they had requested: they also told y citizens, how the King had spoken to the duke for them, and how the Duke in all things had submitted himselfe to the Kings will, that they also should submit themselves in the same maner; and then the King would endeavour himselfe that peace should concluded, to the honor and commoditie of the citizens: but the citizens fearing such forme of peace as might happen, answered, that they would not in any wise so doe, especially because they knew the King to be but yong, and weake to helpe them in such a troublesome businesse, & that their cause should not be discussed by him, but  
 by



by their deadly enemies, & so they should be punished at their pleasure, if they consented to the kings request in that article. At length after talke had vpon this businesse, fire houres together or moze, they light vpon this point, that if the said knights would be bound to the citizens, that their submission should not redound to the tempoꝛall losse, or bodily harine of any Citizen, or prejudice of their Citie, they would gladly obey the kings commaundement. The knights desirous to satissie the kings desire, and to pꝛouide for the quietnes of the Citizens, vnderooke by othe of fidelitie, and their knighthood, that it should not be to their prejudice, but to their commoditie, if they would submit themselues. This surety receiued, the Citizens toke their iourney towards Shire, where they found the new king with his mother, the Duke and the Dukes brethren; there were also many Bishops gathered about the dead bodie of the late king: The coming of the Citizens being knowen to the king, hee straight commaunded them to be called before him, the which Citizens as before besought him to reforme the peace betwixt the Duke and them, affirming that they were readie in all things to submit themselues vnto his will and pleasure, not as though they confessed they had made any fault against the Duke, but as men that came at this time for the benefit of peace, and honour, aswel to the king, as the duke, to pacifie the hearts, and mitigate the displeasure of both.

The Duke seeing them in this manner to haue submitted themselues to the king, though (as it was said) he had other matters in his head, yet fearing that hee should not after ward come to so honoꝛable conditions, if he refused this forme of peace, fell down at the kings feet, and beseeched him to take the cause in hand vnder the forme that the Londoners had exprest, desiring therewith that they which had been imprisoned for any dishonour offered him, might be with the kings fauour released and set at libertie: And so he did forgive the Citizens whatsoever they had committed against him, and receiued them into his full fauour, in the presence of the king, affirming with an oth that he would be their friend, and as carefull for their commodities as for his owne, and in token of an vnfained peace, he kissed every one of them before the king, and so with quietnes, the Citizens returned home praising God, that had brought the Duke to such humilitie, who a litte before had demaunded in great pride, of the Citizens for his fauour, one hundred hogdheads of wine, & an infinite number of precious stones. The Friday next following the Duke and Citizens came to Westminster, where was proclaimed the union and agreement betwene them.

The yong king desirous at his entring to the kingdome to haue an vnitie amongst his subjects in every place, brought the Duke and the Bishoppe of Winchester to be at one, and wheresocuer in his Realme he knew any discord and variance to be risen, he toke the quarels into his hands, promising to make a good and fruitfull end for both parties. He also deliuered Peter de la More, (a knight of Herefordshire) out of the Castell of Nottingham, where he had bene long imprisoned, and by his letters patents released him of all things whatsoever, in the name of the king might be laid vnto him.

The Duke of Lancaster and the Citizens of London made friends.

The king accordeth the Duke and the Bishop of Winchester.

Peter de la More set at libertie.

Upon

The French-  
men take the  
towne of Rye  
and burne it.

Upon the feast day of Saint Peter and Paule the Apostles in the mornynge, the Frenchmen with fine vessels, great and small, invaded the towne of Rye, and with small labour toke the towne, albeit the towne dwellers upon confidence of strength, had taken order that none should remove their goods from the towne, that at the least wise, for love of their goods, they might with more courage abide the conflicts: yet notwithstanding they turne their backs in the time of battell, whereupon it came to passe, that by their want of heart and courage, the towne was taken with all their goods.

The towne of  
Rye consumed  
with fire.

The Abbot of Battayle hearing of so lamentable a report, put his men in armour to defend the villages nigh adioynning, & one of the enemies going forth for forage, being taken by one of the Abbots men, declared that the French men purposed to keepe the said towne for ten daies, wherupon the Abbot removed with his power to the towne of Winchelsey, which towne (as the prisoner reported) the French purposed to assault, but when they saw the Abbot and his men armed in that towne, dispaying of further entrance into that Countrey, they begin to set fire on the towne of Rye, and within five houres brought it wholly unto ashes, with the Church that then was there of a wonderfull beautie, conveying away foure of the richest of that towne prisoners, and slaying 66. left not above eight in the towne: 42. hogsheads of wine they caried from thence to their Ships, with the rest of their bottle, and left the towne desolate.

King Richard  
crowned.  
Charles created  
Knights made

King Richard was crowned with great solemnity at Westminster by the hands of Simon Sudbury Archbishop of Canterbury, on the 16. day of July. At this coronation Li. Richard created foure new Barons, Thomas of Woodstocke, Li. Edwards yongest sonne Earle of Buckingham and Northampton, to whom he gave 1000. markes yearly out of his treasury, till he had provided him land to that value. Thomas Mowbray of Aylmer, earle of Northampton, Guisard or Gifford Angoulême knight of Gascoigne, and master to the king, Earle of Huntingdon, to whom he likewise gave 1000. markes yearly out of his treasury, till he had provided him lands to that value: And Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland. He also made nine knights, to wit, Edward sonne to Edmond Earle of Kent, John sonne to Thomas Roos of Hamelake, Robert de Gray of Kotherfield, Richard sonne to Gilbert Talbot, Gerard sonne to Warine de Lisle, Michaell sonne to Michaell de la Pole, Richard de Poynings, Robert de Harrington, and Thomas de la More.

Michael sonne  
to Michael.

Sir John Burleigh knight, the kings Chamberlaine, Custos of Potttingham castle, was also for terme of life by patent, made keeper of the forrest of Sherwood. And Simon Burleigh knight his brother, was made Constable of Winclesore castle, Wigmore, Guilford, and the Manor of Kennington, and also master of the kings falcons at his Dues, nere Charing-crosse by Westminster, this sir Simon Burleigh had his house in London in Thamesstrate betwixt Barnards castle & Pauls wharfe, which house sometime belonged to the abbey of Fylcamp, & by reason of the wars in France came to the kings hands.

Dues for the  
kings falcons.

About the same time, Henry Percy marshall of England, and Earle of Northumberland, resigned the rodde of his office, and went home to his countrey,

in whose place Iohn of Arundale, brother to the Earle of Arundale was sent, who valiantly resisted the Frenchmen, when they assailed the towne of South-hampton, and manfully kept them off from entring the towne, being chased to the sea.

About the same time, of a small cause discord rose in the sayre of Rockesborough, betwixt the Englishmen and Scots, and certaine on both sides being slaine, the Scots were put to the worse. Whereupon being turned into a fury, shortly returning to the town with the Earle of Dunbarre, they entred in the night, slue the townsmen, spoiled their goods, & committed the town to the fire: which thing being known, the new Earle of Northumberland sozowing inwardly euil at the heart for the death of the same townsmen, determined to reuenge their death vpon the enemies, & entring into Scotland with 10000 men, he tooke prizes in the land of the Earle of Dunbarre, for the space of thre daies togither, burning vp al that came in his way, & returned with his people.

The one and twentieth of August, the French men tooke the vniwinable (that I may so call it) Ile of Wight, more by craft, then by force, which Ile had not ben taken by any men, if the same had ben wel kept wth diligent watch, but the euer assured security of the Island men, brought on them their destruction, and to the French vn hoped for victory. In deed the Frenchmen being dzinen on the shore by tempest, attempted to enter the Ile, supposing the Island men had not ben aware of their comming: but the purpose of the French was not known to the watchmen, and therefore they suffered them to enter on the land, to the ende, that after so many were come on land, as they supposed they might deale with, the residue should be kept off, but it chanced otherwise then they thought, for as we said, some being entred, when the Wightmen would haue stopped the other, the Frenchmen pressed forward with such force, that they repulsed the Island men from their ground, so that they were dzinen to seeke refuge by hiding themselves.

The French therefore hauing thus gotten the Island, did much hurt in slaying the inhabitants, burning certaine townes, and taking the substance from the people: at length comming to the castle, and thinking to haue wonne it wth final adoe, they finde there a pike of incredible sharpnes, for Sir Hugh Tirell keeper of the said castle, boldly comming to incounter them, made great slaughter among them, by reason wherof they left from assailing that castle, and from thenceforth thinking it not good to dwell so nere a Serpent, they gathered together what spoyle they might of the Ile, and constrained the Islanders to get of their friends without the Ile, a thousand marks of siluer for the sauing of their houses from burning, and for the residue of their goods. Dozeoner, taking of them an oath of fidelitie, not to resist the for the space of one yere, whensoever it should please the to land there, they departed thence to their gallees, and againe coasted the shore about till they came to the town of Winchelsea, where vnderstanding the abbot of Battal was come to defend it, they sent him word to redeme the town, vnto whom the abbot answered, he needed not to redeme the thing that was not lost, but willed the to desist from molesting the towne vpon paine of that which might follow. The French

The towne of Rockesborough burned by the Scots.

French men tooke the Ile of Wight.

The French besiege Winchelsea. The Abbot of Battal defendeth it.

Use of Guns.

asperated with this answer, requested him that if he would not have peace, he would send forth to fight man to man, or more in number if he would to try the matter in view of armes: but neither would the Abbot admit the one request or the other, saying, he was a religious man, and therefore not to admit such petitions, and that he came not thither to fight, but to defend & preserve the peace of the countrey. These things being heard, the Frenchmen supposing that the Abbot and his people wanted courage, they assaulted the towne with such instruments of warre, as cast forth stones farre off, not ceasing from none til evening, but by the laudable prowes of the Abbot, and such as were with him, the French prevailed nothing, but left it as they founde it.

The towne of Hastings burnt.

In the meane time whilst they were busied thus at Winchelsey, they sent part of their company unto Hastings, where finding the towne almost empty, they burnt it.

Prison of Lewes taken by French.

The same yere the Frenchmen comming by at Ratingdon in Sussex, nere to the towne of Lewes, the Prisoner of Lewes with a small company met them, and was taken by the Frenchmen, that came upon him, and caried to their ships, with two knights, to wit, Sir Iohn Fallesbey, and Sir Thomas Cheyne, and an Esquier called Iohn Brokas, among other a certaine Esquier that had been long in service with the Prisoner of Lewes, a Frenchman by nation, sought so manfully against the Frenchmen, that his bowels falling from him to his sēte, he yet pursued them. There was slain in this battel about one hundred of the Englishmen, and the Frenchmen returned home with all their spoyle, which was 37. Gallies, and 8. Caruels of Spaine, and certaine Barkes: straightwaies therefore as they came to land, some of them went unto the siege, that was about Arde, & by treason which alwaies is familiar to them, the keeper of that castle being an Almaine, to wit, the Lord of Sunney delivered to them the towne, they straight got the castell also, for the which the same keeper being taken by Sir Hugh Calueley keeper of Cales, was sent into England, and committed to prison.

Parliament at London.

The same time a Parliament was assembled at London, which continued from Michaelmas till S. Andrewes tide. In the which Parliament were almost all those knights, with the said Peter de la More, which so nobly had stood forth in the Parliament, which rightly was called the good Parliament, for the increase of their Countrey, and profit of their kingdom. Thus therefore taking in hand againe the petitions in the same place, as they left them, they earnestly stood in the matter, to haue Alice Pierce banished, who contemning the statute of Parliament, and the oath which she had taken, durst take on her to enter the kings court to compell him, and to haue of him what pleased her, who although she had corrupted many of the Lords, and all the lawes with money, the which not onely secretly but openly pleaded for her; yet by the diligence and wisdom of the said knights, she being convicted by her owne mouth, was banished, and her moveable goods confiscate to the kings use: but in the yere next following, to wit, the second yere of king Richard, the said Alice Pierce then wife to William Windsor knight, was pardoned, and in the se-

Alice Pierce banished.

uenth



nenty yere of the same king, her goods befoze confiscate by Parliament, were againe restozed and recompenced.

There was granted to the king of the Cleargie two tenths to be paid that yere, with condition, that from hencefozth the king should not extort from his Subiects by such petitions or demaunds but liue of his owne, and continue his warre, soz as it was answered there, his owne goods pertaining to the crowne, sufficed both to the finding of his house, and maintaining of his warres, if the same were bestowed by fit ministers, and soz the keeping of the money, two Citizens of London were appointed, William Walworth, and John Philpot. The Englishmen hearing of a number of Spanish shippes to remaine at Ruce for want of winde, assembling a great companie of armed men, and a great paille, meant to take the seas: their chiefe Captaines were Thomas of Woodstocke Earle of Buckingham, the Duke of Byrtayne, the Lord Latimer, the Lord Robert Fitz Walter, sir Robert Knowles, and many other valiant personages, who being entred the Sea, tasted fortune disfaourable, for by a tempestuous wind that rose, their ships were scattered in sunder, their mastes were broken downe, their sailes rent, and many of the small vessels that were victuallers were downed; at length the ships got together againe, and arriued in England, and being nowe rigged are estimes fraught with men, and to the sea they goe. About the same time, sir Hugh Calueley making a iourney towards Bulloigne, found a barge in the haven of the towne, that bare the name of the towne, and another that was the French kings, & xviii. other vessels moze and lesse, all the which with a great part of the suburbs of Bulloigne, he caused to be dispoled, taking with him what soeuer was there to be desired, with certaine prisoners: hee droue afoze him a great bottie of sheepe and beasts, which he found pasturing nere the towne, which might well serue to victuall Calels for a great thne: he recovered the same day the Castell of Marke, which thzough negligence befoze had been lost. King Richard kept his Christmas at Wandlefoze.

Two tenths granted by the Cleargie.

Hugh Calueley his iourney toward Bulloigne.

1378.

The English flete whercof we spake, returned without any great god successe, they toke an eight Spanish ships in the Britissh coasts nere to Bzest, and moze had taken if their businesse had been so well done, as was pretended: and therefore the flete returned home, so tossed with stormes and contrarie weather, and after with intestine discord, that it seemed there wanted among them Gods fauour. The Lord Percy (this flete remaining for the mending of his ships, whilest the other were abroad) went now to the sea, with a great ship and some smaller vessels, and meeting with fiftie ships laden with French warres and merchandize, of which some were of Flaunders, some of Spayne, he set on them all, who beholding his bold enterprize, and thinking that he had some aide at hand gaue oer to make resistance, and so xviii. escaping by flight, xvii. yelded themselves to the said Thomas Lord Percy. Sir Hugh Calueley with a power secretly armed, went to the towne of Staple, where the sayze was then, to the which were come many Merchantenmen from Bulloigne, Bitterell, Amiens, and Paris, where he falling on them that were unarmed, slew many, toke many to be put to their ransomes, sacked all the goods, and

Sir Hugh Calueley spoiled the towne of Staple.

set

set fire in the towne, so that it was wholly consumed, selve places excepted. This done, he returned to Calais with his men in safety, bringing from that payre warres which returned to the great profite of the Calisians many pères after.

The men of  
Winchelsey &  
of Rye sayle  
into Normandy,  
and spoyle  
the towne of  
Bretespaen

The men of Winchelsey & Rye, gathered a great number of people together, and imbarked themselves towards Normandy, desirous to requite the losses which before they had receiued, and so in the night arriving in a towne called Peters Hauen, entred the same, slaying so many as they met, and those whom they thinke able to pay ranfome, they carry to their ships: they spoiled the houses with the Churches, where they found many rich spoiles which sometime had ben by the Frenchmen set from Rye, and especially the belles and such like, which they shipped, set the rest on fire, & then they land at Willel, not farre from thence, where they practised the like cheuance, and so with their rich spoyle returned home.

The men of  
Rye fetch their  
belles out of  
Normandy.

About the same time Iohn duke of Lancaster requested that the money granted to the king by the cleargy and laity, might be committed to his custody, affirming that he would keepe the enemies off from the coastes of England, by the space of one yere with that money, and moreover bzing to passe some further great commodity, to whose impoztunate petition the Lords although against their willes agreed. They appoint therfore the first day of March to meet in counsell, in which euery of those should goe forth on this iourney: and least the sea should in the meane time want those that should keepe it, there were nine ships hired of them of Balon, to defend the sea and land from incursions of the French and others. These ships being furnished with sufficient numbers of armed men, within a short time coasting the seas, met the Spauy and merchandise of the Spanyards, and entring battell with them, in short time took foureteen of their ships laden with wines and other merchandise, and returned into England ioyfully: vnto sir Robert Knowles Captaine of Bresset, they gaue the first fruits of their pray, 100. tunne of their best wines as they passed by him homewards.

Ro. Knowles.

In the meane time Henry the bastard, calling himselfe king of Spaine, hearing that they of Bayon had done such harme vnto his people, and that the D. of Lancaster had prepared a great number to enter the sea, he was soze afraid, thinking that hee minded not onely to defend the Sea, but rather to saeke his kingdome, which by right of his wife the lawful inheritor of Spaine, he meant to challenge: wherefore the said Henry commaunded a Spauy to be prepared of all his land that he might stay the said Duke from entering his countrey, and if he might, to take him prisoner, which happily they had done, if the king of Portugale with almost an innumerable number had not entred the kingdome of Spaine, the selfe same time that the bastard Henry prepared himselfe against the Duke, deferring his iourney from day to day: they that were appointed Captaines ouer the Spauie with certaine men of warre, got them to the sea, there to stay for the Dukes comming, esteeming it more glorious to liue on the sea by prayes, taking from the enemies, then to liue by spoyle of their owne countreymen at home.

When

When they had certaine daies wasted by and down the seas, the Spaniards met them with an armed company, so that eyther part in hope of pray toynd together in fight, but our men hauing the wind and weathier contrary to them, lost the victorie to their enemies, some escaping by flight, & some being taken, amongst the which sir Hugh Courney a noble knight was one.

About the same time Iohn Mercer a Scot, gathering together no small number of Frenchmen, Scots and Spaniards, set vpon certaine ships of Scarbozow, toke them and led them into Scotland, this he did in reuenge of his fathers iniury, who was before taken by the Englishmen, and kept prisoner in the castle of Scarbozow.

Merccer a  
Scot tooke  
ships of Scar-  
bozow.

Iohn Philpot  
of London.  
Ann. reg. 2.

Iohn Philpot a Citizen of London, a man of folly witt, and very rich in substance, considering the want of the Duke of Lancaster & other Lordes that ought to haue defended the realme, & lamenting the oppressions of the inhabitants, hired with his own money, to the number of a thousand souldiers, the which might take from the said Iohn Mercer both his ships and goods, which he had by rouing taken, and defend the realme of England from such incurfions: and it came to passe within a small time, that his hired men toke the said Iohn Mercer with all his ships, which he had violently taken from Scarbozow and fiftene Spanissh ships that were laden with much riches, and were with him in ayde at that present. There was great ioy made among the people, all men praising that worthy mans bountifullnes & loue towards the king. The Earle & Barons seeing so laudable an act, atchieued by Iohn Philpot, toke it grieuously, although they knew themselves guilty: first they secretly lie in wait, to do him some displeasure, and after they spake against him openly, saying, it was not lawfull for him to do such things without the counsell of the king and realme; certaine of the Lords, but the chiefe being Hugh Earle of Stafford, that rehearsed these things thus against him, were answered by the same Iohn Philpot: Sir, know (saith hee) that I neither sent my money nor men to the danger of the seas, that I should take from you, or your fellows, the good renoume of Chivalry, and winne it to me, but being sorrowfull to see the peoples misery, in my countrey, which now through your thoughtfulness, of the most noble Lady of pations, is brought to lie open to the spoyling of euery vilest pation, when there is not one of you that doth put his hand to the defence therof. I haue therfore set forth my selfe and mine, for the sauing of my pation and Countrey: the Earle had not to answer.

The eleuenth day of August, certaine wicked persons of the kings house being armed, at high passe time entred the Church of Westminster Abbey, and there set vpon two balliant Esquiers, Iohn Schakell and Robert Hawley, which had escaped out of the Tower of London, to the said Abbey, for refuge of Sanctuarie: they slew the said Robert Hawley in the quire before the Priors stall, and slew a Monke which intreated them to spare the saide Robert in that place. Sir Ralph Ferris, and sir Alan Buxule, Captayne of the Tower (some say the Lord Latimer) were the Captaines of this mischief.

Murder in the  
Church of  
Westminster.  
T. Walsingham

The foresaid two Esquiers, Robert Hawley, and Iohn Schakell, in the  
battel

battell of *Hayes* in *Spaine* toke the *Carle* of *Dene* prisoner, who deliuered vnto them his sonne for a pledge: and because they would not present the said *Charles* sonne to the *king*, who would giue them little or nothing for him, the foresaid *Alan Buxue*, with other were sent to do this mischief, who slew the one, and cast the other in prison.

1379.  
Tho. Walling.  
Berwicke ca-  
stell taken by  
the Scots.

The Scots began to rebell, and a squire of theirs, called *Alexander Ramsey*, with fortie persons, in a night toke the *Castell* of *Berwicke*, but the ninth day following, the *Carle* of *Northumberland* recovered it, & slew the Scots that were therein.

The Merchants of *London* wickedly slew a rich merchant of *Genoa*, for that he would carry to a better market 5 spices that he had promised to bring into this Countrey, the doers whereof were after apprehended, and some for that fact executed, as after shall appeare.

Defiance in  
the North.  
Tho. Walling.

So great a mortalitie of men happened in the North parts of *England*, as neuer had bene scene before, which the Scots seeing, raunged through and slew with the sword them that were sicke of the plague, and so persued them that had not the plague, that they drove out of the Countrey, almost all the able men.

Tare.

In a Parliament at *London*, it was decreed, that every Duke should pay tenne markes to the king, the Archbishops the like, Carles, Bishops, and mitered Abbots should giue five markes, and every Monk fortie pence, no religious person, man or woman, Parson, Vicar, or Chapleine escaped this tare. *John Mounfort* Duke of *Byzanie*, returned to his countrey, where he was receiued with great honour.

An. reg. 3.  
Wheat and  
wine cheap.  
Tho. Walling.  
Sir John A-  
rundale drow-  
ned.

A bushell of wheat was sold for five pence: a gallon of white wine six pence, and a gallon of red wine for foure pence.

Cro. maioris  
Lon.

*John* of *Arundale* brother to the *Carle* of *Arundale*, was sent to helpe the Duke of *Byzaine*, with many other noble Knightes and Esquires, who beginning their voyage from *Wilmington* with spoiling their own Countrey, ransoming wiues, widowes, and virgins, and robbing of Churches, were by tempest driven on the rockes of a certaine Iland in *Ireland*, where they were all most miserably drowned, with their treasure and provisions which was of inestimable value. *Sir Thomas Banister*, *Sir Roger Trumpington*, *Sir Nicholas Kiriell*, *Sir Thomas Dale*, *Sir John Sencle* and five other knights and many other perished there, besides threescore women, whom they had throwne into the Sea to lighten their shippe, and this was done on the xvi. of December.

1380.  
Parliament at  
London.

In a Parliament at *London* was granted to the king a tenth of the Ecclesiastical persons, and a fiftenth of the secular, upon condition that no other Parliament should be holden from the Calends of *March* till *Michaelmasse*.

A combat at  
Westminster.

A combat was fought at *Westminster* in the kings presence, between *John Anley* knight, & *Thomas Carington* Esquier, whom the foresaid knight had appealed of treason, for selling the castle of *Saint Sauours*, which the *Lord Chandos* had builded in the Ile of *Constantine* in *Fraunce*, and the Knight overcame the Esquier.

Thomas



Thomas of Woodstocke Earle of Buckingham, Thomas Percy, Hugh Calureley, Robert Knowles, Lord Basset, Sir Iohn Harleston, William of Windsor, appoyned and tried knightes, were sent with a great power to ayde the Duke of Bytaine, who were conueyed to Calets, and from thence rode about through Fraunce, spoyling the countrey, and slaying the people to the borders of Bytaine, and entred the same without losse, eyther of man or beaſt.

In this iourney Sir Iohn Philpot, Citizen of London deserued great commendations, who hyred ships for them of his owne charges, & with his owne money released the armour which the souldiours had gaged for their victuals, moze then a thousand in number.

John Philpot  
his good ser-  
uice.

The Scots entred Cumberland, Westmerland, and the Forrest of Engewood, slewe the inhabitantes, dyone away the Cattell, and robbed the Market and Towne of Bereth, and whiles the Earle of Northumberland prepared to haue bene reuenged, the king sent letters to the contrarie. Iohn Vian knight with the French kings Gallies toke the Towne of Winchelsea, put the Abbot of Battaille to flight, and toke one of his Ponkes that came thither armed.

An. reg. 4.  
Frenchmen  
tooke Win-  
chelsea.

He also burnt the Townes of Apledoz and Rye, Hastings and Portesmouth, about the feast of Saint Laurence.

The eight of September foure Gallies of Fraunce came to Grauesende, and burnt a great part of the Towne, returned with great spoyle, not refusing any hurt.

The towne of  
Grauesend  
burnt by the  
French.

About this time saith Polidor, the making of Gunnes was found, by a certaine Almaine, who hauing the powder of Byrnstone in a Morter which he had beaten for a medicine, and covered with a stone, as he strooke fire, a sparke chanced to fall into the powder, whereby a flame out of the morter raised the stone a great height, which after he had perceiued, he made a pipe of yron, and tempered the powder with other, and so finished that deadly engine, as reporteth Blondus and R. Volateranus. The first that vied shot, to their behalfe and profit, were the Venetians against the inhabitantes of Genoa: but sure it was long before this time, as shall be shewed in my larger Chronicle.

Gunnes in-  
uented.  
Polidor.  
Sebastia Munst-

Blondus.  
R. Volateranus:

During the Parliament at Northampton, beginning the first of Nouember, was hanged Iohn Kirby, that slew the merchant of Genoa, whom we spake of before.

Parliament at  
Northampton.

In this Parliament an exceeding great Taxe was demaunded, which afterwards was cause of great disturbance: of all religious persons men and women five shillings eight pence, secular Priests as much, and every person, man or women foure pence to the King, which was payde. It was also ordained, that euery couple wedded should pay two shillings for euery foote of beaſt, and also homegilde, but this was neuer asked.

Great Taxe.

After the feast of Christmas a Councell was holden at London, in the which Sir Thomas Brantingham Bishoppe of Excester was discharged of the Office of Lord Treasurer, and Sir Robert Hales Pyper of Saint

1381.  
Tho. Walsing.

Carickes  
raught with  
wine came to  
Southham-  
ton.

Johns Hospital of Ierusalem in England was placed in his ronne, a noble and balliant knight & a hardy person, but such an one as pleased not the conacions.

About the same time came vessels called Carickes to South-hampton, fraught with all kinds of Spices, Wines, and other Marchandises, which greatly enriched the inhabitants of the whole realme, but especially of them that inhabited thereabout.

John Wickliffe.

The same time John Wickliffe parson of Lutterworth in Leterker-shire, laboured in his preaching to proue that after the consecration in the masse made by the Priest, very bread and wine were there present as before, Christ being there assistant, as in euery place, but moze specially, & the same bread not to be moze worth then other bread, except onely for the blessing of the Priest, and therefore he affirmed that Christians were deceived in honouring of the said bread, which was a thing without life, for any thing that had life, was better then that which lacked life.

An army sent  
to aid the king  
of Portugall.

A great army was assembled and sent to the aid of the Duke of Lancaster, against the king of Spayne, for the said Duke affirmed, that it was expedient for this realme, that an host of men, with abundance of money should be sent to the king of Portugale, that he might thereby be bound to aide the king of England, and stop the passage of the straites of Gibaltare, or of Mozoc, from the Gallies, that must of necessitie passe by the same straites, to come to infect the British, or English Ocean, so that should England be safe, and Fraunce should be deceived: Captaines appointed to this army, were Edmond of Langley, Earle of Cambridge, William Lord Beauchampe, the Lord Botetax, sir Matthew Gourney, and many other knights, the which passed the seas, and prosperously came to Lyfbone, and were thankfully receiued of the king, but these were not able to assaile the king of Spayne, yet greatly profitting Portugale, they defended the confines, and stayed the Spaniards that they could not enter the countrey as enemies: our men oft times inuaded the Spaniards, and boldly abode in that land untill a greater number of warriors might be sent vnto them out of England.

A great rebel-  
lion in Eng-  
land, and the  
causes thereof.

In this meane time, the realme of England, appointed to be punished for her sinnes, was sodainly plagued in such sort, that if God had not sooner suppressed the same, both the gouernment had bene utterly destroyed, and the whole realme made a laughing stocke and scozne to all nations.

In the last yere (as is aforesaid) was granted to the king a grieuous tare or tallage of his subiects, both spiritual and tempozall, thzough the which was raised in England, a shipwracke of great troubles: for diuers Courtiers desirous to enrich themselves with other mens goods, informed the king & his court, that the tallage was not gathered bp faithfully to the kings vse by the Collectors: whereupon they offered to the king, that they would pay a great summe of money for the same of that which they would gather ouer and besides that which had bene paid, if they might be by the king thereunto authorized. And some of them getting the kings letters and authority, safe in diuers places of Kent and Essex, and handled the people very sore and vncourteously almost not to be spoken, for the leuping of the said summe of money, which,

some

some of the people taking in euill part, they secretly toke counsell together, gathered assistants, and resisted the exactors, rising against them, of whom some they slew, some they wounded, and the rest fled.

The king therefore ordained certaine Commissioners to enquire, howe they were leuied, amongst the which, one was sent into Essex to Thomas de Bampton, hee sitting one day before Whitson-tide, at Bzentwood, enquiring how the Collectors had leuied the subsidy before said, all the people of fobbing answered, they would not pay one peny more then they had done, whereof they had his acquittance, wherupon the said T. did grievously threaten them, hauing with him two Sergeants at Armes of the kings, wherupon they of fobbing, of Curringham, and of Samford, assembled to the number of more then one hundred, went to T. Bampton and gaue him flat answer that they would neither treat with him, or pay any such money as was demanded: wherefore the said Bampton commaunded the Sergeants to arrest and put them in prison, but the townsmen made them all to fly towards London to the kings counsell. Wherupon sir Robert Belknap chiefe Justice of the common Pleas was sent downe with commission of Traylbaston, and before him sundry inditements of those men; who comming before him called him traitor to the king, and realme, and furthermore compelled him to sweare vpon a booke, that he should no more sit in any such Sessions, and to declare to the names of the Jurors, whose heads they chopped off as they found them, and destroyed their houses, which made sir Robert Belknap in haste to fly his house. This done the Commons assembled before Whitson-tide to a great number: those toke all the Clerkes of the said T. Bampton and chopped off their heads, which they caried before them on poles. At the same time the great Pryor of Saint Iohn of Ierusalem by London, hauing a godly and delectable Manor in Essex, wherein was ordained victuals and other necessities, for the vse of a Chapter Generall, and great aboundance of sayre stuffe, of Wines, Arras clothes, and other prouision for the knightes brethren: The Commons entred this Manor, eate vp the victuals and prouision of Wine, three tunne, and spoiled the Manor and the ground with great damage: then they sent diuers letters into Kent, Suffolk, and Northfolke to rise with them, and departing themselves into diuers companies, committed many outrages: shortly after, to wit, on Monday after Whitson-day, a knight of the kings house, named sir Simon Burley, hauing in his companie two Sergeants at Armes of the kings, came to Grauesend, where he challenged one to be his bondman, for whom, men of the towne did gently intreat him to shew fauour, but sir Simon would not take lesse then 300. pound of siluer for his manumission, & therefore arrested him, and sent him to Rochester Castell, wherupon the Commons of Kent began to rise, for the which the king sent a Justice of Traylbaston, with Iohn Legge a Serieaunt of Armes, there to sit, hauing with them many inditements, but as they would haue late at Canterbury vpon their commissio, they were resisted by the commons, who daily grew to a great multitude, & being without a captain, came to Dartford, where they toke counsaile, and appoynted that none which

Commissioners  
sent into Essex  
to Thomas  
Bampton.

fobbing Cur-  
ringham and  
Samford in  
Essex.

Sir Robert  
Belknap  
Justice.

Jurors heads  
chopped of.

Lord Pryor of  
Saint Iohns  
his Manor in  
Essex spoiled.

Sir Simon  
Burley by a  
commission in  
Kent arrested  
one of Graues-  
end, sent him  
to Rochester  
Castell.  
Commons of  
Kent began to  
rise.

Rocheſter Caſtelle beſieged, priſon: r ſet out.

The Commons went to Canterbury, and ſware the Maior to the king & them.

Lib. S. Albones.

John Tylar of Dartford ſlew one of the Collectors of money.

were dwelling within twelve miles of the ſea, ſhould goe with them, but keepe the coaſt of the ſea from enemies, ſaying there were more kings then one, which they would not ſuffer, nor haue any other but king Richard. On the Friday after, they came to Rocheſter, and there ſoynd with the Eſſer rebels, who together ſtrongly beſieged the Caſtle, and deliuered the man of Graueſend with other: then they made Wat Tighler of Maidſtone their Captaine, who with his company on Monday after Trinity Sunday, came to Canterbury, where they commaunded the Monkes to chuſe them an Archbiſhop, for he that now is, (quoth they) is a traitor, & ſhal be beheaded. When they ſwoze the Maior, Baliffes, and Commons of the Towne to be true to king Richard and the lawfull Commons of England. They beheaded thre men of that town, and then taking with them 500. men of that town toward London, left the reſt to keepe the ſaid town. This tumult thus begun in Kent, by meane of ſir Simon Burley, was alſo increaſed by diuers other actions in other places, amongſt the which, as I finde noted in a Chronicle ſometimes belonging to the Monastery of Saint Albons one of the collectors of the grotes, or polle money, comming to the houſe of one Iohn Tylar, in the town of Dartford in Kent, demanded of the Tylars wiſe, for her husband, her ſelfe, her ſeruants, and ſo; their daughter (a yung mayden) euery one of them a grote; which the Tylars wiſe denied not to pay, ſauing for her daughter, whom ſhe ſaid was but a child, not to be counted a woman: quoth the collector, that will I ſome wiſe, and taking the mayden, and turned her by to ſearch whether ſhe were vnder growne with haire or not, (for in many places they made the like triall) whereupon her mother cried out, neighbours came running in: and her husband being at worke in the ſame town, tyling of an houſe, when he heard thereof, caught his lathing ſtaffe in his hand, and ranne reaking home, where reaſoning with the Collector, who made him ſo bold, the Collector answered with ſtout wordes, and ſtrake at the Tylar, whereupon the Tylar auoiding the blow, ſmote the Collector with his lathing ſtaffe, that the braines flew out of his head, wherethrough great noyſe aroſe in the ſtreets, and the poore people being glad, euery one prepared to ſupport the ſaid Iohn Tylar. Thus the Commons being drawne together, went to Maidſtone, and from thence backe againe to Blacke heath, and ſo in ſhort time they ſtirred all the Countrey, in a manner to the like commotion, and ſo forthwith beſetting the waies that lead to Canterbury, arreſt all paſſengers, compelling them to ſwear: firſt, that they ſhould keepe their allegiance vnto king Richard, and to the Commons, and that they ſhould accept no king that was named Iohn, for enuy they bare vnto Iohn Duke of Lancaſter, who named himſelfe king of Caſtile, and that they ſhould be ready when ſo euer they were called, and that they ſhould agree to no Ware to be leued from thenceforth in the kingdome, nor conſent to any except it were a fiſtene.

The ſame of theſe doings ſpread into Suſſer, Hertſorde, Eſſer, and Cambridgſhire, Dorſolke, Suffolke, &c. and when ſuch aſſembling of the common people daily toke increaſe, and that their number was now made



made almost infinite, so that they feared no man to resist them, they beganne to shewe some such Actes as they had considered in their mindes, and tooke in hande to behead all men of Lawe, as well Apprentices, as Titter-bartiffers and old Justices, with all the Jurers of the countrey, whom they might get into their hands, they spared none whom they thought to be learned, especially if they found any to haue pen and inke, they pulled off his hode, and all with one voice of crying, Hale him out, and cut off his head.

They also determined to burne all Court rolles and olde monuments that the memory of antiquities being taken away, their Lordes should not be able to chalenge any right on them, from that time forth. These Commons had to their Chapleine or Preacher a wicked Priest, called Sir Iohn Ball, who counsailed them to destroy all the Nobility, and Cleargy, so that there should bee no Bishop in England, but one Archbischoppe, which should be himselfe, and that there should not bee aboue two religious persons in one house, and their possessions should bee deuided among the laye men, for the which doctrine they held him as a prophet. They going to wardes London met diuers Lawyers, and twelue Knights of that countrey, whom they forced to sweare to maintaine them, or else to be beheaded: this being knowne to the King, on Wednesday following hee sent messengers to demanda the cause of their rising. Who answered, that they were gathered together for his safety, to destroy those that were traitors to him and his kingdome: the king by messengers replied, that they should cease their assemblies untill hee mought speake with them, and all matters should be amended. Whereupon the Commons requested the King to come and see them on the Blacke heath, and the King the third time sent word that hee would willingly come to them the next day. At what time the King being at Windsor remoued in all haste to London, whom the Mayor met, and safely brought to the Tower, whither the Archbischoppe of Canterburie Chancelor, the Bischoppe of London, the Pryor of Saint Iohn Treasurer, the Earles of Buckingham, Kent, Arundale, Warwick, Suffolke, Orford, and Salisbury, and other of the Nobility, and Gentlemen to the number of fife hundred did come, and on Corpus Christi eue the Commons of Kent came to blacke heath, thre miles from London, to meete with the King, hauing displayed before them two Banners of Saint George, and therscore Penons. The Commons of Essex came on the other parte of the riuer Thames, to haue also aunswere from the king, at what time the king being in the Tower, commaunded barges to be made ready, and taking with him his Counsell, and foure barges for his retinue, was rowed to Greenwich, where the Chancelor, and Treasurer perswaded the King that it were great follie to goe to a number of men without reason, and thereupon hee staide. The Commons therefoze sent to him, requiring to haue the heades of Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and fiftene other Lordes, whereof fourtene were present with him in the Tower, to wit, Simon Sudburie Chancelor, Sir Robert Hales Treas-

Justices, ..  
Lawyers and  
Jurors behead-  
ed.

Lib. Eborum,

Sir Iohn Ball  
a wicked priest.  
Chapleyn to  
the rebels.

The king  
sent messen-  
gers to the re-  
bels, to dema-  
nd of them the  
cause of their  
rising.

King Richard  
came to the  
Tower of  
London.

... Corpus Christi  
eue.  
The Commons  
of Kent came  
to the blacke  
heath.

The commons  
of Essex came  
also on the o-  
ther side the  
Thames.

Watchword  
of the Com-  
mons.

The Com-  
mons of Kent  
came into  
Southwarke,  
broke up the  
prisons.

The Com-  
mons of Essex  
spoiled the  
Archbishops  
house at Lan-  
beth.

The Com-  
mons of Essex  
burnt the Pa-  
no: of High-  
bury.

The Com-  
mons of Kent  
broke downe  
the Stewes.

The Com-  
mons entred  
the Citie of  
London.

The religious  
were in prayer  
and procession.  
The Commons  
passed through  
the Citie and  
did no harme.  
If they tooke  
any with theft  
they beheaded  
him, but being  
drunken they  
burnt the Sa-  
uoy, but reser-  
ued nothing  
to themselves.

surer, the Bishoppe of London, Iohn Fordham Clarke of the pynale Seale, Robert Belknap chiefe Justice, sir Ralph Ferers, sir Robert Plessington chiefe Baron of the Erchequer, Iohn Legge Sergeant at armes, Thomas Bampton and others, wherunto the king would not assent, but willed them to come to him to Windsor, on Monday next, where they should haue sufficient answer to all their demands. The Commons had a watch-word, which was this: With whom holde you: and the answer was, with king Richard, and the true Commons, and who could not that watch-word, off went his head. The king being warned that if he came to the Commons, hee should becaried about by them, & forced to grant them their requests whatsoever, hee returned toward London and entred the Tower, about thre of the clock: The Commons being certified that the king was gone, they on the same day toward euening came to Southwarke, where they brake downe the houses of the Marshalsey, and loosed the prisoners, amongst other they brake downe the house of Iohn Inworth then Marshal of the Marshalsey, the kings Bench, & all the houses of Jurers, & Questmongers, continuing that outrage all the night: At what time the Commons of Essex went to Lambeth a Panno: of the Archbishop of Canterbury, entred the house, spoiled and burnt all the goods with the books, registers, and remembrances of the Chancery. The next day being Thursday, and the feast of Corpus Christi, or the 13. of June; the Commons of Essex in the morning went to the Panno: of Highbery two miles from London north, this Panno: belonging to the Pprio: of Saint Iohn of Ierusalem, they wholly consumed with fire. On which day also in the morning the Commons of Kent brake downe the few-houses nere London brydge, at that time in the hands of the frowes of Flaunders, who had farmed them of the Pprio: of London. After which they went to London brydge, in hope to haue entred the Citie: but the Pprio: comming thither before, fortified the place, caused the brydge to be drawn vp, and fastened a great chaine of yron a crosse, to restrain their entrie. When the Commons of Surrey, who were risen with the other, cried to the wardens of the brydge to let it downe, whereby they might passe, or else they would destroy them all, whereby they were constrained for feare to let it downe, & giue them entrie, at which time the religious persons were earnest in procession, and prayer for peace: the Commons passed through the Citie, and did no hurt, they take nothing from any man, but bought all things at a iust price: and if they found any man with theft, they beheaded him. Now talking with the simple Commons, of procuring them liberty, and apprehending traitors (as they termed them) especially the Duke of Lancaster, they shortly got all the poore Citizens to conspire with them: and the same day, after the sunne was got on some height that it wared warme, and that they had tasted at their pleasures of diuers wines, whereby they were become as madde, as drunken (for the rich Citizens had let open their sellers to enter at their pleasure) they began to talke of many things, amongst the which they exhorted each other, that going to the Sauoy, the Duke of Lancasters house, to the which there was none in the Realme

Realme to be compared in beauty and stateliness, they mought set fire on it, and burne it; this talke pleasing the Commons of the Citie, they straight ranne thither, and setting fire on it round about applied their trauaile, to destroy that place: and that it mought appeare to the communalty of the realme, that they did not any thing for couetise, they caused Proclamation to be made, that none on paine to lose his head, should presume to conuert to his owne vse any thing that there was, or mought bee found, but that they should breake such plate and vessel of gold and siluer, as were in that house in great plenty, into small peeces, and throw the same into the Thames, or into some priuies; clothes of gold, siluer, silke, & velvet, they should teare; rings, and Jewels set with precious stones, they should bruse in mortars, that the same mought be to no vse, &c. And so was it done. Henry Knighton writeth, that when the rebelles burnt the Sauoy, one of them (contrary to the Proclamation) toke a goodly siluer peece and hid it in his bosome, but an other that espied him, tolde his fellowes, who forthwith hurried him and the peece of plate into the fire, saying, we be zealous of truth and iustice, and not thæues, or robbers. After this they getting a rich garment of the Dukes (commonly called a Jacke, or Jackquit) setting it on a speares point, for a marke, they shot at it with their bowes and arrows, but when they coulde that way doe it little hurte, they toke it downe, and laying it on the ground, with their swordes and axes they all to broke it. To the number of two and thirtie of those rebels entred a seller of the Sauoy, where they dranke so much of sweet Wines, that they were not able to come out in time, but were shut in with wood and stones that mured by the doore, where they were heard crying and calling seuen daies after, but none came to helpe them out till they were dead.

H. Knighton.

The Commons burnt on: of their fellowes.

H. Knighton.

More then xxx rebels mured up in a cellar.

In this meane time the Commons of Kent brake vp the Fleet, and let the prisoners goe where they would: they destroyed and burnt many houses, and defaced the beauty of Fleetestrate: from thence they went to the Temple to destroy it, and plucked downe the houses, tooke off the tyles of the other buildinges left, went to the Church, toke out all the bookes, and remembraunces that were in hutches of the prelates of the Lawe, caried them into the high strate, and there burnt them; this house they spoiled for wraoth they bare to the Pryor of Saint Iohns, into whom it belonged: after a number of them had sacked this Temple, what with labour, and what with Wine, having ouercome, they lay downe vnder the walles, and housing, and were dayne like swine, one of them killing an other for olde grudge and hatred, and others also made quicke dispatch of them. A number of them that burnt the Temple, went from thence towarde the Sauoy, destroying all the houses that belonged to the Hospitall of Saint Iohn: and after they went to the place of the Bishop of Chester, by the Strand, where Iohn Fordham remained elect of Durham, they entred his seller, rousing out the tunnes of Wine, drinking excessively, not dooing any more harme. Then they wente

Tho. Walsing. Prison of the Fleet broken up, many houses in Fleetstreet burnt, they spoiled the Temple, and burned the records or remembraunces of the Law.

The rebels murder one another.

The rebels dranke vp the wine at Chesham Inn: by the Strand, and burnt the

houses of  
questmongers,  
made spoyle of  
what their  
fellows had  
left in the Sa-  
uoy.

towards the Sauoy, burning many houses of questmongers. At the last they came to the Sauoy, brake the gates, entered the house, came to the war-drope, tooke out all the torches they could finde, which they set a fire, and with them bent all the feather beddes, ccuerlets (whereof one with armes was esteemed worth 1000. markes) and all other goods that they might finde, with the houses, and buildings belonging thereunto, which were left by the Commons of the Citie of London. And (as it was saide) they found thre barreles of gunne powder, which they thought had bene golde, or silver, those they cast into the fire, which more suddenly then they thought, blew vp the Hall, destroyed the houses and almost themselves: from thence they went to Westminster, burned diuers houses, and amongst other the house of Iohn Buterwike vnder Shyrine of Wiblese, they broke the prison at Westminster, and returned to London by Holborne, and before the Church of Saint Sepulchre, burnt the house of Simon the Hostiler and others, they brake the prison of Newgate, let forth the prisoners, &c.

The Rebels  
went to West-  
minster and  
burned many  
houses.

Prison of  
Newgate bro-  
ken vp.  
Roger Legat  
beheaded in  
Cheape, and  
pillaged in  
other places.  
Tower of  
London besie-  
ged.

The same Thursday, the said Commons went to Saint Martins le Grand in London, and tooke from the high Altar in that Church one Roger Legat chiefe silar (or questmonger) led him into Cheape, and cut off his head: at that time also they beheaded xviii. in diuers places of the Citie. During which time diuers of the Commons went vnto the Tower, there to haue spoken with the king, but could not be heard, wherefore they besieged the Tower on that side towards Saint Katherine's. The other Commons that were in the Citie went to the Hospitall of Saint Iohn, and by the way burnt the house of Roger Legat lately beheaded, they burnt all the houses belonging to Saint Iohns, and then bent the sayre Priory of the Hospitall of Saint Iohn, causing the same to burne by the space of seuen daies after. At what time the King being in a Turret of the Tower, and seeing the mannours of Sauoy, the Priory of Saint Iohns Hospitall, and other houses on fire, he demaunted of his counsell what was best to doe in that extremitie, but none of them could counsaile in that case. The King there in a Tower towards Saint Katherine's made Proclamation that all people should depart to their homes peaceably, and he would pardon them all their trespasses: but they with one voice cried, they would not goe before they had the traitors within the Tower, and charters to free them from all seruice, and of other matters which they would demaund: this the King granted, and caused a Clarke to write in their presence as follooweth.

All the houses  
of common in-  
ners burnt.  
Hospitall of  
Saint Iohn  
by Smithfield  
burnt.

The kings  
proclamation.

The kings  
Charter to the  
Commons.

Richard King of England and of Fraunce, doth greatly thanke his god Commons, because they so greatly desire to see and hold him for their king, and doth pardon to them all manner of trespasses, misprisons, and felonies done before this time, and willet and commaundeth from hence forth, that every one hasten to his owne dwelling, and set downe all his graunces in writing, and send it vnto him, and he will by aduise of his lawfull Lordes, and good counsell provide such remedy as shall be profitable to him, to them, and to the whole Realme. Whereunto he set his signet in their presence, and

sent



sent it vnto them by two knights, one of them standing vp in a chaire aboue the rest, that euery one might heare. During which time the king remained in the Tower, to his great grieffe, for when the Commons heard the writting, they said it was but a mockery, and therfore returned to London, proclayming through the Citty, that all the men of Lawe, all they of the Chancery, and of the Exchequer, and all that could make any wytt, or letter, should be beheaded wheresocuer they might be found. The whole number of the common people, were at that time diuided into thre parts, of the which one part was attending to destroy the mannor of Highbery, and other places belonging to the Prior of Saint Iohn: Another company lay at the Piles ende East of the Citty: The thirde kept at the Tower hill, there to spoyle the king of such victuals as were brought to wards him. The company assembled on the Piles end, sent to commaund the king, that he should come to them without delay, vnarmed, or without any force, which if he refused to doe, they would surely pull downe the Tower, neither should hee escape aliae; who taking counsell of a few, by leuen of the Clocke the king rode to the Piles end, with his moier in a whirlicote or chariot as we now terme it, & the Carles of Buckingham, Kent, Warwicke, and Orford, Sir Thomas Percie, Sir Robert Knowles, and the Mayor of London, with diuers other knights, and Esquires, Sir Aubery de Vere bare the kings sword. Thus with a few vnarmed, the king went towards the rebels in great feare: and so the gates of the Tower being set open, a great multitude of them entred the same. There was the same time in the Tower 600. warlike men furnished with armour and weapon, expert men in armes, and 600. archers, all which did quaille in stomacke. For the basest of the rustickes, not many together, but euery one by himselfe, durst presume to enter the kings chamber, or his mothers. with their weapons, to put in feare each of the men of warre, knights or other: many of them came into the kings priuy chamber, and plaid the wantons, in sitting, lying and sporting them on the kings bed: and that more is, inuited the kings mother to kisse with them, yet durst none of those men of warre (strange to be said) once withstand them: they came in and out like masters, that in times past were slaues of most vile conditiō. Whilist therfore these rusticks fought the Archbishop with terrible noyse and fury running vp and downe, at length finding one of his seruants, they charge him to bring them where his master was, whom they named traitor, which seruant daring do none other, brought them to the Chappell; where, after Masse had bene said, and hauing receiued the communion, the Archbishop was busie in his praers, for not vnknowing of their cormning and purpose, hee had passed the last night in confessing of his sinnes, and in deuout praers. When therfore he heard they were come, with great constancie he said to his men, Let vs now goe, surely it is best to die, when it is no pleasure to liue, and with that the tormentors entering, cried, Where is the traitor: The Archbishop answered, behold, I am the Archbishop whom you seeke, not a traitor. They therfore laid handes on him, and drew him out of the Chappell, they drew him out of the Tower gates, to the Tower hill, where being compassed about with many thousands, and seeing

Proclamation  
by .ij. Com-  
mons in Lon-  
don.

The rebels  
commaund the  
king, and he  
going to them  
on the Piles  
end.  
Whirlicote.

The rebels  
enter the  
Tower

Archbishop  
fleeeth out of  
the Tower.

sworde

swords about his head drawne in excessive number, threatening to him death, he said unto them thus: what is it dære brethren you purpose to doe, what is mine offence committed against you, for which ye will kill me, you were best to take hede, that if I be killed, who am your passor, there come not on you, the indignation of the iust reuenger, or at the least, for such a fact all England be put vnder interdiction: he could vnnearth pronounce these words, before they cryed out with an horrible noise, that they neither feared the interdiction, nor the Pope to be aboue them. The Archbishop seeing death at hand, with comfortabie words, as he was an eloquent man, and wise, beyond all wise men of the realme; lastly, after forgiveness graunted to the executioner that should behead him, he kneeling downe offered his necke to him that should strike it off, being striken in the necke, but not deadly, he putting his hand to his necke, said thus, a ha, it is the hand of God, he had not remoued his hand from the place, where the payne was, but that being sodainly striken, his fingers ends being cut off, and part of the arteries, he fell downe, but yet he died not, till being mangled with 8. strokes in the necke, and in the head, he fulfilled most worthy martyrdome. There lay his body vnburied all that Friday, and the morrow till afternone, none daring to deliuer his body to the sepulture, his head these wicked took, and nayling thereon his hode, they fire it on a pole, and set it on London Bridge, in place where before stood the head of Sir Iohn Minstarrow. This Archbishop Simon Tibald alias Sudbury, sonne to Nicholas Tibald gentleman, borne in the towne of Sudbury in Suffolke, Doctour of both lawes, was 18. yeres Bishop of London, in the which time he builded a goodly Colledge, in place where his fathers house stode, and indued it with great possessions, and furnished the same with secular Clerkes and other ministers, valued at the suppression 122. pound. 18. shillings in lands by yere. He builded the upper end of S. Gregories Church at Sudbury. After being translated to the Archbishopricke of Canterbury, in An. 1375. he reedified the walles of that Citie, from the West gate (which he builded) to the North gate, which had been destroyed by the Danes before the conquest of William the bastard. He was slaine as ye haue heard, and afterwards buried in the Cathedral Church of Canterbury. There died with him Sir Robert Hales a most valiant knight, Lord of S. Johns and treasurer of England, and John Legge one of the Kings sericants at armes, and a Franciscan Friar, named William Apledore the Kings Confessor. Richard Lions also a famous lapidary or goldsmith, late one of the Sherifs of London, was drawne out of his house and beheaded in Cheape. There were that day beheaded manie as well Flemings as Englishmen for no cause, but to fulfill the crueltie of the rude Commons: for it was a solemne pastime to them, if they could take any that was not swozne to them, to take from such a one his hode with their accustomed clamour, and forthwith to behead him: neither did they shew any reuerence vnto sacred places, for in the very Churches did they kill whom they had in hatred, they fetcht 13. Flemings out of the Augustine Friers church in London, and 17. out of another church, and 32. in the Vintrie, and so forth in other places of the Citie, & in Southwarke, al which they beheaded, except they

A chibishop of  
Canterburie  
cruelly beheaded.

Colledge at  
Sudburie  
found.

Prior of  
Saint Johns  
beheaded.

Jeffrey Chan-  
cer in the tale  
of the Runnes  
Ditch.

Flemings be-  
headed.

they could plainly pronounce bread and cheese, for if their speech sounded any thing on bꝛot, oꝝ caluse, off went their heads, as a sure marke they were Flemings.

The King comming to the Piles end, the place befoze recited, was soze a fraide, beholding the wood commons, who with froward countenance required many things which they befoze had put in wꝛitings to be confirmed by the Kings letters patents.

The 1. that all men should be frée from seruitude and bondage, so as from thencefoꝛth there should be no bondmen.

The 2. that he should pardon all men of what estate soeuer, all maner actions and insurrections committed, and all maner treasons, felonies, transgressions and extorsions, by any of them done, and to graunt them peace.

The 3. that al men from thencefoꝛth might be enfranchised to buy and sell in euery Countie, Citie, borough, town, faire, market, and other place within the Realme of England.

The 4. that no acre of land holden in bondage oꝝ seruice, should be holden, but soꝝ 4. pence, and if it had been holden soꝝ lesse afozetime, it should not hereafter be inhaunfed.

These and many other things they required: mozeoner they tolde him, he had been euilly gouerned til that day, but from that tyme he must be gouerned other wise.

The King perceiuing he could not escape except he graunted to their request, yeelded to the same. And because the Chanceloꝝ was beheaded, the King made the Earle of Arundale soꝝ the time Chanceloꝝ, and keeper of the great seale, and also made diuers Clarke to wꝛite Charters, patents, and protections graunted to the Commons, soꝝ the sozefaid matters, without taking fine, soꝝ the seale, oꝝ wꝛiting thereof; and so to ward euen, the King crauing licence departed from them. The next day being Saturday and the 15. of Iune, a great number of the Commons came to the abbey of Westminster, and there found Iohn Inworth Parthall of the Parthallep, and master of the prisoners there, imbracing a marble pillar of Saint Edwards thꝛine soꝝ his defence, against his enemies, they plucked his armes from the pillar, and led him into cheape, where they cut off his head. In which time they toke out of Wyndestræte one Iohn Greenfield, led him into cheape, & cut off his head, notwithstanding that the King had at this time made proclamation thꝛough the Citie, that euery one should peaceably goe into his countrey, without doing further euill, whercunto they would not assent. The same day after dinner, about two of the clocke, the King went from the wardrobe, called the Hopall in London toward Westminster, attended on by the number of 200. persons, to visit Saint Edwards thꝛine, and to see if the Commons had done any mischief there: The Abbot and couent of that abbey, with the Chanons and bicars of Saint Stephens Chappell, met him in rich Copes, with procession, and led him by the charnell house into the abbey, then to the Church, and so to the high altar, where hee deuotely prayed, and offered. After which he spake with the Anchoze, to whom hee confessed him selfe, then hee went

Essex men returned homeward.

Iohn Inworth Parthall of the Parthallep beheaded.

Iohn Greenfield beheaded.

King Richard went to Westminster, and was there received with procession.

Our Lady in  
the pwe. . . .  
The King and  
the commons  
was in Smith-  
field.

to the Chapell called our Lady in the pwe, where he made his prayers :  
Which being done, the King made proclamation, that all the commons of the  
countrey, that were in London should mete him in Smithfield, which was  
done accordingly, and when the King was come with his people, he stode to-  
wards the East, nere to Saint Barilmewes pyory, and the commons to-  
wards the West in foyme of battayle. The King therefore sent to them, to  
shew them that their fellows the Cister men were gone from thenceforth  
to lue in peace, and that he would graunt to them the like foyme of peace, if  
it would please them to accept thereof. Their chiefe Captaine named War-  
tyler of Spaidstone, he I say being a crafty fellow, of an excellent wit, but  
lacking grace, answered, that peace he desired, but with conditions to his li-  
king, minding to keede the King with faire words, till the next day, that he  
might in y night haue compassed his peruerse purpose, for they thought y same  
night to haue spoyled the citie, the King first being slaine, and the great Lords  
that cleaued to him, and to haue burnt the Citie, by setting fire in foure parts  
thereof, but God that resisteth the proude, did sodainely disappoint him. For  
where the foyme of peace was in thre seuerall Charters written, and thre  
sent to him, none of them could please him: wherefore at length the King sent  
to him one of his Knights called Sir Iohn Newton, not so much to command  
as to intreate him (for his pride was well ynough knowen) to come and talke  
with him about his owne demands, to haue them put in his charter, of the  
which demands, I will put one in this Chronicle, that it may the moze plaine-  
ly appaere, the other to be contrary to reason. First, he would haue a commis-  
sion for him and his, to behead all Lawyers, escheters, and other whatsoeuer,  
that were learned in the law, or communicated with the law, by reason of  
their office, for he had conceived in his mind that this being brought to passe,  
all things after ward should be ordered according to the fancy of the common  
people: and indeede it was said, that with great pride, he bad but the day be-  
foze said, putting his hand to his lips, that befoze 4. dayes came to end, all the  
lawes of England should procede from his mouth. When Sir Iohn Newton  
was in hand with him for dispatch, he answered with indignation, if thou art  
so hasty, thou maiest get thee backe againe to thy master, I will come when  
it pleaseth me: notwithstanding he followed on horsebacke a slow pace, and  
by the way there came to him a dublet maker of London, named Iohn Ticle,  
who had brought to the commons 60. dublets which they bought and ware,  
for the which dublets he demaunded 30. markes, but could haue no payment,  
Wartyler answered him, friend appeale thy selfe, thou shalt be well paid or  
this day be ended, keepe thee nere me, I will be thy creditor: And there with he  
spurred his horse, departed from his company, and came so nere the King,  
that his horse head touched the crope of the Kings horse, and the first word he  
said was this, Sir King, seest thou all ponde people? yea truly quoth the  
King, wherefore saist thou so? because said he, they be all at my commande-  
ment, and haue sworne to me faith and truth, to doe all that I will haue them.  
In god time said the King, I will well it be so. Then said Wartyler, beleeuest  
thou King, that these people, and as many moe as be in London at my com-  
maundement,

Sir Iohn  
Newton sent  
to Wartyler.

Pride of Wartyler.

Wartyler his  
answere to the  
Dublet-maker.

Wartyler his  
words to the  
King.



mandement, will depart from thée thus, without hauing thy letters: no said the King, ye shall haue them, they be ordeyned for you, and shall be deliuered to euery each of them, with which words, Wat Tylar séeing the Knight Sir Iohn Newton néere to him on horsebacke, bearing the Kings sword, was offended and said, it had become him better to be on fote in his presence. The Knight (not hauing forgot his old accustomed manhood) answered, that it was no harme, séeing himselfe was also on horsebacke: which words so offended Wat, that he drew his dagger, and offered to strike at the Knight, calling him traitor: the Knight answered, that he lyed, and drew his dagger likewise. Wat Tylar not suffering such a contumely done to him befoze his rustickes, made as if he would haue runne on the Knight. The King therfore séeing the Knight in danger, to asswage the rigoz of War, for the time, commaunded the Knight to light on fote, and to deliuer his dagger vnto the said Waler, and when his proud minde could not so be pacified, but he would also haue his sword, the Knight answered, it was the Kings sword, and quoth he, thou art not woorthy to haue it, nor thou durst aske it of me, if here were no moze but thou and I. By my faith said Wat Tiler, I shall neuer eate till I haue thy head, and would haue run on the Knight: and with that came to the King, William Walworth, Maior of London, and many Knights and Esquires on the Kings side, affirming that it were great shame, such as had not been heard of, if in their presence, they should permit a noble Knight so shamefully to be murdered befoze his face, wherefoze he ought to be rescued speedily, and Tiler to be arrested. Which thing being heard, the King, although he were but tender of péeres, taking boldnesse vnto him, commaunded the Maior of London to set hand on him. The Maior being of an incomparable boldnesse and manhode, without any doubting, straight arrested him on y head, Wat Tighler furiously strake the Maior with his dagger, but hurte him not by meane he was armed, then the Maior drew his baselard, and gréuouly wounded Wat in the necke, and gaue him a great blow on the head, in which confusie, an esquire of the Kings house, called Iohn Cauendish, drew his sword and wounded him twise or thrise, euen vnto death, and Wat spurring his horse, cried to the commons to reuenge him, his horse bare him about foure score fote from thence where he fell downe halfe dead, and by and by they which attended on the King, inuironed him all about, where by he was not séene of his company, and other thrust him in with their weapons in diuers places of his body, and then they drew him from amongst the peoples séete into the hospitall of Saint Bartilmewe: which when the commons perceiued, they cryed out that their Captaine was traitterously slaine, and hartening one another to reuenge his death, bending their bowes, the King, shewing both wisdom and courage, picking his horse with the spurs, rode to them, and said: What a woork is this my men, what meane you to do, will you shote at your King: be not quarrelous, nor sozpy for the death of a traitor and ribald: I will be your King, I am your Captaine and leader, follow me into the field, there to haue whatsoeuer you will require.

This the King did, least the commons being set in a bitterness of minde should

Wat Tylar  
to Sir Iohn  
Newton who  
did beare the  
Kings sword.

William Wal-  
worth Maior  
of London ar-  
rested Wat Ty-  
lar and wound-  
ed him.

Li S. Mary Ebo-  
rum.

Iohn Cauen-  
dish slew Wat  
Tylar.

Henry Knytt.

should set fire on the houses in Smithfield, where their Captaine was slain. They therefore followed him into the open field, and the souldiers that were with him, as yet not knowing whether they would kill the King, or be in rest and depart home with the Kings Charter.

The Mayor of London rayed a power, and rescued the King.

In the meane time the Mayor of London onely with one servant, riding speedily into the Citie, began to cry, ye good Citizens helpe your King, that is to be murdered, and succour me your Mayor that am in the like danger, or if you will not succour me, yet leaue not your King destitute, when the Citizens had heard this, in those hearts the loue of the King was ingrafted, so dauidely, seemely arrayed, to the number of a thousand men tarried in the streets for some one of the Knights to lead them to the King, and by fortune Sir Robert Knowles came in that instant, whom they all requested to be their leader, least comming out of order, and not in good array they might easily be broken: who gladly brought part of them, Sir Parducase Dalbart, and other Knights brought the rest to the Kings presence. When the Mayor came to Smithfield and did not finde Wat Tygkhar, (as he left him wounded) he greatly maruailed, demanding where the traytor was, and it was tolde him that he was carried into the Hospitall of Saint Bartilmewe, and laid in the Masters Chamber, the Mayor went straight thither and made him to be carried into Smithfield, and there caused him to be beheaded, his head to be set on a pole, and borne before him to the King then resting in the field, and the King caused it to be borne nere vnto him, therewith to abash the Commons, greatly thanking the Mayor for that acte.

Record. R. 2.

That the Mayor beheaded by commandment of the Mayor.

The King, and those that were with him, Knights and Esquiers, reioycing of the vn hoped for comming of the Mayor, and those armed men, sodainly compassed all the multitude of the Commons.

There might a man haue scene a wonderfull change of Gods right hand, how the Commons did now throw downe their weapons, and fall to the ground, beseeching pardon, which lately before did glory that they had the Kings life in their power, now they hide themselves in caues, ditches, cozenefieldes, &c. The Knights therefore coueting to be reuenged, besought the King to permit them to take off the heads of an hundred or two of them, but the King not condescending to their request, commaunded the charter which they had demanded, written and sealed, to be deliuered vnto them for the time, to auoyde moze mischief, knowing that Essex was not as yet pacified, nor Kent stayde, the commons and rustickes of which Countreyes were readie to rise agayne, if he satisfied not their pleasure the sooner. The tenour of which Charter, in my larger Chronicle is set do wne. The Commons hauing got this Charter departed home, but ceased not from their former euill doings.

William Walworth Mayor of London Knighted, the order how.

The rude people being thus dispersed and gone, the King commaunded William Walworth to put a basenet on his head, for feare of that which might follow, and the Mayor requested to know for what cause he should so doe, with all was quieted, the King answered, that he was much bound to him, and therefore

therefore, he should be made knight, the Mayor againe answered, that he was not worthy, neither able to take such estate vpon him, for he was but a Merchant, and to liue by his merchandise, notwithstanding at the last, the King made him put on his basenet, and then toke a sword with both his hands, and strongly with a good will strake him on the necke, and the same day he made thre other Citizens knights for his sake in the same place, which were Iohn Philpot, Nicholas Brembar, and Robert Laund Aldermen, and Sir Iohn Candish in Smithfield was knighted. The King gaue to Sir William Walworth 100. pound land, and to the other 40. pound land, to them and their heires for euer: vpon the sand-hill towards Iseldoune were created the Carls Marshall, and Pembroke, and shortly after Nickolas Twisford, and Adam Francis Aldermen, were also made knights. Sir Robert Knowles, for his good seruice in the Citie, was by the Kings commaundement made a free man of the Citie.

Aldermen of  
Londons knighted.

Charles created.

Aldermen  
knighted.

The King with his Lords and all his company, orderly entred into the Citie of London with great ioy. The King went to the Lady Princesse his mother, who was then lodged in the Towzeropall called the Quenes Warreboze, and there she had remayned two dayes and two nights right soze abashed, but when she saw the King her sonne, she was greatly reioyced, and said, Ah saye sonne, what great sorrow haue I suffered for you this day: The King answered, and said, certainly Madame, I know it well, but now reioyce and thanke God, for I haue this day recovered mine heritage, and the Realme of England, which I had nere hand lost.

The Towzeropall in London.

The Archbishops head was taken downe off the Bridge, and Wat Tilers head was set in that place.

ouerlong it were in this booke to set downe the troubles at Saint Albons, by the bond men there against the Abbot, and other, for liberties which they claymed, as the like did in other places, committing many abominable acts, but somewhat to speake of them within the parts of Suffolke and Norfolke.

The Saturday wherof we haue befoze spoken, that the tempest might seme to be generall, God sent his wrath into the partes of Suffolke and Norfolke, by sending Celler men to moue the people that liued in quietnesse, to raise like commotions, and to turne the hearts of the bondemen or seruants against their Lords. The which making to their Captaine a most ingratious pylest named Iohn Wraw, who had been at London the day befoze, and was instructed by Wat Tiler, easily assembled a multitude of those common people. These according to the manner of them at London, ouerthrew houses and manors of great men and of Lawyers, slew the Students of the Lawe, and catching Sir Iohn Cauendish a Iustice of the Realme, some say Lord chief Iustice, beheaded him, and set his head on the pilloze in the towne of Bury, Sir Iohn of Cambridge, Bishopp of Bury, they caught and strooke off his head, his body was left naked in the field the space of fve dayes, none presuming to burie it, for feare of the Kniskikes, his head was set on the pilloze by the head of Sir Iohn Cauendish. Then entred they the Cloyster of the monasterie toke Sir Iohn Lakingnich keeper of the Baronie, halled him out with great noise,

Iohn Wraw ...  
Captaine in  
Suffolke and  
Norfolke.

Sir Iohn  
Cauendish  
Lord chief  
Iustice, the  
Bishopp of Bury  
and other be-  
headed by the  
rebels.

noyle, in the Market place they stroke off his head with eight strokes, and set it on the Billoze, they compelled the Ponkes that remained, (for their Abbot Edmond Bromfield was in prison at Pottingham) to graunt them Charters, &c.

John Liciſtar  
of Poꝛwich.

So small multitude of Commons being gotte together vnder the leading of a certaine Dyer of Poꝛwich, called Iohn Liciſtar, beganne to worke such maſtrie as in other places had been put in practice, putting their hands vnto robbery, so that no place might be free from them: they thought to haue got to them William de Viſſard Earle of Suffolke, that they might doe their businesse vnder colour of his authoritie, but the Earle being warned of their comming, sodainely rose from Supper, and taking his tourney thzough Woodes and desarts came to Saint Albons, and from thence to the King, ſayning himſelfe to bee the Lackey of Sir Roger de Boys, and bearing a Mallet behinde him. The Commons thus deceived, forth with leaſed vpon the houses of other Knights, and finding them, compelled them to be ſwoꝛne to ride thzough the Countrey with them, which if they had denied they had died for it.

Will. Arſed  
Earle of Suffolke,  
lackey to  
Sir Roger de  
Boys.

The Knights that were thus compelled, were the Lord Schales, Sir William Morley, Sir Iohn de Brues, Sir Steuen de Hales, Sir Robert de Sale, which Sir Robert blaming their doings, was smitten into the Brayne by one of his bondemen. The other perceiuing that they muſt diſſemble, or dye a ſhamefull death, determined to ſay all things was well. Whereupon being brought in ſanour with Liciſtar, (who named himſelfe King of the Commons) choſe Syr Steuen Hales (because hee was a comely Knight) to come befoze him, and to take the aſſay of his meates, and to the other he appoynted other officers.

Sir Robert  
Sale, ſlaine by  
the bondemen.

John Liciſtar  
King of the  
commons, and  
ſerued by  
Knights.

Now the Commons ſent two Knights, Sir William de Morley, and Sir Iohn Brewes with thze of the Commons in whom they eſpecially truſted, vnto the King at London, or els where, for to purchase of him a Charter of manumiffion and pardon, the which that it might be moze ſpeciall then other, they deliuered vnto the ſaid meſſengers a great ſumme of money, which they had receiued of the Citizens of Poꝛwich vnder pretext to ſaue their citie from burning and murder. The Knights with their companions, when they came to a Towne named Ignigham, not farre diſtant from Newmarket, they met with the Biſhop of Poꝛwich Sir Henry Spencer well armed, for as he was at his manoz of Burley, nere to Ochem Caſtle, not farre from Stamford, he heard of the Poꝛfolke men, and determined to goe againſt them, he had not at that time paſt an 8. ſpeares, and a ſmall number of archers, yet beholding the Knights, and ſome of the Commons, he commaunded them vpon their allegiance to tel him, if there were any of the Kings traytors. The Knights for feare of the Commons, diſſembled to anſwere, the Biſhop willed them boldly to goe to, and if there were any of the Kings traytors, to deliuer them to him: the Knights taking courage, answered that two of the cheefeſt ſtirrers among the whole company were preſent, and that the thirde was gone forth to pꝛouide their dinner, & herewith they ſhelued the cauſe of their tourney.

Boltones of the  
B. of Poꝛwich.

Burley belong-  
ing to the  
Biſhop of  
Poꝛwich.



ourney. The Bishop straightwayes commanded these two to lose their heads, and the third he himselfe went to seeke, whose head also he caused to be cut off, & their heads were set vp at Newmarket. Then the Bishop with the Knights hasted towards Norfolk, meaning to come to a place called Northwalsham, where the Commons were determined to stay for the Kings answer.

In passing the countrey the Bishops number increased, for diuers knights and many gentlemen of the countrey that layd for feare of the Commons, seeing the Bishop in armour, they ranne forth and ioyned with him. The Bishop therefore when he came to the said place, hauing about him a seemely company, he found that the Commons had entrenched themselves after the manner of warre, and had set vpon the rampier of their trench, windowes, doores, tables, boordes, with pales for their defence: behind them, they had placed their carts, as if they meant not to flee, and forthwith the Marshall Bishop commanded his trumpets to sound and taking a speare in his hand, set spurs to his horse, and is caried forth vpon them with such a courage, that with swift race he gafe the trench of them, and as he had bin a foming boze rode amongst his enemies where they were thickest, striking this man through, and felling that man downe, and ceased not till the company following hauing got the trench were ready to fight, those of the Bishops retinue therefore fought very sharply, and so likewise did the Commons, till at length the Commons fled, but the Bishop stopped them, knocking them downe, till the chiefe leaders of the tumult being taken with their King Iohn Litstar, (so many as pleased him being saued alive) he got the full victorie. The Bishop brought the said Iohn Litstar vnto drawing, hanging, and heading: and so the country was in peace.

The end of  
John Litstar.

Thus hauing shewed a few things which were done in Norfolk, I passe ouer to write of the rest done in that and other countries, but what they ment against the King, the confession of Iacke Straw declareth, who was chiefe amongst them, next to Wat Tyler. This man being taken, when at London he should by iudgement giuen by the Maior, lose his head; the Maior spake openly to him thus. Iohn (quoth he) behold thy death is at hand without all doubt, and there is no way through which thou mayest hope to escape, wherefore for thy soules health, without making any lye, tell vs what you purposed amongst you to haue done, to what ende did you assemble the Commons? And when he had stayde a while as doubtfull, what to say, deferring his answer, the Maior added, Thou knowest surely, O Iohn, that the thing which I demaunde of thee, if thou doe it, the same shall redounde to thy soules health, &c. He therefore animated with sayre promises, beganne as followeth.

Iacke Straw  
his confession  
at the gallows  
to the Maior  
and others.

Now saith he, it bofeth not to lye, neither is it lawfull to vtter any vntruth, especially vnderstanding that my soule is to suffer more strayter tormentes if I should so doe, and because I hope for two commodities by speaking the truth, first that these things that I shall speake may profite the common wealth: and secondly, after my death, I trust by your suffrages to be succored,

Purpose of the  
Reb. Is.

U h

according

according to your promises (which is to pray for me) I will speake faithfully without deceipt.

Conspiracy of  
the rebels.

The same time (sayeth he) that we came to Blacke Heath, when we sent for the King, we purposed to haue murdered al the knights, Esquires and gentlemen that should haue come with him, and to haue ledde the King royally besed, by and downe, that with the sight of him, all men especially the common people might haue come vnto vs the more boldely, and when we had got together an innumerable multitude, we would haue sodainely put to death in euery Countrey, the Loyds and masters of the common people, in whom might appeare to be either counsell or resistance against vs: and specially we would haue destroyed the Knights of Saint Johns, lastly we would haue killed the King himselfe, and all men that had been of any possession, Bishops, Monkes, Chanons, Parsons, to be briefe, we would haue dispatched: one-ly begging Friers should haue liued, that might haue suffred for ministring the Sacraments in the whole Realme, for we should haue made Kings, Wat Tyler in Kent, and in euery other shire one. But because this our purpose was hindered by the Archbishop, we studied how to bring him shortly to his ende.

Against the same day that Wat Tyler was killed, we purposed that euening (because that the poore people of London seemed to fauour vs) to set fire in foure corners of the Citie, and so to haue burnt it, and to haue deuised the riches at our pleasures amongst vs. He added that these things they purposed to haue done, as God should helpe him at the end of his life.

Jacke Straw  
beheaded.

Principall  
Captaines.

After this confession made, he was beheaded, and his head set on London Bridge by Wat Tilers and many other.

The principall leaders of the Commons were Wat Tyler, the second John Scawe, the third John Kirkby, the fourth Alen Threder, the fift Thomas Scotte, the sixth Ralph Rugge: these and many others were leaders of the Kentish and Essex men. At Mildenhall and Bury in Suffolke, was Robert Westbrom, that made himselfe King, and was most famous after John Wraw, who being a priest would not let crowne vpon crowne, but left the name of King and crowne to the said Robert. At Dor which John Lixlar a dier, exercised the name and power of a King, till he was taken and hanged for his paynes.

The King raised a great  
power, and  
rode into Kent.

Wat Tyler being killed, Jacke Straw and other their principall Captaines hanged or headed, the hope and confidence of the Commons decayed, but because the mindes of the King and nobles was yet wauering, seeing the people ready to mischief, they graunted to them Charters of manumission and suffered them to depart, the which being done, the King caused an army to be assembled from London, and sent into all Countreies that those who were his friends should make haste to come to him to London, furnished with horse and armour, and it came to passe that within thre daies he had a xl. thousand horsemen about him in seemely fort armed, he mustred them on Blacke Heath, himselfe ryding on a great courser, with his standard borne before him: when therefore so mighty an army was assembled, the King was aduertised that the Kentish men had euenly conspired, wherupon he forthwith set forthward,

but

but by the mediation of the Nobles and great men of Kent that undertooke for them, he was stayde and pacified with them, and then first Iustices were sent to seeke and inquire of malefactours, and that Countrey became quiet at the sight of them. Then the Maior of London sitting in Iudgement, caused the malefactours to be tried, as well of the Citie as also of Kent, Essex, South-sex, Suffolke, and Suffolke and other Countreies, that might be taken within the liberties of the Citie, and all those whom he found guiltie of the foresaid treason, he caused to hoppe headlesse, among the which were Iacke Strawe, Iohn Kirkeby, Alen Threder, &c. also Iohn Starling of Essex, that glozied to haue beheaded the Archbishop, was beheaded himselfe.

The king remained now at London, now at Waltham, with a great army of armed men, considering what was to be done for the commoditie of the Realme. At length the Counsell thought good to send the kings commission into every Shire, for the resisting of the disquieters of the peace of the Kingdome. These commissions did much comfort the faithfull subiects, and troubled the false, for they were now compelled to seeke corners, that before toke upon them to doe all things abroade, Lawyers now durst come forth of their dennes, and those which before fled from the tyrannie of the time, looked for those that now feared Iudgement and iustice to be done on them.

The commons being thus feared, but not in all places alike, they of Essex gathering a new multitude together at Byllica, a village nere to Hatfield Deuerell, decreed either to enjoy liberty gotten by force, or to dye in fighting for the same, they sent to the king then being at Waltham messengers to know if hee thought good to permit them to enjoy their permitted libertie, like to their Lords, and that they should not be compelled to come to courts, but only to great Leets twice in the yeare, vnto the which the king answered thus. Oh miserable and hatefull both to land and sea, not worthe to liue: doe ye require to be equall to your Lords? We were worthe to be put to most shamefull death: but sith ye are come as messengers, ye shall not die now, to the end ye may declare our answeres to your fellowes: declare to them therefore on the kings behalfe, that as they were husbandmen and bondmen, so shall they remaine in bondage, not as before, but more vile, without comparison farre, vnto this. Whilest we liue, and by Gods sufferance shall gouerne the kingdome, with witte, strength and goods, we will endeavour our selues to keepe you vnder, so that the due ty of your seruice, may be an example for posteritie, and that your matches both present, and that shall succede, may euer haue before their eyes, as it were in a glasse, your miserie, and to you matter to curse, and feare to commit the like. When the messengers were gone, there was sent straight waies into Essex, Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham, and sir Thomas Percy brother to the earle of Northumberland, to repress the boldnesse of the said commons.

These comunons had fortified themselves with ditches and carriages: nevertheless, although there was a great number of them, with small businessse they were scattered into the woods, where the Lords inclosed them, least any of them might escape: and it came to passe, that five hundred of the were slaine.

Maior of London caused malefactours of the Citie, of Kent, Essex, Suffolke, & Suffolke that might be taken, to hoppe headlesse.

An. reg. 5.

Commons of Essex gathered together at Byllica, sent messengers to the king.

Answer of the king to the Commons of Essex.

and eight hundred of their hozses taken, the other that escaped this slaughter being gotten together, hasted to Colchester, and began to stir the townsmen to a new tumult, and when they profited not there, they went to Sudbury; but the Lord Fitz Walter and sir John Harlestone followed them, and slew as many of them as they list, and shut up the rest in prisons. The King came to his manor of Haunering at Boure, and after to Chelmsford, where he appointed Sir Rob. Trisilian his Justice to sit and enquire of the malefactours, wherfore the men saring the evils that hung ouer their heads, there came aboute fife hundred humbly to the King barefooted and bareheaded, beseeching him of pardon and mercie. To whom pardon was graunted, with condition, to deliuer the stirrers of the said trouble. It came therefore to passe, that many were committed to warde, vpon whom, the Justice charged foure and twentie men of their conscience to say the truth, and many being condemned, were put to execution, by drawing and hanging, nine or tenne being hanged on one beame. The Justices that befoze had sit in Essex, Kent, London, and other places, soe all the multitude that were to be executed, vled to head the Commons, till nowe it seemed not a kinde of death answerable to so many & manifest crimes. These things were done in Essex, the King being present: the like by his Justices was done in other countries.

Robert Trisilian Justice, sat at Chelmsford.

Sir John Ball taken and brought to Saint Albons.

Doctrine of John Ball by him taught.

· The tenth of July John Ball priest being taken at Couentry, and brought to Saint Albons, was there befoze the King condemned, and had iudgement giuen him by Sir Robert Trisilian Knight a most skillful Justice, as a traitour to be drawne, hanged, headed and bowelled, whose death was respited untill the Monday at the intercession of William Bishop of London, who being carefull for his soules health, obtained that space for his repentance. This man a twentie yeres together and moze, preached in diuers places those things which he knew to be liking to the common people, flandering adwell ecclesiasticall persons, as secular Lords, seeking thereby, rather the beneuolence of the common people, then merite towards God: he taught that tithes were not to be giuen to the church men, except the partie that should giue the same were richer then the Vicar or parson that should receiue it. Also that tithes and oblations were to be withdrawen from Curates: if the parishioners or parishioner were of better life then the Curate. Also that no man was mate for the kingdome of God, that was not bozne in matrimony, he taught many other things too long to rehearse, for the which he was prohibited of the Bishops in whose diocesses he had attempted these things, that he should not preach from thenceforth in any Church: he went forth therefore into the streets and wayes, and into fields to preach, & there wanted not of the commons that came to heare him, whom he euer sought to allure to his sermons, by detracting of the prelates. At the length being excommunicated, and yet not desisting, hee was committed to prison by Simon the Archbishop of Canterbury, and William Bishop of London, where he prophesied that he should be deliuered by twentie thousand of his friends, which came so to passe in the foresaid time of troubles, when all prisons were broken up, and the prisoners giuen forth, and when hee was so deliuered, hee followed them, instiga-  
ting



ting them to committe much euill, and preaching that so it ought to be done. And that his doctrine might infect the moze number of people, at Blacke heath, where there were many thousands of the Commons assembled, he began his Sermon in this manner :

When Adam dolue and Eue span, who was then a gentleman ?

And continuing his begunne Sermon, he sought by the worde of that p<sup>ro</sup>uerbe which he took for his theame, to introduce, and p<sup>ro</sup>oue, that from the beginning, all were made a like by nature, and that bondage or seruitude was brought in by iniust opp<sup>re</sup>ssion of naughty men, against the will of God: for if it had pleased God to haue made bondmen, he would haue appointed them from the beginning of the worlde, who should haue been slaue, and who Lord. They ought to consider therefore, that now there was a time giuen them by God, in the which, laying aside the yoke of continuall bondage, they might, if they would, enioy their long wished for libertie. Wherefore he admonished them, that they should be wise, and after the manner of a good husband that tilled his ground, and did cutte away all nop<sup>er</sup>some weedes that were accustomed to growe and opp<sup>re</sup>ss the fruite, they should make haste to doe now at this p<sup>re</sup>sent the like. First, the Archbishop and great men of the kingdome were to be slaine: after, Lawyers, Justiciars, and Questmongers: lastly, whomsoever they knewe to be like heereafter hurtfull to the Commons, they should dispatch out of the land, for so might they purchase safety to themselves hereafter, if the great men being once taken away, there were among them equall libertie, all one nobilitie and like dignitie, and semblable authoritie or power. These, and many such mad deuises he preached, which made the common people to esteeme of him in such manner, as they cryed out, he should be Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancello<sup>r</sup> of the Realme, for he onely reserved the honour. Moreover, he had sent to the borders of the Commons in Essex a Letter full of riddles or darke sentences, exhorting them to p<sup>ro</sup>ceede in their begun enterprises, which Letter was after found in the bondget of one that should be hanged, the tenour whereof was thus :

John Shepe, sometime Saint-Mary Priest of Poike, and now of Colchester, greeteth well John namelesse, and John Milner, and John Carrar, and biddeth them that they be ware of Gillinbrough, and standeth together in Gods name, and biddeth Pierce Plowman goe to his worke, and chastice well Hob the robber, and take with him John Trueman, and all his fellowes, and no moe, John the Miller hath yground small small, the Kings sonne of heauen shall pay for all, beware or ye be woe, know your friend from your foe, haue<sup>t</sup> ynough, and saith hoe, and doe well and better, and flæth sinne, and sa keth peace, and holde therein, and so biddeth John Trueman and all his fellowes.

This letter John Ball confessed himselfe, that he had written and sent to the Commons: moze, he confessed to William then Bishop of London, to Walter Lee Knight, and John Perfoot Notarie, that a certain company of his sect, were confederate to go rounde about all England, and to preach these points which he had taught, naming I. W. N. A. L. B. masters of Artes. Whereupon he added, that except remedy were had, they within two yeres space would destroy the

John Ball his Sermon.

Libell of John Ball.

Sir Iohn Ball  
hanged.

whole Realme, and this confession, vnder a certaine foyme was brought into a publike instrument. This Sir Iohn Ball was hanged and headed at Saint Albons, on the 15. of Iuly, the King being present, and his body being quartered, was sent to foure Cities of the Realme: some other Epistles of the said Ball haue I seene, which also I thinke good (as afoze) here to insert.

Epistle of  
Iohn Ball.

Iohn Ball Saint-Mary priest, græteth well all manner of men, and biideth them in name of the Trinitie, Father Sonne, and holy Ghost, stand manlike together in truth, and helpe truth, and truth shall helpe you: now reigneth pride in price, couetise is holden wise, lechery without shame, gluttonie without blame, enuie raigeth with reason, and cloth is taken in great season, God do boote for now is time, Amen.

Iacke Miller.

Iacke Miller, asketh helpe to turne his Mill aright, he hath ground small, small, the Kings son of heauen shall pay for all: loke thy Mill goe right with foure sailes, and the post stand in stedfastnes with right and might, with skill and will, let might helpe right, and skill befoze will, and right befoze might, then goeth our Mill aright: and if might goe befoze right, and will befoze skill, then is our Mill misdoight.

Iacke Trew-  
man.

Iacke Trewman doeth you to vnderstand,  
that falseness and guile hath raigned too long:  
and truth hath been set vnder a locke,  
and falseness raigeth in euery flocke:

No man may come truth to, but he sing, *si dederis*:

Speake, spend and speed, queth Iohn of Bathon, and therefore,  
sinne fareth as wilde flood, true loue is away that is so good,  
And clarkes for wealth wircheth them wo, God doe boote, for now is time.  
I leaue out Iohn Carters Epistle, a libell, so named, &c.

A great number of the commons being indited, and hauing iudgement, at Saint Albons fiftene of them were hanged, and fourescore imprisoned, and after ward by pardon released, and on the twentieth day of Iuly the King removed to Berkhamstede.

Truce with  
the Scots.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster that a little befoze these troubles began, was gone Northward to be at the day of truce or march, as y manner was euerie yere, when he heard of the hurling of the commons, in the time that they had the upper hand ouer their Lords, he was maruellously amazed, and forecasting what might follow, thought it best, with speede to make peace with the Scots, which was done befoze those tumults came to the eares of the Scots, and by them confirmed by oth for two yeres truce, that they would faithfully keepe the same.

Will. Cour-  
teney Archbishop  
of Canterbury.

William Courtney sonne to Hugh Courtney, Earle of Deuonshire, Doctor of Lawe, first Bishoppe of Hereford, since Bishoppe of London, was now translated to the Archbishoppiche of Canterburie on the ninth of September. And Robert Braybrooke succeeded in the Bishoppiche of London.

Durham Col-  
ledge founded.

Thomas Hatfield Bishop of Durham deceased, he founded Durham Colledge in Orford, he also builded Durham place, betwixt London and West-  
minister.

**Minister.** Iohn Fordham Bishop of Elye was translated to the Bishopricke of Durham.

About the feast of All Saints, a Parliament was begun, which endured long, to small purpose, by reason of contention among the Lords, especially the Duke of Lancaster, and the Earle of Northumberland, whose quarrel in the end was taken up by the King, and then the Lords proceeded to treat of the Kings businesse and the Realmes, but they lingered so long in vaine, that when some effect was thought should haue succeeded, newes came of the coming to Calceys of the new Quene. The King had made his choice before to haue this woman, and had bought her with a great price and much labor, for he gaue to the Emperour, x. thousand pound, beside other great expenses, to make this marriage. Although the daughter of Barnabe Duke of Millan was offered vnto him with an inestimable some of golde. This Quenes coming therefore being vnderstood, the Parliament was prorogued, to begin againe after Christmas. There were diuers of the Nobles sent to meete the Bride, and she was conveyed with all the glory of the world vnto Douer, many both of her Countrey, and also of England, attending on her.

Parliament at London.

After the feast of the Epiphany, also the Nobilitie of the Realme assembled at London, to be present at the Kings marriage, and to do their seruice according to the custome of euery one in ancient time vsed. This Virgin named Anne, the daughter of Vseslaus King of Boheme, is at Westminster consecrated the Kings wiffe, & by the Archbishop of Canterbury is crowned Quene. There were iustices kept for the honour of such a solemnization, certaine dayes together, in which, both the Englishmen shewed their force, and the Quenes countrymen their prowess.

1382.

The King married.

In this Quenes dayes, began the detestable vse of piked shoes, tyed to their knees with chaines of siluer and gilt. Also noblewomen vsed high attyre on their heads, piked like hoznes, with long trained gownes, and rode on side saddles, after the example of the Quene who first brought that fashyon into this land, for before, women were vsed to ride asride like men. The solemnity of the marriage being ended, the parliament is now begun againe, in which, many articles are proposed and decreed, to witt, of admitting strangers to sell personally their wares, without impeachment of the merchants of England: of the abrogating of furses, and siluer garnishing of girdles &c. of the price of wines, that is, that the tunne should not excede five markes, &c.

Piked shoes, high heads, and long trained gownes, with women riding asride like men in England.

William Vfford Earle of Suffolke, in this Parliament, being elected by the knights of the shires, to pronounce on their behalfe his businesse of the realme, the very day and houre in which he should haue executed the businesse he had taken in hand, as he was going vp the staires that ledde into the chamber where all the nobilitie of the realme sate, he sodainly fell downe, and among his mens hands that were about to holde him, he yelmed vp the Choff, although being very merry, and feeling no euill, a little before, as euen at that instant he had entred Westminster hall, of whose sodaine death, not only all the nobles of the realme were greatly amazed, but all the meaner sort, for in all his life time he had shewed himselfe amiable to all men.

William Vfford Earle of Suffolke dyed suddenly.

Custome of  
woolles.

After his death the parliament was ended, after the marchants of England had granted to the King a subsidie, and the customes of wool for foure paires next ensuing, which the Commons called le Maltor,

In this Parliament, the Lords and Commons requesting it, Sir Richard Scrope knight was ordeyned Chauncelor as the man which in excellent knowledge & inflexible iustice, had not his like for his calling in this Realme. Sir Hugh Segraue knight was made Lord Treasorer.

Ann. reg. 6.  
Mortimer  
earle of March  
deceased.

Edward Mortimer Earle of March departed this life in Ireland, after he had brought that land all in manner vnto peace and quietnesse, hauing gouerned it most nobly and wisely.

John Wrawe  
hanged.

About the feast of Saint Iohn ante port latine, all the nobles of the Realme were called to London, and other that of custome were wont to be called, although the Lent before there had been an other parliament, as before we haue shewed, in which, by the petition of the knights of the shires, Iohn Wrawe Priest, that was leader of them that did rise at Bildenhale and Bury, was adiudged to hanging and drawing, though many believed that he would haue been redeemed with money.

Earthquake.

The one and twentieth day of May was a great earthquake in England at nine of the clocke, fearing the hearts of many, but in Kent it was most vehement, where it suncke some Churches, and threwe them downe to the earth.

Hill, Aurea.

There followed also another Earthquake the xxiii. of May in the morning before the sunne rising, but not so terrible as the first. Sir Richard Scrope is depriued of the chancelorship, which he had gouerned laudably, and Robert Braybroke Bishop of London, is made Chancelor.

There arrived in a great tempest, a ship called a Caricke, at Sandwich, a huge vessell, and so fraught with riches, that she might haue furnished the want of all the land, if the enuie of the inhabitantes would haue permitted, but the marchants of London hauing much old wares, as fruits, spices, oiles, and such like, they compounded with the Genowayes to forsake that haven, and to passe ouer into Flanders, and so for the couetousnes of a few, the whole Realme sustained great hindrance.

Sir Iohn  
Burghley, Sir  
Simon Burgh-  
ley, Sir Richard  
Burghley  
knights.

King Richard gaue to Sir Simon Burghley his chamberlaine the keeping of his Forrest of Wolmore in Southamptonsheire, for tearme of his life: he also gaue to Iohn Burghley, Simon Burghley, Richard Burghley, knights, and Bawdwin de Radington Esquire, all the mannour of Barroke nigh to Crauesend.

Great floods.

About the Feast of Saint Thomas the Apostle, great raynes and inundations of waters chaunced, so that the water rose foure times more in height then before, drowning by Villages and Cattails, destroying Bridges and Millcs.

1382.  
Bishop of Ex-  
wich layed in  
to Flanders  
with a great

About the moneth of May, the Bishop of Exeter layed over the seas into Flanders with a great power, where he wanne the Townes of Craueling, Brugh, Dunkerke, Newport.

Whilste these things are thus doing in Flanders, the King of England and



and his Quene, with their Boheimians, visited the Abbeyes of this realme, to the which, their coming was very chargeable, for they came with an excessive number, all which came to take, but not to give.

The Scots taking occasion of the time, for that a great number were gone over with the Bishop of Norwich, entered into Northumberland, & did much hurt to the inhabitants, taking prayes in every place, and leading away the people prisoners, and carrying them into Scotland: they toke the Castell of Marke upon the river of Tweede, and bent it.

About the feast of All-Saintes, a Parliament was holden at London, in which, the halfe of a fiftene was granted unto the king by the Laptie, and shortly after the halfe of a tenth by the Cleargy, a portion of which money, the Lords of the North demaunded, because in this Parliament they were appointed to defend those parts against the irruptions of Scots, to whom answer was made by sir William Wikeham Bishop of Winchester, that they were made for that cause, of poore men, rich men and Lordes, that they might the more frankly keepe the Scots, and that the King and Lordes of the south parts should be the lesse troubled. And because the Scots came not to this Parliament, according to covenant, and beside that did displeasures unto the inhabitants of the North parts, it was decreed by this Parliament, that unto faith-breakers, faith should be broken againe, and that a chosen power should be sent thither, south of England, under the leading of Thomas of Woodstocke, to wit, a thousand lances, and two thousand archers, to restraine their attempts.

These things being knowne, the Scots being afraid of themselves, in the end of the Parliament came, and were desirous to intreat of peace or truce, but the Englishmen having tryed their fallshood so oftentimes, would neither treat, nor compound with them, but commaunded them to returne home, and warned them to save their heads as well as they might, and to defend their rights. The Scots being returned, the Lords of the North toke upon them to defend the Countrey, till Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham were ready to come with a greater power.

In this Parliament the king toke the tempozalties of the Bishop of Norwich into his hands, because he was disobedient to his commaundement when he sent to have stayed him from his journey into Flaunders, and the knights that went over with him were put in prison, till they were redeemed with gold.

The King Richard held his Christmas at his Manor of Eltham, and with him his Quene Anne.

After Christmas, Iohn Duke of Lancaster, which before Christmas went over into Fraunce to treat of peace betwixt the Realmes, returned into England, bringing with him an abstinence of warre till the feast of S. Iohn Baptist, at what time he was to returne to treat againe, and to confirme the peace if it might be agreed upon betwixt the kings.

The night of the Purification of our Lady, great lightnings and thunder happened, that put men in great feare: and shortly after Iohn Northampton,

other wise

power, was  
Graueling,  
Bugh,  
Dunkerk,  
Newport.

An. reg. 7.  
The Scots  
entered North-  
umberland.

Parliament at  
London.

Thomas of  
Woodstocke  
sent against  
the Scots.

Tempozalties  
of the Bishop  
of Norwich  
seized.

1384.

Truce with  
the French.

Lightning and  
thunder.  
Iohn Northampton  
alias Combertowne.

other wise called Combartowne, that had been the p̄ere before Maioꝝ of London, that with his seditions had filled the Citie full of comber, attempted new troubles, foꝝ in contempt of the Maioꝝ that was elected foꝝ that p̄ere, Sir Nicholas Brembar, knight, he went by and do wone with a multitude of seditious people to guard him, not once, but oftentimes, to the terrour of many. And when the said Brembar Maioꝝ would haue withstanded his attempts, the fauourers of the said John Combartowne were turned into such a fury, that a cobbler seuer oꝝ thomaker, toke vpon him as it were to be Maioꝝ, and required the voyces of the communalty: foꝝ which cause, by the counsaile of Sir Robert Knowles knight, he was dꝛa wone out of his house, and committed to prison as a stirrer of insurrection, which ad foꝝ that time stayde the commotion of the Commons, that were said to haue conspired to haue murdered the elect Maioꝝ, and many other worthy men.

John Duke of  
Lancaster  
went toward  
Scotland.

When Lent approached, John Duke of Lancaster, with his brother Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham, and an innumerable number of Knights, Esquires, and Archers, went toward Scotland, but staid in the North untill all the victualles in the Countrey were consumed: he did moze hurt to the inhabitants, then the Scots had done before. At length, about the feast of Easter, he entered Scotland, but did little good.

John Wickliffe  
died.

This p̄ere master John Wickliffe, sometime student in Canterbury Colledge in the Uniuersitie of Oxfoꝝ, parson of Lutterworth in Leicestershire, haueing bene bered with a palley by the space of two p̄eres, died, on the last of December, and was buried at Lutterworth. This man whiles he liued, as also long after his death, was greatly fauoured by the students of that Uniuersity, as may appeare by letters testimoniall, made moze then twenty p̄eres after his decaie, as followeth.

Letters testi-  
moniall of the  
Uniuerſitie of  
Oxfoꝝ of the  
life of John  
Wickliffe.

To all childꝛen of our holy mother the Church, vnto whom these presents shall come, the Chancelloꝝ and company of masters of the Uniuersity of Oxfoꝝ, sendeth greting in our Loyd everlasting. Foꝝ as much as it is not decent to ouerpasse with continual silence, the acts of the valiant, noꝝ the laudes and merits of the good, but that the same should be manifested to the woꝛld by true fame foꝝ a witness of it selfe, and example of others, foꝝ that also the prudent discretion of humane nature, weying mans cruelty, hath ordained this manner of remembrance, and this buckler of defence, against the blasphemous insulting of others, that when a testimony by woꝛd cannot alwaies be ready, a penne to write may supply thereon it commeth to passe, that we haueing concciued a speciall good minde, and tender care ouer the childe sometime of our Uniuersitie, John Wickliffe professour of holy theologie, according to the deserts of his manners, do testifie with heart, woꝛd, and writing, that his conditions, while he liued, were commendable, whose honestie of manners, profunditie of iudgement, and pleasantnes of flourishing fame, we couet so much the moze to bying to the knowledge of faithfull people, as the perfection of his conuerſation, and his diligence of his writings might be the moze evidently knownen to tend to Gods gloꝝy, the weale of his neighbour, and profit of the Church, wherfoꝝ we publish vnto you by these presents, that his conuerſation

ston from his tender yeres continued, til the time of his decease, hath bin here right good and honest, so as there was neuer any motion or note of sinister suspicion or infamie cast abroad of him, but in answering, reading, preaching, and soluting, hath behaved himselfe p:aise worthily, like a stout Champion of the faith, banquished by sentences of Scripture, like a Catholike man all those blasphemers of Christs religion by their wilful beggery. And therfore was not the foresaid Doctoz condemned of hereticall prauitie, or yet by our Prelates to be burnt after his burial. God defend therfore that our Prelates should haue condemned so good a man for an heretike, which in Logike, Philosophy, in Theologie, in P:opolities, and Speculatiues among all that hath written, (as we thinke) in our Uniuersitie, without yere. All which things we desire to bring to the knowledge of all and singular persons vnto whose hands these presents may come, to the intent that the said Doctozs fame may the oftner be had in remembrance. In witnesse whereof, we haue caused these our letters testimoniall to be sealed with our common seale.

Given at Oxford in our congregation house the fifth day of the moneth of October. Anno. 1406.

All this notwithstanding after ward (being excommunicated by Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Canterbury) his bones, by a Doctoz of Diuinitie of Oxfozd, named Richard Fleming Bishoppe of Lincolne, were taken vp and burnt, and the ashes thowen into the next water nere vnto Lutterworth. 41. yeres after his decease in Anno 1425. by commaundement of Pope Martine the fifth. Thus much for Wicliffe.

The custody of the castle of Dover being void by the death of Robert Ashton was then appointed to Simon Burley, who was made Constable there.

After the quindene of Easter the nobles came together to a Parliament at Salisbury, whither a certain Irish Frier of the order of Carmelites, a batcheler of Diuinity named Iohn Latimer, hasted in an euill houre, for he had written a certain scedul in the which was contained many horrible practises denied (as he said) by the duke of Lancaster, for it was in that scedul expressed, that the said duke had determined sodainly to oppresse the K. and to take vpon him the kingdom, there was assigned the tyme, place & other circumstances y might make euident p:ofe of the thing. The Frier obtaining access vnto the K. presence, toke y scedule to his own hands, swearing by the sacrament of the body and blood of Christ, which that day he had receiued, that al written in that scedule was true. The duke therfore being called to the K. and hauing the scedul deliuered into his hands, desired the K. that the Frier might be put in safe keeping, til the day y he should shew the cause of those things which he had proponed against him, & besought the K. that sir Io. Holland might haue special charge of him. This Io. Holland, was the K. brother by his mother, the sonne of the L. Tho. Holland, who gladly for the loue of his brother the duke did willingly accept the frer into his custody. The night before the day given to the frer to make his answer, Ioh. Holland & another knight, called sir Henry Greene taking the frer, put a cord about his necke, (some say about his armes) & with the same cord tying his couds, hanged him vp from the ground, laying a stone or

Simon Burley  
Constable  
of Dover.  
Parliament at  
Salisbury.  
John Duke of  
Lancaster ac-  
cused.

A Frier ac-  
cused to  
death.

weight

weight of lead vpon his belly of such weight, that it might both torment him by streining him, as also stop his breath, and brake his back bone, also a great fire was made vnder the soles of his feet, that might end his life, not with one kind, but with diuers kindes of torments, with violence wherof, the frier being ouercome, died, but would neuer reuoke what he had said. The morow after, they caused the friers body to be drawne throught the towne as a traitor, that they might put away all suspition, that he were put to death wrongfully: but it is to be wondred at, that neither Esquier, Yeoman, nor Crome, or any other of mean estate, would harme the frier, but the knights did it themselves, they were Iudges, Officers, and executioners, and this was the fruite of this Parliament, except that the king asked and had of the Laitie halfe a sixteenth, and of the Cleargie halfe a tenth.

Interruptions of  
the Scots.  
*An. reg. 8.*

About this time, because the Scots ceased not to do diuers damages to the Northumbers, the Earle of Northumberland Henry Percy, prepareth to invade Scotland, and to requite damage for damage, which enterprise accomplished, the Earle was no sooner returned, and sent home his army, but that the Scottes came againe, and heaped vp damage vpon damage in the countrey.

Sir John  
Philpot decra-  
ied.

This Sommer, sir John Philpot a most faithfull knight, and noble Citizen of London, that had a long time trauelled for the commodity of the Realme more then all other, and both with expences laid forth, & good affection borne, (for he had oftentimes relieved the king) departed this life, leauing none behind him: his like in good affections.

John Duke of  
Lancaster go-  
eth into France.

About the beginning of August, the Duke of Lancaster went into France to treat with the Frenchmen of peace, or els of truce to be had: the Duke with his company of noble men remaining long there, when it was thought that he should haue brought glad and ioyfull newes to his Country, hee returned with knowledge of warres, to follow the beginning of the next Sommer, the truce to endure but till the first of May, and so he returned, after he had spent 500000. Markes of Silver.

John North-  
hampton con-  
uict, and com-  
mitted to per-  
petuall prison.

Many of the Nobles assembled at Reading, to repress the seditious stirres of John Northampton, late Maroz of London, that attempted great and heinous enterprises, of the which he was conuict, his own chaplein uttering many things that he went about and had deuised, as well to the hinderance and harme of the king, as of the Citie of London, and when sentence should haue bene pronounced agaisst him, the king being present, the wicked man made exclamation, and maintained that such iudgement ought not to passe in absence of his Lozd the Duke of Lancaster, but yet the iustice vsed such words, John (saith hee) the naughty deeds that are objected agaisst thee, thou oughtest to reuell by battell, or else by the lawes of the land to be drawne, hanged, and quartered. And when he stood mute, nor would utter one word, it was decreed that he should be committed to perpetuall prison, and his goods to be confiscated to the kings vse, and that hee should not come within one hundred miles of London during his life, hee was sent therefore to the Castle of Win-tagell in the confines of Cornwal, and in the meane space the kings seruants spoiled



spoiled his goods. Iohn More, Richard Northbery, & other, were like wise there conuict, and condemned to perpetuall prison, and their goods confiscate to the king, for certaine congregations by them made against the fish-mongers in the Citty of London.

About the feast of S. Martine, a Parliament was holden at London in the which nothing was done worth y memozy, but that which stil was in hand, and erasing of money of the Clergy and common people, to maintaine the men of warre. And besides this, about the feast of Saint Andrew there was a combate fought in listes at Westminster, betwixt an Esquier of England named Iohn VVelch of Grimesby, & one of Nauarre, called Mortileto de Vilenos, that had accused the English Esquier, of treason to the King and Realme, but the effect was, that when hee was Captaine of Cherburgh, hee forced the wife of this Nauaroys, as the said Nauaroys being after ward overcome, and being ready to suffer death, did openly confesse, for the which cause, by the kings iudgement, he was drawen & hanged, although the Quene and many other did make earnest intercession to haue his life saued.

Parliament  
at London.

A combate  
fought.

The Parliament was not yet ended, when newes came out of the North of the taking of Berwicke Castell by the Scots, the custodie whereof, the Earle of Northumberland, sir Henry Percy did possesse, by right of his predecessors. The Scots by mediation of money, got entrance into that castell, by one that was put in trust with keeping of it. The Duke of Lancaster that loued not the Earle, was glad of this happe, when he knew it. It came to passe therfore by the Dukes procurement, that the Earle was condemned by iudgement of the Lords there present, the which execution was within a short while after released. The Earle of Northumberland, thzough the kings fauour ressozed to his life and possessions, without any long delates, prepareth al furniture of warre to besiege and win the said Castell of them that were within it, and after he had gathered a mighty army, he sodainly besieged it, and after he had layne about it a certaine time, it was compounded betwixt them without, and them within, that they within should forsake the Castell, and haue their liues and moueable goods, and for surrendering the Castell, they should haue of the Earle two thousand markes of English money, and by this meanes did the Earle recover the Castell forth of the Scottishmens hands. King Richard kept a solemn feast of Christmas at Eltham with Quene Anne his wife, whom hee seldome suffered to go from his side, there were at that feast the Bohemians, the Quenes countrymen, that hauing once tasted the swætnesse of this land, forgetting their owne countrey like vnshamefast guests, would not go home againe.

Berwicke lost  
and wonne  
againe.

1385

Thzough certaine young men brought by with the king, there arose great dissention betwixt him and the Duke of Lancaster, who departed from the Court, and went to his Castell of Bomfret, which he had fortified, but by meanes of the kings mother, this discord was appeased for a time.

The Walking.

The same time the coniunction of two of the greatest planets chaunced, to wit, of Iupiter and Saturne, in the moneth of May, after the which a great mutation of kingdomes followed.

The

The third of May was an earthquake.

The king entered Scotland.

The king made a journey into Scotland

Ralph Stafford slain.

An. reg. 9.

Lady Jane the kings mother died, buried at Stanfoid.

Hertfords and Denbrough burnt.

King Richard with a great armie entred Scotland, but the enemies would not shew themselves, wherefore hee burnt the Countrey and returned. The eighteenth of July there was an Earthquake. Sir Iohn de Vincenne that serued the French King was sent into Scotland with a great multitude of ships and men of warre, that topning with the Scots, they might infect all England, and that whilest they might draw the power of this Realme that way forth, the French king, with his pany and armie, might the more at liberty enter other parts of the Realme, few or none being left at home to prohibite them their entrie. The arrivall of the said Iohn being knowne in England, the king with all the nobilitie prepared themselves to make a journey thither: there came flocking vnto the king such a number of knights, Esquiers, and Archers, as the like had not bene heard of in those daies, in so much, as the number of horses amounted to thre hundred thousand, as they were iudged, Merie large the king reioyced hereat, as well he might, but the reioycing was shortly darkened at Pothe, by fiercenesse of Sir Iohn Holland, the kings brother, that sette the Lord Ralph Stafford, sonne to the Earle of Stafford, in the way as he went to the Quene, whose seruant of household he was, and greatly in fauour with her, and he was no lesse beloued of the king, as he that had bene brought vp with him, and bene his playfellow from his tender age, where the king taking great indignation, determined to pursue the said Sir Iohn Holland: hee caused therefore his goods to be confiscate. But Sir Iohn Holland fled to Wuerley, to enjoy the libertie of the Church. The Lady Jane the kings mother, sent to intreate him for her other sonne, and his brother, but when the messengers were returned to Wallingforde, and that the mother could perceiue no hope of grace to be gotten in that behalfe of the king, she toke it heauily, and fell sicke, and within foure or fise daies departed this life, her bodie being seared and closed in lead, was kept at Wallingfoid, till the kings returne forth of Scotland, then to be buried at Stanfoid, in the Church of the Friers Minoys.

In the moneth of August, the King of England with a mightie power entred Scotland, with whose force the Scots and frenchmen perceiuing themselves not able to match, they seeke to get them into the woods and places where they might be out of the way. The English armie, then the which there hath not bene seene a fairer, stronger, or greater, rideth through the Countrey, that was destitute of inhabitants, void of Castell, and wanting victuals, for the land was left desolate (as our men confessed) that they sawe not so much as a bird, owles onely excepted. They found green corne on the ground, very faire and plentifull, which they eyther cate vp with their horses, or tread downe with their feete, but the enemies fleeing battell, our men did nothing to be accounted of, but burnt the Abbey of Hertfords, and the towne of Denbrough, with such houses as they found by the way. When our armie was come to Denbrough, and that victuals failed them, many of them began to waie sicke, & some to die for hunger: wherupon the king returned

ned with his arme into England. While king Richard was in Scotland, the Scots and Frenchmen entred into England, burning Townes, taking spoiles, and leading away many prisoners, returned home into their Countrey.

The Scots  
spoyle in Eng-  
land.

The souldiers of Caleis went secretly forth into Fraunce, and got a bottie of foure thousand sheepe, and three hundred head of great beasts, which they drave to their holdes.

About the feast of Saint Martine, there was a Parliament at London, in which, the Laptie granted to the king a fiftenth and a halfe, with a condition, that the Cleargie should give a tenth and a halfe. William Courtney, Archbishop of Canterbury standing there against, said, the Church ought to be free, and in no wise to be taxed by the laptie, yea, hee would rather put his head in daunger for this cause, then to suffer the English Church to be brought into such servitude: which answer he so much moved the Knights and Commons of the shires, with some of the Nobles of the Realme, that they in great rage, made request, that the temporalties might be taken from the Cleargie, and Church-men, saying, that the Church-men were growne to such pride, that it was a dede of charitie, and almes by taking away their temporalties, to compell them to be more meeke and humble: this they cried out for, this they presented in writing to the King, and such was their labour in this point, that they were in hope to bring it to passe. Here mought you have scene the Knights pleasaunt and merr, talking of these things, even as the temporalties of the Church had bene assigned to their abusing, this man promising himselfe thus much of that Monasterie, that man of an other, I heard my selfe (saith Thomas Walsingham) one of the Knightes deeply sweare, that of the Abbey of Saint Albones, hee would have a thousand markes by yere of the temporalties: But to such a mad wissh the King consented not, for hearing the inordinate crying out of the one side, and the just answeres on the other, hee commaunded that bill to be cancelled, and such inordinate petitions to cease, saying that hee would preserve the Church during his time, in as good state as hee found it, or better: with the which answer, hee so liked the Church-men, that hee was thought worthy of great recompence, and of good Lape men also this answer was much commended. The Archbishoppe therefore, having made the Cleargie private, went to the King, and declared that hee and his Cleargie of their whole consentes and free willes had prouided for his use a Tenth, which graunt the King so gladly heard, and thankfully received, that hee openly affirmed, hee had rather have this free graunt, then any other foure times double the value, that was to be constrained; and so for that time the insatiable covetousnesse of the enemies, to catch other mens goodes, was made frustrate.

Bill put a-  
gainst the  
Cleargie for  
their tempora-  
lities.

The eleventh of November, Robert Vere, Earle of Orford, was made Marquesse of Diuelin in Ireland, and the king gaue him lands to the value of a thousand markes by yere, that belonged the Lord Audley; he also made him

Marques of  
Diuelin in  
Ireland.

Lord

Michael de la  
Poole Chancel-  
lor, made  
Earle of Suff-  
olk.

Lib. Pet. col.

1386.

The king of  
Ermony came  
into England.

John Duke of  
Lancaster  
king of Spayne

Henry Percy  
went to Ca-  
leis.

Lord Justice of Chester, he gave to him the Castell of Flint in Wales, and also he gave to him I. of Britons sonne and heire to Charles de Bloys a prisoner, for whom he had 20000. pounds. Th. of Woodstocke was made D. of Gloucester, and his brother Edmond Earle of Cambridge, Duke of Poike, Michael de la Poole Chancelloz of England, was made Earle of Suffolk, and had giuen him by the king a thousand markes by the yere. In the Parliament the Earle of March Mortimer, was proclaimed heire apparant to the Crowne, which Earle was shortly after slain in Ireland by the wilde Irish. Also, king Richard at the earnest request of the Bishops, restored to the Bishop of Poze, with his tempozalties which he had holden from him many yeres. R. Richard with Quene Anne his wife, kept their Chyristmas at Eltham, whither came to him Lion king of Ermony, vnder pretence to rezoine peace betwixt the kings of England and of Fraunce, but what his coming profited, hee onely vnderstood, for beside innumerable giftes that hee receiued of the king & of the nobles, the king lying in the Royal at the Quenes wardrop in London, granted to him a Charter of a thousand pounds by yere during his life. Hee was (as hee affirmed) chased out of his Realme by the Tartarians, and for that cause he got great giftes of the Chyistian Wynces. About the feast of Easter, John Duke of Lancaster, with the Ladie Constance his wife and a great company of Knights, Esquiers, and Archers came to take their leaue of the King and Quene, at whose departing the King gave to the Duke a crowne of gold, and the Quene gave another like crowne of golde to the Dutches, moreover the King commaunded his people to call them King and Quene of Spayne, and giue them kingly honour. And shortly after the Duke prepareth to go into Spayne, which was due to him by the inheritable right of his wife the Ladie Constance, daughter sometime to Peter King of Castile and Lion, so that now he meant to chalenge it eyther with consent of the inhabitantes, or by law of Armes. Hee with a great power toke the seas at Plimouth, and landed in Spayne, at the Hauen of Groyne, on the euen of S. Laurence, with all his fauile in safety.

Hee had with him twentie thousand chosen people, of whom was 2000. armed men, and 8000. Archers. Hee appointed for Admirall of his whole flecte, Th. Percy, sir John Holland brother to King Richard by the mothers side after created Earle of Huntington, and had married one of the Dukes daughters, was ordained Constable of the hoste, sir Richard Burghley marshall, and after him sir Tho. le Moleneaux was marshall, sir John Marmion Chamberlaine, &c.

This yere rumours were raised of the French kings purpose to besiege Caleis, many valiant men therefore were sent out of England to resist his force, among whom was sir Henry Percy, a young Gentleman, in whom the pride of all prowesse and chivalry did shine, which after hee had stayed about Caleis idely taking indignation, declared that hee hated such idlenesse, and before this, whilest he was Captaine of Berwicke, hee compelled the vniquiet Scots to be quiet, for which cause they called him Henry Hotespurre: this Henry assembling his companions, maketh invasion vpon them about

Turwine,



Corwaine, and else where in Picardie, taketh prizes, exercising laudable factes, and when he understood that the French king meant not to besiege Calais, but rather to invade England, he returnes home, that he might here encounter him.

The Londoners understanding that the French king had got together a great Ranie, assembled an armie, and set his purpose firmly to come into England, they trembling like Leuerets, feareful as Hise, scke starting holes to hide themselves in, euen as if the Citie were now to be taken, and they that in times past bragged they would blow all the Frenchmen out of England, hearing now a baine rumour of the enemies comming, they runne to the walles, bzeake downe the houses adioyning, destroy and lay them flat, and do all things in great feare, not one Frenchman yet haaiing set fote on shipbord, what would they haue done, if the battrell had bene at hand, and the weapons ouer their heads?

About the feast of S. Michaell the nobles came to the Parliament at London with great numbers of armed men, to the end they might be ready to withstand the Frenchmen, who were supposed to be comming. Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, and Chancelloz of England, caused to be called almost forth of euery part of the Realme men of armes and archers vnto the marches about London, that being ready they might beate backe the Frenchmen with their king, if they had come. Rochester brydge was beaten downe by the Londoners, to be the more surer. But being wearied with long waiting they were at the length sent home againe, with great misery for want of money to buy them victuals.

In this Parliament Iohn Fordham Bishop of Durham was discharged of the Treasurership, and in his place was set Iohn Gilbert a frier preacher, Bishop of Hereford. Also Michael de la Pole was put from his Chancellozship, and in his place was set Thomas Arundale Bishop of Ely, by consent of the whole Parliament. This being done, Michael de la Pole was charged with many crimes, & committed to prison in Windsoze Castell, from whence hee was sone deliuered by the king: all the possessions of de la Pole purchased whilest he was Chancelloz to the yerly value of 1000. pounds, were for euer by iudgement of the parliament, confiscate to the kings coffers, & further to restore to the king to the value of 12000. pounds which he had gained by lingerring his affairs, as they said. They chose also 13. Lords which should haue the ouersight vnder the R. of the whole realm. Of which thre were the new officers, to wit, the B. of Ely Chancelloz, the Bishop of Hereford Treasurer, and sir Iohn Waltham keeper of the priuy seale, and 10. other which were, VVilliam Archbishop of Canterburp, Alexander Archbishop of Yorke, Edm. Langley B. of Yorke, Thomas of Woodstocke, Duke of Gloucester, VVilliam VVickham, Bishop of Winchester, Thomas Bishop of Exeter, Nicholas Abbot of Waltham, Richard Earle of Arundell, Iohn Lord Cobham, sir Richard Scrope, and sir 10. Curose knights, to these they gaue full power to determine causes, from the time of king Edward the third, vntill that present, as well within the Realme, as without, &c. They granted to the king a tenth of the Cleargy,

*An. reg. 10.*  
The Londoners in great feare without a cause.

Rochester  
brydge beaten  
downe.

13. gouernours  
of the Realme.

and a fiftenth of the Laptie: they granted him 2 s. of every Tunne of Wine comming into the Realme, and of every pound of merchandise going out or comming in 12. d. Wool, leather, and sell, excepted.

The French  
kings com-  
ming into  
England him-  
seld.

The French king in the meane time, staid in Flanders, ready to spoyle the Realme of England, if God had not stopped his purpose; from the first of August, till the Euen of All-Saints, there neuer blew wind for his passage, but onely for a fewe houres of that verie Euen, the wind rising, they losed anchors, hopped by sailes, and set forth of the haven, but when all the ships were on the sea 20. miles from the haven, the winde came contrary, & drove them backe, that diuers of their vessels entring the haven of Sluce were broken, by which occasion England was deliuered out of daunger, and the French king returned home. The number of his ships in that pay were reckoned 1200. Froisart saith, the ships were 1287. he had there with him of Dukes, 16. of Carles, 26. of Knights, 3600. and of fighting men, 100000. Is. Richard with his wife Quene Anne and the Bohemians as he had bene accustomed, kept his Christmas very solemnly at Westminster.

1387.

After Christmas, William Beauchampe toke 14. ships of the French king, going toward Sluce, whereof one was laden for the most part with horses, and an other with torches of ware, and such other necessaries, which the French king had prepared for his entrance into England.

Barley sold  
for xii. d. the  
quarter.

In the beginning of this yere, at Leicester an hundred quarters of Barley, were sold for an hundred shillings.

Rochell wine  
taken.

About the beginning of March, according to the derra of the late Parliament, Richard Carle of Arundell, Admirall of the fleet adioyning unto him, the E. of Devonshire, & Thomas Mowbrey E. of Nottingham, went to the sea in a happy houre, for within a small time they met with their enemies on the Wiggill of our Lady the Annunciation; a great pay of Flanders, France, and Spayne, fraught with men of warre, and diuers engins, was discovered; with whom the Carles encountred, & toke of them 100. ships and more, the which contained xix. M. tuns of wine, which they brought to diuers parts of England, whereby wine was then sold for thirten shillings foure pence the tunne.

Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland forsooke his wife, a young Lady noble and faire, bozne of the Lady Isabell, daughter to the noble Is. Edward, & married an other that came with Quene Anne forth of Boheme: she was called in the bulgar tongue of her countrey Lancelona. The Lordes toke indignation herewith, especially the Duke of Gloucester, uncle to the yong Lady that was forsaken. The Duke of Ireland studied how to take the Duke of Gloucester out of the way. Easter was now past, the time in which the Duke of Ireland should haue transported into Ireland, but least there should be too much stir in the Realme among the Lordes, the king as it were to bring him to the water side, goeth with him into Wales, as not to leave him, but there to keepe him, that they might deuise how to take away the D. of Gloucester, the Carles of Arundell, Marisike, Darby, and Nottingham, with other. There were with them the Carle of Suffolk, Michael at Pole, Robert Trisilian Justice, and many other, which no more slowly then the D. of Ireland, conspired the death

of the said noble men. After a great time was passed, the king, as if the Duke of Irelands journey had bene forgotten, returned with him and the other forth of Wales, to the Castell of Nottingham, there to treat of the death of the said noble men: there therfore he sent for diuers from London, whom he knew would be ready to which way soeuer they should be moued: he called thither also al the Sheriffs & Iustices of the realme, & there interdicted the Lords of many crimes which the king had imagined against them. In the mean time the rumour of this doing came to the Lords eares, whereupon first of all the kings vncke, the Duke of Gloucester, that he might mitigate the kings displeasure, before the Bishop of London, and many other nobles, swearing vpon the Euangelists, toke it vpon his oath, that he neuer had imagined any thing to the kings hinderance, or done any thing to his displeasure, except that he had not giuen good countenance to the Duke of Ireland, nor would hereafter giue him any, who had dishonested his kinswoman, the which he firmly had determined to reuenge.

The Duke of Gloucester calling together secretly the Earles of Arundell, Warwicke, and Darby, that were in like danger of condemnation, if they promised not the more speedily, he discovered to them the matter: they therfore gathered their armies together, determine to talke with the king vpon the premises. Contrarily the king for his party did deliberate how he might take each of them by themselves out of the way, and first he sent to the Castell of Rigate, where the Earle of Arundell lay, the Earle of Northumberland with many other to arrest him, who perceiuing a great number of men of warre about him, fearing to doe that he was commaunded, departed without doing his errand for which he came. After whom, there were sent many that by night should haue taken him, or haue slaine him, but a messenger sent from the Duke of Gloucester, preuented their comming, that caused him to ride all night, so that in the morning he was come to Haringey, hauing passed with his army thirtie miles, not without great trauaile, where he found assembled the Duke of Gloucester & the Earle of Warwicke, with a great power of men. The king being enformed of this assembly in Harnesey woode, as is said, demanded of his familiars what was to be done in this case, but in the ende, by the mediation of them that came betwixt them, the matter was brought to this issue, that the Lords should come to Westminster to receiue answer before the king of those things, the bishop of Ely, with many other men of worthy credite, taking an oath for the kings part, that no fraud, deceit, or perill, should be prepared. When the Lords had prepared themselves according to the couenant, the foresaid mediators for peace sent them word, that treason was deuised by an ambush laid for them, in a place called the Hewes, nere to Charing Crosse, and therfore willed them not to come, but with sure hand, whereupon they stayed there: and the king demanding why the Lords kept not couenant, the Bishop of Ely answered, because (saith he) there is an ambush laid of a thousand armed men or more, in such a place, contrary to the couenant, and therfore they neither come, nor repute you to be faithfull: the king moued south with, sware he knew of no such thing, and therfore com-

maunded the Sheriffes of London, that going to the *Peiwees*, they should kill, if they found any assembled there for that cause; but Thomas Triuer, and Nicholas Brembar knights, had secretly sent away the armed men to London: the king therfore sent again to the Lords, who straightwaies came to Westminster with a strong power, against whose coming, the king adorning himselfe with kingly robes, with crowne and scepter, entred Westminster hall, where the Bishop of Ely Lord Chancelor, speaking for the king, demanded the cause of their assembling of such a power, wherunto the Lords answered, that it was done for the kings profit, and the realmes, to plucke from him the traittors which he kept about him, whom they named to be Robert de Vere D. of Ireland, Alexander Neuell Archbishop of Dozke, Michaell at Pole Earle of Suffolke, Robert Trisilian a false Justice, Nicholas Brembar a false knight of London, and therrupon they threw downe their gloues, swearing that they would prosecute it by battell: nay, saith the king, it shall not be so, but in the next parliament which was appointed to be holden the morrow after the purification of our Ladie, all this was pacified for that time.

Strange like-  
nesse of fire.  
Henry of Leice-  
ster.

A manner of exhalation in likeness of fire, appeared in the night in many places of England, which went with men as they went, and stayed as they did, sometime like a whole, sometime like a barrell, sometime like a timber-logge, but when many went together, it appeared to be farre off.

Battell at  
Radcot bridge

The Lords departing from the king notwithstanding kept together, which seemed great wisdom in them, for the Duke of Ireland in the parts of Chester & Wales, had assembled a great number, whose Captaine was the Constable of Chester, Thomas Moleneux, a man of great wealth, and hardy. The Duke of Ireland with such a multitude hastened towards London, that joining with the Londoners, he might make them both as it were an invincible army. But the Duke of Ireland riding forth in statelie and glorious array with the army of 5000. men, thinking none durst haue encountered him: neuertheless in the vigill of S. Thomas the Apostle, when he came to Radcot bridge in Oxfordshire nere unto Farendon vpon Thames, not past foure miles from Cheping Porton, which bridge, if he could haue passed, he had bene out of danger, sodainly, as he looked on the one side, he beheld where the host of the Lords was ready not farre from them carrying his coming, in the midst of the valley, with which sight his heart straightwaies failed: and he said, friend I must fly, for a greater puissance seemeth to be ponder against you they haue no quarrell, so that I being shifted away, ye shall escape wel enough, and so forth with setting spurres to his horse, he fled away. There was then the foresaid Thomas Moleneux that prepared himselfe to the battell, for the Lordes were not yet all come to that place, who when he had fought a while, being wearied, entred the river which was there by. Among other, sir Thomas Mortimer knight exhorted him to come vp, or else he would shote him through in the river: if I doe come vp saith Thomas Moleneux, wilt thou saue my life? I doe make no such promise (saith he) but eyther come vp, or then shalt straight die for it. To whom he answered, suffer me to come vp and let me fight eyther with thee or some other, and die like a man. As he came vp, the knight caught

Thomas Mo-  
leneux Capt.



caught him by the helmet, and plucked it off his head, and straight waies with his dagger strucke him into the braines.

The Duke of Ireland fleeing, came to the river of Chamis, and forced his horse to enter, in the which being made of an horseman a swimmer, he got to the other side: his horse, helmet, gantlets and breast-plate came to the share of the Lords, so that he was thought long after to be drowned, but he got o<sup>u</sup>er into Flaunders.

The Archbishop of Yorke fled, and Robert Trisilian, and Michael de la Poole got him to Caleis. The Lords being returned from the battell, which had bene néere to Burford, fast by Wablack, made great ioy for the ouerthrow of their enemies, but much lamented the escape of the Duke of Ireland.

A head of earth was made at Orford by Art of Necromancie, that at a time appointed spake these words, *Caput decidetur*, The head shall be cut off: *Caput eleuabitur*, The head shall be lift vp: *Pedes eleuabuntur supra caput*, The feete shall be lift aboue the head.

Dissention fell at Orford betwéene the Southerne and Welchmen, on the one part, and Northerne Schollers on the other, where-though many were slaine, and the more part went to their countries, wherefore the Chancelloz was deputed, and Doctor Nicholas Brightwell Deane of Newarke in Leice<sup>ster</sup> was made Chancelloz.

The Lords hasted to London, where the king kept his Chyristmasse in the Tower of London, they hauing assembled an armie of néere hand forth thousand the morrow after Chyristmasse day came to London, and mustred in the fieldes, where they might be séene of them in the Tower: the Londoners were then in great feare, weping diuers perilles as the kings displeasure, if they opened their gates to the Lords, and if they shut them forth, the indignation of the vndiscrete multitude.

The Duke of Gloucester with other entred the Tower, and hauing a little talke with the King, they rected the conspiracie, where by they had bene indicted, and they shewed forth also the letters, which he had sent vnto the Duke of Ireland, that he should assemble an armie to their destruction, &c. in the end the king promised on the next morrow to come to Westminster, and there to intreat at large for reformation of all matters.

In the morning the king came to Westminster, where, after a little talke, the nobles said that for his honour and commoditie of his kingdome it was behouefull, that the traitors, whisperers, flatterers, and vnprofitable people were remoued out of place, and that others might be placed in their comes.

The king, although sore against his mind, when he saw how y<sup>e</sup> Lords were bent, and that he wanted power to withstand them, condescended to do what they would haue him, & to conclude, the king at the request of the Lords commaunded the suspected persons of his court, & family to be awarded to prison, to answer at the next Parliament, which persons were sir Simon Burghley, sir William Elmham, sir Nicholas Dagworth, sir Iohn Golefare, which was not yet returned out of Fraunce, all these being knights, Richard Clifford, and a

Archbishop of  
Yorke fled the  
Realme.

Dissention at  
Orford be-  
twene the  
Southerne &  
Northern  
Schollers.

1388.  
The Lords  
came to Lon-  
don.

The Lords  
came to the K.  
being then in  
the Tower of  
London.  
The K. com-  
meth to West-  
minster.

Sir Simon  
Burghley and  
many other  
committed to  
prison.

Many persons  
remou'd out  
of the kings  
Court.

Priest called Nicholas Slake Deane of the kings Chappell were appointed to Pottingham Castell. To the Castell of Dover were appointed sir John Beauchampe of Holt Steward of the kings house, sir Thomas Trivet, sir John Salisbury, and John Loncolne. To the Castell of Bristow James Beiners, and Richard Medford Clarke. To the Castell of Rochester was appointed Alexander Neuell Archbishop of Porke, but he was escaped as ye haue heard, and Michaell de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, which was fled. To the Castell of Gloucester were deputed Robert Trisilian chiefe Justice of England, which was not yet found, and Nicholas Brembar, who found sureties to stand to the lawes of the Realme.

These were remoued also from the Court, but not sent to prison, John Fordham Bishop of Durham, the Lord Beament, Lord William de la Souch of Harneworth, the Lord Burnell, sir John Louell, the Lord Thomas Camoys, Thomas the sonne of the Lord Clifford, with Baldwin Burforde, Thomas Rushoke a frier, Withoppe of Chichester the kings Confessour, Aubery de Vere, Richard Aberbery, John VVorth, the Ladie Maine, the Ladie Paines, and the Ladie Molineaux, all which were to answere at the next Parliament.

Parliament  
that wrought  
wonders.

The third day of Februarie, the Parliament began at Westminster, which Parliament continued till the 13. of June next following, except from the Vigill of Palmesonday untill the Octaues of Easter, this Parliament was named the Parliament that wrought wonders. The Lords came to this Parliament with a sufficient army for their owne sureties. The first day of this Parliament were arrested as they sat in their places, all the Justices, except sir VVilliam Skipwith, and sir Roger Fulchorpe, sir Robert Belknappe, sir John Carey, sir John Holte, sir VVilliam Borow, and John Alecston the kinges Serieant at Lawe, all these were sent to the Tower, and there kept in severall places.

The Justices  
arrested as  
they sat in  
Parliament.

Rob. de Vere  
Duke of Ire-  
land the Arch-  
bishop of Porke  
and other ban-  
ished.

The cause was, for that where in the last Parliament diuers Lords were made gouernours of the Realme, both by assent of the Parliament, and also by the aduice and counsel of all the Justices, and yet notwithstanding, the said Justices in a counsel holden at Pottingham, did the contrary, whereupon it was now determin'd that they should make answere to their doings. Whereouer, in the beginning of this Parliament were openly called, Robert Vere Duke of Ireland, Alexander Neuell Archbishop of Porke, Michaell de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, sir Robert Trisilian Lord chiefe Justice of England, & Nicholas Brembar, whom the king had oft times made Maior of London against the minde of the Citizens, to answere befoze Thomas of Woodstocke Duke of Gloucester, Richard Earle of Arundell, Thomas Beauchampe Earle of Warwick, Henry Earle of Darby, & Thomas Earle of Pottingham, vpon certain articles of high treason, which these Lords did charge them with: and sozasmuch as none of the appeared, it was ordained by the whole assent of the Parliament, that they should be banished for euer, and their lands and goods to be forfeited and seized into the kings hands, their landes entailed excepted, which should descend to their heires. The proccesse against those five Lords

compiled

compysed in eight and thirtie articles, I ouerpatte in this place, and haue set them downe in my larger Chronicle.

The foresaid Lordes being fled as is aforesaid, Robert Trisilian a Cozynthman, Lord chiefe Iustice to the King, had hid himself in an Apothecaries house in the Sanctuary nere to the gate of Westminster, where he might see the Lordes going to the Parliament, and comming forth thereby to learne what was done, for all his life time he did all things closely, but now his craft being espied was turned to great folly. For on Wednesday the seuenteenth of February he was betrayed of his owne seruant, & about eleuen of the clocke before none, being taken by the Duke of Gloucester, and in the Parliament presented, so that the same day in the after none hee was drawen to Tyborne from the Tower of London throughe the Citie, and there had his throat cut, and his bodie was buried in the gray Friers Church at London. This man had disfigured himselfe, as if he had bene a poore weake man, in a strize coat, all old and tozney, and had artificially made himselfe a long beard, such as they called a Paris beard, and had defiled his face, to the end he might not be knownen but by his speach. On the morrow, was executed sir Nicholas Brembar, who had done many oppzessions, and caused seditions in the Citie, of whom it was said, that whilst he was in full authoritie of Maioralitie, he caused a common payre of Stocks in euery ward, and a common Are to be made to behead all such as should be against him, and it was further said, that hee had indited 8000. and moze of the best and greatest of the Citie, but it was said that the said Nicholas was beheaded with the same Are he had prepared for other: this man if hee had liued, had bene created Duke of Troy, or of London by the name of Troy.

R. Trisilian  
chiefe Iustice  
taken and executed at Tyborne.

Sir Nicholas  
Brembar executed.

On the fourth of March Thomas Vske, Undershyue of London, and Iohn Blake Esquire, one of the kings household, were drawne from the Tower to Tyborne and there hanged and beheaded, the head of Thomas Vske was set vp ouer Newgate, to the opprobry of his parents, which inhabited thereby. The goods of the Bishop of Chichester were confiscate, and on the eleuenth of March the Parliament was prorooged vnto the quinden of Pasch.

The fift day of May sir Simon Burghley Constable of Dover, and Chamberlaine to the King, an intollerable proud man and a great oppzessor of the poore, &c. was condemned of treason, but the King dispensed for his drawing and hanging, so that he was with his hands bound behinde him led throughe the Citie of London, and had his head stricken off vpon the Tower hill on the fiftenth day of May, his heires were by Henry the fourth restored in blood and inheritance, except the landes giuen to the new Abbey on the Tower hill, to S. Stephens at Westminster, and to the Friers at Langley. This man might by inheritance dispend twentie markes by yere, but in few yeres he so grew in seruice of the king, that he attained to the value of 3000. markes of yereleu revenues, of whom it was said that he gave at Christmasse for liveries of knights and Esquires, yeomen and others as well of the kings court as of his owne family, sometime fortye clothes, sometime 160. clothes, and sometime 20. of great price, as of Scarlet, &c.

Simon  
Burghley be-  
headed.

Also on the twelfth of May Iohn Beauchampe of Holt Lord Steward of the kings house, whom the king had thought to haue made Baron of Bzidge, north, was condemned to be drawne, and hanged, but by the kings fauour, he lost his head on the Tower hill.

Sir Iohn Bernes knight of the kings Court, a lustie young man, was in the same place beheaded. Sir Iohn Salisburie knight was drawne from the Tower to Otbozne, and there hanged.

There were condemned also in the same Parliament these Iustices, sir Ro. Belknappe, sir Iohn Carre, sir Iohn Holte, sir Roger Fulthorpe, and sir VVilliam Brough, Iohn Locton Serieant at the Lawe, Richard Gray Iustices, with the Lords befoze fled, were all banished.

There was granted to the king, of the Cleargie halfe a tenth, and of the Laity halfe a sixteenth, and of the merchants twelue pence of the pound, three shillings of the tunne, three and fifty shillings foure pence of the sacke of wool. The Duke of Gloucester, and sir Iohn Cobham, asked pardon of the Abbot of Westminster for violence done in the sanctuarie of Westminster, in the taking of the Iustice Trisilian. The last saue one of May there were deliuered out of the Tower VV. Elmham, T. Triuer, and Nicholas Dagworth knights. Also the first of Iune, Iohn Holland the kings brother was created Earle of Huntington.

Subsidy of  
wool.

King Richard  
renewed the  
oath which he  
had taken at  
his coronation.

The third day of Iune, the king in the Church of Westminster renewed the oath, which he toke when he was crowned, and all the Lords sware homage and fealtie to him, and all the Bishops did excommunicate all those that would goe about to hinder the Statutes of this last Parliament, or the great Charter.

An. reg. 12.

After Whitson tide Richard Earle of Arundale, with a company of valiant men went to the sea, and sought with certaine ships of his enemies, taking, drowning, or burning foure score ships, he entred into the Ile of Beas, which he spoiled and bzent.

The Scots  
invad: the  
North parts of  
England.

The same yere the Scots prepared themselves that as soone as the truce was expired they might be readie to invade the South parts, and with a great army entred England, committing great slaughters of people and toke bowties in eucry place, and led away many prisoners, and burned Townes, and approached to Newcastle vpon Tyne, and pitcht their tentes not farre from thence. There was then in the same towne sir Henry Percy the younger, and sir Ralph his brother, both desirous of warlike renowne, and soze enemies vnto the Scots. This sir Henry came vpon the on the sodain, & assailed them in the campe, making great slaughter of them. VVilliam or James Dowglas, after Froisart, also chiefe Captaine of the Scottes, beholding the thing that a thousand times he had wished, that is, sir Henry Percy within his campe, redeth against him, but was slaine by the saide Henry; then cometh the Earle of Dunbarre with an excessive number of Scottes, & and toke the saide Henry with his brother Ralph, slaying many Englishmen to the number of 1100. in that place; at the which time there were in number 30000. put to flight, and toke the water at Otterbozne: but yet the Scottes lost many

Battle at  
Otterbozne.



many of their best men. This battell was at Otterbozne, the sorest fought that euer was betwene Englishmen and Scots, saith Froisart.

John Belandine.  
John Maior.  
John Froisart.  
Tho. Rudborne.

Thomas Arundell Bishop of Ely, brother to John and Richard Carles of Arundell and some to Richard Arundell was translated to the Archbishopricke of Yorke. This Thomas Arundell, late Bishop of Ely foureteen yeres, five monthes, and 18. dayes. He beautifully builded anew the palace at Ely: he likewise builded his manors in diuers places, especially in Wolbozne by London, he did not onely repaire, but rather new builded his manor place there; and also augmented it with a very large port, gate-house, or forefront toward the streete or high way: he gaue to the Church of Ely, a Table gilt, set with precious stones to the value of 200. markes. John Fordham was translated from Durham to Ely, and Walter Skirlaw Bishop of Bathe was translated to Durham, Richard Scrope was made Bishop of Chester, Ralph Erkam translated from Salisbury to Bathe: and John Waltham Clarke of the priuie seale was made Bishop of Salisbury.

Bishops translated.

The ninth day of September a Parliament began at Cambridge, in the which were diuers Statutes ordeined, especially one for laborers.

Parliament at Cambridge.

In the time of this Parliament, to wit, on the first day of October, as Sir Thomas Triuet going with the King to his lodging at Barnewell besides Cambridge, forced his horse too much with the spurre, his horse falleth and breaketh in a manner all the inner parts of his rider, who yet liued untill the next morrowe, which time was giuen him of God to repentance, if he would accept it, for he was a man of an haufy stomache, and not beloued of the common people.

Thomas Triuet slaine by a fall off his horse.

Alexander Neuell, after his banishment, was by Pope Urban translated to the see of S. Andrew in Scotland, but serued in Louaine in place of a parish priest, by the space of thre yeres before his death, where in the fift yere of his exile he died, and was buried in the Carmelite Friars there.

Archbishop of Yorke, translated to Saint Andrewes in Scotland.

King Richard kept his Christmasse in solemne maner at Woodstocke with his Quene Anne.

1389.

About the beginning of Lent, the Scots entring the west parts of England destroyng men, women and children, sucking babes, and such as lay in childe-bed, in the countie of Wildeband in the dominion of the Lord Dacres, and shutting vp of dozes of houses full of people, they bzent them vp without mercie to the number of two hundred in some one house. Against these was sent Thomas Mowbray Earle of Nottingham with five hundred speares to reuenge their attempts, but for that his power was so small in comparisson of theirs, he preuailed little against them.

Crucitie of the Scottes.

On the Thursday before Easter, the Lord Beamount captaine of Carlile entred Scotland by 40. miles, and spoyled the market of Fowike, paying and spoyling at his pleasure, and led many prisoners into England.

King Richard discharged the old officers of his Court, and also his Counsellors, appointing other at his pleasure: he toke the seale from Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Yorke, and deliuered it to William Wickam Bishop of Winchester, and made him Chancellor: the Bishop of Excester his Treas-

William Chancellor of England.

urer,

sur, hauing taken that office from the Bishop of Hereford, and Edmond Stafford keeper of the priuie seale, and made many new officers, putting downe the olde, he remoued from off the Counsell, the Duke of Gloucester, the Earle of Warwike and other worthy men, and put in their places such as pleased him.

A truce was graunted for thre yeres betwixt England and France, Iohn Clanbow knight, and Richard Rowthall clerke taking oth befoze the French King.

A fighting among Gnats at the Kings manhour of Shyne, where they were so thicke gathered, that the aire was darkened with them: they fought and made a great battell. Two parts of them being slaine, fell downe to the ground, the third part hauing got the victorie flew away, no man knewe whither. The number of the dead was such that they might be swept vp with besomes and bushels filled with them.

Michael at Poole sometime Earle of Suffolke, and Chancellour of England deceased at Paris in France, whose riches that he had there, came to the hands of his companion Robert de Vere that fled thither with him.

In the moneth of Nouember, Iohn Duke of Lancaster came from the partes beyond the Seas into England, after he had bidden in Spaine and Galcoigne, thre yeres space, who in Spaine first tasted great misfortunes, yet in the ende brought his matters to very good case, not with the force of men, but by the fauour of God: for when he came first to the parts of Spaine with an army sufficient ynough, through want of victuals, they first died through hunger, and after through sure, so that 1000. famous knights of his Army dyed miserably, the residue leauing the Duke, fled to the French Armie.

King Richard with his Quene Anne held their Christmasse at Woodstocke, and the Duke of Lancaster in the Castell of Hertford. The same time Iohn Hastings Earle of Penbroke, as he was desirous to Just, he was stricken about the priuie parts by the knight that ranne against him, called Sir Iohn Saine Iohn, where he died. King Richard caused the Castle of Canterbury to be repayred,

In a parliament at London it was ordained that none should purchase provisions at the Popes hands: there was graunted to the King xl. shillings of euery sacke of wool, and of the pound six pence.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster was made Duke of Aquitaine by the rode and bonet, which the King gaue him, and Edward the Duke of Porke sonne was made Earle of Rutland, to whom the King gaue the Castle of Okam. The Earle of Huntington was made the Kings Chamberlaine, &c.

A great pestilence was in the North parts of England, so that in a little space cleuen hundred were buried in the Citie of Porke.

A merchant of Wertmouth waged the nanie of shippes of the portes of his owne charges, and toke foure and thirtie shippes laden with wine, to the summe of fiftene hundred tunne.

A woofull varsaunce rose in Wroth, for the Welch and Southerne Scholers

A fight of  
Gnats at  
Shyne.

Michael de la  
Poole decea-  
sed.

An. reg. 13.

Iohn Duke of  
Lancaster re-  
turned into  
England.

1390.

Record Towre.

Parliament at  
London.

Iohn Duke  
of Lancaster  
made Duke of  
Aquitaine.

An. reg. 14.  
A great pesti-  
lence in the  
North.

A varsaunce at  
Wroth, by.

lers assaulted the Portherne, whereby many murders were done on each side, and a field was appointed, but by the helpe of the Duke of Gloucester it was appeased, and the Welchmen banished.

betweene the  
Southerne  
and Northerne  
Schollers.

The tenth, eleventh and twelfth of October the King held a great court at London in the Bishops palace and a great iusting in Smithfield, to the which Court came many strangers forth of France, Almain, Zealand, and many other parts, bringing with them horses and armour, in which pastimes there was giuen first the Badge of the white Hart with golden chaines and crownes. And vpon S. Edwards day the King held his feast in his Regalibus, sitting crowned at masse with his Scepter, &c. and likewise the Quene, and they sate likewise at the table at Kenington crowned, at which solemnitie were present the Earle of S. Paul, and his wife, Mawde Courtney sister to the King of England, and the Earle of Mfrenaunt who was made Knight of the Garter.

Iusting in  
Smithfield.

The Duke of Glocester toke his iourney toward Spaine, but being tossed with infortunate stormes, & iuen now hither, now thither, was so farre distant of hope, that he dispaired of life, and at length after he had passed the Barbarous coasts of Denmarke, Porthway and Scotland, he arrived in Porthumberland, and came to the castle of Linmouth where hauing refreshed himselfe certaine dayes he toke his iourney towards his manner of Plecy, bringing great joy to all the kingdome.

1391.

This yere on the 9. of July, the Sunne appeared redde through certaine thicke and filthie cloudes, giuing as it were no light from none til the Sunne setting, & after wards in maner for the space of 6. weekes, cloudes did abound, about none dayes, sometime continuing both day and night, not banishing at all. And the same time such a mortallitie increased in Porsfolk, and in many other Countries, that it was not vnlike the great pestilence, for that I may keepe silence of other Cities and townes, within thort time in the Citie of Porke, there were 11000. cozpses buried.

Ann. reg. 15.  
The Sunne  
appeareth red  
like blood.

A great pesti-  
lence.

Henry Percy Earle of Porthumberland was called home from Caleis, and was made Warden of the Marches of Scotland, and Robert Mowbrey was made Lieutenant of Caleis.

On the Friday next after the feast of all Saints, a Parliament began at London, in the which halfe a tenth, and halfe a fiftenth was graunted to the King, which money he should haue for the treatie to be had for peace with the Frenchmen, which treatie the Duke of Lancaster should procure. Also conditionally was graunted to the King, a full tenth, and a whole fiftenth, if that yere he made any iourney against the Scots, and this was the fruite of this Parliament.

A Parliament  
at London.

This yere passed to poze and meane people very hard and sore for dearth of cozne, now almost continued for two yeres, whereby it came to passe, that when the time of fruits, as nuts, apples, &c. came, many people through overfeeding thereof, caught the flire, and dyed of the same, and the death had ben farre greater through famine, if the commendable diligence of Adam

Dearth of  
Corne, and  
prouision made  
by the Mayor  
of London, for  
remedie ther-  
of.

Baume then Mayor of London had not relieved the Commons, who with continuall

continuall care prouided, that from the parts of beyond the Seas, cozne was brought to London to y<sup>e</sup> reliefe of the whole realme, whereas otherwise without doubt, neither had the Countrey sufficed the Citty, nor the Citty haue holpen the countrey. To the furtherance of this good worke in relieuing the poore, the Maior and Citizens of London toke out of their Orphanes chest in their Guildhall two thousand markes to buye Cozne and other Victuals, from beyond the Seas, and the Aldermen ech of them laid out twentie pounds to the like purpose of buying of Cozne, which was bestowed in diuers places, where the poore might buy it at an appoynted price, and such as lacked money to pay doونه, to put in surety to pay in the yere following: in the which yere when Haruest came, the fieldes yelded plentifull increase, and so the price of Cozne began to decrease.

Sir Hugh Calueley was made Warden of the Isles of Iernsey, Gernsey, Serke, Aurney, &c.

A Jew Baptized at London.

This yere a certaine Jewe at London became a Christian, and was baptized by the name of William Piers, and had two pence the day for tearme of his life giuen him by the King, as appeareth of record in the Towre.

1392.

A Dolphin of the Sea, came up to London Bridge.

King Richard with Quene Anne his wife, foure Bishops, as many Carles, the Duke of York, many Lords, and fiftene Ladies, held a royall Christmasse at Langley nere to S. Albons. The same Christmas day a Dolphin came forth of the Sea and played himselfe in the Thames at London, to the Bridge, forshelwing happily the tempests that were to follow within a weeke after, the which Dolphin being scene of the Citizens, and followed, was with much difficulty intercepted, & brought againe to London, the wing a spectacle to many, of the height of his body, for he was tenne fote in length. These Dolphins are fishes of the sea, that follow the voices of men, and reioyce in playing of instruments, & are wont to gather themselves at musicke. These when they play in riuers, with hasty springings or leapinges doe signifie Tempest to follow. The seas containe nothing moze swift nor nimble, for oftentimes with their skips, they mount ouer the sailes of ships.

T. Wallingham.

The King sent to the Londoners requesting to borrow of them one thousand pound, which they stoutly denied, and also euill entreated, beate and nether hand slew a certaine Lumbard that would haue lent the King the said summe, which when the King heard, he was maruellously angried, and calling together almost all the Nobles of the land to Stamford on the fine and twentieth day of May, he opened to them the malitiousnesse of the Londoners, and complained of their presumption, the which noble men gaue counsell, that their insolencie should with speede be repressed, and their pride abated. By the Kings iudgement therefore was the Maior of London and the Sheriffs, with other the best Citizens arrested to appeare at Bottingham, where on the eleuenth of June, Iohn Hinde Maior was deposed, and sent to Windsor Castle, the Sheriffes were also deposed, and sent the one to the Castle of Wallingford, the other to the Castle of Odham, and the other Citizens to other prisons till the King with his Councell had determined what should be done with them. And there it was determined, that from thenceforth the Londoners should

The Maior of London and Sheriffs deposed, and committed.



should not chouse nor haue any Maior, but that the King should appoint one of his Knights to be ruler of the Citie: their priuiledges were reuoked, their liberties disanulled, and their lawes abrogated.

The King then on the one and twentieth of June first appoynted to be Warden of the Citie a certaine Knight called Sir Edward de Dalingrige, but he was quickly depozed by the King, because men said he fauoured the Londoners, and Baldwin Radinton was constituted in his place.

*An. reg. 16.*

In the meane time, through suite of certaine Knights, but specially of the Duke of Glocester, the King is somewhat pacified, and by little and little abateth the rigour of his purpose, calling to minde the diuers honours, and the great giftes he had receiued of the Londoners, whereupon he determineth to deale more mildely with them, and to call them to some hope of grace and pardon, he sendeth commandement to them to come to Windsor, there to shewe their priuiledges, liberties and lawes, which being there shewed some of them were ratified and some condemned, but they could not obtaine the Kings full fauour, till they had satisfied the King for the iniuries which was said they had done. The King at this assembly at Windsor, had got together almost all the Lords, and so great an armie, that the Londoners had cause to be afraid thereof, about the which preparation he was at great charges, for the which it was sure that the Londoners must pay. They therefore not ignorant that the end of these things was a money matter, submitted themselves to the Kings pleasure, offering tenne thousand pound. They were yet dismissed home to returne againe, vncertaine what satisfaction and summe they should pay.

*The Londoners called before the King at Windsor.*

When the Citizens were returned, and that the Nobles and other were gone home: the King hearing that the Londoners were in heauines, and dismayed, he said to his men, I will goe (saith he) to London, and comfort the Citizens, and will not that they any longer despaire of my fauour, which sentence was no sooner known in the Citie but all men were filled with incredible ioy, so that euery of them generally determined to meete him, and to be as liberall in gifts, as they were at his coronation. The King therefore as he came from Shire in Surrey to London, with Quene Anne his wife, on the 29. of August, the principall Citizens all in one liuery to the number of 400. horsemen rode to meete them at Wandsworth, where in most lowly wise, they submitted themselves vnto his grace, beseeching him of his speciall pardon, in all such things, as they before had offended him, and the Recorder of the Citie, in the name of the whole Citizens, instantly required him, that he would of his great bounty take such paine vpon him as to ride through his Chamber of London, to the which request he graciously consented, so he held on his iourney til he came to S. Georges Church in Southwarke, where they were receiued with procession of Robert Braybrooke Bishop of London, and all the Clergie of the Citie, who conueyed them through London, the Citizens of London, men, women and childzen in order meeting the King at London Bridge, where he was by them presented with two faire white stables, trapped in cloth of golde, parted of red and white, hanged full of siluer belles, the which

*The King riding towards London, receiued by the Citizens.*

which present he thankfully receiued, and after he held on his way through the Citie toward Westminster.

And as they passed the Citie the streets were hanged with cloth of golde, siluer and like. The Conduite in Chepe ran with red and white Wine, and by a childe Angel-like he was presented with a very costly crowne of golde, and the Quene with another. A table of the Trinitie in golde was giuen to the king, valued worth eight hundred pound, and another to the Quene of S. Anne, because her name was Anne, with diuers other gifts, as boxes, trappers, plate of gold and siluer, clothes of gold, like, beluets, Basons & Cewers of golde, also golde in coyne, precious stones, and iewels, so rich, excellent, and beautifull, that the value and price might not wel be esteemed, and so the Citizens recouered their ancient customes and liberties, & then the Kings Bench from Poike, and the Chancery from Pottingham, was returned to London. And it was graunted to them that they might chosse them a Mayor as befoze time they had done. The Londoners beleued that by these gifts they had escaped all daunger, and that from thenceforth they should be quiet, but they were deceiued, for they were compelled to giue the King after this 10000. pound, collected of the commons in great bitterness of minde; for the which summe, the King became beneuolent to the Citizens, and forgane them all trespasses, by his patents dated at Westminster the 28. of February, and so the troubles of the Citizens came to quietnesse; which trouble the Dolphin in Thamis at Christmasse last past did happily signifie a farre off. A fabulous booke compiled by a namelesse authoz, but printed by William Caxton (and therefore called Caxtons Chronicle) reporteth these troubles to happen through a fray in Flotestrate, about an horse loose which was taken out of a Bakers basket, by a Peoman of the Bishop of Salisburies, and that the same troubles were pacified, and their liberties were againe restored by meanes of Richard Grauesend Bishop of London, in reward whereof the Citizens repaire to the place of burial in the middle Isle of S. Pauls church, &c. But al is vntue, for at this time Robert Braybroke was Bishop of London, and Richard Grauesend had been Bishop, and deceased in the time of Edward the first, in Anno 1303. almost 90. yeres befoze this time. After whom succeeded in the Bishopricke Ralph Baldoke, Gilbert Segraue, Richard Newport, Steuen Grauesend, Richard Wentworth, Ralph Stratford, Michael Norbroke, Simon Sudbury, William Courtney, and Robert Braybrooke that late Bishop of London from 1381. untill the yere 1403.

Whoeuer the place of buriall in S. Pauls, whereunto the Mayor and Citizens of London haue repayed, is of William, who was Bishop of London in the time of William Conquerour, who purchased the first Charter of the said King William, for the same Citie, as I haue befoze declared.

Robert de Vere, sometime Earle of Oxford, that by many degrees had mounted to the name of Duke of Ireland, died at Louaine in great anguish of mind, and miserable penury, which yong gentleman was apt to al offices of worthinesse, if in his childhode he had not wanted discipline.

After the feast of Christmasse, a Parliament was holden at Winchester, in the

A great fable  
reppoued.

Robert de  
Vere Earle of  
Oxford dyed  
in great mys-  
erie beyond sea.

the which was graunted to the King by the Cleargie halfe a tenth, and by the commons halfe a fiftene, for the expences of the Duke of Lancaster and Gloucester, that were to goe into Fraunce to treat a peace betwene the Kingdomes.

At the which time the French king, whilst that he was dauncing in the hall with 4. Knights of his household, being disguised like a wilde man, having a short garment about him dressed with pitch and rosen, that the flare which was fastened to his strait coate might the better abide, and shew it selfe moze plaine, he had bene sodainly burned to death (if god helpe had not chanced) thzough the fallshode of the Duke his brother that did aspire the kingdome, for as the King led the daunce, one that was hired thereto, howling downe his torch, set fire on the towle, which being kindled burnt the strait garment, where finding matter mete to feede on, to wit pitch and rosen, burnt to spitefully, but a Lady seeing such daunger towards the Kings person, ranne to him, and pulled him from the daunce, by which meanes the King was saued, but the foure Knights could not by any meanes be holpen till their skinnies and flesh were scolpered, and they yelded by the Ghost.

The French King in danger to be burnt by meanes of his traitorous brother.

This yere the Kings Bench and Chauncerie were remoued from London to Pozke, for the Archbishop of Pozke being Lord Chancellor did wish the commoditie of his Citie, but the noueltie lasted not long, for with the same facilitie that they were remoued to Pozke, they were brought backe againe to London.

Kings bench and Chancery remoued from London to Pozke.

The same yere Aubery de Vere uncle and heire to Robert the late Duke of Ireland was restored in blood, and created Earle of Desford. Iohn Deuerois, Knight Constable of Dover, and the Kings steward, died sodainly, in whose roume, Thomas Percy, that before was vice-chamberlaine, was made Lord Steward, and Thomas Beaumont was made constable of Dover, and William Scrope was made vice Chamberlaine, who about y same time bought of William Montacute Earle of Salisbury the Ile of Man, with the regalitie thereof, for the Lord of this Island is called King, to whom it was lawfull to weare a crowne of gold, Thomas Percy the yonger was made warden of Burdeaur.

An. reg. 17. Will. Scrope purchased the Ile of Man.

The Dukes of Lancaster and Gloucester passed ouer into France, to make somewhat of the truce, or to conclude a finall peace betwixt the Kingdomes: but it was not so brought to passe, as it was wished, by reason of the French Kings sickness.

In September, lightnings and thunders, in many places of England did much hurt, but especially in Cambridge-shire, the same bent houses and cozenes nere to Tollewozke, and in the towne it bent terribly.

Great thundering and lightning.

Such abundance of water fell in October, that at Bury in Suffolke, the Church was full of water, & at Newmarket it bare downe walles of houses, so that men and women hardly escaped drowning. The same yere Lord Thode Ros, as he returned south of the Holy land, in y city of Paphos in the Ile of Cypzus, thzough intemperancy of the aire departed this life there. In the Octaues of S. Hilary, a Parliament was holden at London, in which a Subsidie was demanded for the King that was minded to go into Ireland, wherefore

Great water floods.

1393.

Parliament at London.

the

*Isling in  
Smithfield.*

the Cleargie graunted to him a full tenth if he would passe thither, and if he went not, they graunted him but halfe a tenth. Certaine Lords of Scotland came into England to get worship by force of armes. The Earle of Marre challenged the Earle of Nottingham, to iust with him, and so they rode together certaine courses, but not the full challenge, for the Earle of Marre was cast both horse and man, and two of his ribbes broken with the fall, so that he was bozne out of Smithfield, and conueyed toward Scotland, but died by the way at Pozke. Sir William Darrel Knight, the Kings banner-bearer of Scotland, challenged Sir Pierce Courtney Knight the kings banner-bearer of England, and when they had run certaine courses, they gaue ouer without conclusion of victorie. Then Cockborne Esquire of Scotland challenged Sir Nicholas Hawberke Knight, and rode five courses, but Cockborne was bozne ouer horse and man. The seuenth of June Quene Anne died at Shyne in Southery, and was buried at Westminster. The King toke her death so heauily, that besides cursing the place where she died, he did also for anger throwe downe the buildings vnto the which the former Kings being wearied of the Citie, were wont for pleasure to resort.

*Quene Anne  
deceased.*

*An. reg. 18.*

*Constance  
Duchesse of  
Lancaster de-  
ceased.*

Thus the king, the Duke of Lancaster, and his sonne the Earle of Darbie, were soldiers all at one time: for the Lady Constance Duchesse of Lancaster, daughter to Peter King of Spaine, was but lately deceased, whilst the Duke her husband was in France. And the same time also deceased the Countesse of Darby, wife to Henry Earle of Darby. Moreover, this yere deceased Isabel Dutches of Pozke, that was halfe sister to the Dutches of Lancaster, being bozne of one mother, and she was buried at Langle in the frier Church there by the Kings commandement.

*Sir John  
Hawkwood  
his acts, life  
and death.*

Also this yere deceased that famous Knight, knowne to the world, Sir John Hawkwood, whose deedes (saith Thomas Walsingham) require a speciall treatise. I finde by good record, that this John Hawkwood was bozne in Essex in the parish of Wingham Stibel, the sonne of Gilbert de Hawkwood Tanner, in his youth he was bound as an apprentice with a Taylor in the citie of London, and from thence was prest in the musters for seruice of King Edward the third in the warres of France, wherein he serued first as a common souldier in the rowme of an Archer. Afterward he was made a captaine and had some charge committed vnto him, which he so well performed, as he was aduanced to the order of knight hood, and stood in good possibilitie to haue growne to great preferment by those warres if they had indured: for when the peace was concluded at Brytaine, beside Chartiers in the yere of Christ 1360. he was then a pwee knight, and had reaped small commoditie of those warres. Wherefore he ioyned himselfe with the companies, called the late commers, who assembled in great numbers, a five or six thousand English hoesemen, and seeking after better gaine, made great spoyle of all the East parts of the kingdom of France, passing through Champaine, Burgondy, and Damphin, vnto the very gates of Auignion in Prouence, where Clement the seuenth, Bishop of Rome, then held his residence and court of Cardinales: from whence hee departed into Lombardy, hauing the leading of that part of the companies



companies, which was called the white bande, with whom he serued valiantly in the warres of Iohn Marques of Mountferrato. But when Leonel Duke of Clarence sonne to Edward the 3. King of England came into Italy, to marry the Lady Violent, daughter of Galeasius, Viscount Lord of Millaine, he sought that seruice and attended the Duke to that marriage.

At which time Barnabe the brother of Galeasius had great warres with the territorye of the state of Mantua, and obtained of the Duke of Clarence, that Sir Iohn Hawkwood being a Captaine, and principall man of his retinue might come to ayde him in his warres, for Barnabe being himselfe a warlike Prince, had a great desire to make some triall of the discipline and prowesse of the Englishmen. Sir Iohn Hawkwood therefore hauing in sundry skirmishes with great courage, and consideration happily taken aduantageable occasions of victorie, and the Englishmen demeaning themselves worthily with their bowes and arrowes, did drawe Barnabe into that admiration of them, that he commended the discipline of this nation, and greatly regarded the prowes and discretion of Sir Iohn Hawkwood. And in short time after, to wit, the first yere of King Richard, good liking increasing betwene them by entercourse of fauours and courtesies, he desired to haue him his sonne in laue, and gaue him in marriage the Lady Domnia his daughter, whom he had begotten of a noble woman, named Porra, with the valour of tenne thousand Florenes of yereley reueneue, and after that time he married not any other.

This alliance being made in respect of his valour in warre, was the occasion of the increase both of his pay, and of the renowne of the Englishmen throughout all Italie: That a most puissant Prince in warre, had not without sufficient cause to induce him, conceived so good opinion of the valour of a man that was a stranger, and for this cause his seruice was required by the Princes and free Cities of Italy. For at that time all martiall affaires amongst the Italians were managed by forraine forces and Capitaines.

It fortuned that vpon some displeasure conceived the Englishmen that were left at Alba where the Duke of Clarence dyed, for the alliance past, made a sodaine reuolt from the friendshipde of Galeasius, and Barnabe, and toynded themselues with their enemies, by which change of affections many of the Townes of Lombardy came to be wasted, by the outrageous spoiles of the Englishmen, amongst other they toke the Towne of Faera, and Banacanallo, whereof he solde one to the Marques of Cast for twentie thousand Crownes, and the other he kept, and after that Sir Iohn Hawkwood, hauing both his forces and pay increased, determined to seeke newe hopes, and newe aduentures. He went first to the ayde of Pope Gregorie the twelfth, and hauing with great commendation recovered the Cities of Prouence that had reuolted from him, for his seruice therein was worthily rewarded with the dominion of siue Townes. From him, he went to the Florentines, who profered great pay, and from them, not long after to the Visances, and then againe to the Florentines, vnder whome he serued with such a num-

ber of our nation both hoyle men and sote men that all Italie feared him, with that successe and increafe of his commendation, and glorious renoume, that hee was easily reputed to be the best Souldiour of that age, for hee had learned by his long experience in the warres, hauing an excèding ripe and quicke conceipt, to foze occasions, to frame his resolutions, and to make speedie execution, being also as occasion required, both hot in his sight, and notable for his delayes, in so much as sundry great Captaines, who were afterward highly renowned, proceeded out of his Schoole, as from an exact Master of Partiall affaires. The exploytes that he had atchieued, with good successe, were accounted for sure groundes and principles of Discipline, as well amongst his very enemies, as also amongst his owne followers.

After infinite victozies obtained, and an incomparable renoume amongst all men for the same, he deceased at Flozence being then an olde man, and was most honourably buried in the great Church of the same Citie, where after his death, the Senate in rewarde of his good deseruing, bestowed vpon him the honour of a Tombe, with the Image of a man on horsebacke, as great as a mightie Pillar, for a Monument and testimonie of his great prowesse in warre, and excèding fidelitie to their state. Notwithstanding his executours, or other wise his friendes here in England, to wit, Robert Rokeden senior, Robert Rokeden iunior, and Iohn Coe, raysed a Monument, or Tombe arched ouer, and ingrauen to the likenesse of Haukes lying in a woode, in the Parish Church of Wyngham-sible where he was bozne, and founded there for him a Chantry, and another in the Priory of Wyngham Castle, to remember Iohn Haukewood Knight, Iohn Oliuer, and Thomas Newenton Esquires.

Irish people  
to auoid Eng-  
land.

About the moneth of August Proclamation was made that all Irish people should anoyde the Realme, and get them home befoze the feast of the natiuitie of our Lady, vpon paine of life.

King Richard  
went into  
Ireland.

King Richard went ouer into Ireland, and the Duke of Gloucester with him, and the Carles of March, Salisburie, Arundell, Nottingham and Rutland. The Irishmen being afraid of such preparation as was made, durst not shew themselves openly, but with secret assaultings they often troubled the Kings army, yet when the Englishmen preuailed, many of the Lords of the land submitted themselves to the king, of which some the king held with him, least they should attempt some new stirre.

1395.

Parliament at  
London.

The king held his Chyristmasse at Dublin in Ireland, and after that feast held a Parliament there: also the same time the Duke of Poike, the Lord Warden of England called a Parliament at London, to the which came (being sent forth of Ireland) the Duke of Gloucester, the which befoze all the States shewed the Kings neede, who had now spent his treasure amongst the Irishmen, so that a tenth was granted by the Clergie, and a fiftieth by the Lapy.

The same time the fauourers of Wikcliffes opinions, set vp on the gates of S. Pauls Church in London, and on the gates of Saint Peters Church at Westminster,

Westminster, vehement accusations of the Cleargie, and conclusions such as had not been heard of, among the which were these verses following.

*Plangunt Anglorum gentes crimen Sodomorum,*

*Paulus fert, horum sunt idola causa malorum.*

*Surgunt ingrati, corrupto semine nati,*

*Mentum praelati, hoc defensare parati,*

*Qui Reges estis, populi quicunque praestis,*

*Qualiter his gestis gladius prohibere potestis.*

Libels against  
the Cleargie.

They were mainteyned in this their doing, by some noble men & knights of this land, among which as chiefe were Sir Richard Scury, Sir Lewes de Clifford, Sir Thomas Larimer, Sir Iohn Mountague, which did instigate them to confound if they might, the religious men: whereupon the Archbishop of Poike, the Bishop of London and other, as messengers from the whole state of the cleargie passed ouer into Ireland, where to the King they made a grievous complaint, beseeching him that he would returne with speede, to helpe the faith and Church that was now incredibly afflicted by lollardes, (as they termed them) how they might take away all the possessions of the Church, and that worse was, how they might take and destroy all Canonically foundations. King Richard hearing these things, determined to returne home the sooner. And when he was returned, he called befoze him, and rebuked certayne of the Nobles bitterly, threatening them, if they from thenceforth favoured these Lollards, or in any wise did comfort them he would extreamely punish them, he toke an othe of Sir Richard Scury, that from thence forth, he should not hold such opinions, which thing being done, the king said, and I sweare to thee that if thou ever violate thine othe, thou shalt die a shamefull death, other hearing such roaring of the Lion, plucked in their heads and lay close.

About this time Sir Iohn Froisart Chanon of Chimay in the Carle dome of Heynault, as himselfe reporteth, came into England, he demaunded of Sir William Lille (who had been with the King in Ireland) the manner of the hole that in Ireland is called Saint Patrikes Purgatory, if it were true that was said of it, or not: who answered, that such a hole there was, and that himselfe and another knight had been there while the King lay at Dublin, & said they entred into the hole, and were closed in at the sunne set, and abode there all the night, and the next morning issued out againe at the sunne rising: he said, that when he & his fellow were entred and past the gate that was called the Purgatory of Saint Patrike, and that they were descended and gone downe thre or foure pases, as into a cellar, a certayne hote vapour rose against them, and strake so into their heads, that they were faine to sit downe on y<sup>e</sup> staires which were of stone: and after they had sate there a season, they had great desire to sleepe, and so fell into a slumber, and slept there all night. In the which sleepe they had marvellous dreames, other wise then they were wont to haue in their chambers: but in the morning after they had issued out, they had cleane forgotten their dreames and visions.

King Richard sent messengers the Earle of Rutland, the Earle Marshall, the Archbishop of Dublin, the Bishop of Ely, Lewes Clifford, Henry Beau-

Sir Iohn  
Froisart of  
S. Patrikes  
Purgatory.

King Richard  
sent messen-  
gers to treat  
a marriage  
with the  
French Kings  
daughter.

The conquest  
of Ireland by  
R. Richard.

Ireland some-  
what discer-  
ned.

mont, Hugh Spencer, and many other to Charles the French King, to treat with him for a marriage to be had betwene the King of England, and the French Kings eldest daughter named Isabell of eight yeeres old, who was already promised to the Duke of Britons sonne, by a treaty that was made at Loures in Thouraine. This was hard to be broken, for the French King and his vncles had sealed with the Duke of Britaine.

Now somewhat of the former voiage of King Richard into Ireland, as the same was reported to Sir Iohn Froilart, by an Equire of England, named Henry Chritall. Sir Iohn (quoth he) it is not in memorie, that euer any King of England made such prouision for any iourney into Ireland, nor such a number of men of armes, nor archers. The King was a nine moneths in the marches of Ireland to his great cost, and charge to the realme, for they bare all his expenses: and the merchant-cities, and good towne of the Realme thought it well bestowled, when they sawe the King returne home againe with honour. The number that he had thither, were four thousand men of armes, and thirtie thousand archers, well payed weekly. But to shew the truth, Ireland is one of the euil Countries of the world to make warre vpon, or to bring vnder subiection, for it is closed strongly and wilde with high forests, & great waters and marshes. It is hard to enter to doe them of the Countrey any damage: nor ye shall finde no towne, nor person to speake withall. For the men dwel to the woodes, and dwell in Caves or small Cottages, vnder trees and among bushes, like wilde and sauage beasts: and when they knowe that any man maketh warre against them, being entred into their Countries, then they draw together to the straites and passages to defend them, so that no man can enter into them. And when they see their time, they will some take their aduantage on their enemies, for they knowe the countrey, and are light people. For a man of armes, being neuer so well horsed, and runne he neuer so fast, the Irishmen will runne on fote as fast as he, and ouertake him, yea, and leape vpon his horse behinde him, and throwe him from his horse: for they are strong men in their armes, and haue sharpe weapons with large blades, two edged, wherewith they will slay their enemy, whom they neuer repute to be dead till they haue cut his throte, and opened his belly, and taken out his heart, which they carry away with them, some say they eate it, and haue great delight therein, they take no man to ransom. And when they see that they be ouermatched, then they will depart and hide themselves in bushes, woods, and caves, so that no man shall finde them: Sir William Windfore, who had most vsed the warres in those parts of any other Englishman, could neuer learne the manner of the Countrey. They be hard people, and of rude witte: and they set nothing by tollitte, nor fresh apparell, nor by noblenesse, for though their Countrey be soveraignly governed by Kings, whereof they haue many, yet will they abide and continue in their rudenesse.

Truth it is, that foure of the principall Kings, and most puissant after the manner of the country, are come to the obeyesance of the King of England, by loue and faire meanes, and not by battell, or constraint. The Earle of Ormond,



mond, who marcheth vpon them, hath taken great paine, and hath so luted them, that they came to Dublin to the King, and submitted them to him, to be vnder the obedience of the Crowne of England, wherefore the King and all the Realme reputeth this for a great and honourable acte. For King Edward did neuer so much vpon them, as King Richard did in his voyage. The honour is great, but the profit is but small, &c. The names of the foure Kings were these, first, the great Oneale King of Meth, the second Brine of Thomond King of Thomond, the third Arthure of Mackquemur King of Leinster, the fourth Conlne King of Cheueno and Drape, they were made knights by King Richard in the Cathedrall Church of Dublin: these foure Kings watched all the night before in the Church, and the next day at high Masse time, were made knights, and with them Sir Thomas Orpew, Sir James Pado, and Sir Iohn Pado his cousin.

These Kings sate that day at the Table with King Richard, they were regarded of many people, because their behaviour was straunge to the manner of England.

When Sir Iohn Froisart desired to knowe howe it came to passe, that foure Kings of Ireland were so soone brought to the obedience of King Richard, when King Edward the Kings grandfather, who was so valiant a Prince could neuer subdue them: Sir Henry Cristal answered, he could not tell, but as men said, the great puissance that the King had ouer with him, and remaining there nine moneths, abashed the Irishmen. Also the Sea was closed from them on all parts, whereby their merchandises might not enter into their Countries, though they that dwell farre within the Realme cared little for it, yet such as lue on the marches of England and by the Sea coast, vse feate of merchandise.

King Edward in his time, had to answer so many warres in France, Britaine, Gascoigne, and Scotland, that his people were diuided in diuers places, wherefore, he could not send any great number into Ireland. But when the Irishmen sawe the great number of men of warre that King Richard had in this last iourney, they aduised themselves, and came to obedience.

Howeuer there was of olde time in England a King named Edward, who is canonized as a Saint: This King in his time subdued the Danes, and discomfited them by battell on the sea thre times: This Edward the Irishmen loved, and dyed him much more then any King of England that had been before. And therefore King Richard this yere past, when he was in Ireland, in all his armoyes and deuises, he left the bearing of the armes of England, as the Leopardes and floure deluces, and bare the armes of Saint Edward, that is, a crosse patent golde and gules, with foure white Parteleys in the field, whereof it was said, the Irishmen were well pleased, and the soner inclined to him, and haue done to him faith and homage in like manner as their Predecessours sometime did to King Edward. Thus haue I shewed the manner howe King Richard had this yere accomplished his voyage in Ireland.

Edward the Confessor his armes foure Parteleys.

In this meane space the English Lords rid from Caleis to Amiens, and to

Claremount in Beaufayn, and so to Paris, where they were lodged about the Crosse of Tyrener, they were five hundred horses. The French King was lodged at the Castle of Louvre, and the Quene with her children at the house of S. Paul upon the river Saine. The Duke of Berrey at the house of Bessle, the Duke of Burgoine at the house of Arthois, and the Duke of Bourbon in his owne house, the Duke of Orleans, the Earle of S. Paul, and the Lord Cowsey at their owne houses.

The King had assembled there all his Councell, to the intent to make the better answer to the Embassadours of England. He commanded every day to be deliuered to these Embassadoys 200. Crownes, for their smaler pences, and for their horses. And the chiefe, as the Earle Marshall, and the Earle of Kentland, were oftentimes with the king and dined with him. These Lords desired euer to haue answer, and hauing been at Paris. 11. dayes and their charges payd by the French King, a reasonable answer was giuen them, so that they were put in great hope to bring about that they came for, howbeit the French men said it could not be done shortly, because the Lady was so yong, and also that she was affianced to the Duke of Britaines eldest sonne, wherefore they must treat to breake that promise, or they could proceede any further, & thereupon the French King should send into England the next Lent, to shew how the matter went. With which answer the Englishmen were contented, they took their leaue & departed from Paris to Caleis, and so to England, the King was ioyous of their coming, and well contented with their answer.

An. reg. 19.

The Duke of Lancaster returned out of Gascoigne.

About Michaellmas the Duke of Lancaster returned out of Gascoigne into England, for that he had not been receiued in Gascoigne, as he thought he should haue been, for the people there did bitterly relect him, from bearing gouernement ouer them. The King made him good chere, and all the Winter following oft times sent to the French King, concerning the marriage, and was well inclined to haue peace, these pursutes and treaties took such effect, that their matter drew nere to a point, so that such Embassadours as were first sent out of England into France, and were againe lodged in Paris, were in number five hundred, and sojourned in Paris more then thre weekes.

T. Wallingham. Pirats of Denmark rob the English.

This yere England suffered great losse by pirats, that belonged vnto the Quene of Denmarke, who spoiled mariners and merchants, especially the men of Suffolke that assembled a multitude together, and took vpon them to fight with them, but the enemies preuailing, many of them were slaine, and very many taken prisoners, were reserued for ransome with the losse of twenty thousand pounds, which they had aborde with them to make their marchandise.

Bishop of Salisbury and other deceased.

This yere deceased Iohn of Waltham Bishop of Salisbury, Treasurer of England, who had pleased the King so greatly, that (though many murmured at it) he commanded him to be buried at Westminster among the Kings. After him Roger Walden the Kings secretary and treasurer of Caleis, was made Treasurer. Iohn de Metford Bishop of Chichester was translated to Salisbury, and the Archbishop of Diuelin to Chichester. Also Thomas Brantingham Bishop of Excester deceased, after whom succeeded Edmond

mond Stafford bearer of the priuie Seale. Henry Wakefield Bishop of Worcester deceased, vnto whom succeeded at the Kings request a monke of Chester, called Tideman a Whistion.

In the moneth of Nouember King Richard caused the body of his dère krenbe Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, to be brought from Louane, and after to be buried in the priory of Colne in Essex, with solempne funeralz, which he honoured with his presence, and caused the Coffin of Cyprus, wherein his body being embalmed lay, to be opened, that he might behold his face, & touch him with his fingers openly shewing his loue to the dead carkasse, which he bare him when he was aliuie, there were at the same funeralles with the king, the Countesse of Desmond, mother of the deceased Duke, the Archbishop of Canterbury, many other Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and other religious men, but yet there were few of the Nobles, for they had not digested the hatred they had conceived against him.

Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland.

The Embassadours of England being at Paris with the French King, their matters toke such effect, that it was fully agreed that the King of England should haue in marriage Isabell the eldest daughter of King Charles, and by vertue of procuracion the Earle Marshall affianced and espoused her in the name of the King of England, & so from thenceforth she was called Quene of England. The Englishmen toke their leaue and departed to Caleis and so into England. The King was glad of their returne, and so were other, but whosoener was glad of this marriage, the Duke of Gloucester vncke vnto the King made no ioy thereof, for he saw well, that by reason of that marriage and alliance, peace should be betwene the kings, and their realmes, which grieved him, & of this matter he would oftentimes speake with his brother the Duke of Yorke, and shoue him as much as he could to his opinions, for he was but a soft Prince. But to the Duke of Lancaster his eldest brother, he durst not speake ouer largely, for he saw well that he was of the Kings opinion, and was well pleased with the Kings marriage.

This yere the King held his feast of Christmasse at Langley, whil he came to him the Duke of Lancaster, and he receiued the Duke with honour, but not with loue, as was thought, he therfore taking leaue of the King, departed from the court toward Lincoln, where Katharine Swinford then lay, whom after the feast of the Epiphanie, (al men wondering at the strangenesse of the dede) he toke to wife. This woman was bozne in Benault, daughter to Sir Paine Ruit, a Knight of that Countrey, she was in her youth brought by in the Duke of Lancasters house, and attended on his first wife Blanch the Dutchesse of Lancaster: and in the dayes of his second wife the Dutchesse Constance of Spaine, he kept the said Katharine to be his concubine, who after was married to a Knight of England named Swinford, that was now deceased. Befoze she was married, the Duke had by her foure children, thre sons, & a daughter, one of the sons hight Iohn Bewford, the second Thomas de Bewford, and the other Henry, who was brought by at Akon in Almanie, procured a god Lawper, and was after Bishop of Winchester, and Ioan a daughter for the loue the Duke had to those his children, he married their mother, the

1399.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster, married Katherine Swinford.

said Katharine Swinford, being now a widow, as befoze is said. The great Ladies of England, as the dutchesse of Gloucestre, the countesse of Darby, the countesse of Arundell, and others descended of the blood royall, greatly disdayned that she should bee matched with the Duke of Lancaster, and by that meanes accounted second person in the Realme, and be preferred in rounne afoze them; and therefore they said they would not come where she should be present, for it should bee a shame to them, that a woman of so base birth, that had been concubine to the Duke should goe and haue place befoze them.

Hector Boetius.

Justing on  
Londo bridge.

This yere during the peace, many Noble men of England frequented Scotland, and many Scottes frequented England, thzough the which, oftines, many honourable toznaments were done betwixt Englishmen and Scottes, in defence of their honours and glozie in armes: Among whom was not a little praised, the honourable victozy gotten by Dauid Crauford on the Bzidge at London against the Lord Welles in this manner: The Lord Welles was sent Embassadour into Scotland, concerning certaine high matters betwixt the two Kings of England and Scotland, and when he was at a solemne banquet, where Scottish men and Englishmen were communing of dedes of armes, the Lord Welles said, Let words haue no place, if ye know not the chualty and valiant dedes of Englishmen, appoint me a day and place when ye list, and ye shall haue experterce. Then said Dauid Earle of Crauford, I assent, and incontinently, by consent of either party, a day and place was assigned. The Lord Welles chose the bzidge of London for the place, and Earle Dauid chose S. Georges day for the time. Thus departed the Lord Welles toward London. Afoze the day Earle Dauid came with thirtie persons well appointed to London: As sone as the day of battell was come, both the parties were conueyed to the bzidge, and sone after by soun of trumpet, the two parties ran hastily together, on their barbed hozses, with square grounden speares to the death. Earle Dauid notwithstanding the valiant dint of speares bzoken on his helmet, and visage, fate so strongly, that the people moued with vaine suspitton, cryed, Earle Dauid contrary to the law of armes, is bound to the saddle: Earle Dauid hearing this murmure, dismounted off his hozse, and without any suppozt or helpe ascended againe into the saddle. Incontinent they rushed together with the new speares, the second time with burning ire to conquer honour: but in the third course the Lord Welles was sent out of his saddle, with such a violence, that he fell to the ground: Earle Dauid seeing his fall, dismounted hastily from his hozse, and tenderly embraced him, that the people might vnderstand, he fought with no hatred, but onely for the glozy of victozy: and in the signe of more humanitie, he visited him euery day, while he recovered his health, and then returned into Scotland.

Froissart.

The same season was sent into England from the French King, Valerian Earle of S. Paul with certaine articles concerning the treaty of the peace. The King receiued him topouly, and heard well his message, and said vnto him aparte, Faire brother, as to the treatie of peace betwene me and my



my father of France, I am right well inclined thereunto, my brethren, and two uncles of Lancaster and Poike incline right well thereunto: but mine uncle the Duke of Gloucester, who is a right perillous man, letteth it as much as he can. Sir, quoth the Earle of Saint Paule, it behoueth you to winne him with faire words, and gine him great gifts. In the name of God (saide the king) ye say well, and thus shall I doe. The Earle of Saint Paule saide, the French king with his uncles should come to Saint Omers, and bying with him his daughter, so that the king of England would come to Caleis, and so betwene Saint Omers and Caleis the two kings should méete and speake together, whereby should increase loue and amity: And if they could not conclude on some peace, yet at the least the truce might be prolonged to endure for thirtie or fortie yéeres, betwene the two realmes, and their allies: this deuise seemed good.

And so when euery thing was ready, the king and the Earle of Saint Paul passed ouer. And the king of England with his uncles came to Caleis with many Lords and Ladies: and the Duke of Burgoyne one of the French kings uncles came to Saint Omers, and from thence to Caleis, to the king of England, and there consulted together on certaine articles of the peace, wherunto the K. of England lightly inclined. The Duke of Burgoyne and Earle of Saint Paule returned to Saint Omers, &c. And the king of England with his uncles into Englad, leauing their wiues at Caleis, til their returne.

King Richard  
saide to Caleis

Ann. reg. 20

Courtney  
Archbishop of  
Canterbury  
deceased.

William Courtney Archbishop of Canterbury, deceased on the first of August, after he had late Archbishop of Canterbury sixtē yéeres & moze: this William Courtney vpon the dissolution of the Hospitall, called *Noni operis* at Maidstone, erected there a Colledge secular Priestes, the master to be a Prebend, which Colledge at the general suppression was valued in land by yéere at 139. pounds, seuen shillings five pence: he builded much at Maidstone: hee gaue by testament 1000. markes towards the ameuement of the body of the Church of Christ in Canterbury, where he was buried. Thomas Arundell brother to the Earle of Arundell succeeded him in the Archbishoprike of Canterbury, he had bene first Bishop of Ely, where he had made much faire building in the palace, he gaue to y<sup>e</sup> Church there a table of gold & precious stones valued at 300. markes, he built the great gate-house of his Tonne in Holbozne of London: he was from thence translated to Poike, where besides his great building, & rich ornaments giuen, he gaue to that Church, of plate two great basons of siluer and gilt, two great censers, two other basons of siluer, and two cruces, he gaue to the vse of the Vicars a siluer cup of great weight, and a bolle of siluer of an higher price, for the vse of the Chapter, &c. and was now translated to the see of Canterbury, he forthwith renounced his office of chancellor, wherunto was admitted Edmond Stafford Bishop of Erclesher.

Ye haue heard how the king of England was returned from Caleis into England, & there remained till Michaelmasse, that the Parliament at Westminster should beginne. In the meane season great prouision was made at Caleis, and at Guisnes for the king & his Lords sent from the ports of England on that coast, also great prouision was had of Flaunders, al which came  
by

Parliament at  
Westminster.

by sea to Caleis. And likewise for the French king and his brother the Duke of Orleans, and his uncles and other Prelates and Lords of Fraunce, great provision was made at Saint Omers, at Arras, at Tournay, at Arde, Moutoires, and at all other houses and Abbeyes thereabout, there was nothing spared on either part, especially the Abbey of Saint Bertine was well replenished of all things to receive the kings.

The Parliament beganne at Westminster, at Michaelmasse, and it was ordained to endure eight and forty daies, but it was abridged; for the king would not tarry there more then five daies, wherein he declared the things pertaining to the Realme, especially such matter as touched himselfe, and the cause why he came from Caleis. Which things being dispatched, the king returned againe to Caleis with his Uncles of Lancaster and Gloucester, and other Prelates and Lords of England. The Duke of York carried still in England with the Earle of Darby to gouverne the Realme in the kings absence. As soon as the French king knew that the king of England was returned to Caleis, he sent to him the Earle of Saint Paul to shew him what order was taken in Fraunce concerning his marriage, which the king liked well.

When the Duke of Lancaster and his sonne, the Duke of Gloucester and his sonne, the Earle of Rutland, the Earle marshall, Earle of Huntington, the kings Chamberlaine and many other Lords and knights, Esquires and Ladies, rode with the Earle of S. Paule, to S. Omers, where they were well received of the Duke of Burgoyne, and of the Dutchesse, the Duke of Bypaine and other. All the chere that could be devised was made to the English Lords and Ladies: there was the Dutchesse of Lancaster, her son, and two daughters, there was great gifts given of plate, of golde and silver, nothing was spared, insomuch that the Englishmen had marvaile, especially the Duke of Gloucester, who saide to his counsell, I see well there is great riches in the Realme of France, there was much given to him: he took ever all their gifts, but alwaies the rancor abode in his heart: which the Duke of Burgoyne well perceived. When the Lords and Ladies of England had been royally feasted, then was communication had how the two kings should meete and speake together, and how the Ladie should be delivered, wherupon appointment was made, and leaue taken on all parts. The English part returned to Caleis to the king, and shewed what chere they had, and what presents had been given them, which newes pleased well the king.

Anon after the French king came to Saint Omers, having the Duke of Bypaine in his company, where it was ordained that the Dukes of Berry, Burgoyne and Bourbon, should go to Caleis to speake with the king of England, where they were joyously received, and had as good chere as could be devised. The three Dukes had secret communication with the king & his counsell, from whence they returned to Saint Omers to the French king, and shewed how they had sped. When the French king went to the Basted of Arras, the Duke of Burgoyne to Moutoires, the Duke of Bypaine to the towne of Elgue, and the Duke of Berry to Balingham. In every parte about, there were

were pitcht by tents and pavilions, and all the countrey full of people, what of Fraunce and of England. The king of England came to Guines with the Duke of Lancaster, and the Duke of Gloucester to Hames.

Thus on the Eve of Simon and Jude, about ten of the clocke in the forenoon, the kings departed out of the tents, the which were pitcht not farre asunder, and came a foot the one to the other, and met at a certaine place appointed, on the one side there was aranged 400. knights of Fraunce, armed with their swordes drawn: And on the other part, 400. knights of England in like manner, so the two kings passed thorow them.

The Dukes of Lancaster and of Gloucester ledde the French king, and the Duke of Berrey, and of Burgoyne led the king of England, thus came forth the 800. knights, all which knights, when the two kings came fust together, knéled downe, the two kings met together bare headed, and a little inclined, and toke each other by the hands, then the French king led the king of England into his tent, which was noble and rich, and the four Dukes toke each other by the hands, and followed the two kings, and other knights after, the Frenchmen on the one side, and the Englishmen on the other side: and so they stood regarding each other till all was done. So the two kings hand in hand entred the French kings tent. Then the four Dukes knéled downe befoze the kings, and they raised them vp and so talked together: then the two kings went a little apart, & talked a certaine space. In the meane time wine and spices were brought, the Duke of Berrey serued the French king of spice, & the Duke of Burgoyne of wine: And the Dukes of Lancaster & Gloucester serued the king of England, & other knights & Esquires serued the other Prelates and Lords. This busines done, the two kings toke leaue each of other, & so returned to their tents, & toke their horses and rode, the king of England to Guines, the Dukes of Lancaster, & Gloucester, to Hames, & the other to Calets: the French k. rode to Corbe, & the Duke of Orleans with him, the Duke of Berrey to Doznan, & the Duke of Burgoyne to Mountoire.

Meeting of  
the king of  
England and  
of France.

On Simon & Judes day, about 11. a clocke, the king of England & his Uncles and other Lords came to the French king into his tent, where they were received right honourably. Then tables were set vp, and the two kings sate at one table alone, the French king on the right hand, the Dukes of Berrey, Burgoyne & of Bourbon serued the two kings. This dinner was taken in the French kings tent, & after wine & spices taken, the young Quéene was brought forth accompanied with a great number of Ladies & damosels, & there she was deliuered to the king of England, & every man toke their leaue to depart. The young Quéene was set in a rich litter, and there went no more French Ladies with her but the Lady of Colwy, there were Ladies of England, the Dutchesse of Lancaster, Poerke, Gloucester, the Lady Namure, the Lady Poynings, & many other, who receiued the Quéene with great ioy. Thus the king of England and his young Quéene, with their company rode to Calets the same night. And the French king and his company to Saint Omers.

After the kings returne to Calets, ere Alhallowne day in soleunne wise, hee married the Lady Isabel in the Church of S. Nicholas at Calets, the Archbishop

King Richard  
married Isabel  
the French k.  
daughter.

of

of Canterbury doing the office, at the which time there was a great feast, and great larges.

On the next morrow the Dukes of Orleans and Barbon came to Calais, to see the King & the Quene, and on the next morrow they took their leave, and departed to St. Omers to the French king, and the same day the King and the Quene took their ship, and had faire passage: for within three houres they arrived at Dover, notwithstanding by tempest they lost their tents and household stuffe, from Dover they rode to Rochester, to Dertford, to Eltham, and so to London, whereof the Citizens being warned, made out certaine horsemen well appointed, all in one livery of colour, with devises imbrodered on their sleeves, that every company might be knowne from other, the which with the Mayor and his brethren, clothed in Scarlet, mette the King and Quene on the blacke Heath, and there doing their duties, and attended by on them till they came to Newington, where the king commanded the Mayor with his company to returne, so that he was appointed to lodge that night at Benington.

Quene Isabel crowned.

The 13. of Nouembr, the young Quene was conueyed from Benington, through Southwark, with great pompe into the Tower of London, at which time there went such a multitude of people to see her, that upon London bridge nine persons were crowded to death, of whom the Mayor of Epsom in Essex was one, and a two shipful matrone that dwelt in Cornhill was another. The morrow after she was conueyed to Westminster, and there crowned with all the honour that might be deuised.

Parliament at London.

1397.

The 22. of January a Parliament began at London, in the which the Duke of Lancaster caused to be made legitimate, the issue which he had begotten of Katherine Swinford, before she was his wife. And the same time John sonne to the said Duke of Lancaster and the said Katherine, was created Earle of Somerset, and the Duke gaue him to surname Sir Bello Forto or Bowfort. It was ordained in this Parliament, that Iustices should not haue to sit with them any as assistant: there was a tenth granted by the Cleargy to the king. At this time king Richard contrary to his oath, reuoked Robert Belknap, John Holte, William Brugh knights of the Bath, and Iustices, forth of Ireland.

Ann. reg. 2. 1.

This yere when the realme of England seemed to enjoy the chiefest peace that might be, by reason of the kings marriage, and the great riches that were heaped by together by the same, and by the reason of the truce of 20. yers established, and the presence of so many noble men as the like no foraine realme was able to shew, sodainly al things were troubled & brought into a turmoile whilst the king at Plashy in Essex, upon a sodaine took his vnkle the Duke of Gloucester by force of armes, he suspecting no such thing, & caused him to be conueyed to Calais, there to be kept in prison, & caused the Earle of Warwick to be arrested and imprisoned, the same day that he had bidden him to dinner, notwithstanding that he shewed him very good countenance, & had promised him great friendship: beside that he deceived the Earle of Arundel with fayre words, (who was well able to haue defended himselfe, & to haue deliuered his friends, the Duke of Gloucester & the Earle of Warwick,) and notwithstanding



ding hee yeelbed himselfe quietly, he sent him to the Ile of Wight, there to be imprisoned untill the Parliament. And to the end there should be no commotion among the commons for the imprisoning of the Nobles, he caused to be proclaimed that the apprehensio of them, was not for any old displeasure, but for new transgressions committed against the king, shortly after he caused the said Nobles to be indited at Pottingham, and suborned such as should appeach them in the next Parliament, to wit, Edw. Earle of Rutland, Thomas Mowbrey Earle marshall, Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, John Holland Earle of Huntington, John Bewford Earle of Somerset, John Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, & Tho. Spencer, Wil. Scrope the K. Chamberlaine. And in the meane season the king assembled together to guarde his person, many malefactors of the Countie of Chester which kept watch and ward both day and night about him. When the king caused a great and generall Parliament to be summoned at Westminster, where he caused a great Hall to be builded in the midst of the pallace betwixt the clocke tower, and the doore of the grate Hall: This Parliament beganne about the fiftenth of September, at the beginning whereof Edward Stafford Bishop of Excester Lord Chancelloz, made a proposition or sermon, in the which he affirmed that the power of the king was alone and perfect of it selfe, and those that impeached it were woorthy to suffer paine of the law: to this Parliament all the Nobles came with their retinue in armes, for feare of the king: the pcolocutors were knights, in whom no goodnesse at all could be found, but a naturall couetousnesse, vnSATIABLE ambition, intollerable pride, and hatred of the truth, their names were John Bushy, William Bagot, and Thomas Greene. These required chiefly to haue the Charters of pardons reuoked and disanulled: and Bushy said to the king, because we are charged to say what they be that haue committed any offence against your maiesty, and regal anthozity, we say that Thomas Duke of Gloucester and Richard Earle of Arundel, in the 18. yere of your raigne, haue traitterously compelled you, by meane of the new Archbishop of Canterbury then Chancelloz, to grant to them a commission to gouerne your Realme, and to dispose of the state thereof, to the prejudice of your maiesty and royaltie. The same day was that commission disanulled with all Articles depending thereupon. Also the generall pardon granted after the great Parliament by them procured, and one spectall pardon for the Earle of Arundell were reuoked.

Parliament at  
Westminster.

Tho. Walsing:  
Bushy, Bagot,  
and Greene.

Also there was a petition made by the commons, John Bushy speaking for them, that the generall pardon procured and got forth, the Archbishoppe of Canterbury then Chancelloz procuring it, should be disanulled; and hee to be iudged a traytor for granting to it: whereupon the Archbishop rose and would haue answered, but the king said, to morrow, to morrow; but hee came not into the Parliament house againe: the king said, that he would deliberate of the commons petition.

Also it was established, that any traitor conuicted to stand against the kings regality, should be adiudged woorthy to suffer punishment to be appointed for such offence.

And

Four thousand  
Archers  
compassed the  
Parliament  
house, ready to  
shoote.

And it was enacted, that criminall causes from thenceforth should be determined in euery Parliament, and then licence being had to depart, a great hurre was made as is bled, whereupon the kings Archers, in number foure thousand, compassed the Parliament house, thinking there had bene in the house some byople or fighting, with their bowes bent, their arrowes nocked, and drawing, ready to shoote, to the terror of all that were there, but the king herewith cunning, pacified them. On the next day, the Prelates were informed, upon paine of losing their temporalities, that they should the same day agree upon some procurator, to consent in their names to al things in that Parliament, to be dispatched, & the king had these words: Sir Iohn Bushy, because many desire that I would explaine the fiftie persons exempted in the generall pardon, I will briefly: that what man soeuer desireth this, is worthy of death: first, because he fleeth: secondly, because I haue excepted those that are to be impeached in this Parliament: thirdly, because other of their associates hearing them oppressed, would be afraid where no feare is. On the next day, the Archbishop of Canterbury commeth to the pallace to appeare in the Parliament, but the king commaunded him by the Bishoppe of Carlile that he should returne to his house, and from thenceforth he appeared not. The Prelates made Thomas Percy the kings Steward of household, their procurator, to consent in all things in this Parliament to be done. Also sir Iohn Bushy had these words, our Soueraigne Lord the king, because the second Article in the Parliament is for punishment to be appointed for such as violate the kings royall authoritie, I beseech your grace that you will authorize me by way of appealing, of accusing, or impeaching, with licence to make declaration from one to the rest so often and when to me and my fellowses it may seeme expedient, and it was granted: then Bushy had these words, I accuse Thomas of Arundell, Archbishop of Canterbury, of thersold treason.

First, of the commission in granting the regiment of gouernement of the Realme to Thomas Duke of Gloucester, and to Richard Earle of Arundell at his instance, who rather because he was your Chancellor, should haue refused it.

Secondly, for that vnder pretence of that commission, they traisterously usurping the iurisdiction of your royall authoritie, held a solempne Parliament traisterously in prejudice of your regaltie.

Thirdly, because that by the said usurping, Sir Simon de Burley, and Sir James Barnes Knights, and faithfull Lieges to you, were traisterously murdered, and put to death, of which things, we your Commons demand iudgement, worthy of so high treason, to be terribly pronounced by you, and because the Archbishoppe is a man of great consanguinitie, affinitie, power, and most politike wit, and cruell nature, for the preservation of your estate, and the whole kingdomes, by the petition of this present Parliament, I require that he may be put into safe custody, vntill the finall execution of his iudgement.

The king herunto answered, that for the excellence of his dignity he would take deliberation till the next morrow, and all other that were put into the same

same commission, he pronounced them to be his faithfull liege people, and boide from that treason, and especially Alexander Neuell, late Archbischoppe of Pozke, and then sir Edmond of Langley, Duke of Pozke, Uncle to the king, and sir William Wikeham Bischoppe of Winchester, that were put into the same Commission, with teares fell downe on the ground befoze the king, and gaue him humble thankses for that grace and benefite bestowed on them.

Also on S. Mathewes day, Edward Earle of Rutland, the Carles of Kent, Huntington, Pottingham, Somerset, and Salisbury, with the Lords Spencer and Scrope, in a sute of red golwones of silke garbed, and bordered with white silke, and embzodered with Letters of Golde, proponed the appeale by them to the king at Pottingham, befoze set forth: in the which, they accused Thomas Duke of Gloucester, Richard Earle of Arundell, Thomas Earle of Warwike, and Thomas de Mortimere Knight, of the pzemised treasons, and of an armed insurrection of Haringey Parke, traitterously attempted against the king, and putting in sureties for the prosecuting of their appeale. Richard Earle of Arundell was arraigned in a red Colow, and a Scarlet hood, and forthwith the Duke of Lancaster said to the Lord Neuell, take from him his girdle and hode, and so it was done, and here with the Articles of appeale being to the said Earle declared, with a balliant and a bolde minde, he denied that he was a traytour, and required the benefite of the pardon, protesting that he would not go from the fauour of the king and his grace. The Duke of Lancaster said to him, thou traytour, that pardon is reuoked. The Earle answered, truly thou lyes, I was neuer traitour. Also, the Duke of Lancaster said, why diddest thou purchase thy pardon: the Earle answered, to escape the tongues of mine enemies, of whom thou art one, and verely, as farre forth as toucheth treason, thou hast moze neede of pardon then I. The king said, make answer vnto thine appeale. The Earle answered, I see well that these persons haue accused me of treason, shewing the appealements, but truly they all lye, I was neuer traytour, but I aske alwaies the benefite of my pardon, the which your grace granted to me within these five yeres now last past, being of full age, and of your francke good will and proper motion. Then said the king, I did so grant it that it should not be against me: then saide the Duke of Lancaster, then the graunt anayleth not. The Earle answered, truly of that pardon I knowe lesse then thy selfe, that was then on the further side the Seas. Then said Sir Iohn Bushy, that pardon is reuoked by the King, the Lords, and vs his faithfull people: the Earle answered, where be those faithfull people: I knowe thee well and thy company, how ye are gathered together, not to deale faithfully, for the faithfull people of the Realme are not here, and therefore the people doe lament for me, and well I know that thou hast bene euer false. And then Bushy and his fellows cryed out. Behold soueraigne Lord and King, howe this traytour goeth about to raise sedition betwixt vs, and those people that are at home. The Earle answered, ye lye, I am no traytour. Then rose the Earle of Darby and said, diddest thou not say thus to me at Huntington,

Richard Earle  
of Arundell  
arraigned.

when

where we were first assembled together to rise, that it was the best afoze all things to take the king. The Earle said to the Earle of Darby, thou lyest on thy head, I neuer thought of my Soueraigne Lord the King, but that that was good, and soz his honour. Then said the king, diddest not thou say to me in time of thy Parliament, in the Bathe behind the White Hall, that Sir Simon de Burley was worthe of death for many causes: and I answered, that I knew no cause of death in him, and yet thou and thy fellows diddest trafterously put him to death, and then the Duke of Lancaster pronounced iudgement against him in this manner: Richard, Iohn, Steuard of England, iudge thee to be a Traytour, and I condemne thee to be drawen and hanged, to be beheaded and quartered, and thy landes, taylored and not taylored, from thee and from thine heires of thy body descending, to be confiscate: then the King for reuerence of his blood, commaunded him onely to be beheaded, and then was he ledde to the Tower hill, and there beheaded: the Augustine friers in London toke vp his body and buried it in their Church, on the south side of their Quire, and after on his graue a sumptuous Tombe was set of marble stone. Also the same day, the king appointed the Lord Cobham (accused by the commons) to be arraigned. Also vpon the Saturday, sir Thomas de Mortimer was summoned, vpon paine to be banished as a Traytor, within sixe moneths to come to be tryed in iudgement: and then said the king, peraduenture the Earle of March cannot take him, and therefore I will so long stay for his certificate out of Ireland.

Earle of Arundel beheaded.

Also, a declaration was made, that all benefices or gifts, granted or alienated by those that were already condemned, or after were to be condemned in this Parliament, and other whatsoeuer, granted since the tenth yere of this kings raigne, should be reuoked. Also, on Monday following, the certificate given in of the Earle of Nottingham, then capitaine of Caleis, in whose custody the Duke of Glocester was, that the same Duke might not be brought to be tried in iudgement, because he was dead in his custody at Caleis, at the petition yet of the said appellants, the same sentence was pronounced against him which had bene pronounced earst against the Earle of Arundell.

Duke of Glocester condemned to die after he was dead.

Also the Archbishop of Canterbury, first his tempozalties being confiscated was banished the realme. On the Tuesday, Rikell one of the kings Iustices, borne in Ireland, read certaine confessions drawen in writing vpon the said treasons, affirming that the same were the confessions of the said Duke, by him put forth or discovered, and written with his owne hand.

Archbishop of Canterbury his goods confiscated.

Also, the Earle dome of Chester was aduanced to the honour of a principality, by annexing thereto the lands of the said Earle of Arundell confiscated.

Also, the same day, Iohn Earle of Salisbury made request to haue a *Scire facias* granted to him against the Earle of March, for the Lordship of Denbigh in Wales, and the king answered thereupon that he would take deliberation. Also on the Wednesday, it was ordained, that the lands of the said Earle of Arundell, annexed to the Duchie of Chester, should enjoy the libertties of the same Duchie, excepted that to the Welchmen of those parts, their old lawes and customs should still remaine and be continued.

The



The Castell of Lyons, with the seignioꝝ of Bromfeld, & Pale, to the said Castell belonging. The Castell of Chirke with the seignioꝝ of Chirkland to the said Castell belonging. The Castell of Oswaldes street, with the towne well walled with stone, with the hundred, and the eleuen townes to the said Castell belonging. The Castell of Isabell, with the seignioꝝ to the same belonging to the Castell of Dillilay, with the appurtenance in the Countie of Shrophire, and the reuerſion of the seignioꝝ of Cloue with their appurtenances, which Edward Earle of Rutland then held for terme of his life. All which Townes, Castels, and Seignioꝝ aforesaid were belonging to Richard late Earle of Arundell, and which by force of the iudgement giuen against the said Earle in the said Parliament, forſeit to our Soueraigne Lord the King, and ſhal be from henceforth annexed to the pꝛincipality, oꝝ Dukedome of Chester. Also it was ordained that such as gaue eyther counsell, ayde, oꝝ fauour to the children of them that were condemned, oꝝ that ſhould be condemned in this Parliament, ſhould be punished as traytors.

1397.  
Ireland.

On Friday, the king appointed a pꝛeſcribed day to the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, to wit, the third of the firſt weeke, to depart the Realme.

Archbiſhop of  
Canterbury  
banished the  
Realme.

Also it was ordayned, that all the Lords ſpirituall and tempozall, ſhould ſwear inuolubly to obſerue whatſoener in this Parliament were enacted, and that the cenſures of the Church ſhould be pronounced by the Bꝛelates against all thoſe that ſhould go against the ſame.

Also, the Earle of Marwiſke was arraigned, & his hood being taken off, and the appeale read, as he had been ſome miſerable old woman, coſſeſſed all things conteyned in the appeale, weeping, wailing, and howling, to be done traytꝛously by him, and ſubmitting himſelfe to the kings grace in all things, ſoꝝ rowing that euer he had bene aſſociate vnto the appellants. Then the king demanded of him by whom he was allured to ioyne with them, & he answered, by Thomas Duke of Gloceſter, and the Abbot of S. Albons, and a Monke recluſe in Weſtminſter, and beſought the king of grace & mercy, and the king granted him life to be led in perpetuall pꝛiſon out of the Realme, his goods moneable & vnmoueable to be conſiſcate, as the Earle of Arundels had bene, and the king commaunded that he ſhould be had to the Tower of London, and after, to be coꝛueyed ouer to the caſtel within the Iſle of man, vnder the wardſhip of William Scroope then Lord of the ſaid Iſle, to remaine there in perpetuall pꝛiſon, and on the morrow, the king granted to him and his wife ſixe C. markes yeerely during their liues. Also, the writ of Scire facias was granted to the Earle of Salſbury, against the Earle of March, for the ſaid Lordſhip of Denbigh, ſixtē daies reſpite being giuen to put in an auſwere. Item, it was ordained, that thoſe which ought money to Rochefter bꝛidge, ſhould be put in execution for the payment, to the uſe of the ſame bꝛidge.

Earle of Mar-  
wiſke arraign-  
ed.

Also, Henry Bolenbroke Earle of Darby, ſonne and heire to Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaſter, was created duke of Hereford; Edward Earle of Rutland Conſtable of England, was created Duke of Aumarle; Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, Duke of Surrey; the Earle of Pottingham, Duke of Northfolke. Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington, Duke of Exceſter. Iohn Earle

Dukes crea-  
ted.

**Record Tower.** of Somerset, Constable of Dover Castell and the 5. ports, Marques of Dorset: Thomas Lord Spencer, Earle of Gloucester: The Lord of Westmerland named Dan Raby Neuell Earle of Westmerland: Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, Wil. Scroope: Lord Treasurer, Earle of Wiltshire: Sir Iohn Mountacute, Earle of Salisbury. The king added the armes of king Edward the Confessor to his, & bare them together part purpale, and the Parliament was proroged till the octaves of S. Hillary, then to be holden at Shrewsbury.

**Westminster  
Hall r. payed.**

King Richard caused the great Hall at Westminster to be repaired, both the walles, windows, and rooffe, with a marvellous worke, and great costs, which he lented of Strangers banished out of their countreys, who obtayned licence to remayne in this countrey, by the kings Charter which they had purchased with great summes of money.

**1398.  
Parli-ment at  
Shrewsbury.**

King Richard kept his Christmas at Leichfield, and then toke his journey towards Shrewsbury, where the Parliament lately proroged, began againe, in the which it was ordayned, that all Statutes ordayned at Westminster in the 11. yere of the kings raigne, should be reuoked and disanulled, and all the articles of the same, and the heires of them that were adiudged in the saide Parliament, should be reconciled, and restored to all their lands, inheritances, and possessions: excepted, that they should haue no clayme against the withholders of the profits, and revenues of those lands in the meane time. On the morrow it was ordayned that the heires of them which were iudged and convicted in the foure Articles of high treason, should not enjoy the landes, nor any possessions of their progenitoys, but should be excluded from all and euery action and clayme for ever.

The first Article of high treason was this, if any man, of what condition soeuer he were, did imagine the kings death.

The second Article was, if any man should haue an imagination to depose the king.

The third, if any man did rise armed within the Realme of England in manner of warre against the king.

The fourth was, if any man disclaymed the kings homage.

Also the same day, the Lord Cobham was arraigned, to make answer vnto the two Articles of high treason.

The first was, that the said Lord Cobham was in counsell to make one commission against the state of the king; and likewise, that he vsed the same commission in doing iudgement against the kings will, and to the prejudice of him.

The second, that he sate in iudgement to iudge sir Simon de Burley, and James Barnes Knights of the Kings; in his absence, and against his will: and vpon this, hee was conuict and iudged to perpetuall prison within the Isle of Ierley.

**Henry Duke  
of Hereford  
accused Tho-  
mas Duke of  
Norfolke.**

On the morrow, Henry Duke of Hereford accused Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolk, of certaine words by him spoken, as they rode betwene London and Baynesford, tending to the dishonour of the kings person, which the Duke of Norfolk utterly denied to haue spoken; whereupon a combat was

was granted them by the king to be fought at Couentry, byon the seuenth of September.

A combate granted at Couentry.

A fiftēth and a halfe was granted, and the customes of Woles, fiftie shillings of euery Sacke of euery Englishman bozn, and thre pound of euery stranger.

This Parliament ended, the king visited many places in the West part of England, as Worcester, Hereford, Bristow, Glassebury and Bath.

After this also, the king caused a Theatre to be made at Bristow, for a combate to be fought betwene two Scots, to wit, the one being an Esquire appellant, & the other a knight defendant, and the appellant was ouercome and hanged: but after this time, he made a great & marvellous strong Theatre at Couentry for the combate betwixt the Duke of Hereford, and the Duke of Norfolk, and gaue them day for the fight, the 16. of September, to wit, the feast day of S. Edich, at which day and place, a great concourse and assembly of people was there gathered out of all parts of England. When the saide Champions appeared in the Listes, ready to fight, the king commanded them to be quiet and not to fight, & then the k. sitting in his royall apparrel within his tent girt with his sword, he commanded his decree to be proclaimed, & this was the kings decree, that Henry Duke of Hereford, for his disobedience towards the king should be banished for tenne yeres, and likewise the Duke of Norfolk to be banished for euer out of England, taking of his reuenues a thousand markes by yere, till the towne of Caleis were repaired.

Dukes banished.

At the feast of S. Michael, the king caused seuentēne Counties in East England to be indited, and laid to their charges, that they had bene against him, with the Duke of Gloucester, the Earles of Arundell & Warwike, wherefoze he sent honourable men to induce the Loyds both spiritual and temporal, to make a submission by writing, sealed with their owne hands, acknowledging themselves to be traytors to the king, though they neuer offended him in word or deed. Whereon, he compelled all the religious gentlemen and commons, to set their seales to blankes, to the end he might as it pleased him oppress them severally, or all at once: some of the commons paid 1000. markes, some 1000. pounds, &c.

Blank Charter.

Also, he ordained throught euery prouince in England, that all gentlemen, and men of substance, should be sworn firmly to maintaine according vnto their possible power, all the statutes, Articles and constitutions ordained in the last Parliament.

Anacustomes othes.

This yere the king kept a most royal Christmas, with euery day iustings and running at the tilt, wherunto resorted such a number of people, that there was euery day spent xxviij. or xxvi. oren, & thre hundred sherp, besides fowle without number. Also the king caused a garment for himselfe to be made of gold, siluer, and precious stones, to the value of 3000. markes.

1399.  
Great iustings and feasting.

On Newyeres day, nere vnto Bedford, a very deepe water which ranne betwixt the towne of Swellstone and Harlewood, fode sodainly still and diuided it selfe, so that by the space of thre miles, the bottom remained drye, which wonder, many a one thought, did signifie the diuision of the

people

people, and falling away from the king, which happened shortly after.

Earle of  
March slain  
in Ireland.  
Cr. Pet. college  
Wil. Wiliam.

Roger Mortimer Earle of March, and of Visser in Ireland, lying there in a Castell of his, there came on him a great multitude of wild Irishmen to assault him, and he issuing out, fought manfully, til he was by them hewen to peeces, whose death the king determined to reuenge.

Duke of Lan-  
caster deceased.

The third of February died Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, at the Bishop of Elyes Inne, in Holborne by London, and was honourably buried in Saint Pauls Church at London, by Blanch his first wife, his sonne Henry Duke of Hereford being then beyond the seas.

King Richard  
sailed into  
Ireland.

About Whitson tide, king Richard with a flauite of 200. ships, sailed from Milford haue, towards Ireland, and arriued at Waterford on the last day of may, from whence, he marched with an army of 30000. to Kilkenny, foure score miles within the countrey, and there remained 14. daies, tarrying for Edward Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle, that kept not the right course.

Ann. reg. 23.

On Midsummer euen he went from thence towards the countrey of Mackmur, who remayned amongst the woods with 3000. men, right hardy, and such as seemed but little to feare the Englishmen. At the entring of the woods, the king commaunded fires to be fled, so that many a house, and many a village was bzent, & there the king made Henry the Duke of Hereford his sonne knight, who was afterward king Henry the fifth, with tenne other. 2500. pioners were appointed to fell the woods, and make waies for the Englishmen. The Irishmen feared greatly the shot of the Englishmen, but yet with their darts they assailed, and slew diuers as they caught them at advantage. The vncle of Mackmur came in and yielded himselfe to the king, with a wythe about his necke, and many other naked and bare-legged, did the like, all which, the king pardoned. After this, the king sent to Mackmur, promising him, that if he would come in as his vncle had done, with the wythe about his necke, he should be pardoned: but he vtterly refusing, said, he would fight to death in defending his right, for he knew the Englishmen wanted victuals, and more then they had brought with them could not be bought for siluer or gold. There was already such scarcity, that there were some foure, some fire, that had but a small loafe of bread to liue by the day, and some that eate not a graine in fve daies together. In this estate they remayned eleuen daies, many of their horses were lost for lacke of meate. In the meane season yet came thre shippes from Dublin fraught with victuals, for the which was great strife and pzease especially for the wine of Olsey and Spayne. The morow after the 13. departed from thence, keeping the hye way toward Dublin, maugre all the noise of the enemies: at what time Mackmur sent a messenger with notice to the king that he would be his friend, & aske him mercy, or els, if it pleased him to treat of peace, to send some noble men to him: whereupon the Earle of Gloucester was sent, who led with him the reuerward whereof he was Captaine, being two hundred launces, and a thousand archers, betwixt two woods farre from the sea in the declining of an hil they met with the Irish, Mackmur himselfe rode on a white horse without saddle or other furniture, that cost him (as was said) foure hundred kine, which horse he ran down the hil, that beholders reported they

The vncle of  
Mackmur  
submitted to  
Richard.



they neuer had sene Hare nor Doere to haue runne so swiftly. In his right hand he bare a Dart great and long, which he threwe exceeding well. He was a mightie strong man of personage. There the Earle and he talked a good while, about the murdering of the Earle of March, and after of other things, but agree they could not, and so departed.

The Earle aduertised the king what he had found, which was nothing, but that the enemy would cry mercy, so as he might be sure to haue peace without other grieve, other wise, he would (so long as he liued) defend himselfe: wherefore, the king (in his wrath) not knowing what let might happen, sware, that he would neuer depart Ireland, till he had him eyther alieue or dead. The hoste dislodged for lacke of victuals, they were a thirtie thousand at their coming ouer, that lay then at Dubline fiftene daies, the king forthwith discharging his army into thre parts, sent them out to seeke Mackmur, promising an hundred markes to him that could bring him in, which offer was well hearkened vnto, for it sounded well, but he could not be caught: and the same day Edward Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle Constable of England, arrived with an hundred sail, of whose coming, the king was very glad, though he indeed had tarried long, and might haue come much sooner.

They remayned fife weekes at Dubline, and heard no newes out of England, the passage was so dangerous, the wind being contrary, and tempests so great, at the length came a ship with heauie newes, how the Duke of Hereford, and now by the decease of his father Duke of Lancaster, was arrived in England at Ravenspoye fast by Birdlington besides Wadlington in Dorke shire, and had beheaded William Scroope Earle of Wiltshire, Treasurer of England, John Bushy, Henry Greene, and other, and had caused Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Canterbury to preach against King Richard, who also shewed a Bull procured from Rome, promising remission of sinnes to all those which should aide the said Henry, in conquering of his enemies, and after their death to be placed in paradise, which preaching moued many to cleaue to the Duke.

The Duke of  
Hereford re-  
turned into  
England.

Upon this newes the king being perswaded to make haste ouer, the Duke of Aumarle said, it was better to stay till his ships might be brought together, for there were but an hundred ready to make saile, whereupon John Mounacute Earle of Salisbury was sent with a power, whilst the king going to Waterford might gather his fleet, who promised within fife daies to haue followed him. The Earle of Salisbury landed at Conwey, where he was some aduertised, how the Duke had taken the moze part of England, and that all the Lords were got to him, with moze then threescore thousand men. The Earle of Salisbury caused to summon the Welchmen and them of Cheshire, to come to him, so that (wening the king had been arrived at Conwey) within foure daies there were come together soztie thousand men, ready to go against the Duke of Hereford, where they stayed fourteen daies, but when they saw the king came not, they stealed away, & left the Earle of Salisbury in maner alone, so that vnnearth he had an hundred men with him. The Duke of Hereford aduanced to wards the Earle of Salisbury, who withdrew him

King Richard  
returned out  
of Ireland,  
and landed at  
Milford ha-  
men.

into Conwey. The king thzough enill counsell estate after the Carles departure 18 daies, and then arrived at Milford haven, with the Dukes of Aumarle, Erceffer, and Surrey, and diuers other of the Nobility, with the Bishops of London, Lincolne, and Carlile, & many other, that he might with an army meete the Duke befoze he had gotten his assitters together, but after his coming into England, and vnderstanding the Dukes preparation, he let fall his courage to giue battell, knowing soz certain that the people assembled against him, would rather die then giue place, as well soz the hatred as feare, which they had conceiued of him: wherfoze leauing his army with the Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle, Constable and chiefe gouernour of his army at Milford, went from thence priuily about midnight following, disguised like a Priest, soz feare to be knowen, with 14. persons only, who went to Conwey, thinking the Earle of Salisbury had there held the field. There were with him the Dukes of Erceffer and Surrey, and the Earle of Gloucester, that continued faithfull vnto the last houre.

There were three Bishops also, of which, two did not like god men, the Bishop of Lincolne, and Saint Dauids, but the third continued faithfull, that was the Bishop of Carlile.

He had also two knights, Stephen Scroope, and William Fireby, and Ianico a Gascoigne. The king rode so warily by nights, that he came to Conwey at the bzeake of a day. Great sozrow and lamentation was made by the king and the Earle at their meeting, soz that the Carles hoste was dispersed and gone, some to the Duke, and some other waies.

The Duke of Aumarle, Constable and chiefe gouernour of the kings army at Milford, immediately when the kings departure was knowne, said vnto the souldiers, let vs shift for our selues masters, soz the king is fledde, where vpon euery man trusted and away. Sir Thomas Percy steward of the household, talking with the Constable also departed, and toke their way thzough Wales.

The Welchmen seeing such disorder, assembled them together, and spoiled the Englishmen of all their goods, & sent them packing in their dublets, with white stauces in their hands, soz there rode, here tenne, here twenty, here fifty, here an hundred, and so the Welchmen comming down the Mountaines, the English lost that they had. The king had many horses of the beyond Sea bzoode, and great riches in apparell and iewels, which was in the keeping of sir Thomas Percy, who with the Constable came to Duke Henry of Hereford, and moze then five hundred of their company, ail naked, whom the Welchmen had dispoiled, and beaten well.

The king being at Conwey in great discomfozt, sent the Dukes of Erceffer and Surrey, to Henry Duke of Hereford and Lancaster, to knowe what his meaning was, himsele remayning still at Conwey in great perplexity, and with him the Earle of Salisbury, the Bishoppe of Carlile, sir William Ferebe knight, sir Stephen Scroope mine authoz, and another Frenchman, in all but sixtene persons, then was newes bzought to the king how his Constable had demeaned him, and likewise his Steward, that had cau-

sed his riches to be brought a land, and going throught Wales with it, the Welchmen had taken it.

The king then by the aduise of the Earle of Salisburie departed from Conwey vnto Beawmareis, a ten miles off, and from thence, he went to Carnaruan. Beawmareis was a strong Fortresse if it had bēn manned & victualled. Carnaruan is a fayre towne, and a strong Castell, but these were vnproouided of al things, so that for five or sixe nights he lay very hard and bafe, and for victuals there was none; wherefoze he returned againe to Conwey, where hee soze lamented his estate. The Dukes of Excester & Surrey entring the City of Chester, which Duke Henry had taken, were brought straight to the Castell to the Duke, who was glad to see them, as he professed, & forthwith asked the Duke of Excester what newes, who told him from point to point, what shame and dishonoz it would be to him, if he dealt so vniustly toward his Prince, and that throught him he were deposed: he therfoze demanded answer with speed: but the Duke of Lancaster was as slowe to dispatch him, and told him hee should not go for one weeke from him, and that the king was not wel aduised to send him and his fellow, being men of such calling, sith he had other inough of meaner estate to do the message: so they remayned to their great discomfort. The Duke of Excester, Duke Henry still kept in his company; but the Duke of Surrey was committed to safe keeping within the Castell of Chester.

There is a Castell sixe miles from Chester, called Belfon Castell, builded on a rocke, very strong by situation, therein were an hundred men of armes chosen and able men, but not valiant, or faithfull to king Richard, for they deliuered it to the Duke, where they might well inough haue kept it, the ascending is so steepe: it was victualled for sixe yeres. There was found within it coyne better worth then an hundred thousand markes, beside other iewels, which king Richard caused to be kept, to the value of two hundred thousand markes, all which Duke Henry toke with him, and returned to Chester, and there taking counsell of his friends what was best to be done, the Archbishop of Canterbury toke vpon him to speake, and said: that sith the king was in Wales, which was a countrey strong by reason of the Mountaines, so that it was impossible for an army to passe with bagge and baggage, he thought it best to send vnto king Richard, & to make him beleue that he sought nothing but peace and a Parliament to be made, wherein, those that had offended in putting to death his uncle the Duke of Glocester, should be punished, and so from thenceforth the king and the Duke to be good friends, and that it should be at the kings pleasure to appoint the day and place for this Parliament; for without this shift, it should be impossible for the Duke to get him into his hands, for he might depart to sea whē he would, hauing retained at Conwey ships for that purpose.

All the other Lords assenting to this counsel, the Duke appointed the Earle of Northumberland to go to the king with foure hundred launces, and a thousand archers, which Earle, when he came to Flint castell, had it deliuered to his hands: from thence he hasted to Rudland, which was also giuen ouer to him: this Rudland is but tenne miles from Conwey, where the king was, greatly

maruailing, that hee heard nothing of his brother the Duke of Excester, being now eight daies since he was sent to the Duke of Hereford. The Earle of Northumberland laid vnder a rocke, nere to the Castell of Rutland two great ambushments of his people, with commandement to keepe that passage. Then he went with five other in his company and went by the sea coast, till he came befoze the towne of Conwey, and then he sent an Herault to the king for a safe conduct, to come to his presence, to declare his message from the D. about an agrement, which safe conduct being granted, he passed the water, and entred the Castell of Conwey, where he found the K. and the Earle of Salisbury, he declared to them that peace would be made if he would be a good Judge & a true, and cause those that should be named, to be tried by Iustice at a certaine day of Parliament at Westminster, which he and the Duke should hold together, and that the Duke might keepe his place of high Judge as his father and other ancestors befoze him had done, for the space of one hundred yeres. Those that he would haue to be tried by the law, were the Duke of Excester, the Duke of Surrey, the Earle of Salisbury, the bishop of Carlelle and Tho. Marke, which five, had giuen the K. counsel to put his vnkle the Duke of Gloucester to death, and then if it should please him to pardon the Duke his wrath, he would be ready to come to him on his knees to aske him mercy, and so they might go to London together, or the one one way, and the other another. The Earle offered to sweare that all this should be perfozmed, and that the Duke had assured him by oth to stand to it. The King liking well that it should be at his liberty to go, eyther in company with the Duke, or alone vnto London, purposed to take the offer, and so to pretend some excuse for his going alone, after hee should meet with the Duke: as lacke of victuals or such like, and so to take a by-way thozow Wales, and there to raise a power, for hee promised the Lords neuer to suffer them to come to iudgement, discoursing with them, how hee would auoid all the daunger, and surely hee reuenged vpon his enemies, namely on Duke Henry of Lancaster, who with the rest should die for it, hee accorded to go to the Duke, and then (Walfe being celebrated) the Earle of Northumberland sware vpon the hoast, that the Duke should hold all that hee had told the King. The Earle basted the King for ward to horsebacke, but the King prayed the Earle to go befoze vnto Rutland, there to prepare dinner. The Earle rode a pace vntill hee came where hee might see his people vnder the mountaine, whom hee much commended for obseruing his commaundement.

King Richard  
betrayed.

The King passing the water rode a foure miles befoze hee came to the rocke where when he saw the ambushes he was fore abashed, knowing wel hee was betrayed by the Earle, for he was in such a place as he could not escape. The sea beating on the one side, and the rocke keeping him in on the other, and if hee should haue fled backe, they would haue caught him, ere hee could haue come to Conwey, for hee had not past thre and twenty in all of his company. The King descending the rocke, the Earle came, and kneeling down, excused the matter, saying, he had caused those people to come to guard his person, but the King told him, few would haue serued, and that it was contrary to his oth,  
for



so; he had promised to haue but fire in his company, and said therefore that he would goe backe to Conwey, but the Earle answered, that now he sith he had him, he would leade him to the Duke as he had promised tenne dayes since, and so he caused bread and wine to be brought and offered the King, who durst not refuse it, and after leaping on horsebacke againe they rode to Rutland to dinner, and after to Flint, where they lay that night.

Rutland.  
Flint.

The morrowe being the two and twentieth day of August, the King got him to the Castle walles, where he behelde the Duke with all his hoste of an hundred thousand men comming by the sands: there came before that were departed from the army, the Archbishop of Canterbury, Sir Thomas Percy, and the Earle of Rutland from whom the duke had taken the office of Constable, moze for a colour, then for displeasure, so; they bare the Dukes order, and not the hart, which was the Kings, the Archbishop entred first, and after the other with a great traine, they went vnto the dungeon, and then the King came downe from the walles, vnto whom they did reuerence lowly on their knées, the King toke them vp, and dreyw the Archbishop apart, and they two talked long together, but the Earle of Rutland kepte him aloofe. They toke horse againe, and rode towards the Duke that now was approaching nere.

• The King went vp againe to the walles, lamenting so; when he saw the Dukes hoste within two howe shotes of the Castle, who compassed it round about downe to the sea. The Earle of Northumberland went forth to the Duke, who after long talke, concluded, that the Duke should not enter the Castle before the King had dined, so; he was salving: so the Earle returned, and the King was set to dinner, with whom sate his assured friends the Earle of Salisbury, and the Bishop of Carlelle, Sir Stephen Scrope, and Feribe, they sate long and eate little, so; they had no haste to rise.

After dinner the Duke entred the Castle all armed, his basenet excepted. King Richard came downe to meete the Duke, who as soone as he sawe the King, fell downe on his knées, and crawing nere vnto him, he knèled the second time with his hat in his hand, and the King then put off his hode, and spake first, faire cousin of Lancaster ye are right welcome. The Duke bowing lowe to the ground answered, my Lord, I am come before you sent for me, the reason why I will shewe you. The common fame among your people is such, that ye haue for the space of twentie or xxiij. yeres, ruled them very rigorously, but if it please our Lord I will helpe you to gouerne better. The King answered, faire Cousin of Lancaster, sith it pleaseth you, it pleaseth me well.

The Duke spake as ye haue heard to the King, he spake also to the Bishop of Carlelle, to Sir Steuen Scrope, and to Feribe, but to the Earle of Salisbury he spake not, whereby the Earle perceiued that the Duke hated him deadly.

The Duke with a high sharpe voyce, had bring forth the Kings horses, and then two little nagges not worth fourtie franks, were brought forth, the King was set on the one, and the Earle of Salisburie on the other: and thus the Duke brought the King from Flint to Chester, where he was deliuered to the Duke

Chester.

Duke of Glocesters some, and to the Earle of Arundels sonne that loued him but a little, for he had put their fathers to death, who ledde him straight to the Castle.

The third day they went from Chester to Pantwich, and the next day to Newcastle, and there the Earle of Warwicks son met them, and so journeying forth, the next day they came to Staffoꝝ, and after they departed to Lichfield, where the King thought to haue escaped, slipping downe into a Garden out of a Window of a great Towꝛe, but he was espyed and thrust into the Tower againe: from Lichfield the Duke went to Couentre, but befoze they could come thither, the Welchmen did them much harme and slewe many of them, and the Englishmen, when they by great chaunce could take any of the Welchmen, they tied them to their horse tayles, and dꝛewe them after them, through wayes full of stones, and caused them to dye miserably.

The Duke passed from Couentre to Deintrie, the next day to Poꝛthampton, from thence to Dunstable, and then to Saint Albons, and a fine oꝛ fire miles befoze his comming to London, the Paioꝛ and the Companies in their liueries, with great noyle of Trumpets met the Duke, doing moze reuerence to him then to the King, reioycing that God had sent them such a Prince, that had conquered the Realme within one moneths space.

When the Duke came within two miles of the Citie, the Duke caused the host to stay, and then said to the commons of the Citie: My Masters, beholde here your King, consider what ye will doe with him. They answered, they would he should be led to Westminster, whereupon he was deliuered vnto them, and they led him to Westminster, and from thence by water to the Tower of London.

The Duke entred into London by the chiefe gate, and rode through Cheap to Saint Pauls, where he was after lodged in the Bishops pallace fine oꝛ fire dayes, and after at Saint Johns without Smithfield, where he remayned fiftene dayes, from thence he remoued to Hertford, where he abode thꝛe weeks, and then came backe to London, to holde the Parliament that began the first Wednesday of October in Westminster hall, which they had hung and trimmed sumptuously, and had caused to be set by a royall chaire, in purpose to chouse a newe King, where to the which the Prelates were set, and on the other side sate the Lords, and after the commons in order, first sate the Duke of Lancaster, then Edmond of Langley the Duke of Yorke, the Duke of Armarle, the Duke of Surrey, the Duke of Gloucester, and the Marques Dorset, then in order the Carles of Arundale, Poꝛffolke, March, Staffoꝝ, Penbꝛoke, Salisburie and Deuonshire, the Carles of Northumberland and Westmerland sate not, but went by and downe, and oftentimes kneeled as it fell in doing their offices.

The Archbishop of Canterbury made a Sermon and toke for his Theame, *Habuit Iacob benedictionem à patre suo*, which Sermon being ended in Latin, a Doctour of the Law, stode vp and read an instrument, in the which was contained, that King Richard had by his owne confession disabled himselfe to be woꝛthy to raigne, and that he would resigne the crowne to such a one as was sufficient

Parliament in  
Westminster  
Hall.

sufficient to rule. This instrument being read, the Archbishop perswaded them to proceede to the election of a new King, and perceiuing they were all contented, for there were not past foure persons that were of King Richards part (and they durst say nothing) he asked each of them whom they would haue to their King, whether the Duke of Yorke or not? and they answered no: he asked if they would haue his eldest sonne the Duke of Aumarle: and they said no: he asked if they would haue his yongest sonne, and they said no: and so of diuers other: then staying a while, he asked if they would haue the Duke of Lancaster, and then they answered they would none other. This demaund being made thrice, they drew certaine instruments and charters, and read them in presence of all that were there. Then the Archbishops comming to the Duke, fell on their knees declaring to him how he was chosen King, and willed him to take regard if he would consent thereto. Then the Duke being on his knees rose and declared that he accepted the realme, sith it was ordained by God. Then the Archbishop read what the new King was bound vnto, and with certaine ceremonies signed him with the crosse, then he kissed the Archbishop, and they took the ring, with which the Kings be wedded to the Realme, and bare it to the Lord Percy, that was Constable, who receiuing it, shewed it to all the assembly, and then put it on the Kings finger, the King then kissed the Constable, and then the Archbishops led him to the siege Royall, and the King made his prayers on his knees before it, and after spake vnto them all, first to the Prelats, and then to the Lords and all other, and so set him downe in the seate: and thus he was inuested, and King Richard put downe, he sate a good while and kept silence, and so did al the rest: for they were in prayer for his prosperitie in his gouernment, and when they had ended, where the offices were boide, the King created the Lord Percy Constable, and took him the staffe: Then was chosen Ralph Earle of Westmerland Marshall, John Scirle, or Serle Chancellor, Sir Richard Clifford keeper of the priuie Seale, and many other officers were newly confirmed. After this the Archbishop spake certaine things in latine, praying for the Kings prosperitie, and the Realmes, and after spake in English bypon this following: *Vir dominabitur in populo, reg. 9. &c.* And then exhorting all there present to pray the like, every man sate downe. Then the King rose and made his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, then the Lords were sworn to be true to the Prince as befoze they had done to his father: his second sonne was there made Duke of Lancaster. Thus was king Richard deposed when he had reigned 22. yeres, 3. moneths, and odde dayes, in such sort as ye haue heard, whose royaltie had bin such, that wheresoeuer he lay, his person was guarded by 200. Cheshire men, he had about him 13. Bishops, besides Barons, Knights, Esquiers, and other moe then needed, insomuch that to the household came every day to meate 10000. people, as appeared by the messes told out of the kitching to 300. seruiters, &c. He was murdered on the 14. of February next following, as shall be shewed in place conuenient, and was buried first in the Church of the friers preachers at Langley besides Saint Albanes. And after by commaundement of King Henry the sixt, remoued to Westminster.

Robert Fues-  
leafe.

Henry

## Henry the fourth.

Ann. reg. 1.



Record Tower.

Enry Plantagenet bozne at Bolingbroke, in Lincolnshire, sonne to Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, was ordeyned King of England, moze by force then by lawfull succession or election: he began his raigne the 29. of September, in the yere of our Lord God 1399. He forthwith made new officers, to wit Thomas his second sonne Steward of England: Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Constable of England: Ralph Neuill Earle of Westmerland, Mar-

shall of England: Sir Iohn Scerle Chancellor of England, Sir Richard Clifford keeper of his priuie scale: Iohn Norbury Esquire Treasurour, Thomas Chaucer Constable of Wallingford Castle, & other officers, and then was crowned at Westminster the 13. of October, by Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Canterbury: The Dukes of York, Surrey, Aumarle, and the Earle of Gloucester bare a Canopie ouer him. Sir Thomas Dimmocke was champion, and rode thre times about the hall. This was a noble and valiant Prince, and after the ciuill warres were appeased, shewed himselfe louing to his subjects. He made Henry his sonne Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, Earle of Chester, and heire apparant to the crowne of England.

After the solemnitie of the coronation, the Lords and commons straight proceeded to the Parliament. In which it was inquired out of the death of the Duke of Gloucester, and howe he had been murdered at Caleis by the Duke of York, folke, vpon the Kings commandement. King Henry created his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, Earle of Chester, and Duke of Aquitaine. In this Parliament it was ordeined that the statutes made in the Parliament holden in the 21. yere of King Richard at Westminster, and after proceeded vnto Shrewsbury, with all the circumstances to be disanulled, reuoked, made voyde, & utterly blotted out. Also that the Parliament holden at Westminster, in the 11. yere of King Richard, be holden firme and stable. Also that the Lords and other persons which were iudged forth in the Parliament holden the 21. yere of King Richard, and their heires that be dead, should be wholly restored to their possessions without any suing liuerie thereof to be made, excepted that the Lords and other shall haue nothing of the issues receiued in the meane time. The King gaue to the Earle of Northumberland the Ile of Man, to be holde of the king by seruaice, to beare the sword with which he entred into England. And to the Earle of Westmerland he gaue the Countie of Richmond. Also iudgement was giuen against the Appellants of the Duke of Gloucester in this manner: the Lords in this present Parliament by the Kings assent, iudge that the Dukes, of Aumarle, Surrey, and Grester now present and were appellants, shal lose their names of Dukes and honours from hence forth, together with the dignities, of Dukes, and that the Marques Dorset that is present, lose his name of Marques, and the Earle of Gloucester, which

Ile of Man  
giuen to the  
Earle of North-  
umberland.

Dukes lose  
their names  
and honours.



lose his name for him and his heires, as the aboue named persons doe theirs, and that al the Castles, possessions or manors which they had of them that belonged to those whom they appealed from the day of the arrest of the Duke of Gloucester, and the other Lords, or after at any time, simply and without fauour or mercy, they shall lose them: and that all other Castles, possessions, manors, Lordships, dominions and liberties, which they held of the Kings gift, that day or after should rest in the Kings grace from that heure, and that all letters patents and charters, which they or any of them had of the said names, Castles, Dominions, possessions, and liberties should be surrendred vp into the Chancery, there to be cancelled, and that they stand in state which they had in name and possession befoze the said day of the said arrest.

The King to shew to all men in all Countries about by what right and title he had taken vpon him the crowne and realme, sent Embassadors to Rome, Iohn Treneuant Bishop of Hereford, Iohn Cheyne Knights, & Iohn Cheyne Esquire. Into France he sent Walter Tricklew Bishop of Durham, Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, and William Heron. Into Spaine Iohn Trenor Bishop of S. Davids, and Sir William Par Knight: Into Almanne the Bishop of Bangor with other.

Messengers sent into diuers countries, to declare the cause of deposing of King Richard.

The Scottes in time of the Parliament taking occasion by the absence of the Northen Lords, and because the same time the North parts were soze oppressed by a great Pestilence entred as enemies, and toke the Castle of Marke, and kept the same a certaine time, but at length spoiled and utterly ruinated it, and many other mischiefes they did in the Countrey. Thomas Moubrey Duke of Norfolk, which was exiled, dyed at Venice, in his returne from Ierusalem. Also the Duchesse of Gloucester dyed, and her sonne and heire Humfrey dyed of the Pestilence when he was sent for, forth of Ireland.

Castell of Marke taken by the Scots, D. of Norfolk deceased.

The King held his feast of Christmasse in his Castle of Windsor, where Iohn Holland late Duke of Excester and Earle of Huntingdon, Thomas Holland late Duke of Surrey & Earle of Kent, Edmond late Duke of Aumarle, and Earle of Rutland, son to the Duke of Yorke, Iohn Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, Thomas Spencer, Sir Ralph Lumly, Sir Thomas Blunt, Sir Benedict Cely Knights, with others that fauoured King Richard conspired against King Henry, and appoynted priuily to murder him, vnder the colour of Iustice and other pastimes pretended. And the time approaching of their purpose, they sent messengers to London with letters to the Duke of Aumarle, that he should not fayle to come at that day appoynted with his company, to helpe to doe the feate whereunto he was swozne: but his minde being altered, he bare the letters straight to his father the Duke of Yorke, who caused a number of his men forthwith to carry his son to the King, where he shewing his letters, the King would not beleue them: but the same morning came the Mayor of London to the Court, and informed him of the matter, whereupon the King made no tarrance, but got him forth toward London, in company of the Mayor and other. But befoze the King could gette London on his backe, his enemies came to Windsor, and there entred the Castle with an armed

1400.  
Conspiracy against King Henry.

band

band of 400. men on the fourth of January at night, where understanding that the king was escaped their handes, being sore amazed, they withdrew from Windsor, unto Sunning, a certayne Mannour neare to Reading, where the Quene wife to king Richard then lay, where they perswaded her household, that king Richard was escaped out of Pomfret Castell, and they would go to him: from thence they went to Wallingford, and after to Abingdon, moving the people to take armes upon them, and to go meet their king Richard. After this they came to Faringdon, in the Vale of White Horse in Berkeleshire, and the same day to Cirester, on the xiiij. day late in the evening, and there harbozed, with a great number of men of armes and many archers: there they byted that k. Richard was escaped forth of prison, and that he was there with them, & to make their wordes to haue the more credite, they had got a Chaplein of k. Richards called Maudelen, so like to him in all proportion and fauour, that one could bnneth be discerned from the other: many times (saith mine author) I haue scene him in Ireland rise with the king his master: so faire a Priest and goodly a person, I had not lightly scene. They put him in armour with a crowne on his Helmet, so as all men might take him for king Richard. On the morrow being Wednesday, the people of that town mistaking of their proceedings, fought against them, and at length tooke the chiefeest of them, and ledde them to the Abbey there, and put them in a faire chamber, vnder safe custody. And on the Thursday the sayd Lordes, fearing the people, imagined how to escape out of their handes, and caused some of their seruantes to sette fire on certaine houses in the Towne, thinking that thereupon the people would depart from them, and seeke to stanch the fire: but it chaunced contrary, for the people turned into marneplous rage against them, ranne vpon them with great violence, and drew them into the market place, and there they beheaded Iohn Holland the Duke of Excester, Thomas Holland the Duke of Surrey, and the Earle of Salisburie, the third day after the Epiphanie: their seruants that were with them, were by and by taken and as prisoners bound and brought to Orford, and on Monday following were beheaded in the Castell there, to the number of fire and twentie persons. Also Sir Thomas Blunt Knight was beheaded with them. The week next following, was beheaded Tho Spencer Earle of Gloucester at Bristow: not long after was Sir Barnard Brocas beheaded at London, and a Priest named Iohn Maudelen, that was like king Richard, and another Priest called William Feribe. The Bishop of Carlile was impeached and condemned of conspiracie, but was pardoned.

Maudelen a  
Priest coun-  
ferretted King  
Richard.

Dukes of  
Surrey and of  
Excester exe-  
cuted.

Maudelen the  
Priest and o-  
ther executed.

Blanke Char-  
ters burnt.

The sixth day of Februarie King Henry caused the blanke Charters, made to king Richard, to be burnt, at the standart in Cheape of London.

King Richard was imprisoned in Pomfrait Castle, where xv. dayes and nights they bered him with continuall hunger, thirst and cold, and finally bereft him of his life, with such a kinde of death as neuer before that time was knownen in England (saith Sir Iohn Fortiscute.) He died the xliij. day of Februarie, whose body was brought to y<sup>e</sup> Towre of London, and so throught the City to Pauls Church bare faced, where he stood thre dayes for all beholders  
and

and had seruite, where King Henry was present. From thence he was caried to Langley, and there buried in the Church of the Friers Preachers. Upon his death the famous and excellent Poet Iohn Gower, wrote certaine verses, which may be englished thus.

O Mirrour for the world meete,  
which shouldst in Golde be sette,  
By which all wise men, by foresight,  
their prudent wittes may whette.  
Lo, God doth hate such rulers, as  
here viciously doe liue:  
And none ought rule, that by their life,  
doe ill example giue.  
And this King *Richard* witnesseth well,  
his end this plaine doth shewe:  
For God allotted him such ende,  
and sent him so greate woe,  
As such a life deserude: as by  
the Chronicles thou mayst knowe.

The king with a great army went into Scotland, spoiled the countrey and returned to York, where two knights, the one a frenchman, the other an Italian challenged to fight within lists against Sir Iohn Cornwall, and Iames of Artois, which two strangers were overcome in battaile, and Sir Iohn Cornwall obtrayning the kings fauour, married the kings sister, that had been wife to Sir Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington.

R. Henry invaded Scotland.

1400.

Challenge of combat at York.

The Welchmen taking occasion by the kings absence when he was in Scotland, began to rebel, by the setting on of Owen Glendouerdew sonne to Griffith Vicham an Esquire of Wales, and so called Glendour, because his dwelling was in a place called Glendowry, for Glyn in Welch is a vale, and Dor is water, because the place was in a dale, at the side of the water or riuer of Dew in þ parish of Co:wen, in the countie of Merioneth in North Wales. He serued King Richard, at the time of his oppression by Henry Duke of Lancaster at Flint Castle.

The Welchmen rebell. Owen Glendouerdew.

The first cause of this strre was about a piece of land in controuersie betwixt him and the Lord Reignold Gray of Rushine, for when he saw his cause not fauoured, first he began to spole the lands of the said Lord Gray, whereof the king being certified, went with an army into Wales: but the Welchmen fled to the mountaines, the king brent the countrey, slew the people with whom he met, and returned with a great pray of cattell.

The famous Poet Geoffrey Chaucer esquire, the first illuminer of our English language, deceased. This was a worshipful Gentleman, and of faire possessions, whose abode was chiesly about Woodstocke, (where he had a faire manor) and Belemie (in Arfozdshire) which also was his, with diuers other manors: he was oft times imploted by R. Edward 3. as ambassadoz into france, and into other forrain lands: he had to wife the daughter of Paine Roete alias Guian King at armes, by whō he had issue Tho. Chaucer, who married Mawd daughter

Geoff. Chaucer chiefe Poet of England. R. Edward 3.

daughter to Sir Bartholomewe Borwash, by whō he had issue Alice Chaucer, first married to Sir Iohn Philips Knight, after to the Earle of Salisbury, and thirdly to William Duke of Suffolke, who at his wiues request founded an hospitall called Gods house, by þe parish Church of Jewelme: which Church he also builded, in this Church lieth buried Tho. Chawcer the last heire male, in an high marble tombe in a faire chappell on the South side of the quire, with this Epitaph, *Hic iacet Tho. Chancer, armiger, dominus istius ecclesie, qui obiit 18. die mensis Nouembris, ann. dom. 1434. Et Matildis uxor eius, qua obiit 28. die mensis Aprilis ann. dom. 1436.* William Duke of Suffolke was buried at Wingham a Colledge in Suffolke, Alice surviued, and was buried in the parish Church of Jewelme on the South side of the high altar in a rich tombe of allabaster, with an image in the habit of a Moneste crowned lying ouer it with this Epitaph: *Ora pro anima sereniss. principis Alicia Suffolcia, huius ecclesie patrona, & prima fundatrix huius elemosynaria, qua obiit 20. die mensis Maij, ann. dom. 1475.* Of which Dutches loke moze in Henry the 6. the 28. of his reigne: but our first named Chaucer the poet, by what occasion I know not, was buried at Westminster, his woꝝkes for the most part are extant, first published in print by William Caxton, sometime a mercer of London, the man that first brought the Art of printing into this lande, since moze largely collected into one volume by William boreuil, aliās Thin, Esquier, chiefe Clarke of the Kitchin, and master of the household to K. Henry the 8. unto whom he dedicated the fruite of that his labour *Anno Christi. 1540.* The which volume was since againe, to wit, in *Anno 1560.* by viewe of diuers witten copies, corrected by my selfe, the authoꝝ of this history, who at that time also corrected and added diuers woꝝkes of the said master Geoffrey Chaucers neuer before imprinted, and againe in the yēre 1597. farther increased with other his woꝝkes, as also his life, preferment, issue and death, collected out of records in the towꝝe and else where by my selfe, and giuen to Thomas Spight to be published, and was performed. Besides the history of Oedipus and Iocasta, with the sieg of Thebes, translated and made into English verse, by Don Iohn Lidgate, a disciple of the said Chaucers.

John Gower a famous Poet.

Not long after deceased the like famous Poet Master Iohn Gower, a man not much unlike the other in excellency of wit, learning, or possessions, he builded a great part of St. Mary Queres Church in Southwarke, then newe redified. On the North side of the which Church, he prepared for his bones a resting place, where somewhat after the olde fashion he lyeth right sumptuously buried in a tombe of stone, with his image also of stone lying ouer him, þe haire of his head a wburne long to his shoulders, and curling vp, a final forked beard, and on his head a garland or Chaplet of roses red, foure in number, an habite of purple damasked downe to his feete, a Coller of Ewes gold about his necke, vnder his head the likenesse of thre booke, which he compiled: the first, *Speculum meditantis* in French, the second *Vox clamantis* in Latine, the third *Confessio amantis* in English, which last named booke is extant in print, þe second I haue faire witten, but the first I haue not seene, his tombe arched, was beautified with his armes, and the likenes of Angels with posies in latine. Besides in the



the wall were painted thre virgins crowned, one of the which was writtten Charity, and held this deuise. *En toy qui filz de Dieu le pere sauné soit, qui gist sous ceste pierre.* The second Mercie, with this deuise: *O bon Iesu fait ta mercie alme dont le corps gist icy.* The third Witte, with this deuise. *Pour ta pite Iesu regard, Et met cest alme in saunegarde.*

All which is now washed out, and the image defaced, by cutting off the nose and striking off his hands, because they were eleuated towards heauen.

*Ann. reg. 2.*

The Emperour of Constantinople, came into England, to require ayde against the Turkes, whom the King with sumptuous preparation met at Blackheath, vpon S. Thomas day the Apostle, and brought him to London, and paying for the charges of his lodging, presented him with gifts worthy for one of so high degree.

*Emperour of Constantinople came into England.*

Some after came newes, that the King of Lero had slaine in battel Bassacko the son of the noble Balchazaradan, and destroyed Ierusalem, and all the country round about. And because he had by Gods grace so ouercome contrary to his opinion, he became christened and 60000. men of his sect.

*1401.*

The Emperour of Constantinople hearing this, was very glad, and departed out of England, being honoured by the King with precious giftes. A Parliament was holden at London, after the feast of the Epiphanie, in the which Parliament a statute was enacted for Lollards, that wheresoever they were knowen to preach their false and corrupt doctrine, (so termed at that time) they should be taken, & deliuered to the Bishop of the diocese, before whom, if they would presume stoutly to defend their erroneous opinions, they should be disgraced, & committed to the secular iurisdiction to be executed, which law was first put in practise vpon a Priest named Wil. Sawtry, which was burnt in Smithfield, in the presence of many a man. Simon Burley was restored in blood & inheritance, except the lands giuen to the abbey of Grace by the towre of London, to S. Stephans at Westminster, and the Friers at Langley.

*Parliament at London.*

The 8. day of Aprill deceased Thomas Beawchampe Earle of Warwick, and shortly after deceased John Botelsham Bishop of Rochester.

The five and twentieth day of July Isabel late wife to King Richard, not yet twelue yeeres of age, departed from Dover towards Caleis, and so into France to her father, well and honorably accompanied. Where when she was arrived, Huguenell that had ben sent for her into England, aduertised the commissioners then remaying at Bulloigne. She was conueyed from Caleis by the Englishmen that accompanied her to Lallingham, where the Earle of S. Paulinette her, and the French Ambassadors: she alighted from her horse beneath Lollingham, the French Ladies came to her, and brought her to the Chappell, before the Ambassadors of both Realmes, and there Sir Henry Percy protested, that the King of England his master had sent her to be deliuered to her father clears of all bonds of marriage, or otherwise, and that he would take it on his soule, that she was sound and intire, even as she was the same day she was deliuered to King Richard, and if any would say to the contrary, he was ready to proue it against him by combat, but the Earle of S. Paul, saying he believed it to be true, the Lord Percy took her by the hand

*Isabel late wife to King Richard returned into France.*

and deliuered her vnto the Earle, and the Commissioners of France deliuered certaine letters of acquittall.

Owen Glendouer dew with his Welchmen did much harme to the Englishmen, and returned without receyuing any harme.

R. Henry esta-  
perth great  
danger.

There was found in the Kings bed clothes, an yron with 3. sharpe pikes, slender and round standing vpright, laid there by some traytor, that when the King should haue laid him downe, he might haue thrust himselfe vpon them.

Tho. Wal.  
Additions to pol

This time was vsed exceeding pribe in garments, gownes with deepe and broade sleeues, common ly called poke sleeues, the seruants ware the as wel as their masters, which might wel haue bin called receptacles of y deuil, for what they stole, they hid in their sleeues, whereof some hung downe to the kete, and at least to the knees, full of cuts & iaggges, wherenpon were made these verses.

Ann. reg. 30.

Tho. Hocclius.

Now hath this land little neede of Broomes,  
to sweepe away the filth out of the streete:

Sen side sleeues of pennilesse groomes,  
will it vp licke be it drie or weete.

O England stand vpright on thy feete,  
so foule a waste in so simple a degree  
Banish, or it shall sore repent thee.

The Conduitt vpon Coznehill in London was made, which befoze time had ben a prison, called the Tunne in Coznehill, whereunto, nightwalkers that were taken in suspition of felloney, or other trespasses, were committed.

From the feast of the Epiphany till the midst of Aprill appeared a blazing Starre, first betwixt the East and the North, and last of all putting fierie beames toward the North, foreshewing peraduenture the effusion of blood, about the parts of Wales and Northumberland.

1402.

Conspiracie a-  
gainst King  
Henric.

Owen Glendouer dew with his Welchmen, wasted the lands of the Lord Reynald Gray, toke him prisoner, and slew many of his people.

Certaine men affirmed King Richard to be aliue, and that he should shortly shew himselfe openly, and reward them that were faithfull vnto him. But after a certaine priest was taken at Warwicke, who had written the names of many, which were the authoys of these troubles, both the hope and feare of this conspiracie vanished. The Priest was drawen, hanged and quartered. Also Walter Waldoche late Priour of Launde a Priorie in Leicestershire, because he confessed he knew cuil against the king and did concale it, was likewise hanged and headed. Moreover certaine gray friers were taken, of the which one Richard Friseby, Doctur of Divinitie, being asked what he would do if King Richard were present, answered, that he would fight in his quarrell against any man, euen to the death, wherefoze he was condemned, drawen, and hanged in his religious habite and weede.

A foule frier  
executed.

The dunell ap-  
peared in like-  
nes of a frier.

At Daneburie in Essex, vpon Corpus Christi day, the deuill appeared in likeness of a gray frier, who entring the Church, raged insolently, to the great feare of the Parishoners: and the same houre with a tempest of whirlewind and thunder, the top of the Steeple was broken downe, and halfe the Chauncell scattered abroad.

Shortly

Shoortly after, Sir Roger Claringdon Knight, a bassard sonne of Edward the blacke Prince, and with him a Squire and a Peoman were beheaded, and eyght gray friers hanged and beheaded at London, and two at Leicester, all which had published King Richard to be alive. All Priories allians with their possessions were resumed and seized into the Kings hands, except such houses as were conventuals.

Owen Glendouderew, with a company of Welchmen invaded all the Shires that bordered nere unto him, wherfore Sir Edmond Mortimer with many knights and esquires went out to encounter with Owen, stronger then he was of the Country: but when it came to martiall assayes, their owne Archers turned their hands against them whom they should haue defended. There were slain aboute eleven hundred of our men. Sir Edmond Mortimer was taken, and the Welchwomen, when the battayle was done bing the dead carcasses too shamefully to be spoken, would not suffer them to be buried without great rancome. This battayle was fought at Melale in Wales. The King was not hasty to purchase the deliuerance of the Earle of March, because his title to the crowne was wel known, but suffered him to remaine in prison.

The King went with a great power into Wales to pursue Owen Glendouderew, where he profited nothing, but lost much, for the Welchmen conveyed themselves into unknown places: wherfore the king constrained by necessity, returned into England, after he had spoiled and burnt the country.

Edmond of Langley Duke of Yorke deceased, and was buried at Langley, with his brethren, nere unto his wife daughter to King Peter of Spaine.

The same time the Scottes cruelly entred into England, for they supposed all the Lords beyond Humber to be occupied in the parties of Wales: but the Earles of Northumberland, Henry Percy, and his sonne Henry with the earle of Dunbarre, (that a good while agoe hauing forsaken the Scottes, had sworn to be true to the King of England) with a number of armed men and plentie of archers, sodainely came to resist the Scottes, as they would haue returned home, after they had spoiled and burnt the Country: but now vpon a sodaine their way was foze laid, so that they must needs abide and take a place to fight vpon: they chose therefore a mountaine nere to the Towne of Wolloz, called Halydowne hill, in the which they place themselves with their armed men & archers, which when our men beheld, leauing the way in which they fode against the Scots, they clime the hill that fode ouer against the Scots, and without delay of time, our archers placed in the valley, set their arrowes against the Scots battell, that they might by some meanes force them to come downe: on the other side, the Scottish archers let lie at our men, who yet after they felt the grievous waight, and as it had ben a shower of tempest of the arrowes, shot by the Englishmen, they fledde. The Earle Dowglas persecuting his men so to flee, for he was their generall leader, toke his speare, and manfully with a multitude came downe the hill, trusting doublelesse in his armour and armour of his complices that had ben thre yeres in making, and forced himselfe to runne vpon the archers, which when the ar-

Owen Glendouderew tooke Sir Edmond Mortimer.

King Henry went into Wales to pursue Owen Glendouderew.

The Scots entred England.

Battell at Halydowne hill.

chers saw, they stepped backe, and shotte so fiercely, that they pierced the armed mens bodies, strooke through their helmets, riued their speares, and rent their armour with light adoe. Earle Dowglas himselfe was wounded in five places, the residue of the Scottes that were not come beside the hill, turning backe from the arrowes that flew, fledde away, but their flight nothing awayled them whilst the archers folloved them, but that they were compelled to peeld themselves. Earle Dowglas also was taken, and many drowned in the riuer of Tweede, whilst they knew not the swordes, to the number of five hundred (as was sayd.) In this battell no Lord, no knight, no esquire, gaue any stroke to the enemies, but onely God gaue the victorie to the English archers, the Lordes and armed men being onely lookers on.

That day the flower of the Scottish Chivalry was taken, to wit, the earle Dowglas, Mardake the eldest son of the Duke of Albanie, that was heire apparent to the Realme of Scotland: the earles of Murray, Angus, and Duketrey, the Lords of Mountgomerie, Erskyn, & Gram, with many other knights to the number of foure score, besides Esquires and yeomen, whose number was not knowne. There were slaine of barons, the Lord Gordon, the Lord John of Swinton that was false to both the Realmes, &c. This battell was fought on the fourteenth of September.

*Ann. reg. 4.*

Edmond Mortimer which before was taken by Owen Glendouer dew, now professed to take Owens part against King Henry, and did contract marriage with the daughter of the said Owen.

*A Parliament at London.*

In a Parliament at London, which began the morrow after Michaelmas day, and lasted seven weekes, there was granted to the King a tenth and a half of the cleargie, a tenth of the borough towne, and a fiftenth of the commons through the Realme.

*1453.*

*King Henry married the Lady Joan De Falmouth.*

The messengers that had bin sent for Ioan, late wife to John of Mountford Duke of Bypaine returned with her into England, and landed at Falmouth in Cornewall. The King met with her at Winchester the seventh of February, where they were married in the Church of S. Swithen.

The 26. of February, she was crowned at Westminster.

*Honourous fights at Bedford.*

In the summer following, by the Towne of Bedford and of Wyckesward, monstres were scene oftentimes mornings and eueninges to come out of the woodes, vnder diuers colours, in the likenesse and similitude of men of war, which met one with another, and seemed to fight cruell battels, which although they that were a farre off might see, yet they that were nere hand could not see nor finde, which thing deceiued many that coueted to appoach and come nere.

*Battell at Ashmolebury.*

Henry Percy the ponger, did sodainely shewe himselfe to be the Kings enemy, vnto whom soynd Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, vncle to the said Henry: and to make their conspracte excusable, they did write vnto the shires about, that they pretended nothing against the allegiance nor fidelitie which they ought to the king, neither to gather to any other end an armie, but onely for the sauing of their persons, and for the better gouernement of the common wealth, because the payments and taskes granted to the king for the safe custodie



die of the realme, were put to such vles as they ought not to be, and were vnprofitably consumed and wasted.

Moreouer, they complained: that because of the euill slaunders which their enemies had made of them, they durst not personally appeare in the kings presence, vntill the prelates and barons had intreated for them, that they might be permitted to purge themselves before the king, and be lawfully iudged by their peeres, so that many that saw these letters, did praise their diligence, and extoll their fidelitie towards the common wealth. But the king being disquieted with these doings, that he might appease the communalitie, he wrote to them, that he marvelled much, that seeing the Earle of Northumberland, and Henry his son had receiued the most part of the payments and summes granted to him by the cleargy and communalitie, for the defence of the Marches of Scotland, what occasion they had to make such manifest slaunders &c. But the young Henry Percy putting his confidence in the aide of Owen Glendouer, and Edmond Mortimer Earle of March, with the Welchmen, and men of Cheshire, published that King Richard was alieue, and was with them, whom if any man would see, they should without delay come in armour vnto the Castle of Leicester, which declaration made diuers variable motions in the hearts of many, and caused them to wauer.

King Henry considering all things wisely, gathered together as many as he could, and came sodainly into the partes where the rebles kept their rage, and when Henry saw vpon a sodaine the kings banner, and was euen ready to haue scaled the towne of Shrewsbury, he straightwayes desisted from the assault of the towne, and said to his men, we must now needes turne our weapons vpon them that come against vs: we see the Kings standert, neither can we, though we would, seeke any Hartinghole: stand to it manfully therefore, for this day shall either bring vs all to promotion and honor, if we overcome, or else if we be overcome, it shall deliuer vs from the kings malice. For it is a more comly thing to die in battell for the common wealth, then after battell to die by the sentence of condemnation by the enemy: and with that, 14000. of the best men that were with Henry, made to we a promise to stand by him so long as breath would serue, and they toke the field that was commodious for them, and the king and his men lay in the field right against them. The bowmen of Henry Percy began y battel, whose arrowes fell not vpon the ground, but vpon the bodies of the kings souldiers, & the kings archers shot as fiercely against their enemies, so that on both sides many were slaine, and many thousands fled, thinking the King had been slaine: but the Earle of Dunbar withdrew the king from the place that he stood in, which was a good turne for him, for the aforesaid Henry Percy, and Earle Dowglas the Scot (then whom was neuer man more stout) raged so, that the kings standert was ouerthrowen, & those about it slaine, among whom was slaine Edmond Earle of Stafford, sir

Shrewsbury  
besieged.

T. Walsingham

Walter Blunt y kings standert-bearer, Sir Nicholas Langford, Sir Iohn Cockaine, Sir Iohn Caluerley, Sir Iohn Massy, Baron of Bodington, Sir Hugh Mortimer, Sir Iohn Clifton, & the two brethren Nicholas and Robert Genevells, with many other knights and Gentlemen, and of the commons on both

Titus Livius.

sides about five hundred slain. Henry the Prince was wounded in the face with an arrowe. In the meane season Henry Percy whilest he went before his men in the battel, pressing upon his enemies, was sodainly slain, which being knowne, the kings enemies fled, but the Earle Dowglas was taken, and also Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, with Sir Richard Vernon, and the baron of Kinderton, and many other were taken. This battel was fought on Mary Magdalens eue, nere vnto Shrewsbury, in a place called Old field, alias Bull field, not farre from a place called Barwike. On the Monday following were condemned and beheaded at Shrewsbury the Earle of Worcester, the Baron of Kinderton, and Sir Richard Vernon. The body of Henry Percy was deliuered to the Lord of Furniuaile to be buried, but the king caused the same body to be taken by, and to be reposed betwene two Millstones in the Towne of Shrewsbury, there to be kept with armed men, and afterward to be beheaded and quartered, commaunding his head and quarters to be carried vnto diuers Cities of the kingdome.

The Earle of Northumberland with a strong power was comming toward his sonne and his brother, (as men thought) or at the least towards the King; but the Earle of Westmerland, and Robert Waterton had gathered a great army, and had entred on their way to meete him sodainly, but he taking none of them both to be his friends, returned vnto the castle of Markworth.

When all things were set in a stay at Shrewsbury, the King went towards Poike, where, when he was settled, he sent to the Earle of Northumberland, commaunding him to dismisse his company, and to come to him, and the Earle at the Kings commaundement came to him on the morowe after Saint Laurence day, but the King receiued him not friendly, but as one that sued for pardon, and pardoning him of his life, committed him to safe custodie.

Wiltmouth  
spoyled by the  
Britons.

Ann. reg. 5.

The Britons Amorikes, the Lord of Castels being their leader, invaded the Towne of Wiltmouth, spoyled and bent it, and went their way free, but immediatly the westerner naue, vnder the conduct of William Wilford esquire in the coast of Briton, toke fortie ships laden with yron, oyle, sope and wine of Rochell, to the number of a thousand tunne, and in returning backe againe, he bent fortie ships, and at Penarch the said William arriued with his men, and burned to wnes and Lordships the space of 6. leagues, and set the towne of S. Matthew on fire, and their Millles about the said towne.

1404.  
Frenchmen  
invade the Ile  
of Wight.

A little before Christmasse, the Frenchmen came into the Ile of Wight, boasting that they would keepe their Christmasse there, and when a thousand of the Frenchmen were entred into the Island, and dining flockes of Cattell toward the Sea, sodainly there came vpon them a companie of the Islande men, that forced them to leaue their pray behinde them, and to gette them gone (with shame ynough) to their shippes, with no small losse of their men.

A Parliament  
at London,  
and a great  
raife.

In a parliament holden at London after the Octaues of the Epiphantie, the Earle of Northumberland was restored to his former estate and dignitie. And in this Parliament was granted vnto the King an vnaccustomed taske, very beaule and painefull for the inhabitants, the manner of which taske the gran-  
ters

fers thereof would haue to be kept secret for euermore: and vnder that condition only it was granted, that it should not be any example to them that should come after, and that there should remaine no recozd thereof, but the same should with to be burnt.

The Frenchmen about that time came befoze the Ile of Wight with a great Raup, and sent certaine of their men to demand in the name of king Richard, and of Quene Isabell, a tribute or subsidie of the inhabitants: who answered, that king Richard was dead, and the Quene, sometime his wife, was sent home to her parents, without condition of any tribute: but if the Frenchmens minde were to fight, they willed them to come vp, and no man should let them for the space of sixe houres to refresh themselves, but when that time was expired, they should haue battell giuen them, which when the Frenchmen heard, they went away and did nothing.

Frenchmen  
come to the  
Ile of Wight.

The Lord of Castels in Byptaine, arriued at Blackepole, two mile out of Dertmouth with a great Raup, where of the rusticall people, whom he euer despised, he was aaine. There were taken that day three Lordes, and twentie knights of name, and the vplandish people presenting their captiues vnto the King, returned with their purses full of golde.

Dertmouth is  
ruined by the  
French.

In the moneth of Aprill, the clergie graunted vnto the King a tenth.

All the summer following, Owen Glendouer dew and his Welchmen, rob, burne and destroy the countries adioyning vnto them: he toke many captiues, and slewe many Englishmen: he laid flat certaine Castles that he had taken, and some he kept for his owne defence.

Owen Glendouer.

The Flemmings and Brittaines toke certaine Shippes of ours laden with marchandise, and slew or hanged all the Partners.

The olde Countesse of Arfozd, mother to Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland (who as we said befoze died at Louaine) did cause such as were familiar with her, to bryte throughout all the parts of Essex, that King Richard was aaine, and that he should shortly come and chalenge his olde estate and dignitie. She caused many harts of siluer, and some of golde to be made for badges, such as King Richard was wont to bestowe on his knights, Esquires and friends, that distributing them in the kings name, she might the sooner allure the knights, and other valiant men of the Country, to be at her will and desire.

The countesse  
of Arfozd re-  
ported King  
Richard to  
be aaine.

Also, the same and bryte which daily was blazed abroad by one William Serle, sometimes of King Richards chamber, that the same King Richard was in Scotland, and tarried with a power of French and Scottishmen, caused many to beleue that he was aaine. This William Serle had forged a priuie Seale in the said Richards name, and had sent diuers comfortable letters vnto such as were familiar with King Richard, by which meanes, many gaue the greater credit to the Countesse, insomuch, that some religious Abbots of that country did giue credit vnto her tales. who after ward were take at the kings commaundement, and imprisoned, because they did beleue and giue credit to the Countesse in this behalfe, and the Countesse had all her goods confiscate, and was committed to close prison: and William Serle was dya wen from prison.

William  
Serle forging  
king Richards  
seale was dia-  
wen and exe-  
cuted.

fret, through the chiefest Cities of England, and put to death at London.

About the feast of S. Iohn Baptiste, at the Kings commandement, the Earle of Northumberland came to Poinfret, and brought with him his Nephews and Nephews sons, by which doing he mitigated the mindes of many, which thought that he had given the pong men counsell to rebell. There came also with him William Clifford knight, who brought with him that William Serle King Richards chamberlatine befoze spoken of, whom by a wile he had apprehended, by which doing, the King pardoned him, for that he had kept the castle of Barwikke against the Kings will and pleasure.

*Ann. reg. 6.  
The Lymans  
Parliament at  
Conuentry.*

*The Knights  
and Burges-  
ses, require the  
temporall  
goods to be ta-  
ken from the  
Cleargie.*

*Thomas A-  
rundell Arch-  
bishop of Can-  
terburie his  
answere to the  
Burgesles.*

*John Chey-  
ney Speaker  
of the Parlia-  
ment, his  
speech.  
Answer of  
the Archbi-  
shop.*

*The Archbi-  
shop to the  
King.*

About the feast of S. Iohn Faith, the King called a parliament at Conuentry, and sent proceesse to the Sheriffes that they should chose no knights nor burgeses that had any knowledge in the Lawes of the Realme, by reason whereof, it was called the Lay mens Parliament. These picked out knights and Burgesles, could deuise none other way to releue the Kings lacke of money, but to depriue the Cleargie of their temporall landes and goods, by this occasion giuen, arose great alteration and variance betwene the Cleargie and the laytie. The knights affirming that they had oftentimes going forth with the King against rebels and enemies, not onely spent largely their goods, with and for the King, but also had set their boddes in great danger and leopards, where in the meane season the Clearkes sate idle at home, and helped the King neuer a whit. But Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Canterbury made answer, that the cleargie did alwayes giue the King as much as the lay people did, considering that they did oftner giue the King tenths, then the laytie gaue sixtēnes. And moreover, that more of their tenants did serue the King in his warres, then of the tenants of the lay fē. And besides this, they prayed day and night for the prosperitie of the King, and of al them that faithfully serued him.

And when the speaker of the parliament named Iohn Cheyney, said with a loude voyce & angry countenance, that he little regarded the prayers of the Church, the Archb. of Canterbury answered: Wh (quoth he) now I perceiue plainly to what end the fortune of this realme wil come, when the sufferges of the church are excluded and little set by, where with the godhead is wont to be appealed: surely that kingdome neuer continueth firme and stable, that is voyde of prayer and deuotion: notwithstanding, thou which settest at naught the religion of the Clergie, thinke not without punishment to take away the possessions of the church, for if the Archbishop of Canterbury line, thou shalt haue euil taking of any thing that is his. When the archbishop considering that the king did winke at these things, rose vp, and knoēd downe befoze the king, desiring him to consider how gratically, & by Gods fauor, he had attained the kingdome, that he would consider his first promise, which was, that he would preferue vnto euery man their right & title so far as lay in him. He also willed him to remember y<sup>e</sup> oth which he voluntarily made, which was, that he would honor and defend the church, and would cherish and maintaine the ministers thereof: he required him to consider the danger and dishonour of breaking an oth, wherefoze he desired him to permit and suffer the church to enioy the priuiledges



inledges and libertie, which in time of his predecessors it did enjoy, and to feare that king, by whom all kings do raigne. When the Archbishop had said these and like words, the king commaunded him to go againe to his seat, and said, that his intent and purpose was to leave the Church in as good state or better then he found it. And then the Archbishop speaking to the knights and burgeses, said: You, and such like as you be, haue giuen such counsell vnto our king, and to his predecessors, to confiscate the goods & lands of the Celles which the Frenchmen and Romans did possesse in England, and said, that by them he should heape by great riches, as indeed they were worth many thousands of golde. Notwithstanding, it is most true that the king at this day is not the richer thereby of halfe a Marke; for you haue extorted; or at the least begged them out of his hands, and haue appropriated the said goods vnto your selues, so that it may be coniectured that your request to haue our temporalities, is not for the kings profit, but for your owne couetousnesse: for without doubt, if the king (as God forbid he should) fulfill your wicked purpose, he should not be one farthing the richer the next yeere following: and surely, I will sooner let my head be cut off, then that the Church should be destitute of the least right that pertaineth to it.

Again to the knights and burgeses.

The knights of the Parliament hearing this saying of the Archbishop, and seeing the constancie of their Metropolitane, held their peace, but yet persisted in minde to haue their purpose: which the Archbishop perceiving (having his eye on eche side to marke what was done) laboured so to disappoint their doings, that he wanne the fauour of certaine of the temporal Lords to assist him, who constantly auouched by their consents, that the Church should neuer be spoiled of the temporalities. And here they acquite the Archbishoppe and Prelates, one pleasure for another, which they had done for them before. When the commons in this Parliament required that all such landes and reuenues as sometime belonged vnto the Crowne, and had bene giuen away, eyther by the king, or by his predecessors king Edward or Richard, should againe bee restored vnto the Crowne. Vnto which request the Archbishop and other the Prelates would in no case condescend: and so it came to passe, that there was no more mention made after wards of any exactions of the temporalities. But contrariwise, the knights of the Parliament, who had thewed themselves so importunate in that errour, confessed vnto the Archbishop their fault and malice, desiring him to forgive them.

Whereouer they gaue him thanks, for that through his stout courage the Church at that time recovered strength, rectifying the saying of the Ethnike, Thou vnder an hard Prince, and an euill time, art bolder to do good. Besides many things that were granted to the king in this Parliament, the lay people granted him two sixtens upon condition, that the Lord Furniwall should receive all the money, and see it to be spent in the kings warres.

Two sixtens granted to the king.

Also the Letters patents that were giuen to sundry persons, for yeerely renewes by king Edward, and king Richard, were called in againe, the knights of the Parliament so aduocating it, although it redounded to the kings dishonour. The Cleergy granted the king a tenth and a halfe.

A tenth and a halfe granted to the king.

The

Great water  
floods.

The same time such abundance of water brake over the bankes in Kent so daingly as was neuer sene the like in these parts, whereby were drowned beaſts and cattell without number, neither did England onely bewaile their losses, but also Zealand, Flanders and Holland, sustained the like by the great excesse of waters.

William  
Wikeham Bi-  
shop of Win-  
chester, his  
Colledge in  
Oxford.

This yeere died William Wikeham bishop of Winchester, by whose charges and trauell, the Cleargie of England was much increased, for he builded a notable Colledge in Oxford, for the increase of learning, where he placed the warden & his company, to the number of lxx. besides children, seruants, & ten priests, to keepe daily seruice, endowing þ said company with sufficient lands.

His Colledge  
at Winchester.

He began the foundation of a newe Colledge at Winchester, and in five yeeres finished the same, where he placed the like number of Schollers to learne their Grammar, and other principles, to be sent after ward to his other Colledge at Oxford. These two Colledges are called, the þewe Colledges, dedicated to our blessed Lady.

Saint Swi-  
thens in Win-  
chester the  
Church for  
the most part  
new builded  
by Wikeham.

He builded the great body of the Church of Saint Swithens in Winchester, where the sermons are made, and where his body is enterred, a very princely worke: neither did he for all this diminish any thing of his ordinary household charges, and sed (as the writing engraced on his Sepulchre sheweth) both rich and poore. He decaised at the age of lxxx. yeeres. He died rich, for beside that he gaue to his kinsfolke and to the poore, he gaue somewhat to euery Church in his dioces. He gaue many things to the king, and to his owne seruants, and to his Colledges: neither do I doubt but that he that thus liued, is now with God, whom I beseech to raise vp many like Bishops in England.

William  
Wickham  
borne at Wick-  
ham, his pre-  
ferments by  
Edward the  
third.

This William Wickham was borne at Wickham in Hampshire, of which place he toke his surname, and was of some called Long, because he was a tall man: one master Wodale of Wickham brought him vp at schoule, where he learned his Grammar, & to write faire. After this, the Constable of Winchester Castle, at that time a great ruler in Hampshire, got Perot, alias Wickham of Wodale and made him his Cleark. Edward the third coming to Winchester Castle, liked Wickham, and toke him to seruice, and vnderstanding that he had mind to be a priest, made him first Parson of S. Martins in London and then Deane of Saint Martins le Grand, and then Archdeacon of Buckingham. He made him also surueyor of his buildings, as of Windsor, Quinborough in Kent, and other places. After this, he preferred him to be bearer of the priuy Seale, master of the Wardes and Forrests, and Treasurer of the kings reuenues in Fraunce, Archdeacon of Lincoln, then Bishop of Winchester, Chancellor and Treasurer of England.

Banishment of  
Wickham but  
a while.  
His goods  
confiscate and  
very soon af-  
ter restored to  
him againe.

Of his banishment out of the Realme wherof some haue written, I find no mention thereof in Thomas Walsingham, Henry Knitton and other Authoers at that time liuing, nor moze of his troubles, but onely that by meanes of Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, his goods were by Edward the third confiscate, and given to Richard the sonne of the blacke Prince, in Anno. 1376. and by the meanes of Alice Pierce were againe restored to the said Bishop in the yeere next following, to wit, in Anno 1377. as moze at large in those yeeres

I haue set downe: moreouer it is manifest, that if he had sustained the losse of all his goods, and leuen yeres banishment (as some haue fabuled) it would haue bene hard for him, or rather impossible to haue brought so many great woorks to perfection, as the woorld can witnesse to haue bene done at his charges. To him in that Bishopricke, succeeded Henry Bewfort, sonne to Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, by his wife Katherin Swinford, he was translated from Lincolne to Winchester, and Philip Reppon Abbot of Leicester, was at the kings request made Bishop of Lincolne.

Henry Bewfort Bishop of Winchester.

The king kept his Christmas at Eltham in Kent.

About the feast of Saint Valentine, the sonnes of the Earle of March were taken out of the Castell of Windsor, and led away into Wales to Owen Glendouer dew, but shortly after were recouered againe. The Smith that made the keyes, by the which they that conuected them, got into them, had first his hands, and then his head cut off.

1405.  
Earle of Marches sonnes.

The Lady Spencer sister to the Duke of Yorke, and widow of Thomas Lord Spencer, before executed at Bristow, being apprehended and committed to prison, accused her brother the Duke of Yorke to be chiefe Author in stealing away of the Earle of Marches sonnes, wherefore the said Duke was kept by sir Iohn Pelham in the Castell of Wemsey till the next Parliament.

After the feast of the Purification of our Lady, the king assembled his Barons at London, to treat of the gouernment of the Realme, and to haue ayde of money to be giuen him, but the Nobles would not at that time obey his request. In the Lent following therfore, the king caused the Cleargy and the Barons to assemble at S. Albones for the matter aforesaid, but by reason the nobles stroue against him, there was nothing done, and so departed on Palme Sunday.

About the xv. of March, in a fight betwixt the Englishmen and Welchmen, the sonne of Owen Glendouer dew was taken, and 1500. with him were taken or slaine.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Richard Scroope Archbishoppe of Yorke, Thomas Mowbray Earle Marishall, Thomas Lord Bardolph and other, conspiring against H. Henry, assembled together the Citizens of York, and many other, to stand with them for the commoitytie of the Realme. And to animate the commons to be the readier vnto this businesse, they set Articles vpon the doores of the Monasteries and Churches of the same Citie, written in English against the king, because he had put downe King Richard, offering themselves for those Articles to liue and dye, which caused great number of people to resort to them: but Ralph Neuell Earle of Westmerland that was not farre off, together with Iohn Duke of Lancaster, the kinges sonne, being enformed of these things, gathered an army with speede to goe against the Archbishops company, but all was in vaine, for the Archbishops power was farre greater than theirs, whereupon the Earle of Westmerland sent messengers, to enquire of the Archbishoppe the cause of so great an assembly in armour, contrary to the kings peace: whereunto the Archbishop answered, that he toke nothing in hand against the kings peace, and he was in

Conspiracy against king Henry by the Archbishop of Yorke & other.

armoz

Great water  
floods.

The same time such abundance of water brake over the bankes in Kent so daingly as was neuer sene the like in these parts, whereby were drowned beastes and cattell without number, neither did England onely bewaile the losses, but also Zealand, Flanders and Holland, sustained the like by the great excesse of waters.

William  
Wikeham Bi-  
shop of Win-  
chester, his  
Colledge in  
Oxford.

This yere died William Wikeham bishop of Winchester, by whose charges and trauell, the Cleargie of England was much increased, for he builded a notable Colledge in Oxford, for the increase of learning. where he placed the warden & his company, to the number of lxx. besides childezen, seruants, & ten priests, to keepe daily seruice, endowing y<sup>e</sup> said company with sufficient lands.

His Colledge  
at Winchester.

He began the foundation of a newe Colledge at Winchester, and in fire yeres finished the same, where he placed the like number of Schollers to learne their Grammar, and other principles, to be sent after ward to his other Colledge at Oxford. These two Colledges are called, the felwe Colledges, dedicated to our blessed Lady.

Saint Swi-  
thens in Win-  
chester the  
Church for  
the most part  
new builded  
by Wikeham.

He builded the great body of the Church of Saint Swithens in Winchester, where the sermons are made, and where his body is entered, a very princely worke: neither did he for all this diminish any thing of his ordinary household charges, and sed (as the writing engrained on his Sepulchze sheweth) both rich and poore. He deccased at the age of lxxx. yeres. He died rich, for beside that he gaue to his kinsfolke and to the poore, he gaue somewhat to euery Church in his dioces. He gaue many things to the king, and to his owne seruants, and to his Colledges: neither do I doubt but that he that thus liued, is now with God, whom I beseech to raise vp many like Bishops in England.

William  
Wickham  
borne at Wicke-  
ham, his pre-  
ferments by  
Edward the  
third.

This William Wickham was borne at Wickham in Hampshire, of which place he toke his surname, and was of some called Long, because he was a tall man: one master Wodale of Wickham brought him vp at schoule, where he learned his Grammar, & to write faire. After this, the Constable of Winchester Castle, at that time a great ruler in Hampshire, got Perot, *alias* Wickham of Wodale and made him his Cleark. Edward the third comming to Winchester Castle, liked Wickham, and toke him to seruice, and vnderstanding that he had mind to be a priest, made him first Parson of S. Martins in London and then Deane of Saint Martins le Grand, and then Archdeacon of Bockingham. He made him also surueyoz of his buildings, as of Windsor, Quinborough in Kent, and other places. After this, he preferred him to be bearer of the pety Seale, master of the Wardes and Forests, and Treasurer of the kings reuenues in Fraunce, Archdeacon of Lincoln, then Bishop of Winchester, Chancelloz and Treasurer of England.

Banishment of  
Wikeham but  
a fable.  
His goods  
confiscate and  
very soone af-  
ter restored to  
him againe.

Of his banishment out of the Realme wherof some haue written, I find no mention thereof in Thomas Walsingham, Henry Knitton and other Authoys at that time liuing, nor moze of his troubles, but onely that by meanes of Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, his goods were by Edward the third confiscate, and giuen to Richard the sonne of the blacke Prince, in Anno. 1376. and by the meanes of Alice Pierce were againe restored to the said Bishop in the yere next following, to wist, in Anno 1377. as moze at large in those yeres



I haue set downe: mozeouer it is manifest, that if he had sustained the losse of all his goods, and seuen yeres banishment (as some haue fabuled) it would haue bene hard for him, or rather impossible to haue brought so many great woorks to perfection, as the world can witnesse to haue bene done at his charges. To him in that Bishopricke, succeeded Henry Bewfort, sonne to Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, by his wife Katherin Swinford, he was translated from Lincolne to Winchester, and Philip Reppon Abbot of Leicester, was at the kings request made Bishop of Lincolne.

Henry Bewfort Bishop of Winchester.

The king kept his Christmas at Eltham in Kent.

About the feast of Saint Valentine, the sonnes of the Earle of March were taken out of the Castell of Windsor, and led away into Wales to Owen Glendowerdew, but shortly after were recovered againe. The Smith that made the keyes, by the which they that conueied them, got into them, had first his hands, and then his head cut off.

1405.  
Earle of Marches sonnes.

The Lady Spencer sister to the Duke of York, and widow of Thomas Lord Spencer, before executed at Bristow, being apprehended and committed to prison, accused her brother the Duke of York to be chiefe Author in stealing away of the Earle of Marches sonnes, wherefore the said Duke was kept by sir Iohn Pelham in the Castell of Pemsey till the next Parliament.

After the feast of the Purification of our Lady, the king assembled his Barons at London, to treat of the gouernment of the Realme, and to haue ayde of money to be giuen him, but the Nobles would not at that time obey his request. In the Lent following therfore, the king caused the Cleargy and the Barons to assemble at S. Albones for the matter aforesaid, but by reason the nobles stroue against him, there was nothing done, and so departed on Palme Sunday.

About the xv. of March, in a fight betwixt the Englishmen and Welchmen, the sonne of Owen Glendowerdew was taken, and 1500. with him were taken or slaine.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Richard Scroope Archbishoppe of York, Thomas Mowbray Earle Marishall, Thomas Lord Bardolph and other, conspiring against H. Henry, assembled together the Citizens of York, and many other, to stand with them for the commonitie of the Realme. And to animate the commons to be the readier vnto this businesse, they set Articles upon the doores of the Monasteries and Churches of the same Citie, written in English against the king, because he had put downe King Richard, offering themselves for those Articles to liue and dye, which caused great number of people to resort to them: but Ralph Neuell Earle of Westmerland that was not farre off, together with Iohn Duke of Lancaster, the kings sonne, being enformed of these things, gathered an army with speede to goe against the Archbishoppes company, but all was in vaine, for the Archbishoppes power was farre greater than theirs, whereupon the Earle of Westmerland sent messengers, to enquire of the Archbishoppe the cause of so great an assembly in armour, contrary to the kings peace: whereunto the Archbishop answered, that he toke nothing in hand against the kings peace, and he was in

armoz

Conspiracy against king Henry by the Archbishop of York & other.

Great water  
floods.

The same time such abundance of water brake over the bankes in Kent so dauntly as was neuer sene the like in these parts, whereby were drowned beaſts and cattell without number, neither did England onely bewaile their losses, but also Zeeland, Flanders and Holland, sustained the like by the great exesse of waters.

William  
Wickham Bi-  
shop of Win-  
chester, his  
Colledge in  
Oxford.

This yere died William Wickham bishop of Winchester, by whose charges and trauell, the Cleargie of England was much increased, for he builded a notable Colledge in Oxford, for the increase of learning, where he placed the warden & his company, to the number of lxx. besides children, seruants, & ten priests, to keepe daily seruice, endowing y<sup>e</sup> said company with sufficient lands.

His Colledge  
at Winchester.

He began the foundation of a newe Colledge at Winchester, and in six yeres finished the same, where he placed the like number of Schollers to learne their Grammar, and other principles, to be sent after ward to his other Colledge at Oxford. These two Colledges are called, the Pewe Colledges, dedicated to our blessed Lady.

Saint Swi-  
thens in Win-  
chester the  
Church for  
the most part  
new builded  
by Wickham.

He builded the great body of the Church of Saint Swithens in Winchester, where the sermons are made, and where his body is entered, a very princely worke: neither did he for all this diminish any thing of his ordinary household charges, and sed (as the writing engraued on his Sepulchre sheweth) both rich and poore. He decessed at the age of lxx. yeres. He died rich, for beside that he gaue to his kinsfolke and to the poore, he gaue somewhat to euery Church in his dioces. He gaue many things to the king, and to his owne seruants, and to his Colledges: neither do I doubt but that he that thus liued, is now with God, whom I beseech to raise vp many like Bishops in England.

William  
Wickham  
borne at Wicke-  
ham, his pre-  
ferments by  
Edward the  
third.

This William Wickham was borne at Wickham in Hampshire, of which place he toke his surname, and was of some called Long, because he was a tall man: one master Wodale of Wickham brought him vp at schoule, where he learned his Grammar, & to write faire. After this, the Constable of Winchester Castle, at that time a great ruler in Hampshire, got Perot, *alias* Wickham of Wodale and made him his Cleark. Edward the third comming to Winchester Castle, liked Wickham, and toke him to seruice, and understanding that he had mind to be a priest, made him first Parson of S. Martins in London and then Deane of Saint Martins le Grand, and then Archdeacon of Buckingham. He made him also suruey of his buildings, as of Windsor, Quinborough in Kent, and other places. After this, he preferred him to be bearer of the priuy Seale, master of the Wardes and Forrests, and Treasurer of the kings revenues in France, Archdeacon of Lincoln, then Bishop of Winchester, Chancellor and Treasurer of England.

Banishment of  
Wickham but  
a while.  
His goods  
confiscate and  
very soon after  
restored to  
him againe.

Of his banishment out of the Realme wherof some haue written, I find no mention thereof in Thomas Walsingham, Henry Knytton and other Authoers at that time liuing, nor moze of his troubles, but onely that by meanes of Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, his goods were by Edward the third confiscated, and giuen to Richard the sonne of the blacke Prince, in Anno. 1376. and by the meanes of Alice Pierce were againe restored to the said Bishop in the yere next following, to wit, in Anno 1377. as moze at large in those yeres

I haue set downe: mozeouer it is manifest, that if he had sustained the losse of all his goods, and seuen yeres banishment (as some haue fabuled) it would haue bene hard for him, or rather impossible to haue brought so many great works to perfection, as the world can witnesse to haue bene done at his charges. To him in that Bishopricke, succeeded Henry Bewfort, sonne to Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, by his wife Katherin Swinford, he was translated from Lincolne to Winchester, and Philip Reppon Abbot of Leicester, was at the kings request made Bishop of Lincolne.

Henry Bew-  
fort Bishop of  
Winchester.

The king kept his Christmas at Eltham in Kent.

About the feast of Saint Valentine, the sonnes of the Earle of March were taken out of the Castell of Windsor, and led away into Wales to Owen Glendouer dew, but shortly after were recovered againe. The Smith that made the keyes, by the which they that conued them, got into them, had first his hands, and then his head cut off.

1405.  
Earle of Mar-  
ches sonnes.

The Lady Spencer sister to the Duke of Porke, and widow of Thomas Lord Spencer, before executed at Bristow, being apprehended and committed to prison, accused her brother the Duke of Porke to be chiefe Author in stealing away of the Earle of Marches sonnes, wherefore the said Duke was kept by sir Iohn Pelham in the Castell of Pemsey till the next Parliament.

After the feast of the Purification of our Lady, the king assembled his Barons at London, to treat of the gouernment of the Realme, and to haue ayde of money to be giuen him, but the Nobles would not at that time obey his request. In the Lent following therefore, the king caused the Cleargy and the Barons to assemble at S. Albones for the matter aforesaid, but by reason the nobles stroue against him, there was nothing done, and so departed on Palme Sunday.

About the xv. of March, in a fight betwixt the Englishmen and Welchmen, the sonne of Owen Glendouer dew was taken, and 1500. with him were taken or slaine.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Richard Scroope Archbishoppe of Porke, Thomas Mowbray Earle Mariball, Thomas Lord Bardolph and other, conspiring against H. Henry, assembled together the Citizens of Porke, and many other, to stand with them for the communitie of the Realme. And to animate the commons to be the readier vnto this businesse, they set Articles vpon the doores of the Monasteries and Chutches of the same Citie, written in English against the king, because he had put downe King Richard, offering themselves for those Articles to liue and dye, which caused great number of people to resort to them: but Ralph Neuell Earle of Westmerland that was not farre off, together with Iohn Duke of Lancaster, the kings sonne, being enformed of these things, gathered an army with spade to goe against the Archbishops company, but all was in vaine, for the Archbishops power was farre greater than theirs, whereupon the Earle of Westmerland sent messengers, to enquire of the Archbishoppe the cause of so great an assembly in armour, contrary to the kings peace: whereunto the Archbishop answered, that he toke nothing in hand against the kings peace, and he was in  
armoꝝ

Conspiracy a-  
gainst king  
Henry by the  
Archbishop of  
Porke & other.

armour, and munited with men, onely for feare of the King whom he coulde not safely come vnto to speake; but his purpose (he said) was good and common both for the King and the Realme, if happily they would know it: and then he shewed a Scedale, in which the Articles were contayned, which when the Earle of Westmerland had read, hee with word and countenance praised the Bishops holy and vertuous intent, and promised, that hee and his would prosecute the same with the Archbishop.

The Archbishop being glad of this, beleued the Earles wordes, and perswaded the Earle Marshall, being vnwilling thereunto, to go with him to a place appointed to talke together, to whom they with like number came, and the writing with the Articles was read ouer: straightway the Earle and they that were with him gaue their assent to these articles: then said the Earle being subtiller than the rest, behold the labour that we haue taken in hand is come to such ende as we would haue it, and the people hath now bene long in armour, let some of your men beare word vnto the people to go their way home, and to lay downe their armour, and euery man to fall to his occupation and accustomed labour: in the meane season, we, in token of concord wil drinke together, that the people on both sides shall see it, and without delay, after they hat taken each other by the hands, a knight was sent on the Archbishops behalfe, to beare word to the people that it was peace, and to commaund euerie man to lay downe their armour, and to go to their owne home.

The people beholding signes of peace, and the Lords drinke together, being wearied with the vnaccustomed trauell of warre, turned the reines of their hildes home wards, and so it came to passe, that when the people of the Archbishops side went away, the number of the aduersaries increased, as befoze it was appointed, and the Archbishop did not perceiue that he was betrayed, untill such time as the Earle arrested him: hee arrested the Marshall also, and many other with him, to all which it was promised that they should haue no harme, but that promise was not kept, for both the Archbishop and the Earle Marshall were brought to Pontfract to the King, who in the meane while was aduanced thither with his power, and from thence he went to Poike, whither the prisoners were also brought: others say that the king sojourning at Bishops Thorpe, the Archbishop was brought thither, where sir William Fulford knight learned in the lawes, sitting on an high stage in the Hall, gaue iudgement that the Archbishop should be beheaded: he was therefore set on an ill fauoured iade, with his face towards the horse taylor, and carried with great scozne and shame enough to a fildie there beside, where with five strokes his head was smitten off on the morrow after Whitsonday: with him were condemned and executed the Earle Marshall, sir Iohn Lamplough, and sir Robert Plumpton. After the king had ransomed and otherwise punished by greiuous fines the Citizens of Poike, he departed from Poike with an army of 37000. fighting men furnished with all prouision, marching northward against the Earle of Northumberland. At his coming to Durham the L. Hastings, the L. Falconbridge, sir Iohn Colville of the Dale, and sir Iohn Griffith, being consulted of the conspiracie, were

Archbishop of  
Poike beheaded.



were beheaded. The Earle of Northumberland perceluting the kings intent, got himfelfe to Berwikke with 300. horfe, and from thence into Scotland. The K. being bent againft the Earle of Northumberland, went to Berwikke, from whence the Earle fled into Scotland, and the Lord Bardolph with him, whom David Lord Fleming the Scot receiued into alliance. The King vnderftanding that the Earle was fled, he commaunded them in the Caftell to render it vnto him, which when they refufed to do, the king caufed a great Gun to be shot, which ouerthrew part of a Tower, wherupon they of the Caftell gaue ouer, and fubmitted themfelues to the king, who caufed fome of them to be beheaded, and the refidue to be fent to prifons. After this, the Caftell of Alnewike, and the reft of the Earles Caftles were with fmall adoe rendred to his hands: with which fucceffe the king being encouraged, went ftraight into Wales, where contrariwife nothing prospered with him, wherefore he returned, lofing charets, carts, and wagons, to the number of fiftie, with his treafure, fo that comming backe to Worcester, he fent for the Archbifhop and Bifhops, and declared to them his miffortune, defiring them to helpe him: to whom the Archbifhop answered, that he would talke with the Cleargie in that matter. In the meane feafon the Frenchmen came to fuccor the Welchmen with 140. fhips: they landed in Milfozde hauen, hauing loft almoft all their horfes for lacke of freffh water. The Lord Barkley and Henry Pay burned fifteen of thofe fhips in the fame hauen. Thefe Frenchmen befieged the town of Carmarden, and toke it, granting to the inhabitants all their moueable goods, and to go whither they would.

Frenchmen  
relieve the  
Welchmen.

The fame time the foresaid Lord Barkley, Thomas Swinborne, and Henry Pay toke fourtayne fhips of the French, in the which they toke the Steward of Fraunce and eight Captaines more.

Ann. reg. 7

The towne of Cruce Wolfe or Ropfton in Hartfordshire was brent.

This yere all the weares in Thamis from the Towne of Stanes in the Weft, vnto the water of Medway in the Eaft, by the Maior and communalte of London, were deftroyed, and the trunks brent, for the which great plea and difcord followed betwene Thomas Arundell Archbifhoppe of Canterburp, and other Lords and Knights of the one party, and the Maior and communalte on the other party, but the Citizens preuailed by vertue of their charter and ftatutes. Roger Walden Bifhop of London deceased.

Ropfton brent.  
Weares in the  
Thamis and  
Medway de-  
ftroyed.  
1406.

The firft of March a Parliament beganne, which lafted nigh one whole yere, for after the Knights of the Parliament had long delayed to graunt to the king a fubfidy, yet in the ende being overcome, they granted the Taxe demanded. The Priefftes and the friers that liued of almes, were forced every one to pay halfe a Marke. By decree of this Parliament the Wytons that ferued the Quene were expelled the Realme, and two of her daughters were alfo fent with them.

Nicholas Bub-  
with.  
Parliament.  
A great tax.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord Bardolfe, by the counfell of David Fleming fled into Wales, for hee had declared to them, that the Scottes had confpired to deliuer them vnto their owne king, in exchange for other prifoners: and for this doing of David Fleming, the tray-  
tres: s

The king of  
Scots found  
and heire taken  
on the sea.

terous Scottes slew him, and raised such a ciuill warre amongst themselves, that in the ende they were constrained to request truce for a yere, which when they had obtayned, the Scots sent James the sonne of Robert king of Scots, being but nine yeres olde, towards Fraunce, there to be brought vp, and to be instructed in the pleasant eloquence of the French tongue, whom certaine Mariners of Cleij in Possfolke took on the seas, and with him a Bishop, and the Earle of Denkeij, to whom his father had committed him: and they brought him into England, and deliuered him to the king, who forthwith burst out into a laughter, and said, Surely the Scots might haue sent him to me, for I can speake French. The Bishop escaped and fled, but the Earle of Denkeij, and the said James the young lad, was sent to the Tower of London, where he remained prisoner till the second yere of Henry the first, which was about eightene yeres.

Henry Spencer Bishop of Norwich deceased, to whom succeeded Alexander Wyke of that Church.

The French  
men came to  
helpe Owen  
Glendouer  
dew.

The Frenchmen came to helpe Owen Glendouer with 38. ships, whereof eight were taken full of armed men, the rest escaped into Wales, but not long after were taken fiftene ships laden with wine and ware.

Whilste the Parliament yet continued, the Duke of York was restored to his old dignitie, whom many men thought to haue bene dead in prison.

Ann. reg. 8.

Edmond Holland Earle of Kent, married the Ladie Lucie the Duke of Aquitaine Barnabes daughter in the Wyke of S. Mary Overy in Southwarke, where he the same day receiued 10000. duckats for her dowry.

Walter Skirlaw Bishop of Durham, after he had late 18. yeres in that Bishopricke, deceased: he new builded the bridges of Whinkley, Parrow, and Auckland: he bestowed on the cloyster at Durham 600. pounds, on the Dormitorie 330. markes, and 400. pounds by his testament: he builded the steeple at Holme, bozne downe by force of water rising: he repaired the Church and the Hall of the Monastrey there: he builded a great part of the steeple called the Lanterne of the Monastrey at York: he builded a faire Chappell at Swine in Holderneshe, where he was bozne, &c. Thomas Langley succeeded him in the Bishopricke of Durham.

Tho. Walling.

Henry Pay, and other with him of the fine ports, with fiftene ships, toke an hundred and twenty ships which lay at anchoz in the sea of Britaine, laden with yron, salt, oyle, and Rochell wine.

Pestilence.

This summer, through corruption of the ayre, so great a plague was shed vpon mens bodies, as was not sene the like in many yeres in this lande, so that men might say:

The south winds warme did blow, with heat pestiferous,  
And pestilence did beare great rule in Cities populous.

For at London in short while it consumed about 30000. men and women, and in the countrey toynes great mortalitie fell among the husbandmen, so that great households died cleane vp, and the houses were emptied.

In time of this pestilence the King durst not come nere to the Citie of London, wherefoze being at the Castell of Leedes in Kent, he departing from,  
there

thence, toke shipping at Quinborough in the Isle of Sheppey, to sayle ouer into Essex, and so to go to Plassey, there to passe the time till the mortality were ceased. But as the king was on the sea, certaine French Pirates which lay lurking at the Thames mouth to watch for some pray, got knowledge of the kings passage, and thereupon as he was in the midst of his course, they entred amongst his flæte and toke foure vessels next to the kings shippe, and in one of the same vessels sir Thomas Rampton, the kings vicechamberlaine, with all his chamber stuffe and apparrell. They followed the king so néere, that if his ship had not bene swift, he had landed soner in Fraunce, than in Essex: But such was his good hap that he escaped, and arriued at his appointed port.

King Henry in  
perill to haue  
bin taken on  
the sea by the  
French.

Henry Bewer Bishop of Bathe, was translated to the Archbishopricke of Poike, and Robert Halam was made Bishop of Salisbury, Richard Clifford was translated from Worcester to the Bishopricke of London, and Thomas Powell from Landaffe to the see of Worcester.

Bishops trans-  
lated.

About the sixteenth day of August deceased, sir Robert Knowles knight, at his manour of Sconethorpe in Norfolk, he was brought to London, and there honourably buried by the Lady Constance his wife, in the white Friers Church which he had newly redified and builded.

Sir Robert  
Knowles.  
John Leiland.

This sir Robert Knowles had bene a most valiant Captaine in the warres of France, during the raigne of Edward the third, and Richard the second, whose force the Realme of France both felt and feared, so did the Dukedome of Brytaine, and all the people from hence to Spayne. Of him in his life were made verses in Latin, which may be englished thus.

Register of  
Bermondsey.

O Robert Knowles, most worthy of fame,  
By thy prowess France was made tame:  
Thy manhood made the Frenchmen to yeeld,  
By dint of sword in towne and field.

Verses.

This sir Robert Knowles founded in the towne of Pontfract a Colledge to the honour of the holy Trinitie, with an Hospitall ioyned thereunto. In the which Colledge was placed a Paister, and sixe or seuen Priestes, and in the Hospitall 13. poor men and women. He was once minded to haue made this Colledge at his manour of Sconethorpe, but at the request of Constance his wife (a woman of meane birth, and sometime of a dissolute life afoze her marriage) he turned his purpose, and made it in the very place of Pontfract, where she was borne, endowing the same with 180. pound land by yere. He also builded the faire new great bridge at Rochester, ouer the riuer of Medeway, with a Chappell and a Chauntry at the east ende thereof. In the which Chappell was sometime a table hanging, wherein was noted the benefactors to that bridge, as followeth.

Colledge and  
hospitall at  
Pontfract.

Sir Robert Knowles founder of the Trinitie Chappell at Rochester bridge,  
Constance wife to Knowles.

Rochester  
bridge.

Sir John Cobham Lord, principall benefactor to the making of Rochester bridge: Margaret wife to Cobham,

Thomas

Thomas Boucher Cardinall.  
 John Morton Archbishop.  
 Henry Chicheley Archbishop.  
 Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham.  
 John Langedon Bishop of Rochester.  
 Thomas Arundell Archbishop.  
 Sir Iohn Cornwall Lord Janhap.  
 Richard Whittington Mayor of London.  
 William Cromer.  
 Geoffrey Boleine Mayor of London.  
 John Darby Draper, Alderman of London.  
 William Middleton Mercer of London.  
 Iohn Martin Justice.  
 Sir William Nottingham chiefe Baron of the Exchequer.  
 William Wangforde.  
 Iohn Buckingham Bishop of Lincolne,  
 Iohn Kempe Bishop of London.  
 Sir William Richall.  
 Sir Iohn at Pole.

All these had giuen money or lands towarde the building and repaying of the said bridge.

Notwithstanding this table, I finde in recozd as folloiweth: The bridge betwixt the Citie of Rochester, and the village of Strode was in the fourth yere of king Richard the second, soze decayed or broken downe by tempest of weaether, and inundation of the riuer of Medway, whereupon William Basing Master of the hospitall at Strode, and Nicholas Hering, were licensed by the King to repaire the same. And in the eleuenth yere of the same king Richard the second, Iohn Cobham, and Robert Knowles beganne their charge towarde the building of the said bridge, and in the eightene yere of the same Richard, the said Iohn Cobham founded a Chantry in the Chappel there of thre Chapleins, and gane lands to the bridge in the 22. yere of Richard the second: and thus much of the recozd haue I noted.

*Ann. reg. 9.*

I find further by Iohn Leiland, that one Iohn Warner a Merchant of Rochester made the new coping of Rochester bridge. And William Warham Archbishop of Canterbury made the yron pikes and barres aboue the same coping.

Hospitall at  
 Rome for En-  
 glishmen.

This Robert Knowles, was also one of the founders of an hospitall in the Citie of Rome, in manner following: for that there was no station of the world, but had some kinde of hospitalitie in Rome, saue onely the people of England, certaine Englishmen beeing in Rome, procured licence of the Pope to build an hospitall, in place where Thomas Becker Archbishoppe of Canterbury had sometime builded a Chappell of the holy Trinitie. In this hospitall which they builded, was to be releued, a gentleman thre daies, bread, wine, and ware: a commoner eight daies and nightes, meate, drinke, and lodging. And if any woman happen to be nigh her time of de-

liverance



luerance, so that she dare not take her iourney, she to be honestly kept till she be purified: and if she be of power, to take her childe with her: if not, to be kept there untill it were seven yeres old.

The founders of this hospitall were, sir Robert Braybrooke Bishop of London, Thomas Brampton Bishoppe of Rochester, sir Iohn Philpot and his wife, sir Robert Knowles, sir Hugh Calueley, sir Iohn Haukewood, sir Iohn Thornam, Knights, Iohn Twiforde, Iohn Shepard and Alice his wife, Robert Cristall and Agnes his wife, Robert Windleront, Walter Whithers, Robert at Pyne, Adam Staple, Henry Line Draper, and other Citizens of London in the yere of our Lord 1380. in the Reigne of King Richard the second: which Hospitall was againe newe reedified and made a goodly house in the yere of our Lord 1449. towards the charges whereof, was money gathered in euery Parish in Englande, but that came to small effect, the charges of collecting and conueying was such, that, there came towards the woork not past one thousande Duckettes in one whole yere.

In November a Parliament being called at London, a tax of money was leuied of the whole Realme. Parliament at London.

This yere was a soze and sharpe winter, and such aboundance of snow, which continued December, Ianuarie, Februarie and March, so that almost all small birds dyed through hunger and cold. Whiles the King held a great Councell at London with the Nobles of the Realme, Henry Earle of Pomerleland, and Thomas Lord Bardolfe came againe into England, who after long iourneying, when they came to the Towne of Thristle, they caused to be proclaymed, that who so would haue libertie, should take vp armour and weapon and follow them, whereupon much people resorted to them: but sir Thomas Rockley Sherife of Pomerleland, with other Knights of that countrey went against them, and at Bramham More nere to Haleswold, fought with them a great battell, and slue the Earle, whose head was straight waies cut off. The Lord Bardolfe was sore wounded and taken alieue, but died shortly after. This battell was fought on the xviij day of february. The Earles head was put on a stake, and carried openly through the Citie of London, and set on London bridge. The Bishoppe of Bangor was taken with the Lords, but pardoned of his life, because he was not found in armour. The King went to Poike, and there condemned such as transgressed, confiscated their goods, pacified the countrey, hanged the Abbot of Waple, who had bene in armour, and returned to the south partes againe.

Upon the sequenth of September there were such floods of rayne, as the olde men of that age had neuer sene before. Edmond Holland Earle of Kent whilest hee besieged the Castell of Briake in Britaine, he was wounded with an arrow of a Crossebow in the head, notwithstanding he toke the Castell and destroyed it to the ground, and not long after his braines rotted, and he died.

The Countesse of Kent that was daughter to Barnabe Viscount Lord of  
P n
Mullan,

1408.

Ann. reg. 10.

Edmond Holland Earle of Kent wounded to death.

Spillan hauing no issue by her husband, was now moued by the king, after her husbands death to marry with his bastard brother, the Earle of Dorset, but she chose for her husband, Henry Mortimer, a goodly young Bachelor, by whom she had issue Anne married to sir Iohn Aubemond.

About the feast of All-Saints the Cardinals of Burges came into England, being sent from the Colledge of Cardinals, to enforme the King and Cleargie of the vncōstant dealing of Pope Gregory, as also he had informed the French King and his Cleargy and Realme, to the ende that those two kings might set to their helping handes, to induce the saide Gregory to obserue the oath he had made, and that by the magnificence of those two kings, concord might be made in the Church, vnto the which businesse the French king had gladly granted, and sent messengers vnto Pope Gregory, who notwithstanding was obstinate.

The King of England when he vnderstode the Cardinall's message, he commaunded that courtesie and gentle entertainment should be giuen him, and offered to beare his charges so long as he would abide in England.

409. The King with his Quene kept their Christmasse at Eltham in Kent.

After the feast of the Epiphany, the Archbishop of Canterbury caused to assemble at London, all the Cleargy of the Realme, to whose personages miȝte to go to the generall councill holden at Pisa, whereunto were chosen Robert Holam Bishop of Salisbury, Henry Chiseley Bishop of Saint Dauids, and Thomas Chillingdon Bp̄ of Christes Church in Canterbury, and the king had sent before Iohn Coluile knight, and master Nicholas Rixton Clerkes, with letters to be giuen to them. And in the letter to the Pope it was written.

King Henry  
writeth to the  
Pope.

Most holy Father, our humble recommendations in filiall wise premisses. The inscrutable wisdome of the high God doth sometime dissemble in some sort, the sinnes of men, if at length they will yet amend, though not through seruile feare, but by their filiall conscience mouing or pricking them. And how much the longer he deferrēth his yre in this life, so much the more grievously will he punish in the life to come, as is to be feared. We therefore in our mindes resoluing the long, and as it were the inueterate Schisme now in the Church of God being very hotte, truly we feare, as by likely hode is to be feared, that it ought to be imputed to all Princes of the Christian Religion before God and man, vnto a slouthfull negligence, the cruelty of such an error, nourished thus long: Therefore specially because the Cleargie of euerie kingdome, eyther feare, or the blindnesse of auarice causing them, doe couer this wicked Schisme vnder the beyle of deuotion, and holinesse, so that those Princes, to whom the materiall sword is committed, for the defence and safegarde of the Church, about this foresaid Schisme, to be utterly extirped, they neyther got about to shewe any great instance of courteous perswasion, nor to put in practise the sword for the purpose. Whereupon, hauing heard often-tūnes of many, and vnderstand  
now

now a god while agone by letters of the most reuerend in Christ, our fathers the L. Cardinall of your Colledge, and by the report of the reuerend in Christ, the Lord Cardinall of Bourdeaux our friend, worthily beloued on the behalfe of the Colledge, comming to the presence of vs, and of our first begotten sonne the Prince of Wales, and of the prelates and priors of our Realme, how that not onely hee, but also the Cardinall of your said Colledge, by occasion of the continuance of this schisme, contrary vnto the bolue and othe made by your holinesse, to renounce the papacie, haue withdrawnne from you all their obedience, and doe determine to holde a generall counsell in the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady nowe nerte to come at the Citie Pisa, a place indede fit, as it is said, and honest, and by your holinesse commended for mete and conuenient, as it is affirmed, that this may bee done, especially by force of a certaine obligation for occasion of the schisme to bee extirped by your holinesse, whilist you were yet in minority, of your owne accord, and solemnly entred or made in the conclaue with the Cardinall aforesaid, and after that you were receiued to the papall dignitie, by the subscription of your holy hands, openly reuoked and confirmed, as by the viewe of a certaine publike instrument befoze vs and the states abovesaid exhibited it plainly, as hath to vs appeared, not knowing how the vniou of the Church may be come vnto by any other way more commodiously. Whereupon the sayde Cardinall hath requested vs, vpon consideration of the premises, and other reasonable causes by him openly exprest, and in the same letters euidently comprehended, which indede greatly moued both the consciences of vs, and of the said states, that we should take care to employ our counsell and ayde about the premises, to the said Colledge, for the respect of the goble zeale and loue which thereto we beare, together with other catholike Princes, and that wee should send our Ambassadors and prelates of our Realme by themselves, or by procurators to the said counsell. We therefore, desirous to shew the zeale and intent which we beare and haue to the same vniou, and nothing with more hede the wholesome and holy intention of the same Colledge in the premises, as other Princes doe note the same, as we here at this present, willing also, so farre as in vs lieth to the honour of God, and that we may auoyde the sworde edge of his wrath, to doe our partes about the reformation of the same state of the Church, hauing taken with our said sonne, and also with the prelates and nobles aforesaid, ripe deliberation, we beseech with all humilitie, and in the bowelles of Iesus Christ, exhorting, doe require your clemencie, whose state and honour vpon diuers causes as a deuout sonne of the Church, so farre as with God we might, we haue euer embraced, and doe embrace by the expresse and whole assent of the states aforesaid, that as well for the auoyding of the manifest slander of the Church, as of the Apostolike see, and for the desirefull conseruation of your estate and honour, and also for the desire of the faithfull procurators that will come to the said place and day together, and with all quietnesse, for the respect of him specially that giueth grace to the humble,

that we will vouchsafe to be present at the day and place before mentioned, in the spiritte of humblenesse, to fulfill the vow together, and such manner oth effectually, as we trust you will. For we hold for certaine, that, as we are informed, the Cardinals of both Colledges haue come together in one and the same consonancie of minde about the premises, and as it were all the Princes Christians set forth themselves with glad mindes in their fauour and ayde, howsoeuer they seeke from else-where starting holes, the same Cardinals by Gods helpe assisting them, shall obtaine the effect of such an vnion: neyther doth it seeme to vs, or to the inhabitants of our Realme expedient, that we should disagree from other Catholike princes in so holy a purpose in any thing, but rather that we should cause our Ambassadors and Prelates of our Realme by themselves or their procurators, as we beleeue that other will do the like, that the vniuersall Church may be nourished with the pleasant taste of a wishfull vnion. Moreover, most blessed father, if the prouidence of the Apostolike sea would vouchsafe to attend and marke, what great harme & danger is sprung by throughout the whole world, not onely of bodies, but also of soules, redeemed by Christs blood, haue hitherto chanced vnder pretence of the continuation of the said Schisme, and specially the slaughter of Christian people, which aboue the number, as men say, of two hundred thousand are perished by the raging of diuers warres that haue risen in sundrie partes of the world, and enen now of late, to the number of thirtie thousand, which (by reason of the dissention had vpon the Bishopricke of Lige betwixt the two which doe strue and contende, the one in the authoritie of the true Pope, and the other by the authoritie of the antipope) were in slaughter fieldes (a lamentable thing to be spoken) slayne and destroyed. Truly, the Apostolike sea would be in great heavinesse of heart, and would rather forsake the honour of the Apostolicall sea, than then to see from henceforth such wicked slaughter to be committed, and would take example of the true mother, who before King Salomon, rather chose to giue place, than that the childe should be cut in peeces. And albeit by the creation of the nine Cardinals, against your oath (that we may vse other mens words) lastly by you made, of the which Act a vehement cause of admiration is rayled, it may in some wise be presumed, that as is like to be thought, your intention doth not brende to the ende of extirping the Schisme, yet God forbid that your holinesse should circumspectly be noted of such inconstancie of minde by any manner of person, whereupon the last error may be accounted worse than the first, not onely to be execrated of euery Christian soule, but also to be expulled with all indignour. These things which we write, of a pure heart and vnfained faith doe procede: and therefore (benigne father) if it please you, let these things with due consideration be weyed (most blessed father) let him incline your heart, and corroborate the same in this holy worke, happily to be executed, who for peace sake, when he was the King of all, endured the forme of a seruant. Written vnder our Signet, in our palace at Westminster, the 12. day of November.

Thus hau. I set downe the Epistle which the king sent to the Pope, that it may



may appeare vnto all men how modestly he attempted to induce the Pope to perfoyme his vow and oath, to the end the fault should not appere to be in him, that the vniity of the Church was not reformed.

According to appointment the Cardinals of both Colledges, to wit, of Gregory, and of Benner met at Pisa, effectually to intreat of the reformation of agreement, where almost all the Bishops of the whole Latin world, met together, and honourable men were elected to helpe the Cardinals in this case, who calling for the grace of the holy spirit, agreed in one, and chose one to be head of the Church, refusing the other two, and called his name Alexander the first, and reiected both Gregory and Benedict.

This yere was a great play at the Skinners well, nere vnto Clearkenswell besides London, which lasted eight daies. & was of matter from the creation of the world: there were to see the same, the most part of the nobles and gentles in England: and forthwith after began a royall iustling in Smithfield, betwene the Earle of Somerset and the Seneschall of Penalt, sir Iohn Cornwall, sir Richard of Arundel, and the son of sir Iohn Cheyney against other Frenchmen.

Thomas Bewfort knight sonne to Iohn of Gaunt was made Chancelloz, and Henry Scroope was made Treasurer.

Owen Glendouer dew, though he was pardoned by the king at the request of David Holbech Esquire: yet being now diuenc to such misery, that in manner despairing of all comfort, he fled into desert places, and solitary caues, where being destitute of all reliefe and succour, dreadding to shew his face to any creature, and finally, lacking to sustaine nature, for pure hunger miserably pined away and died.

In a Parliament holden at London, in the Lent season, the knights and burgesses presented to the king a bil in this forme: To the most excellent Lord the king, and all the Nobles in this present Parliament assembled, your faithfull commons humbly do shew, that our Soueraigne Lord the king may haue the tempoꝛall possessions and lands, which by the Bishops, Abbots, and Priors are proudly spent and wasted in this Realme, which would suffice to find 150. Carles, 1500. Knights, 6000. Esquires, and 100. hospitals more than now be, &c. But when they went about to declare out of what places these great summes were to be leuied, wherby the foresaid states should be endowed, they wanted in their account: wherefoze the king commanded them, that from thenceforth they should not presume to moue any such matter.

Sir Robert Umfreuile viceadmirall of England annoyed the countreies on the sea coastes of Scotland: for comming into the Frith with tenne ships of warre and lying there fourtene daies together, landing euery day on the one side of the riuer, or on the other, taking prizes, spoiles, and prisoners, notwithstanding the Duke of Albany, and the Earle Douglas were ready there with a great power to resist him: he brent the Galiot of Scotland, being a ship of great account, with many other vessels lying the same time at the Blacknes, ouer against Lithe. At his returne from thence, he brought with him 14. good ships, and many other great prizes of clothes, both wollen and linnen,

A great play at Skinners well. Iustling in Smithfield.

An. reg. 11.

Owen Glendouer dew died miserably.

A Parliament at London.

1410. A bil purposed against the Clergy to take from them their temporall possessions. Tho. Walling.

Sir Robert Umfreuile sent against the Scots.

Robin Mend-  
market.

pitch, tarre, woad, meale, wheat and rie, which being sold abroad, the markets were well holden thereby, and therefore he had giuen him the name of Robin Mend-market: shortly after his returne from the Sea, he made a roade into Scotland by land, hauing with him his nephew, young Gilbert Vinframouile Earle of Angus, being but fourtēne yeres of age, they burnt at that time Jedworth, and the most part of Tyndale.

An. reg. 12.

Upon the euen of Saint Iohn Baptist, Thomas and Iohn, the kings sonnes, being in Cast-cheap at London, at supper, after midnight, a great debate happened betwēne their men, and men of the court, lasting an houre, till the Spaiors and Sheriffes with other Citizens ceased the same.

This yere king Henry founded a Colledge at Battaille field in Shropshire, in the place where he ouercame sir Henry Percy and other, suppressed the second of Edward the first, valued by the yere fiftie foure pounds, two shillings and two pence,

1411.

Iohn Prendergest knight, and William Long, kept the seas from Pirates and Routers, so that the passage by sea was quiet, but by the ill willers they were accused of theft and robbery themselves, whereupon the knight toke Sanctuary at Westminster, where he could not haue an house or cottage to hide his head, for that the same was forbidden by the king, so that he was forced to lie in a tent which he set vp in the Church porch, and to haue men to watch him in the night season, for feare of his enemy: but his fellow William remained on the sea, untill the Admirall had prepared ships readie, and went in person to fetch him, which he could not do, till he promised him by his fidelitie, that he should haue no harme, which promise notwithstanding, William was imprisoned in the Tower of London.

The Realme of Fraunce being disquieted with the two factions of the Duke of Burgoyne, and the Duke of Orleans, sonne to the Duke of Orleans lately slaine (at Paris) by the procurement of the Duke of Burgondy, the kings of Spauarre, and Aragon, the Dukes of Bituria, and Britaine, the Gasconers, and Aquitaines, the Carles of Hups and Arminake, and many other ayding the Duke of Orleans therein. The Duke of Burgoyne, whom the French king, and his eldest sonne, called the gouernour of France, fauoured, seeing that the contrary part was very strong, sent ambassadours into England, desiring the kings aide against the Duke of Orleans, and promised many things, amongst the which, he promised his daughter in marriage to the Prince, and a great summe of gold with her. To whom the king answered: We aduertise you not to fight with your enemy in this case, who iustly seemeth to bere you, for the death of his father by you procured: but as much as in you lieth, endeavour your selfe to mitigate the young mans wrath, and promise to make him reasonable satisfaction according to the aduise of your friends. And if then he will not cease from persecuting you, get you in to the strongest place of your dominion, and there gather such power as may be able to put off his force. If then after this, he will make warre against you, you shall haue the iust occasion to fight with him, and in such case, we will shew you such fauour, as ye haue demanded. Thus there were sent

sent ouer to his aide Thomas Earle of Arundell, Gilbert Vmframuaile Earle of Angus, or Earle of Hymre, sir Robert Vmframuaile uncle to the said Gilbert, sir John Oldcastle, Lord of Cobham, sir John Grey, and William Porter with twelue hundred archers, they toke shipping at Douer, and landed at Cluce, from whence they went to Arras, where they found the Duke of Burgoyne, of whom they were ioyfully receiued, and from thence he appointed them to Haroune, where he assembled a power of his owne subiectes, marched toward Arras, and so to Marguison, where he lodges his Flemings. The Duke of Brabant had thirty thousand fighting men, drawing towards him, and laide siege about one part thereof, there were many skirmishes, but finally they within the Towne abandoned it, and the Flemings destroyed it. From thence the Duke went to Beolle, and it was destroyed euen as it were in passing by it, from thence they went befoze Roy in Vermondois, which yielded to them, from thence to Pontiden, &c. The Duke of Burgoyne went to Arras, from thence to Roy, from thence to Bietou, and after to Beauuais, the Earle of Arundell was with him in his ayde with five hundred Englishmen, from thence he went to Poitoulle, from thence to Meulent, and so to Paris. The Duke of Brabant was lodged at Saint Dionis, and at Saint Clow, with a great power. About the tenth of Nouember, John Duke of Burgoyne issued out of Paris, and went to Saint Clow, where putting his people in order, the Earle of Arundell and his people made a great assault, so that they within were driuen to yield to the will of the English men, wherefoze they were bountifully rewarded by the Duke of Burgoyne, and then returned into England.

King Henry created his brother Thomas Bewfort, Earle of Dorset, and his sonne Thomas of Lancaster that was steward of England and Earle of Armarle, he created Duke of Clarence.

A squire of Wales named Rice ap Dee, which had long time rebelled against the King, was brought to London, and there drawn, hanged and quartered.

After the feast of All-saints, a Parliament was begun at London. The king caused a new kind of Nobles to be made, which were of lesse value then the olde by fower pence in the Noble, so that fiftie Nobles should wate a pound Troy weight.

Edward Duke of Yorke this yere began the foundation of the Colledge of Fodringhey in Northamptonshire, for a master, twelue priests, eight Clerkes, and thirtene Choristers, Henry the fift gaue landes thereunto, of Ppoyz aliens by him suppressed, and mougt dispend yere (as was valued at the suppression) fower hundredeth and ninetene poundes, eleuen shillings.

John Duke of Burgoyne, hauing now the government, both of the French King and of his Realme, he so persecuted the Duke of Brabant and his complices, that at the last, the saide Duke Charles, was forced to sende into Englande certaine persons, as his procuratours, to offer in his name vnto King Henry, and to his sonnes, certaine conditions, which

King Henry  
ayded the  
Duke of Bur-  
goyne against  
the Duke of  
Brabant.

Hist. Lewis  
Dorli.

An. reg. 13.

Parliament  
at London.  
New coin: of  
gold.

1412.  
Colledge at  
Fodringhey.

were concluded the eight day of May. The said Charles Duke of Mollance besought the King of England to send vnto him 8000. men to aide him against the Duke of Burgoyne and his complices, which daily procured the French King to make war vpon them.

King Henry courteously entertained the messengers, and vpon consideration had of their offers, which seemed to make greatly both for his honour and profite, as Duke of Guyen, he tooke vpon him to succour and defend them against all men, as their Lord and soueraigne, and so sending away the messengers, promised to send them aide very shortly.

King Henry  
mind'd a boy-  
age into France.

When said the King to the Archbishop of Canterburie, Lord Chancelloz, do you not see howe the Almighty hath disposed for vs, beholde now the acceptable time, let vs goe into France, to winne with small adoe, that which is our right: And surely it was thought he would haue recovered France, at that time, if strength of body had bene answerable to his minde, but being oppressed with great sickness he could not endure, neither to go nor ride, yet he commaunded all those to come to him that held of him by knightes seruice, as if he had meant to go ouer the sea, but the Lords of the Realme perswaded him to commit that iourney vnto his second sonne Thomas.

T. Otborne.

In the meane time Henry the Prince, sonne to the king, offended with certaine of his fathers family, which were said to solue discord betwixt the father and the sonne, he wrote vnto all the parts of the Realme, endeuouring himselfe to rescall all the practises and imaginations of such detractors, and slanderous people, and to make the matter moze manifest to the world, he came to the king his father about the feast of Peter and Paule, with such a number of his friends and wellwillers, as a greater had not bene scene in those daies. He was straightwaies admitted to his fathers presence, of whom this one thing he besought him of, that if such as had accused him might be conuicted of vnjust accusation, that they might be punished, not according to their deserts, but yet after their lies were proued against them, they might somewhat taste of that which they had meant, although not to the uttermost: to the which request the King seemed to graunt, but he tolde him, that he must tarry a Parliament, that such might be tried and punished by iudgement of their peeres. Thus farre Thomas Otborne. To the same effect (but in moze ample manner) writeth the translator of Titus Liuius (who wrote an history of Henry the fift, and dedicated it to Henry the sixt,) as he was informed by the Earle of Oymond, an eye witnesse of the same, as followeth: During the sickness of the King (saith he) some euill disposed people laboured to make dissention betwene the King, and the prince his sonne, by reason whereof, and by the Aides of youth which he exercised moze then meancly, and for the great recourse of people vnto him, of whom his Court was at all times moze abundant than his fathers, the King suspected that he would presume to vsurpe the Crowne, he being aliue, which suspicious fealonie was occasion, that he in part withheld his affection, and singular loue from the Prince: but when the Noble Prince was aduertised of his fathers fealonie, and mistrust, by some his secret friends of the Kinges

Titus Liuius.

counsaile,



counsaile, he disguised himselfe in a goyne of blue satten, or damaske, wrought full of oplet holes, and at euery oplet the neede wherewith it was made, hanging still by the silke: and about his arme hee wore a dogges collar set full of S.S. of golde, and the tircets of the same also of fine golde. Thus strangely apparelled, with a great company of Lords, and other Noble men of his court, he came to the King his father, who at that time lay at Westminster, where at his coming (by commaundement of him) not one of his company aunounced himselfe further then the fire in the hall, notwithstanding that they were greatly and ofte desired to the contrarie, by the Lords and great estates of the Kings Court: and this they did not onely because the weather was colde, but because the Prince had so commaunded them, to giue the lesse occasion of mistrust to the King his father, but hee himselfe onely accompanied of the Kings household passed forth to the King his father, to whom (after due salutation) he desired to shew the intent of his minde in secret manner. When the King caused himselfe to be bozne in his chaire into his secret chamber (because he was diseased and might not goe) where in the presence of three or foure persons, in whom the King had most confidence, he commaunded the Prince to shewe the effect of his minde: When the Prince kneeling downe before his father, said to him these words, Most redoubted Lord and father, I am this time come to your presence, as your liegeman, and as your sonne naturall, in all things to obey your grace as my soueraigne Lord and father. And whereas I vnderstand ye haue mee suspect of my behauiour against your grace, and that ye feare I would vsurpe your crowne against the pleasure of your highnesse, of my conuersation your grace knoweth that if ye were in feare of any man, of what estate soeuer he were, my dutie were to the endangering of my life to punish that person, thereby to ease that soze from your heart: and then how much rather ought I to suffer death to bring your grace from the feare that ye haue of me that am your naturall sonne, and your liegeman. And to that intent I haue this day by confession of my finnes and receiuing the Sacrament, prepared my selfe, and therefore most redoubted Lord and father, I beseech you in the honour of God, for the easing of your heart, heretofoze your knes to flea me with this dagger, and at that worde with all reuerence hee deliuered to the King his dagger, saying, my Lord and father, my life is not so desirous to me, that I would liue one day that should bee to your displeasure, no: I couet not so much my life as I doe your pleasure and welfare, and in your thus doing, here in the presence of these Lords, and tofoze God at the day of iudgement I clarely forgiue you my death. At these words of the Prince, the King taken with compassion of heart, cast from him the dagger, and embracing the Prince kissed him, & with effusion of teares said vnto him, My right deere and hartily beloued sonne, it is of truth that I had you partly suspect, and as I now perceiue, vnderferued on your partie: but seeing this your humilitie and faithfulness, I shall neither slay you, no: from henceforth haue you any moze in mistrust, for no report that shall be made vnto me, and thereof I assure you vpon mine honour. Thus by his great wisdom was the wrongfull imagination

By my D:nce  
of Estates  
strangely dis-  
guised himselfe  
his father be-  
ing sicke.

nation of his fathers hate utterly auoyded, and himselfe restozed to the Kings sojmer grace and sauour.

T. Ottarborne

Tho. Walling.  
King Henry  
gaue aide to  
the Duke of  
Bliance, a-  
gainst the Duke  
of Burgoine.

John Prendergast with thirtie shippes keeping the sea, tooke wines and other vituales from y<sup>e</sup> French, which though it pleased y<sup>e</sup> Noble men little, yet it did great ease to the common people, who had all such things farre the better cheape. About the 19. of August King Henry by determination of the counsell, sent his second sonne Thomas Duke of Clarence, Edward Duke of Poike, and Thomas Earle of Dorset, and manie valiant men, with a strong power to helpe the Duke of Bliance, against the Duke of Burgoyne, or euer all the other were returned, which a while agoe went ouer with the Earle of Arundell to ayde the Duke of Burgoyne, so that many men marvelled at the sudden change, that in so small a time the Englishmen did aide the two contrary parts: notwithstanding the Nobles went sozeuward and arriued in Normandie, where when the Duke of Bliance did not meete them at the time appointed, they bent his townes, and spoiled the countrie, taking many holdes: at length, though late, the Dukes of Clarence, and Bliance met and talked together, and the matter was so entreated of betwene them, that our men should desist from ranging throughe the countrie, and refraine from robbetrie, which when our men had graunted, they departed into Aquitaine, to winter there, and the Duke of Bliance went home to his countrie.

An. reg. 14.

About this time the Lord Helle Marshall of Fraunce with manie other Noble men, and men of armes, to the number of 4000. besieged a certaine holde in Aquitaine, which was in the keeping of John Blunt Knight, who with 300. that aided him, put to flight the whole armie of the Frenchmen, and tooke of them 12. men of name, and other gentlemen to the number of 120. and amongst other the said Monsier de Helle Marshall of Fraunce was one, who was sent ouer into England, and put in the Castle of Wilsbich in Cambridge shire, but escaping thence, he got ouer into Fraunce, where he serued the Duke of Bliance, at the battaile of Agencourt, and was there slaine.

1413.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at his mannoz of Eltham, being so soze sicke, that sometime men thought that he had ben dead: notwithstanding it pleased God that he recovered strength a little, and as sofly as he could, he celebrated that feast of Christmasse.

A Parliament  
at London.

After Christmasse hee called the Nobles of England to a parliament at London, which began the morrow after Candlemasse day, but he liued not to the ende thereof, soz he died shortly after in a chamber belonging to the abbot of Westminster, called Jerusalem, whereby the prophesie was fulfilled, as he said, that he should die there. In the time of whoselanguishing the King gaue to the Prince his sonne diuers notable doctrines and insigne-ments, that not onely of him, but of euery Prince are to be holden and fol- lowed: among the which cruditious one is this: The King lieng grieuou-ly diseased, called befoze him the Prince his sonne, and said vnto him: My sonne, I feare me soze, after my departure from this life, some discorde shall grow

King Henry  
his counsell to  
his sonne  
Henry.

grow and arise betwene thee, and thy brother Thomas Duke of Clarence, whereby the Realme may be brought to destruction and miserie, for I know you both to be of great stomacke and courage. Wherefore I feare, that hee through his high minde will make some enterprise against thee, intending to vsurpe vpon thee, which I know thy stomacke may not abide easily. And for dread hereof as oft as it is in my remembrance, I sore repent mee, that euer I charged my selfe with the crowne of this Realme. To these words of the King, the prince answered thus: Right redoubted lord and father, to the pleasure of God your grace shall long continue with vs, and rule vs both: but if God haue so provided that euer I shall succed you in this Realme, I shall honour and loue my brethren aboue all men, as long as they be to me true, faithfully and obedient, as to their soueraigne Lord: but if any of them fortune to conspire or rebell against me, I assure you, I shall as soone execute iustice vpon one of them, as I shall vpon the worst and most simplest person within this your Realme.

The King hearing this answer, was therewith maruellously reioyced in his minde, and said: My deere and welbeloued Sonne, with this answer thou hast deliuered mee of a great and ponderous agony: and I beseech thee, and vpon my blessing charge thee, that like as thou hast sayde, so thou minister iustice equally, and in no wise suffer not them that bee oppressed long to call vpon thee for iustice, but redresse oppressions, and indifferently and without delay, for no perswasion of flatterers, or of them that be partiall, or such as to haue their hands replenished with giftes, deferre not iustice till to morrow, if that thou mayest do iustice this day, least (peradventure) God doe iustice on thee in the meane time, and take from thee thine authoritie: remember that the wealth of thy body, and thy soule, and of thy realme, resteth in the execution of iustice; and do not thy iustice so, that thou be called a Tyrant, but vse thy selfe meanely betwixt iustice and mercy in those thinges that belong to thee: And betwene parties do iustice truly and extreemely, to the consolation of thy poore Subiectes that suffer iniuries, and to the punishment of them that be extortioners and doers of oppressions, that other thereby may take example: and in thus doing, thou shalt obtaine the fauour of God, and the loue and feare of thy Subiectes, and therefore also thou shalt haue thy Realme more in tranquillitie and rest, which shall bee occasion of great prosperitie within thy Realme, which English men naturally desire: for so long as they haue wealth and riches, so long shalt thou haue obedience: and when they be poore, then they be alwayes ready at every motion to make insurrections, and it causeth them to rebell against their Soueraigne Lord: for the nature of them is such, rather to feare losing of their goddes and worldly substance, than the leoparding of their liues. And if thou thus keepe them in subiection mixed with loue and feare, thou shalt haue the most peaceable and fertile Countrey, and the most louing, faithful, and manly people of the world, which shall bee cause of no small feare to thine aduersaries. My sonne, when it shall please God to call mee to the way decreed for euery worldly Creature, to thee (as my sonne and heire)

I must leave my crowne and my Realme, which I aduise thee not to take vainely, and as a man elate in pride, and reioyced in worldly honour, but thinke that thou art more oppressed with charge, to purueie for euery person within the Realme, than exalted in vaine honour of the world. Thou shalt bee exalted vnto the crowne, for the wealth and conseruation of the Realme, and not for thy singular commoditie and auail: My sonne, thou shalt bee a minister to thy Realme to keepe it in tranquillitie and defend it. Like as the heart in the middelt of the body is principall and chiefe thing in the body, and serueth to couet and desire that thing that is most necessarie to euery of thy members, so (my sonne) thou shalt bee amongst thy people as chiefe and principall of them to minister, imagine and acquire those things that may be most beneficiall for them. And then thy people shall be obedient to thee, to ayde and succour thee, and in all things to accomplish thy commaundements, like as thy members labour, euery one of them in their office, to acquire and get that thing that the heart desireth, and as thy heart is of no force and impotent without the ayde of thy members, so without thy people, thy Realme is nothing. My sonne, thou shalt feare and dread God about all things, and thou shalt loue, honour and worship him with all thy heart, thou shalt attribute and ascribe to him all things wherein thou seest thy selfe to bee well fortunate, be it victorie of thine enemies, loue of thy friends, obedience of thy subiects, strength and actiuenesse of body, honour, riches, or fruitfull generations, or any other thing whatsoever it be that chanceth to thy pleasure. Thou shalt not imagine that any such thing should fortune to thee, by thine aete, nor by thy desert, but thou shalt thinke that all cometh onely of the goodnesse of the Lord. Thus thou shalt with all thine heart, prayse, honour, and thanke God for all his benefites that he giueth vnto thee. And in thy selfe eschew all vaine glorie and elation of heart, following the wholesome counsell of the Psalmist, which saeth, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis, sed nomini tuo da gloriam*, which is to say, Not vnto vs Lord, not vnto vs, but to thy holy name be giuen laud and praise. These and many other admonishments and doctrines this victorious King gaue vnto this Noble Prince his Sonne, who with effect followed the same, after the death of his father: whereby hee obtained grace of our Lorde to attaine to great victories and many glorious and incredible conquests, thzough the helpe and succour of our Lord, wherof he was neuer destitute. The King his father drawing to his ende, after due thanks giuen, and supplications made to God, gaue his benediction to the Prince his sonne, and so yelded to God his spirit, the xx. of March, which was then midlent Sunday. Anno 1412. after the account of the Church of England, the yere of his age 46. whē he had reigned 13. yeres, sixe moneths lacking 10. Dayes. His body was conueyed by water to Feuertham, and from thence by land to Canterbury, and there buried by the Lady Mary his first wife, in the monastery of Christs Church. vnder a pillar in the North Ile. This King Henry, with Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Canterbury had been great benefactors to this Church, in building a good part of the body thereof



thereof ane we: he had issue by Mary daughter to Humfrey Bohune Earle of Hereford and Northampton, Henry that succeeded him, Thomas Duke of Clarence, John duke of Bedford, Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, Blanch Duchessesse of Baucere, and Philip Quene of Denmarke: so; by loan his second wife he had no issue.

Issue of King  
Genric.

## King Henry the fift.



Henry the fift bo;ne at Monmouth, began his raigne *Ann. reg. 1.*  
the xx. day of March in the yere 1412. This Prince *Titus Livius.*  
exceeded the meane stature of men, he was beautiful of visage, his necke long, body slender and leane, and his bones small: neuerthelesse he was of marvellous great strength, and passing swift in running, insomuch that he with two other of his Lords, without hounds, bow, or other engine, would take a wilde bucke or Doe in a large parke: he studied at

Oxford in the newe colledge, vnder the government of Henry Bewfort his vnckle on the fathers side, then Chauncellour of Oxford, after Bishop of Winchester: hee delighted in songs, meters, and musicall instruments, insomuch that in his Chappell amongst other his priuate prayers, he used our Lords prayer, certaine psalmes of Dauid, with diuers hymnes and canticles, all which I haue sene translated into heroicall English meter, by Iohn Lydgate Monke of Bury. He liued somewhat insolently, insomuch that whilest his father liued, being accompanied with some of his young Lords and gentlemen, he would waite in disguised aray for his owne receiuers, and distresse them of their money: and sometimes at such enterprises both he and his company were surely beaten: and when his receiuers made to him their complaints how they were robbed in their coming vnto him, hee would giue them discharge of so much money as they had lost; and besides that, they should not depart from him without great rewards for their trouble and vexation, especially they should be rewarded that best had resisted him and his company, and of whom he had receiued the greatest and most strokes, and for example Sir Thomas Ebor wisseth thus. The renowned Prince King Henry the fift, during the life of his father, was noted to be fierce, and of wanton courage. It hapned that one of his seruants, whom he fauored, was for felony by him committed, arraigned, at the kings bench, whereof the Prince being aduertised, and incensed by sight persons about him, in furious rage came hastily to the bar, where his seruant stood as prisoner, and commaunded him to be vnguided and set at libertie, whereat all men were abashed, reserued the chiefe Justice, who humbly exhorted the Prince to be ordered according to the ancient lawes of the Realme, or if he would haue him saued from the rigor of the lawes, that he should obtaine if he might of the King his father, his gracious pardon, whereby no law or iustice should be derogate.

T. Eliots gouernour.

with

William Sal-  
coigne was  
chefe Justice  
of the Kings  
bench, from the  
fleece of Henry  
the fourth, till  
the tyme of  
Henry the fift.

With the which answer the prince nothing appeared, but rather more inflamed, indeuoured himselfe to take away his seruant. The Iudge, considering the perillous example and inconueniencie that might thereby ensue, with a balliant spirit & courage commaunded the prince vpon his allegiance to leaue the prisoner, and to departe his way: with which commaundement, the prince being set all in a furie, all chased, and in a terrible maner came by to the place of iudgment, men thinking that he would haue slaine the Iudge, or haue done to him some damage, but the Iudge sitting still, without mouing, declaring the maiestie of the Kings place of iudgment, and with an assured bold countenance, had to the prince these words following: Sir, remember your selfe, I keepe here the place of the king your soueraigne lord and father, to whom you owe double obseisance, wherefore cōfession in his name I charge you desist off your wilfulnes and vnlawfull enterpryse, & from henceforth giue good example to those which hereafter shall be your proper subiects: and now for your contempt and disobedience, goe you to the prison of the kings bench, whereunto I commit you, and remaine you there prisoner untill the pleasure of the king your father be further knowne. With which words, being abashed, and also wondering at the marvellous grauitie of that worshipfull Iustice, the prince laying his weapon aparte, doing reuerence, departed and went to the kings bench as he was commaunded. Whereat his seruants disdaining, came & shewed to the king all the whole affaire. Whereat hee a while standing, after, as a man all raiſed with gladnes, holding his hands and eyes towards heauen, abrayd with a loud voice: O mercifull God! how much am I bounde to thy infinite godnes, especially for that thou hast giuen me a Iudge, who feareth not to minister iustice, and also a sonne, who can suffer semblably and obey iustice. Some (saith Thomas Eliot) here a man may behold three persons worthy memory: first a Iudge, who being a subiect, feared not to execute iustice on the eldest sonne of his soueraigne Lord, and by the order of nature his successeur. Also a prince, and sonne and heire of the K. in the middell of his folly, more considered his euill example, and the Iudges conscience in iustice, than his owne estate or wilfull appetite. Thirdly, a noble King and wise father, who contrary to the custome of parents, reioyced to see his sonne, and the heire of his crowne, to be for his disobedience by his subiect corrected: wherefore I conclude, that nothing is more honozable or to be desired in a prince, or noble man, than placability, as contrariwise nothing is so detestable, or to be feared in such a one as wrath and cruel malignitie. Thus much of his youthfulness: but after the decease of his father (as he that should succeed in the kingdom) he called to him a certaine monke of holy conuersation, to whom he confessed himselfe of all his offences, trespasses, and insolencies past, and after his counsaile in all things, at that time he reformed his life and manners, so that after his fathers decease was neuer no youth or wildnes that might haue place in him, but all his acts were sodainly changed into grauitie and discretion.

Titus Luſus.

To this noble prince (by assent of the parliament) all the estates of the realme

realme, after thre daies, offered to doe fealtie befoze her was crowned oꝝ had solemnized his oth, well and iustly to gouerne the common weale, which offer, befoze was neuer found to be made to any pꝛince of England.

The King gaue them al generally thanks, foꝝ their good mindes towarde him, and therewith exhorted them to the zeale of the publike prosperitie and honour of the realme. If any man had offended him he pardoned their trespass, and desired hartly of God, that if he should rule and doe all things well to the honour of God and the prosperous commoditie of the Realme, that then God would suffer him to be crowned: but if his fortune should be to do other wise, that then God should take him to his mercie, and suffer him rather to be buried than to enterpryse the charge of the Realme.

1413.

The ninth day of April he was crowned at Westminster, by Thomas Arundel archbishop of Canturburie, after which coronation, he called vnto him all those yong Lords & gentlemen that were the followers of his yong aces, to euery one of whom he gaue rich and bounteous gifts, and then commanded that as many as would change their manners as he intended to doe should abide with him in his court, and to all that would perseuer in their former light conuersation, he gaue expresse commaundement vpon paine of their heads, neuer after that day to come in his presence.

Hauiug auoyded those yong and suspicious company from his presence, he then attended to ghostly and worldly busines. And first he commanded to edifie his royal manoir that then was called Shæne (and now Richmond) he also founded two monasteries vpon the Thames (not far from the said manoir royall) the one of the religion of the Cartusiers, which he named Bethlem: the other of religious men and women, of S. Brigets order, and that he named Sion. In this house there were 60. sisters 13. pꝛiests 4. deacons and 8. late bꝛethꝛ, those neuer wore linnen but wollen, which two conents had but one church in commo, the nuns had their church aloft in the rose, and the bꝛethꝛen beneath vpon the ground, ech conent generally inclosed, and after their profession, mought neuer come out, except by the Popes special licence: these ought to haue sufficient dowrie to sustaine them without begging, he indowed them with rents and reuenues taken from the pꝛiories allians which he suppressed.

Richmond,  
Shene, and  
Sion built.

He by the best aduilement he could, pꝛouided, and ordeined in euery part of his Realme, Judges, and other officers, such as he beleued to be true and iust, and others that were knowne oꝝ suspect of couetousnes oꝝ partialitie, he cleerly auoyded from their former offices & romes. He also (as King Henric his father had done) vsed foꝝ custome euerie day, when no state was kept, at after dinner, to haue a cushion layd on the cupboꝝde, and there to leane the space of an houre oꝝ moze, to receiue bills, and heare complaints of whomsoever would come, & in those dayes if the King sate in the chamber, the steward of the houshold sate alway in the hal vnder the cloth of estate, the same being rolled vp aboue his head, and such Knights sitting with him as at that time waited on the King.

Tho. Wal.  
The King  
heareth all  
suters.

He also caused the corpes of King Richard the second to be taken from the

Cal. b

The bodie of  
Richard the  
second taken  
up, and buried  
at Westminster.

T. Clifford.

earth, whom king Henry the fourth had intumulate in the friers Church of Langley, and with due obleruance to be from thence translated to the Abbey of Westminster, where, after sollemnne exequies for him done, he was buried in Saint Peters Church in the said Abbey, on the south side of Saint Edwards chynce, by Quene Anne his wife, as he himselfe in his life had desired, and had prepared his monument in the 18. yere of his raigne. B. and Godfrey of Wyndestræte goldsmiths, made the mouldes & images of king Richard and Quene Anne, laid on them, the charges of gilding of them exceeded 400. markes. King Henry founded perpetually one day euery weeke, a memozy to be celebrate for the said L. Richard, and vpon each day five shillings eight pence, to be giuen to the poore people, and once euery yere vpon the day of his antuerse 20. p. in pence to be dealt to the poore.

About this time Thomas Duke of Clarence, the kings brother, came from the coasts of Aquitaine, who (as we said befoze) was sent to ayde the Duke of Bursillance against the Duke of Burgoyne.

Part of Mon-  
nich with the  
friars there  
burned.

T. Helnham.

A great part of the Citie of Monnich was bzent sodainly with fire, with all the house of the friers preachers and all to them belonging, and also two friers of that house.

Vpon Trinitie sunday, the sollemnne exequies for King Henry the fourth were celebrated at Canterbury, King Henry his sonne being present at the same.

Tho. Wal.

The same time the fauourers of Wicliffes doctrine, did nuple bp scedules vpon the Church doores of London, which scedules contayned that there was an hundred thousand men ready to rise against al such as could not away with their sect, for indeed (saith Walsingham) they trusted to the force, power, and wit of a certaine knight called Iohn Olde-castell of Coling in Kent, who for the honour of a marriage, which he had contracted with a kinswoman of a nobleman, the Lord Cobham, obtayned the name of the said Lordship, or seignorie of Cobham: this Iohn was a strong man, and a mætelv god man of war, but he was a most peruerse enemy to y<sup>e</sup> state of the Church at that time. In a synode therfore being holden at London, the said Sir Iohn Old-castell, for diuers points touching the sacrament, befoze the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Winchester and other, was conuict, and committed to the tower of London, out of the which he brake ouer the wals in the night, and escaped about the feast of Simon and Iude.

1414.  
Conspiracie  
against the  
King.

The King keeping his Christmase at his mannoz of Eltham (seuen miles from London) was warned that certaine had conspired against him, either to haue taken, or sodainly slaine him and his brethren on Twelfth day at night, whercupon the King sent word to the Maior of London, that he should arrest all suspicious persons: the Maior therfore caused euery Alderman in his warde to kepe great watch, and about tenne of the clocke at night went himselfe with a strong power, to the signe of the Arc without Bishops Gate, where they apprehended the man of the house called Iohn Burgate carpenter and seuen other, one of them being an Esquire belonging to Sir Iohn Old-castell, and sent them to Eltham, where they con-

fessed



felled befoze the King that they were confederate with Sir Iohn Old-castell,  
 to fight againſt him and his Lords in Saint Giles field about Holbozne. On  
 the morrowe after the Twelfth day, the King remoued priuily to Weſt-  
 miniſter, and becauſe he had heard tell that the rude peoples intent was, if  
 they did preuaile, firſt to deſtroy the monaſteries of Weſtminiſter, Saint Al-  
 bons, and Saint Pauls, and all the houſes of friers in London: he minding  
 to prevent ſuch a miſchiefe, contrary to the mindes of all that were about  
 him, went into the fielde when it was little paſt midnight, with a great ar-  
 mie, for he was warned that Sir Iohn Old-castell, and Sir Roger Aſton,  
 would be in the ſame ſielde on the next day following with 25000. people:  
 and the ſame night were taken moze then foureſcore men in armoz of the  
 ſame faction, for many that came from far, not knowing the Kings campe to  
 be in the field, were taken by the ſame and ſent to priſon, and being demanded  
 whom they ſought, made anſwere the Lord Cobham. The rumour of this,  
 comming to the eares of the captaines that were the Kings enemies, they  
 were wonderfully diſcouraged, and that the moze, becauſe none came to them  
 out of London, from whence they looked for many thouſands, whereupon  
 they fled to ſaue themſelues, and the Kings men following them toke ſome,  
 and ſlew other, but where their captaine was become would not be knowne,  
 notwithstanding that the King by proclamation promiſed to whomſoeuer  
 could bring him ſowth a 1000. markes beſides liberties to the Cities and  
 townes that would diſcloſe him, but there was not one found that would de-  
 ſert him, ſo greatly was he fauoured. Alſo the King being tolde of an ambuſh-  
 ment gathered in Harengay parke, ſent thither certaine Lords, who toke  
 many, among whom, was one William Murle, a rich maultman, oz buer of  
 Donſtable, who had his two horſes trapped with golde following him, and  
 a paire of gilt ſpurs in his boſome, for he thought to haue been made Knight  
 on the morrow by the hands of Sir Iohn Old-castell. The xix. of Ianuary,  
 69. of them were condemned of treaſon at Weſtminiſter, and on the morrow  
 after 37. of them were drawne from the Tower of London to Newgate, and  
 ſo to Saint Giles, and there in a place called Fickets field, were all hanged,  
 and ſeaunen of them byent gallowes and al. The xix. of Ianuary, were drawne  
 and hanged Sir Iohn Beuerley Biſhop, Iohn Burgate carpenter, a ſext wi-  
 ter in Saint Iohns ſtreete, and a glouer on London Bridge, and thortly af-  
 ter, Sir Roger Aſton Knight was taken, who on the tenth of February,  
 was drawne, hanged, and buried vnder the Gallowes.

King Henry  
 kept the field  
 by St. Giles  
 without Hol-  
 bozne.

Many men  
 hanged, and  
 ſome burnt in  
 Fickets field.

The twentieth of February, deceaſed Thomas Arundel Archbiſhop of Can-  
 terbury. Henry Chicheley baize at Higham Ferries in Northampton ſhire  
 ſucceeded, being tranſlated from Saint Dauids in Wales.

The King taking compaſſion vpon Henry Percie a yong man (who by  
 his grandfather Henry Percie Earle of Northumberland, was carried into  
 Scotland, after the death of his father, who was ſlaine in the battell of  
 Shrewſburie, when this yong man was then but a child) commaunded  
 them that were of his kinde, and neereſt friends, to ſolicite for his reſta-  
 ming home againe out of Scotland, minding not onely to honour him by cal-

The bodie of  
Richard the  
second taken  
vp, and buried  
at Westminster.

T. Clifford.

Part of Ro-  
wich with the  
friars there  
burned.

T. Helnham.

Tho. Wal.

1414.  
Conspiracie  
against the  
King.

earth, whom king Henry the fourth had intumulate in the friers Church of Langley, and with due obseruance to be from thence translated to the Abbey of Westminster, where, after sollemne exequies for him done, he was buried in Saint Peters Church in the said Abbey, on the south side of Saint Edwards shrine, by Quene Anne his wife, as he himselfe in his life had desired, and had prepared his monument in the 18. yere of his raigne. B. and Godfrey of Wood-Street goldsmiths, made the mouldes & images of king Richard and Quene Anne, laid on them, the charges of gilding of them exceeded 400. markes. King Henry founded perpetually one day euery weeke, a memozy to be celebrate for the said la. Richard, and vpon each day five shillings eight pence, to be giuen to the poore people, and once euery yere vpon the day of his aniuersie 20. l. in pence to be dealt to the poore.

About this time Thomas Duke of Clarence, the kings brother, came from the coasts of Aquitaine, who (as we said before) was sent to ayde the Duke of Mylance against the Duke of Burgoyne.

A great part of the Citie of Ro:wich was bzent sodainly with fire, with all the house of the friers preachers and all to them belonging, and also two friers of that house.

Vpon Trinitie Sunday, the sollemne exequies for King Henry the fourth were celebrated at Canterbury, King Henry his sonne being present at the same.

The same time the fauourers of Wicliffes doctrine, did naye bp seducles vpon the Church doores of London, which seducles contayned that there was an hundred thousand men ready to rise against al such as could not away with their sect, for indeed (saith Walsingham) they trusted to the force, power, and wit of a certaine knight called Iohn Olde-castell of Coling in Kent, who for the honour of a marriage, which he had contracted with a kinswoman of a nobleman, the Lord Cobham, obtayned the name of the said Lordship, or seignorie of Cobham: this Iohn was a strong man, and a metely good man of war, but he was a most peruerse enemy to y<sup>e</sup> state of the Church at that time. In a synode therfore being holden at London, the said Sir Iohn Old-castell, for diuers points touching the sacrament, before the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Winchester and other, was conuict, and committed to the tower of London, out of the which he brake ouer the wals in the night, and escaped about the feast of Simon and Jude.

The King keeping his Christmasse at his mannoz of Eltham (seuen miles from London) was warned that certaine had conspired against him, either to haue taken, or sodainly slaine him and his brethren on Twelfth day at night, whereupon the King sent word to the Mayor of London, that he should arrest all suspicious persons: the Mayor therfore caused euery Alderman in his warde to keepe great watch, and about tenne of the clocke at night went himselfe with a strong power, to the signe of the Axe without Bishops Gate, where they apprehended the man of the house called Iohn Burgate carpenter and seuen other, one of them being an Esquire belonging to Sir Iohn Old-castell, and sent them to Eltham, where they con-  
fessed

felled befoze the King that they were confederate with Sir Iohn Old-castell, to fight againſt him and his Lords in Saint Giles field aboute Holbozne. On the moztowe after the Twelfth day, the King remoued priuily to Weſtminſter, and becauſe he had heard tell that the rude peoples intent was, if they did preuaile, firſt to deſtroy the monaſteries of Weſtminſter, Saint Albons, and Saint Pauls, and all the houſes of friers in London: he minding to preuent ſuch a miſchiefe, contrary to the mindes of all that were about him, went into the ſielde when it was little paſt midnight, with a great armie, for he was warned that Sir Iohn Old-castell, and Sir Roger Aſton, would be in the ſame ſielde on the next day following with 25000. people: and the ſame night were taken moze then foureſcore men in armor; of the ſame faction, for many that came from far, not knowing the Kings campe to be in the field, were taken by the ſame and ſent to priſon, and being demanded whom they ſought, made anſwere the Lord Cobham. The rumour of this, comming to the eares of the captaines that were the Kings enemies, they were wonderfully diſcouraged, and that the moze, becauſe none came to them out of London, from whence they looked for many thouſands, whereupon they fled to ſaue themſelues, and the Kings men following them tooke ſome, and ſlew other, but where their captaine was become would not be knowne, notwithstanding that the King by proclamation promiſed to whomſoeuer could bring him ſoorth a 1000. markes beſides liberties to the Cities and townes that would diſcloſe him, but there was not one found that would deſert him, ſo greatly was he fauoured. Alſo the King being tolde of an ambuſhment gathered in Harengay park, ſent thither certaine Lords, who tooke many, among whom, was one William Murle, a rich maultman, or brier of Dunſtable, who had his two horſes trapped with golde following him, and a paire of gilt ſpurs in his boſome, for he thought to haue ben made Knight on the moztow by the hands of Sir Iohn Old-castell. The xii. of January, 69. of them were condemned of treason at Weſtminſter, and on the moztow after 37. of them were drawne from the Tower of London to Newgate, and ſo to Saint Giles, and there in a place called Fickets field, were all hanged, and ſeauen of them byent gallowes and al. The xix. of January, were drawne and hanged Sir Iohn Beuerley Prieſt, Iohn Burgate carpenter, a text wyter in Saint Iohns ſtreete, and a glouer on London Bridge, and shortly after, Sir Roger Aſton Knight was taken, who on the tenth of februarye, was drawne, hanged, and buried vnder the Gallowes.

The twentieth of februarye, deceaſed Thomas Arundel Archbiſhop of Canturbury. Henry Chicheley bozne at Wygham Ferris in Northampton ſhire ſuccceeded, being tranſlated from Saint Davids in Wales.

The King taking compaſſion vpon Henry Percie a young man (who by his grandfather Henry Percie Earle of Northumberland, was caried into Scotland, after the death of his father, who was ſlaine in the battell of Shrewſburie, when this young man was then but a childe) commaunded them that were of his kindred, and neereſt friends, to ſolicite for his reclai- ming home againe out of Scotland, minding not onely to honour him by cal-

King Henry kept the field by S. Giles without Holbozne.

Many men hanged, and ſome byent in Fickets field.

Elmham.  
King Henrie  
buried at Be-  
setworth.

ling him home againe, but also to make him Earle of Northumberland.

King Henry kept his Lent in the Castle of Beinelworth, and caused an harbor there to be planted in the marsh, for his pleasure, amongst the thozns and bushes: where a fore had harbozed, which fore he killed, being a thing then thought to prognosticate, that he should expell the craftie deceit of the French King, besides which also he there builded a most pleasant place, and caused it to bee termed Le pleasant maries, or the pleasant marsh. King Henry the 8. bestowed great cost in repairing Beinelworth Castle, caused the said banke-ting house to be taken downe, and part of it to be set vp in the base court at Billingsworth. In this Lent season, whilst the King lay at Beinelworth, messengers came to him from the Dolphin of France named Charles, with a present of Paris balles, for him to play withall, but the King wrote to him, that he would shortly send to him London balles, with the which he would breake downe the rofes of houses.

Titus Livius.  
Roger Wall.  
Anno reg. 2.

King Henry, after that all dissentions and commotions in England, Ireland, Scotland and Wales were appeased, so that concord and vnitie were made and established in all parts of the Kings dominion, the King deliberated vpon the recovery of the Realme of Fraunce, which by iust title of inheritance was descended vnto him, and at that time was inturiously withhelden from him by the French King. And because he would nothing procede against the pleasure of God, he first demanded aduise, and counsell of all the discrete and learned men as well of the spirituality in both Uniuersties, as of the temporality through all his Realme, if he mought without offence to God lawfully recouer by armes his Realme of Fraunce. Who after long deliberation thereupon among them had, of one assent, made report vnto the King, that in so iust a quarrell he mought lawfully vse armes, if he might by none other wayes attaine his purpose, and right of inheritance: wherevpon the King, in all things insuing the aduise of his Counsell, sent Ambassadors into France, there to demand his right in the Counsell of the French, and if peradventure they would deny to accomplish his desire, his Ambassadors should giue them knowledge that he would seke his right by armes. These Ambassadors were honorably receiued in Fraunce, and for answer of their message there denounced, they brought with them nothing to report, except that within short time, the Frenchmen would send their Ambassadors into England, to declare their intent to the King of England vpon his demand.

Shortly after arriued in England W. Bouratier Archbishop of Bourges, the Earle of Glendofne, Pierce Frennall Bishop of Luccr, the Lords Luery, and of Braquimount, Walter Cole secretarie to the French King, Ambassadors of Fraunce, these were men of great authority: amongst them the Archbishop was the chiefe, who in like manner were here receiued with great honor. At a time limited, the Archbishop of Bourges proposed their message, and in the ende, offered to the King lands, and a great sum of money with the daughter of the King their master in marriage, so that he would desist from that warre that he then intended to make in France. After which proposition



and offer made, the Ambassadors dined with the King: and at another day limited, the King of England, by the mouth of the Archbishop of Canterbury made to them answer, to this effect: The proffers made, he said, were not sufficient recompence for the Kings rightfull inheritance in France, unjustly detained from him, wherefore for a small answer, he would demand his right by force of armes in the best manner that he could, and that as bided as to him were possible. Then the Archbishop of Bourges, after licence obtained, said: O King, with reverence best spoken, thinkest thou unjustly to depose the most Christian King of France? Thinkest thou that he hath offered to thee these lands and money, with his owne daughter to be thy wife, for any dread he hath of thee: nay not so, but the same our Lord, indued with pittie, as the lover of peace, hath made to thee this offer, to the intent, that innocent blood be not spilt and destroyed: and therefore by the aide of God, he shall at all times defend himselfe, his lands, and subiects, from thy unjust inuasions. And as to vs that be his Ambassadors, we desire thee, to make to vs safe conduct without damage through thy realme, and also that thou write to our soueraigne Lord, this thine answer entirely vnder thy seale, and signe manuell: which request the King granted vnto them, and they returned into France.

Answer of the  
Bishop of  
Bourges.

In the moneth of May a Parliament was begun at Leicester, in the beginning whereof, there was a porter of the tower of London, drawn, hanged, and headed, whose head was sent to London, and set ouer the tower gate, for consenting to one that brake out of the tower, named Whillocke.

Parliament at  
Leicester.  
Porter of the  
Tower executed.

In this Parliament Iohn the Kings brother was made Duke of Bedford, Humfrey his brother Duke of Gloucester, and Richard brother to the Duke of Yorke was made Earle of Cambridge. The priories allians in England were giuen to the King, all their possessions to remaine to the King and to his heirs for ever, except land graunted to the colledge of Fodringhay, and after all these priories were suppressed to the number of more than one hundred houses. Gold waights were appoynted.

Priories suppressed to the  
number of 110.

In this Parliament were deuised diuers meanes to gather money of al the commons of England, therewith to sustaine the Kings wars, and to make prouision of all things necessarie for the same, the sum whereof, leuied and gathered of the spirituallie and tempozaltie amounted to the sum of 300. thousand markes English. And heer with order was taken to gather a great host of men through all the Kings dominions.

On Mary Magdalens day, in London, Iohn Nianfer Esquire, with nine of his men, set vpon and slue Iohn Tibbey Clarke, Archdeacon of Huntington, and Chancellor to Quene Ioane, late wife to Henry the fourth, for the which fact, the said Esquire, and foure of his men fled to S. Annes Church within Aldersgate, where they were mured vp with boord, and watched day and night till the 21. of August, on the which day, they forswore the laud, and passed through the cite towards Calice in their shirts and breeches, each of them hauing a Crosse in his hand, and a purse about his necke, &c.

The Queenes  
Chancellor  
slaine.

Men forswore  
the land.

Our Ambassadors, the Bishops of Durham and Norwich, returning not to

the second time out of Fraunce, declared to the King, that the Frenchmen did but vse fraud and deceits, wherefore the King being stirred vp vnto anger, and also knowing well the discord betwixt the great Lords of Fraunce, whereof hath somewhat been said before, determined to abate their scorninges, and to teach them to vnderstand their folly, in awaking of a sleeping dog: and forthwith, the King commaunded all the prelates, and Nobles of the Realme, to come to London, there to intreate of waighty affaires concerning the Realme, at the which time, the Archbishop of Canterbury held a great counsell, in the which were chosen certaine of the clergie of England, to goe to the generall Counsell that should be holden at Constance, a citie of Germany, and so there were sent the Bishops of Salisburie, Bathe, and Hereford, and with them the Abbot of Westminster, and the B: of Worcester, and many other wise men, in company of the Earle of Marwicke, whose presence did them much honour.

1415.  
Three schismaticall popes  
put downe.

In that counsell was put downe thre schismaticall Popes, to wit, Balchazar Cosla late Pope, Iohn the 23. of that name: Peter de Luna, called Clement the 13. and Agelus Corraris, called Gregory 12. which being done, one Otho Colombe a Noble Roman boync, was elected to the papacie, and was named Martin the fift.

Anno reg. 3.

In the meane space, the King like a prudent Prince thought good to take order for the resisting of the Scots, if according to their old maner, they should attempt any thing in his absence, and therefore he appointed the Earle of Westmerland, the Lord Scrope, the baron Greystocke, Sir Robert Vinfreuil, and diuers other valiant captaines to keepe the frontiers and marches of Scotland: which Sir Robert Vinfreuil on the day of Mary Magdalen, fought with the Scots at the towne of Cederling, hauing in his company only 300. archers, and 140. men of armes, where after a long conflict, he slue of his enemies 60. and od, and toke 360. prisoners, and put to flight 1000. and mo, whom he followed in chase aboue 12. miles, and so laden with prayes and prisoners, returned to the Castle of Rockborough, whereof he was then capitaine. When the king had gathered his nauie together, appointed his archers, and men of armes, prepared his engins, and al things necessarie for the wars, he leauing behind him for gouernment of the Realme, the Quene his mother in law, he commaunded all that should goe with him, to be ready against the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, and to meete him at Hampton.

Titus Livius.

Conspiracie  
discouered.

The eighteenth day of Iune, King Henry with many Lords and others rode from London towards South-hampton, the Maior, Aldermen, and craftes of the Citie accompanying him on his way to the towne of Kingstons vpon Thames: whilst the King late at Southampton, where he abode for his retinue and stuffe longing to the wars, fastings, prayers vnto God, and almes deedes of the King, and other supplications of the clergie and commons had before, he mustered his vniuersall hoste vpon the sea bankes. In the which muster or view, on the last of Iulie was discouered a great and perillous conspiracie against him by thre Lords, in whom of all the rest, hee put greaest trust and confidence, the chiefe of them was

Henry

Henry Scrope, Lord treasurer: the second Richard Earle of Cambridge, brother to Edward Duke of Yorke, and Sir Thomas Grey, a knight of the Porrb, these had made Edmond Earle of March to sweare upon a booke, not to disclose their counsell, and then tolde him that they thought to slay the King, and to make the sayde Edmond King, the which if hee refused to take vpon him, they would slay him: whereupon, the Earle prayed them to giue him one houres space to take aduise what was best to doe, which being graunted, the Earle went secretly and tolde the King thereof, who caused them forthwith to bee apprehended, and brought before him, where they confessed the treason, for the which on the first of August they were arraigned in the Kings presence, and the same day all three beheaded. The Earle was buried heade and all, but the other heads were sent, the one to Yorke, the other to Newcastle vpon Tyne, and there set vbye. It is to bee noted, that whatsoeuer hath bene reported of the confession of the Earle of Cambridge, certaine it is that hee was indighted by the name of Richard Earle of Cambridge of Conesburge in the Countie of Yorke Knight, and with him Thomas Grey of Heton in the Countie of Northumberland Knight, for that they the twentieth day of Iulie in the third yere of King Henry the fifth, at Southampton, and diuers other places within the Realme had conspired together, with a power of men to them associate, without the Kings licence to haue led away the Lord Edmond Earle of March into Wales, and then to haue procured him to take vpon him the gouernment of the Realme, in case that King Richard the second were dead: and betewith had purposed to set forth a proclamation there in Wales, in the name of the saide Earle of March, as heire of the crowne, against King Henry by the name of Henry of Lancaster the vsurper, to the ende that by such meanes they mought drawe the more number of the Kings liege people vnto the sayd Earle. And further to haue conueyed a banner of the armes of England, and a certaine crowne of Spaine set vpon a pallet, and laid in gage to the sayde Earle of Cambridge, by the King together with the said Earle of March into the parts of Wales aforesaide. And further that the said Earle of Cambridge, and Sir Thomas Gray had appointed certaine of the Kings liege people to repaire into Scotland, and to bring from thence, one Thomas Trumpington, also an other resembling in shape, fauour and countenance King Richard, and Henry Percy together with a great multitude of people to fight with the King, and him to destroy in open felde: besides this, that they had meant to win certaine Castles in Wales, and to keepe them against the King, and many other treasons they had contriued, as by the indictment was specified, to the ende they mought destroy the King and his brethren, the Dukes of Bedford, and of Gloucester, and other the great Lords and pères of the Realme. And Henry Scrope of Halsham of Flarlot, in the Countie of Yorke, was likewise indited, as consenting to the premises, so that it appeareth their purpose was well enough then perceiued, although happily not much hunted abroade, for considerations thought necessarie to haue it kept hysyt.

Indictment of  
the Earle of  
Cambridge.

Roger Wail.  
Titus Livius.

King Henry hauing assembled his hoste at Southampton, as is aforesaid, to the intent to passe the seas, for conueyance of whom and of his victuals and artillery, were prouided and brought thither for his wages out of Holland and Zeland ships, hulkes, and other vessels to such a number, that his whole naue at his departing from the land amounted to sixtene hundred sailes.

King Henry  
sailed into  
Normandie.

On the xliii. of August the King toke shipping, and entred the sea, and on the xliiii. at night arriued at Bebecaur in Normandie, which is betwixte Harflete and Humflete, of whose connting, all the Cities, and States of those parts being aduertised, were stricken with great feare. The King, the Dukes of Clarence and of Gloucester his brethren, the Duke of Poike his uncle, the Carles, Barons, Knights, gentlemen, and Souldiers, cast their ankers there, and toke lande without any resistance, and the King forthwith falling to the ground vpon his knees deuoutly prayed to God that to his honor he would giue him iustice of his enemies. He had at his landing in his hoste sixe thousand speares, and xxliiii. thousand footemen, besides gunners, and other engineers, artificers, and laborers, of whom the king had great abundance.

Titus Livius

The King gaue to diuers gentlemen the order of knight-hood, and assigned the bearing of his standards and banners to such men, as he knew to be of great strength and prowesse. All thing being set in good order and array, the King with all his host ascended to the top of an high hill there nigh, and there he rested the next day.

On the 16. day of August, the Duke of Clarence, leader of the forewarde in good ordinance, entred his iourney toward a towne called Herflete, distant from Bebecaur scarcely thre leagues, where he lodged his host in a field befoze the towne. The King at his conuning, lodged himselfe nigh to the first warde, not farre from the towne in a plaine field. The Earle of Suffolke, Michaell at Poole, chiefe taine of the rereward, lodged on the other side befoze the Towne. Other Noble men that had the conduct of the two wings, lodged them, one on the right hand, the other on the left hand of the whole hoste. When the King commaunded to be proclaimed throug the host, that vpon paine of death, all Churches should be kept inuolate, vnspoiled and vnharmed, that no man should presume to take any vessell or ornament whatsoever from the Church, that they should not hurt any man of the church, whom they found without armour, nor any woman or childe, and then forthwith were sent to the towne, men of armes in great number, to see the scituation thereof, who shortly returned with a great pray of cattell, and informed the King of all his demands.

Proclamation  
in the Kings  
host.

Enguerant.  
Description of  
Herflete.

Herflete is the key of the sea of all Normandie, and is scituated vpon the sea side, by the riuer of Seane, betwixt two hills, and through the middle thereof runneth a riuer, which not farre from the same towne entreth into the Seane, and from thence, both those riuers in one descend into the sea, whereas a great and goodly haven is, belonging to the same towne, which haven is garnished with the defence of two faire and strong towers: and in  
the



the same haue a right great naule of shippes may ride in safetie: and if the inhabitants of this towne inclose and keepe within the towne the course of the foresaid riuer by their sluces, as they may right well doe, then the riuer riseth without the towne so high, that it fozeeloseth all entries to the wals, so that no man may approach the towne on that part. This towne is also defended with high and thicke wals and towres, and is also enuironed with broad and deepe ditches. To this towne also belongeth onely two gates for entries, the one called Calturances, the other Postrouillier. In this towne, besides the inhabitants thereof, for the defence of the same, were sower hundred men of armes deputed in garrison, amongst whom were these Lords, Lord Discouteuile, chiefe captaine of the towne, Lord Blanuile, Lord Haqueuile, Lord Harmanuile, Lord Eancourt, Lord Gailard Bos, and diuers other Lords and men expert in warre. These Lords caused their people to breake downe the causeway betwixt Pontstreuillers and Herefete, to impaire and hinder the Englishmens passage. Neuerthelesse the Englishmen at their comming, by the good conduct of their King, were not so soze oppzessed, by breaking of the causeway, but that they came so nigh as to lay their siege before the towne. When the King and all his host was come before the towne, all his tents and pavilions were set vp in the plaine field, wherewith that part of the towne was intirely inclosed: he also caused his great hall to be set vpon an hill, at the backe of his host, to serue as a Church, there to honoz and serue God. This done the King commaunding the Duke of Clarence to assaige the towne, he endeuored to conuey his people over the riuer, in the passage whereof, he had a great skirmish with the inhabitants of the towne, but at the last his aduerfaries being put to flight, recoped within the wals. The Duke conueyed over the riuer all his ward and companie, and because the riuer diuided the Kings camp from the Dukes, they ordained a readie and sure passage over the same riuer betwixt both the camps, to the keeping whereof, certaine Gentlemen were appointed, so that their enemies might not endamage them neither by water noz land.

In this meane time befell a great misaduenture to the Frenchmen that were besieged, for the gunpowder and shot that was sent vnto them by the French King, was incountred vpon the sea by the Englishmen, and taken, to their great displeasure and damage.

The King gaue the charge of the fiede to his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester. On the same side the riuer that the King lay, was the Duke of Poike, high Constable of England lodged with his band. When euery man was placed, the towne was so streightly assaiged, that all entries and issues of the towne were stopped, so that they of the towne were in dispaire to haue any succour from the Realme of Fraunce. Many engins were raised by the English, which in short time should haue been the destruction of the wals, if they of the towne had not the sower stopped the riuer of the same towne within, whereby the water gathered and raised without the towne betwixt the King and the D. of Clarence, to the semblance of a little

Ingulant.

Titus Livius.

Rarefite sur-  
rendren to  
King Henry.

sea, which caused the Englishmen to withdraw their guns, and other engines, whereby at that time the walls were saved. When the King caused to be made under the water three great mines unto the walls of the towne, which in like manner had been the cause of their ruine, if the inhabitants had not countermined them, and letted their purpose. The inhabitants of the towne perceiving themselves thus straightly assaged, as well by land as by sea, conveyed all their ships within their haven, and bounde them together with chaines, and in the two towers that were made for the defence of the haven, they put certaine garrisons, and armed men, who oftentimes attempted to invade the Kings naue, but at all times they were by his ships beaten, and constrained to recule still within their haven: at the last, the captaines and inhabitants considering that by such skirmishes (as well vpon the land as vpon the sea) they gained nothing, tooke this appointment with the King, that if they were not rescued by the Frenchmen within certaine dayes limited, they should then deliuer into his hands the towne, with thirtie persons of the greatest and most noble within the towne, such as the King would desire, to bee ordered at the Kings pleasure; and all the residue, as well men of warre, as the inhabitants of the same towne, without armour, and leauing behinde them their goods, should freely goe where they would, for the suretie of which appointment to be kept, they deliuered vnto the King twelue of their greatest personages for pledges. The captaines and inhabitants of the towne seeing their day of appointment to approach, and themselves utterly desperate of any succours of their people, obtained to performe their couenant at their day desired, which was the xxiij. of September, on which day came Sir Lionell Braquemount, gouernour of the towne, vnto the King, and kneeling befoze him, said: Most victorious Prince, beholde here the keyes of this towne, which after our promise I yelde vnto you, with the towne, my selfe, and my companie. Then were brought to the King the Lord Coreuile, the Lord Gangcourt, and other, to the number of thirtie, and all the residue, as well souldiers, as inhabitants, were suffered vnarmed to depart. When the gates of the towne were opened, and that the King approached vnto them, in purpose to enter the towne, he descended from his horse without the gate, and from thence, without hose or shoes in great deuotion, he went immediately to the Church of Saint Martin, Metropolitane of that towne, and there he made his prayers, and praised God his creator, for his good fortune: then hee commaunded to bee brought befoze him, all those Lords and gentlemen that were yeldd to him for prisoners, whose names he caused to be put in writing, and vpon their othes to yelde themselves prisoners at Calice vpon Saint Martins day next following, and so they were deliuered out of the towne of Harflew, at the which day according to their appointment, they came to Calice, where they were receiued as prisoners, and after ransomed at great finannes. After the deliery of this towne, the foresaid two towers that defended the haven, and resisted the Kings power ten dayes space, at the end whereof, because they were in despaire of succour, yeldded them to the King, and all the souldiers and

and inhabitants both of the Towne and Towers were suffered to go freely vnarmed, whither they would. The king constitute Captaine of the Towne sir Thomas Beawford Earle of Dorset his vnckle, to whom he also committed two thousand souldiers, chosen men of his host. When considering that winter drew on, as also the losse of their men, by reason of the sir then raining amongst them, by which infirmitie died Michaell at Poole, Earle of Suffolke, the Bishop of Norwich, the Lord Beawmont, and others, and of the commons, to the number of two thousand and aboue. King Henry created the sonne of Michaell at Poole, Earle of Suffolke, who liued not long after.

After king Henry had remained at Hareflēt 15. daies, after the deliuey of the Towne, and of the Towers, he departed from thence towards Calice, whercof, when his enemies were aduertised, and also by what way he intended to passe, all the people of the countrey, Cities, and Townes were maruellously oppressed with feare, wherefore they hastened them to defensible places, and other that were apt to warre, tooke them to their houses, and assembled them together in great number, with no small company of footemen, and in all that they might they oppressed the Englishmen.

Titus Linius

The kings host kept an easie pace, without making any haste, and when they approached the Towne of Ewe, their enemies assailed them in the fields with great force and noise, where on both parties it was foughten soze and vigorously: but the Frenchmen recoiled to the Towne, where they were in good surety. From thence the king departed, and came to a passage of the riuier of Some, which the Frenchmen call Blancheffoke, or Blanchtache. This passage, at the coming vnto it was fired with sharpe stakes by their enemies, so that they coulde not passe there, but were constrained to goe further, seeking their passage, vntill they came directly to haue the Citie of Amiens and the Castell of Corby on their left side, where they of the said Citie beganne with them a newe fight: but they were sone forced by the English to returne to their Citie againe. The 19. of October the king passed the riuier of Some, at the passage of Wienna, and Bethew-court, and went then to lodge him at Pouche-legach, from whence, he aduanced him towards the riuier of Piramont. In the meane time, the French King and the Duke of Guyen his sonne, then Dolphin, purposing to resist the Englishmen, came to Roane, from whence, they sent thre heraults to the King of England, to giue vnderstanding that he should not escape without battaile: vnto whom the said King answered, All things be done at the pleasure of God, I will keepe the right way towarde Calcis: if our aduersaries doe attempt to disturbe vs in our iourney, we thinke they shall not doe it without their owne great daunger and perill. From thence, King Henry removed to a villiage called Forceulle, aduancing his host towarde the riuier of Piramont, and the next day they passed by the Cherre, and the King lodged that night at Bonpers-lestailon. The next day the King removed vnto Bangy. The next day late in the night the King came to a villiage named Agencourt, Enguerant saith Palencelles, where they lodged not distant from the French host not aboue two hundred and fiftie spaces.

Enguorant

Titus Linius:

Enguerant:

Titus Linius

The

Esquerant.

The battell of  
Agen court,  
9. Iulijam.

The Frenchmen fired their banners and standerts with the banner royall, whereof the Constable had the Conduat, in the field by them deuised and chosen, which was in the county of Saint Paule, in the ground of Agen court, by which the day following, the Englishmen should passe to goe to Calais.

The xxv. of October, after prayers and supplications of the king, his priests and people done with great deuotion, the king of England in the morning very early set forth his host in array: He commaunded that his horses and other carriages should be left in the village where he had lodged. The order of his field was thus: The middle battell whereof the king was conductoꝝ, was set in the midst of the field, directly against the middle battell of his aduersaries. On the right side was the first battell, and therewith the right wing: and on the left side the last battell, and the left wing. And these battells ioyning nigh together, by the prouidence of God, proued vnto this king a defensible place for his host, for the village wherein he was lodged before, defended his host from all inuasions on the backe, and the field wherein he was, was defended on both sides with two small riuers.

This Noble King was armed with sure and right beautifull armour: on his head a bright helmet, whereupon was set a Crowne of golde, repleate with pearle and precious stones, marvellous rich: In his shield he bare the armes both of England & Fraunce. And thus armed, he was mounted vpon a goodly great horse, and after him were ledde certaine noble horses, with their bridles and trappers of Goldsmithes worke, and vpon them also were beaten the armes of England and of Fraunce. Thus this victorious king prepared to battaile, encouraged his people to the field that approached at hande.

The night before this cruell battell, by the aduise and counsell (as it is said) of the Duke of Yorke, the king had giuen commaundement througħ his host, that euery man should puruey him a stake sharpe at both endes, which the Englishmen fired in the ground before them in the field, to defend them from the oppression of horsemen. The Frenchmen had such confidence in the great multitude of their people, and in their great horses, that many of their great Princes and Lords leauing behinde them their souldiers, standerts and other ensignes, came towards the Englishmen in right great haste, as if they had bene assured of victory.

The King of England forthwith aduanced his banners and standerts towards the French host, and he in person with his battaile in the same order wherein he stood, followed, exhorting and encouraging euery man to battell, notwithstanding he went to inuade his enemies, yet kept his accustomed order, that is, that the first battell went before, the second battell followed, and the third came immediately after, he commaunded his priests to abide in prayers, and deuine supplications, and his heraulds in their coates of armes to attend to their offices. Then euery man fell prostrate to the ground, and committing themselves to God, euery of them toke in his mouth a little peece of earth, in remembrance that they were mortall, and made

of



of earth, as also in remembrance of the holy communion. Thus all their carriages and baggages left behinde, onely charged with their harness, weapons, and stakes, they marched toward their enemies, with great hute and noise. They sounded their trumpets, and stroke by their drummes, which greatly encouraged the hearts of euery man. Their enemies seeing them approach, advanced themselves also, and met them in the fildes, betwixt whom was begunne a marueilous fierce and cruell battell. The battell of the Englishmen was as long as the field wherein they fought, which was greatly to their aduantage, for by that their enemies were letted to come vpon them at the sides and backe of the hoste. The Frenchmen had ordainned their battells with two sharpe fronts, like vnto two hoznes, which alwayes backward was broader and broader: these sharpe battells set vpon the English middlewarde, intending to haue runne thzough the whole fildes, but the Frenchmen were slaine and wounded by the English Archers, and by the helpe of the stakes, which the Englishmen had fired before them in the ground, whereby the hozemen were constrained to returne, or else to runne vpon the stakes, where many of them were overthrowne and wounded, and many both hozes and men slaine. The battell and fight increased maruellously, by the space of thre houres, in all which time no man was taken prisoner, but an innumerable number were slaine, vpon whose dead bodies they that followed were throwne and slaine.

Thus after a long and cruell battell, by the demerits of their great pride, there approached no man of the French to battell, but to death, of whom after that an innumerable company were slaine, and that the victorie surely remained to the Englishmen, they spared to slay, and toke prisoners of the French, both Princes and Gentlemen in great number. In this mortall battell, the Noble king of England neuer failed his men, for no danger of death, but fought with his enemies with an ardent heart, as a famished Lion for his pray, receiuing on his helmet and on the residue of his armour, many and great strokes.

In this field, as the puissant Prince Humfrey Duke of Gloucester the Kings brother, fought with great courage and force, he was soze wounded in the hammes with a sword, and overthrowne, insomuch, as he lay as halfe dead in the field, his head toward the Englishmen, and his feet towards his enemies: vpon whom the King hauing a brotherly compassion, bestrode him, and with most strong battell and labour, not without his owne great perill, like a brother he defended, and succoured his brother from the enemies, and made the Duke to be bozn out of the field amongst his owne men.

At the last, the victorie obtained, and the great hoste of the Frenchmen overcome, slaine, wounded, taken and banquished, sozthwith an other hoste of Frenchmen, no lesse than the first, supposing the Englishmen to be wearied by their long trauell and fight, disposed them to beginne againe the battell anew. When the Englishmen (which had many moe  
prisoners

prisoners than they were of themselves in number) saw this new field assembled to give them battell againe, fearing in this new field, lest they should fight both against their prisoners, and their other enemies, they put to death many of their said prisoners, both noble & rich men, among whom the Duke of Brabant, who at that field was taken prisoner, was one.

Titus Livius

The prudent king of England seeing the resemble of his adversaries sent his heralds unto them, commaunding them, either forthwith to come to battell, or else immediately to depart the field, and if they delayde to depart, or to come to battell, both those of their company already taken prisoners, and also all they that should thereafter be taken, without mercie or redemption should be put to death: which message when the Frenchmen heard, fearing the strength of the Englishmen, and also the death, both of themselves, and also of their friends before taken prisoners, with great heavinesse, and with shame, they forthwith departed. When the king of England being assured of the victorie, gave the greatest land and praise to God that might be.

Frenchmen  
slaine.

In this battell were slaine on the French party, the Noble Dukes of Alanson, of Berrey, and Bauere, and the Lord Hely, the Lord Labret chiefe Constable of France, the Archbishop of Saunce, Eight Carles, an hundred and one Barons, fiftene hundred knights, and above tenne thousand of all estates, whereof scarcely fiftene hundred were souldiers or labourers, the rest were of coate armour (saith Enguerant:) but Thomas Elmham saith, Archbishops, one, Dukes, three, Carles, five, Barons, and such like, fourescore and twelue, knights, fiftene hundred, of Esquires and Gentlemen, seven thousand, whereof he nameth the Archbishoppe of Saunce, the Dukes of Brabant, Alanson, and of Bauere, the Carles of Flanders, Daupmartin, Harlenes, Grantper, Saunfis, and of Dansemonteuse, the Lord of Biet, Constable of Fraunce.

T. Elmham.

Frenchmen taken  
prisoners.

In this battell were taken prisoners of the Frenchmen, the Dukes of Oyleance, and of Bourbon, Arthur brother to the Duke of Britaine, the Carles of Glandosme, of Cleve, and Richimount, and sir Bomcicault Marshall of Fraunce, and many other to the number of 1500. Knightes and Esquires: And of the English partie were slayne Edward Duke of Yorke, buried at Fordinghey, Michaell de la Poole Earle of Suffolke, buried at new Elme, and to the number of an hundred persons in the bantgard, and of all estates in the English partie were not found dead above fife hundred in the fiede. When night approached, the king of England returned with his host into the villiage, wherein they had harboured the night before, where he found his horses, and other baggages and carriages that he left behinde him there before the field, to be stolen and caried away by the Frenchmen: where amongst many other Jewels of great price, was stolen away a sword of great value, adorned with gold and precious stones, which was after given to Philip Earle of Charloys, sonne and heire to Iohn Duke of Britaine.

King Henry having gathered his army together, gave thanks to Almightye

the God for his so happy a victory, causing his Priests and Chaplaines to sing the Psalm, *In Exitu Israel de Agypto*, and commanding every man to kneele downe on the ground at this verse, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis, sed nomini tuo da gloriam*: which being done, he caused *Te Deum* with certaine Anthems to be song, giuing laud and praise to God, not boasting of his owne force or any humane power. This night when the King sate at his refection in the foresaid village, he was serued at his boorde, of those great Lords and Princes that were taken in the field. That night the King appointed god and sure watches throughout his host, for feare of sodaine inuasions, but the Frenchmen were vtterly diuided and gone without making or intending any new businesse, whereby the Englishmen were suffered in peace to take their rest.

On the next day the King with his people entred his iourney toward Calice: and as they passed through the fields where they had fought the day before, they found all the dead bodies dispoyled, as well of their harnesse, as of their array, by the inhabitantes of the countrey, notwithstanding the bodies that might be knowne for Englishmen of any reputation, the king caused to be entered according to their estates, and so continuing his iourney the King came to the Castell of Swines, and from thence he went to his Towne of Calice, with all his host and his prisoners, where he was receined of his siegemen, with great ioy and due honour. After the kings host was somewhat refreshed with meat, drinke and sleepe, the king conferred with his wise counsellors, if it were good now to returne into France, and to pursue his enterprise begun, or else to return with his host into England, there to refresh his people, among whom it was considered that the number of his people was right small, and many of them bered with the sir, many soze grieved of their wounds which they had receined at the field. Moreover, that their long staying at Calice should cause scarcity of victualles there, whereas otherwise in their owne countrey, the people should at moze ease refresh themselves, and also be better cured of their wounds: finally, considering the time had not been hitherto vnfortunate, but that with honour they might returne with great gaine, which they had conquered, they doubted not, but by the ayde of God the King should right well obtaine his desire in time to come, for which causes they all condescended vpon their returne into England.

Then with all diligence the shipp was prepared, and by the kings commaundement, the Lords and great estates of the prisoners of France vnto a great number, were brought into that ship, wherein the King was determined to passe the Sea. At this their passage the Sea was maruellously boysterous and rough, insomuch as two of the English shippes were perished in the floods, by reason whereof the French prisoners were so incombred and bered, that the day of their passage seemed to the no lesse bitter & terrible, than that day wherein they were taken at Agencourt, nor they could not maruell enough, how the king should haue so great strengthes, so easily to resist and endure the rage and boysterousnesse of the Sea, without accombrance and dis-

King Henry  
arrived at Do-  
ner.

case of his stomache. When the King had passed the Sea, and was come to arrive and to take land at Doner, innumerable people of Religion, Priests, and Noblemen, and of the commons came running to meete the King in every way: and when he was arrived on the xiii. day of November, he abode at Doner by certaine daies, to refresh and rest his Lords, and his prisoners, after his troublesome passage, and from thence he took his journey towards the Citie of London, where the Mayor of London, with the Aldermen and craftes to the number of foure hundred riding in red, with hodes red and white, met with the King on the Black heath comming from Eltham, and so brought him through London to Westminster, with all his prisoners of Fraunce.

The gates and streets of the Citie were garnished and apparelled with precious clothes of Arras, containyng the victories, triumphes and princely Actes of the Kings of England his progenitors, which was done to the ende that the King might understand, what remembrance his people would to their posterity of these his great victories and triumphes. The Conduits through the Citie ranne none other but good swete wines, and that abundantly. There were also made in the streets many Towers and stages, adorned richly, and vpon the height of them sate small children, apparelled in semblance of Angels, with swete tuned voyces singing prayes and laudes vnto God: for the victorious King would not suffer any ditties to be made and song of his victory, for that he would wholly haue the praises giuen to God: neyther would hee suffer to be carried befoze him, nor shewed vnto the people his helmet, wherupon his Crowne of golde was broke, and deposed in the fieldes by the violence of the enemye, and great strokes that he had receined, nor his other armour that in that cruell battaile was so sore broken, but as the faithfull constant champion of God, he eschewed all occasions of vaine glory, and refused the vaine praises of the people. On the next morrow, the Mayor, Aldermen and 200. of the commons presented the king with a 1000. l. in two basons of gold, worth 500. pounds.

The first day of December, by the kings commaundement, a great number of the bishops and Abbots of the realme, were assembled at London, there to celebrate and keepe the requies for Edward late Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Suffolke, and of other both English and French, which died in partes beyond the sea: vnto these solemnities came from Harlew, he Captaine of the same Towne, the Kings vncke Earle of Dorset, who a little befoze had made a roade into the borders of the countrey next adioyning, and had put them to flight, and taken prisoners 800.

This yere the King kept his Christmasse at Lambeth.

In the feast of the Purification, seuen dolphins of the sea came by the riuer of Thamis, and plaid there whiles foure of them were kille.

In a Parliament begun the 15. of March at Westminster, the halfe pence of Tanua (commonly called Salep halfe pence) were forbidd to be vsed as lawfull payment among the English people.

The

1416.

Halfe pence  
of Tanua for-  
bidden.



The first of May, Sigismonde the Emperour landed at Dover, and the tenth of May, the Mayor, Aldermen, and craftes of London receiued him at Blacke-heath, and the King with his Lords met him at S. Thomas Waterings, and so brought him through London to Westminster. The Emperour returned out of England the xvi. of August, after he had laboured, but could make no peace betwene England and France.

John Benet woolman, who had in London scattered seducles full of sedition, was drawne, hanged, and beheaded on Michaelmas day. The viii. day of October, was a parchment maker of Trillmell Streete, drawne, hanged, and beheaded, for that he had harboured sir John Old-castell.

Tho. Walling-  
Moolman  
beheaded.

King Henry of England, immediately after his returne from Caleis, sent his legats to Constance, where was kept y general counsell, as ye haue heard, which with all other legats, the Emperour being there present, laboured for the vnitie and peace of their mother the Church, and to reform the schisme that had long continued of the Popes, which counsell took effect in this manner. They first deposed all the Popes, by whom the schisme was continued, & they with the Cardinals elected into the papacy, the Cardinal of Colompre, borne in Rome, and was named Martin the fift. whose armes were a pillar of siluer crowned with golde, in a field gules. At this counsell, by the assent of all nations there present, it was authorized, and ordained that England should obtaine the name of a nation, and should be said one of the five nations, that owe their deuotion to the Church of Rome, which thing vntill that time, men of other nations, for enuy had delayed and letted.

The Kingdome  
of England  
one of the five  
nations.  
T. Elmham

In the Parliament at London, Thomas Bewfort Earle of Dorset was made Duke of Excester, and had 1000. l. the yere giuen him.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Kenelworth, at which time there was treason wrought gainst him, by a certaine Esquire of the complices of sir John Old-castell.

3417.

The morrow after Christmas day, certaine seditious persons spread abroad poisoned bills, rayling against all estates of the Church, almost in euery great house, and hospital of the Townes of Saint Albons, Portsmouth, Reading, &c. but no man would be knowne to be the author of them: also one by his counterfeited name, called frer Tucke with many other malefactors, committed many robberies in the countries of Surrey, and Sussex, whereupon the King sent out his writs for their apprehension.

Record frer  
Tucke.

On Easter day in the after-noon, at a Sermon in Saint Dunstons in the East of London, a great fray happened in the Church, where-through many people were sore wounded, and one Thomas Petwarden fishmonger, layne out of hande, wherefore the Church was suspended, and the beginners of the fray ( which was the Lord Strange, and sir John Tussell knight, through the quarrell of their two wiues ) were brought to the Counter in the Pultrie: the Archbishoppe of Canterbury caused them to be excommunicate, as well at Pauls Crosse, as in all other parish Churches of the Citie. The xxi. of April, the said Archbishop sate at S. Magnus, to enquire of the authozs of that disorder, where he found the fault to be in  
the

An. reg. 5.  
A fray in S.  
Dunstons  
Church.  
Records of  
Cant.

The Lord  
Strange and  
his wife doe  
penance.

the Lord Strange and his wife, who upon the first of May following, in Paule Church befoze the Archbishop, the Mayor of London, and other, submitted themselves to penance, which was intoned them, that immediatly all their servants should in their shirts go befoze the Parson of Saint Dunstons, from Paules, to Saint Dunstons Church, and the Lord bare headed, with his Ladie bare footed, Reignold Kenwood Archdeacon of London following them, and at the halloving of the Church, the Ladie should fill all the vessels with water, and also offer an oznamment of tenne pound, and the Lord Strange should offer a Pire of five pound.

Carle Dowglas of Scotland came into England, and promised amittie to the king, the which he assured by oath and writing sealed, yet not withstanding he after turned to the French, at the battaile of Cernol in Berch fought by the Duke of Bedford as shall be shewed.

Titus Livius.

King Henry prepared his Paule, ordinance, and victuall for his people, and generally all other things behouefull for the warres, he assembled through England such men as wel Dukes, Carles, Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, and commons as he knew were good both for warre and peace: which being done, upon Saint Markes day the Euangelist he toke his journey towarde Hampton, in purpose, when the winde and sea were favourable, to goe into France: he rode through London, till he came at Paules, where he alighted and made his offering, and in like maner he offered at Saint Georges in Southwarke, and in all his way he gaue the farewell to every man, praying them all to pray to God for him.

In this meane time the Frenchmen, made covenant with the Citizens of Genae (a Citie in Italy) whereby the Italians were bound, at a certaine price for every Caricke limited for the French mens money, to prepare and furnish with armed men, as many of their greatest Carickes as the French should desire, and so prepared they should send them to the ayde of the French men, against the Englishmen, many of these Carickes so prepared, were of marvellous greatnes, pea greater then ever were seene in those parts befoze that time, they sayled into the mouth of the Saene, where they strongly assailed Werssieste by water, whereof when the king of England was aduertised, he delibered to go vnto them in his own person to remove them from this siege, but from that purpose hee was letted, by the aduise of his counsaile, wherefoze he gaue that journey to the right puissant Iohn, Carle of Hunting-ton, who entred the Paule, departed from the land, and had such sauable winde, that in short time he was brought vnto the enemies, who assailed ech other by great vigoze and strength. Their ships were grappled together, the more part of a sommers day, but at the length the Italians oppressed by the strength of the Englishmen, were bitterly discomfited and overcome, their greatest Caricks, and also the greater part of their men were taken, the residue of the Genowales seeing their fellows slaine or taken, were stricken with feare, & their chaines or cables broken, or heved alunder, they departed their Caricks from the English ships, and escaped by helpe of the winde and streame. This victozy obtayned, the Noble Carle returned to Hampton

Hampton, whereof when the king was aduertised, he gaue laud and praising for this victorie vnto God: and for the same he inhaunted the Earle his nephew, with honour, and also with rewardes, he had fought with nine earles and taken foure of them, with their patrons, and the Admiral of them all, that was called the Bastard of Bourbon, with all the treasure that they all should haue bene waged with for a quarter of a yere.

The xxviii. day of Iuly the puissant king Henry (his shipp of 1500. ships being prepared) assembled his armie to passe the seas, of his owne company and purueiance 16400. armed men, and besides that number came to him to Dover, Lords and Gentlemen with their retinues, and the day and place for the same prefixed: first the Duke of Clarence with 240. speares, and 720. archers in his retinue: and the Duke of Gloucester with 100. speares, and 300. archers, and five Earles with 470. speares, and 1410. archers, to wit, the Earle of March 100. speares and 300. archers, the Earle of Warwick 100. speares 300. archers, the Earle of Huntington 40. speares, and 120. archers, the Earle of Suffolke 30. speares, and 90. archers, and the Earle of Salisbury 100. speares, and 300. archers, and after these Earles followed 13. estates of the Realme, with 506 speares, and 1500. archers, that is to say, the Lord Burgaunay, the Lord Mastrauers, the Lord Fitz Hughe, the Lord Clifford, the Lord Grey, the Lord Willoughby, the Lord Talbot, the Lord E. Courtney, the L. Bourcher, the Lord Rosse, the Lord Louel, the L. Ferrers of Chartley, the L. Harrington.

After came 87. knights, and their retinue, 940. speares, and 2852. archers. Of carpenters and other artificers the king had with him in wages to the number of 1000. and so the kings whole hoste besides labourers & artificers, amounted to the number of 25527. fighting men, of whom euery fourth man was a horseman. Whose things thus ordered, and the shipp for their conueyance ready apparelled, the king entred his shippe, which was royally and sumptuously adorned: the sayle thereof was of purple silke, right beautifully embroidered, both with the armes of England & of Fraunce, and this ship they called the Kings chamber. He had also another the second a caricke of like apparell, which by the Kings commaundement they called the Kings hall, and these two he ordered to be the principall of all the shipp. Before he departed the Realme, he constituted Iohn Duke of Bedford his brother, to be protector of his Realme of England in his absence.

On the first day of August the whole fleet arrived in Normandie, not farre from the Castell of Tonque, where the king dubbed 48. knights, such as were worthe of that order. Now, when all the ships were discharged of their carriages, the king sent them againe into England, except such ships as were deputed for the carriage of guns and other engins and habiliments of warre.

This being done, the king sent men of armes on horsebacke to espie the situation and strength of the Castell of Pymflew, and other nigh vnto those parts, which Gentlemen, with many prisoners returned, and great prayes of beastes. Their enemies stricken with feare, euery man conueyed their goods and beastes into the Cities, Townes and Castels, not knowing

which the king would first besiege : they strengthened their Townes and walles with stones, guns and other things necessary for their defence. The king took his enterprise to assaige the Towne of Tongue, whose Castell was marvellously defensible, the assaige wherof was given to the Duke of Gloucester, chiefe taine of the kings avantguard, who constrained the Frenchmen so soze, what with assaults, with guns and other engines, that within short time, to wit, the fourth day of the siege, and the ninth day of August, they promised to yeld the Castell to the Duke, if the same were not shortly rescued by the French : but when they heard no word of succour, they yelded the Castell to the king, and he made sir John Kikeley Captaine there.

Castell of  
Tongue taken  
by the En-  
glish.

Also the Earle of Salisbury conductor of the kings second battell whiles the Duke of Gloucester assaiged the Castell of Tongue, wanne the Castell of Aumbeliers, and put out the Frenchmen thereof, which Castell so taken, with all that belonged therunto, the king gaue to the same Earle. And thus this Noble Earle was the first that had any land given unto him of the kings liberalitie in this conquest.

Castell of  
Aumbeliers  
yelded to the  
English.

The Earle Marshall was sent to the Castell of Louers, which in short time he subdued, and after it was given to him by the king.

King Henry  
besieged Cam-

The eighteenth day of August, the king placed himselfe with his army before the Citie of Cane, on the south side nere vnto the Monastery of Saint Stephen, and the Duke of Clarence the kings brother was sent before with one thousand horsemen to keepe the suburbs of the Towne, that the townsmen should not burne them, the Duke thus lodged on the north side, by the Monastery of Suns of the holy Trinitie : the Earle Marshall lay on the left hand of the king, and the Lord Maltravers hard by him, and by him were placed the Lords Talbot and Vmfreuile : and next to them the Lords Neuill and Willoughby. On the right hand of the king lay the Earle of Warwick & the Lord John Grey, and by them the Earles of Huntington & of Salisbury, and the Lord Gren-Cornewall.

The kings army thus placed and set in order : the Abbey of Saint Stephen being manned with Frenchmen, when they sawe themselves too weake to resist the kings force, they took and carried away both victualles and Iewelles of the house, and brought them into the Towne next adioyning, and deuised how they mought set the Abbey on fire : but a certaine Monk of the place boldly put himselfe in jeopardy in the dead season of the night, to creepe on handes and feete, till he came to the Duke of Clarence, whom he found lying in compleate harnesse, in a garden vpon the grasse, with his head vpon a stone, whom he besought to prevent the ruine of his place, which else should be destroyed. For, said he, it doth specially pertaine to you to preserve our Monastery, which are descended of the king which founded our place, builded it, and indued it with possessions, wherefore take mine aduise and I will bring you into the place, and the Duke following the Monks counsell, took scaling ladders, and came to the side of the Abbey, which the Monk knewe was not manned. The Duke hauing by this meanes gotten the place, brought the king into it.

Not



Not farte diftant from this place was an other Monaftery of women, right ftrong and defendible, which alfo that worthy Duke had receiued vnder his tuition.

The fourth day of September, at the breake of the day, the king caufed all his trumpets to be founded, and forthwith the ladders were rayfed to the walles of the Towne, they fell to scaling them with great diligence, but many of them were caft backward into the ditch, and their ladders with them: the French caft great ftones vpon the Englifhmen, they powred on their heades ſerching water, molten lead, boiling pitch, and oyle, all which would not make the Englifhmen forfake the affault, amongft whom Edmond Springes lately made knight, in his armour went vpon the walles of Cane, and fought very foze, both giuing and receiuing many woundes, and yet at length was overcome and died. Notwithftanding the kings men ceafed not to affault and fet vpon the enemies fo fircely, on that one fide, that they that were on the other fide the Towne to keepe and to defend the fame, were forced to leaue their ftanding, and to come to that fide that the king affaulted. And thus when that fide of the Towne was boyde of defence, the Duke of Clarence, in the place which was thought moft fafe, scaled the wals and came vpon the backs of the Frenchmen, which fo fodaynly aftonked them, that they knew not whether it were better to go on for ward againft the king, or to turne backe to withftand the Duke.

Thus great deftruction and laughter was made of the Frenchmen, for the king meeting them in their foreward, and the Duke of Clarence coming on the rereward, toke all hope of fagegard from them, and thus the king got the Towne, and entred the fame by the gates, that the Duke had opened for him. After which entry of the king, he went to with great deuotion the principall Church of the Towne being of Saint Peter, there to giue laudings and praifes to the Almighty God, for the obtayning of this fo great a victozy. All they that intended to prayes were maruelloufly enriched, for the inhabitants of that Towne were men of great fubftance: but there was no man fo hardy that durft preſume to robbe any Church, for feare of the kings iuflice, which was extreme in that caſe, no women in the Towne were rauifhed by the Englifhmen, but ſhortly after the king commaunded all women and children to be auoyded out of the towne, and fo the towne was inhabited of new poſſeſſors. The king made fir Gilbert Vinſeuille Earle of Ryme, captain there, and fir Gilbert Talbot, and fir Iohn Popham bayliffes. Neuertheleſſe the Caſtel of Cane was not yet gotten, they held it thre weekes after the taking of the towne. After the taking of this town of Cane, the ſiege yet enduring before the Caſtel, the puiſſant Prince the Duke of Gloceſter, with his battell before Bayeur, they of the Towne and Caſtell yielded vnto him.

The xx. day of September the Caſtell of Cane was deliuered vnto King Henry: and in ſhort time the Englifhmen had taken the Citie of Liccur, and the Caſtel of Newby: and not long after, all the fortifications, were it town, Caſtell or Citie within a great circuite about them, were taken and reduced to the kings obedience.

Cane in Roy-  
mandy wonne  
by king Henry.

Tho. Walsing.

T. Ottarborne

The Scots  
besieging Ber-  
wick and Rox-  
borough.

Tinus Livius.

Whilste these things were in doing in Normandie, the saourers of sir John Old-castell beganne to rage in England, who with great proffers and promise of money, stirred by the Scots to invade the Realme in the kings absence, affirming that the same would be easily wonne, and it was said that sir John Old-castell talked with William Douglas the Scot at Pontefract, promising him a great summe of money, to perswade the people to come with him, and to bring with them, him, who was falsely called king Richard, and to set him out as king. Also indentures, and other writings were found, made betwixt sir John Old-castell & the Duke of Albany, in the which the Scots were invited to besiege Roxborough and Berwike: whereupon the Duke of Albany besieged Berwike by water and land on each side: and the Earle Dowglas did also besiege Roxborough, carrying there xv. daies, undermining to overthrow the walles, but it hapned at the same time Thomas Beauford Duke of Excester, came to Wyndlesington upon deuotion to that place, who straightwaies, so soone as he heard tidings thereof, went into those parts, gathering by the way as he went men of armes and archers. On the other side John Duke of Bedford protectoz of the Realme, and other Nobles, to wit Ralph Earle of Westmerland, and Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, with 60000. warriors, the Archbishop of Yorke Henry Bewet, which for great age might not indure to ride upon an horse, caused himselfe to be brought to the English hoste in his chaire, there to comfort & in courage the hearts of the people, that they should more ardently defend their countrey, his Cleargy being there with him, & other, remoued those sieges: for the Scots in the night leaving their tents, ladders & other engins, with shame returned into Scotland.

When these things were in good suretie toward the North, the Duke of Excester with a chosen company of men of warre, toke his ships, and sailed into Normandy, where he landed, & toke his journey towards Roane to the king, in the which journey, he wained the Citie of Chzotren.

King Henry hauing deputed in all his towne and fortes, Captaines and gouerners, into whose hands all the Frenchmen that should returne into the kings obessance, should giue their othes of true allegiance. The first of October he departed from Cane with his people, leaving behinde him a sufficient garrison, and toke his journey to the Castell of Coursey, which on the third day after was yelded vnto him. The first of October he went to assiege Argentine, which Towne was very defensible and strong, with a Castell of great strength, but the inhabitants of this Towne answered the kings heralds, that if they were not succoured by the Frenchmen by a certaine day limited, they would deliuer both the Towne and Castell vnto the king vnder condition, to depart with their goods and when the time limited was come, the Towne and Castell were deliuered. After this, daily resorted to the king much people of Normandy, to do fealty vnto him, and to liue vnder his Emprye. The Citie of Sees which was right well peopled, and wherein were two Abbies marvellous strong and defensible, yelded vnto the king: likewise many other Townes in that prouince yelded them vnto the king, without assault or battell. These things thus done, the king toke his voyage toward

ward Alanson, to receiue into his dominion the Towne of Semile, in which iourney he sent a great part of his host to two strong Abbets, whereof the one was called Bomolins, and the other Cley, which, if they had made resistance, he commaunded to be taken by force, but they submitted themselves to the kings authoritie. The king came to Alanson on the 15. of October, where he first caused his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester to pitch his tents before the Castell, and the rest of the Towne himselve assieged. This Towne and Castell was likewise yelded to the king in manner as the rest. The English men after this toke the Towne of Bolosine, and the Towne and Castell of Freswey: and shortly to recount, all the countrey by a great circuit, Cities, Townes and Castels were brought vnder the kings subiection. In this time, the Duke of Britaine accompanied with many great estates of his countrey came to king Henry, with whom he accorded a peace from the 17. day of October, vntill the last day of September, in the yere following. The Dolphine of France also desired to treat with the king of England for peace, to whose Embassadors the king appointed the Towne of Tongue, whereunto they might safely resort for the same treaty, but there was no good done.

The king besieged Walbeys, which the French, to their power resisted right manfully, and made with them many battailes, and skirmishes: but in the ende the inhabitants, seeing the Englishmen more couetous of honour, then weary of paine, they couenanted with the king, that if by the second day of Januarie they were not deliuered from the siege, they should freely deliuer vnto the king their Towne. In this meane time was taken in England sir Iohn Olde-castle, in the territoyp of the Lord Powesse, not without danger and hurt of some that toke him: neither could he himselfe be taken before he was wounded. At the which time all the states of the Realme were called to a Parliament at London, therein to prouide the king of a subsidie and aide of money, who toke great paines beyond the seas. These Lords & other when they heard tell that the publike enemy was taken, they agreed all, not to dissolue the Parliament vntill he were examined, and heard to answer in the same: wherefore the Lord of Powes was sent to fetch him vp with power, who brought him to London in a litter, wounded, and also a Cleark with him that was of counsell in all his secrets. As soone as the said sir Iohn Olde-castle was brought into the Parliament before the Duke of Bedford, regent and gouernour of the Realme, and the other estates, his inditement was read before him, of his forcible insurrection against the king in Saint Giles hielde, and other treasons by him committed, the question was asked how he would excuse himselfe, and shew why he should not be deemed to die: but he seeking other talke beganne to preach of the mercies of God, and that all mortal men that would be followers of God, ought to preferre mercy aboue iudgement, and that vengeance pertayned onely to the Lord, and ought not to be practised by them that worship God, but to be left to God alone: with many other wordes to detract the time, vntill the chiefe Justice admonished the Regent not to suffer him to spend the time so vainely; in molesting of the Nobles of the Realme: whereupon the Earle of Bedford re-

T. Walsinghā.  
Sir Iohn  
Old-castle  
taken.  
Parliament at  
London.

Answer of fir  
John Old-  
castell.

gent commanded him to answer formally vnto the matter laid to his charge. The said sir Iohn being thus vrged, at the last after deliberation taken, he said, it is the least thing that I account of, to be iudged by you, as of mans iudgement: and againe, he began to talke, but nothing to the purpose, vntill the chiefe iustice commanded him againe to answer finally, and to informe them if he could, why he should not suffer death. To the which he stoutly answered, that he had no iudge amongst them, so long as his liege Lord King Richard was a liue, and in the Realme of Scotland, which answered when he had made, because there needed no further witness, he was commanded to be drawne and hanged vpon a gallows, and to be burned hanging vpon the same, which iudgement was executed vpon him on the xiiii. day of December in Saint Giles field. where when many honourable persons were present, the last words that he spake, was to sir Thomas of Epingham, aduising him, that if he saw him rise from death to life againe, the third day, he would procure that his sect might be in peace and quiet: he was hanged by the necke in a chaine of iron, and after consumed with fire.

1418.

King Henry kept his feast of the Patenitie of Christ at Batour in Normandie, where when the day limited was come, they of Phalois, with gates open deliuered the Towne to the king, and shortly after the Castell was yielded to him also.

The Duke of Clarence with his armed power conquered in this time the Townes and Castels of Harcourt, Fagnon, Liuil, Cambysle, Courton, and diuers other, and also the strong Abbey of Biskilrom, all which places, the mightie Duke, with assaiges, assaults, oppressions, and faire promises, especially obserued, in short time he subdued, to the kings Empery.

An. reg. 6.

The Duke of Gloucester was sent to the Ile of Constantine, in the first entrie of which iourney, he obtayned the strong Castell of Caudey, from whence he went to the Towne and Castell of Alire, the inhabitants whereof yielded them with all their goods, to liue vnder the kings obedience: the Castell of Lozney yielded to the Duke: the Town of Lew, the Castell of Saint Saniour le Vicount, Maleiges, Beckcourt, and Vaho: all these submitted them to the Duke for the king.

King Henry during this time, sent of his owne company the Earle of Huntington to suruey certaine defensible places, which in short time he manfully reduced vnder the kings obeisance. The king sent also the Earle of Warwike with another company of men of warre, to assiege the Castell of Donfront, which Castell vnto him was deliuered on the 22. day of Iune.

When the Duke of Gloucester (after he had bene with the king) had re-  
prised his iourney towards Sharbrough, the Captaine of the same hauing knowledge of his purpose, and other Noble men that were deputed by the Frenchmen, for the defence of that place, assembled out of all partes the strongest men of warre, in marvellous great number, for the resistance of the Englishmen, and for the defence of the Towne: the Duke approached nigh vnto the Towne, whereunto he laid his siege, but not in all places, for the inhabitantes had broken the bidge without the Towne, whereby the  
Englishmen



Engliſhmen were depriued of their paſſage ouer.

Now to returne to the king, who had perſeuered the whole Lent, and alſo the ſolemnitie of Eaſter in prayers, faſtings, vigils, almesdeeds, and other woꝝks of mercy, within the Towne of Baiaur: from whence after Eaſter he went to Cane, where he ſolemnized the feaſt of Saint George, at the which feaſt he made 15. knights of the Bathe, ſiue of them were, ſir Lewes Robſart, ſir Roger Saluſine, ſir Iohn Siewart, ſir Iohn Shotebroke, and ſir Iohn Mountgomery, whom he ſent to beſiege diuers places thereabouts. This being done, he delibered to go to Roane, the chiefe and principall City of Normandy, notwithstanding that his company was greatly miniſhed by the abſence of the Duke of Gloſter, that then lay at Sharbrough, as is afore ſhewed, and of the Earle of Marwicke that then beſieged the Caſtell of Donfront. Peruertheleſſe the king departed from Cane the ninth of June, & toke his voyage with all his people towards the Citie of Roane: in which iourney, becauſe it was not farre out of his way, he firſt laid ſiege to the Towne of Louars, and compelled them within to yeld to him vpon conditions, on the ſeuen of Saint Iohn Baptiſt.

King Henry  
beſieged Lo-  
uars.

Then the king on the 22. of June, remoued his army towards Pont-larche, where he laid his ſiege on the one ſide of the Towne, by the middle whereof, the riuer of Sene hath his courſe, but could haue no paſſage ouer the riuer to lay ſiege on the other ſide, ſo the bridge which was without the Towne was defended with a ſtrong Tower, and a gariſon: but king Henry commaunded to make boates of wickers, and thoſe to be cloſed in beaſtes ſkinnes, by which boates, on the fiſt of July, the Duke of Clarence with his company paſſed ouer ſecretly in great number, and then beſieged the other ſide of the Towne: but becauſe the riuer of Sene diuided his hoſt, where by if eyther part ſhould haue neede of other, they could not come togiſther ſo the riuer, the king cauſed to be made ſo many ſmall ſquare boates of the wicker aforeſaid, that being tyed together, and caſt into the riuer, he made of them a bridge. When the inhabitants and gariſons perceiued them thus enuironed in all parts, they agreed with the king, that if within 15. daies they were not deliuered from this ſiege, they ſhould deliuer to the king the Towne and Caſtell, and when the day was come, they performed promiſe: and this was the firſt bridge ouer the riuer of Sene that the king ſubdued to his power.

Titus Livius.  
King Henry  
beſieged  
Pontlarche.

After the king had thus obtayned that bridge ouer the riuer of Sene, and that there was none other riuer or ſtound might let his iourney, with all the haſte he might, he entred his iourney towards Roane. The Citizens hearing the approach of their enemies, and fearing leaſt they ſhould be lodged in the ſuburbes, which were much larger than the Citie was within the walles, and was alſo much replenished with Monasteries, Churches, and Towers, burned the ſame, and made all euen with the ground. So this City on the thirtieth day of July this victorious king approached, againſt whom came the Citizens with their gariſons and men of warre, where the moze part of all that day they continued in battell, and fought foze on both

King Henry  
beſieged Roan

partes, but the Frenchmen were forced to seeke their succour within the walles of the Citie, whom in their recoile the King pursued still befoze the Citie, where he ordered his siege in this manner. First, the King with a Noble company of young and hardie men lodged himselfe befoze the gate of Saint Hilarie. The Duke of Clarence with his powder was lodged befoze the gate of Caulx. The Duke of Excester, after he was come to the King, was lodged with his people befoze the gate of the Castell, called Beanuice. Earle Marshall was lodged befoze the gate called Parkenile. The Earle of Warwicke, after he was come from the Castell of Donfrount, was lodged vpon the hill, where the strong Monastery of Saint Katherin was. The Earles of Salisbury and Huntingdon, were lodged there vpon the other side of the riuer of Sène: vpon whom their enemies made many assaultes: and because the riuer of Sène diuided the English host in two parts, the King caused to be made a strong brydge of timber ouer the same riuer, that when néede should require, they might haue frée passage on foote and hoise: and because their enemies should not approach vnto it, with their ships or gallies, the king caused to be made a great chaine to be drawne ouer the riuer, betwixt the Citie and the brydge. At that time the king of Portugale cosin to the king of England, sent a Flaue of ships well manned vnto the kings ayde, whom the king commaunded to lie betwixt the Citie and the Sea, to enclose the Citie from all succours by water. The Towne of Caudebecke fearing the danger of the time, covenanted with the king of England, that when the Citie of Roane were taken and deliuered into the kings obaysance, they in like manner would yelde them to him, without any assault, and vnder the same appointment accorded with the king, foure teine other sensible Townes and Castles that were nigh borders vnto Roane. After many cruell battels and assaults, the Cittizens fearing at length to be famished, dayly put out of the Citie a great number of poore people and other, but the hunger encreasing, they were forced to eate their horses, dogs, cats, rats, and mise: and when such and other like things were consumed and eaten, then the plague of famine entred the Citie, so that the people for default of reliefe died, that the liuing might scarcely burie the dead, whereby that Noble Citie was brought into so much misery, that it is not lesse maruel than pitifull to heare.

In this meane time during this siege of Roane, the Duke of Excester besieged the Citie of Enerops: also about the twentie of August king Henry had thre maruellous victozies in Normandy. The first was that 100. Englishmen took thre great Lords at a place called Bilbuisse, & put to flight 380. persons besides. The second was, 400. of his enemies entred within the suburbs of the Towne of Chyolens, and 11. Englishmen chased them away and toke foure of them, and one 12. and toke 40. of their horses. The third was, the enemies would indeed haue taken the Towne which was called Leuers, but the Captaine of the same with an hundred of our men went out against 1000. of them, and overcame them, and toke 180. Gentlemen of the enemies. About this time also Captaine de la Bouche

toke

toke the towne of Pontois by Paris.

When the Citizens of Roane, perceined themselves maruellously afflicted by famine, (as is befoze shewed) and also to be in dispaire of succor, from the Frenchmen, now after halfe a yeres siege and moze, vpon certaine conditions, they deliuered to the King of England their Citie, Castle, tower, abbayes, Churches, houses, citizens, captaines, garrisons, and generallie all things that were within the Citie, whatsoeuer they were. The xix. day of Januarie, there had died within this Citie (as was said) for default of victuals during this siege mo than xxx. thousand people. This noble King the rather to relieue this oppressed Citie, ordained the same to be the chiefe chamber of all Normandie, and ordeined his erchequer, his treasure, and his coynage to be kept in the same; he also edified a strong tower behinde the Castle. Whilist the King ordered his businesse at Roane, hee sent diuers Lords with strong puissance of people, to receiue the Castles of townes bordering vpon Roane, amongst whom the Duke of Clarence, in thort time reduced to the King, the mightie Castle of Galiard, the towne of Vernon, the towne of Maunt, the Castle of Wandmount, and many other strong places and holds.

1419.

Ann. reg. 7.

The Earle of Salisbury, with the garrison to him assigned toke the towne of Hounslow, the towne of Houndeur de Willers, the towne of Cwe, the towne of Gurney, the new Castle, & generally all the places in that part.

This yere Quene Ioane mother to the Duke of Britayne, and the Kings stepmother being defamed of some wicked practise, by witchcraft, or sozerie, that she had deuised the Kings death, by the counsell of Iohn Randolph Doctor of Diuinitie, of the order of the friars minors, then of the couen of Shrotonbury, hir confessor, forsaisted all hir lands and goods by Parliament, and hauing all her seruants put from hir, was committed to the custodie of Iohn Pellam, and by him sent to the Castle of Leeds in Kent, hee appoynted nine seruants to attend hir, and to bring her into the Castle of Weinsay, there to be gouerned vnder his prouidence. Friar Randolph, being apprehended in the Isle of Jersey, was conueyed to Chirbrughe and there imprisoned, and from thence was sent to the towne of London, where at length, to wit, in the yere of Christ 1429. on the fift of Iune, he was slaine by the parson of Saint Peters Church in the tower, falling out at words with him, and after Quene Ioane was deliuered of hir imprisonment.

King Henry sent his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, accompanied with the Earle Marhall, and a great power of armed men, to lay siege befoze the towne and Castle of Luorie, which towne, after many assaults and batels, the Duke toke by force: but the Castle thereof was not yeilded, till the 13. of May. The King also sent the Earle of Huntington with a power from Maunt, to the towne of Pontois, by which, if it were taken, he might haue the moze sure and easie passage to Paris. Those which were sent, at the entrie of the night were come nigh vnto Pontois, where, in a wood they left their horses, and that done, in the darknes of the night, they went on foote to the ditch of the towne, which then were dyke, where part of them lay on the banks

bankes of the ditches, with their ladders in their hands ready to scale the wals when time would serue, and the residue hid them in the vines where they might be ready to enter the towne at the opening of the gates. At the bzeake of the day, they of the towne changed their watch, at the which change, the walles were left without watches for the time. But the Englishmen seeing time to accomplish their intent, raised their ladders, and scaled the wals, and by that meanes, entred the towne: where, some of them forthwith bzake the gate, and made entrie for the rest of their company, which, when the garrisons of the towne perceiued, as men amazed, they turned themselves to flight. But not long after, they armed them, and assailed their enemies, but to the Englishmens great auaille, the Earle of Huntington with his company set spurs to their horses, and halted them to the succour of their first company, whereby the Frenchmen as all discouraged and in despaire to saue the towne, at the sight of these new rescues that came to the Englishmen, leauing behinde them all their riches and substance endeuored themselves to escape by flight, and so the towne of Pointois, auoided of al Frenchmen, was left free to the English. After these enterprises thus atchieued, the King with all his companie came to the towne of Pointois, where he abode a certaine time, from whence he sent the Duke of Clarence with a chosen power of men to Paris, to view the scituacion and strength thereof, before which Citie, when he had tarried certaine dayes and had sene all that him liked, and that none of the Frenchmen would issue out of the Citie to fight with him, he returned to the King, and ascertained him of all that he had sene.

Bokinuillers  
yelded.

On the viii. of August, King Henry with all his host departed from Pointois. And because the Castle of Bokinuillers had done certaine inhumane cruelties to the Kings lands that bordered thereabout, to the intent to repress their malice, the King lodged himselfe not far from thence, and sent certaine to assault the same Castle, where both the inhabitants and garrisons feared so much the King, that as men desperate of all succours, they yelded both Castle and goods. And then all the townes, Castles, and holds within a great circuite, without abiding battaile, yelded them to the King: but that strong and mighty towne of Syfors, whereof the Castle is much more defensible than the towne, would not submit to the King, wherefore on the last day of August the King with all his host toke his iourney thither, and enclosed the towne with his pavilions and tents. Yet wirt him and them of the towne, were many sharpe battailes and cruell assaults, but at all times the Englishmen put the Frenchmen to flight, wherefore the inhabitants and garrisons of the towne and Castle deliuered the same to the King in the xliiii. day of September.

Esquerant.

In this meane time the Dolphin assembled an host of 20000. men at Ponfrea and Faulcien, in purpose to fight with the Englishmen, and for the same by his letters he sent to Troyes in Champeigne for the Duke of Burgoyne, desiring him to haue his company in his iorney. At whose request the same Duke incontinent vpon sight of his letters, and vpon the suretie of the Dolphins oth, safely to goe and come, came vnto him to the place aforesaid, where notwithstanding his former oath, against both Gods law and mans law,



law, the Dolphin caused him at his coming, abhominably and cruelly to be murdered. After whose death the Dolphins servants disposed him of his array, and cast his naked body into a vile pit. The Duke being thus murdered, Philip his sonne, who had married the Lady Micquell the Dolphins sister, entered into all his fathers possessions: and shortly after, he toynd in amitie with the King of England, promising him in marriage his sister in law the Lady Katherine, & to be heire to King Charles: King Henry promised to deliver to him so many of them as were guilty of his fathers murdering, as came into his hands, and the Dolphin should be for ever excluded from all title to the crown of France. The Earle of S. Paul was gouvernor of Paris although he were but rini. yeres of age, he governed the Citie wisely, to the Duke of Burgoynes behoofe, who had put him into that charge. The Dolphin would have excused himselfe of the murder lately committed, but could not, for he was led and governed by them that had committed it. Indee diuers of them had their friendes killed, in the murder of Paris, when the Earle of Erminake and the other prisoners were killed there, and therefore to be reuenged on the Duke they cared not in what danger they put the Realme, nor in what blame the Dolphin came, who notwithstanding he put them from him, and they went out of the Realme, all this would not appease the matter, nor reconcile the Dolphin to the Duke Philip.

King Henry with his whole armie returned to Paunts, where of his host he made three battails, whereof the one he deliuered to the Duke of Gloucester, whom he sent to laboure the strong towne called Saut Germainys, which after many battails and skirmishes, in short time was yielded to him for the King. The second battail he sent to the Castle of Mount Oye, which in like manner fearing the Englishmens puissance, yielded them to the King. And with the third of the said battails the K. in his owne person went to assiege Melun, which aboue all other was most strong. The situation of this towne was in a plenteous Ile, betwixt two armes of the sea, no man mought approach nigh to assault it by land, but onely by the bridge: and by water no vessel might come nigh vnto it, for the infinite multitude of piles that were fired and hid in the riuers. This towne was also defended with high and strong walles, within it also there were people in great number, as well of the inhabitants as of garrisons of men of war, that were purposely deputed for the defence thereof. Wherefore the King considering the strength, and defence of this place, assembled diuers ships and other small vessels, where in by right great labour, hee first anoyded and clemented the riuer of the said piles, which being done, he made all those vessels to be fastned together with chaines, and then he commaunded to be made certaine small Castles and towers of timber, which when they were finished, hee intended by strength of men, in those ships to assault the walles of the towne, but the garrisons and inhabitants being feared at the sight of these towers, before they were all finished, they sent their captaines to the King to treat with him for peace, which was granted them upon condition, that if they were not aided by the last of Nouember, by the Frenchmen, they should deliuer the towne to

to the King, and when the day came they according to covenant deliuered the towne to the King, and then the King returned to Gaunt, and sent the Duke of Ercester to besiege the Castle of Gallard, which to him was yielded the 20. of December.

1420.

King Henry solemnized the feast of the Patience of our Lord in the Citie of Roane: he sent the Earle of Salisburie to take the towne of Freseay, which in short time was deliuered to him. The Earle of Arundell and the Earle of Huntingdon, were sent to subdue the prouince of Shenon, where the Dolphin had deputed a capitaine with a strong power, which capitaine met the two Earles and gaue them battaile, but the Englishmen remained conquerours, and thus the two Earles subdued the prouince of Shenon, without any great resistance.

Whil实现 these and many other victozies were atchieued, the King continuing in the Citie of Roane, lauding God, the Ambassadors of Charles King of Fraunce, and of Philip Duke of Burgoigne, came to treat of peace, where of the King they were honorably receiued, and hee sent backe with them to the French King, and the Duke of Burgoigne, his Ambassadors with full authoritie to conclude this long sought peace, of which Ambassadors, the principall was the Earle of Marwicke in companie of certaine Bishops and other discrete men, accompanied with a strong power of armed men. These Ambassadors were first brought to the Duke of Burgoigne, because hee was next vnto them, and after they toke their iourney vntill they came to the Citie of Troyes, where they found King Charles of Fraunce, with the Quene his wife, and that beautifull Lady Katherine their daughter. And entering into communication of peace with the Kings Counsell of Fraunce, the way of peace was found betwixt those two Kings by alliance, that is to say, by a marriage to be made betwixt the most victorious King of England, and the Lady Katherine daughter to the King and Quene of Fraunce: but because they perceived that many things might not be done without the presence of the Kings, as well for the apposition of their seales for the ratifying of the articles of this peace, as for the solemnization of the matrimonie, and also that King Charles was a man of many yeeres, they condescended that the King of England at a certaine day amongst them limited should come to the foresaid Citie of Troyes, with as great an armed power as he would: at which day appointed, if he failed to be there, all his communication of peace should be as void. These things thus concluded and set downe in writing, the Earle of Marwicke with his company returned to the King of England, to whom they declared by order what they had done, who was content in all things to performe their appointments, and prepared for his iourney. He called together Knights, men of armes and archers to the number of sixtene thousand, of them the more part were archers: and when the time came that hee would depart towards Troyes (as hee was accustomed) hee diuided his people in three parts and battels, and two wings, and in that manner the eight day of May, he entered his iourney toward Troyes in Campaigne, where hee was mette by

Ann. reg. 8.

by the Duke of Burgoigne accompanied with many noble men, two leagues without the towne, whom hee receiued with great honoꝛ and due obseruance. Then this most victorious King accompanied both of English and Frenchmen of euery estate and degree, entered the foresaid Citie of Trops, the streets whereof without any abiding hee passed untill he came to the Kings Palace, where King Charles and the Quene his wife abode his comming, of whom he was receiued goodly and after a princely manner. When the King of England was thus royally receiued, after the due resolutions on his part made to King Charles and the Quene, hee departed from them, and by the Duke of Burgoigne and other great estates as well of England as of Fraunce, he was conueyed to his lodges. The Citie was diuided into two parts, whereof the one halfe was assigned to the Frenchmen and Burgonians, and the other halfe to the Englishmen: and because that part assigned to the Englishmen, sufficed not to receiue them all within the walles, but that a great part of them must be lodged in the suburbs, the King of England, because his people on that part should haue free concourse together, he caused the wall on that part of the Citie where he was lodged, to be cast downe to the ground. King Charles gaue authoritie and power to Isabel his wife and Quene, to Philip Duke of Burgoigne, and to certayne other of his Counsell plenarily to conclude the peace with King Henry, for him and for his Realme of Fraunce, vnder such conditions as should be decreed, and also to pꝛoue, ratifie, and confirme the same, by oth solemnized in the person of King Charles, without fraud, in all things to be obserued vnto the said King Henry, his heires and successors, by the said King Charles his heires and successors, &c. On the 21. of May, in the xl. yere of the reigne of King Charles, in the Cathedral Church of Trops, the King of England with the Duke of Clarence his brother, and other Dukes, Carles, Bishops, Barons, Lords of estate, and other prelates of England, and Isabel the Quene of France, with the Duke of Burgoigne, and other of the Kings Counsell of France, and in that part his especiall commissioners, for and in the name of the King of Fraunce, and also for themselves, and in their proper names, in a great assembly of the three estates of France, vulgarly called their Parliament, concluded a peace betwixt the two Realmes of England and France, and the same ratified and approued with the conditions and articles that in part shall follow, whereupon writings were made, sealed with the broade seale of the said King Charles. When immediatly Isabel the Quene and the Duke of Burgoigne, in the name of King Charles, made a solemne oth vpon the holy Euangelists, that the same Charles, his heires and successors should obserue and keepe, without fraud, the peace made betwixt the two Realmes. And the same oth the Quene and the Duke of Burgoigne in their owne names and for themselves, their heires and successors, made vnto the King for him, his heires and successors, and after them as many as were there present both of the Kings Counsell, and also of the Parliament, as Bishops, Lords, knights, and commons, made the same oth to the King. And the 23. and 24. day of May the Chancelloꝛ of France, and many other Lords, bishops, pre-

lates,

lates, and noble men gave the like faith and oth to King Henry of England.

Roger Wall.

The third of June, being present the Councell of King Charles, Isabel Quene of France, the Duke of Burgoigne, and the Parliament of France, and also the Duke of Clarence, with many Bishops, Lords, and Knights of England, with King Henry, the matrimonie was solemnized betwixt the most victorious King Henry of England, and the excellent and glorious Lady Katherine daughter to Charles of France and Isabel his Quene. The peace that was confirmed betwixt the said two kings and their Realmes was read as followeth.

King Henry from now forth during the life of King Charles, shall not name or write himselfe King of France, nor shall not suffer himselfe of his people so to be named or written. After the death of King Charles, King Henry shall be King of France peaceably with his heires and successors. And because King Charles by reason of his infirmities is unable to governe the common weale, King Henry during the life of Charles, shall rule and governe the Realme of France, to the profite and honor of the same King Charles. King Charles in all his writings shall name the same King Henry our sonne and heire of France, during the life of the said King Charles. King Henry shall be written, Henry King of England, and heire and regent of France, and in the like manner he shall write himselfe in all things that shall be authorized under his owne seale. King Henry shall call King Charles his father, and Quene Isabel his mother, and shall honor them. Nor King Henry shall not prohibite, withhold, nor defend King Charles his father of the crowne of France, nor the issues or revenues thereof. And the Quene his mother at all times during her life, he shall keepe in due estate as belongeth to his maiestie. &c. with divers other articles which for brevitie I set not downe in this place.

After the final end and accomplishing of this marriage, covenants and conditions, ratified in all parts, King Henry accompanied of King Charles and of his counsell, of the two Quenes, Isabel and Katherine, and of the Duke of Burgoigne, departed from Troyes, and took his journey to Paris, and from Paris not many dayes after they all went to lay siege to the Citie of Sens, which was to them contrary, but before the whole host were settled in their places, the captaine Citizens and garrisons submitted their bodies and Citie with all that they had to the King. Then they hasted to Monstreau, which to wne they took by force.

King Henry  
besieged Sens  
June.  
Tho. Walling.

On the 16. of July they went to the Citie of Melune, and enuironed the same with a strong siege, for there were the Kings of England, of France, and Scotland, the Dukes of Burgoigne, Banier, Clarence Bedford, and Gloucester, the Earles of March, Warwick, Huntington, and Somerset, &c. This siege continued 14. weekes and od dayes, from the feast of Mary Magdalen, to the feast of All Saints, not without in a manner every day, a conflict and foze skirmish, but at length for want of victuals the besieged, yielded themselves to the Kings of England and France, from whence the foresaid Kings with a great part of their armie went to Paris.

King



King Henry kept his Christmas in the Citie of Paris, in the Castle of S. Anthony. And after he had holden a Parliament there he went to Roane. and there with his Normans, and Englishmen held a Parliament. And then when he had established sure guard for his Realme of France, and Dutchie of Normandie, he passed through Picardy to Calais, and so to Douer, where with his Quene he landed on Candlemasse day.

1427.  
Titus Livius.

The fourteenth of Februarie Quene Katherine was crowned at Westminster, unto whom the King assigned to his dowrye 10000. markes: also he consented to the deliuerie of the King of Scots, who had been long prisoner in England, with condition, that before his departure out of England, he shall take to wife the Duke of Somersets sister, néce to the cardinall of Winchester.

The xxii. of March being Easter éne, Thomas duke of Clarence, the Kings brother, the Lord Rose Parrhall, and his brother Gilbert Vmframville Earle of Bime, and Iohn Gray made Earle of Tankerull in Normandy, with many other Lords, were slaine beyond the water of Leire in France, & many Lords were taken prisoners, of the which were the Earle of Huntington and the Earle of Somerset and his brother, the Lord Fitz Walter, and other, the bastard of Clarence, with strength, got his fathers body, brought it into England and buried it at Canterbury, besides R.H. the fourth his father.

Ann. reg. 9.

In a Parliament at Westminster it was ordeined that no man should proffer gold in payment, but if it held waight, wherefoze were ordeined balances and wrights. The King suppressed the French houses of religious monks and friers, and such like in England, because they thought til of the conquest ouer France, their lands were giuen by him and Henry the first, to monasteries and colledges of learned men.

Prisoners taken in England suppressed

In this Parliament was demanded a subsidie. The Bishop of Winchester lent the King 20000. pound to restrain the matter. The King hauing disposed all things in order concerning the Realme of England and the wars in Scotland, leauing in England his Quene with a great power, to the number (after Enguerant) of 30. thousand, returned into France, where, after he had visited the King and Quene of France at Paris, he took the Castle of Brewor by assault. And when hee heard, that his enemies prepared themselves to battaile, he approached the shoud of Loyze, about which shoud it was said his enemies were: but against him came no man. Therfoze the King led his host to lay siege to the Citie of Sens, commonly called the Kings new towne, which towne for lacke of victuals yelded themselves and the towne to the King.

Titus Livius.

Iohn Lord Mortimer brake south of the tower of London, and being afterwards taken, he was drawn and hanged: as shall be shewed in the second pære of the raigne of King Henry the first.

In the moneth of October, when King Henry had deliuered the Citie of Paris from all annoyances, hee with his host went to besiege the Citie of Meaulx in Brie, to which Citie nigh adioyning, is a place called the Market of Spear, betwixt which two places floweth the river of Marne, which

Titus Livius.

which also environeth both the same places.

This Citie was besieged all the winter, wherein were so many, and so great stormes and floods of raine, that the Kings host was often annoyed with hunger and colde.

The 6. of December, at foure of the clocke in the afternoone, Lady Katherine Quene of England, brought forth hir first begotten son in the Castle of Windsor, and his name was giuen him Henry: for there receiued him at the font, Iohn Duke of Bedford his uncle Lord Warden of England, and Henry the Kings uncle Bishop of Winchester, and Iaquelyn Dutches of Holland that remained then in England. Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Canterbury, doing the office of Baptisme.

1422.

King Henry held his feast of Christs Passiuitie at the siege before Melore, for he would not giue over his siege.

An. reg. 10. In the moneth of Februarie the Knights that were in garrison, and the principall of the Citie of Meaux perceiuing that the sommer coming should cause the siege to be more light, and lesse painfull to the Englishmen, and difficult vnto themselves, departed the Citie, and went into that place, that is called the Market of Meaux, as to the more defensible holde, after whose departing the common people hauing none abilitie to resist the Kings power, yielded themselves and the Citie to the King. After this in the moneth of May, when the King had soze beaten the foresaid Market of Meaux, he constrained the Frenchmen that were besieged, to condescend vnto certaine covenants, and to deliuer the place vnto him: and shortly after were deliuered to the King the towne of Dreux in Maloie, the Castle of Pier Pont-meraleto, Offemount and many others. After the rendring of these townes and Castles, the King sent ouer into England prisoners 160. which landed at Hampton on the first of Iuly, from whence they were brought in carts to the tower of London, and the King returned to Paris.

Quene Katherine sailed into France.

In the moneth of Aprill Katherine Quene of England shipped at Hampton, and sailed ouer into France with a strong power, vnder the conduct of Iohn Duke of Bedford the Kings brother, Humfrey duke of Gloucester being appointed Warden of England, in the Duke of Bedfords place: when the coming of Quene Katherine was knowne to King Henry hir husband, and to Charles King of France, both these Kings, and with them the Quene of France, accompanied with many great Lords and estates, as well of England as of France, went to meete hir at Boys de Viscenne, where she was joyfully receiued of them, as if she had been an Angel sent from God. The xxx. day of May the two Kings of England and France, with their Quenes departed from Boys de Viscenne, and went to Paris: the King of England and his Quene were lodged in the Castle of Loure, and the King of France and his Quene were lodged in the pallace of S. Paul.

King Henry sickned to the death.

King Henry hearing that the Dolphin with a great power besieged the towne of Gailney, hee determined to goe himselte to the raising of the siege, and so came to the towne of Corbeil, and to Senlis, where he waied so sicke, of an hot burning ague, with a vehement fire, that hee was constrained

trained to farse and fend his brother John Duke of Bedford, Thomas Beauford duke of Excester, the Carles of March, and Warwicke, to rescue them of Colney: but the Dolphin raised his siege and departed thence. King Henry his disease increasing, made his testament, appoynted his treasure and Jewels to be sold, his debts to be payed, as well to the pleasure of his souldiers as to other unto whom he ought good, either in England or in France: he ordained his brother John Duke of Bedford to be regent and gouernor of France and and Poymandie, and committed the keeping of Henry his sonne to Henry Beaufort Bishop of Winchester, and to Thomas Bewfort, Duke of Excester, he departed this life in the Castle called Boyes de Viscenne, not farre from Paris, on the last of August, in the yere 1422. When he had reigned nine yeres siue moneths and odde dayes. There was present at his death King Charles of France, and the two Quenes: but before his death this most prudent King disposed the guard of the young Prince his sonne, and the defence of the Realme of England, to his brother Humfrey Duke of Glocester, but the custodie of the body of this young Prince, the King committed to his vncle the Duke of Excester, to indoctrine him in all good manners: and the reuenues of the Dutchie of Poymandy, he bequeathed to his brother John Duke of Bedford, for the gouernance of the same Dutchie and of the Realme of France: he appointed his debts to be paid out of his treasure, and of his Jewels. In his life time he redified the castle of Kenelworth, he builded there a most pleasant place, and caused it to be termed le pleasaunt marish, King Henry the eight, caused the said banquetting house to be taken downe, and part of it to be set vp in the base courte at Kenelworth: he redified his royall manour that then was called Shene, now Richmond: he founded two monasteries vpon the Thames not farre from Richmond, the one of Carthusians, which he named Bethlem, the other religious men and women of Saint Bridget, and that he named Sion. He founded Garter, principall King at armes of all Englishmen, and also the brotherhood of S. Giles without Crecles gate of London. He gaue 1000. markes to the woorkes of Westminster Church, moze he gaue to the same Church a faire Psalter, with another booke called *Flores historiaram*, both verse faire witten, and enlumined, and a royall scepter of gold, for the Quene. The ring that King Richard the second gaue vnto S. Edwards Prince, being taken away, this King Henry ressozed againe, in the which ring there was a Rubie, esteemed worth a thousand markes in value: he gaue to the colledge of Windsoze, or chappell of Knights, of Saint George and of the garter, an Image of massy siluer to the honoz of our blessed virgin Mary, the mother of Christ. Executors of his testament were Henry Fitz Hugh, Walter Hungerford, Walter Bewchampe, Lewes Roblart, William Porter, and Robert Babthorpe Knights, and John Woodhouse, and John Lauenthorpe Esquiers: his goods, cattels, Jewels, and money came to 40000. markes, as appeareth by the record of Henry the first, the first yere. Shortly after his departing, his bowels were enterred in the Church of S. Poze de Fosles, and his corps well enbaulmed and seared, was closed in lead: and accompanied with all the Lords, estates, and commons of England

King Henry  
deceased.

John Rouse.

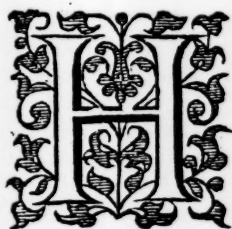
that were there present, with also many Lords and great estates, as well of France, Normandie, Burgondy, and Picardy, was brought with great honour to Paris, and set in the Church of our Lady, where were done for him right solemne exequies, with distribution of money and great almes to the poore. From thence he was brought to Roane, where he abode long. When all things necessarie were prepared for the conueiance of the dead King into England, his body was laid in a chariot, which was drawn by fower great horses: and about the dead corpes they laid a figure made of boiled hides or leather, representing his person, as nigh to the semblance of him as could be deuised, painted curiously to the similitude of a liuing creature: vpon whose head was set an Imperiall diademe of golde and precious stones, on his body a purple roabe furred with ermin, and in his right hand he held a scepter royall, and in his left hand a ball of golde, with a crosse fixed thereon. And in this manner adorned was this figure laid in a bed in the said chariot, with his visage vncovered toward the heauens: and the couerture of his bed was of red silke beaten with golde: and besides that, when the bodie should passe through any good towne, a canaple of marvellous great value, was borne ouer the chariot, by men of great worship. In this manner accompanied of the King of Scots, and of all Princes, Lords, and Knights of his house, he was brought from Roan to Abeville, where the corpes was set in the Church of Saint Wiffrane. From Abeville, he was brought to Hedín, and from thence to Penstreull, so to Bulloigne, and to Calice. In all this iourney were many men about the chariot clothed all in white, which bare in their hands torches burning, after whom followed all the householde seruants in blacke, and after them came the Princes, Lords, and estates of the Kings blood, adorned in bestures of mourning: and after all this, from the said corpes the distance of two English miles followed the Quene of England right honourably accompanied. In this manner they entred Calice, from whence after a few dayes they departed, and continued their iournies by water and land vntill they came to London, where they arrived about the tenth of Nouember, and so were conueyed by London brídge, through Cheape to the Cathedral Church of Saint Paul: vpon the couering of the foremost of the fower horses that conueyed the chariot, were imbrodered the ancient armes of England: vpon the couerture of the second horse were the armes of England and Fraunce, in one shield quarterly: vpon the couerture of the third horse was imbrodered the armes of Fraunce, without any manner of difference: and on the fourth horse were the armes of King Arthure, which was three crownes golde in a field azure. When his exequies were solemnised at Saint Pauls Church in London, he was brought from thence to be entered in the Abbey of Saint Peter at Westminster amongst his Noble ancestors, at the fete of King Edward the Confessor, a royall image of silver and gilt was laid vpon his tombe, which Quene Katherine his wife caused to be made for him, but about the latter end of King Henry the eight, the head of the Kings image being of massy silver, was broken off, and conueyed cleane away, with the plates of silver and gilt that couered his body. Thus this most victorious and

renowned



renowned King entred the way decreed for every creature, in the flower and most lustie time of his age, to wit, but five and thirtie yeres olde, when he had reigned nine yeres, ten moneths, and od dayes. The first of Henry the first, Quene Katherine had assured for hir sonner, Castles, lands, tenements, named and deliuered unto the summe of 40000. scuts, every two scuts worth a noble.

## King Henry the sixt.



Henry the first, borne at Windsor, being an infant of eight moneths old, began his raigne the last of August, in the yere 1422. Continuing the time of his youth, the gouernance of the Realme was committed to Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, and the gard of his person to Thomas Duke of Excester: and to Iohn Duke of Bedford was given the regiment of France, who right wisely and nobly ruled the same so long as he liued. This Henry was of nature gentle and meke: he loued better peace than war, quietnes of minde than busines of the world: honestie than profit: rest and ease, than trouble and care: all iniuries that euer happened to him, which were many, he suffered patiently, and reputed them to be worthily sent of God for his offences.

The 21. of October, Charles King of France passed out of this world, and was buried at Saint Denis in France, after he had been crowned King 46. yeres. He was greatly beloued of his people all his life time, and therefore was called Le Roy Charles le biew ame: but yet he had a sickness the more part of his raigne, that being out of his witt, he would strike all that came nere him: it toke him first in the Citie of Paris shortly after he had been in Flanders to reduce the Flemings to obedience. There was by reason hereof great trouble in France, because those that were nere to him in linage, sought every one to haue the chiefe gouernment in their hands. When he thus died, the Realme was left in miserable state, for people of each strange nation were gouernors in the Realme. First, the Englishmen had conquered a great part, and sought to haue the rest: and the Duke of Burgoyne, with many other great Lords alied with him, sought to conquer all, for the young King Henry of England, who claimed then to be King of France, and likewise in all the money that was coined, the armes of both Realmes were quartered. The Crownes that were stamped in the time of Charles, and al other money more, were forbidden to be currant, and called to the mint. King Henry caused a peece to be stamped called a Salus, worth two and twenty shillings, and Blans of eight pence a peece, and so in no place of France where King Henry was obeyed, any other money was receiued, but such as had the armes of France and England stamped on it.

Charles Duke of Touraine the Dolphin, sonne to King Charles le biew ame, claiming to be right inheritor to the Realme of France by the ancient

*Ann. reg. 1.  
Titus Livius.*

*Historie of  
Lois Duke of  
Orléance.  
Charles le  
biew King of  
France died.*

*Henry King of  
England and  
of France.*

*Dolphin of  
France pro.  
edias*

claimed King  
of France.  
Two Kings  
of France  
Henry and  
Charles.

edicts and customs of the said Realme, as was alledged, proclaimed himselfe King after the decease of his father, notwithstanding, by the agreement made at the marriage of his sister to the King of England, it was otherwise concluded (as befoze is recited:) and so there were two Kings in France, Henry and Charles, both which striving for the crowne, the Realme was in way of partition.

Parliament at  
London.

A Parliament at London began the ninth of November, wherein was graunted to the King a subsidie for thre yeres, five nobles of euery sacke of wolle that should passe out of the land.

1423.

The Earle of  
Salisbury  
win diuers  
holdes in  
France, and  
raised them.

King Charles of France began now to aduance himselfe into the Duke of Burgoigne lands, and the Constable of Scotland, accompanied with many Lords, and men of war of King Charles side, laid siege to the towne of Car-nens, but the Marshall of Burgoigne assembled men of war to raise the siege, with whom went Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, a valiant man, and now being come together, fought with their enemies, wan the field, toke the Constable, whose sonne was slaine in the field. Many of King Charles men were slaine and taken to the number of ten or twelue hundred good men of warre. After which victorie, the Earle of Salisbury laid siege to Montaguillon in Campaigne, and continued there an eight monethes befoze he could haue it rendred, and then caused the same to be raised and throtwne downe. Then the Earle of Salisbury besieged the Castle of Monnes, which at length was yelded to him: this Castle he also raised and beat downe, which was the strongest place in all Champaigne, it was after repaired by King Charles.

Ann. reg. 2.

Duke of Bed-  
ford married  
the Duke of  
Burgoyne's  
Daughter.  
Phil. Com.

About the same time the Duke of Burgoyne gaue his sister the Lady Anne in marriage to the Duke of Bedford, and so the alliance was made moze strong betweene the English and the Burgonians.

Philip de Comines writeth, that Iohn Duke of Bedford, regent in France for the Englishmen, his monthly allowance in that office amounting to 20000. crownes at the least.

Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham was made Chancelloz of England.

The Dukes of Burgoyne, Bedford, and Byptaine, met in the towne of Amiens, there was also the Earle of Richmond, brother to the Duke of Byp-taine, and many other great Lords, which Earle of Richmond had married Margaret, the Duke of Byptaines eldest sister, sometime wife to the Duke of Guen, and Dolphin of France. These thre Dukes were five or six dayes together in Amiens, in great friendship and reuerence ech to other, promising perpetuall amitie to continue. After this, the Duke of Byptaine returned into his country, the duke of Bedford (regent of France) to Paris, and the duke of Burgoyne to Arras: but within a while after, the Earle of Richmond revolted to King Charles, vpon some misliking he had conceived against the Duke of Bedford: King Charles receiued him ioyfully, and made him Constable of France.

About the same time the Duke of Bedford caused Crotay to be besieged  
both

both by water and by land, which after foure or five moneths siege, was both towne and Castle deliuered to the Duke, where he ordained Ralph Butler to be capitaine. At that time the Duke of Bedford was obeyed as regent in all places thorough Almaine, Pontieu, and Picardy, from Paris to Reims, Chalons, and Troyes vnto the water of Loyze.

About the feast of S. Andrew the capitaines of King Charles assembled their forces about le Fere, and Belle, and tooke by night the towne of Campeigne, and spoiled the inhabitants of all their goods. Shortly after came the Duke of Bedford to Mondouier with twelue hundred fighting men, and requested the Lord of Hanenles to lay siege to Campeigne, and he would finde him men and money to wage them, whereunto he granted, and after sixtene dayes siege had the same deliuered.

In this meane time, to witt, about the xviij. of Nouember, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein the yong King was set in his maiestie among his Lords. And the xxiij. day of Nouember the King with the Quene removed from Westminster vnto Waltham holy Crosse, and from thence to Hertford, where he held his Christmasse, and the King of Scots with him: and the foresaid Parliament was adiourned vnto the twentieth day after Christmasse: In the which Parliament, among other actes, was ordained that what prisoner that for grand or petit treason was committed to warde, and after wilfully brake or made an escape from the same, it should be deemed petty treason, and the goods of him so escaping should be forfeited to the Lord of the soile that they were found in.

Parliament at Westminster.

1424.

In the moneth of February, James Stewart the yong King of Scots, who was taken by the Englishmen in the eight yere of King Henry the fourth, and had remained in England prisoner till this time, was now according to covenant, deliuered out of Pomfret Castle, vpon pledges, to witt, David eldest sonne to the Earle of Athole, Alexander Earle of Crauford, Alexander Lord of Gourdon, John de Lyndesey, Patricke sonne and heire to Sir John Lyon, Andrew Grey of Soules, David de Ogleby, Sir William de Rothin, David Mognesse, and William Olifant: the same King of Scots was then married in the priory Church of Saint Mary Querries in Southwarke, to the Lady Iane the Dutches daughter of Clarence, by hir first husband John Earle of Somerset, colen to King Henry, and they kept their marriage feast in the Bishop of Winchester's place, by the said Church of saint Mary Querries,

K. of Scots released of imprisonment.

The fouretenth day of February, the foresaid Parliament being againe holden at Westminster, for breaking of the foresaid acte of escaping out of prison, Sir Iohn Mortimer was accused, by a yeoman named William King of Wolmilton in Wilsale, in Northeshire, seruant vnto Sir Robert Scot Knight, lieutenant of the tower of London, of diuers points of treason as followeth: First, that he counselled with the said William King, to the end to breake out of prison, and promised to him for the same ten pound in his purse, an habergeon, and a dublet, the yereley value of fortye pound land, & in pzoesse an Earldome, Also, that the said Mortimer should say, that he would goe into Wales, vnto the Earle of the Marches, and there he would raise fortye thousand men,

Mortimer accused of treason for escape out of the Tower.

and with that power he would enter the land, and strike off the heads of the Lord protector, and of the Bishop of Winchester, to the intent that he might tell of play with some of his money. And furthermore he accused him, that the said Mortimer should say, that the Earle of March was but a daw, saue that he was the greatest, noblest, and worthiest of blood, and should be King by right inheritance, and that he himselfe was next rightfull heire to the said crowne after the said Earle of March, wherefoze if the said Earle would not take vpon him the crowne and rule of the land, he said that he else would. And ouer this, the said William alleaged to the said Sir Iohn Mortimer, that he should say, that if he failed of his purpose, and might not ioyne vnto the Earle of Marches, that then he would saile vnto the Dolphin, and aide and take his part, where he wist well he should be accepted, and haue good aide of him to bring about his purpose. All which matter this William would prone vpon the same Mortimer with his body: or as the Lords & commons should a ward. Which Iohn Mortimer, after the Statute aforesaid escaped out of the tower, and was taken againe vpon the towre wharfe sore beaten and wounded, and on the morrow brought to Westminster, & by the authoritie of the said Parliament, he was after drawen to tiburne, hanged, and headed, of whose death (saith Hall) no small slander arose: his body was buried in y<sup>e</sup> gray friers church. Richard Wooduill was created Baron Wooduill: Iohn Sturton Knight Baron Sturton for him and his heires: and Thomas Hoo Knight Baron Hoo and of Hastings.

King Henries people besieging the Castle of Dinry in the marches of Poymandy, they within compounded to yeld at a day assigned, if the Englishmen were not fought withall befoze the same day by the Frenchmen: whereupon as well King Charles as the Duke of Bedford made great lenies of men to keepe the day appointed, and here with they drew both towarde Paris. But when King Charles heard how the Duke of Bedford was comming towarde him with such a puissance, he was counselled to draw backe, and so he did towarde Cleruole in Berch, whom the Duke of Bedford followed, so that he found his armie nere to Cleruole. And when either armie was in sight of the other, they put themselves in order of battell, and the Englishmen made an hedge of their horse behind their battell, because the French should not strike in among them on the backs: and the Frenchmen ordered themselves in battell array, making a great battell of footemen, in the which they put the flower and chiefest men. They appointed their horsemen to set on the Englishmen a traaverse, the battelles on foote came vpon and iopned, where was a sore fight betwixt them, continuing two houres together, that no man might iudge which way the victorie would incline: but at length, the men of King Charles began to breake, and then the Englishmen began to thrust in among them, and did so much, that they discomfited their enemies. There were slaine the Earle Dowglas Duke of Laron, James Dowglas Earle of Moughton, Iohn Earle of Boaghain, with the viscount Nerbon, & many other, to the number of ten thousand (saith Fabian:) foure thousand saith mine Author (a Frenchman) who saith, that the Duke of Bedford bare himselfe most valiantly, fighting

The battell of  
Cleruole in  
Berch.

Rob. Fabian.



ting with an are so fiercely, as he had the praise of all other. The Carles of Salisburie and Suffolke governed themselves also right valiantly.

The Lord of Torsy and other Lords of Normandy, which before had taken part with the Englishmen, this day turned to the French, hoping that the Englishmen should have lost the battell. True it is, that the Frenchmen would neuer suffer their King Charles to be present in person at any battell, but when they thought to pitch a field, they sent him into some strong towne. By the losse of this battell fought on the seventeenth of August before Veruole in Verch, King Charles was put to great hindrance, so that he was not able in puissance to give the Englishmen any battell, hauing enough to do to defend and keepe his townes and fortresses against them.

*Ann. reg. 3.*

The Duke of Bedford returned into Normandy, where he punished many that fled from him in the day of battell. Then went he to Paris, where he found the Duke of Burgoyne, who receiued him, and the Dutches of Bedford his wife, the said Duke of Burgoynes sister, right ioyfully, and made to them a great feast, at which feast also were the Carles of Salisburie and Suffolke, the olde Quene of France, mother to King Charles, and many other great estates, of diuers nations, amongst the which; the Dutchesse of Bedford was holden for the most gallantest Lady of all other, and with her, the countesse of Salisburie a very faire Lady. The Duke of Bedford that had neuer iusted before, iusted there.

*The Duke of Burgoyne enamoured with the Countesse of Salisburie, whereof came great displeasure and losse to England, by the breach of amitie betwixt the English and the Burgoyans.*

The Duke of Burgoyne was a very goodly and amiable man of personage, doing excellently wel whatsoever he toke in hand, and especially in daunting and iusting he excelled all other of his countrey. At this feast, he became desirous of the countesse of Salisburie, and some messages passed betwixt them, which came to the Earle of Salisburies eare, whereof he was nothing contented with the Duke, and therefore sought to doe him displeasure afterward.

This feast being ended, the Duke of Burgoyne went into his countrey of Burgoyne, and there toke to wife the Dutchesse of Flanders which had been wife to his vncle the Duke of Flanders, and had by her two children. She was halfe sister to the duke of Barbon, but she liued not long with him. The duke of Burgoyne also gaue his sister the yongest, named Agnes, in mariage vnto Charles de Barbon Earle of Cleremont, for the which, the Duke of Bedford and other Englishmen were wroth, for that he made such alliance with the enemies without their accord.

*The second cause of breach of amitie betwixt England and Burgoyne.*

This yere the Frenchmen repaired the Castle of Houns in Champaigne, which had been a little before destroyed by the Englishmen, and now it was well stocked with victuals and men, which began to make soze warre to the country, but shortly after the Earle of Salisburie besieged them, and with him Messire John de Luxemburg, who did so much, that the Castle was yielded to him. The Duke of Bedford with his wife the dutchesse, lay for the most part in Paris leading there a pleasant life with the Lady whom he greatly loued, and was lodged in the house of the Tournelles nere to the Castle S. Anthony, where he made faire buildings, and his men still made soze wars against the French towards the riuer of Loyze, and other places, vpon base Nor-

Carle of  
March sent  
into Ireland.

mandy, and toward the Dutchie of Alanson.

This yere in England Edmond Mortimer Carle of March with many o-  
ther Lords, and a great retinue, were sent into Ireland, where the said Carle  
of March ended his life without issue, whose inheritance descended to Richard  
Plantagenet, sonne and heire to Richard Carle of Cambridge beheaded at  
Southampton, as is aforesaid.

Iaqueline  
Dutchesse of  
Henaunt.

This yere the wars began in Henaunt, by reason of Iaqueline Dutchesse  
of Henaunt, daughter to Duke William of Henaunt, uncle to Philip Duke of  
Burgoyne, and also daughter to Duke Iohn of Burgoyne's sister, wife to the  
fozenamed William, and so double cousin german to Philip, Duke Philip now  
living. This Iaqueline was married to Iohn Duke of Brabant his cousin ger-  
man, and cousin german also to Duke Philip of Burgoyne, and before that, she  
was married to the Carle of Pontione, sonne to King Charles le bien aime,  
eldest brother to King Charles now living, but notwithstanding that she was  
thus married to the Duke of Brabant, yet was she conveyed by Sir Rober-  
t Knight, and brought into England to the Duke of Gloucester, and there  
married to the said Duke of Gloucester: and so she had two husbands alive at  
once, Brabant and Gloucester, a thing thought unreasonable, both against  
God, the world, and the Church, for she had been foure or five yeres in com-  
pany with the Duke of Brabant, but there had fallen some variance betwixt  
them, and so she was come from him into Henaunt.

Iaqueline  
married to the  
Duke of Glo-  
cester.

Rob Fabian.  
Parliament at  
London.  
Subsidie  
paid.

About the last of Aprill began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein  
was granted a subsidie of twelue pence in the pound of all manner marchan-  
dise comming in, or passing out of this Realme, thre shillings of a tunne of  
wine for the terme of thre yeres to be holden. And furthermore it was en-  
acted, that all merchant strangers should be set to an English host, within  
fifteene dayes of their comming to their port sale, and to make no sale of any  
merchandise ere they were so lodged: and then within 40. dayes following  
to make sale of all they brought, and if any remained unsold at the said fortye  
dayes end, that then all such merchandise unsold to be forfeited. Also that all  
strangers that carried any wolles out of this land, should pay thre and fortye  
shillings foure pence for a sacke custome, where the English merchants and  
denisons payed but five nobles, &c.

The Duke of  
Gloucester go-  
eth into Hol-  
land.

After the marriage had been solemnised betwene the Duke of Gloucester,  
and Iaqueline Dutchesse of Holland, as is aforesaid, within a moneth after  
the Duke of Gloucester assembled an army of twelue hundred fighting men  
at the least, all Englishmen, and taking the Dutchesse with him in company,  
passed ouer to Calice, and straight from thence to Lens in Artois, and so into  
Henaunt, making no outrage as he passed through Duke Philips countries.  
At their comming into Henaunt, many towne obeyed them, and other refu-  
sed so to doe: likewise were the Pobles diuided.

A third cause  
of the warre  
to be taken  
betweene Eng-  
land and Bur-

The Duke of Burgoyne hearing of this, was sore offended for the insu-  
rie done to his cousin of Brabant, the dishonor of his cousin the Dutchesse Ia-  
queline, and the euill dealing of the Duke of Gloucester, and therefore, to aide  
the Duke of Brabant he appointed many of his captaines with twelue hun-

byed fighting men Bicarbs, to go against the Duke of Glocester. The Duke of Brabant was a man but of weake complexion, and therfore by the counsell of Brabant it was ordayned, that his younger brother Philip Earle of Saint Pol, should be chiefe Captaine of the warre against the Duke of Glocester. He had a great army, as the more part of the Nobles of Brabant, of Henault, and of Burgoyne, in all fiftie thousand. Pierre de Luxemburg, Earle of Conuarsen, his nére kinsman, had the leading of the army, for himselfe was but young. The Duke of Glocester had put off his men in garrison within the towne of Brayne, in the county of Henault, who made soze warre to the countrey about, but the Earle of S. Pol, and Conuarsen did come and besiege Brayne, continuing afoze it 12. daies befoze they within yelded, compounding to depart with bodics and goods saved. These hauing won Brayne, destroyed it vterly, and that done, toke the field with all puissance, which was great: and the Duke of Glocester likewise came into the field, so that they approached nére together, and the vancurrers skirmished, but the battel toynded not. The Duke of Glocester had sent his herault, and wrytten to the Duke of Burgoyne, calling him traytor, and disloyall to the king of England and Fraunce, for that he had sent men in ayde against him in ayde of the Duke of Brabant, and therfore offered him the combate: whereunto the Duke of Burgoyne answered, that he would accept the combat willingly, denying that euer he had sayled of his promise: but contrariwise, that the Duke of Glocester had done great wrong to the Duke of Brabant, to haue bereft him of his wife, contrary to the ordinance of God, and of holy Church, and for other words which the Duke had vttered against the Duke of Burgoynes honour, he gaue him the lie, and so farre the matter went in words betwixt them, that the day was appointed for the combate, and the Duke of Burgoyne chose for Iudge of the combate, the Emperoz of Almaine, and the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Duke of Glocester a safe conduct, to depart safely into England, to prepare himself of things necessary for the cobat, whereupon both the camps brake vp: the Duke of Glocester went to Mons in Henault, to the Dutches his wife (so termed) and gaue her to vnderstand that he was desirous to trie the combate with the Duke of Burgoyne, and many other things he tolde her, which he perfozmed not; for within foure daies after, he toke all his power with him, and returned into England, doing no hurt by the way to the Duke of Burgoynes countres, and left the Dutchesse in Mons, finally accompanied with the people of that countrey. Shortly after his departure, the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Lord Lilladam to the towne of Mons to receiue laqueline the Dutchesse, who being deliuered vnto him, he conueyed her to Cant, where the Duke and she made great semblance of ioy together, she promising to be gouerned alwaies by his aduise, but to go to her olde husband the Duke of Brabant she would not: but what semblance soeuer she made, she had an other thought in her head, as it appeared afterward, for when she espied her time, she stole away into her countrey of Holland, where she was well receined of many Lords, and began forthwith to maintaine warre against Duke Philip of Burgoyne, and sent to the

gouernor, and the  
loste of many  
townes in  
France.

Huntrey duke  
of Glocester  
challengeth the  
combate with  
Philip Duke  
of Burgoyne.

the Duke of Glocester for ayde, who sent to her a thousand fighting men, vnder the conduct of the Lord Fitzwaters, who landed them in a place called Breiwers hauen. During these troubles in Henault, diuers Lords of the countrey, held with the Duke of Glocester, and therefore had their lands soze waisted. Also Messire Englebert Denguien held on the party of Philip Duke of Burgondy: and he, when he toke any of the Englishmen, would cause one of their thombs to be cut off, and so sent into England.

The Duke of Burgoyne fearing least Iaqueline would deliuer the countrey of Holland into the possession of the Duke of Glocester, he assembled his power, & went into Holland, to put the countrey into obeisance. At his coming thither, Iaqueline accompanied with many Nobles of the countrey, and the Lord Fitzwaters, would haue defended his landing, but notwithstanding all the defence they could make, he entred vpon them, and there nere to the Towne of Brussells, they toygned in battell, the Duke of Burgoyne and his people against the Englishmen and Hollanders, taking the Dutchesse Iaquelines part: there was a fierce battell on all sides, but in the ende, the Hollanders and Englishmen were all discomfited, and there died in that place aboue seuen or eight hundred, besides those that were taken prisoners: the Lord Fitzwaters hardly escaped.

1425.

After this battell got by the Duke of Burgoyne, diuers towne of the countrey reuolted to him against Iaqueline the Dutchesse, as Doordrecht, Sericze, and many other. Shortly after, the Duke of Burgoyne leauing garrisons in those Townes that obeyed him, to make resistance against the Dutchesse that lay in the Towne of Gant, he returned into his countrey of Flanders and Artois, there to prepare such abilliments as were necessary for him to be at the combat appointed betwixt him and the Duke of Glocester. The Duke of Glocester likewise in England made his prouision of his abilliments and furniture, but the Duke of Bedford brother to the Duke of Glocester, toke great paines to make them friends: and also the counsell of the young king of England, were nothing content with this variance, doubting least it might be occasion that the Duke of Burgoyne might withdraw himselfe from their amitie, whereby their busines in France should be hindered. The Duke of Bedford therefore toke his tourney from Paris to Calice, and so into England, to the end to agree the said Dukes: he toke with him the Dutches his wife, and not pass a soure or five hundred men.

An. reg. 4.

About Michaelmas Peter Duke of Quimbre, Prince of Portugall came into England, and was honourably received and feasted by the Kings vncles, and was also elected into the order of the garter.

Humphrey duke  
of Glocester  
married Elia.  
nor Cobham.

When Humphrey Duke of Glocester vnderstood that Pope Martine the first had giuen sentence, that the first marriage with the Duke of Brabant and Iaqueline was good and effectuell, and the second espousalles celebrated with the Duke of Glocester and the said Iaqueline to be vnlawfull, he beganne to ware weary of her, by whom he neuer had profit, but losse, and toke to his wife by a second marriage Elianor Cobham, daughter to Reig-nold Cobham Lord of Sterbozow, which Elianor before was his wanton paramour,



paramour, to his great reproch, as was then noted.

The morrow after Simon and Iudes day, when the Paioz of London had bene at Westminster to take his charge, as the custome is, at such time as he was holding his great dinner, he was by the Duke of Gloucester Lord Protector sent for in speedy manner, & when he came to his presence, he gaue to him commandement, to see the Citie were surely watched in the night following and so it was done.

Rob. Fabian.  
Debate betwene the Duke of Gloucester and the Bishop of Winchester.

On the next morrow about nine of the clocke, certaine servants of the Bishop of Winchester, uncle to the said Protector, would haue entred the Citie by the bridge, but the warders or keepers thereof, kept them out by force, as befoze they were commanded, wherewith they being grievously discontented, gathered to them a greater number of archers, and men of armes, and assaulted the gate with shot and other meanes of warre, insomuch, that the commons of the Citie shut in their shops, and sped them thither in great number, so that great bloodshed would haue followed, had not the wisdome of the Paioz and Aldermen stayed the matter in time,

The Archbischoppe of Canterbury with the Duke of Quimbre called the Prince of Portugall and other, toke great labour vpon them to pacifie this variance betwixt the uncle and the nephew, the Protector and the Bishop, insomuch, that they rode betwixen them eight times, ere they might bring them to any reasonable conformitie, and lastly they agreed to stand to the rule of the Duke of Bedford, Regent of France, or of such as he would assigne, whereupon the Citie was set in more quiet, and the Bishop of Winchester wrote a letter to the Duke of Bedford, Lord Regent as followeth.

Right high and mightie Prince, and right Noble, and after one leuett earthly Lord, I recommend me vnto your grace with all my heart: and as ye desire the welfare of the King our soueraigne Lord, and of his realmes of England and of France, and your owne weale, with all yours, haste you hither, for by my troth, and ye tarry long, we shall put this land in iopardie with a field, such a brother ye haue here, God make him a good man. For your wisdom knoweth well, that the profit of France standeth in the welfare of England. Written at London, the last of October.

Bishoppe of  
Winchesters  
letter to the  
Duke of Bed-  
ford.

On the tenth day of January next ensuing, the said Duke of Bedforde with his wife, came vnto London, and with them also came the said Bishop of Winchester, and the Paioz and Citizens receiued him at Merton, and conuected him through the Citie vnto Westminster, where he was lodged in the Kings pallace, and the Bischoppe of Winchester was lodged within the Abbots lodging. On the morrow following, the Paioz presented the Regent with a paire of basins of silver, and ouer-gilt, and in them a 1000. markes of gold. The 21. of February, began a great councell at S. Albons, which was after ward reioyned to Southampton, but for that no true conclusion might be made, on the 15. of March was called a Parliament at Leicester, the which endured till the 25. day of June. This was called the Parliament of Battes, because men being forbidden to bring swords or other weapons, brought great battes and staves on their neckes, and when those

1426.  
Parliament at  
Leicester.

weapons

The Earle of  
Cambridge  
was made  
Duke of York,  
and the Earle  
of Marhall,  
Duke of Gloz-  
folke.

weapons were inhibited them, they toke stones and plomets of lead. During this parliament, the variance betwixt the two Lords was debated, in-  
somuch, that the Duke of Gloucester put a bill of complaint against the Bi-  
shop, containning five articles, all which articles were by the Bishop suffi-  
ciently answered, and finally, by the counsel of the Lord Regent, all the mat-  
ters of variance betwene the said two Lords, were put to the examination  
and iudgement, with the assistance of the Lordes of the Parliament, Henry  
Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Duke of Excester, Iohn Duke of Boz-  
folke, Thomas Bishop of Durham, Philip Bishop of Worcester, Iohn Bi-  
shop of Bathe, Humfrey Earle of Stafford, Raulph Lord Coznelwell, and  
master William Alnewike, then keeper of the priefe seale, which Lords made  
a decreë and a warde, so that eyther party toke other by the hand with friend-  
ly and louing words, none hauing amends of other. Upon Whitsunday fol-  
lowing, was a solemne feast holden at Leicester aforesaid, where the Regent  
dubbed king Henry knight, & then forthwith the king dubbed Richard Duke  
of Yorke, that after was father to king Edward the fourth, and other to the  
number of fortye.

After the Parliament, the king went to Killingworth Castell.

An. reg. 5.  
Iohn Audley  
An earthquake  
during two  
houres.

On Saturday the euen of Saint Michael the Archangell, in the morning  
before day, betwixt the houres of one and two of the clocke began a terrible  
earthquake, with lightning and thunder, which continued the space of two  
houres, and was vntuersall thzough the world, so that men had thought the  
world as then should haue ended, and the generall dome to haue followed.  
The vnreasonable beasts rozed and dyed to the townes, with hideous noyse.  
Also the fowles of the ayze likewise cried out: such was the woꝝke of God at  
that time to call his people to repentance.

1427.

On Asepères day Thomas Beawford the Duke of Excester deceased at  
Grænewich, and was buried at Saint Edmondsbury in Suffolke. Thomas  
Beawchampe Earle of Warwike was made master and gouernour vnto the  
king during his nonage.

About the purification of our Lady, the duke of Bedford Regent of France,  
with his wife and family passed the seas vnto Caleis, and so thzough Picardy  
into France: but ere he departed from Caleis, to wit, vpon the feast day of the  
Annunciation of our Lady, the Bishop of Winchester, within the Church of  
our Lady of Caleis, was created Cardinall, and after the solemnity done, the  
Regent toke him on his right hand, and so conueyed him vnto his lodging.

Ro. Gawine

This yère was vnseasonable weathering, so; it rained most part continu-  
ally from Easter to Michaelmas.

This yère the Duke of Alanson, that before was taken prisoner at the  
battell of Mernole in Berch, was deliuered for a ranfome of 200000. scuts of  
gold, which was 50000. markes sterling.

Ro Fabian.

This yère also, the Earle of Salisbury accompanied with the Earle of Sul-  
folke, the Lord Talbot, and other, laid a strong siege vnto the city of Myleance,  
and held the Citizens very streight, and maugre the Duke of Myleance, and  
the Marhall of France, the Englishmen wan from them diuers strong holds  
adjoining

adoynning to the Citie, and forced them to burne a great part of their suburbs: but one day as the said Earle of Salisburie, Thomas Mountague, rested him at a bay window, a gunne was levelled out of the Citie, the shot whereof strue red so the bars of the prison grate, that one of the same bars stroke the Earle on the head, bearing away one of his eyes, and the one side of his chéke. Sir Thomas Gargaue was likewise stricken, and died within two daies. The Earle was conueyed to Heut on Loyze, where, after eight daies he likewise departed the world, whose body was conueyed into England with all fune- rall pompe, and buried at Wiltam in Barkshire by his progenitors, leaving behinde him one onely daughter named Alice, married to Richard Neuill sonne to Ralph Earle of Westmerland. The damage that the Realme of England received by the death of this notable man manifestly appeared, in that immediately after his death the prosperous good successe which the Englishmen had had, began to decline. In his place was appointed the Earle of Suffolke to be Lieutenant and Capitaine of the siege, loyning with him the Lord Scales, the Lord Talbot, sir Ion Fastolfe, and diuers other ballant Captaines.

*An. reg. 6.*  
Earle of Sa-  
lisburie slaine.  
1428.

In a Parliament at Westminster was granted to the king a subsidie of euerie tunne of wine thre shillings, and of other merchandise, except woll, fell, and cloth, twelue pence of the pound. Also, of euerie parish throught the Realme (excepted Citie & Boroughs) the benefice being in value ten marks, ten of that parish should pay five shillings and eight pence, euery man eight pence: and of euery benefice that were ten pound, ten parishioners to pay 13. shillings and foure pence, and so rate and rate-like of euery benefice from the lowest to the highest. And so, the inhabitants of Citie and Boroughs euery man being in value 20. shillings aboue his household stufte, and the apparrell of him & his wife, should pay foure pence, & so after that rate vnto the richest.

*Parliament.*  
Subsidie.

*Ann. reg. 7*

On the first of September the Cardinall of Winchester being returned from beyond the seas, was met by the Marsoz and his brethren, and certaine Citizens of London on horsebacke without the Citie, and so brought to his pallace in Southwarke.

*Cardinall of*  
*Winchester.*

The eight of Nouember the Duke of Suffolke was like to haue bene drowned, passing from Saint Mary Query Mayes through London bridge, betwixt foure and fise of the clocke at night, his barge being set vpon the piles ouerwhelmed, so that to the number of thirtie persons were drowned, and the Duke with two or thre other that escaped were drawne vp with ropes.

*Duke of Suf-  
folke escaped  
drowning.*

1429.

King Henry kept his feast of Christs Natiuitie at Eltham.

The 21. of February Richard Neuill was made Earle of Salisburie.

King Henry kept his Easter at Hartford.

So it fell out, that in the Lent season, victuall and artillery about Dyle-  
ance began to ware scant in the English campe, wherefore the Earle of Suf-  
folk appointed sir Iohn Fastolfe, sir Thomas Ramplstone, & sir Philip Helle, with  
their retinues, to ride to Paris to the Lord Regent, to informe him of that  
lacke, who incontinent prouided victuall, artillery and munitions necessa-  
rie, and loaded there with many chariots and carts: and so the fare conuey-

*ancg*

ance of the same, he appointed sir Simon Morbrier prouost of Paris, with the guard of the Citie & other, to accompany sir Iohn Fastolph to the army lying at the siege of Myleance: they were in all to the number of 1500. men: these with great difficulty came to the English camp besoze Myleance, where they were ioyfully receiued, & commended for their valiant withstanding of enemies by the way, as they marched. The Earle of Suffolke being thus victualled, continued the siege, & euery day almost skirmished with the French men, who at length offered to treat to saue themselves and their Citie from captiuitie, they submit the Citie, themselves and all theirs vnder the obeisance of the Duke of Burgoin, because he was extract out of the bloude ropall of Fraunce. The Duke with thanks certified them againe, that he would gladly receiue them, if the Duke of Bedford Lord Regent would therewith be contented. Whereupon messengers were dispatched to the Regent, who thought it nesther conuenient nor honourable, that a Citie so long besieged by the king of Englands power, should be deliuered to any other forren Prince. Whereupon the Regent answered the Burgonian ambassadoys, that sith the King of England had bene at all the charges about the siege and winning of the Citie, it was not consonant to reason, that the Duke should enioy the frutes of another mans charge: hereof followed a double mischief to the English proceedings in the Realme of Fraunce, for both the Burgoigne conceived an inward grudge against the Englishmen, for that he suspected them to enuie his glozy: and againe, the Englishmen left the siege of Myleance, which by this treaty they might haue recouered out of their enemies hands, and put their friends in possession of it.

While this treaty was in hand, Charles of Fraunce studied daily howe to prouide a remedie by the deliuey of his in Myleance out of present daunger. And euen at the same time, a monstrous woman, named Ioan la pucell de dieu, was presented vnto him at Chinon, where as then he sojourned, of which woman, her birth, qualities, and estate, the French Historiokes make mention at large, but to be short, so much credit was giuen to her, that she was honoured as a Saint, and so she handled the matter, that she was thought to be sent from God to the ayde of the French King Charles, the seventh of that name. This woman being armed at all pointes like a valiant Capitaine, rode from Poitiers to Bloys, and there found men of warre, victuall and munitions ready to be conueyed to Myleance. Where was it knowne that the Englishmen kept not so diligent watch as they had bene accustomed to do, and therfore this Maid with their French Captaines, comming for ward in the dead time of the night, and in a great rayne and thunder, they entred into the Citie with all their victuall, artillerie, and other necessaries. The next day the Englishmen boldly assaulted the towne, but the Frenchmen defended the walles so, as no great seate chaunced that day betwene them. The Bastard of Myleance gaue knowledge to the Duke of Alanson in what daunger the towne stode without his present helpe, who comming within two leagues of the Citie, gaue knowledge to them within, that they should be readie the next day to receiue him, which accordingly was accomplished:

for

The Maid  
of God so cal-  
led by the  
French.



for the Englishmen suffered him and his armie to enter. On the next day in the morning, the Frenchmen all together issued out of the towne, and wanne the bastell of Saint Low by assault, and set it on fire. And after they likewise assaulted the Tower at the bridge foote, and toke it ere the Lord Talbot could come to the succours, in the which William Gladesdale also Captaine was slayne, with the Lord Molins and the Lord Poy-  
 nings also.

Lord Molins  
slain.

The Frenchmen with this good lucke, fetched a compasse about toward the bastell, which was in the keeping of the Lord Talbot, the which like a good Captaine, without all feare issued forth against them, and gaue them a sharpe encounter, that they fledde againe into the Citie with great losse of men and small artillery: of Englishmen were lost in the two bassets to the number of sixe hundred men, or there about. The Earle of Suffolke, the Lord Talbot, the Lord Scales, and other Captaines assembled together in counsell, where it was amongst them determined to leaue their fortresses and bassets, and to assemble in the plaine field, there to abide all the day to see if the Frenchmen would issue forth to fight with them. But when the Frenchmen burst not come forth, the Englishmen set fire on their lodgings, and departed in good order of battell from Orleans. And the next day which was the eight of May, the Earle of Suffolke rode to Jargeaur with 400. men, and the Lord Talbot with another company turned to Melun: and after he had fortified that Towne, he went to the Towne of Launay, and wanne it together with the Castell.

The siege of  
Orleans  
broken by.

Thus when the Englishmen leuered themselves into garrisons, the Duke of Alanson, the Bastard of Orleans, Ioan le pucell, the Lord Cancourt, and diuers other Captaines of the Frenchmen came on the 12. of June before the Towne of Jargeaur: where the Earle of Suffolke and his two brethren soiourned, and gaue to the Towne so fierce an assault on three parts, that Poitou de Senetrailles perceiuing another part boide of defence, scaled the walles on that side, and without difficulty, tooke the Towne, and slue sir Alexander Poole, brother to the Earle, and many other to the number of 200. but the French lost 300. good men. Of the Englishmen were taken 40. with the Earle of Suffolke and his brother Iohn. The Frenchmen as they went to Orleans, slew their prisoners all saving the Earle and his brother. Shortly after the same French army came to Mahun, where they toke the Tower at the bridge foote, and put therein a garrison: from thence they remoued to Wangeney, and contrayned them in the Towne to yeeld. At this place there came to the Duke of Alanson, the new Constable Arthur of Brittain, and the Lord Dalbert with other, also the Earle of Wandsone came to them, so that they were now ioyned to the number of 23000. men, the which shortly after fought with the Lord Talbot, nere to a village in Beause, called Batay, at which battell, the L. Talbot was soze wounded at the backe, and taken, & the rest put to flight: in which fight were slaine aboue 1200. and 40. taken, of whom the L. Talbot, the L. Scales, the L. Hungerford, and sir Thomas Rāpston were chiefe. This ouerthrow did so much abate the Englishmen, that  
 immediately

Alexander  
Poole slaine.  
Earle of Suffolke taken by  
the French.

immediately thereupon the towne of Januile, Mahun, Fozf, and diuers o-  
ther returned from the English part, and became French. Charles the French  
king perceiuing fortune to smile vpon him, determined to conquer the City  
of Reimes that he might be there crowned, in his iourney thitherward he  
besieged the City of Aurerre, and had it. From thence he went befoze Troies  
which was deliuered to him, and then Chalons, &c. In semblable orde they  
of Reimes yeld themselves: in the which towne the said Charles (in the pre-  
sence of the Dukes of Lozain, and Barre, and of all the noble men of his sa-  
tion) was sacred king of France, by the name of Charles the seuenth.

The Duke of Bedford aduertised of all these doings, assembled his power a-  
bout him, and hauing together 10000. men, besides Rozmans, departed out  
of Paris in warlike fashon, and passing through Bray to Monstrean Fault  
Pone, sent by his herault Bedford, letters to the French king, signifying to  
him, that where he had contrarie to his small conclusion, accorded betwene  
his brother king Henry the first, and king Charles the first, by allurement of a  
diuellish witch, taken vpon him: the name, title, and dignitie of the king of  
France, and further, had by murther, stealth, craft, and deceitfull meanes vio-  
lently gotten, and wrongfully kept diuers Cities and Townes belonging to  
the king of England his nephew: for pzoofe whereof he was come downe  
from Paris with his army, into the countrey of Bzle, by dint of sword to  
proue his writing and cause true, willing his enemies to chouse the place,  
and in the same he would giue him battell. The new French king being come  
from Reimes to Dampmartine, studying how he might compass them in  
Paris, was halfe abashed at this message, but yet to set a good countenance  
on the matter, he answered the Herault, that he would soner seeke his  
master, than his master should neede to pursue him. The Duke of Bed-  
ford hearing this answer, marched toward the king, and pitched his felde  
in a strong place. The French king though at the first he meant to haue  
abidden battell, yet when he vnderstood that the Duke was equall to him  
in number of people, he chaunged his purpose, and turned with his armie a  
little out of the way. The Duke of Bedford perceiuing his faint cou-  
rage, followed him by Hilles and Dales, till hee came to a Towne not  
farre from Senlis, where he found the French king and his armie lodged:  
wherefoze he ordered his battels, setting the Archers befoze, and himselfe  
with the Noble men in the maine battell, and put the Rozmans on both  
sides for winges. The French king also ordered his battels to the most  
aduantage. Thus these two armies lay two daies and two nights, eyther  
in sight of other without any great doing, except a few skirmishes. At length  
in the dead of the night, as priuily as might be, the French king brake vp  
his campe, and fled to Bray. The Duke of Bedford had much adoe to stay  
his people in the morning from pursuit of the French kings armie: but for  
that he mistrusted the Parisians, he would not depart farre from that Citie:  
and so returned thither againe.

*Ann. reg. 8.*

In this season Pope Martine the first, meaning to subdue the Bohemians  
that dissented from the Church of Rome in matters of faith, and religion,  
appointed

appointed Henry Beawford Bishop of Winchester. Cardinall of S. Eusiby, to be his legate in an army to invade the kingdome of Boheme, and to bring a power of men with him out of England, and because the warre touched religion, he licensed the Cardinall to take a tenth of the spiritualtie, the Bishop gathered the money, and assembled 4000. men and moze. As this Bishop was come to Dover, ready to haue passed the seas into Flanders, the Duke of Gloucester (hauing receiued letters from the Duke of Bedford, containing an earnest request to relæue him with men of war) writ to the Bishop of Winchester, willing him to passe with all his army toward the Duke of Bedford. The Cardinall least he should runne into the note of infamy, if he refused to ayde the Regent of France, passed ouer with his power, & brought the same vnto his cosen to the Citie of Paris, where he remained not long, but passed on his iourney towards Boheme, from whence in short time he returned into England.

The first of Nouember, king Henry being about the age of nine yeres was solemnly crowned in Saint Peters Church of Westminster, at whose coronation were made 36. knights of the Bath, & after solemnization in the Church finished, an honourable feast in the great Hall of Westminster was kept, whereof ye may read a large discourse in Robert Fabian. After which feast great preparations was made for the kings iourney into France.

King Henry  
crowned.

Richard Duke of Yorke was constituted Constable of England in absence of Iohn Duke of Bedford Regent of France, he was made Constable, for, and because of a battel to be fought betwene Iohn Vpton, and Iohn Downe he was confirmed Constable of England for terme of life, so that he did no waies derogate Iohn Duke of Bedford, that was beyond the sea, dated the 11. of January.

1430.  
Combat  
fought in  
Smithfield.

The 11. of January a battell was done in Smithfield within the lisses befoze the king, betwene two men of Feuerham in Kent, Iohn Vpton notable appellat, and Iohn Downe gentleman defendat, Iohn Vpton put vpon Iohn Downe, that he and his compiers should imagine the kings death, the day of his coronation: when they had long fought, the king toke by the matter and forgave both parties.

The 11. of Aprill the king toke shipping at Dover, & landed the same day at Caleis, hauing in his company the Dukes of Yorke and Suffolke, the Bishops of Bath, Ely, and Rochester, the Carles of Huntington, Stafford, Warwicke, Dorset, Denonshire, Portaine of Clewe, and of Arundell, and Barons, the Lord Boucher, Beaumont, Typtoft, Fitz water, Roos, Arundale, Audley, Fauconbridge, Gray Cordner, Scroope, and Wels.

Whilist the king remained at Caleis many skirmishes were fought betwene the Englishmen and the French in diuers parts of France, and the Frenchmen preuailed greatly by helpe of a woman which they named The mayden of God. So that lastly she with her company came to the towne of Champaigne, to the ende to reioice the siege laid thereunto by the Duke of Burgoigne and other of the English Captaines, and the 23. of May she gaue battell to the Englishmen, and fought with them a long time, but in

Le pucel de dieu

the end by the manhood of a Burgonian knight named sir Iohn Luxemborough, she was taken alive, and her company distressed, she was conveyed to the Citie of Roane, and there kept a season, where she fastned her selfe to be with child, but when the contrary was knowne, she was condemned and burnt.

After this, king Henry by small iourneyes into France, came to Paris, where he was honourably received of the Citizens and taken for their soueraign Lord and king, whiles he there remained, (saith Gagwine) the Frenchmen wanne many holdes of the Englishmen, and the Burgonians in the countrie of Bry.

Robert Gagwine

The third of August died Ioan countesse of Armonde, and was buried at Saint Thomas of Acres in London.

Ann. reg. 9.

Iohn Duke of Norfolke toke againe the towne of Dampmartine, and the Chace Pongay with diuers other townes. The Earle of Stafford toke the town of Bryn, Countie Robert, and from thence foraged all the countrey to Sens, and after toke Nuesney in Bry, Grand Pups, and Rampillon.

1431.  
Conspiracy at  
Abington.

Some after Easter the Lord Protector was warned of an assembly of certaine lewde persons, vnder pretence of religiously minded men, to be assembled at Abington, wherefoze he sent thither certaine persons, and also rode thither himselfe, and there arrested the baily of the towne named William Mandeuill a weauer, the which was appointed for a Captaine, who had named himselfe Iacke Sharpe of Wigmers land in Wales, who being examined, confessed that he meant to haue done many mischiefs, especially against Priests, so that he would haue made their heads as cheape as shēpes heads (that is to say) thre or a pence, for as some write, ten for a penny: many of his complices were taken and sent to diuers prisons. Their Captaine was drawne, hanged, and beheaded at Abington, and his head was sent to London, and set on the bridge: his other fautors were executed in diuers places and countries to the terror of other. Also the 17. of Iuly Richard Russell wolman, was drawne, hanged, and quartered, for that he would haue made Dukes and Carles at his pleasure.

Ann. reg. 10.

Richard Robsart Lord Bourcher deceased, and was buried at Westminster.

King Henry remaining still in France, the Earle of Arundale accompanied with 2000. Englishmen, sent a certaine of his company vnto a towne, called Bealmount, to prouoke the Frenchmen to issue out of the towne, which small company when Boyssicant and Senerales then Capitaines behelde, they with their souldiers sped them forth to take the said Englishmen, the which by little and little gaue backe, till they had tolled the Frenchmen a good space from the towne, and then set vpon them with a stout courage, and helde them on hande till the Earle with his companie rescued them: then betwixt them was a cruell fight, but in the ende the Frenchmen were chased, and the said Sentrayle with many sōtemen of the said towne were slaine.

In the moneth of Nouember king Henry by small iourneyes into France,  
removed



remoued from Roane to Pontople, and so to Saint Dioneffe, & then to Paris, where he was receiued with great honour by the Cittizens, and taken for their foueraigne Lord and King. There were in his company of his owne nation, his vnckle the Cardinall of Winchester, Iohn Kempe Cardinall and Archbisshop of Poike, the Dukes of Bedford, of Poike, and Suffolke, the Carles of Warwicke, Salisbury, Oxford, Huntingdon, Dymond, Portaine, and Suffolke. Of Gascoine there were the Carles of Longuile, and March, besides many Noble men of England, Gwine, and Poymandie: and the chiefe of the French nation, were the Dukes of Burgoigne, and Lewes of Luxemburg Cardinall and Chancellor of France for king Henry: the Bishoppes of Beauuoy and Poynne both pères of France, besides the Bishop of Paris, and diuers other Bishops, the Earle of Antemount and other noble men. And he had a guard of 3000. archers, some on horsebacke, some on foote. To speake of the honour, where with he was receiued into the Citie of Paris, what pageants were prepared, and how richly, the gates, streets, and byldges on euery side were hanged with costly clothes of arras and tapestrie, it would be too long a proceesse.

On the scuenth day of December king Henry was crownded in Paris, by the Cardinall of Winchester, at the which coronation was present, the Duke of Burgoigne, the Duke of Bedford Regent, and diuers other Nobles of France. After the solempnitie of this feast was ended, the king departed from Paris, and so came to Roane, where he held his Christmasse, and that done, hee returned to Calais, where when he had sojourned a season, hee toke shipping and returned into England, and landed at Douer the eleuenth of February, and then riding toward London, hee was met on Barham Downe, betwixt Douer and Canterbury, by a great companie of Gentles and commons of Kent, all clad in a liuerie with red hodes, the which accompanied him till he came to Blackheath, which was on the one and twentieth day of February, where hee was met by the Maior of London, who rode in a gowne of crimson Veluet, his Aldermen in scarlet, and the Cittizens all in white gownes and red hods, with diuerse woorkes or cognisances bzodred vpon their sleeves after the facultie of their misteries or craftes: and after due obseruance and saluting of the King, they rode on before him towardes the Citie. And when the King was come to the bydge, there was deuised a nightie Giant, standing with a sword drawne in his hand, hauing written certaine speeches in meter of great reioycing and wel-comming of the King to the Citie, on the middell of the bydge, and in diuers other places of the Citie, were diuers faire and sumptuous pageants replenished with goodly and beautifull personages, the order and speeches whereof, are set downe by Robert Fabian in his chronicle. Thus being conueyed to his pallace at Westminster, the Maior with the Cittizens returned to London, and on the 24. day of Februarie the Maior and Aldermen poye to the King, and presented him with a hampire of golde, and therein a thousand pound of nobles.

This yere by reason of the souldiers of Calais, a restraint was made

R r 2

there

King Henry  
crowned at  
Paris.

1432.

there of the Welles, for they were not content of their wages; wherefore the Duke of Bedford Regent of France, came down thither in Easter week, at which time many souldiers were arrested: and rode againe to Wirwinc. And hauing not long since buried the Lady Anne his late wife, sister to y<sup>e</sup> duke of Burgoigne, he married there the Lady Iaquet the daughter to Peter Earle of Saint Paule, and shortly after returned to Caleis, where he caused foure of those souldiers to be beheaded, on the xi. of June, and 110. souldiers to be banished the towne, besides 120. that were banished befoze that time. And vpon Midsummer euen the Lord Regent with his new wedded spouse came to London, and remained there till the latter end of August, and then returned againe to Paris.

The Duke of Burgoigne was nothing pleased with this new alliance contracted by the Duke of Bedfords, with the house of Lutzenbourg, but the marriage was consummate ere he could finde any meane to prevent it.

The Frenchmen raised a crew, and sodainly took the towne of Saint Calarie in Normandy, nere to the river of Some, and an other army vnder the leading of sir Ambrose de Lore, wasted all the countrey about Cane. The Duke of Bedford not minding to be idle, sent the Earle of Arundell, Henry the Earle of Warwicks sonne, the Lord Lisle Adam Marshall of France for king Henry, and 1200. men of warre, with ordinance and munitions to besiege the towne of Laigny vpon the river of Marne, the Earle with shot of a Canon brake the arch of the bydge, and got from the Frenchmen their bulwarke, and set it on fire, diuers assaults were made, but the towne was well defended, by 800. men of armes, besides other souldiers. The Duke of Bedford hereof aduertised, gathered an army of 6000. men, wherof were Captaines Robert Lord Willoughby, sir Andrew Ogard, Chamberlaine to the Duke, sir John Saluaine, bailiffe of Roane, sir John Mountgomery, bailiffe of Caur, sir Philip Hal bailiffe of Wernale, sir Richard Ratcliffe deputy of Caleis, sir Ralph Newill, sir Ralph Standish, sir John Handford, sir Richard Enthin, sir Richard Haringdon, bailiffe of Cüreur, sir William Fulthorpe, sir Thomas Griffith of Ireland, David Hall, Thomas Strangwish, Leonard Ormstone, Esquires, and Thomas Gerard. The Duke of Bedford with this army came to the siege befoze Laigny, where he made a bydge of boates, and brought his ordinance so nere the town, that to al people it seemed not long able to resist: but the bastard of Orleans Earle of Dunoy, with other hardy Captaines valiantly defended it. At the length the French king perceluing this towne to be the key betwene the territories of Burgoigne, English and French, & that the losse thereof should turne him to irrecoverable damage, sent the Lord of Rieur, Boyton, the Hire, the Lord Gaiwcourt and 6000. men, with plenty of victuals, to the intent, epyther to raise the siege, or at the least victual the towne. The Frenchmen framed themselves in order of battell, as though they would doe much, but did nothing in effect: but that whilst part of them maintained a skirmish, an other sort conueyed into the towne thirtie oren, and other victual. In that skirmish were slaine diuers valiant Frenchmen, and the rest considering how the Englishmen were planted, being now the beginning of August

August, they remoued and went vnto Fort vnder Perre, where by a bridge made of empty pipes, they passed into the yle of France. The Duke of Bedford not minding to lose the more for the lesse, raised his siege, and returned to Paris, nothing more minding then to trie his quarrell by dint of sword against his enemies, if they would thereto agree. And thereupon he sent Bedford his herault to the Lord Gaucourt & other Captains of the French armie, offering them battaile within a conuenient time, and where they would appoint. To the which officer at armes the Captaines answered, that battaile they feared not, nor the English force they much regarded, but they saide there was time to gaine, and time to lose, of the which they doubted not, to espie the one or the other, to their gaine or losse.

*Ann. reg. 11.*

The 25. of Nouember the Lord Fitzwalter was drowned on the sea, and many other harines were done by tempest.

The Regent, sent Peter of Lurenborough Earle of Saint Paule, and Robert Lord Willoughby, with a competent number of men to besiege the towne of Saint Alarie, which the Frenchmen a little before had taken, these valiant Captaines enuironed the towne with a strong siege. Within the towne, were sir Lewes de Vicount, sir Philip de la Towre, and sir Reignold de Verseilles Captaines with 300. good fighting men, which by the space of thre weekes, manfully defended the same. But then perceiuing the fiercenesse of the Englishmen, and the weakenesse of themselves, and having no hope of reliefe, rendered the towne, their hozse and harnets onely saued.

1433.

After this towne was thus gotten, the Earle of Saint Paule, and the Lord Willoughby returned to the Regent, where they were well welcommed, and after the said Earle departed from Paris, to lay siege to the Castell of Monches, but being encamped nere to the towne of Blangy, he by a sodaine maladie finished his daies and departed this life, leauing his seignories to Lewes his sonne and heire.

On the eight day of July, King Henry beganne his Parliament at Westminister, continued it till Lammasse, and then adiourned it vntill Saint Edwards tide.

*Parliament.*

This yere in the south west appeared a blasing starre.

During the raigne of this king Henry the first were Lieutenants ouer the Realme of Ireland, Edmond Earle of March, and James Earle of Dymond his deputie: John Sutton Knight Lord of Dudley, and sir Thomas Strange his deputie: sir Thomas Stanley, and sir Christopher Planket his deputie: Lyon Lord Welles, and the Earle of Dymonde his deputie: James Earle of Dymonde the kings Lieutenant by himselfe: John Earle of Shrewsbury, and the Archbishop of Diuelin Lord Justice in his absence: Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke, father to Edward the fourth and Earle of Ulster, had the office of Lieutenant by Letters Patents, during the space of tenne yeres, who deputed vnder him at severall times, the Baron of Diuelin, Richard Fitz Eustace Knight, James Earle of Dymonde, and Thomas Fitz Moris, Earle

*Ann. reg. 12.*

of Hilbare: to this Richard then resident in Diuelin, was bozne within the Castell there, the second sonne George Duke of Clarence, after ward drowned in a butte of malmesey.

1434.  
John Lord  
Talbot.

John Lord Talbot gathered a crew of chosen men of warre in England, to the number of 800. and about the beginning of the moneth of March, sayled into Normandy, and passed by Roan towards Paris, and in his way he toke the strong Castell of Jeing betwene Beauuois and Gisors, and caused all the Frenchmen within to be hanged on the walles, and after rased the Castell, and came to the Regent Duke of Bedford at Paris. The presence of which renowned Captaine, so incouraged the hearts of the English nation, that they thought nothing able to resist their puissance, and so discouraged the hearts of the Frenchmen, that they were in doubt whether it were better to fight or to flie, for he was a chosen Captaine, and in martiall seates fully instructed. When this hardy Baron had communed with the Regent, he departed from Paris with his army, and besieged the Castell of Beaumont vpon Dife, whereof was Captaine sir Amadour de Vignolles, brother to the Pire: which Castell was sone rendred vpon condition. After that he recovered without long siege, the towne of Creile, the bridge of Saint Marens, the new towne of Emoy, Crispy in Taloyz, and Cleramont in Beauuois: and so with great riches and rich prisoners, he returned againe to Paris.

The towne of Saint Denis, which is within two English miles of Paris, was gotten by the practise of one Iohn Notice a Knight of Mleance, from Matthew Gougly, and Thomas Kiriell Captaines, they slew there many Englishmen, and toke many prisoners, but sone after the saide Captaines with strength taken from Paris, laid sech strong a siege about Saint Denis, that finally they agreed to deliuer the towne to the Englishmen.

In the very same season the Earle of Arundell toke the Castell of Bome-line, and rased it to the ground, and after toke the Castell of Doyle, and from thence came to saint Selerine, where the Lord Ambrose de Lore was Captaine, which issued out and fought with the Englishmen so eagerly at the first, that he droue them backe an arrow shot: but the Earle so incouraged his men, that they toke new courages to them, and set so fiercely on the Frenchmen, that they slue a great number, and droue the remnant into the towne. After this victoery, he besieged Louiers, whereof was Captaine the Pire, and his brother, which rendred the towne without stroke. When the Earle enuironed the towne of Saint Selerine with a strong siege, when he had lien there almost thre moneths, euery day attempting somewhat, for the performance of his enterpryse: in conclusion at the thre monethes he gaue so fierce assault, that by force he entred the towne, and slue Iohn maine, and Guillam Saint Aubine, the chiefe Captaines, and 800. of their men of warre, and the children of Loire were taken prisoners: he replenished the towne, and made Captaine sir Iohn Cornewall. When he besieged the strong towne of Silly, and the inhabitants deliuered pledges vpon condition, that if the towne were not rescued within thirte daies, they should rer-



der the towne into his possession: which offer was taken, and when the time was expired, the towne was deliuered, where leauing a garrison, the Earle departed to Spain, & in the meane way toke the Castels of Melley and Saint Laurence.

The Lord Willoughby, and sir Thomas Kiriell returning with great victories out of the parties of Burgoigne, toke in their way the towne of Louiers, and furnished it both with men and munitions.

The Earle of Arundell minding to haue besieged the towne of Reys, was there slaine with Ralph Standish, the Earle of Arundell was buried at Beauuois, in the gray friers there.

The Earle of Arundell wounded to death.  
Great frost.

Thyough a great frost, that lasted from the 25. of Nouember, vnto the tenth of February, the Thames was so frozen, that the merchandise which came to the Thames mouth, was there landed, and carried thtyough Kent to London.

When the Pope Eugenius the fourth, and his Cardinals after long labour could make no peace betwixt king Henry of England and France, and Charles also named king of France, they at length made a peace betwixt the said Charles and Philip Duke of Burgoigne, wherby the said Duke of Burgoigne became vtter enemy to the king of England, and sone after the said Duke began his order of the Lilly, and the Golden fleece, and ordained certaine knights of that order, and made thereunto many statutes, whereof some of them were like vnto the statutes of the Garter.

1435.

This yere on the 14. of September died Iohn Duke of Bedford Regent of France, a man as politike in peace, as hardie in warre, and yet no moze hardy than mercifull when he had the victoꝝ, whose bodie was with all funerall pompe, and solemne exequies buried in the Cathedrall Church of our Ladie in Roan, on the north side of the high altar, vnder a sumptuous and costly monument: which tombe when king Lewes the 11. by certaine vndiscreete persons was counselled to deface, affirming that it was a great dishonour, both to the king, and to the realme, to see the enemy of his father, and theirs to haue so solemne and rich memorfall: he answered saying. What honour shall it be to vs, or to you to breake this monument, and to pull out of the ground the dead bones of him, whom in his life time, neither my father, nor your progenitoꝝ, with all their puissance, were once able to make flee one foote backward: but by his strength, wit, and policie kept them all out of the principal dominions of the realme of France, and out of this Noble Dutchie of Normandy: wherefore I say, first, God saue his soule, and let his bodie now lie in rest, which when he was aliue, would haue disquieted the proudest vs all: and for the tombe, I assure you is not so decent, nor conuenient as his honour and actes deserued.

The Duke of Bedford died.  
E. Hall.

Ann. reg. 14.

A too: the saying of a king against defacers of monuments.

After the death of the Noble Prince the Duke of Bedford, the Frenchmen began not onely to withdraue their obedience, which they had by oth promised to the King of England, but also toke sword in hand, and openly defied the Englishmen: but the Englishmen appointed for regent in France Richard Duke of York, sonne to Richard Earle of Cambridge (beheaded at

Richard Duke of York, made Regent of France.

Hampten.) This Richard now Regent was so disdained of Edmond Duke of Somerset, being chosen to the King, that by all means possible he sought his hindrance, by reason whereof, ere the Duke of York could get his dispatch, he was constrained to linger till the Citie of Paris, and diuers other the chiefest townes in France were gotten by the French king.

1436.

The Duke of York perceiuing his euill will, openly dissembled that which he inwardly minded, and thus either of them wrought things to the others displeasure, till at length, by moztall warre they were both consumed, with almost all their whole lines and offsprings.

The Normans of the countrey of Caur, being hartened by the death of the Duke of Bedford, beganne a new rebellion, slue diuers Englishmen, robbed many townes that were vnder the English obedience, and toke the towne of Warflew by assault, and diuers other townes. But the new Lord Regent being aduertised, sent forth the Lord Scales, sir Thomas Kiriell, and the Lord Hoo, which so afflicted those rebels of Caur, that they slue aboue fise thousand persons, and bent all the Townes and Villages in the countrey, not being walled, so that in that part was neither habitation, nor tillage, for all the people fled into Bytaine, and all the beasts of the countrey were brought to Candebecke, where a good sheepe was sold for an English penie, and a cow for twelue pence. Daily was skirmishing in every part, in so much, that the Lord Scales discomfited at the Rye beside Roan, the Hire and 1500. valiant Frenchmen, of the which, aboue thre hundred were taken prisoners, beside seven goodly fapze coursers. Amongst other of the prisoners, were sir Richard Reiginauld de Fountaines, sir Alaine Gerond, Alaine de Monsey, and Geffrey Gram Capitaine of the Scots. But yet this victorie and others the like, staied not the Frenchmen from working treason daily, in so much, that diuers townes turned to the part of king Charles, and some were taken by practise, as Dappe, Boys de Vincent and other.

A cow for six  
pence, and a  
sheepe for a  
penie.

Here is one chiefe point to be noted, that eyther the disdaine among the chiefe peeres of the Realme of England (as ye haue heard) or the negligence of the kings Counsell, was the losse of the whole dominion of France, betwene the riuers of Seine and Garne, and in especiall of the Noble Citie of Paris: for here befoze were sent ouer thousands for defence of the holdes and fortresses, now were sent hundreds, yea and scores, some rascals, and some not able to draw a bowe, or beare a bill: for the Lord Willoughby, and the Bishop of Terronanne, which had the Gouvernement of the Citie of Paris, had in their company not past 2000. Englishmen. Which weaknesse king Charles wel perceiuing, he appointed the Constable Arthure of Britaine, the Earle of Dunoy, the Lords De la Roch, and Lisle Adam, with other balliant Captaines, and men of warre, as well Burgonians as French, to go befoze Paris, trusting by fauour of certain Citizens, with whom he had intelligence, shortly to be Lord of the Citie, without great losse or battell: so these Captaines came befoze the Citie of Paris, but perceiuing that all things succeeded not accordyng to their expectation, they returned to Mount Martyr, and the next day set on the towne of Saint Dionese, where they slue two hundred

hundred Englishmen, and upon composition permitted the other to depart to Paris.

Thomas Lord Beaumont, which of late was come to Paris with 800. men, issued forth of the Citie with 600. souldiers, intending to biewe the doings and number of the French armie, but being espied, hee was sodainly compassed about, so that he was discomfited and taken, and with him 80. prisoners, besides 200. which were slaine in the field, and the remnant chased to the gates of the Citie. The Parisians, especially the master of the balls, and some of the Uniuersitie, and Michaelle Lellier, and many other Burgeses of the Citie, perceiuing the weaknesse of the Englishmen, and the force of the Frenchmen, signified to the French Captaines their mindes, willing them with all diligence to come, that they might receiue so rich a pray to them to be deliuered. The Constable delaying no time, came with his power, and lodged by the Charterhouse, and the Lord Lisle Adam appoaching to the walles, shewed to the Citizens a charter, sealed with the great seale of King Charles, by the which he had pardoned them their offences, and granted them their olde liberties, so that they would be to him true and obedient: which being to them declared, they ranne about the towne, crying Saint Denis, liue king Charles. The Englishmen perceiuing this, determined to keepe the gate of Saint Dionis, but the chaines were drawne, and women and children cast downe stones and scalding water on their heades, and the Citizens slue them, the Bishop of Eirtwine, the Lord Willoughby, and sir Simon Mornier, with dozen to the battie Saint Anthonic, whilst this rumour was in the towne, the Earle of Dunois, and other scaled the wals, and some passed the riuer by boates, and opened the gate of Saint Iames, by the which the Constable with his banner displayed entered. The Bishoppe and the Lord Willoughby defended their fortrese terme daies, and yielded. Thus was the Citie of Paris brought into the possession of Charles the French king, &c. now when Paris, Saint Denis, Saint Germaine and diuers other towne in Fraunce were taken for lacke of succour, the Duke of Borke Regent of France, came ouer into Normandy with 8000. men, and in his company the Earles of Salisburp and Suffolke, the Lord Falconbridge and other, but this Regent neuer did good in Fraunce, as appeareth by the histories.

Thomas Lord  
Beaumont  
taken prisoner.

Paris yielded  
to the French.

The 19. day of Iuly, the Duke of Burgoigne, with a great multitude of Burgonians and Flemmings appeared befoze Calais, and there pight his Pavilions and Tents, at which season was Lieutenaunt of Calais sir John Ratcliffe Knight, and of the Castell was Lieutenaunt the Baron of Dudley: this siege endured about thre weekes, in which season many knightly actes were done and exercised on both parts.

Calais besieged by the  
Duke of Burgoigne.

On the second day of August the Duke of Gloucester, protedour of England, with 500. sailles, (as some write,) landed at Calais, and intended upon the third day following to haue issued out of the towne, and to haue giuen battaile to the Flemmings, (but as our English writers testifie,) so sone as the Duke of Burgoigne was ware of the great power of the Lord

Ro Fabian,

Protector,

Protector, he toke with him of his ordinance that he might lightly carrie, and the other that were cumbersome he left behind. When the duke with his host was thus tied, the Lord protector which his people followed him into the country by the space of eleuen dayes, in which season he burnt & tooke towncs of Popering and Bell, and returned to Caleis, and so into England.

An. reg. 15.

This yere was the Castle of towne of Rokesborough in Scotland besieged by the King of Scots, but when he heard that Sir Ralph Gray Knight was coming thither with a competent number to remoue the siege, anon he departed, leauing some part of his ordinance behind him, to his great shame and dishonour.

1437.  
Quene Katherine Deceased.

The 3. of January Quene Katherine late wife to Henry the fift, and mother to King Henry the sixt, departed out of this transitory life at Bermondsey, and on the eight of february hir body was brought to S. Katherins by the tower, from thence to S. Pauls, and so was buried at Westminster in our Ladys chappell, and hir corpes being taken vp againe in the reigne of King Henry the 7. when he laid the foundation of his new chappell there, she was neuer since buried, but remaineth still aboue ground in a coffin of woods, behind the east end of the quire. This Quene Katherine (saith Hall) after the death of K. Henry the fift hir husband, being yong and lusty, following more hir owne appetite, than friendly counsell, & regarding more hir priuate affection, than her owne honour, toke to husband (saith he) a goodly gentleman, named Owen Tewther, by whom she conceived and brought forth thre sonnes, Edmond, Iaspar, and another which was a monke of Westminster, and a Daughter which liued not long. After whose death, King Henry because they were his brethren, of one wombe descended, created Edmond Earle of Richmond, and Iaspar Earle of Penbrooke: which Edmond had by Margaret Daughter and sole heire to John Duke of Somerset, Henry, which after was King of this Realme, called King Henry the seuenth.

The Dutches of Bedford, sister to Lewes Earle of S. Paul, without counsell of her friends, married a lusty Knight, called Sir Richard Woodville, to the great displeasure of hir vncle the Bishop of Turwine, and the Earle hir brother. This Sir Richard was made baron of Riucers, and after Earle, and had by his Lady many noble sonnes, and faire daughters, whereof one was Lady Elizabeth, after Quene of England, married to King Edward the fourth.

This yere the 14. of January at none, the great Stone gate at London bridge with the tower vpon it next to Southwarke fell downe in the Thames and two of the farthest arches of the same bridge, and yet no man perished in body, which was a great worke of God,

Colledge of  
Tatshall founded.

Ralph Lord Cromwell, and Marild his wife erected the colledge of the Trinitie at Tatshall in Lincolnshire, which Colledge at the suppression in the 38. of Henry the eight was valued to dispend yereely 348. pounds, five shillings.

Also this yere on the ninth of Iuly, Jane late Quene of England, and before Dutches of Bypaine, daughter to the King of Nauarre, and wife to King Henry the fourth, died in the mannor of Papering a Bolwe in Essex,  
from



from whence she was removed to Bermondsey, and from thence conveyed to Canterbury, where she was solemnly entered by King Henry the fourth her husband.

This yere the King gave licence to Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, and Elianor his wife, to build and embattell his mannoꝝ house at Crænewich, to inclose two hundred acres of ground pasture, wood, and heath, and to imbatell his tower in the same parke, &c.

Record.  
Tower of  
Crænewich.

In the meane time, John Duke of Somerset accompanied with the Lords of Fauconbridge, Talbot, Sir Francis Surien Arraganois, Mathew Gough, Thomas Pawlet, Thomas Harrington, Walter Lymbroke, John Geding, William Watton Esquires, and Thomas Hilton bailife of Roane, with a puissance of the English party, besieged the towne of Harflew both by water and by land. The capitaine within the towne was called Sir John de Stuteville, and Sir Robert his brother, with other, to the number of 600. fighting men. The assailants made trenches, both to assault the towne, and to let the French from succours, that they should neither approach noꝝ aide the townes men besieged: divers assautes were given, and great ordinance was laid befoze the gate of the towne, which overthrew buildings: the siege endured long, to the great discomfiture of them within, whereof they advertised the King, who sent thither the Earle of Dwe, the Earle of Dunoy, the bastard of Bourbon, the Lord Gainecourt and other, with 4000. men, these passed the river of Some betwæne Amlas and Cozby, came befoze the towne, and daily skirmished with the Englishmen, but nothing prevailed, and therefore returned. The captaines of the towne rendred the towne to John Duke of Somerset, who made captaines there Thomas Pawlet, William Lymbrike, Christopher Barker, and George S. George, which many yeres manfully defended the towne and haven, but after ward when the said Duke was regent, he not onely lost the towne, but also the Citie of Roane, with many other Cities.

This yere was a parliament holden at Westminster in which were divers notable conclusions ordained, aswell for the preservation of peace at home, as for the maintenance of war in outward regions: and an act was made for buseng and selling by strangers, very profitable to the publike weal if it were observed.

Parliament at  
Westminster.  
An. reg. 16.

On the 6. of November the Earle of Warwike as regent of France, passed the sea, after he had ben seven times shipped and unshipped, and landed at Harflew with 1000. fresh soldiers, and came to Roan, and then the Duke of Poike returned into England.

The Earle of Warwicke hearing that the Duke of Burgoyne besieged the Castle of Croytie, sent the Lord Talbot, the Lord Fauconbridge, Sir Thomas Kiriell, Sir John Montgomerie, Thomas Lymbroke, Thomas Chandos, Dauby Hall, and other Knights and Esquires, and in all 5000. men. When the Duke of Burgoyne was informed of the approach of the Lord Talbot, and other, hee with all his power saving 400. left in a bastle by him there newly builded, fledde to Abbeville, which bastle was soone gained, and the men either slaine or taken. After this the Lord Talbot

1458.

sent

sent to the Duke of Burgoin, signifying to him, that except he would come forth, and giue him battell, he would utterly waste his countrey of Picardy, and according to his promise he bent towne, spoiled, and slew many people in Picardy, but for all this doings, the Duke of Burgoyne appeared not, but got him from Abbeville to Ambois, so that the Lord Talbot abode 20. daies in Picardy and Artois, destroying all afoze him, and returned without impeachment.

Owen Tewcher foully hurting his keeper, brake out of Newgate, but was taken after ward by the Lord Beaumont, and brought again to Newgate, and againe escaped. This Owen was thus imprisoned by the Duke of Gloucester, for that he had foure children by Quene Katherine, late wife to Henry the fift, as is aforesayd. This Owen was many yeeres after ward taken at a skirmish about Wigmore, and brought by sir Richard Vehan grandfather to great Vehan the sergeant at armes, to Hereford, and there beheaded, and buried: but after ward Iaspar Sonne to Owen sodainly tooke sir Richard Vehan in his house, or, as some say, at Chepstow Castle, and caused his head to be smitten off. In the moneth of June the Earle of Huntington (as steward of Gwine) with 2000. archers, and 400. spears was sent into Gascoigne, as a supply to the country and commons of the same. Also sir Richard Wooduile, sir William Chamberlaine, sir William Peits, and sir William Story with 1000. men were sent to stiffe the towne in Normandy, which at that time had thereof great neede, for the English Captaines had small confidence in the Normans, and not so much in some of their owne nation, for bribery, with couetousnes ranne fast abroad with French crowns, that bnneth any creature could hold their hands close, or purses shut.

John Leiland.  
Owen Tew-  
cher prisoner in  
Newgate, and  
after beheaded

An. reg. 17.  
The towne of  
Newgate:  
burnt.

This yere the towne of Wilco Walbanke, or Newgate in the countie of Chester was pitifully consumed with fire.

This yere, by reason of great tempests, immeasurable windes and raines there rose such a scarcitie, that wheate was sold in some places for two shillings five pence the bushell, wine for twelue pence the gallon, bay salt for fourtene pence the bushell, &c

In this moneth followed such a frost, and after that so deepe a snow, that all the ground was couered therewith, and all the ditches frozen, which wea-ther put the Englishmen in hope to recouer againe the towne of Ponthoisse, by the French King gotten before, by corrupting with money diuers burgesses of the towne, wherefoze the Englishmen being clothed all in white, with John Lord Clifford their captaine, came in the night to the ditches, and passed them without danger, by reason of the frost, scaled the walles, slew the watch, and tooke the towne with many profitable prisoners.

After the regaining of the towne of Ponthoisse Richard Beauchamp Earle of Warwick lieutenant generall of France, and of the dutchy of Normandy, died in the Castle of Roan in Normandy on the last of Aprill, the yere of his age 58. And on the fourth of October next following his corpes being honorably conueyed, aswell by water as by land, from Roan in Normandy, to Warwick in England, and was laid with full solemnities in a faire chest made of stone

1439.  
Rich. Beau-  
champ Earle  
of Warwick  
deceased.

stone in the westdore of the colledge of our Ladies Church, by his noble ancestors, till a chappell by him deuised in his life were made, which chappell founded on the rocke, and all the members thereof, his executors did fully make and apparell, by the authozitie of his said last will and testament: And there after by the said authozity they did translate the said body into the vault aboue said, where he is intombed right princely and poytured with an image armed of copper and gilt, hopped ouer with stauces of copper and gilt, like a chariot.

About the beginning of Lent, Iohn Duke of Somerset, and the Lord Talbot, with other captaines and men of war, to the number of 2000. marching towards Picardy, passed ouer the riner of Some, and thzough the towne of Monteruel, came befoze the fortreffe of Fullenill, which the Duke besieged, Whilest the Lord Talbot entred further into the country. After that the Duke had mounted his great artillery, and began to batter the hold, the captaine within being slaine with a shot thereof, and the batterie being still continued, the place was yelded, in the which the Duke left a competent garrison of souldiours, which after ward soze indomaged the country.

This done, the Duke followed the Lord Talbot, who was already entred a good way within the country of Sauthois, and now ioyning their powers togither, they came to a fortreffe called Liphons in Sauthois, which was also rendzed vnto them, after they had bzent the Church which the countrie people kept against them, and would not yeld it, till they were fired out, and bzent, and slaine, to the number of 300. The fortreffe being by composition deliuered into their hands, the duke with his power lay there about ten dayes, sending diuers troupes of his men abroad into the country, which spoiled the same, toke the fortreffe of Harbonners, and the Lord thereof within it, who soz his ransome, and to haue his subiects and house saued from spoile and fier, compounded with his takers soz 1000. saluz of gold, which he paid to them: finally, after the Duke of Somerset, and the Lord Talbot, with their power had laine in Liphons about ten dayes, they returned into Normandy without any impeachment,

This yere wheat was sold at London soz thze shillings the bushell, malt soz thirtene shillings the quarter, otes soz eight pence the bushell, which soz ced men to eate beanes, pease, and barley, moze then in an hundred yeres befoze: wherefoze Stephen Browne maioz of London sent into Bruse, and caused to be brought to London many ships laden with rie, which did much good to the people, soz bread cozne was so scarce in England that poze people made them bread of serne roots.

In a Parliament at Keding it was ordained, that all merchant strangers should goe to host with Englishmen, and to make sale of their merchandises, and buy againe what they would within the space of six monethes, giuing their host soz euery twenty shillings worth two pence, except the Esterlings, And that euery householder that was assen, should pay to the King 12. pence the yere, and euery seruant alien six pence.

King Henry created Edmond Hamden Earle of Richmond, and Iaspar de Hatfield

*An. reg. 18.*  
Great dearth  
of come in  
England.  
1440.

Parliament at  
Keding.

Dider for  
strangers.

Richard Wich  
burnt on the  
Tower hill.

Hatfield Earle of Penbroke, these were the Kings brethren by the mothers side, John Surton Knight was created Baron of Dudley, the last day of the Parliament at Reading. Sir Richard Wich vicar of Hermetworth in Essex, or middlesex, sometime vicar of Wertsford in Kent, who had before abjured, was burnt on the tower hill the 17. of June. After whose death was great murmur among the people, for some said he was a good man and an holy, and put to death by malice: and some said the contrary, so that many men and women went by night to the place where he was burnt, and offered their money, images of war, and other things, making their prayers, kneeling, and kissing the ground, bare away with them the ashes of his body for holy reliques, &c. This endured eight dayes, til the maiors and aldermen ordained men of armes, to restrain the people, who apprehended many, and sent them to prison, among whom was taken the vicar of Berking Church beside the tower, in whose parish all this was done, who had received the offering of the simple people. And to excite them to offer the more fervently to the fulfilling of his false couetousnes, he had medled ashes with the powder of spices, and strewed them in the place where the priest was burnt, and so the simple people were deceived, weening the swete savour had come of the ashes of the dead priest: all which the said vicar of Berking church confessed in prison. This haue I noted the more at large, because some haue writte the vicar of Berking to be burnt, which is false, for he was not burnt, though he better deserued than the other.

The Duke of  
Borke regent  
of France.

After the death of the Earle of Marwarke, the Duke of Borke was againe made regent of France, which being accompanied with the Earle of Orford, the Lord Boucher called Earle of Ewe, Sir James of Dymond, the Lord Clinton, Sir Richard Wooduile, and diuers other noble men on the firste of May shipped at Portsmouth, and sailed thence into Poymandy, before whose arriual, the French King soe græued with the towne of Ponthoife, assembled a great army, and besieged the said towne himselfe in person, enuironing it with bastiles, trenches, and ditches, beating the walles and bulwarks with the shot of great ordinance, giuing thereunto diuers great assaults, but John Lord Clifford like a valiant captaine defended the towne so manfully, that the Frenchmen rather lost than won.

The Duke of Borke at his landing, sent for the Lord Talbot, and a great number of souldiours, and so came nere to the towne of Ponthoife, and there incamped himselfe, and sent word to the French King, that thither he was come to giue him battell, if he would come out of his strength and bastiles, but the French King determined not to venture his person with men of so base estate, but meant to keepe his ground, bidding the Lord regent to enter at his perill: and in the meane season did what he could to stop the passage of the river Dife, so that no victuall should be brought to the English army by that way.

The Duke of Borke perceiving that the French King minded not to fight, purposed to passe over the river of Dife, and so to fight with him. Whereupon he remoued his campe, and appointed the Lord Talbot and other to make countenance, as they would passe the river by force at the port of Beaumont,



amount, and appointed another company in boates of timber and lether, and bridges made of cords and ropes to passe ouer beneath the abbey. Whilest the Lord Talbot made a crie as though he would assault the gate, certaine Englishmen passed the water in boates, and drew a bridge of cords ouer, so that a great number of them were got to the other side, ere the Frenchmen were abashed what had hapned. When they saw the chance, they ran like mad men to haue stopped the passage, but it was too late, for the most part of the Englishmen were got ouer, insomuch, that they chased their enemies backe, and slue Sir Guiliam de Chastell, and diuers other. The Frenchmen seeing their euill hap, returned to their King, and tolde him what had happened, whereupon he doubting to be assailed to his disaduantage, thought not good longer to tarry, but with all speede, removing his ordinance into the baskle of Saint Martin, which he had newly made, dislodged in the night from Pansbupston, and went to Poytie, leauing the Lord de Corigni Admirall of France with 3000. men, to keepe the baskle. The Englishmen the next day came before the towne of Ponthois, thinking there to haue found the French King, but he was gone, and in his lodging they found great riches, and much stuffe, which he could not carrie away for feare of the sodaine inuasion. The Duke with his power entred the towne, repaired the wals, and diuers times assaulted the baskle of the Frenchmen. After this the Duke intending once againe to offer the French King battell, left behinde him at Ponthois, Sir Geruais Clifton, Sir Nicholas Burdet, Henry Chandos, and a thousand soldiers, and therewith removing with his whole army came before Poytie, where he set himselfe and his men in order of battell ready to fight. There issued out some Frenchmen, but to their losse: for diuers of them were slaine, and fower valiant horsemen taken. The Duke perceiuing the Frenchmen durst not encounter in field with the English power, dislodged from Poytie, & came to Spaunt, and from thence to Roen.

When the Regent and the Lord Talbot were returned againe into Normandy, the French King considering how much it should redound to his dishonour to let rest the towne of Ponthois, in his enemies hands, he effectuously returning sodainly againe vnto Ponthois, he first by assault gat the Church, and after the whole towne, toke the captaine and diuers other Englishmen, and slue to the number of thre hundred, amongst the which Sir Nicholas Burdet chiefe butler of Normandy was one. *Anreg. 19.*

After this King Henry, and King Charles, agreed to send Ambassadors to commune of peace: King Henry sent Henry Beaufort Cardinall of Winchester, with diuers other noble men to Caleis, with whom was also sent Charles Duke of Orleans yet prisoner in England, to the end he might be both authoz of the peace, and procurer of his owne deliuerance. The French King sent the Archbishop of Reims, and the Earle of Dunois, and the Duke of Burgoigne sent the Lord de Creue-Cure, and diuers other: all these met at Caleis, where the Duke of Orleans courteously receiued the Earle of Dunois (his bastard brother) thanking him greatly for his paines taking in gouerning his lands and countrie. During the time of his captiuitie and  
absence,

*Sir Nicholas  
Burdet slaine.*

abſence, diuers communications were had, as well for the deliuerance of the Duke, as for a ſmall peace, but nothing was concluded, ſauing that another meeting was appointed. The Duke of Bliance was ſet at libertie, paying for his ranſome 300000. crownes.

The 26. of nouember was a challenge in armes done beſore King Henry within liſts, in Smithfield, betwene Sir Richard Wooduile, a knight of England, and a knight of Spaine, but the King tooke vp the matter into his hands, after the third ſtroke.

This yere King Henry being of himſelfe alwayes naturally inclined to doe good, and fearing leaſt he might ſeeme vnthankfull to Almighty God for his great benefits beſtowed vpon him, ſince the time he firſt tooke vpon him the regiment of his Realme, determined for his primar notable worke, to erect and found two famous Colleges in the honour and worſhip of his holy name, and for the increaſe of vertue, the dilation of cunning, and eſtabliſhment of Chriſtian faith, whereof the one in Cambridge, to be called his College Royall of our Lady, and Saint Nicholas: and the other at Eaton, beſide Windſore, to be called his Colledge of our Bleſſed Ladie. And for the perſormance of this his deuout purpoſe, he enſcoſſed certaine Biſhops with other noble and worſhipfull perſonages, by his letters pattents, with lands and poſſeſſions, parcell of his inheritance of the Dutchie of Lancaſter, to the cleere value of well nere ſolwer and thirtie hundred pound by yere, which letters patents he after confirmed by his acte of Parliament, declaring alſo by his will vnto his ſaid ſceoffes, his intent and meaning, how the ſame ſhould be imploied vpon the edifications of his ſaid two Colledges, whercof in my iudgement the deuiſe is ſo excellent, and the buildings ſo princely and apt for that purpoſe, as I cannot omit to ſet forth vnto you the very plat of the whole Colledge in Cambridge, euen as I finde mentioned, almoſt Verbatim, in his ſaid will, ſuppoſing, that if the reſt of the houſe had proceeded according to the Chappell already finiſhed (as his full intent and meaning was) the like Colledge could ſcant haue been found againe in any Chriſtian land. This Colledge was begun in his time, and finiſhed ſo farre, that in Anno 1443, (which was the 23. of his raigne) the cemiterie or Church yarde, the altar, &c. (as the manner was) were conſecrated by the Biſhops of Salisburie and Lincolne. The words of the Will are theſe: As touching the dimensions of the Church of my ſaid Colledge, of our Ladie and Saint Nicholas of Cambridge, I haue deuſed and appointed, that the ſame Church ſhall containe in length 288. foote of aſſiſe, without any Ale, and all of the wideneſſe of ſortie foote. And the length of the ſame Church from the Weſt ende vnto the altars at the Quire doore, ſhall containe 120. foote. And from the Pronoffs ſtall, vnto the græce called Gradus Chori, 90. foote, for 36. ſtals on either ſide of the ſame Quire, anſwering to lxx. ſellowes, and ten priests conduits, which muſt be de prima forma. And from the ſaid ſtals vnto the Eaſt ende of the ſaid Church, 62. foote of aſſiſe. Alſo a Keredoſſe bearing the roodloſt, departing the Quire, and the body of the Church, containing in length ſortie foote, and in breadth ſourtene foote. The wals of the ſame Church

The Kings  
Colledge in  
Cambridge.

The Chappell.

The body of  
the Church.  
The Quire.

The Roodloſt.  
The height of  
the Chappell.

Church to be in height ninety fote imbatteled, vaulted and Charercofed, sufficiently butteraced, and every butterace lined with finials. And in the east end of the same Church shall be a window of nine dayes, and betwixt every butterace a window of five dayes. And betwixt every of the same butteraces in the body of the Church, on both sides of the same Church a closet with an Altar therein, contayning in length twentie fote, and in bzeadth ten fote, vaulted and finished vnder the soile of the Ile windowes. And the pavement of the Church to be enhanced foure fote above the ground without. And the height of the pavement of the Quire one fote and a halfe above the pavement of the Church. And the pavement of the Aultar thre fote above that. And on the North side of the Quire a Vestrie contayning in length fiftie fote, and in bzeadth, twentie two fote, departed into two houses beneath, and two houses above, which shall containe in height twentie two fote in all, with an entrie from the Quire vaulted. And at the West end of the Church a Cloyster square, the East pane contayning in length, 175. fote and the West pane as much. The North pane two hundred fote, and the South pane as much, of the which the Deambulatorie thirtene fote wide, and in height twentie fote, to the Cozbill table, with cleare Royses and Butteraces with finiales, vaulted and imbatteled. And the ground thereof, foure fote lower than the Church ground. And in the middle of the West pane of the Cloyster a strong Tower square, contayning foure and twentie fote within the walles. And in height one hundred and twentie fote to the Cozbill table. And foure small Turrets over that lined with Pyacles. And a doze into the sayde Cloyster inward, but outward none. And as touching the dimensions of the housing of the sayde Colledge, I have deuised and appoynted in the South side of the said Church a Quadraunt, closing to both ends of the same Church, the East pane whereof shall containe two hundred and thirtie fote in length, and in bzeadth within the Walls two and twentie fote. In the same panes middle a tower for a Gatehouse, contayning in length thirtie fote, and in bzeadth two and twentie, and in height forty fote, with thre Chambers over the Gate, every one over the other. And on either side of the same Gate foure Chambers, every one contayning in length five and twentie fote, and in bzeadth two and twentie fote. And ouer every of these Chambers, two Chambers above of the same measure or moze, with two Towers outward, and two Towers inward.

The South pane shall containe in length 238. fote, and in bzeadth two and twentie fote within, in which shall bee seven Chambers, every one contayning in length nine and twentie fote, and in bzeadth two and twentie fote with a Chamber parcell of the Proouosts lodging, contayning in length five and thirtie fote, and with a Chamber in the East corner of the same pane, contayning in length five and twentie fote, and in bzeadth two and thirtie fote. And ouer every of all these Chambers two Chambers, and with five towers outward, and thre towers inward. The West pane shall containe in length 230. fote, and in bzeadth within 24. fote, in which at the ende toward the Church shall be a Library, contayning in length 110. fote, and in bzeadth

The East window.

The side Chappell.

The Vestry.

The Cloyster.

The Steeple.

The base  
corner.  
The East  
pane.The great  
Gate.The South  
pane.The West  
pane.  
The Library

The Librarie.  
The disputation  
house.

The ward-  
robe.  
The hall.

The pantrie  
and butterie.

The Colledge  
kitchin.

The Priorosts  
lodging.

The bak-  
house, and  
brewhouse.  
The wood-  
yard.  
The water  
conduit.

The precinct  
of the colledge.

The water  
gate.

breadth foure and twenty fote. And vnder it a large house for reading and disputations, containing in length fourtie fote: And two chambers vnder the same library, each containing nine and twentie fote in length, and in breadth foure and twentie fote. And ouer the said library a house of the same largenes, for diuers stufte of the said Colledge. In the other end of the same pane a hall, containing in length 100. fote, vpon a vault of twelue fote high, ordained for the cellar and buttrie: and the breadth of the hall sixe and thirtie fote, on euery side thereof a bay window. And in the neather end of the same hall toward the middle of the same pane a pantrie and butterie, cuery of them in length twentie fote, and in breadth seuentene fote, and ouer that two chambers for officers. And at the neather end of the hall toward the West, a goodly kitchin. And the same pane shall haue inward two towers, ordained for the wayes into the hall and librarie. And in euery corner of the said quadrant shall be two corner towers, one inward, and one outward moze then the towers aboue rehearsed. And at the upper end of the hall the priorosts lodging, that is to wit, moze than the chambers for him aboue specified, a parlour on the ground, containing foure and thirtie fote in length, and two and twentie fote in breadth, and two chambers aboue of the same quantitie. And westward closing thereto a kitchin for him, a larder house, stables and other necessary housings and grounds. And westward beyond these houses, and the said kitchin ordained for the hall, a bakehouse, a brewhouse, and other houses of office, betwene which there is left a ground square of fourescore fote in euery pane, for woode and such stufte. And in the middle of the said large quadrant shall be a conduit, goodly deuised for ease of the same colledge. And I will, that the edification procede in large forme of my said colledge cleane and substantiall, setting apart superfluitie of too great curious woorkes, of entaile and busse moulding. And I haue deuised and appointed that the precinct of my said colledge, as well on both sides of the garden from the colledge to the water, as in all other places of the same precinct, be inclosed with a substantiall wall, of the height of fourtene fote, with a large tower at the principall entrie against the middle of the east pane out of the high stræte. And in the same tower a large gate, and another tower in the middle of the West end at the new bidge. And the same wall to be crested, embattelled, and fortified with towers, as many as shall be thought conuenient thereunto. And I will, that my said colledge be edified of the most substantiall and best abiding stufte, of Stone, lead, glasse, and yron, that may best be had and prouided thereto.

Thus much I haue enlarged by occasion of reading this good Kings will: the cunning deuise whereof I leaue to the considerate iudgement of such as be expert in architecture, heartily desiring almighty God to put into the heart of some noble Prince of his land, one day to make perfect this royall woрке, so charitably begun.

1441.

A combat was fought at Totehill betwene two thēues, the appealer and defendant, the appealer had the field of the defendant within thre strokes.

Roger



Roger Bolinbrooke a great astronomer, with Thomas Southwell a chap-  
 non of S. Stephens chappell at Westminster, were taken as conspiratours  
 of the Kings death, for it was said, that the same Roger should labour to con-  
 sume the Kings person by waie of Pseudomancie, and the said Thomas should  
 say Masses in the lodge of Harnesey Parke beside London, vpon certaine  
 instruments, with the which the said Roger should vse his craft of Pseudomancie,  
 against the faith, and was assenting to the said Roger, in all his  
 woyses. And the five and twentieth day of Iulie being Sondae, Roger Bo-  
 lingbroke, with all his instruments of Pseudomancie, that is to say, a chayre  
 painted wherein he was wont to sit, vpon the foure corners of which  
 chayre stood foure swordes, and vpon euery sworde an image of copper hang-  
 ing, with many other instrumentes: he stood on a high scaffolde in Paules  
 Churchyarde, before the crosse, holding a sword in his right hand, and a  
 scepter in his left, arrayed in a marvellous attire, and after the sermon was  
 ended by master Low Bishop of Rochester, he abjured all articles long-  
 ing to the craft of Pseudomancie or misdoynge to the faith, in presence of the  
 Archbishop of Canterbury, the Cardinall of Winchester, the Bishop of Lon-  
 don, Salisbury and many other.

On the Tuesday next following, dame Elianor Cobham, daughter to  
 Reginald Cobham Lord of Struborough: Dutchesse of Glocester fled by night  
 into the Sanctuary at Westminster, which caused hir to be suspected of  
 treason.

In the meane tyme Roger Bolingbroke, was examined befoze the Kings  
 Counsaile, where he confessed that he wrought the said Pseudomancie at the  
 stirring and procurement of the said Dame Elianor, to knowe what should  
 befall of hir, and to what estate she should come, whereupon she was cited  
 to appere befoze Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Canterburie, Henry Beau-  
 forte Bishop of Winchester Cardinall, Iohn Kempe Archbishop of Poze  
 Cardinall: William Ascothe Bishop of Salisbury, and other in Saint Ste-  
 phens chappell at Westminster, there to answer to certaine articles in  
 number 28. of Pseudomancie, witchcraft, sorcerie heresie, and treason, where  
 when she appeared, the foresaid Roger was brought forth to witnes against  
 hir, and said, that she was cause and first stirred him to labor in the said arte.  
 When on the eleventh of August, she was committed to the warde of Sir  
 Iohn Steward, Sir William Wolfe Knights, Iohn Stanley Esquire, and other,  
 to be conueyed to the Castle of Leedes, there to remaine til thre weekes after  
 Michaelmasse.

Shortly after a commission was directed to the Carles of Huntington,  
 Stafforde, Suffolke, and Northumberland, the treasurer Sir Ralph Crom-  
 well, Iohn Cornwall, Lord Fanhope, Sir Walter Hungerforde, and to cer-  
 taine Judges of both Benches, to enquire of all manner of treasons, sorceries  
 and other things that might be hurtfull to the Kings person, befoze whom  
 the said Roger, and Thomas Southwell, as principals, and dame Elianor as ac-  
 cessarie, were indicted of treason in the Guilde Hall of London.

There was taken also Margerie Gurdemaine a witch of Eye besides

An. reg. 20.  
The Church of  
Eyre bzant.

Westminster, whose sozcerie and witchcraſte the ſaid Elianor had long time vſed, and by hir medicines and dzinkes enſozered the Duke of Glouceſter to loue hir, and after to wed hir, whereſoze, and ſoz cauſe of relapſe, the ſame witch was bzant in Smithfield, on the 27. of October.

The one and twentieth of October, in the chappell beſo: ſaid, beſoze the Biſhops, of London Robert Gilbert, of Lincolne William Alnewike, of Poꝛwich Thomas Brouns, the ſayde Elianor appéred, and Adam Molins clarke of the Kings counſell read certaine articles obſected againſt hir of Sozcerie and Pꝛegromancie, whereof ſome ſhee denied, and ſome ſhee granted.

The thꝛe and twentieth of October dame Elianor appéred againe, and wiſneſſes were bzought ſozth and examined: and ſhe was conuict of the ſaid articles: then was it asked if ſhe would ſay any thing againſt the wiſneſſes, whereunto ſhe answered nay, but ſubmitted hir ſelfe. The 27. day of October ſhe abiured the articles, and was adioyned to appéere againe the ninth of November. In the meane time to woth on the 26. of October Thomas Southwell died in the Tower of London, as himſelfe had pꝛopheſied that he ſhould neuer die by Juſtice of the Lawe.

Elianor Cob-  
ham did pe-  
nauce.

The 9. of Nouember dame Elianor appéred beſoze the Archbiſhop and other, in the ſayde Chappell, and receiued hir penauce, which ſhe perſourmed.

On Monday the 13. of Nouember, ſhe came from Westminster, by water, and landed at the Temple bzidge, from whence with a taper of ware of two pound in hir hande, ſhe went thꝛough Flæteſſtꝛæte, hoodleſſe (ſaue a kercheſe) to Pauls, where ſhe offered hir taper at the high altar. On the Wednesday next ſhee landed at the Swan in Thamis ſtꝛæte, and then went thꝛough Bzidgeſtꝛæte, Grace church ſtꝛæte, ſtraight to Leaden Hall, and ſo to Chriſt Church by Aldgate. On Fryday ſhe landed at Quene Hine, and ſo went thꝛough Cheape to S. Michaels in Coꝛnehill, in ſozme afoꝛeſaid: at all which times the Maioꝛ, ſherifes, and craftes of London, receiued hir and accompanied hir. This being done ſhe was committed to the ward of Sir Thomas Stanley, whereſin ſhe remained during hir life in the Caſtle of Cheſter, hauing pꝛeſely 100. markes aſſigned ſoz hir finding, in the 22. of Henry the ſixt ſhe was remoued to Kenſlwoꝛth, there to be ſafely kept, whole pꝛide, falſe, couetiſe, and kecherie, were cauſe of hir conſuſion.

The 18. of Nouember Roger Bolingbroke, with Sir John Hum pꝛeſt, and William Woodham Eſquier, was arraigned in the Cuſt Hall of London, where the ſaid Iohn and William had their charters, but Roger Bolingbrooke was condemned, and had iudgement of Sir Iohn Hody, chiefe Juſtice of the Kings Bench, and the ſame day he was dꝛawn from the tower to Tiboꝛne and there hanged and quartered: and when the ſaid Roger ſhould ſuffer, he ſaid that he was neuer guiltie of any treaſon againſt the Kings perſon, but he had pꝛeſumed ſo far in his cunning, whereof he cried God mercy: and the Juſtice that gaue on him iudgement liued not long after.

Henry Beauchampe ſucceeded in his fathers inheritance, who being kept

kept two yeeres in the kings hands, was restozed to al his liuings with great gloz, for he was crowned King of Elight, by the Kings owne hands, and nominated chiefe Earle of England.

Henry Beauchamp Earle of Warwick.

The Duke of Orleans being deliuered (as is afoze shewed) and speaking now better English than French, after his arriual in France, repaired to the Duke of Burgoyne, and according to his promise, married the Lady Mary Cleue in the towne of Saint Omers, on whom he begat a sonne, which after was French King by the name of Lewes the twelfth.

Richard duke of Yorke regent of France and gouernoz of Normandy, sent the Lord Willoughby with a great number of souldiers, to destroy the county of Amiens, and John Lord Talbot was appointed to besiege the towne of Diepe: and the regent himselfe, accompanied with Edmond Duke of Somerset, set forthward into the dutchie of Anisw. The Lord Willoughby entred the country of his enemies vpon such a sodaine, that a great number of people were taken ere they could withdraue into any place of safegard. The Frenchmen in the garrisons adioynning, affronted with the clamor and crye of the people, issued out, and manfully fought with the Englishmen, but in the end the Frenchmen slaine in the forefront, they turned their backs and fled, the Englishmen solowed and slew many, and such as escaped the sword were robbed by the earle of Saint Pole, which was comming to aide the Englishmen: in this conflict were slaine aboue 600. men of armes, and a great number taken.

1442.

The Dukes of Yorke and Somerset entred into Anisw and Paine, and there destroyed townees, and spoiled the people, and with great prayes and prisoners repaired againe into Normandy, whither also the Lord Willoughby withdrew after his enterpryse atchiued. The Duke of Somerset entred into the marches of Bzptaine, and toke by assault a towne named la Gerch, appertayning to the Duke of Alanson, spoiling and burning the same, from thence he went to Ponray, where he sojourned two moneths, sending forth daily his men of war, to destroy the countries of Anisw, Traonnois, and Chatragonnois. The French King sent the Marshall Loyach with foure thousand men to resist the inuasions of the Duke of Somerset, but the Duke discomfited him, slew 100. of his men, and toke 62. prisoners of the best of them. The Duke after this encounter toke the towne of Beaumont le Vicount, and manned all the fortresses on the frontiers of his enemies, and with rich booties and prisoners returned to the Duke of Yorke.

In the meane time the Lord Talbot besieged the towne of Diepe, enuironing it with deepe trenches and rampiers, building also vpon the mount Powlet a strong bastle, but at length perceiuing the towne to be strongly defended, he deliuered the custodie of the bastle to his bastard sonne a valiant yong man and departed to Roan for aide, money, and munition.

The French King sent his sonne the Dolphin of Mienne, with the Earle of Dunois and 15000. men to raise the siege from Diepe: thre dayes they assailed the bastle, in the which 600. Englishmen were inclosed: at length the Frenchmen wan it, and toke the bastard Talbot prisoner, with Sir Wil-

liam Poitow, and Sir Iohn Repley, which shortly after were redeemed. The other Englishmen, seeing the battle won by the Frenchmen, stood all a day in order of battaille, and in the night following returned to Roan.

Whil实现 these things were in doing, Philip Duke of Burgoigne made sharpe war against the Earle of S. Pole, in taking from him his townes and Castles, so that he was constrained to renounce his allegtance, promised and swoyne to the King of England, and returned to the French parte.

A combat in  
Smithfield.

The 30. of January a challenge was done in Smithfield within liffes, befoze the King, the one, Sir Philip le Beawfe of Aragon a Knight, and the other an Esquire of the Kings house called Iohn Anley or Astley, these comming to the field toke their tents, and then was the Knights sonne made Knight by the King, and so brought againe to his fathers tent. When the Heraults of armes called them by name to doe their bat taile, and so they came both all armed with their weapons: The Knight came with his sword drawne, and the Esquire with his speare, which speare the Esquire cast against the Knight, but the Knight auoyded it with his sword, and cast it to the ground, then the Esquire toke his are, and went against the Knight sodainly, on whom he stroke many strokes hard and foze upon his basenet and on his hand, and made him lose and let fall his are to the ground, and byast by his vmbur thre times, and caught his dagger and would haue smitten him in the face, soz to haue slaine him in the field: and then the King cried ho, and so they were departed, and went to their tents, and the King dubbed Iohn Astley Knight soz his valiant toney, and the Knight of Aragon offered his harnes at Windsoze.

An. reg. 21.  
Duke and  
Earle created.

Iohn Beauford Earle of Somerset, was made Duke of Somerset: and Lord Iohn Talbot soz his approued pzooves shewed in France, was created Earle of Shrovelsbury, & his sonne Lord Talbot, and then with a company of 3000. men sent againe into Poymandy, soz defence of that Countrie the 25. of May.

1443.  
Commotion  
at Norwich.

The Citizens of Norwich, rose against the Prior of Christs Church, with in the same Citie, and would haue fiered the priozy, they kept the towne by strength against the Duke of Norfolke, and all his power, wherefoze the King sent thether the chiefe Iudge Iohn Fortescue, with the Earles of Stafford and of Huntington, who indicted many Citizens, and the Prior also. The Liberties of the Citie were seyled into the Kings hand, and Sir Iohn Clifton made captaine there, and many of the Citizens fled ouer the seas and into knowne places.

Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington, at Windsoze was created Duke of Excester. Iohn Beawford Duke of Somerset deceased, and was buried at Wimborne.

Colledge and  
hospitall at  
Wigham  
ferres.

Also this yere deceased Henry Chicheley, when he had late 29. yeres Archbishop of Canterburie. This Archbishop in his life time, to wit in Anno 1425. began the foundation of a godly Colledge, and hospitall at Wigham Ferres in Northamptonshire, of 8. secular priestes fellows, foure clarkes, and 6. Choristes: And an almes house, or hospitall soz poze people, and obtatned many godly benefites and pferments which he gaue to the said towne, which house soz the poze by him founded, his hethen Robert Chicheley, and

William



William Chicheley Aldermen of London, augmented with goodly legacies, for the sustentation of the poore, which Colledge at the suppression was valued by the p[er]re in lands 156. pound 2. shillings, &c.

This archb[ish]op also founded two Colledges in Oxford, the one All soules Colledge (unto the which King Henry the first gaue lands lately belonging to the p[ri]ors aliens, to wit, 4. p[ri]ories, Alberbery in Salop, Rumney in Kent, Languenith in South Wales, & Wodon Pinkney in Northamptonshire, and therefore the said K. in the Charter is called founder :) The other Barnard Colledge since suppressed by King Henry the 8. now by Sir Thomas White againe redified, and named S. Johns Colledge. He also redified the new Library at Canterbury, and furnished the same with bookes, builded a great part of their keple, repaired their church, and gaue to the couent and Church many ornaments, and rich Jewels, he caused his owne tombe in the same Church to be builded during his life, he was the new builder, or especiall repayer of the faire large parish Church of Crodowne, as appeareth by his armes grauen on the wals, keple, and porch of the same Church.

John Scaffold bozne at Hoke in the parish of Abbotsbery in Dorsetshire, docto[or] of lawes, deane of Saint Martins le Grand in London, after Bishop of Bath and Wells, about the 12. of Henry the 6. made Chancello[er] of England, was by Eugenius the fourth, made Archb[ish]op of Canterburie.

Also Lewes Lushebrughe Bishop of Elie deceased at his maner of Hatfield Anno's Eli[ab]. and was buried at Elie. To whom Thomas Bourchar succceeded, being translated from Worcester.

Whilist England was disquieted, and France by spoile defaced, all Christendome lamented the continuall destruction of so noble a Realm, and the effusion of so much Christian blood: wherfore to agree the two puissant kings, all the Princes of Christendome trauailed so effectually by the Orato[rs] and Ambassadors, that a diet was appointed to be kept at the Citie of Tow[er] in Tow[er]aine, where, for the K. of England appeared William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, docto[or] Adam Molins Bishop of Chichester, keeper of the Kings p[ri]nt seale, Sir Robert Ros, and other: and for the French King were appointed Charles Duke of Orleans, Lewes de Borbon Earle of Glendosne, great master of the French Kings household, Pierce de Bresse steward of Hoptowne, and Bartram Beannan Lord of P[re]cignit.

There were also sent Ambassadors from the Empire, from Spaine, from Denmarke, and from Hungarie, to be mediato[rs] betwixt the two Princes, many meetings were about this busines, but no small concord could be agreed vpon, moze then a certaine truce for eightene months, which after was prolonged to the p[er]re 1449. but in the meane time broken, as ye shall heare after ward.

In this treatie William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, imagining with himselfe, that the next way to come to a perfect peace, was to moue some marriage, betwene the French Kings kinswoman, the Lady Margaret Daughter to Reyner Duke of Aniole, and King Henry of England: this Duke Reyner named himselfe King of Sicill, Naples, and Ierusalem,

*Ann reg. 24.  
All Christian  
Princes la-  
bour to appease  
the troubles in  
France.*

1444.

hauing onely the title of those Realmes, without any profit. This marriage was at the first made strange to the Earle, and one thing seemed to be agree at let to it, to wit, because the King of England possessed a great part of the Dutchie of Anioiw, and the whole countrie of Haine, which pertained (as they said) to Duke Reyner. The Earle of Suffolke condescended, that the Dutchie of Anioiw, and the countie of Haine should be deliuered to the Duke, demanding with his daughter for hir marriage nothing. And to the intent that of this truce might insue a finall concozd, a day of enteruiew was appointed betwene the King and the Duke, in a place conuenient, betwene Chartres and Roan.

Dukes, Mar-  
quesses and  
Earles crea-  
ted.

When these things were concluded, the Earle of Suffolke with his company returned into England where he declared what an honorable truce he had taken, through y<sup>e</sup> which there was great hope of a finall peace, by meanes of the honorable marriage which he had concluded. But though this marriage pleased well the King, and diuers of his counsell, yet other some were against it. For the performance of the conclusions, the French King sent the Earle of Wandosme great master of his house, and the Archbishop of Reims first p<sup>er</sup>ere of France, and diuers other into England, where they were honorably entertained, and after that the instruments were sealed, and deliuered on both parts, the said Ambassadors returned with great rewards.

An. reg. 23.

When these things were done, the King created Hamfrey Earle of Stafford Duke of Buckingham: and Henry Beauchamp Earle of Warwick, King Henry hartily tendering him for his parents sake, bestowed vpon him the Dukedome of Warwick: vnto whom also the King gaue the Castle of Buxlow, with all the appurtenances, which King Iohn had kept in his hands and his successors after him: he gaue vnto him also the Isles of Gernsey and Jernsey, Serke, Erme, and Aurney with all the pziories aliens in the same. The Earle of Dorset was created and made Marquesse of Dorset, and William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke was created Marquesse of Suffolke: also John Talbot Knight, the son of Iohn Earle of Shrewsbury, was created Baron Little for him and his heires males on the 26. of July.

In the moneth of Nouember William de la Pole marques of Suffolke with his wife and many honorable persons both men and women richly apparelled, sailed into France, for the conuenance of the Lady Margaret, nominated Q. into the Realme of England. This noble company came to the Citie of Towlers in Touraine, where they were honorably received & entertained, both of the French K. and of the Duke Reiner, where the marques of Suffolke as procurator to King Henry, espoused the said Lady in the Church of S. Martin. At which marriage were present the father & mother of the bride, the French King which was uncle to the Duke Reiner, and the French Quene aunt to the Dutches his wife: there were also the Dukes of Orleans, of Catabze, of Anson, and of Bypaine, 7. Earles, 12. Barons, 20. bishops, besides knights and gentlemen. When the feast, triumphs, bankets, and iusts were ended, the Lady was deliuered to the marques of Suffolke, which in great estate coueied her through Normandy vnto Diepe, where a while they remained.

On Candlemas euen in diuers places of England, was great weathering of wind, hayle, snow, rayne, thunders with lightning, whereby the Church of Waldoke in Hertfordshire, the Church of Walden in Essex, and diuers other were sore shaken. And the steeple of Saint Pauls in London, about two of the clocke in the afternoone, was set on fire in the midst of the shaft, first on the west side, and then on the south, and the people espying the fire, came to quench it in the steeple, which they did with vinegar, so farre as they could finde, so that when the Maior, with much people came to Pauls, to haue holpen if need had bene, they returned againe every man to his home, trusting to God all had bene well, but anone after, betwene eight and nine of the clocke, the fire brast againe out of the steeple, moze feruent then befoze, and did much harme to the lead and timber thereof: but the Maior and much people came thither, and with vinegar quenched the fire that was feruent, so that no man was perished. The steeple of Waltham in Essex, and of Kingstone in Surrey, was also fired by the same lightnings. The fire at Pauls being quenched, standart of tre being set up at Leaden-Hall in Cornehil of London, made fast in the midst of the pavement, and decked with Holme and Iule, for disport of Christmas to the people of the Citie, it was torne and cast dolwne with such violence that the stones of the pavement, were cast about in the streete, and into diuers mens houses, to the great terrour of the people, that neuer had siene so strange a tempest.

The Lady Margaret being transpozted from Deepe, landed at Porchester, from whence she was conueyed by water to Hampton, and rested there in a place called Gods house, from thence she went to Southwike, and was married to the King in the Abbey of Wichefield on the 22. of Aprill, and from thence she was honozably conueyed by the Lords & estates of this land, which met with her in sundry places with great retinues of men, in diuers liueries with their sleeves bordered, and some beaten with Goldsmiths worke in most costly manner, and specially of the Duke of Gloucester, who met her with 500. men in a liuerie, and so was conueyed to the Blacke Heath, where she was met by the Maior, Aldermen & Sherifes of the Citie in scarlet, and the crafts of the same, all riding on horseback, in blew golwnes with bordered sleeves, and red hoods, on the 28. of May, who conueied her with her train through Southwarke, and so through the Citie of London, then beautified with pageants of diuers histories, and other shewes of welcome, maruellous costly and sumptuous, which Iouerpasse, saue onely to name a few. At the hydge foote toward Southwarke, a pageant of peace and plenty, *Ingreddimini, & replete terram*, and certaine verses in English. Noes ship vpon the bridge, *Iam non ultra irascar super terram*, verses in English. At Leaden Hall, madam Grace Chancelor de Dieu, verses in English. At the tunne in Cornehill, of Saint Margaret verses in English. At the great conduit in Cheape of the five wise and five foolish virgins, verses in English. At the crosse in Cheape, of the heauenly Ierusalem, verses. At Pauls gate, of the generall resurrection and iudgement, with verses accordingly, all made by Iohn Lydgate.

On the 30. of May she was solemnly crowned at Westminster. This

Queene Mar-  
garet crown'd

woman excelled all other, as well in beauty and favour, as in wit and pollicie, and was of stomacke and courage not inferiour to any: her badge was the daisie flower. This marriage seemed to many both unfortunate, and unprofitable to the Realme of England, and that for diuers causes: first the king had with her no dooery, and so the fetching of her, and other charges about her, the Marques of Suffolke demaunded a whole fiftenth in open Parliament: and also there was deliuered for her the Dutchie of Anion, the Citie of Mans, and the county of Haine. Furthermoze, the Earle of Arminake toke such displeasure with the king of England for the marriage, that he became bitter enemy to the Realme of England, and was the chiefe cause that the Englishmen were expelled out of the Dutchie of Aquitaine.

Ann. reg. 24.  
Parliament.  
1446.

A Parliament was summoned, in the which it was concluded, that by good foresight Normandy might be so furnished for defence before the ende of the truce, that the French king should take no aduantage through want of timely provision: hereupon money was granted, and an army leued, the Duke of Somerset appointed to be Regent of Normandy, and the Duke of Poike discharged of that office.

The Marquesse of Suffolke the second of June, in the first session of this Parliament, before the Lords spirituall and temporall in the high house assembled, eloquently declared his paine and diligence sustained in his legacy, as well for the concluding an abstinence of warre, as in making of the marriage, opening also to them, that the said truce expired the first of Aprill next coming, except a final peace, or a further truce were concluded in the mean season: and therefore he aduised them to foresce and provide things necessary for the warres, least happily the French perceiving them unpurueyed, would take the aduantage, and agree neither to peace nor amitie. Likewise on the next morrow, he descended into the common house, accompanied with certaine Lords, and there declared the same matter to the Knights, and bourgeois, praying the commons for his discharge, that as well all his doings and proceedings in the kings affaires, beyond the sea, as also his aduertisements and counsaile opened to the Lordes and commons now together assembled, might be by the king and them enacted, and enrolled in the recordes of the Parliament. Whereupon on the next morrow William Burley then speaker, and then company of the lower house, repaired to the kings presence then sitting amongst the Lords, and there humbly required that the request of the Marquesse might be granted, and so likewise the Lordes made the like petition, kneeling on their knees, and the king condescended to their desires, and so the whole matter was enacted and recorded for his acquittall.

Lith. Theobur-  
Duke of War-  
wick deceased.

Henry Beauchampe Duke of Warwicke, chiefe Earle of England, Lord Spencer and Burgaunie, king of the yle of Wight, and Gernsey and Iarnsey, and Lord of the Castell of Bristow, married Cicely daughter to Richard Neuell Earle of Salisbury, and had issue a daughter named Anne, who died at the age of five yeres, he at the age of 22. yeres died in the Castell of Hanley, and was buried at Theobur.



John David appeached his master William Catur, an armozer dwelling in S. Dunstons parish in Fleetstreet, of treason, and a day being assigned them to fight in Smithfield, the master being welbeloued, was so cherished by his friends, and plied so with wine, that being therewith ouercome, was also unluckely slaine by his seruant: but that false seruant (for he falsely accused his master) liued not long unpunished, for he was after hanged at Tyborne for felony: let such false accusers note this example, and loke for no better ende, without speedie repentance: my selfe haue had the like seruant, that likewise accused me of many articles, he liueth yet, but hath hardly escaped hanging since, God make him penitent.

A combate in Smithfield. A false accuser of his master, was hanged.

Thomas sirz Thomas Wytoz of Isilmayne appeached sir James Butler Earle of Wymond of treasons, which had a day assigned to fight in Smithfield, the lists were made, and the field prepared, but when it came to the point, the king commaunded they should not fight, and toke the quarrell into his hands, which was done at the instance of certaine preachers and doctozs of London, as master Gilbert Worthington, parson of S. Andrewes in Holborne and other.

An. reg. 25.

Pope Eugenius sent a golden Rose to the king of England, expressing the property and application of the same, with the ceremony that is pærely vsed on Palme Sunday, touching the same Rose, exhorting the king against the Turkes. Which Rose Lodouicus Cordona doctoꝝ of diuinitie did present to the king in S. Stephens chappell at Westminster vpon Saint Andrewes day, in presence of the Dukes of York and Excester, Cardinal Kempe Archbishop of York, & John Stafford Archbishop of Canterbury Chancellor of England.

Record, Ecclesi. Cant.

King Henry kept his Chyristmasse at Saint Edmondsburie, and remayned there till Easter. In which meane space, to wit on the 10. of february began a Parliament at S. Edmondsburie in Suffolke, at which time for feare of the Duke of Glocester, all the waies about the same town were kept with armed men both day and night, so that many died with colde and waking. Humfrey Duke of Glocester being at the Castell of the Elles in Wilshire, came from thence to the Parliament, and was lodged in the hospitall, where shortly after he was arrested by John Lord Beaumont High Constable, the Duke of Buckingham, the Duke of Somerset & other, who appointed certaine of the kings household to wait vpon him: but on the 24. day he died for sorow, as some said, that he might not come to his answer: his body was shewed to the lordz & commons, and seemed to die of a palsey, or of an impostume: he was honorably buried at S. Albons: 32. of this principall seruants were arrested & sent to diuers prisons, & five of them were arraigned at London, and condemned, whose names were sir Roger Chamberlain knight, Richard Middleton, Thomas Herbert, Arthur Turley Esquires, & Richard Nedam gentleman, which were all five drawn from the Tower of London to Tyborne, & there hanged, letten down quicke, stript naked, marked with a knife for to be quartered, and then a charter shewed for their liues by the Duke of Suffolke: but the yeoman of the crowne had their linelode, & the hangman had their cloths, or wearing apparell. The Pardon for liues was obtained through the earngst sute & laboure of master Gilbert Worthington, then parson of S. Andrewes

Parliament at Burie.

1447.

The Duke of Glocester arrested and soon after died.

Five men hanged, and after pardoned.

Record, 16. of H. 8.

Thomas Wild  
his pardon.

Record 16. of  
H. 6.  
Barons crea-  
t: d.  
Record, Patin.

in Holborn, a doctor of Divinity, a famous man, and a great preacher in those daies. Thomas Wild of Greenwich Esquire serving the said Duke, being amongst other pardoned, the course of his pardon in the patent runneth to this effect, for being amongst many other traitors against the king with Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, they went about and practised to deliver Eleanor, late wife to the Duke from out of prison, and gathered a great power, and number of men, to come to the Parliament at Burgh, and there to have practised the destruction of the king, &c. James Fines knight was created Baron of Say and Sele, John Beauchampe Baron of Botwike, and Richard Woodville Baron, and Lord Rivers at Burgh. Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, Cardinall of the title of S. Eusebij, after he had late Bishop 43. yeres, deceased on the 11. of April, he founded an house of almes (adoynynge to the hospitall of S. Crosse by Winchester) with a master, 2. chapeleins, 35. poor men, and 3. women, & gaue lands thereto, at that time valued 158. pound, 13. shillings, 4. pence, as appeareth by the patten, moze he gaue the, the hospital of S. John de Fordingebridge: William Wamflet prouost of Eaton, succeeded in that Bishopricke.

Holland Duke  
of Crester, de-  
ceased.  
Parson of S.  
Andrewes in  
Holborne.  
Ann. reg. 26.  
Parson of  
Alhallowes in  
Chamnis street.

The 5. of August deceased John Holland Duke of Crester, and was buried in the hospitall of Saint Katherine nigh to the Tower of London. About the same time deceased the sozenamed Doctor Gilbert Worthington, parson of Saint Andrewes in Holborne, a most famous preacher, and greatly noted for his good life. Also about the same time, to wit the 24. of October deceased William Lichfield doctor of Divinity, Parson of Alhallowes the Poze in Chamnis street, the which was counted a god and holy man, he made in his daies 3083 sermons, as appeared and was found in his booke of his owne hand writing, besides many booke that he compiled of Divinitie yet extant, especially one in a fine verse intituled, The complaint of God to man, and Answer of the penitent to God, &c.

1448.  
John de la  
Pole marques  
of Suffolke  
made Duke of  
Suffolke.

In this 26. yere of the raigne of this king, I finde no great matter worthy the recitall, but that the Marquesse of Suffolke, by great fauour of the king and Quene, was created Duke of Suffolke, which dignitie he long enjoyed not: for Richard Duke of York being greatly alied by his wife, to the chiefest peres and potentates of the Realme, ouer and besides his owne progenie, perceiuing the king to be a ruler, and not to rule, but the whole burthen of the Realme to rest in the ordinance of the Quene, & the Duke of Suffolke, began secretly to allure his friends of the Nobilitie, and priuily declared vnto them his title to the Crowne, and likewise did he to certaine gouernours of Cities and Townes, which priuily attempt was so polittely handled and secretly kept, that his prouision was ready befoze his purpose was opened.

John Sturton was made Baron of Sturton.

After the death of Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, the affaires in Fraunce, were neither wel looked to, nor the gouernours of the countrey wel aduised, for an English Captaine, called sir Frances, surnamed de Aragonnoys, took a towne named Fogars, vpon the borders of Normandie belonging to the Duke of Brittain. For the which he complained him to the French

French King, and be at the said Dukes request sent vnto the King of England, to aske restitution of the harme. The which messengers were answered of the Kings Counsell, that the dede was right displeasent vnto the King, and that sir Frances Aragon had interposed the feate of his owne presumption. Whereupon it followed shortly after, that the French by like policie toke the Towne and Castell of Mountallarche, and after that many other, so that the taking of the foresaid Towne of Foglars by the Englishmen, was the occasion by the which the French after gat all Normandie.

*An. reg. 27.*

This yere the Frenchmen got many Townes in Normandie out of the possession of the Englishmen. Also the Citie of Roane was yielded to the French, with condition that the Captaines and garrisons might depart with armour and goods, and not long after was rendered (with the like condition as of Roane) the townes of Harflew, and Hounflew. A Knight of Fraunce called sir Lewes de Breyll, chalenged an Esquire of England named Ralph Chalons of certaine seats of warres, the which to proue, a day to them was giuen to make at a Towne in Fraunce named Gaunce, where the French Knight at that day was present: but Chalons ranne the French Knight through the bodie with his speare, whereof the said Lewes died.

1449.  
Roan yielded  
to the French.

*Ann. reg. 28.*

About the same time also, began a new rebellion in Ireland, but Richard Duke of Yorke being sent thither to appease the same, so asswaged the furie of the wilde and sauage people there, that he wan such fauour amongst them, as could neuer be separated from him and his linage.

Richard Duke  
of Yorke was  
fauor of the  
Irish.

John Vicount Beaumont, was made Chamberlaine of England, Henry de Bromefield Lord Vesey, William Bourcher Knight, Lord Bunile, William Beauchampe Lord S. Amonde, Thomas Percy Lord Egremonde, these were created the 6. of Nouember.

Barons created.

The French king assembled an army royall, and comming befoze Cane, besieged it on all sides, and assaulted the walles, but the Duke of Somerset, and the other Captaines within the towne, manfully withstood their enemies, beating backe the assailants. The French king with his great ordinance shot daily at the wals, and did some hurt, but to the Castell which stode on a rock, and in it a dungeon, unable to be beaten down, he did no harm at all. Though the Duke of Somerset were the kings lieutenant, yet sir Dauid Hall, as Captaine of this towne for his master the Duke of Yorke, owner therof, toke vpon him the chiefe charge, sir Robert Vere was Captaine of the Castell, and sir Henry Radford, Captaine of the dungeon: daily the shot was great, but more terrible then hurtfull, sauing that one day, a stone shot into the towne, fell betwixen the Dutches of Somerset and her childzen, which being amased with this chance, besought her husband kneeling on her knees, to haue mercy and compassion of his small infants, that they might be deliuered out of the towne in safetie. The Duke moued with the sorow of his wife, and loue of his childzen, rendered the towne, with condition to depart with all their goods. Sir Dauid Hall, with diuers other departed to Cherbrough, and from thence

Cane deliuered  
to the French.

thence sailed into Ireland, to the Duke of Forke, making relation to him of all these doings, which thing kindled so great a rancor in the Dukes heart, that he neuer left persecuting the Duke of Somerset, till he had brought him to his fatall confusion. After the obtayning of this strong towne of Cane, the Earle of Clerement, besieged, the Citie of Hissur, whereof was Captaine Mathew Gowgh, with 300. Englishmen, who in the ende deliuered the towne vpon condition to depart. Then was Salaisie besieged, whereof were Capitaines, for the Earle of Shrewsbury that was owner, Andrew Trollope, and Thomas Cotton Esquires, which agreed to deliuer it on conditions. The towne of Donfront was likewise rendered, so that there rested now, onely English, the towne of Chirburgh, whereof was Captaine one Thomas Gouuile, which as long as victuals serued, defended the towne right manfully, but in the ende, vpon composition yelded the towne, & went to Calais, where the Duke of Somerset, and many other Englishmen then sojournd. Thus was Normandy lost cleerely out of the Englishmens hands, after it had continued in their possession the space of 30. yeeres, by the conquest of Henry the fift. In which Dutchie were an 100. strong townes and fortresses, to be kept, and holden, besides them that were destroyed by the warres, and in the same is one Archbishoppicke, and sixe Bishoppicks. Whilist the French made these conquestes in the Dutchy of Normandy the common people make exclamations against the Duke of Suffolke, affirming him to be the onely cause of the deliuerie of Anslow, and Payne, the chiefe procurer of the Duke of Glocesters death, the losse of Normandy, &c. Whereupon the Quene doubting not onely the Dukes destruction, but also her own confusion, caused the Parliament begunne at Westminster, after Christmas adourned to the blacke Friers in London, then to be adourned to Leicester, thinking there to haue suppressed the malice conceiued against the Duke and her, at which place fewe of the Nobilitie would appeare. Where it was againe adourned to Westminster, where was a full appearance. In the which session the commons of the neather-house put vp to the King and the Lords many articles of treason, mispision, and euill demeanour against the Duke of Suffolke, as ye may read in Hall. The Quene therefoze, doubting some commotion to arise, caused the said Duke to be committed to the Towre, where he remained not past a moneth, but was released to the kings fauour. This doing so much displeased the people, that in sundrie places of the Realme, they assembled together in great companies, and chose to them a Captaine, but were overcome as shall be shewed.

The ninth of Ianuary, Adam Molins Bishop of Chichester, keeper of the kings priuie seale, through the procurement of Richard Duke of Forke, was by shipmen slaine at Portesmouth.

The ninth of February Thomas Thany, otherwile called Blew beard a faller, was taken besides Canterbury, for rapsing of a rebellion, who was hanged and quartered.

After this little rage allwaged, about the Dates of Easter, the Parliament was adiozned to Leicester, whither came the King & Quene in great estate,

Normandy lost  
from the English.

Parliament  
adourned.

1450.  
Bishop of  
Chichester  
murdered.  
Blewbeard  
hanged.



estate, and with them the Duke of Suffolke, as chiefe counseller, where the commons of the lower house besought the King, that such persons as assented to the release of Anslow, and deliuerance of Payne, might be duely punished. And to be prouide to that fact they accused as principall, the Duke of Suffolke, with John Bishop of Salisbury, sir James Fines Lord Say, Daniel Triuillian, and other whom they indited of treason, and many other matters touching the king and his commons, as it appeareth by the verdict of thre inquestes, to the number of a thirtie persons, wherupon the king to appease the commons, first sequestred the Lord Say, being Treasurer of England, and other from their offices, and robes, and after banished William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke, for five yeeres, who taking ship, at Ipswich in Suffolke, on the third day of May, sailed towards France, but was encountered with a ship of warre, appertaining to the Duke of Excester, Constable of the Tower of London, called the Nicholas of the Tower. The Captaine of which barke, with small fight entered into the Dukes ship, and perceiuing his person present, brought him to Dover Roade, and there on the side of a cocke boate, caused his head to be stricken off, and left his bodie with the head lying there on the sandes, which corpes being there found, by a chaplaine of his, was conueyed to Wingham colledge in Suffolke, and there buried faith Hall: but I otherwise finde him to be buried in the Charterhouse of Kingstene vpon Hul.

Wil. de la Pole  
Duke of Suffolke  
banished  
and murdered.

This William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke, and Alice his wife, daughter to Thomas Chawcer, sonne to Geoffrey Chawcer the famous Poet, translated and increased the Manor place of Eweline in Dorsetshire: they builded a new parish Church of Eweline, a comely peece of towre standing on an hill: and also hard adioyning to the west ende of Eweline parish Church, they founded a pretie hospitall of almes house for two priests chaffe of bodie and deuout in soule, and thirtene poore men to dwell and be sustayned in for ever, one of the priests to be master of the almes house and almes people, them to instruct as well by his sonnd doctrine, as good life, the other priest a scholemaster, freely to teach the children of the tenants of the said Lordshippe of Eweline and other Lordships pertaining to the said almes house their Grammar, and either of those two priests to haue tenne pound the yeere. One of the thirtene poore men to be called minister, to present the faultes of the other to the master, and to ring their common bel to seruise, and to haue sixteen pence the weeke, the other twelue poore men to haue euery of them fourtene pence the weeke. This house hath to name Gods house, or the house of almes, vnto the which he gaue thre Manors, Ramruge in Hampshire, Conocke in Wilshire, and Herche in Buckinghamshire, with their appurtenances, all which at the suppression was valued but 20. pound the yeere, such large peniworth was then made by such as ment to purchase: they also founded the hospitall of Donnington.

Gods house at  
new Eweline  
in Dorsetshire

Liber fundatio-  
nis.

Hospital at  
Donnington  
castle.

The death of the Duke of Suffolke brought not the Realme in quiet, for those that fauoured the Duke of York, and wished the crown vpon his head procured a commotion in Kent in this manner.

Jacks Cade  
Captain of the  
r. bills in Kent.

In the moneth of May, the commons of Kent in great numbers assembled, hauing to their Capitaine lacke Cade, who named himselfe Mortimer, coken to the Duke of York; or as hee was named of some Iohna-mendall: this Capitaine brought a great number of people to the Blacke heath, and there kept the field moze then a moneth, pilling the countrey about, to whom the Citie of London at that time was full fauourable. And the said Captain (as I finde recorded) sent for such Citizens of London as it pleased him to commaund to repayze vnto him, vnder letters of safe conduct, as followeth.

*The safegard and signe manuell of the Capitaine of Kent, sent to  
Thomas Cocke draper of London, by the Capitaine  
of the great assemble in Kent.*

**B**y this our wytting ensealed, we grant and will permit truly, that Thomas Cocke of London draper, shall come in good suretie and in safegard to our presence, without any hurt of his person, and so auoid from vs againe at his pleasure, with all other persons assigned at his denomination with him comming in likewise.

*The commaundement by the Capitaine of Kent, sent vnto  
Thomas Cocke abovesaid.*

**F**or your instruction, first yee shall charge all Lumbards and strangers, being merchants, Iewelers, Venetians, Florentines, and other, this day to dye to them togither, and to ordaine for vs the Capitaine 12. harnesses, complete of the best fashon, 24. bygandines, 12. battaille ares, 12. glaues, six horses with saddle and bydle completely harnesssed, and 1000. markes of readie money: and if this our demaund be not obserued and done, we shall haue the heads of as many as we can get of them.

What answere to this demaund was returned I finde not, but like it is the same was granted and perfozmed. for I finde not the said Capitaine and Kentishmen, at their being in the Citie, to haue hurt any stranger.

In the meane time the king sent notable men to the said Capitaine and his fellowship, to know their purpose and the cause of their insurrection: vnto whom the Captain answered, that he and his company were assembled there to redresse and reforme the wrongs that were done in the Realme, and to withstand the malice of them that were destroyers of the common-weale, and to amend the defaultes of them that were chiefe counsellors to the king, and shewed vnto them the Articles of complaints touching the misgouernment of the Realme, wherein was nothing containyd but seemed reasonable, whereof a copie was sent to the Parliament holden that time at Westminster, with also one other bill of requestes by them made, of things to be reformed, and to haue answere thereof againe, but he had none. The bill of Articles they intituled

*The*

*The complaint of the commons of Kent, and causes of the  
assembly on the Blackebearth.*

1 Item, it is openly nolyed that Kent should be destroyed with a royall power, and made a wilde forest, for the death of the Duke of Suffolke, of which the commons of Kent thereof were neuer guiltie.

2 Item, the king is stirred to liue onely on his commons, and other men to haue the reuenues of the crowne, the which hath caused pouerty in his excellencie, and great payments of the people, now late to the king granted in his Parliament.

3 Item, that the Lords of his royall blood be put from his daily presence, and other meane persons of lower nature exalted and made chiefe of his priuy counsell, the which stoppeth matters of wrongs done in the realme from his excellent audience, and may not be redressed as law wil, but if by bribes and gifts be messengers to the hands of the said counsell.

4 Item, the people of his Realme be not paid of debts owing for stufte and purueiance taken to the vse of the kings household, in vndoing of the said people, and the poore commons of this Realme.

5 Item, the kings mentall seruants of household, and other persons, asked daily goods and landes, of impeached or indited of treason, the which the king graunteth anon, ere they so endaugered be conuict. The which causeth the recetuers thereof to enforge labours and meanes applied to the death of such people, so appeached or indited, by subtle meanes, for couetise of the said grants: and the people so impeached or indited, though it be vntrue, may not be committed to the lawe for their deliuerance, but helde still in prison, to their uttermost vndoing and destruction, for couetise of goods.

6 Item, though diuers of the poore people and commons of the Realme, haue neuer so great right, truth and perfite title to their land, yet by vntrue claime of enfeoffment made vnto diuers states, gentles, and the kings mentall seruants in maintenances against the right, the true owners dare not hold claime, nor pursue their right.

7 Item, it is nolyed by common voices, that the kings landes in France be aliened and put away from the crowne, and his Lords and people there destroyed with vntrue meanes of treason, of which it is desired, enquires though all the Realme to be made how and by whom, and if such traytors may be found guiltie, them to haue execution of law, without any pardon, in example of other.

8 Item, collectors of the 15. peny in Kent be greatly bered and hurt in paying great summes of money, in the Exchequer to sue out a writt called Quorum nomina for allowance of the Barons of the ports, which now is desired, that hereafter in the lieu of the collectors, the Barons aforesaid may sue it out for their ease at their owne costes.

9 Item, the Sherifes, and vnder Sherifes, let to ferme their offices and

bayliffes, taking great suretie therfore, the which causeth extortions done by them and by their bailiffes to the people.

10 Item, simple and poore people that vse not hunting, be greatly oppressed by indiffements fained and done by the said sherifes, vnder sherifes, bayliffes, and other of their assent, to cause their increase for paying of their said ferme.

11 Item, they retorne in names of Enquestes in writting into diuers Courtes of the Kings not summoned nor warned, wherethrough the people daily lese great summes of money, well nie to the vttermoost of their vndowing: and make leuse of amercenments called the Græne ware, moze in summes of money than can be found due of recozd in the Kinges bookes.

12 Item, the ministers of the court of Douer in Kent bere and arrest diuers people throught all the shire out of Castell ward passing their bands and libertie vsed of olde tyme, by diuers subtle and vntrue meanes and actions falsly fained, taking great fee at their last in great hurt of the people on all the shire of Kent.

13 Item, the people of the said shire of Kent, may not haue their free election in the choosing knights of the shire, but letters ben sent from diuers estates to the great rulers of all the countrie, the which imbraceth their tenants and other people by force to chosse other persons than the common will is.

14 Item, whereas knights of the shire shold chosse the kings collectors indifferently without any bribe taking, they haue sent now late to diuers persons, notifying them to be collectors, whereupon giftes and bribes be taken, and so the collectors office is bought and solde extortionously at the knights last.

15 Item, the people be soze bered in cosses and labour, called to the Sessions of peace in the said shire, appearing from the farthest and vttermoost parts of the West vnto the East, the which causeth to some men fine daies iourney, whereupon they desire the said appearance to be diuided into two parts, the which one part to appeare in one place, another part in another place, in releuving of the greiuanee and intollerable labours and verations of the said people.

*The requests by the Captaine of the great  
assembly in Kent.*

**I**Nprimis, desireth the Captaine of the commons, the welfare of our soueraigne Lord the King, and all his true Lords spirituall and tempozall, desiring of our said soueraigne Lord, and of all the true Lords of his counsell, he to take in all his demaines, that he may raigne like a King royall, according as he is bozne our true Christian king annointed, and who so wil say the contrary, we all will liue and die in the quarrell as his true liege men.

2 Item, desireth the said Captaine, that he will auoid all the false progeny  
and



and affinitie of the Duke of Suffolke, the which beane openly knowne, and they to be punished after the custome and lawe of this land, and to take about his noble person the true Lords of his royall blood of this his Realme, that is to say, the high and mightie Prince the Duke of Yorke, late exiled from our said soueraigne Lords presence (by the motion and stirring of the traiterous and false disposed the Duke of Suffolke and his affinitie) and the mightie Princes and Dukes of Excester, Buckingham, and Suffolke, and all the Carles and Barons of this land: and then shall he be the richest king Christen.

Item, desireth the said Captaine and commons punishment vpon the false traitors, the which contrived and imagined the death of the high and mightie excellent Prince the Duke of Glocester, the which is too much to rehearse, the which duke was proclaimed as traitor. Vpon the which quarrel, we purpose all to liue and die vpon that it is false.

Item, the Duke of Excester, our holy father the Cardinal, the Noble Prince Duke of Warwicke, and also the Realme of France, the Dutchy of Normandy, Gascoigne, and Guen, Anioy and Maine, were desiered and lost, by the meanes of the said traitors, and our true Lords, Knights, and Esquires, and many a good yeoman lost and solde ere they went, the which is great pittie to heare, of the great and grievous losse to our soueraigne Lord and his Realme.

Item, desireth the said Captaine and commons, that all the extortions vied daily among the common people, might be laid downe, that is to say, the greene Ware the which is falsely vied, to the perpetuall destruction of the kings true commons of Kent. Also the kings Bench, the which is too greese full to the shire of Kent without prouision of our soueraigne Lord and his true Counsell. And also in taking of wheat and other graines, beefe, mutton, and all other victuall, the which is impoytable to the said commons, without the breke prouision of our said soueraigne Lord, and his true Counsell, they may no longer beare it. And also vnto the statute of labourers, and the great extortioners, the which is to say, the false traitors, Sleg, Crowmer, Ille, and Robert Est.

These Bills when the Counsell had well perused, they did not onely disallow and condemne them and the authoys, as proud and presumptuous, but also perswaded the King rather to suppress those rebels by force, than by faire promises. Whereupon the king remoued from Westminster vnto Cheneuich, from whence he would haue sent certaine Lords with a power to haue distressed the Kentishmen, but the men said to their Lords they would not fight against them that labour to amende the Commonweale: whereupon the Lords were diuied to leaue their purpose. And because the Kentishmen cried out against the Lord Say the Kings Chamberlaine, hee was by the King committed to the Tower of London. Then went the King againe to London, and within two daies after went against the Kentishmen with fiftene thousand men well prepared for the warre, but the false Kentishmen fledde the night befoze his comming into the wood countrie nere

King Henry  
went against  
the Kentish-  
men with a  
great power.

King Henries  
power over-  
come.

neere vnto Senocke, whereupon the king returned againe to London, and sent sir Humfrey Stafford knight, with William Stafford Esquire his kinsman saith Pigot, and other Gentlemen, to followe the Kentishmen, who finding them at Senocke, set vpon the rebels, and fought with them a long time, but in the end both the Staffords were slaine, with many other of their people. When Iacke Cade had thus overcome the Staffords, he sozthwith apparelled himselfe with the knights apparell, and after he had refreshed his people, he returned to the Blacke heath, and there pight againe his field, and lay there from the 29. of Iune, till the first day of Iuly, in which season came vnto him the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Duke of Buckingham, with whom they had a long communication, and found him right discret in his answers. Wholueit they could not cause him to submit himselfe and lay downe his people.

King Henry  
went to Kil-  
lingworth.

In the meane while, the King and Quene hearing of the increasing of his rebels, and also the Lords fearing their owne seruants, least they would take the Captaines part, remoued from London to Killingworth, leaving the Citie without ayde, except onely the Lord Scales, which was left to keepe the Tower, and with him a manly and warly man named Matthew Gough. Then the Captaine of Kent thus houcring at Blacke heath, to bying himselfe the moze in fame, that he kept god iustice, beheaded there a petie Captaine of his named Paris, forsomuch as he had offended against such ordinances as he had established in his host: and hearing that the King and his Lords were thus departed, drey him neere vnto the Citie, so that vpon the first of Iuly, he entred the Borough of Southwarke, then being Wensday, and lodged him there at the Hart, for he might not be suffered to enter the Citie.

Captaine of  
Kent and his  
Kentishmen  
entred the Ci-  
ty of London.

Rob. Fabian.  
Rebels of Es-  
sex pight the i-  
field on the  
29. of Iuly.

And vpon the same day, the commons of Essex in great number pight them a field vpon the plaine of Milles end.

And vpon the second day of the said moneth, the Mayor called a common counsell at the Guildhall, to puruey for the withstanding of these rebelles, in which assembly were diuers men of sundry opinions, so that some thought god that the said rebelles should be receiued into the Citie, and some other wise. Among the which Robert Horne Stockfishmonger then being an Alderman, spake soze against them that would haue them enter. For the which, the commons were so moued against him, that they ceased not till they had him committed to warde. And the same afternone about fise of the clocke, the Captaine with his people entred by the bydge, and cut the ropes of the drawe bydge asunder with his swoorde. When he was passed into the Citie, he made in sundry places thereof Proclamations in the Kings name, that no man in paine of death should robbe or take any thing without paying therefoze. By reason whereof, he wanne the heartes of the commons, but all was done to begaile him. After as he came by London stone, he strake it with his swoorde, and saide: Now is Mortimer Lord of this Citie, and then shewing his minde to the Mayor for the ordering of his people, he returned into Southwarke, and there abode

as he befoze had done, his people comming and going at lawfull howses when they would.

On the morrow the third of Iuly, the said Captaine againe entred the Citie, & caused the Lord Say to be set from the Tower to the Guildhall, where he was arraigned befoze the Maior and other the Kings Iustices, and Robert Horne Alderman befoze named should haue bene likewise arraigned, but that his wife and other friends for fine hundred markes gat him released to his liberty. The Lord Say desiring he might be tried by his pæres, was by the rebels forceably taken from the officers, and brought to the Standard in Cheape, where they strake off his head, pight it on a pole, and bare it befoze them, and his body they caused to be drawne naked at a horse taile vpon the pavement from Cheape into Southwarke to the saide Captaines inne.

Also a squire called Crowmer that was then Sheriffe of Kent, that had wedded the said Lord Saies daughter, by commaundement of the Captaine was brought out of the flêete, that was committed thither for certaine excoptions that he had done in his office, and led to pile end without London, and there without any iudgement his head was smit off, and the Lord Saies head and his were boyn vpon two long poles vnto London bridge, and there set vp, and the Lord Saies body was quartered.

The same day the Captaine went vnto the house of Philip Malpas draper, and Alderman, and robbed and spoiled his house, taking from thence great substance, and returned into Southwarke. On the next morrow he againe entred the Citie, and dined that day in the parish of Saint Margaret Patins at one Gherstis house, and when he had dined, like an vncourteous guest he robbed him, as the day befoze he had Malpas. For which two robberies, although the poore people dzew to him and were partners in the spoyle, yet the honest and wealthy commoners cast in their mindes the sequelle of this matter, and feared least they should be dealt with in like maner. When the Maior and Aldermen with assistance of the worshipfull commoners in safegard of themselves and of the citie, toke their counsel how they might dzue the Captaine and his adherents from the citie, for the performance wherof, the Maior sent vnto the Lord Scales, and Mathew Gough, then hauing the Tower in their gouernment, requiring their ayde and assistance, which they promised.

On the fift of Iuly, the Captaine being in Southwarke, caused a man to be beheaded there, and that day entred not the Citie. When night was come, the Maior and the Citizens, with Mathew Gough kept the passage of the bridge, and defended the Kentishmen which made great force to reenter the Citie. When the Captaine seeing this bickering, went to barnes, & assembled his people, and set so fiercely vpon the Citizens, he dzane them backe from the stoupes in Southwarke, & bridge fote, vnto the drawbridge, in defending whereof, many a man was drowned and slaine. Among the which was Iohn Sutton Alderman, Mathew Gough a Squire of Wales, and Roger Hoiland Citizen. This skirmish continued all night till nine of the clocke

Captaine and  
rebels pardon-  
ned.

on the moorish, so that sometime the Citizens had the better, and sometimes the other, but euer they kept them vpon the brydge, so that the Citizens neuer passed much the bulwarke at the brydge foote, nor the Kentishmen no farther than the drawbrydge. Thus continuing the cruell fight to the destruction of much people on both sides, lastly, after the Kentishmen were put to the worst, a truce was agreed for certaine houres, during which truce, the Archbishop of Canterbury, then Chancelloz of England, sent a generall pardon to the Captaine for himselfe, & an another for his people, by reason whereof, he and his company withdrew them by little and little, and their Captaine put all his pillage and goods that he had robbed, into a barge, and sent it to Rochester by water, and himselfe went by land, and would haue entred into the Castell of Quinborough with a felwe men that were left about him: but he was there let of his purpose: wherefore he fled into the wood country beside Ayles in Suffe. The Captaine and his people being thus departed, not long after proclamations were made in diuers places of Kent, Suffe, and Southery, that who might take the foresaid Captaine alue or dead, should haue a thousand markes for his trauell.

*The Copy of the Writ and Proclamation by the King. for the taking  
of the said Cade and his fellowship.*

**H**enricus Dei gratia Rex Anglia & Francia, & Dominus Hibernia, vniuersis & singulis custodiis, &c.

For as much as one Iohn Cade bozne in Ireland, which calleth himselfe Iohn Mortimer, and in some witting calleth himselfe Captaine of Kent, the which Iohn Cade the last yere tofore his dwelling in Suffe with a Knight, called Sir Thomas Dagre, sue there a woman with child, and for that cause toke the greeth of the Church, and after for that cause swore the Kings land: the which Iohn Cade also after this, was sworn to the French part, and dwelled with them, which hath now of late time, (to the intent to enrich himselfe by robbing and dispoyling of the kings liege men, as it is nowe openly knowne, to bying himselfe to great and high estate) falsely and vntruly deceiued many of the kings people, and vnder colour of holy and god intents, made them to assemble with him against the kings regality and his lawes, and nought setting by the kings Grace and pardons granted, not onely to him, but all the kings subjects, the which by his deceit haue assembled with him, the which he with great reuerence receiued on Monday last passed, and so did all that were assembled with him: notwithstanding all this, he laboureth now of new to assemble the kings people againe, and to that intent beareth them on hand, that the kings letters of pardon graunted to him and them, be not auailable nor of none effect without authoritie of Parliament: whereas the contrary is true, as it is openly knowne by that, that the king grants from time to time his Charters of pardon to such as him list, of all manner of crimes and offences both generall and speciall.

The king therefore willet and commaundeth, that none of his subjects  
g sue



give faith nor credence to the said false informations of the said false traitor, nor accompany with him in any wise, nor comfort, nor sustaine him nor his with victuall, nor with any other things. But will whosoever of the kings subjects may take him, shall take him, and that whosoever taketh him, and bringeth him quicke or dead, to the king or his counsell, shall have a thousand markes for his labour truly paid him without faile or delay by the provision of the kings counsell. And whosoever taketh any of those that from this day forth accompany with him, shall have five marke for his reward, truly to be paid in manner and forme abovesaid.

And ouer this, commaunding all Constables, Ministers, and Officers of the said shire, that none of them on paine of death take vpon them to execute any commaundement by word or writing sent or made vnto them by the said Cade, calling himselfe Mortimer and Captaine, be it to reare any people, or to any other intent: but to arrest and make to be arrested such as take vpon them to bring any such commaundement by writing or by word. *Et hoc nullatenus omitatis, Teste me ipso apud Westminister, x. die Iulij, anno regni. 28.*

After which proclamation thus published, a gentleman of Kent named Alexander Eden awaited for his time, that he tooke the said Cade in a garden in Sussex. And there he was slaine at Ipothfield, and brought to London in a cart, and there quartered, his head set on London bridge, and his quarters sent to diuers places in Kent. Captaine of Kent taken and beheaded.

This yere the commons also in diuers parts of England, as in Sussex, Wilshire, and other places, did much harme to many persons, among the which, on the 29. of June, William Alcock Bishop of Salisbury (after he had said masse at Edington) was by his owne tenants drawne from the altar, in his Albe with his stole about his necke, to the top of an hill, and there by them shamefully murdered: for they cleaued his head as he kneled on his knees in his prayers, and after spoiled to the naked skin, and then they renting his bloody shirt, tooke euery man a peece, and made boast of their wickednesse: and the day befoze his chariot was robbed of his treasury to the value of ten thousand markes. Bishop of Salisbury murdered.

Alexander Eden Esquire, Sheriffe of Kent, for his good seruice against the late rebels, is made Custos or keeper of the castle at Rochester. Ann. reg. 29. Alexander Eden.

In the moneth of September, Tresham that was speaker in the last Parliament, was beheaded in Northamptonshire.

After Michaelmas, Richard Duke of Yorke comming out of Ireland, tooke John Sutton Baron of Dudley, and Reginald Abbot of Saint Peters at Gloucester, and shortly after he tooke John Gargraue keeper of the Kings Bench at London, and sent them to the castle of Ludlow.

The first of Nouember began a Parliament at Westminster, and the first of December the Duke of Somerset which was newly come out of France, was put under arrest, and his goods by the commons was sowly despoiled and bozne away from the Blackfriars. After which riot, on the next morrow, proclamation was made through the citie by the Duke of Yorke, Parliament at Westminster.

and the Duke of Suffolke, that no man should spoyle or rob, vpon paine of death: and the same day at the Standard in Cheape was a man beheaded for doing contrary to the proclamation.

King Henry  
rode into Kent  
with an army.

The fourth of December, the King and his Lords rode through the Citie of London, with a great armie of men well appointed, and deuised into thre battels. Also the Citizens armed stood in the strætes of the Citie, where through the king passed, which altogither made the greatest shew of armed men that had bene sene in London within the memozy of any man then liuing.

1451.  
Rebels in Kent  
and Suffes  
executed.

The 18. of January, the King with certaine Lords, and his Iustices rode towards Kent, and there indighted and arraigned many, whereof to the number of 26. were put to death, eight at Canterbury, and the residue in other towne of Kent and Suffes. And the King returning out of Kent on the 27. of February, the men of that countrey, naked saue their shirts, in great numbers, met him on the Blackheath, and there on their knes asked mercy, and had their pardon. Then the King rode royally through the Citie of London, and was of the Citizens ioyfully receiued, and the same day against the Kings coming to the Citie, nine heads of the Kentishmen that had bene put to death, were set on London bridge, and the Captaines head that stood there before, was set in the middelt of them.

Robert Gagwine

The malice begunne, increased betwene the Lords of the land, and especially against the Duke of Somerset, and other of the Quenes Counsell, for the lésing of Normandy, whereof the chiefe Citie of Roan was lost or giuen by by appointment, the yere proceeding (as witneseth Gagwine) vpon condition that the Duke of Somerset with his wife and English souldiers, should with such goods as they might carry, depart freely from the Citie: For which free passage he should pay vnto the French king 56. thousand Scuttes, which amount to fourténe thousand markes sterling. And also he was bound to deliuer into the French kings possession, all Townes and Castels that at that day were in the possession of Englishmen, within the Dutchie of Normandy: for the performance of which conenants, the Lord Talbot was sent for one of the pledges, and so by one Floquet all the Towns and Castels were to the French kings vse receiued, Barthe onely excepted, whereof the Captaine named Curson, with the assistance of sir Thomas Auringham, in despite of all the French kings power laid both by sea and land, held the same a full moneth or moze, and then for lacke of rescue, gaue it by by appointment.

Richard Duke  
of Yorke pre-  
tended title to  
the Crowne.

Richard Duke of Yorke, pretending a title to the Crowne, and heire to Lionell Duke of Clarence, came this yere out of Ireland vnto London, in the Parliament time, there to consult with his especiall friendes, John Duke of Suffolke, Richard Earle of Salisbury, and Richard his sonne, which after was Earle of Marwicke, Thomas Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, and Edmond Brooke Lord Cobham, &c. After long deliberation and aduise taken, it was concluded, to keepe their chiefe purpose secret, and that the Duke should raise an army of men, vnder a pretext to remoue diuers counsellers about the

the King, and to reuenge the manifest iniuries done to the commonwealth by the same rulers, of the which as principall, the Duke of Somerset was namely accused, both for that he was greatly hated of the commons for the losse of Poymandy, and for that it was well knowne, that he would be altogether against the Duke of Yorke, in his challenge to be made to the crowne, when time should serue: Wherefore when the Duke of Yorke had thus framed his foundation of his long intended enterprize, he assembled a great host, to the number of 10000. in the marches of Wales, publishing openly that the cause of this his gathering of people, was for the publike wealth of the Realme, for affirming the same to be true, he wrote his letters in forme as followeth:

*An. reg. 30.*

Forasmuch as I Richard Duke of Yorke am informed, that the King my soueraigne Lord, is my heauy Lord, greatly displeased with me, and hath me in mistrust by sinister information of mine enemies, aduersaries, and euill willers, where God knoweth, from whom nothing is hid, I am, haue been, and euer will be his true liege man, and so haue I said befoze this diuers times, as well by mouth as by writing, notified and declared to my said soueraigne Lord. And for that this notice so comen vnto me of the displeasure of my said soueraigne Lord is to me so græuous, I haue prayed the reuerend father in God the Bishop of Hereford, and my cosen the Earle of Shrewsbury to come hither, and heare my declaration in this matter. Wherein I haue said to them, that I am true liege man to the King my soueraigne Lord, euer haue been, and shall be to my dying day. And to the very proue that it is so, I offer my selfe to sweare that, on the blessed Sacrament, and receiue it, the which I hope shall be my saluation, at the day of doome: And so for my speciall comfort and consolation, I haue prayed the said Lords to report and declare vnto the Kings highnes my said offer. And to the ende and intent, that I will be ready to doe the same oth in presence of two or thre Lords, such as shall please the Kings highnes to send hither to accept it. In witnes whereof I haue signed this scedule with my signe manuell, and set thereunto my signet of armes. Written in my Castle of Ludlow, the 9. of January, the 30. yere of the raigie of my soueraigne Lord King Henry the sixt.

*Richard Duke of Yorke his declaration of truth as he said*

1452.

The 16. of February, King Henry accompanied with the Duke of Somerset, and many other Lords, toke towards the marches of Wales, for as much as he was credibly informed, that the Duke of Yorke, assisted with diuers other Lords and men of name, had in those parts gathered a strong power of people, and with them was entring the land, and so held on his iourney towards him: but when the Duke had witting of the Kings great power, he returned from the way which was taken by the Kings host, and hasted towards London. And when he had receiued knowledge from the Citie, that he might not there be receiued, he went ouer Kingston bridge, and so into Kent, and there vpon Went heath nere vnto Dertford, he pight his field, whereof the King hauing knowledge, sped him after, and lastly came vnto Blacke heath, and there pight his field. When both the hostes were thus unbattelled,

embattelled, mediation of peace was made betwene them, for furtherance whereof, to the Duke were sent the Bishops of Winchester and of Ely, with the Carles of Salisbury and Warwick. To whom it was answered by the Duke, that he nor none of his company intended any hurt to the Kings person, nor to any of his Counsell, being louers of the commonwealth, and of him and his land: but his intent and purpose was to remoue from the King a few euill disposed persons, by whose meanes the common people was grievously oppressed, and the commonaltie greatly impouerished, of whom he named the Duke of Somerset to be the principall, &c. And further to vnderstand of the Dukes meaning by this his forcible entring of the Realme, (as himselfe pretended) may appere by certaine letters by him written to the King, and also the Kings answers to the same, both which I thinke good here to set doونه as I finde them recozded.

Richard duke  
of Yorke his  
letter to king  
Henry.

Please it your highnesse to conceiue that sith my departing out of this your Realme, by your commaundement, and being in your seruice in your land of Ireland, I haue bene informed that diuers language hath been said of me to your most excellent estate, which should found to my dishonour and reproch, and charge of my person: howbeit that, I aye haue bene, and euer will be, your true liege man and seruant: and if there be any man that will or dare say the contrary, or charge me otherwise, I beseech your rightwisenes to call him befoze your high presence, and I will declare me for my discharge as a true knight ought to do, and if I do not, as I doubt not but I shall, I beseech you to punish me as the worst man of your land: and if he be found vnttrue in his suggestion and information, I beseech you of your highnes that he be punished after his desert, in example of all other. Please it your excellence to know, that as well befoze my departing out of this your Realme, for to go into your land of Ireland, in your full noble seruice, as sith, certaine persons haue lien in awaite for to hearken vpon me, as sir John Talbot knight at the Castell of Holt: sir Thomas Stanley knight in Cheshire: Pulford at Chester: Elton at Worcester: Brooke at Gloucester: and Richard growne of your Chamber at Beaumarres: which had in charge (as I am informed) for to take me and put me into your Castell of Conway, and to strike off the head of sir William Oldehall knight, and to haue put in prison sir William Devereux knight, and sir Edmond Malso knight, withouten enlarging, vntill the time that your highnes had appointed their deliuerance.

Item, at such time as I was purposed for to haue arrived at your haven of Beaumarres, for to haue come to your noble presence to declare me your true man and subiect, as my dutie is, my landing was stopped and forbarded by Henry Norres, Thomas Norres, William Bulkley, William Graft, and Bartholomew Bould, your officers in Northwales, that I should not land there, nor haue victuall nor refreshing for me and my fellowship, as I haue written to your excellence here befoze, so farre forth that Henry Norres deputie to the Chamberlaine of Northwales said vnto me, that he had in commaundement that I should in no wise haue landing, refreshing, nor lodging,



ging, for men nor for horse, nor other thing that might turne to my wor-  
ship or ease, putting the blame vpon William Say Alder of your chamber,  
saying and affirming that I am against your intent, and as a Traitor, as I  
am informed: and moreover, certaine letters were made and deliuered vn-  
to Chester, Shrewsbury, and to other places for to let mine entrie into the  
same.

Item, aboue all wrongs and iniuries abovesaid done vnto me of malice,  
without any cause, I being in your land of Ireland, in your honourable ser-  
uice, certain commissions were made and directed vnto diuers persons, which  
for the execution of the same, sate in certaine places, and the Iuries impanel-  
led and charged, to the which iuries, certaine persons laboured instantly to  
haue me indited of treason, to the intent for to haue vndone me and mine issue  
and corrupted my blood, as it is openly published: beseeching your Maiestie  
royall, of your righteousnes, to examine these matters, and thereupon to doe  
such iustice in his behalfe as the cause requireth: for mine intent is fully to  
pursue to your highnes for the conclusion of these matters.

Cosin, we haue seene the bill that ye toke vs late, and also vnderstande  
the good humble obedience that ye in your selfe shewe vnto vs, as well in  
word as in deed, wherefore our intent is, the more hastily to ease you of  
such thinges as were in your said bill. Howbeit that at our more leisure  
we might aunswere to your said bill, yet we let you to wist, that for the cau-  
ses aforesaid, we will declare you now our intent in these matters: sith  
it is that a long time among the people hath bene vpon you many straunge  
language, and in especiall anone after your disordinate and vnlawfull slay-  
ing of the Bishoppe of Chester, diuers and many of the vntre shipmen and  
other, said in their manner, wordes against our estate, making manace to  
our owne person by your sayings, that ye should be fetched with many  
thousandes, and ye should take vpon you that, which ye neyther ought, nor  
as we doubt not, ye will not attempt, so farre soth that it was said to our  
person by diuers, and especially we remember of one Walsnes which had  
like wordes to vs. And also there was diuers of such false people, that  
went on and had like language in diuers of our Townes of our land, which  
by our subiectes were taken and duely executed: wherefore we sent to di-  
uers of our courtes and places, to hearken and to take heede if any such  
manner comming were, and if there had bene, for to resist it: but comming  
into our land our true subiecte as ye did, our intent was not that ye, nor  
lesse of estate of our subiectes, nor none of your seruantes should not haue  
bene letted nor warned, but in goodly wise receiued: Howbeit that perad-  
uenture your suddaine comming, without certaine warning, caused our  
seruantes to doe as they did, considering the causes aboue said. And as to  
the enditement that ye spoke of, we thinke verily, and holde for certaine,  
that there was none such. And if ye may truly proue that any person  
was thereaboutes, the matter shall bee demeaned as the case shall re-  
quire, so that hee shall know it is to our great displeasure. Vpon this for the  
easing of your heart in all such matters, we declare, repute, and aduise your

Answer of  
king Henry to  
the duke of  
York.

our

Richard Duke  
of Yorke to  
King Henry  
againe.

our true and faithfull subject, and as our welbeloued Cousin.

Please it your highnes tenderly to consider, that great murmur and grudging is vniuersally in this your Realme, in that Iustice is not duly ministred to such as trespasse and offend against your lawes, and in especiall of them that be endited of treason, and other being openly noised of the same, whereby great inconueniences haue fallen, and great is like to fall hereafter in your said Realme, which God defende, but if by your highnes prouision couenable bee made for due refozation and punishment in this behalfe. Wherefoze I your humble subject and true liegeman, Richard Duke of Yorke, willing as effectually as I can, and desiring the suretie and prosperitie of your most royall person, and the welfare of this your noble Realme, counsell and aduertise your excellencie for the conseruation of godd tranquillitie and peaceable rule among all other subjects, for to ordeine and prouide, that true iustice be had, against all such that to be endited, or openly named, wherein I offer my selfe, and will put my endeuer for to execute your commaundement in the premises, for the punishing of such offenders, and redress of the sayde misrules, to my might and power. And for the hastie execution hereof, like it your highnes to adressse these letters of priuie seale and writs to your officers and ministers, to doe, take, and arrest all such persons so noyed and endited, of what estate, degre, or condition soeuer they be, and them to commit to the Tower of London, and to other of your prisons, there to abide without baile or mainpryse, vntill the time they be utterly tried, and determined after the course of your lawes.

Answer of  
King Henry to  
the Duke of  
Yorke.

Cousin, as touching your bill last put vp to vs, we vnderstand well that ye of godd hart, counsell and aduertise vs to the setting vp of iustice, and to the speedie punishing of some persons endited or noyed, offering your seruice to bee readie at commaundement in the same, sith it is that for many causes mouing vs to haue determined in our soule to stablish a sad, and a substantiall Counsell, giuing them moze ample authoritie and power than euer wee did afoze this: in the which wee haue appointed you to bee one. But sith it is not accustomed sure, nor expedient, to take a conclusion and conduct by aduise or counsell of one person by himselfe for the conseruation, it is obserued that the greatest and the best, the rich and the poore, in libertie, vertue, and effect of your voyces be equal: we haue therefore determined within our selfe to send for our Chancelloz of England, and for other Lords of our Councell, yea and all other, together within short time ripely to commune these and other our great matters, in the which communication, such conclusion by the grace of God shall be taken, as shall found to his pleasure, the weale of vs and our land, as well in these matters as in any other.

At length it was agreed by the King, that the Duke of Somerset should be committed to warde there to abide and answer such articles as the Duke of Yorke would lay against him, vpon which promises so made by the King to the Duke, who saue that the people of Kent, and of other places  
came

came not to him as they had promised, and that they were not strong enough, for the Kings part was much more than his, he brake vp his field on the first of March, and yielded himselfe to the King at Wertsford, where contrary to promise before made, he found the Duke of Somerset chāse about the King. Then was the Duke of Poike sent before to London, and holden partly as prisoner, and straighter should haue been kept, but it was noised that Sir Edward Carle of March, sonne to the said Duke of Poike was comming toward London with a strong power of Welshmen, which feared so the Quene and Counsell, that the Duke was set at full libertie. And on the tenth of March, the said Richard Duke of Poike made his submission, and toke his oth to be true, faithfull, and obedient subiect to King Henry the first, King of England, in St. Pauls Church at London, there being present the King and most of his Nobilitie, that is to say, the Dukes of Buckingham, Northampton, and Somerset: the Carles of Warlike, Arundel, Salisburie, Shrophshire, Deuonshire, Wiltshire, Northumberland, Stafford and Dorset: viscounts of Beaumont and Wells: barons Fitz Warren, Sainmond, Cobham, Douglas, and others: Bishops, the Cardinall, Archbishop of Poike, and Caunterburie, Winchester, Ely, and London, in these words following.

Richard duke  
of Poike his  
submission and  
oth to Henry  
the first.

I Richard Duke of Poike, confesse and beknow that I am and ought to be humble subiect and liegeman to you my soueraigne Lord King Henry the first, and owe therefore to beare you faith and truth, as to my soueraigne liege Lord, and shall doe all dayes vnto my liues ende, and shall not at any time will or assent that any thing be attempted or done against your most Noble person, but wheresoeuer I shall haue knowledge of any such thing imagined or purposed, I shall with all speede and diligence possible to mee, make that your highnes shall haue knowledge thereof, and ouer that doe all that shall bee possible to mee, to the withstanding and let thereof, to the uttermost of my life: I shall not any thing take vpon mee against your royall estate or obeysance that is due thereto, nor suffer any other man to doe, as farre forth as it shall bee in my power to let it: And also shall come at your commaundement whensoeuer I shall bee called by the same, in humble and obessant wise, but if I bee letted by any sicknes or impotence of my person, or by such other cause as shall bee thought by you my soueraigne Lord reasonable. I shall neuer hereafter take vpon mee to gather any rowe, or to make any assembly of your people, without your commaundement or licence, or in my lawfull defence, in interpretation or declaration of the which my lawfull defence, I shall repozt mee at all times to your highnes, and if the case require, to my pēres, nor any thing attempt against any of your subiects, of what estate, degree, or condition that they bee. But whensoeuer I finde my selfe wronged and agræued, I shall sue humbly for remedie to your highnes, and procéde after the course of your lawes, and in none otherwise, sauing in mine owne lawfull defence in manner aboue sayde, and otherwise haue to your highnes as an humble and true subiect ought to haue him to his soueraigne Lorde. All these things abouesaid I promise you truly to obserue and keepe, by the holy E-

uangelists

nangellſſe contained in the booke that I lay my hand here vpon, and by the holy Crosse I here touch, and by the blessed sacrament of our Lordes body, that I shall now with his mercie receiue. And ouer I agree mee and will, that if I any time hereafter, as by the grace of our Lord God I neuer shall, any thing attempt by way of ſeate or otherwiſe againſt your royall Maieſtie and obeifance that I owe thereto, or any thing take vpon mee otherwiſe than is aboue expreſſed, I from that time forth be vnable, held and taken, as an vntrue and openly forſworne man, and vnable to all manner of worſhip, eſtate, and degree, be it ſuch as I now occupie, or any other that might in any wiſe growe vnto me hereafter. And this I haue here promiſed and ſworne, proceedeth of mine owne deſire and free voluntee, and by no conſtraining or coaction. In witnes of all the which thinges aboue wriſſten, I Richard duke of Yorke aboue wriſſen ſubſcribe, with mine owne hand and ſeale.

An. reg. 31.

This oath he alſo toke at Weſtminſter, and at Couentrie, at ſundrye times, although he little eſteemed thereof, as by the ſequelle may appere.

This yere deceased Iohn Stafford Archbiſhop of Canterburie, late Lord Chancelor of England, and was buried at Canterburie. After him ſucceeded in the archbiſhoprick Iohn Kemp, borne at We in Kent, doctor of lawes, firſt biſhop of Rocheſter, then of Chicheſter, then of London, then Archbiſhop of Yorke, Chancelor of England, and Cardinall of S. Albini: and now Archbiſhop of Canterburie, and Cardinall of S. Ruſine, & was ſuthronized at Canterburie on the 11. of December.

1453.

On the twelſe day after Chriſtmas, the King holding his Chriſtmas at Weſtminſter with great ſolemnitie, made his two brethren by the mothers ſide knights.

The Earle of Kendall, and the Lord Leſpary came Ambaſſadours from the cheefes Magiſtrates of the citie of Burdeaur, which ſignified to the counſell, that if they woulde ſend an armie into Gaſcoigne, the people of the countrie woulde reuolt from the French part, and againe become Engliſh. This newes ſore troubled the heades of the Counſell, which cauſed them, leaſt inwarde ſedition might hinder outward victorie, to let the duke of Yorke at libertie, and permitted him to goe to the caſtell of Wigmoze in the marches of Wales, by whole abſence the duke of Somerſet roſe in ſuch high fauour, both with the King and the Queene, that his word was onely heard and regarded. The Counſell hoping now to haue the citie of Burdeaur, with the countrey round about, appointed Iohn Lord Talbot Earle of Shrewſbury, to go thither with an armie, who arriuing in the Ile of Poyze, paſſed forth with his power, being leaſt three thouſand men, and toke the ſtronge towne of Fronſake, and diuers other townes and ſortreſſes. The inhabitants of Burdeaur hearing of the Earles arriuall, ſent to him meſſengers in the darke night, requiring him with all ſpede, to come and receiue the citie. The Earle haſtened forth, and came beſore that citie, ere the Frenchmen within vnderſtood any thing of the citizens purpoſe. But when they heard that there was a gate ſet open for the Engliſhmen,

Burdeaur  
reſtored to the  
Engliſh.

to



to enter, they thought to haue escaped secretly by a pofferne, but they were pursued, slaine, and taken by the Lord de Lespare, and other of the English armie.

After the regaining of Burdeaur, there arrived at Blay, the bastard of Somerset, sir Iohn Talbot Lord Lisle by his wife, sonne to the said Earle of Shrewsburie, the lord Molins, the lord Harington, the lord Cameis, sir Iohn Howard, sir Iohn Mountgomerie, sir Iohn Vernon with 2200. men, victuals and munitions.

In the moneth of March, was the towne of Harflew won by the French men, and shortly the citie of Bayons was giuen by by appointment, that the soldiers should leaue their armour behind them.

When the Earle of Shrewsburie was furnished as is aforesaid, first hee fortified Burdeaur with Englishmen, and store of victuals, and artillerie, then he rode into the country abroad, where he obtained citie and townes, without stroke, amongst other townes, the towne and castle of Chastillon in Perigot was to him deliuered, the which he fortified.

In the meane time the French King being aduertised of these things, raised an armie to resist the inuasion made by the Earle, and first he appointed his captaines to besiege the towne of Chastillon, to the rescue whereof the Earle hastened forward, hauing in his companie eight hundred horsemen, vnder the leading of his sonne the lord Lisle, the lord Molins, the lord Cameis, sir Edward Hull, sir Iohn Howard, and sir Iohn Vernon: hee appointed also five thousand footemen, vnder the conduct of the Earle of Kendall, and the lord de Lespare to follow him with speede. In his way hee took a tower, which the Frenchmen had before taken, and slue all that hee found therein, and after by the way hee met five hundred Frenchmen a foraging, of whom he slue the more part, and chased the other to the campe.

The Frenchmen that lay at the siege, perceiving by these runners away that the Earle approached, left the siege, and retired in good order into the place which they had trenched and fortified. The Earle aduertised how the siege was removed, hastened forward toward his enemies, doubting least they would haue been fled, and gone before his coming: but they abode the earles coming, and so receiued him, that though by manly courage hee first wan the entrie at their campe, yet at length, they compassed him about, and shooting him through the thigh with a hand gun, slue his horse, and finally killed him, lying on the ground. There died also the lord Lisle his sonne, & his bastard sonne Henrie Talbot, and sir Edward Hull, and thirtie other men of name, the lord Moleins was taken prisoner with threescore others. The residue of the English people fled to Burdeaur and other places, of whom in the flight were slaine aboue a thousand persons.

Thus at this battell of Chastillon fought the twentieth of Iulie, ended his life Iohn lord Talbot, & of his progenie the first Earle of Shrewsburie, after that he had valiantly made war in seruice of his prince 24. yeeres, he was buried at Whitchurch in Shropshire.

John Earle  
of Shrewsbu-  
rie slaine.

L. Moleins  
taken.

After

*An. reg. 32.*

After this, the towne of S. Millan, Liborne, and all other townes which the Earle of Shrewsbury had conquered, rendered themselves to the French men, Burdeaur onely excepted. The which Citie being the last refuge of the English people, the French King in person besieged with all his puissance, and in conclusion constrained both the garrison and inhabitants to yelde, so that the Englishmen and Gascoignes might safely depart with all their substance,

*Description of Aquitaine.*

Thus was the Dutchie of Aquitaine, which had continued in the possession of  $\bar{e}$  Engli. sh, from the yere of our Lord. 1155. unto this yere 1453. which is nere hand thre hundred yeres, by the marriage of Alienor, daughter and heire to William Duke of Aquitaine, wife to King Henry the second, finally reduced and brought againe to the French obedience and seruitude. Within that onely dutchie be foure Archbishops, foure and twentie Bishops, fiftene earldomes, two hundred and two barones, and aboue a thousand captainships, and bailiwickes, whereby ye may perceiue what a losse this was to the Realme of England.

1454.

The 13. day of October, the Quene at Westminster was deliuered of hir first sonne, who was named Edward.

When the wars were ended in foraine parts, ciuill dissention began againe to renew within the Realme, being diuided into two seuerall factions: for King Henry descended of the house of Lancaster, claiming the crowne from his grandfather King Henry the fourth: and Richard Duke of Yorke, as heire to Lionell Duke of Clarence, thirde sonne to King Edward the thirde, wrestled for the game, by reason whereof, the nobles, as well as the common people, were into many parts diuided, to the bitter destruction of many a man, to the great ruine and decay of this Realme. For while the one partie studied to destroy the other, all care of the commonwealth was set aside, iustice and equitie clereely cried.

*Practise of the Duke of Yorke.*

The Duke of Yorke aboue all things, first sought meanes howe to prouoke the malice of the people against the Duke of Somerset, imagining that hee being made away, his purpose should shortly come to conclusion.

He also practised to bring the King into the hatred of the people, for that he was not a man of stomacke sufficient to supply the rowme which he held. Many of the high estates not liking the world, and disallowing the acts and doings both of the King and his counsell, determined to practise both things might come to some alteration: which when the Duke understood, he chafely intertained and won the fauour of the two Neuils, both named Richards, the one Earle of Salisbury, the other Earle of Marwick, the first being the father, and the second the sonne. This Earle of Salisbury, was second sonne to Ralph Neuill Earle of Westmerland, whose daughter the Duke of Yorke had married, and the said Richard was espoused to lady Alice the only child, and sole heire of Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, slain at the siege of Mleance, of which woman he begat Richard, Iohn and George, Richard the eldest sonne espoused Anne, the sister and heire of the entire blood to Henry Beawchampe

Beawchampe Earle, and after Duke of Warwicke, in whose right and title he was created Earle of Warwicke.

The Duke of Poike with his friends wrought so effectually, and handled his busines so politickely, that the Duke of Somerset was arrested in the Quenes great chamber, and sent to the Tower of London, where he kept his Christmas without great solemnity, against whom, in open Parliament, were laid diuers articles, beginning thus: These articles and points following, giue and minister I Richard Duke of Poike, your liege man, and servant vnto your highnes, summarily proposing and declaring them, against Edmond Duke of Somerset, for the great welfare, and the common auaille and increase of your maiestie royall, and of this your noble Realme, as well to bying to knowledge and vnderstanding the meanes and causes of the great mischiefes and inconueniencies, which late befell vnto this your noble Realme, as in losse of your liuelode beyond the sea, and other wise in punishment of deleruters, and excuse of innocency, and also in putting aside, and eschuing of the great and impoztable hurt and prejudice which been like, withouten that purueyance he had of remedie, to succed in short time. To the which articles of euery of them, I the said Duke of Poike desire of your equall and indifferent right wisenes, that the said Edmonde answer by his faith, & truth the sacrament of his oth thereupon made duely and truly as law and conscience requireth, &c. as I haue at large set downe in my larger Chronicle.

An. reg. 33.  
Edmond duke  
of Somerset  
sent to the tow-  
er, and articles  
put aga inst  
him by the  
duke of Poike.

The king at that time hauing laine long sicke at Clarendon, was conueyed to London, by reason whereof, no small determination proceeded in this waightie cause, but all was put in suspence, till the next assemble of the high court of Parliament.

This yere wheat, and other graines were in such plenty, that a quarter of wheat was commonly solde for twelue pence, and fourtene pence: a quarter of malt for sixtene pence, and seuentene pence at the most, and not aboue. A certaine farmer dwelling in the towne of Cruse Kosse, or Kosse towne in Hartfordshire, wanting money, sold twenty quarters of wheat the best, for twenty shillings.

Wheat sold for  
xii. pence the  
quarter.

John Kempe Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterbury. This Kempe was bozne at Wile in Kent, whereupon, when he was Archbishop of Poike, he made the parish Church of Wile, a Colledge, where of the gouernour was a prebend, and the other were ministers for diuine seruice, and to instruct youth in grammer and learning, according to his foundation. Which Colledge, at the suppression the 36. of Henry the eight was valued 93. pound, two shillings by yere. The father of this Archbischoppe Kempe lieth buried in the said Church of Wile, with this Epitaph following,

Archbishop of  
Canterbury  
deceased.

*Hic stant ossa Thomæ Kempe marmore fossa,  
Cuius opus prouum se probat esse bonum:  
Dum vixit letus fuit & bonitate repletus,  
Munificus vixit, pauperibus tribuit;  
Iungitur huic satirix virginitatis sponsa Beatirix.*

Vv

Qua

*Que partitur opes sponte iunans inopes;  
Ex hys processit, ut ramus ab arbore crescit,  
Claris presidium, dux sapiens omnium;  
Christo lectoris mens cunctis supplicet horis.  
Et patris dicitur lumen baranimas.*

Idem Thomas obiit Anno Domini 1428. 30. die Mensis Maij.

Unto this Iohn Kempe succeeded in the archbishoppycke of Canterburie, Thomas Bourcher brother to Henric earle of Essex, deane of Saint Martins, first bishop of Winchester, then of Ely, and then archbishop of Canterbury, and cardinall of Saint Ciriac, and William Grey was made bishop of Ely: and Richard Neuill earle of Salisburie, was made lord chancelor of Eng-

land. Whilste king Henry lay sicke, Richard duke of Yorke bare all the rule and governed as regent, and did now discover the sparks of his hatred, hid vnder dissimulation, against the Duke of Somerset: but when the king had recovered his strength againe, and refused to him his princelie gouernement, he caused the Duke of Somerset to be set at libertie, and preferred him to be Captaine of Calais, wherewith not onely the Commons, but many of the nobilitie (sanozers of Richard duke of Yorke) were greatly græued and offended, saying that he had lost Normandie, and would lose Calais.

The duke of Yorke and his adherents, perceiuing that their accusing of the duke of Somerset preuailed not, determined to reuenge their quarrel, and obtaine their purpose by open warre: and so he being in Wales accompanied with his especiall freinds, the earles of Salisburie, and Warwick, the lord Cobham, and others, assembled a power of warlike persons, and marched towards London.

The king being informed thereof, assembled likewise an host, and meaning to meete with the duke, rather in the north parts then about London, where it was thought he had too many freinds, with great speede, being accompanied with Humfrey duke of Buckingham, and Humfrey his eldest sonne earle of Stafford, Edmond duke of Somerset, Henry Percie earle of Norththumberland, James Butler earle of Wiltshire, and of Dunmow, Iohn Bewford earle of Dorset, Jasper Tewder earle of Penbroke, brother to the king, Thomas Courtney earle of Deuonshire, Iohn lord Clifford, the lordes Sudley, Barnes, Rose and others, being in all about 2000. men of warre, departed from Westminster the 21. day of May, toward Saint Albons, to meete with the duke of Yorke, the earles of Warwick and Salisburie: the king lodged that night at Madeford, or Matford one this side Saint Albons, and on the morow in the morning early he came to Saint Albons. And about the same time, were there assembled Richard D. of Yorke, Iohn D. of Norfolk, Richard earle of Warwick, Richard earle of Salisburie, William L. Fauconbridge, Edward L. Cobham, and many other knights and esquires, the kings enemies, in a place called Befffelde, beside Saint Albons.

Edmond duke  
of Somerset  
Captaine of  
Calais.

1455.  
The Duke of  
Yorke raised  
a power, and  
marched to-  
ward London.

The



the King hearing of the Dukes coming with the Lords aforesaid, pight his banner in a place called Goselowe, which place was sometimes called Sandforth in Saint Peters Strete, and commaunded in strong manner to keepe the wards and barriers of the same Towne. The Duke of Yorke knowing the strength made against him abiding in the fiede aforesaide, from seuen of the clocke in the morning, vntill it was almost ten of the clocke without any stroke smitten on either part, by the aduise of his counsell sent vnto the King vnder these words following.

Please it vnto your excellent Grace, Richard Duke of Yorke, to take him as your true liege man and humble subiect, and to consider and tender at the reuerence of God, and in the way of charitie, the true intent of my coming, and to be good and gracious Soueraigne vnto me, and all other your true liege men, which, that with all their power and might will be ready to liue and die with you in your right, and to do all things as shall like your Maiestie royall to commaund vs, if it be to the worship of the Crowne of England, and the welfare of this your noble realme. Moreover, gracious Lorde, please it vnto your Maiestie Royall, of your great goodnesse and rightwisenesse, to encline your will to heare and seele the rightwise part of vs your true subiects and liege men. First, praying and beseeching to our Soueraigne Christ Iesus, of his high and mightie power, to giue the vertue of prudence, and that through the prayer of the glorious Martyr Saint Albon giue you very knowledge of our trothes, and to know the intent of our assembling at this time: For God that is in heauen knoweth, our intent is rightfull and true. And therefore we pray vnto that mightie Lord in these words: *Domine sis chypens defensionis nostre*: wherefore gracious Lorde, please it your Maiestie Royall to deliuer such as we will accuse, and they to hanelike as they haue deserued. And this done, you to be honourably worshipped as most rightfull King and our true gouernour. And if we should now at this time be promised, as afoze this time is not vnknewne haue ben promises broken which haue ben full faithfullly promised, and thereupon great othes swoyne, we will not now cease for no such promises, nor oth, till we haue them which haue deserued death, or else we to die thercoze.

Words in writing by y Duke of Yorke vnto the King.

*The answer by the King to the Duke of Yorke.*

King Henry charge and commaunde, that no manner person of what degree, estate, or conditton soener hee be, abide not, but that they auoide the fiede, and not be so hardie to make resistance against me in my own Realme. For I shall knowe what traytors dare be so bolde to arise any people in mine owne land, where through I am in great diseale and heauinesse: by that faith I owe vnto Saint Edward, and vnto the Crowne of England, I shall destroy them euery mother soune, and eke they to be hanged, awred, and quartered, that may be taken after ward of them, in example to make all such Traytours to beware, for to make any rising of people without

mine owne land, and so trayterously to abide their King and gouernour. And for a conclusion, rather then they shall haue any Lord that here is with me, at this time, I shall this day for their sake in this quarrell my selfe liue and die.

*The words of the Duke of Yorke to all gentlemen and others assembled with him.*

Sirs, the King our Soueraigne Lord will not bee reformed at our beseeching ne prayer, nor will not in no wise vnderstand the intent wherefore we bee here assembled and gathered at this time, but onely is in full purpose to destroy vs all, and thereupon a great oth hath made, that there is none other way, but that hee with all his power will pursue vs, and if we bee taken, to giue vs a shamefull death, lasing our liuelode and goods, and also our helres shamed for euer. Wherefore sirs, now sith it will none other wise bee, but that we shall utterly dye, better it is to vs to dye in the fielde, than cowardlie to bee put to an bitter rebuke and shamefull death, for the right of England standeth in vs. Considering also in what perill it standeth at this time, and for to redresse the mischiefe thereof, let euery man helpe to his power this daye, and in that quarrell to quste vs like men, to the Crowne of England, praying and beseeching vnto that Lorde the which is eternall, that raigneth in the glorious kingdome celestiaall, to keepe and saue vs this daye in our right, and thozough the giftes of his holy grace we may bee made strong to withstand the great abhominable and horrible malice of them, that purpose to destroye vs and the Realme of England, and put vs to a shamefull death: praye we therefore vnto that Lorde to bee our comfort and our defendoz, saying these wordes, *Domine sis clipeus defensionis nostri*. And when these wordes were saide, the Duke of Yorke, and the Carles of Marwicke and Salisburie, with their host, betwene eleuen and twelue at none brake in, in thre seuerall places of the saide strate. The King then being in the place of Edmond Westby, Hundreder of the sayde Towne of Saint Albons, hearing of the sayde Dukes comming, commaunded his host to slay all manner Lords, knights, squiers, Gentlemen and peomen, that might bee taken on the partie of the foresaide Duke of Yorke. This done, the Lorde Clifford kept so strongly the barrions of the same Towne, that the foresaide Duke of Yorke might in no wise with all the power that hee had enter, nor brake into the sayde Towne. The Carle of Marwicke knowing thereof, toke and gathered his men together with him, and brake in by the Garden side into the sayde Towne, betwene the signe of the Keye, and the Ercher in Holwell strate: and anon as they were within the sayde Towne, they blew vpp the Trumpet and cried with an high voyce, a Marwicke, a Marwicke, that maruaple it was to heare. And till that time the Duke of Yorke might neuer haue entrie into the Towne, and then with strong hand they brake vpp the Barriers, and fought a fierce and

First battell at  
S. Albons.

and cruell Battaille, in the which were slaine on the Kinges partie Lordes of name, Edmonde Duke of Somerset, Henry Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Stafford, the olde Lord Clifford, Sir Robert Vere, Bartin Entewsell, William Chamberlaine, Richard Fortescue, and Ralph Ferrers knightes, Oliuer Maleuory, Oliuer Alterton, Gilbert Scaresbrooke, John Garthe, Thomas Packington, Roger Morecroft, William Tarwin, John Benstede, John Alforde, Reginalde Griffith, Humfrey Acworth, Henrie Hawlin the Quenes messenger, Richarde Chanselar poxter to the King, Alexander Breakepeare, Gilbert Hilding, poxter to the King, William Souche, John Boteraux, Ralph Babthorpe sewer to the king, and Ralph his sonne, the Kings Attozney, William Coruin, William Cotton of Conington in Huntingdonshire, receiuer of the dutchie of Lancaster, Gilbert Faldingar, John Daues, Ellis Wood, Robert Woodward, and Ralph Willoughby Esquires, Hawling the Kings poxter, and William Butler peoman, John Apfinken, John Daue, John at Herthe, Hughe North, William Porter, John Page, Thomas Barker, John Taylor of Henley, Robert Purton, and Henry Himingley peoman of the crowne, Nicholas of the pantrie, John Cockes, William Fishmonger to the duke of Buckingham, Allen Sutton clarke chaplein, and many other slaine, to the number of 5000. and on the other part was slaine about 600. persons, of them that were slaine, been buried at Saint Albons eight and forty persons. And at that battell were wounded Lordes of name, the King shot into the necke with an arrowe, Humfrey duke of Buckingham, and the Lord Sudley, in the visages with arrowes, Humfrey Earle of Stafford in the right hand with an arrow, the Earle of Dorset was so sore hurt that he might not goe, but was saue to be caried home in a cart, and sir Iohn Wenloke knight in likewise hurt and caried from thence in a chaire, and diuers other knights and Esquires sore hurt, and the substance of the Kings hoste despoiled of their harnéis, at their owne request, made deliuey to the dukes hoste for saluation of their liues and fled. The earle of Wiltshire, and Thomas Thorpe, Lord chiefe baron of the Erchequer, with many other fled, and cast away their harnéis in dishes and woods. This done, the duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwick and Salisburie, came vnto the King where hee was, and besought him on their knees, of grace and forgiveness of that they had done in his presence, and besought him of his highnes to take them to grace, and as his true liege men. The King desired them to cease their people, that there should bee no more hurt done, and to obey his commaundement, did cause to bee proclaimed in the Kings name, that all manner of people should cease off their malice, and not to smite one stroke more, and so ceased the battaille. And vpon the day next after, the King and the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwick and Salisburie, came to London, and were lodged in the bishops pallace of London, where they kept their Whitsonside with great ioye and solemnitie, concluding there to hold a Parliament, the same to begin on the ninth of Iuly next following.

This yere in the moneth of Iune appeared a comet or starre, called *Stella*

*Comets*, betwixt the north and the east, extending his beames towarde the south.

The parliament began at Westminster on the ninth day of July as was appointed, in the which session, the Duke Humfrey of Gloucester, late deceased at Bury in Suffolke, was openly declared to haue bene a true subiect to the King and Realme: besides this it was inacted, that no person should fudge or repozte any point of vnt ruth of the Duke of Poike, the Earle of Salisburie, and Marwike, or of any Knight, Esquire, archer, or other comming in warlike aray against the King at Saint Albones, considering their enterprize was only to see the Kings person in safegarde. And all the blame was put vpon the Duke of Somerset, Thomas Thorpe baron of the Erchequer, and William Ioseph Esquier the Kings colaterall companion, because they vpon malicious purpose kept a certaine letter from the Kings knowledge, and would in no wise suffer it to be deliuered vnto him, notwithstanding the same made to the advancement of some good assured peace, if it had bene thoroughly and aduisedly read, wayed and considered: in which letter they declared that as humble and saythfull subiects, they onely requi red that it would please the King, whose honoz, health, suretie, and prefer uation they chiefly wished, not to giue credite to their aduersaries malici ous suggestions, till their comming to his presence, vnto the which they humble besought him that they mought be admitted, as his faithfull liege people, to shewe the intent and purpose of their comming, which was to none other end, then to enlarge their fidelitie, and allegaunce towarde his most dread person, intending to put themselves with as much diligence, industrie, and trauaile, in all things that might prefer and aduance his ho nor, suretie, and safegard, as any subiect he had liuing. The keeping backe of this letter did minister matter sufficient to the parliament, to colour, and iu stifie so well done all transgressions, committed in the late battaile at Saint Albons.

In this Parliament was the Duke of Poike made Protector of the realme: the Earle of Salisburie was made Lord Chancelor, and had the great seale to him deliuered: And the Earle of Marwike was made Captaine of Calais, and the territories of the same. And thus the rule of the Realme rested in the Duke and Chauncelor, and all the warlike affaires remained principallie in the Earle of Marwike. And so amongst them it was agreed, that King Henrie should still raigne in name and dignitie, but neither indeede nor in authoritie, not minding to destroy him, least they mought sodaynely prouoke the furie of the com mon people against them, because that of the common people hee was for his holynes of life, and aboundaunt Clemencie, much fauoured and highly esteemed.

Now that the Duke of Poike, and his adherentes had wrested the whole rule and government into their hands: all such persons, as ei ther loued or the Quene fauoured, were put beside the priue counsell, and such put in their places as were knowne to fauour the house of Poike.



Also all officers were changed throughout the Realme at the will of the Protector, Chancelor, and Captaine of Calais, so that they constituted and ruled all things at their owne wills: but they were noted with an execrable offence, of diuers spirituall persons, and namely of the Abbot of Westminster, and his Monkes, for that they toke out of the sanctuarie at Westminster Iohn Holland Duke of Excester, being repugnant to the order taken in the last parliament, and conueyed him to the Castle of Pontfracte.

Duke of Excester fet out of Sanctuarie, and sent to Pontfract Castle.

But Henry Bewford newly inuested Duke of Somerset, and Humfrey Duke of Buckingham, who had lost his sonne in the same battaile, and other Lozdes and men of authoritie fauouring the partie of King Henry, and bewapled the vnsecure estate of the same King, because they perceiued wherunto the cloked curtesie, and dissembled manner of the Duke of Yorke did drawe, thought it necessarie to puruey for a remedie ere the mischiefes happened: hereupon they consulted with the Quene, and by her aduise was a great councill called at Greenwich, where the Duke of Yorke was discharged of his Protectorship, and the Earle of Salisburie depprived of his office of Chauncelorschip, which change amongst the nobilitie, caused sodain alterations, and seditious attempts to spring in the communalitie, especiallie in the Citie of London.

Ann. reg. 34.

In the Moneth of May an Italians seruant walking through Cheape of London, with a dagger hanging at his girdle, a Merchants seruant that befoze time had bene in Italie, and there blamed for wearing of the like weapen, chalenged the stranger, howe he durst bee so bolde to beare weapen, considering hee was out of his natue countrey, knowing that in his countrey no stranger was suffered to weare the like: To the which question such answere was made by the stranger, that the Percer toke from him his dagger and brake it vpon his heade, whereupon the stranger complained to the Mayo, who on the morrowe sent for the pongman to the Guild-hall: wherefoze after his aunswere made vnto the complaint, by agrément of a full Court of Aldermen, hee was sent to warde: and after the Court was finished, the Mayo and sherifes walking homeward through Cheape, were there met by such a number of mercers seruantes and other, that they might not passe, for ought that they could speake of doe, till they had deliuered the pongman that befoze was by them sent to prison.

1456.  
Rob. Fabian.

And the same daie in the afternoone sodainely was assembled a multitude of lewde and poore people of the Citie, which without heade or guide ranne vnto certaine Italians houses, and especially to the florentines, Lukelles and Venetians, and there toke and spoiled what they found, and did great hurt in sundye places, but mooste in sower houses standing in Broadstrate warde, wherof thre stood in Sainte Bartholmewes Parish the little, and one in the Parish of Sainte Benets Finke.

The Mayo, Aldermen and worshipfull commoners of the Citie, with

all their diligence resisted them what they coulde, and sent diuers of them to Newgate: and finally, not without shedding of blood, and maiming of diuers Citizens, the rumour was appeased. The young man beginner of all this businesse, tooke Sanctuary at Westminster, and not long after the Duke of Buckingham with other noble men were sent from the King into the Citie, who there charged the Maior by vertue of a commission, that inquirie shoulde bee made of this ryot, and so called an oyer determiner at the Guild-Hall, where sate for Judges the Maior, as the Kinges lieutenant, the Duke of Buckingham on his right hand, the chiefe Justice on the lefte hande, and many other men of name, where while they were empanelling their inquestes, the other commons of the Citie, many of them secretly put them in armour, and went to haue rung the common bell, so to haue raised the whole force of the Citie, and so to haue deliuered such persons as before for the robberie were committed to ward.

But this matter was discretely handled by the counsell and labour of some discrete commoners, which appeased their neighbours in such wise, that all this furie was quenched: but when word was brought to the Duke of Buckingham, that the communalitie were in harness, hee with the other Lords tooke leaue of the Maior and departed, and so ceased the inquirie for that day.

Upon the morrowe the Maior commaunded the common councell with the Wardens of fellowshipes to appeere at the Guild-Hall, where by the Recorder in the Kinges name and the Maiors, was commaunded euerie Warden, that in the afternone eyther of them shoulde assemble his whole fellowship at their common Halles, and there to giue streight commandement, that euerie man see the kings peace kept within the Citie. After which time the Citizens were brought to such quietnesse, that after that day, the enquirie was duellie perused, and those persons for the sayd riot put in execution and hanged at Tyborne, whereof two were Sanctuary men of S. Martins le Graund, the other a Shipman, for robbing of Anthony Mowricine and other Lombardes.

*Ann. reg. 35.*

1457.

The French nation hearing of the ciuill dissention within the Realme of England, thought to worke some damage to the English people, in reuenge of olde injuries, wherupon were two hauiers appointed to inuade the towncs standing vppon the riuaige of the sea. The Captaine of the one floete, was William Lord Pomyars, and of the other sir Pierce Bressly Captaine of Dèpe. These two Captaines taking their course out of the mouth of Seyne, seuered themselves, the one Westwarde, and the other Eastwarde, which was sir Peter Bressly, this lustie Captaine sayling almost all the coastes of Sussex, and Kent, durst not once take lande till he arrived in the Downes, and there hauing perfect notice that a little before the chiefe Rulers of the Towne, were departed from thence to auoyde the plague which then there raigne, entered the Haven with fiftene thousand men, and their Shippes all landing at Sandwich, whereof 7000. entered

*Sandwich  
spoiled by the  
French.*

entred the land, the space of thre mile, and there kept and defended the town, untill their other company might come to them, at what time they killed the Maioz, the bayliffes and the other officers of Sandwich, with diuers other Gentlemen of the countrey, and spoiled and robbed the Towne, leading and carrying away carts of furniture and other riches to their ships, and moreover robbed and spoiled two great galleies of ships laden with marchandise comming to London.

The Lord Pomyars likewise toke his course west ward, and by night byent *The towne of* Foway and other certaine townes in Denonshire, in the moneth of August, *Foway byent.* and with his pillage returned into Britaine.

The Scottes also entred Northumberland, and burned certaine cottages and houses, but hearing that the Duke of Yorke was marching thitherwarde with a great Armie, they with all haste returned into Scotlande.

In this yere was a great fraie in the North countrey betwene the Lord Egremonde, and the Earle of Salisburies sonnes, whereby many were maimed and slaine, but in the ende the Lord Egremonde was taken, who was by the kings counsell found in great default, and therefore condemned in great summes of money, to be paid to the Earle of Salisbury, and in the meane time committed to Petogate. *Rob. Fabian.*

Not long after this sir Thomas Percie Lord Egremount, and sir Richard Percie his brother being prisoners in Petogate, condemned in a great summe to the Earle of Salisbury as is aforesaid, brake out of prison by night, and went to the king, the other prisoners toke the leades of the gate and defended it a long while against the sherifes and all their officers, insomuch that they were forced to call more ayde of the Citizens, whereby they lastly subdued them. *Register of*

The Quene secretly thinking the ouerthrowe of Richard Duke of Yorke, and his faction, perceiuing that she could attempt nothing against him nere to the Citie of London, because the Duke was had more in estimation among the Citizens, then ey eyther the King or Quene, and therefore she caused the King to make a progresse into Warwickshire, for his health and recreation, and so with hauking and hunting came to the Citie of Couentrie, where diuers waies were studied to compasse the Quenes desire: for the accomplishing whereof, the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Salisbury, and Warwick, were sent for to Couentrie by the kings letters, vnder his private seale, to which place the saide Lords resorted: but being admonished by secret friendes, what was intended against them, they auoyded that daunger, and so not saying farewell, they departed from the Court, the Duke vnto Wigmore in the marches of Wales, the Earle of Salisbury to his Castle of Wyddleham in the North countrey, and the Earle of Warwick sayed to the Towne of Calais, thus were they separated in bodies, but in mindes and heartes knit together in one, hauing alwaies messengers with letters walking betwixt them, to communicate their deuises. *An. reg. 36.*

Robert Ponings sometime swordbearer and caruer to Iacke Cade proclaimed a traitor.

In this meane time many were apprehended for raising of seditious stirre among other one Robert Ponings late of Southwarke, in the countie of Surrey Esquire, which was sometime a companion and adherent, to the most horrible wicked and heynous traytor and tyrant Iohn Cade in time of his insurrection, being then his caruer, and sword bearer, what time he did his robbery and tyranny in the citie of London, and in many other places, the which Robert stirred the greater part of such as were adherents, &c. For all which doings being pardoned, he hath still persevered in his wickednes, and of late, to wit in the 31. the 32. &c. of our raigne hath assembled numbers of men at Royst Cray, and Frammingham in Kent, &c. Wherefore we proclaime him to be a traytor, and to be apprehended, &c.

Reginald Pecock Bishop of Chichester.

Maister Reginald Pecocke Bishop of Chichester, a secular Doctour of Divinitie, that had laboured many yeeres to translate the holy Scriptures into English, was accused to have passed the boundes of Divinitie and of Christian belöse in certaine Articles, of the which hee was convicted before the Archbishoppe of Canterburie, and other Bishops and Clerkes, and after bitterly abused, revoked, and renounced those Articles openly at Pauls Crosse in his Mother tong, on the fourth day of December, as followeth, In the name of the Trinitie, Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, I Reynold Pecocke Bishop of Chichester unworthy, of my owne power and will without any manner coercion or dread, confesse and knowledg that I here before this time presuming of mine naturall witte, and preferring my iudgment and naturall reason before the new and the olde Testament, and the authoritie and determination of our mother holy Church, have helde, witten and taught otherwise than the holy Romane and Univerfall Church teacheth, preacheth, or obserueth. And one is against the true Catholicke and Apostles faith, I have witten, taught and published many and diuers perillous doctrines, booke, workes and wyltings, containing Heresies and errors, contrary to the faith Catholicke, and determination of holy Church: and especially these Heresies and errors following, that is to say:

*In primis quod non est de necessitate fidei credere quod dominus noster Iesus Christus post mortem descendit ad inferos.*

*Item, quod non est de necessitate salutis credere sanctorum communionem.*

*Item, quod Ecclesia uniuersalis potest errare in hijs que sunt fidei.*

*Item, quod non est de necessitate salutis credere & tenere illud quod concilium generale & uniuersalis Ecclesia statuit, approbat, seu determinat, in fauorem fidei, & ad salutem animarum, est ab uniuersis Christi fidelibus approbandum & tenendum.*

Wherefore I miserable sinner which here before long time haue walked in darkness, and now by the merce and infinite goodnes of God reduced into the right way, and light of truth, and considering my selfe grieuouly haue sinned and wickedly haue informed and infected the people of God, retorne and come againe to the vnitie of our Mother holy Church, and all heresies and errors witten and contained in my sayde booke, workes and wyltings, here solemnly and openly reuoke and renounce, which heresies and errors,

and



and all other spices of heresies I haue befoze this time befoze the most Reuerend father in God, and my good Lord of Canterbury in diuers and latosull for me subiectally abiured, submitting my selfe, being then and also now at this time a very contrite and penitēt sinner, to the cozection of the Church and of my said Lord of Canterbury.

And ouer this, exhorting and requiring in the name and vertue of almighty God, in the saluation of your soules and mind, that no man hereafter giue faith and credence to my said pernicious doctrines, heresies and errors, neyther my said Bookes keepe, hold, or read in any wise, but that they all such Bookes, woorkes, and writings suspect of heresies, deliuer in all goodly haste vnto my said Lord of Canterbury, or to his Commissioners and Deputes, in eschewing of many inconueniencies and great perils of soules, the which else might be cause of the contrary. And ouer this declaration of my conuersation and repentance, I here openly assent, that my said Bookes, woorkes, and writings, for declaration and cause aboue rehearsed, be deputed vnto the fire, and openly byent in ensample and terror of all other, &c. After this, he was depriued of his Bishopricke, hauing a certaine pension assigned vnto him for to liue on in an Abbey, and sone after he died. His Bookes were intituled:

- 1 Of Christian Religion, and a Booke pertayning thereunto.
- 2 Of Matrimonie.
- 3 Iust aprising of holy Scripture, deuided into three parts.
- 4 The Donet of Christian Religion.
- 5 The follower of the Donet.
- 6 The Booke of Faith.
- 7 The Booke filling the foure Tables.
- 8 The Booke of Worshipping.
- 9 The Prouoker of Christian men.
- 10 The Booke of Councell.

In the moneth of January died the Earle of Deuonshire, in the Abbey of Abingdon, poysoned (as men said) being there at that time with Quene Margaret, King Henry and his adherents perceiuing that the Duke of Poike lay still and stirred not, returned to London, and there called a great council, openly declaring that the French and Scots, emboldened by the still discord within the Realme, would attempt to annoy the same, as of late they shewed apparant tokens of their malicious meaning, and would not cease vpon occasions to doe further displeasures, till they perceiued a perfect concord, and vnsained amity to be concluded betwene him and his friends, and those of the contrary part and confederacie. And to the intent, he would be the author of peace, he promised so to entertaine the Duke of Poike, and his followers, that all old grudges being not onely inwardly forgotten but outwardly forgiven, should be the cause of perpetuall loue and assured amitie. This deuise was of all men present well taken, and aduinged for the best. Whereupon diuers grace persons were sent to the Duke of Poike, and all other the great estates of the Realme, which since the battell of St. Albons neuer met

King Henry a  
louer and see-  
ker of peace at  
the hands of  
his rebels.

or communed together, commaunding them for great causes to resort to the Kings pallace without delay. At whose commaundement came to London, the Earle of Salisbury on the 15. of January with 500. men, and was lodged in his owne house called the Herber: and on the 26. day came Richard Duke of Yorke with 400. men, and was lodged at Wainards Castell being his owne house. Then came the Dukes of Gloucester and Somerset with 800. men, and were lodged without Temple barre, and the Earle of Northumberland, the Lord Egremond, and the Lord Clifford came with 1500. men, and lodged without the Citie. And on the 14. of February came the Earle of Warwick from Calais with 600. men, all in red iackets, embzodered with ragged faues before and behinde, and was lodged at the grey friers. And on the 17. of March, the King and Queen with a great retinue came to London, and were lodged in the Bishops pallace. And because no notorious attempt or bickering should be begunne betwene any of the parties, or their retinues, the Mayor of London, Godfrey Boloigne, and Aldermen of the City kept great watch, as well by day as by night, riding about the Citie, by Holborne and Fleetstreet with 2000. men well armed, to see good order & peace to be kept. The Lords which lay within the Citie held a daily counsell at the blacke friers. The other part sojourning without the walles, assembled likewise in the chapter house at Westminster.

At the length by the diligent tranalle, good exhortation, and prudent advice of the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and other learned and vertuous Prelates, both partes were perswaded to come to a communication, where after long debating of their grienances, they were accorded, promising to forget all olde rancours, and to be friends each to other, and obedient to the king, whereof writings were made and sealed. The principall points whereof, the king being reputed as whole arbitrator, consisted herein.

First, that at the costes and expences of the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwick and Salisbury five and forty pounds of yerly rent should be given vnto the Monastery of Saint Albons, to be employed for Edmond late Duke of Somerset, Henry late Earle of Northumberland, and Thomas Clifford, which being slaine in the late battell of Saint Albons, were buried in the Abbey Church. The same Duke of Somerset, Earle of Northumberland and Lord Clifford, were declared for true liege men to the king at the day of their deaths, as wel as the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwick and of Salisbury. More, the Duke of Yorke should giue to Elianor Dutcheffe of Somerset, and to Henry Duke of Somerset her some, the summe of five thousand markes, &c. The Earle of Warwick should giue vnto the Lord Clifford the summe of one thousand markes: diuers other atwardes betwixt parties were there made, which I am forced to overpasse for breuities sake.

For the outward publishing of this topfull agreement, there was by our Lady day in Lent, or five and twentieth day of March, a solemne procession celebrated within the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paule in the Citie

Citie of London: at the which the King was present in his habite royall, with the Crowne on his head, befoze him went hand in hand, the Duke of Somerset, the Earle of Salisbury, the Duke of Excester, and the Earle of Warwick, and so one of the one faction, and another of the other. And be-  
hinde the King, the Duke of York, and the Quene with great familiarity to all mens sights, whatsoeuer was meant to the contrary, which appeared after ward.

The thirtenth day of Aprill there was a great fray in fletestrate, be-  
twene men of court and the inhabitants of the same strate, in which fray the Quenes Atturney was slaine. For this sake, the king committed the principall gouernours of Furniuals, Cliffords, and Barnardes Inne to pris-  
son in the Castell of Hertford, and William Tailor Alderman of that warde, with many other, were sent to Windsor Castell the senenth of May.

The Quenes  
Atturney slaine.

On Thursday in Whitson weeke, the Duke of Somerset with Anthonie  
Riuers and other foure, kept iusts befoze the Quene in the Tower of Lon-  
don, against thre Esquiers of the Quenes: an in like manner at Greenwich  
the Sunday following.

Justing in the  
tower of Lon-  
don.

On the Trinitie Sunday or Monday following, certaine shippes apper-  
taining to the Earle of Warwick, met with a flete of Spaniards, and af-  
ter long and cruell fight toke fire of their ships laden with yron & other mer-  
chandise, drowned, and chased to the number of 26. not without shedding of  
blood on both parts, for of the Englishmen were slaine 100. and many moze  
wounded and soze hurt.

The Earle of  
Warwicke  
tooke Spanish  
ships.

The King and Quen being at Westminster, the ninth day of Nouember  
fell a great debate, betwene Richard Earle of Warwick, and them of the  
kings house, insomuch, that they would haue slaine the Earle: and vnnethe  
he escaped to his barge, and went after to Calais, for he was not long be-  
foze made Captaine thereof by authozity of the Parliament. Some after, the  
young Duke of Somerset by stirring of them that hated the Earle of War-  
wicke, was made Captaine of Calais, and a priuy seale directed to the Earle  
for to discharge him of the Captaine ship: but the Earle, forasmuch as he was  
made by Parliament, he would not obey the priue seale, but continued forth  
in the said office.

An. reg. 37.

James Earle of Wiltshire was made treasurer of England after Walter  
Hungerford knight.

The noble Science of Printing was about this time found in Germany at  
Magunce by one Lo. Cuthemburgus a knight: one Conradus an Almain brought  
it into Rome: William Caxton of London Mercer brought it into Eng-  
land about the yere 1471. and first practised the same in the Abbey of S. Peter  
at Westminster: after which time, it was likewise practised in the Abbeies of  
S. August. at Canterbury, S. Albons, and other Monasteries of England.

1459.  
Printing first  
invented.

The Earle of Warwick Admirall, Captaine of Calais with a fourtene  
well appointed ships, sailed abroad to scower the seas, and by chance met  
with five great ships, whereof thre were Carickes of Gene, and the other  
two were of Spaine, bigger in height and length, than the Carickes. The

Carle

oz communed together, commaunding them soz great causes to resozt to the Kings pallace without delay. At whose commaundement came to London, the Earle of Salisburie on the 15. of January with 500. men, and was lodged in his owne house called the Herber: and on the 26. day came Richard Duke of Yorke with 400. men, and was lodged at Baimards Castell being his owne house. Then came the Dukes of Grecester and Somerset with 800. men, and were lodged without Temple barre, and the Earle of Northumberland, the Lord Egremond, and the Lord Clifford came with 1500. men, and lodged without the Citie. And on the 14. of February came the Earle of Marwicke from Caleis with 600. men, all in red tackets, embrodered with ragged staures befoze and behinde, and was lodged at the grey friers. And on the 17. of March, the King and Quēn with a great retinue came to London, and were lodged in the Bishops pallace. And because no notozious attempt oz bickering should be begunne betwēne any of the parties, oz their retinues, the Maior of London, Godfrey Boloigne, and Aldermen of the City kept great watch, as well by day as by night, riding about the Citie, by Holbozne and Fleetstreet with 2000. men well armed, to see good order & peace to be kept. The Lords which lay within the Citie held a daily councill at the blacke friers. The other part sojourning without the walles, assembled likewise in the chapter house at Westminster.

At the length by the diligent traualle, god exhortation, and prudent aduice of the Archbishops of Canterbury, and other learned and vertuous Prelates, both partes were perswaded to come to a communication, where after long debating of their grienances, they were accozded, promising to forget all olde rancours, and to be friendes each to other, and obedient to the king, whereof writings were made and sealed. The princypall points whereof, the king being reputed as whole arbitratoz consisted herein.

First, that at the costes and expences of the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Marwicke and Salisburie five and forty pounds of yearly rent should be giuen vnto the Monastery of Saint Albons, to be employed soz Edmond late Duke of Somerset, Henry late Earle of Northumberland, and Thomas Clifford, which being slaine in the late battell of Saint Albons, were buried in the Abbey Church. The same Duke of Somerset, Earle of Northumberland and Lord Clifford, were declared soz true liege men to the king at the day of their deaths, as well as the Duke of York, the Earles of Marwicke and of Salisburie. More, the Duke of Yorke should giue to Elianor Dutchesse of Somerset, and to Henry Duke of Somerset her sonne, the summe of five thousand markes, &c. The Earle of Marwicke should giue vnto the Lord Clifford the summe of one thousand markes: diuers other awawdes betwixt parties were there made, which I am forced to ouerpasse soz breuities sake.

For the outward publishing of this topfull agrément, there was by on our Lady day in Lent, oz five and twentieth day of March, a solemne procession celebrated within the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paule in the Citie



Citie of London: at the which the King was present in his habite royall, with the Crowne on his head, befoze him went hand in hand, the Duke of Somerset, the Earle of Salisbury, the Duke of Excester, and the Earle of Warwicke, and so one of the one faction, and another of the other. And be-  
hinde the King, the Duke of York, and the Quene with great familiari, to  
all mens sights, whatsoever was meant to the contrary, which appeared  
afterward.

The thirteenth day of Aprill there was a great fray in Flētestrēte, be-  
twēne men of court and the inhabitants of the same strēte, in which fray  
the Quenes Atturney was slaine. For this sacte, the king committed the  
principall governours of Iurnivals, Cliffozds, and Barnardes Inne to pri-  
son in the Castell of Hertford, and William Tailor Alderman of that warde,  
with many other, were sent to Windsoze Castell the seventh of May.

The Quenes  
Atturney slaine.

On Thursday in Whitson wēke, the Duke of Somerset with Anthonie  
Rivers and other foure, kept iustices befoze the Quene in the Tower of Lon-  
don, against thē Esquiers of the Quenes: an in like manner at Grēnwich  
the Sunday folowing.

Justing in the  
tower of Lon-  
don.

On the Trinitie Sunday or Monday following, certaine shippes apper-  
taining to the Earle of Warwicke, met with a flete of Spaniards, and af-  
ter long and cruell fight toke fire of their Shps laden with pyon & other mer-  
chandise, drowned, and chased to the number of 26. not without shedding of  
blood on both parts, for of the Englishmen were slaine 100. and many moze  
wounded and soze hurt.

The Earle of  
Warwicke  
tooke Spanissh  
shys.

The King and Quen being at Westminster, the ninth day of November  
fell a great debate, betwēne Richard Earle of Warwicke, and them of the  
kings house, insomuch, that they would haue slaine the Earle: and unnerth  
he elcaped to his barge, and went after to Caleis, for he was not long be-  
foze made Captaine thereof by authozity of the Parliament. Some after, the  
young Duke of Somerset by stirring of them that hated the Earle of War-  
wicke, was made Captaine of Caleis, and a priuy seale directed to the Earle  
for to discharge him of the Captaine ship: but the Earle, forasmuch as he was  
made by Parliament, he would not obey the priuy seale, but continued sozth  
in the said office.

An. reg. 37.

James Earle of Wiltshire was made treasurer of England after Walker  
Hungerford knight.

The noble Science of Printing was about this time found in Germany at  
Magunce by one Lo. Cuthemburgus a knight: one Conradus an Almain brought  
it into Rome: William Caxton of London Percer brought it into Eng-  
land about the yere 1471. and first practised the same in the Abbey of S. Peter  
at Westminster: after which time, it was likewise practised in the Abbeies of  
S. August. at Canterbury, S. Albons, and other Monasteries of England.

1459.  
Printing first  
invented.

The Earle of Warwicke Admirall, Captaine of Caleis with a fourtēne  
well appointed ships, sailed abroad to scower the seas, and by chance met  
with five great ships, whereof thē were Carickes of Gene, and the other  
two were of Spaine, bigger in height and length, than the Carickes. The  
Earle

Carle though he were vnneth able to deale against them, yet he valiantly encountering them, there was a soze battayle fought betwixt them, soz it lasted almost the space of two daies, yet in the ende the English had the victorie: so that two of those shippes being forced to saue themselves by flight, the other thre were taken, which the Carle brought to Caleis, with all the merchandise abourd in the same, the value whereof in wine, oyle, ware, yron, cloth of golde, and other riches was esteemed to the value of tennethousand pound and better, by reason whereof, those wares were solde wonderfull cheape: there were taken a greate number of prisoners, beside a thousand persons slaine in the fight, and of the Carles part about the number of fiftie.

Now in this meane time, after that the Carle of Marwicke was departed the Realme and gone ouer to Caleis, the Duke of Poike, and the Carle of Salisbury falling to consultation, it was agreed betwixt them, that the said Carle of Salisbury with a warlike company should march toward the King, and signifie to him by way of complaint, both the manifest iniurie done to his sonne, and also the vncourteous breach of the swozne amittie and late agreement, in which sute if he prevailed, he should not then let passe the occasion giuen soz reuenge of displeasures to him done, both by the Quene, and her counsell. The Carle of Salisbury therfore removed from Spoleham Castle, with foure or fise thousand men, taking his way through Lancashire towards London.

In the meane season the Quene assisted by the Dukes of Somerset and Buckingham, hauing diligent eie to al her busines, imagined that the Carle of Marwicke had kindled this fire, to the intent, to set the Crowne on the Duke of Poikes head: wherefore she appointed James Twiche Lord Audley (because his power lay in those parts) to raise an host of men, and to giue battaile to the same Carle, if he saw cause, & place inconuenient: she allied vnto her all the knights and Esquiers of Cheshire soz to haue their fauour: she held open household among them, and made her sonne the Prince, to giue a liberie of Swans to all the gentlemen of that countrey, and to many other through the land, trusting through their strength to make her sonne King, making priuie meanes to some of the Loyds to moue the King to resigne the Crowne to her sonne, but she could not bring it to passe.

Owen Tew:  
dar.

King Henry gaue to Owen Tewdar 100.l. the yere out of his Manor of Folkestone, Walton, Banestede with the appurtenances in the shire of Kent, &c.

An. reg. 38.

The 21. day of September Richard Carle of Salisbury hauing gathered a well appointed army, toke his way toward Lutetia, where at that time the Duke of Poike lay, to the intent that they both together would haue ridden to the King to Colshull in Staffordshire, to haue excused them of certaine articles laide against them by malice of their enemies, as they saide. Whereupon those that were about the King, and also the Quene, who lay at Eglishall, moued him to assemble a great power, whereof James Twiche Lord Audley was made chiefe, and had the leading of them into the fieldes called

called Blozeheath néere unto Ducklestone, by the which the said Duke and the Earle must néeds passe, and there both hostes met and fought a moztall battell, wherein the Lord Audley was slaine with Hugh Venables of Binsterton, Thomas Dutton of Dutton, Richard Molineux of Selson, William Trowbecke, John Legh del Bothes, John Donne of Wikington, and John Egerton of Egerton Knights, Richard Donne of Croton, John Dures Esquires, and many other, in all to the number of 2400. persons, but the greatest losse fell to the of Cheshire, that had received the Princes livery of Swans: but there were taken prisoners the Earle of Salisburie two sonnes Thomas and John, and sir Thomas Harington, which were sent to Chester, but sone after deliuered. After this discomfiture at Blozeheath, the Duke of York perceiuing his destruction to be intended, and his priuie intents thzoughly disclosed to the King and Quene, he thought good no longer to linger his busines, but with all diligence to display and auance his banner, and therefore sending for the Earle of Salisburie, after long communication, they determined to raise an armie, and by fine force epther to die, or to winne their purpose. Hereupon were men forthwith assembled, both out of the North, & of the Welch, which all came to the Marches of Wales, determining there to abide their enemies, or to meet them as occasion serued. There came to him from Caleis the Earle of Marwicke, byzinging with him a great number of expert men in martiall feates, wheresof two were Captaines of great experience, the one called Andrew Trollope, the other John Blunt.

Blozeheath  
a. d.Richard Mo-  
lincux.

The King hauing aduertisement of the Dukes doing, sent forth Commissioners to leuie a power in all parts of the Realme, where he thought to haue any faithfull saunours, by reason whereof a great number of men were assembled, then the king accompanied with the Dukes of Somerset and Gloucester, and other that saunored the house of Lancaster, marching southward came vnto Worcester, where he stayed for a time, and sent to his aduersaries a messenger, to wit, the Bishoppe of Salisbury Richard Beauchampe, to offer vnto them a free generall pardon for all trespasses whatsoever, if they would giue ouer their enterprise and become true and obedient subiectes. To whom they answered by the mouth of the Earle of Marwicke, in thre pointes: first, that as concerning the pardon, they durst not trust vnto it. Secondly, that notwithstanding such pardons, those that were about the King were vntruly, and cared not to breake the Kings commaundement. Thirdly, although cuerie Lord, being called to the Parliament, ought freely to come, and safely to depart, yet the said Earle of Marwicke, at a certaine counsell holden at Westminster, was in danger of death, if the Lord above had not the better prouided for his escape, for the which cause he with the kings pardon may be likened to a buckler of glasse, or a staffe of reede, of the which there is no trust: we dare not commit our selues vnto the defence of any such pardons.

The King receiuing such an answer was nothing contented therewith, and therefore commaunded his standartes to be aduanced: but before he came néere to the place where the said Lords were incamped, they wrote a letter

letter to the King, whereof the tenour was thus.

Most Christian King, right high and mightie Prince, and our most dread soueraigne Lord, after as humble recommendations to your high excellency as will suffice. Our true intent to the prosperitie and augmentation of your high estate, and to the Commonweale of this Realme, hath bene shewed vnto your highnes in such wyting as we make thereof. And ouer that an Indenture signed by our hands in the Church Cathedraall of Worcester, comprehending the pwise of the trueth and dutie that (God knoweth) we beare to your said estate, and to the preheminnence and prerogatiue thereof, we sent vnto your god grace by the Bypo of the said Church, and diuers other Doctoz, and among other, by Maister William Linwoode Doctoꝝ of diuinitie, which ministred vnto vs federally the blessed sacrament of the bodie of Iesus, whereupon we and enery of vs deposed foꝝ our said trueth and duety, accordyng to the tenour of the said Indenture. And sith that time we haue certified at large in wyting and by mouth, by Cartar King of armes, not onely to your said highnesse, but also to the god and woꝛthie Lordes being about your most noble pꝛesence, the largenesse of our saide trueth and duety, and our intent and disposition, to searce all the motions that might serue conueniently to the affirmation thereof, and to our perfect sureties from such inconuenient and unreuerent leopardies as we haue bene put in diuers times here before. Whereof we haue cause to make, and ought to make such exclamacion and complaint, not without reason, as is not vnknowne to the said woꝛthie Lordes, and to all this land, and will offer vs to your high pꝛesence, to the same intent, if we might so doe without said surety, which onely causeth vs to keepe such fellowship as we doe in our full manner. And hereto we haue foꝝborne and auoided all thinges that might serue to the effusion of Christian blood, of the dread that we haue of God, and of your royall Maiestie: and haue also eschewed to approach your said most noble pꝛesence, foꝝ the humble obessance and reuerence wherein we haue, and during our life will haue the same. And yet neuerthelesse we beare, that we be proclaimed and diffamed in our name vnrightfully, vnlawfullie, and sauing your high reuerence, vntruely, and otherwise (as God knoweth) than we haue giuen cause, knowing certainly that the blessed and noble intent of your said god grace, and the righteousness thereof is, to take, repute and accept your true and lawfull subiectes, and that it accoꝛdeth neither with your saide intent, noꝝ with your will oꝝ pleasure, that we should be otherwise taken oꝝ reputed. And ouer that, our Lordships and tenaunts bene of high violence robbed and spoyled, against your peace and lawes, and all righteousness. We therefore, as we suffice, beseech your said god grace to take, repute, and receiue thereunto our said trueth and intent, which to God is knowen, as we shew it by the said tenour of the same Indenture, and not apply your said blessednes ne the great righteousness and equitie wherewith God hath euer indued your high nobilitie, to the importune impatience and violence of such persons as intend of extrême malice to pꝛocæde vnder the shadow of your high might

Doctoꝝ Linwoode wrote the gloꝛe vpon the constitutions of the Church of England.



might and presence, to our destruction, for such inordinate couetise (whereof God is not pleased) as they haue to our lands, offices, and goods, not letting of sparing thereto, to put such things in all lamentable and to sorrowfull jeopardy, as might in all wise take effect, by the mystery of Gods wil & power, nor not hauing regard to the effusion of Christian blood, ne any tendernes to the Noble blood of this land, such as serue to the tuition and defence thereof, ne not waighing the losse of your true liege men of your said Realme, that God defend, which knoweth our intent, and that wee haue auoyded there-from, as farre as we may with our sureties, not of any deead that we haue of the said persons, but onely of the deead of God and of your said highnes, and wil not vse our said defence vntill the time that we be prouoked of necessity, whereof we call Heauen and Earth vnto witness and record, and therein beseech God to be our Iudge, and to deliuer vs according to our said intent, and our said truth and duety to your saide highnesse, and to the said Commonweale. Most Christian King, right high and mighty Prince, and most deead soveraigne Lord, we beseech our blessed Lord to preserve your honour and estate in toy and felicity. Witnessen at Ludlow the tenth day of October: R. Yorke, R. Warwicke, R. Salisbury.

After their exultation contained in this letter sent to the King, they with-drew them, and went into diuers parts beyond the seas, for the more surety of their persons. The Duke of Yorke went into Ireland, where he was honourably receiued: the Earle of March, Salisbury, and Warwicke, not without great jeopardy and perill, as well on the land as on the sea, went to Caleis, and abode there.

Then was a Parliament holden at Coventry, wherein were attaint of treason, Richard Duke of Yorke, Edward Earle of March his son and heire, Richard Earle of Warwicke, Edmond Earle of Rutland, Richard Earle of Salisbury, John Lord Clifford, Lord Clinton, sir Thomas Harington, sir John Wenlocke, Thomas Neuill, John Neuill sonnes of the Earle of Salisbury, James Pickering, John Conyers, Thomas Par, William Oldhall, and Henry Ratford, Knights, John Bowler, Thomas Cooke, John Clay, Richard Gyton, Robert Browne, Edward Bowler, Thomas Vaughan, John Roger, Richard Grey, Walter Deuereux, Walter Hopton, Roger Kynderton, William Bowes, Foulke Stafford, the Lord Powis, and Alice Countesse of Salisbury, their goods and possessions escheated, and their heires disherited vnto the ninth degree, their tenants spoiled of their goods, beheaded and slaine, the towne of Ludlow longing to the Duke of Yorke, was robbed to the bare walles, and the Dutches of Yorke spoiled of her goods.

In this moneth of October, Henry the young Duke of Somerset, Henry Lord Roos, and Lord Audley, with men of armes sailed towards Caleis, to the intent the Duke should haue bene Captaine there: but when he came to land, they of Caleis would haue taken him, so that he hardly escaped to the Castell of Swines: his souldiers were stripped out of their harnesse, and let go. The Lord Audley was taken into Caleis, and the Lord Roos

Parliament at  
Coventry.  
D. of Yorke  
and other at-  
taint.

Ludlow  
spoiled.

Duke of So-  
merfet fled to  
Swines.  
The Lord  
Audley taken  
into Caleis.

The L. Roos  
fled into Flan-  
ders.

The L. Rivers  
and the Lord  
Woodville by  
force carried  
from Sand-  
wich.

1460.

Sir Baud-  
win Fulford  
his enterprise,  
The Duke of  
Excester sent  
to the seas.

Captaine  
Mounifort  
slaine.

Articles sent  
from the Duke  
of York, & the  
Carles, to the  
Archbishop of  
Canterbury,  
and to the com-  
mons.

Red into Flaunders, and after returned into England.

Not long after, Richard Lord Rivers was sent to Sandwich, to keepe the towne and certain great ships which lay there at anker: but when the Earle of Marwicke saw time convenient, he sent some of his men to Sandwich by night, the which took the Lord Rivers and Anthonie Woodville his sonne in their beds, and led them over to Calais, with all the great ships save one called Grace de Dieu, the which might not be had away because she was broke in the bottome. Sir Baudwine Fulford undertooke on paine of losing his head, that he would destroy the Earle of Marwicke, but when he had spent the King a thousand markes in money, he returned again. Then was the Duke of Excester Admirall sent to the sea with a great paye for to distresse the Earle of Marwicke and his paye, he sailing from Sandwich to Dartmouth, for lacke of victuals and many his souldiers forsooke him there. And betwixt Sandwich and Dartmouth he met the Earle of Marwicke coming out of Ireland that had bene there for to speake with the Duke of Yorke, and brought with him his mother that was fled thither for bread, and led her to Calais: but the Duke of Excester durst not set upon the earle of Marwicke, nor the Earle would not distresse him, because he was admirall, and of the Kings blood, but let him passe by.

In the moneth of June 500 men were sent to conduct the Duke of Somerset from Gwines into England, but abiding the wind in the Port of Sandwich, the Earle of Marwicks men spoiled them of their harnes, killed their Captaine Mounifort and many other. The Carles at Calais sent to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and at large to the commons of England certain articles in writing, beginning thus: Worshipful firs, we, the Duke of Yorke, the Carles of March, Warwik, and Salisbury, sewed, and offered to have come unto the King our soueraigne Lords most noble presence, to haue declared there afoze him for our duety to God and to his highnes, and to the prosperity and welfare of his noble estate, and to the common weale of all his land as true liege men, the matters following, that is to say.

Inprimis, the great oppzession, extortion, robbery, murder, and other violence done to Gods Church and to his ministers thereof, against Gods and mans law.

2 Item, the pouerty and misery that to our great heavinesse our soueraigne Lord standeth in, not having any linclode of the crowne of England, whereof he may keepe his honourable household, which causeth the spoiling of his said liege men by the takers of his said household, which linclode is in their hands that haue bene destroyers of his said estate, and of the said common weale.

3 Item, how his lawes be partially and unrightfully guided, and that by them that should most loue and tender his said lawes, the said oppzession and extortion is most fauoured and supported, and generally, that all righte-ousnes and Justice is eriled out of the said land, and that no man dareth to offend against the said lawes.

4 Item, that it will please his said god grace to line upon his owne linclode,

liuelode, wherupon his noble progenitoꝝ haue in daies heretofore liued as honorably and as woꝛthily as any Chꝛistian Princes, and not to suffer the destructione of the said land, and of his true subiects; to liue thereupon, and therefore to lacke the sustenances that should be belonging to his said estate, and finde his household vpon his poꝛe commons, without payment, which neither accordeth with Gods noꝛ mans law.

5 Item, how oft the said commons haue bene greatly and marnellously charged with taxes and tallages, to their great empouerishing, wherof little god hath epyther growen to the King oꝛ to the said land, and of the most substance thereof the king hath left to his part not halfe so much: and other Lords and persons, enemies to the said commonweale, haue to their owne vse, suffering all the olde possessions that the King had in France and Poꝛmandy, Anioꝛ and Paine, Gascoign & Guien, won and gotten by his father of most noble memoꝛy, and other his noble progenitoꝝ, to be shamefully lost oꝛ sold.

6 Item, how they cannot cease therewith, but now begin a new charge of imposition and tallages vpon the said people, which neuer afoꝛe was sen, that is to say, euery towne ship to find men foꝛ the Kings guard, taking ensample therof, of our enemies and aduersaries of France, which imposition and tallage, if it be continued to beire, beires, and successoꝝ, will be the heauiest charge & woꝛst ensample that euer grew in England, and the foresaid subiects, and the said beires and successoꝝ, in such bondage as their ancestoꝝ were neuer charged with.

7 Item, where the king hath now no moꝛe liuelode out of his Realme of England, but only the land of Ireland, and the towne of Caleis, and that no King Chꝛistened hath such a land and a towne without his Realme, diuers Lords haue caused his highnes to write letters vnder his pryue seale, vnto his Irish enemies, which neuer king of England did heretofore, whereby they may haue comfort to enter into the conquest of the said land, which letters the same Irish enemies sent vnto me the said Duke of Poꝛke, and marueled greatly that any such letters should be to them sent, speaking therein great shame and villany of the said Realme.

8 Item, in like wise the King by excitation and labour of the same Lords, wrote other letters to his enemies and aduersaries in other lands, that in no wise they should shew any fauour oꝛ good will to the towne of Caleis, whereby they had comfort enough to proceed to the winning thereof. Considered also that it is ordained by the labour of the said lords, that no where victuall noꝛ other thing of refreshing oꝛ defence should come out of England, to the succour oꝛ reliefe of the said town, to the intent that they would haue it lost, as it may openly appeare.

9 Item, it is deemed and ought greatly to be deemed, that after that the same Lords would put the same rule of England, if they might haue their purpose and intent, into the handes and gouernance of the saide enemies.

10 Item, how continually with the piteous, shamefull, & sorrowful mur-

ther to all England, of that noble, worthy, and Christian Prince Humfrey Duke of Gloucester the kings true vncle, at Wury, it hath ben labored, studied, and conspired, to haue destroyed and murdered the said Duke of Yorke and the issue that it pleased God to send me of the royall blood, and also of vs the said Charles of Warwicke and Salisbury, for none other cause but for the true heart that God knoweth we euer haue borne, and beare to the profit of the kings estate, to the commonweale of the same Realme, and defence thereof.

11 Item, how the Charles of Shrewsbury and Wilshire, and the Lord Beaumont, our mortal and extreme enemies, now, and of long time past, hauing the guiding about the most noble person of our said soueraign Lord, whose highnes they haue restrained and kept from the liberty and freedom that belongeth to his said estate, and the supporters and fauourers of all the premises, would not suffer the kings said good grace to receiue and accept vs, as he would haue done, if he might haue had his owne wil, into his said presence, breadding the charge that would haue bene laid vpon them, of the misery, destruction, and wretchednesse of the said Realme, wherof they be causes, and not the King, which is himsele as noble, as vertuous, as righteous and blessed of disposition, as any Prince earthly.

12 Item, the Charles of Wilshire and Shrewsbury, and the Lord Beaumont, not satisfied nor content with the kings possessions and his goods, stirred and excited his said highnes to hold his Parliament at Couentry, where an act is made by their prouocation and labour, against vs the said Duke of Yorke, my sonnes March and Rutland, and the Charles of Warwicke and Salisbury, and the sonnes of the said Charles of Salisbury, and many other Knights and Esquires, of diuers matters fallshly and vntruly imagined, as they will answer afoze Almighty God in the day of doome, the which the said Charles of Shrewsbury and Wilshire, and the Lord Beaumont prouoked to be made, to the intent of our destruction and of our issue, and that they might haue our liuelode and goods, as they haue openly robbed and dispoiled all our places and our tenements, and many other true men, and now proceed to hanging and drawing of men by tyranny, and will therein shew the largenes of their violence and malice as vengeably as they can, if no remedy be prouided at the kings highnesse, whose blessednes is neither assenting nor knowing thereof.

We therefore seeing all the said mischieses, hearing also that the French king maketh in his land great assembly of his people, which is greatly to be dread for many causes, purpose yet againe with Gods grace to offer vs to come again to the said presence of our said soueraigne Lord, to open and declare there vnto him the mischieses aboue declared, and in the name of the land to sue, in as reuerent and lowly wise as we can, to his said good grace, to haue pisse and compassion vpon his said true subiectes, and not to suffer the same mischieses to raigne vpon them. Requiring you in Gods behalfe, and praying you in your owne, therein to assist vs, doing alway the duety of liege men in our persons to our said soueraigne Lord, to his estate, prerogative,



gatiue, and preheminence, and to the surety of his most noble person, wherunto we haue euer bene, and will be as true as any of his subiectes alīue, whereof we call God, our Lady Saint Mary, and all the Saints in heauen vnto witnes and record.

In the meane tīne, the Earle of Wiltshire treasurer of England, the Lord Scales, and the Lord Hungerford went to Newbery, which longed to the Duke of York, and there made inquisition of all them that in any wise had fauoured the said Duke, whereof some were found guilty, and were drawen, hanged, and quartered, and all the inhabitants of the towne were spoiled of their goods. From thence the Earle of Wiltshire went to Southampton, where vnder colour to take the Earle of Marwicke, but especially to steale out of the Realme, as appeared afterwards, he armed five great carrikes of Tene, and stuffed them with souldiers, taking victualles of the kings price without painment, and put a great part of his treasure into the said caricks, and after sailed about in the sea, and at last scale into Dutchland, sending backe againe his souldiers into England. Then were the kings priuy seales directed to all Bishops, Abbots, Priors and other States spirituall and tempozall to lend the king money, therewith to wage souldiers to keepe the sea coasts: but the commons of Kent dreading the like vengeance to be taken vpon them, as was done vpon them of Newbery, sent priuily messengers to Carles to the foresaid Carles, beseeching them in all haste possible to come to their succour, wherevpon the said Carles sent ouer into Kent the Lord Fauconbridge, to know if their deeds would accorde with their words, and anon the people of Kent and other shires adioynning resorted to the said Lord Fauconbridge in great number, and made long proclamations, containing diuers articles and causes of their assembly, all which here I ouerpasse. When the Carles knew the willing hearts of those people, they prepared to come into this land, against whose coming, a long ballet was fired vpon the gates of Canterbury, made in fauor of the Duke of York and the said Carles, beginning thus: In the day of fast and spirituall affliction, The celestiaall influence of bodies transitorie, &c. The Carles of March, Marwicke, and Salisbury, arrived at Sandwich, where met with them Thomas Bourcher Archbishop of Canterbury, who with his crosse boyn before him, & a great number of other people, accompanied them to London, into the which City they entred on the second day of July: with them came the Popes legate, to treat of a peace, if need were.

Then was a conuocation of the Cleargy holden in Saint Pauls Church, where the said Carles being present, the Earle of Marwicke recyted the cause of their coming into the land, with the misgouernments thereof, and then made open oth vpon the crosse of Canterbury, that they had euer bozne true faith and allegiance to King Henry. When the Carles of March and Marwicke, with the Lords Fauconbridge, Clinton, Bourchier called Earle of Ewe, the Prior of Saint Iohns, Audley, Burgauenny, Say, and Scrope, the Archbishop, the Popes legate, the Bishops of Excester, Ely, Salisbury, and Rochester, addrested them forth to the King at Portsmouth,

The Earle of Wiltshire and other spoiled Newbery.

The Earle of Wiltshire scale ouer the seas priuie seales, for money.

The men of Kent sent to Carles for the Carles.

The Carles entred into London.

Tower of  
London besie-  
ged.

thampton, leaving the Earle of Salisbury to be gouernour of the Citie in their absence. The Lord Scales and Hungerford, that before the comming of the Carles were in the Citie of London, and would haue had the gouernance thereof, went to the Tower of London, and with them the Lords Vesly, Louell, Delaware, Kendale a Gascoigne: Knights, sir Edmond Hampden, Thomas Brune Sheriffe of Kent, Iohn Bruin of Kent, Geruais Clifton treasurer of the Kings house, Thomas Tyrell, the Dutches of Excester and many other. Then was the Tower of London besieged both by water and land, that no victuals might come to them. And they that were within the Tower cast wild fire into the Citie, and shot many smal guns, whereby they burnt and slew men, women, and children in the streets: also they of the Citie laid great guns on the further side of the Thames against the Tower, and brake the walles in diuers places.

The King lying in the Friers at Southampton obtained a strong and mighty field in the meadows beside the Runny, hauing the riuer at his back. The Carles with their power comming to Southampton, sent certaine Bishops to the King, beseeching him to admit the Earle of Warwick to come to his presence, to declare their innocency: which request being denied by the Duke of Buckingham, the Carles sent an herault of armes, desiring to haue hostages for his safe comming & going, but he might not be heard. The third time the Earle of Warwick sent word to the King, that at two houres after none he would speake with him, or die in the field. The Bishop of Hereford a white seier, the Kings confessor, encouraged the Kings part to fight, wherefore after the battell he was committed to the Castell of Warwick, where he was long prisoner.

Battell at  
Southampton.

The tenth day of Iuly at two of the clocke after none, the Carles of Hatch and Warwick let crye throughe the field, that no man should lay hand vpon the King, ne on the common people, but on the Lords, Knights and Esquires: then both hostes incountred and fought halfe an houre, the Lord Edmond Grey of Ruthen that was the kings barward brake the field and came to the Carles party, and was a great helpe to them in obtaining the victorie: many on the Kings side were slaine, and many that fled were drowned in the riuer, the Duke of Buckingham, the Earle of Shrewsbury the Lord Beaumont, and the Lord Egremont were slaine by the kings tent, with many knights and esquires: the kings ordinance of guns might not be shot, there was so great raine that day.

When the field was done, and the Carls had the victorie, they came to the King, he being in his tent, and said in this wise: Most noble prince, displease you not though it haue pleased God of his grace to grant vs the victorie of our most tall enemies, the which by their benemous malice haue vntruly flattered & incited your highnesse to exile vs out of your land, and would haue vs put to finall shame and confusion: we come not to the intent for to bringe quiet ne grieue your said highnesse, but for to please your noble person, desiring tenderly the high welfare & prosperitie thereof, and of al your realme, and to be your true liege men while our lines shall endure.

The

The king with these wordes was greatly recomforted, and anon was led to Northampton with procession, where he rested thre daies, and came to London the sixteenth day of July, and was lodged in the Bishops pallace.

The nineteenth day of July, they that were in the Tower of London, for lacke of victuals yelded and came forth, of the which after ward some were drawne and headed.

The Lord Scales late in an evening entred a wherry with thre persons, and rowing toward Westminster, there to haue taken sanctuary, was descried by a woman, and anon the wherry men fell on him, killed him, and cast him aland beside Saint Mary Duerles. Lord Scales murdered by wherry men on the Thames.

When Quene Margaret heard that the king was taken, she with her sonne and eight persons fled to the Castell of Harblagh in Wales, and was rebbed by the way in Lancasteshire of al her goods to the value of ten thousand markes: from thence she went into Scotland.

The tenth of August James king of Scots besieging the Castell of Roxkefborough, was slaine with a gun that brake in his campe.

The 21. of September the Duke of Somerset came from Swines into England. An. reg. 39.

The eight of October a Parliament was begun at Westminster, unto the which came Richard Duke of Yorke, that a little before was come out of Ireland, and being lodged in the pallace, the king being there, he brake by the dores of the kings chamber, so that the king giuing him place, took an other chamber. When the said Duke, as right heire by lineal descent from Richard the second, challenged the Realme, purposing to haue ben crowned on Alhallow day next following, and hereupon sent to the Parliament in writing his said claime, title, and pedigree. The which claime after diligent deliberation had and approued, by the said Parliament, peace and concord betwene the king and the Duke on the bigill of Alhallow was established and concluded, as in articles followeth. Parliament.

The articles betwixt king Henry and the Duke of York

Blessed be Iesu, in whose hands all bountie resteth, and is the peace and unitie betwixt Princes and the weale of euery Realme: I know by whose direction agreed it is appointed and accorded as followeth: Betwixt the most high and most mighty Prince King Henry the sixt, King of England and of France, and Lord of Ireland, on the one party and the right high and mighty Prince Richard Plantagenet Duke of York, on that other party, by on certaine matters of variance moued betwixt them, and especially upon the claime and title unto the crownes of England and of France, and royal power, estate, and dignity apperteyning to the same, & lordship of Ireland opened, shewed, and declared by the said Duke, afore all the Lords spiritual and temporall, being in this present Parliament.

First, wheret the said Richard Duke of Yorke hath declared and opened, as aboue is said, title and claime in manner as followeth:

That the right noble and worthy Prince Henry king of England the thirde, had issue and lawfully got Edward his first begotten sonne, bozne at Westminster the sixteenth kalends of July, in the yere of our Lord 1297,

and Edmond his second sonne, which was bozne on Saint Marcells day, in the yere of our Lord 1245. the which Edward, after the death of King Henry his father, intituled and called King Edward the first, had issue Edward his first begotten sonne, called after the deceale of his father, King Edward the second, the which had issue, Edward the third: which Edward the third had issue, Edward Prince of Wales, William of Batfield his second sonne, Lionell the third, Duke of Clarence, Iohn of Gaunt the fourth, Duke of Lancaster, Edmond of Langley the fift, Duke of Yorke, Thomas of Woodstocke the sixt, Duke of Glocester, and William of Windsor the seventh. The said Edward Prince of Wales, which died in the life time of his father, had issue Richard, which succeeded Edward the third his grandfather: Richard died without issue: William of Batfield the second sonne of Edward the third, died without issue: Lionell the third sonne of Edward the third, Duke of Clarence, had issue Phillip his daughter and heire, which was coupled in matrimony vnto Edmond Mortimer Earle of March, and had issue Roger Mortimer Earle of March her sonne and heire, which Roger had issue Edmond Earle of March, Roger Mortimer, Anne and Elianor: which Edmond, Roger, and Elianor died without issue: And the said Anne coupled in matrimony to Richard Earle of Cambridge, the sonne of Edmond of Langley, the fift sonne of Henry the third, and had issue Richard Plantagenet, commonly called Duke of Yorke. Iohn of Gaunt the fourth sonne of Edward, and the younger brother of the said Lionell, had issue Henry Earle of Derby, which incontinent after that King Richard resigned the Crownes of the Realmes and Lordshipp of Ireland, unrighteously entered vpon the same, then being alieue Edmond Mortimer Earle of March sonne to Roger Mortimer Earle of March, sonne and heire of the said Philip, daughter and heire of the said Lionell, the third sonne of the said King Edward the third, to the which Edmond the right and title of the said Crowns and Lordship by law and custome belonged. To the which Richard Duke of York, as sonne to Anne daughter to Roger Mortimer Earle of March, son and heire of the said Philip daughter and heire of the said Lionell, the third sonne of King Edward the third the right, title, dignity royall, and estate of the Crownes of the Realmes of England and France, and the Lordship of Ireland, pertayneth and belongeth afoze any issue of the said Iohn of Gaunt, the fourth sonne of the said King Edward. The said title notwithstanding, and without prejudice of the said Richard Duke of Yorke, tenderly desiring the wealth, rest, and prosperity of this land, and to set apart all that might be trouble to the same, and considering the possession of the said King Henry the first, and that he hath for his time been named, taken, and reputed for King of England and of France, and Lord of Ireland, is contented, agreed, and consenteth, that he be had reputed, and taken for King of England and France, with the royal estate, dignity and preheminnence belonging thereunto, and Lord of Ireland during his natural life. And for that time, the said Duke without hurt or prejudice of his said right and title shal take, moztshp and honour him for his soueraigne Lord.



Item, the said Richard Duke of Yorke, shall promise and bind him by his solemn othe, in manner and forme as followeth :

In the name of God Amen : I Richard Duke of Yorke, promise and sweare by the faith and truth that I owe to almighty God, that I shall neuer consent, procure, or stir, directly or indirectly, in p[ri]vile or apert, neither, (as much as in me is) shall suffer to be done, consented, procured, or stirred, any thing that may sound to the abridgement of the naturall life of King Henry the first, or to the hurt or diminishing of his raigne or dignitie rofall, by violence or any other wise, against his freldome or libertie: but if anie person or persons would do or presume any thing to the contrary, I shall with all my might and power withstand it, and make it to be withstode, as far as my power will stretch thereunto, to help me God and his holie evangelists.

The othe of  
Richard duke  
of Yorke.

Item, Edward Earle of March, and Edmund Earle of Rutland, sonnes of the said Duke of Yorke shall make like othe.

Item, it is accorded, appointed, and agreed, that the said Richard Duke of Yorke, shall be called and reputed from henceforth very and rightfull heire to the Crownes, royall estate, dignitie and Lordship abovesaide, and after the decease of the said King Henry, or when he will lay from him the saide crownes, estate, dignitie, and lordship, the said Duke and his heires shall immediately succede to the saide Crownes, royall estate, dignitie and Lordship.

Item, the saide Richard Duke of Yorke shall haue by authoritie of this present Parliament, castles, mannoirs, lands and tenements, with the wards, marriages, relases, seruices, fines, amercements, offices, anowitons, fees, and other appurtenances to them belonging, whatsoeuer they be, to the p[er]rily value of ten thousand markes ouer all charges and repyses, whereof five thousand markes shall be to his owne state, thre thousand five hundred markes to Edward his first begotten sonne Earle of March, for his estate, and one thousand pound to Edmond Earle of Rutland his second sonne, for his p[er]rily sustentation, in such considerations and such intent as shall be declared by the Lords of the Kings counsell.

Item, if any person or persons imagine or compasse the death of the said Duke, and thereof probably be attaint, of open dede done by folkes of other condition, that it be deemed and adiudged high treason.

Item, for the moze establishing of the said accord, it is appoynted and consented, that the Lordes spirituall and tempo[ra]ll, being in this present Parliament, shall make othes to accept, take, worship, and repute the said Richard Duke of Yorke, and his heires, as aboue is rehearsed, and keepe and obserue, and strength in as much as appertaineth vnto them, all the things aboue said, and resist to their power, all them that would presume the contrarie, according to their estates and degrees.

Item, the said Richard Duke of Yorke, Charles of March and Rutland, shall permit and make other to helpe, ayde, and defend the saide Lords, and euery of them, against all those that will quarrell, or any thing attempt  
against

against the sayde lordes or any of them, by occasion of agrément or consenting to the sayde accord, or assistance giuing to the Duke and Charles, or any of them.

Item, it is agreed and appointed, that this accord, and enery article thereof, bee opened and notified by the Kings letters patents, or otherwise, at such times and places, and in manner as it shall be thought expedient to the sayde Richard Duke of Yorke, with the aduise of the Lordes of the Kings Councell. The king vnderstandeth certainly, the sayd title of the sayde Richard duke of Yorke, iust, lawfull, and sufficient, by the aduise and assent of the Lordes spirituall and temporall, and the commons in this Parliament assembled, and by authoritie of the same Parliament declareth, approueth, ratifieth, confirmeth and accepteth the saide title iust, good, lawfull, and true, and thereunto giueth his assent and agrément of his free will and libertie. And ouer that, by the sayd aduise and authoritie declareth, entitleth, calleth, stablisheth, affirmeth, and reputeth the said Richard Duke of Yorke, very true and rightfull heire to the Coronas, roiall estate, and dignitie of the realmes of England and of France, and of the Lordship of Ireland aforesayde, and that according to the worshipping and reuerence that thereto belongeth, he be taken, accepted, and reputed in worshipping and reuerence, by all the States of the said realme of England, and of all his subiects thereof, sauing and ordaining by the same authoritie, the king to haue the sayd Coronas, realme, roiall estate, dignitie, and preheminance of the same, and the said Lordship of Ireland during his life naturall. And furthermore by the same aduise and authoritie will, consenteth and agreeth, that after his decease, or when it shall please his highnes to laye from him the sayd Coronas, estate, dignitie, and lordship, the sayd Richard duke of Yorke, and his heires, shall immediatly succede him in the said Coronas, roiall estate, dignitie, and worshipping, and them then haue and enjoy, any act of Parliament, statute or ordinance, or other thing to the contrary made, or interruption, or discontinuance of possession notwithstanding. And mozeouer, by the sayd aduise & authoritie stablisheth, granteth, confirmeth, approueth, ratifieth, and accepteth the sayd accord, and all thinges therein contained, and thereunto freely and absolutely assenteth, agreeth, and by the same aduise and authoritie ordaineth and establisheth, that if any person or persons imagine or compass the death of the said Duke, and probably be attaint of open dede done by folkes of that conditions, that it bee deemed and adiudged high treason. And furthermore ordaineth and establisheth by the sayd aduise and authoritie, that all statutes, ordinances and acts of parliament, made in the time of the sayd king Henry the fourth, by the which he and the heires of his body coming of Henry late king of England the fift, the sonne and heire of the sayd king Henry the fourth, and the heires of king Henry the fift, were or bee inheritable to the sayd Crownes and realmes, or to the heritage of the same, bee annulled, repelled, damned, cancelled, void, and of none effect.

And ouer this, the king by the sayd aduise, assent and authoritie, ordaineth

meth and establisheth, that all other acts and statutes made afore this time by act of parliament, not repelled or adnulled by like authoritie, or otherwise bold, be in such force, effect, and vertue, as they were afore the making of these ordinances, and that no letters patents royalr of record, nor acts iudiciall, made or done afore this time not repelled, reuerfed, ne otherwise bold by law, be preiudiced or hurt by this present act. Also it was ordained by the same parliament, that the said Richard Duke of Yorke, should be called prince of Wales Duke of Cornwall, and Earle of Chester, and protector of England.

The English chronicle printed by William Caxton, and therefore called Caxtons chronicle, declareth how that in the parliament, while the commons of the realme were assembled in the common house, communing and treating vpon the title of the said Duke of Yorke, suddenly fell downe the crowne which hong then in the midst of the said house, which was the fraternity of the abbey of Westminster, which was taken for a prodiggy or token that the raigne of king Henry was ended: and also the crowne which stood on the highest tower of the castell of Dover, fell downe the same yere.

The agreement aforesaid being put in articles was engrosed, sealed, and sworn by the two parties, and also enacted in the high court of parliament: for vpon whereof, the king hauing in his company the Duke of Yorke, rode to the cathedra church of Saint Paul within the citie of London, and there on the day of All Saints, with the crowne on his head, went solemnly in procession, and was lodged a good space after in the bishops palace nere to the said church. And on the saturday next ensuing, Richard Duke of Yorke was by sound of Trumpet, solemnly proclaimed heire apparant to the crowne of England, and protector of the realme.

After this, the parliament kept at Couentrie the last yere, was declared to be a diuelish counsell, and only celebrated for the destruction of the nobilitie, and no lawfull Parliament, because they which were returned, were neuer elected according to the due order of the law, but secretly named by them, which desired rather the destruction than the advancement of the commonwelth. When these agreements were done & enacted, the king dissolved his parliament, which was the last parliament that euer he ended. The D. of Yorke wel knowing that the Duene would spurne against the conclusions agreed in this parliament, caused both hir and hir sonne to be sent for by the king: but she being a stout woman, by the counsell of the dukes of Gloucester and Somerset, not only denied to come, but also assembled a great army, intending to take the king by force out of the Lords hands.

The 21. of Nouember, such abundance of waters ouerflowed in the countres of Huntington, Suffolke, Cambridg, and the yle of Ely, as the like had not been sene before: for it ouerthrew the bridge, with a great part of the hospitall and fraterie at Thetford in Suffolke, and the bridges in Cambridge, running ouer the wheeles of the water mills there, destroying many houses, and coming in at the windowes of the rest.

The duke of Yorke protector being at London, assigned the duke of Gloucester,

Great water  
floods.

folke,

D. of Yorke  
went north-  
ward.

Battell at  
Wakefield.

1461.

Richard Duke  
of Yorke slaine

folke, and the earle of Warwicke his trustie friends, to be about the king, and he with the earles of Salisburie and Rutland, and a convenient number of men, departed out of London the second of December, and sent to the earle of March his eldest sonne to follow him with all his power. The duke came to the castell of Sandall beside Wakefield on Christmas euen, and there began to assemble his tenants and friends. There came to him vnder a colour of friendship, the lord Neuill, brother to the earle of Westmerland, and required of him a commission for him to raise the people for to chastise his rebels, as he said: but when he had raised to the number of 8000 men, he brought them to the lordes of the countrie, that is to say, the earle of Northumberland and the rest.

The Quene ascertained hereof, determined to make with him befoze his power were come together, and so, hauing in his company the prince his sonne, the Dukes of Excester and Somerset, the Earle of Devonshire, the lord Clifford, the lord Rose, and in effect all the Lords of the north parts, with an 18000. men, marched from Yorke to Wakefield, where they placed themselves euen befoze the castell gates: the duke hauing with him not fully 5000. men (as was sayd) contrary to the minde of his faithfull friends, would needs issue forth to fight with his enemies. The duke of Somerset, and other of the Quenes part, deuised how to take them, and so appointed the Lord Clifford to lye in one scalle, and the Earle of Wiltshire in another, and the Duke with other kept the maine battell. The duke of Yorke with his people descended downe the hill in good order of aray, and was suffered to passe on toward the maine battell: but when he was in the plaine fielde betwene his castell and the towne of Wakefield, he was enuironed on euery side, so that he manfully fighting was with his halfe an hower slaine, and his whole armie discomfited: and with him died of his trustie friends, his two bastard vnckles, sir Iohn, and sir Hugh Mortimers, sir Dauid Hall, sir Hugh Hastings, sir Thomas Neuill sonne to the Earle of Salisbury, William and Thomas a Parre, brethren, Loyde Harington, Thomas Harington knight, sir Henry Ratford knight, and other, to the number of 2200. whereof many were young gentlemen, and heires of great parentage in the south parts. In this conflict was wounded and taken prisoner Richard Earle of Salisbury and was led by the Duke of Somerset to the castell of Pontefract, and had grant of life for a great ransom, but the common people of the country, who loued him not, took him out of the castell by violence, and smote off his head. There was also taken sir Richard Limbroke, Ralph Stanley, Iohn Harow, captaine Hanson, and diuers other. The lord Clifford perceiuing where the earle of Rutland was conuincd out of the fielde, by one of his fathers chaplaines, and schoolmaster to the same Earle, followed and ouertooke him, and stabbed him to the hart with a dagger as he kneeled befoze him. The same Lord Clifford not satisfied herewith, came to the place where the dead corps of the Duke of Yorke lay, and caused his head to be stricken off, and set on it a crowne of paper, and fixed it on a pole, and presented it to the Quene, not lieng farre from the



the field. The Dukes head with the Earle of Salisburies head were set vp ouer a gate of Poike. This battell was fought in the south fieldes of Wakefildes, by the faire stone bridge of nine arches, on the last of December. Poike of Wakefildes shall be shewed in my larger volume that is to come, God willing.

The Earle of March so commonly called, but now after the death of his father, duke of Poike, lieng at Gloucester, was wonderfully amazed when the sorrowful newes of these mishaps came to his vnderstanding: but being comforted by his friends, he removed to Shrewsbury, & raised therabout a puissant army to the number of 23000. ready to go against the Quene, & his fathers enemies. But when he was setting forward, newes was brought him, that Iasper Earle of Penbroke, and James Butler Earle of Dymond & Wiltshire, had assembled a great number of Welchmen and Irishmen, suddenly to take and surprize him: he being therewith quickened, retired backe, and met with his enemies in a faire plaine nere to Mortimers Crosse, beside Ludlow, not far from Hereford east, on Candelmas day in the morning, at which time the sunne (as some write) appeared to the Earle of March like three sunnes, and suddenly ioined together in one: vpon which sight hee took such courage, that hee fiercely setting on his enemies, put them to flight: and for this cause men imagined hee gaue the sunne in his full brightnesse for his badge or cognizance. Of his enemies were slaine to the number of 3800. The Carles of Penbroke and Wiltshire fled, but Owen Teuther (whome Leiland saith should hee called Meredicke) father to the sayd Earle of Penbroke, which Owen Teuther had married (as was said) Katherine mother to King Henry the first, was there taken and beheaded, and after ward buried in a chappell of the gray friers church in Hereford. There were also taken and beheaded, Dauid Floid, Morgan ap Reuther, sir Iohn Skidmore, and his two sonnes, Thomas Griffich, Iohn Throkmorton, Thomas fitz Henry, and other. During this season, the Quene encouraged with this late gained victorie at Wakefild, with a great number of people out of the north, marched toward London, intending to recover the company of the king hir husband, and to vntee all that had bene done in the last parliament. These northern people, after they were once passed the riuer of Trent, spoiled and wasted the countrie afoze them Andrew Trollope grand captaine, and as it were leader of the battell, with a great armie of Scots, Welchmen, and other strangers, beside the northern men, destroyed the townes of Grantham, Stanfords, Peterborough, Huntington, Kilsdon, Melleborne, and in manner all the townes by the way vnto Saint Albons, sparing neither Abbeyes, Priories, or parish churches, but bare away crosses, chalices, booke, ornaments, and other things, whatsoeuer was worth the carriage, as though they had bene Saracens, and no Christians. At length they came downe to Dunstable, and so to S. Albons, and hearing that the dukes of Northfolke and Suffolke, and the earles of Warwicke and Arundel, the lordes Bonuile & other whom the Duke of Poike had left to gouerne the king in his absence, had by the

Battell at  
Mortimers  
Crosse.

king

Second battell  
at S. Albons.

kings assent assembled a great host, and were incamped with the king nere to the towne. Those northen lords and other that were with the Quene, made forwarde, and entring into Saint Albons, meant to passe through the towne, and so to cope with their enemies, but finding a sort of archers ranged, nere to the great crosse in the market place to defend their passage, they were refused with such a storme of arrowes, which came flying about their eares as thicke as haile, that they were quickly repulsed backe, and with losse dyuen to retire into the west end of the towne, where by a lane that leadeth northwards by to S. Peters strete, they made their entrie, and had there also a sharpe encounter against certayne bands of the Kings people: but yet after great slaughter on both parts, they got through, and upon the heath, at the north end of the towne, called Barnard heath, toward a little towne called Syndridge, in a place called Romans land, they had a far greater conflict, with fower or five thousand of the Kings armie, which gaue the onset so fiercely at the beginning, that the victorie rested doubtfull a certayne time, till at the length through the withdrawing many of the Kentishmen with their Captaine Louclace, that was the backward, King Henries part lost the field: the lords fled, and the King went to Quene Margaret that was come with the northen men (as is afore saide) and her sonne Edward. The Earle of Warwick went toward the Earle of March, that was comming toward London out of Wales. The lord Bonville would haue withdrawn him, but the King assured him to haue no bodily hurt: neuertheles at the instance of the Quene, the Duke of Excester, and the Earle of Devonshire, he was beheaded at S. Albons, and with him Sir Thomas Kiriell of Kent. This battell was fought on Shyrouetuesday, or the 17. of February, in the which battel was slain 1916. persons, of whome no nobleman is remembred, save sir Iohn Gray, which was the same day made knight in company of other twelue in the towne of Colny. The same day Thomas Thorpe baron of the Erchequer was beheaded at Wyghgate by the commons of Kent.

Now after the noble men were fled, and other were fled, and the King left in manner alone, without any power of men to garde his person, hee was counselled by a squire called Thomas Hoo, a man well sene in the lawes, to send some conuenient messenger to the northen lords, aduertising them that hee would now gladly come vnto them (whome hee knew to be his friends, and had assembled themselves together for his seruice) to the ende hee might remaine with them, as before hee had vnder the gouernment of the southerne Lordes. According to this aduise, the King appoynted the same Esquire to beare the message, who first went and declared the same vnto the Earle of Northumberland, and returning backe to the King, brought certayne Lords with him, who conueyed the King first into the Lord Cliffords tent, that stood next to the place where the Kings people had incamped. This done, they brought the Quene and her sonne prince Edward vnto his presence, whome hee ioyfullie received, embracing and kissing them in most louing wise, and yelding heartie

heartie thanks to almighty God, whome it had pleased to strengthen the forces of the Northren men, to restore his dærely beloued sonne againe to his possession. The Quæne caused the King to dubbe her sonne Prince Edward Knight, with thirty other persons, which the day befoze had fought on her partie.

Knights dubbed at S. Albons.

This done, they went to the Abbey, whereof the Abbot and the monks they were receiued with hymmes and songs, and so brought to the high altar, and after to the Myne, and so to the Chamber, in which the King was wont to lodge. The Abbot made sute, that order might be taken to restrain the northren men from spoiling the towne, and proclamation was forthwith made to that effect, but it auailed not, for they maintained that the spoyle of all thinges was granted them by reuenant, after they were once passed the riuer of Trent: and so not regarding any proclamation, they spared nothing that they could lay hands on, if the same were meet for them to carry away.

The Quæne hauing thus got the victorie, sent to the Maior of London, commanding him without delay, to send certaine carts laden with Lenten stuffe, for the refreshing of hir armie, which the Maior incontinent granted, caused carts to be laden, and would haue sent them forward, but the commons of the citie would not suffer them to passe, but staied them at Triple gate: during which controuersie, diuers of the northren horsemen robbed in the suburbs of the citie, and would haue entered at Triple gate, but they were repulsed by the commoners, and thre of them slaine, whereupon the Maior sent the Recorder to Barnet to the Kings Councell, there to excuse the matter: and the Dutches of Bedford, the Lady Scales, with diuers Fathers of the spiritualltie went to the Quæne to asswage hir displeasure, conceiued against the citie. The Quæne therfore at their humble request by aduice of hir Councell, appointed certaine lords and knights, with 400. tall persons to ride to the citie, and there to view and see the demeanour of the people, and diuers Aldermen were appointed to meete them at Barnet, and to conuey them to London, but all these deuises were shortly altered into another forme, because true report came, not onely to the Quæne, but also to the citie, that the Earle of March, hauing vanquished the Earles of Penbroke and Wiltshire, had met with the Earle of Warwick, after the last battell at Saint Albons, at Chippingnoztton by Coteswolde, and that they with both their powers were comming towards London. The Quæne therfore, hauing little trust in Essex, and lesse in them of Kent, but least of all in the Londoners, with hir husband and sonne, departed from Saint Albons into the north countrie, where their refuge onely consisted.

The Dutches of Yorke, seeing hir husband and sonne slaine, and not knowing what should succede of hir eldest sonne, sent hir two yongest sonnes George and Richard, ouer the sea to the citie of Atrich in Almaine, where they were of Philip duke of Burgoigne well receiued, and so remained there till their brother had got the Crowne.

The

The Carles of March and Marwike, hauing knowledge that the king and Quene were departed from Saint Albons, rode straight to London, entring the Citie with a great number of men of warre, the first weeke of Lent, oz 28. of februarie, where hee was ioyfully receiued, whose coming thither was no soner knowne, but that the people resorted to him out of Kent, Essex, and other parts in great numbers to see, aide, and assist this lastie prince in whom the hope of all their ioy consisted.

This prudent prince, minding to take time when time serued, called a great Councell both of the Lords spirituall and tempozall, and to them declared the title and right that hee had to the Crowne, rehearsing also the Articles concluded betwixt King Henry and his father by their writings signed and sealed, and also confirmed by act of Parliament, &c. Which after the Lords had considered, they determined, that because Kinge Henrie was insufficient of himselfe to rule the Realme, hee should bee deprived of all kingly honour and soueraigntie, and incontinently was Edward Carle of March sonne and heire to Richard Duke of Yorke (by the lordes of that Councell assembled) named and elected for King and Gouvernour of the Realme. On which day being Sunday, and the second day of March, the people of the Carles part being in their musters in Saint Johns felde, and a great number of the substantiall Cittzens there assembled to beholde their order, suddenly the lord Fawconbridge, which toke the musters, wisely declared to the people certaine Articles and points that king Henrie had offended in, and then it was demaunded of them, whether the sayde Henrie were woorthy to raigne still: but the people cried, Nay, nay. Then was it asked, if they would haue the Carle of March to be their King, and they sayde, Yea, yea: then certaine Captaines were sent to the Carle of March at Wainards Castell, who told him that the people had chosen him King, whereof he thanked God and them. and by the aduise of the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Excester, and the Carle of Marwike, with other, he toke it vpon him. Many wealthy citizens of London, not altogether liking of this doing, conueied themselves out of the city, amongst the which were Philip Malpas Alderman of London, Thomas Vaughan Esquire, maister William Ayclif, with many other, who fearing the Quenes comming to London, shipped them in a shippe of Antwerp, purposing to haue sayled thither: but by the way they were taken by a French ship named the Colmayne, and at length deliuered for great ranfome.

Edward Carle of March, being elected as is aboue sayd, on the next morrow went in procession at Paules, and offered there, and after *Te Deum* being song, he was with great roialty conueied to Westminster, and there in the Hall set in the kings seate with Saint Edwards scepter in his hande, and then asked of the people if they would haue him king, and they cried, Yea, yea. Then after certaine homages by him receiued, he was with procession conueied into the Abbey there, and set in the quire as king, while *Te Deum* was singing: that done, he offered at Saint Edwards Myne, and then returned by water vnto Saint Paules, and was there lodged within the

Edward earle  
of March, e-  
lected king in  
S. Johns  
felde in Lon-  
don.

Cittizens of  
London fled.

Edward earle  
of March toke  
on him the  
kingdome.



the Bishops pallace. Thus toke he possession of the Realine, vpon a Tuesday being the fourth of March, and was proclaymed King of England, by the name of Edward the fourth, when King Henry had raigned thirtie eyght yeres, eyght moneths, and odde daies.

## Edward Earle of March.



Edward Earle of March, bozne at Roan, some and heire to Richard Duke of Yorke, about the age of eightene yeres, began his raigne the fourth day of March, by the name of Edward the fourth, in the yere 1460. after the account of the Church of England: he was a man of noble courage and great wit: but in his time was much trouble and vnquietnes in the realme, as shall be shewed.

*Ann. reg. 1.  
John Roule.*

The 12. of March, Walter Walker a Grocer that dwelt in Cheape of London, for words spoken touching the title of King Edward when he was proclaymed, was suddenly apprehended, condemned, and beheaded in Smithfield. This Grocer is he, whom master Hall misseth to be Burdet, of whom ye shall find in the 17. yere of this Kings raigne.

*Walter Walker  
beheaded  
for a word  
speaking.*

The same 12. day of March in the afternone, King Edward hauing prepared a great armie, being accompanied with the Duke of Suffolke, the Lord Fauconbridge, the Lord Fitzwalter, Sir John Wenlocke, John Stafford, Henry Ratcliffe of Framilsey, Roger Wolferstone and others, with great triumph rode thorough the Citie of London to Bishops gate, and so toke his iourney toward the North, where betwene Shirburne in Elmet, and Todcaster, all the North partie met him, and on Palme Sunday the 29. of March fought a great battell betwene Towton and Barton, in which were slaine Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Shrewsburie, the Earle of Devonshire, John Lord Clifford, the Lord Bevmound, John Lord Beuill, the Lord Willoughby, Leo Lord VVels, the Lord Roos, the Lord Scales, the Lord Grey, Reynolph Lord Dacres, the Lord Fitzhugh, the Lord Molineux, Lord Henry Beekingham: knights, two bassard sonnes of Henrie Holland Duke of Excester, Richard Percie, John Heyron, Gerueys Clifton, Edmond Hamys, Thomas Crakenhorpe, John Crakenhorpe, Villiam Harill, John Ormonde, Andrewe Trollope, Roger Mollyn, Radulphe Pigote, Henrie Norbohow, Dauid Trollope, John Burton Captaine of Yorke, and many other Knights and Esquires, whose names were not then noted. The whole number slaine were accounted by some to be 33000. by other some 35091. many of these were first buried in five pits, yet appearing halfe a mile off by North Barton church in the fiede there. After Bungate caused them to be brought from thence, and to be buried in the Churchyard of Barton: the Lord Dacres hath there a meane tombe. Towton village is a mile from Barton, where a great Chappell was begun by Richard the thirde, but not finished, in which Chappell were buried also

1461.

many of the men slaine at palmsonday fiede. This fiede was as much in Barton Parish as in Towton, yet it bare the name of Towton.

King Henrie  
fled into Scot-  
land.

The Duke of Ercester, the Duke of Somerset, the Lord Roos, the Lord Hungerford, & many other fled to Poike to king Henrie, and then they with the king, Quene, and prince, fled towarde Scotlande to Berwikke, and so to Edenborough.

King Edward went to Poike, where he was with all solemnitie receiued, there he caused the heads of his father and the Earle of Salisburie with other his friends to be taken down, and buried with their bodies. And then caused T. Courtney earle of Deuon, the Earle of Ryne, sir William Hill, to be headed and their heads set vp in place, James Butler Earle of Wiltshire was beheaded at Newcastle, &c. and then King Edward went to Durham, and when he had quieted the country, returned southward. The Lord Fitz Walter was drowned at Ferrybridge, sir Thomas Fulford was beheaded at Berham, &c.

The town of Berwikke was deliuered to the Scots by King Henry the first on S. Maries day.

King Ed-  
ward crowned  
at Westmin-  
ster.

The 26. of June the Mayor of London with the Aldermen in scarlet, and the commons in greene, brought K. Edward from Lambeth to the Tower of London, where he made 28. knights, and on the morrow he dubbed laureino, and on the 28 of June he was crowned at Westminster with great solemnitie of bishops and other tempozall Lords.

States created

And on the morrow after the king was crowned again in Westminster abbey in the worship of God & S. Peter: and on the next morrow hee went crowned in Pauls church in London, in the honoz of God & S. Paule, and there an Angell came downe and censed him, at which time was so great a multitude of people in Pauls, as euer was sene in any dayes. And some after his coronation, the king made his brother George Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence, and his other brother Richard Duke of Glocester: Humfrey Stafford Esquire, Lord Stafford of Southwike: sir VVilliam Herbert, L. Herbert, and after Earle of Penbroke: and the said L. Stafford Earle of Deuonshire. After this he made Edmond L. Grey of Ruthen, VVilliam Newill L. Fauconbridge Earle of Kent: Henry L. Boucher Earle of Essex: Iohn Stafford, Lord of Buckingham Earle of Wiltshire: sir Thomas Blunt knight, Lord of Mountjoy: sir Iohn Howard, L. Howard: VVilliam Hastings, L. Hastings, and after that great Chamberlaine: Richard VVooduile Lord of Hastings: Iohn Denham esquire, L. Denham, &c. So Henry Lord Boucher before spoken of, Richard Duke of Poike long before this time, had giuen his sister Elizabeth in marriage, of whom he begat 4 sonnes, William, Thomas, Iohn, and Henry, the which VVilliam being a man of great industrie, wif, and prudence, in graue and weightie matters, married the ladie Anne VVooduile, descended of high parentage, whose mother Jaquet was daughter to Peter of Lurenburch, Earle of S. Paule, by the which Anne he had Henry Earle of Essex, one daughter named Cicilie, married to Walter L. Ferrers of Chartley, and another called Isabell, which died unmarried. Iohn Markham was made

Iohn Mark-  
ham chief  
Iustice.

Lord

Lord chiefe Justice, and Robert Stillington keeper of the priute seale.

John Dauy had his hand stricken off at the Sandart in Cheape, because he had smit a man befoze the Kings Judges at Westminster, wherefoze the King commaunded him to haue the law, in example to others.

Record.  
One had his  
hand stricken  
off, in cheape.

This yere in the hartest season King Edward rode to Canterbury, and to Sandwich, & so along by the sea coast to Hampton, & from thence into the marches of Wales, and to Bristow, where he was most royally received, thus he progressed about the land to vnderstand the state thereof.

The 4. of November began a parliament at Westminster, wherein R. Henry, his Quene, and his sonne, were disherited of the crowne: Henry duke of Excester, Henry duke of Somerset, Thomas earle of Deuonshire, &c. to the number of 140. were attainted & disherited. Shortly the earle of Derby and Awbrey his son, sir Thomas Tudenham knight, William Tirrell, and John Mongomerie esquires, were defect and at severall times beheaded at tower hill, and after that many other.

1462.  
Ann. reg. 2.

The 27. of March R. Edward went Northward so far as Stamford, where he was enjoined that R. Henry had procured the Frenchmen and Scots to enter this land, in resisting whereof R. Edward sent his priute seale through England, to moue men to giue a certaine sum of money, which they granted liberally. The L. Fauconbridge Earle of Kent, was appoynted to keepe the seas, with the Lord Audeley, L. Clinton, sir Iohn Howard, sir Richard Walgraue, and other, to the number of 10000. which landed in Britaine, and won the towne of Conquet, with the Ile of Reth, &c.

In Michaelmas termeking Edward sate in the Kings bench three dayes together in open court, to vnderstand how his lawes were executed.

King Edward  
sat in the  
Kings bench  
in open court.

Quene Margaret wiffe to Henry the first, landed in the North, where hauing but small succour and euill fortune, she was forced to take the sea againe, and by tempest of weather was diuen to Barwikke, where she landed, but lost hir ships and goods.

King Edward began his tourney toward Scotland, on the feast day of Saint Andrew the apostle, accompanied of dukes, erles, barons, & knights, as foloweth: the dukes of Norfolk, and Suffolke, the earles of Arundell, Shrewsburie, Worcester, Kent, Westmerland, and Essex, the barons L. Grey Ruthen, lord Hastings, lord Grey Codnar, lord Grey Wilton, lord Anthony Scales, lord Latimer, lord Herberd, lord Ferrers of Chartley, lord Stanley, lord Venloke, lord Grestoke, lord Ogill, lord Lomley, Lord Clinton, lord Southwik lord Barnes, lord Dacre of the South, lord Dacre of the North, lord Say lord Cromwell, lord Cobham, lord Leuerforth, lord Henry Buckingham, lord Mortimer lord Fitz Hugh, lord De la VVare, lord Powes, lord Scrope of Bolton, L. Dudley, lord Sturton, lord Burgaueny, knights, sir Peirce Ale, sir VWilliam Stanley, sir VWilliam Storis, sir Thomas Mongomery, sir I. Canias, sir Ralph Pigot, &c. to the number of 59. knights.

Dukes 2.  
Earles, 37.  
Barons, 37.  
Knights, 59.

In the moneth of December King Edward laide siege to the castles of Bambrough, Dunstanbrough, and Alnewike, in the castle of Bambrough was the Duke of Somerset, the Cale of Penbroke, the Lord Roos, Ralph

Percie

Percy, and thre hundreth men. At the siege wherof, was the Earle of Worcester, the Earle of Arundale, the lord Ogle, the lord Mountague, & 1000. men. In the castle of Dunstanbrough was sir Richard Tunstall, Thomas Findren, doctor Morton and other with 120. men: and at the siege therof, the lord Wenloke, the lord Hastings, and two other lords with 1000. men. The Castle of Alnewike was held by thre estates, and 300. men. Against the which was in siege the Earle of Warwick, the earle of Kent, the lord Powes, the baron of Greytstoke, the lord Cromwell, & 10000. men. Henry Bewfort Duke of Somerset, sir Ralph Percie, and others yelded Bambrough on Christmasse euen, and were taken to the kings prison. King Edward graunted to the Duke of Somerset a 1000. markes by the yere, wherof he was neuer payde, the Earle of Penbroke, sir Thomas Findern, and others went into Scotland.

1463.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Durham. And on Saint Johns day, Dunstanburgh was yelded to King Edward.

Ann. reg. 3. On the twelwe euen Peirce le Brasle the great warrioꝝ of Normandie came to help the Quene Margaret with Frenchmen, and 20000. Scots, to remoue K. Edwards men from Alnewike siege, & the residue of other castles there. By whose comming K. Edwards men were asfeard of the Scots, as reculing from the siege, & the Scots asfeard of Edwards men, least they had reculed to bying them into a trap. And Henries men issuing out, of too much boldnes, gaue Edwards men oportunitie to enter into the castle: on the morow after the twelf day, the Earle of Warwick made 15. knights: these thre castels were committed to the keeping of sir Ralph Grey, And after againe King Henry with his quene and their felowship entred them and kept them

Parliament at London.

The 29. of Aprill began a parliament at Westminster, in the which was ordained that for the terme of thre yeres, that there should no wools be conuied out of the land, except those that were beyond the water of Wese to the staple of Cales, and there to be solde, the one halfe for Wolpon, and the other part for Argent content, and all that other remnaunt of wools should remaine within the land to make cloth of, and all clothiers should make a broad cloth no shorter then 24. yards in length, and two full yards in breadth: also that no wine tanner in the citie of London, should sell any Wine Galkopne, white, claret, or redde, aboue 8. pence the gallon. Item that no man or woman, vnder the estate of a lord or Lords children, weare any cloth of golde, apparell wrought with golde, furs of sables, &c. That no peoman, or parson vnder that degre, weare in their array for their bodies any bolsters of wool, cotton or other stuffe, or in their dublet any thing saue lining equall to the outside. That no person weare gozvine, laquet, or cloake, but of such length, as the same man standing by sight, the same should couer his buttocks, nor any taylor to stuffe or bolster any garment, or to make him shorter or otherwise then was limited, &c. Also, that no man weare shooes or bootes hauing pikes passing two inches in length, or shoe-makers to make them aboue that syle, &c.

Statute against stuffed or bolstered garments, or their garments.

Shortly



Shortly after Quene Margaret obtained a great power of Scots and other her friends, and so bringing her husband with her, and leaving her sonne called prince Edward, in the Towne of Barwicke, entred Northumberland, toke the Castle of Bambrough, and stuffed it with Scottish men, and made thereof Captaine, Sir Ralph Grey, and came sozward toward the Bishopricke of Durham. Whereof when the Duke of Somerset understode, he without delaie, revolted from King Edward, and fled to King Henry, so likewise did Sir Ralph Percie, and many other of the Kings friends, but many followed King Henry in hope to get spoyle, for his armie byent and spoiled townes wheresoener they came.

About Midsummer the Scots with many French and Englishmen, laid siege to the Castle of Roxham, but were forced to leaue it as they found it. The Earle of Warwicke wan the towne of Barwicke, where he made five Bannerets, and 22. Knights, and went into Scotland, where he burnt Lawghinaban, Jedworth, and Galowey, and many other Townes, and returned to Barwicke.

This yere a quarter of wheate was solde for two shillings at London, <sup>Price of</sup> barley for two and twenty pence, pease for thre shillings foure pence, and of <sup>graine.</sup> otes for 14. pence, and in the countrey of Norfolk, a quarter of wheate was sold for 20. pence, maist for 20. pence, barley and otes for 12. pence.

In the month of Aprill, King Edward made great preparation aganste King Henry, and on S. Markes day Ralph Percie L. Hungerford, with a great power, purposing to haue distressed sir Iohn Neuill, L. Mountacute, was himselfe slaine with many other. 1464.  
Ann. reg. 4.

The 15. of May King Henries power being at Berham, the L. Mountacute with a power came thither, & enclosed them round about. There were taken & slaine many lords that were with K. Henry, but he himselfe was fled foure daies befoze into Lancashire, where he & other lived in caues ful hardly vnknowne moze than a yere. On Trinity sunday K. Edward made the L. Mountacute Earle of Northumberland & warden of the Marches. The Earles of Warwicke & Northumberland toke Bambrough castle, and sir Ralph Grey being taken in Bambrough, for that he had swozne to be true to King Edward, was condemned, and had iudgement giuen vpon him by the Earle of Worcester high Constable of England, as followeth.

Sir Ralph Grey, for thy treason, the King had ordained that thou shouldest haue had thy spurs striken off by the hard heeles, by the hand of the master coke, who is here ready to do as was promised thee, at the time that he toke off thy spurs, and said to thee as is accustomed: That and thou be not true to the soueraigne Lord, he shall smite off thy spurs with his knife hard by the heeles: and so shewed him the master coke ready to do his office with his apzon and his knife. Whereouer sir Ralph Grey, the King had ordeyned, here thou maiest see, the kings of armes, and heralds, and thine owne proper coate of armes, which they should teare off thy bodie, and so shouldest thou aswell be disgraded of thy worthip, nobles, and armes, as of thy order of knightthod. Also here is another coate of thine armes reuerfed, the which

Judgement  
against sir  
Ralph Grey.

The order of  
disgrading of a  
knight.

thou shouldest haue woꝛne on thy body, going to thy death wards, foꝛ that belongeth to the after the law: notwithstanding the disgrading of knight-hood, and of thine armes, and nobles, the king pardoneth that, foꝛ thy noble grand-father, who suffered trouble, foꝛ the kings most noble pꝛedeceſſoꝛs. Now sir Ralph Grey this shall be thy penance: Thou shalt go on thy ſate vnto the towne end, and there thou shalt be laid downe, and draven to a scaffold made foꝛ thee, and thou shalt haue thy head smitten off, thy body to be buried in the friers, thy head where the kings pleasure shall bee. This iudgment was pronounced at Doncaster, against the said Ralph Grey, foꝛ rebelling, and keeping of the castle of Bambrough against king Edward.

Reuill earle  
of Northum-  
berland, and  
Herbert earle  
of Penbroke.

After this king Edward returned to Poꝛke, where in despite of the Earle of Northumberland, which then kept himselfe in the Realme of Scotland, he created sir Iohn Neuill, L. Mountacute Earle of Northumberland, and in reꝓose of Iasper earle of Penbroke, hee created William loꝛd Herbert Earle of Penbroke: but after when the Earle of Northumberland was reconciled to his fauor, he restored him to his possessions, name and dignitie, and pꝛeferred the loꝛd Mountacute to the title of Marquesse Monntacute, so that in degꝛe he was aboue his brother the Earle of Marwicke, but in power and possessions far vnder him.

R. Edward  
maried.

The Earle of Marwicke was sent ouer into France, to demaund the lady Bona, daughter to Lewes Duke of Sauoy, and sister to the lady Carlot then quene of France, which Bona was then in the French court. The earle of Marwick comming to the French king, as then being at Towꝛs, was of him honozably receiued, & curteously entertained: his message was so well liked foꝛ the aduancement of the lady Bona, that his sister quene Carlot obtained both the good will of the king his husband, and also of his sister the foresaid lady, so that the matrimony on that side was clerely assented to, and the Earle of Dampmartine appoynted with other to sayle into England, foꝛ the full finishing of the same: but in the meane while, on the first of May, King Edward toke to wife Elizabeth daughter to Iaquet dutches of Bedford, sister to the Earle of S. Paule, late wife to sir Iohn Grey, slaine at S. Albons fiede on king Henries part, which marriage was kept secret almost halfe a yere.

Duke of So-  
merſet and o-  
ther beheaded.

King Edward toke the Chauncelozship from the Bishop of Excester, brother to the Earle of Marwicke, and gave it to the Bishop of Bathe.

Earle of North-  
umberland  
made Mar-  
quesse Monntacute

In the month of May, the duke of Somerset, the L. Roos, the L. Molyns, Talbois earle of Elyne, sir Philip Wentworth, sir Thomas Fynderne, gathered an hoste in the North countrey, & sir Ioh. Neuill earle of Northumberland with 10000. men came vpon them, whom the comons forsaking, their captaines were taken & beheaded. R. Edward fearing the L. Mountacute, who he had of late made earle of Northumberland, he caused the men of the countrey to desire the rightful heire Percie son to Henry that was slaine at Poꝛke fiede: & so Percie was restored, & Monntacute was made a Marquesse, and his son duke of Bedford, which should wed the kings eldest daughter, and so by possibility should be king of England, thus was he sed with faire woꝛds, but nothing

nothing perfozmed. About Michaelmas the king held a counceat at Reading, where the quene was shewed openly, and receiued as quene. After this wedding known, the earle of Marwike and R. Edward were neuer friends.

The spinsters of Wyke, the steeple of Christs church in Poze wich, part of the pzoze of Christs church in London, the steeple of Saint Mary spittle at London with the cloyster, were burnt this peere.

Winter of  
Poze burne.

This peere the 22. of January, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein it was enacted that no merchandize coming out of Flaunders, or out of any land of the duke of Burgoyne, should be sold within any ground of England. Also king Edward caused a new coppe to be made, whereby he gained much, for he made of an old noble a royall, which he commanded to go for 10.s. neuertheless to the same royall was put 8.d. of alay, & so weied the moze by 8.d. being smitten with a new stampe: he likewise made halfe angels of 5.s. and farthings of 2.s. 6.d. angelets of 6.s. 8.d. and half angels, 3.s. 4.d. he made silver monies of 3.d. a groate, & so of other coines after that rate, to the great harme of the commons. I finde by recozde, that William lord Hastings the kings Chamberlaine, was made master of the kings mints or monies of gold or silver in the Tower of London, his Realme of England, territoze of Ireland, and towne of Caleis, with the Marches of the same: the which lord Hastings undertoke to make the same monies under fozm following, to wit, of gold, a peece for 8. shillings 4. pence sterlings, which should be called a noble of gold, of the which there should be 50 such peeces in the pound weight of the tower, an other peere of gold 4. shillings 2. pence of sterlings, & to be of them 100. such peeces in the pound: and a thirde peere of golde weying the fourth part of the first, for two shillings one peny sterlings, and 200. such peeces in the pound, and every pound weight of the sayd tower, to be woorth 20. pound, 16. shillings 8. pence of sterlings, the which should be 23. Carets, 3. graines and halfe fine, &c. And for silver, 37. shillings 6. pence of sterlings, the peere of 4. pence to be 112. groates, & 2. pence in the pound weight, &c. thus much out of the recozde.

1465.

Ann. reg. 5.  
Coine enhaun-  
sed.

On the Ascension day king Edward made 48. knightes of the Bathe within the tower of London, amongst the which, was of that company sir Thomas Cooke, sir Mathew Philip, and Ralph Ioceline, and sir Henric Wauar Citizens of London made knightes; and vpon the 26. of May, Quene Elizabeth was crowned at Westminster with a great solemnitie: her father also was created Erle Rivers, and made high Constable of England, his brother lord Anthony was married to the sole heire of Thomas lord Scales: sir Thomas Grey, son to sir John Grey the Quenes first husband, was created Marques Dorset, and married to Cicely heire to the lord Bonuile.

Knightes of the  
Bathe.

Quene Eliza-  
beth crowned.

King Henry was taken in Cletherwoode, beside Bangerley Hypping, stons in Lancashire, by Thomas Talbot sonne and heire to sir Edward Talbot of Baihall, and Iohn Talbot his cousin of Colebry, which deceiued him being at his dinner at Waddington Hall, and brought him to wardes London, with his legs bounde to the styrops, where he was met by the earle of Marwike, and arrested at Esyldon, and forthwith his gilt spurs were taken

King Henry  
taken.

ken from his fête, doctor Manning Deane of Wharfe, doctor Bedle and young Ellerton being in his companie, with their fête bounde under the horse bellies, were brought throught the Citie to the Tower of London, where the king was kept long time.

Long piked  
shoes forbid.

It was proclaimed throughout England, that the beakes or pikes of shoon and bootes should not passe two inches, upon paine of cursing by the clergy, and forfeiting 20. s. to be paid one noble to the king, one other to the Cordwainers of London, and the thirde to the chamber of London, and for other citiees and townees the like order was taken. Before this time and since the yere of our Lord, 1382. the pikes of shoes and bootes were of such length, that they were faine to be tied by to their knees with chaines of silver gilt, or at the least with silke laces.

Sheepe  
transported  
over sea.

King Edward concluded an amitie & league with Henry King of Castile and Iohn King of Aragon, at the concluding whereof, he granted licence for certain Cotswold sheepe to be transported into y<sup>e</sup> countrie of Spain, which haue there since mightily increased and multiplied, to the Spanish profit, as it is said: but true it is, that long ere this were sheepe in Spain, as may appere by a patten of king Henry the second, the 31. of his reigne, graunted to the weauers of London, that if any cloth were found to be made of Spanish wol, mixed with English wol, the mase of London should se it bent.

Besides this, to haue amitie with his neyghbour the king of Scots, he winked at the losse of Barwike, and was contented to take a truce for fiftene yeres.

4  
1566

The 11. of februarye Queen Elizabeth was deliuered at Westminster of a daughter also named Elizabeth, who was long after married to King Henry the 7. whose Christening was done in the abbey with the most solemnitie that might be, and the more, because the king was assured by his physicians, that the Quene was concelued with a prince, which proued otherwise as ye haue heard.

An. reg. 6.  
Hungerford  
and Courteney  
executed.

This yere was the Lord Hungerford, sir Thomas Hungerford knight, sonne to the Lord Hungerford, and Henry Courteney of right Earle of Devonshire, beheaded at Salisbury. The Lord Scaffold of Southwike procured the said Courteney's death, to be made Earle of Devonshire, as in deede he was shortly after.

1467.

An. reg. 7.

King Edward throught the resusall of the French Kings sister in law (as ye haue heard) wan him enemies in France, wherefore in other places he procured him friends, but those friends had stand him in small neede, if fortune had not holpe him to another, euen at his elbow. This was Charles Earle of Charoloys, sonne and heire apparant vnto Philip Duke of Burgoyne, which Charles being then a widower, was counsailed to be a suter vnto King Edward to haue in mariage the Ladie Margaret, sister to the same king, a ladie of excellent beauty, and thought not vnwoorthy to match with the greatest prince of the world.

Anthony the Bassard of Burgoine, called the earle of the Roche, brother to y<sup>e</sup> said earle Charoloys, a man of great wit, courage, & valiance, was appointed



pointed by his father Duke Philip to go into England in embassage about this tate, who being furnished for his estate, having in his company gentlemen and other expert in all feats of chivalry, and martiall prowes, to the number of 400. hoxles, toke ship, and arrived in England, where he was of the king and nobles honourably received. His message being declared, was joyfully heard of the king, the which by that assintie saw, how they mought be assured of a buckler against the French: the king therefore granted to the bastards request, and the said bastard openly in the kings great chamber contracted the said Lable Margarer, for, and in the name of his brother the Earle of Charoloys.

Walter Blunt made Baron, and Lord Mountioy.

The third of June, began a Parliament at Westmynster, wherein was refused to the kings hands, all manner of gifts that had bene given from the first day he toke possession of the Realme, to that time, except certaine things then excepted.

Also this yere in divers places of England, many men were arrested, and treason surmised against them, wherethrough many of them were put to death, and the other escaped for great sums of money: amongst the which sir Thomas Cooke, sir Iohn Plumer knights, Humfrey Heyford, and other Aldermen of London were arrested, and charged with treason, wherof they were acquite, but they lost of their goods to the king, to the value of 40000. markes, or moze, as some haue wrytten: and for example, the forenamed sir Thomas Cooke late Mayor of London, was by one named Hawkins accused of treason, for the which he was committed to the Tower: his place in London leased by the Lord Rivers, and his Lady and servants clerly put out thereof. The cause was this: the forenamed Hawkins, came by on a season unto the said sir Thomas, requesting to lend him a 1000. markes upon good surety, whereunto he answered, that he would first know for whom it should be, and for what intent: at length understanding it should be for the use of Quene Margarer, he answered, he had no currant wares whereof any shift might be made without too much losse, and therefore required Hawkins to move him no further: for he intended not to deale withal, yet the said Hawkins required but one hundred pound, at length, and went without it, or the value of one peny, and never came againe to move him, which so rested two or thre yeres after, till the said Hawkins was cast in the Tower, and at length brought to the stake, called the Duke of Erce, Kers daughter (because he was the deviser of that torture) by meanes of which paine, he shewed many things, amongst the which the motion he had made to sir Thomas Cooke was one, by meanes whereof sir Thomas Cooke was troubled as ye haue heard, and one lury, by meanes of sir Iohn Fogge, indicted him of treason: after which, an Oyer determiner was kept in the Guildhall, in which tate with the Mayor, the Duke of Clarence, the earle of Marwike, the Lord Rivers, sir Iohn Fogge, with other of the kings counsel, to the which place the said sir Thomas was brought, & there arraigned upon life and death, where he was acquitted of the said indictment, and sent to the

Baro Mountioy.  
Parliament at Westmynster.

Lib. Erwise.

Sir Thomas Cooke his troubles.

The Stake, or Racke in the Tower called the D. of Ercesters daughter.

counter

counter in Breadstreet, and from thence to the Kings bench : being acquitted, his wife got again possession of his house, the which she found in an euill plight : for the seruants of sir Iohn Fogge and the Lord Rivers had made haue of what they listed. Also at his place of Giddy hall in Essex, another fort had destroyed the deere in his parke, his conies, and fish, & spared not brasse, pewter, bedding, and all what they might carry : for the which might neuer one peny be gotten in recompence, nor sir T. Cooke be deliuered, till he had paid 8000. pound to the king, and 800. pound to the Duçene, and for that sir Iohn Markham knight, chiefe Justice of the pleas, determined somewhat against the kings pleasure (that the offence done by sir T. Cooke was no treason, but misprision, the which was no desert of death, but to be fined at the kings pleasure) the Lord Rivers and the Dutches of Bedford his wife procured that he lost his office afterward in the 12. yere of Edward the fourth.

Lord chiefe  
Justice lost his  
office for doing  
iustice.

Justice in  
Smithfield.

The marriage aforesaid concluded, the bastard of Burgoigne chalenged the lord Scales, brother to the Duçene, to fight with him, both on horse back and on foote : which challenge the lord Scales gladly accepted, the king causing lists to be prepared in west Smithfield of London for these champions, the length of 120. Tassers yards, and ten foote : and in breadth 80. yards and ten foote, double barred, five foet betwene the bars, the timber & workmanship wherof cost two hundred markes, besides faire and costly galleries for the ladies and other. At the which martiall enterpryse, king Edward himselfe with his nobility was present. The first day being the Thursday next after Corpus Christi day, they ran together with sharpe speares, and departed with equal honour. The next day they turneyed on horse backe, the lord Scales horse had on his chafron a long sharpe pike of Steele, and as the two champions coaped together, the same horse thrust his pike into the nostrils of the bastards horse, so that for very paine he mounted so high, that he fell on the one side with his master, and the Lord Scales rode about him with his sword drawn in his hand, till the king commaunded the marshal to helpe by the bastard, who openly said, I cannot holde me by the clouds, for though my horse falle me, I wil not falle my incounter-companion, but the king would not suffer them to do any moze that day. The next morrow, the two noble men came into the field on foote, with two polares, and fought valiantly, but at the last the point of the poll-axe of the Lord Scales happened to enter into the sight of the bastards helme, and by fine force might haue plucked him on his knes : but the king sodainely cast downe his warder, and then the marshall seuered them. The bastard not content with this chance, required the king of Justice, that he might perforce his enterpryse : the Lord Scales refused not : but the king calling to him the constable & the marshall, with the officers at armes, after consultation had, it was declared for a sentence definitive, by the Duke of Clarence then constable of England, and the Duke of Norfolk then marshall, that if he would go forward with his attempted challenge, he must by the law of armes, be deliuered to his aduersary, in the same state and like

like condition, as he stood when he was taken from him. The bastard bearing this iudgement, doubted the sequels of the matter, and so relinquished his challenge. Other challenges were done, and ballantly achieved by the Englishmen, which I passe over. Shortly after came sorrowfull tidings to the bastard, that his father Duke Philip was dead, and thereupon taking his leaue of king Edward, and his sister the new Dutches of Burgoigne liberally rewarded, returned to his brother the new Duke. His yere diuers persons being common Iuroys, such as at Assises were sworn for rewards, or fauour of parties, were iudged to ride from Newgate to the pillory in Coznehill with miters of paper on their heads, and then againe to Newgate: and this iudgement was giuen by the Maior of London.

Charles Duke of Burgoign desirous to see his new wife, wrote to king Edward, requiring him to send his sister ouer vnto him, according to the conditions passed betwene them.

King Edward on the other side not slackening the matter, first called a Parliament, which began at Westminster on the eight of May, wherein was granted two sisters and a disinny.

The 18. of June Margaret sister to king Edward the fourth, beganne her journey from the Wardrobe in London, toward her marriage with Charles Duke of Burgoigne: first she offered in the Church of Saint Paul, and then rode through the City, the earle of Warwick riding before her, with earles and barons a great number, the Dutches of Norfolk, with other ladies and gentlewomen in great number. And at her entry into Cheap, the Maior of London and his brethren the Aldermen presented her with a paire of rich basons, and in them an hundred pound of gold, and that night she lodged at the Abbey of Stratford, where the king then lay: from thence she toke her journey to Canterbury. The king riding after to see her shipping, on the first of July she toke the sea at Margate, and there toke leaue of the king her brother, and departed. There returned back again with the king, the Duke of Clarence, the Duke of Gloucester, the Earles of Warwick, Shrewsbury, & Northumberland. And there abode with her in the ship, the Lord Scales, the Lord Dacres her chamberlaine, sir Iohn Woodville, sir Iohn Howard, and many other famous Knights and Esquires: she was shipped in the new Ellen of London, and in her naup the Iohn of Newcastle, the Mary of Salisbury, and many other royall ships, and on the morrow landed at Sluce in Flanders, and as soone as her ship and company of ships were entered into the haven, there receiued her sir Simon de Lelien & the water bailly, in diuers boats & barks apparelled ready for her landing. The first estate that receiued her was the Bishop of Etright wel accompanied, & the countesse of Shorne bastard daughter to Duke Philip of Burgoigne, & with her many ladies & gentlewomen, and so proceeding in at the gate of the towne, the same towne was presented to her, she to be soueraigne lady thereof: also they gaue her 12. markes of gold Troy weight, the which was 200. pound of English monney, and so she proceeded through the towne to her lodging, euery householder standing in the street with a torch in his hand burning.

1468.  
False Iuroys  
set on the pillory.

An. reg. 8.

Parliament at Westminster.

Lady Margaret the kings sister married to the Duke of Burgoigne.

On the moztow the olde Dutches of Burgoigne came to her, accompanied with many great estates. On the thirde of July came the Duke of Burgoigne to Sluce with twentie persons secretly, and was there openly affianced to the Lady Margaret, by the bishop of Salisbury and the Lord Scales, in presence of the Lord Dacre, the Dutches of Norfolk, the Lady Scales, and all the knights, Esquires, and Gentlewomen enuironing the chamber.

On the eight of July being Saturday, by the Duke of Burgoignes appointment, the Lady Margaret remoued by water to the Dame. And on the Sunday in the morning betwixt five and six of the clocke, the marriage was solemnized betwixt them by the Bishops of Salisbury and of Turney, there being present the old dutches of Burgoigne, the Lord Scales, the Lord Dacre, with the knights, Esquires, Ladies and Gentlewomen that came out of England: the great triumphs, feastings, thewes of pageants, with other strange deuises and iustings, were such as I haue not read the like, and would be ouer long in this place to set downe.

Harlow Castle won.

In the ende of August the Castell of Harlow was won by the assault of the Lord Herbert, the which Castell was one of the strongest holdes in Wales.

Carle of Marwick his house keeping.  
Rob Fabian.

This yere many murmurous tales ranne in the City betwixen the Carle of Marwicke and the Quenes blood, the which Carle was euer had in great fauour of the commons of this land, by reason of the exceeding house-hold which he daily kept in all countreies where euer he sojourned or lay: and when he came to London, he held such an house, that five Dren were eaten at a breakfast, and euery Tauerne was full of his meat, so; who that had any acquaintance in that house, he should haue had as much sodden and rost as he might carpe vpon a long dagger.

1469.  
Robert of Ridale.  
Anreg. 9.

Edgocote field,  
some call it  
Banbury field.

This Duke of Clarence went to Caleis, and there wedded Isabell one of the daughters of the Carle of Marwicke. Sir Iohn Coniers knight, Robert Hilliard, who named himselfe Robin of Ridale, and other, gathered an host of 2000. men in the North, against whom king Edward sent W. Herbert late made Carle of Penbroke, with 18000. Welchmen, and Humfrey Stafford of Southwicke, late made Carle of Deuon, with 6000. good archers, which two Carles falling out for lodging in the towne of Banbury, Humfrey Stafford departed with his power, whereby G. Herbert and Ric. Herbert his brother were overcome and taken by them of the north, and 5000. (saith Hall) of the Welchmen slain in a plaine called Danes moze nere to the towne of Edgocote, three miles from Banbury, the 26. of July. The men of name slaine of the Welch party, were sir Roger Vaughan knight, Henry ap Morgan, T. ap Richard Vaughan Esquire, W. Herbert of Bzecknocke Esquire, Watkin Thomas sonne to Rog. Vaughan, Inan ap Iohn ap Meridick, Dauid ap Iankin ap Limorik, Harrison ap Pikton, Iohn Done of Kidwelly, Rice ap Morgan ap Viston, Iankin Perot ap Scores Burg, Iohn Euerard of Penbroke shire, Iohn Courtor of Hereford. The northren men of name slaine were, sir Henry Latimer sonne and heire to the Lord Latimer, sir Roger Pigot knight, Iames Coniers sonne and heire to sir Iohn Coniers knight,  
Oliuer



Oliuer Audley Esquire, Th. Wakes sonne and heire to W. Mallery Esquire: Richard Wooduile Lord Riwers with Iohn his sonne were taken in the forest of Deane, and brought to Portsmouth, where they with sir W. Herbert and Richard his brother were all foure beheaded by the commaundement of George Duke of Clarence and the Earle of Warwike. T. Herbert was slain at Bristow. T. Stafford was by the commons taken at Bridge water and beheaded. King Edward was taken at Ulnay, a village beside Portsmouth, by the Archbishop of Yorke, and brought to Warwike Castell, and thence to Yorke, from whence by faire promises he escaped, and came to London.

King Edward  
taken prisoner.

The 9. of September, Humfrey Newill knight, and Charles his brother were taken by the Earle of Warwike, and beheaded at Yorke, king Edward being present. In the moneth of March, the Lord Willoughby, Rich. Lord Wels, sir Robert his sonne, sir Tho. Delaband, sir Tho. Dimocke the kings Champion, drave out of Lincolnshire sir Tho. Burgh a knight of the kings house, pulled downe his place, and toke all his goods and cattell, and with 30000. of the commons, cried king Henry. King Edward gaue Lord Wels his pardon, and sent for him, and hauing him in custody, commaunded him vpon paine of death, to cause the Lincolnshire men to lay downe their host, and so he wrote, but all in vaine: whereupon the Lord Wels his head was cut off. King Edward disperfed the Lincolnshire men with his ordinance, and slue many of them: sir Robert Wels, sir Thomas Delaband, & sir Thomas Dimocke were taken and beheaded beside Stamford the 13. of March: and the 19. day the Lord Willoughby was beheaded at Doncaster.

1470.

An. reg. 10.  
King Edward  
pardoneth, and  
beheadeth the  
Lord Wels.

King Edward comming to Hampton, caused Iohn Tiptoft Earle of Worcester (and Constable of England for terme of his life) to sit in iudgement vpon Clapham, and other Gentlemen taken in the ships, at a skirmish of Southampton, where to the number of twenty persons gentlemen and peomen were drawne, hanged and headed: and after hanged by the legs on a gallowes of a paire of butts length, and then hauing stakes put in their fundaments, their heads were set on those stakes (an horrible spectacle) and so suffered to hang a long time after, to wit, till the 15. of May. The Duke of Clarence, and the Earle of Warwike fled into France, where they made a mariage betwixt Prince Edward sonne to king Henry the first, and one of the Earle of Warwikes daughters. At this mariage was concluded, that king Henry should raigne againe, and Prince Edward after, and for lacke of their heires George Duke of Clarence, and his heires, &c.

Tiptoft Earle  
of Worcester  
cruell.

George Duke  
of Clarence, &  
the Earle of  
Warwike fled  
into France.

The 13. day of September, George Duke of Clarence, Jasper Earle of Penbroke, Richard Earle of Warwike, the Earle of Orford, with the baronard Fauconbridge, and many other arrived at Plimmouth, and another sort at Dartmouth, of whom the Earle of Penbroke went into Wales, the other toward Excester, proclaiming in the name of King Henry, that all men betwixt the ages of 16. & 60. should be ready to assist the said Lords on the behalfe of King Henry, against King Edward. Also on the sunday next after the feast of Saint Michaell the Archangell Doctor Godard preaching at Pauls crosse, declared by the reading of bills and diuers other argumens

George Duke  
of Clarence  
and other bar-  
ons arrived at Plim-  
mouth.

Doctor Go-  
dard preached  
at Pauls  
crosse against  
K. Edward.

and

and pꝛoves, that Henry was true and lawfull king of England, and not king Edward. Moreover, the Marques Mountacute, who had gathered a fire thousand men in king Edwards name, and was come nere vnto the said Edward, he told them how king Edward had serued him: first, making him Earle of Northumberland, and after giuing the same earldome to Thomas Percy, made him marques Mountacute, allowing him a Pies nest to maintaine it withal: wherefoze he would leaue to serue him, & take part with the Earle of Marwike his brother. Whereof when king Edward vnderstood, he fled from his host, besides Nottingham, and the third day of October, he with the Lord Riuers, Lord Hastings his chamberlaine, the Lord Say, and other to the number of seuen or eight Carles, took shipping at Lin, and sailed to ward the Duke of Burgogne his brother in law.

R. Edward  
fled beyond  
the seas.  
Phil. Comine-  
us.

The Quene  
tooke sanctuar-  
y at West-  
minster.  
Kentishmen  
robbed the  
Flemmings,  
and chased  
them out of  
London.  
The tower  
of London  
yelded to the  
mayor of Lon-  
don.

The Quene had befoze that, to wit, on the first of October stolne secretly in the night out of the Tower of London by water to Westminster, and there taken sanctuary. This time was great watch kept in the City of London: for the Kentishmen had assembled themselves in great companies, and so had come to the outer part of the Citie, as to Ratclif, Saint Katherine, Southwarke, and other the suburbs, and many of them were entred the citie, where they robbed the Flemmings at Blanchapleton, and other places, making them to fle out of the citie with sorrow ynough.

George Duke  
of Clarence the  
Earle of war-  
wike & other  
restored King  
Henry.

On Wednesday following, the tower of London was yelded to the Mayor and his bretheren the Aldermen, who forthwith entred the same, and deliuered king Henrie of his imprisonment, and lodged him in the Kinges lodging. On the Friday following came to London the Archbishop of Poike, brother to the Earle of Marwike, the lord Pzior of Saint Johns, and other to the number of two thousand men of armes. On the morrow following, came the Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Marwike, the bassarde Fauconbridge, with other to the number of foure thousand men. On the first daye of October the duke of Clarence, the Earle of Marwike, the archbishop of Poike, the lord of Saint Johns, with other entred the tower of London, and king Henrie being there prisoner nigh the space of nine yeres, they elected him to be their lawfull king, and forthwith rode with him through London to the Bishoppes pallace, where hee rested till the 13. of October, on which day hee went a pꝛocession crowned in Paules Church: the Earle of Marwike bare his traine, and the earle of Drford his sword, &c.

King Edward was proclaimed vsurper of the crowne, and Iohn Tiptoft earle of Worcester beinge found in the top of an high tre in the forrest of Walsbridge in the county of Huntingdon, was brought to London at parliament arrested and condemned to death by sir Iohn Vere earle of Drford, and beheaded at the tower hill, and after buried at the Blackfriars.

Quene Elizabeth wife to Edward the fourth, being in the sanctuarie at Westminster, was deliuered of a pꝛince on the fourth of Nouember, who was after king Edward the fifth.

1472.  
Prince Edward  
born in the sanctu-  
ary.

King Edward with the Lord Hastings, the lord Say, nine hundred Englishmen, and three hundred Flemmings, would haue landed in Essex, but there

there the Earle of Driford brother put them off, and after hee landed soze weather-beaten at Ravenspoyne, within Humber on Holdernesse, and there rose on him Holdernesse me, whose captaine was sir Iohn Westerdale a priest, after cast into the Marthalsea at London. As King Edward passed the country, he shewed the earle of Northumberlands letters and scale, that sent for him, saying, that he came to claime no title of the crowne, but only his dukedome of Yorke, nor would not haue done afoze, but at the erecting of the earle of Warwicke, & cried in euery place, king Henry, & prince Edward, wearing an Estrich feather prince Edwards liuery. King Edward came to Nottingham, where sir William Stanley, sir William Norris, and diuers other brought him men, so that hee had then 4000. or moze. Then Edward marched toward Leicester, where the earle of Warwick and marques Mountacute had 4000. men, and would haue fought with king Edward, but that hee had receiued letters from the Duke of Clarence, that he should not fight untill he came. Whereupon hee keeping Leicester still, suffered Edward to march toward London. A little out of Warwicke the duke of Clarence with 7000 men meeting with king Edward, agreed to him and brake al the promises made in France. King Edward coming to London, by master Vrsuicke the Recorders means, and others, entred into the bishop of Londons palace by a posterne, and there toke king Henry and the archbishop of Yorke, and sent them both to the tower on Maundy thursday.

The Earle of Warwicke, the Duke of Excester, marques Mountacute, and the earle of Driford, with many knights, came with their host toward Barnet: wherefoze king Edward toke king Henry with him, and preoccupied the towne of Barnet all the night: the Earle of Warwicke and his retinue remained on the plaine without the towne, shooting guns one at the other. And in the morning being Easter day, and the 14. of Aprill, they fought in a thicke mist from fower of the cloke in the morning til ten, and diuers times the earle of Warwicks men supposed that they had got the victory of the field, but it happened that the earle of Drifords me had a scar with streames both before and behind on their liueries, and King Edwards men had the sun with streames on their liuery: whereupon the Earle of Warwicks men, by reason of the mist not well discerning the badges so like, shot at the Earle of Drifords men that were on their owne part, and then the earle of Driford and his men cried treason, and fled with eight hundred men. The marques Mountacute was priuily agreed with K. Edward, and had gotten on his liuery, but one of his brothers the Earle of Warwicks men espying this, fell vpon him and killed him.

The earle of Warwicke seeing his brother dead, and the Earle of Driford fled, lept on a horse to fly, and coming to a woode where was no passage, two of king Edwards men came to him, killed him, and spoiled him to the naked skin. Sir William Tyrrell knight was killed on the earle of Warwikes part. The Duke of Excester fought manfully and was dispoiled, wounded, & left for dead from seuen in the morning til fower of the cloke in the after-noon, and then being brought to a seruants house of his there-  
by

Edward the fourth landed at Ravenspoyne.  
*An. reg. 11.*

George of Clarence agreed with his brother Edward the fourth.  
King Henric againe sent to the tower.

Barnet fi. 10.

by called Ruthland, he had a chirurgion, and after was conueyed into Westminister sanctuary. Were slaine on King Edwards party, Humfrey Boucher Lord Cromwell, Henry Boucher sonne and heire to the Lord Barons both buried at Westminister: sir Iohn Lile was there slaine, also Th. a Par & Iohn Milwater Esquires to R. Duke of Glocester were there slaine: and on both parts to the number of foure thousand, which were buried on the same plaine halfe a mile from Barnet, where after a chappell was builded in memory of them.

Iohn Rastall.

The morow after Easter day, were the bodies of the Earle of Warwike and the Marques Mountacute laid naked in Pauls Church in London, that all men might see them, for the space of thre or foure daies, and then buried at William Priory in Barkshire; the Lord Barons was reverently buried in the friers Augustines Church at London. King Henry with the Archbishop of Yorke, were sent to the Tower of London.

Battell of  
Tewkesbury.  
Liber Tewx.  
Prince Edward  
sonne to  
Henry the first,  
cruelly slaine.

At this time Quene Margaret, and Prince Edward her sonne had lien on the sea 17. daies letted with foule weather, and on Easter day at even they landed with their French pay at Weymouth, and so came to Excester, from thence to Tewkesbury, and pitched their field by Seneerne. Edward the fourth being come from London, fought with prince Edward at Tewkesbury on the fourth of May, toke Quene Margaret prisoner with prince Edward her sonne, whom cruelly he smote on the face with his gantlet, and after his servants slue him. Edmond Duke of Somerset, and sir Hugh Courtney fled from Prince Edward & lost him the field. There was slaine Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, Lord Iohn of Somerset, Lord Wenlocke, sir Edmond Hamden, sir William Whittingham, sir William Vaus, sir Nicholas Harvie, sir Iohn Deluis, sir William Filding, sir Iohn Leukenor, sir VV. Lirmonth, sir Iohn Vrman, sir T. Seamer, sir VV. Rowse, sir Thomas Henry. King Edward entring a Church in Tewkesbury with his sword drawn, a Priest brought the sacrament against him, and would not let him enter untill he had granted his pardon to these that follow: Edmond Duke of Somerset, Iohn Bouge Strother Lord of Saint Iohns, sir Humfrey Audley, sir Geruis of Clifton, sir VVilliam Grimesby, sir VVilliam Carie, sir Henry Rose, sir Thomas Tresham, sir VVilliam Newbrough, knights, Henry Tresham, VValter Courtney, Iohn Florie, Lewes Miles, Robert Iackson, Iames Gower sword bearer to Prince Edward, Iames Deluis sonne and heire to sir Iohn Deluis: all these, where they might haue escaped, carried in the Church (trusting in the kings pardon) from saturday till munday, when they were taken out and beheaded.

King Edward  
granted par-  
don to many  
and after cut  
off their heads

Thomas the  
bassard.

About this time sir VValter VVroitle, and sir Geffrey Gates knights, governors of Calcis, sent sir George Broke knight from Calcis with thre hundred souldiers, to Thomas the bassard Fauconbridge, Captaine of the Earle of Warwikes pause, willing him to raise the countie of Kent, and to go to London, there to take king Henry out of the Tower, and then to go against King Edward.

The fourteenth day of May, Thomas the bassard with a riotous compa-  
nie



ny of shipmen, and other of Essex and Kent, came to London, where being denied passage through the city, he set upon Bishops gate, Aldgate, London bridge &c. along the Thames side, shooting arrowes and guns into the city, fired the suburbs, and burnt more than 60. houses, wan the boltworks at Aldgate, and entered the city, but the porteclose being let down, such as had entered were slain, and then the citizens pursued the rest so far as Stratford and Blackwall, slaying many, and took many prisoners. Thomas the bassard went from London westward, as far as Kingstone upon Thames, to prosecute R. Edward, but the Lord Scales, with Nicholas Faunt Maioz of Canterbury, by faire words caused Fauconbridge to returne to Blackheath in Kent, from whence in the night he stole from the host with 600. horsemen to Rochester, and so to Sandwich, where he abode the kings coming.

The one and twentieth of May king Edward came to London with thirtie thousand men: and the same night king Henry was murdered in the Tower of London: On the morrowe he was brought through Coznehill, from the Tower with a great companie of men bearing weapons as they should haue led him to some place of execution, to S. Paules church in London, in an open coffin bare faced, where he bled: thence he was caried to the Blache Friers, and there bled: and thence to Chersey Abbey in a bote, where he was then buried, but since by king Richard the third, in the second yere of his raigne, removed to Windsor, where hee was buried without the chancell, at the south doore of the quire of Windsor chappell, where he was worshipped by the name of holy king Henrie: whose redde hat of velvet was thought to heale the head-ach of such as should put it on their heads, there he rested for a time, but nowe his tombe being taken thence, it is not (commonly) knowne what is become of his bodie.

Thus ended the king his transitorie life, hauing enjoyed as great prosperitie, as fauourable fortune could afford, and as great troubles on the other side, as the frowning coulde power out: yet in both states hee was patient, and vertuous, that hee maie bee a patterns of most perfect vertue, as hee was a worthie example of Fortunes inconstancie: he was plaine, bright, farre from fraude, wholie giuen to prayer, reading of Scriptures, and almes-deedes, of such integritie of life, that the Bishop which had bene his confessor, tenne yeres, auouched that he had not all that time committed anie mortall crime: So continent as suspicion of vnchast life neuer touched him: and ha-ving in Christmasse a shewe of yong women with their bare breastes laide out, presented before him, he immediately departed, with these wordes, fie, fie, for shame, forsooth you bee to blame: before his marriage hee liked not that women shoulde enter into his Court, and for this respect hee committed his two brethren by the mothers side, Iaspar and Edmond, to most honest and vertuous Prelates, to bee brought vp. So farre he was from couetousnesse, that when the executors of his uncle the Bishoppe of Winchester, surname the rich Cardinall, would haue giuen to him two thousand pounde, hee plainly refused it, willing them to discharge the will of the departed, and woulde scarcely condescende at length to accept the same summe of money

King Henry murdered.

Henry the first his exercise.

Continency of Henry the first.

Henry the first not couetous. Henry Newbold Cardinal gave 2000 pound toward the Colledges.

As a

toward

Henry the first  
his othe.  
Pitifulnes &  
parience of  
the first.

laying of th. the  
first.

Edw the 4. en-  
tered London.

Aldermen of  
London made  
knights.

Banarets  
made.

toward the endowing of his Colledges in Cambridge and Eaton: he was so religiouslie affected (as the time then was) that on principall Holydaies, hee would weare sackcloth next his skinne. Wh he vsed none, but in most earnest matters these words: forsooth, and forsooth; he was so pittifull, that when coming from Saint Albons, hee saue the quarter of a traytour against his crowne ouer Cripple gate, he willed it to be taken awate, with these words: I will not haue anie Christian so cruellie handled for my sake; manie greate offences hee willinglie pardoned, and receiuing at a time a greate blowe by a wicked man, which compassed his death, hee onlie saide, forsooth, forsooth, yee doo folwie to smite a King annointed so. Another also which thrust him in the side with a sword, when hee was prisoner in the Tower, was by him pardoned, when hee was restored to his state and kingdome: not long before his death, being demaunded why hee had so long helde the Crowne of Englande vniustlie, hee replied, my Father was King of Englande, quettlie enioying the Crowne all his Reigne, and his father my Grandfere was also King of Englande; and I, euen a Child in my Cradle, was proclaymed and Crowned King without anie interruption, and so helde it fortie peeres well neere, all the States dooing homage vnto mee, as to my Auncellores; wherefore I maie saie with King David: The Lotte is fallen vnto mee in a faire grounde, yea, I haue a goodlie heritage, my helpe is from the Lorde which saucth the vprighte in hearte. Hee reigned eyght and thirte peeres, five monethes and odde dayes. And after his redemption of the crowne five monethes; he liued 52. peeres, hauing by his wife one only son, called Edward Prince of Wales, deceased as ye haue heard; hee was of seemly stature, of body slender, his face beautifull, of his owne naturall inclination, hee abhorred all the vices as well of the body as of the soule.

And nowe to returne to king Edward. At his comming to London, the Mayor, Aldermen and other citizens meeting him one mile without the Citie, to witte, betwixt Iseldon, and Sorse ditch, in the high waie hee made knights these Aldermen, Sir Iohn Stokton Mayor of London, Sir Ralph Verney, Sir Richard Lee, Sir Iohn Yong, Sir William Taylor, Sir George Ireland, Sir William Stocker, Sir Matthewe Philip, Sir William Hampton, Sir Thomas Stalbrok, Sir Iohn Crosby, Sir Bartlemew James, Sir T. o: Richard Vrsuicke, Recorder of London, all these he made knights, in reward of good seruice the Londoners had don to him. On the 24. day of May king Edward after he had made banarets, Sir Thomas Grey, Sir Richard Hastings, Sir Iohn Courtney, Sir Nicholas Latimer, Sir Ralph Hastings, Sir Roger Tegets, Sir Iohn Stanley, Sir Simon Mountfort, Sir Iohn Henningham, Sir William Stanley, &c. he toke his iourny into Kent, with all his army following the bastard, and other his complices to suppress the m, if they were in anie place assembled to resist him; but after they were once dispersed, they durst not shew the m again in armor, those onelie excepted that were withdrawne vnto Sandwiche with the bastard, which for the more parte were mariners, an 8. or 9. hundred, with the le he kept the town, hauing in the haven 47. ships great and smal vnder his gouernance; but the R. appoaching, they sent to him for pardon, which the king granted, and being

being in the cite of Canterburie, he sent unto Sandwich his brother Richard duke of Gloucester, to receiue them to mercie, together with all the shippes, which they deliuered: whereupon king Edward not onlie pardoned the bassard, but made him knight, and Vice-admirall. The Lord Denham and Sir Iohn Fog, with other were left in Kent, to sit in iudgement of the rebels of Kent, Sussex, and Essex, whereof were a greate number punished by the Purse, some 200. marks, some 200. l. some more, some lesse. Thus king Edward returned out of Kent with much good, and little loue. Nicholas Fant spaior of Canterburie (that had serued the earle of Marwike, and had of late perswaded the bassard to depart from his offe, and diuers other of his countrymen) were hanged and quartered, and the heads of Spising and Quinten were set vpon Aldegate of London.

On the 4. day of June, George Neuell archbishop of Yorke, and brother to the late earle of Marwike, and the Marques Mountacute, was deliuered out of the Tower of London, and discharged of his imprisonment.

The 1. of July Edward the son of king Edward, was made prince of Wales, duke of Lancaster, and earle of Cornewall.

In the moneth of September Thomas the bassarde Fauconbridge, was taken at Southampton by Richard Duke of Gloucester, hee was conueied to the Castell of Middleham in Yorke shire, and there beheaded, notwithstanding that hee had the kings pardon, his head was sent to London, and set on London bridge.

Th. the bassard  
lost his head.

The earle of Penbroke and of Richmond fled into Bytaine.

The 12. of November the lady Anne the kings sister, was diuorced from Henry Holland duke of Excester, by meanes of her owne sute.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Westminster, where hee with his queene on the same feast daie late crowned, and likewise on the Twelste daie the king was againe crowned, and went on procession crowned, but the queene was not then crowned, because she was neere her time of deliuerance, but she went on procession with him; the king kept his estate in the White-hall, with his Prelates and noble estates, where also dined the spaior of London, the aldermen, and manie of the wealthy citizens.

1472

This yere diuers boznes brast out of the earth, signifying great troubles to ensue, as was iudged; amongst the which boznes one was seauen miles, from Saint Albons, at Parkate, the water was called *Wao Spere*, or *Wao Water*, for that the running thereof was interpreted to signifie wo to come, as dearth, pestilence, or great bat taile; this water had runne against euerie battell befoze fought, but neuer so much as nowe this yere, for it beganne on the 19. date of February, and continued running till the 14. of June in the yere next following. Also diuers other boznes brake out this yere, as at Leueham in Kent, and at Canterburie, called *Spaelborn*; at Cropdon in Surrey. Also 6. miles besides Dudley castle in a place called *Hungerniele*, which last when it betokeneth battaile, runneth foule, and troublly water, and when it betokeneth dearth or pestilence it runneth cleere, but that yere it ran foule. There is also a pit in Langley parke in Kent, which is alway full of water, be the weather neuer so dry, except against battel, and then it will be dry, and so it was this yere.

Boznes brast  
out of the earth.

An. reg. 12.

Ambassadors  
sent into Bur-  
gundy.

This yere were sent Ambassadors from king Edward to the Duke of Burgoigne, who landed at Bridges on the 2. of Aprill, where they were honorably received without the tolene by the lord Grantehouse.

The names of the Ambassadors were, Sir John Scot knight marshall of Caleis, master William Harclese Secretarie to the king, master John Russell Doctor and Archdeacon of Barkshire, master Richard Marten Archdeacon of London, sir John Yong knight, and merchant of London, and sir John Crosby merchant of London: on the 4. of Aprill they were conveyed on horsebacke to the Dukes lodging, &c. They passed from thence to the Duke of Brittain, to haue gotten there the two earles of Penbrooke and of Richmond.

Archbishop of  
Dorke spoiled,  
and sent to  
Wilson.

George Neuill Archbishop of Dorke, being at Windsor with king Edward on hunting, the king promised the Archbishop to come to the Dore (a place in Hartfordshire, which the Archbishop had purchased and builded commodiously) there to hunt and make merrie with him, whereupon the Archbishop taking his leaue of the king, went home to his manor of the Dore, and there made great provision for the king, and sent for much plate that he had hid, at the time of Barnet and Tewkesburie fieldes, and besides this, borrowed much of his friendes, and purueled for the king for two or thre daies meate, drinke, and lodging, as royally as hee could: but the date before the king had promised to haue come to the Dore, the king sodainly sent for the Archbishop to come to Windsor, where he was arrested of Treason, that he should helpe the earle of Dorset, and so sent to Caleis, and to Hames, where he continued long after prisoner: all which time the king kept the Archbishopricke in his owne handes. In this meane while Sir William Par knight, and Sir Thomas Vaughan Esquire, and other were sent to the Dore to seale all his goods for the king, which came there to the summe of 20000. l. and all other lordshippes and lands that the said Archbishop had within England, and all his stufte and riches.

Edward at this time brake the bishops miter, that had many rich stones, and made thereof a crowne for himselfe. Thomas Bylling chiefe Justice of the kings bench, and so continued till the first of Richard the third.

John Vere earle  
of Oxford kept  
St. Michaels  
mount.

Also Sir Io. Vere earle of Oxford, that had withdrauen himselfe from Barnet fiede, first into Scotland, after into France, then getting much goods on the Sea, landed in the West Countrey, and entered St. Michaels Mount, with 77. men, the last of September, whereon he was, by the kings appointment, besieged by Bodrigan and other, but with such fauor, that the earle renouallled the Mount. Then was Richard Fortescue Esquire for the bodie, and theriff of Corneshall sent thither to continue the siege, and king Edward sending pardons to the earles men, so long praised with them, that at the last if the Earle had not submitted himselfe to king Edward, he had bene taken of his owne men, and so Fortescue entring the Mount the 15. of Februarie, found him selfe prouough there to haue serued them till Midsummer after: John Vere earle of Oxford, the Lord Beaumont, two brothers of the saide Earle, and Thomas Clifford were brought prisoners to the king. The earle of Oxford was sent prisoner to Swines, where he remained so long as this king reigned. In all



all which time the Lady his wife might neuer come to him, or had anie thing to lue vpon, but that people of their charities would giue her, or what shee got by her needle.

In the moneth of September Lewes de Bruges Lord Gzanthuse, came into Englande from Charles Duke of Burgoigne, and on the thirtenth of October was created Earle of Winchester openlie in the Parliament chamber.

The sixte of October beganne a Parliament at Westminster by authority, whereby an aide was graunted to the king, towarde the charge of his Warres, which was leued of mens landes, as well of Lordes as of other.

1473

An. reg. 13.  
Parliament at  
Westminster.

The Duke of Burgoigne hauing great warres with the French king, sent Embassadors into Englande to requite king Edward his brother in lawe to make warre on the French king, vnto the which request king Edward easily granted, because hee wished to be reuenged on the French king, as of his enemye, for aiding the Earle of Marwike, Quene Margaret and her sonne Prince Edward, and their complices: whereupon he promised and also determined in the beginning of the next yere, to bring a great armie ouer to Caleis, and to invade the kingdome of France. And forthwith with all diligence prepared all thinges readie for his iourney, making many shiffes for the prouision of money to serue his turne. And because the last yere great summes of money were granted him by the Parliament, he deuised this shifte, to call asoforeshim a great number of the wealthiest sort of the people of his Realme, and to them declared his neede, and the requisite causes thereof, hee demaunded of euery of them some portion of money, which they sticke not to giue, and therefore the king willing to shewe that this their liberalitie was verie acceptable to him, hee called this grant of money, a Benenolence, notwithstanding that many grudged thereat, and called it a Paleuolence: but the king vsed such gentle meanes towarde them for their assistance in his necessitie, that they could not otherwise doe, but frankely yelde and giue him competent sums, therewith he prepared a great armie.

king Ed. prepared for his  
iourney into  
France.

This yere Henry Holland the Duke of Excester was found dead in the sea betwene Douer and Caleis, but howe he came there the certaintie could not be knowne.

King Edward hauing prepared his armie, led the same to Douer, from thence to crosse the seas to Caleis. The force that passed with him at this present was the greatest that euer came into France, most of them being horsemen, all in very good order well armed. All the nobles of the realme were there, a fewe excepted, they were fiftene hundred men of armes very well mounted, and the most of them barbed and richly trapped, after the manner of the French warres, and well accompanied with horsemen of their retinue, they were at the least fiftene thousand archers on horsebacke, and a great number of footemen and others, as well to pitch their tentes, whereof they were well furnished, as also to attend vpon their artillery, and inclose their campe, and

1474

*An. reg. 14.*

in all their army they had not one pledge. Besides this, were 3000. Englishmen appointed to land in Bypaine.

King Edward  
three weekes in  
passing between  
Douer and  
Caleis.

When king Edward came to Douer, the duke of Burgoygne to helpe his passage, sent 500. Boates of Holland, and Zeland, called cuts, which are flate and lowe, builde vertie commodiously for transporting of horses: but notwithstanding all this helpe they had from the Duke, and all the king of Englande coulde commande himselte, hee was aboute thre weekes in passing betweene Douer and Caleis, one ship of Cwe toke 2. or 3. of his small passengers. Before king Edward embarqued, he sent from Douer to the king of France one Herault alone called Garter a Norman borne, who brought a letter of defiance from the king of Englande, in vertie good language, and so excellentlie well penned, that mine Authour was perswaded it was neuer Englishmans doing. The contentes whereof were, that the king shoulde yelde unto him the realme of France, being his inheritance, to the end he might restore the cleargy and nobility to their ancient liberty, ease them of the great charges they sustained, and deliuer them of the miseries they were in, which if he refused to do, he protested what great mischief should ensue thereof, in maner and forme as in such cases is accustomed. The king read the letter softly to himselte, and afterwards all alone withdrew himselte into a Wardrobe, and commanded the Herault to be brought to his presence, to whome he made this answer,

First, that he knew well that the king of England had not passed the seas of his owne free motion, but by the perswasion of the duke of Burgundie, and the communalitie of England.

Secondly, that the summer was now almost past, and that the duke of Burgoygne was returned from Hunz, as a man discomfited and bitterlie vnfurnished of all things.

Thirdly, as touching the Constable (of France) he knew well (he said) that the intelligence with the king of England, because he had married his daughter: but would deceiue the king his master as he had him, notwithstanding all the great benefites that he had receiued of him, which hee then rehearsed, adding thereunto, that the saide Constable mente to liue in continuall dissimulation, and entertaine euerie man to make his profite of him.

Last of all, he alleaged to the Herault diuers reasons to perswade the king his master to peace, and gaue him with his owne hand 300. crownes, promising him a thousand more if the peace were concluded: further openly he gaue him for a present, a goodly peece of crimson velvet of thirtie els. The Herault answered, that he would travel the best he could for peace, and thought the king his master would easilie be wonn thereunto: but he willed the king of France, to send an Herault to the English campe to demand a safe conduct for certain Ambassadors, that hee woulde sende to the king of England, and to directe his letters to the Lord Howard, or to the Lord Stanley, and to himselte also to conueie his Herault. At one time in a maner both the king of England landed at Caleis, and the duke of Burgoygne departed from before Hunz, who in great haste rid straight to Caleis, to the said king with a very smal train, for he had sent his army to spoile the Countrey of Barrois and Lozaine. The king

of England departed from Calais in company of the duke, and passed through Bolloigne, & from thence marched to Peronne, where the duke gave the Englishmen but cold entertainment, for he caused the gates to be straightlie kept, and would suffer but few to enter, so that the greatest part of them lodged in the fields. After they were come to Peronne the Constable of France sent to the duke of Burgoyne one of his servants, by whome he excused himselfe for the withholding of S. Quintins, alleaging that if he had restored it hee could haue stood him in no steele in the Realme of France, for he should utterlie haue lost his credite and intelligence, but now seeing the king of England was come ouer in person, he promised to do hereafter all that the duke should command him, whereof the better to assure him, hee sent him a letter of credite to the declaration of the duke. Furthermoze he gaue the duke his faith in writing, to serue and succor him, his friends, and confederates, as well the king of England as others, against all men none excepted.

The duke deliuered the King of Englande his letter, and all the matter of credite, adding somewhat thereto of his owne heade: for hee assured the King, that the Constable would deliuer into his handes, both Saynt Quintins, and all his other places, which the King easilie beleueed, partly because hee had married the Constables piece, and partly because hee sawe him in so greate feare of the king of France, that hee thought hee durst not sayle his promise made to the Duke and him: and the Duke beleueed it also. But the Constable ment nothing lesse, for the feare hee was in of the French king was not so great that it could force him thus far, but he used still his wonted dissimulation.

The king of Englande reioycing at this message sente by the Constable, departed from Peronne with the duke of Burgoyne, towarde Saint Quintins, whereunto when hee approched, a greate Bande of Englishmen ranne before, thinking that the Belles should haue beene roong at their coming, and that the Citizens would haue receyued them with Crosse and Holie water, but when they dyelwe nare to the Towne, the Artillerie shot, and the souldeours issued forth to the skirmish, both on Horsebacke and on foote, so that two or thre Englishmen were slayne, and some taken: and in this state returned they in greate rage to their campe, murmuring against the Constable.

The next morning the duke of Burgondy would haue taken his leaue of the king of Englande to depart to his army in Barrois, promising to doe manvales in his fauor.

The French king sent a seruant of the Lorde Halles in the likenesse of an Herault, with a coate made of a Trumpets Banner, to the English campe, where when hee came, hee was brought to a Tente, and after dinner talked with the king: his message was chiefly grounded vpon the greate desire the king had of long time to bee in peace with the king of Englande, saying further, that since hee was crowned king of France, hee neuer had attempted anie thing against the king of Englande or his Realme.

Secondlie, he excused himselfe, for receiuing in times past the earle of Warwicke into his dominions, saying, that he did it only against the duke of Burgoigne and not him.

Further, he declared that the said duke of Burgoigne had for no other cause called him into Fraunce, but that by the occasion of his comming, he might conclude a better peace for himselfe with the king: and if happilie anie other furthered the matter, it was onelie to amend the broken estate of the ir owne affaires, and for their owne private commoditie: but as touching the king of Englands good successe, they were altogether careles thereof. He put him also in minde of the time of the yere, aheadging that winter approached, and likewise the great charges he sustained.

Lastlie hee saide, that notwithstanding a great number in Englande desired warre with Fraunce, yet if the king of Englande incline to peace, the king for his parte would condescende to such conditions as hee doubted not but hee and his Realme would allowe of: Finally, hee demaunded a safe conduct for certaine Ambassadors, to come well enformed of his masters pleasure.

The king of Englande and part of his nobles liking these ouertures better well, graunted to the Heraulde of Fraunce, as large a safe conduct as hee demanded, and gave him foure Nobles of Golde for a rewarde. He also sent an Englishe Heraulde with him to bring the like safe conduct. And in the next Morning in a Village nere to Amience, the Commissioners of both Princes mette, beeing these. For the king of Fraunce, the baronne of Bourbon Admirall of France, the Lord of Saint Pierre, and the Bishop of Carcuer, called Heberge: And for the king of Englande, the Lord Howard, one Challenger, and Doctor Morton. Many Articles of peace were treated of, but the last resolutions were these: That the French king should be paie to the king of Englande presentlie before his departure out of France, seuentie thousand Crownes, that the Dolphine should marrie king Edwardes eldest daughter, and that she should haue the Duchie of Guien, for her maintenance, or five thousand Crownes yerelie to be paid in the Tower of London, the space of nine yeres, which terme expired, the Dolphine should peaceablie enjoy the reuenues of the whole Duchie of Guien; and then the king of France to be cleerelie discharged of all paymentes to the king of England. Further it was decreed, that the two Princes should meet together, and bee sworn to the treatie, which meeting was obserued in a Towne called Picquigny, on the 29. of August.

The king of England upon receit of his mony, departed toward Caleis in great hast, fearing the duke of Burgoignes malice, and his subiects.

King Edward  
returning into  
England, landed  
at Dover.

At his departure he left for Hostages with the king of France, till his returne into England, the Lord Howard, and the master of his Horse called Sir John Cheyney. King Edward tooke Shipping at Caleis, and landed at Dover, and was receiued on the Blackheath by the Maior of London and his brethren in scarlet, and 500. commoners, all clad in Purrey, and so conueied to London through the city to Westminster, on the 28 of September.



The French king to compasse his purpose for the getting of the Constable into his handes, toke truce with the Duke of Burgoigne for nine yeres, as a contractour in the league, and not as a Prince alie. King Edward of Englande advertised hereof, sent ouer Sir Thomas Mountgomery to the French king offering to passe the seas againe the next sommer to aid him, and to make warre on the duke of Burgoigne, so that the French king shoulde paie to him 50000. Crownes for the losse which he should sustaine in his custome, by reason that the wooles of Calais, could haue no vent: and also paie halfe the charges, and halfe the wages of his souldiers and men of war. The French king thanked king Edward for his offer: but hee alleaged that the truce was already concluded, so that hee coulde not attempt any thing against him, without reproch to his honor: so Sir Thomas Mountgomery was with plate dispatched. There returned with him the Lord Howard, and Sir Iohn Cheyney, which were hostages with the French king, till the English armie were returned into Englund.

The eighteenth of Aprill, were inhaunted to the honor of knighthode, after the custome of Englund, in the time of peace, his eldest sonne Edward prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewall, and earle of Chester, his seconde sonne the Duke of Yorke, and with them the earle of Lincolnes sonne and heire, the Duke of Suffolke, the Lord Thomas Grey the quenes sonne, and Richard his brother: the earle of Shrewsburie: the earle of Wilshire, Master Edward Woodville: the Lord Neuill: the Lord Barkleys sonne and heire: the Lord Audeleys sonne and heire: the Lord Saint Amand: the Lord Stanley sonne and heire: the Lord Sturtons sonne and heire: the Lord Hastings sonne and heire: the Lord Ferrers of Chartleys sonne and heire: Master Harbert brother to the earle of Denbroke, Master Vaughan Brian chiefe Iudge: Littleton one of the Iudges of the Common pleas, Master Bodringham, Master Brian Stapleton, Kneut, Pilkinton, Ludlow, Charleton, &c. The same date the king created the Lord Thomas Marques Dorset before dinner, and so in the habit of a Marques aboue the habite of his knighthode, he beganne the table of knightes in Saint Edwardes Chamber. At that time hee ordained that the kinges chamberlaine shoulde go with the ancient and well nurtred knight to advertise and teach the order of knighthood, to the esquiers being in the baine. The king himselfe came in person and did honor to al the company with his noble counsell.

An. reg. 15.

knights made  
by the king.

Littleton.

King Edward hauing established all thinges in good order, both within his Realme and without, was yet troubled in his minde, for that the earle of Richmond, one of the blood of king Henry the first on the mothers side, was alive, and at libertie in Bytaine: therefore he sent ouer to Francis duke of Bytaine, one Doctor Scillington, and other Ambassadors laden with no small sum of golde. These Ambassadors declaring their message, affirmed that the king their master, would to haue the earle of Richmond onlie to soine with him in alliance by marriage, and so to plucke by al the remnants of discord, betwixt him and them of the contrary faction. The duke thought at the first, that king Edward would glue to the earle his eldest daughter the lady Elizabeth in marriage, he therefore consented to deliuer him, and receiued of the English orators a great sum of money:

king Edward  
promised a  
great summe  
against Henry  
earle of Rich-  
mond.

money: but ere they were embarqued with their pray, the Duke being aduertised, that the Earle of Richmond was not so earnestly sought for, to be coupled in marriage with king Edwards daughter, as to haue his head parted from his bodie with an axe, and therefore caused his treasurer Peter Landoyse to conuey the said earle of Richmond into a sanctuary at S. Malo, where the English Ambassadors then lay, staying for a conuenient winde: who complained that they were euill vsed to be spoiled both of their money and merchandise: yet because the matter was so handled, that it seemed the earle escaped into sanctuarie through their owne negligence, after that they had retriued him, they were answered that the earle should be safely kept, either in sanctuarie, or else as a prisoner in the Dukes house, and thus the king purchased for his money, the keeping of his money for a little time.

The 2. day of Nouember was bozne the kings daughter named Anne at Westminster.

1476

King Edward was somewhat displeased with the chance about the Earle of Richmond, but trusting that the D. of Bypaine would according to promise keepe him from doing any grieuance to him, put all doubts thereof out of his minde, and began to study how to keepe a liberall Princely house, and thereupon stozing his chesles with money hee employed no small portion in good house keeping.

John Duke of Norfolke deceased, on the tuesday after the feast of the Epiphanie, the 15. of E. 4.

An. reg. 16.  
Order of Saint  
Georges feast.

This yere King Edward kept the feast of S. George, and order of the Cartier at Windsor in most royall manner, first on the saturday before none, the king being Soueraigne with the knights of the order, entered the chapter within the castle, which Chapter was also continued in the afternoon, in this manner, towards euensong time, being all mounted on horsebacke in their habites of blew, rode to the chapter, from whence they went to the quire on foot, where they remained while euensong was done, and then rode againe to the Castle (in their habites as afoze) where they had their voide of spectacles, &c.

On Sunday morning, the Soueraigne with the knights rode to mattens, which being ended, they entered the chapter, from whence they went to the Deans house to breakfast, and after to the quire againe euery man to his own stall. Then came the Quene with the Lady Elizabeth her eldest daughter, the Dutchesse of Suffolke the kings sister, the Lady Marchionesse of Pontague, the Lady Marchionesse of Dorset, the lady Hastings, &c. all in one liuery of murrey embzodered with garters, except the Marchionesse of Pontague, who rode in a gowne of silke, and these Ladies were placed in the rode last. And in the same order and habite came the Soueraigne, and knights, with the Quene and her Ladies in the after none to euensong. The King this day dined in his great chamber, on whose right hand sate Richard Bewchamp bishop of Salisbury, Chancellor of the order, and on the left hand the D. of Clarence, and the D. of Suffolke. At a side table sate the Marquesse of Dorset, the Carles of Arundale, Northumberland, and Essex, the L. Maltrauers, the Earle Dowglas, the

the Lordes Dudley, Ferrers, and Howard, and Sir Iohn Afkeley knight all on one side. And at a table on the other side, sate Maister Dudley Deane of Saint Georges chappell, and with him all on one side, the Chanons of the same chappell in their mantles of murrey, and rundlet of S. George.

On the Sunday the Soueraigne and knights of the order entred the chapter, where they had a short communication, fro whence they went to the quire, where every knight stood before his stall whiles the king had offered a rich sute of vestments, and certaine coapes of the same sute, which the deane receined: that done, the k. went to his stall, and every knight sate him downe in their owne stals, till the offertory, and then the Marques Dorset and the D. of Suffolke offered the sword of Iohn Mowbray late D. of Suffolke deceased, the lordes Maltrauers and Howard, his helme: which being done, & obellance made, every knight stood before their stals, while the k. had offered, and then euerie knight offered according to his stall, to wit, the D. of Clarence, the Marques Dorset, the Duke of Yorke, the earle of Arundell, the earle of Essex, and the D. of Suffolke, the Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Dowglas, the L. Maltrauers, and the L. Howard, the L. Dudley, the Lord Ferrers, Sir Iohn Atley. The masse being ended, they went to the chapter, and thus the feast was ended, from the which were absent of the order out of the Realme, the k. of Sicell, the king of Portugal, the D. of Burgoyne, the D. of Urbin, the Lord Rivers, the lord Scrope, the lord Dursle. Absent within the Realme, the Prince, the D. of Gloucester, the Duke of Buckingham, the lord Hastings, and sir William a Par.

This yere Charles D. of Burgundy was slaine by the Switzers, before the towne of Nancy in Loraine, after whose death the French k. won all the townes which the said D. had holden in Picardy and Artois, and because the towne of Boloigne, and county of Bolongnos appertained by right of inheritance unto the L. Bertram de la Toure Earle of Aunergne, the French king bought of him his right and title in the same, and recompenced him with other lands in the county of Fforestis, and in other places. And because the forenamed towne and county were holden of the earledome of Artois, he changed the tenor, and auowed to helde the same towne and county of our lady of Boloigne, and thereof did homage in the great church of Boloigne, offering there an heart of gold, weping 2000. crownes, ordaining further, that his heires and successors at their entrie into their estates, by themselves or their deputies, should offer an heart of like waight and valew, as a reliefe and homage for the same towne and country.

This yere T. Burdet an esquire of Arrow in Warwickshe, son to sir Nicholas Burdet (who was great butler of pormandy in Henrie the firsts daies) was beheaded (as was said) for a word spoken, in this sort. k. Edw. in his porgresse hunted in T. Burdets parke at Arrow, and slew many of his deere, amongst the which one was a white bucke, whereof Th. Burdet made great account, & therefore when he vnderstood thereof, he wished the bucks head in his belly that moued the king to kill it. Which tale being told to the king, Burdet was apprehended and accused of treason, for wishing the bucks head hoyns & all in the kings belly.

1477

An. reg. 17.  
Burdet be-  
headed.  
Enguccant.

Register of the  
grey Friars.

belly. This was the report, and true it is (though some have said the contrary) that there was a park at Arrow; for king Edward the third, in the seventh yere of his raigne, gaue licence to Rob. Burdet to inclose his wood of Arrow into his parke (as appeareth by patten in record:) And the Record also sheweth that the saide Thomas Burdet was accused of poysoning, forcerie and inchantment, for the which he was attainted, by parliament condemned, drowne from the Tower of London to Tibborne, and there beheaded, and then buried in the Grey Friars church at London. This Thomas Burdet (by licence obtained of Edward the fourth in the twelfth yere of his raigne) alienated his lands from his eldest sonne, and true heire, to others at his pleasure, whereof he after soze repented him: And being drowne from the Tower toward his ende (as is afore shewed) selling his said eldest sonne in west Cheape, ouer against the hospitall of Thomas Becket, he procured himselfe to be staked, and there asked his sonne forgiveness, confessing himselfe grieuouse to haue offended God, in wronging him of his inheritance, which he toke to be the cause that God had so iustly plagued him, by the Princes pleasure, to come to such an ende.

Record Tower.

1478

Parliament  
at Westminster,  
with the  
attainder of  
George D. of  
Clarence.

King Edward kept his royall feast of Christmas at Westminster.

The 15. of January king Edward the fourth solemnized the matrimoniall feast of his son Richard the Duke of Yorke, and the Lady Anne daughter and sole heire to Iohn Mowbray Duke of Norfolk with great solemnitie. By which marriage, the said Richard was created Duke of Yorke and Norfolk, Earle marshall, Warren and Pottingham.

The 16. day of January began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein George D. of Clarence king Edwards brother, was attainted of treason: In the which attainder (which I haue read) is declared, that the said George Duke of Clarence, against the king his soueraigne Lord, had caused diuers his seruants to informe the people, that Thomas Burdet his servant (which was lawfully and truly attainted of treason) was wrongfully put to death. To his seruants of such disposition he gaue large sums of money, venison, &c. therewith to assemble the kings subiects, to feast them, and then to induce them to beleue, that the saide Burdet was wrongfully executed. He also by such his seruants, laboured to make the people beleue that the king wrought by Magicke, and used the craft to poyson his subiects, such as him pleased, to the great disclander of the king, and encouraging his subiects against him. And ouer that, the said D. bring in full purpose to exalt himselfe and his heires to the regaltie and crowne of England, and cleerely in opinion to put aside from the same for ever, the king and his heires, vpon one the falsest and most vnnatural coloured pretence that man might imagine, falsely and vntruly published, that the king was a bastard, and not legitimate to raigne. And to continue this his most malicious and traitterous purpose after this seditious language among the people, he induced diuers of the kings natural subiects to be sworn vpon the blessed sacrament, to be true to him and his heires, none exception reserved of their allegiance: and after the same oth so made, he shewed to many, that the king had taken his liuelode from him, and his men were disher-

ted,



ted, but he would indenor to get them their inheritance, as hee would do his owne: hee thewed also, that the king intended to consume him, in like sort as a candle consumeth in burning, whereof hee would in brieft quite him. And o-  
 ver this, the saide Duke got an eremplication under the great seale of Henry  
 the first late king, wherein was contayned, that if the saide Henry and Edward  
 his sonne died without issue male, that the said Duke and his heires should bee  
 kings, &c. Thus much for his attaindoz.

*An. reg. 18.*

And on the 11. of March, after hee had offered his owne masse penie in the  
 tower of London, hee made his ende in a vessel of Spalme sey, and was after  
 buried at Tetoksburie, by his wife sometime daughter to the Earle of War-  
 wicke, which being with child died of poison but a little before him.

Duke of Cla-  
 rence put to  
 death.

This George Duke of Clarence left behind him two yong infants begot on  
 his wife, the daughter of Richard earle of Marwike, which children succeeded  
 their ancestozs in semblable euill chance: for Edward his heire, whom king Ed-  
 ward had created earle of Marwike, was 24. yeres after in the time of Henry  
 the 7. attainted of treason, and on the tower hill lost his head: And Magaret his  
 sole daughter, married to sir Richard Pole knight, and by Henry the 8. restored  
 to the earldome of Salisburie, was attainted 62. yeres after her father had  
 suffered, and was in the tower beheaded: in whose person died the surname of  
 Plantaginet. This yere was a great mortality and death of the pestilence, not  
 onlie in London, but in diuers partes of the realme, which began in the latter  
 end of September, in the yere last before passed, and continued all this yere til  
 the beginning of Nouember, which was about 14. monethes, in the which space  
 died innumerable of people in the said cite and else where.

1479  
 Great pesti-  
 lence.

William Grey bishop of Ely deceased at Downham, and was buried at Ely,  
 betwæne two pillars of marble: he gaue much money toward the reparati-  
 on of the great keple at Ely, John Morton doctoꝝ of the ciuill lawe succeeded him  
 in that Bpshopricke.

This yere king Edward more then he was accusdmed, began to search for  
 the seitures of penall lawes and statutes, as well of the chiefe of his nobilitie,  
 as of other gentlemen, being propretioꝝ of great possessions or abundant-  
 lie furnished with goods, likewise of merchants, and other inferioꝝ persons: by  
 reason whereof, it was of all men iudged that he would prooue hereafter a sore  
 and rigorous prince among his subjects: but this his new inuented practise, and  
 couetous meaning (by reason of foraine affaires, and abridgement of his  
 daies in this transitoꝝ life, which were within two yeres after consumed) toke  
 some but no great effect.

*An. reg. 19.*  
 Penall lawes &  
 statutes looked  
 to.

This yere king Edward began to kepe his seass of Chyffes nationtie at  
 Woking, but at fise daies end remoued from thence to Greene wich, where he  
 kept out the other part, with great roialtie.

1480

The 22. of February 5. notable theenes were put to death at London, for  
 robbing of Churches and other places, especially the Colledge of S. Martin le  
 grand in London, for the which thre of them were dꝛawne to the tower hill, and  
 there hanged and bzent, the other two were pressed to death.

Church robe-  
 bers hanged,  
 burned, and  
 pressed to death.

Ambassadors were sent to and fro betwixt the kinges of Englande and of  
 France,

*An. reg. 20.*

France, and still the French king fed the king of England with faire words, putting him in hope to match his sonne and heire the Dolphin with the Lady Elizabeth daughter to king Edward, according to the conclusions of agreement had and made priuily betwixt them, although in very deede hee meant nothing lesse: his embassadours euer made excuses if anie thing were amisse, and he vled to send change of Embassadours, so that if those which had bene here afore, and were returned, had saide, or promised any thing (though they were authorized so to do) which might turne to their masters hinderance, the other that came after mought excuse themselves by ignorance of that matter, affirming that they wanted commission once to talke or meddle with that matter, or if he perceiued that any thing was like to be concluded contrarie to his minde, for a shift, he would call his Embassadours home in great haste, and after send an other with new instructions, nothing depending on the old. Thus the French king by cloaking his inwarde determinate purpose, with great dissimulation and large promises, kept himselfe in friendship with the king of England, til he had wrought a great part of his will against the young Dukes of Burgoigne, which R. Edward would not haue suffered if hee had put any great doubt in the French kings faire promises, considering that the Crowne of France was in this meane time so much mozeased in dominions, to the great reinforcement of that Realme.

On the 9. of Nouember was bozne king Edwards thirde daughter, named Briget at Eltham, and was christened in the chappell there by the Bishop of Chichester.

1481

*Am. reg. 21.*

James king of Scots sent into England Ambassage, for to haue the Ladie Cicely King Edwards second daughter, to be married to his eldest son James Prince of Scotland, Duke of Rothesey, and Earle of Carlike. King Edward and his Councell, perceiuing that this affinitie should bee both honorable and profitable to the realme, did not onely grant to this his desire, but also before hand disbursed certaine sums of money, to the intent that the marriage should hereafter neither be hindered nor broken, with condition that if the said marriage proceeded not, then the prouost & merchants of the towne of Edenborow, should be bound for repayment of the saide summe againe. But King James was a man wedded to his owne will so much, that he could not abide any that would speake contrary to his fancie, by meanes whereof, diuers of the Nobilitie of his Realme were greatly troubled, amongst whom Alexander D. of Albany, brother to king James being exiled into France, & passing through England, tarried with king Edward, and vpon occasion moued him to make warre against his brother the saide king James, for that he forgetting his othe, promise and affinitie concluded with king Edward, caused his subjects to make roades into the English borders. King Edward set on by the Duke of Albanie determined to invade Scotland, with an armie: hereupon all the winter season hee mustred his men, rigged his shippes, and left nothing vnprovided for such a iourney, so that in the beginning of the yeere, all things for the warre was in a readinesse: towards the charges whereof, king Edward had borrowed many great sums of money, amongst other, the Citizens of Lon-

don

don granted him 5000. markes, which was repaid to them againe in the next yere following.

This yere king Edward created William Lord Barkeley Viscount Barkeley at Grenewich.

King Edward with his Quene kept a royall Chyristmas at Wyndsoze.

1486

King Edward appointed to be his chieftaine of his host toward Scotland, and lieutenant generall, Richard Duke of Gloucester, and with him were adioyned as associates, Henry Earle of Northumberland, Thomas L. Stanley Lord Steward of the kings house, the L. Louel, the L. Graystoke, and divers other noble men, and worthy knights. These came to Alnetwike in Northumberland about the beginning of the moneth of July, where they marshalled their host: The forewarde was led by the Earle of Northumberland, vnder whose standert were the Lordes Scrope of Bolton, sir John Middleton, sir John Dichfield and other, and souldiers to the number of 6700. In the middle ward was the Duke of Gloucester, and with him the D. of Albany, the L. Louel, the L. Graystoke, sir Edward Wooduile, and other to the number of 5800. The L. Neuil was appointed to follow with 3000. The Lordes Stanley led the wing on the right hand of the Dukes battell with 4000. men. The Lord Fitz Hugh, sir William a Par, sir James Harington with the number of 2000. guided the left wing. And besides these, 1000. to attend the ordinance. This royall armie came sodainly by the water side to the towne of Berwike, & entered the towne: but Earle Bothwell captaine of the Castle, would in no wise deliuer it: wherefore the captaines planted a strong siege round about it. The two dukes and all the other souldiers (except the Lord Stanley, sir John Elkington treasurer of the kings house, sir William a Par and foure thousand men left to keepe the siege before the castle) departed toward Edenborough, and in marching bent many townes and bastilles. King James kept himselfe within the Castle of Edenborough. The Duke of Gloucester entered the towne, and at the speciall desire of the Duke of Albany, saued the towne, and the inhabitants from fire, blond, and spoile, taking onely such presentes as they offered to him and his captaines. The Lords of Scotland lying at Haddington, on the second of August wrote to the Duke of Gloucester, requiring that the marriage betwixt the Prince of Scotland and K. Edwards daughter might be accomplished, according to the covenants: and further, that a peace from thenceforth might be concluded betwene both realmes. The Duke of Gloucester answered, that for the marriage he knew not his brothers pleasure, but hee required restitution of all the money pressed out in loane vpon the same marriage: and for peace he would agree to none, except the Castle of Berwike might be to him deliuered. The Scots excused the matter touching the repaiment of the money, for that the time of the contract of the saide marriage was not yet come: and as touching the Castle of Berwike, they affirmed it to appertaine to the realme of Scotland as of olde inheritance. The same time the Archbishop of S. Andrews, the bishop of Dunkill, the Earle of Argile, Lord Cambell, and Andrew Lord of Anandall Chancellor of Scotland, wrote to the duke of Albany a solemne instrument signed and sealed with the seals, concerning a gene-

sal.

*An. reg. 22.*  
Richard D. of  
Gloucester sent  
with an army  
into Scotland.

call pardon to him and his seruants vpon certain conditions to be granted, so reasonable, that the duke of Albany willingly accepted of the same: but before he departed, he promised the duke of Gloucester to do and performe all that sooner before he had sworne, and promised to king Edward: and for performance hereof, he againe toke a corporall othe, and sealed a writing at Leuington the third of August.

After he was restored, the Lords of Scotland proclaimed him lieutenant of Scotland: and not long after the castle of Berwick was deliuered to the Lord Stanley and other, where the duke of Gloucester made Sir T. Molineux knight banaret. The duke of Albany also caused the prouost and burgesles of Edinburgh to become bound for the repayment of the money lent by king Edward. And then the duke of Gloucester returned to Sherebhton, &c.

King Edward so greatly fauored William Hariot Mayor of London, that he toke him with certaine of his brethren the Aldermen, and Commons of the citie of London, into the forrest of Waltham, where was ordained for them a pleasant lodge of greene boughes, in the which lodge they dined, with greete chere, and the king would not go to dinner til he saw them serued. After dinner they went a hunting with the king, and slew many deere, as well red as fallow, whereof the king gaue vnto the Mayor and his company good plentie, and sent vnto the Ladie Mayorelle and her sisters the Aldermens wiues, two harts, sixe bucks, and a tunne of wine to make them merry with, which was eaten in the Drapers Hall.

Edm. ban-  
quetted the  
Mayor and Al-  
dermen of Lon-  
don.

1483

King Edward held his feast of the nation of Christ in his manor of Eltham, and kept his estate all the whole feast in his great chamber, and the Quene in her chamber, where were daily more then 2000. persons serued.

The same yere on Candlemas day, he with his Quene went on procession from S. Stephens chappell into Westminster hall, accompanied with the earle of Anguise, the Lord Grey and sir James Liddall Ambassadors from Scotland, and at his proceeding out of his chamber he made sir Richard Wood under treasurer of England, and sir William Catesby, one of the iustices of the Common place, knights.

An. reg. 23.

Although king Edward reioyced much that his businesse was come to good conclusion with the Scots, yet hee was nowise soe disquieted in his minde towards the French king, whome hee now perceived to haue dallied with him, as touching the agreement of the marriage to be had betwixt the Dolphine and his daughter Elizabeth: for the Lord Howard being returned out of France, certified the king of his owne knowledge, that he being present, saw the Lady Margaret of Austrich daughter to the duke Maximilian, sonne to the Emperour Frederike, receiued into France with great pompe and realtie, and at Ambois to the Dolphine contracted and espoused. King Edward highly displeased with such double dealing of the French king, called his nobles together, and opened vnto them his griefes, who promised him for redress thereof to be readie with all their powers, to make warres in France at his pleasure and appointment. But whilst he was busie in hande to make his pursuance for warres thus against France, whether it was of melancholie and anger which hee had taken

with



with the French kinges doings, as it were by anie superfluous sarfet, to the which he was greatly giuen, he sodainely fell sicke, and was so grievously taken, that he ended his life, as it were euen sodainely, at Westminster on the ninth daie of Aprill, the yere of Christ 1483. at the age of 41. yeres, when hee had reigned 22. yeres, one moneth, and odde daies, and was buried at Windsor, where he had before provided his resting place: for leaving the old chappell or colledge Church builded by king Henry the first, hee laie a newe foundation from the west end thereof, and builded the beautifull large newe chappell now frequented, almost to the roose, which the Lord Reginald Bray (with some small helpe of the knights of the order) afterward finished. King Edward the fourth toke from the colledge of Eaton, and the kings colledge in Cambridge, which king Henry the 6. had founded (saith sir Tho. Smith) almost 1000. pounds by yere, and gaue to the colledge of Windsor: he with sumptuous buildings repaired the castles of Spottingham and Dover, the Tower of London, the house of Eltham, and builded at Westminster.

King Edward  
deceased.

T. Smith.

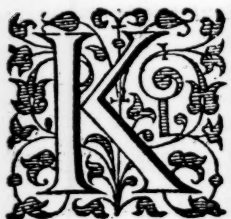
Philip de Comineus writeth of the death of this king in manner following: Have we not seene (saith he) the late king of England Edward the 4. heire of the house of Yorke, utterly destroy the house of Lancaster, vnder the which both his father and he had liued many yeres? Further hee saith, king Edward having done homage to king Henry the 6. being of the house of Lancaster, did he not afterward hold him prisoner many yeres in the tower of London, where in the end he was murdered? Have we not seene also, the earle of Marwike, principall gouernor of all the saide king Edwards offices (after he had put to death all his enemies, especiallie the duke of Somerset) in the end became deadli enemy to the king his master, gaue his daughter in marriage to the Prince of Wales son to H. Henry, attempted to set by again the house of Lancaster, passed with the said prince into England, discomfited in the field and slain, both he and his brethren, and kinsmen, and diuers noblemen of England, who in time past had done the like to their enemies? After all this the children of these, when the world turned, reuenged themselves, and caused in like manner the other to die: which plagues we may be assured hapned not, but by the wrath of God. For after king Edward was quiet in his realme, and receiued yerele out of France 50000. crownes paid him in the tower of London, and was grown so rich, that richer he could not be, he died sodainely, as it were of melancholie, because of the French kings marriage with the lady Margaret the D. of Austries daughter, for so sone as he was aduertised thereof he fell sicke, and began then to perceiue how he had bene abused, touching the marriage of his daughter, whom he caused to be called the Lady Dolphinesse. Then also was the pension which he had receiued out of France taken from him, which he called tribute, although indeede it were neither the one nor the other. Thus much out of Comineus concerning the death of Edward the fourth, who also affirmeth, that within his remembrance in the Ciuill warres of Englands died aboue 80. persons of the Blood royal. King Edward left issue by Elizabeth his wife, two sons, Edward prince of Wales, and Richard duke of Yorke, and five daughters, to wit, Elizabeth that after was Q. married to king Henry the senenth, Cicilie married to

Philip Comineus.

viscount Wels, Briger a Sun at Wertford, Anne married to Th. Howard after earle of Surrey, and D. of Norfolk, Katherine wedded to William L. Courtney, son to the earle of Denonshire; he had also one base sonne knowne to the world, by the name of Arthur, that was after viscount Lisle.

## King Edward the fift.

*Whose Historie was written by sir Thomas Moore,  
as followeth.*



King Edward, of that name the fourth, after that he had liued fiftie and three yeres (it should bee fortie and one yeres) seauen moneths, and sixe daies, and there of raigned two and twentie yeres, one moneth, and eight daies, died at Westminster the ninth day of April, the yer of our redemption a thousand foure hundred fourescore and three, leauing much faire issue, that is to witte, Edward the Prince, of thirteene yeres of age: Richard D. of Yorke, two yeres ponger: Eliza-

beth, whose fortune and grace was afterward to be quene, wife vnto H. Henry the seventh and mother vnto the eight: Cicely, not so fortunate as faire: Briger, which representing the vertue of her, whose name she bare, professed and obserued a religious life in Wertford, an house of close Nuns: Anne, that was after honourably married vnto Thomas then Lord Heyward, and after earle of Surrey: and Katherine, which long time tossed in either fortune, sometime in wealth, ofte in aduersitie, at the last, if this be the last, for then she liued, is by the benignitie of her nephew king Henry the eighth, in very prosperous estate, and worthie her birth and vertue.

This noble Prince deceased at his palace of Westminster, and with great funerall honour and beautinesse of his people from thence conueyed, was entered at Windsor. A king of such gouernance and behauiour, in time of peace (for in war ech part must needs be others enemye) that there was neuer any Prince of this land, attaining the crowne by battell, so heartily beloued with the substance of the people: nor he himselfe so specially in any part of his life, as at the time of his death: Which fauor and affection, yet after his decease by the crueltie, mischief, and trouble of the tempestuous world that followed, highly toward him more increased. At such time as he died, the displeasures of those that bare him grudge, for king Henries sake the first, whome he deposed, was well allwaged, and in effect quenched, in that, that many of them were dead in more than twenty yeres of his raigne, a great part of a long life: and many of them in the meane season growne into his fauour, of which he was neuer strange. He was a goodly personage, princely to behold, of heart contragious, politlike in counsell, in aduersitie nothing abashed, in prosperitie rather ioyfull

The love of the  
people.

Description of  
Edward the  
fourth.

toyfull than pꝛolod, in peace lust and mercifull, in warre sharpe and fierce, in the field bold and hardy, and nathelesse no further than wisdome would, adventurous, whose wars who so well consider, hee shall no lesse commend his wisdome where he boyded, than his manhood where he vanquished. He was of visage lonely, of bodie mightie, strong, and cleane made: howbeit in his latter daies with ouer liberal diet, somewhat copulent and bozely, and nathelesse not vncomely: he was of youth greatly giuen to fleshy wantonnesse; from which, health of body in great prosperitie and fortune, without a speciall grace hardly restraineth.

This fault not greatly grieved the people: for neither could any one mans pleasure stretch and extend to the displeasure of very many, and was without violence, and ouer that, in his latter daies lesled and well lest. In which time of his latter daies, this realm was in quiet and prosperous estate, no feare of outward enemies, no war in hand, nor none toward, but such as no man looked for: the people toward the pꝛince, not in a constrained feare, but in a willing and louing obedience: among themselves, the commons in good peace. The lords whom he knew at variance, himselfe in his death had appeased: he had left all gathering of money (which is the only thing that withdꝛaweth the harts of Englishmen from the pꝛince) nor any thing intended he to take in hand, by which he should be dueen thereto: for his tribute out of France he had before obtained: and the yere foregoing his death, he had obtained Berwik. And albeit, that all y time of his raigne he was with his people, so benigne, so courteous, and so familiar, that no part of his vertues was more esteemed: yet the condition, in the end of his daies (in which many pꝛinces by a long continued soueraignty, decline into a pꝛolod poꝛt from debonaire behaviour of their beginning) maruellously in him grew and increased: so far forth, that in summer the last that euer he saw, his highnesse being at Windsoꝛe in hunting, sent for the mayoꝛ and aldermen of London, to him for none other errand, but to haue them hunt and be merry with him, where he made them not so statelly, but so friendly and so familiar cheare, and sent benison from thence so freely into the city, that no one thing in many daies before, gat him either mo harts or moze hartly fauor amongst the common people, which oftentimes moze esteeme and take for greater kindnes, a little courtesie, than a great benefite. So deceased (as I haue said) this noble king, in y time, in which his life was most desired: whose loue of his people, and their entire affection toward him, had bin to his noble children, (hauing in themselves also as many gifts of nature, as many pꝛincely vertues, as much goodly towardnes as their age could receiue) a maruellous foꝛtesse and sure armor, if diuision & dissention of their friends had not vnarmed them, and left them destitute, and the execrable desire of soueraignty prouoked him to their destruction, which if either kind or kindnesse had holden place, must needs haue bene their chiefe defence. For Richard the 3. of Gloucester, by nature their vncle, by office their protectoꝛ, to their father beholden, to themselves by othe and allegiaunce bounden, all bands broken that binden man wth man together, without any respect of God or the world, vnnaturally contriued to berreaue them, not only of their dignitie, but also their liues.

But forasmuch as this dukes demaund misistresth in effect all the whole matter thereof this Booke shall entreat, it is therefore convenient, somewhat to shew you ere we farther go, what manner of man this was, that could find in his heart so much mischief to conceiue.

Richard duke of  
of Yorke.

Richard duke of Yorke, a noble man and a mightie, began not by war, but by law to challenge the crowne, putting his claime into þ parliament, where his cause was either for right or fano; so farre forth aduanced, that king Henry his blood (albeit he had a goodlie prince) vtterlic reiected, the crowne was by authority of parliament entailed to the duke of Yorke and his issue male in remainder, immediatlie after the death of king Henry. But the duke not induring so long to tarrie, but intending vnder pretext of dissention and debate arising in the realme, to preuent his time, and to take vpon him the rule in king Henry his life, was with manie nobles of the realme at Wakefield slaine, leauing 3. sonnes, Edward, George, and Richard. All three as they were great Statues of birth, so were they great and statelie of stomacke, greedy and ambitious of authority, and impatient of partners: Edward reuenging his fathers death, deposed king Henry, and attained the crowne: George duke of Clarence, was a goodlie noble prince, and at all points fortunate, if either his owne ambition had not set him against his brother, or the enuie of his enemies his brother against him. For were it by the queene and lords of her blood which highly maligned the kings kindred (as women commonly not of malice, but of nature hate them whome their husbands loue) or were it a proud appetite of the Duke himselfe, intending to be king: at leastwise heinous treason was there laide to his charge, and finally, were he faulty, were he faultles, atainted was he by parliament, and iudged to death, and therupon hastily drowned in a But of malmsey, whose death is. Edward (albeit he commanded it) when he wist it was done, pitiously bewailed, and sorrowfully repented.

Edward.  
George duke of  
Clarence.

The description  
of Richard  
the third.

Richard the 3. son, of whome we now intreat, was in wit and courage equal with either of the m, in body and prowesse far vnder them both, little of stature, ill featured of lims, crooke backed, his left shoullder much higher than his right, hard favoured of visage, and such as is in states called warrelly, in other men otherwise: he was malicious, wrathfull, enuious, and from afore his birth neuer forward. It is for trueth reported, that the dutchesse his mother had so much adoe in her trauell, that she could not bee deliuered of him vncut, and that hee came into the world with the fete forwarde, as men bee borne outwarde, and (as the same runneth) also not untwisted, whether men of hatred report about the trueth, or else that nature chaunged her course in his beginning, which in the course of his life many thinges vnnaturallie committed. For euill Captaine was he in the war, as to which his disposition was moze metly, than for peace: sundry victories had he, and sometimes overthowes, but neuer in default as for his owne person, either of hardinesse or politike order: free was hee called of dispence, and somewhat about his power liberal: with large giftes he gat him vnstedfast friendshippe, for which hee was sayne to pill and spole in other places, and gette him stedfast hatred. He was close and secrete, a deepe dissembler, tolooly of countenance, arrogant of heart, outwardly cōumptnable where



where he inwardly hated, not letting to kille whom he thought to kill: dispiteous and cruel, not for euill will alway, but offer for ambition, and either for the surety or increase of his estate. Friend and foe was much that indifferent, where his aduantage grew: he spared no mans death, whose life withstood his purpose. He slew with his owne hands king Henry the first, being prisoner in the tower, as men constantly said, and that without commandement or knowledge of the R. which would undoubtedly, if he had intended that thing, haue appointed that butcherly office to some other, than his owne bozne brother.

The death of  
king Henry the  
first.

Some wise men also weene, that his dist couertly conueyed, lacked not in helping forth his brother of Clarence to his death: which he resisted openly, howbeit somewhat (as men deemed) more faintly, than he that were heartily minded to his wealth. And they that thus deeme, thinke that hee long time in R. Edwards life, for thought to be king, in case that the king his brother (whose life he looked that euill died should shorten) should happen to decease (as indeed he did) while his children were young. And they deeme, that for this intent hee was glad of his brothers death the duke of Clarence, whose life must needs haue hindered him so intending, whether the same duke of Clarence had kept him true to his nephew the young king, or enterprised to be king himselfe. But of all this point, is there no certainty, & who so diuineeth vpon conjectures, may as well shote too far as too short. Howbeit this haue I by credible information learned, that the selfe night in which R. Edward died, one Mistlebrooke long ere morning, came in great haste to the house of one Pottier dwelling in red Crosse strate without Cripple gate in London: and when he was with haste rapping quickly letten in, he shewed vnto Pottier that king Edward was departed. By my truth man, quoth Pottier, then will my master the duke of Gloucester be king. What cause he had so to thinke hard it is to say, whether he being toward him, any thing knew that he had such thing purposed, or other wise had any inkling thereof: for he was not likely to speake it of nought.

Reports vncertaine as spoken  
of hate, or affection.

But now to returne to the course of this history. Were it that the Duke of Gloucester had of old fore-minded this conclusion, and was now at erst thereunto moued, and put in hope by occasion of the tender age of the young princes his nephews (as opportunity and likelihood of speede, putteth a man in courage of that he neuer intended) certaine it is, that he contriued their destruction, with the usurpation of the regall dignity vpon himselfe. And forasmuch as, he well wist, and holpe to maintaine a long continued grudge & hart-burning betwene the quens kindred, and the kings blood, either party enuying others authority, he now thought their diuision should be (as it was indeed) a furtherly beginning to the furtherance of his intent, and a sure ground for the foundation of all his building, if he might first, vnder the pretext of reuenging old displeasure, abuse the anger and ignorance of the one partie, to the destruction of the other, and then winne to his purpose as many as hee could, and those that could not be wonn, might be lost ere they looked therefore: for of one thing was he certaine, that if his intent were perceiued, he should some haue made peace betwene both the parties with his owne blood.

King Edward in his life, albeit that this dissention betwene his friends

some what irked him: yet in his god health he some what the lesse regarded it, because he thought whatsoeuer busines should fall betwene them, himselfe should alway be able to rule both the parties. But in his last sickness, when he perceiued his natural strength so sore enfebled, that he despaired al recovery, then he considering the youth of his children, albeit he nothing lesse mistrusted than that that happened: yet wel foreseeing that many harmes might grow by their debate, while the youth of his children should lacke discretion of themselves, and good counsell of their friends, of which either party should counsell for their owne commoditie, and rather by pleasant aduise to win themselves fauour, than by profitabill aduertisement to do his children good, he called some of them before him that were at variance, and in especiall the Lord Marques Dorset, the queenes son by her first husband, & William the lord Hastings a noble man then lord Chamberlaine, against whom the queene specially grudged, for the great fauour the king bare him: and also for that he thought him secretly familiar with the king in wanton company. Her kindred also bare him sore, as well for that the king had made him captaine of Calceis, which office the Lord Riuers brother to the queene claimed of the kings former promise, as for diuers other great gifts which he receiued, that they looked for. When these lords with diuers of both the parties were come in presence, the king sitting vp himselfe and vnder set with pillowes, as it is reported, on this wise saide vnto them;

The oration of  
the king in his  
death bed.

My lords, my deere kinsmen and alies, in what plight I lie, you see, and I feele. By which, the lesse while I looke to liue with you, the more deeply am I moued to care in what case I leave you, for such as I leave you, such bee my children like to find you. Which if they should (that God forbids) find you at variance, might hap to fall themselves at war, ere their discretion would serue to set you at peace; yee see their youth, of which I reckon the onely suretie to rest in your concord: For it sufficeth not, that all you loue them, if each of you hate other. If they were men, your faithfulness happily would suffice; but children must be maintained by mens authoritie, & slipper youth vnder propped with elder counsell, which neither they can haue, but ye giue it; nor ye giue it, if ye graue not. For where ech laboureth to breake that the other maketh, & for hatred of ech of others person, impugnech ech others counsell, there must it nedes be long ere any good conclusion go forward. And also while either party laboureth to be chiefe, flatterie shall haue more place than plaine and faithfull aduise, of which most nedes is due the euil bringing vp of the prince, whose mind in tender youth infect, shall readily fall to mischief & riot, and draw down with his noble realme to ruine: but if grace turne him to wisdom, which if God send, then they that by euill means before pleased him best, shall after fall furthest out of fauour, so that euer at length euill doers draw to nought, and good plaine waies prosper. Great variance hath there long bin betwene you, not alway for great causes: sometime a thing right wel intended, our misconstruction turneth vnto worse, or a smal displeasure don vs, either our owne affection or euill tongues agriueneth. But this wot I well, yee neuer had so great cause of hatred, as yee haue of loue: That we be all men, that we be christian men, this shall I leave for preachers to tell you (yet I wot nere whether any preachers words ought more

more to moue you, than his that is by and by going to the place that they all, preach of.) But this shal I desire you to remember, that the one part of you is of my blood, the other of mine altes, & ech of you with other either of kindred or affinity, which spirituall kindred of affinitye, if the sacraments of Christs church beare that weight with vs, that would god they did, should no lesse moue vs to charity, than the respect of fleshly consanguinity. Our Lord forbid, that you loue togither the worse for the selfe cause that you ought to loue the better: and yet that hapneth, and no where find we so deadly debate, as among them, which by nature & law most ought to agree togither. Such a pestilent serpent is ambition, Ambition. and desire of bainglorie and foueraignty, which among states thure he once entreth, creepeth forth so far, till with diuision and variance hee turneth all to mischief, first longing to be next the best, after ward equall with the best, and at last chiefe and aboue the best. Of which immoderate appetite of worship, and thereby of debate & dissention, what losse, what sorrow, what trouble hath with in these few yeres growen in this realme, I pray God as well forget, as we wel remeber. Which things if I could as wel haue foresen, as I haue with my more paine than pleasure proued, by Gods blessed lady (that was euer his othe) I would neuer haue won the courtesie of mens knees, with the losse of so many heads. But sith things passed cannot be gaine called, much ought we the more beware, by what occasion we haue taken so great hurt afore, that we effoonces fall not in that occasion againe. How be those griefes passed, and all is (God be thanked) quiet, and likely right well to prosper in wealthfull peace vnder your cousins my children, if God send them life, and you loue. Of which two things, the lesse losse were they, by whom though God did his pleasure, yet should the realme alway finde kings, and peraduenture as good kings: but if you among your selues in a childes reign fall at debate, many a good man shal perish, and happily he too, and ye too, ere this land find peace againe. Wherfore in these last wordes that euer I loke to speake with you, I exhort you and requyre you all, for the loue that you haue euer borne to me: for the loue that I haue euer borne vnto you: for the loue that our lord beareth to vs all, from this time forthward all griefes forgotten, ech of you loue other. Which I berely trust you will, if ye any thing rashly regard, either God or your king, affinitye or kindred, this realme your owne countrey, or your owne suretie. And therewith all the king no longer induring to sit by, laid him downe on his right side, his face toward them: and none was there present that could refraine from weeping. But the Lords recomforting him with as good wordes as they could, and answering for the time as they thought to stand with his pleasure, there in his presence, as by their wordes appeared, ech forgate other, and ioyned their hands togither, when (as it after appeared by their deedes) their harts were far asunder. As soone as the king was departed, the noble prince his son drey to toward London, which at the time of his decease kept his houtholde at Ludlowe in Wales, which countrey being far off from the law and recourse to iustice, was begun to be far out of god will, and wahren wilde robbers and reuers, walking at liberty vncorreced.

And for this encheason the prince was in the life of his father sent thither,

Lorde Rivers.

to the end that the authoritie of his presence, should reſtaine euill diſpoſed perſons from the boldnes of their ſoꝛmer outrages. To the gouernance and oꝛdering of this yong Prince at his ſending thither, was there appoynted Sir Anthonie Woodville Lorde Rivers, and brother vnto the Quene, a right honozable man, as ballant of hand, as poliſtike in counſell. Adioined were there vnto him other of the ſame partie, and in effect euerie one as he was neareſt of kinne vnto the Quene, ſo was planted next about the Prince.

That diſt by the Quene not vnwiſelie deuſed, whereby her blood might of youth be rooted in the princes ſanour, the duke of Glouceſter turned vnto their deſtruction, and vpon that ground ſet the foundation of all his vnhappy building. For whomeſoeuer he perceiued either at variance with them, or bearing himſelfe their ſanoꝛ, he brake vnto the, ſome by mouth, ſome by witting & ſecret meſſengers, that it was neither reaſon, noꝛ in anie wiſe to bee ſuffered, that the yong king their maſter and kiſnman, ſhould be in the hands and cuſtody of his mothers kinred, ſequeſtered in maner from their company and attendaunce, of which euerie one ought him as faythfull ſeruiſe as they, and manie of them far moꝛe honozable part of kin then his mothers ſide. Whole blood (quoth he) ſauing the kings pleaſure, was full vnmaſtely to be matched with his: which now to be as who ſaie remoued from the king, and the leſſe noble to bee left about him, is (quoth he) neither honozable to his maieſtie, noꝛ vnto vs, and alſo to his grace no ſuretie, to haue the mightieſt of his friends from him, and vnto vs no little leopadie, to ſuffer our well pꝛoued euill willers to growe in our great authoritie with the prince in youth, namely which is light of beleſe & ſone perſwaded. For remember I trow king Edward himſelfe, albeit hee was a man of age and diſcretion, yet was he in many things ruled by the bend, moꝛe then ſtoꝛd either with his honour, or our pꝛofit, or with the commoditie of anie man els, except only the immoderat aduancement of the meſelues. Which whether they ſoꝛer thirſted after their owne weale, or our too, it were hard I weene to geſſe. And if ſome folks friendſhip had not holden better place with the king, then ante reſpect of kinred, they might peraduenture eaſilie haue betrayed and brought to conſuſion ſome of vs ere this. Why not as eaſilie as they haue done ſome other alreadie, as neare of his roſall blood as wee? But our Lorde hath wꝛought his will, and thanks be to his grace that perill is paſt. Howbeit as great is growing, if we ſuffer this yong king in our enimies hande, which without his witting might abuſe the name of his commandement, to anie of our vndowing, which thing God and good pꝛouiſion foꝛbid.

Of which good pꝛouiſion none of vs hath anie thing the leſſe neede, for the late made at tonement, in which the kings pleaſure had moꝛe place then the parties tolls: noꝛ none of vs, I beleaue, is ſo vnwiſe ouer ſoone to truſt a new friende made of an old fo, or to thinke y an hotterly kindnes, ſuddenly contract in one holwer, continued yet ſcant a fortnight, ſhould be deeper ſetled in their ſtomack, then a long accuſtomed malice manie yeres rooted. With theſe woꝛdes and wꝛittings and ſuch other, the duke of Glouceſter ſome ſet a fire them that were of the meſelues eath to kindle, and in eſpeciall twaine, Edward Duke of Buckingham, and William lorde Haſtings and chamberlaine, both men of honoꝛ and



of great power : The one by long succession from his ancestry ; the other by his office, and the kings fauor.

These two not bearing each to other so much lone, as hatred both vnto the Quēnes part, in this point accorded togither with the duke of Gloucester, that they would bitterly amoue from the kings company all his mothers friends, vnder the name of their enimies.

Vpon this concluded, the duke of Gloucester vnderstanding that the Lords which at that time were about the king, intended to bring him vp to his coronation, accompanied with such power of their friends, that it should be harde for him to bring his purpose to passe, without the gathering a great assemble of people, and in manner of open war, whereof the end hee wist was doubtful, and in which the king being on their side, his parte should haue the face and name of a rebellion: he secretlie therefore by diuers meanes caused the quēne to be perswaded and brought in the minde, that it neither were nēde, and also should be leopardons, the king to come vp strong. For whereas nowe euerie Lord loued other, and none other thing studied vpon, but about the coronation and honoz of the king; if the Lords of her kindred should assemble in the kings name much people, they should giue the Lordes atwist whome and them had bene sometime debate, to feare and suspect, least they should gather this people not for the kings safegarde, whome no man impugned, but for their destruction, hauing more regarde to their old variance, then their new attonement: for which cause they should assemble on the other partie much people againe for their defence, whose power shee wist well farre stretched. And thus should all the Realme fall on a roze. And of all the hurt that thereof should ensue, which was likely not to be litle, and the most harme there like to fall where the least would, all the world would put her and her kindred in the twight, and saye that they had vnwiselie and vntruly also broken the amitie and peace, that the king her husband so prudently made betwēne his kin and hers in his death bed, and which the other party faithfullly obserued.

The Quēne being in this wise perswaded, such wordes sent vnto her sonne, and vnto her brother, being about the king, and ouer that the Duke of Gloucester himselfe and other Lords the chiefe of his bande, wrote vnto the king to reuerentlie, and to the quēnes friends there so lovinglie, that they nothing earthly mistrusting, brought the king vp in a great haste, not in good sped, with a sober companie. Now was the king in his waie to London gone from Portsmouth, when the dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham came thither, where remained behind the Lord Rivers the kings vncle, intending on the morowe to follow the king, and be with him at Stony Stratford, twelue miles thence, early ere he departed. So was there made that night much friendly chere betwēn these two dukes and the lord Rivers a greate while: But incontinent after that they were openlie with great curtesie departed and the Lord Rivers lodged, the dukes secretlie with a fewe of their most priute friends, sette them downe in Councell, wherein they spent a great part of the night: and at their rising in the datoning of the daie, they sent out priuillie to their seruants in their Innnes and Lodginges about, giuing them commaundemente, to make themselves

thortly readie, for thei Lordes were to horse backe warde. Upon which messag-  
ges, manie of thei folke were attendant, when manie of the Lorde Riuers ser-  
uants were vnbreadie. Howe had these Dukes taken also into thei custodie  
the keyes of the Anne, that none should passe forth without thei licence: And o-  
uer this, in the high waie toward Stony Stratford where the king laie, they  
had besetted certaine of thei folke, that should send backe againe, and com-  
pell to returne anie man that were gotten out of Portsmouth toward  
Stonie Stratforde, till they shoulde giue other licence: For as much as the  
dukes themselues intended for the shew of thei diligence, to bee the first that  
should that day attend vpon the kings highnes out of that Towne: thus bare  
they folke in hand. But when the Lorde Riuers vnderstood the gates closed, and  
the waies on euery side beset, neither his seruants nor himselve suffered to go  
out, perceiuing well so great a thing without his knowledge not begunne for  
naught, comparing this maner present, with his last nightes chere, in so selue  
holwers so great a change, maruellouslie mistaked. Howbeit, sith hee could not  
get a waie, and keepe himselve close he would not, least hee should seeme to hide  
himselve for some secret feare of his owne fault, whereof he saue no such cause  
in himselve: he determined vpon the suretie of his owne conscience, to go boldly  
to them, and inquire what this matter might meane: whom as soone as they  
saw, they began to quarrell with him, and say, that he intended to set distance  
betwene the king & them, and to bring them to confusion, but it shoulde not lie  
in his power. And when he began (as he was a very wel spoken man) in goodly  
wise to excuse himselve, they tarried not the ende of his answere, but thortlie  
toke him, and put him in ward: and that done, forthwith went to horsebacke,  
and toke the waie to Stony Stratforde, where they founde the king with his  
company, ready to leape on horsebacke, and depart forwarde to leaue that lod-  
ging for them, because it was too streight for both companies. And as soone as  
they came in his presence, they alight downe with all their companie about  
them: To whome the duke of Buckingham said, go afoze gentlemen, and yee  
men keepe your comes.

The Lord Ri-  
uers put in  
ward.

And thus in goodlie arrate they came to the king, and on thei knees in berie  
humble wise salued his grace, which receiued them in very iolous and amiable  
maner, nothing eathly knowing nor mistrusting as yet: But euen by & by in  
his presence they picked a quarrell to the Lorde Richard Grey, the kings other  
brother by his mother, saying, that he with the Lorde Marques his brother, and  
the Lorde Riuers his vnckle had compassed to rule the king and the realme, and to  
set variance among the states, and to subdue and destroy the noble blod of the  
realme: Toward the accomplishing whereof, they said that the Lorde Marques  
had entred into the towne of London, and thence taken out the kings treasure,  
and sent men to the Sea.

The Lord Gray.

All which thinges these dukes well wist were done for god purposes and ne-  
cessarie, by the whole counsell at London, sauing that somewhat they must say.  
Unto which words the king answered: What my brother Marques hath done I  
cannot say: but in god faith I dare well answere for mine vnckle Riuers and  
my brother heere, that they bee innocent of any such matter. Wea my Liege,  
quoth

quoth the duke of Buckingham, they haue kept their dealing in these matters farre from the knowledge of your good grace. And forthwith they arrested the Lorde Richard and Sir Thomas Vaughan knight in the kinges presence, and brought the king and all backe vnto Northampton, where they toke againe further Counsell: And there they sent a waile from the king whome it pleased them, and set new seruants about him, such as liked better them then him: at which dealing he wept, and was nothing content, but it booted not. And at dinner, the duke of Gloucester sent a dish from his owne table to the Lorde Riuer, praying him to be of good chere, all should be well enough: and he thanked the duke, and praised the messenger to beare it to his nephew the L. Richard, with the same message for his comfort, as one to whom such aduersitie was strange, but himselfe had bene all his daies in the therewith, and therefore could beare it the better. But for all this comfortable curtesie of the duke of Gloucester, he sent the Lord Riuer and the Lord Richard, with Sir Thomas Vaughan, into the North country, into diuers places to prison, and afterwarde all to Pontefract, where they were in conclusion beheaded.

The death of  
the Lord Riuer  
and others.

In this wise the duke of Gloucester toke vpon himselfe the order and gouernance of the young king, whome with much honoꝝ and humble reuerence hee conueied vppward toward the citie. But anone the tidings of this matter came hastily to the Quene a little before the midnight following, and that in the sorest wise, that the king her son was taken, her brother, her sonne, and other friends arrested, and sent no man wiff whither, to be done with, God wot what. With which tidings, the Quene in great fright and heauines betwailing her childes raigne, her friendes mischance, and her owne infortune, damming the time that euer she dissuaded the gathering of power about the king, gate her selfe in all the hast possible with her younger son and her daughters, out of the palace of Westminster, in which the then lay, into the sanctuarie, lodging her selfe and her company there in the abbots place.

The Quene  
taken to sanctu-  
arie.

Now came there one likewise not long after midnight from the lord Chamberlaine, vnto the Archbishop of Yorke then Chancelloꝝ of Englande, to his place not far from Westminster: And for that he shewed his seruants that he had tidings of so great importance, that his master gaue him in charge, not to forbear his rest, they letted not to wake him, nor he to admit this messenger vnto his bed side. Of whome he heard that these dukes were gone backe with the kings grace from Stony Stratford vnto Northampton: Not withstanding sir (quoth he) my Lord sendeth your Lordship word, that there is no feare, for he assureth you that all shall be well. I assure him, quoth the Archbishop, bee it as well as it will, it will neuer bee so well as we haue seene it: and thereupon by and by after the messenger departed; he caused in all the haste all his seruants to be called vpp, and so with his owne household about him, and euerie man weaponed, he toke the great scale with him, and came yet before daie vnto the Quene. About whome he found much heauinesse, rumber, haile, and busines, carriage and conueiance of her stuffe into sanctuarie, chests, coffers, packs, fardels, trusted all on mens backs, no man vnoccupied, some lading, some going, some discharging, some comming for more, some breaking downe the wals to  
bring

bying in the next way, and some yet drewe to them to helpe to carry a wrong way.

The Quene her selfe sate alone alowe on the rushes all desolate and dismayed, whome the archbishop comforted in the best manner he could, shewing her that he trusted the matter was nothing so sore as she toke it for, and that he was put in good hope and out of feare by the message sent him from the lord Chamberlaine: Ah too woorth him (quoth she) for he is one of them that labourereth to destroy me and my blood.

Adam (quoth he) be ye of god there, for I assure you, if they crowne any other king than your sonne, whom they now haue with them, we shall on the morrow crowne his brother whom you haue here with you. And here is the great seale, which in like wise as that noble prince your husband deliuered it vnto me, so here I deliuer it vnto you, to the vse and behoofe of your sonne, and therewith he betooke her the great seale, and departed home againe, yet in the dawning of the day. By which time, he might in his chamber window see all the Thames full of boates of the duke of Glocesters seruants, watching that no man should go to sanctuary, nor none could passe vnsearched: Then was there great commotion and murmur, as well in other places about, as specially in the cite, the people diuersly diuining vpon this dealing. And some lords, knights, and gentlemen, either for fauor of the Quene, or for feare of themselves, assembled in sundry companies, and went flockemeale in harness: and many also, for that they reckoned this demeanour attempted, not so specially against the other lords, as against the king himselfe in disturbance of his coronation. But then by and by the lordes assembled together, toward which meeting, the archbishop of Yorke fearing that it would be ascribed (as it was in dede) to his ouermuch lightnes, that he so sodainly had yelded by the great seale to the Quene, to whome the custodie thereof nothing pertained, without speciall commandement of the king, secretly sent for the seale againe, and brought it with him after the customeable maner. And at this meeting, the Lord Hastings, whose trust toward the king, no man doubted nor needed to doubt, perswaded the lords to beleue, that the duke of Gloucester was sure and safely saithfull to his prince, and that the lord Riuers and lord Richard, with the other knights, were for matters attempted by them against the dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham, put vnder arrest for their surety, not for the kings jeopardy: and that they were also in safeward, & there no longer should remaine than till the matter were, not by the dukes only, but also by all the other lords of the kings counsell indifferently examined, and by other discretions ordered, and either iudged or appeased.

But one thing he aduised them beware, that they iudged not the matter so far forth ere they knew the truth, nor turning their priuate grudges into the common hurt, irking & prouoking men vnto anger, and disturbing the kings coronation, toward which the dukes were comming by, that they might peraduenture bying the matter so far out of ioint, that it should neuer be brought in frame againe. Which strife if it should happen, as it were likely, to come to a fielde, though both parties were in all things equal, yet should the authoritie be



be on that side where the king is himselfe. With these persuasions of the lord Hastings, whereof part himselfe belated, of part hee with the contrarie, these commotions were somewhat appeased, but specially by that, that the dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham were so neere, and came so shortly on with the king, in none other maner, with none other voice or semblance than to his coronation, causing the same to be blown about, that these lords and knightes which were taken, had contrived the destruction of the dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham, and of other the noble bloud of the realme, to the end that themselves would alone demeane and governe the king at their pleasure.

And for the colourable p[ro]ofe thereof, such of the dukes servants as rode with the carts of their stuffe that were taken (among which stuffe no marvel though some were harnesse, which at the breaking up of the household, must needs either be brought away, or cast away) they shewed unto the people all the waies as they went: No here bee the barrels of harnesse that these traitors had priuily conueied in their carriage to destroy the noble lords withall.

This deuice, albeit that it made the matter to wise men more unlikely, well perceiuing that the intenders of such a purpose would rather haue had their harnesse on their backs, than to haue bound them by in barrels; yet much part of the common people were therewith very wel satisfied, and said it were almes to hang them.

When the king approached neere to the city, Edmond Shaa Goldsmith then Mayor, with William White and John Matthew Sheriffes, and all the other Aldermen in scarlet, with 500. horse of the citizens in violet, receiued him reuerently at Barnsey, and riding from thence, accompanied him into the citie, which he entred the fourth day of May, the first and last yeere of his raigne.

The king was lodged in the Bishops palace, where was kept a great councell, and there was sworne to the king, the duke of Gloucester, the duke of Buckingham, and all the lords.

But the duke of Gloucester bare him in open sight so reuerently to the prince, with all semblance of lowlines, that from the great obloquie in which he was so late before, hee was suddenly fallen in so great trust, that at the councell next assembled, he was made the onely man, chose and thought most meete to be protector of the king and his realme, so that (were it destiny, or were it folly) the lambe was betaken to the wolfe to keepe. At which councell also, the Archbishop of Yorke Chancellor of England, which had deliuered by the great seale to the Duke, was thereof greatly reprovued, and the seale taken from him, and deliuered to doctor Russell bishop of Lincolne, a wise man and a good, and of much experience, and one of the best learned men vndoubtedly that England had in his time. Diuers lords and knights were appointed unto diuers romes. The Lord Chamberlaine and some other kept still their offices that they had before.

Now all were it, so that the protector so sore thirsted for the finishing of that he had begun, that thought every day a yeere till it were atchieued, yet durst he no further attempt, as long as he had but halfe his pray in his hand: wel wist, that if he deposed the one brother, all the realme would fall to the other, if

The kings coming to London.

The protector made.

The bishop of Lincolne made Lord Chancellor.

bring in the next way, and some yet drelve to them to helpe to carry a wrong way.

The Quene her selfe sate alone alowe on the rushes all desolate and distressed, whome the archbishop comforted in the best manner he could, shewing her that he trusted the matter was nothing so sore as she took it for, and that he was put in good hope and out of feare by the message sent him from the lord Chamberlaine: Ah too woorth him (quoth she) for he is one of them that labour to destroy me and my blood.

Adam (quoth he) be ye of god chere, for I assure you, if they crowne any other king than your sonne, whom they now haue with them, we shall on the morrow crowne his brother whom you haue here with you. And here is the great seale, which in like wise as that noble prince your husband deliuered it vnto me, so here I deliuer it vnto you, to the use and behoofe of your sonne, and therewith he betoke her the great seale, and departed home againe, yet in the dawning of the day. By which time, he might in his chamber window see all the Thames full of boates of the duke of Glocesters seruants, watching that no man should go to sanctuary, nor none could passe vnsearched: There was there great commotion and murmur, as well in other places about, as specially in the citie, the people diuersly diuining vpon this dealing. And some lords, knights, and gentlemen, either for fauor of the Quene, or for feare of themselves, assembled in sundry companies, and went flockemeale in harness: and many also, for that they reckoned this demeanour attempted, not so specially against the other lords, as against the king himselfe in his disturbance of his coronation. But then by and by the lordes assembled together, toward which meeting, the archbishop of Yorke fearing that it would be ascribed (as it was in deed) to his ouermuch lightnes, that he so sodainly had yelded by the great seale to the Quene, to whome the custodie thereof nothing pertained, without speciall commandement of the king, secretly sent for the seale againe, and brought it with him after the customeable maner. And at this meeting, the Lord Hastings, whose trust toward the king, no man doubted nor needed to doubt, perswaded the lords to beleue, that the duke of Glocester was sure and fastly faithfull to his prince, and that the lord Rivers and lord Richard, with the other knights, were for matters attempted by them against the dukes of Glocester and Buckingham, put vnder arrest for their surety, not for the kings leopards: and that they were also in safeward, & there no longer should remaine than till the matter were, not by the dukes only, but also by all the other lords of the kings counsell indifferently examined, and by other discretions ordered, and either iudged or appeased.

But one thing he aduised them beware, that they iudged not the matter too far forth ere they knew the truth, nor turning their priuate grudges into the common hurt, irking & prouoking men vnto anger, and disturbing the kings coronation, toward which the dukes were comming by, that they might peradventure bring the matter so far out of ioint, that it should neuer be brought in frame againe. Which strife if it should happen, as it were likely, to come to a felde, though both parties were in all things equall, yet should the authoritie

be

be on that side where the king is himselfe. With these perswasions of the lord Hastings, whereof part himselfe believed, of part hee with the contrarie, these commotions were somewhat appeased, but specially by that, that the dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham were so nere, and came so shortly on with the king, in none other maner, with none other voice or semblance than to his coronation, causing the same to be blown about, that these lords and knights which were taken, had contriued the destruction of the dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham, and of other the noble bloud of the realme, to the end that themselves would alone demeane and governe the king at their pleasure.

And for the colourable profe thereof, such of the dukes seruants as rode with the carts of their stuffe that were taken (among which stuffe no maruel though some were harnesse, which at the breaking vp of the household, must needs either be brought away, or cast away) they shewed vnto the people all the waies as they went: Lo here bee the barrels of harnesse that these traitors had priuily conueied in their carriage to destroy the noble lords withall.

This deuice, albeit that it made the matter to wise men more unlikely, well perceining that the intenders of such a purpose would rather haue had their harnesse on their backs, than to haue bound them vp in barrels: yet much part of the common people were therewith very wel satisfied, and said it were almes to hang them.

When the king approached nere to the city, Edmond Shaa Goldsmith then Mayor, with William White and Iohn Mathew Sheriffes, and all the other Aldermen in scarlet, with 500. horse of the citizens in violet, receiued him reverently at Barnsey, and riding from thence, accompanied him into the citie, which he entred the fourth day of May, the first and last yeere of his raigne.

The king was lodged in the Bishops palace, where was kept a great councell, and there was sworne to the king, the duke of Gloucester, the duke of Buckingham, and all the lords.

But the duke of Gloucester bare him in open sight so reuerently to the prince, with all semblance of loialties, that from the great obloquie in which he was so late before, hee was suddenly fallen in so great trust, that at the councell next assembled, he was made the onely man, chose and thought most mete to be protector of the king and his realme, so that (were it destiny, or were it folly) the lambe was be taken to the wolfe to keepe. At which councell also, the Archbishop of Yorke Chancellor of England, which had deliuered vp the great seale to the Queene, was thereof greatly reprovved, and the seale taken from him, and deliuered to doctor Russell bishop of Lincolne, a wise man and a good, and of much experience, and one of the best learned men vndoubtedly that England had in his time. Divers lords and knights were appointed vnto diuers roles. The Lorde Chamberlaine and some other kept still their offices that they had before.

Now all were it, so that the protector so sore thirsted for the finishing of that he had begun, that thought euery day a yeere till it were atchieued, yet durst he no further attempt, as long as he had but halfe his pray in his hand: wel wist, that if he deposed the one brother, all the realme would fall to the other, if he

The kings coming to London.

The protector made.

The bishop of Lincolne made Lord Chancellor.

be either remained in sanctuary, or should happilie be hostile conueied to his farther libertie. Wherefore, incontinent at the next meeting of the Lords at the councell, he proposed vnto them, that it was a hainous deed of the Queene, and proceeding of great malice toward the kings Councellers, that the should keepe in Sanctuary the kings brother from him, whose spectall pleasure and comforte were to haue his brother with him. And that by her done to none other intent, but to bring all the Lords in obloquie, and marmure of the people: as though they were not to be trusted with the kings brother, that by the assent of the nobles of the land, were appointed as the kings next friends, to the tuition of his owne rotall person. The prosperitie whereof standeth (quoth he) not all in keeping from enemies, or ill bland, but partlie also in recreation, and moderate pleasure, which he cannot in his tender yongth take in the companie of ancient persons, but in the familiar conuersation of those that be neither far vnder, nor far aboue his age, nay the lesse of estate conuenient to accompanie his noble maiestie, therefore, with whom rather, then with his owne brother? And if anie man thinke this consideration (which I thinke no man thinketh that loueth the king) let him consider, that sometime without small things, greater cannot stand. And verily, it redoundeth greatly to the dishonour both of the kings highnes, and of all vs that bene about his grace, to haue it run in euerie mans mouth, not in this Realme onelie, but also in other lands (as euill words walke far) that the kings brother should be faine to keepe sanctuary. For euery man will weene, that no man will so do for nought. And such euill opinion once fastened in mens harts, hard it is to wass out, and many grow to more griefe then any man can here diuine: wherefore me thinketh it were not too fit to send vnto the Queene for the redress of this matter, some honorable trustie man, such as both tendereth the kings weale, and the honor of his councell, and is also in fauour and credence with her. For all which considerations, none seemeth me more meete, then our reuerende father heere present, my Lorde Cardinall, who may in this matter do most good of anie man, if it please him to take the paine, which I doubt not of his goodnesse hee will not refuse for the kings sake and ours, and wealthe of the yong duke himselte, the kings most honorable brother, and after my soueraigne Lorde himselte, my most dære nephew, considered that thereby shall be ceased the slanderous rumour and obloquie now going, and the hurts auoided that thereof might ensue, and much rest and quiet growe to all the realme. And if she be percase so obstinate, and so precisely set vpon her owne will, that neither his wise & faithfull aduertisement can not moue her, nor any mans reason content her: then shall we by mine aduise, by the kings authoritie, fetch him out of that prison, and bring him to his noble presence, in whose continuall companie he shall be so well cherished, & so honorably intreated, that all the world shall to our honor and her reproch perceiue, that it was only malice, stowardnes, or folly that caused her to keepe him there: this is my mind in this matter for this time, except anie of your Lordshippes anie thing perceiue to the contrary, for neuer shall I by Gods grace so wed my selfe to mine owne will, but that I shall be ready to chaunge it vpon your better aduises.



When the protector had said, all the Councell affirmed, that the motion was good and reasonable, and so the king and the Duke his brother, honorable, and a thing that should cease great murmur in the Realme, if the mother might be by good meanes induced to deliuer him. Which thing the Archbishoppe of Poike, whome they all agreed also to bee thereto most conuenient, toke vpon him to moue her, and therein to doo his bittermost deuoir. Howbeit, if she could be in no wise intreated with her good will to deliuer him, then thought he and such other as were of the spiritualty present, that it were not in any wise to be attempted to take him out against her will. For it woulde bee a thing that should turne to the great grudge of all men, and high displeasure of God, if the priuiledge of that holy place should now be broken, which had so many yeres bene kept, which both kings and popes so good had granted, so manie had confirmed, and which holy ground was more then 500. yeres agoe by S. Peter in his own person in spirit accompanied with great multitude of angels by night so specially hallowed, and dedicate to God (for the prouise wherof, they haue yet in the abbey, Saint Peters Cope to shew) that from that time hitherward, was there neuer to vnderout a king, that durst that sacred place violate, or so holie a bishop, that durst it presume to consecrate. And therefore (quoth the Archbishop of Poike) god forbid that any man should for any thing earthly enterpryse to breake the immunitie and liberty of the sacred sanctuarie, that hath bene the safegard of so many a good mans life. And I trust (quoth he) with Gods grace, we shall not neede it. But for any manner need, I would not we should doo it. I trust that she shall be with reason contented, and all thinges in good maner obtained. And if it happeth that I bring it not so to passe, yet shall I toward it so far forth do my best, that ye shall all well perceiue, that no lacke of my deuoir, but the mothers dread and womanish feare, shall be the let. Womanish feare, naie womanish frowardnes (quoth the D. of Buckingham) for I dare take it vpon my soule, she well knoweth she needeth no such thing to feare, either for her son or for hir selfe. For as for hir, here is no man that will bee at war with women. Would God som of the men of hir kin were women too, and then should all be some in rest. Howbeit there is none of hir kinne the lesse loued, for that they be hir kin, but for their owne euill deseruing. And natheles, if wee loued neither hir nor hir kin, yet were there no cause to thinke that we should hate the Kings noble brother, to whose grace we our selues be of kin: whose honour, if shee as much desired, as our dishonour, & as much regard toke to his wealth, as to her owne will, she would bee as loth to suffer him from the King as anie of vs bee. For if she haue wit (as would God she had as good will as she hath) she would wit the reckoning of her selfe no wiser, then she thinketh some that bee heere, of whose faithfull mind she nothing doubteth, but verily beleueth and knoweth, that they would be as loy of his harme, as hir selfe, & yet would haue him from her, if she bide there: and we al (I thinke) content, that both be with hir, if she come thence, and bide in such place, where they may with their honour be.

Now then, if she refuse in the deliuerance of him, to follow the counsaile of them, whose wisdom she knoweth, whose truth she well trusteth: it is eather to perceiue, that frowardnes letteth her, and not feare. But go to, suppose that

Sanctuary.

the

the feare (as who may let her to feare her owne shadowe) the more the feareth to deliuer him, the more ought we feare to leaue him in her hands. For if she cast such fond doubts, that she feare his hurt: then will she feare, that he shall be fetcht thence. For she will sone thinke, that if men were set (which god forbid) vpon so great a mischief, the Sanctuarie would little let them: which good men might (as me thinketh) without sinne, somewhat lesse regard than they doe.

Now then, if she doubt, leaue he might be fetcht from her, is it not likelie enough that she shall send him some where out of the Realme? Merely, I looke for none other. And I doubt not, but she now as sore mindeth it, as we the let therof. And if she might happen to bring that to passe, (as it were no great matter, we letting her alone) all the world would say, that we were a wise sort of Counsaillours about a king, that let his brother be cast awaie vnder our noses. And therefore, I ensure you faithfully for my mind, I will rather manure her minde, fetch him awaie, than leaue him there, till her forwardnesse and sonde feare conuic him awaie. And yet will I breake no Sanctuarie therefore. For verely, with the priuiledges of that place and other like haue bene of long continued, I am not he that would be about to breake them. And in god faith, if they were now to begin, I would not be he that should bee about to make them.

Yet will I not saie naie, but that it is a deed of pittie, that such men as the sea, or their euill debtours haue brought in pouertie, should haue some place of libertie, to keepe their bodie out of the daunger of their cruell creditors.

And also, if the crowne happen (as it hath done) to come in question while either part taketh other as traitors, I will well there be some places of refuge for both.

But as for theues, of which these places be full, and which neuer fall from the crasse, after they once fall thereto, it is pittie the Sanctuarie should serue them: And much more, manquellers, whom God bad to take from the Altar and kill them, if their murder were wilfull. And where it is othertwise, there neede wee not the Sanctuaries that God appointed in the olde lawe. For if either necessitie, his owne defence, or misfortune draweth him to that deed, a pardon serueth, which either the law granteth of course, or the king of pittie maie.

Then loke me now how few Sanctuarie men there be, whom anie sauourable necessitie compelled to go thither: and then see on the other side, what a sort there be commonly therein of them, whom wilfull vnchastitnesse hath brought to naught.

What a rabble of theues, murderers, and malicious baynous traitors, and that in two places specially: The one at the elbow of the citie, the tother in the verie bowels. I dare well answere it, wepe the god that they doe, with the hurt that cometh of them, and ye shall finde it much better to lacke both, than haue both. And this I saie, although they were not abused as they now be, and so long haue bene, that I feare me ener they will be, while men be afraid to set the

their hands to the mendment, as though God and S. Peter were the patrons of vngratious liuing.

How vnchristes riot, and run in debt, vpon the boldnes of these places, yea, and rich men run thither with paye mens goods, there they builde, there they spend, and bid their creditours go whistle them.

Spens wiues run thither with their husbands plate, and saie, they dare not abide with their husbands for beating.

Thieues bring thither their stolen goods, and there liue thereon.

There deuise they newe robberies, nightly they steale out, they robbe, and reane, and kill, and come in againe, as though those places gaue them not onely a safegard for the harme they haue done, but a licence also to do more. Howbeit, much of this mischiefe, if wise men would set their handes to it, might be amended, with great thanks of God, and no breach of the priuiledge.

The residue, sith so long ago I wot neare what pope, and what prince more pitous than politike, hath granted it, and other men since, of a certaine religious feare, haue not broken it, let vs take a paine therewith, and let it a gods name stande in force, as farre forth as reason will, which is not fully so farre forth, as may serue to let vs of the fetchng forth of this noble man, to his honour and wealth, out of that place, in which he neither is, nor can be a Sanctuarie man.

A Sanctuarie serueth alway to defend the body of that man that standeth in danger abroad, not of great hurt onely, but also of lawfull hurt, for against vnlawfull harmes, neuer pope nor king intended to priuiledge any one place, for that priuiledge hath euerie place: knoweth any man, any place wherein it is lawfull one man to do another wrong?

That no man vnlawfully take hurt, that libertie, the king, the law, and beerie nature, forbidde in euerie place, and maketh to that regarde, for euerie man euerie place a Sanctuarie.

But where a man is by lawfull meanes in perill, there needeth he the tuition of some speciall priuiledge, which is the onely ground and cause of all Sanctuaries: from which necessitie, this noble Prince is farre, whose loue to his king, nature and kinned proueth, whose innocencie to all the worlde, his tender youth proueth, and so Sanctuarie, as for him, neither none he needeth, nor also none can haue.

Men come not to Sanctuarie, as they come to Baptisme, to require it by their Godfathers, he must aske it himselfe, that must haue it, and reason, sith no man hath cause to haue it, but whose conscience of his owne fault maketh him faine, neede to require it: what will then hath ponder babe: which and if he had discretion to require it, if neede were, I dare say would now be right angrie with them that kepe him there: and I would thinke without any scruple of conscience, without any breach of priuiledge, to be somewhat more homely with them that be there Sanctuarie men indeede.

For if one go to Sanctuarie with another mans goods, why should not the king leauing his bodie at libertie, satisfie the partie of his goods, euen without the Sanctuarie: for neither king nor pope can giue any place such a priuiledge,

the feare (as who may let her to feare her owne shadowe) the more the feareth to deliuer him, the more ought we feare to leaue him in her hands. For if she cast fuch fond doubts, that she feare his hurt: then will she feare, that he shall be fetcht thence. For she will fone thinke, that if men were fet (which god forbid) vpon fo great a mifchiefe, the Sanctuarie would little let them: which god might (as me thinketh) without sinne, somewhat leffe regard than they doe.

Now then, if she doubt, leaft he might be fetcht from her, is it not likelie ynough that she shall fend him fome where out of the Realme: Writly, I looke for none other. And I doubt not, but she now as foze mindeth it, as we the let therof. And if she might happen to bring that to paffe, (as if were no great matter, we letting her alone) all the worlde would fay, that we were a wife sort of Counsaillours about a king, that let his brother be cast awaie vnder our noses. And therefore, I ensure you faithfully for my mind, I will rather maugre her minde, fetch him awaie, than leaue him there, till her frowardnesse and fonde feare conueie him awaie. And yet will I breake no Sanctuarie therefore. For verely, fith the priuiledges of that place and other like haue bene of long continued, I am not he that would be about to breake them. And in god faith, if they were now to begin, I would not be he that should bee about to make them.

Yet will I not faie naie, but that it is a deepe of pittie, that fuch men as the sea, or their euill debtours haue brought in pouertie, should haue fome place of libertie, to keepe their bodies out of the daunger of their cruell creditors.

And also, if the crowne happen (as it hath done) to come in queftion wthle either part taketh other as traitors, I will well there be some places of refuge for both.

But as for theues, of which these places be full, and which neuer fall from the crasse, after they once fall thereto, it is pittie the Sanctuarie should serue them: And much more, manquellers, whome God had to take from the Altar and kill them, if their murder were wilfull. And where it is otherwisse, there neede wee not the Sanctuaries that God appointed in the olde lawe. For if either necessitie, his owne defence, or misfortune draweth him to that deepe, a pardon serueth, which either the law granteth of course, or the king of pittie maie.

Then loke me now how feto Sanctuarie men there be, whom anie fauourable necessitie compelled to go thither: and then see on the other side, what a sort there be commonly therein of them, whom wilfull vnchiftinneffe hath brought to naught.

What a rabble of theues, murderers, and malicious haynons traitors, and that in two places specially: The one at the elbow of the citie, the other in the verie bowels. I dare well anow it, wepe the god that they doe, wth the hurt that cometh of them, and ye shall finde it much better to lacke both, than haue both. And this I saie, although they were not abused as they now be, and so long haue bene, that I feare me ener they will be, while men be afraid to set their



their hands to the mendment, as though God and S. Peter were the patrons of vngratious liuing.

How vnchristes riot, and run in debt, vpon the boldnes of these places, yea, and rich men run thither with poore mens goods, there they builde, there they spend, and bid their creditours go whistle them.

Spens wiues run thither with their husbands plate, and saie, they dare not abide with their husbands for beating.

Thieues bring thither their stolen goods, and there liue thereon.

There deuise they newe robberies, mightily they steale out, they robbe, and reauie, and kill, and come in againe, as though those places gaue them not onely a safegard for the harme they haue done, but a licence also to do more. Howbeit, much of this mischief, if wise men would set their handes to it, might be amended, with great thanks of God, and no breach of the priuiledge.

The residue, sith so long ago I wot neare what pope, and what prince more piteous than politike, hath granted it, and other men since, of a certaine religious feare, haue not broken it, let vs take a paine therewith, and let it a gods name stande in force, as farre forth as reason will, which is not fully so farre forth, as may serue to let vs of the fetchyng forth of this noble man, to his honour and wealth, out of that place, in which he neither is, nor can be a Sanctuarie man.

A Sanctuarie serueth alway to defend the body of that man that standeth in danger abroad, not of great hurt onely, but also of lawfull hurt, for against vnlawfull harmes, neuer pope nor king intended to priuiledge any one place, for that priuiledge hath euerie place: knoweth any man, any place wherein it is lawfull one man to do another wrong?

What no man vnlawfully take hurt, that libertie, the king, the law, and beerie nature, forbiddeth in euerie place, and maketh to that regarde, for euerie man euerie place a Sanctuarie.

But where a man is by lawfull meanes in perill, there needeth he the tuition of some speciall priuiledge, which is the onely ground and cause of all Sanctuaries: from which necessitie, this noble Prince is farre, whose loue to his king, nature and kindred proueth, whose innocencie to all the worlde, his tender youth proueth, and so Sanctuarie, as for him, neither none he needeth, nor al- so none can haue.

When come not to Sanctuarie, as they come to Baptisme, to require it by their Godfathers, he must aske it himselfe, that must haue it, and reason, sith no man hath cause to haue it, but whose conscience of his owne fault maketh him sad, neede to require it: what will then hath yonder babe: which and if he had discretion to require it, if neede were, I dare say would now be right angry with them that keepe him there: and I would thinke without any scruple of conscience, without any breach of priuiledge, to be somewhat more homely with them that be there Sanctuarie men indeede.

For if one go to Sanctuarie with another mans goods, why should not the king leauing his bodie at libertie, satisfie the partie of his goods, euen within the Sanctuarie: for neither king nor pope can giue any place such a priuiledge,

that it shall discharge a man of his debts, being able to paie: and with that, diuers of the Cleargie that were present, whether they saide it for his pleasure, or as they thought, agreed plainly, that by the law of God, and of the Church, the goods of a Sanctuarie man should be deliuered in paiement of his debts, and stollen goods to the owner, and onely libertie reserued him to get his living with the labour of his hands. Verily (quoth the Duke) I thinke you saie verie truth, and what if a mans wife will take Sanctuarie, because shee list to run from her husband: I woulde wene if shee coulde alleadge none other cause, hee maie lawfullie without anie displeasure to Saint Peter, take her out of Saint Peters church by the arme. And if no body may be taken out of Sanctuary, that (saith he) will bide there, then if a childe will take Sanctuarie, because he feareth to go to Schoole, his master must let him alone. And as simple as that sample is, yet is there lesse reason in our case than in that: for therein, though it bee a childish feare, yet is there, at the least wise, some feare, and herein is there none at all. And verily, I haue often heard of Sanctuary men, but I neuer heard earst of Sanctuarie children. And therefore, as for the conclusion of my minde, who so may haue deserued to haue it, if they thinke it for their suertie, let them keepe it. But he can be no Sanctuarie man, that neither hath wisdom to desire it, nor malice to deserue it, whose life or libertie, can by no lawfull processe stande in leoparchie. And hee that taketh one out of Sanctuarie to doe him good, I saie plainly, that he breaketh no Sanctuarie.

When the Duke had done, the tempozall men whole, and a good part of the spirituall also, thinking no hurt eathly ment toward the yong babe, condescended in effect, that if he were not deliuered he should be fetched: Howbeit, they thought it all best, in the auoiding of all maner of rumor, that the L. Cardinall should first assay to get him with her good will. And thereupon, all the counsell came vnto the star chamber at Westminster, and the L. cardinall leauing the Protector with the counsell in the starre chamber, departed into the Sanctuarie to the Quene, with diuers other lordes with him, were it for the respect of his honour, or that she should by presence of so manie perceiue that this errand was not one mans minde: or were it, for that the Protector intended not in this matter, to trust ante one man alone, or else, that if she finally were determined to keepe him, some of that companie, had happely secret instruction incontinent, maugre her minde, to take him, and to leaue her no respite to conuey him, which she was likely to mind after this matter bzoken to her, if her time would in any wise serue her.

When the quene, and these lordes were come togither in presence, the lord Cardinall shewed vnto her, that it was thought vnto the Protector, and vnto the whole counsell, that her keeping of the kings brother in that place, was the thing, which highly sounded, not onely to the great rumor of the people: the ir obloquie, but also to the importable grieve and displeasure of the kings royall State. to whose grace it were as singular comfort to haue his naturall brother in companie, as it was their both dishonor, and all theirs and hers also, to suffer him in Sanctuarie, as though the one brother stood in danger & perill

of the other. And he shewed her, that the counsell therefore had sent him unto her, to requyre her the deliuey of him, that he might be brought unto the kings presence at his libertie, out of that place, which they reckoned as a prison, and there should he be demeaned, according to his estate, & she in this doing should both do great good to the realm, pleasure to the counsell, and profit to her selfe, succour to her friends that were in distresse, and ouer that (which he wist well she specially tended) not only great comfort and honoꝝ to the king, but also to the yong duke himselte, whose both great wealth it were to be togither, as wel for many greater causes, as also for their both disport, and recreation: which thing, the Lord esteemed no sleight, though it seeme light, well pondering, that their youth without recreation and play, cannot endure, noꝝ any stranger, for the conseruation of their both ages and estates, so metely in that point for anie of them, as either of them for other.

Protector.

The queenes  
answere.

My Lord (quoth the queene) I say not naie, but that it were very conuenient, that this gentleman whom yee requyre were in company of the king his brother: and in good faith, me thinketh it were as great commoditie to them both, as for yet a while, to bee in the custodie of their mother, the tender age considered of the elder of them both, but specially the yonger, which besides his infancie, that also needeth god looking to, hath a while bene so sore diseased, bered with sicknes, and is so newly rather a little amended, than well recovered, that I dare put no person earthly in trust with his keeping, but my selfe onely, considering that there is (as physicians saie) and as we also finde, double the perill in the reciduation, that was in the first sickenes, with which disease, Nature being sore laboured, sore wearied and weakened, wareth the lesse able to beare out and sustaine a new surfeit. And albeit there might be found either that would happily do their best unto him, yet is there none that either knoweth better how to order him, than I that so long haue kept him: or is more tenderly like to cherish him, than his owne mother that bare him. No man denieth, good Phadame (qd. the cardinall) but that your grace were of all folke most necessary about your children: and so would all the counsell not onely be content, but glad that yee were, if it might stande with your pleasure, to be in such place as might stand with their honour. But if you do appoint your selfe to tarrie here, then thinke they it more conuenient that the Duke of Yorke were with the king honourably at his libertie to the comfort of them both, than here as a Sanctuarie man, to their both dishonour and obloquie, sith there is not alwaie so great necessitie to haue the child to be with the mother: but that occasion maie sometime be such, that it should be more expedient to keepe him elswhere, which in this well appeareth, that at such time as your dearest sonne the Prince, and now he King, should for his honour, and good order of the countrey, keepe himselfe in Wales, far out of your companie: your grace was well content therewith your selfe. Not verie well content, quoth the queene: And yet the case is not like, for the one was then in health, and the other is now sick: In which case, I maruell greatly, that my lorde protector is so desirous to haue him in his keeping, where if the child in his sicknesse miscarrie by nature, yet might bee runne into slander and suspicion of fraude.

And where they call it a thing so soze against my child's honour, and theirs also, that hee bydyeth in this place: it is all their honours there to suffer him byde, where no man doubteth he shall be best kept, and that is here, while I am here, which as yet intende not to come forth, & iopardie my selfe after other of my friends, which would God were rather here in suretie with me, than I were there in iopardy with them. Why madam (quoth another lord) knowe you any thing why they should be in iopardy? Say verily sir, quoth she, no: why they should be in prison neither, as they now be. But it is I trowe, no great maruell though I feare, lest those that haue not letted to put them in durance, without colour, will let as little to procure their destruction without cause. The cardinall made a countenance to the other lord, that he should harpe no more upon that string, and then said he to the Quene, that he nothing doubted, but that those Lords of her honorable kinne, which as yet remained under arrest, should upon the matter examined doe well enough: and as towarde her noble person, neither was, neyther could be anie manner iopardie. Whereby should I trust that (quoth the Quene) in that I am guiltles? as though they were guiltie, in that I am with their eninies better loued than they: When they hate them for my sake, in that I am so neere of kin to the king: and how far they be off, if that would helpe, as God send grace it hurt not, & therfore as for me, I purpose not as yet, to depart hence. And as for this gentleman my sonne, I mind that hee shall be where I am, till I see further: for I assure you, for that I see some men so greedie, without anie substantiall cause to haue him: This maketh mee much the more searder to deliuer him. Truelie madame, quoth he, and the searder that you be to deliuer him, the searder berte other men to suffer you to keepe him, least your causelesse feare might cause you farther to conuey him: and many be there that think he can haue no priuiledge in this place, which neither can haue will to aske it, nor malice to deserue it, and the refoze, they reckon no priuiledge broken, though they fetch him out, which if ye finally refuse to deliuer him, I verily thinke they will. So much dread hath my Lord his vncke, for the tender loue hee beareth him, least your grace should hap to send him away.

The Quene.

A sir (quoth the Quene) hath the protector so tender zeale, that he feareth no thing but least hee should escape him: Thinketh hee that I would sende him hence, which neither is in the plight to send out, and in what place could I reckon him sure, if he be not sure in the Sanctuarie: Whereof was there neuer yrant yet so diuclish that durst presume to breake. And I trust, God is as strong now to withstand his aduersaries, as euer he was. But my son can deserue no Sanctuary, and therefore he cannot haue it. Forsooth he hath found a goodly glose, by which that place that may defend a thiefe, maie not saue an innocent. But he is in no iopardie, nor hath no need thereof: would God he had not. Troth the protector, I pray god he maie proue a protector, troweth he that I perceiue not wherunto his painted processe draweth? it is not honorable that the Duke here: it were comfortabell for them both, that he were with his brother, because the king lacketh a plaiesfellow to be ye sure. I praise God sende them both better plaiesfellows than him, that maketh so high a matter upon such a rising



trifling pretext: as though there could none bee found to plaie with the king, but if his brother that hath no luste to plaie for sickness, come out of Sanctuarie, out of his safegarde to plaie with him. As though Princes as yong as they bee, coulde not plaie but with their pères, or children coulde not plaie but with their kinned, with whome for the moze part they agré much worse than with strangers. But the child cannot require the priuiledge: who told him so? He shall heare him aske it, and he will. Howbeit this is a gale matter, suppose he could not aske it, suppose he would not aske it, suppose hee would aske to go out, if I saie hee shall not: if I aske the priuiledge but for my selfe, I saie hee that against my will taketh him out, breaketh the Sanctuarie. Serueth this libertie for my person onelic, or for my goods too? Pee maie not hence take my Horse from me, and maie you take my child from me? He also is my ward: for as my learned counsell sheweth me, sith hee hath nothing by descent holden by knights seruice, the law maketh his mother his guardian. Then may no man I suppose take my warde from mee out of Sanctuarie, without the breach of Sanctuarie. And if my priuiledge could not serue him, no; he aske it for himself, yet sith the law committeth to me the custody of him, I may require it for him, except the law giue a child a guardian only for his goods and lands, discharging him of the cure and safe keeping of his body, for which only both lands and goods serue.

¶ And if examples be sufficient to obtaine priuiledge for my childe, I neede not far to seeke. For in this place in which now wee be (and which is now in question, whether my child maie take benefit of it) mine other son (now king) was bozne, and kept in his cradle, and preserved to a more prosperous fortune, which I praye God long to continue. And as all you know, this is not the first time that I haue taken Sanctuarie. For when my Lord my husband was banished, and thrust out of his kingdome, I fled hither, being great with child, and here I bare the prince. And when my Lord my husbande returned safe againe, and had the victorie, then went I hence to welcome him home, and from hence I brought my babe the prince vnto his father, when hee first tooke him in his armes. And I praye God that my sons palace may bee as great safegarde vnto him now raigning, as this place was sometime to the kings enemy. In which place I intend to keepe his brother, sith, &c. \* Wherefore here intend I to keepe him, since mans law serueth the guardian to keepe the infant. The law of nature willes the mother keepe the child, Gods law priuiledgeth the Sanctuarie, and the Sanctuarie my son, sith I feare to put him in the protectors hands that hath his brother alreadie, and were (if both failed) inheritor to the crowne. The cause of my feare hath no man to doo to examine: And yet feare I no farther than the law feareth, which as learned men tell me, forbiddeth euerie man the custodie of the m, by whose death hee may inherit lesse land than a kingdome. I can no moze, but whosoever he be that breaketh this holy sanctuarie, I pray God shortly send him need of sanctuarie, when he may not come to it: For taken out of sanctuarie would I not my moztall enemy were.

The Lorde Cardinall percelusing that the Queene wared euer the longer the further off, and also that she beganne to kinde and chafe, and speake moze

This that is here betweene this marke & this marke \* was not written by him in English, but is translated out of this Historie which he wrote in Latine.

biting wordes against the protector, and such as he neither belaued, and was also loath to heare; he said to her for a finall conclusion, that he would no longer dispute the matter, but if she were content to deliuer the duke to him, and to the other Lords present, he durst lay his own body and soule both in pledge, not only for his surety, but also for his estate. And if she would giue them a resolute answer to the contrary, he would forthwith depart threewithall, and shift who so would with this businesse afterwards, for hee neuer intended more to moue her in that matter, in which she thought that he and all other also saue herselfe lacked either witt or truethy. What, if they were so dull that they could nothing perceiue what the protector intended; true th, if they shoulde procure her son to be deliuered into his hands, in whom they shoulde perceiue towarde the child any euill intended.

The Quene with these wordes stood a good while in a great studie: And forasmuch as he seemed y<sup>e</sup> cardinall readier to depart then some of the remnant, and the protector himselfe readie at hand, so that she verilie thought she could not keepe him there, but that he shoulde incontinent bee taken thence; and to conueie him else where, neither hadde shee time to serue her, nor place determined, nor persons appoynted, all thinges vnready, this messenger came on her so sodaynelie, nothing lesse looking for, than to haue him fetcht out of Sanctuarie, which shee thoughte to bee now be sette in such places about, that hee could not bee conueyed out vntaken; and partelie (as shee thought) it mighte fortune, her feare to bee false, so well shee wisse it was either needlesse, or bootlesse: wherefore, if shee shoulde needes goe from him, shee deemed it best to deliuer him. And ouer that, of the Cardinals sayth shee nothing doubted, nor of some other Lords neither, whome shee there sawe. Which as shee fearedd leasse they might bee deceyued; so was shee well assured they woulde not bee corrupted: then thought shee it shoulde yet make them the more warilie to looke to him, and the more circumspectlie to see to his suretie, if shee with her owne handes betooke him to them of trust. And at the last shee tooke the yong Duke by the hand, and said vnto the Lordes: My Lordes (quoth shee) and all my Lords, I neither am so vnwise to mistrust your wits, nor so suspitious to mistruste your truthe: of which thing I purpose to make you such a prooffe, as if eyther of both lacked in you, might turne both vnto great sorrow, the realme to much harme, and you to great reproch. For so, here is (quoth shee) this gentleman, whome I doubt not but I could here keepe safe, if I would, whatsoeuer any man saie: & I doubt not also, but there be some abroad so deadly enemies vnto my blood, that if they wist where any of it lay in their owne bodie, they woulde let it out. Wee haue also experience that the desire of a Kingdome knoweth no kindred: The Brother hath bene the Brothers bane: and may the nephewes bee sure of their vncle: Each of these children is the others defence while they bee asunder, and each of their liues lieth in the others bodie. Keepe one safe and both bee sure, and nothing for them both more perillous, than to bee both in one place. For what wise merchant aduentureth all his goods in one Shippe? All this notwithstanding, heere I deliuer him, and his Brother in him, to keepe, into your handes, of whome

I shall aske them both afore God and the worlde. Faythfull yee be, that tooke I well, and I knowe well yee bee wisse. Power and strength to keepe him if you like, neither lacke yee of your selfe, nor can lacke helpe in this case: And if yee cannot els where, then may you leaue him here. But onlie one thing I beseech you, for the trust which his father put in you euer, and for the trust I put in you now, that as far as yee thinke that I feare too much, be you well ware that you feare not as farre too little. And therewithall shee said vnto the child, farewell mine owne swaete sonne, God sende you good keeping: let mee kisse yee yet once ere you goe, for God knoweth when wee shall kisse together againe: And therewith shee kissed him, and blessed him, turned her backe and wept, and went her waie, leauing the childe weeping as faine. When the lord Cardinall and those other Lords with him had receiued this yong duke, they brought him into the Starre Chamber, where the Protector tooke him in his Armes and kissed him, with these wordes: Goe welcome my Lorde, euen withall my verte Heart: And hee sayde in that of likelyhoode as hee thought. Thereupon forthwith they broughte him vnto the King his Brother, into the Bishoppes Palace at Paules, and from thence through the city honourable into the Towre, out of the which after that date they neuer came abroad.

Dissimulation.

¶ When the Protector had both the children in his handes, he opened himselfe more boldly, both to certaine other men, and also chieflie to the Duke of Buckingham. Although I know that manie thought that this duke was prouide to all the protectors counsell, euen from the beginning, and some of the protectors friends said, that the duke was the first mouer of the protector to this matter, sending a priuy messenger vnto him, straight after King Edwards death. But other againe which knew better the subtil wit of the protector, denie that hee euer opened his enterprize to the duke, vntill hee had brought to passe the things before rehearsed. But when hee had imprisoned the quenes kindred, and gotten both his sons into his owne handes, then hee opened the rest of his purpose with lesse feare to them whome he thought meete for the matter, and specially to the duke, who being won to his purpose, hee thought his strength more then halfe increased. The matter was broken vnto the duke by subtil folks, and such as were their craftes masters in handling of such wicked deuises: who declared vnto him that the yong King was offended with him for his kindreds sake, & if he were euer able he would reuenge them: who would prick him forward thereunto if they escaped (for they would remember their imprisonment): or else if they were put to death, without doubt the yong King would be carefull for their deaths, whose imprisonment was grievous vnto him. And that with repenting the Duke should nothing auaille, for there was no way left to redde his offence by benefits, but he should sooner destroy himselfe then saue the king, who with his brother and his kindreds he saw in such places imprisoned, as the protector might with a becke destroy them all: and that it were no doubt but hee would do it indeede, if there were anie newe enterprize attempted. And that it was likelie, that as the Protector had prouided priue garde for himselfe, so had hee spialles for the Duke, and traynes to catch him, if hee

This that is here betwene this marke ¶ at this marke ¶ was not written by him in English, but is translated out of this historie which he wrote in Latin.

should be against him, and that peradventure from them, whom he least suspected. For the state of things and the dispositions of men were then such, that a man could not well tell whom he might trust, or whom he might feare.\*

These things and such like, being beaten into the dukes mind, brought him to that point, that where he had repented <sup>h</sup> way that he had entred, yet would he go forth in the same, and since he had once begunne, he would stoutly goe through. And therfore to this wicked enterprise which he belæued could not be voided, he bent himselfe, and went through and determined, that since the common mischief could not be amended, he would turne it as much as hee might to his owne commoditie.

When it was agreed, that the Protector should haue the Dukes asde to make him king, and that the Protector's only lawfull sonne should martie the dukes daughter, and that the Protector should grant him the quiet possession of the Earldome of Hertford, which he claimed as his inheritance, and could neuer obtaine it in king Edwards time: Besides these requests of the Duke, the protector of his owne mind promised him a great quantitie of the kings treasure, and of his household stuffe. And when they were thus at a point betwene themselves, they went about to prepare for the coronation of the yong king as they would haue it seeme: And that they might turne both the eyes and mindes of men from perceiuing of their dystes other where, the Lordes being sent for from all parts of the realme, came thicke to the solemnity: But the Protector, and the duke after that, that they had sent the lord Cardinall, the archbishop of Yorke then lord Chancelor, the bish. of Ely, the L. Stanley, and the L. Hastings then lord Chamberlaine, with many other noble men\* to commune and deuise about the coronation in one place, as fast were they in another place contriuing the contrarie, and to make the protector king. To which Councell, albeit there were adhibited very few, and they were secret: yet began there here and there about, some manner of muttering among the people, as though all should not long be well, though they neuer wist what they feared, nor therfore, were it that before such great things mens harts of a secret instinct of nature misglue them, as the sea without wind swelleth of himselfe sometime before a tempest: or were it that some one man happily somewhat perceiuing, filled many men with suspicion, though hee shewed fewe men what he knewe. Howbeit, somewhat the dealing it selfe made men to mize on the matter, though the councell were close. For by little and little, all folke withdrew from the tower, and drew to Crosbies in Bishops gate stræte, where the protector kept his household. The protector had the resort, the king in manner desolate.

Crosby place.

While some for their businesse made suite to them that had the doing, some were by their friends secretly warned, that it might happily turne them to no good, to be too much attendant about the king without the protector's appointment, which remoued also diuers of the princes olde seruants from him, and set them about him.

Thus manye thinges comming together partly by chance, partly of purpose, caused at length not common people onely, that wound with the winde, but wise men also, and some lordes eke to marke the matter, and mize thereon,



so farre forth, that the Lord Stanley that was after earle of Darby, wisely mistrusted it, and saide vnto the Lord Hastings, that he much mistrusted these two seuerall Councells. For while we (quoth he) talke of one matter in þe one place, little wot we where of they talke in the other place. My Lord (quoth the Lord Hastings) of my life neuer doubt you: for while one man is there, which is neuer thence, neuer can there bee thing once moued, that shoulde sound a misse toward me, but it shoulde be in mine eares ere it were well out of their mouthes.

This meant he by Catesby, which was of his nere secret counsell, and whom Catesby. he verie familiarly vled, and in his most weightie matters put no man in so speciall trust, reckoning himselfe to no man so lief, sith he well wist there was no man so much to him beholden as was this Catesby, which was a man wel learned in the lawes of this land, and by the speciall fauor of the L. Chamberlaine, in good authoritie, & much rule bare he in all the countie of Leicester, where the lord Chamberlains power chiefly lay. But sorely great pittie was it, that he had not had either more truth or lesse wit: for his dissimulation only, kept all that mischiese by. In whom if the lord Hastings had not put so speciall trust, the lord Stanley and he had departed with diuers other lordes, and broken all the daunce, for many ill signes that he saw, which he now construes al to the best. So surely thought he, that there could be no harme toward him in that counsell intended where Catesby was.

And of trust the Protector and the Duke of Buckingham made verie good semblance vnto the Lord Hastings, and kept him much in companie: And undoubtedly the protector loued him well, and loth was to haue lost him, sauing for feare least his life shoulde haue quailed their purpose. For which cause hee moued Catesby to proue with some wordes cast out a far off, whether he could thinke it possible to win the Lord Hastings vnto their part: But Catesby whether he assaied him, or assaied him not, reported vnto them, that he founde him so fast, and heard him speake so terrible wordes, that he durst no further bryake.

And of trust the lord Chamberlaine of very trust shewed vnto Catesby the distrust that other began to haue in the matter: And therefore he fearing least their motion might with the Lord Hastings minish his credence, wherunto onely all the matter leaned, procured the protector hastily to ridde him. And much the rather, for that he trusted by his death to obtaine much of the rule that the lord Hastings bare in his countrey: the onely desire whereof was the allectue that induced him to be partner and one speciall contriuer of all this horrible treason.

Whereupon some asser, that is to wit, on the fridate the thirtenth date of June, many lordes assembled in the towre, and there sate in counsell, deuising the honorable solemnities of the kings coronation, of which the time appointed then so nere approached, that the pageants and subtilties were in making daie and night at Westminster, and much victuall killed therefore, that after ward was cast away.

These Lordes so sitting together communing of this matter, the Protector came

came in amongst them first about nine of the clocke, saluting them courteous-ly, and excusing himselfe that he had bene from them so long, saying merilie, that he had bene a sleeper that day.

And after a little talking with them, he said unto the bisshope of Ely: My Lord, you haue very good strawberies at your garden in Holborne, I require you let vs haue a messe of them. Gladly my lord (quoth he) would God I had some better thing as ready to your pleasure as that. And therewith in all the haste he sent his seruant for a messe of strawberies.

The Protector set the Lordes fast in communing, and thereupon praying them to spare him for a little while, departed thence: And sone after one houre, betwene 10. and 11. he returned into the chamber among them all, changed with a wonderfull sower angrie countenance, knitting the browes, frowning and fretting, and gnawing on his lips, and so sate him downe in his place, all the lordes much dismayed and sore maruelling of this maner of suddenn change, and what thing should him aile. Then, when he had sitten still a while, thus he began: What were they worthe to haue that compasse and imagine the destruction of me, being so nere of blood unto the king, and protector of his royal person and his realme? At this question, all the lordes sate sore astonied, musing much by whom this question should bee meant, of which euery man wist himselfe cleare.

Then the lord Chamberlaine, as he that for the loue betwene them thought he might be boldest with him, answered and said, that they were worthe to be punished as hainous traitors, whatsoener they were: And all the other affirmed the same. That is (quoth he) ponder sozeresse my brothers wife, and other with her, meaning y<sup>e</sup> quene. At these words many of the other lordes were greatly abashed that fauored her. But the L. Hallings was in his mind better content that it was moued by her, than by any other whom he loued better: albeit his hart somewhat grudged, that he was not afore made of counsell in this matter, as he was of the taking of her kinred, and of their putting to death, which were by his assent before deuised to bee beheaded at Pontfract this selfesame day, in which he was not ware that it was by other deuised, that himselfe should be beheaded the same day at London. Then said the protector, Ye shall all see in what wise that sozeresse, and that other witch of her counsell Shores wife with their affinity, haue by their sozerie and witchcraft wasted my body: And therewith he plucked by his doublet sleeve to his elbow vpon his left arme, where he shewed a werissh withered arme, and small, as it was neuer other. And thereupon euery mans minde sore misgaue them, well perceiuing that this matter was but a quarrell: For they well wist, that the Quene was too wise to go about any such folly: And also if she would, yet would she of all folke least make Shores wife of counsell, whom of all women she most hated, as that concubine whom the king her husband had most loued: And also, no man was there present but well knew y<sup>e</sup> his arme was euer such since his birth. Nay the lesse the lord Chamberlaine (which from the death of king Edward kept Shores wife, on whom he somewhat doted in the kings life, sauing (as it is saide) hee that while forbare her of reuerence toward the king, or else of a certaine kind

of felicity to his friend) answered and said : Certainly my lord, if they haue so heinously done, they be worthy heinous punishment.

What (quoth the protector) thou seruest me I weene with ifs and with ands, I tell thee they haue so done, and that I will make good on thy bodie traitor : and therewith as in a great anger, he clapped his fist vpon the bord a great rap. At which token giuen, one cried treason without the chamber: Therewith a doze clapped, and in come there rushing men in harnesse, as many as the chamber might holde. And anone the protector said to the lord Hastings, I arrest thee traitor: What me my lord (quoth he?) yea thee traitor, quoth the protector. And another let fly at the lord Stanley, which shynke at the stroke, and fell vnder the table, or else his head had bene cleft to the teeth: for as shortly as he shynke, yet came the blood about his eares. Then were they all quickly bestowed in diuers chambers, except the lord Chamberlaine, whom the protector had spee'd and shynke him apace, for by S. Paul (quoth he) I will not to dinnor till I see thy head off.

The lord Stanley wounded.

It booted him not to aske why, but heauilie toke a priest at auenture, and made a short shrift, for a longer would not be suffered, the protector made so much haste to dinner, which he might not go to, till this were done, for sauing of his oth. So was he brought forth into the græne beside the chappell within the tower, and his head laide dowlne vpon a long log of timber, and there stricken off, and afterward his body with the head entered at Windsor, beside the body of king Edward.

A marvellous case is it to heare either the warnings of that he should haue voided, or the tokens of that he could not void, for the selfe night next before his death, the L. Stanley sent a trustie secret messenger vnto him at midnight in all the haste, requiring him to rise and ride away with him, for he was disposed utterly no longer to bide, he had so fearfull a dreame, in which him thought, that a Boare with his tusks so rased them both by the heads, that the blood ran about both their shoulders. And for as much as the protector gaue the Boare for his cognisance, this dreame made so fearfull an impression in his hart, that he was thoroughly determined no longer to tarrie, but had his horse readie, if the L. Hastings would go with him to ride yet so far the same night, that they should be out of danger ere day. Ha good Lord (quoth the lord Hastings to this messenger) leaneeth my lord thy master so much to such trifles, & hath such faith in dreames, which either his owne feare fantasieeth, or doe rise in the nightes rest by reason of his daie thoughts: Tell him it is plaine witchcraft to beleue in such dreames, which if they were tokens of thinges to come, why thinke he not that we might be as likely to make them true by our going, if we were caught and brought backe (as friends saile sicke) for then had the Boare a cause likely to race vs with his tuskes, as folke that fledde for some fallshood: wherefore either is there no perill, nor none there is in dedde; or if any be, it is rather in going than biding. And if we should needes cost fall in perill one way or other, yet had I leiser that men should see that it were by other mens fallshood, than thinke it were either by our owne fault, or saint heart: And therefore go to thy master man and commend me to him, and pray him to be mercie, and haue

The lord Stanley's dreame.

haue no feare: for I ensure him I am as sure of the man that he tooke of, as I am of mine owne hand. God send grace Sir, quoth the messenger, and went his waie.

Certaine it is also, that in riding towards the towre the same morning in which hee was beheaded, his horse twise or thise stumbled with him, almost to the falling: which thing albeit each man wot well daily happeneth to them to whome no such mischance is toward, yet hath it bene of an olde kite and Cuckome obserued as a token of tentimes notable sojerging some great misfortune.

Now this that followeth was no warning, but an enuious scoone.

The same morning ere he was vp, came a knight vnto him as it were of curtesie, to accompany him to the council, but of truth sent by the protector to haste him thitherwards, with whom he was of secret confederacy in that purpose, a meane man at that time, and now of great authority.

This knight when it happened the Lord Chamberlaine by the waie to steele his horse, and commune a while with a priest whom he met in the Tower street, brake his tale, and said merrilie to him, what my Lorde, I praye you come on, whereto talke you so long with that priest, you haue no need of a priest yet: and therewith he laughed vpon him, as though hee would say, ye shall haue sone. But so little wist the other what he meant, and so little mistrusted, that he was neuer merrier, nor neuer so full of god hope in his life, which selfe thing is often seene a signe of change. But I shall rather let any thing passe me, than the vaine surety of mans mind so nere his death.

Vpon the very towre wharfe, so nere the place where his head was stroke off soon after, there met he with one Hastings a puruant of his owne name: and of their meeting in that place, he was put in remembrance of another time, in which it had happened them before to meet in like manner together in the same place. At which other time the Lorde Chamberlaine had bene accused vnto king Edward by the Lorde Rivers the Duenes brother, in such wise as hee was for the while, but it lasted not long, farre fallen into the kings indignation, and stood in great feare of himselfe: And for as much as he nowe met this puruant in the same place that so perardie so well passed, it gaue him great pleasure to talke with him thereof, with whome hee had before talked thereof in the same place, while hee was therein. And therefore hee saide: Ah Hastings, art thou remembered when I met thee heere once with an heauie heart? Yea my Lorde quoth he, that remember I well, and thanked be God, they got no good, nor you no harme thereby. Thou wouldest say so, quoth he, if thou knewest as much as I know, which few know else as yet, and mo shall shortly. What meant he by the Lords of the Duenes kindred that were taken before, and should that daie be beheaded at Pontfract: which he well wist, but nothing ware that the Archbong ouer his owne head. In faith man, quoth hee, I was neuer so sozie, nor neuer stood in so great dread in my life, as I did when thou and I met here: And so how the world is turned, now stand mine enemies in the danger, as thou maist hap to heare moze hereafter, and I neuer in my life so merrie, nor euer in so great suretie.



God God, the blindnes of our mortal nature, when he most feared, he was in god suretie: when he reckoned himselfe surest he lost his life, and that within two howers after.

Thus ended this honourable man, a good knight and a gentle, of great authority with his prince, of living somewhat dissolute, plaine, and open to his enemy, and secret to his friends, easie to beguile, as he that of good hart and courage fore studied no perils: a loving man, and passing well beloved: very faithfull and trustie enough, trusting too much. Now shew the same of this Loydes death swiftlie through the citie, and so forth farther about like a wind in every mans eare.

The description  
of the Loyd Hastings.

But the protector immediatlie after dinner, intending to set some colour upon the matter, sent in all haste for manie substantiall men out of the Citie into the tower: And at their comming, himselfe with the duke of Buckingham, stood harnessed in old ill faring Briganders, such as no man should wene that they would vouchsafe to haue put upon their backs, except that some sudden necessitie had constrained them.

And then the protector shewed them, that the lord chamberlaine and other of his conspract had contrived to haue suddenlie destroyed him and the Duke, there the same daie in the Councell. And what they intended further was as yet not well knowne. Of which their treason he neuer had knowledge before. At the clocke the same forenone, which sudden feare droue them to put on for their defence such harnesse as came next to hand. And so had God holpen them, that the mischief turned upon them that would haue done it. And this he required them to report.

Euerie man answered him saie, as though no man mistrusted the matter, which of troth no man beleued. Yet for the further appealing of the peoples mind, he sent immediately after dinner in all haste, an Herault of arms, with a proclamation to bee made through the Citie in the kings name, containing that the Loyd Hastings with diuers other of his traitorous purpose, had before conspired the same daie, to haue slaine the Loyde protector and the duke of Buckingham, sitting in the Councell, and after to haue taken vpon them to rule the King and the Realme, at their pleasure, and thereby to pill and spoile whom they liste vncontrolled. And much matter there was in that proclamation, deuised to the slaunder of the Loyd Chamberlaine, as that he was an euill Counsellor to the kings father, inciting him to manie thinges highlie redounding to the minishing of his honour, and to the vniuersall hurt of his Realme by his euill compaignie, sinister procuring, and vngracious ensample, as well in manie other thinges, as in the vicious living and inordinate abuse of his bodie, both with manie other, and also especiallie with Shores wife which was one also of his most secrete Counsell of this heinous treason, with whom he late nightlie, and namelie, the night last past next before his death, so that it was the lesse maruell, if vngracious living brought him to an vnhappie ending, which he was now put vnto, by the most breake commaundment of the Kinges highnesse, and of his honourable and faithfull Councell, both for his demerites, being so openly taken in his falsly conceived treason,

The protectors  
proclamation.

also

also least the delaying of his execution might haue encouraged other mischievous persons partners of his owne conspiracie, to gather and assemble themselves together, in making some great commotion for his deliuerance: whose hope being now by his well deserued death politickely repressed, all the Realme should by Gods grace rest in god quiet and peace.

Now was this proclamation made within two howers after that hee was beheaded, and it was so curiously indited, and so faire written in parchment, in so well a set hand, and therewith of it selfe so long a processe, that euery childe might well perceiue that it was prepared before. For all the time betwene his death and the proclaiming coulde scant haue sufficed vnto the bare writing alone, all had it bene but in paper, and scribled forth in haste at aduenture. So that vpon the proclaiming thereof, one that was scholemaster of Paules, of chance standing by, and comparing the shortnes of the time with the length of the matter, said vnto them that stood about him: Here is a gaie godlie cast, foule cast awaie for haste: and a marchant answered him, that it was written by prophesie. Now then by and by as it were for anger, not for couetise, the protector sent into the house of Shores wife (for her husband dwelled not with her) and spoiled her of all that euer she had, aboue the value of two or three thousand marke, & sent her bodie to prison: And when he had a while laid vnto her (for the manner sake) that she went about to bewitch him, and that shee was of counsell with the Lord Chamberlaine to despoile him: in conclusion, when that no colour could fasten vpon these matters, then he laid heinously to her charge, that thing that herselfe coulde not denie, that all the worlde wist was true, and that notwithstanding euery man laughed at, to heare it then so suddenly, so highly taken, that she was naught of her bodie.

The Sherifes of London, William Albrie & John Bathew set Shores wife out of hir house, by commandement of the protector, & led her thoroughout the city of London to the Tower, where she answered certaine points laid to her charge, and from thence she was committed to Ludgate, there to remain prisoner, &c.

And for this cause (as a good content prince, cleane and faultlesse of himselfe, sent out of heauen into this vicious world for amendment of mens manners) he caused the Bishop of London to put her to open penance, going before the crosse in procession vpon a sundae with a taper in her hand: In which shee went in countenance and pace demure so womanlike, and albeit shee were out of all arate saue her kirtle onely, yet went she so faire and lowly, namely while the wondering of the people cast a comely rudd in her cheekes (of which shee before had most misse) that hir great shame wanne hir much praise, among those that were more amorous of hir body, than curious of hir soule. And many good folke also that hated hir living, and glad were to see sin corrected: yet pitied the more hir penance, than reioiced therein, when they considered that the protector procured it more of a corrupt intent, then any vertuous affection.

The Description of Shores wife.

This woman was borne in London, worshipfully friended, honestly brought vp, and verie well married, sauing somewhat too soone, her husbande an honest citizen, young and godly, and of good substance: But for as much as they were coupled ere she were well ripe, she not very feruently loued, for whom the neuer longed, which was happily the thing that the more easily made hir incline vnto the kings appetite, when he required her. Notwithstanding the respect of his royalty, the hope of gay apparell, ease, pleasure, and other wanton wealth, was able some to pierce a soft tender hart.

But

But when the king had abused her, anone hir husband (as he was an honest man, and one that could his god, not presuming to touch a Kings Concubine) left her by to him altogether.

When the king died the Lord Chamberlaine took her, which in the kings daies, albeit he was soze enamoured vpon hir, yet he forbore her, either for reverence, or for a certaine friendly faithfulness: proper she was and faire, nothing in her bodie that you woulde haue changed, but if you woulde haue wished her somewhat higher.

Thus saie they that knewe hir in her youth, albeit some that now see hir (for yet she liueth) deeme hir neuer to haue bene well visaged, whose iudgement seemeth me somewhat like, as though men should gesse the beautie of one long before departed, by her scalpe taken out of the charnell house: for now is she old, leane, withered, and dried vp, nothing left but riuel skin & hard bone. And yet being euen such: who so well aduise hir visage, might gesse and deuise, which parts how filled would make it a faire face: yet belited not men so much in her beautie as in her pleasant behauior. For a proper wit had she, & could both read well and write, merry in companie, ready and quick of answer, neither mute nor full of babble, sometime taunting without displeasure, and not without discretion.

The king would say that he had three Concubines, which in three diuers properties diuer she excelled. One the merriest, another the wisest, the third the hottest harlot in his realme, as one whome no man coulde get out of the Church lightly to any place, but it were to his bed. The other two were somewhat greater personages, & notwithstanding of their humilitie content to be nameles, and to forebeare the praise of those properties. But the merriest was this Shores wife, in whome the king therefore took speciall pleasure. For manie hee had, but her beloued, whose fauor to sake the troth (for sin it were to belie the diuell) she neuer abused to anie mans hurt, but to manie a mans comfort and reliefe, where the king took displeasure, she would mitigate and appease his mind: where men were out of fauour, she would bring them in his grace. For manie that had highly offended shee obtayned pardon: Of great forfeitures shee gat men remission: And finally, in manie weighty suites shee stood many men in great need, either for none or verie small rewarde, and those rather gave then rich: either for that she was contente with the deede it selfe well done, or for that shee belited to bee sued vnto, and to shewe what shee was able to dooe with the king, or for that wanton Women and wealthe bee not alwayes contentous.

I doubt not some shall thinke this woman too sleighte a thing to bee written of, and set among the remembraunces of great matters: which they shall speciallie thinke, that happilie shall esteeme hir onle by that they now see her. But mee seemeth the chauce so much the more woorthie to bee remembred, in howe much shee is nowe in the more beggerlie condition, unfriended and worne out of acquayntaunce, after good substance, after as greate fauour with the Prince, after as greate suite and seeking to with all those that those daies had businesse to speede, as manie other men were in their times, which be

The L. Chamberlaine kept Shores wife after the death of Edward the 4.

Shores wife is used when Sir T. More wrote this history in the raigne of the 8.

4  
R. Edwards 1  
Concubines.

Shores wife  
begged of them,  
that had begged  
themselves, had  
the not bene  
their friend.

nowe famous onely by the infamie of their ill dedes. Her dowings were not much lesse, albeit they be much lesse remembred because they were not so eull, for men vse if they haue an euill turne, to write it in marble: and who so doth vs a good turne, we write it in dust, which is not woorth proued by her: for at this day the beggeth of many at this day liuing, that at this day had begged if she had not bene.

Sir Richard  
Ratcliffe.

So he was it so deuised by the Protector and his counsaile, that the selfe daie in which the Lorde Chamberlaine was beheaded in the Tower of London, and about the selfe same houre, was there (not without his assent) beheaded at Pontefraite, the forerremembred Lordes and knightes that were taken from the king at Northampton and from Stratforde. Which thing was done in the presence, and by the order of Sir Richard Ratcliffe knight, whose seruice the Protector specially vsed in that counsell, and in the execution of such lawlesse enterprises, as a man that had been long secret with him, hauing experience of the world, and a shrewd wit, short and rude in speech, rough and boysterous of behauiour, bolde in mischiefe, as farre from pittie as from all feare of God.

The lord Ri-  
uers and other  
beheaded.

This knight bringing them out of the prison to the scaffold, and shewing to the people about that they were traitors, not suffering them to declare and speake their innocencie, least their words might haue inclined men to pittie them, and to hate the Protector and his part: caused them hastily without iudgement, processe, or maner of order, to be beheaded, & without other earthly guilt, but onely that they were good men, true to the king, and true to the queene.

So he when the lord Chamberlaine and these other lordes and knightes were thus beheaded and rid out of the way: then thought the Protector, that while men mused what the matter meant, while the lordes of the Realme were about him out of their owne strengthes, while no man wist what to thinke, nor whome to trust, ere euer they should haue space to dispute and digest the matter and make parties, it were best hastily to pursue his purpose, and put himselfe in possession of the crowne, ere men coulde haue time to deuise any way to resist.

But nowe was all the studie by what meane this matter being of it selfe so heynous, might be first broken to the people, in such wise that it might be well taken.

To this Counsell they took diuers, such as they thought meetely to be trusted, likely to be induced to that part, and able to stand them in steede either by power or policie.

Edmond Shaa  
maior of London.

Among whome they made of Counsaile Edmond Shaa knight then maior of London, which vpon trust of his owne advancement, where of he was of a proud hart highly desirous, should frame the city to their appetite. Of spirituell men they took such as had wit, and were in authoritie among the people for opinion of their learning, and had no scrupulous conscience.

Dorset Shaa,  
Friar Pinke.

Among these had they Iohn Shaa Clarke, brother to the maior, and Friar Pinke, prouinciall of the Augustine Friars, both doctors of Divinitie, both great



great preachers, both of more learning than vertue, of more fame than learning. For they were before greatly esteemed among the people: but after that neuer. Of these two the one had a sermon in praise of the protector before the coronation, the other after, both so full of tedious flattery, that no mans eares could abide them.

Pinke in his sermon so lost his voice, that hee was faine to leaue off and come downe in the midst. Doctor Shaa by his sermon lost his honestie, and sone after his life, for verie shame of the worlde, into which he durst neuer after come abroad. But the siter forced for no shame, and so it harmed him the lesse. Whoebeit some doubt and many thinke, that Pinke was not of counsaile of the matter before the coronation, but after the common maner, fell to flattery after: namely sith his sermon was not incontinent vpon it, but at Saint Marie Hospitall at the Easter after. But certaine it is, that Doctor Shaa was of counsaile in the beginning, so farre forth, that they determined that he should first breake the matter in a sermon at Pauls Crosse, in which hee should by the authoritie of his preaching, incline the people to the Protectors ghostly purpose.

But now was all the labour and studie, in the deuise of some conuenient pretext, for which the people should be content to depose the Prince, and accept the protector for king. In which diuers things they deuised. But the chiefe thing and the weight of all that inuention rested in this, that they should alleadge Bastardie, either in king Edward himselfe, or in his children, or both. So that he should seme disabled to inherite the crowne, by the Duke of Yorke, and the Prince by him.

To lay bastardie in king Edward sounded openly to the rebuke of the Protectors owne mother, which was mother to them both: for in that point coulde be none other colour but to pretend that his owne mother was an aduoutrisse, which notwithstanding, to further this purpose he letted not: but nay the lesse, he would that point should be lesse and more sauourable handled, not euen fullie plaine and directlie, but that the matter should be touched aslope craftilie, as though men spared in that point to speake all the troth, for feare of his displeasure.

But the other point concerning the bastardy that they deuised to surmise in King Edwards children, that would he should be openly declared, and enforced to the vttermost. The colour and pretext thereof, cannot be well percesued, but if we first reparate you some things long before done about king Edwards marriage.

After that H. Edward the 4 had deposed H. Henry the first, and was in peaceable possession of the realme, determining himselfe to marry, as it was requisite both for himselfe and for the realme, he sent ouer in ambassade the earle of Warwike, with other noble men in his companie vnto Spaine, to intreate and conclude a marriage betwene King Edward and the kings daughter of Spaine. In which thing the Earle of Warwike found the parties so towarde and willing, that he speedily according to his instructions without anye difficultie, brought the matter to very good conclusion.

Dame Elizabeth  
birth.

So we happened it, that in the meane season there came to make suite by petition to the king dame Elizabeth Grey, which was after his Quene, at that time a widow, bozne of noble blood, speciallie by her mother, which was Dutchesse of Bedford ere she married the Lord Woodville her father. Notobest this dame Elizabeth her selfe, beeing in seruice with Quene Margaret wife vnto king Henry the first, was married vnto one Iohn Grey an esquire, whom king Henry made knight, vpon the field that he had on Barnet heath by S. Albons against king Edward. And little while enioied he that knight-hood, for he was at the same field slaine.

After which done, and the earle of Marwike being in his ambassade about the afore remembred marriage, this poore Ladie made humble suite vnto the king, that shee might bee restoyed vnto such small landes as her late husband had giuen her in iointure. Whome when the king behelde, and heard her speake, as she was both faire and of a goodlie fauor, moderate of stature, well made, and verie wise: he not onelie pittied her, but also waied enamoured of her: and taking her after secretlie aside, beganne to enter in talking more familiarlie. Whose appetite when shee perceiued, shee vertuouslie denied him. But that did the so wiselie, and with so good manner, and wordes so well set, that she rather kindled his desire than quenched it.

And finally, after manie a meeting, much wooing, and many great promises, she well espied the kings affection toward her so greatly increased, that she durst somewhat the more boldlie saie her mind, as to him whose heart she perceiued more seruientlie set, than to fall off for a word.

And in conclusion, she shewed him playne, that as shee wiske her selfe too simple to bee his wife, so thought shee her selfe too good to bee his Concubine. The king much maruelling at her constancie, as he that had not bene wont else where to bee so stiffelie sayde naie, so much esteemed her continencie, and chastitie, that hee sette her vertue in steade of possession and riches, and thus taking counsaile of his desire, determined in all possible haste to marrie her.

The kings mo-  
ther.

And after hee was thus appointed, and had betwene them twaine ensured her: then asked hee counsaile of his other friends, and that in such manner, as they might then perceiue, it booted not greatlie to saie naie. Notwithstanding the Dutches of Borke his mother was so sore moued therewith, that she dissuaded the marriage as much as she possibly might, alleading that it was his honour, profite, and suretie also, to marrie in a noble pogenie out of his Realme, whereupon depended great strength to his Estate, by the affinity and great possibilitie of encrease of his possession. And that hee coude not wel otherwise do, standing that he earle of Marwike had so far moued already, which were not likely to take it wel, if all his voyage were in such wise frustrated and his appointments deluded. And she saide also, that it was not princelie to marrie his owne subiect, no great occasion leading thereunto, no possessions, or other commodity depending thereupon, but only as it were a rich man that woulde marrie his maide, onlie for a little wanton dottage vpon his person. In which marriage many mo commend the maidens fortune than the masters wisdome.

wisdom. And yet therein shee saide there was more honestie than honour in this marriage: for as much as there is betwene a merchant and his owne malde so great difference, as betwene the king and this Widow. In whose person, albeit there was nothing to be misliked, yet was there (shee saide) nothing so excellent but that it might be found in diuers other that were more matelie (quoth she) for your estate, and maidens also, whereas the onelic Widowhead of Elizabeth Grey, though she were in all other things conuenient for you, should yet suffice, as me seemeth, to refraine you from her marriage, sith it is an vnfitting thing, and a verie blemish and high disparagement to the sacred maiestie of a prince, that ought as nigh to approach priest-hood in cleanness as he doth in dignity, to be defouled with bigamie in his first marriage.

The king then his mother had saide, made her aunswere, part in earnest, part in plaie merrilie, as hee that wiske himselfe out of her rule. And albeit, hee woulde gladlie that shee should take it well, yet was at a point in his owne minde, tooke shee it well or other wise. Howbeit somewhat to satisfie her, he said, that albeit marriage being a spirituall thing, ought rather to be made for the respect of God, where his grace enclineth the parties to loue together, as he trusted it was in his, than for the regard of any temporall aduantage: yet notwithstanding, him seemed that this marriage euen worlde considered, was not vnprofitable. For he reckoned the amitie of no earthlie nation so necessarie for him, as the friendship of his owne, which he thought likelie to brare him so much the more heartie fauour, in that he disdayned not to marrie with one of his owne land. And yet if outward alliance were thought so requisite, he woulde finde the meanes to enter thereunto, much better by other of his kin, where all the parties coulde be contented, than to marrie himselfe whome hee should happilie neuer loue, and for the possibilitie of more possessions, leese the fruite and pleasure of this that he had already. For small pleasure taketh a man in all that euer he hath beside, if he be twined against his appetite. And I doubt not (quoth he) but there be as ye say other, that be in euery point comparable with hir: and therefore I let not them that like them to wed them: for more is it reason, that it mislike any man, that I marrie where it liketh mee. And I am sure that my Cousin of Warwike neyther loueth mee so little, to grudge at that I loue, nor is so vnreasonable to looke that I should in chosse of a wife, rather bee ruled by his eie, than by mine owne: as though I were a ward that were bound to marrie by the appointment of a guardian. I would not be a king with that condition, to forebeare mine owne libertie in choyse of mine owne marriage.

As for possibilitie of more inheritance by new affinitie in strange lands, is oft the occasion of more trouble than profite: and we haue already title by that meanes, to so much as sufficeth to get and keepe well in one mans daies. That she is a widow and hath already children, by gods blessed lady I am a bachelor and haue some two, and so each of vs hath a prowe that neither of vs is like to be barrain. And therefore (madam) I pray you be content, I trust in God she shall bring forth a young prince that shall please you. And as for the Bigamie, let the Bishop hardlie laie it in my waite when I come to take orders: For

The kings answer to his mother.

I vnderstand it is forbidden a Priest, but I neuer will it yet, that it was forbidden a Prince.

Elizabeth  
Lucie.

The dutches with these wordes nothing appeased, and seeing the king so set thereon, that she could not pull him backe, so highly she disdained it, that vnder pretext of her dutie to godward, she deuised to disturb this marriage, and rather to helpe that he should marrie one dame Elizabeth Lucie, whom the king had also not long before gotten with childe. Wherefore the kings mother openly objected against his marriage, as it were in discharge of her conscience, that the king was sure to dame Elizabeth Lucie, and her husband before God. By reason of which wordes, such obstacle was made in the matter, that either the bishops durst not, or the king would not proceede to the solemnization of this wedding, till these same were clarely purged, and the troth well and openly testified. Whereupon dame Elizabeth Lucie was sent for.

And albeit that she was by the kings mother and manie other put in good comfort, to assure that she was ensured vnto the king: yet when she was solemnly swozne to saie the troth, she confessed that they were neuer ensured. Whobest she said his grace spake so louing wordes vnto her, that she verily hoped he would haue married her. And that if it had not been for such kind wordes, she would neuer haue shewed such kindnes to him, to let him so kindly get her with childe.

The kings marriage.

This examination solemnelie taken, when it was clarely perceiued that there was none impediment: the k. with great feast and honorable solemnity, married dame Elizabeth Grey, and her crowned quene that was his enemies wife, and manie time had prayed full heartily for his losse, in which God loued her better than to grant her her boone.

The king fled.

The Prince  
borne.  
H. Henry the  
first set vp.  
Of the earle of  
Warlike.

But when the earle of Warlike vnderstood of this marriage, he toke it so highly that his ambassage was deluded, that for verie anger and disoaine, he at his returning assembled a great puissance against the king, and came so fast vpon him or he could be able to resist, that he was faine to vould the realme, and fle into Holland for succor, where he remained for the space of two yers, leauing his new wife in Westminster in Sanctuary, where she was deliuered of Edward the Prince, of whom we before haue spoken. In which meane time the earle of Warlike toke out of prison, & set vp again H. Henry the first, which was before by H. Edward deposed, and that much what by the power of the earle of Warlike which was a wise man, and a couragious warrior, and of such strength, that for his lands, his alliance, and fauor with all people, that he made kings, and put downe kings almost at his pleasure, and not impossible to haue attained it himselfe, if hee had not reckoned it a greater thing to make a king than to be a king. But nothing lasteth alway: for in conclusion H. Edward returned, and with much lesse number than he had at Barnet on the Casserday field, slew the erle of Warlike, with many other great estates of that partie, and so stably attained the crowne againe, that he peaceably enjoyed it vntill his dying daie: and in such plight left it, that it could not be lost, but by the discord of his very friends, or falsehood of his fained friends. I haue rehearsed this businesse about this marriage some what the more at length, because

The earle of  
Warlike  
Raine.



because it might thereby the better appeare vpon how slipper a ground the protector builded his coloz, by which he pretended king Edwards children to be bastards: But that inuention simple as it was, it liked them to whom it sufficed to haue somewhat to saie, while they were sure to be compelled to no larger profe than themselves list to make.

Now then (as I began to shew you) it was by the protector and his counsel concluded, that this Doctor Shaa should in a Sermon at Pauls croffe signify to the people, that neither king Edward himselfe, nor the Duke of Clarence, were lawfullie begotten, nor were not the verie children of the duke of Yorke, but begotten vnlawfullie by other persons, by aduoutrie of the dutchesse their mother. And that also dame Elizabeth Lucy was verilie the wife of king Edward, and so the prince and all his children bastards, that were begotten vpon the Queene. According to this deuise doctor Shaa the Sondaye after, at Pauls Croffe in a great audience (as alwaie assembled greates number to his preaching) he took for his theme *Spuria vitulamina non agent radices altas*. That is to saie: Bastard slips shall neuer take deepe roote.

Doctor Shaa's  
sermon on sun.  
day the 19 of  
June.

Thereupon when he had shewed the great grace that God giueth, and secretly insundeth in right generation after the lawes of matrimonie, then declared he that commonly those children lacked that grace, and for the punishment of their parentes were for the more part vnhappie which were gotten in base, and speciallie in aduoutrie, of which though some by the ignorance of the world and the truth hid from knowledge inherited for the season other mens lands, yet God alwaie so prouideth, that it continueth not in their bloode long, but the truth comming to light, the rightfull inheritors bee restored and the Bastarde slippe pulled vp ere it can bee rooted deepe. And when he had laide for the profe and confirmation of this sentence certaine examples taken out of the olde Testament, and other puncient Histories, then beganne he to descende into the praife of the R. H. R. Richard late Duke of Yorke, calling him Father to the lord protector, and declared the title of his heires vnto the Crowne, to whome it was after the death of King Henry the first entailed by authoritie of Parliament. Then shewed hee that his verie right heire of his bodie lawfullie begotten was onlie the Lord protector: For he declared then, that King Edward was neuer lawfullie married vnto the Queene, but was before God husband vnto dame Elizabeth Lucie, and so his children bastards. And besides that, neither king Edward himselfe, nor the duke of Clarence, among those that were secret in the houshold, were reckoned verie surely for the children of the noble Duke, as those that by their fauors more resembled other knowne men than him. From whose vertuous conditions he saide also that king Edward was far off. But the Lord protector he said, the verie noble prince, the speciall paterne of knightly prowes, as well in al princely behaviour, as in the lineaments and fauor of his visage, represented the very face of the noble duke his father. This is quoth he, the fathers owne figure, this is his owne countenance, the very print of his visage, the very sure vndoubted image, the plaine expresse likenes of that noble duke.

Now was it before deuised, that in the speaking of these wordes, the Pro-

fectoꝝ shoulde haue come in among the people to the Sermon warde, to the end that those meeting with his presence, might haue bene taken among the hearers, as though the holie Ghost had put them in the preachers mouth, and shoulde haue moued the people euen there to crye, king Richard, king Richard, that it might haue bene after sayde, that hee was speciallie chosen by God, and in maner by myracle. But this deuise quailed, eyther by the Protector's negligence, or the Preachers ouermuch diligence. For while the Protector founde by the wate tarrying, least hee shoulde prevent those wordes, and the Doctor fearing that hee shoulde come ere his Sermon coulde come to these wordes, hastned his matter thereto, who was come to them, and passe them, and entred into other matters ere the Protector came. Whome when hee behelde comming, hee sodaynelie left the matter with which hee was in hande, and without anie deduction thereunto, out of all order, and out of all frame, beganne to repeate those wordes agayne: This is the verie Noble Prince, the speciall paterne of knightlie pꝛotectors, which as well in all Princely behauiour, as in the lineamentes and fauour of his visage, representeth the verie face of the noble duke of Yorke his father: this is the fathers owne figure, this is his owne countenaunce, the verie printe of his visage, the sure vndoubted image, the plaine expresse likenes of the noble duke, whose remembrance can neuer die while he liueth. While these wordes were in speaking, the Protector accompanied with the duke of Buckingham, went thꝛough the people into the place where the doctors commonly stand in the vpper story, where hee stode to hearken the Sermon. But the people were so far from crying king Richard, that they stood as they had bene turned into stones, for wonder of this shamefull Sermon.

Preacher.

After which once ended, the Preacher gat him home, and neuer after durst looke out for shame, but kept him out of sight like an Owle. And when hee once asked one that had bene his old friend, what the people talked of him, all were it that his owne conscience well shewed him that they talked no good, yet when the other answered him, that there was in euery mans mouth spoken of him much shame, it so strooke him to the hart, that within few daies after he withered and consumed a waie.

The 21. of June.

Then on the Tuesdaie following this sermon, there came into the Guildhall in London the duke of Buckingham, accompanied with diuers Lordes and knightes, more than happilie knew the message that they brought. And there in the East ende of the hall, where the Maior keepeth the Hustings, the maior & all the Aldermen being assembled about him, all the commons of the citie gathered before them: after silence commanded vpon great pain in the protectoꝝs name, the duke stood vp, and (as he was neither vnlearned, and of nature maruellously well spoken) he said vnto the people with a cleare and a loud voice in this maner of wise.

The Duke of  
Buckingham's  
Oration.

Friends, for the zeale and heartie fauor that I receiue from you, wee bee come to breake vnto you, of a matter right great and weightie, and no lesse weightie than pleasing to God, and profitable to all the Realme: not to no part of the realme moze profitable, than to you the Citizens of this noble Citie. For wher  
that

that thing that we wot well ye haue long time lacked, and soze longed for, that ye would haue giuen gre at god for, that yee woulde haue gone farre to fetch, that thing we be come hither to bring you without your labour, paine, cost, aduenture or leopardie. What thing is that? Certes the suretie of your owne bodies, the quiet of your Wives and your Daughters, the safegarde of your goods: of all which thinges in time past ye stood ener moze in doubt. For who was there of you all, that would reckon himselfe lord of his owne goods among so many greins and traps as were set therfore, among so much pilling and polling, among so manie farces and tallages, of which there was neuer end, and ofentimes no need: or if anie were, it rather grew of riot, and unreasonable wast, than anie necessarie or honozable charge? So that there was daile pilled from god men and honest great substance of goods to be lashed out among vnchristis, so farre forth that sickenes sufficed not, nor anie vsmall manner of knowne Taxes: but vnder an easie name of beneuolence and good will, the Commissioners so much of euerie man tooke, as no man could with his god will haue giuen: as though that name of beneuolence, had signified that euery man should pay not what himselfe of his owne god will list to grant, but what the king of his god will list to take. Which neuer asked little, but euery thing was haunsted above the measure, amercements turned into fines, fines into ransoms, small trespasses into misprision, misprision into treason. Whereof I think no man looketh that we should remember you of examples by name, as though Burdet were forgotten, that was for a word spoken in haste cruelly beheaded, by the misconstruing of the lawes of this realme for the princes pleasure; with no lesse honour to Marcam then chiefe Justice, that left his office rather than he would assent to that iudgement, than to the dishonesty of those that either for feare or flattery gaue that iudgement. What Cooke your owne woorthipfull neyghbor, alderman and maior of this noble citie, who is of you either so negligent that he knoweth not, or so forgetfull that he remembreth not, or so hard harted that he pittieeth not that woorthipful mans losse? What speake we of losse? his vtter spoile and vnderferued destruction, onelie for that it happened those to fauor him whome the prince fauoured not. We need not I suppose to rehearse of these anie mo by name, sith there bee (I doubt not) manie heere present, that either in themselves, or in their nigh friends haue knowne as well their goods as their persons, greatlie indangered, either by fained quarrelles, or small matters agreede with heynous names. And also there was no crime so greate, of which there coulde lacke a pretext. For sith the king preuenting the time of his inheritance attayned the Crowne by battell: it sufficed in a rich man for a pretext of treason, to haue been of kindred or alliance, nere familiaritie, or longer acquaintance with anie of those that were at anie time the enemies, which was at one time & other, moze than halfe the realme. Thus were neither your goods in surety, & yet they brought your bodies in leopardey, beside the common aduenture of open war, which albeit that it is ener the will & occasion of much mischiefe, yet it is neuer so mischecious as where any people fall at distance among themselves, nor in none earthly nation, so deadly & so pestilent, as when it hapneth among vs: & among vs neuer so long

T. Burdet Esq.  
quire of Froom  
in Warwike-  
shire, looke  
Anno 1477.

Open warre.

Stiff warre.

continued dissention, no; so manie battalles in that season, no; so cruell and so deadlie foughten, as was in that kings daies that dead is, God forgue it his soule. In whose time, and by whose occasion, what about the getting of the garlande, keeping it, lesing, and winning againe, it hath cost moze Eng-  
lish blood, than hath twice the winning of France. In which inward warre among our selues, hath bene so great effusion of the ancient noble blood of this Realme, that scarcely the halfe remaineth, to the great enfeebing of this noble land, beside many a good towne ransacked and spoiled by them, that haue bene going to the felde or comming from thence: And peace long after not much surer then warre. So that no time was there, in which rich men for their money, and great men for their landes, or some other for some feare, or some displeasure were not out of perill. For whome trusted he that mistrusted his owne brother? whome spared he that killed his owne brother? or who coulde perfitly loue him, if his owne brother coulde not? What manner of folke hee most fauoured we shall for his hono; spare to speake of, howbeit, this wot you well all, that whoso was best, bare alwaie least rule, and moze sute was in his daies vnto Shores wife, a vile and an abhominable strumpet, than to all the lordes in Englande, except vnto those that made her their protecto;: which simple woman was well named and honest, till the king for his wanton lulk and sinfull affection bereft her from her husbände, a right honest substantiall yong man among you. And in that point, which in god faith I am sozie to speake of, sauing that it is in baine to kepe in counsel that thing that all men know, the kings greedy appetite was insatiable, and euery where ouer all the realme intolerable: for no woman was there any where, yong or olde, rich or poze, whom he set his eye vpon, in whom he any thing liked, either person or fa-  
uor, speech, pace, or countenance, but without any feare of God, or respect of his honour, mormore or grudge of the world, he would importunely pursue his appetite, and haue her, to the great destruction of many a good woman, and great dolor to their husbands and their other friends, which being honest people of themselves, so much regard the cleannesse of their house, the chastity of their wiues and their chyllozen, that them were leauer to lese all that they haue be-  
side, than to haue such a villany done them. And all were it that with this and other importable dealings, the realme was in euerie part annoied: yet speci-  
ally ye here the citizens of this noble city, as wel for that amongst you is most plenty of all such thinges as minisster matter to such injuries, as for that you were nearest at hand, sith that nere heereabout was commonly his most abid-  
ding. And yet be ye the people whom he had as singular cause well and kindly to intreat, as any part of his realme, not only for that the prince by this noble city, as his especiall chamber, & the speciall well renowned city of his realm, much honozable fame receiueth among all other nations: but also for that ye, not without your great cost, and sundry perils and iopardies in all his wars, bare euen your speciall fauor to his part, which your kinde mindes bozne vnto the house of Bozke, sith he hath nothing wo;thily acquited, there is of that house that now by Gods grace better shall, which thing to shewe you, is the whole summe and effect of this our present errand. It shall not, I wot well, need that

London the  
kings especial  
chamber.



I rehearse to you againe that yee haue already heard, of him that can better tel it, & of whom I am sure ye will better beleue it: and reason is that it so be. I am not so prouid to looke therefore, that yee should reckon my wordes of as great authoritie as the preachers of the word of God, namely, a man so cunning and so wise, that no man better wotteth what he should saie, and thereto so good and vertuous, that he would not saie the thing which he wist hee should not saie, in the pulpet, namely, into the which no honest man commeth to lie, which honourable Preacher yee well remember substantiallly declared vnto you at Paules Crosse, on Sundae last passed, the right and title, that the most excellent Prince Richard Duke of Gloucester, now Protector of this realme hath vnto the crowne and kingdome of the same. For as the worshipfull man groundly made open vnto you, the children of king Edward the 4. were neuer lawfully begotten, for as much as the king (leaving his very wise dame Elizabeth Lucie) was neuer lawfully married vnto the Quene their mother, whose blood, fanning that he set his voluptuous pleasure before his honor, was full vnmistakably matched with his, and the mingling of whose bloods together, hath bene the effusion of great part of the noble blood of this realme. Whereby it may well seeme the marriage not well made, of which there is so much mischief growne: For lacke of which lawfull accomplishing, and also of other things which the saide worshipfull doctor rather signified than fullie explained, and which things shall not be spoken for mee, as the thing wherein enerie man forbeareth to say that he knoweth in auoiding displeasure of my noble Lorde Protector, bearing, as nature requireth, a fullall reuerence to the Dutchesse his mother, for these causes I saie before remembred, that is to wit, for lacke of other issue lawfully comming of the late noble prince Richard Duke of Yorke, to whose roiall blood the crowne of England and of France, is by the high authoritie of parliament entailed, the right and title of the same, is by the iust course of inheritance according to the common lawes of this lande, deuoluted and commen vnto the most excellent Prince the Lord Protector, as to the verie lawfully begotten sonne of the foreremembred noble Duke of Yorke. Which thing well considered, and the great knightly prouesse pondered, with manifold vertues which in his noble person singularly abound, the nobles and commons also of this realme, and specially of the north part, not willing anye bastard blood to haue the rule of the Land, nor the abuses before in the same used anye longer to continue, haue condescended and fully determined to make humble petition to the most puissant prince the lord protector, that it may like his grace at our humble request, to take vpon him the guiding and gouernance of this realme, to the wealth and encrease of the same, according to his very right and iust title. Which thing I wote it well, he will be loath to take vpon him, as he whose wisdom well perceiue the labour and studie both of minde and bodie, that shall come therewith, to whomsoener so will occupie the roome, as I dare saie he will, if he take it. Which roome I warne you well is no offices office: And that the great wise man well perceived when he said: *Va regno cuius rex puer est*: Woe is that realme that hath a childe to their king. Therefore so much the more cause haue wee to thanke God,

God, that this noble personage which is so righteously intituled thereunto, is of so sad age, and thereunto so great wisdoms ioyned with so great experience, which albeit he will be loath (as I haue said) to take it vpon him, yet shal he to our petition in that behalfe the more graciously incline, if yee the worthy shippfall citizens of this the chiefe city of this realme, ioine with vs the nobles in our said request. Which for your owne weale we doubt not but ye will: and naye lesse I heartily praye you so to do, whereby you shall do great profit to all this realme beside, in choosing the m so good a king, and vnto your selfe spectall commoditie, to whom his Maiesty shall euer after beare so much the more tender fauor, in how much he shall perceiue you the more proue and beneuolently minded toward his election. Wherein deare friends that minde you haue, we require you plainly to shew vs.

When the Duke had said, and looked that the people whom he hoped that the Maior had framed before, should after this proposition made, haue cried King Richard, King Richard, all was hysht and mute, and not one word answered thereunto: wherwith the duke was maruellously abashed, & taking the maior nearer to him, with other that were about him prouise to that matter, said vnto them softly, what meaneth this, that this people bee so still? Sir (quoth the Maior) percase they perceiue you not well. That shall we mend (quoth he) if that will helpe.

And by and by somewhat louder he rehearsed them the same matter againe in other order and other words so wel and ornately, and naye lesse so evidently and plaine, with voice, gesture, and countenance so comely, and so conuenient, that euerie man much maruelled that heard him, and thought that they neuer had in their liues heard so euill a tale so well tolde.

But were it for wonder or feare, or that each lookt that other should speake first; not one word was there answered of all the people that stode before, but all was as still as the midnight, not so much as rowning amongst them, by which they might seme to commune what was best to doe. When the Maior saw this, he with other partners of that Councell dyde about the Duke, and said that the people had not bene accustomed there to be spoken vnto, but by the Recorder, which is the mouth of the citie, and happily to him they will answer. With that the Recorder called Fitz William, a sad man and an honest, which was so new come into that office, that he neuer had spoken to the people before, & loath was with that matter to begin; notwithstanding, therunto commanded by the Maior, made rehearfall to the Commons of that the duke had twice rehearsed to them himselfe. But the Recorder so tempered his tale, that he shewed euerie thing as the Dukes wordes, and no part of his owne. But all this noting, no change made in the people, which alway after one, stood as they had bene men amased. Whereupon the Duke rowned vnto the Maior and said: this is a maruellous obstinate silence, and therewith he turned vnto the people againe with these wordes: Deare friendes, we come to moue you to that thing which peradventure we not so greatly needed, but that the Lords of this realme, and the Commons of other parties might haue sufficed: sauing that we such loue beare you, and so much set by you, that we would not

Fitz William  
Recorder.

not gladdie doe without you, that thing in which to be partners is your weale and honor, which as it seemeth, either you see not, or wey not. Wherefore we require you give us answer one or other whether you be minded as all the nobles of the realme be, to haue this Noble Prince now Lord Protector to be your King or not.

At these wordes the people began to whisper among themselves secretly, that the voice was neither lowde nor distinct, but as it were the sounde of a swarme of Bees, till at the last in the neather ende of the Hall, a bolshment of the Dukes seruants and Pashefields, and other longing to the Protector, with some pzentifes and laddes that thrust into the Hall among the pzease, began sodainly at mens backs to crie out as lowde as their throates would giue, King Richard, King Richard, and thre to by their caps in token of ioy. And they that stode before cast backe their heads maruelling therat, but nothing they saide.

And when the Duke and the Pasor saw this manner, they wisely turned it to their purpose, and said it was a goodly crie, and a ioyfull to heare, euery man with one voice, no man saying nay. Wherefore friends (quoth the Duke) since that we perceiue it is all your whole mindes to haue this Noble man for your King, wherof we shall make to his grace so effectuall report, that we doubt not but it shall rebound vnto your great weale and commoditie: we require you that ye to morrow go with vs, and we with you vnto his noble grace, to make our humble request vnto him in manner before remembred. And therewith the Lordes came doونه, and the compaignie dissolved and departed, the more part all sad, some with glad semblance that were not verie merrie, and some of those that came thither with the Duke not able to dissemble their sorowe, were faine at his backe to turne their face to the wall, while the dolour of their heart burst out of their eyes.

Then on the morrow after, the Pasor with all the Aldermen and chiefe commons of the Citie in their best maner apparelled, assembling themselves together, resorted vnto Baynards Castle, where the Protector laie. To which place repayed also according to their appointment, the Duke of Buckingham, with diuers Noble men with him, beside many knights and other Gentlemen. And thereupon the Duke sent worde vnto the Lord Protector of the being thereof a great and honorable compaignie, to moue a great matter vnto his grace.

Whereupon the Protector made difficultie to come out vnto them, but first he knew some part of their errand, as though he doubted, and partly distrustful the coming of a number vnto him so sodainly, without any warning or knowledge whether they came for good or harme. When the Duke had shewed this vnto the Pasor and other, that they might thereby see howe little the Protector looked for this matter, they sent vnto him by the messenger such louing message againe, and therewith so humbly besought him to vouchsafe, that they might resort to his presence, to propose their intent, of which they would vnto none other person part disclose, that at the last he came forth of his Chamber, and yet not downe vnto them, but stode aboue in a Gallerie

The Pasors  
comming to  
Baynards Ca-  
stle the 22. of  
June.

quer

ouer them, where they might see him, and speake to him, as though he would not yet come too nere them, till hee wist what they meant. And thereupon the duke of Buckingham first made humble petition vnto him on the behalfe of them all, that his grace would pardon them, and licence them to propose vnto his grace the intente of their comming without his displeasure, without which pardon obtained, they durst not be bold to moue him of that matter. In which, albeit they meante as much honour to his Grace, as wealth to all the realme beside, yet were they not sure how his grace would take it, whom they would in no wise offend. Then the protector (as hee was verie gentle of himselfe, and also longed soze to wit what they meant) gaue him leaue to propose what him liked, verilie trusting for the good mind that hee bare them all, none of them anie thing would intende vnto him warde, wherewith he ought to be grieued.

When the Duke had this leaue and pardon to speake, then wared hee bold to shew him their intent and purpose, with all the causes mouing them thereunto, as ye before haue heard, & finally to beseech his grace, that it would like him of his accustomed goodnes and zeale vnto the realme now with his ele of pittie, to behold the long continued distresse and decay of the same, and to set his grations hands to redresse an amendment thereof, by taking vpon him the crowne and gouernance of this realm, according to his right and title lawfullie descended vnto him, and to the laude of God, profite of the land, and vnto his grace so much the more honor, and lesse pain, in that that neuer prince reigned vpon any people, that were so glad to liue vnder his obediace, as the people of this realme vnder his.

When the Protector had hearde the proposition, he looked verie strange like thereat, and answered: That albeit it were that he partly knewe the thinges by them alledged to bee true, yet such entire loue hee bare vnto king Edward and his children, that so much more hee regarded his honor in other realmes about, than the Crowne of anie one, of which hee was neuer desirous, that hee coulde not finde in his heart in this point to encline to their desire. For in all other nations where the truth were not well knowne, it shoulde peraduenture bee thought, that it were his owne ambitious mind and druse, to depose the Prince, and take himselfe the Crowne, with which infamie hee woulde not haue his honour stayned for anie Crowne, in which he had euer perceyued much more labour and payne than pleasure to him that woulde so vse it, as he that would not, were not worthy to haue it: Notwithstanding he not onlie pardoned them the motion that they made him, but also thanked them for the loue and heartie fauor they bare him, praying them for his sake to giue and beare the same to the prince, vnder whome hee was, and would bee content to liue, and with his labour and counsell, as farre as shoulde like the king to vse him, he woulde do his vttermost deuoir to set the Realme in good state, which was already in this little while of his Protectorship (the praise giuen to God) well begun. In that the malice of such as were before occasion of the contrary, and of nowe intended to be, were nowe partly by good policy, partly more by gods speciall prouidence, than mans prouision repelled.

Upon



Upon this answer giuen, the duke by the Protector's licence, a little rowned, as well with other noble men about him, as with the Maior and Recorder of London. And after that vpon like pardon desired and obtained, he shewed aloude vnto the protector, that for a final conclusion, by the realme it was appoynted King Edwards line should not anie longer raigne ouer them, both for that they had so farre gone, that it was now no suretie to retreat, as for that they thought it for the weale vniuersall to take that waie, although they had not yet begun it. Wherefore if it would like his grace to take the crowne vpon him, they would humbly beseech him thereunto. If he would giue them a resolute answer to the contrarie, which they would be loath to heare, then must they needs seeke, and should not faile to find some other noble man that would.

These wordes much moued the Protector, which else as euerie man made wit, would neuer of likelihood haue enclined thereunto. But when he sawe there was none other waie, but that either he must take it, or else he and his both go from it, he said vnto the lords and commons: Sith we perceiue well that all the realme is so set, thereof we be very sorie that they will not suffer in any wise king Edwards line to gouerne them, whome no man earthly can gouerne against thei wil, and we well also perceiue, that no man is there, to whome the Crowne can by iust title appertaine, as to our selfe, as verie right heire lawfullie begotten of the bodie of our most deare father Richard late D. of Yorke, to which title is now ioined your election, the nobles & commons of this realme, which we of all titles possible take for the most effectuell: We bee content and agree fauorably to encline to your petition and request, and according to the same, here we take vpon vs the Royall Estate, preeminence and kingdome of the two noble realmes, England and France, the one from this day forward, by vs and our heires to rule, gouerne, & defend: the other by gods grace, and your god helpe, to get againe and subdue, & establish for euer in due obedience vnto this realme of England, the aduancement whereof we neuer aske of God longer to liue than we intend to procure.

The protector  
taken vpon  
him to be king.

With this there was a great shoute, crying, king Richard, king Richard. And then the Lordes went vp to the king (for so was hee from that time called) and the people departed, talking diuerlie of the matter, euerie man as his fantasie gaue him. But much they talked and marvelled of the maner of this dealing, that the matter was on both partes made so straunge, as though neyther had euer communed with other thereof before, when that the selfes wist there was no man so dull that heard them, but he perceiued wel enough, that all the matter was made betwene them. Whomebeit some excused that agayne, and saide all must be done in god order: and men must sometime for the manners sake, not be knowne what they know: for at the consecration of a bishop, euery man wotteth well by the paying for his bulls, that he purposeth to be one, and though he pay for nothing else: and yet must he be twise asked whether he will be bishop or no, and he must twise say nay, and at the thirde time take it, as compelled thereunto by his own wil. And in a stage plaie the people know right wel, that he that plaieth the Solodain, is percase a solter,  
yet

ouer them, where they might see him, and speake to him, as though he would not yet come too nere them, till hee wist what they meant. And thereupon the duke of Buckingham first made humble petition vnto him on the behalfe of them all, that his grace would pardon them, and licence them to propose vnto his grace the intente of their comming without his displeasure, without which pardon obtained, they durst not be bold to moue him of that matter. In which, albeit they meante as much honour to his Grace, as wealth to all the realme beside, yet were they not sure how his grace would take it, whom they would in no wise offend. When the protector (as hee was verie gentle of himselfe, and also longed soze to wit what they meant) gaue him leaue to propose what him liked, verilie trusting for the good mind that hee bare them all, none of them anie thing woulde intende vnto him warde, wherewith he ought to be grieved.

When the Duke had this leaue and pardon to speake, then wared hee bold to shew him their intent and purpose, with all the causes mouing them thereunto, as ye before haue heard, & finally to beseech his grace, that it would like him of his accustomed goodnes and zeale vnto the realme now with his ele of pittie, to behold the long continued distresse and decay of the same, and to set his grations hands to redresse an amendement thereof, by taking vpon him the crowne and gouernance of this realm, according to his right and title lawfully descended vnto him, and to the lande of God, profite of the land, and vnto his grace so much the moze honor, and lesse pain, in that that neuer pzince raigned vpon any people, that were so glad to liue vnder his obeisance, as the people of this realme vnder his.

When the Protector had hearde the proposition, he looked verie strangely thereat, and answered: That albeit it were that he partly knewe the thinges by them alledged to bee true, yet such entire loue hee bare vnto king Edward and his children, that so much moze hee regarded his honor in other realmes about, than the Crowne of anie one, of which hee was neuer desirous, that hee coulde not finde in his heart in this point to encline to their desire. For in all other nations where the truth were not well knowne, it shoulde peradventure bee thought, that it were his owne ambitious mind and drile, to depose the Prince, and take himselfe the Crowne, with which infamie hee woulde not haue his honour stayned for anie Crowne, in which he had euer perceyued much moze labour and payne than pleasure to him that woulde so vse it, as he that would not, were not worthy to haue it: Notwithstanding hee not onely pardoned them the motion that they made him, but also thanked them for the loue and heartie fauor they bare him, praying them for his sake to giue and beare the same to the pzince, vnder whome hee was, and would bee content to liue, and with his labour and counsell, as farre as shoulde like the king to vse him, he would do his vtter most deuoure to set the Realme in good state, which was alreadye in this little while of his Protectorship (the praise giuen to God) well begun. In that the malice of such as were before occasion of the contrary, and of newe intended to be, were now partly by good policy, partly moze by gods speciall prouidence, than mans prouision repelled.

Upon

Upon this answer given, the duke by the Protector's licence, a little retourned, as well with other noble men about him, as with the Mayor and Recorder of London. And after that upon like pardon desired and obtained, he shewed aloude vnto the protector, that for a final conclusion, by the realme it was appoynted King Edwards line should not anie longer raigne ouer them, both for that they had so farre gone, that it was now no suretie to retreat, as for that they thought it for the weale binuersall to take that waie, although they had not yet begun it. Wherefore if it would like his grace to take the crowne vpon him, they would humbly beseech him thereunto. If he would giue them a resolute answer to the contrarie, which they would be loath to heare, then must they needs seeke, and should not faile to find some other noble man that would.

These wordes much moued the Protector, which else as euerie man made wit, would neuer of likelihood haue enclined thereunto. But when he sawe there was none other waie, but that either he must take it, or else he and his both go from it, he said vnto the lords and commons: Sith we perceiue well that all the realme is so set, whereof we be very sozry that they will not suffer in any wise king Edwards line to gouerne them, whome no man earthly can gouerne against thei willes, and we well also perceiue, that no man is there, to whome the Crowne can by iust title appertaine, as to our selfe, as verie right heire lawfullie begotten of the bodie of our most deare father Richard late D. of Yorke, to which title is now ioined your election, the nobles & commons of this realme, which we of all titles possible take for the most effectual: we bee content and agree fauorably to encline to your petition and request, and according to the same, here we take vpon vs the Royall Estate, preeminence and kingdome of the two noble realmes, England and France, the one from this day forward, by vs and our heires to rule, gouerne, & defend: the other by gods grace, and your good helpe, to get againe and subdue, & establish for euer in due obedience vnto this realme of England, the aduancement whereof we neuer aske of God longer to liue than we intend to procure.

The protector  
taken vpon  
him to be king.

With this there was a great shoute, crying, king Richard, king Richard. And then the Lordes went vp to the king (for so was hee from that time called) and the people departed, talking diuerslie of the matter, euerie man as his fantasie gaue him. But much they talked and marvelled of the maner of this dealing, that the matter was on both partes made so straunge, as though neyther had euer communed with other thereof before, when that thei selues wist there was no man so dull that heard them, but he perceiued wel enough, that all the matter was made betwene them. Wholoe it some excused that againe, and saide all must be done in good order: and men must sometime for the manners sake, not be a knowne what they know: for at the consecration of a bishop, euery man wotteth well by the paying for his bulls, that he purposeth to be one, and though he pay for nothing else: and yet must he bee twisse asked whether he wil be bishop or no, and he must twisse say nay, and at the thirde time take it, as compelled thereunto by his own wil. And in a stage plaie the people know right wel, that he that plaieeth the Sowdaine, is percase a soldier.

per

yet if one should know so little good, to shew out of season what acquaintance he hath with him, and call him by his owne name while he standeth in his maiestie, one of his tormentors might hap to breake his head, and worthe, for marring of the play: And so they said, that these matters be kings games, as it were stage plaies, and for the more part, played vpon scaffolds: in which poore men be but the lookers on. And they that wisse be, will meddle no further; for they that sometime step by, and play with them, when they can not plate their partes, they disorder the play, and do themselves no good.

## King Richard the third, borne at Fodringhay: some say at Barckhamstede.

1483;  
An. reg. 1.  
The 25. of  
June.  
This that is  
here betwene  
this marke &  
this marke  
was not written  
by Waster  
Booze in this  
histoie written  
by him in  
English, but is  
translated out  
of this histoie  
which he wrote  
in Latin.



The next daie, the protector with a great traine, went to Westminster hall, and there when he had placed himselfe in the court of the kings bench, declared to the audience, that he would take vpon him the crolen in that place there, where the king himselfe sitteth and ministreth the lawe, because he considered, that it was the chiefest duty of a king to minister the lawes. Then with as pleasant an oration as he could, he went about to win vnto him, the nobles, the merchants, the artificers, and in conclusion, all kind of men, but especially the lawyers of this realme. And finally, to the intent that no man should hate him for feare, and that his deceitfull cleuement might get him the goodwill of the people, when he had declared the discommoditie of discord, and the commodities of concord and unitie, he made an open proclamation, that he did put out of his minde all enmities, and that he there did openly pardon all offences committed against him. And to the intent that he might shew a proufe thereof, he commanded that one Fogge, whom he had long deadly hated, should be brought then before him, who being brought out of the sanctuarie (for thither had he fled for feare of him) in the sight of the people, he toke him by the hand: which thing the common people reioyced at, and praised, but wisse men toke it for a vanitie. In his returne homeward, whom sooner he met, he saluted: for a mind that knoweth it selfe guiltie, is in a manner detested to a seruile flatterie.

King Richard, to be sure of all enemies, had sent for out of the north five thousand men to bee at his coronation, vnder the leading of Robert of Ridisdale, these being but meanelly apparelled, and woorse harneised, mustered in Finsberrie field.

On the fourth of Iuly, hee came to the Tower by water with his wife, and on the fifth day he created T. lord Howard duke of Norffolke, sir T. his sonne earle of Surrey, William lord Berkeley earle of Nottingham, Francis lord Louel, vicount Louel and the kings chamberlaine: the lord Stanley was deliuered out of ward, and made steward of the kings householde. Also the archbishop of Yorke was deliuered,



liuered, but *Morton* Bishop of Ely was committed to the Duke of Buckingham to be kept in warde, who sent him to his mannor of Brecknocke in Wales, there to be kept. The same night the king made knights of the Bath to the number of seuentene.

On the sixt of Iuly he rode through the Citie of London toward Westminster with great pompe: and on the morrow being the seuenth, he with his wife queene *Anne* were crowned.

When he had begunne his raigne in Iuly, after this mockish election, then was he crowned the first, or rather the seuenth day of the same moneth. And that solemnitie was furnished for the most part, with the selfe same prouision that was appointed for the coronation of his nephew.\*

After this were taken for rebels against the king *Robert Ruffe* sergeant of London, *William Daui* pardoner of Hounslow, *John Smith* groome of king *Edwards* stirrop, and *Stephen Ireland* wardrober in the Tower, with many other, that they should haue sent writings into the parts of Britaine to the earles of Richmond and of Penbrooke, and the other lords: and how they were purposed to haue set fire on diuers partes of London, which fire, whilest men had beene stanching, they would haue stolen out of the Tower, the prince *Edward*, and his brother the duke of Yorke, &c. *Robert Ruffe*, *William Daui*, *John Smith*, and *Stephen Ireland*, were at Westminster iudged to death, and from thence drawne to the Tower hill, and there beheaded, and their heads were set on London bridge.

How fell there mischiefes thicke. And as the thing euill gotten is neuer wel kept, through all the time of his raigne neuer ceased there cruell death and slaughter, till his owne destruction ended it. But as he finished his time with the best death and the most righteous, that is to wit, his owne, so began hee with the most piteous and wicked, I meane the lamentable murder of his innocent nephews, the yong king and his tender brother, whose death and finall infortune hath naytheles commen so far in question, that some remaine yet in doubt, whether they were in his daies destroyed or no. Not for that onely that *Perkin Werbecke* by mante folkes malice, and moe folkes folly, so long space abusing the world, was aswell with princes as the poorer people, reputed and taken for the yonger of these two, but for that also that all things were in late daies so courtly demeaned, one thing pretended, and another meant, that there was nothing so plaine and openly proued, but that yet for the common custome of close and couert dealing, men had it euer inwardly suspected, as manie well counterfeited ietwels make the true mistrusted. Whombeit concerning the opinion, with the occasions mouing either partie, we shal haue place moze at large to intreat, if we hereafter happen to write the time of the late noble prince of famous memorie *K. Henry the 7.* or percase that historie of *Perkin* in any compendious procelle by it selfe. But in the meane time for this present matter, I shall rehearse you the dolorous end of those babes, not after euery waie that I haue heard, but by such men, and by such meanes, as me thinketh it were hard but it should be true.

King Richard after his coronation, taking his way to Gloucester to visite in his newe honour, the towne of which he bare the name of his olde, denised as  
he

Sir Thomas  
Moore againe  
in English.

*Perkin Werbecke.*

John Greene.  
Rob. Braken-  
bury Constable  
of the Tower:

Sir James  
Tirell.

Authorty to  
uech no part-  
ners.

he rode to fulfill the thing which he before had intended. And soasmuch as his minde gaue him, that his nephewes liuing, men woulde not reckon that hee coulde haue right to the Realme, he thought therefore without delaie to ridde them, as though the killing of his kinsmen coulde amend his cause, and make him a kindlie king. Whereupon hee sent one John Greene, whome hee specially trusted, vnto sir Robert Brakenbury Constable of the tower, with a letter and credence also, that the same sir Robert should in any wise put the two children to death. This John Greene did his errand vnto Brakenburie, knœling before our Ladie in the Tower, who plainelic answered, that hee woulde neuer put them to death to by the refoze: with which answer John Greene returning, recounted the same to king Richard at Warwicke yet in his wate. Where-with he tooke such displeasure and thought, that the same night he said vnto a secret page of his: Ah whome shall a man trust? Those that I haue brought by my selfe, those that I had trusted would most surelie serue me, euen those faile me, and at my commandement will do nothing for mee. Sir (quoth his page) there lieth one on your pallet without, that I dare well saie, to do your grace pleasure, the thing were right hard that he would refuse, meaning this by Sir James Tirell, which was a man of right goodlie personage, and for natures giftes woorthie to haue serued a much better prince, if hee had well serued GOD, and by grace obtayned as much trueth and good will as hee had strength and wit. The man had an high heart, and soze longed bywarde, not rising yet so fast as he had hoped, being hindered & kept vnder by the meanes of Sir Richard Ratcliffe, and Sir William Catesby, which longing for no moe partners of the Princes fauor, & namelie not for him, whose pride the y wisse would bear no peere, kept him by secret drifts out of al secret tract, which thing this page well had marked and knowne: wherefore this occasion offered, of vertie spectall friendship he toke his time to put him for ward, and by such wise to do him good, that all the enimies he had, except the diuell, could neuer haue done him so much hurt. For vpon this pages wordes king Richard arose (for this communication had hee sitting at the draught, a conuenient Carpet for such a counsell) and came out into a pallet chamber, on which hee found in bed Sir James and Sir Thomas Tirels, of person like, and brethren of blode, but nothing of kinne in conditions. Then saide the king merrille to them, what sirs, bee ye in bed so soone? And calling by Sir James, brake to him secretlie his mind in this mischeuous matter: in which he found him nothing strange. Wherefore on the morowe hee sent him to Brakenburie with a letter, by which hee was commanded to deliuer Sir James all the keyes of the tower for one night, to the end hee might there accomplish the kinges pleasure, in such thinges as he had giuen him commandement. After which letter deliuered, and the keyes receyued, Sir James appointed the night next ensuing to destroye them, deuising before and preparing the meanes. The Prince as soone as the protector left the name, and toke himselfe as king, had it shewed vnto him, that he shoulde not raigne, but his vncke shoulde haue the Crowne. At which wordes the prince soze abashed, began to sigh and said: Alas, I would my vncke would let me haue my life yet, though I leese my kingdome. Then he

that

that told him the tale, vsed him with good words, and put him in the best comfort he could. But forthwith was the prince and his brother both shut vp, and all other remoued from them, onlie one called Black Will, or William Slaughter except, set to serue them and see them sure. After which time the prince neuer tied his points, nor aught thought of himselfe, but with that yong babe his Brother, lingred with thought and heavines, till this traitterous death deliuered them of that wretchednes: for sir James Tyrell deuised that they should be murdered in their beddes. To the execution whereof, he appointed Miles Forrest, one of the soure that kept them, a fellowe fleshed in murder before time. To him he ioined one Iohn Dighton his owne house-keeper, a bigge, broad, square, strong knaue.

Then all the other being remooued from them, this Miles Forrest, and Iohn Dighton, about midnight (the selie children lying in their beds) came into the Chamber, and sodainly lapped them vp among the clothes, so to bewrapped them and intangled them, keeping down by force the feather bed and pillowes hard vnto their mouths, that within a while, smothered and stifled, their breath failing, they gaue vp to God their innocent soules into the ioses of heauen, leaving to the tormentors their bodie dead in the bed. Which after that the wretches perceiued, first by the strugling with the paines of death, and after long lying still, to be thoroughlie dead, they laid their bodie naked out vpon the bed, and fetched sir James to see them, which vpon the sight of them, caused those murderers to burie them at the staire foot, metelie deepe in the grounde, vnder a great heape of stones.

The yong R. &  
his brother  
murdered.

Then rode sir James in great haste to R. Richard, and shewed him all the manner of the murder, who gaue him great thanks, and (as some say) there made him knight. But hee allowed not as I haue hearde, the burying in so vile a corner, saying, that he would haue them buried in a better place, because they were a kings sonnes. To the honorable courage of a king. Whereupon they saie, that a priest of S. Robert Brakenbury toke vp the bodie againe, and secretly entered them in such place, as by the occasion of his death, which one-lie knew it, could neuer since come to light. Merie troth it is, and well known, that at such time as Sir James Tyrell was in the Tower for treason committed against the most famous Prince King Henrie the seventh, both Dighton and hee were examined, and confessed the murder in manner aboue written, but whether the bodie were remooued, they coulde nothing tell. And thus, as I haue learned of them that much knew, and little cause had to lie, were these two noble Princes, these innocent tender children, borne of most rofall blood, brought vp in great wealth, likelie long to liue, raigne, and rule in the realm, by traitterous tyranny taken, depriued of their estate, shortly shut vp in prison, and puslie slain and murdered, their bodie cast God wot where, by the cruel ambition of their vnratral vncle and his dispiteous tormentors. Which thinges on euerie part well pondered, God neuer gaue this world a more notable example, neyther in what vnfortunat standeth this worldelie weale, or what mischiefe worketh the proude enterprise of an hie heart, or finally, what wretched ende ensueth such dispiteous crueltie. For first to beginne with the

Cee

ministers,

John Greene.  
Rob. Braken-  
bury Constable  
of the Tower.

Sir James  
Tirell.

Authority to  
ueth no part-  
ners.

he rode to fulfill the thing which he before had intended. And forasmuch as his minde gave him, that his nephewes liuing, men woulde not reckon that hee coulde haue right to the Realme, he thought therefore without delaie to ridde them, as though the killing of his kinsmen coulde amend his cause, and make him a kindlie king. Whereupon hee sent one John Greene, whome hee specially trusted, vnto sir Robert Brakenbury Constable of the tower, with a letter and credence also, that the same sir Robert should in any wise put the two children to death. This John Greene did his errand vnto Brakenburie, kneeling before our Ladie in the Tower, who plainlie answered, that hee woulde neuer put them to death to dy therefore: with which answer John Greene returning, recounted the same to king Richard at Warwicke yet in his wate. Where-with he tooke such displeasure and thought, that the same night he said vnto a secret page of his: Ah whome shall a man trust? Those that I haue brought vp my selfe, those that I had wened would most surelie serue me, euen those faile me, and at my commandement will do nothing for mee. Sir (quoth his page) there lieth one on your pallet without, that I dare well saie, to do your grace pleasure, the thing were right hard that he would refuse, meaning this by Sir James Tirell, which was a man of right goodlie personage, and for natures gifts woozthie to haue serued a much better prince, if hee had well serued G D, and by grace obtayned as much truth and good will as hee had strength and wit. The man had an high heart, and soze longed bywarde, not rising yet so fast as he had hoped, being hindered & kept vnder by the meanes of Sir Richard Ratcliffe, and Sir William Catesby, which longing for no more partners of the Princes fauor, & namelie not for him, whose pride they wisse would bear no peere, kept him by secret bysits out of al secret trust, which thing this page well had marked and knowne: wherefore this occasion offered, of vertie speciall friendship he toke his time to put him forward, and by such wise to do him good, that all the enimies he had, except the diuell, could neuer haue done him so much hurt. For vpon this pages wordes king Richard arose (for this communication had hee sitting at the draught, a conuenient Carpet for such a counsell) and came out into a pallet chamber, on which hee found in bed Sir James and Sir Thomas Tirels, of person like, and brethren of blode, but nothing of kinne in conditions. Then saide the king merrilie to them, what sirs, bee yee in bed so sone? And calling by Sir James, brake to him secretlie his mind in this mischieuous matter: in which he found him nothing strange. Wherefore on the morrowe hee sent him to Brakenburie with a letter, by which hee was commanded to deliuer Sir James all the keyes of the tower for one night, to the end hee might there accomplish the kinges pleasure, in such things as he had giuen him commandement. After which letter deliuered, and the keyes receyued, Sir James appointed the night next ensuing to destroye them, deuising before and preparing the meanes. The Prince as sone as the protector left the name, and toke himselfe as king, had it shewed vnto him, that he shoulde not raigne, but his vncke shoulde haue the Crowne. At which wordes the prince soze abashed, began to sigh and said: Alas, I would my vncke would let me haue my life yet, though I leese my kingdome. Then he

that



that told him the tale, vsed him with good wordes, and put him in the best comfort he could. But forthwith was the prince and his brother both shut vp, and all other remoued from them, onlie one called Black Will, or William Slaughter except, set to serue them and see them sure. After which time the prince neuer tied his points, nor aught rought of himselfe, but with that yong babe his brother, lingered with thought and heavines, till this traitterous death deliuered them of that wretchednes: for sir James Tyrell deuised that they should be murdered in their beddes. To the execution whereof, he appointed Miles Forrest, one of the foure that kept them, a fellowe fleshed in murder before time. To him he ioined one Iohn Dighton his owne house-keeper, a bigge, broad, square, strong knaue.

When all the other being remoued from them, this Miles Forrest, and Iohn Dighton, about midnight (the salue children lying in their beds) came into the Chamber, and sodainly lapped them vp among the clothes, so to betwapped them and intangled them, keeping down by force the featherbed and pillows hard vnto their mouths, that within a while, smothered and stifled, their breath failing, they gaue vp to God their innocent soules into the soles of heauen, leaving to the tormentors their bodies dead in the bed. Which after that the watchmen perceived, first by the struggling with the paines of death, and after long lying still, to be thoroughlie dead, they laid their bodies naked out vpon the bed, and fetched sir James to see them, which vpon the sight of them, caused those murderers to burie them at the staire foot, metelie deepe in the ground, vnder a great heape of stones.

The yong R. &  
his brother  
murdered.

Then rode sir James in great haste to R. Richard, and shewed him all the manner of the murder, who gaue him great thanks, and (as some say) there made him knight. But hee allowed not as I haue hearde, the burying in so vile a corner, saying, that he would haue them buried in a better place, because they were a kings sonnes. To the honorable courage of a king. Whereupon they saie, that a priest of S. Robert Brakenbury toke vp the bodies againe, and secretly entered them in such place, as by the occasion of his death, which onlie knew it, could neuer since come to light. Verie troth it is, and well known, that at such time as Sir James Tyrell was in the Tower for treason committed against the most famous Prince King Henrie the seventh, both Dighton and hee were examined, and confessed the murder in manner aboue written, but whether the bodies were remoued, they coulde nothing tell. And thus, as I haue learned of them that much knew, and little cause had to lie, were these two noble Princes, these innocent tender children, bozne of most royal blood, brought vp in great wealth, likelic long to liue, raigne, and rule in the realm, by traitterous tyranny taken, depriued of their estate, shortly shut vp in prison, and prissie slain and murdered, their bodies cast God wot where, by the cruel ambition of their unnatural uncle and his dispiteous tormentors. Which thinges on euerie part well pondered, God neuer gaue this world a more notable example, neyther in what vnfortunetie standeth this worldele weale, or what mischiefe worketh the proude enterprise of an hie heart, or finally, what wretched ende ensueth such dispiteous crueltie. For first to beginne with the

ministers, Miles Forrest at Saint Martins pœcemale rotted atwaie : Dighton indeede yet walketh on aliuie in god possibilitie to be hanged ere he die: but sir James Tyrell died at the Tower hill beheaded for treason: King Richard himselfe, as yee shall hereafter heare, slaine in the field, hacked and helued of his enemies hands, carried on horsebacke dead, his haire in despite tozme and tugged like a Curre Dogge: and the mischief that he toke was within lesse than thye pœres of the mischief that he did, and yet all the meane time spent in much paine and trouble outward, much feare, anguish, and sorrow within. For I haue heard by credible report of such as were secret with his chamberlaine, that after this abhominable deed done, he neuer had quiet in his mind. He neuer thought himselfe sure: where he went abroad, his eien whirled about, his body priuily fenced, his hand euer vpon his dagger, his countenance & manner like one alwaies ready to strike againe; he toke ill rest a nights, lay long waking and musing, soze wearied with Care & Watch, rather slumbered than slept, troubled with fearefull dreames, so dainelie sometime start vp, leapt out of his bed, and ran about the chamber, so was his restless heart continually tossed and tumbled with the tedious impressiõ and stomy remembrance of his abhominable deede.

Now had he outward no long time in rest: for hereupon, sone after began the conspiracy, or rather, god confederation betwene the Duke of Buckingham and many other gentlemen against him.

The occasion whereupon the king and the duke fell out, is of diuers folke diuers wise pretended.

This Duke (as I haue for certaine bene enformed) as sone as the Duke of Gloucester, vpon the death of King Edward came to Yorke, and there had solemne funerall seruice for king Edward, sent thither in the most secret wise he could, one Persall his trustie seruant, who came to Iohn Ward, a chamberler of like secret trust with the duke of Gloucester, desiring, that in the most close and couert maner, he might be admitted to the presence and speech of his master. And the duke of Gloucester aduertised of his desire, caused him in the dead of the night, after all other folks auoided, to be brought vnto him in his secret chamber, where Persall after his masters recommendation, shewed him, that he had secretly sent to shew him in his new world, he woulde take such part as he woulde, and waite vpon him with a thousand god fellows, if nede were. The Messenger sent backe with thanks, and some secrete instruction of the protectors mind: yet met him againe with farther from the duke his master, within fewe dayes after at Nottingham: whither the Protector from Yorke, with many gentlemen of the north country, to the number of six hundred horses, was come on his way to London ward, and after secret meeting and communication had, if sone departed. Whereupon at Northampton, the duke met with the Protector himselfe with 300. horses, and from thence still continued with him partner of all his deuises, till that after his Coronation they departed, as it seemed very great friends at Gloucester: from whence, as sone as the duke came home, he so lightly turned from him, and so highly conspired against him, that a man would maruell whereof the change grew. And surely,

the

the occasion of their variaunce is of diuers men diuerſlie reported. Some haue ſaid (I heard ſaie) that the Duke a little before the Coronation, among other thinges, requiſted of the protector the Duke of Hertfordes Lands, to the which he pretended himſelfe ſuſt inheritor. And for as much as the title which hee claymed by inheritance, was ſome what enterlaced with the Title to the crowne, by the line of king Henry before deſpiued, the protector conceiued ſuch indignation, that he reſected the dukes requiſt with many ſpitefull and minatory wordes, which ſo wounded his hart with hatred and miſtruſt, that he neuer after could endure to looke aright on king Richard, but euer feared his owne life, ſo far forth, that when the protector rode through London toward his coronation, he ſained himſelfe ſick, becauſe he would not ride with him. And the other taking it in euil part, ſent him word to riſe, & come ride, or he would make him be carried: whereupon he rode on with euil will, and that notwithſtanding on the morrow, roſe from the feaſt, ſaining himſelfe ſick, and king Richard ſaid it was done in hatred and deſpight of him. And they ſaid, that euer after continually each of the miſued in ſuch hatred and diſtruſt of other, that the Duke verilie looked to haue bene murdered at Gloceſter. From which maſtheles, he in faire maner departed. But ſurely ſome right ſecret at that day denie this: and manie right wiſe men thinke it unlikelye (the deepe diſſembling nature of both thoſe men conſidered, and what neede in that græne world the Protector had of the Duke, and in what perill the duke ſtood, if he fell once in ſuſpition of the tyzant) that eyther the Protector would giue the duke occaſion of diſpleaſure or the duke the protector occaſion of miſtruſt. And verily men thinke that if king Richard had anie ſuch opinion conceiued, hee would neuer haue ſuffered him to eſcape his hands. Very troth it is, the duke was an high minded man, and euill could beare the Glozie of another, ſo that I haue heard of ſome that ſaie they ſaue it, that the duke at ſuch time as the Crowne was firſt ſet vpon the protectorſ head, his eie could not abide the ſight thereof, but wypped his head another waie. But men ſay, that he was of troth not well at eaſe, and that both to king Richard well known, and not ill taken, nor any demand of the dukes vncourteouſly reſected, but hee both with great giſtes and high beheſts, in moſt louing and truſtie maner, departed at Gloceſter. But ſone after his comming home to Breckenocke, hauing there in cuſtodie by the commiſſionment of king Richard doctor Morton Biſhop of Ely, who (as ye before heard) was taken in the counſell at the tower, wared with him familiar: whoſe wiſedome abuſed his pride to his owne deliuerance and the dukes deſtruction. The biſhop was a man of great naturall wit, verie well learned, and honorable in behauiour, lacking no wiſe waies to winne fauor. Hee had bene faſt vpon the part of H. Henry, while that part was in wealt, and nay theles left it not, nor ſo looke it in too, but fled the realme with the queene and the prince, while king Edward had the king in priſon, neuer came home, but to the field: After which loſt, and that part utterly ſubdued, the other, for his faſt faith and wiſedome, not onelie was content to receyue him, but alſo towed him to come, and had him from thence ſooth both in ſecret truſt, and verie ſpeciall fauour, which hee nothing deceyued. For hee being (as ye haue heard) after

king Edwards death first taken by the tyrant, for his trueness to the king, found the meane to set this Duke in his topp, ioined gentlemen together in aide of king Henric, deuising first the marriage betwene him and king Edwards daughter, by which his faith, hee declared the good service to both his masters at once, with infinit benefite to the Realme, by the Continuation of these two bloods in one, whose severall titles had long vniquieted the Lande, hee fled the realme, went to Rome, neuer minding more to meddle with the world, til the noble prince king Henry the 7. gat him home againe, made him Archbishop of Canterburie and Chancelloz of England, wherunto the Pope ioined the honoz of Cardinall. Thus liuing manie daies in as much honour as one man might well wish, ended them so godlie, that his death with Gods mercie well changed his life.

This man therefore, as I was about to tell you, by the long and often alternate prowe, as well of prosperitie as aduers fortune, had gotten by great experience the vertie mother and mistresse of wisdome, a deepe insight in politike worldlie drifts. Whereby, perceiuing now this duke glad to commune with him, fedde him with faire wordes, and manie pleasant praisses. And perceiuing by the procelle of the fr communication, the Dukes pyde, nolwe and then balke out a little bread of enuie, toward the glozie of the king, and thereby feeling him easie to fall out if the matter were well handled: hee craftilie sought the waies to prycke him forward, taking alwaies the occasion of his comming, and so keeping him selfe so close within his boundes, that hee rather seemed to followe him, than to leade him. For, when the Duke first beganne to praise and boaste the king, and shewe howe much profite the realme shoulde take by his ratgne: My Lorde Morton answered: Surely my Lord, folly it were for me to lie, for if I would sweare the contrarie, your Lordship would not I woen beleue, but that if the world would haue gone as I would haue wished, king Henries son had had the crowne, & not king Edward. But after that God had ordered him to lose it, & king Edward to raign, I was neuer so mad that I would with a dead man strue against the quicke. So was I to B. Edward a faithfull chaplaine, and glad would haue bin that his child had succeeded him. Howbeit, if the secret iudgement of God haue otherwise promised, I purpose not to spurne against a prycke, no; labor to set vp that god pulchly downe. And as for the late Protector and now king. And euen there hee left, saying, that he had alreadie meddled too much with the world, and would from that daie meddle with his booke and his beades, and no further. Then longed the duke soze to heare what he would haue said, because he ended with the king, and there so sodainelie stopped, and exhorted him so familiarlie betwene them twaine, to bee bold to say what soeuer he thought, whereof hee faithfullie promised, there shoulde neuer come hurt, and peradventure more good than he would weene, and that him selfe intended to vse his faithfull secrete aduise and counsel, which he said was the onelie cause for which he procured of the king to haue him in his custody, where hee might reckon him selfe at home, and else had hee bene put in the hands of them with whome he shoulde not haue founde the like fauour. The Byshop right humbly thanked him, and saide: In god faith



saith my Lord, I loue not to talke much of Princes, as a thing not all out of perill, though the word be without fault, forasmuch as it shall not be taken as the partie meant it, but as it pleaseth the Prince to construe it. And euer I thinke on Aelopes tale, that when the Lion had proclaymed, that on payne of death, there shoulde none horned beaſt abide in that wood: one that had in his forehead a bunch of fleſh, fled awaie a great pace. The fore that saw him run so fast, asked him whether hee made all that haſte: And hee answered, in sayth I neither wot, nor recke, so I were once hence, because of this proclamation made of horned beaſts. What ſole? quoth the fore, thou maieſt abide well y'nough, the Lion meant not by thee, for it is none horne that is in thine heade. No marrie (quoth he) that wot I well enough: but what and he call it an horne, where am I then? The Duke laughed merrilie at the tale, and said, My lord, I warant you, neither the Lion nor the Boare shall pick anie matter at anie thing heere spoken, for it shall neuer come to their eares. In good ſaith Sir, said the Biſhop, if it did, the thing that I was about to ſaie, taken as well (as afoze God I meant) it could deſerue but thanks: and yet taken as I wene it woulde, might happen to turne me to little good, and you to leſſer. When longed the duke yet much more to wiſt what it was: whereupon the biſhop ſaid, In good ſaith my L. as for the late protector, ſith hee is now king in poſſeſſion, I purpoſe not to diſpute his title, but for the weale of this realme, whereof his grace hath now the gouernance, and whereof I am my ſelfe one poore member, I was about to wiſh, that to thoſe good abilities whereof hee hath alreadye right manie, little needing my prayſe, it might yet haue pleaſed God for the better ſtoze, to haue giuen him ſome of ſuch other excellent vertues mete for the rule of a realme, as our Lord hath planted in the perſon of your grace: and there left againe.

The Duke ſomewhat maruelling at his ſodaine paſſes, ſaid: My Lord, I note your often breatching and ſodaine ſtopping in your communication, ſo that to my intelligence, your words neither come to anie direct or perfect ſentence in conſequence, whereby either I might haue knowledge what your intent is now toward the king, or what affection you beare toward me. For the comparison of good qualittes aſcribed to vs both, maketh mee not a little to muſe, thinking that you haue ſome other priuy imagination imprinted in your hart which you bee abaſhed to diſcloſe, and eſpeciallye to mee, which on my honour do aſſure you to be as ſecret in this caſe as the deafe and dumbe perſon to the ſinger, or the tree to the hunter. The Biſhop being ſomewhat bolde, conſidering the dukes promiſe, but moſt of all animated, because hee knew the duke deſirous to be magnified, & alſo he perſeuered the inward hatred which he bare toward king Richard, hee opened his ſtomacke to the bottome, and ſaid: My ſingular good Lord, ſith the time of my captiuitie, which being in your graces cuſtody, I may rather call it a libertie, than a ſtraight impriſonment, in auoiding of ſolennes & mother of all vices, in reading bookes & ancient pamphlets I haue found this ſentence written, That no man is borne free and at libertie of himſelfe onely: for one part of dutie hee oweth to his parents, another part to his friends and kinſfolkes: but the natie countrie, in the which hee firſt

This that followeth is abridged out of Edward hall.

tasted this pleasant and flattering world, demandeth a debt not to bee forgotten. Which saying causeth me to consider in what case this Realme my native country now standeth, and in what estate and assurance before this time it hath continued: what gouernor we now haue, and what ruler we might haue: for I plainelie perceiue (the realme being in this case) must needs decaye, and bee brought to confusion: but one hope I haue, that is, when I consider your noble personage, your iustice and indifferencie, your seruent zeale and ardent loue toward your naturall country, and in like maner the loue of your country toward you, the great learning, pregnant witte, and eloquence, which so much doth abound in your person, I must needs thinke this realme fortunate which hath such a prince in soze, méte and apt to be gouernour. But on the other side, when I call to memorie the good qualittes of the late Protector, and now called king, so violated by tyrannie, so altered by vsurped authoritie, so clouded by blind ambition, I must needs say, that hee is neither méte to be king of so noble a realme, nor so famous a realme méet to be gouerned by such a tyrant. Was not his first enterprize to obtaine the crowne begun by the murder of diuers noble personages? Did he not secondarily procede against his owne naturall mother, declaring hir openly to be a woman giuen to carnall affection and dissolute liuing? declaring furthermore his two brethren and two nephewes to be bastards, and to be borne in adulterie? yet not contented, after he had obtained the garland, he caused the two poze innocents his nephewes committed to him, to be shamefullie murdered, the blood of which little babes daylie crie to God from the earth for vengeance: what suretie shall be in this realme to anie person, either for life or goods vnder such a cruell Prince, which regardeth not the destruction of his owne blode, and then the lesse, the losse of other? But now to conclude what I meane toward your noble person, I say and affirme, if you loue God, your linage, or your native countrey, you must your selfe take vpon you the Crowne of this realme, both for the maintenance of the honour of the same, as also for the deliuerance of your naturall countreyemen from the bondage of such a tyrant. And if your selfe will refuse to take vpon you the crowne of this realme, then I aduise you by the faith that you owe to God, to deuise some way how this realm may be brought to some conuenient regiment, vnder some good gouernor. When the bishop had ended his saying, the duke sighed, and spake not of a greate while, so that night they communed no more. The next day the Duke sent for the bishop, to whom he saide, My Lord of Ely, I must needs in hart thinke, and with mouth confesse, that you be a sure friend, a trusty counsellor, and a very louer of your country. And sith at our last communication, you haue disclosed the secretes of your heart, touching the new vsurper of the crowne, and also haue a little touched the aduancement of the two noble families of Yorke and Lancaster, I shall likewise declare vnto you my priuate intentes and secret cogitations: and to beginne, when king Edward was deceased, I then beganne to studie, and with deliberation to ponder in what manner this Realme shoulde bee gouerned. I perswaded with my selfe to take parte with the Duke of Gloucestre, whome I thought to bee as cleane without dissimulation, as tractable without insurie,

and

and so by my meanes hee was made Protector both of the king and Realme, which authoritie being once gotten, hee neuer ceased praille to require mee and other Lordes, as well spirituall as temporall, that hee might take vpon him the Crowne, till the Prince came to the age of foure and twentie yeres, and were able to gouerne the Realme as a sufficient king: which thing, when he sawe me some what sicke at, he then brought in Instruments, autentike Doctors, proctors & notaries of the law, with depositions of diuers witnesses, testifying H. Edwards Children to bee Bastardes: which depositions then I thought to bee as true, as now I know them to be faigned. When the said depositions were before vs read and diligentlie heard, hee stode by bare headed saying: Well my Lordes, euen as I and you woulde, that my nephewes shoulde haue no wrong: so I praye you do me nothing but right, for these witnessses and sayinges of famous Doctors be true: for I am onelie the vndubitate heire to Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke, adindged to be the very heire to the crown of this realme by authoritie of parliament. Which thinges so by learned men for verity to vs declared, caused me and other to take him for our lawfull and vndoubted prince and soueraign lord: so againe by my aid he of a protector was made a king: but when he was once crowned king, and in full possession of the realme, he cast away his old conditions. For when I my selfe sued to him for my part of the earle of Herefords lands, which his brother king Edw. wrongfully detained from me, and also required to haue the office of the high Constableness of Englande, as diuers of my noble ancestors before this time haue had, and in long descent continued: in this my first suit, he did not only first delay me, and after ward deny me, but gaue me such unkind words, as though I had neuer furthered him, all which I suffered patiently: but when I was informed of the death of the two yong innocents, O Lord my hart inwardlie grudged, in so much that I abhorred the sight of him. I toke my leaue of the court, & returned to Brecknock to you, but in the iourney as I returned I had diuers imaginations how to depriue this vnnaturall vnckle. First I fantasied, that if I list to take vpon me the crown, now was the way made plain, and occasion giuen. For I sawe he was disdained of the Lordes temporall, and accursed of the Lordes spirituall. After diuers cogitations of this matter, as I rode betweene Worcester & Bridgenorth, I encountred with the ladie Margaret Countesse of Richmond, now wiffe to the Lord Stanley, which is the very daughter and sole heire to John duke of Somerset my grandfatheres elder brother: so that the and her sonne the earle of Richmond, be both betwene me and the gate, to enter into the maiestie of the crown: and getting of the crown: and when we had a little communed concerning her son, and were departed, I then began to dispute with my selfe, whether I were best to take vpon me, by the election of the nobility & communalty, or to take it by power. Thus standing in the wauering ambiguitie, I considered first, the office, duntle, and paine of a king, which I thinke I thinke that no mortall man can iustly and truly obserue, except he be elected by God as king Dauid was: but further I remembred, that if I once toke on me the gouernance of the realme, the daughters of king Edward and their allies, being both for his sake much beloued, & also for the great injury

done to them much pittied, would neuer cease to barke at the one side of mee. Semblably my cousin the Earle of Richmond his aybes and kinsfolke, will surely attempt either to bite or pierce me on the other side, so that my life and Rule shoulde euer hang vnquiet in doubt of death or deposition. And if the sayde two Linages of Yorke and Lancaster shoulde ioyne in one against me, then were I surely matched. Wherefore I haue clârely determined vterly to relinquish all imaginations concerning the obtaining of the crown: for as I told you, the countesse of Richmond in my returne from the newe named king, meeting me in the high wate, prayed mee first for kindred sake, secondlie for the loue I bare to my grandfather duke Humfrey, which was sworn brother to her father, to moue the king to be good to her son Henry earle of Richmond, and to licence him with his fauour to returne againe into Englande, and if it were his pleasure so to do, she promised that the earle her son should marry one of king Edwardes daughters at the appoyntment of the king, without anie thing demanded for the saide espousalles, but onelie the kings fauor, which request I some ouerpasse and departed, but after in my lodging I called to me more moze of that matter I am bent, that the earle of Richmond heire of the House of Lancaster, shall take to Wife Ladie Elizabeth eldest Daughter to king Edward, by the which marriage both the houses of Yorke and Lancaster maie be vnite in one: when the duke had said, the Bishop Morton, which fauored euer his house of Lancaster was wonderous ioifull, for all his imagination tended to this effect, and least the Dukes courage shoulde swage, or his mind alter, hee sayde to the Duke: My Lorde of Buckingham, sith by GODS prouision, and your incomparable wisdom, this noble conjunction is first moued, it is necessarie to consider what persons we shall first make priuy of this politike conclusion. By my troth (quoth the Duke) wee will beginne with my ladie of Richmond the earles mother, which knoweth where he is in Bytaine: sith you will beginne that wate (sayde the Byshoppe) I haue an old friende with the Countesse, called Reynolde Bray, for whome I shall send if it bee your pleasure: so the Byshop wrote for him to come to Breckenocke: who straight came backe with the messenger, where the duke and the byshop declared what they had deuised for the preferment of the earle of Richmond son to his Ladie and mistress: willing her first to compasse howe to obtaine the good will of Quene Elizabeth, and also of her eldest daughter, and after secretlie to sende to hir son in Bytaine, to declare what high honor was prepared for him, if he would sweare to marrie the Lady Elizabeth as soone as hee was king of the realme. Reinold Bray with a glad hart returned to the countesse his Lady. When Bray was gone, the Byshop tolde the Duke, that if hee were in his Isle of Ely, he could make many friendes to further their enterpryse. The duke knew this to be true, but yet loath to lose the companie of such a counseller, gaue the bishop faire words, saying, he shoulde shortly depart well accompanied for feare of enemies, but the bishop ere the dukes company were assembled, secretlie disguised, in a night departed, and came to Ely, where he found money and friendes, and so sayled into Flaunders, where hee did the Earle of Richmond good seruice. When Reinold Bray had declared his message to the countesse,



countesse, no maruell if she were glad, wherefore she deuised a meanes how to breake this matter to Quene Elizabeth then being in Sanctuary at Westminster, and hauing in her family a certaine Welchman called Lewes learned in physicke, now hauing opportunitie to breake her minde vnto him, declared that the time was come that her son should be ioined in marriage with lady Elizabeth daughter and heire to H. Edward: and that king Richard should out of all honour and estate be dejected: and required him to go to Quene Elizabeth, not as a messenger, but as one that came friendly to visite her, and as time and place should serue, to make her priuie of this deuice. This physician with good diligence repaired to the Quene, and when he saw time conuenient, he said vnto her: Madam, although my imagination be very simple, yet for the entire affection I beare to you and to your children, I am so bolde to vtter vnto you a secret conceit that I haue compassed in my braine. When I remember the great losse that you haue sustained by the death of your louing husband, and the great sorrow that you haue suffered by the cruell murder of your innocent children, I can no lesse do than daillie studie how to bring your hart to comfort, and also to reuenge the quarrell of you & your children on that cruell tyrant H. Richard. And first consider what battel and what mischief hath risen by the dissention betwene the two houses of Yorke and Lancaster, which two families if they maie bee ioyned in one, I doubt not but that your line shall be againe restored to your great ioy and comfort. You know Madame, that of the house of Lancaster the earle of Richmond is next of blood, and to the house of Yorke your daughters now are heires: If yee could inuent the meane how to couple your eldest daughter with the earle of Richmond in matrimonie, no doubt but the vsurper should be shortly deposed, and your heire againe to her right restored. When the Quene had heard this friendly motion, she instantly besought him that as he had bene the first inuenter of so good an enterpryse, that now he would not desist to follow the same, requiring him farther, that he would resorte to the countesse of Richmond mother to the earle Henry, and to declare to her on the quenes behalfe, that all the friends of king Edward her husband should assise and take part with the earle of Richmond his son, so that he would take an oth, that after the kingdome obtained, to espouse the lady Elizabeth her daughter, &c. Master Lewes so sped his busines, that he made a small end of this busines betwene the two mothers: so the lady Margaret countesse of Richmond brought to a good hope of the preferment of her son, made Reinold Bray chiefe solicitor of this conspiracy, giuing him in charge secretly to inueigle such persons of nobility to ioin with her, and take her part, as he knew to be faithfull.

This Reinold Bray within few daies brought to his lure, Sir Giles Daubene, Sir John Cheinie, Richard Guilford, and Thomas Ram Esquires, and others. In the meane season the countesse of Richmond sent Christopher Vrs-wike into Britaine to the earle of Richmond, to declare to him all agreements betwene her and the Quene agreed: but she remembzing that the Duke of Buckingham was one of the first inuenters of this enterpryse, sent Hugh Conway esquire into Britaine with a great sum of mony to hir son, giuing him in charge

charge to declare to the earle the great loue that the most part of the nobilitie of the realme bare toward him, willing him not to neglect so good an occasion offered, but with all speed to settle his mind how to returne into England, giuing him counsell to take land in Wales. When the earle had received this topfall message, he brake to the duke of Britaine al his secrets, aduertising him that he was entred into a sure and stedfast hope to obtain the crowne of England, desiring him of helpe toward the atchieving of his enterprize, which the duke promised, and after performed. Whereupon the earle sent into England Hugh Conway, and Thomas Ram, to declare his comming shortly into England. In the meane season the chiefe of the conspiracy in England began many enterprises, which being neuer so p[ri]uily handled, yet knowledge thereof came to king Richard, & because he knew the Duke of Buckingham to be the chiefe head and aide of this commination, he thought it most necessarie to pluck him from that part, whereupon he adressed his loving letters to the Duke, to exhort the Duke to come to the Court: but the Duke required the king to pardon him, excusing himselfe that he was not well. King Richard not content with this excuse, directed to the duke other letters with checking words, commanding him without delay to repaire to his presence. The Duke made to the messenger a determinate answer, that he would not come to his mortall enemy: and immediately prepared war against him, and by this means, Thomas marques Dorset came out of Sanduarte, gathered a great band of men in Dorsetshire, sir Edward Courtney and Peter his brother bishop of Excester raised another army in Deuonshire and Cornuall. In Kent sir Richard Guilford and other Gentlemen raised a companie.

But king Richard in the meane time had gotten together a great strength, with whome he removed from London toward Salisbury, to the intent he might set on the Dukes armie, the king was scarce two daies iourney from Salisbury, when the duke of Buckingham accompanied with a great power of wilde Welchmen, which in the ende forsooke him. The Duke with his power marched through the forest of Deane, intending to haue passed the riuer of Seuerne at Gloucester, and there to haue ioyned in armie with the Courtneies, and other Western men, which if he had done, no doubt but king Richard had bene in great leopordie. But before he could attaine to Seuerne side, by force of continuall raine the riuer rose so high, that it ouerflowed all the countrey adioining, which rage of water lasted ten daies: by which inundacie the passages were so closed, that neither the Duke could come ouer Seuerne to his complices, nor they to him: during which time the Welchmen lingering idle and without money or victuall, suddenly scaled and departed. The Duke thus left almost alone, was of necessitie compelled to flie, and conceied himselfe into the house of Humfrey Banister his seruant beside Shrewsbury, whom he had tenderly brought vp, which when it was known to his adherents, euerie man shifted for himselfe and fled. And some of them sayled into Brytaine, among the which were Peter Courtney Bishop of Excester, and sir Edward Courtney his brother, Thomas marques Dorset, John lord de Wils, sir John Bouchier, sir Edmond Woodville brother to quene Elizabeth, sir Robert Willoughby,

Sir

Sir Giles Daubney, Sir Thomas Arundell, Sir Iohn Cheinie and his tooo hie, then, Sir William Barkeley, Sir William Brandon and Thomas his brother, Sir Richard Edgecombe, and Iohn Halwell, Edward Pownings, &c. Proclamation was made, and a thousand pound promised to who so could bring out the duke of Buckingham, whereupon Humfrey Banister betrayed his guest and master to Iohn Mitton then sheriffe of Shropshire, which with a strong power apprehended the Duke in a little groue adjoining to the manors of Humfrey Banister, and in great haste carried him to the cite of Salisbury, where king Richard then kept his household. This Banister after he had betrayed his master, his sonne and heire wayed mad, and died in a boares ste, his eldest daughter was suddenly stricken with a folle leperie, his second son marvellously deformed of his limbs and made lame, his yonger son in a small puddle was drowned, and he himselve being of extream age arraigned and found guiltie of a murder, and by his cleargie saued. And as for his thousand pound, k. Richard gaue him not one farthing, saying, that he which would be untrue to so good a master, would be false to all other.

The duke after he had confessed all the whole conspiracie vpon the second of Nouember without arraignment or iudgement, was at Salisbury beheaded. At the same time that the duke of Buckingham was by in the west countrey, there were manie by in Kent, to wit, Sir George Browne, Sir Iohn Gifford and his sonne, Foge, Scot, and Hants, after Clifford, Bonting yeoman of the crowne, with manie other, to the number of five thousand: these made a fray at Gauesend in the faire, where Bonting slewe master Mowbray, with diuers other, but when they heard that the duke of Buckingham was dead they were faine to flee to saue themselves.

Whilste these things were thus handled in England, Henry Earle of Richmond prepared an army of five thousand Britons, and fortie well furnished ships. When all thinges were prepared, and the daie of setting forward was appointed, which was the twelue of October, the whole armie hoysed vp sailes and toke the sea, but toward night the winde turned, and so huge a tempest arose, that the ships were disperfed asunder: some driven into Normandie, some againe into Britaine. In the morning after when the tempest was asswaged, the earle approached to the south part of England, at the mouth of the haue of Poie in Dorset, where he might see all the banks full of men of war, appointed to defend his arrivall, wherefore he gaue charge that no man should land, untill such time as the whole nauie were assembled, but after that he perceived none of his ships to appeare, he hoised vp anchors and away, where he arrived safe in Normandy, and returned by land into Britaine, where he was soon advertised that the duke of Buckingham had lost his head, and that the marques Dorset, and a great number of noble men in England had a little before inquired for him there.

In the meane season king Richard apprehended in diuers partes of this Realme certayne Gentlemen of the Earle of Richmonds faction, amongst whome Sir George Browne, Sir Roger Clifford, and foure other were put to death at London the thirde of December. Sir Thomas Semlegar, which had married

Banister that betrayed his master, miserably plagued, let the like traitors to their masters looke for the like, or worse, to them and theirs, without speeche repentance.

Duke of Buckingham beheaded.

charge to declare to the earle the great love that the most part of the nobilitie of the realme bare toward him, willing him not to neglect so good an occasion offered, but with all speed to settle his mind how to returne into England, giving him counsell to take land in Wales. When the earle had received this topfull message, he brake to the duke of Britaine al his secrets, aduertising him that he was entred into a sure and stedfast hope to obtain the crowne of England, desiring him of helpe toward the atchieving of his enterprise, which the duke promised, and after performed. Whereupon the earle sent into England Hugh Conway, and Thomas Ram, to declare his comming shortly into England. In the meane season the chiefe of the conspiracy in England began many enterprises, which being neuer so p[ri]vily handled, yet knowledge thereof came to king Richard, & because he knew the Duke of Buckingham to be the chiefe head and aide of this commination, he thought it most necessarie to pluck him from that part, whereupon he adressed his loving letters to the Duke, to exhort the Duke to come to the Court: but the Duke required the king to pardon him, excusing himselfe that he was not well. King Richard not content with this excuse, directed to the duke other letters with checking words, commanding him without delay to repaire to his presence. The Duke made to the messenger a determinate answer, that he would not come to his mortall enemy: and immediately prepared war against him, and by this means, Thomas marques Dorset came out of Sanduarte, gathered a great band of men in Yorke shire, sir Edward Courtney and Peter his brother bishop of Excester raised another army in Devonshire and Cornwall. In Kent sir Richard Guilford and other Gentlemen raised a companie.

But king Richard in the meane time had gotten together a great strength, with whome he removed from London toward Salisbury, to the intent he might set on the Dukes armie, the king was scarce two daies journey from Salisbury, when the duke of Buckingham accompanied with a great power of wilde Welchmen, which in the ende forsooke him. The Duke with his power marched through the forest of Weane, intending to have passed the river of Seuerne at Gloucester, and there to have soyned in armie with the Courteies, and other Western men, which if he had done, no doubt but king Richard had bene in great leopordie. But before he could attaine to Seuerne side, by force of continuall raine the river rose so high, that it overflowed all the countrey adjoining, which rage of water lasted ten daies: by which inundacie the passages were so closed, that neither the Duke could come ouer Seuerne to his complices, nor they to him: during which time the Welchmen lingering idle and without money or victuall, suddenly scaled and departed. The Duke thus left almost alone, was of necessitie compelled to flie, and conueied himselfe into the house of Humfrey Banister his servant beside Shrewsbury, whom he had tenderly brought up, which when it was known to his adherents, euerie man shifted for himselfe and fled. And some of them sayled into Brytaine, among the which were Peter Courtney Bishop of Excester, and sir Edward Courtney his brother, Thomas marques Dorset, John lord Welles, sir John Bouchier, sir Edmond Woodville brother to queene Elizabeth, sir Robert Willoughby,

sir

3 great water.



Sir Giles Daubney, Sir Thomas Arundell, Sir John Cheinie and his two brothers, Sir William Barkeley, Sir William Brandon and Thomas his brother, Sir Richard Edgecombe, and John Halwell, Edward Pownings, &c. Proclamation was made, and a thousand pound promised to who so could bring out the duke of Buckingham, whereupon Humfrey Banister betrayed his guest and master to John Mitton then Sheriffe of Shropshire, which with a strong power apprehended the Duke in a little groue adjoining to the manors of Humfrey Banister, and in great haste carried him to the cite of Salisbury, where king Richard then kept his household. This Banister after he had betrayed his master, his sonne and heire wared mad, and died in a boares lie, his eldest daughter was suddenly stricken with a folle leperie, his second son marvellously deformed of his limbs and made lame, his yonger son in a small puddle was drowned, and he himselfe being of extream age arraigned and found guiltie of a murder, and by his cleargie saved. And as for his thousand pound, King Richard gaue him not one farthing, saying, that he which would be untrue to so good a master, would be false to all other.

Banister that betrayed his master, miserably plagued, let the like traitors to their masters looke for the like, or worse, to them and theirs, without speedie repentance.

The duke after he had confessed all the whole conspiracie vpon the second of November without arraignment or iudgement, was at Salisbury beheaded. At the same time that the duke of Buckingham was by in the west countrey, there were manie by in Kent, to wit, Sir George Browne, Sir John Gifford and his sonne, Foge, Scot, and Hants, after Clifforde, Bonting yeoman of the crowne, with manie other, to the number of five thousand: these made a fray at Chaufend in the faire, where Bonting slew master Mowbray, with diuers other, but when they heard that the duke of Buckingham was dead they were faine to flee to save themselves.

Duke of Buckingham beheaded.

Whiles these things were thus handled in England, Henry Earle of Richmond prepared an army of five thousand Britons, and fortie well furnished ships. When all things were prepared, and the daie of setting forward was appointed, which was the twelue of October, the whole armie hoysed by sailes and took the sea, but toward night the winde turned, and so huge a tempest arose, that the ships were dispersed asunder: some driuen into Normandie, some againe into Britaine. In the morning after when the tempest was asswaged, the earle approached to the south part of England, at the mouth of the haven of Poie in Dorset, where he might see all the banks full of men of war, appointed to defend his arriual, wherefore he gaue charge that no man should land, untill such time as the whole nauie were assembled, but after that he perceived none of his ships to appeare, he hoised vp anchors and away, where he arrived safe in Normandy, and returned by land into Britaine, where he was soon advertised that the duke of Buckingham had lost his head, and that the marques Dorset, and a great number of noble men in England had a little before inquired for him there.

In the meane season king Richard apprehended in diuers partes of this Realme certaine Gentlemen of the Earle of Richmonds faction, amongst whom Sir George Browne, Sir Roger Clifford, and foure other were put to death at London the third of December. Sir Thomas Semlegar, which had married

married the Dutchesse of Excester the kings owne sister, and Tho. Ram, with diuers other were executed at Excester.

Fire at Leaden  
hall in London.

The 30. of December was a great fire at Leaden hall in London, where through was burnt much housing, and all the stocks for guns and other like provision belonging to the city.

1484

After this king Richard called a Parliament, in the which he attainted the earle of Richmond, and all other persons, which were fled out of the realme for feare, or any other cause as enemies to him, and to the ir naturall country, and all their lands and goods was confiscate to the kings vse, and yet notwithstanding he laid on the people a great tax.

An. reg. 2.

In this trouble some season, nothing was more marvelled at than that the Lord Stanley had not bene taken, considering the working of the Ladie Margaret his wife mother to the earle of Richmond: but for as much as the enterprise of a woman was of him reputed of no regarde or estimation, and that the Lord Stanley her husband had purged himselfe to bee innocent of all attempts by her committed, it was giuen him in charge to keepe her in some secret place at home, without hauing anie seruant or companie, so that from thenceforth she should neuer send letter to her son, or to anie of his friends, by the which the king might be molested, which commandement was a while put in execution.

King Henry the  
first removed  
to Windso.

This yere king Richard began the high towne at Westminster, which remaineth yet unfinished. Also he caused the bodie of king Henry the first to be removed from Chertsey abbey in Surrey, and to be buried at Windso: on the twelfth of August.

Record Tower.

In these daies were chiefe rulers about the king, the Lord Louel, and two Gentlemen being named sir Richard Ratcliffe, and sir William Catesby, of the which persons was made a seditious rime, & fastned upon the crosse in cheape, and other places of the Citie, whereof the sentence was as followeth:

The Cat, the Rat, and Louel our dogge:

Rulen all England, vnder an hogge.

Which was to meane these three persons, ruled this land vnder the king, which bare a white Boare for his cognisance. For the deuters of this rime much search was made and sundry accused to their great charges. But finally two Gentlemen, Turburile, and Collingborne, were for that and other things laide to their charge, arrested and cast in prison, for whom shortly was holden at the Guildhall an Oyer determiner, where the two Gentlemen were arraigned, and that one of them called William Collingborne Esquire, confest of that crime and other, for the which he was drawne vnto the Tower hill, and there full cruelly put to death, as first hanged, and straight cut downe and ripped, and his bowels cast into the fire, the which torment was so speedily done, that when the butcher pulled out his heart, he spake and saide Iesus Iesus. This man was greatly moaned of the people, for his godly personage and fauor of visage, he had bene sometime, to wit the 15. of Edward the fourth, Sheriffe of Wilthire, and in the 17 Sheriffe of Somersetshire, and Dorsetshire.

Collingborne  
executed.

Record.

King Richard considering the amities concluded betwene princes are the cause

cause that their realmes are fortified with a double power, that is to say, with their owne strength, and the aide of their friendes, practised a league with the king of Scots, which not long before had made diuers incursions and roades into the realme of England, and therefore sued to haue a truce or peace concluded. Wherefore commissioners were appointed, which met at Bottingham, and there in the end concluded for thre yeeres on certaine articles, 15. in number. This peace thus concluded, King Richard now doubting his owne people, was continually bered with feare of the returne of the earle of Richmond and his complices: Wherefore, nothing was for his purpose more, than once againe with price and praier, to attempt the duke of Britaine, in whose territorie the earle then abode, to deliuer him into his hands: wherefore incontinent he sent certaine ambassadoys to the Duke of Britaine, which toke vpon them that king Richard should yerely paie and answer the duke of Britaine of all the reuenues, rents and profits of the lands and possessions, as well belonging to the earle of Richmond, as to any other noble or gentleman which then were in the earles companie, if he after that time would keepe them in continuall prison and restraine them from libertie. The Oratoys furnished with these and other instructions arriued in Britaine, but could not speake with the duke, by reason that he being weakned by a long and daile infirmitie, began to waie idle of his remembrance, for which cause Peter Landoyse his chiefe treasurer, ruled all things at his pleasure, vnto whom the English ambassadoys moued to him their message, offering to him the same rewardes and landes that they should haue offered the Duke. This Peter faithfully promised to accomplish king Richards request, so that he kept promise with him: but fortune was so fauourable to the publike weale of England, that this deadly compact toke none effect, for John Morton bishop of Ely sojourning then in Flanders, was of all this craftie deuise certified: wherefore he sent Christopher Vrsuicke, to declare to the Earle of Richmond all the deceit, giuing him charge in all haste possible with his companie to retire out of Britaine into France. When these newes came to the earle, he incontinent sent to Charles the French king, requiring that he and his might safely passe into France, which desire was granted, & the earle with the rest dispatched as priuile as mought be into France, no man suspecting their departure. After this, the Earle toke his iourney to Charles the French king, to whome after great thanks giuen, he disclosed the occasion of his accesse to his person. After that he required of him helpe and succor, to the intent he might returne to the nobilitie of his realm, of whom he was generally called to take vpon him the crowne: King Charles promised him aide, and bad him bee of good comfort, for he assured him that he would gladly shewe to him his bountifull liberalitie. Whiles the earle of Richmond thus attended on the French Court, John Vere Earle of Arford so perswaded James Blunt Captaine of Dames Castle, and sir John Forteskewe porter of the towne of Caleis, that he himselve was not onely set at libertie, but they also leauing their fruitfull offices condescended to go with him into France to the Earle of Richmond.

Truce with  
Scotland for  
three yeeres.

1485

In the meane season R. Richard was credibly aduertised that promises  
and

and othes the Earle and his confederates had made and swozne, and holwe by the Carles meanes, all the Englishmen were passed out of Bytaine into France. Wherefore being in maner desperate, (imagining how to infringe the Carles purpose by another meane, so that by the marriage of ladie Elizabeth his niece, he should pretende no claime to the crowne, there came to his minde a thing not only detestable, but much moze cruell to be put in execution, for he clereley determined to reconcile to his fauour his brothers wife Quene Elizabeth, and so by that meanes the Earle of Richmond, of the affinitie of his piece should be bitterly defrauded, and if no ingenious remedie could be other wise inuented, if it should happen Quene Anne his wife to depart out of this world, then he himselfe would rather take to wife his cousin and niece the ladie Elizabeth, than for lacke of that affinitie the whole realme should run to ruine. Wherefore he sent to the Quene being in Sanctuarie, diuers and often messengers which should excuse him of all things before against her attempted, and after should so largely promise promotions, not onely to her but to her son Thomas Marquesse Dorset, that they should bying her (if it were possible) into some wan hope. The messengers so perswaded the quene, that she began somewhat to relent, in so much that she faithfully promised to yeld her selfe to the kings will and pleasure. And so she first deliuered vnto king Richards hands her five daughters: Afterward she sent letters to the Marquesse her sonne being then at Paris with the Earle of Richmond, willing him in anie wise to repaire into England, where for him were prouided great honours, ascertaining him that all offences on both parties were forgiven and forgotten: After that king Richard had thus pleased the mutable minde of Quene Elizabeth, he caused all her daughters to be conueyed into his Palace with solemaue receiuing. Now nothing was contrary to his purpose, but that his mansion was not void of a wife: and first he abstained both from the bed and companie of his wife: after he complained to manie of the infortunate barrennesse of his wife. After this, he procured a common rumour to be published among the common people, that the Quene was dead. When the King heard tell that so horrible a rumoz of her death was sprung amongst the communalte, the soze suspected the worlde to be almost at an end with her, and not long after, to witte, the 16. of March, in the lent season, howsoeuer it fortunued, the quene departed out of this life, and was with due solemnitie buried at Westminister.

The King thus losed out of the bondes of Patrimonte, began to cast a fauour to lady Elizabeth his niece, making much suite to haue her ioined with him in lawfull Patrimonte: but because all men, and the maiden her selfe most of all detested this unlawfull copulation, he determined to deferre the matter till he were in a moze quiet case, for all this season he was oppressed with weightie affaires on euerie side, considering that daily part of the Nobilitie sayled into France, other prouillie fauoured the earle of Richmond, amongst the noble men whom he most suspected, these were the principall, Thomas lord Stanley, sir William Stanley his brother, Gilbert Talbot, and sixe hundred other, of whose purpose, though king Richard were ignorant, yet he gaue no remedence



dence to arise one of them, and least of all to the Lorde Stanley, because he was joined in matrimonie with the Ladie Margaret mother to the Earle of Richmond, for when the Lorde Stanley would haue departed into his countrey, the king in no wise would suffer him to depart, before hee had left as in hostage in the court George Stanley Lorde Strange, his first begotten sonne and heire.

*An. reg. 3.*

While king Richard was thus troubled, sodainly he heard newes that the Castle of Hames was deliuered into the hands of the Earle of Richmond, by the meanes of the Earle of Arford, and that not onely he, but also James Blunt, captaine of the castle, were fled into France to aide the Earle of Richmond.

Henry Earle of Richmond obtaining of king Charles a small crue of men, and borrowing certaine sums of money of him, and of diuers other his puate friends, he departed from the French Court, and came to the Citie of Roane. While he tarried there, making prouision at Harefleete, in the mouth of the Riuer of Seyne, for all things necessarie for his suite, tydings were brought to him, that king Richard being without children, and a widower, intended hostlie to marrie with Ladie Elizabeth, his brothers daughter, which newes he toke of no small moment, for this thing onely toke awaie from all his companions their hope to obtaine an happy enterprize, by reason whereof, he iudged that all his friends in England would shrinke from him, yet notwithstanding, earle Henric of Richmond, because he would no longer linger & wearie his friends, liuing betwene hope and feare, determined in all haste conuenient to set forward, and carried to his shippes armour, weapons, butt all, and all other ordinances expedient for warre, which being done, onely accompanied with two thousand men, and a small number of shippes, weyed by his Anchors, and in the halendes of August, he sayled from Harefleete with so prosperous a winde, that the seuenth day after he arrived in Wales in the evening, at a Port called Milford Hauen, and incontinent toke land, and came to a place called Dale, and at the sunne rising remoued to Hereford west, where he was receiued of the people with great ioy.

Henry Earle  
of Richmond  
landed at Mil-  
ford Hauen.

From thence, he remoued to Cardigan twentie mile from Hereford west, whither came the Earle Richard Griffith with all his men and powder. After him the same daie came John Morgan with his men. When the Earle advanced forward, making no abode in anie place, and sodainly he was ascertained that sir Walter Herbert, and Rice ap Thomas, were in harnesse before him, ready to encounter with his armie, and to stop their passage. Wherefore he first determined to set upon them, and either to destroy or take them into his fauour, and after with all his power to giue bat taile to king Richard. But to the intent his friends should knowe with what dexteritie he attempted his enterprize forward, he sent messengers with letters and instructions to the Lady Margaret his mother, to the Lord Stanley and his brother, to Talbot and to other, declaring to them, that he holpe with the aide of his friends, intended to passe ouer the Riuer of Seuerne at Shrewsbury, and so to passe directly to the Citie of London, requiring them as his speciall trust was in the hope of their fidelitie,

fidelitie, that they would meete him by the way with all diligent preparation. When these messengers were departed, he marched forward towards Shrewsbury, and in his passage there met and saluted him Rice ap Thomas with a goodly band of Welshmen, which submitted himselfe wholie to his order and commandement. In the meane time the messengers laden with rewarde returned to him the same day that he entred into Shrewsburie, and made relation to him that his friends were readie in all points to do all things for him which they might doe. The earle Henrie continued his iourney and came to a little towne called Newport, and pitched his campe on a little hill adioyning, repassing himselfe there that night. In the euening of the same date came to him sir Gilbert Talbor, with the whole power of the young Earle of Shrewsburie, then being in ward, which were accounted two thousand men: and thus his power increasing he arrived at the towne of Stafforde, and there paused. To whom came sir William Stanley, accompanied with a fewe persons: After that the Earle departed from thence to Litchfelde, and lay without the walles in campe all that night. The next morning he entred the towne and was like a Prince received. A date or two before, the Lord Stanley hauing in his hand almost fife thousand men, lodged in the same towne, but hearing that the earle of Richmond was marching thitherward, gaue to him place, dislodging him and his, and repaired to a towne called Adzestone, there abiding the coming of the Earle: and this hee did to auoide all suspicion, being afrayde least if he should be saue openly to be a fauor or aider to the Earle his sonne in law before the date of battaile, that king Richard which yet did not utterly put in him mistrust, would put to some cruell death his sonne and heire apparant, George Lord Strange, whom king Richard had in hostage. King Richard at this season keeping his house in the Castle of Pottingham, was informed that the Earle of Richmond with such banished men as were fled out of England to him, were arrived in Wales, and that all things necessarie to his enterpryse were unpurueyed and verie weake, nothing meete to withstand the power of such as the king had appointed to resist him, yet notwithstanding hee sent to Iohn Duke of Norfolk, Henrie Earle of Northumberland, Thomas Earle of Surrey, and to other of his trustie friendes, willing them to muster and viewe all their seruants and tenants, and to elect the most courageous and active persons of the whole number, and with them to repaire to his presence with all speed. Also he wrote to Robert Brakenburie Lieutenant of the Tower, commanding him with his power to come to his army, and to bring with him his fellows in armes Thomas Bouchier, and sir Walter Hungerford, and diuers other knights and esquires, in whom he had no small suspicion. While he was thus ordyning his affaires, tidings came that the Earle of Richmond was passed Seuerne, and come to Shrewsbury without anie detriment or encombance. At which message he was sore moued, and cried out on them that contrarie to their othe had deceiued him. And in all haste sent out to viewe what waie his enemies kept and passed, it was declared to the king, that the Earle was incamped at the Towne of Litchfelde. Whereof, when he had perfect knowledge, he hauing continuall repaire of his subiects to him, he incontinently

nently made his battailes to set forwarde towarde the waile, where his enemies as was to him reported, intended to passe, and keeping his arraie, hee with great pompe entred the Towne of Lyecester after the Sunne set. The earle of Richmond raised his campe from Lichfield to Tamworth, and in the mid-waie passing, there saluted him Syr Walter Hungerforde, & Syr Thomas Bourchier knights, and diuers others, which submitted themselves to his pleasure. Diuers other noble personages likewise resorted to him with all their power. There hapned in this progression to the earle of Richmond a straunge chance, for he was not a little afraide, because hee could not bee assured of his father in lawe Thomas Lord Stanley, which as yet inclined to neither partie, therfore the earle, accompanied with twenty light hoysenmen, lingering in his journey behinde his hoste, in the meane while the whole armie came before the towne of Tamworth, and when he for darkenesse could not perceiue the steps of them that passed on before, and had wandzed hither and thither seeking after his companie, he abode in a little Willage, about thre myles from his army, where he tarried all night. The next morning in the dawning, hee returned, and by good fortune came to his army, excusing himselfe, not to haue gone out of his waie by ignorance, but of purpose: this excuse made, he pryncially departed againe to the towne of Aderstone, where the Lord Stanley and Syr William his brother with their bands, were abiding: then the Earle came to his father in law, in a little Close, where he saluted him and sir William his brother, and after consulted how to giue battaile to king Richard, if hee woulde abide, whome they knew not to be farre off with an huge armie. In the evening of the same daie, Syr John Saueage, sir Brian Sanford, sir Simon Digby, and many other, leauing king Richard, turned and came to the earle of Richmond with an elect companie of men. In the meane season, king Richard marched to a place called Redmore moete for two battels to encounter, by a Willage called Bosworth, not far from Lyecester, and there hee pitched his helde, refreshed his armie, and toke his rest. The next daie after, king Richard being furnished with men, and all abilliments of warre, bringing all his men out of their campe into the plaine, ordered his forwarde in a maruellous length, in which he appointed both hoysenmen and footemen, and in the forefront he placed the Archers.

ouer this battell was capitaine John Duke of Norfolk, with whom was Th. earle of Surrey his son. After this long bantguard followed k. Richard with a strong company of approued men of tear, hauing hoysenmen for wings on both sides of his battell.

After that the earle of Richmond was returned from the communication with his friends, he with all diligence pitched his field toll by the campe of his enemies, and there hee lodged that night. In the morning betime, hee caused his men to put on their armour, and apparrell themselves to fight, and giue Battayle, and sent to the Lord Stanley, requirring him with his men to approach neere to his Armie, and to helpe to sette the Souldiors in arraie: hee answered, the Earle shoulde sette his owne men in good order, while hee woulde come to him in time conuenient. The Earle made his forwarde

Battell at Bosworth.

some what single and slender, according to the small number of his people. In the front he placed the archers, of whome he made Captaine John Earle of Orford. To the right wing of the battaile he appointed sir Gilbert Talbot to be the leader. To the left wing he assigned sir Io. Saueage, and hee with the aide of the Lord Stanley, accompanied with the Earle of Penbroke, hauing a good companie of horse-men, and a small number of fote-men, for all his whole number exceeded not foue thousand men, beside the power of the Stanleyes, whereof three thousande were in the fiede vnder Sir William Stanley: The kings number was double so much, or more. When both these armies were thus ordered, and all men readie to set forward, king Richard called his chieftaines togither, perswading them to be valiaunt, &c. But his people were to him vnfaithfull in his end, as he was to his nephewes vntrue and vnnaturall in his beginning. When the Earle of Richmond knew that the king was so nere embattailed, he rode about his armie giuing comfortable words to all men, after the which he made to them a pittie oration perswading them to haue the victorie, for that they were to fight in a lust quarrell, he had scantily finished his saying, but the one armie espied the other, betwaine both armies there was a great marrish which the erle left on his right hand, and so doing he had the Sun at his backe, and in the face of his enemies. When the king saw the earles companie was passed the marrish, hee commanded with all haste to set vpon them, the terrible shotte on both sides passed, the armies toynded and came to hand strokes, at which encounter the lord Stanley toynded with the erle.

The earle of Orford in the meane season fearing least while his companie was fighting, they should bee compassed of the enemies, gaue commandement that no man should goe aboue tenne fote from the Standard, which commandement once knowne, they knitte themselves together and ceased a little from fighting: the enemies sodainly abashed at the matter and mistrusting some fraude, began also to pause. The Earle of Orford bringing all his band togither on the one part, set on his enemies freshlie: againe the aduersaries perceiuing that, placed their men slender and thinne before, and thicke and broad behind, beginning againe the battaile. While the two forewardes thus mortallie fought, king Richard was admonished that the Earle of Richmond accompanied with a small number of men of armes was not farre off; and as he approached to him, hee perfectly knewe his personage, and being inflamed with yre, he put his spurres to his horse and rode out of the side of the range of his battaile, leauing the hauntgards fighting, and with speare in whest ranne toward him. The Earle perceiued well the king furiously comming toward him, and because the whole hope of his wealth and purpose was to be determined by battaile, he gladly profered to encounter with him bodie to bodie and man to man: King Richard set on so sharpelie at the first brunt that he ouerthrew the earles standard, and slew sir William Brandon his standardbearer, and matched hand to hand with Sir John Cheiney, a man of great force and strength, which would haue resisted him, and the saide John was by him manfully ouerthrowne, and so he making open



open passage by dint of sword as he went forwarde, the Earle of Richmond withstood his violence and kept him at the sword's point longer then his companions thought, which being almost in despair of victorie were sodainly recomforted by sir W. Stanley, which came to succour with 3000. tall men, at which berie instant, king Richards men were driven backe and fledde, and he himselfe manfully fighting in the middle of his enemies was slaine. In the meane season the Earle of Driford, with the aide of the Lord Stanley after no long fight discomfited the forwarde of king Richard, wherof a great number were slaine in the chase, but the greatest number that came to the field neuer gaue stroke. In this battaile died on king Richards part, about the number of 4000. men, and on the other side but ten persons, as sir Gilbert Talbot then wrote from the campe, and of the nobilitie were slaine John Duke of Suffolke, Walter Lord Ferrers of Chartley, Sir Richard Ratcliffe, sir William Coniers, sir Richard Claringdon, and Robert Brakenburie, lieutenant of the Tower, and not manie Gentlemen more: Sir William Caresby learned in the lawes of the Realme, and one of the chiefe Counsellours to the late king, with diuers other were two daies after beheaded at Leicester. Amongst them that ran awate were sir Frauncis Viscount Lovel, and Humfrey Stafford with Thomas Stafford his brother, which toke Sanctuary in S. Johns at Glocester. On the Earle of Richmonds part that was slaine, the principall was sir William Brandon his Standardbearer. This battaile was fought at Bosworth in Leicestershire, the 22. of August, in the yere of our Lord, 1485. the whole conflict indured little aboue two houres. When the earle had thus obtained the victorie, he rendred thanks to God, and after to his souldiers for their fidelity: then the people cried king Henry, king Henry. When the lord Stanley sawe the good will of the people, he toke the Crowne of king Richard, which was found amongst the spoile in the field, and set it on the earles head, as though he had bene elected king by the voice of the people.

king Richard  
slaine.

King Henry at this time made knights, as followeth: sir Gilbert Talbot, sir John Mortimer, sir Rice ap Thomas, sir Robert Points, sir Humfrey Stanley, sir John Turbaruile, sir W. Willoughby, sir Hugh Perhall, sir R. Hegecombe, sir John Bikenyle, sir de Baron de Carow.

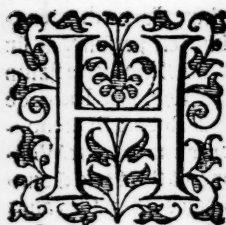
After this, the whole campe remoued to the towne of Leicester, where hee rested two daies. In the meane season, the dead corpes of king Richard was as shamefully carried to the towne of Leicester, as he gorgeously the day before with pompe departed out of the same towne: for his bodie was naked to the skinne, not so much as one clout about him, and was trussed behinde a Purfuant of armes, like a hogge or calfe, the head and armes hanging on the one side of the horse, and the legs on the other side, and all sprinkled with myze and blond, was brought to the Grey Friers Church within the Towne, and there homely buried, when he had reigned two yeres, two moneths and one day.

He founded a colledge at Wyndesore beyond Wyke, and another at London beside the Tower, in a chappell called our Ladie of Warking: he also en-

dotwde the M<sup>a</sup>nes Colledge at Cambridge with five hundred markes of p<sup>e</sup>relie rent. He despoiled the great field of Wichewoode, betwene Woodstocke and Wyke, which king Edward the fourth had incorporated before to the forest, &c.

## Henry Earle of Richmond.

An. reg. 1.



Parson of S.  
Willelms  
Dien.

Henrie the seventh, borne in Penbroke Castle, began his raigne the 22. of August, in the yere of our Lord God, 1485. He was a Prince of marvellous wisdom, policie, iustice, temperance, and grauitie, and notwithstanding manie and great occasions of trouble and warre, he kept his Realme in right good order, for the which he was greatly reuerenced of foreigne princes.

On the forenamed 22. of August, was a great fire in Bread-streets of London, in the which fire, was burnt the Parson of Saint Willelms, and one other man in the Parsonage there.

King Henry, before his departure from Leicester, sent sir Robert Willoughby knight to the Parson of Sherbinton in the countie of York, for Edward Plantagenet earle of Marwarke, son and heire to George Duke of Clarence, then being of the age of 15. yeres, and sent him by to the Tower of London, where he was put under sure custodie.

In the meane season the king remoued towards London, and when he had approached the citie, on the 27. of August, the Maior, Magistrates, and companies, all clothed in violet, met him at Shoreditch, and with great pompe conducted him through the citie to S. Pauls church, where he offered his three standards, one of S. George, the second a red Dragon, the third a dun Cow, after his prayers said and Te Deum sung, he departed to the bishops palace where he sojourned a few daies.

The sweating began the 21. of September, and continued till the ende of October: of the which sickness a wonderfull number died, and in London besides other, died Thomas Hall maior, in whose place was chosen William Stocker, who likewise deceased about seven daies after: in which space departed other foure Aldermen, Thomas Ham, Richard Rawson, Thomas Norland, and Iohn Stocker, and then was chosen maior Iohn Warde, who continued till the feast of Simon and Iude.

On the euen of Saint Simon and Iude, king Henry came from Henington unto Lambeth, and there dined with Thomas Bourchier Archbischoppe of Canterburie, Cardinall of S. Ciriack in Thermis. And after dinner with a goodly companie of the estates of this realme both spirituall & tempozall, from thence wet by land toward London, his nobles riding after the guise of France vpon small hackneies, two and two vpon a horse, and at London bridge end, the

the Mayor of London with his brethren and the craftes, met and received the king, and the king proceeded to Grace-church corner, and so to the Tower. On the morrowe being the feast daie of Simon and Jude, king Henrie created Thomas lord Stanley Earle of Darby, Edward Courtney Earle of Denonshire, and Jasper earle of Penbrooke was created Duke of Bedford, all at one time in the tower of London. Banerets made at this creation, Sir Gilbert Talbot, sir Iohn Cheinie, sir William Stonar, sir W. Troutbeke, sir Iohn Mortimer, sir Richard Crosby, sir Iohn Fortescue, sir Edward Bedingsfield, sir Thomas Cokesey, sir James Baskerville, sir Humfrey Stanley, sir Richard de la Bere.

On the 30. of October king Henry was crowned at Westminster, by the hands of Thomas Bouchier archbishop of Canterburie, and ordained a number of chosen archers, being strong and hardie persons, to give daillie attendance on his person, whome he named yeoman of the Garb.

The 7. of November began a parliament at Westminster, for the establishing of all things, in the which he caused to be proclaimed, that all men were pardoned of all offences, and should be restored to their lands and goods, which would submit themselves to his clemencie. After this he began to remember his especiall friends, of whom some he advanced to honour and dignitie, and some he enriched with possessions and goods: and to begin, the lord Chandew of Britaine, he made earle of Bath: sir Giles Daubeney was made lord Daubeney: sir Robert Willoughby lord Brooke: and Edward Stafford eldest sonne to Henry late duke of Buckingham, he restored to his dignitie & possessions: sir T. Molineux knight, baneret, he made Constable of Beaumarice, where shortly after he ended his life. The parliament being dissolved, the king redeemed the marques Dorset, and sir Iohn Bouchier, whom he had left as pledges at Paris, for money there before borrowed: and sent also into Flanders for Iohn Morton bishop of Ely.

Parliament  
at Westminster

The eighteenth day of January king Henry married the ladie Elizabeth eldest daughter to Edward the fourth, by which meanes the two families of Yorke and Lancaster, which had long borne at great dissension, were united and made one.

King Henry  
married the  
ladie Elizabeth.

King Henrie sent the Lord Treasurer with master Bray and other, unto the lord Mayor of London, requiring him and the citizens of a prest of 6000. markes, wherefore the Mayor with his brethren and commons granted a prest of two thousand pound, which was lent of the companies, and not of the wardes, which prest was repaid againe in the yere next following, everie pennie.

1486  
Lone to the  
king.

Wheate was solde for thre shillings the bushell, and bay salt at the like price. *Ann. reg. 2.*

In the moneth of September Quene Elizabeth was delivered of her first sonne named Arthur, at Winchester.

This yere deceased Thomas Bouchier archbishop of Canterburie, and was buried at Canterburie: Iohn Morton Bishop of Ely, a man of excellent wit, learning, and vertue, was translated, and succeeded him in the archbishopricke of Canterburie, and Iohn Alcock succeeded in the bishopricke of Ely.

Sir Richard Simon, a wily priest, came to Gerald earle of Asbare, and deputy of Ireland, and presented to him a lad his scholler named Lambert, whom he fained to be the sonne of George duke of Clarence lately escaped the tower of London. And the childe had learned of the priest such princely behaviour, that he lightly moued the earle, and many nobles of Ireland, tendering the blond royall of Richard Plantagenet and George his son, as also maligning the aduancement of the house of Lancaster in Henry the seventh, either to thinke or make the world weene, they thought verily this childe to be Edward earle of Marwike, the duke of Clarence lawfull son. And although is Henry more than halfe married their sport, in shewing the right earle thorough all the streets of London: yet the Lady Margaret dutchesse of Burgoyne sister to Edward the fourth, John de la Pole her nephew, the Lord Louel, sir Thomas Broughton knight, and other capitaines of this conspiracie, deuised to abuse the colour of this yong earles name, for preferring their purpose: whiche, if it came to god, they agreed to depose Lambert, and to erect the verie earle in dede, now prisoner in the tower: for whose quarrell, had they pretended to fight, they deemed it likely, he should haue been made away: wherefore it was blayed in Ireland, that the king, to mocke his subiectes, had schooled a boy to take vpon him the earle of Marwikes name, and had shewed him about in London, to blinde the eyes of simple folke, and to defeate the lawfull inheritor of the Duke of Clarence their countreiman and protector during his life, to whose linage they also deuised a title of the crowne.

1487

In all the haste they assembled at Diuelin, and there in Christs church they crowned this Idoll, honozing him with titles imperiall, feasting and triumphing, rearing mightie thoutes and cries, carrying him thence to the kings castle vpon tall mens shoulders, that he might be seene and noted, as he was surely an honourable boy to looke vpon.

E. Hall:

In this meane time, the earle of Lincolne, and the lord Louel, had gotten by the aid of Margaret, about 2000. Almains, with Martin Swart a German, and in martiall acts verie expert, to be their capitaine, and so sailing into Ireland, and at the cite of Diuelin caused yong Lambert to be proclaimed king of England, & so with a great multitude of Irishmen, of whom Thomas Gerardine was capitaine, they sayled into England with the new king, and landed at Frowdrey within a little of Lancaster, trusting there to be aided with money by sir Thomas Broughton, one of the chiefe of this conspiracie.

King Henry not sleeping in his matters, when he had gathered his host together, ouer the which the duke of Bedford, and the earle of Oxford were chiefe captaines, he went to Couentrie, where he being certified, that the earle of Lincolne was landed at Lancaster with his new king, he remoued to Nottingham, to whome shortly after came George Talbot earle of Shrewsbury, the lord Strange, sir John Cheney, with many other.

Stoke field.

In this space the earle of Lincolne being entered into Northshire, directed his way to Newark vpon Trent, and at a little village called Stoke, three or foure miles from Newark, nigh to the king and his armie planted his campe.

The



The next date following, the king diuided his number into thre battalles, and after approached nigh the towne of Stoke, where both the armies toynd and fought egerly on both parts: but at the length the kings foreward set bp on the aduersaries with such a violence, that they slew many, and put the rest to flight. For there their chiefe captaines, the earle of Lincolne, and the lord Louel, Sir Thomas Broughton, Martin Swart, and the lord Gerardine, (or after Campion, Morice Firz Thomas) captaine of the Irishmen, were slaine, and other aboue foure thousand. This battell was fought on the 16. of June: Lambert and the priest were both taken, to the no small grieve of Margaret Duchesse of Burgoigne.

Lambert, after that he had bene a turne-broch for a space in the kings kitchen, was at length made one of the kings falconers.

Now when the king had got the upper hande of his enemies (as yee haue heard) he remoued to Lincolne, and there carried thre daies, causing solemne processions to be made, in rendyng thanks to God for his fortunate victory. Then caused he execution to be don on such as were taken in the field, either at the battell, or in the chase. And shortly after he went into Dorsetyre, and there coasted the countrey, searching out such as had aided his enemies, whome hee punished, some by long imprisonment, some by large fines, and some by death. An. reg. 3.

About the midst of August the king came to Newcastle vpon Tyne, and from thence sent ambassadoys into Scotland, Richard Fox bishop of Winchester, Ser, and Richard Edgecomb knight, controller of his house, to conclude some peace, or truce with king James of Scotland. The English ambassadoys were honorably receiued, and entertained of the king, who gladly would haue concluded a perpetuall peace, but his people would not agree thereto: but in the end concluded vpon a truce for seuen yeeres. Truce with the Scots.

King Henric, after the ambassadoys were returned out of Scotland, came backe from Newcastle toward Dorke, and so to London: and in the waie being at Leicester, there came to him ambassadoys from Charles the French king, which declared both the recouerie of certaine towne out of the hands of Maximilian II. of Romans, which he had wrongfully detained from the crown of France befoze that time: and also that their master king Charles had now wars in hand against Francis duke of Brittain, because that he succoured and maintained the duke of Orleans and others that were rebels against him. Wherefoze his request was that for the olde familiaritie which had bene betwene them, he would now either assist and helpe him, or else stand as nenter betwixt them, neither helping or hurting the one or the other. The king answered the ambassadoys, that he would neither spare paine nor cost to set some reasonable stay betwixt them. And as the ambassadoys were returned home, the king sent his Chaplaine Christopher Vrsuicke ouer into France to king Charles, as well to shew, that he was glad of the victory which he had against Maximilian, as to declare what a tempestuous storme of euill rebellion himselfe had escaped, and overcome here in England. But the chiefe point of Vrsuikes errand consisted in this, that he should intimate to the French king,

howe his maister king Henry offered himselfe as a mediatoꝝ betwixt him and the Duke of Bytaine, to make them friends, and if he perceiued the French king to giue eare thereunto, then he should go into Bytain to moue the duke there to bee contented, that some reasonable order might bee taken betwixt them.

Whilēt Vrsuikē was trauellling in this matter, king Henry for the accomplishing of the coronation of his wife Quēne Elizabeth, returned towarde London, and on the saturday next before the feast of All Saints he began his tourne with the Quēne from Warwike, and in his waie at S. Albons kept the feast of All Saints: and on the next morrow remoued to Barnet, where he rested: & on the next morrow as he was comming toward London, in Harney parke hee was met by the Mayor, Aldermen, Sheriffs, and principal commoners of the city of London, all on horsebacke, and in one lierie to attende vpon him, where he dubbed Sir Wil. Horne Mayor of London knight. And betwixt Iserdon and London, he dubbed sir John Perciuall alderman knight. Against the kings comming into London, the streets were grauelled, and the crosses in their lieries stood on both sides from Bishopsgate vnto Pauls church. The quēne with the kings mother, and many ladies stood in a house without Bishopsgate nere to the Spittle, and saue the king with his traine come toward the city: Who rode through the citie to Pauls church, whereinto he was receyued: *Te Deum* song for iote of his victorie, and then lodged in the Bishops palace. On the morrow he went in procession, and heard a sermon at Pauls crosse. On the next sūdate, the Quēne with her Ladies and other Estates, came from Greenwich to the tower of London, where she was receiued by the king: and on the 25. of Nouember she was crowned at Westminster with great solemnity. And shortly after king Henry deliuered lord T. marquis Dorset out of the tower, receiuing him again to his former fauor: because his truth had bene thourghly tried.

Quene Elizabeth  
beth crowned.

1488

Christopher Vrsuikē hauing passed from the French king to the Duke of Bytaine, and backe againe to the French king, returned into England, and shewed vnto king Henry what he had done betwixt them.

Immediatlie after came the Lord Barnard Deaubeney a Scot borne, which in the French kings behalfe required king Henry to make some manner of end of those Bytish wars, what soeuer it were. King Henry therefore sent vnto France Iohn Abbot of Abingdon, Sir Richard Edgecombe knight, and the sayde Christopher Vrsuikē, with commission to giue some agreement betwixt the Frenchmen and the Bytons. These went first to the French king, and after to the Duke of Bytaine, with whome they coulde doe no good, and so signified to the king their master. Now in the meane time Edward lord Woodville uncle to the Quēne, sued to king Henry that he might haue a power of men appointed to him, with the which he would scale pꝛouille ouer without license or passport, so that euery man should thinke that hee were fledde the realme, without knowledge of the R. & although this request was outwardly denied, yet the L. Woodville withdrew himselfe into the Isle of Wight, where, as he was made ruler, he there gathered a crew of tall & hardy personages, to the

Lord Woodville  
uncle aithers the  
duke of Byt-  
taine.

the number of 400. & arrived in Brittain, where he joined himself with the Britons against the Frenchmen. The French k. advertised hereof, was not well pleased towards the k. of England, till k. H. by messengers excused himself to be guiltles, & then he was pacified. And so the English ambassadoys renewing the league & amity betwixt k. two k. for 12. moneths, returned into England.

The king of England forthwith called his high court of Parliament, in the which it was not onely determined, that the duke of Brittain shoulde be aided with power of men, but also there were diuers sums of money granted to the furnishing forth of the same. Parliament.

About the 27. day of July the duke of Brittaines army gaue battell to the French host nere to a towne called S. Albin, hauing apparelled 1700. of the Britons in coates with redde crosses after the English fashon, although they had but 400. English men with the lord Wooduile. The victorie in this battell fell to the French, so that almost all the English men were slaine with the lord Wooduile, besides 6000. Britons. The Duke of Orleans, and the Prince of Orange were taken prisoners, which were there on the Britons part. The French men lost 1200. men, with their valiant Captaine an Italian, named James Galiot. The newes hereof being heard in England, caused king Henry to make haste in sending forth his army, and therefore was the lord Brooke with Sir Iohn Cheinie, Sir Iohn Middleton, Sir Raife Hilton, Sir Richard Corbet, Sir Thomas Leighton, Sir Richard Laton, and Sir Edmond Cornwall, sent ouer into Brittain with all conuenient speede, hauing with them 8000. men well appointed, and furnished in warlike sort to aide the duke of Brittain. These arrived in Brittain, and marched forward til they came nere to their enemies, where they pitched their field. But while this war was thus set forward, Francis duke of Brittain departed this life, and then the Rulers of that contry falling at dissention amongst themselves, tended not the defence of their country, so that the Englishmen perceiuing themselves to be danger, and being in the midst of Winter, they returned into Englands within five monethes after their first setting forth, so that finally the French king gat the upper hande of the Britons, and did toyne that Dutchie to his Realme of France. Lord Wooduile slaine.

We haue heard howe there was in the last Parliament money granted for the furnishing forth of the armie into Brittain, to witte, that euerie man shoulde bee taxed to paie the tenth penie of all landes and goods: which money the most of them that dwelled in the Bishoprick of Durham, and in the parts of Northshire refused utterly to paie, for that they thought themselves overcharged with the same. Wherefore such as were appoynted collectors, complained to Henry earle of Northumberland chiefe ruler of the north parts. The earle forthwith signified to the king all that matter, and the king not willing to pardon one penny, commaunded the earle to disresse, or other wise to leuy the money, as he shoulde thinke meetest. The rude people hearing of this answer from the king, by and by with great violence set vpon the earle, by the exciting of one named Iohn a Chamber, whome the earle with faire wordes sought to appease: but they alleaging all the fault to bee in him, as chiefe Authoꝝ of that tate,

*An. reg. 4.*

I skelton,  
1489

Earle of No.  
thumberland  
daine.

fare, furiously due him, and certaine of his household seruantes in a place called Cock-lodge by Thurstle, eightene miles from Dorke, on the 28. of A. pill. Then the northern men got them to armoz, assembling togither, chose them a capitaine called sir Iohn Egremond knight: and passing by the countreies, they published that they would bid the king battell, onelie in defence of their liberties. The king sent forth Thomas earle of Surrey, whom not long before he had deliuered out of the Towre, with a crewe of men, to chasten those rebels of the North, who skirmished with a company of the m, whome they discomfited, and toke sir I. a Chamber, the first beginner of this rebellion. Then the northern men came to the citie of Dorke, where they remained 3. or 4. daies, vnto the time they heard of the comming of the king, and then they fled out of Dorke, som one waie, som another: but diuers of them were taken and brought to the king, who caused them that were capitaines to be hanged and quartered. Iohn a Chamber was hanged at Dorke, vpon a gibbet set vpon a foure square paire of gallowes, and the other his complices were hanged on the gallowes round about him: but sir Iohn Egremond fled into Flanders to Margaret duches of Burgundy. After this the king returned to London, leaving the earle of Surrey to rule the countreie of the north, and appointed sir Rich. Tunstall to gather the subsidy to him due of the people.

Ann. reg. 5.

James the third king of Scots was slain by his rebellious subjects, after they had vanquished him in battell.

About the same time, Adrian an Italian was sent Ambassadors from Pope Innocent the eight, into Scotland, there to haue taken by the variance betwixt the king and his people: But being arriued in England, he was informed that king James was slain, and therefore remained here certaine moneths, and soz that he was a man of excellent learning and humanitie, and commended by Iohn Morton Archbshop of Canterburie, the king made him first Bishop of Hereford, and shortly after, that being resigned, he was made bishop of Bath and Wells.

1490

This yere came ambassadors from the French king, the Loydes Francis of Lutzenburge, Charles Maignanc, and Robert Gagwine, to haue concluded a peace with king Henry, and that the French king might dispose of the yong duches of Brytaine, as hee should thinke best: but thereto would not king Henry consent: notwithstanding at length it was agréde, that a forme of league should be drawn with conditions, whereupon the French ambassadors being dismissed, The earle of Dymonde, and Thomas Goldston prior of Christs church in Canterbury were appointed to follow into France for conclusion of y same league, but they returned without agréeing vpon anie league at al.

Ann. reg. 6.

Parliament at  
London.

King Henry determining no more with peaceable messages, but with open war to determine all controuersies betwixt him and the French king, called a parliament, and therein declared that he was iustly provoked to make war against the French men, and therefore desired them of their beneuolence of monie, and men toward the maintenance thereof. Euerie man allowed the cause to be iust, & promised his helping hand. The king commended them for their willing and faithfull hearts. And to the intent hee might spare the poorer sort,

A beneuolence  
to king Henry.



fozt, he thought good first to exact monie of the richest fozt, by waile of beneuolence, which kind of leuying monie was first praactised by king Edward the 4. King H. following his example, published that by their open gifts he woulde measure their beneuolent hearts: so that he who gaue most should be iudged to be his most louing friend; and he that gaue little to be esteemed according to his gift. By this meanes king Henry got innumerable great sums of money, with some grudge of the people, for the extremitie shewed by the commissioners in diuers places.

The citizens of London gaue toward this tourne 9682. pound, 17. s. and foure pence. Toward the which sum, manie Aldermen gaue 200. l. the peece, and some of the Commons 100. pounds: the rest was supplied by the poorer fozt.

John Twiche Lord Audley Treasurer of Englande deceased on the 26. of September, he left issue James Audley married to Margarec, daughter to sir Ric. Darell Knight. Which James Audley was beheaded on the twentieth eight of June, Anno 1497.

Henry the kings second sonne was bozne at Greenwich in Kent on the 22. of June.

An. reg. 7.

Maximilian king of Romans intending to be reuenged on the Frenchmen, for the manie iniuries done to him, because he was not rich enough to maintaine the warre of himselfe, he sent his ambassadoz James Contibald, a man of great wisdom, to require the king of England to take his part against the French king, making diuers great offers on his owne behalfe, if it would please him so to do.

¶ Henry no lesse desirous than Maximilian to put the French king to trouble, and quickie to aid the Bixions in the extremitie of their busines, gladly consented to Maximilian, and promised to prepare an armie with all speed, and to passe the seas to inuade the French territories.

1492

The 6. of Aprill the nobles of the realme, Hugh Clopton Mayor of London, his brethren the Aldermen, Sheriffes, and Compantes of the Citie in their liueries, assembled in the Cathedzall Church of S. Paul, where Doctor Morton Archbysop of Canterburie, Chancelloz of England, made to them an oration, declaring how the king of Spaine had won the greates and rich Citie and countrie of Granada from the Mozes: for soie whereof, *Te Deum* was song with great solemnitie.

The citie of Granada woon from the Mozes.

In the moneth of Maie following, was holden a great and valiant iusting within the kinges Mannoz of Shire, nowe called Richmond, in Southerie, the which endored by the space of a Moneth, sometime within the sayde place, and sometime without, upon the Grene without the Gate of the said Mannoz. In the which space, a Combate was holden and done betwixt Syr James Parkar knight, and Hugh Vaughan Gentleman Atcher, upon controuersie for the Armes that Gasar gaue to the sayde Hugh Vaughan: but hee was there allowed by the king to beare them, and Syr James Parkar was slayne at the first course. The cause of his death was thought to be long of a false helmet, which by force of a Cronacle sayled, & so he was striken into the mouth, that

Justing at Shire.

A combat at Shire.

his

his tongue was boyned into the hinder part of the head, and so he died incontinently.

In this season, Charles the French king receiued the lady Anne of Brittain, and with great solemnitie wedded her, hauing with her in dowrie the dutchie of Britaine. Thus was Maximilian in a great chafe toward the French king: Wherefore he sent vnto king Henrie, desiring him with all speede to passe the seas with his armie, that they might pursue the warre against their aduersaries with fire, sword, and blood. King Henry hearing this, and hauing no mistrust in the promise of Maximilian, with all speede leuied an army, and rigged his nauie: and when all things were readie, he sent his Almoner Christopher Vrsuicke, and sir Iohn Rifeley knight, vnto Maximilian, to certifie him that the king was in a readinesse, and would arrive at Calais, as soone as he should be aduertised, that Maximilian and his men were readie to ioine with him.

These ambassadoers comming into Flanders, perceiued that Maximilian was neither purued of men, money, armour, or anie other thing necessary for the setting forth of war, saue onely that his will was good, but his power was small.

*Ann. reg. 8.*

King Henrie being aduertised hercof, was sore disquieted in his minde: but taking counsaile, at length hee determined not to staie his pretended tourney, and therefore he so increased his number before he toke shippe, that hee with his owne power might be able to match with his aduersaries.

King Henry  
sailed into  
France.

Then on the 9. of September, king Henry departed from Greenwich toward the sea-side, and on the first of October toke shipping at Sandwich, and the same date landed at Calais with a great armie. The 15. of October he departed toward Boloigne, the first night he lay at Sandringfield, the next night at Hogrison, where he met with the Earle of Orford chiefe Captaine of the foze-warde, then come from the beating downe of the Towne of Arde: with the earle of Orford came the earle of Shrewsburie, the earle of Denonshire, the earle of Suffolke, the earle of Essex, the lord Grey Codner, the L. Strange, the lord Powesse, the lord Hastings, the lord Audley, the lord Latimer, the baron of Dudley, and diuers knights and esquires: these laie that night at Hogrison, the next night both the wardes lay at Wainell, and the next night they came before Boloigne, and there laie at siege till the eight of Nouember, at the which time the lord Cordos chiefe Captaine vnder the French king, in his masters name required peace, which king Henry granted vpon conditions. This peace greatly displeased the English men, because they were ready prest to haue set on their enemies, and brought into great hope to haue bene enriched by the spoile to haue fallen to their lots of their enemies goods, besides the glorious fame of renowned victorie: and namelie for that diuers of the Captaines, to set themselves and their bandes the more gorgeously forward, had borrowed large summes of money, and for the repayment had mortgaged their landes, &c. The king returned to Calais: there were not manie of the English armie lost at this siege of Boloigne, and fewe men of name  
more

King Henry  
besieged Bo-  
loigne.

more then that balliant captaine Sir Iohn Savage knight.

King Henry arrived at Woner on the seuenteenth of December, from whence he rode to Westminster, where he kept his Christmasse with great solemnitie.

1493

Now springing there vp a netwe found son to king Edward the fourth in this maner. The Dutchesse of Burgoigne espying a certaine yong man, of visage beautifull, of countenance demure, of wit subtill, called Perken Werbeke, this yong man traouailing manie Countries, could speake English, and diuers other languages: the Dutchesse glad to haue got so mete an instrument for her purpose, as one not vnlike to be taken, and reputed for the Duke of Bozke, sonne to her brother king Edward, which was called Richard, kept him a certaine space with her priuillie, and him with such diligence instructed, both of the secrets, and common affaires of the Realme of England, and of the linage, descent, and order of the house of Bozke, that like a good schooller, he could tell all that was taught him without any staggering or staie in his wordes: and besides that he kept such a Princely countenance, that all men in maner did firmly beleue, that he was extracted of that noble familie of the Duke of Bozke: when the Dutchesse saue her time, she sent this Perken first into Portugale, and so into Ireland, where shortly after his arrival, he entred so farre in credite with the people, that his wordes were taken to be true.

Perken Werbeke.

The French king aduertised hereof, sent into Ireland for Perken, who with all diligence sayled into France, and comming to the kings presence, was of him royally receiued, and had a gard assigned, whereof was gouernor the lord Congreshall, and to him being at Paris, resorted Sir George Neuell bassard, Sir Iohn Taylor, Rowland Robinson, and a hundreth Englishmen: but after that the peace was confirmed betwixt the two kings of England and of France, the French king dismissed Perken.

And so Perken returned to the ladie Margaret, who assigned him a garde, and called him the white Rose of England, the nobility of Flaunders did to him all reuerence.

In England the brute of him sore disquieted the people, insomuch that not onlie of the meaner sorte, but also of the Nobles beleued all that was of him reported, and manie passed ouer to him: and some of the Noble men conspired together, purposing to ayde the foresaide Perken. Wherefore they sent messengers to the Ladie Margaret, to knowe when Richard Duke of Bozke might come into England, to the intente they might bee in a readinesse to assist him, at his arrival. Sir Robert Clifford knight, and William Barley were sent into Flaunders, which discovered to the Dutchesse all the secret intent of the friendes of the netwe founde Duke. The Dutchesse gladdly receiued this message, and brought the messenger to the sight of Perken: who so well counterfeited the gesture, and maner of Richard Duke of Bozke, that Sir Robert Clifforde beleued that he was the second sonne of king Edward, and thereof wrote into England to his complices.

Ann. reg. 9.

The

1494  
The coasts kept  
against Perken  
Werbeke.

The King perceiuing that this fable was not vanquished, sent certaine knights with competent bandes of Souldiours to keepe the sea coasts: he also sent into the Lowe countries certaine persons to learne the trueth of this forged Dukes progenie: where some of them comming to Lozney got knowledge that he was borne in that cite of base linage, and named Perken Werbeke. The king being aduertised hereof, sent sir Edward Poinings knight, and sir W. Warham doctor of the lawes vnto Philip archduke of Burgoigne, to signifye to him that the yong man being with the lady Margaret, had falsely vsurped the name of Richard duke of Yorke, long before murdered. The ambassadoys hauing done their message, were answered, that to haue the king of Englands loue, the archduke would neither aid or assist Perken, nor his complices, in any cause or quarrell.

After the returne of the ambassadoys, the King sent certaine espials into Flanders, which should faine themselves to haue fled to the duke of Yorke, and thereby to search out the whole intent of the conspiracie.

Other were sent to intise sir Robert Clifford and William Barley to returne into Englande, promising to them pardon of all their offences, and high rewards, for obeying the kings request. They that were sent did so earnestly applye their busines, that they brought to passe all thinges at their owne desires, for they learned who were the chiefe conspiratours, and perswaded Sir Robert Clifforde to giue ouer that enterpryse. When the King had knowledge of the chiefe Captaynes of the conspiracie, hee caused them to bee apprehended. The chiefe were, Iohn Ratcliffe Lord Fitzwalter, Sir Simon Mountforte, Sir Thomas Twates knights, William Dawbeney, Robert Ratcliffe, Thomas Chreslenor, and Thomas Astewooder: Simon Mountforde, Robert Ratcliffe, and William Dawbeney were beheaded, the other had their pardons, the Lord Fitzwalter was conuicted to Caleis and layde in houlde, and after lost his head.

An. reg. 10.  
Flemmish merchants with  
their wares banished this land

King Henry taking displeasure with the king of Romaines, for that he had not kept touch with him against the French king, and partly displeased with the Flemmings, but spectallie with the Ladie Margaret, for keeping and setting forward Perken Werbeke, not onlie banished the Flemmings wares and merchandize out of his dominions, but also restrained all English merchants from their repaire and trafike, into any of the lands and territories of the king of Romaines, or of the archduke Philip son to the king of Romaines, causing the parte to bee kept at Caleis, of all English merchandizes and commodities: wherefore the said king and his son banished out of their lands and spgories, all English clothes, yerne, tynne, leade, and other commodities of this Realme.

Henry the kings second son was created duke of Yorke, on Alhalowne Euen, at which time were made knights the duke of Yorke, the Lord Harington, Lord Clifton, Lord Dacre of the South, Lord Waren, Sir Thomas Stanley, Sir I. Arundell, Sir Walter Griffith, Sir Gerueyes Clifton, Sir Robert Harcourte, Sy: Edwarde Traforde, Sy: Henry Merney, Sy: Robert Newbrough, Sy: Raulph Ryder, Sy: I. Sparke, Sy: Humfrey Fulforde, Sy: Robert Litton,

Sy:



Sy: Pierce Edgcombe, Sir Robert Clere, Sy: Thomas Farfax, Sir Richard Knightley, Sy: I. Cheke.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, where on the twelfth day hee made Ralph Aultry Mayor of London, and William Marton late Mayor, knights.

The Approule after the Epiphantie, King Henry went to the Tower of London, and there remained till such time, as Sir Robert Clifford was there presented, which was done for a policie, that if Sir Robert accused any of the Nobilitie, they might be called thither, without suspicion of any enill, and there attached, and laid fast: now at the coming of Sy: Robert Clifford to the kinges presence, he besought him of pardon, and obtained it, and therewith opened the manner of the conspiracie, and who were the ayders, fautors, and chiefe beginners of it. Amongst whom he accused Sir William Stanley, whom the king had made his chiefe Chamberlaine, and one of his priue Councell: but now the king caused him to be restrained from his libertie in his owne Chamber, within the Square Tower, and there appoynted him by his priue Councell to be examined, where he wiselie agreed to all thinges layde to his charge, if hee were therein faultie & culpable. The report is, that this was his offence, when communication was had betwene him and the forementioned Sy: Robert Clifford, as concerning Perken, Sir William Stanley saide, that if he certaielie knewe that the yong man was the vndoubted sonne and heire of King Edward the fourth, hee woulde neuer fight nor beare armour against him, wherefore he was charged that he bare no heartie good will toward King Henry. The king hauing thus an hole in his coat, doubted first what he should do with him, for loath he was to lose the fauor of his brother the earle of Darby: but arraigned he was at Westminster and adiudged to die, according to which sentence, he was brought to the Tower hill on the sixteenth daie of Februarie, and there beheaded. This Sy: William Stanley was the chiefe and principall helper of King Henry to the Crowne at Bosworth fildes, against King Richard: Hee was a man of greate power in his Countrey, and also of greate wealth, insomuch, as the common fame ran, there was in his castle of Holte, found in readie coine and plate, to the value of fortie thousand markes or more, and his land and fees extended to thre thousand pounds by yere.

h. lodged in the Tower.

Sir W. Stanley beheaded.

The 22. of Februarie were arraigned in Guildhall at London foure persons, to witte, Thomas Bagnall, Iohn Scot, Iohn Hethe, and Iohn Kenington, the which were Sanctuary men of Saint Martin le grand in London, and lately before taken thence, for forging seditious libels, to the slander of the king, and some of his Councell: for the which thre of them were adiudged to die, and the fourth named Bagnall, pleaded to be restored to sanctuary: by reason whereof he was repriued to the Tower till the next terme, and on the 26. of Februarie, the other thre with a Flemming, and Robert Bikley a pcoman of the Crown, were all hie executed at Tyborne.

Sanctuary men executed.

Giles Lorde Dawbeney was made the kings chiefe Chamberlaine.

The King sent into Irelande, Sy: Henry Deane, late abbot of Lanthonie, whose

1494  
The countes kept  
against Werken  
Werbeke.

The King perceiuing that this fable was not banquished, sent certaine knights with competent bandes of Souldiours to keepe the sea coast: he also sent into the Lowe countries certaine persons to learne the truth of this forged Dukes progenie: where some of them comming to Dozney got knowledge that he was bozne in that citie of base linage, and named Perken Werbeke. The king being aduertised hereof, sent sir Edward Poinings knight, and sir W. Warham doctoz of the lawes vnto Philip archduke of Burgoigne, to signifye to him that the yong man being with the lady Margarer, had falsely vsurped the name of Richard duke of Yorke, long before murdered. The ambassadozs hauing done their message, were answered, that to haue the king of Englands loue, the archduke would neither aid oꝝ assist Perken, noꝝ his complices, in any cause oꝝ quarrell.

After the returne of the ambassadozs, the King sent certaine espials into Flanders, which should saue themselves to haue fled to the duke of Yorke, and thereby to search out the whole intent of the conspiracie.

Other were sent to intise sir Robert Clifford and William Barley to returne into Englande, promysing to them pardon of all their offences, and high rewards, for obeying the kings request. They that were sent did so earnestly applye their busines, that they brought to passe all thinges at their owne desires, for they learned who were the chiefe conspiratours, and perswaded Sir Robert Clifford to giue ouer that enterpryse. When the King had knowledge of the chiefe Captaynes of the conspiracie, hee caused them to bee apprehended. The chiefe were, John Ratcliffe Lozde Fitzwalter, Sir Simon Mounteforte, Sir Thomas Twates knights, William Dawbeney, Robert Ratcliffe, Thomas Chreslenor, and Thomas Astewoode: Simon Mounteforde, Robert Ratcliffe, and William Dawbeney were beheaded, the other had their pardons, the Lord Fitzwalter was conuicted to Caleis and layde in houlde, and after lost his head.

An. reg. 10.  
Flemmish merchants  
with their wares  
banished this land

King Henry taking displeasure with the king of Romaines, for that he had not kept touch with him against the French king, and partlie displeased with the Flemmings, but spectallie with the Ladie Margarer, for keeping and setting forward Perken Werbeke, not onlie banished the Flemmings wares and merchandize out of his dominions, but also restrained all English merchants from their repaire and trafike, into any of the lands and territories of the king of Romaines, oꝝ of the archduke Philip son to the king of Romaines, causing the parte to bee kept at Caleis, of all English merchandizes and commodities: wherefore the said king and his son banished out of their lands and sygnories, all English clothes, yearne, tynne, leade, and other commodities of this Realme.

Henry the kings second son was created duke of Yorke, on Alhalotwne Couen, at which time were made knights the duke of Yorke, the Lozde Harington, Lord Clifton, Lord Dacre of the South, Lord Waren, Sir Thomas Stanley, Sir I. Arundell, Sir Walter Griffith, Sir Gerueyes Clifton, Sir Robert Harcourt, Sir Edwarde Traforde, Sir Henry Merney, Sir Robert Newbrough, Sir Raulph Ryder, Sir I. Sparke, Sir Humfrey Fulforde, Sir Robert Litton,

Sy: Pierce Edgecombe, Sir Robert Clere, Sy: Thomas Farfax, Sir Richard Knightley, Sy: I. Cheke.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, where on the twelſe day hee made Ralph Aulſry Maſor of London, and William Marton late Maſor, Knights.

1495

The Morrow after the Epiphanie, King Henry went to the Tower of London, and there remained till ſuch time, as Sir Robert Clifford was there preſented, which was done for a policie, that if Sir Robert accused anie of the Nobilitie, they mought be called thither, without ſuſpition of anie euill, and there attached, and laid faſt: now at the coming of Sy: Robert Clifford to the kinges preſence, he beſought him of pardon, and obtained it, and therewith opened the manner of the conſpiracie, and who were the ayders, ſanctos, and chiefe beginners of it. Amongſt whome he accused ſir William Stanley, whome the king had made his chiefe Chamberlaine, and one of his priuate Councell: but nowe the king cauſed him to bee reſtrained from his libertie in his owne Chamber, within the Square Tower, and there appoynted him by his priuate Councell to be examined, where he wiſſelie agreed to all thinges layde to his charge, if hee were therein faultie & culpable. The report is, that this was his offence, when communication was had betwene him and the ſoementioned Sy: Robert Clifford, as concerning Perken, Sir William Stanley ſaide, that if he certaiuelie knewe that the yong man was the vndoubted ſonne and heire of King Edward the fourth, hee woulde neuer fight nor beare armour againſt him, wherefore he was charged that he bare no heartie good will to ward King Henry. The king hauing thus an hole in his coat, doubted firſt what he ſhoulde do wiſh him, for loath he was to loſe the fauor of his brother the earle of Darby: but arraigned he was at Westminster and adiudged to die, according to which ſentence, he was brought to the Tower hill on the ſixteenth date of Februarye, and there beheaded. This Sy: William Stanley was the chiefe and principall helper of King Henry to the Crowne at Boſworth Fielde, againſt King Richard: Hee was a man of greate power in his Countrey, and alſo of greate wealth, inſomuch, as the common ſame ran, there was in his caſtle of Holte, found in readie coine and plate, to the value of ſortie thouſand markes or more, and his land and ſees extended to thre thouſand pounds by yere.

He lodged in the Tower.

Sir W. Stanley beheaded.

The 22. of Februarye were arraigned in Guildhall at London foure perſons, to witte, Thomas Bagnall, Iohn Scot, Iohn Herthe, and Iohn Kenington, the which were Sanctuary men of Saint Martin le grand in London, and lately before taken thence, for forging ſeditious libels, to the ſlander of the king, and ſome of his Councell: for the which thre of them were adiudged to die, and the fourth named Bagnall, pleaded to bee reſtored to ſanctuary: by reaſon whereof he was reſtored to the Tower till the next terme, and on the 26. of Februarye, the other thre wiſh a Flemming, and Robert Bikle a yecoman of the Crown, were all ſue executed at Tyborne.

Sanctuary men executed.

Giles Lorde Dawbeney was made the kinges chiefe Chamberlaine.

The King ſent into Irelande, Sy: Henry Deane, late abbot of Lanthome, whome

whome he made Chancelloz of that Ile, and Sir Edward Poinings knight, with an armie of men, whereof when the fauozers of Perken heard, they straight fled to the woods and marishes. Sye Edward Poinings with his whole Armie marched against the wild Irish, because the other being culpable were fled to them for succour: but when hee sawe himselfe and his power, not able to followe his enemies in the woods, marishes and mountaines, he was constrained to recule backe, soze disquieted agaynst Geralde Earle of Kyldare, being then the Kinges Deputie, whome hee suspected to bee the cause that hee hadde no succours sent him, and therefore sodaynelie hee caused the Earle to bee appzehended, and as a Prisoner bzought him into Englande, which Earle so cleared himselfe of all thinges layde to his charge, that he was dismissed and sent into Ireland agayne, there to bee deputie and Lieutenant as before.

King Henrie beeing nowe in some better suretie of his Estate, tooke his Progresse into Lancasthyze about the five and twentieth of June, there to bee merrie with his wpothet the Countesse of Darbie, which then laie at Latham.

Sir Wm. Caple  
put in late.

Sye William Caple Alderman of London, was called in question, and condemned to the king, in twentie seuen hundredeth, and fortie thye poundes sterling, for the Breach of certayne Statutes made before times: for the which he made his end with the king for 16. hundredeth and 15. pounds, sixe shillings, eight pence, which he paid.

Perken Werbeke  
bene arraigned in  
Kent.

Perken Werbeke being in fflanders, and hoping at length to obtayne the Crowne of England, gathered a power of all nations, some banqueroutes, some theeves, and such as desired to live by rapine, and being thus furnished, he tooke such shippes as his friendes had prouided for him, and then departing from fflaunders, arrived at Deale in Kent, on the thirde of Julie: he put som of his men to lande, to signifie his arrivall with such a power, that the victoyp must nedes incline to his part. The Kentishmen vnderstanding that Perken had none with him to account of, but straingers bozne, and base people, like faithfull subiectes determined to fall vpon those that were thus nowe come to Lande, and also to trye if they might allare the whole fflumber out of their Shippes, so to glue them Watfayle. But Perken woulde not sette one foot out of his Shippe, till he sawe all thinges sure: yet he permitted some of his Souldiours to go on lande, which beeing trained forth a prettie wale from their Shippes, and seeing they coulde haue no comfort of the Countrey, they withdreyue againe to their Shippes: at which withdreyuing, the Maior of Sandwich, with certayne commons of the Countrey bikered with the residue that were vpon lande, and tooke aloue of them 169. persons, among the which were five Captaines, Mountfort, Corbet, White Belt, Quintyn, and Genine. And on the twelfth of Julie Sye Iohn Pechy Sheriffe of Kent, bzought vnto London Bzidge those 169. persons, where the Sheriffes of London, Nicholas Alwine and Iohn Warner receiued and conueied them, railed in robes like hoyses in a cart, vnto the tower of London, and to Petugate, and thortlie after to the number of 150. were hanged about the sea coasts in Kent, Essex,

An. reg. 11.

Suffex,



Sussex, and Dorset: the residue were executed at Tisbury and at Wapping in the Wale besides London: and Perken fled into Flanders.

In this season deceased Cicilie dutchesse of Yorke, mother to king Edward the fourth, in her castle of Barkhamsted, and was buried at Fordinghay by her husband.

King Henry being in his progresse north, sent sir Richard Guilford to commend the fidelitie and manhood of the Kentishmen, and also to render to them most hartie thanks for the same: he also caused order to be taken for the erecting of bekenings or beacons, and watching of them.

Beacons set by  
and watched.

Perken Werbeke sayled into Ireland, trusting there to augment his number: but perceiving that the hope of victorie consisted not in naked people without furniture or armor, he toke the sea againe at Corse, and sayled into Scotland, where comming to the presence of King James, hee forged such a painted processe, that the king of Scots began to haue Perken in great honor, and caused him to be called Duke of Yorke, and to perswade the world that he was so indeede, he caused the ladie Katherine daughter to Alexander Earle of Huntley, his nigh kinsman to be espoused to him.

1496  
Perken Werbeke went into  
Ireland.

And shortly after in companie of this Perken, he entered into Englande with a puissant armie, and caused proclamation to be made to spare all those that would submit themselves vnto Richard Duke of Yorke, and here-with they began to war in most cruell maner, with slaughter of men, burning of towines, and committing detestable enormities, so that all the Countrey of Northumberland, was by them in maner wasted and destroyed. At length when the souldiers were laden with pray, perceiving that no succour came out of England vnto the new Duke, they withdrew backe into Scotlande, enriched with prayes and booties.

Perken spoileth  
in Northum-  
berland.

When King Henrie was truelie certified that the Scottis King was returned home, he staide all the preparations made at that time to goe against him: but yet meaning to be reuenged of the wrongs done to him by king James and his people, hee first called a Parliament, and in that assembly declared the cause of the instant warre, and how necessarie it should be for to haue the warre pursued against those enemies that had begunne it: to which motion all the Nobilitie wholie agreed, and a subsidie was granted.

Ann. reg. 12.

A parliament  
and a subsidie.

Jasper Duke of Bedforde Uncle to king Henrie the seauenth, deceased on the 18. of December, and was buried in the abbey of Beinsam in Gloucestershire.

Jasper Duke  
of Bedford  
deceased.

1497

King Henry prepared a mightie armie to invade Scotland, and ordeined for chiefeaine, the lord Dawbency: but as this army was foreward towarde Scotlande, the same was stayed and called backe againe, by reason of a new commotion begun by the Cornishmen, for the payment of the subsidie granted at the last Parliament. Of these people the heads were called Thomas Flamoke, a Gentleman learned in the lawe, and Michaell Ioseph a blacke smith or horse-farrier of Bodmin, men of stout stomackes. They layde the fault of this eraction vnto Iohn Morton archbishop of Canterburie, and to sir

A commotion  
by the commons  
of Cornwall.

Ggg

Reginald

Reginald Bray, because they were chiefe of the kinges Councell. Flamoke and Ioseph exhorted the common people to put on harnels, and to followe thm in the quarrell, promising not to hurt anie creature, but onelie to see thm punished that procured such exactions to be laide on the people, without anie reasonable cause: so these capitaines assembled a great number of people together, then praising their hardines, when all thinges were ready for their iourney, set forthwarde with their armie, and came to Taunton, where they slew the pro- nosts of Parin, which was one of the commissioners of the subsidie, and from thence came to Wells, so intending to go to London, where the king then sojourned. When the king was aduertised of these doings, he was somewhat astonished, he reuoked the lord Daubeney which was going against the Scots, and increased his army. The nobles came to London with as manie men of war as they could put in a readines, to aide the king against his rebelles, if neede should be. In the mean time James Twichet L. Audley, being confederat with the rebels of Cornwall, joined with them, being come to Wells, and tooke by on him, as their chiefe Captaine and leader: from Wells they went to Salisbury, and from thence to Winchester, & so into Kent, where they hoped to haue had great aid, but they were deceiued: for the earle of Kent, George L. Burgeuenny, John Brooke, L. Cobham, sir Edward Poinings, sir Ric. Guilford, sir T. Bourchier, John Peche, William Scot, and a great number of people were ready to defend the countrey, which thing maruellouslie dissuaded the Cornish men, so that manie of them fled from their companie. The Capitaines brought their people to black-heath, and there ordered their battels, either ready to fight with the king, if he would assaile them, or else to assault the citie of London. The king sent John Earle of Arfordre, Henry Bouchier earle of Essex, Edmonde de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, Sir Rife ap Thomas, and Sir Humfrey Stanley, noble warriours, with a great companie of Archers, and horsemen, to encounter the hill on either side, to the intent that all by-waies being stopped, all hope of flight shoulde bee taken from them: and incontinentlie, hee himselfe beeing furnished with a greate Armie, sette forthwarde out of the Citie, encamped himselfe in Saint Georges felde, where he lodged that night, and on the next morning sent the Lord Dawbeney with a great company to set upon them earlie in the morning, which first gat the byrdsge of Dartford strand, while the earles set on them on euery side, the lord Daubeney came into the field with his companie, and without long fighting, on the 22. of Iune, the Cornish men were ouercome: but first they tooke the Lord Daubeney prisoner, but let him go at libertie, without hurt or detriment. There were slain of the rebels about thre hundred, and taken of them about fiftene hundred. There was giuen to them that tooke them their gods: amongst thm the blacke Smith and other their Captaynes were put to death. And when this battayle was ended, the king wanted of all his number but thre hundred men, which were slayne.

The Lord Audley was drawn from Newgate to the Tower-hill in a coat of his own armes, painted upon paper, reuerfed and all to one, and there was beheaded on the 28. of Iune. Flamoke and Ioseph the blacke Smith were drawn,

beaded,

Blacke-heath  
S. 15.

headed, and quartered at Tybourn, and their heads and quarters set by at London and other places: knights and banerets made at Black-heath, and at London bidge foot, when he returned from Black-heath, as I haue set down in my larger chronicle.

In the moneth of July h. Henry sent an army into Scotland, vnder the guiding of the earle of Surrey, and the lord Newill, which made sharp war vpon the Scots: but by the labor of Peter Helias sent from the king of Spaine, a truce was concluded betwixt the two kings of England and of Scotland, with condition that Iames king of Scots shoulde conuey Perken Werbeke out of his realme and signories.

About the same time king Henry receiued the ambassadoys that were sent to him from the French king. Also the Lord of Camphere, and other oratoys of Philip Archduke of Austria, and Duke of Burgoyne, came to him for the conclusion of amitie, and to haue the English Merchantes to resort again into their Countrey, which request he granted. And so did the English men resort againe into the Archdukes dominions, and were receiued (saith Hall) into Andwerpe with Generall procession, so glad was that towne of their returne.

Perken Werbek being willed by the king of Scots to depart out of the Scottish dominions, sailed with his wife and familie into Ireland, where while hee remained hee had knowledge from the Cornishmen, that they were ready to renew the war againe. Whereupon he hauing with him fowze small ships, and not aboue an hundred and twentie men, sailed into Cornewall, and there landed at Whitesande Baie on the 7 of September, from whence he went to Bodmyn, there hee gathered to him aboue thre thousande persons. Then Perken made proclamations in name of King Richard the fourth, as son to king Edward the fourth. And by the aduise of his thre Counsellors, Iohn Heron Mercer, a Banquerout, Richard Skelton Tayler, and Iohn Askeley Scrivener, determined first of all to assaile the winning of Excester, and so hasting thither, he laid siege to it: The citizens perceiuing themselves to be in danger, let certaine messengers downe by cordes ouer the wall, that mought certifie the king: And herewith caused faggots to be brought and laid to the inward part of their gates, and set them all on fire, to the intent to keepe their enimies from entring in, and their Citizens from flying out, and that they in the meane season might make trenches & rampiers to defend their enimies in stead of gates. Perken set by Ladders to scale the walles: but the Citizens, with helpe of such as were come forth of the countrey to their aid, so valiantly defended the walles, that they slue aboue 200. of Perkins souldiours at that assault. The king halled forth with his Hoste, and sent the Lord Dawbeney with certaine bands of Light horsemen to aduertise all men of his coming.

But in the meane season Edward Courtney earle of Denonshire, and William his sonne, accompanied with sir Edmond Carew, sir T. Trenchard, sir William Courtney, sir Tho Fulford, sir I. Haliwell, sir I. Crokar, Walter Courtney, Peter Edgcombe, W. Snaure, came into the citie of Excester to helpe the citizens,

*Ann. reg. 15.  
The earle of Surrey went into Scotland with a great power.*

*Ambassadoys for an amitie with the duke of Burgundy.*

*Perken Werbeke landed in Cornewall.*

*The city of Excester besieged.*

so that the earle was hurt in the arme with an arrow, and so were many of his men, but fewe slaine. When Perken sawe he could not winne the citie of Excester, he went from thence to Taunton, and there mustering his men, he perceiued them to be minished, he began to mistrust the remnant: in deede when the people that followed him in hope that no small number of the nobilitie would ioyne with him, sawe no such matter come to passe, they stale awaie from him. When the king heard that Perken was gone to Taunton, he followed after him with all speede, and by the way there came to him Edward Duke of Buckingham, and a great companie of noble men. But as sone as Perken was informed that the king was at hand, he with a 60. horsemen fled from Taunton to a sanctuary at Betwdeley beside Southampton. King Henry sent the lord Dawbeney with 500. horsemen after Perken to apprehend him, so that many of his captaines were taken. Also uers horsemen rode to Saint Michaels mount, and there toke the lady Gorden wife to Perken, and brought her to the king. At whose beauty and amiable countenance the king much marvelled, and sent her to London to the Quene. The common people submitted themselves to the kings mercie.

After this the king rode to Excester, and there executed diuers Cornish men: he also caused the sanctuary wherein Perken was inclosed, to be introwned with bands of light horsemen, to watch that Perken shoulde not escape, wherefore Perken vpon promise of pardon committed himselfe to the king, and then the king returned to London.

Perken brought  
bp to London.

The kings man-  
or of Shine  
burnt.

The 28. of Nouember, Perken was conueied on horseback through cheape, and Cornhill vnto the Tower of London, & from thence back againe through Candle wicke streete to Westminster.

The 21. of December at 9. of the clocke at night, sodainly began a great fier within the kings lodging, then being at his manor of Shine, which fier continued till midnight, by violence whereof much and a great part of the old buildings of that place was burnt, with hangings, beds, apparell, plate, and manie iewels.

1498

An. reg. 14.

Perken Werbeke endeavouring to steale secretly out of the land, was taken againe by his keepers, and by the kings commandement cast into the tower of London, and after he was shewed in Westminster, and Cheape, stocked on scaffolds to the great wonderment of many people: where he read his confession written with his owne hand.

Enclosures a-  
bout London  
pulled downe.

This yere all the gardens which had bene continued time out of minde without Hore gate of London, were destroyed, and of them was made a plaine fielde for archers to shote in. The English merchants were receiued into Antwerpe with generall procession, after the y had been long absent from thence.

The summer.

This yere was a great drought, by reason whereof, a loade of hay which was before time sold at London for five shillings, was this yere solde for ten shillings or twelue shillings more.

Sebastian Ga-  
bato his voyage.

This yere one Sebastian Gabato a Genoas sonne, bozne in Baskoto, professing himselfe to be expert in knowledge of the circuit of the world and Islands



of the same, as by his Charts & other reasonable demonstrations he shewed, caused the king to man & victual a ship at Bristol to search for an Island, which he knew to be replenished with rich commodities: in the ship diuers merchants of London aduentured smal stocks, and in the companie of this ship, sayled also out of Bristol 3. or 4. small ships fraught with sleight and grosse wares, as course cloth, caps, laces, points, and such other. Sir Humfrey Gilbert knight, in his booke intituled, A discouery for a new passage to Cataia, writeth thus: Sebastian Gabaro, by his personall experience and trauell, hath set forth and described this passage in his Charts, which are yet to be seene in the Quenes spateshes pzylop gallerie at White hall, who was sent to make this discouerie by K. Henry the 7. and entred the same fret, affirming, that he sailed very far westward, with a quarter of the nozth, on the nozth side of Terra de Labrador, the 11. of June, untill he came to the septentrionall latitude of 67  $\frac{1}{2}$  deგრées, and finding the seas still open, said, that he might and would haue gon to Cataia, if the enimity of the master and mariners had not bene.

Humfr. Gilbert.

The 24. of Februarie, the kings thirde sonne was christened within the Fraters church at Chertwich, by the name of Edward.

1499

A Shoemakers son bozne in Bishops gate streete of London, was hanged at Saint Thomas Waterings on Shrouetuesday, for naming himselfe to bee Edward earle of Marwike, son to George duke of Clarence: which Edward earle of Marwike was then (and had bene all the raigne of this king) kept secret prisoner in the tower of London.

The shoemaker  
sonne sauid to  
be the earle of  
Marwike.

The Gascoine wine was sold at London for fortie shillings the tunne, and much less to the shipmen for freight, the plenty was so great. A quarter of wheate foure shillings, and hay salt foure pence the bushell.

An. reg. 15  
Wine, salt, and  
wheate cheape.

Perken Werbecke being in hold, by great promises corrupted his keepers, named Strangwaies, Blewet, Astwood, and long Roger, seruants to sir Iohn Digby lieutenant of the towner (as was affirmed) intended to haue slaine their master, and to haue set Perken and the earle of Marwike at large: which earle of Marwike had bene kept in prison within the tower (as yee haue heard) from the first yere of this king to this 15. yere, out of all companie of men and sight of beasts, and therefore could not of himselfe seeke his owne destruction, but by the dyxt of other he was brought to his death, for being made pruiue of this enterpryse deuised by Perken and his complices, he assented therunto: but this deuise being reuealed, Perken and Iohn a Waters, sometime masor of Corke in Ireland, were arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and on the 23. of Nouember dyatone to Ebozne, where Perken read his former confession, as before he had done in Cheape, taking on his death the same to be true, and so hee and Iohn a Water asked the king forgiveness, and toke their deaths patiently.

Perken Wer-  
becke executid.

Also Edward Plantagenet the forenamed earle of Marwike, son to George duke of Clarence, brother to Edward the fourth, being about the age of foure and twentie yeres, on the one and twentieth of Nouember was arraigned at Westminster, before the earle of Orford then high Steward of England, of treason, in minding to haue escaped (as they saide) and he was perswaded

Earle of Mar-  
wike beheaded.

to confesse, which hee did, and submitted himselfe to the R. merce: vpon which confession he had iudgement, and was executed on a scaffold on the tower hill, but buried at Wissham by his ancestors: and shortly after, Walter Blewett and Thomas Astwood were hanged at Tyborne.

1500  
Great pesti-  
lence.

The king and  
Queene sailed  
to Calais.

This yere was a great plague of pestilence, whereof men died very sore in many places, especiallie in and about London, where died in that whole yere (as it was thought) about the number of 30000 people.

King Henry whether it were to auoid the danger of the sicknes then raising, or to take occasion to commune with the duke of Burgoine, he with Anne Elizabeth his wife sailed ouer, and landed at Calais on the 8. of May, with him was the duke of Buckingham, the earles of Surrey and of Essex, the Lord Dawbeney Lieutenant of the Tower and Marches of Calais, and others in great number, where they met with the duke of Burgoin, and returned in the moneth of June.

Edward the kings third son died this yere at Bishops Hatfield in Hertfo: shire, and was buried at Westminster.

Two Archbys-  
shops and thre  
bishops decea-  
sed.

Also on the morrow after the Ascension day deceased Th. Rotherham Archb: bishop of York, at his manor of Calwood, at the age of lxxvi. yeres or more, and was buried in the minster of S. Peter at York in a tombe of marble. This Rotherham, other wise called Scot, a man of great wisedome was brought vp in Rotherham, after ward a fellow of kings colledge in Cambridge, then Chaplaine to king Edward the 4. and keeper of the private seale, first preferred by the king to the see of Rochester, then translated to Lincoln, where he saue 9. yeres, at length made lord chancellor of England, which office he enioied til the kings death: before the which time he was preferred to the see of York, he erected a Colledge at Rotherham in Yorkeshire, dedicated to the name of Iesu, for a prouost to be a Preacher in the Diocesse of York, sixe Priests, sixe Choristes, thre scholemasters, one for song, one for grammar, and one for writing, he gaue a rich spiter to the church of York (for king Edward the 4. had broken the old) he caused manie great buildings to be made in his manors, as the great kitchen at White-hall by Westminster. At Southwell, the pantry and Bakehouse, and new chambers adjoining to the river. At Bishops Thorpe, the pantry, bakehouse, and chambers on the north side toward the woods: he was archb: bishop 19. yeres 9. monethes, &c. The bishop of Norwich Tho. Ian. and John Alcocke, bishop of Ely deceased. This John Alcocke did conuert the monastery of S. Radigond in Cambridge, then destitute of gouernment, the edifices fallen in ruine, and the nuns departing thence, leauing it desolate, into a colledge of Chaplaines and Schollers in anno Christi 1446. reedified all his manors with new buildings from the foundations, he builded a new hal to his palace at Ely, with other faire buildings there. Also in the moneth of October deceased John Morton Archb: bishop of Canturburte at his manor of Inole: this Morton born in Berry besides Blensford in the county of Dorset, doctor of lawes, aduocate of the archbishop, parson of S. Dunstons in the east of London, bishop of Ely, who passed by the Ile of Ely into Flanders, where he continued a student, till the fall of Ric. the 3. after which time he was called home to his bishopricke,

Colledge at  
Rotherham  
founded.

An. reg. 16.  
John Alcocke  
bishop of Ely  
deceased.

Porton arch-  
bishop of Can-  
terbury decea-  
sed.

ricke, and made chancelloz of England, and within 3. yeres after archbishop of Canterbury, in the yere 1486. in the moneth of September: this Morton late chancelloz and archbishop 13. yeres, and was buried under the quier at Canterbury, he repaired and builded a great part of his place at Lambeth, he did the like at Spaldon, at Allington parke, at Charing, at Fford, and also at his Palace at Canterburie.

Thomas Langton bishop of Winchester deceased, & was buried at Winchester: he gave to Denbroke hall in Cambridge, a cup of silver over gilt, which I have seene, with this inscription: *Thomas Langton Winton. episcopus, aula Penbrochia olim socius, dedit hanc tassiam coopertam eidem aula 1497. qui alienavit anathema sit, 67. ounces.* Richard Fox sometime Bishop of Exeter, after of Durham, was translated to Winchester. Henry Deane sometime Bishop of Lanthorne, then Bishop of Salisbury, was now translated to the archbishopricke of Canterbury. Richard Redman succeeded in the bishopricke of Ely, and Ric. Nien in the bishopricke of Norwich: Th. Savage first bishop of Rochester then of London, was now translated to the see of Exeter.

Langton bishop of Winchester.

The lord Denham treasurer of England deceased, and on the 30. of January was buried in the Greyfriars church at London, on the south side of the quire.

Denham deceased.

This yere when the K. had finished much of his new building at his manor of Shene, & again furnished and repaired that before was perished with fire, in the 13. yere of his reigne, so much as in the time of that hideous fire, many notable and rich jewels, and other things of superabundant value, were perished, by the violence thereof, it pleased him to command it should be called his manor of Richmond, and not otherwise. The King also this yere builded anew Bainards castle in London, and repaired his manor of Greenwich.

1501  
Richmond and Bainards castle newly builded.

In the moneth of May the K. kept a roiall turney and iusts in the tower of London, of his lords, knights, and other.

About this time Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke, son to John Duke of Suffolke, and Ladie Elizabeth sister to King Edward the fourth, was indicted of murder, for slaying a meane person in his rage and furie (as it was saide) and he was perswaded to confesse, but was pardoned by the king, yet because he was brought to the bar afore the kings bench, and arraigned (which he took as a great blame to his honor) shortly after he fled into Flanders, unto the lady Margaret his aunt. Scuer theles (saith Hal) he returned again, and excused himselfe to the king, so that he was thought to be guiltles of any crime. But after this earle, with his brother Richard fled againe into Flanders. Which departure of the Earle soe vexed the king, who doubted of some new trouble to ensue thereof.

Iusts in the tower of London.  
Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke with his brother Richard fled into Flanders.

An. reg. 17.

In this meane time the lady Katherin of Spaine was sent by her father K. Ferdinando, with a puissant navy of ships into England, where she arrived in the haven of Plimmouth, the 2. of October.

Lady Katherin arrived in England.

The 9. of November prince Arthur with a goodlie companie came through Fleetstreet of London to S. Pauls, and so to the wardrobe by the Black friers, and there was lodged. And the same date came the Ladie Katherine, prince

unto Lambeth, where the with hir ladies was lodged, in the archbishops Anne of Canterburie: and vpon the Fridaie next following about two of the clock at afternoone, the said ladie p<sup>r</sup>inces accompanied with many lordes and ladies, in most sumptuous manner apparrelled, came riding from Lambeth into Southwarke, and so to London brydge, where was ordeined a colliche pageant of S. Katherine and Saint Vrsula, with many virgins; from thence the rode to Grace Strate, where was ordeined a second pageant, from thence to the conduit in Coynhill, where was another pageant. The great conduit in cheape ran with Calcoine wine, and was furnished with musick. Against Soperlane end was the fourth pageant. At the Standard in cheape was ordeined the fift pageant. At Pauls gate was the 6. pageant: by the which the p<sup>r</sup>inceesse rode throught Pauls church-yard vnto the bishop of Londons palace, where she and hir people were lodged.

The pale in  
Pauls church.

Now within the church of S. Paul, to wit, from the west gate of it vnto the uppermost grasse or step at the going in of the quier, was made a pale of timber and boards to go vpon, from the saide west dore vnto the forenamed grasse, of the height of 6 foot from the ground, or more: and foreaneust the place where the commissaries court is kept within the said church, was ordeined a standing like vnto a mountain, with steps on euery side, which was couered ouer with red wulsted, and in likewise was all the railles: against which mountaine vpon the north side, within the foresaide place of the commissaries court was ordeined a standing for the king, and such other as liked him to haue: & on the south side almost, for against the kings standing was ordeined a scaffold, wherupon stood the spaior and his brethren.

Prince Arthur  
married.

Then vpon the 14. of Nouember being Sundae, vpon the aboue named mountaine, was p<sup>r</sup>ince Arthur about the age of 15. yeres, and the lady Katherine about the age of 18 yeres, both clad in white sattine, married by the Archbishop of Canterbury, assisted by 19. bishops and abbots mitered. And the 13. the queene, the kings mother, stood in the place afozenamed, where they hearde and beheld the solemnization: which being finished, the said archbishop and bishops toke their way from the mountaine, vpon the saide pale couered vnder foot with blew rey-cloth vnto the quier, & so to the high altar, whom followed the sponse and spouses, the lady Cicile sister to the queene bearing hir traine, after hir followed 100. ladies & gentlewomen, in right costly apparel, then the spaior in a gowne of crimson velvet, and his brethren in scarlet, with the sword borne before the maior, & sate in the quier the masse while, the archbish. of Poike sate in the deanes place, and offred as chiefe, and after him the D. of Buckingham, &c. Wonderful it was to behold the riches of apparell woine that daie, with the possant chaines of gold: of which, two were specially noted, to wit, sir T. Brandon knight, master of the kings horse, which that day ware a chain valued at 1400. pound: and the other William de Riuers esquire, master of the hawks, whose chain was valued at a thousand pound: many mo were of 200. 300. and so forth, these were not noted for the length, but for the greatnesse of the linkes. Also the duke of Buckingham ware a gotone wrought of p<sup>r</sup>eele woike, and set vpon cloth of tissue, furred with sables, the which Gotone was valued

P<sup>r</sup>eele chaines  
of gold.

The Duke of  
Buckingham  
his gotone.



valued at 1500. l. Sir Nicholas Vause knight, wore a gown of purple beluet, pight with pées of gold so thicke and masse, that it was valued in golde, besides the silke and fur, a thousand pounce: which chaines and garments were valued by goldsmithes of best skill, and them that wrought them. The masse being finished, the princeesse was led by Henry duke of Yorke, and a Legate of Spain, by the foresaid pace into the palace, going before her men of honor, to the number of 160. with gentlemen and other. There came vnto the Maior Sir Richard Crofts steward of the Princes house, which brought him and his brethren the aldermen into the greates hall, and at a table vpon the west side of the hall, caused them to bee set to dinner, where honorable were they serued with 12. dishes to a messe at the first course, 15. the second course, and 18. dishes the third course. In this hall was a cupbord of fine staves height, being triangular, the which was set with plate valued 1200. l. the which was neuer mooued at that day: & in the vtter chamber where the princeesse dined, was a cupbord of gold plate, garnished with stone and pearle, valued about 20000. pound. The Tuesday following, the king and queene being all this season at Barnards castle, came vnto Powles, and heard there masse, and then accompanied with manie nobles, went into the palace, and there dined with the princeesse. This date Sir Nicholas Vause wore a collar of Esses which weied, as the goldsmithes that made it reported, 800. pounce of nobles: And the same date at afternoon, the saide prince was conuited with many Lords and Ladies vnto Powles church, where the said estates took their barges, and were rowed to Westminster, vpon whome the maior attended, with the Aldermen and fellowship in barges, garnished with banners and other deuises, musick, &c. Thus much for that marriage.

Cupbord of plate.

A masse chain of gold worn by a knight.

The 25. of January at Pauls crosse was declared the assurance of James King of Scots, and of the lady Margaret eldest daughter to King Henry of England, in reioicing whereof *Te Deum* was sung, and benefices made through the city, and at 12. of the benefices were set 12. hogsheds of Gasconne wine, to be drunk of all men felie.

1502

James king of Scots assured to lady Margaret daughter to King Henry the 7.

There was apprehended Willard Courtney son to the earle of Denonshire, which had married the lady Katherine daughter to Sir Ed. the 4. and William de la Pole brother to the earle of Suffolke, Sir James Tyrell, Sir John Windham, &c. when the earle of Suffolke before died (as ye haue heard) understood that wait was laid for him in Flanders, he worried about Germany and Fraunce, to purchase succor, if by any meanes he might, but in the end, he submitted himselfe vnder the protection of Philip archduke of Austria, which was to his own destruction, as proued after.

When King Henry had settled things to his contentment and pleasure, there sodainelie happened to him a lamentable chance, for in the beginning of the moneth of Aprill, there died that noble and vertuous prince Arthur the Kings eldest sonne, vnder the age of 16. yeres, in his castle of Ludlowe, and with greates funerall obsequie was buried in the Cathedral Church of Worcester.

Prince Arthur deceased.

On the 2. of May were arraigned in Gaillhall at London, Sir James Tyrell knight, lieutenant of Caimes castle, Sir John Windham knight, Welborne

Sir James Tyrell and others arraigned.

seruant

servant to the said sir James, and a ship man, foure persons were indicted of treason for aiding sir Edmond de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, they were condemned to be hanged, hanged and quartered.

On the 6. of Maie, sir James Tyrell, and sir Iohn Windham were beheaded on the Tower hill, their bodies and heads were buried in the Augustine friers church of London, and the shipman was hanged at Tiborne.

Rob. Fabian.

*Ann. reg. 18.*  
Then brought  
out of the new  
found Islands.

This yere were brought unto the king thre men taken in the new found Islands by Sebastian Gabato, before named, in anno 1498. these men were clothed in beastes skins, and eate raw flesh, but spake such a language as no man could underst and them, of the which thre men, two of them were scene in the kings court at Westminster two yeres after, clothed like English men, and could not be discerned from English men.

1503  
King Henry the  
sevenths chappell  
at West-  
minster.

This yere the chappell of our Ladie, aboute the east end of the high altar of Westminster church, with also a tauern nere adioynning called the white rose, were taken downe: in the which place or plot of ground, on the 24. of January, the first stone of our Lady chappell was laid by the hands of Ioh. Islip abbot of the same monastery, sir Reginald Bray knight of the Carter, Doctor Barons master of the Scholes, doctor Wall chaplaine to the king, master Hugh Oldham chaplaine to the countesse of Derby and Richmond the kings mother, sir Ed. Stanhope knight, and diuers other. Upon the which stone was ingraven the day and yere, &c. The charges in building this chappell (as I haue bene informed) amounted to the summe of 14000. pounds. The same king Henry made a ship, named the great Barrie, which shippe with the furniture cost him as much.

Queene Eliza-  
beth deceased.

King Henry and Queene Elizabeth lying within the tower of London, the queene was brought a bed of a faire daughter on Candlemas day, which was there christened by the name of Katherine: and on the 11. day of that moneth the said queene deceased, and was buried at Westminster, whose daughter lived not long after.

The 18. of February Henry duke of Yorke the kings only son was created prince of Wales, earle of Chester, and of Flint at Westminster.

The 16. of February Henry Deane archbishop of Canterbury died at Lambeth, when he had late archbishop nigh two yeres, and was buried in Christs church at Canterburie: Wil. Warham Bishop of London was translated to Canterbury.

On the 25. of June at the bishop of Salisburies place in Fleetstreet, was the noble prince Henry, the 2. son of king Henry the 7. assured in matrimonie to the lady Katherine, late the wife of that excellent prince Arthur.

The 5. of August deceased sir Reginald Bray knight, treasurer of the kings wars, and was buried at Windsoze in the new chappell there, whereof he had been a great builder.

Margaret the  
kings daughter  
married.

The 8. of August James the fourth king of Scots married Margaret, the eldest daughter of king Henry the seventh at Edenborough.

A drye summer, having no notable raine from Whitsontide, to the latter lady day in harnest.

On the 4. of December deceased the lord Strange, eldest son to the earle of Derby at his place in London, beneath Paules chaine, now called Cartar place, and was buried within the parish church of S. James at Carlisle-hithe. *Ann. reg. 19.*

The 25. of January began a parliament at Westminster, of the which was chosen speaker for the commons master Edmond Dudley. *Parliament.*

A new coine was by parliament appointed, that is to say, groat and halfe groat, which bare but halfe faces: the same time also was coined a groat, which was in value 12. d. but of those were but few coined. *1504 New coins.*

This yere allome, which many yeres before had bene sold for 6 s. an hundred, and lower, arose to 5. nobles an hundred, and after to 4. markes, &c. *Allume deere. Ann. reg. 20.*

About Christmasse, the more part of the prisoners of the Bartholmey in Southwarke brake out, and manie of them being shortly after taken, were put to execution, specially those which had laine for felony or treason: among the which, two of them being sea rowers were hanged on a tree in the Chamis, a little from Wapping in the Walse, and hung there long after. *1505 Prisoners of the Bartholmey brake out.*

This yere on S. Georges euen or 21. of Aprill, king Henry with an honorable compante of knights of the order of the Garter, all in their habits, rode through the city from the Towler of London unto Paules church, and there heard euen song, his chappell being there, and having rule of the quere, and after euen song the king and those knights rode unto Bainsards castle, & there lodged that night: and upon the morrowe in the same habits came againe to the said church of S. Paul, and went on procession, and after the diuine seruice and offering being done, returned. *S. Georges day the king rode to Paules.*

The 25. of Aprill a coiner for making of false money was dratone from the Towler unto Tiborne, and there hanged.

About Midsummer Pope Julius the 2. sent to the K. a cap of maintenance, and a sword, as to a defender of the church, the which cap and sword were received with many and great ceremonies, which I ouerpass. *A cap of maintenance. Ann. reg. 21.*

The 5. of January in the night, the kings chamber was fired at Richmond, the which might not be quenched, till many curtaines, carpets, rich beds, and much other staffe was consumed. *1506 Richmond on fire.*

Through great tempest of winde bring at the south west, which began the 15. of January, & continued till the 26. of the same, Philip king of Castile and his wife were weather driven, and landed at Falmouth in England, as they were passing on the 16. of Januarie out of Flanders toward Spaine, who were honorably received by the earle of Arundel at the kings appointment with 300. horses, all by torch light. This tempest was strange to many men, because the violence thereof had blowne downe the eagle of brasse from the spire of Paules church in London, and in the falling, the same eagle brake and battered the blacke eagle which hung for a signe in Paules churchyard, that time being but low houses, where now is the schole of Paules. *The king of Castile landed in England. Francis Guicciar. Weathercocke of Paules blowne downe.*

Edmond dela Pole earle of Suffolke being sent (according to promise made to king Henry) out of the county of Philip king of Castile, through Flanders was brought to Calets on the 16. of March, and so ouer into England & landed at Dover on the 24. of March, conueied by sir Henry Wyat knight, and sir *Earle of Suffolke sent to the Towes.*

John

John Wilshire knight, controller of the towne and marches of Caleis, and 60. souldiers of Caleis all in harnesse, where he was receiued by sir Thomas Lowell and other, and conuected to the Tower of London.

Gallerie at Richmond.

In the beginning of the moneth of July, a gallerie newe builded at Richmond, wherein the king and the Prince his sonne had walked not one houre before, it fell sodainlie downe about midnight, but no chistian man perished thereby.

Ann. reg. 22.

The 21. of August the weather-cocke of Paules being of copper, ouer gilt, in weight 40. pounds, in length 4. fote, in breadth 3. fote and a halfe, was set vpon the spire of Paules steeple.

King Henry sickened.

This yere the king began to be diseased of a certaine infirmittie, which threue euery yere, but especially in the spring time, sore bered him.

Also the sweating sickness, which (as ye haue heard) in the first yere of this kings raigne first afflicted the people of the realme, now assailed them again, hotobit, by the remedy found at the beginning of it, nothing the like number died thereof, now this second time, as did the first.

1507

This yere in the Lent season, the king deliuered manie prisoners out of sundry prisons, in somuch, that as many as lay in Ludgate, and both Counters for 40. shillings and vnder, he redeemed and deliuered: and ouer that he redeemed many that lay for ten pound, and other larger sums as was said.

The kings promoters.

But true it is, that this yere or rather somewhat soner, sprang much sorrow through the land, for by meane of gracelesse persons, which named the mselues the kings Promoters, many forgotten statutes, made hundreds of yeres passed, were nowe quickened, and sharpe called vpon, to the great vniquietnesse of many the kings subiects, aswell the rich as the other that had competent substance. And albeit that other yeres before passed, since the time of sir William Caples trouble, which was in the 10. yere of this kings raigne, many times were called to sundry reckonings, and were faine to seeke their ends to their charge: yet now, since Empson and Dudley were set in authority, many mo in number were called before the m, for many surmised causes, of the which none escaped without paying of fines. And if it were such a matter, as some would abide the trial of the law, then had they false Juroys so fixed vnto them, that they were well assured that they would not passe against their wils, for all was done in the kings name, and yet the most profit came to other mens coffers.

Falſe Juroys.

Ann. reg. 23.

Thomas Sauage archbishop of Yorke deceased at his castle of Calwod, his body was buried at yorke, his hart at Hacklefield in Cheshire where he was borne, in a chappel by him founded, which he minded to haue made a colledge: he was not elected after the ancient custome, but by nomination of the k. and saue: of the Pope Alexander. This Th. was daily employed about temporall matters at the kings pleasure, he vsed hunting, and bestowed much cost in repairing and new building at his castle of Calwod, and his manors of Scroby, he maintained manie tall yeomen in his house, and was neuer installed, but after a secret maner at Yorke, and by his deputy at Beuerlake, he was the first that brake the custome of solemn feasting at their installing at Yorke,

he



he was 7. years archbishop: and to him succ<sup>ed</sup> Christopher Bambridge doctor of both lawes, born near to Apleby in Westmerland, first master of the schools, then deane of Wozke, and after bishop of Durham.

The 5. of Apill, a great part of the city of Norwich was brent. And again in the moneth of June on the euen and day of the ascension of our Lorde, another part of the same city of Norwich was fired, and soze perished and nere consumed with fire, that began in a French mans house named Peter Johnson a chirurgeon, in the parish of Saint George.

1508

Norwich, defaced by fire.

This yere amongst manie other was sir W. Caple againe newly troubled, for things don in time of his being mai<sup>or</sup> of London, wher of the report was, for that false money came to his sight, and hee did not due correction vpon the partie that to him was accused to be the coiner of it: but were this the cause or other, truth it is, that in great trouble he was for it, and finally, for he woulde fall to no agrement, he was by Derby, Simson, and other of their companie, which as then the whole Iurie of them, were fallie bounde to the girdles of Empson and Dudley, that as they woulde, the verdit alwaies passed, and so was he by them indicted, and after by Dudley at the kings commandement put in prison, and so continued long time, and at length, for so much as he woulde not agree to paie to the king 2000. l. was by the forenamed Dudley commanded to the towler, where hee laie till it was nere Whitsonside after, before which time king Henry was deceased, and then was he deliuered free. Also Thomas Knesworth late Mai<sup>or</sup> of London, with both his Sheriffs, after great veration and imprisonment, being accused that they had misused the charge of their offices, were deliuered for great sums of money, as it was said, 1400. l. Christopher Hawis mercer and alberman of London, had bin so long veret by the said promoters, that it shortned his life by thought taking. Sir Laurence Ailmer late Mai<sup>or</sup> of London, and his two Sheriffes were put to their fine of 1000. ponde to the king: but Sir Laurence after great trouble susteined at the handes of Empson, was committed to prison, and continued prisoner till the said Empson was himselfe sent to the Towler. This yere was finished the goodlie Hospitall of the Sauoy nere unto Charing crosse, which was a notable foundation for the poore, don by king Henry the 7. unto the which he purchased and gaue Landes for the relieving of 100. poore people. This house was first named Sauoy place, by Peter earle of Sauoy the first builder thereof, brother to Boniface archb. of Canterbury about the 29. yere of king Henry the 3. who made the said Peter earle of Richmond. This house belonged since to the Dukes of Lancaster, and at this time being in the kings handes, was conuerted to an hospitall, retaining the first name of Sauoy. It Henry builded 3. houses of Franciscan friars, which were called Obseruantes, at Richmond, Græntwich, and Newmarke, and 3. other of the same family of Franciscan friars, called Couentualles, at Canterburie, Newcastle, and Southampton.

False Iurois for money.

An. reg. 24.

Hospital of the Sauoy,  
1509Henry the 7.  
deceased.

This noble Prince king Henry, was long sicke ere hee died, in which season he was by well disposed persons, in Sermons and other wayes informed of the exclamations made vpon Promoters, therefore of his blessed dispositions,

his issue.

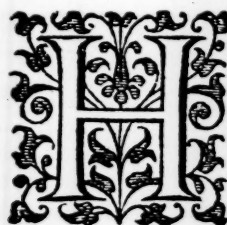
Sepulture of  
king Henry  
the seventh.executors to  
the seventh.

ons, he granted to all men generall pardon, certaine excepted, the which pardons were quickly purchased, so that many were had ere he died: he deceased at Richmond on the 22. of Aprill, when he had reigned 23. yeres, 8. moneths: and on the 9. of Maie he was brought to Paules with many nobles, knights & gentlemen, and 1000. torches, and from thence on the next morrow conueyed to Westminster, and there buried in the new chappell, which he had caused to be builded with the charges of 14000. l. on the 11. of Maie: he left issue, Henry prince of Wales, which succeeded in the kingdome, lady Margaret the quene of Scots, and lady Mary promised to Charles king of Castile.

The altar and sepulture of the same L. Henry the 7. where in his bodie now resteth, in his newe chappell at Westminster, was made and finished in the yere of Christ 1519. by one Peter T. a painter of the citie of Florence, for the which he receiued 1000. pound sterling, for the whole stufte and workmanship, at the hands of the kings executors, Richard bishop of Winchester, Richard fitz James bish. of London, Tho. bishop of Durham, Iohn bishop of Rochester, Thomas D. of Norfolk treasurer of England, Edward Earle of Worcester, the kings chamberlaine, Iohn F. knight chiefe iustice of the kings bench, Robert R. knight chiefe Justice of the common place, &c.

## King Henry the eight.

Ann. reg. 1.



Henrie the eight, borne at Granetolsch, second sonne to king Henry the seventh, about the age of eightene yeres beganne his raigne by the decease of his father, on the two and twentieth of Aprill: but was proclaimed on the foure and twentieth, in anno Christi 1509. and the same daie in the after none hee was conueyed to the Tower of London, where hee lodged for a season. Of personage he was tall and mightie, in wit and memorie excellent, of such male-

names of the  
kings coun-  
sellors.

file and humanity as was comely in such a prince. By the aduise of his grandmother Margaret countesse of Richmond and Derby, diuers graue personages were elected to bee of his priuate counsell, whose names were William Warham Archibishop of Canterburie and Chancelor of England, Richard Foxe bishop of Winchester, Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey and treasurer of England, George Talborearle of Shrewsbury & lord steward of the kings household, Charles Sommerfet Lord Chamberlaine, Sir Thomas Louel, Sir Henry Wyat, docto<sup>r</sup> T. Ruthall, sir Edward Poinings. These graue counsellors, fearing least such abundance of riches & wealth as the king was now possessed of, might moue his yong yeres vnto riotous forgetting of himselfe, gate him to be present with them whe they sate in counsel, so to acquaint him with matters pertaining to the politike government of the realme, with the which at the first he could not well endure to be much troubled, being rather inclined

to follow such pleasant pastimes as his youthfull yeres did more delight in.

On the same 24. day of Aprill, the lord Henry Stafford brother to the Duke of Buckingham, was arrested and committed to the Tower: and doctor Russell was nominated bishop of Durham.

Henry lord  
Stafford arre-  
sted.

The five and twentieth of Aprill was proclaimed the kings consent to the generall pardon granted by his father, and that himselfe was contented to forgive all such persons as had bin vbered for any cause, so that it touched not felony or treason: and ouer that, in the same proclamation was comprised, that all vagabonds and sturdy beggers should auoid the city of London, and resorte vnto such countries as they were bozne in, vpon paine appointed. Also proclamation was made, that if any man could proue himselfe to be depriued of his goods wrongfully by the late commissioners of the forfeitures, hee should present his plaint to the king, who was ready to satisfie every one of all injuries sustained. After which publication many such as had bene constrained, either by right or wrong to pay any thing for forfeitures of lawes or customes by them transgressed, flocked to the court, and there declared their griefes: the counsell heard every mans complaint, and such as were found to haue payde any thing without plaine proue of iust cause, such order was taken that they had their money again: but the complainants came in so thicke, that the commissioners and other that had dealt in the forfeitures perceiuing that it was hard, and almost impossible to satisfie them all, refused to heare any further complaints or suites for restitution, but thought it best to commit those to prison, by whom the complainants pretended themselves to haue been wronged, and the reuon was sir Richard Empson knight, and Edmund Dudley esquire, by a polittike meane brought into the tower, where they were accused of treason, and so remained there prisoners, there by to quiet mens minds, that made such suite to haue their money againe restored. And shortly after were manie of their promoters (for so they termed the miselues) called to a reckoning, and cast into sundry prisons, as Page, Michell, Canby, Henry Toft, Smith, and sundrie others, but Baptist Grimald the most cruell wretch of them all, went to Westminster, and there registred himselfe a sanctuary man.

Pardon for  
trespasses pro-  
claimed.

Empson and  
Dudley sent to  
the Tower.  
Promoters  
apprehended.

The thirde day of June, king Henry in his closet at Greenwich married the lady Katherine his first wife, who had ben late the wife of prince Arthur deceased, and was dispensed with by Pope Iuly.

King Henry  
married.

The 6. of June Io. Derby, Io. Smith, I. Simson, ringleaders of false inquestis in London, rode about the citie, with their faces to the horse tails, and papers on their heads, and were set on the pillorie in Cornhill, and after brought againe to Newgate, where they died for very shame.

Common quest-  
mongers for  
money set on  
the pillory.

On the 21. of June king Henry came from Greenwich by land, and so rode to the tower of London, with whom came many well apparelled noble men, but especially the duke of Buckingham, who rode in a gowne of Goldsmiths worke, a thing of great riches: the king rested there from thursday till saturday, in which season he made 24. knights of the Bath. And vpon Saturday the 24. of June, k. Henry with quene Katherine, and their nobilitie rode from the Tower through the citie in most honourable wise, before whom rode the

King Henry  
crowned.

said

said knights of the Bathe, the Duke of Buckingham rode next before the king, except the Haloz, and certaine Sergeants and Heraultes: the which D. rode in a long gown wrought of needle worke right cosly and rich, and bare a little staff of silver in his hand, in token that he was high steward of that feast of coronation, and the said D. had about his neck a broad and flat close chaine of a new devise, not before used, set with pretious rubies, and other stones of great value. On the morrow being sunday, and Midsummer day, the king and queene were crowned at Westminister in most solemn maner, by the archbishop of Canterbury and other assisting.

Margaret  
countesse of  
Derby deceased

The 29. of June, the most vertuous Princeesse of her time knowne to the world, Margaret Countesse of Richmond and Derby, mother to king Henry the seventh, died at Westminister, and was there buried, whose notable acts and charitable deedes all her life time exercised, cannot in a small volume be expressed.

About the same time deceased John Vere earle of Oxford, and was buried in the priory of Colne in Essex.

Fifty speares  
appointed to  
wait on the k.

The king ordained fiftie Gentlemen to be speares, euerie of them to haue an Archer, a Demilance, and a Cistrall, and euerie speare to haue thre great Horses to be attendant on his person, of the which Bando the earle of Essex was Lieutenant, and Sir Iohn Pechie Captaine, which ordinance continued not long, the charges was so great: for there were none of them, but they and their Horses were apparelled and trapped in cloth of golde, silver, and Goldsmithes worke.

Dudley arraigned  
and condemned.

The seventeenth of July Edmond Dudley was arraigned in the Guildhall of London, where he was condemned, and had iudgement to be drawn, hanged and quartered, and committed to the Tower againe, where he lay long after, inasmuch, that the same went the Queene had purchased his pardon, but that was not so, as after shall appeare. And like as in this while to the comfort of the kings subiects many things were ordered, as general pardons for all fordone offences, treason, felony, and debt by specialties, and a few other excepted: so in like manner, to the disturbance of all the forenamed Promoters, was manie and diuers meanes sought and found to bere and trouble them right wilsellie, that before had bereed manie a true man wrongfullie: by meanes whereof, they were daily taken in diuers counties of England, and brought to the Tower and other prisons, where they remained long. In the which time manie opprobrious rimmes in despite of them were made, whereof I haue scene some, especiallie one against Sir Richard Empson, made by Cornish of the kinges chappell, at the request of the earle of Kent, forsomuch, as the saide Empson had deceiued him of a part of his Lande, and in finisier waies had so informed the king of him, that he was long holden under, and put to great hinderance. But (saith mine Authour) what cause soeuer moued the saide Earle and other at that time, let no man thinke, that for any cause hee hath remembred it, saue onelie, that wise men make, by the sobaine rising and falling of these men, be well ware howe they goude them, when they be put in greate authoritie, and especiallie such as this man was, the which

False accusers  
and disturbers  
of good men  
committed to  
prison.  
Earle of Kent  
enuing to Emp-  
son.  
Rob. Fabian.



which suddenly rose from pouertie (as being the sonne of a sheue-maker, in  
 Worcester) into inestimable authoritie and riches. And such other as were of  
 his affinitie, especially Dudley, that at the time of his fall had in possession of  
 lands and fees, with offices, to the yereley value of 800. pound, and in readie  
 coine 20000. pound, ouer many moe riches, as iewels, plate, and rich stuffe of  
 household, the which was shortly gathered, for not thirteene yeres before hee  
 was by laboz of friends brought into the office of vndersherifswike of Lon-  
 don, where he continued with fauour of the citizens, by the space of sixe yeres  
 or moze, after which season he sold his office, and byew him to the kings court,  
 where shortly after he grew in such fauour, that he was chosen speaker of the  
 parliament, in the ninetenth yere of king Henry the tenth, and some after  
 the kings president, by reason of which office, he had such authoritie, that the  
 chiefe lordes of England were glad to be in his fauour, and were faine to sue  
 to him for many vrgent causes, wherupon the lordes and all men, as they durst,  
 had him in disoaine, which was his ouerthrow in the end. Thus much for ex-  
 ample may suffice.

On the 29. of Iuly was arraigned in the guildhall of London one Smith  
 for a promoter, and with him were inquired of by inquests, H. Toft, Page,  
 Canby, &c. but for that they laide for themselves, they were seruingmen, and  
 did but as they were commaded, they were all reppriued to such prisons as they  
 came from, where they remained long after.

In the moneth of October sir Richard Empson was conueted into North-  
 hamptonshire, and there arraigned, and lastly deemed to be dyatone, hanged,  
 and quartered, and then was brought againe to the Tower.

Empson ar-  
 raigned.

This yere li. Henry kept his Christmas at Richmond with great rosaltie.

The 21. of January began a parliament, whereof sir Thomas Ingleby was  
 chosen speaker: in the which parliament, Sir Richard Empson, and Edmond  
 Dudley were attainted of high treason.

1510  
 Parliament.  
 Empson and  
 Dudley attain-  
 ted.

King Henry kept his Shyueride at Westminster, with great banquet-  
 tings, dauncings, and other pastimes.

This yere came ambassadoys not onely from the king of Arragon and Ca-  
 stile, but also from the kings of France, Denmarke, Scotland, and other prin-  
 ces, which were highly welcomed, and royally entertained. And on the 20. of  
 April a peace was proclaimed betwixt England and France, during the lines  
 of king Henry the 8. of England, and Lewis the French king.

An. reg. 2.  
 Peace procla-  
 med.

On Midsummer eue at night, king Henry came priuily into Westcheape  
 of London, being clothed in one of the coates of his guard: and on S. Peters  
 night the king and quene came rosally riding to the signe of the kings head  
 in Cheape, there beheld the watch of the citie, which watch was set out with  
 diuers godly shewes, as had bene accustomed.

King Henry  
 and Queene  
 Katherine be-  
 held the watch  
 at London.

King Henry riding on his progresse for his disport, there was brought be-  
 fore him and his counsell many grieuous bills of complaints against Empson  
 and Dudley, wherefore he sent commandement to the constable of the tower,  
 charging him that they should shortly after be put to execution. Whereupon  
 the sheriffes of London were sent for, and commanded by a speciall writ to see

the

the

Empton and  
Dudley etc.  
suted.

Tree of com-  
mon wealth.

the said execution performed and done. And they upon that went to the tower and receiued them on the 17. of August, and from thence brought them vnto the scaffold on the tower hill, where their heads were stricken off: which being done, the bodie of Empton was buried in the white friers church, and the body of Dudley in the blacke friers church. This Edmond Dudley in the time of his imprisonment in the tower compiled one notable booke, which he intitled, the Tree of common wealth, dedicated vnto King Henry the eight, but neuer came to his hand. A copie whereof faste written (reseruing the originall to my selfe) I gaue vnto the honourable Lord Robert earle of Leicester, about the yere 1562. At whose request and earnest perswasion I then first collected my lummary of the Chronicles of England, and dedicated the same, with the continuation and encrease thereof, from time to time, to my great charges, to his honoz, in reward whereof I alwaies receiued his hartly thanks, with commendations, and not other wise, what seuer hath bene reported by mine aduersary T. S.

1511

On Petowères day at Richmond the Quene was deliuered of a Prince, to the great reioycing of the whole realme, he was named Henry: but deceased on the 23. of february next following at Richmond, and was buried at Westminster.

Archers sent  
against the  
Moyses.

In the month of febr. came ambassadors from the K. of Aragon & Castile, to require an aid of 1500. archers to be sent to the same king, hauing at that time war with the Moyses, enemies to the christian faith: the king granted their request, and because the lord Thomas Darcy a knight of the gartar made humble suite to the king to be generall of that crue, the king granted his desire: there were appointed to go with him, the lord Anthony Grey, brother to the marques Dorset, Hen. Guilford, Weste, Browne, and William Sidley Esquires of the kings house, sir Rob. Constable, sir Roger Hastings, and sir Ralph Elderton, with diuers other gentlemen to be captaines.

Ann. reg. 3.

They departed out of Wlmmouth hauen with 4. ships royall, and on the first of June arriued at Cales in south Spaine, where they were honourably receiued by a bishop. and other of the kings counsell: but an abstinence of war being taken, the L. Darcy and the rest were required to returne home againe, money was sent to pay the soldiers their wages, for their conduction againe into England, with diuers gifts giuen to the Lord Darcy and the other gentlemen, and after returned into England.

Archers sent to  
aide the ladie  
Margaret dut-  
ches of Sauoy.

During the time that the L. Darcy was in Spaine, the lady Margaret dutches of Sauoy, & daughter to Maximilian the emperoz, and gouernoz of Flanders, Brabant, Holland, Zeland, and other the low countries, appertaining to Charles the yong prince of Castile, sent in the end of May to the K. of England, requiring to haue 1500. archers to aide her against the D. of Gelders, which soze troubled the countries aforesaid: the king granting her request, appointed sir Edw. Poinings knight of the gartar, and controulour of his house, a valiant captaine, to be lieutenant and leader of the said 1500. archers, which accompanied with his sonne in lawe the Lord Clinton, sir Mathew Browne, sir John Digby, John Werton, Richard Wetherall, and Shirley Esquires, with other

other gentlemen and yeomen to the foresaide number: they toke their ships besides Sandwich the eighteenth of July, and landed at Armetw on the nineteenth, from whence they were conducted to Barrolo, &c. whither the lady Regent came to welcome them, on the tenen and twentieth of July they departed to Kollyndale, and on the last of July they came to Bulduke, and the next daie the whole army of Almaine, Flemings and other appertaining to the said lady, met with our Englishmen without Bulduke, where they set forth in order, the lady Regent being there present, which toke her leaue of all the Captaines, and departed to Bulduke. The army to the number of 10000. beside the 1500. Englishmen, passed forthward, and the 10. of August came before a little Castle, standing on the higher side of the maze, called Bismnoiss, belonging to the ballard of Gelderland.

The same night Thomas Hart, chiefe governour of the English ordinance, made his approach, and in the morning made battery, so that the assault thereupon being giuen, the fortresse was won, and the captaine with 80. and odd men were slaine, and xix. taken, of the which xi. were hanged.

John Morton captain of an hundred English men, and one Guyet an esquire of Burgoigne, crying, S. George, were the first that entred, at which assault there was but one English man slaine.

On the 14. of August, the armie feried over the river of Maze into Gelderland, the next daie they came to a little Towne called Ayske, the people were fled, but there was a little castle, raised and cast downe: upon the next daie they bent the saide Towne of Ayske, and all the countrey about it, and came at the last to a towne called Stranule being verie strong, double diked, and walled, within it were 360. good men of war besides the inhabitants. At the first they shewed good countenance of defence, but when they saw their enemies approach nere vnto them with rampiers and trenches, they yielded by composition, so that the souldiers might depart, but y<sup>e</sup> townesmen rested prisoners, at the will of the Prince of Castile. And so on S. Bartholmews day, the admirall of Flanders, and sir Edward Poynings entred the towne with great triumph.

The 26. of August the army came before Menlow and sent an Herault called Archoys to summon the towne: but they within would not heare, and yet they shot guns at him. Sir Edward Poynings, at this siege had ordinance pertaining to him. Henry as followeth, Serpentine the xii. signes: Armes of England, the Antelope, the Greyhound, the Dragon, the Griffon, the Snake, the Hermasbe, the Tisse, the Poze, the Cocatrice, the Slange, the Unicorne, the Panter, the Hart, the Hinde, the Aleuaut, the Falcon, the Marlion, Of Coctenes, the Bozke, the Somerset, the Richmond, the March, the Normandy, the Rose, the Cales, in all 36. pieces. The army remoued vnto the north side of Menlow, and part went over the water, & made trenches to the water, and so besieged the towne, but for all they could do without, they within kept one gate open. At length the English captaines perceiving that they lay there in vaine, considering the strength of the towne, and also how the army was not of number sufficient to i. uiron the same on each side, wrote to the king, who

W<sup>h</sup> y 2.

willed

willed them with all speede to returne, and so they did. Sir Edward Poynings went to the Court of Burgoyne, where he was receiued right honourably of the young Prince of Castile and of his Aunt the lady Margaret. Iohn Norton, Iohn Fogge, Iohn Scot, and Thomas Lynde were made knights by the Prince. And the lady Margaret, seeing the souldiers coates to be worne, and foule with lying on the ground, gaue to euery yeoman a coate of wollen cloth coloured white and greene, red and yealow, the white and greene for the king of Englands liuerie, the redde and yealow for the Duke of Burgoynes liuerie, and these foure colours were medled together, this shee did to her great commendation: after that sir Edward Poynings had bin highly feasted, he returned with his crew into England, and had not lost fully one hundred persons.

Andrew Barton a Scottish pyrate, ouercome.

King Henry being at Leicester, heard tydings, that one Andrew Barton a Scottish man, and pyrate of the sea, seeing that the king of Scots had warre with the Portugales, robbed euery nation, and stopped the kings streams that no merchant almost could passe, and when he toke Englishmens goods, he bare them in hand that they were Portugales goods, and thus he robbed at euery hauens mouth. The king displeased herewith, sent sir Edw. Howard lord admirall of England, the lord Thomas Howard son and heire to the earle of Surrey, and Iohn Hopton to the sea, which made ready two ships, and taking sea, by chance of weather were seuered. The lord Howard lying in the Downs, perceluing wher Andrew was making to ward Scotland, and so fast the said lord chased him, that he ouertoke him, so there was a sore battell betwixt them, Andrew neuer blew his whistle to incourage his men: but at length the lord Howard and the Englishmen did so valiantly, that by cleane strength they entred the maine decke. The Scots fought sore on the hatches: but in conclusion Andrew was taken, and so sore wounded, that he died there, the remnant of the Scots were taken with their ship called the Lion. All this while was the lord admirall in chase of the barke of Scotland called Jenny Perwin, which was wont to saile with the Lion in company, and he with other did so much, that he laid them aboard, and though the Scots manfully defended themselves, yet at length the English men entred the barke, slew many, and toke all the residue. Thus were these two ships taken and brought to Blackwall, the second of August. The Scots taken prisoners were sent to London, where they were kept as prisoners, in the Archbishop of Pokes place, now called White hall, and after sent into Scotland.

About this season the French king made sharpe warre against Pope Iuly: wherefore the king of England wrote to the French king, that he should leaue off to bere the pope in such wise being his friend and confederate: but when the French king seemed little to regard that request, the king sent him worde, to deliuer to him his inheritance, both of the dutchy of Normandie and Guien, and the counties of Aniois & Paen, and also of his crowne of France, or else he would come with such a power, that by fine force he would obtaine his purpose: but notwithstanding the French king pursued his wars in Italy: whereupon the king of England toynd in league with Maximilian the Emperour, and



and Ferdinando king of Spaine, and with diuers other princes, resolved by the aduice of his counsell, to make war on the French king and his countries, and made preparation both by sea and land, setting forth shippes to the sea for safeguard of his merchants.

1512  
Parliament.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Greenwich, with great and plentifull cheere. The 4. of Februarie began the Parliament at Westminster, upon the which daie, the king and his lordes spirituall and temporall, with manie of the common house being present in the Parliament chamber, the archbishop of Canterbury then Chancelloz of England, made a famous and clearkly proposition, grounded on this Text, *Iustitia & pax osculate sunt*, whereupon hee stood well a large houre and an halfe, declaring howe iustice shoulde bee ministered, and peace shoulde be nourished, and by what meanes iustice was put by, & peace turned into war. The which hee approued by examples of the olde and new testament in right sufficient wise, to his great commendation, & singular comfort of the hearers. On the next morrow began the conuocation in Pauls church: and on the next daie sir Robert Sheffield knight, and sometime recorder of London, was chosen speaker of the Parliament, and on the next morrowe being the 8. of Februarie, before the king and lordes hee made his proposition, excusing himselfe, and beseeching the king (as the maner is) to be dismissed of that office, for the which proposition he was well allowed and admitted. On the same day the k. dubbed sir Henry Guilford and sir Charles Brandon knights. In this parliament was granted two sixteenes of the temporallty, and of the clergy two dismes or tenths. During which parliament, a yeoman of the crowne named Newbolt, due within the palace of Westminster a seruant of Pascer Willoughby, for the which fact, the king commanded to be set by a paire of gallowes in the same place where the said seruant lost his life: and upon the same, the said Newbolt was hanged, and remained on the gallowes by the space of two daies.

The king of Arragon hauing warre with the French king, wrote to king Henry of England to send ouer an army into Biscay, and so to invade France on that side, for the recovery first of his dutchy of Guien, and hee woulde ayde them with ordnance, hoysmen, beasts and carriages, with other necessaries appertaining to the same.

Ann. reg. 4.  
R. H. sent an army into Biscay against the French.

The k. of England and his Councell putting their affiance in this promise of king Ferdinando prepared a noble army al of footmen, and smial artillery, appointed L. Th. Grey marques Dorset to be chiefe conductor of the same. Whereouer king Henry daily studying to set forward the war which hee had begun against the French k. caused sir Edmond Howard admittall, with all diligence to make ready diuers goodly shippes, as the Soueraigne and others, to the number of 18. besides smaller vessels, and therewith hauing in his company Syz Weston Brown, Griffith Duo, Edward Cobham, T. Windham, T. Lucy, William Perton, Henry Shirborne, Stephen Bull, George Witwage, John Hopton, William Gunstone, Thomas Draper, Edmonde Cooke, John Burdet, and diuers other, he took the sea, and scouring the same about the mist of May he came before Portsmouth. About the same time the L. marques Dorset, & other noble

men appointed for the journey to Biscay, as the Lord Howard son and heire to the earle of Surrey, the L. Brook, the L. Willoughby, the L. Ferrers, the L. Iohn, the L. Anthony, the L. Leonard Grey, all three brethren to the marques, sir Griffith ap Rice, sir Maurice Burkley, sir W. Sands, the baron of Warford, sir Richard Cornwall brother to the said baron, W. Husie, Jo Molton, W. Kingstone esquires, sir Henry Willoughby, and diuers other, with the number of 10000. soldiers, amongst the which were 500. Almains, all clad in white, vnder the leading of a Fleming named Gwint, came to Southampton, & there mustered their bands. The 16. of May they were shipped in Spanish vessels, and landed in Biscay, where they were bidden welcome, but had no such aide sent to them as was promised, whereby they lost the doing of some great exploit against the French men on the frontiers of Gascoigne: after the army had laine 30. daies in the campe, there came from the king of Arragon messengers to desire the marques and his people to take patience for a while, and they should see that such preparation should be made for the furnishing of their enterprise. In the meane time the English men for the most part, were victualled with garlike, and dranke hote wines, and ate hote fruits, which procured their blood to boile in their bodies, whereby they fell sicke, and died more than 800. persons: in the end many promises being made by the king of Spaine, and none performed, the English men embarked, and landed in England in the moneth of December. The king of Spaine seemed to be sore discontented with their departure, affirming that if they had tarried till the next spring, he would in their companie haue invaded France.

The Regent  
of England, a  
ship, burned.

About the moneth of August the nauies of England and France meeting at Britaine bay, fought a cruell battell, in the which the Regent or soueraigne of England, and a carike of Brest in France, being grappled together, were burned, and their captains with their men all drowned: the English capitaine was sir Thomas Kneuer, who had with him sir Iohn Carew, and 700. men. In the French carike was sir Pierce Morgan, with nine hundred men, were all burnt or drowned.

Great Harrys  
ship made.

King Henry hearing of the losse of the Regent, caused a great ship to be made, such a one, as the like had neuer bene sene in England, and named it, Henry grace de Dieu.

Scala temp.  
Kings palace  
at Westminster  
burnt.

By fire this yere a great part of the kings palace of Westminster, and the chappell in the Towre of London, and many other places in England were burnt.

Parliament at  
Westminster.

In the moneth of November the king called his high court of parliament, in the which it was concluded, that the king himselfe in person with an army royall should invade France, whereupon notice thereof being giuen to such as should attend, they made their purueance with all diligence that might be. In this parliament was granted to the king two sixtens, and foure demies, and had money, of euery duke ten markes, an earle five pound, a lord foure pound, a knight foure markes, and euery man valued at 800. pound in goods to paie foure markes, and so after that rate, till him that was valued at fortye shillings paid twelue pence, and euery man that toke fortye shil-

Great payment  
to the king.

lings

lings wages twelae pence, and euery man and woman of 15. yeres or upward foure pence.

The king kept his Christmas at Greenwich with great solemnity, dauncing, disguisings, and mummeries in most princely maner.

After Candlemas, the king created sir Charles Brandon, Viscount Lisle.

In the moneth of March was the kings Parie of ships rosall, and other set forth to the number of 42. beside balengiers, vnder the conduct of the L. Admirall, accompanied with sir Walter Deuereux, L. Ferrers, sir Wolstan Brown, sir Edw. Ichingham, sir Anthony Poinis, sir Iohn Wallope, sir Thomas Windham, sir Steuen Bull, William Fitz Williams, Arthur Plantagenet, William Sidney, esquires, and diuers other balliant captaines.

These made saile into Britaine, and came to Barthram bay, where they lay at anchor for a time, at length minding to enter the hauen of Brest on the 25. of Aprill, the L. admirall with a pike of the enemye, was throlwen ouerboard, and so drowned, al the other escaped very hardly away, for if they had tarried the tide had failed them, and then al had bin lost. The L. Ferrers and the other captaines sorrowfull of this chance, returned into England. King Henry being sorry for the losse of his admirall, called to him T. Howard eldest brother to the late admirall, and son and heire apparant to the earle of Surrey, whom he made admirall, willing him to reuenge his brothers death. The lord Howard humbly thanked his grace of the trust that he put in him, and so immediately went to the sea, and scoured the same, that no French man durst shew himselfe on the coast of England.

On May euen Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke was beheaded on the tower hill, his brother Richard de la Pole, called the white Rose, was afterward slaine before the citie of Waite, *in anno 1524.*

King Henry hauing all his prouisions ready for the warre, and meaning in person to passe the sea, appointed George Talbot earle of Shrewsburie, high steward of his household, to be capteine generall of his foreward, and in his companie were appointed to go Thom. Stanley earle of Darby, lord Docwray prior of S. Johns, sir Robert Rarelife lord Fitzwater, the lord Hastings, the lord Cobham, sir Rice ap Thomas, sir Thomas Blunt, sir Richard Sacheueell, sir Iohn Digby, sir Iohn Askew, sir Lewes Bagot, sir Thomas Cornwall, and many other knights and esquires, and souldiers to the number of 8000. men, these passed the sea, and came to Caleis about the midd of May. Charles Somerset L. Herbert chamberlaine to the king, in the end of that moneth followed with 6000. men, and so forth.

King Henry hauing sent ouer a great and puissant army into France to besiege the citie of Turwiz, himselfe accompanied with manie noble men, and sixe hundred archers of his garde, all in white gabberdines, toke his shippe at Dover on the last of June in the morning. When the king was shipped and made saile, all his army followed, to the number of foure hundred shippes, and the winde was so, that they were brought the same night into Caleis hauen.

On the next morrow, being the first of Iuly, Thomas L. Howard, admirall

of England, landed at Whitland bay, and entred, spoiled, and bent the town, and returned to his ships.

The 21. of July, the king passed out of the towne of Caleis in goodly array of battell, and toke the field, & notwithstanding that the foreward of the kings great army were before Turwine, yet the king of his owne battell made 3. battels: the lord Lisle marshall of the host, was capitaine of the foreward, and vnder him 3000. men: sir Richard Carew with 300. men, was the right hand wing to the foreward, & the lord Darcie with 300. men, wing on the left hand. The scourers and fore-riders of this battell, were the Northumberland men on light geldings. The earle of Essex was lieutenant generall of the speares, and sir Iohn Pechy was vice-gouernor of the horsemen. Before the king went 800. Almains all in a plumpe: after them came the standard with the red dragon, next the banner of our Ladie, & next of the Trinitie, vnder the which were all the kings household. Then went the banner of the armes of England, borne by sir Iohn Gifford, vnder which banner was the king himselfe, with diuers noble men, and other, to the number of three thousand men. The Duke of Buckingham with sixe hundred men, was on the kings left hand. On the right hand was sir Edward Poynings with other sixe hundred men, equall with the Almains. The lord of Burgainie with eight hundred men was wing on the right hand: sir William Compton with the retinue of the Bishop of Winchester Fox, and master Thomas Wolsey, afterward cardinal, of eight hundred, was in maner of a reereward: Sir Anthony Oughtred and sir Iohn Neuill with the kings speares that followed, were foure hundred, and so the whole army was eleuen thousand and three hundred men. The master of the ordinance set forth the kings artillerie, as faulcons, singes, bombardes, powder, stones, bowes, arrowes, and such other things necessary for the field, the whole number of the carriages were 13. hundred, the leaders and drivers of the same were nineteen hundred men. The king lay the first night betwixt Calkwell and Freidon: the next night before the Castle of Guisnes at Becard: the next night he lay beside Arde a good way without the English pale, and when he was a little beyond Dernome, there came a great host of Frenchmen, that purposed to haue set vpon him: but the king with his host kept their ground, and shotte their great ordinance, wherewith the aray of the French men was broken.

The 4. of August, the king in good order of battell came before the citie of Turwine, and planted his siege in warlike wise.

The 11. date of August, Maximilian the Emperour came to king Henrie, who was receiued with great triumph betwene Aire and the campe. The Emperour and his retinue were in blacke, as mourners for the Emperesse lately deceased.

The Emperour and all his seruants were retained with the king of England in wages by the day, euery person according to his degree, and the Emperour as the kings souldier wore a crosse of S. George with a rose, and so he and all his traine came to the kings campe the 13. of August, and there was receiued with great magnificence.



The 23. of August, the towne of Turwine was giuen ouer vnto the king of England, with condition, that all men in the towne might safely passe with horse and harnesse: and so on the 24. of August there came out of the towne 4000. men of war and mo well appointed, whereof 600. were wel hoysed, their standards borne before them.

Turwine yel-  
ded to king  
Henry.

The 26. of August, the king remoued to Singate, and there it was agreed, that the walles, gates, bulwarkes, and towres of Turwine should be defaced, razed, and cast downe: of which conclusion, the Emperour sent word to S. Omers and to Aire, which being sious of that tidings, sent thither pioners, and so they and the English pioners brake downe the walles, gates, and towres, and filled the ditch, and fired the towne, except the cathedrall church and the palace, and all the ordinance was by the king sent to Aire to bee kept to his vse.

Turwine razed  
and burnt.

After this it was concluded, that the king in person should laie his siege to the citie of Turney, wherefore he set forward three goodly battels: the first was conducted by the Earle of Shrewsburie: the second battell led the king himselfe, with whom was the Emperour: the reterward was conducted by the lord Harbert, and so the first night they lay in campe beside Aire.

The 14. of September, the king and his army came to Beatewin, and on the morrowe passed forward, and came to a strait where was a forde, which with great difficultie they passed: and the next day they passed a bridge called Mount Anandieu, &c.

The one and twentieth day of September the king remoued his campe toward Turney, and lodged within three miles of the Citie, the which night came to him the Emperour and the Dallsgrau: the people about Turney were with their goods fledde to the citie, and yet the citie had no men of warre to defend it, but with multitude of inhabitants the citie was well replenished.

Henry besie-  
ged Turney.

The king came in aray of battell before Turney, planted his ordinance rounde about the citie, diuers trenches were cast, and rampiers made, so that no Citizens coulde issue out, nor no aide come to them. Whereupon at length, to wit, on the nine and twentieth of September the citie was yielded.

Turney yielded  
to H. Henry.

Then the king appointed the lord Lisle, the lord Burgeyny, and the lord Willoughby to take possession, which with five thousand men entred the Citie, and toke the market place and the wals, and then master Thomas Wolsey the kings almoner called before him all the citizens, and swore them to the king of England: the number of which citizens were fourescore thousand.

On the 2. day of October the king entred the citie of Turney, and there ordained sir Edward Poinings, knight of the order of the Carter, to be his lieutenant, with capitaines, horsemen, archers, and artillery conuenient: he made his almoner Thomas Wolsey bishop of Turney, and then returned to Caleis, and sailed from thence to Douer on the 24. of October: from whence he rode post to Richmond, where the Quene lay.

Thomas Wol-  
sey bishop of  
Turney.

James king of  
Scots besieged  
Norham.

In this meane time, James K. of Scots assembled the whole power of Scotland, wherewith he approached to the borders, and comming to Norham castle, laid siege thereunto, and after he had beaten this castle with his ordinance, by the space of five daies, the same was deliuered vpp into his hands.

And hee (sayeth Paulus Ionius) made the same to bee layde leuell with the grounde, and from thence marched (wasting with fire and sword) to besiege the strong towne of Bertwike.

Now had the earle of Surrey, Lieutenant of the north, in absence of king Henry, giuen order to assemble a power of 26000. men, and comming to Alnwick, carried thence till the whole number of his people were come: amongst other, his son the lord admirall with 5000. souldiers and men of war, which had bin at sea, came to his father, whereof he greatly reioiced. The earle appointed his battels, with wings, and horsemen necessary: first of the foreward was ordained captain the L. Howard admirall, with the L. Clifford, the L. Coniers, the L. Latimer, the L. Scrope, the lord Ogle, the lord Lumley, sir Nicholas Appleyard, master of the ordinance, sir Stephen Bull, sir Henry Sherborne, sir William Sidney, sir Edward Echingham, sir William Bulmere, with the power of the Bp. shoppe of Durham, s<sup>rs</sup> William Gascoigne, sir Christopher Warde, sir Iohn Eueringham, sir Th. Metham, sir Walter Griffith, &c. Of the wing on the right hand of the foreward was captaine, s<sup>r</sup> Edmond Howard, knight marshall of the hoste, and with him Brian Tonstall, Raife Brearton, Iohn Laurence, Richard Bold Esquires, s<sup>rs</sup> Iohn Bothe, s<sup>r</sup> Thomas Butler knights, and other. Of the wing on the left hande was Captaine, s<sup>r</sup> Marmaduke Constable with his sonnes, s<sup>rs</sup> William Percy, and of Lancashire, a thousande men. Of the Rereward was Captaine the Earle of Surrey, the Lord Scrope of Bolton, s<sup>r</sup> Philippe Tilney, s<sup>r</sup> George Darcie, s<sup>r</sup> Thomas Barkeley, s<sup>r</sup> Iohn Rockife, s<sup>r</sup> Christopher Pickering, Richard Tempest, s<sup>r</sup> Iohn Stanley, &c. Nowe the Earle of Surrey was informed that king James laye imbattayled vpon a great Mountaine, called Flodon, a place of such strength, as was impossible for the Englishmen to come nere them, he sent Rouge Crosse pursuant to the king of Scots, to shew him, that where he had contrary to his oth and league, invaded this his brothers realme, and done greates hurt, in casting downe castles, towres, and houses, burning and destroying the same, &c. The said earle would be ready to try the rightwisenes of the cause with the king in battel, by friday next comming, if he of his noble courage would giue him tarrying and abode. Rouge Crosse went and did his message to James king of Scots, as he was appointed: And hereupon king James sent to the earle an herault named Ilay, who deliuered to the earle a letter written by the kings secretarie, as follooweth.

Flodon field.

K. James letter  
to E. earle of  
Surrey.

As to the causes alleadged of our comming into England, again our band and promise (as is alleadged) hereto we answer: Our brother was bound as far to vs as we were to him. And when we swore last before his ambassador, in presence of our counsel, we expessed specially by oth, that we would kepe to our brother, if our brother kept to vs, and not else: we sweare our brother brake first to vs, & with his breake, we haue required diuers times him to amend: and lately

latelie we warned our brother, as he did not vs or he brake, and this wee take for our quarrel, & with Gods grace shall defend the same, at your assured time, which with Gods grace we shall abide.

Right high and mightie Prince, so it is that latelie I sent vnto you Rouge Croisse pursuant at armes, and by him aduertised your grace, that I and other my soueraign lords subiects, were come to repesse & resist your invasions of this the kings my soueraigne Lordes realme, and for that intent I offered to giue you bat tell, on this halfe friday next coming: which my message, your grace toke pleasure to heare, as I am informed, and by your herault I lay, yee made answer, that ye were right iolious of my desire, and would not fayle to accomplish the same, and to abide me there, where yee were at the time of my message, so shewed vnto your grace. And albeit it hath pleased you to chaunge your said promise, and put your selfe into a grounde, more like a Fortresse or campe, than vpon any indifferent ground for bat tell to be tried, wherefore considering the day appointed is so nigh approaching, I desire you of your grace, that for the accomplishment of your honorable promise, you will dispose your selfe for your part, like as I shall do for mine, to be to morrow with your host in your side of the plain of Milfield, in like wise as I shall do for mine, and shall be with the subiects of my soueraigne lord on my side of the plaine of the sayd field, to giue you bat tell betwene twelue of the clock and 3. in the after none, vpon sufficient warning by you to be giuen by eight or nine of the clock in the morning by the said pursuant. And like as I and other noble men my companie, binde vs by our writing subscribed with our handes to keepe the same time, to the intent abovesaid: I may like your grace, by your honorable Letters subscribed with your hand, to bind your grace for the accomplishment of this our desire, trusting ye will dispatch our said pursuant immediatly: for the long delate of so honorable aourny, we thinke should sound to your dishonor. Written in the field in Moller Haugh the 7. day of September, at fixe of the clock in the after noon. Subscribed, Thomas Surrey, Thomas Howard, Thomas Dacre, Clifford, Henry Scrope, Ralfe Scrope, Richard Latimer, William Coniers, John Lumley, R. Ogle, W. Percie, E. Stanley, W. Molineux, Marmaduke Constable, William Gascoigne, W. Griffith, George Darcie, W. Bulmer, Thomas Strangwaies, &c.

Now the time of bat tell being come, the earle of Surrey divided his army into three battailes: vnto the vanguard whereof, the Lord Howard was capitaine, his brother sye Edmond Howard was ioined as a wing, the earle himselfe led the middle warde, and the rereward was guided by sye Edward Stanley. The Lord Dacres with a number of horsemen stood apart by himselfe to succour where neede should appeere to be. The Ordinance was placed in the front of these battels, and in places betwene, and in this order they marched forward.

In the meane time James king of Scottes beholding the behauiour of the Englishmen from the height of the hill, commanded his standards to be raised and spread, and euerie man to resort to his place, that they might forthwith encounter with their enemies: And without delay James putting his horse

Earle of Surreys letter to James king of Scots.

from

Paulus Iovius.

from him, all offer as well Nobles as meane men did the like, that the danger being equall, and all hope of succor taken awaite, they might be the more willing to shew their manhood: Then was the armie divided into 5. wards, to the intent that the battell wherein the king himselfe stood with his standard, might bee inclosed, as it were, with two winges: their ordinance was lodged in places most conuenient, though by reason they marched downe the hill, their shot did small damage to the Englishmen comming bytwards. And heere with Sy: Edmonde Howard with his wing was got by on the hill side, with whom the Lord Hume, and the two earles of Lincolne and Argyll encountered with such violence, that this Battayle of Scottes with speares on foote beate downe and broke that Wing of Englishmen in such wise, that Sir Edmond Howard was in manner left alone, and felled to the earth: but bastard Heron came to his rescue, or else hee had bene slayne. This Bastarde Heron brought with him a strong troupe of horsemen, which hee being of late banished both from England and Scotland, had cunninglie trained by in robberies. And on the other side, the Lord Dacres watching to ayde where neede shoulde happen, came in on the sides of the Scots, and gaue a charge on them with his horsemen, whereby Sy: Edmond Howard escaped to the English Wauntguard, which was ledde by his brother the Lord Howard, who being nowe also got aloft on the hill, pressed still forward to renew the battayle and to succour those whom hee sawe put to the worst, whereby they took courage vnto them and layde about. Herewith the Earle of Crawford, and Mountrose came with their battaile of speares, also on foote, and encountering with the sayde Lord Howard, after soze fight on both sides, both the sayde Earles were slayne, besides a great number of other, the whole battayle which they ledde, being put to flight, and chased out of the field. On the left hande, Sy: Edward Stanley, and with him Sy: William Molineux, Sy: Henry Kighile, and other of Lancashire, Cheshire, hauing begunne to encounter with the Scots on that side, forced them to come downe into a more open ground, and brought to that point, with such incessant shot of arrowes, that to auoide that sharpe storme, the Scottes were constrained to breake their arraie, and to fight one separate from another: which thing when Sy: Edward Stanley perceived, forthwith bringing about thre Bandes which hee had kept in store, he inuaded the open sides of his enemies, by a fresh onsette, and put them in sundre in such disorder, that they were not able any longer to abide the violence of the Englishmen, so that taking themselves to flight, and running downe the hill, they escaped to the wood: but the Earles of Argyll and Lennox were slayne in the same place. In the meane time the King, who a little before had toynd with the Earle of Surrey, perceyuing that the Winges of his Battayles were distressed, and that his enemies beganne to enclose him on each side, heere with rushing forth vpon his enemies, a newe battayle beganne to rise, for that battayle being well armed, passed little for the Arrowes of the Englishmen, inso much, that pearcing the earles Battayle, they entered well nere so farre within the same, that they were at a poynt to haue ouerthrownt his Standards. The king himselfe on foote, even in the foremost Ranke, fought



fought right valiantly, encouraging his people, as well by example as by persuasions to do their best. Neither did the earle of Surrey faile in the dutie of a worthy Generall: but whilst the battell was thus foughten about the standards, with doubtfull chance of victorie, the Lord Howard and Sir Edward Stanley, hauing vanquished the enemies in either wing, returned to the middleward, and finding them there thus occupied, they sette on, in two severall parts, with great violence, and at the same time the lord Dacres came with his horsemen vpon the backs of the Scots, so that they being thus assailed behind and before, and on either side, were constrained to fight in a rounde compasse. King James as he beheld Sir Adam Forman his standard bearer beaten downe, thought surelie there was no waie for him but death: wherefore to deliuer himselfe from the reproch as was like to follow, he rushed forth into the chiefest prele of his enemies, and there fighting in most desperate maner, was beaten downe and slain, and a little beside him, there died with like courage diuers honorable prelates, as the archbishop of S. Andrewes, & two other bishops, besides two abbots, 12 earles, & 17 lords, besides knights and gentlemen: and about 8000. Scots slain, and almost so manie taken, saith Iouius. All their ordinance and stiffe was taken by the English.

Thus on the 9. of September, king James the fourth of that name, king of Scots was slaine at Bramstone vpon Piperd hill, and his armie discomfited by the earle of Surrey lieutenant to Henry the 8. king of Englande: There was taken prisoner Sir William Scot chancelor to the saide king, and Sir Iohn Forman his serleant porter, with diuers other. Also in maner all the Scottissh ensignes were taken, and 22. peeces of greate ordinance, amongst the which were seauen culuerings, verie faire peeces, whome the king for their likeness one vnto another, had named the seauen sisters. There was slaine and taken of our men about 1500. men (saith Hall) during the time of the fight, & in the night following, manie Englishmen lost their horses, and such stiffe as they left in their tents, by the robbers of Tindale, & Tuisdale: When the field was done, the earle gaue thanks to God, and made knightes to the number of 35. whose names I ouerpasse in this place. The body of the king of Scots was not found till the next daie, and then being found and knowne by the lord Dacres, there appered in the same diuers deadly wounds, his throat cut halfe asunder, his left hand in two places almost cut off, and manie other woundes, as well with arrowes, as other wise: his body was bowelled, rebowelled, and inclosed in lead, and so kept at Bartwike, till the kings pleasure were knowne. After that the earle of Surrey had taken order, and set the north in good quiet, he returned to the quene, with the dead bodie of the Scottissh king, which boodie inclosed in lead (as before is shewed) as I haue bene informed, was conueied to Shyne, a monasterie in Surrey, founded by king H. the 5. where it remained for a time, in what order I am not certaine, but since the dissolution of that house, to wit, in the raigne of king Ed. the 6. Henry Grey then duke of Suffolk, there keeping house, I haue bene shewed the same body (as was affirmed) so lapped in lead, throught into an old waste room, amongst old timber, stone, lead, and other rubble.

James king of  
Scots slaine at  
Bramstone  
field.

When

The kings letters to sir Will. Molineux, of Lancashire.

When King Henry was returned into England, from his conquest made in France, of the Cities of Tirtwin, and Turney, he forgate not the good service of those that hadde becne with the Earle of Surrey, at the Battayle of Bramstone, wherefore hee wrote to them his louing letters, with such thanks and fauourable wordes, that euerie man thought himselfe well rewarded. The tenure of his letter was this. Trustie and welbeloued we greete you well, and vnderstand aswell by the report of our right trustie cosen and counsailler the Duke of Posfolke, as otherwise, what acceptable seruice you amongst other latelie did vnto vs, by your valiant towardnesse in the assisting of our said cosen against our great enemye, the late king of Scottes: and howe conragiouse you as a verie heartie louing seruaunt, acquitted your selfe, for the ouerthowe of the sayde late king, and distressing of his malice and powler to our greate honour, and the aduancing of your no little fame and prayse, for which wee haue good cause to fauour and thanke you, and so wee full heartylie doe. And assured maie you bee, that wee shall in such effectfull wise remember your sayde seruice in ante your reasonable pursutes, as you shall haue cause to thinke the sawe right well emploted, to your comfort, and weale hereafter. Given vnder our signet, at our Castell of Windsoze, the 27. of Nouember. To our trustie and welbeloued, William Molineux Knight.

Great pestilence.

This yere was a death of the pestilence in England, especiallie about London, so that in one house, to wit, the Spinories without Ald-gate, there died of nuns professed, to the number of 27. besides other that were Late people, and seruants in that house.

Will. Smith bish. of Lincolne deceased.

About the Feast of the Natinitie of our Ladie, deceased William Smith bish. of Lincolne, hee founded Brasenose Colledge in Orford, and before that being bishop of L. schfield, he ordeined an hospitall there, for a masser, 2. priests, 10. poore men: he set there also a scholemaster, and an vther to teach grammar to poore mens childzen, in a schole by him created. In Henry the 7. gaue vnto it an old hospitall called Donhall in Wirhall, in Chesser shire, with the lands, &c. Also at Farnwooke where the said Smith and his parents had originall, he bestowed ten pounde the yere for ever, to one that shoulde teach a Grammar Schole.

1514  
States created

On the day of the Purification of our Ladie, in the archbishops palace at Lambeth, the king created the earle of Surrey Duke of Posfolke, with an augmentation of the armes of Scotland, and otherwise rewarded him: hee likewise the same day created sir Charles Brandon Viscount Lisle (for to say William Brandon, that bare king Henry the 7. standard at Bosworth field, and was there slaine) duke of Suffolke, and sir Thomas Lord Howard high Admirall, earle of Surrey, say Charles Somerset, Lord Harbert his chiefe Chamberlaine, earle of Worcester, and not long after he made say Edward Stanley lord Mounteagle.

An. reg. 6.

In the moneth of March following, T. Wolsey the Ex. almoner, and bishop of Turney was consecrated bishop of Lincolne.

In the moneth of May, the B. & the D. of Suffolke were challengers at the tilt,

tilt, against all commers, in the which iusts were broken 100. and fourteene Great iusting.  
naues.

The 19. of Maie, was receyued into London a Cap of maintenance, and a Sworde, sent from Pope Iuly the seconde, with a greate companie of noble men and Gentlemen, which Cappe and Sworde was presented to the King on the next Sondaye, with a greate solemnitie in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul. Frenchmen landed with their Gallies and foists on the borders of Suffer in the night season, and came to Bighthamstede and bent it, taking such goods as they there found, but in the morning they were constrained to fle. Cap of maintenance.  
French bent Bighthamstede in Suffer.

The lord Admirall sent Syr Iohn Wallope to the sea, with diuers Shippes, which sayling to the coasts of Normandy, landed there, and bent 21. villages and towne, with diuers Ships in the haven of Traport, Staples, and other places. Sir Iohn Wallope bent Traport.

In the moneth of Maie Syr Thomas Louell tooke the seas, and landed at Caleis with 400. men of warre: also Syr Iohn Pechy, the lord Burgaueny, the lord Clinton, the lord Cobham, Syr Richarde Lewes, Syr Iohn Rainsforth, Syr William Scot, Syr Iohn Scot his sonne, Syr Edward Gilford, Syr Henry Gilford, Syr Iohn Norton, Syr Iohn Fogge, Syr Matthewe Browne, and Syr James Dorelt, with diuers Esquiers and Gentlemen, and men of warre, to the number of 5000. The Lord Burgaueny being chiefe leader. These were sent ouer to strengthen the Towne of Caleis, and other Fortresses within the Englishe Pale, for doubt of ante todayne attempt to bee made by the Frenchmen. Richard Turpin.

The French King percepuing what losses hee had sustayned by the warres agaynst Englande, and doubting least one euill lucke shoulde still followe another, determined to make suite for peace, and first agreeing with the pope Leo, desired him to bee a meane for the procuring of some agremente betwixt him and the King of Englande. Whereupon the Popes letters, the French King by an Herault at Arms sent to the King of Englande, requiring of him a safe Conduet for his ambassadoys, which shoulde come to intreat for a peace to bee concluded betwixt them and their Realmes. Upon graunt thereof attayned, the French King sent a Commission with the President of Roane, and others, to entreate of peace. And because they vnderstoode that the marriage was broken betwene the prince of Castile and the lady Marie, they desired that the sayde Ladie might bee ioyned in marriage with the French King, offering a greate Dowrie, and suretie for the same, so much was offered, that the King moued by his Counsaile consented vpon condition, that if the French King dyed, then shee shoulde, if it stode with her pleasure, returne into Englande with her Dowrie and Kitchens. After that they were accorded vpon the peace, and that the French King shoulde marrie this yong ladie, &c. And then was the peace proclaymed on the thirteenth of August, &c. Peace with France proclaimed.

In the moneth of September the ladie Marie was conueyed to Douer, by the King her Brother, and the Queene: and on the second daie of October, she was

was shipped, and such as were appointed to giue their attendance on her, as the duke of Norfolk, the Marques Dorset, the bishop of Durham, the earle of Surrey, the Lord de la Ware, the Lord Berners, the Lord Mounteagle, the foure brethren of the saide Marques, Sir Maurice Barkley, Sir Iohn Pechy, s<sup>r</sup> William Sands, sir Thomas Bullen, sir Iohn Car, and manie other knights, esquires, gentlemen, and Ladies. They set out from Douer with fouretene greate Shippes, and had not sailed past a quarter of their volage in the sea, but that the winde rose, and seuered the shippes, diuising some of them to Caleis, some into Flaunders, and her shippe and thre other, with greate difficultie, was brought to Boloigne, not without greate leopardy at the entring of the Hauen, for the galler ranne the shippe harde on shoze, but the Boates were readie, and receiued the Ladie out of the shippe, and s<sup>r</sup> Christopher Garnish stode in the water, and tooke her in his armes, and so bare her to land, where the Duke of Gandosme, and a Cardinall, with manie other greate Estates, receiued her with greate honour. In this volage king Henries greate shippe with foure tops, called the Lubek, was broken and lost, a little from Sangate west toward Caleis: there was in her at that time almost siue hundred men, souldiours and mariners, whereof moze than foure hundred were lost, for there escaped not one hundred of that companie. From Boloigne the Ladie Mary was conuied vnto Abuille, and there entered the eight of October, and on the next morrowe, the marriage was solemnized betwixt the French king and the saide ladie, with all honour and royaltie: When the feast was ended, the English Lordes returned with greate rewardes into Englande: Before whose departure from Abuille, the Dolphine of France, Francis duke of Calois caused solemnne Iusses to bee proclaimed, to be kept at Paris, in the moneth of Nouember next ensuing: the saide Dolphine with his nine aders, to aunsweare all commers, beeing Gentlemen of name and armes. When this proclamation was proclaimed in Englande, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marques Dorset, and his foure brethren, the Lord Clinton, s<sup>r</sup> Edward Neuell, s<sup>r</sup> William Sidney, s<sup>r</sup> Giles Caple, Thomas Cheyney and other, got licence of the king to go ouer to this challenge, and thereupon preparing themselves for the purpose, departed toward France, the 20. of October they landed at Caleis, all in great Coates and Hoddes, because they woulde not be known. The twentieth sixe of October s<sup>r</sup> Henry Guilford landed at Caleis, with two seriesantes at armes, and twentie yeomen of the Crowne and kinges guard, these went to the citie of Paris, with tenne or twelue goble Horses to bee at the Iusses, at the Coronation of the Quene: they came all to Paris about the latter ende of October. The Dolphine desired the duke of Suffolke, and the Lord Marques Dorset, to bee two of his immediate aydes, which thereto glablie assented. On the first of Nouember beeing sundae, the Quene was Crowned with great solemnitie, in the Monasterie of Dones: and on the next daie she was receiued into Paris, with all honour that might bee deuised. On the seauenth of Nouember beganne the Iusses, which continued by the space of thre daies, in the which were aunsweared thre hundred siue men of armes, and euerie man ranne siue courses with shape Spears. The Eng

A. Gentles  
great ship cal-  
led the Lubek  
lost.  
Mary sister to  
R. married to  
the French k.

Jussing to be  
holden at Pa-  
ris.



With lordes and knights did as well as the best, not onlie in the Filds, but also at the Torney and Barriers, namelie the duke of Suffolke, the Marques Dorset, and his brother the lord Edward Grey: when the great triumph was done, the lordes of England toke their leaue, and came into England befoze Chyisme.

In the mean time, to wit, in the moneth of Nouember, the Q. was deliuered of a prince, which liued not long after.

Richard Hun, a merchant tailor of London, dwelling in the parish of Saint Margaret in Bridgestreet, who (for denyng to giue a moztuary, such as was demanded by the parson for his child being buried) had bin put in the Lowwards tower about the end of October last befoze passed, was now the 5. of Decemb. found hanged with his own girdle of silk, in the said tower, and after he was burned in Smithfield.

Richard Hun  
hanged in Low-  
wards Tower.

This yere died at Rome the archbishop of Dozke and cardinall, called doctor Banbridge, which was the kinges ambassador there, and was poisoned by an Italian, one of his owne householde chaplaines, he was thre honorable buried. And king Henry gaue the saide Archbshopricke to Thomas Wolsey then Bishop of Lincolne, who shortly after gatte to bee cardinall and Lorde Chancellor.

On Petwéers euend died the French K. Lewes the 12. after he had bin married to the lady Mary of England the terme of 82. daies. The K. of England being thereof aduertised, caused a solemne obsequie to bee kept for him in St. Pauls church of London, with a costly hearse, at the which obsequy manie nobles were present. When the K. sent a letter to comfort the Quene his sister, requiring to know her pleasure, whether she would continue still in France, or returne into England. And when hee was aduertised of her minde, which was to returne into England, the Duke of Suffolke, s<sup>r</sup> Richard Wingfield deputie of Caleis, and doctor West, with a goodly band of gentlemen, and yemen all in blacke, were sent into France, and comming to Paris, were well entertained of Francis the new French K. to whome they declared the effect of their commission, which was to receiue the Q. Dowager, according to the covenants. The counsell of France by the kings appointment, assigned forth hir dowrie, and the duke of Suffolke put in officers, and then was the Q. deliuered to the duke, who behaued himselfe so towards her, that he obtained hir good will, to be hir husband. It was thought, that when the K. created him duke of Suffolke, he perceiued his sisters good will toward the said duke, and that hee ment then to haue bestowed hir on him, but that a better offer came in the way, but howsoeuer it was, now hee was hir loue, so as by her consent, hee wrote to the K. hir brother, meekelie beseeching him of pardon in his request, which was humbly to desire him of his good will and contentation. The K. after some tute, agreed that the duke should bring hir into England vnmarrid, and at his returne to marry her in England: but for doubt of change, he married her secretly at Paris, as was said.

The 9. of Aprill a new peace was concluded between the K. of England and Francis the new king of France.

III

after

1515  
The French  
king deceased.

*An. reg. 7.*  
Duke of Suffolke married the lady Marie the kings sister.

After that the Duke of Suffolke had receiued the French Quene with his Dowrie appointed, and all her apparell, iewels, and household stuffe deliuered, they tooke leaue of the new French king, and so passing through France, came to Caleis on the 25. of Aprill, where they were honorably receiued, from whence on the 2. of Maie, they sailed ouer into England, and the same night landed at Douer. And on the 13. of May, they were solemnely married at Grænewich.

Castle of Turwy builded.

This yere in the moneth of May, were sent out of England, 1200. masons and carpenters, and 300. laborers to the city of Courney, to build a castle there to chastice the city if it chanced to rebel, and thereby to diminish the garrison that shyn late there to the kings great charge.

*E. Wolsey cardinal.*

In the moneth of September H. after his returne from progresse in the west, being at his maner of Shing, T. Wolsey comming thither to him, there was brought to him a letter from Rome to aduertise him, that he was elected cardinall, which he seemed to mislike of, but the K. would to take it vpon him, and from thenceforth called him my L. cardinall.

Parliament at Westminster.

In the moneth of Nouember, the king assembled a Parliament at Westminster, especiallie for order in apparell. In the end of which parliament, doctor Warham archbishop of Canterbury, and then L. Chancelloz, gaue vp into the kings hands his office of chancelloz, and deliuered to him the great scale, which scale incontinentlie the K. deliuered vnto the L. cardinall, and so made him chancelloz. And here I thinke good to set downe for example to posteritie, some part of the proceedings of this so oft named Tho. Wolsey archbishop, his ascending vnto honoris estate, and so daie falling again from the same, as I haue bene informed by persons of good credite.

The ascending of Tho. Wolsey.  
1516

*An. reg. 8.*  
Bachelor of art  
15 yeres olde.

Truth it is, this Cardinall Wolsey was an honest poore mans son of Ipswich, in the countie of Suffolke, and there borne, and being but a child, verie apt to be learned: wherefore by the meanes of his parents, or of his good friends and masters, hee was conueyed to the Vniuersitie of Oxford, where hee shortly prospered so in learning, as himselfe reported, as he was made Bachelor of Art, when he passed not 15. yeres of age, and was called most commonly through the Vniuersity the boy Bachelor. Thus prospering in learning, hee was made fellowe of Maudelin colledge, and afterward appointed to be scholemaster of Maudelin Schoole, at which time, the L. Marques Dorset had 3. of his sonnes there at Schoole, committing vnto him as well their education, as their instruction. It pleased the said L. Marques against a Christmas season to send as well for the scholemaster, as for his children home to his house for their recreation, in that pleasant and honorable feast. When being there, the lord their father perceiuing them to be right well employed in learning for their time, hee hauing a benefice in his gift being at that time void, gaue the same to the scholemaster in rewarde of his diligence, at his departure after Christmas to the Vniuersity, and hauing the presentation thereof repaired to the Ordinary for his institution or induction, being furnished of all his ordinarie instruments, made speed to the benefice to take therof possession, and being there for that intent, one sir Amias Poulet knight dwelling thereabout, took an occasion of displeasure against him,

Schoolemaster to the marques Dorsets child.  
Dien.

*E. Wolsey gat a benefice.*

upon

upon that ground I know not, but sit by your leave he was so bold to set the  
 schoolmaster by the side, during his pleasure, which after was neither forgot-  
 ten nor forgotten: for when the schoolmaster mounted the dignity to be chance-  
 lor of England, he was not oblivious of his old displeasure cruckle ministered  
 unto him by M. Pouler: but sent for him, and after many sharp words, enjoined  
 him to attend untill he were dismissed, & not to depart out of London without  
 licence obtained, so that he continued there within the middle temple the space  
 of 5. or 6. yeeres, who lay then in the gatehouse next the street, which he redified  
 verie sumptuously, garnishing the same all ouer his side with the cardinals  
 armes, with his hat, cognisances, and other deuises in so glorious a sort, that  
 he thought thereby to haue appeased his old displeasure. Now may this bee a  
 good example and president, to men in authoritie (which will sometime waxe  
 their will without witte) to remember in their authoritie, howe authoritie  
 maie decaye. And whome they doe punish of will, more then of iustice, maie  
 after be aduanced to high honor and dignities in the Common Weales, and  
 they bascd as lowe: who will then seeke the meanes to bee reuenged of such  
 wrongs, which they suffered before? Who would haue thought then when sir  
 Amias Powlet punished this pooze scholler, the schoolmaster that euer he should  
 haue mounted to so high dignitie, as to bee Chancellor of England, conside-  
 ring his basenes in euerie degree? These be wonderfull works of God and  
 fortune. Therefore I would wish all men in authoritie and dignitie to know  
 and feare God in all their triumphes and glozie, considering in all their do-  
 ings, that authorities be not permanent, but maie slide and vanish, as Prin-  
 ces pleasures alter and chaunge. When as all liuing things must of verie ne-  
 cessitie paie the due debt of nature, which no earthlie creature canne resist, it  
 chaunced the sayde Lord Marques to departe out of this present life, after  
 whose death, this schoolmaster then considering with himselfe, to bee but a  
 simple beneficed man, and to haue left his fellowship in the Colledge (for I  
 vnderstand, if a fellowe of that house be once promoted to a benefice, hee shall  
 by the rules of the same be dismissed of his fellowshippe) and perceiving him-  
 selfe also to be destitute of his singular good Lorde, and also of his fellowship,  
 which was much of his reliefe, thought not long to bee vnprovided of some  
 other helpe, or Mastrship to defende him from all such stormes, as hee light-  
 lie was vered with, and in his travell thereabout, hee fell in acquaintance  
 with one sir Iohn Naphant, a very graue and ancient knight, who had a greate  
 rōme in Caleis vnder King Henry the 7. this knight he serued, and behaued him-  
 selfe so discretely, that hee obtayned the especiall fauour of his master, inso-  
 much, that hee committed all the charge of his office vnto his Chaplaine, and  
 as I vnderstand, the office was the Treasureship of Caleis, who was in consi-  
 deration of his greates age discharged of his rōme, and returned agayne in-  
 to England, intending to liue more in quiet, and through his instant laboz  
 and good fauour, his Chaplaine was promoted to be the kinges chaplaine, and  
 when he had once cast anchor in the port of promotion, howe he wrought, I shal  
 somewhat declare. He hauing there a iust occasion to be in the sight of the king  
 daily, by reason he attended and said masse before him in his closet, and that

The Colledge set  
 in the stocks by  
 sir Amias Pow-  
 let.

Colleges impri-  
 sonment reuen-  
 ged.  
 Gatehouse of  
 the middle  
 Temple newe  
 builded.

Sir Iohn Na-  
 phant treasurer  
 of Caleis, Tho.  
 Colledge his  
 chaplaine.  
 The Colledge was  
 chaplaine to the  
 7.

being done, he spent not the daie forth in idlenesse, but would attende vpon those whom he thought to beare most rule in the counsell, and to be most in fauour with the king, the which at that time was docto<sup>r</sup> Fox, bishop of Winchester, Secretarie, and lord of the priuie seale: And also sir Tho. Louell knight, a verie sage counsellor, a wittie man, being master of the Wardes, and constable of the towre: these ancient and graue counsellors in proceesse of time perceiued this chaplaine to haue a verie fine wit, and thought him a mate person to be preferred to wittie affaires: It chanced at a certaine season that the king had an vrgent occasion to send an ambassado<sup>r</sup> vnto the Emperour Maximilian, who lay at that present in the low countrey of Flaunders, not far from Caleis. The bishop of Winchester and sir Thomas Louell, whome the king most esteemed as chiefe of his Counsell, the king counselling and debating with them vpon this ambassage, saw they had a conuenient occasion to preferre the kings chaplaine, whose wit, eloquence, and learning they highlie commended vnto the king: the king giuing eare vnto them, & being a prince of an excellent iudgement and modestie, commanded them to bring his chaplaine, whome they so much commended, before his presence, with whom he fell in communication of great matters, and perceiuing his wit to be verie fine, thought him sufficient to be put in trust with this ambassage, commanding him thereupon to prepare himselfe to this iourney. And for his deperche to repaite to his grace and his Counsell, of whom he should receiue his commission and instructions, by meanes whereof he had then a due occasion to repaite from time to time into the kings presence, who perceiued him more and more to be a verie wise man, and of a good intendment. And hauing his deperch, toke his leaue of the king at Richmond about none, and so came to London about foure of the clocke, where the barge of Graues-end was ready to launch forth, both with a prosperous tide and winde, without anie abode he entered the barge, and so passed forth with such happie speede, that he arrived at Graues-ende within little more than thre houres, where he tarried no longer than his post horses were prouiding, and then travelled so speedily, that he came to Dover the next morning, whereas the passengers were ready vnder saile to Caleis, into the which passenger without tarrying he entered, and sayled forth with them, that long before none he arrived at Caleis, and hauing post horses in a readinesse, departed from thence without tarrying: and he made such hastie speede, that he was that night with the Emperour. And he hauing vnderstanding of the coming of the K. of Englandes ambassado<sup>r</sup>, would in no wise delaie the time, but sent for him incontinent, his affection to king Henry the seuenth was such, that he was glad when hee had anie occasion to shewe him pleasure. The ambassado<sup>r</sup> disclosed the whole summe of his ambassage vnto the Emperour, of whom he required speedie expedition: the which was granted him by the emperour, so that the next day he was clerely dispatched, with all the kings requests fully accomplished and granted. At which time he made no longer delay, but toke post horses that night, and rode toward Caleis, conducted thither with such persons as the emperour had appointed, and at the opening of the gates of Caleis he came thither,

*C. Colley am-  
bassado<sup>r</sup> to the  
emperour.*

where



where the passengers were as readie to returne into England, as they were before at his journey forward, inso much, that hee arrived at Dover by ten or eleven of the clock before noone, and having post horses in a readines, came to the court at Richmond the same night, where hee taking some rest untill the morning, repaired to the king at his first comming from his bed-chamber to his closet to masse, whome when the king saw, he checked him, for that he was not on his journey: Sir (quoth he) if it maie please your highnes, I haue already beene with the emperoz, and dispatched your affaires, I trust to your graces contentation, & with that presented him his letters of credence from the emperoz. The king heeing in a greate confuse and wonder of his speedie returne and proceedings, dissembled all his wonder and imagination in that matter, and demanded of him, whether hee encountred not his Pursuant the which he sent unto him, supposing him not to be scantlie out of London, with letters concerning a verie necessarie matter neglected in their consultation, the which the king much desired to haue dispatched amongst the other matters of ambassage: Yes so; soth (quoth the chaplaine) I met with him yesterday by the wate, and having no understanding by your graces letters of your pleasure, haue notwithstanding beene so bolde vpon mine discretion (perceiving that matter to be verie necessarie in that behalfe) to dispatch the same: and so;asmuch as I haue exceeded your graces commission, I most humbly requyre your graces remission & pardon: & king relotcing inwardlie not a little, said: Wee doe not onelie pardon you thereof, but also giue you our Princelie thanks, both for the proceeding therein, & also for your good and speedie exploit, commanding him so; that time to take his rest, and repaire againe after Dinner, for the further relation of his ambassage. The king then went to masse, and after a convenient time went to dinner. It is not to be doubted, but that this ambassador hath in all this time been with his great friends the bishop, and sir Tho. Louell, to whom he hath declared the effect of all his speed, no; yet that for they receiued thereof.

The ambassador when he saw time, repaired before the king and counsell, where he declared the effect of all his affaires so exactly, with such grauitie and eloquence, that all the counsell that heard him, commended him, esteeming his expedition to be almost beyond the capacittie of man. The k. gaue him at that time the deanery of Lincoln, which was at that time one of the worthiest promotions that he gaue vnder degree of a bishop; & thus from thence forward he grew more and more into estimation and authoritie, and after was promoted by the king to be his almoner.

Heere maie all men note the chaunces of fortune that followeth some, whome she intendeth to promote, and to some her fauour is cleane contrary, though they traueill neuer so much with all the possible diligence that they canne devise or imagine, whereof for my parte, I haue tasted the experience. Nowe ye shall vnderstande that all this tale that I haue declared of the good expedition of the kings ambassador, was reported by his owne mouth after his fall, lying at that time in the great parke of Richmond, vnto George Candlish his gentleman usher, taking then occasion vpon diuers communi-

Tho. Wolsey  
Dean of Lincoln

W. Wolsey the  
kings almoner.

cations to tell this iourney with all the circumstances, as I haue here before rehearsed.

When death, that fauouresh none estate, had taken king Henry the seuenth out of this present life, who for his wise doime was called the second Salomon, what practises and compasses were then vsed about king Henry the eight: and the great prouision made for the funerals of the one, and the costly deuises of the coronation of the other, I omit. After the finishing of these solemnities and costly triumphs, and that our naturall yong and lustie couragious prince king Henry the eight, entering into the flower of lustie youth, and taking vpon him the royall scepter and imperiall diademe of this realme, which at that time flourished in all abundance and riches, whereof the king was inestimably furnished, called then the golden woyle, such grace reigned then within this realme.

Howe the almoner hauing a head full of subtil wit, perceiuing a plaine paye to walke in toward his iourney to promotion, handled himselfe so polittely, that the sound the meanes to be made one of the kings counsell, and to grow in fauour and good estimation with the king, to whome the king gaue an house at Wyndesore in Fleetstreete, sometime sir Richard Empsons, where he kept house for his familie, and so daily attended vpon the king, and in his especiall fauour, who had great suite made vnto him, as counsellors in fauour most commonly haue. His sentences and wittie perswasions in the counsell chamber were alwayes so pitheie, that the counsell as occasion moued them, continually assigned him to be the expositor to the king in all their proceedings: in whome the king receiued such a leaning fantasie, and in respect all for that he was most earnest and readiest of all the counsell, to aduance the kings will and pleasure, hauing no respect to the cause: the king therfore perceiuing him to be a mete instrument for the accomplishment of his deuised pleasures, called him more nere vnto him, and esteemed him so highly, that all the other counsellors were put from the great fauour that they before were in: insomuch, that the king committed all his will vnto his disposition, which the almoner perceiuing, toke vpon him therefore to discharge the king of the waightie and trouble some businesse, perswading the king, that he shoulde not neede to spare anie time of his pleasure for anie businesse that shoulde happen in the counsell: and whereas the other counsellors would diuers times perswade the king to haue sometime recourse into the counsell chamber, there to heare what was done, the almoner would perswade him to the contrarie, which delighted him much: and thus the almoner ruled all that before had ruled him: such did his policie and wit bring to passe. Who was now in high fauour but master almoner? Who had all the saile but master almoner? And who ruled all vnder the king, but master almoner? Thus hee persecuted in fauour, untill at last in came presents, giftes, and rewardes so plentifully, that I dare saie he lacked nothing that might either please his fantasie, or enrich his cofers: fortune smiled so fauourably vpon him, but to what end she brought him, ye shall heare hereafter. Therefore let all men to whome fortune extendeth her grace, not trust to her subtil fauour, and pleasant promises,

The Wolsey of  
the playe coun-  
sell.

misses, vnder coloure whereof, shee carrieth venemous gall.

This almoner thus proceeding in fortunes blissfullnes, it chanced the wars betwene the realmes of England and France to be open, in so much, as the king being fully perswaded in his most roiall person, to invade his foraine enemies with a puissant army, therefore it was necessarie that this roiall enterpryse should be speedily prouided and furnished in euerie degree of things apte and convenient for the same, the expedition whereof, the king thought no mans wit so meete for policie and painfull trauell, as was his almoner, to whome therefore he committed his whole trust therein, and he being nothing scrupulous in anie thing that the king would commaund him to doe, although it seemed to other verie difficult, tooke vpon him the whole charge of all the busines, and brought all thinges to good passe in a decent order, as all manner of victuals, pponitions, and other necessities conuenient for so noble a boi-age and armie.

All things being by him perfected, the king advanced to his roiall enterpryse, passed the seas, and marched forward in good order of battell, vntill he came to the strong towne of Tournay, to the which he laid his siege, and assailed it verie strongly continually with such vehement assaults, that within short space it was yelded vnto his maiestie: vnto the which place, the Emperour Maximilian repaired vnto the king with a great army like a mightie prince, taking of the king his graces wages, which is a rare thing, and but selddome seene, an emperour to fight vnder a kings banner.

Thus after the king had obtained this puissant fort, and taken the possession thereof, and set all things there in due order, for the defence and preservation thereof to his vse, he departed thence, and marched towarde the citie of Turney, and there laide his siege in like maner: to the which he gaue so fierce and sharpe assault, that they were constrained of fine force to render the towne vnto his victorious maiestie: at which time, the king gaue the almoner the bishopricke of the same sea towards his paines and diligence sustained in that tourney. And when the king had established all things agreeable to his will and pleasure, and furnished the same with noble captaines and men of warre for the safegarde of the towne, he returned againe into England, taking with him diuers noble personages of France being prisoners, as the duke of Longuile, and vicount Clarimont, with other, which were taken there in a skirmish. After whose returne, immediatly the sea of Lincolne fell void by the death of doctor Smith late bishop there: the which benefice his grace gaue to his almoner, late bishop of Turney elect, who was not negligent to take possession thereof, and made all the speede he could for his consecration: the solemnization whereof ended, he found the meanes that he gate the possession of all his predecessors goods into his hands. It was not long after that doctor Bambridge archbishop of Yorke died at Rome, being there the kings ambassadoz, vnto the which sea, the king immediately presented his late and new bishop of Lincolne: so that he had three bishopricks in his hands in one yeere giuen him: then prepared he for his translation from the sea of Lincolne vnto the sea of Yorke: after which solemnization done, he being then an

T. Colley bi-  
shop of Turney.

T. Colley bi-  
shop of Lincolne

T. Wolsey  
archbishop of  
Poike.

archbishop *Primas Anglia*, thought himselfe sufficient to compare with Canterbury, and thereupon erected his crosse in the court, and euery other place, as well within the precinct and iurisdiction of Canterbury, as in any other place. And for as much as Canterbury claimeth a superiouritie ouer Poike, as ouer all other bishopricks within England, and for that cause claimeth as a knowledge of an ancient obedience of Poike, to abate the aduancing of his crosse, in presence of the crosse of Canterbury: notwithstanding, Poike nothing minding to desist from bearing thereof in maner as I said before, caused his crosse to bee aduanced, as well in the presence of Canterbury as elswhere: wherefore Canterbury being moued therewith, gaue vnto Poike a certaine checke for his presumption, by reason whereof, there engendered some grudge betwene Poike and Canterburie. Poike intending to prouide some such meanes, that he would be rather superiour in dignitie to Canterbury, than to be either obedient or equall to him: wherefore hee obtained to be made priest cardinall, and *Legatus de Latere*: vnto whom the Pope sent a cardinals hatte with certaine bulls for his authoritie in that behalfe: Yet you shall vnderstand, that the Pope sent him this woorthy hat of dignitie, as a ietwell of his honour and authoritie, the which was conueied in a verlets budget, who seemed to all men to be but a person of small estimation.

T. Wolsey  
cardinall.

Wherefore Poike being aduertised of the basenesse of this messenger, and of the peoples opinion, thought it meete for his honoz, that this ietwell should not be conueied by so simple a person, and therefore caused him to be stopped by the way immediately after his arriuall in England, where he was newly furnished in all manner of apparell, with all kinde of costly filkes, which seemed decent for such an high ambassadoz: and that done, he was encountred vpon Black-heath, and there receiued with a great assembly of prelates, and lusty gallant gentlemen, and from thence conduced through London with great triumph. Then was great and speedy preparation made in Westminster Abbey, for the confirmation and acceptance of this high order and dignitie, the which was executed by all the Bishops and Abbots about or nigh London, with their rich miters and copes, and other ornaments, which was done in so solempne a wise, as had not bene scene the like, vnlesse it had bene at the coronation of a mightie prince or king. Obtaining this dignitie, he thought himselfe meete to beare authoritie among the temporall power, as among the spirituall iurisdiction: wherefore, remembzing as well the taunts sustained of Canterburie, as hauing a respect to the aduancement of worldly honour and promotion, found the meanes with the king, that he was made lord Chancellor of England, and Canterbury which was Chancellor dismissed, who had continued in that roome since long before the decess of Hen. the seventh. Nowe being in possession of the Chancelorship, and indued with the promotions of the archbishoppe, and cardinall *De Latere*, hauing power to correct Canterburie, and all other bishops & spirituall persons, to assemble his conuocation when he would assigne, he toke vpon him the correction of matters in all their iurisdictions, and visited all the spirituall houses, hauing in euery Diocesse all manner of spirituall ministers, as commissaries, scribes, apparitors,

T. Wolsey  
lord Chancellor.



riors, and all other officers to furnish his courtes, and presented by preuent  
tion whom he pleased vnto all benefices throughout all this realme. And to  
the aduancing farther of his legantine iurisdiction, and honour, he had mas-  
ters of his faculties, masters *Ceremoniarum*, and such other to the glorifying  
of his dignitie.

Then had he his two great crosses of siluer, the one of his Archbishoprike,  
the other of his legacie, borne before him whither soeuer he went or rode,  
by two of the tallest priestes that he could get within the realme. And to in-  
crease his gaines, he had also the bishopricke of Durham, and the Abbey of  
Saint Albans in Comendam. And after, when doctor Foxe Bishop of Win-  
chester died, he surrendred Durham into the kings handes, and toke to him  
Winchester. Then had he in his hand (as it were in farme) the bishopricks  
of Bath, Worcester, and Hereford, forasmuch as the incumbents of them  
were strangers, and made their abode continually beyonde the seas in their  
owne countries, or else at Rome, from whence they were sent in legation  
to this realme vnto the king, and for their reward at their departure, King  
Henry the seuenth gaue those bishopricks: and they being strangers, thought  
it moze mete for the assurance, to suffer the cardinall to haue their benefices  
for a conuenient summe of money paide them yearly where they remained,  
than either to be troubled with the charges of the same, or to be yearly burde-  
ned with the conueiance of their reuenues vnto them: so that all the spiritu-  
all promotions and presentations of these bishopricks were fully in his dis-  
position, to preferre whom he listed. He had also a great number daily atten-  
ding vpon him, both of noble men and worthy gentlemen, with no small  
number of the tallest yeomen that he coulde get in all the realme, insomuch,  
that well was that noble man & gentleman, that could prefer a tall yeoman  
to his seruice. He shall vnderstand that he had in his hall continually three  
bords. kept with three severall principall officers, that is to saie, a steward  
which was alwaies a priest, a treasurer a knight, and a controller an esquire:  
also a coferer being a doctor, three marshals, three yeomen others in the hall,  
besides two gromes, and almoners. Then in the hall kitchen, two clerkes of  
the kitchen, a clerke controller, a sorueior of the dyessor, a clerke of the spi-  
serie, the which together kept also a continuall messe in the hall. Also in his  
hall kitchen he had of master cookes two, and of other cookes, labourers, and  
children of the kitchen, twelue persons: foure yeomen of the scullerie, and  
foure yeomen of the silver scullerie: two yeomen of the pastrie, with two o-  
ther pastellers vnder the yeomen. Then in his private kitchen a master coke,  
who went daily in beluet or in sattin, with a chaine of golde, with two other  
yeomen and a grome: In the scalding house a yeoman and two gromes:  
In the pantrie two persons: In the butterie two yeomen, two gromes,  
and two pages: And in the peltrie likewise: In the seller three yeomen and  
three pages: In his chaunderie two: In the washarie two: in the wardrobe  
of beds, the master of the wardrobe, and tenne other persons: In the launde-  
rie a yeoman, a grome, thirtie pages, two yeomen purueyors, and one  
grome: In the bake-house a yeoman and two gromes: In the wood-yarde a  
yeoman

Wolsey bi-  
shop of Win-  
chester.

The order of  
the cardinals  
house.

*E. Colley's  
Chappell.*

yeoman and a groom: In the barne one: In the Garden a yeoman and two grooms: Porters at the gate, two yeomen and two grooms: A yeoman of his barge, and a master of his horse: A Clarke of the stable, a yeoman of the same: the saddler, the farrier: a yeoman of his chariot: a sampter man: a yeoman of his stirrop: a muleter: sixteene grooms of his stable, euerie of them kept foure geldings: In the almshouse a yeoman and a groom: In his chappell he had a deane, a great diuine, and a man of excellent learning: a subdeane, a repeater of the quire: a Gospeller, a Psalter, of singing Psalms ten: a master of the Childzen: Seculars of the Chappell, singing men twelue: singing childzen ten, with one seruaunt to waite vpon the childzen: in the Newellerie a Yeoman and two Grooms, ouer and besides diuers retainers that came thither at principall feasts. For the furniture of his chappell, passeth my capacittie to declare, the number of costlie ornaments and richiewels that were to be occupied in the same continuallie: there hath bene seene in procession about the hall, 44. verie rich Coopes of one sute woone, besides the rich Crosse and candlesticks, and other ornaments to the furniture of the same. There had two crosse bearers, and two pillar-bearers in his great chamber: and in his priue chamber these persons: first the chiefe chamberlaine, and vicechamberlaine: of gentlemen vsiers, besides one in his priue chamber, he had twelue daily waiters: and of gentlemen waiters in his priue chamber he had six, and of lords nine or x. who had each of them ii. men allowed them to attende vpon them, except the Earle of Darbie, who had allowed fise men: then had hee of gentlemen, of cupbearers, caruers, and sewers both of the priue chamber and of the great chamber, with Gentlemen dailie waiters there, fortie persons: of yeomen vsiers 6. of grooms in his chamber 8. of yeomen in his chamber fise and fortie dailie: he had also almes men, sometime moze in number than other sometime.

There was attending on his boord of doctors and chaplaines, besides them of his chappell, sixteene dailie: a clarke of his closet: secretaries two: and two clerks of his signet, and foure counsellors learned in the law. And for as much as it was necessarie to haue diuers officers of the chauncerie to attende vpon him, that is to saie, the clarke of the crowne, a riding clarke, a clarke of the hamper, and a chaser of the war: then a clarke of the cheeke, as well vpon the Chaplaines, as of the yeomen of his chamber: he had also foure Footemen, which were garnished in rich running coats, when soeuer he rode in anie tourney: then had he an herault of armes, and a sergeant of armes, a Physition, an apothecarie, foure minstrels, a keeper of his tents, an armorer, an instructor of his wards, two yeomen of his wardrobe of his robes, and a keeper of his chamber continuallie in the court: he had also in his house the suruicior of Booke, and a clarke of the greene cloth. All these were dailie attending, doleue lying, & vp rising, & at meales: he kept in his great chamber a continuall boord for the Chamberers and Gentlemen officers, hauing with them a messe of the young Nobles, and another of Gentlemen: and besides all these, there was neuer an Officer, Gentleman, or wooothie person, but he was allowed in the house some 3. some 2. and all other one at the least, which grew to a great number of persons,

persons. Thus far out of the Checkrol, besides other officers, seruants, retayners, and luters that most commonly dined in the hall.

After that hee was thus furnished, hee was sent twice in ambassage to the emperor Charles the first, for diuers vrgent causes touching the kunges Maiestie, it was thought, that so noble a prince (the cardinal) was most mete to be sent: wherefore, being readie to take vpon him the charge thereof, was furnished in all degrees and purposes, most like a great prince: for first he proceeded forth furnished like a cardinall, his gentlemen being very many in number, were clothed in liuery coates of crimsen veluet of the best, with chains of gold about their neckes, and his yeomen and meane officers in coates of fine scarlet, garded with black veluet a hand broad.

Thus furnished, he was twice sent into flanders to the emperor, then lying in Bruges, whome he did most highlie entertain, discharging all his charges and his mens. There was no house within the towne of Bruges, wherein any gentleman of the cardinals were lodged, or had recourse, but the owners were commanded by the emperors officers, that they, vpon pain of their liues should take no monie for any thing that the cardinals seruants did take of any kind of victuall, no although they were disposed to make anie costlie banquets: commanding furthermore their said hosts, to see that they lacked no such thinges as they honestly required for their honesty and pleasure. Also the emperors officers euery night went through the town from house to house, where as any English gentlemen did repast or lodged, and serued their liueries for all night, which was done in this maner. First, the officers brought into the house a cast of fine manchets, and of siluer two great pots with white wine, and sugar to the weight of a pound; white lightes and yellow lightes of wax; a boll of siluer with a goblet to drunk in, and euery night a staffe to torch. This was the order of the liueries euery night; and in the morning when the same officers came to fetch away their stuffe, then would they account with the hosts for the gentlemens cosses spent in the day before.

Thus the emperor entertained the cardinall and all his traine for the time of his ambassage there. And that done, he returned into England with great triumph.

Now of his order in going to Westminster Hall dalle in the terme; first ere he came out of his priuy chamber, he hearde seruice in his closet, and there satde his seruice with his Chaplaine; then going againe to his priue Chamber, he would demande, if his seruantes were in a readines, and had furnished his Chamber of Presence, and wayting Chamber, beeing thereof then aduertised, came out of his priue Chamber about eyght of the clocke, apparelled all in redde, that is to saie, his upper garment cyther of fyne Scarlet, or else fyne Crymsen Tassita, but most commonlie of fyne Crymsen Saten engrapned, his pillion of fyne Scarlet, with a necke sette in the inner side with blacke Veluet, and a Tippet of Sables about his necke, holding in his hand an Orange, thereof the substance within was taken out, and filled wyth agayne with the parte of a Spooonge, wherein was Vineger and other confections agaynst the Pestilent Ayres, the which hee moste commonlie helde:

W. Atolley  
twice ambassa-  
dor to the em-  
peror Charles.

helde to his nose when he came among anie presse, or else that hee was pestered with manie sutoys: and before him was borne first the Broade Seale of England, and his Cardinals Hatte, by a Lorde, or some Gentleman of worship, right solemnelie: and as soone as he was once entered into his chamber of Presence, his two great Crosses were there attending to bee borne before him: then cryed the Gentlemen Ushers, going before him bare headed, and saide: In before my Lords and masters, on before, make waite for my lords grace. Thus went he downe through the hall with a Serieant at armes before him, bearing a greate Pace of siluer, and two gentlemen carrying two greate pillars of siluer, and when hee came at the Hall doze, there was his mule, being trapped all in crimson beluet, with a saddle of the same, and gilt stirrups.

Then was there attending vpon him, when hee was mounted, his two Crosse Bearers, and his Pillar bearers in like case, vpon great horses, trapped all in fine Scarlet. Then marched hee forwarde with a Traine of noble men and Gentlemen, hauing his footemen, foure in number about him, bearing each of them a gilt Polar in their hands: and thus passed hee forth, vntill he came to Westminster Hall doze, and there lighted, and went vp after this maner into the Chauncerie, or into the Star Chamber: howbeit, most commonlie hee woulde go into the Chauncerie, and stay a while at a Barre made for him beneath the Chancerie on the right hand, & there commune sometime with the Judges, and sometime with other persons: and that doone, hee woulde repaire into the Chauncerie, and sitting there vntill eleuen of the clocke, hearing of suites, and determining of other matters, from thence hee woulde diuers times go into the Star Chamber as occasion serued. There he neither spared high ne lowe, but iudged euerie state according to his merits and desert. Hee vsed also euerie Sundae to resort to the Courte, then being for the moste parte of all the yeere at Grenewich, with his former triumphes, taking his Barge at his owne Stayes, furnished with yeomen, standing vpon the Bayles, and his Gentlemen beeing within about him, and landed agayne at the three Cranes in the Mintrie: and from thence hee rode vpon his Mule, with his Crosse, his Pillars, his Hatte and Broad seale carped afore him on Horse-backe through Chamis Streete, vntill he came to Billingsgate, and there tooke his Barge again, and so was rowed to Grenewich, where hee was receiued of the lords and chiefe officers of the kings house, as the Treasurer, Controller, and other, and so conueyed into the kings chamber: then the Court was woonderfullie furnished with Noble men and gentlemen: and after dinner among the Lordes, hauing some consultation with the King, or with the Councell, hee woulde depart homeward with the like triumph.

Thus in greate honour, tryumphe, and glorie, hee raygned a long season ruling all thinges within the Realme appertayning vnto the King. His house was alwaies resorted to with Noblemen and Gentlemen, feasting and banqueting Ambassadors diuers times, and all other right noble: and when it pleased the King for his recreation, to repaire to the Cardinals house,



as he did diuers times in the yere: there wanted no preparations, or furniture: Banquets were set forth with maskes and mummeries, in so gorgeous a sort, and costly manner, that it was an heauen to behold. There wanted no Dames or Damoisels, méte or apte to daunce with the maskers, or to garnish the place for the time: then was there all kinde of musick, and harmony, with fine voices both of men and children.

A maske and  
a banquet.

One time the king came suddenly thither in a maske with a dosen maskers all in garments like shephearbes, made of fine cloth of Golde, and Crimofin satten pained, and Cappes of the same, with Cypars of good visionie, their haire and beards, either of fine golde-wire silke, or blacke silke, hauing firebrakes torch-bearers, besides their drums, and other persons with visars, all clothed in satten of the same colour: and before his entering into the Hall, he came by water to the water gate, without ante noise, where were laid diuers chambers and guns charged with shot, and at his landing they were shot off, which made such a rumble in the aire, that it was like thunder: It made all the Noblemen, Gentlemen, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, to muse what it should meane, comming so suddenly, they sitting quiet at a solempne banquet, vnder this sort: First yee shall vnderstande, that the Tables were set in the Chamber of Presence lust couered, and the Lorde Cardinall sitting vnder the cloth of Estate, there hauing all his seruice alone: and then was there set a Ladie with a Noble man, or a Gentleman and a Gentlewoman throughout all the Tables in the Chamber on the one side, which were made and toynd as it were but one Table, all which order and deuice was done by the Lorde Sandes then Lorde Chamberlaine to the king, and by sir Henry Guilford Comptroller of the kings Maiesties house. Then immediatlie after the great Chamberlaine, and the saide Comptroller, sent to loke what it shoulde meane, (as though they knewe nothing of the matter,) they looking out of the windowes into the Chamis, returned againe and shewed him, that it seemed they were Noblemen and straungers, arrived at his bridge, comming as Ambassadors from some forreine Prince: with that quoth the Cardinall, I desire you, because you can speake French, to take the paines to go into the hall, there to receiue them according to the Estates, and to condua them into this Chamber, where they shall see vs, and all these Noble Personages, being merrie at our Banquet, desiring them to sit downe with vs, and to take part of our fare. Then went he incontinent downe into the Hall, whereas they receiued them with twentie newe Torches, and conueyed them hysse into the Chamber, with such a noyse of Drummes and Flutes, as seldome had bene hearde the like. At their entering into the Chamber two and two together, they went direalie before the Cardinall where he sat, and saluted him reuerentlie, to whome the Lorde Chamberlaine for them saide: Sir, for as much as they be straungers, and can not speake English, they haue desired mee to declare vnto you, that they hauing vnderstanding of this your triumphant Banquet, there was assembled such a number of excellent Dames, they coulde doe no lesse vnder suppozte of your Grace, but to repayze hysse, to biewe

as well their incomparable beautie, as for to accompanie them at Humme-chance, and then to daunce with them: and sir, they requite of your Grace licence to accomplish the said cause of their coming. To whom the Cardinal said, he was very well content they should so doe.

Then went the Maskers, and first saluted all the Dames, and returned to the most worthiest, and there opened their great cuppes of golde filled with crownes, and other pieces of golde, to whom they set certaine pieces of gold to caste at.

Thus perusing all the Ladies and gentlewomen, to some they losse, and of some they woun: and perusing after this maner all the ladies, they returned to the Cardinall with great reuerence, poling downe all their golde so left in their cup, which was about two hundred crownes: At all (quoth the Cardinall) and so cast the dice and wan them, where at was made a great noise and toy. Then quoth the lord cardinal to the lord Chamberlaine, I pray you (quoth he) that you would shew them, that me seemeth there should be a Nobleman amongst them, who is more meete to occupie this seate and place then I am, to whome I would most gladly surrender the same according to my dutie, if I knewe him. Then spake the lord Chamberlaine to them in French, and they rounding him in the eare, the lord Chamberlaine said to my Lord Cardinall: Sir (quoth hee) they confesse that among them there is such a noble personage, whom if your grace can appoint him out from the rest, he is content to disclose himselfe, and to accept your place: with that the cardinall taking good aduisement among them, at the last quoth he, me seemes the gentleman with the blacke beard should be euen hee: and with that he arose out of his chaire, and offered the same to the gentleman in the blacke beard, with his cap in his hand. The person to whom he offered the chaire was sir Edward Newill, a comely knight, that much more resembled the kings person in that maske than any other.

The king perceiuing the cardinall so deceiued, could not forbear laughing, but polled downe his visar and master Newills also, and dashed out such a pleasant countenance and chere, that all the noble estates there assembled perceiuing the king to be there among them, reioyced verie much. The cardinall likewise desired his Highnesse to take the place of Estate: to whom the king answered, that he woulde go first and shifte his apparell, and so departed into my lord Cardinals chamber, and there newe apparellled him: in which time, the dishes of the banquet were cleane taken vbye, and the Tables spread againe with newe cleane perfumed clothes, euery man and two man sitting still, untill the king with all his maskers came among them againe all newe apparellled: then the king tooke his seate vnder the cloth of Estate, commaunding euery person to sit still as they did before: In came a newe banquet before the king, and to all the rest throughout all the Tables, wherein were serued two hundred diuers dishes, of costly dainties and subtilties. Thus passed they forth the night with banquetting, dauncing, and other triumphes, to the great comfort of the king, and pleasant regarde of the Nobilitie there assembled. Thus passed this Cardinall his time from date to date,

daie, and yere to yere, in such great wealth, soie, triumph, and glorie, hauing alwaies on his side the kings expectall fauour, untill fortune enuied his prosperous estate, as is to the world well knowne, and shall be partly touched hereafter.

Ladie Marie king Henries daughter was bozne at Greenwich on the 11. of februarye.

Ladie Mary the kings daughter bozne.

Margaret Quene of Scottes, king Henries eldest sister, who had after the death of her first husband (James king of Scots slaine at Bamsstone) married Archibald Douglas earle of Anguise, fled into England, for feare of the duke of Albany, that had taken her two sons, she lay at Harbottle, where shee was deliuered of a childe called Margaret. But shortly after Archibalde Douglas her husband went home againe into Scotlande without leaue taking: wherefore the king sent for her to London, where she was royally receiued and lodged at Baynards Castle, and there shee tarried a whole yere ere she returned.

The Quene of Scots fled into England.

The king for the honoz of his sister Margaret quene of Scots, on the 19. and 20. day of May, prepared and kept solemne Iusts, wherein the king himselfe, the duke of Suffolke, the Earle of Essex, and Nicholas Carew esquire, answered all commers.

This yere the Cardinall caused all those to be called to accompts, that had dealt with the kings money, and had the occupying thereof in the wars, or otherwise. This audit troubled manie, for some were found in arerages, and some saued themselves by policie, & surely he so punished persturie with open infamie, causing the offenders to weare papers, and so forth, that in his time it was lesse vsed then in long time before: he punished also lordes, knights, and men of all degrees, for riots, for bearing out wrongs, and for maintenance practised in their countries, whereby the poore men liued quietly, and no man durst vse bolstering, for feare of imprisonment. It was a strange matter to see, a man not trained by in the lawes, to sit in the seate of iudgment, to pronounce the law, being aided at the first by such as according to the ancient custome did sit as associates with him: but he would not sticke to determine sundrie causes, neither rightly decided, nor iudged by order of law: and againe such as were clere cases he would some time prohibite the same to passe, call them into iudgement, frame an order in controuersies, and punish such as came with vntrue surmises, afore the iudges themselves, which had receiued such surmises, and not well considered of the controuersies of the parties: he ordained by the kings commission, blurs vnder courts, to heare complaints by bill of poore men, that they might the soner come by iustice: so that wise men haue reported, neuer to haue scene this realme in better obedience, and quiet, then it was in the time of his authoritie and rule, ne iustice better ministered, with indifferencie.

Dealers with the kings money called to accompt.

Persturie and other vices punished.

Courts to heare complaints of the poore created.

The duke of Suffolke departed home into his Countrie, and also the duke of Suffolke followed shortly, for he hauing spent liberally in his iournies into France, as also in the solemnization of his marriage, and in house keeping, although he was married, borrowed great summes of money of the king, which he hoped

hoped should haue bene forgiven him: but the cardinall had called him as all other to account.

Henry procured  
the Cardinal to war  
up on the French

In the moneth of October, Matthew bishop of Sion or Sitten, a cardinall of the Swisles, came into England from the emperor Maximilian: At the contemplation of which cardinall, the king lent to the emperor a great summe of money: but the greatest matter that moued the king to be so free to Maximilian, was because the same money should bee imploied on men of war against the French king, toward whom of late the k. had conceived a grudge. Whereupon was Richard Pace sent first into Germanie with a great sum of money to wage the Swislers, which vnder the conduct of the emperor Maximilian, invaded the dutchie of Millaine, but without anie great gayne returned from thence, leauing Millaine in the French mens hands at that time. And now for a newe reliefe was this Cardinall sent from Millaine, at whose instance mony was assigned to be deliuered, and certaine Genouaies undertooke the exchange, which made not payment at the day, although they had receiued it of the king.

1517  
A greete drought  
in winter, and a  
great frost.

This yere was a great drought, for there fell no rain to be accounted of, from the beginning of September, till the moneth of May in the next yere, where through in some places, men were faine to drue their Cat tell 3. or 4. mile to water.

Also for a time the Thamis was frozen, that men with horse and carts might passe betwixt Westminster and Lambeth.

The number of  
strangers in  
London multi-  
plied.

About this season, there grew a great hart-burning, and malicious grudge amongst the Englishmen of the city of London against strangers, and namely the artificers founde themselves sore grieved, for that such numbers of strangers were permitted to resort hither with their wares, and to exercise handie craftes, to the great hinderance and impouershing of the kings liege people: and this malice grew to such a point, that one Iohn Lincolne a Worker, busied himselfe so farre in the matter, that about Palmes Sundate or the first of Aprill, this eight yere of the kings raigne, he came to one docto Henrie Standish, with these words: Sir I vnderstande that you shall preach at the Spittle on mundate in Easter weeke, and so it is, that Englishmen, both merchants and other are vndone, by strangers, who haue more liberty in this land than they, which is against all reason, and also against the common weale of this Realme: I beseech you therefore to declare this in your Sermon, and in so doing, yee shall deserue greates thanks of my Lorde Mayor, and of all his Brethren, and herewith bee offered vnto the sayde Docto a Bill, containing the matter more at large: but Docto Standish (wiselie considering that there might more inconuenience rise thereof, than hee woulde wishe, if hee shoulde deale in such a sorte) both refused the Bill, and told Lincolne plainelie, that he ment not to meddle with anie such matter in his sermon. Whereupon the sayde Lincolne went vnto one docto Bell, a Chanon of the foresaide Spittle, that was appointed likewise to preach vpon Tuesday in Easter weeke, at the same Spittle, whom he perswaded to reade his sayde bill in the pulpet, which bill in effect containned the grēces that manie founde with strangers for



for taking the linings awaie from artificers, and the entercourse from merchants, the redresse whereof must come from the commons knitt in one: for as the hurt touched all men, so must all set to their helping hands: which letter he read, or the chiefest part thereof, comprehending much seditious matter, and then he began with this sentence, *Colum, cali Domino, terram autem dedit filijs hominum*, and vpon this text he entreated, how this land was giuen to Englishmen, and as birds defend their nestes, so ought Englishmen to cherish and maintaine themselves, & to hurt and grieue aliens for respect of their common wealth: and vpon this text, *Pugna pro patria*, he brought in how by Gods law it was lawfull to fight for their countrey: and thus he subtilly moued the people to rebell against strangers: by this sermon manie a light person tooke courage, and openlie spoke against strangers. And as vnhappie would, there had bene diuers cuill parts plaide of late by strangers, in and about the cite of London, which kindeled the peoples rancor the more furiously against them.

The 28. daie of Aprill, diuers yong men of the Citie picked quarrels to certaine strangers, as they passed by the streets, some they did strike, and buffeted, and some they threwe into the channell: wherefore the Maior sent some of the Englishmen to prison, as Stephen Studley Skinner, Stephenson, Betts and other. Then sodainlie rose a secret rumour, and no man coule tell how it beganne. that on Maie daie next, the Citie woulde late all the aliens, insomuch, that diuers strangers fledde out of the citie. This rumour came to the knowledge of the kings Counsell, whereupon the Lorde Cardinall sent for the Maior and other of the counsell of the Citie, giuing them to vnderstande what he had heard. The Maior, as one ignorant of the matter, tolde the Cardinall that he doubted not but so to gonerne the Citie, as peace should be obserued. The Cardinall willed him so to do, and to take good heed that if anie riotous attempt were intended, he should with good policie prevent it. The Maior comming from the Cardinals house about foure of the clocke in the afternone on Maie daie, sent for his brethren to the Guildhall, yet was it almost seauen of the clocke ere the assemblee was set. Vpon conference had of the matter, some thought it necessarie that a substantiall watch should be set of honest Citizens, which might withstand the euill doers, if they went about anie misrule: other were of contrarie opinion, but rather thought it best, that commaundement shoulde bee giuen to euerie man to shut in his doores, and to keepe his seruants within. Before eight of the clocke the Recorder was sent to the Cardinall, with these opinions, who hearing the same, allowed the latter. And when the Recorder and Sir Thomas More, late vndersheriffe of London, and noie of the kings counsell came to the Guildhall, halfe an houre before nine of the clocke, and there shewed the pleasure of the Kings Counsell: whereupon euerie Alderman sent to his warde, that no man should stir after nine of the clocke out of his house, but to keepe his doores shut, and his seruants within till nine of the clocke in the morning. After this commaundement giuen, in the evening, as sir Iohn Mundie Alderman came from his warde, and founde two

An. reg. 9.  
Cvill Day  
day.

young men in cheape playing at the bucklers, and a great many of young men looking on them (for the comendement was scarce published) he commanded them to leaue off, & for that one of the asked him why, he would haue sent him to the counter: but the pzentifes resisted the alderman, taking the young man from him, and cried pzentifes & clubs, then out at euery doze came clubs and other weapons, so that the alderman was faine to fite. Then moze people arose out of euery quarter, and forth came serningmen, watermen, courtiers and other, so that by 11. of the clocke there were in cheape, 6. or 700. and out of Paules churchyard came about 300. so out of all places they gathered, & brake by the counter, toke out the prisoners that had been thither committed by the Maior, for hurting of strangers. Also they went to Newgate, and toke out Studley and Petis, committed thither for the like cause: the Maior and Sheriffes were present, and made Proclamation in the kings name, but nothing was obeyed. Herewith being gathered in plumps, they ran through S. Nicholas Shambles, and at Saint Martins gate, there met with them sir Thomas More, and other, desiring them to go to their lodgings: and as they were thus entreating, & had almost perswaded the people to depart, they within S. Martins threw out stones and bats, so that they hurt diuers honest persons, that were with sir Thomas More, perswading the rebellious persons to cease: in so much as at length, one Nicholas Dennis a Serieant at armes, being there soze hurt, in a furie cried downe with them, and then all the misruled persons ran to the dozes and windowes of the houses within Saint Martins, and spoiled all that they found. After that they ranne into Cozne-hill, and so forth to an house east from Leaden Hall, called the Greene gate, where dwelt one Mewtas a Dickard or Frenchman, within whose house dwelled diuers Frenchmen, whom they likewise spoiled, and if they had founde Mewtas they would haue stricken off his head: some ran to Blanchapleton, and there brake by the strangers houses and spoiled them: they continued thus till thre of the clocke in the morning, at what time they began to withdraue: but by the way they were taken by the Maior and other, and sent to the Tower, Newgate, and Counters, to the number of 300. The Cardinal was aduertised by S. Tho. Parre, whom in all haste he sent to Richmond to informe the king, who incontinently sent to vnderstand the state of the city, and was truly informed. Sir Richard Cholmeley lieutenant of the tower during the time of this busines, shot off certayne pieces of ordinance against the citie, but did no great hurt. About fise of the clocke in the morning, the Carles of Shrewsbury, and Surrey, T. Dokwrey L. Maior of S. Johns, George Neuell L. Burgaueny, and other came to London, with such powers as they could make, so did the Innes of Court: but befoze they came the busines was done as ye haue heard. Then were the prisoners examined, and the sermon of Doctor Bell called to remembrance, and he sent to the Tower. A commission of Ope and determiner directed to the duke of Norfolk, and other lords, for punishment of this insurrection. The 2. of May the commissioners with the L. Maior, Aldermen, and Iustices went to the Guild-hall, where many of the offenders were imbeded, whereupon they were arraigned, and pleaded not gillie, had day giuen till the fourth

Petotas a  
Frenchman at  
the Greene gate  
by Leaden hall.

fourth of May: on the which daie the L. Maior, the duke of Suffolke, the earle of Surrey, and other came to sit in the Guild-hall. The Duke of Suffolke entered the Citie with 1300. men: the prisoners were brought through the strates tied in ropes, some men, some laods, but 13. or 14. yeres olde, to the number of 278. persons: that daie John Lincolne and diuers other were indicted. The next day 13. were adiudged to be hanged, halowe and quartered, for execution whereof, were set by 10. paire of gallowes in diuers places of the citie, as at Aldgate, Blanchapleton, Grace-strate, Leaden-hall, before either counters, at Newgate, S. Martins, at Aldersgate, & at Bishops gate, these gallowes were set on wheeles to be remoued from strate to strate, and from doze to doze, whercunto the prisoners were brought, and there executed. On the 7. of Maie was Lincolne, Shirwin, and two brethren called Bets, and diuers other adiudged to die. They were on herdels halowe to the standard in Cheape, and first was Lincolne executed, and as the other had the rope about their neckes, there came a commandement from the king to respite the execution, and then were the prisoners sent againe to prison, and the armed men sent out of London. For it is to be noted that three Quænes, to witte, Katherine Quæne of Englande, and by her meanes Marie the French Quæne, and Margaret Quæne of Scottes, the kings sisters, (then resident in Englande) long time on their knees before the king had begged their pardon, which by perswasion of the Cardinall Wolsey (without whose Counsell hee would doe nothing) the king graunted unto them.

Three quænes  
obtained par-  
don for the  
Londoners.

On the thirtenth of Maie, the king came to Westminster hall, and with him the Lorde Cardinall, the Dukes of Suffolke and Suffolke, the earles of Shrewsbury, Essex, Wilshire, and Surrey, with many lordes, and other of the kings counsell, the Maior of London, Aldermen and other chiefe Citizens, were there in their best luteries by nine of the clocke in the morning: Then came in the prisoners, bound in ropes in a ranke one after another in their thirtes, and euerie one had a halter about his necke, being in number 400. men and 11. women. When they were thus come before the kings presence: the Cardinall laid fore to the Maior and Aldermen their negligence, and to the prisoners he declared how lustily they had deserued death. Then all the prisoners together cried to the king for mercie, and therewith the Lords besought his grace of pardon, at whose request the king pardoned them all. The generall pardon being pronounced, all the prisoners shouted at once, and cast their halters towards the roose of the hall. The prisoners dismissed, the gallowes were taken downe, and the Citizens tooke more hede to their seruants.

The 18. of Maie, Margaret Quæne of Scots departed from London towards Scotland, richly appointed and prepared of all things necessary for her estate through the kings great liberality. She entred into Scotland the 13. of June and was receiued at Berwik, by Archibald Dowglas earle of Angus her husband. In the moneth of June there were with the king diuers Ambassadors from seuerall partes: In honoꝛ of whom, & for their solace, he prepared

Margaret  
quæne of Scot-  
land returned  
into Scotland.

costly suits, he himselfe and 12. other, taking vpon them to suit wth the duke of Suffolke, and 12. of his partakers: there were broken betwē the parties on both sides 508. speares.

Sweating sick-  
nes.

About the feast of Lammas began the sweating sicknes, of the which many men died sodainly in the beginning the reof, and this plague continued till Michellmas, many died thereof in the court, as the lord Clinton, the lord Grey of Wilton, and many other knights and gentlemen, by reason of which contagious sicknes, Michellmas terme was adioyned. After this, to wit, in the winter was a greate death of pestilence, almost ouer all Englande in euerie towne more or lesse, wherefore the k. kept himselfe with small companie about him, willing to haue no resort to the court for feare of infection.

1518  
Pestilence.

Am. reg. 10.

Trinity terme was begun at Oxford, where it continued but one day, and was againe adioyned to Westminster.

Cardinall  
Campeius  
came into  
England.  
Cardinall Col-  
ley made legate

In the moneth of July Laurence Campeius boyn in Boloigne la grace, commonly called cardinall Campeius legate de latere, from pope Leo the 10. to requite and exhort king H. to make war on the Turke.

At the request of the k. of England, and also of the French k. (which sought now to be receiued into friendship with the k. of England) pope Leo constituted cardinall Wolsey his legate in England, joining him in commission with the foresaid cardinall Campeius,

There was at the same time other legates sent into other parts of christendome, about the same matter, as into France, Spain, and Germany: but cardinall Campeius hearing that their suit tok no place in other parts, left off his suite about it, and returned to Rome.

After long suit made of the French king and his counsel, it was agreed, that the city of Tourney should be deliuered to the French k. he paying 600000. crownes for the city, to be paid in 12. yeeres, & 400000. crowns for the castle, the which the k. had builded, (which was not fully performed): and also he should pay 23. thousand pound Turnois, the which sometime the citizens of Tourney ought to the king of Englande, for their liberties and franchises. More the French king should be paie to the Cardinall of England 1000. marke of yere-ly pension, in recompence of his Bishopricke of Tourney. It was further agreede, that the young Dolphine sonne and heire to the French king, should be marrie wth the Ladie Marie king Henries Daughter of Englande, if they both so liked each other when they came to age. And then Charles Bewforde earle of Worcester, Lord Chamberlaine of England, with the bishop of Ely and other, were sent into France, to make deliuey of the said City of Tourney, which was done on the 10. of February. The captain sir Richard Terningham was discharged, and the French men suffered to enter, the Englishmen returned into England sore displeased, for thereby many a tall yeoman lacked liuing, the which would be not labour after their returne but fell to robbing, and led to life.

1519

The 8. of March solemnne iustices were holden, the king himselfe and 8. young gentlemen, taking vpon them to answer the D. of Suffolke and 8. other conuymers with him,

This



This yeere *H.* Henry held his feast of *S.* George at *Windsor*, with as great solemnitie as it had bene the feast of a coronation, where were present all the knights of the order then within the realme.

*An. reg. 11.*

Shortly after certaine gentlemen of the privy chamber, which through the kings lenity in bearing with their lewdness, forgetting themselves, and their duty towards his grace, in being so familiar with him, not having due respect to his estate and degree, were remoued, by order taken by the Councell, vnto whome the *K.* had giuen authoritie to vse their discretions in that behalfe, and then were foure sad and ancient knights put into the kings privy chamber, whose names were, sir Richard Wingfield, sir Richard Ierningham, sir Richard Weston, and sir Wil. Kingstone, and besides these diuers officers were changed in other places.

The French *K.* desirous to continue the friendship latelie begunne betwixt him & the *K.* of England, made means to the cardinal, that they might in some convenient place come to an enteruiew together, that he might haue farther knowledge of King Henry, and *K.* Henry likewise of him. The cardinal therefore breaking with the king of this matter, declaring how honorable, necessary, and conuenient it should be for him to gratifie his friend herein. And thus the *K.* conceiued an earnest desire to see the French *K.* and thereupon appointed to go ouer to *Caleis*, and so into the Marches of *Guisnes*, to meete with the French King. Then were sent vnto *Guisnes*, *Sy.* Nich. Vaux, *Sir* Edm. Belknap, *Sy.* Wil. Sands knights of the garter, commissioners to ouersce the making of a palace before the castle gate of *Guisnes*: these landed at *Caleis* on the 16. of March. There were also sent, the kings master mason, master carpenter, 300. masons, 500. carpenters, 100. joiners, besides many painters, glaziers, tailors, smithes, and other artificers, both out of England, and prouided in *Flanders*, in all to the number of more than 2000.

1520

The said palace was begun on the 19. of March, for the which palace the timber was before bought in *Holland*, and was so long, for the most part, that the same was faine to be bound together and drawne after ships to *Caleis*, for no ship might receiue it. The other timber and boorde was conueied out of England. This palace was framed in diuers places, all the rofes whereof was couered within with canuas curiously painted and also the wals from the second plat downward: it was also glased with the best and clearest glasse that coulde be gotten, from the ouer plat vnto the second plat of the stone work, and round about were houses of office, as pantry, buttry, cellar, and other. And thus was there builded the goodliest Palace of timber, that euer was wrought in these westerly parts of the world.

The palace  
builded before  
*Guisnes* castle.

Then was prouision made in England and in *Flanders* for victuall, wine, and all other things necessary for the furniture of feasts and banquetting.

Herewith were letters writtten to all such lords, ladies, gentlemen and gentlewomen, which should giue their attendance on the *K.* and Queene, which incessantly put themselves in a readines, after the most sumptuous sort. Also it was appointed that the king of England and the French king, in a campe betwene *Arde* and *Guisnes*, with 18. myles, shoulde in the moneth of June

next ensuing abide all commers, being gentle men, at the tilt, at the tourney, and at barriers. Then came into England Orliance B. of armes in France, and made proclamation at the court, that the king of England and the French B. in campe betwene Arde and Guisnes with 18. aydes, in June next ensuing, should abide all commers, being gentlemen, at the tilt & tourney, and at barriers. And the like proclamation was made in the court of France, by Clarendius king of armes of England: also in the court of Burgoign, in Almain, and Italy. For the furnishing of those tusts there was devided a tilt, and all things necessarie for that enterpryse, in a goodly plaine betwene Guisnes and Arde. About the which was cast a great dike or trench, and a costly house or gallery for the kings and quenes, lords and ladies for to stand in and beholde the tusts and other things there done.

King Henry being informed, that his realme of Ireland was out of order, discharged the earle of Kildare of his office of deputy, and thereunto was appointed the earle of Surrey Tho. Howard lord admirall: wherefore the said earle in the beginning of Aprill, tooke leave of the king, and the duke of Dorset folke his father, and passed into Ireland with divers gentlemen, or such as had been of the garrison of Tourney, and had with him 100. preemin of the kings guard, and other to the number of 1000. men, and there he continued two yeeres and more, in which space he had many battels and skirmishes with the wilde Irish.

Appointed for  
the kings train  
into France.

There were appointed to attend vpon the king ouer sea to Caleis, and so to Guisnes, Thomas Wolsey cardinall, 12. chaplaines, 50. gentlemen, 238 servants, 150. horses: the archbishop of Canterbury: the bishoppe of Durham lord priuy seale: the bishop of Ely: Chester, and Excester: the archbishop of Armacan: the Dukes of Buckingham and of Suffolke: the marques Dorset: the earles of Shrewsbury, Essex, Devonshire, Westmerland, Stafford, Kent, Wiltshire, Worcesterhire, Northumberland, Oxford and Kildare: besides, lordes, and knights, ladies, and gentlewomen in great number, whose names I haue set downe in my larger Chronicle.

*An. reg. 12.* Chalengers against all gentlemen on horsebacke and on foote, for all seats of armes for thirtie daies.

The King of England	Sir William Kingstone
The duke of Suffolke	Sir Giles Caple
The lord Marques	Sir Nicholas Carew
Sir Richard Ierningham	Sir Anthony Kneuet.

The French king and seuen gentlemen chalengers of France.

For to furnish the daies of tusts, there were appointed bands, and to enerie band a captaine.

The earle of Devonshire captaine to these:

The Lord Harberd	Sir Francis Brian
The Lorde Edmond Howard	Sir Henry Noris
The Lord Leonard Grey	Master Anthony Browne
Sir Edward Neuill	Master Nicholas Haruy
	Sir Iohn Audley

Master

Master Iohn Parker  
Master William Palmer

Robert Ierningham  
Sir Iohn Neuill

The second capitaine of the bands the lord Montague.

The lord Richard Grey

Sir Geoffrey Gate

The lord Iohn Grey

Sir Rowland Volutele

Sir Thomas Cheiney

Master Arthur Pole

Sir William a Parre

Francis Paines

Sir William Sidney

Iohn Coffen

Sir Griffith Dune

Master Hansard, with o  
ther.

Sir Ralph Eldarcare

The summe of these two bands were 128. for the English side. The king gaue to these two bands 1000. markes, to wit, 50. marke a piece.

King Henry with his traine remoued on the 21. of May, from his manoz of Oxenewich towards the Sea, first to Oteforde, then to Lades, then to Charing, and so on the 25. came to Canterbury intending there to keepe his Whitson tide.

On the next morrow, the emperoz Charles the first returning out of Spaine, arrived with his nante of ships at Withe in Kent, where he was saluted by the Vice-admirall of England, sir W. Fitz William, with fire of the kings great ships, which lay for the safegard of passengers betwixt Caleis and Douer, toward evening the Emperoz entred his boat, and comming toward land was met and receiued of the lord Cardinall. Thus landed Charles the Emperoz at Douer, under his cloth of estate of the blacke Eagle all first on rich cloth of gold, in whose company was the queene of Aragon, with diuers noble estates, and faire ladies of his countrey and bloud, which were receiued at the sea side, by the lord Legate Cardinall and other lords and gentlemen. The Emperoz so accompanied at ten of the clocke at night by torch light, was brought to the castle of Douer, where he rested, and there sir Edward Poynings warden of the fine ports, brought to the Emperoz the keyes of the Castle, who refused them, saying, he knew well that he was out of all danger, and as safe, as if he were at home in his owne realme. The same night about two of the clocke after midnight, the king came to Douer by torch light, and as sone as the emperoz heard of his comming, he arose, and mette with the king at the staire head, where either embraced other in armes, and there they talked together a long time, and alway the king had the Emperoz on his right hand, on the morrow which was Whitson daie, the king and the Emperoz with all the other estates rode vnto Canterbury, the sworde bozne by the earle of Darby, ryding betwene them both, by the kings commandement, and so these princes rode to Canterbury, and to Chyffs Church, where they were receiued with generall procession, by the Lordes Cardinall and other. The k. and the Emperoz went both vnder one canaple vnto Thom. Beckets house, where they made their prayers and oblations, and then went to the archbishops palace, where the Quene of England the emperors Aunt, met him going into the great chamber, of whom he was sofly receiued and welcomed. The Emperoz and the king took a little recreation, and then went to high masse, where they offered,

T. Wall.  
Charles the first  
Emperoz landed  
at Douer.

first the Emperoz, and then the king, and so returned to their trauerses set a part, and after went to dinner, at which seruice the Emperours trumpets sounded and not the kings. On Mondae at nine of the clocke at night, was begun a banquet, which endured till the next morning at thre of the clocke, at the which banquet the Emperoz, the king and the Quene did wash togither, the Duke of Buckingham gining the water, the Duke of Suffolke holding the towell, next them did wash the L. Cardinall, the Quene of France, and the Quene of Aragon. At which banquet the Emperoz kept the estate, the king sitting on the left hand, next him the French Quene, and on the other side sate the Quene, the Cardinall, and the Quene of Aragon, which banquet was serued by the Emperors owne seruants. On Tuesday these estates departed out of Canterbury: The emperoz brought the quene his Aunt to horse backe to Douer ward. Then the Emperoz and the king kept company togither till they came to the Dolones, where they parted. The emperoz went to Sandwich, and so to his fleet, which were in number great ships with two tops the piece 44.

King Henry  
tooke shipping  
toward Caleis.

The king went to Douer, where he rested that night: and on the thursdaie tooke shipping to Caleis, where he landed about 11. of the clocke, where he remained sixe daies, and with him the Quene and ladies, and many nobles of the realme. The number of persons on the king and quenes side were 4334. and of horses, 1637. besides the persons on the French Quenes and duke of Suffolke her husbands, and of the Cardinals.

On the fourth of June, the king with all his nobles, as well the Quene with her traine of Ladies as other, with the whole number of nobles removed from Caleis to Guisnes, into the most noble and royall lodging before sene, for it was a Palace made quadrant, and euerie quadrant was 328. fote long, which was in compasse 1312. fote about, set on stages with great cunning.

The 7. of June, the kings of England and France met at the campe betwene Guisnes and Arde, with both their swordes by alone and boine before them.

The tenth of June, the king of England dined with the French Quene in the towne of Arde: and the Fr. king dined the same day with the Quene of England, in the new Palace made before the Castle of Guisnes, which house was the most sumptuous and costly of riches that hath bene sene.

And after this, these two kings met euery daie after at campe, with diuers lords, and there lasted and turneyed 14. daies: and the two Quenes met at Guisnes and at Arde diuers times.

The 24. of June these two Kings and Quenes with their retinues, met at campe where the iusts were kept, and there they banqueted and daunced with maskings and disguisings, that the like had not bene lightly sene, almost all the night following, and then tooke their leaue and departed: and on the 25. of June, the king of England and the Quene, and all the court, removed from Guisnes to the towne of Caleis, where they rested.

On the tenth of July, the K. with a goodly compante rode to the towne of Graulin



Chauncin in Flaunders, and there met with Charles the Emperoz, and on the next morrow, the Emperoz, and the lady Margaret, the emperors Aunt Dutchesse of Sauoy, with many other great estates, came with the K. of England to the towne of Calais, whereby all the lords and states of England were displaced of their lodgings: and for solace against their comming, was builded a Banqueting house 800. fote compasse, like a Theatre, after a godly deuise, builded in such maner, as I thinke was neuer sene, with sixtene principals made of great masses, betwixt euery mass foure and twenty fote, and all the out sides closed with boord and canuas, within the which, and round about were raised scaffolds of thre stages high, for men and women to stand vpon: and in the midst of the same banqueting house was set vp a great pillar of timber made of 8. great masses, bound together with yron bandes for to holde them together, for it was 134. fote of length, and cost 6. l. 13. s. and 4. d. to set it vp right. The banqueting house was couered ouer with canuas, fastened with ropes & yron as fast as might be deuised. And within the said house was painted the Heauens, with stars, sunne, moone, and cloudes, with diuers other things made aboue ouer mens heads: and there were great Images of twickars couered with canuas painted, representing men of diuers strange nations, and diuers reasons were written by them of the countries that they were likened to be of, and the armes of those countries hanging by them. Also there was made as it were manie ships vnder saile, and windmills on the hills winding: especially there was on the one side set out all the armes of the kings of England, with the kings petigree: and on the other side, the Emperors armes and descent, and about the high pillar of timber in the midst was framed diuers stages, for organs and other instruments of musicke to be played, with men, and children, as well to play on them, as for to set forth their muscicall voices, & to haue made as it were, an heauenly noise. But when the Emperoz, the K. of England, & the other states should haue sit downe to their banquet, this house, and all things els in great abundance being prepared for furnishing thereof, it fortuned, that in the morning of the same day, the wind began to rise, and increasing till the euening, it then on a sodaine blew off all the canuas heauen with planets, &c. and blew out more than 1000. torches and other lights of ware prepared to haue giuen light to the banquet. The seates which were with great riches prepared for the emperoz and the king were dashed and lost. The same night the K. of England with 15. persons more richly apparelled in a maske, went to the Emperors lodging, and in the chamber of presence danced and reueled, and then he departed.

Banqueting  
house in the  
town of Calais.  
Richard Turpin.

Banqueting  
house setted,  
the canuas  
heauen blowne  
downe.

The twelfth of July, the Emperoz, and the lady Margaret supped with the king and queene of England, at the Erchequer, where the same night were 8. companies of maskers, and in euery company were 12. persons, all in gold, silver and beluet richly apparelled. The emperoz & king in this meane time, besides their pastimes, caused the charters before time concluded to be read, all the articles of the league tripartite, agreed betwixt the Emperoz and the king of England, and the french K. were at full declared, to the which the french king had condescended: and for the more exemplifying of the same, hee sent  
musicke:

monſieur de Roch with letters of credence, to ſignify to the emperoz, that in the word of a prince he would obſerue and keepe all the ſame articles, for him, his realme, and ſubiects.

The 8. of July the emperoz Charles and the ladie Margaret, departed out of Calcis. The king gaue to the Emperoz a Baie Courſer, trapped with gold ſmitheſ worke, ſet with ſtones and pearle, in which place the Emperoz alighted from his horſe, and mounted vpon the ſaid courſer, wherein he tooke great delight, and tooke him vp with the ſpurreſ laſtillie, and ſo departed leauiſſie from Calcis, and rode to Grauelin. The king remayned at Calcis ſome few dayes, and then tooke ſhipping with the Queene and Nobility, and had faire winde to Douer, where hee arrived the ſame night with all his companie in ſafetie.

1521

This yere H. kept his Chriſtmas at his manoz of Greenwich, with great roſaltie and open court, & on the 10. of February in his own perſon iuſted with all commers.

Order taken a-  
gainſt incloſures

About this time the king being moued by ſuch of his counſell as had regard to the common wealth of this Realme, conſidering howe for the ſpace of ſittie yeres paſt and more, the nobles and gentlemen of England, being giuen to graſſing of cattell, and keeping of ſhepe, to the great decay of huſbandrie and tillage, furniſhing the ground with beaſts, ſheep and deer, ſo incloſing the ſielos with hedges, pales, and ditches, as might ſtand moſt to their own priuat commodity: Wherefore the king cauſing ſuch good ſtatutes as had bene deuised and eſtabliſhed for reformation in this behalfe, to be reuiſed and called vpon, and alſo direacting forth his commiſſion vnto Juſtices of peace, and other ſuch magiſtrates, that preſentment ſhould be made of all ſuch incloſures, and decay of huſbandry as had chanced within the ſpace of 50. yeres befoze that preſent time. The Juſtices and other magiſtrates, according to their commiſſion executed their authority: and ſo commandement was giuen, that the decayed houſes ſhould be built againe, that the huſbandmen ſhould be placed eſſowes in the ſame, and that incloſed grounds ſhould be laiſde open, & ſoze puniſhment appointed againſt them that diſobeyed.

D. of Buckingham  
ham accused  
and arreſted.

In this meane time Edward Duke of Buckingham was accused of high treaſon, wherefore the king directed his letters to the ſaid duke, being at his manoz of Thornebury in Glouceſterſhire, that incontinently he ſhoulde come to his preſence, which commandement the duke obeyed, and came to London, where he was ſtraightwaies arreſted by ſir Henry Marney captain of the garb, and conueied to the toſter of London on the 16. of Aprill: befoze which time ſir Gilbert Parke the dukes Chancelloz was taken, which had confeſſed matter of high treaſon concerning the kings perſon. There was alſo attached one Nic. Hopkins a monk of the order of Carthuſians, being of Henton priory in Somerſetſhire, & Ide la Court the dukes confeſſor, and other, theſe were priſoners in the Towr.

Ann. reg. 13.

After the apprehenſion of the D. inquiſitions were taken in diuers ſhires of him, ſo that by the knights and gentlemen he was indicted of high treaſon for certaine wordes ſpoken by the ſaide duke at Blechingly in Surrey, to George Neull

Neuill L. Burgauey, and therewith was the same lord attached for concealment, and so like wise was the L. Montague, and both contrived to the Tower: and Sir Edward Neuill brother to the said L. of Burgauey was forbidden the kings presence,

Moreouer, in the Guild hall of London, before Sir John Bruge knight then Mayor of the same Citie, by an inquest, the said duke was indicted of diuers points of high treason, as by the same indictment (which I haue seen and read) it appeareth, inferring, that the said duke intending to exalt himselfe, and to usurpe the Crowne, the roiall power, and dignitie of the realme of England, and to depprue the king thereof, that hee the said duke might take vpon him the same against his allegiance, had the tenth day of March, in the second yere of the kings raigne, and at diuers times before, and after, imagined and compassed the kings death and destruction at London, and at Thornebury in the countie of Gloucester: and for the accomplishment of the wicked intent and purpose, the 24. of Aprill, in the 4. yere of the kings raigne, he sent one of his chaplaines called Iohn de la Court vnto the priory of Henton in Sommerfetshire, which was an house of Carthusian monkes, there to vnderstande of one Nich. Hopkins, a monke of the same house (who was vaineelie reputed by way of reuelation to haue foreknowledge of things to come) what should happen concerning this matter, which he had imagined: which monke, causing the sayd de la Court first to sweare vnto him, not to disclose his words to any maner of person, but only to the duke his master, therewith declared that his M<sup>ty</sup>. the said duke should haue all, willing him for the accomplishment of his purpose to seeke to win the fauor of the people. De la Court came back with this answer, and told it to the duke at Thornebury the morrowe after, being 25. of Aprill. And on the 22. of Iuly the same fourth yere, the duke sent the same de la Court with letters vnto the sayde Monke, to vnderstand of him further of such matters, and the Monke tolde to him agayne for answere, that the duke shoulde haue all: and being asked as wel now as before at the first time, how he knew this to be true, he said, by the grace of God, and with this answere de la Court now also returning declared the same vnto the Duke on the 24. of Iuly at Thornebury aforesaid. Moreouer, the said duke sent the same de la Court agayne vnto the said monke with his letters the 26. of Aprill, in the 5. yere of the kings raigne, when the king was to take his iourney into France, requiring to vnderstand what should become of these warres, and whether the Scottish king should in the kings absence invade this realme or not. The monke among other things, for answere of these letters, sent the duke word that the king should haue no issue male. Againe the said duke the 20. day of Feb. in the 6. yere of the kings raigne, being at Thornebury, spake these wordes vnto Ralph Earle of Westmerland: Well, there are two dukes created in Englande, but if ought but good come to the king, the duke of Buckingham shoulde be next in blood to succede to the Crowne. After this the said duke on the 16. date of Aprill, in the said fift yere of the kings raigne, went in person vnto the Priory of Henton, and there hadde conference with the foresayde Monke Nicholas Hopkins, who told him, that he should be king: whereunto the duke said, that if it chanced,

he would shew himselfe a iust and right wise prince. The monke also tolde the Duke, that he knew this by relation, and willed him in anie wise to procure the loue of the Commons, the better to attayne his purposed intention. The Duke the same time gaue, and promised to giue yerelis vnto the sayde Priorie five pounde, therewith to buy a tunne of wyne: and further promised to giue vnto the sayde priorie in readie money twentie pounds, whereof tenne pounde he gaue in hand, towards the conuryng of water vnto the house by a conduit. And to the sayde monke Nicholas Hopkins, he gaue at that present in rewarde thre pounde, and at one other time fortie shillings, and at another time a marke, and at another time six shillings and eight pence. After this, on the twentieth daie of March, in the tenth yere of the kings raign, he came to the same priorie, and escones had conference with the said monke, to be more fully informed by him in the matters aboue specified, at what time the monke also told him, that he should be king, and the Duke in talke tolde the monke, that he had done verie well to binde his chaplaine John de la Court, vnder the seale of confession, to keepe secret such matters, for if the king should come to the knowledge thereof, it would be his destruction. Likewise, the twentieth daie of October, in the seauenth yere of the kinges raigne, and at diuers other times, as well before as after, the sayde Duke hadde sent his Chancelor Robert Gilbert, chaplaine vnto London, there to buie certayn clothes of gold, siluer, and beluets, euery time so much as amounted to the value of thre hundred pound, to the intent, that the sayde duke might bestow the same, as well vpon knyghtes, esquires, and gentlemen of the kinges house, and yeomen of his gard, as vpon other the kings subiectes, to win their fauors and friendships to assist him in his euill purpose: which clothes the sayde Gilbert did buie, and brought the same to the said duke, who the 20. day of January, in the sayde seauenth yere, and diuers other daies and yeres before and after, did distribute, and giue the same to certayn of the kings subiects, for the purpose before recited. Further more, the sayde Duke the tenth of Iulie, in the tenth yere of the kinges raigne, and diuers other daies and times, as well before as after, did constitute more severall and particular offices in his castles, honors, lordships and lantes than he was accustomed to haue, to the end they might be assistant to him vnder colour of offices, to bring his euill purpose to passe. Moreover, the same duke sent to the king the tenth daie of May, in the ninth yere of his raigne, for licence to retaine any of the kinges subiectes, whom if should please him, dwelling withyn the shires of Hereford, Gloucester, and Somersetshire: and also, that hee might at his pleasure conueie diuers armours, and habiliments for warre into Wales, to the intent to vse the same against the king, for the accomplishment of his naughtie purpose, which was to destroye the king, and to surpe the Royall gouernement and power to himselfe: which suite for licence to haue Retayners, and to conueie such armours and habiliments of Warre, the sayde Gilbert the twentieth daie of Maie, in the sayde ninth yere, and dyuers other dayes before and after at London, and East Greenwich did follow, laboring earnestlie, both to the king and counsell, for obtaining of the same. And the twentieth day of Iuly, in the said ninth yere, the



the saide Duke sent the sayde Gilbert vnto Henton aforesayde, to vnderstand of the aforesayde Spönke Nicholas Hopkins what hee hearde of him: and the Spönke sent him worde, that before Christmas next there shoulde be a change, and that the Duke shoulde haue the rule and gouernement of all Englande. And moreover, the twentieth daie of Februarie, in the eleuenth yeere of the kinges raigne, at Blechinglie in Surrey, the sayde duke sayd vnto the sayd Robert Gilbert his Chancelloz, that hee did expect and tarrie for a time more conuenient to attchieue his purpose, and that it might easilie bee doone, if the nobles of the realme would declare their mindes together: but some of the mistrusted and feared to shewe their mindes together, and that marred all. He said farther the same time vnto the saide Robert Gilbert, that what soeuer was doone by the kings father, was doone by wrong: and still the duke murmured against all that the king then presentlie raygning did. And further he sayde, that hee knewe himselfe to bee so wicked a sinner, that hee wanted Gods fauour, and therefore hee knewe, that what soeuer hee tooke in hand against the king, had the woofle successe. And furthermore, the sayde duke (to alienate the kinges subiectes mindes from duetifull obedience, towarde him and his heires, the twentieth daie of September, in the first yeere of his raigne) being then at London, repoized to Robert Gilbert, that he hadde a certayne writing, sealed with the kings great seale, comprehending a certain act of parliament, in the which it was enacted, that the duke of Somerset, one of the kinges progenitoys was made legitimate. And further, that the saide duke meant to haue deliuered the same writing vnto king Henry the 7. but (said he) I would not that I had so doone for tenne thousande pounds. And furthermore, the same duke the fourth daie of Nouember, in the eleuenth yeere of the kinges raigne, at East Greenwich in the Countie of Kent, sayde vnto one Charles Kneuet esquire, after that the king had reprocued the duke for retaining William Bulmer knight into his seruice, that if he had perceiued that he shoulde haue bene committed to the towre, as he doubted he shoulde haue bene, hee would haue so wrought, that the principall doers the rein shoulde not haue had cause of great reioycing, for he would haue played the part, which his father intended to haue put in practise against R. Richard the 3. at Salisburie, who made earnest suite to haue come to the presence of the same king Richard, which suite if he might haue obtained, he hauing a knife secretlie about him, would haue thrust it into the body of king Ric. as he had made semblance to kneele downe before him: and in speaking these words, he maliciously laid his hand vpon his dagger, and said, that if hee were so euill bled, he would do his best to accomplish his pretended purpose, swearing to confirm his word, by the blood of our Lord.

And beside all this the same D. the 10. of May, in the 12. yer of the R. raign at London, in a place called the Rose, within the parish of S. Laurence Poulney in Cantwolkestreet ward, demanded of the said Charles Kneuet esquire what was the talke amongst the Londoners, concerning the kinges iourneie beyond the seas: and the saide Charles tolde him, that many stode in doubt of the iourney, least the Frenchmen meant some deceit towards the king: after vnto

the D. answered, it was to be feared least it would come to passe, according to the words of an holie monke, for there is (saith hee) a certaine Charter house monke, that diuers times hath sent to mee, willing me to sende vnto him my chancelloz, and I did send vnto him Iohn de la Court my chaplain, vnto whom he would not declare any thing, till de la Court had sworn vnto him to keepe all things secret, and to tell to no creature liuing that he should heare of him, except it were to mee, and the said monke tolde to de la Court, that neither the king nor his heires should prosper, and that I should indeuoze my selfe to purchase the good wills of the communalty of England, for I (the same take) and my blood should prosper and haue the rule of the realme of England. Then said Charles Kneuet, the monke may be deceiued through illusion of the deuill, and that it was euill to meddle with such matters. Well said the D. it cannot hurt me, and so the D. seemed to reioice in the monks words. And further, the same time the D. tolde the said Charles, that if the king had miscaried now in his last sickenes, he would haue chopped off the heads of the cardinall, of sir Tho. Louell knight, and of others: and also said, that he had rather die for it, than to be so bled as he had bene. Moreover, the 10. day of September in the saide 11. yere of this his reign, at Blechingly in the county of Surrey, walking in the gallery there with George Neuell knight, lord of Burgauney, the D. murmuring against the kings counsellors, and their gouernment, said vnto the saide George, that if the L. died, he would haue the rule of the realme in steite of whoe soeuer said the contrary, & withall said, that if the said L. of Burgauney would say, that the D. had spoken such words he would fight with him, & lay his sword vpon his pate, and this he bound with many great oths. These were the points and articles comprised in the indictment, and laid to his charge, wherof he was by the inquest found guilty.

D. of Buckingham arraigned.

On the 13. of May, the said D. was brought from the towre by water vnto Westminister hall, before the D. of Suffolke high steward of England, to accomplish the high of appeale of the pères or pères of the realm, and to discern and iudge the cause of the pères. There were also appointed to sit as pères and iudges vpon the D. of Buckingham, the duke of Suffolke, the marques Dorset, the earles of Worcester, Deuonshire, Essex, Shrewsbury, Kent, Orford, & Darby, the lords of S. Iohns, de la Ware, Fitz Waren, Willoughby, Brooke, Cobham, Herbert and Morley. There was made within the Hall at Westminister a scaffold for these lords, and a presence for the Judge, railed, and counter railed about, and barred with degrees. When the lords had taken their place, the D. was brought to the bar, and vpon his arraignment pleaded not guilty, and put himselfe vpon his pères. Then was the indictment read, which the D. denied to be true, and (as he was an eloquent man) alledged reasons to falsifie the indictment, verie pithilie. The kings attorney against the dukes reasons, alleged the examinations, confessions, and proofes of witnesses. The duke desired the witnesses might be brought forth: and then came before him Charles Kneuet, sir Gilbert Perk his chancelloz, Iohn de la Court his confessor, and Nicholas Hopkins the monke of Henton that had fed his humour with baine speeches: diuers pzelumptions & accusations were laid to him by Charles Kneuet, which

he would haue couered. But the depositions being read, and the deponents deliuered prisoners to the officers of the tower, finally, he was found guiltie by his peeres, and hauing iudgment to suffer as in case of treason is vsed, was led again to his barge, and so conueied by water to the Temple staires, where he was set aland, and from thence by land through London to the tower with the areafore him, sir W. Sands hauing him by the right arme, and sir Nich. Vaux by the left arme. And on the 17. of May, being the friday before Whitunday, he was deliuered to the shirifs of London, who led him to the scaffold on the tower hill, about 11. of the clocke, and there he was beheaded, in the pcesence of sir Th. Louel and all the people, his body with the head was born by the sisters Augustines to their church, and there buried in the Chappell Church for the close. And now folloiweth the publication at the disgrading of the said Edw. late D. of Buckingham knight and companion of the most noble order of S. George, named the Gartar, which was read and published by Gartar king at Armes, at the feast of S. George in the quire of Windsoze Colledge, standing on the high pase at the dere, all the other officers of armes about him, there being also present the L. marques Dorset knight of the same order, then being the kings deputy for the feast, the earle of Essex, the earle of Wilshire, the earle of Kent, sir Th. Louel, and the L. Je Ware, knights of the said order, with other great audience assembled there on the 8. of June, the 13. yere of Henry the 8. the yere of Christ 1521.

D. of Bucking-  
ham beheaded.

D. of Bucking-  
ham disgraded.

We it knowne unto all men, that whereas Edward late Duke of Buckingham knight, and companion of the noble order of Saint George, named the Gartar, hath latelie done and committed high treason against the King our soueraigne lord, and soueraigne of the said order of the gartar, in compassing and imagining the destruction of the most noble person of our said soueraigne lord the King, contrarie to his othe and due allegiance, and for the which high treason the said Edward hath bene indicted, arraigned, convicted, and attainted, and for the which detestable offence and high treason, the said Edward hath deserued to be disgraded of the said noble order, and expelled out of the said company, and not wothy that his armes, ensignes, and hachmentes should remaine among other the noble ensignes of other noble, vertuous, and approued knights of the said noble order, nor haue the benefits of the said noble order: wherefore our said soueraigne lord the king, soueraigne of the said noble order of Saint George named the Gartar, by the aduise of the other knightes of the said noble order, for his said offences, and committing of the said high treason, willet and commandeth that the said Edward duke of Buckingham to bee disgraded of the said noble order, and his armes, Ensignes, and hachments clarelie expelled, and put from among the armes, ensignes, and hachmentes of the other noble knights of the said order, to the intent, that all other noble men thereby maye take ensample hereafter, not to commit any such heinous and detestable treason and offences, as God forbid they should:

Disgrading of a  
knight of the  
Gartar.

God saue the King.

It is to bee remembred, that Sommer set Herault was in the roode lost behind the hachments of the said duke Edward: and when Gartar spake these wordes,

words, expelled and put from the armes, then the said Somerset violently cast downe into the quire, his creast, his banner, and sword. And when the publicacion was all done, the officers of armes, spurned the said hatchment with their fete, out of the quire into the body of the church, first the sword, & then the banner, and then was the creast spurned out of the said quire through the Church out at the west doore, and so to the bridge, where it was spurned over into the ditch. And thus was the said Edward late duke of Buckingham fully disgraced of the order of Saint George named the Cartar.

The duke of Buckingham had begun a great and sumptuous building of his manor of Thorneburie, but left the same unfinished. The foundation of a very spacious base court was there begun, and certaine gates and towers in it castle like. It was of a foure or five yardes high, and so remained, a token of a noble piece of worke purposed. He made a faire parke hard by the castle, and took much faire ground into it very fruitful of corne, now faire lands for courting. The inhabitants cursed the Duke for those lands so inclosed. There was afore D. Edwards time a parke at east Wood, a mile or more off: but D. Edw. at two times enlarged it to the compasse of six miles, not without many curses of the poore tenants.

3. Leyland.

War betwixt  
the Emperour  
and the French  
king.

In this meane while were the Emperour and the French king fallen at variance, so that the warre was renewed betwixt them. For the pacifying whereof Cardinall Wolsey, with the bishops of Ely and Durham were sent over, there went with them the earle of Worcester the lord chamberlaine, the lords S. Iohn Ferrers and Herbert, the primate of Armacane, sir Th. Bolleign, sir Iohn Pechy, sir Iohn Hussey, sir Richard Wingfield, sir Henry Gildford, and many other knights, esquires, and gentlemen, these arrived at Caleis on the second of August.

Cardinall Wol-  
sey rode into  
Flanders, to  
the Emperour.

The same day came to Caleis ambassadoys from the emperour: and on the 4. of August came the chancelor of France, and the countie de Pallace with 400. horse, by which meanes there met at Caleis the lords of England (before named) of Burgoigne, Spaine, Flanders, and France, with the popes Mator, to make peace betwixt the Emperour and the Fr. king. Cardinall Wolsey would haue furthered a league betwixt the emperour, the K. of England, the K. of France, and the Pope, but the Popes ambassadoy wanted commission thereto, and therefore were letters sent to Rome, and the French men remained still at Caleis till answer came from thence.

The Cardinall Wolsey on the twelfth daie of August rode into Flanders, to speake with the Emperour, which as then laie in Bruges: a mile without Bruges the Emperour receiued him, and did to him as much hono<sup>r</sup> as could be deuised: the cheate was great which was made to the English men, and of euerie thing there was such plentie, that there was no want of things necessarie. The Cardinall, after he had sojourned in Burges by the space of 17. daies, and concluded diuers matters with the Emperour, and accomplished his commission, he took leaue of the Emperour, and the nine and twentieth day of August returned to Caleis, where the ambassadoys of France tarried his coming.



The first of September the Cardinall Chancelloz of England, the Chancelloz of France, and the Chancelloz of Burgoigne rode from Staple inne to our lady church in Caleis. The fourth of September the regent of Naples came to Caleis, to the great counsell there: and the 27. of September the Chancelloz of Hungarie came to the same counsell, but in fine nothing was concluded, but only that the fishermen of both princes might freely fish in the seas without disturbance, till the second day of February next. Thus, when no conclusion of agreement could be accorded, the cardinall sent to the Emperoz the lozde of S. Johns, and sir T. Bolleine knight, to aduertise him what was done.

During the continuance of the Cardinall at Caleis, all writs and patents were there by him sealed, and no shertiffes of shire chosen for lacke of his presence, having there with him the great seale, and full power in things, as if the king had bene there in person. After the returne of the English ambassadors from the Emperoz and French king, the cardinall returned into England about the latter end of November, he landed at Caleis, and from thence took his tourney to Blechingley, where the king welcomed him, and gave him thanks for his great paines.

King Henry wrote a booke against Luther in Germany, and therefore the Pope Leo the tenth, named him Defender of the faith. To the which booke Luther answered verie sharply, nothing sparing his authoritie or maiestie.

King Henry  
wrote against  
Luther.

Pope Leo died this yere, whereupon doctor Pace Deane of Pauls was sent to Rome to make friends in the behalfe of Cardinall Wolsey, who was brought into a vaine hope, through the kings fauour and furtherance, to be elected Pope: but Adrian the first was chosen before doctor Pace could come to Rome, and so that suite was dashed. This Pace was a right worthy man, and one that gave in counsell faithfull aduise, learned he was also and endued with manie excellent god gifts of nature, courteous, pleasant, and delighting in musicke, highlie in the kings fauour, and well heard in matters of weight.

Doctor Pace  
Dean of Pauls.

This yere was a great death in London and other places of the Realme: manie men of honoz and great worthip died, and amongst other doctor Fitz James bishop of London, in whose place was elected doctor Tunstall. Also a great death in London and other places, for wheate was solde for twenty shillings the quarter.

A great death,  
and death in  
England.

The earle of Surrey returned out of Ireland, and came to the court on the 25. of January, Many complaints to the king were made by the marchants of the Frenchmen which spoiled them by sea of their goods, for by reason the wars were open betwixt the emperoz and the French k. many ships of war were abroad on both parts, and now and then the English men fell into their hands, and were vsed as enemies. namely by the French men, whereof the French ambassadors promised restitution, but little was recovered. In the month of Januarie therefore, the king commanded all his ships to be rigged and made ready, which was done with all diligence.

Ships rigged  
to the sea.

In this meane time grudges and displeasures still grew and increased be-

twæne the king of England and the French king, till at length, the duke of Albany returned into Scotland, contrarie to that which was covenanted by the league. The french king alledged, that he was not proue to his going thither, and wrote to the king, that the said duke was entred Scotland without his assent. Hereupon the king sent six ships to the sea well appointed, the admirall thereof was Christopher Coo, an expert sea man, his commission was to safegard the merchants, and other the kings subiects that were in danger to be grievously spoiled and robbed on the sea by the Frenchmen, Scots, and other rouers.

The 8. of febz. the lord Dacres warden of the marches, fore-aneest Scotland entred into Scotland, with 500. men, by the kings commandeiment, and there proclaimed that the Scots should come into the kings peace by the first of March following, or else to stand at their perils: the D. of Albany being then within five miles with a mighty power of Scots.

The eleventh of Februarie, the lord Burgauey was brought from the tower to Westminster, and there in the kings bench confessed his inditement of mispission.

The L. Montague was about the same time restored to the kings fauor.

This yere died the lord Brooke, sir Edward Poynings knight of the gartar, sir John Pechy, and sir Edward Belknappe, valiant capitaines.

A Scottish rouer called Duncan Camell, after long fight was taken on the sea by John Arundell esquire of Cornwall, who presented him to the king, and he committed him to the tower, where he remained a long season.

The 6. of March, the French L. commanded all Englishmens goods being in Burdeaur to be attached, and put vnder arrest, and retained not onely the money due to be paide, for the restitution of Tourney, but also withhelde the French Queenes dowry. The French ambassado; therefore was called afore the councell, and the cardinall laid sore to his charge, that contrary to his promise at all times made on the French kings behalfe, affirming, that he meant nothing but peace and amitie to be obserued in all points with the L. of England, yet now the English merchants had not onely their goods staied at Burdeaur, but also they and their factors were laide in prison in full breach of all peace and amitie afore time concluded. The ambassado; as well as he coulde excused his master, but in the end he was commanded to kepe his house, and the French hostages that were appointed here to remaine for the money to be paid for the deliury of Tourney, were committed to safe keeping: wherewith also all the French men in London were arrested, committed to prison, and put to their fines: but they were after ten daies set at libertie, vpon finding sureties to appeare before the maior, or else afore the councell at a certain day, and to pay the fine vpon them assessed, which fine the king pardoned to diuers of the poorer sort.

A generall proscription of the realme of England.

This yere betwæne Casser & Michalmas was made a generall proscription of all the realme of England by taking of musters, and otherwise in euery countrey, as may appeare by the charge sent to a chiefe Constable.

William Fitz Williams knight, Richard Fitz Lewes knight, Robert Norwich sergeant

sergeant at the law, and Iohn Tirell esquire, commissioners assigned for our  
 soveraigne lordz the king, to the baillie and chiefe constable of the halfe hun-  
 dred of W. greeting, where afore this we the said William, Richard, Robert  
 and I. Tirell, by our late precept to you directed, charged you the high constables  
 of the same hundred, to give monition and charge to all constables of e-  
 very hamlet, parish, and village within the said hundred, personally to appeare  
 afore us the said commissioners on munday next comming, the last day of the  
 moneth of March at Waltham holy crosse, and there to bring with them a  
 certificate in writing of the names of all manner of men above the age of 16.  
 yerres, dwelling within every towne, hamlet and village within the said hun-  
 dred, and to do further as by the same precept more plainly doth appeare. We  
 now escones in the behalfe of the king our soveraign lord, wil and command  
 you, that you duely execute the said precept: and also that ye give knowledge,  
 warning, and commandement to all manner of temporall men dwelling, in-  
 habiting, or abiding within any towne, hamlet, parish, or village, within the  
 same halfe hundred, personally to appeare before us the kings said commisi-  
 oners at Waltham holie crosse aforesaid, the said munday next comming,  
 furnished and apparelled in their best array for the warre, that is to say, with  
 bowes, arrowes, bills, harnesse, or any other weapons, artillery, or harnesse for  
 the war, which they or any of them have within the townes and hamlets of the  
 said hundred and every of them. And that they also the said last day of this pre-  
 sent moneth of March do certifie us in writing at Waltham holy crosse aforesaid,  
 of all their names, and to whom they belong unto. Also who is lord of eue-  
 ry towne or hamlet within the said hundred, and who be stewards. Item, who  
 be parsons of the same townes, and what the benefices be worth by yere Also  
 who be owners of euerie parcell of land within any towne, hamlet, parish, or  
 village, within the said hundred, with the pcerly value of euerie mans land  
 within the same townes, hamlets, parishes, and villages. And of euerie stocke  
 and stockes of cattell, or other things that be occupied vpon any farme within  
 the said townes, hamlets, and parishes, and who be owners of them Also what  
 allants or strangers dwell in any towne, hamlet, or parish within the saide  
 hundred, and where they were borne, and under whose dominion. Item, what  
 occupation, myserie, or substance they be of. Item, the value and substance  
 of euerie person being of 16. yerres and aboue, dwelling within your saide  
 hundred, hamlets, and parishes, as well spirituall as temporall. Also what  
 pensions goeth out of any lands there to any religious or spirituall men, and  
 that ye faile not this to doe, as ye tender the kings pleasure, and will auoide  
 the contrarie. At Brentwood, the 27. day of March in the 13. yere of the reign  
 of King Henry the eight.

There were sent to the sea under the conduct of sir William Fitz Williams  
 viceadmirall: 8. great ships well manned and furnished for the wars, and 7.  
 other ships were sent toward Scotland, which entred the fforth, and profered  
 to enter the Scottish ships that lay in the haucens, but the Scots ranne their  
 ships alond, and the English men followed with boates, landed, and set the  
 ships on fire, and at Lythe toke certaine prisoners, which they brought into  
 England:

*An. reg. 14.*

England: and still the kings great nanie kept the narrow seas: for then was neither peace betwixt England and France, nor open warre.

The king vnderstanding that the Emperoz would come to Caleis, so to passe into England, as he went toward Spaine, appointed the lord marques Dofset to go ouer to Caleis, there to receiue him, and likewise the lord cardinall was appointed to receiue him at Douer.

Cardinall  
Wolsey rode  
toward Douer  
to receiue the  
Emperoz.

The 20. day of May, cardinall Wolsey rode through the city of London toward Douer, there to meete & receiue the emperoz, being accompanied with two earles, 36. knights, 100. gentlemen, eight bishops, ten abbots, thirtie chaplaines, all in beluet and sadden, and seuen hundred yeomen.

The Marques Dofset, with the Bpshopp of Chester, the lord de la Ware, and diuers other, at Caluelin receiued the emperoz in the name of the king of England on the five and twentie daie of Maie, and with all honor brought him to Caleis, where he was receiued with procession, and by the lord Barnes lieutenant of the towne, by the Mayor and merchants of the Staple, in the best manner that might be deuised. On the five and twentieth he took ship at Caleis, and landed at Douer, where the Cardinall with a great number of lordes, knights, and gentlemen of England, was readie to receiue him, and with all the honor that might be, brought him to the castle, where he was lodged.

The emperoz  
Charles came  
to London.

On the 28. of May, the king came to Douer, and there with great ioy the emperoz and he met, and saluted each other. On the thirtieth of May he rode from Douer to Canterburie, and so from thence by easie iournies they came to Greenwich, where the Quene receiued her nephew with all the ioy that might be. On the first of June, the king and emperoz with all their companie marched towards London, where the citie was prepared for their entrie, after the manner as is vsed at a coronation, so that nothing was neglected that might set forth the honor of the city, whereinto they were receiued by the mayor, aldermen, and commons: the crosse in Cheape was new gilt, and eleuen pageants were deuised on stages very faire and excellent to behold. The emperoz was lodged at the Blacke friers, and all his nobles in the new builded house of Bridewell.

On Whitfunday the eight of June the emperoz and the king rode to the church of S. Paul, and there heard masse, which was sung by the cardinall. The emperoz rode to diuers places, being feasted by the king, at Windsor they tarried a whole weeke, where on *Corpus Christi* day the emperoz wore his mantle of the garter, and sate in his stall. The same day both the princes receiued the sacrament, and took their corporall othes to keepe and obserue the league concluded betwixt them. On the morrowe after they departed from Windsor, and came to Winchester on the 22. of June.

The first of July, the emperors naue came before Hampton, containing 180. goodly ships. Then the Emperoz took leaue of the king, of whom he had many gifts and summes of money by waite of loane, and so the first of July he took ship, and made saile towards Spaine, where he arrived in safetie the tenth daie after.

During



During this time, the earle of Surrey lord admirall, bzent shippes in Britaine, and then returned: not long after, he passed ouer to Caleis, entred Picardie, and bzent diuers towncs and castels. He besieged Hesling, but because winter was neer, he raised his siege, and returned.

The D. of Albany in Scotland began to enter this land with a great army, but hearing that the earle of Shrewsbury was coming he toke a truce for six monethes.

In the beginning of this yere, Sultan Soliman Pac, called the great Turke, which was the 8. of the line of Ottoman the first that took upon him to be great capitaine or ruler, and to whome Sultan Solime his father had left the empires of Constantinople, Trebesond, Alexandry, and Babylon, with manie diuers kingdoms & realmes, which Sultan Soliman y<sup>e</sup> yer befoze had gotten y<sup>e</sup> towne of Belgrado, being the keye of Hungary, because he saw all the princes in Christendome now at discord, thought it most for his honor and profit to make war on the Isle of the Rhodes, and to take the same: which Isle had been kept by the space of 224. yeres, by the brethren or knights of the order of S. Iohn of Jerusalem. Diuers things moued him to take this enterprise, one was because this Isle stood so, that the religious of the same oftentimes tooke and destroyed his Shippes as they came with golde, and other riches from Egypt, Sire, and other east parts to Constantinople, so that by thym of that Isle he sustayned moze hurt than by all Christendome, because the sayde Isle stood in the very entrie toward Constantinople. Another motion was, because his father when he dyed, charged him to assaye to take the Rhodes, for to be reuenged of the shame that they had done to his grandfather Mahomet the greates Turke, which was with dishonour beaten from the siege of the Rhodes. But the greatest occasion of all was the exhortation of a great Counsellor of the Religion called Andrewe Amirall borne in Portugale, which knewe the whole estate, and in what case the Towne stood in. The cause why this Andrewe Amirall bare malice to his religion was, because after the death of Brother Fabrica de laretto Lord master of the fr religion, hee was not elected to that honor, but one Philip de Villiers de Lisle Adame of France was named to be Lord master, wherefore the sayde Andrewe prouoked the Turke to come to the Rhodes.

The great Turke seeing so great an occasion offered, and desiring honor, and also knowing the fortresse of the Rhodes to lacke munitions, for the brethren of the order were both of such wealth and pride, and also of such wicked life that they toke no heed of their vow and solemn profession, nor for to do the thing to come, and so their towne unfurnished was some surprised. The said Turke prouided for 300. sattle, in the which he conueied all his artillery, and other things necessarie. In the which army were 60000. miners and pioners prepared to dig and undermine, the rest of the army came by land to a place called Filico, which standeth so direalie against the Rhodes, that a fire male bee come from the one side to the other: from the which place the Turke sent letters to the aboue named Philip de Villiers lord master of the religion, signifying to him, that he would haue the saide Isle, for the great dammage that they had done

Earle of Surrey bzent shippes in Britaine  
I. Skelton,

The Rhodes besieged.

Why the Turke conuerted the Rhodes.

Three score thousand pioners sent to the Rhodes.

to him and his people: and if they would yeld to him the said Ile, he promised on his faith, and by Mahomet his first prophet, they should haue no dammage nor hurt by him, and that they that would depart should go in safetie, and they that would tarry and serue him, should haue good wages: and if they refused this to doe, he sware that he would subuert the wals of their fortreffe, and destroy them all, and make them slaues, which letter was dated at Constantnople, the first day of June.

The Rhodes  
besieged by two  
hundred thou.  
land Turkes.

The said lord master and his companie were greatly abashed of this letter, but yet like hardie gentlemen they intended to defend them, and made all the preparations that they could doe in so short space, and wrote to all Princes Christian of their distresse. But the Turke knowing the great division amongst the christian princes, so that they could send no succour to the Rhodes, sent 200000. Turkes, which arrived in the Ile of the Rhodes on Whitsommer day, which was the festiual day of the Rhodes in honor of S. Iohn Baptist, which sudden comming soe abashed the Rhodians, being but 600. knights, & 5000. other mate to beare armes: yet of noble courage and trusting in God, they determined to defend themselves against the enemies of God. And on the 23 of July the Turke arrived there in his owne person, which much encouraged his people: he bent his ordinance toward the towne, but did no great haringe, wherefore he caused all his pioners to cast earth one banke over another till till they came within a bow shot of the wals: and although that many of the pioners were slaine with ordinance of the towne, they neuer ceased till they had made a banke of earth higher by ten fote than the wall of the towne, and laid there their ordinance, so that no person durst stir on the wals or bulwarks. Thus with mounds of earth was the towne enuironed, and behind the mountaines lay the Basheaur and chieftaines of the Turke, which were euer readie to take their aduantage, and daily they shot into the towne, and beat downe houses and slew the people in the streets, for they vpon the mount might easily see into the towne: besides this, the Turke caused so many mines to be made in diuers places, that they within were not able to make countermines for lacke of people, inso much as women were set a worke, to dig and carry, by reason whereof a great part of the wals were ouerthrowen, and if they within had not made countermines, the towne had ben gotten within a short space. Also the Turke in the moneth of September gaue to the Rhodians 4. great assaults, but the Christians so valiantly defended them, that at every assault they lost ten thousand Turkes and more.

The great Turk seeing the losse of his men at the assaults, sent for Mostaffa Bashaw, and much blamed him, that he had perswaded him that he might haue taken the towne in 12. daies, or in a moneth at the most: wherefore in his furie he would haue put him to death: but in conclusion the Turke determined clearly to raise his siege, and to depart, and so had done, if that same night Sir Andrew Amiral, and a felle within the Rhodes had not written letters, and shot them out on quarels into the Turkes army: by which letters the Turke knew the necessitie of the towne, and feblenes of the people, which caused him to change his purpose: but this treason was espied, the traitors taken, and put

put to terrible execution. The Turke caused so many mines to be made, that both bulwarkes, walls, and towres were ouerthrowen. And so on S. Andrewes euen he caused a great assault to be giuen: but yet the Christians so valiantly defended themselves, that they slew 3000. Turkes, and kept them from entering that day: but the citizens of the Rhodes after this assault came to the lord master, and praised him to haue compassion on them, the lord master comforted them with faire wordes: but by chance about the same time the great Turke sent a letter into the Rhodes, willing them to deliuer the towne, and they all should haue their liues and goods, and they that would tarry should remaine quiet. This letter being knowne, the people cried out on the lord master to take the offer, wherefore calling all his counsell, for diuers wants amongst them, they sent to the Turke two of the religion, for the assurance of his promise, who were well entertained, and had writings sealed of all things that they desired. As the which two knightes, Aymeck Basshaw sware, that there were slain at that siege 64000. Turkes, and 40000. dead of mortalitie & more. And on Christmas day, the great Turke himselfe entered into the Rhodes, and tooke possession thereof, and the lord master & all his religion, the first day of January tooke ship, and sailed to Candy, and so to Rome, and there declared his chance and aduenture. Thus was the towne and the Isle of the Rhodes taken by the great Turke, which was a great succour to all Christian men resorting to the east parts of the world, which chance was much lamented (but too late) throughout all Christendome, and much blame put in princes, because they sent no succour to them of the Isle.

Peeling of the  
Rhodes to the  
Turkes.

1523

The 20. of February, the labie Alice Hungerford a knights wife, for murdering her husband, was led from the tower of London to Holbozne, & there put in a cart with one of her servants, and so caried to Libozne, and both hanged: she was buried in the Gray Friers church at London.

Register of the  
Gray Friers.  
Lady Hunger-  
ford hanged.

Thomas Howard earle of Surrey burned 37. villages in London, disposed the countrey from the east marches to the west, and ouerthrew diuers holdes.

Thomas Ruthall Bishop of Durham being deceased, the king gaue that bishopricke vnto cardinall Wolsey, who resigned the bishopricke of Bath to doctor Iohn Clarke master of the Rolles. And sir Henry Marney that was vice chamberlaine, was made lord pylup seale, and shortly after he was created baron Marney at Richmond.

Doctor Blyth Bishop of Chester was attacked for treason, but he acquitted himselfe.

The 15. of Aprill began a parliament at the Blacke friers in London, and that day the king came into the Parliament chamber, and there sate in the seate roiall, and at his seate on the right side sate the cardinal of Porke, and the archbishop of Canterbury: and at the raile behind stood doctor Tunstall bishop of London, which made to the whole parliament an eloquent oration, declaring the office of a king. First he must be a man of iudgement, according to the saying of the Prophet Dauid, *Deus iudicium tuum regi da. &c.* Also he must be a man of great learning, according to the saying of the prophet, *Erudimini*

Parliament  
at the Blacke  
Friers.

*qui iudicatis terram*. According to which saying, he said that God had sent us a prince of great iudgement, of great learning, and great experience, which according to his princely duty forgot not to study to set forwards all thinges, which might be profitable to his people and realme, lest might be laide to his charge the saying of Seneca, *Es rex, & non habes tempus esse rex*? Art thou a king, and hast no time to be a king? Which is as much to say, as Art thou a king, and dost nothing profitable to thy people? Art thou a king, and seest the people haue an insufficient lawe? Art thou a king, and wilt not prouide remedie for the mischiefes of thy people? These things haue indeed caused the kings highnes to call this high court of parliament, both for remedie of mischiefes which be in the common law, as recoveries, foren vouchers, and corrupt trials; and for making and ordering of new statutes, which may be to the high aduancing of the common wealth: wherefore he willett the commons to repaire to the common house, and there to elect them a speaker, or their common mouth, and to certifie the lord Chancelor of the same, which should there of make report to the kings most noble grace, which should declare his pleasure when he would haue him presented befoze his person.

Station of sir  
Thom. Moore.

This was the cause of the parliament, he saide, but of these things no one word was spoken in the whole parliament, nor any good act made, except the grant of a great subsidie. The commons chose for their speaker Sir Thomas Moore knight, and presented him the saturday after in the parliament chamber. Where he according to the usage, disabled himselfe, both in wit, learning, and discretion, to speake befoze the king, and brought in for his purpose, how one Phormio desired Haniball to come to his reading, which the reto assented, and when Haniball was come, he began to reade *De re militari*, that is, of chivalrie: when Haniball perceiued him, he called him arrogant sole, because he would presume to teach him, which was master of chivalrie in the seates of warre: so the speaker saide, If he should speake befoze the king of learning, and ordering of the common-wealth, and such other like, the king being so well learned, and of such prudence and experience, might say to him as Haniball to Phormio: wherefore he desired his grace that the commons might chose another speaker. The Cardinall answered, that the king knewe his wit, learning, and discretion by long experience in his seruice: wherefore he thought that the commons had chosen him as the most meetest man of all, and so he did admit him. Then sir Thomas Moore gaue to the king his most humble thanks, and desired of him two petitions: the one, if he should be sent from the commons to the king on message, and mislike their intent, that he might with the kings pleasure resort againe to the commons, for the knowledge of their true meaning. The other was, if in communication and reasoning, any man in the common house should speake more largely than of dutie they ought to doe, that all such offences should be pardoned, and that to be entred of record: which two petitions were granted, and thus began the parliament. And euen as there was much ado amongst them of the common house, about their agrément to the subsidie then required, so was there as hard hold for a while amongst them of the cleargie in the conuocation house, namely,



namely, Richard Foxe bishop of Winchester, and Iohn Fisher bishop of Rochester held sore against it, but most of all sir Rowland Philips bicar of Crodonw, one of the canons of Paules a famous and notable preacher in those daies, spake most against that payment. But the cardinall taking him aside, so persuaded the matter with him, that he came no more into the house, willinglie absenting himselfe, thus he giuing ouer his hold, the other yielded, and so was granted the halfe of all their reuenues spirituall for one yeere, to be paid in 5. yeeres following. Now on the 29. of Aprill, the cardinall accompanied with diuers lords, as well spirituall as temporall, came into the common house, where he eloquently declared to the commons, how Francis the French king the first called the most Christian king, had oftentimes broken promise with the king of England, and his nephew Charles the Emperoz, that the king of his honor could no longer suffer. For first he declared that the meeting of the said two princes at Callesnes, the said French king was sworne to keepe all the articles contained in the league, sith the which time he hath made war on the emperors dominions, &c. he also hath withhelden his tribute, and other payments which he should pay to the K. of England, for redemption of Turney and Turwine, &c. Wherefore the king of necessitie was driuen to warre, which in no case could be maintained without great summes of mony, and he thought no lesse than 800000. pound, to be raised of the fifth part of euery mans goods and lands, that is to say, foure shillings of euery pound: for he said that the yeere following, the king and the emperoz should make such war in France as had not bene seene.

After that he had declared his matter at length, exhorting the commons to aide their prince in time of necessitie, hee departed out of the common house.

The morrow after, sir Thomas Moore declared all the cardinals oration againe to the commons, and enforced his demand, saying, that of dutie men ought not to deny to pay foure shillings of the pound. But for all that it was denied, and proued manifestly, that if the fifth part of substance of the realme were but 800000. and if men should pay to the king the fifth part of their goods in money or plate, it was proued that there was not so much money out of the kings hands in all the realme, for the fifth part of euery mans goods is not in money nor plate: for although fine men were well mounted, fine thousand were not so, the gentlemen of lands hath not the fifth part of the value in coine: the merchant that is rich in silke, wooll, tinne, cloth, and such like, hath not the fifth part in money, &c. And then consequentlie, if all the money were brought to the kings handes, then men must barter cloth for victuall, and bread for cheese, and so one thing for another. Then consider that after this valuation, the king hath had by the waie of loane two shillings of the pound, which is 400000. pound, and now to haue foure shillings of the pound, which amounteth in the whole to 12. hundred thousand pound, which first and last is five shillings of the pound, which is almost the third part of euery mans goods, which in coine cannot be had within the realme: for the parts thereof was alledged, that if there were in England but 15000. parishes, and euery parish

An. reg. 28.

Great subsidies granted.

Shilke

There were not  
10000. parishes  
then in England  
as I haue pro-  
ued.

shoulde giue 100. marks, that were but fiftē hundred thousand marks, which is but ten hundred thousand pound: and how many parishes be in Englande one with another, able to spare a hundred marks, out of citie and townes; and where it is written, that in England there be fortie thousand parish Churches, it was proued that there were not 13000. parishes. Then account, the whole summe cannot mount aboue ten hundred thousand pound, and the king demandeth 800000. and he after this valuation hath had 400000. pound, therefore it was thought the sum impossible to be leuied: and if all the coine were in the kings hand, howe shoulde men liue? Also the king had of the spirituell men the last yeere, foure shillings of the pound, &c. To conclude, after long debating, the Commons granted two shillings of the pound of cuerie mans goods and lands that were worth twentie pound, or might dispend 20. pounce by yeere, and so upward, and from fortie shillings to twentie pounce, twelue pence of the pound, and vnder forty shillings of cuerie head sixteen yeeres and upward, foure pence to be payde in two yeeres. This Parliament the 21. of May was adioined to Westminster among the blacke Hons, and ended in the kings Palace at Westminster the 14. of August, at 9 of the clocke in the night.

Viscount Lisle  
created.

The 27. of Aprill, was sir Arthur Plantagenet, a bastard son to king Edward the 4. at Wydevell created Viscount Lisle, in the right of his wife, which was sometime wife to Edm. Dudley beheaded, sir Mauris Barkley lieutenant of Calais was made L. Barkley, sir William Sands, L. Sands, and sir Nich. Vaux, Lord Vaux.

The K. and Q.  
of Denmark ar-  
riued in Eng-  
land.

Christerne K. of Denmarke and his Quene, arriving at the Downes besides Dover the 15. of June, came to London on the 22. of June, and were lodged in the Bishop of Bathes place. The 5. of July, they returned againe to Caleis.

D. of Suffolke  
entered France  
with a power.

In this season the king hauing put an army of men in a readines, caused the same to be transported ouer to Caleis, & appointed the duke of Suffolke to haue the leading thereof, and to make a sojney into France. The duke according to his commission came to Caleis on the 24. of August, and there abiding the army, caused all things to be prepared for the same, as victualles, munition, and such like. There were appointed to attend him in this sournay, the lord Mountacure, and his brother sir Arthur Poole, the lord Sands, the lord Barkley, the lord Powes, and the Baron of Curslon, and of knights, sir Richarde Wingfield Chancelor; of the dutchie of Lancaster, sir John Vere, sir Edward Neull, sir William Kingstone, sir Richarde Westone, sir Andrewe Windsor, sir Robert Wingfield, sir Anthony Wingfield, sir Edward Gilforde, sir Edward Greuile, sir Edwarde Chamberlaine, sir Thomas Lucy, sir Edwarde Digby, sir Adrian Foreescue, sir Richarde Cornwall, sir William Courtney, sir William Sidney, sir Henry Owen, and manie other. The whole armie consisted in 600. Dimillars, two hundred archers on horseback, 3000. archers on fote, and 5000. Billmen. To these also were adioined 1700. taken out of the garisons of Hames, Swines and Caleis, so that in al they were 10500. well armed and appointed for the warre, besides 2600. laboers and pioners. These set out of Caleis on the

the 19. of September. The first enterprize that they attempted was the winning of Bell castle, which they beat downe, and sent the Frenchmen prisoners to Calets.

In this season was the duke of Bourbon high constable of France, revolted from the French king to the service of the emperor, and the king of England: for after it was knowne that this Duke hadde his minde alienated from the French king, sye John Russell (that was after earle of Bedford) was sent into France vnto the saide Duke, which in disguised apparell ordered himselfe so wiselie, that in couert manner hee came to the Duke, and so perswaded him, that hee continued in his former determination, and auoyded the Realme of France. The Duke of Suffolke remooued to Arde, and so into Picardie. At Corbieres a Village betweene Turwing and Saint Omers, there came to him the Lorde of Ilesston, and with him of Spantards, Almaines, Cleueners, and other, 3000 footemen, and 500. horsemen. The Duke being thus furnished with newe aide, marched forward, sending out diuers companies of his men to take towne, and fetch booties. The Frenchmen were so afrayd of the Englishmen, that they fled out of their houses, and left the Townes and Villages voyde. The Duke passed forth till he came to the Towne of Bray, in the which were 1600. men of warre, vnder the gouernance of Captayne Adrian.

Charles D. of  
Bourbon revolted  
from the  
French king.

The 20. of October the duke caused his ordinance to be brought asme it, the which is so well applyed in making batterie to the walles of the Towne, that the Towne was made assailable, and then the Englishmen and other made forward, got the ditches, and after entered vpon the Walles, and so into the towne, and so dauntlesse the French men fled, and thus was gotten þe Towne of Bray. The 21. of October, the army with their ordinance passed the Riuer, and came to a Towne called Knap, all the inhabitants were fled, but they had left good plentie of wine behind them. The duke sent to them of Roy, requiring to haue the towne deliuered to him, which they graunted to doe, because they had no garrison of souldiers to defend them: thither was sent sir Richard Cornwall, with 400. men, which receiued the towne, and kept it in good quiet, till the duke came thither.

The 25. of October, the duke remooued to a Village called L yphome, where the souldiers had greates pillage. The next daie they went to Daunker, and the 27. they came before the towne of Montbedier, in the which were 1000. footemen, and 500. horsemen: but after sir William Scuyington had made batterie foure houres, they within yeelded the Towne vnto the Duke. The duke remained in Montbedier till the last of October, and then remooued to Roy, there on Alhalotune daie the duke made knights, the Lorde Herbert, the lord Powes, Oliuer Manners, Arthur Poole, Richard Sands, Robert Ierningham, Robert Salisbury, Edmond Beningfield, Richard Corbet, Thomas Wentworth, William Storton, Walter Mantill, George Warham, Edward Symmer. The next morrowe the Armie remooued to a place called Beals. The Souldiers being thus ledde from place to place, beganne to grudge, because of the winter season.

D. of Suffolke  
maketh knights

The 6. of Nouemb. the whole army came to a village called Cleay, & there rested that night, on the morrow they came to a place called Benford: at this passage the Duke made Io Dudley, and Rob. Vireight knights.

The 8. of Nouember the duke remoued to Mount S. Martine, and the army remoued to Bermont, and there rested for a time. The Welshmen murmured that they might not return home: but there were to the number of 1000. persons under the leading of sir Iohn Wallope, which had little wages or none, and liued as aduenturers, & therefore were so called, and of some called Brokers, these by spoiling of towines, taking of prisoners, and other such practises, daily brought to the campe daily horses, victuals, cloth, and other necessaries, which stood them in great need.

Aduenturers & Brokers.

The 13. of Nouember the duke remoued to a place within 2. miles of Boggam castle, there the Welshmen set out great shouts and cried: home, home, & as fast the Brokers cried: hang, hang, whereof great busines was like to haue ensued: the Frenchmen yielded the castle of Boggam, and all the Artillerie, which was 76. peeces great and small. The duke brake vp his army and returned, and left at Valencenus all the great ordinance, and returned into England the 30 day of December.

Conspiracy at Couentry.

1524

In December, at the city of Couentry, Francis Philip scholemaster to the kings Henrymen, Christopher Pickering clearke of the kings larder, and Anthony Manuile gentleman, intended to haue taken the kings treasure of his subsidie, as the collectors of the same came toward London, therewith to haue raised men, and to haue taken the Castle of Billingsworth, and then to haue made battell against the king, for the which they were drawn, hanged, & quartered at Tiborn the 11. of February: the other of their conspiracy were executed at Couentry.

Ann. reg. 16.

The earle of Surrey brent Jedworth in Scotland, and took diuers holds. The duke of Albany besieged the castle of Marke, and had in a readines a greates army to invade England, but when hee hearde the earle of Surrey was coming, he fled into Scotland.

Sir Th. Louell deceased.

The 25. of May, deceased sir Thomas Louell knight of the Cartar, at Endfield, and was buried at Halywell an house of Puns besides London, vnto the which house he had been a great benefactor, not only in building of a beautifull chappell wherein his bodie was interred, but in many other godlie buildings, and indowing the same with landes: And the same moneth deceased Thomas Loyde Howarde Duke of Norfolk, and was honourable buried at Lambeth.

The souldiers of Guisnes toke a great boty at a faire in the town of Porquison, and sir Rob. Iernegan with certain dimillances of Caleis, toke diuers French prisoners.

A golden rose sent from Rome to Wall.

The first of September, doctor Thomas Haniball master of the rols, was refused into London as ambassado: from Clement the 7. Pope, which brought with him a Rose of Golde for a token to the king, which was presented to him at Windsor. This tree was forged of fyne gold, and wrought with Branches, leaues, and flowers, resembling roses, set in a pot of Golde, which potte had



had three foot of antike fashion, of measure halfe a pint. In the hypermost rose was a faire saphire loupe pearced the bignes of an Acoyne. The tree was of height halfe an English yard, and in breadth a foot.

It chanced in the yere passed, as partly hath been touched, a grudge to break out betwixen the French king, and the duke of Bourbon, insomuch that the duke for the safegard of his life fled out of the French kinges dominions, whereof the Cardinall Wolley hauing intelligence, comprised in his heade, that if the king our soueraigne Lord could obtaine him to bee his generall in the war against the French king, and considering further that the Duke of Bourbon was fled vnto the Emperour to inuite him to a like purpose, wherefore he being this imagination in his head, thought it good to moue the king in the matter, and after the king was once aduertised hereof, and concealing the cardinals inuention, at last it came to a consultation among the counsell, so that it was concluded that an Ambassage shoulde be sent to the Emperour about the matter, with whome hee was, that the king and the Emperour shoulde ioine in those warres against the French king, and that the Duke of Bourbon shoulde be our kings Champion and Generall in the Fielde, who had a great number of good Souldiers, euer and besides the Emperours Armie, which was not small: and that the king shoulde paie vnto the Duke monthlie wages, both for himselfe and his retinue, insomuch, as Sir Iohn Russell late continuallie beyonde the seas in a secrete place, both to receiue moneie of the king, and to paie the same monthlie to the duke, so that the duke beganne the wars with the French king in his owne territorie and Dukedome, which the king had consisked in his owne hands, being not perfectlie knowne vnto the dukes enemies that he had aunc aide out of England, and thus he wrought the French king much displeasure, insomuch, as the French king was constrained to prepare a puissant armie, and in his owne person to resist the Dukes power, and with force the king droue him to take Daunt, a strong Towne in Italie, with his Hoste, for their securitie, whereas the king Encamped him wonderfullie strong, intending to enclose the duke that hee shoulde not issue forth, yet notwithstanding, the duke did many times issue forth and skirmished with the king.

Howe let vs retorne agayne to the Cardinall Wolsey, who seemed to bee todaynelie altered, and to bee more French than Emperall, howsoever it came to passe: but the French king lying in his Campe, sent secretlie into Englande a priuie person, a verie wittie man, to treat a peace betwixt the French king, and our king: this person was named Iohn Iokin, who was kept as secretlie as might bee, for hee was no French man borne, but an Italian, a man of no greate estimation in France, and for his subtill witte, elected to entreate of such Ambassage, as the French king had giuen him in commission. This Iokin was secretlie conueyed vnto Richmond, and there remained, vntill the Cardinall resorted thither vnto him, where after Easter terme ended, he kept the feast of Whitsonthe verie solemnlie, in which season the Cardinall caused diuers times this Iokin to dine with him. Thus continued this Iokin in Englande long after, vntill at the last, as it shoulde seeme, hee brought

A policy of cardinals Colley, that in the end turned agaynst himselfe.

The duke of Bourbon champion for the King of England against the King of France.  
Sir Iohn Russell.

1525

John Iokin messenger from the French King.

brought to passe the matter that he had in commission. After this, there was sent out immediatlie a restraint to Sir Iohn Russell, into those parts where he made his abiding beyond the seas, that he shoulde retaine that moneths traiges still in his handes, untill the kings pleasure were to him knowne, which shoulde haue beene payde to the duke of Burbon, being then with his retinue encamped within the Towne of Paup, for want thereof at his date, the D. and his men were sore dismaide, when they sawe there was not mony brought as it was wont to be: and being in so dangerous a case, and where Victuals began to bee scant and verie deere, they imagined many waies that shoulde bee the lette, some sayde this, and some sayde that, so that they mistrusted nothing lesse, then the verie cause thereof, inso much as at the last, that for want of victualles, and other necessities, the Souldiers and Captaynes beganne to grudge and mutter, and at last, for lacke of victuals were like all to perishe. The Souldiers beeing in this extremitie, came before their Captayne the Duke of Burbon, and sayde: Syr, wee must bee of verie force and necessity constrained to yelde vs vpp to our enemies, and better it were for vs so to doo, then to sterue lyke dogges. When the Duke sawe their extremitie he saide vnto them with weeping eyes: Syr, (quoth hee) yee are both valiaunt men, and of noble heartes, who haue serued mee heere right worthilie, and for your necessity (whereof I am participant) I doo not a little lament: but I shall desire you, as you are noble in hearte and courage, so to take patience for a day or twayne, and if succour come not then from the King of England, as I doubt nothing that hee will deceyue vs, I will well agree that wee shall all put our selues and our liues vnto the mercie of our Lorde, where with they were all agreeable. And tarrying the comming of the R. money, untill the terme of two dayes were passe: the Duke seeing no remedie, called his noble Captaynes and Souldiers before him, and weeping sayde: Oe noble men and Captaynes, I see no remedie in this necessity, but eyther wee must yelde vs vnto our enemies, or else famishe: and to yelde the Towne and our selues, I know not the mercie of our enemies, as for my part I passe not for their cruelties, for I knowe verie well that I shall suffer death most cruelle if I come into their hands: it is not for my selfe therefore that I doo lament, but it is for your sakes, it is for your liues, and safegarde of your persons, for so that yee might escape the daunger of our enemies hands, I would most gladlie suffer death, therefore good companions, and most noble Souldiers, I shall requite you all to consider the daungerous miserie and calamitie that wee stande in, to sell our liues most deere, rather than to bee murdered like beastes: if yee will bee agreeable, wee will take vpon vs this night to giue our enemies an assault, and by that meanes wee maie eyther escape, or else giue them an overthrowe, and thus it were better to die in the field lyke men, than liue prisoners in captiuitie and miserie, to the which they all agree: then (quoth the Duke) yee perceyue that our enemies Campe is stronge, and that there is noe waile to enter vpon them but one, and that is so planted with Ordnance and strength of men, that it is not possible to attayne to our enemies that waies to fight with them in Campe: And also

now

no's of late you perceiue they haue hadde but small doubt of vs, insomuch, that they haue kept but verie slender watch, therefore my deuice shall bee thus: There shall issue out of the Towne about the deade of the night from vs a number of you that bee of the mosse deliuerest to assaulte their Campe, and they shall giue the assaulte right secretlie, euen directlie against the place of the entrie which is verie stronge and invincible, your fierce and balaunte assaulte shall bee to them of the Campe so doubtfull, that they will turne their strength of the entrie that lyeth ouer against your assaulte, to beate you from your purpose; then will I issue out of the Posterne, and come to the place of their strength the newelie turned, and there or they be aware will I enter, and fight with them in their Campe, and winne their Ordnance, which they haue newelie turned, and beate them with their owne peeces, and then maie you come and soine with me in the ffield. This deuice pleased them woonderfull well. Then prepared they all that daie for the purposed deuice, and kept them secret and close without any noyse, or shotte off peeces within the Towne, which gaue their Enemies the lesse feare of the assaulte: but at night went to their Tentes, and coloched quietlie, nothing mistrusting that after happened vnto them. When the time came that all men were at rest, the assaillantes issued out of the Towne, and there according to their appointmente, they gaue so cruell and fierce assault, that they in the Campe hadde as much to doe as was possible to resist them: and euen as the Duke declared before to his Souldiers, they within were compelled to turne their shotte that laie at the entrie, against they assaillantes. With that issued out the Duke, and with him about fiftene or sixtene thousande men, or more, secretlie in the night, his Enemies beeing not pye of his comming untill hee was entered the ffield, and at his entrie hee tooke all the Ordnance that laie there, and slewe the Gunners, then hee charged the peeces against his Enemies, and slewe them woonderfullie, hee cutte downe the Tentes and Pavilions, and murdered manie within them, ere they were ware of his comming, suspecting nothing lesse than his entrie, so that hee wanne the ffield or euer the King coulde arise to the rescue; insomuch, as the King was taken in his lodging by the Vice-roy of Naples or euer hee were harnessed, his tentes were robbed and spoyled which were woonderous rich, and in the spole and search of the Kings Coffers, the Duke of Burbon found the league vnder the great Seale of Englande newelie made betwene the King of Englande, and the French King, which once perceiued by him, beganne to smell the impediment of his monete which shoulde haue come vnto him from the King, hauing vpon due search intelligence that all the matter was deuised by the Cardinall of Englande. The Duke conceiued such an indignation hereupon against the Cardinall, that incontinentlie hee went to Rome, and there intended to sacke the towne, and to haue taken the Pope, where at the first assault of the walles, the Duke was the first man that was slayne: yet notwithstanding, his Captaynes continued their assaulte, and at the last wanne the towne, and the pope fled vnto Castle Saint Angell, where he continued long in calamitie. All this notwithstanding,

French Kinges  
ben prisoners.

Rome sacked,  
the people fled,  
looke more the  
peere.

standing, which ye haue heard, when newes was brought into England of the taking of the French king, great triumph was made for toy the re of on the 9. of March. Another triumph on the 16. of March, for toy that Rich. de la Pole was slain in the battel of Baup. This battel of Baup is at large set down by Paulus Iouius.

Cardinal Wol-  
suppressed pri-  
ories to build  
his colledges in  
Oxford and in  
Ipswich.

About such time as Cardinall Wolsey was determined to erect his newe colledges in Oxford and Ipswich, he obtained licence and authoritie of Pope Clement the 7. to suppress about the number of forty Monasteries of good fame, and bountifull hospitality, wherein the king bearing with al his doings, neither bishop, nor tempoꝛal lord in this realme durst say any word to the contrarye.

In the executing of this businesse, five persons were his chiefe instruments, who on a time made a demaund to the Prior and couent of the monasterie of Daintrie, for occupping of certayne of their groundes, but the Monkes refusing to satisfie their requestes, straightwaie they picked a quarrell against the house, and gaue information to the Cardinall against them, who taking a small occasion, commanded the house to be dissolved, and to be conuerted to his newe colledge, but of this irreligious robbrie done of no conscience, but to patch by pride, which priuate Wealth coulde not furnish, what punishment hath since ensued at Gods hande (saith mine Authoꝛ) partle our selues haue seene, for of those five persons, two fell at discorde betweene themselves, and the one newe the other, for the which, the Suruuiour was hanged: the thirde drowned himselfe in a Well: the fourth beeing well knowne, and valued woorth two hundred pounde, became in three yeeres so poore, that he begged till his dying date: and the fift called doctor Allane, beeing chiefe executor of these doings, was cruelly maimed in Irelande, euen at such time as hee was a bishop: the cardinall falling after into the Kings greivous displeasure, was depose, and died miserably: the colledges which he meant to haue made so glorious a building, came neuer to good effect: the one at Ipswich cleane pulled down, and the other in Oxford unfinished: and pope Clement himselfe by whose authoritie these houses were thrown down to the ground, was after inclosed in a dangerous siege within the castle of S. Angel in Rome by the emperials, the city of Rome was pittifullly sacked, and himselfe narrowly escaped with his life, as shal be shewed in anno 1527.

R. Hall.  
Ambassadors to  
the emperor  
Charles.

In the month of March, H. sent Cuthbert Tunstall bishop of London, and sir Ric. Wingfield chancelloꝛ of the dutchy, and knight of the garter, into Spain, to common with the emperor for causes, concerning the taking of the French li. and for wars to be made into France on euery side.

The first part of  
all mens goods  
demanded to  
aide the king in  
his wars.

The king being thus determined to make warres in France, and to passe the sea himselfe in person, his counsell considering that about al things, great treasure and plenty of mony must needs be provided, deuised strange commissions, and sent commissioners in euery shire, with priuy instructions how they should proceed in the sittings, & order the people to bring them to their purpose, which was, that the first part of euery mans substance, should be paid in money or plate to the king without delate, for the furniture of his warre: whereof followed



followed such cursing, weeping, and exclamation against both king and coun-  
sel, that pittie it was to heare. And notwithstanding all that could bee saide by  
the Commissioners, to perswade the people to this contribution, the same  
woulde not bee graunted: but in excuse of their denfall, it was alledged that  
wyong was offered, and the ancient customes and lawes broken, which woulde  
not any man to be charged with such payments, except it were granted by the  
estates of the realme in parliament.

The like answer was made by them of the spiritualtie, of whome was de-  
manded the fourth part of their goods.

Mounſier de Prace the emperours ambassadoz, whether offended for admit-  
ting of Iokin in the realme, as before ye haue heard, or for some other cause,  
on the ninth of Aprill departed out of England, not taking leaue of the king,  
cardinall, or rest of the counſel, and did so much, that he passed through France  
in Poſſe, and came to the emperoz before the Ambassadors of England came  
thither, and whether it was by his report, or otherwise, the accustomed fauor  
that the Emperour and his Counſell shewed to the English men beganne to  
decaie.

The emperors  
ambassadoz des  
parteth secretly  
out of England

In this yere (saith Hall) R. H. following his hauke, leapt ouer a ditch besides  
Hitchen, with a pole, and the pole brake, so that if one Edm. Mody a ſoteman,  
had not leapt into the water, and liſt vp his head, which was fast in the claie, hee  
had bene drowned.

R. H. In danger  
of drowning.

The commissioners in al shires sitting for the leuy of the 6. part of all mens  
goods, as ye haue heard, the burthen was so græuous, that it was denied, and  
the commons in euery place were so moued, that it was like to haue growne  
to a rebellion: when this mischiefe was shewed to the R. he said, that he neuer  
knew of that demand, and therfore with great diligence hee sent his letters to  
the city of London, and to other places, in the which hee gently wrote, that hee  
woulde demand no ſum certain, but such as his louing ſubiects woulde grant to  
him of their good wils, toward the maintenance of his warrs. Wherefore the  
cardinall on the 26. of Aprill sent for the maioz of London, the aldermen, with  
moſt ſubſtantiall persons of the common counſell, and when they were come  
to Weſtminſter, he said: the king our ſoueraigne lord, moſt graciouſlie con-  
sidereth the great loue, zeale, and obedience, which you bare vnto him, and where  
like louing ſubiects, without anye grudge, or gaine-ſaying of your louing  
minds you haue granted the ſixt part of all your goods and ſubſtance, freely to  
be paid, according to the firſt valuation, the which louing grant and good mind,  
he ſo kingly accepted, that it was maruelle to ſee: but I my ſelfe do conſider  
the great loſſes, and other charges that daillie hath and doth to you growe, and  
that notwithstanding, anye loſſe or charge that happeneth to you, yet you  
neuer wiſt ſtoode nor gaineſaide anye of the kinges demaundes or commiſſi-  
ons, as it appeereth nowe of late, of which dooings I haue highly the king in-  
formed, for the which hee gaue you heartie thanks. Then I kneeled downe to  
his grace, ſhewing him both your good minds toward him, and alſo the char-  
ges that you continually ſuſtaine, the which at my deſire and petition, he was  
contente to call in, and abrogate the ſame Commiſſion. And there hee by

An. reg. 17.

The demand of  
the ſixt part of  
all mens goods  
turned to a be-  
neuolence.

¶ m m

reason

reason of your own grants might haue demanded the said summe as a certe debt, yet he is content to release and pardon the same, and will nothing take of you but your beneuolence: wherefore take here with you the kings letter, and let it be read to the commons, and I doubt not but you will gladly do as louing subjects should do. The 28. of Aprill, in the common councell of the city was read the kings letter, according to the effect aboue rehearsed. Wherefore the citizens sent 4. aldermen, and 12. commoners to Hampton court, to giue thanks to the L. cardinall, which for busines as was said, could not speake with him, wherefore they returned not content. Then euery alderman assembled his warde, in their places accustomed, and gently moued them of a beneuolence to be granted to the king, the which they openlie denied, saying: That they had paid enough before, with many euill words. The 8. of May the cardinall againe sent for the maior and his brethren, which shewed him what they had done. Then said the cardinall, You haue no such commission to examine any man, I am your commissioner, I will examine you one by one my selfe: and then I shal know the god will that you beare to your prince, for I wil aske a beneuolence of you in his name. Then was it answered to the cardinall by a counsellor of the city, that by the law there might no such beneuolence be asked, nor men to examined, for it was contrary to the statute made the 1. yere of H. Richard the thirde. Also some persons comming before your grace, may for feare grant that, that all daies of their life they shall repent, and come to win your fauor will grant more than they be able to pay of their owne, and so run in other mens debts, so that by dreadfull gladnes, and fearefull boldnes, men shall not be masters of themselves, but as men dismayed, shal grant that, that their wiues and children shall sore reioy. The cardinall heard this saying verie patiently, and answered quietly: Sir, I marvel that you speake of Richard the thirde, which was an vsurper, and a murderer of his owne nephews: then of so euill a man, how can the acts be good, make no such allegations, his acts be not honorable? And it please your grace said the counsellor, although he did euill, yet in his time were many good acts made not by him only, but by the consent of the bodie of the whole realme, which is the parliament. Then Sir William Baily lord maior kneled downe, and besought his grace, that sith it was enacted by the common councell of London, that euery alderman should sit in his owne ward for a beneuolence to be granted, which he perceiued to be against the law, that the same act by the same common councell might be reuoked, and no otherwise. Well said the cardinall, I am content. But nowe will I enter into the kings commission: You maior, & you master aldermen, what will ye giue? My lord, saide the maior, I pray you pardon me, for if I should enter into anie grant, it might fortune to cost me my life: your life, said the cardinall, that is a maruellous word, for your good will towarde the king, will the citizens put you in leopards of your life, that were strange: for if they would that way, then must the king come with a strong power to them to oppresse, wherefore speake no more such words, and with that he studied a litle, and said: My lord maior, let you and your citizens, if you be grieved with any thing, in this demand, humbly and after a good fashion come to me, and I shall

Richard the  
thirde made  
good lawes.

shall so intreat you, that you shall be content, and no displeasure arise, and so I pray you shew your neighbors: and so the maior for that date departed. The maior (saith Hall) did wisely not to assent to grant to any thing, for although he & the aldermen had assented, the common council would neuer haue assented. So on the next morrow it was declared to the common council, that their act that was made, that euerie alderman should sit for a beneuolence to bee granted, was against a statute law: whereupon the said act was annulled: and then was it declared, that euerie man should come to the cardinall, & to grant priuillie what he would, with the which saying the citizens were soye grieved: then the maior gently shewed them, how he durst warrant, that they shoulde be intreated gently, and exhorted them to go thither when they were sent for: which saying so offended them, that in their furie they would haue had Richard Gressham and John Hewster mercers, and Richard Gibson sergeant at armes and merchant tailor, banished out of the common council, and so without answer made what they would do, they departed home.

This demand though the realme was utterly denied, so that the commissioners could bying nothing to passe, and yet they assaied both by faire and foule meanes. For in Kent the lord Cobham was commissioner, and handled them roughly, and by reason one Ioh. Skudder answered him clubbishly, he sent him to the tower of London: for which doing the people muttered against the lord Cobham, and said expressly that they would paye no money, and then they began to account the loanes and subsidies granted, so that they reckoned the kings treasure innumerable: for they accounted that the king had taken of this realme twenty fiftiens sith the 14. yere of his raigne, and in this gradge they euill intreated sir Thomas Boleine at Maidstone.

Thomas Boleine at Maidstone in Kent.

In Essex the people would not assemble before the commissioners in no houses, but in open places. And in Huntingdon shire diuers resisted the commissioners, and would not suffer them to sit, which were apprehended and sent to the flæte. The duke of Suffolke sitting in commission about this subsidie or taske in Suffolke, perswaded by courteous meanes the rich clothiers to assent thereto: but when they came home, and went about to discharge and put from them their spinners, carders, fullers, weavers, and other artificers, which they kept in worke afore time, the people began to assemble in companies, whereof when the Duke was aduertised, he commanded the constables that euerie mans harnesse should bee taken from them: but when that was knowen, the rage of the people increased, railing openlie on the duke, and sir Robert Drurie, and threatened them to death, and the cardinall also: & here with there assembled together, after the maner of rebels, foure thousand men of Lanam, Sudberie, Hadley, and other towne there about, which put themselves in harnesse, and rang larams to increase their number. The Duke of Suffolke perceiving this, began to gather such power as hee could, but that was very slender: yet the bridges being broken, those rebels were letted of comming against the duke.

The duke of Suffolke treasurer of England raised a power in Suffolke, & came to the duke of Suffolke, he first sent to the people, to know their grieve.

¶ In m. 2.

They

They answered, that as they had some matters that grieved them, so had they will to spend their liues in the kings seruice as obedient subiects. Then the duke rode to them, and demanded what was the cause of their disquiet, and who was their captaine? Unto whom one John Greene a man of fiftie yeeres olde answered, that pouertie was both cause and captaine. For the rich clothiers spying of Lanam, and other had giuen ouer occupying, whereby they were put from their ordinarie worke, and liuing. The Duke with carterous words willed them to depart home, promising them, that he and the Duke of Suffolke would intreate the king for them, whereupon they became quiet, and returned, and in token of repentance, they came to Saint Edmundsbury in their shirts, and halters about their neckes desiring pardon: the two dukes toke a few of them to London, which after some imprisonment were pardoned and deliuered.

Great counsell  
called to Porke  
place by West-  
minster.

Then the king at Porke place, where the cardinall lay, called a great counsell, in the which he openlie protested, that his minde was neuer to aske any thing of the commons, which might sounde to the breach of his lawes, wherefore he willed to knowe by whose meanes the commissions were so straightly giuen forth, as to dem and the first part of euerie mans goods. The cardinall answered and said, that when it was moued in the counsell, how to leuie money to the kings vse, the kings counsell, and namely the Iudges said, that he might lawfully demand any summe by commission, and that by the consent of the whole counsell it was done, and toke God to witnes, that he neuer desired the hinderance of the commons, but like a true counsellor deuised how to enrich the king: and the spirituall men saie, that it standeth with Gods lawe, for Ioseph caused the K. of Egypt to take the fifth part of euerie mans goods: but because euerie man laith the burthen from him, I am content to take it on me, and to endure the fame and nosse of the people, for my god wil toward the king, and comfort of you my lords, and other the kings counsellors, but the eternall God knoweth all. Well said the king, some haue informed me, that my realme was neuer so rich, and that there should neuer trouble haue risen of that demand, and that men would pate at the first request, but now I finde all contrarie: then euerie man held his peace. Then the king said, I will no moze of this trouble, let letters be sent to all shires, that this matter made no moze be spoken of. I will pardon all that haue made deniall openlie or secretly: then all the lords kneeled downe, and hartlie thanked him. Then letters were sent, in the which were shewed, that the lords and the iudges, and other of the kings counsell, deuised that demand, and that the cardinall followed the minde of the whole counsell. And thus was the kings great journey into France staied for this time.

Creations at  
Windsor.

This yere the tower at Wyndesore was newlie repaired and builded.

The 18. of Iune, at Wyndesore Henry Fitz Roy, which King Henry the 8. had by Elizabeth daughter to sir John Blunt knight, was created Earle of Nottingham, duke of Richmond and of Somerset, lieutenant general from Trent northward, warden of the east, middle, and west marches. for ancient Scotland, he was hoine in the manor place of Blackmoze in Essex, it was

then



then the Wyllors house of Blackamore. Henry Courtney earle of Devonshire, chosen german to the king, was created marques of Ercester: Henry Brandon sonne to the duke of Suffolke, was created earle of Lincolne: sir Thomas Manners lord Rebeck earle of Rutland, sir Henry Clifford earle of Cumberland, and the lord Fitz Water, sir Robert Ratcliffe was created Viscount Fitz Water, and sir Thomas Boleine treasurer of the kings household, was created vicount Rochford.

In this winter was a great death in the citie of London, so that the terme was adiourned, and the king kept his Christmas at Eltham with a small compante, wherefore it was called the still Christmas.

The cardinal about this time coming to the court at Eltham, took order for altering the Gate of the kings house, many officers and other servants were discharged, & put to pensions. In which number were 64. yeomen of the gerd, which before having 12. d. the day with cheke, were now allowed 6. d. the day, without cheke, and commanded to go home into the countries. He also made new officers in the house of the duke of Richmond, which was then newly begun. Also at that time he ordained a counsell, and established another household for the lady Mary, then being princeesse of the realme, so that all thing that was done, was done by him, for to him was the charge of all things committed. At this time the saide Cardinall gaue to the king the lease of the mannoz of Hampton court, which he had of the lease of the lord of S. Johns, and on which he had done great cost in building: In recompence whereof, the king licenced him to lie in his mannoz of Richmond at his pleasure, and so he lay there at certaine times.

On Shrouetuesday, there was holden solemne iusts at Grenewich, the king and 11. other on the one part: and the marques of Ercester with 11. other on the contrarie part. At these iusts by chance of shivering of a speare, sir Francis Brian lost one of his eyes.

The 11. of februarye, foure merchants of the Stilyard did pennance at Pauls crosse, and an Augustine frier called doctor Barnes bare a sagot: there was present the lord cardinall, with 11. bishops, Iohn Fisher bishop of Rochester made the sermon, which was against Martine Luther of Germanie, and his doctrine.

A truce was taken betwene England and France for a certaine space, and ambassadoys were sent into Denmarke, for restoring of the king: but the Danes would grant nothing thereunto, they did so deadly hate him for his crueltie.

The 28. of Aprill came to the court to Grenewich Mounfier Briond, president of Roane, and Iohn Iokin, which president before the king and his nobles made in the Lat in tong a solemne oration, the effect whereof was, how dreadfull the wars had bene betwene the realmes of England and France. He declared further of what power the king of England was, and what conquest he might haue made in France, the French king being prisoner, whereof he humbly thanked him of his pitie and compassion that he had on them in their necessitie, that he would consent to peace: To the which oration, sir Thomas

Mmm 3.

Moore

1526

The cardinall  
lettereth an order  
in the kings  
house.

Hampton court  
builded by the  
cardinall, and  
giuen to the  
king.

Justs at Grenewich.

Stilyard merchants did pennance.

Ann. reg. 18.  
Peace with  
France.

Moore Chancelor of the dutchie of Lancaster, made answere, saying: that it much reioiced the king, that they first considered, how by his power he might haue oppressed, and how by his pity he had relieued them; therefore he would hereafter, that for kindnes they should shew him none unkindnes, but inuolablie keepe that league which was concluded.

Proclamation  
against vnlaw-  
full games.

In the moneth of Maie, was proclamation made against all vnlawfull games, and commissions awarded into euerie shire, for the execution of the same, so that in all places, tables, dice, cardes, and boules were taken & burnt: but when young men were restrained of these games and pastimes, some fell to drinking, some to ferretting of other-mens contes, and scaling of Dares in parkes, and other vnthriftiness.

Gold enhan-  
ced.

In this season the angell noble was the first part of an ounce Troye, so that five angels were iust an ounce, which was 40. s. sterling, and the angell was worth two ounces of siluer, so that five angels were worth 12. ounces, which was but 40. s. in siluer. By reason of the good weight, and low valuation of the English coine, merchants daily caried ouer great store, because the same was much inhaunsted there: so that to mate with this inconuenience (as it was said) proclamation was made in the moneth of September the first day, throughout England, that the angell should go for 7. shillings 4. pence, the ropall for 11. s. and the crowne for 4. s. 4. pence. And on the 5. of Nouember following againe by proclamation, the angell was enhansted to 7. s. 6. d. and so euerie ounce of of golde should be 45. s. and an ounce of siluer at 3. s. 9. d. in valew.

1527

King Henry kept his Christmas at Okenwich with reuels, masks, disguisings, and banquets ropall.

Great rain and  
land waters.

In the moneths of Nouember, December, and Januarie fell such raine, that thereof ensued great flouds, which destroyed corne-feldes, pastures, and beasses, then was it drie till the twelfth of Aprill, and from that time it rained euerie daie and night till the thirde of June, whereby Coine failed sore in the yere following.

Ambassadors  
into France.

King Henry sent Thomas Boleine Viscount Rochford, & sir Anthony Browne knight, ambassadors into France, which came to Paris to the bishop of Bathe that lay there for the king as legat, and then these thre went to the court, and saw the French king take the oth to keepe the league and amitie, concluded betwene him and the king of England.

Ambassadors to  
the emperor.

Also king Henry sent sir Francis Points knight ambassador to Charles the emperor, and with him Clarentiux king at armes, to demand the one halfe of the treasure and ordinance which was taken at Paue, for so much as the war was made as well at the kings charge as at the Emperors. Also they were commanded to demand one of the French kings sons, which laie in hostage with the emperor, that is to wit, the Duke of Orleans to be deliuered to the king of England: and further that he should call backe his army out of Italie, and if so were that he refused these requests, then should they in the kings name denounce open war against him.

In this meane time Rome was taken by the emperials, & the pope brought into

into captiuitie, as ye shall heare: Charles duke of Barbon, and the emperors army, which all the last winter liued in great pouertie, without clothes, victuals, or wages, so that they were in maner desperate, went towarde Parma and Bonony, belonging to the sea of Rome. The pope hearing this, sent messengers to the duke to redeme his townes, so that they should not be peyled. The duke asked 350000. duckats, for sauing of the popes lawre, and if they might haue so much money, they would depart to Naples: but when they saw they could not haue their demand, they turned toward Florence, whereof hearing the Romans they were glad, for they thought that the Florentines would hold good war with them, and then the Romans would glue the looking on: but the chance turned, as ye shall heare.

E. Hall.  
The citie of  
Rome taken  
and sacked.

The duke of Barbon had thought to haue gone to Florence for this cause: there was a gentleman in Florence, called Peter de Saluato, which had a brother that serued the Emperors in his warres, which promised to deliuer the citie, for hee determined to cause the commons to rebell in the citie against the heads, and in the meane season the dukes companie should scale the walles: when this Peter knewe that the Emperors army was come to a place called le Chafe, within twelue miles of the citie, to bring his purpose to conclusion, he with such as he had trained to him, cried in the city, *Libertate de populo*, that is to say, libertie of the people: with which voice the people stirred, and came to the palace in great number, and there they toke the sixe lords of the counsell, which had the rule of the wealth of the citie, & slue one of them. The familie of Medices, which were the popes kindred, were at this time sore afraide. Thus this Peter de Saluato with the commons, gate that palace, and rane the common bell. In this season was in Florence a captaine of the French kings called Frederico de Bedfo, he had with him 300. men, and when he sawe this rebellion, he came to the commons and said: Sirs, if you continue in this case, your faire citie is like to be subuerted. for your enemies bee at hand: which notwithstanding that you beare some fauour to the emperors, as appeareth, yet their needinesse and pouertie is such, that without mercie they will rob, murder and slaie you, your wiues and children, and set fire on your beautiful city. This Captaine much staied the citizens, notwithstanding that 20. or more persons were slaine in the ruffle: yet they were well auoiced, and suddenlie entred into the city the duke of Urbine, which lay but 6. mile from Florence, and 18. mile from the emperors army, whom he had coasted: but he thought no aduantage to meddle. This Duke brought with him 5000. footemen, and 600. horsemen, and when he was entred the citie, a crie was made that all things were pardoned, so that euerie man departed home, and deliuered his weapon, and thus the city was appeased the 28. of Aprill. All this doing within was unknowen to the emperors army, and so for lacke of knowledge this enterprise was lost: which was happie for the Florentines. Soze displeased were the emperors captains when they knew of this chance, and how the duke of Urbine was entred into the city of Florence. And so shortly they departed, and came to the citie of Seines thirtie mile off, and there they lost their great ordinance, and toke counsell to go to Rome, notwithstanding the trace

The city of  
Rome sawted  
and besieged.

The Duke of Burbon  
slaine.

The pope cur-  
sed the imperi-  
als.

The pope fled to  
castle Angel.

concluded betwixt the pope, and the vice Roy of Naples and Hugo de Moncada, and so much they travelled by night & day, that the 6. of May, with banners displayed they came before the Citie of Rome. The Romanes make Bulwarks, rampiers, and other defences, and laid ordinance on the wals, and shot at them fiercelie. The duke of Bourbon waping that it were not best to lie still and be slaine, considering that they were all naked people, and without great ordinance: determined to take the chaunce, and to give the assaulte, and so manfullie they approached the wals, betweene the Burgo novo and old Rome, but the Romans valiantlie defended them, with hand guns, pikes, stones, and other weapons, so that the enemies were faine to retire. The Romanes were glad, set many fair banners on their towers and bulwarks, which seeing the duke of Bourbon cried to a newe assault: then euerie man with a ladder mounted, and at the first encounter the Romans again put them a little back: which perceyuing the Duke, he cried, God and the empero: then euerie man set on manfullie, there was a sore fight, manie a man felled, but at the last the imperials gotte the wals: and betweene euerie assault fell a mist, so that they within could not see what part they without would assaile, which was profitable to the imperials. At the third assault were slaine three hundred Swichers of the Popes garde. In this last assault was the Duke of Bourbon stricken in the thigh with a Hand-gunne, of the which he shortly died, in a chappell of S. Syth, whither his Souldiours hadde brought him. And this chaunce notwithstanding, the army entred into Rome, and toke the popes palace. The same date that these three assaults were made, pope Clement passed little on the Emperors army, for he had accursed them on the Saturday before, and in his curse he called the Almaines Lutherans, and the Spaniards Durins or Heres. And when he was hearing of masse, so dauntlie the Almaines entered the church, and ouer his gard, and diuers other. He seeing that fled by a priuite way to the castle Angel: and al they that followed him that way and could not enter, were slaine. The cardinals and other prelates fled to the castle S. Angell ouer the bidge, where manie of the common people were ouerpressed, and drowned as they gaue waie to the cardinals, and other states that passed towarde the castle for succour. The cardinal of Senes, of Sefarine, of Toubertine, of Jacobace, and of the Ale, tarried so long, that they could not gette to the Castell for multitude of people: wherefore they were compelled to take another house, called the Palace of Saint George, where they kept themselves for a while, as secretlie as they might. You must vnderstand, that through the citie of Rome runneth a famous Riuer called Tiber, and on the other side of the riuer standeth the castle of S. Angell, or the Borough of S. Angell: and the other side is called Burgo novo. This bidge is called the bidge of Sirt, which lieth directly before the castle. At the end of this Bidge was a woonderous strong Bulwarke, well ordinance, and well manned. The imperials saw they coulde do nothing to the Pope, nor to the port of the citie but by the bidge, determined to assaile the Bulwarke: and so as men without feare came to the Bidge: and the Romanes so well defended them, that they slew almost foure thousand men. That seeing the Prince of Orange, and the Marques of Chasso, with all



all spēde gaue assaulte, and notwithstanding that the Romanes shotte greates Ordnance, Hand-guns, Musrels, and all that might be shot, yet the emperors neuer thynke, but manly entred the bulwarke, and sue, and threw down out at the loupes at the Romans that they found, and after rased the bulwarke to the ground. The Pope in the castle Angell behelde this sight, and with him were thre and twentie Cardinals, of which one called the Cardinall Sancto- rum quatuor was layne, and with him were a thousand prelates and priestes, five hundred gentlemen, five hundred souldiers: wherefore immediatly the Captaines determined to laie siege to the castle S. Angell, least they within might issue out and turne them to damage; wherefore sodainely a siege was planted rounde about the castle: In the meane season, the souldiers fell to spoyle, neuer was Rome so pilled, neither of the Gothes nor Vandals, for the souldiers were not content with the spoile of the Citizens, but they robbed the Churches, brake vp the houses of close religious persons, and ouerthrewe the Cloisters, they spoiled virgins and rauished wiues: men were tormented if they had not to giue every new asker or demander: some were strangled, some were tormented by the priuy members, to cause them to confesse their treasure. This woodnes continued a great while, and some man might thinke, that when they had gotten so much, then they woulde cease and bee quiet, but that was not so, for they plaied continuallie at dice, some 500. some 10000. ducats at a cast: and hee that came to plaie laden with plate, went alwaie againe almost naked, and then fell to rising againe: Spanie of the Citizens which could not patientlie suffer that veration, drowned themselves in Tiber. The souldiers that laie at the siege daylie made iestes of the pope, sometime they had one riding like the pope, with a croce behind him, sometime he blessed, and sometime he cursed, and sometime they woulde with one voyce call him Antichrist. They went about to vndermine the castle, and to haue throwne it downe on his head, but the water that environeth the castle disappointed their purpose. In this season the Duke of Urbine with fifteene thousand men came to aide the Pope: but hearing that Rome was taken, he taried 60. mile from Rome til he heard other word. The Marques of Saluce, and Sir Fredericke de Bede with 15000. footmen, & 1000. horsemen, were at Vitarbe the 10. of May, where they hearing y the city of Rome was taken, also taried: y cardinal of Colume came with an army of Neopolitanes to helpe the emperors men: but when he sawe the crueltie of the souldiers, he did little to helpe them, but hated them much. The Byshopp of Rome was thus besieged till the eight of Iulie, at which date hee yielded himselfe, for necessitie and penurie of all thinges in the castle. And then he was restored to giue graces and grant buls, as he did before: but he taried still in the castle Saint Angell, and had a great number of Almains and Spaniards to keepe him: but the Spaniards bare most rule in the castle, for no man entred nor came out of the Castle, but by them. When the moneth of Iulie was come, coyne beganne to faile in Rome, and the pestilence began to waie strong, wherefore the greates armie remoued to a place called Marupa 40. mile from Rome, leaving behinde them such as kept the Pope. When they were departed, the Spaniards neuer were contented, till they

Rome sacked,  
and spoiled.

they had gotten the Almains out of the castle of S. Angell, and so they had the whole custodie of the Pope. Thus Rome continued in peace till the month of September, that the armie came againe from Narula: for then the Almains sware, that they would set the Citie and all on fire, except the Pope would paie them their wages. The Pope sent to commune with them, two archbishops, two bishops, and two gentlemen, these six persons the Almains took as pledges, contrarie to the Popes meaning, and said they would keepe them there, till they were paid, and so put them in a strong Chamber, in the Palace of S. George: and euerie daie almost they would bring them forth openly, and scould with them, and threat to hang them if they were not paid, and so they kept them imprisoned in a Chamber, and watched them daie and night without the Chamber: and yet for all that, they gatte out at a chimney on S. Andrews euene, and were no more seene of them. The Almains were so wrode with this chaunce, that they came to the Prince of Orange their generall captaine, and demanded monie of him, in such rigorous maner, that he was faine secretly to flic to Skenes: and then for him they chose Captaine, the Marques of Gnasco, which gouerned them till Februarye, that hee brought them to Naples.

Pope Clement  
deliuered.

In the meane space, by meanes of great armies prepared by the kinges of England, of France, and other, for the popes deliuerance, the Emperour sent letters to the pope, and excused himself, that he neither willed nor commanded such mischief to be don, and streightly commanded his Captaines to deliuer him. The prince of Orange and other captaines of the emperour, hearing his commandement, toke agrément with the pope and his cardinals, and so hee and twelue cardinals were bound to performe certain articles to the number of eleuen, and then he was deliuered out of the castle S. Angell, the 10. of December, and was conueied to Crupot, where after he had paid certain monie for the souldiers wages, he was put at full libertie, and the Emperours people departed from him, and from thence he removed to Ancona: the Emperours Captaines (fearing the French armie prepared) caused all the Souldiers to departe out of Rome in the beginning of Februarye, and so came into the realme of Naples, and fortified certaine towncs as they passed, and so came to a Towne called Troy, and there staid. This removing was to them profitable, for if they had taried at Rome, they had bene set on by the Italians on the one side, and the Frenchmen on the other side, that by euerie mans iudgment they shoulde all haue beene slayne or taken. Thus much for the sacking of Rome.

Gerald Fitz Gerald  
deputy of  
Ireland accused.

Also about this time, diuers complaints beeing made of Gerald Fitz Gerald earle of Elydare, late deputie of Irelande, that hee wilfullie winked at the Earle of Desmond, whom he should haue attached by the kings letters, that hee curried acquaintance, and affinitie with mere Irish Enemies, that he hanged, & hee tooke rashlie good subiectes, whom he misstrusted to leane to the Butlers friendship, wherefore Elydare was commanded to appeere, which hee did, leauing in his roome Fitz Gerald of Lelix, whom they shortly deppeyed, and choose the Baron of Delun, whom Oconner took prisoner,

and

and there the erle of Shro, to shew his habilitie of seruise brought to Diuelin  
an armie of Irishmen, hauing Captaines ouer them, Oconner, Omer, and O-  
carroll, and at S. Marie abbey was chosen deputie by the kinges counsell. In  
which office being himselfe (saue onelie in feates of armes) a simple Gentle-  
man, he bare out his honor, and the charge of gouernment verie wisely, tho-  
rowe the singular wisdom of his Countesse, a Ladie of such port, that all E-  
states of the Realme crouched vnto her, so politike that nothing was thought  
substantiallie debated without her aduise, manlike and tall of stature, verie  
rich and bountifull, a bitter enimie, the onelie meane at those daies, whereby  
her husbands countrie was reclaimed from the stuttish and vncleane Irish cu-  
stome, to English habite, bedding, house-keeping, and ciuilitie: but to these  
vertues was poked such a selfe-liking, and Maieestic about the tenure of a  
subiect, that for assurance therof she sticke not to abuse her husbands honor, a-  
gainst her brothers folle: notwithstanding I learne not that she practised his  
vndowing, which ensued, and was to her vndoubtedlie great heauines, as vpon  
whom both the blemish thereof, and the sustenance of that whole family depen-  
ded after, but that she by indirect means coggeled hir brother out of credite to  
aduance her husband, the common voice and the thing it selfe speaketh. At this  
while abode the earle of Aylbare at the court, and with much adu found shift to  
be called before the lords to answer solemnly, they sate vpon him bluerly as-  
sented, and in especiall the cardinall L. Chancellor, disliked his cause, comforted  
his accusers, and enforced the articles objected, and what else sooner coulde be  
gathered thereof in these words.

I wotte well (my Lorde) that I am not the meekest man at this boorde to  
charge you with these treasons, because it hath pleased some of yor peltue fel-  
lows to report that I am a professed enimie to all nobilitie, and namely to the  
Geraldines: but seeing euerie coure boie can saie as much when hee is con-  
trolled, and seeing these points are so weightie, that they should not be dissem-  
bled of vs, & so apparant that they cannot be denied of you, I must haue leaue  
(notwithstanding your stale slander) to be the mouth of these honorable at this  
present, & to trump your treasons in your way, howsoever you take me. First  
ye remember how the lewde earle your kinsman, who passeth not whome hee  
serue, might he change his master, sent his confederates with letters of ere-  
dence to Francis the French k. and hauing but colde comfort there, to Charles  
the Emperour, profering the helpe of Montere and Connagh towarde the  
conquest of Irelande, if eyther of them woulde helpe to winne it from our  
king: howe manie letters, what Precepts, what messages, what thecates  
haue borne sent you to appzehende him, and yet not doone? Why so? for-  
sooth I coulde not catch him: Maie, nate earle, forsooth, you woulde not watch  
him. If he be iustlie suspect, why are ye partiall in so great a charge? if not,  
why are you fearefull to haue him tried? ye sir it will be shorne and deposed to  
your face, that for feare of meeting him, you haue winked, wilfully thynned  
his sight, altered your course, warned his friends, stopped both eares and eyes  
against his detectors, and whensoever you took vpon you to hunt him out, then  
was he sure aforehand to be out of your walk: surely this iugling and false play

Cardinal Wol-  
sey to the earle  
of Aylbare.

Treasons saide  
to the earle of  
Aylbare.

Willis.

little became either an honest man called to such honour, or a noble man put in such trust: had you lost but a cow or a carran of your owne, 200. kerneghes would haue come at your whistle to rescue the prais from the furthestmost edge of Ulster; all the Irish in Ireland must haue giuen you the wale: but in pursuing so needfull a matter as this was, mercifull God how nice, how dangerous, how waywarde haue you bene? One while he is from home, another time he keepeth home, sometimes fled, sometimes in the borders, where you dare not venture. I wis my lord, there be shewd bags in the borders, for the earle of Lyldare, to feare the earle, naie the king of Lyldare, for when you are disposed you raigne more like then rule in the land: where you are malicious the truest subjects stand for Irish enemies, where you are pleased the Irish enemies stand for dutifull subjects: harts, and hands, liues and lands, are all at your curtesie, who sawneth not thereon, he cannot rest within your smell, and your smell is so rancke, that you tract them at your pleasure: whilst the cardinall was speaking, the earle chased and changed colour, and sundry profers made to answer euerie sentence as it came, at last he brake out, and interrupted him thus.

The earle interrupted the cardinall.

My lord Chancellor, I beseech you pardon me, I am short witted, and you I perceiue intend a long tale; if you proceede in this order, halfe my purgation will be lost for lacke of carriage, I haue no Schoole trickes, nor Art of memorie, except you heare me while I remember your words, your second pceesse will hammer out the former.

The lordes associate, who for the most part tenderly loued him, and knew the Cardinals manner of taunts so lothsome, as wherewith they were tried manie yeeres ago, humbly besought his grace to charge him directly with particulars, and to dwell in some one matter, till it were examined thorowlie: that granted.

Lyldares reply to the cardinall.

It is good reason, quoth the earle, that your grace beare the mouth of this chamber, but my lord those mouths that put this tale into your mouth are be rie wide mouths, such as indeed haue gaped long for my wracke, and now at length for want of better stufte, are faine to fill their monthes with smoake: what my cosen Desmond hath compassed as I know not, so I beseech his naked hart, for holding out so long, if he can be taken by my engins that presently lie waite for him, then haue mine aduersaries betrayed their malice, and it is heape of belinous words that resemble a man of straw, that seemeth at a blissh to carrie some proposition, but when it is felt and poyssed, discouereth a vanitie, seruing onely to fraie crows. And I verily trust your honours will see the pfose, by the thing it selfe, within these foure daies: but go to, suppose he neuer be had, what is Kildare to blame for it more than my god brother of Deserie, who notwithstanding his high promises, hauing also the kings power, is not content to take egges for his money, and to bring him in at leisure? Can not the earle of Desmond shuff, but I must be of counsell? can not he be hid except I winke? if he be close, am I his mate? if he be strinded, am I a traitor? This is a doughtie kinde of accusation, which they bzge against me, wherem they are stabled and mired, at my first deniall: you would not see him, say they



who made them so familiar with mine eye sight? or when was the earle in mine equines, or who stood by when I let him slippe, or where are the tokens of my willfull hoodwinke? But you sent him word to beware of you: who was the messenger, where are the letters? Convince my negatiue: see howe losely this idle reason hangeth, Desmond is not taken: well you are in fault, why? because you are: who proues it: no body? what coniectures: so it seemeth: to whom? to your enemies: who told it them: they will sweare it: what other ground? none: wil they sweare it my lords: why, then of like, if they know it, either they haue my hand to theis, or can bring forth the messenger, or were present at a conference, or proue to Desmonde, or some bodie betraied it to them, or the mesclues were my carriers, or vicegerents therein, which of these parts will they chuse, for I know them too well, to reckon my selfe conuict by their bare words, or headelesse hearfates, or frantike othes: my letter were sent read, were anie such writing extant, my seruants and friends are ready to be siffed, of my cosen of Desmond they maie lie lewdlie, since no man here can well contrarie them: touching my selfe, I neuer noted in them either so much wit, or so fast faith, that I would haue gaged vpon their silence, y life of a good hound, much lesse mine owne selfe. I doubt not, may it like your honors to appose them how they came to knowledge of these matters, which they are so ready to depose, but you shall find their twings cheined to another mans trencher, and as it were knights of the post suborned to saie, sweare, and spare the bittermost they can, as those that passe not what they saie, nor with what face they say it, so they say no truth: but of another thing it grieueth me, that your good grace, whome I take to be wise and sharpe, and who of your owne blessed disposition wissheth me well, should be so farre gone in crediting those corrupt informers, that abuse the ignorance of your state and countrey to my perill: little know you my Lord how necessarie it is, not onely for the gouernor, but also for euerie noble man in Ireland to hamper his vnciuill neighbors at discretion, wherein if they waited for procelle of law, and had not those liues and lands you speake of within their reach, they might hap to lose their owne liues and lands without lawe, you heare of a case, as it were in a dreame, and saie not the smart that bereth vs. In England there is not a miranc subiect that dare extend his hand to phillip a pce of the realme: In Ireland, except the M. haue cunning to his strength, and strength to saue his owne, and sufficient authority to rake thieues and barlets when they stir, he shall find them swarme so fast, that it will be too late to call for iustice: if you will haue our seruice take effect, you must not tie vs alwaies to these iudiciall proceedings, where with your realme thanked be God, is enured. As touching my kingdome my lord, I would you & I had exchanged kingdoms but for one moneth, I would trust to gather by more crums in that space, then twice the reuenues of my poore earledome: but you are well and warime, and so hold you, and vpbraide not me with such an obious farme: I sleepe on a cabben, when you lie softe in your bed of downe: I serue vnder the coape of heauen, when you are seru'd vnder a canopie: I drinke water out of my scull, when ye drinke wine out of golden cuppes: my courser is trained to the field, when your genet is taught

to amble: when you are be-graced and be-loved, and crouched and knéled unto, then find I small grace with our Irish boydeters, except I cut them off by the knees.

The cardinall perceived that Ryldare was no babe, and rose in a fume from the councell table, committed the earle, deferred the matter, till more direct probations came out of Ireland.

After many meetings, and objections twittlie refelled, they pressed him soze with a traiterous errand sent by his daughter lady of Clane to al his byethren, to Oneale, Oconner, and their adherents, wherein he exhorted them to warre upon the earle of Desry then deputy, which they accomplished, making a wicked conspracte against the English of Irelande, and made a bloudie skirmish. Of this treason he was found guiltie, and repyled in the Tower a long time, the gentleman betooke himselfe to God, and the king, was heartilie loved of the Lieutenant, pittied in all the Court, and standing in so hard a case, altered little of his accustomed betwe, comforted other noble men Prisoners with him, dissembling his owne sorow. One night when the lieutenant, and he for his disport were playing at Honell groat, sodainelie commeth from the cardinall, a *Mandatum* to execute Ryldare on the morrowe. The earle marking the Lieutenantes deepe sigh in reading the bill, by S. Wilshe lieutenant quoth he, there is some mad game in that scrole: but fall out how it will, this throw is for a huddle: when the worst was told him, now I pray the (quoth he) doe no more but learne assuredlie, from the kinges owne mouth, whether his grace be witting there to or not: soze doubted the Lieutenant, to displease the cardinall, yet of very pure deuotion to his friend, he posseth to the king at midnight, and said his errand, for at all houres of day or night the lieutenant hath accesse to the pzince upon occasions. King Henry controlling the lawcines of the priest (for those were his termes) toke him his signet in token of countermaund, which when the cardinall had seene, he beganne to breathe out vnscalded words, which the lieutenant was loth to heare, and so hee left him fretting. And within few yeres after, Sir William Sceuington was sent our deputy, who brought with him the earle pardoned and rid from all his troubles. There arose about this time a bruite in London, that diuers great clerks had tolde the king that the marriage betwene him and the Ladie Katherine, sometime wife to his brother pzince Arthur, was not lawfull: whercupon the king should sue a denoize, and marrie the dutchesse of Alanson, sister to the French king, the towne of Calais this Sommer, and the repon Wicount Rochefort: he had brought with him the picture of the same Ladie: but the king being offended with the tales, sent for Syr Thomas Seymere Maor of London secretlie, and charged him to see that the people ceased from such talke. But whatsoeuer the commons talked, true it was, that the king hadde minde to depart from Quene Katherine his wife, aunt to the Emperour, and daughter to the king of Spaine, for that shee was before espoused to his brother, pzince Arthur late deceased, and that the Pope coulde not dispence with one woman to marrie with two brothers: but the king was letted by the Emperour and his Ministers, so that hee coulde not well bring the matter about without assistance of

E. Hall.

*Ann. reg. 19.*  
A rumor, that  
Ry. would bee  
divorced from  
Katherine,  
pacified.

of the French king. Upon which respect, he granted more than the French k. desired: that is, the 400000. crownes, which was one of the principall sums of the millions, which should be paid presently, he lent the same to the French k. to repay in 5. yeres: and the 600000. crownes forfeit by the emperor, he gaue to the French king: and the flower de luce, valued at 50000. crownes he gaue to his god son Henry D. of Orleans. And further with the said Mounſier de Langie, there was sent Sir Frauncis Brian then one of the Gentlemen of the kinges priue Chamber, as well with the obligations and acquittances, as also the said flower de luce, to be deliuered by the French k. when time should serue. And for the sayde Mounſier de Langie, was a Gentleman greatlie favored, as well in the Vniuersities of Italie and Germanie, as in the vniuersities of France, and Wother to the Cardinall Bellay then Bishop of Paris, hee was at that time trauelled withall to procure the opinions and iudgements of the Doctors and chiefe learned men, subscribed with their handes, and confirmed with their Seales of the chiefe vniuersities; as of Paris, Orleans, and other of France, and of Padua, Vienna, and Bolonia in Italy, declaring by the same, that the pope could not dispence with the said marriage, as being by gods law prohibited, which afterwarde was procured by the sayde Mounſier de Langy, travelling in person to euerie the said vniuersities with the king of Englands commission, who had the French kinges letters of singular commendations to the bittermost aid therein: what soeuer the commons talked, it was concluded by the k. and his counsell, that the cardinall should passe into France as his high ambassadoz, but for what cause, no person knew but the k. till his return. Gwichardine saith hee brought with him treasure amounting to 300000. crowns, both to furnish his expences, & to impart with the French k. by way of lone if need were. The cause of this voyage was saith G.C. this, certain great estates, and lords of the counſel bearing little good will to the cardinall, lying in waite to espy a conuenient time, and occasion to take the cardinall in a brake, thought it now were a necessary time to cause him to take vpon him the kinges commission to trauel beyond the sea in this matter, and by his wit to compasse a perfect peace among these great princes and potentates: and encouraging him thereto, alledged that it was more mete for his high wit, discretion, and authoritie, to bring so weightie a matter to passe, then any other within this realme. Their intent was none other, but if they might get him from the king out of the realme, then mought they sufficiently adventure to depaure him vnto the k. highnes, and so in his absence to bring him in displeasure with the king, or at the least to be of lesse estimation: Well that wil you more? this matter was so handled, & the cardinall was commanded to prepare himselfe to this iourney, which hee toke vpon him, but whether it were with his good will or no, I am not able wel to tel you: but that I know he made a short abode after the perfect resolution therof, but caused all thinges to be prepared onward towarde his iourneie: and euerie one of his seruantes were appoynted that should attende vpon him in the same. When all thinges were concluded, and for this noble ambassage provided and furnished, then was there no more to do, but auance forwards in the name of God.

Gwichardine.

G. Caen.

Cardinal ambassadoz into France.

Pic.Tor.

The pompous  
riding of the  
Cardinall.

App L. had with him such of the lords and bishops, and other two: thy persons, as were not of the counsell or conspiracy: to wit, the earle of Darby, the bishop of London L. p. in seal: sir Henry Giltford knight of the garter, controller of the kings house, the L. Sands knight of the garter: L. chamberlain of the h. house: doctor Tailor, App. of the rolls: sir T. Moore knight, chancelor of the dutchy of Lancaster: the bishop of Diuelin, the L. Mounteagle, the L. Harrenden, sir Ioh. Dudley knight, App. Ratclife, App. Willoughby, App. Parker, App. Sturton: vicounts and barons, sons and heires, sir Fra. Brian, sir Ed. Seimer, sir Rob. Gernigam, Doctor Stephen Gardener secretary, doctor Peter Vannes secretary: of the p. in chamber, master Hennege, master Arundell, master Kneuer, master Alford: Physicians, doctor Francis, doctor Smith: gentlemen vthers of the p. in chamber, App. Walgraue, App. Elles, sir Tho. Denis high chamberlaine, App. Sentclere Chicheamberlaine: gentlemen vthers, master Wentwoorth, master Hanford, master Pemercy, mast. Constable, App. Warren: of household, App. Cade steward, sir William Gascoigne treasurer, App. Goslike controller, master Broughton, master of the horse: doctor Allen, doctor Benet, doctor Duke beane of the Chappell, doctor Capon Almoner, the archdeacon of Canterbury, the archdeacon of Carlisle: s. y. Iohn Sent-Iohn, s. y. Richard Sandes knights, &c. in all to the number of 900. horses. Then marched he forward from his own house at Westminster, through London ouer London Bridge, hauing before him of Gentlemen a great number, three in a ranke in velvet coates, and the most of them greates chaines of Golde about their neckes, and all his Women followed him with Robemens, and Gentlemens seruants, all in Orange tawney coates, with the Cardinals Hatte, and a T. C. for Thomas Cardinall, embroidered vpon all the coates, as well of his owne seruants, as of all the rest of the gentlemens seruants: and his sumpter mules which were 20. or more, with all his cartage of carts, and other of his traine, were passed before. He rode like a cardinall very sumptuously on his mule, with his spare mule and spare horse trapped in crimson velvet vpon velvet, and stirrups gilt following him: and before him hee had his two great Crosses of silver, his two great Pillars of silver, the kings broad scale of England, and his cardinals hat, and a gentleman carrying his balence, otherwise called his cloakebag, which was made of fyne scarlet, altogether embroidered very richly with gold, hauing in it a cloak. Thus passed hee forth through London, and all the while euerie daie in his iourney hee was thus furnished, hauing his Harbengers in euery place before, which prepared lodging for his traine.

The first iourney that he made, was 2. miles beyond Wertsford in Kent, vnto sir T. Wilshires house, and the rest of his traine were lodged in Wertsforde, and in the country thereabouts. The next daie he marched to Rochester, where he was lodged in the Bishops palace, and the rest of his Traine in the Citie and in Strokode. The third daie he rode to Feuerham, and there was lodged in the Abbey, and his traine in the towne there, and some in the country thereabouts. The fourth daie hee rode to Canterburie, where hee encountered with the worshipfull of the towne and countrie, and lodged in the Bishopp of Chiche Church, and all his Traine in the Citie, where hee continued three dayes,



in which season there was a great faire in the towne, by reason it was the feast of Thomas of Canterburie. At which date there was a solemne procession, wherein the cardinall then went apparelled in his legantine ornaments, with his hat on his head, who commanded the monks and the quere to sing the Letanie after this sort, *Santa Maria, ora pro Papa nostro Clemente*, the Cardinall kneeling at a stole before the quere dore all the while the monks and their quere stood in the body of the church singing the Letany: at which time the cardinall was seene to wepe bitterly, for heavines to see the pope in such calamitie and danger of the Lance-knights.

The 11. of Iulie the Cardinall arrived at Calais, who was received with all the officers and counsell of the Towne, the Mayor of the Towne, and the Mayor of the Staple in procession, and in the Lanterne Gate, he knéled and made his prayers: that done, they passed on before untill he came to S. Maries Church, from whence he repayed with a great number of Noblemen and gentlemen, being peeres of the towne, unto a place called the Checker, where he was lodged, and kept his house as long as he abode in the towne. When all his traine and carriage was landed, and euerie thing prepared for his journey, he called all his noblemen and gentlemen, being seruants unto him, into his private chamber, where they being all assembled before him he saide: I haue called you hither to the intent to declare unto you, that I consider the duety you beare me, and the good will that I seemblably beare to you, seeing your intendment to further the authoritie that I haue by commission, which your diligent seruice I will remember hereafter, and therefore I meane to declare the same directly to the king. Secondly, to shew you the nature of the French men. And thirdly, to instruct you howe and with what reuerence yee shall vse me for the honoz of the kings maiestie, and then to enforme you how yee shall entertaine and accompanie the French men when yee shall meete at any time.

The first point yee shall vnderstand, that the K. maiesty for certaine weightie affaires, of his graces hath for more advancement of his royall dignitie assigned me to be in this iourney his lieutenant, & that reuerence belongeth to the same I will tell you, for my part I must by vertue of my commission and lieutenantship assume and take vpon me to be esteemed in all honour and degrés of service, as to his highnesse presence is méte and due, and that by me nothing to be neglected, that to his royall estate is due and appertinent. And for my part yee shall see me, that I will not omit one toke thereof. Therefore because that yee shall not be ignorant of your duetie in this case, as one of the chiefe causes of this your assembly, willing you as you will haue my fauour, & also charge you in the kings name, that ye do not forget the same in time and place, but that every one of you doe obserue your duety vnto me accordingly, as ye will at your returne avoid the K. indignation, or obtaine & deserue his highnesse thanks, the which I will set forth, as each of you shall deserve. Now to the second point, the nature of the French men is such, that at the first meeting they will be as familiar with you as they had bene acquainted with you long before, & commune with you in their French tong, as

though ye vnderstand euery word, therefore vse them in like maner, and be as familiar with them as they be with you. If they speake in their naturall tong, speake you again vnto them in the English tong: For, if you vnderstand not them, no more shall they vnderstand you: and speaking merilite to one of the gentlemen there, being a Welchman, said Rice (quoth he) speake you Welch to them: I doubt not but that thy speech shall bee more discourse to him, than his French shall be to thee.

And thus quoth he againe to them all, let all your entertainment and behauior be according to the order of all gentlenes and humilitie, that it may be reported after your departure from thence, that ye be gentlemen of right good behauior, and of much gentlenesse, and that ye are men, who knowe your duties to your Soueraigne Lozde, and to your Passer, esteeming much your great reuerence. Thus shall ye not onlie obtaine to your selues great commendation and praise for the same, but also aduance the honor of your prince and Countrie: Nowe go your waies, being admonished of all these pointes, and prepare your selues against to morrow, for then we intend (God willing) to set forward. The next morrow, being Mary Magdalens daie, all things being furnished, the Cardinall advanced out of Calais, with such a number of blacke velvet coates, as hath bene seldome scene with an ambassadoz, all the Speres of Calais and Guisnes, with all other Gentlemen besides his train, being garnished in blacke Velvet Coates and Chaines of gold. Thus passed hee forward with his Traine of Gentlemen before him three in a Rank, which by supposall endured three quarters of a mile or more in length, hauing his Crosses and all other his accustomed and glorious furniture carried before him, as I haue before rehearsed, except the Broade Seale, the which hee left in Calais with Docto: Taylour, then master of the Rolles, vntill his returne. Passing thus on his way, and being scantlie ridden a mile, it began to raine so vehemently, as lightly had not bene scene the like, which endured vntill they came to Boloigne, & ere they came to Sandingfield, the cardinall of Lozaine a goodlie yong gentleman, encountred the cardinall of Englande, and receiued him with great ioie and reuerence, and so passed forth with the Cardinall in communication vntill they came nigh vnto the saide Sandingfield, which was a place of Religion, standing betweene the English, French, and the emperors dominions, being a Newster, holding of neither of them. There awaited for him Le Countie Brian Captaine of Picardie, with a great number of Stradiates or Albenois, standing in arrais in a great peece of greene oates, all in harness vpon high horses, passing on with the cardinall in a wing vnto Boloigne, and so after through Picardie: for the Cardinall doubted somewhat the Emperoz, that he shoulde late some ambush to betraye him, for which cause the French king commanded them to attende vpon him for the assurance of his person. Thus rode he vntill he came within one English mile of Boloigne, where encountred him the worshipfull citizens of the Citie of Boloigne, hauing a learned man that made vnto him an oration in Latine, vnto the which the Cardinall semblable made answer: And that done, Monsieur de Bees Captaine of Boloigne with the retinue there

Broade seale of  
England left at  
Calais.

of gentlemen, met with him on horsebacke, and then with all this assemblie he rode into the towne lighting at the abbey gate, and from thence conueied with procession into the abbey church there offered, then went hee into the Abbey to his lodging, and all his traine were lodged in the high and base townes. The next morning after, he rode to *Mutterell Ser Lemere*, where he was in like case encountered with the worshipfull of the towne all in one liuerie, hauing a learned man to make an Oration vnto him in latine, whom he answered also againe in latine. And as hee entred in at the gates, there was a canopie made readie of silke, embroidered with letters, and an hat euen as his men had on their Coates, and when that hee was lighted, his footemen hadde the same as a fess due to the office. Nowe was there made diuers Pageants for the soie of his comming, who was called in the French tong there, and in all other places through the realme where hee rode or came, *Le cardinal pacifique*. The next daie hee tooke his iourneie towarde *Abuile*, where hee was encountered with diuers gentlemen of the towne and countrie, and so receiued into the towne with pageantes, as hee rode thorow the towne, hauing a like canopie borne ouer him, but moze richer, and so brought to his lodging: in this towne he remained moze than eight daies, where resorted to him daile diuers of the French k. counsell, sitting with him in counsell euerie daie, and continuallie feasting him & other. When the time came of his departing out of the town, he rode to the castle beyond the water of *Some*, called *le Chancel de picquy*, adioining to the saide water vpon a Rocke, within which there was a Colledge of Priests, the situation whereof was much like to the castle of *Windsore*, and there hee was receiued with solemne procession, conueying him first into the Church, and after into the castle to his lodging. At this castle sometime vpon the bidge that goeth ouer this water of *Some*, k. *Edw.* the 4. met with the French king, as yee maye reade in our Chronicles: when my Lorde was settled in his lodging (saith mine autho:) I heard that the French k. shoulde come that daie into the towne of *Amiens*, which was not past six English miles from thence. And being desirous to see his coming thither, toke with me one or two of my k. gentlemen, and rode incontinentlie thither, as wel to furnish me of a conuenient lodging, as to see the k. And when we came thither, being but strangers, toke bp our inn at the signe of the angell, directlie against the West doze of the cathed:al church *de nostra Dame*. After we had dined there, and taried vntill 3. or 4. of the clock, erpeaing the k. comming, in came madam Regent the k. mother, riding in a very rich chariot, & with her therein was the D. of *Barre* her daughter, furnished with 100. or moze of ladies and gentlewomen following, euerie one riding vpon white palfreys: besides diuers and manie ladies, some in rich horseitters, and some in chariots, who lighted at the next doze with al this train of ladies and gentlewomen, besides her gard, which was not small in number.

Then within 2. houres after the king came in with a great shotte of guns, and diuers pageants made onelie for soie of his comming, hauing about his person and beside him, beside the wonderful number of noblemen and gentlemen, the great guards apparelled diuerlie: the first was of *Switzers*, and

The French  
kings guard.

Burgonians with gunnes and pikes: the second was of French men, some with boies and arrowes, and some with billes: the third guard *pour le corps* was of tall Scottes, which were more comelier persons than all the rest. The French guard and the guard of the Scots had one lincerie, being apparellled with rich coates of white cloth guarded with a rich garde of silver bullions of an hundefull broad. The king came riding vpon a goodlie gennet, and alighted at the saide great Church, and so conueyed with procession into the Bishops palace, where he was lodged, and also his mother. The next morning I rode againe to Picardie, to attend vpon my Lorde, at which time of my resorte, my Lorde was readie to go to horsebacke toward Amiens, and passing on his waite, he was incountred with diuers noble personages, making vnto him diuers orations in latine, to whom he made answer *extempore*. Then was worde brought him, that the king was comming to encounter him, wherefore he had none other shift, but to light at an old chappell that stood hard by the hie waite, and there he new apparellled himselfe into rich apparell, and so mounted againe vpon a molle verie richlie trapped, with a fote cloth altogether of crimosin veluet vpon veluet, purled with gold, and fringed about with gold fringe verie costly: his stirrops of silver and gilt, the boies of the same, and the chokes of his mulcs bit were all gilt. And by that time that he was mounted againe, after this gorgeous sort, the king was come verie nere, within lesse than a quarter of an English mile, mustering vpon a hill, his guard standing in array vpon the top of the same hill, expecting my lordes comming, to whom my Lord made as much haste as he conueniently might, till he came within a paire of butts lengths, and there he staid. The king perceiving that, having two worthy yong gentlemen with him, the one called mounier Vadamont, and the other mounier de Guise, both brethren to the Cardinall of Lozaine, and to the D. of Lozaine: also being like apparellled, as the king was in purple veluet, lined with cloth of silver, their coates cut: The king caused mounier Vadamont to issue from him, and ride to my lord cardinall to know the cause of his tarrying: and this mounier being mounted vpon a faire great gennet, toke his race with his horse vntill he came euen to my Lord, and there caused his horse to come alofte twice or thrise, so nigh my Lordes molle, that he was in doubt of his horse, and with that he alighted, and doing humble reuerence, did his message to my Lorde, and that done he mounted againe, and made his horse to doe the like at his departing, as before he had done, and so repared againe vnto the king: and his answer ended to the king, the king auanced forwards. That seeing, my Lord did the like: and in the midway they met, embracing each other with amiable countenance and entertainment. Then dreyue into the place all noble men and gentlemen on both partes, with wonderfull chere made one to another, as though they had been of old acquaintance. The pcase was such and so thicke, that diuers had their legges hurt with horses. Then the kings officers cried, march, march, deuaunt ale deuaunt. Then the king and the Cardinall on his right hand rode forth towards Amiens, euerye English gentleman accompanied with another of France. The traine of these two princes endured two long



long English miles, they were nobly receiued into the Towne of Amiens with shot of guns and collicke pageants, till the K. had brought the cardinall to his lodging, and then departed for that night, the king being lodged in the bishops palace. The next day after dinner the cardinall rode to the court to the king, at which time the king kept his bed: yet neuertheless, the Cardinall came into his bed chamber, where, on the one side of the bed sate the kings mother, and on the other side the Cardinall of Lozaine, accompanied with diuers other noble men of France, and after a short communication and drinking of a cuppe of wine with the kings mother, he departed to his owne lodging, accompanied with diuers gentlemen and noblemen, where they supped with him. Thus continued the Cardinall and the king in Amiens, the space of a fortnight and more, consulting and feasting eche other diuers times. In Amiens the king and my Lord heard masse, and both of them receiued the sacrament. And vpon our ladie date the assumption my Lord said masse before the Regent, and the Quene of Spauarre, and gaue them the sacrament. And there the king dyressed a number of sicke folkes. Then the K. and the Cardinall remoued to a city called Champain, which was more then 20. English miles from Amiens, they were both lodged in the great castle of the towne, where, of the Cardinall had the one halfe assigned him for his lodging, and the king the other halfe. And likewise they deuised a long Galerie betwene them, where was made in the midst a strong wall, with a window and a doore. The king and the Cardinall would manie times mate at the same window and talke: and diuers times they would goe into the other at the said doore. Then came there to my lord Cardinall the lord Chancelor of France, with all the kings counselliers, where they toke great paines daile in consultation, insomuch that the Cardinall of England fell out with the Chancelor of France, laying to his charge, that he went about to hinder the league which before his coming was concluded, insomuch, that Adam Regent her selfe and manie nobles of France, with much laboꝝ and travell could scarcely bring the cardinall to his former state of communication, he was in such a woꝝth against the Chancelor: by these meanes, he brought other things to passe, that before he coulde not attaine, which was more for feare than for anie affection to the matter, he had the heads of the counsel so vnder his girdle. The next morning after this conflict he rose earlie about foure of the clocke, and sate him downe to write letters, into England vnto the King, commanding one of his chaplaines to prepare him readie to saie masse, insomuch that the chaplaine stode in his vestures untill foure of the clocke in the afternone: all which season the Cardinall neuer rose to eate or drinke, nor to make water, but continually wrote letters with his owne hand, hauing all that time his nightcap and his kercheefe on his head, and about the houre of foure in the afternone hee made an end, commanding Christopher Gunner the kings seruant, without delaie to ride post into England with those letters, whom he dispatched a waie or euer he dranke, and then went to masse, and said his service with his chaplaine, and then went and walked in a garden the space of an houre and more, and said his euen song, and after went both to dinner and supper all at once,

and after supper, making but tarrying, leant an houre, but that he went to bed and tooke his rest.

The next night after the cardinal made a great supper for madam Regent, for the Queene of Navarre and other great estates of Ladies and Noblewomen, and at the middest of the said banquet, the kings of France and of Navarre, came sodainely in vpon them vnlooked for, and tooke their place in the lowest part of the banquet. The supper and banquet being finished, the ladies and Gentlemen fell to dauncing, and so passed awaie the most of the night ere they departed. There was not only plenty of fine meats, but also much mirth & solace, aswel in mery communication, as with the noyse of my L. minstrels, who plaied there all that night so cunningly, that the king tooke therein great pleasure, insomuch that he desired my lord to lende them vnto him for the next night, and after supper their banquet finished, the ladies and gentlemen fell to dauncing, among whom one madam Fountaine a maike had the pryncesse. And thus passed they the most part of the night ere they departed. The next day the king tooke my lordes minstrels, and rode to a noblemans house where was some pilgrimage to whom he vowed a pilgrimage, to performe his deuotion. When he came there which was in the night, he daunced, and caused other to do the same, after the sound of my lordes minstrels, who plaied there all night, and neuer rested, so that whether it were with extreme labour of blowing, or with poison (as some iudged) because they were commended by the king more than his owne, I cannot tell, but the player on the Schalme (who was verie excellent in that instrument) died within a daie or two after. Then the king returned into Champaigne, and caused a wild Boze to bee lodged for him in the forrest of Champaigne, and thither the Cardinall rode with him to see him hunt, where the Ladie Regent with a number of Ladies and Damosels were standing in Chariots, looking on the toyle on the out side, which was pitched there for that purpose: among whome stood the Cardinall to regarde the hunting in Madame Regentes Chariot, and within the toyle was the king with diuers minton Gentlemen of France, readie furnished to this high and dangerous enterpryse of the hunting of the perillous wilde swine, the king being in his dublet and hozen all of shayes colour cloth, hauing in his slip a brace of great white Greyhounds, who were armed as the maner there is: and the rest of the kings Gentlemen being appointed to hunt this Boze, were likewise in their dublets and hose, holding each of them in their hands verie sharp boze speares. When the king commanded the keepers to vncouch the Boze, and that euery person being within the toyle should go to a standing, among whome were diuers gentlemen and yeomen of England, and incontinent the boze issued out of his den, and followed with an hound, came into a plaine, where being scaled a while, and gazing vpon the people, and incontinent pierced by the hound, he lept a little bush standing behinde a banke, ouer a ditch (vnder the which lay two French gentlemen) and thither fled, trusting there to haue defended himself, who thrust his head snuffing into the same bush, which caused the two gentlemen to fly from thence, as from the danger of death. Then was the boze by pursuit of hunters and the hound, dyuen from thence, who ran straight to one

of the Cardinall's footemen, a berie tall yeoman, who hadde in his handes a zaueline, with the which hee was fayne to defende himfelfe from the Boze a great while, the Boze continuallie foyning at him with his Lufkes, so that he was fayne at last to pitch his Zaueline in the grounde betweene him and the Boze: the which the Boze brake with the force of his foyning, and with that the yeoman dzeue his sword, and stood at defence, and therewith the hunters came to the rescue, and put him once agayne to flight: with that hee fledde to another young Gentleman of Englande, called Master Henry Ratcliffe, who was sonne and heire to the Lord Fitz Walter, since Earle of Suffe, who had borrowed by chaunce of a French Gentleman, a berie fyne and sharpe Boze speare, therewith hee thrust the Boze in the month, and so into the throte, whereupon the pastime was ended. In the time of the Cardinall's abode in France, manie displeasures were doone against him, for all the payne and trauell he had taken for the qualifying of the French L. random: and amongst other this was one: there was no place where hee lodged after hee entred the territoire of France, but that hee was robbed in his priuite chamber either little or much, insomuch that at Champaine hee lost his Standish, which was all of Silver and gilte, and there it was espied, and the partie taken, which was a boie of twelue or fourtene yeres old, a russians page of Paris, which hanted my Lordes lodging without inspition, vntill hee was taken lying vnder my Lordes priuite Staires, vpon which occasion he was apprehended, examined, and confessed all things that hee had stolen, the russian his master had receyued, maintained, and procured him so to doe. The Cardinall reuealed this to the counsell, by meanes whereof the russian was apprehended, and set on the Pillorie in the midst of the Market place, which was but a small punishment for such an offence. Another displeasure was this: some lewde person hadde ingraued in my Lordes Window vpon the leaning stone there, a cardinall's hat, with a paire of gallowses ouer it, in derision of my Lord, with diuers other vnkinde dealinges, the which I omit to write, they be so slanderous matters. The Cardinall passing diuers dayes in consultation, and in other matters, expecting the returne of Christopher Gunner, at the last he returned with letters againe, vpon receipt whereof the Cardinall intended to remooue: being then at masse in his Closet, hee consecrated the Chauncelloz of Fraunce Cardinall, and put vpon him his habite, his hat and cap of Scarlet, and then toke his iourney, returning againe into England, making such necessary expedition, that hee came to Guilnes, where hee was noblely receiued by the lord Sandes then Captayne there, with all the retinue of the same. And from thence hee rode to Caleis, where hee tarried the shipping of his trusse, horses and train. And in the meane time, he established there a mart for all nations. These things and other, for the weale of the Towne and garison by him perfect, hee tooke shipping and arriued at Douer the twenty foure of September, from whence hee rode to the Court, the king beeing in his Progresse at Sy: Henrie Wyats house in Kent, hee went immediatlie to him, with whom hee had long talke, & continued two or thre daies there in the court, and then returned to his house at Westminster, where hee remained vntill Michaelmas Terme, which was

Many despises  
doone against  
cardinal Col-  
ley in France.

and after supper, making but tarrying, scant an houre, but that he went to bed and toke his rest.

The next night after the cardinal made a great supper for madam Regent, for the Queene of Navarre and other great estates of Ladies and Noblewomen, and at the middest of the said banquet, the kings of France and of Navarre, came sodainly in vpon them vnlooked for, and toke their place in the lowest part of the banquet. The supper and banquet being finished, the ladies and Gentlemen fell to dauncing, and so passed awaie the most of the night ere they departed. There was not only plenty of fine meats, but also much mirth & solace, as wel in merry communication, as with the noise of my L. minstrels, who plaied there all that night so cunningly, that the king toke therein great pleasure, insomuch that he desired my lord to lende them vnto him for the next night, and after supper their banquet finished, the ladies and gentlemen fell to dauncing, among whom one madam Fountaine a maide had the pize. And thus passed they the most part of the night ere they departed. The next day the king toke my lordes minstrels, and rode to a noblemans house where was some Image to whom he bowled a pilgrimage, to performe his deuotion. When hee came there which was in the night, he daunced, and caused other to do the same, after the sound of my lordes minstrels, who plaied there all night, and neuer rested, so that whether it were with extreme labour of blowing, or with poison (as some iudged) because they were commended by the king more than his owne, I cannot tell, but the Player on the Schalme (who was verie excellent in that instrument) died within a daie or two after. Then the king returned into Champaigne, and caused a wild Boze to be lodged for him in the forest of Champaigne, and thither the Cardinall rode with him to see him hunt, where the Ladie Regent with a number of Ladies and Damosels were standing in Chariots, looking on the toile on the out side, which was pitched there for that purpose: among whome stood the Cardinall to regarde the hunting in Madame Regentes Chariot, and within the toyle was the king with diuers minion Gentlemen of France, readie furnished to this high and dangerous enterpryse of the hunting of the perillous wilde swine, the king being in his doublet and hozen all of thepes colour cloth, hauing in his hip a brace of great white Greyhounds, who were armed as the maner there is: and the rest of the kings Gentlemen being appointed to hunt this Boze, were likewise in their doublets and hose, holding each of them in their hands verie sharp boze speares. When the king commanded the keepers to breache the Boze, and that euerie person being within the toile should go to a standing, among whome were diuers gentlemen and yeomen of England, and incontinent the boze issued out of his den, and followed with an hound, came into a plaine, where being scaled a while, and gazing vpon the people, and incontinent pierced by the hound, hee spied a little bush standing behinde a banke, ouer a ditch (vnder the which laye two French gentlemen) and thither fled, trassing there to haue defended himself, who thrust his head snuffing into the same bush, which caused the two gentlemen to fly from thence, as from the danger of death. When was the boze by pursuit of hunters and the hound, dyuen from thence, who ran straight to one of



of the Cardinales footemen, a berie tall yeoman, who hadde in his handes a Javeline, with the which hee was sayne to defende himselfe from the Boze a great while, the Boze continuallie foyning at him with his Tuskes, so that he was sayne at last to pitch his Javeline in the grounde betwene him and the Boze: the which the Boze brake with the force of his foyning, and with that the yeoman dyete his swoorde, and stood at defence, and there with the hunters came to the rescue, and put him once agayne to flight: with that hee fledde to another young Gentleman of Englande, called Master Henry Ratcliffe, who was sonne and heire to the Lord Fitz Walker, since Earle of Sussex, who had borrowed by chaunce of a French Gentleman, a berie spye and sharpe Boze Speare, wherewith hee thrust the Boze in the month, and so into the throte, whereupon the pastime was ended. In the time of the Cardinales abode in France, manie displeasures were doone against him, for all the payne and traucell he had taken for the qualifying of the French Ransom: and amongst other this was one: there was no place where hee lodged after hee entred the territoire of France, but that hee was robbed in his priuite chamber either little or much, insomuch that at Champaine hee lost his Standish, which was all of Silver and gylte, and there it was espied, and the partie taken, which was a boie of twelue or fourtene yeres old, a ruffians page of Paris, which hanted my Lordes lodging without inspition, vntill hee was taken lying vnder my Lordes priuite Staires, vpon which occasion he was apprehended, examined, and confessed all things that hee had stolen, the ruffian his master had receyued, mainteined, and procured him so to doe. The Cardinall revealed this to the counsell, by meanes whereof the ruffian was apprehended, and set on the Pillorie in the midst of the Market place, which was but a small punishment for such an offence. Another displeasure was this: some letwde person hadde ingraued in my Lordes Window vpon the leaning stone there, a cardinales hat, with a paire of gallowes ouer it, in derision of my Lord, with diuers other vnkinde dealinges, the which I omit to write, they be so slanderous matters. The Cardinall passing diuers dayes in consultation, and in other matters, expecting the returne of Christopher Gunner, at the last he returned with letters againe, vpon receipt whereof the Cardinall intended to remooue: being then at masse in his Clofet, hee consecrated the Chauncello of France Cardinall, and put vpon him his habite, his hat and cap of Scarlet, and then toke his iourney, returning againe into England, making such necessary expedition, that hee came to Guilnes, where hee was noblie receiued by the lord Sandes then Captayne there, with all the retinue of the same. And from thence hee rode to Calais, where hee taried the shipping of his Husse, horses and train. And in the meane time, he established there a mart for all nations. These things and other, for the Weale of the Towne and garison by him perfect, hee tooke shipping and arrived at Douer the twenty foure of September, from whence hee rode to the Court, the king being in his Progresse at Sy: Henrie Wyats house in Kent, hee went immediatlie to him, with whome hee had long talke, & continued two or thre dales there in the court, and then returned to his house at Westminster, where hee remained vntill Michaelmas Terme, which was

Many despites  
doone against  
cardinal Mota-  
rey in France.

in lesse than a fortnight after, and exercised his roome of chancello:ship as hee was accustomed.

Scarcitie of  
bzead.

Such scarcitie of bzead was in London, & all England, that manie died for default thereof: the king of his goodnes sent to the citie of his owne prouision 600. quarters, or else for one week there had been little bzead. The bzead carts comming from Stratford towarde London were met at the Wile end by the citizens, so that the maior and Shrifis were forced to goe and rescue the same carts, and to see them brought to the markets appointed. Wheat was then at fifteen shillings the quarter: but shortly after the merchants of the Stilyard brought from Danske such store of Wheate and Rye, that the same was better cheape to bee solde in London, than in anie other parte of the Realme besides.

Cardinal Wol-  
sey in the Star  
chamber decla-  
reth what an  
honorable peace  
he had conclu-  
ded.

After the beginning of the terme the cardinall caused to be assembled in the Star chamber, all the noblemen, Judges, and Justices of peace that were in Westminster hall at that time present: and there made to them a long orati- on, declaring the cause of his ambassage into France, and of his proceedinges there: among the which he said he had concluded such an amitie, as neuer was heard in the realme befoze, as wel between the emperoz and vs, as between the k. our soueraigne and the French k. with a perpetuall peace, the which should be confirmed in writing, sealed in fine gold: affirming farther, that the k. of England should receiue yearly his tribute by that name out of the dutchie of Ffomandy, with all the costs which he had sustained in the warres. And also, where there was a restraint made in France of the French Dukes dowrie (whome the duke of Suffolke had married) for diuers yeeres during the wars, it was concluded, that she should not only receiue it againe, but also the arre- rages that were vnpaid. This peace thus concluded, there should bee such an a- mitie betwene the gentlemen of each realme, and entercourse of merchants, that it should seme to all men both territories to be but one monarch: gentle- men male trauell from one Countrie to another, for their recreation and pas- time: the merchants being in either countrie arrived, shal be assured to trauel about their affaires in peace and tranquillity, so that this realme shall soie and prosper for ever, &c.

Ambassadors  
out of France.

The 20. of October were receiued into London certaine ambassadors out of France, about 80. in number, of the most noble and worthy gentlemen in all France: they were lodged in the bishops palace in Pauls churchyard, to whom diuers noblemen resorted, and gaue them diuers presents, especially the maior of the city of London, as wine, sugar, war, Capons, Wildfoule, beffes, mut- tons, and other necessarie things in great abundance, for the expences of their house. Then they resorted vnto the court, being at Greenwich, where they were receiued by the king. They had commission to establish the king in the order of France, for whom they brought, for that intent, a collar of fine golde, with the Michaell hanging thereat, and robes to the same order appertinant, the which was of blew velvet richly embroidered. And the king to gratifie the French k. with the semblable he sent a noble man of the order here in England, with Gar- ear the herault into France, to establish the French king, in the order of the

Cartar,

Gartar, with a semblable Collar, with a Gartar and Kobes according to the same.

The ambassadoys remaining here untill their returne, all things being concluded concerning the perpetuall peace vpon solemnne ceremonies and othes contained in certain instruments touching the same, which was confirmed by receiuing of the Sacrament in Pauls Church of London by the king, and the grand master of France, who represented the king his master, and there the instrument were sealed with gold, and the king put his hand thereunto, and the grand master did the like: betwene whome the cardinall diuided the Sacrament. And that down, they departed, the K. rode with the Cardinall to Westminster, and there dined with al the Frenchmen, passing al the day after with consultation of weighty matters, touching the conclusion of the saide article of the perpetuall peace.

The king then departed again by water to Greenwich, at whose departing it was concluded by the kings deuise, that all the French men shoulde resort to Richmond, and hunt in euerie one of the parkes there: and from thence to Hampton court, and there to hunt, and the cardinall to make there a Supper or banquet, or both to them. And from thence they shoulde ride to Windsor, and there to hunt: and after to returne to London, and so to Greenwich, and there to banquet with the K. Then was there made great preparation of al things for this great assembly at Hampton court: the cardinall called before him his principal officers, as Steward, treasurer, controller, and clearks of his kitchen, to whom he declared his mind, touching the entertainment of the Frenchmen at Hampton court; his pleasure to them known, they sent out eaters, purueuers, and other, the cookes wrought both night and day in subtleties, the yeomen and gromes of the wardrobes were busied in hanging of the chambers, and furnishing the same with beds of silk and other furniture: there were provided 280. beds furnished with al manner of furniture to them belonging, too long particularly to be rehearsed.

The date was come to the French men assigned, and they readie assembled before the house of their appoyntment, wherefore the Officers caused them to ride to Hampton court, a place and a Parke of the kinges within thre miles, there to hunt and spende the date untill night, at which time they returned againe to Hampton court, and euerie of them conueied to their severall chambers, hauing in them great fiers and Wine for their comfote, remayning there untill the supper was readie. The chambers where they supped and banquetted, were ordered in this sort: first, the great waiting Chamber was hanged with rich Arras, as none were better than other, and furnished with tall yeomen to serue. There were set tables rounde about the Chamber banquetwise couered, a cupbord was there garnished with white silver plate, hauing also in the same Chamber to giue the more light, foure plates of silver set with great lights, and a great fire of wood and coles. The next Chamber being the chamber of presence, was hanged with verie rich arras, & a sumptuous cloth of estate furnished with many goodly gentlemen to serue the tables ordered in maner as the other Chamber was, sauing that the high Table was

remoued

Cardinal Mor.  
sey banquetted  
the French am-  
bassadoys at  
Hampton court

1528

Ann. reg. 20.

remoued beneath the cloth of estate toward the middell of the chamber covered. Then was there a cupbord, being in length as broad as the chamber, with fire deskes of height, garnished with guilt plate, hauing with lights one paire of candlestickes of siluer and guilt, being curiously wrought, which cost thre hundred markes, and standing vpon the same two lights of ware burning as big as torches to set it forth. This cupbord was barred round about, that no man could come nigh it, for there was none of all this plate touched in this banquet, for there was sufficient besides. The plates that hung on the wals to giue light were of siluer and guilt, hauing in them great pearchers of ware burning, a great fire in the chimney, and all other things necessarie for the furniture of so noble a feast. Now was all things in a readinesse. The trumpets were blown to warne to supper: the officers discretely conducted these noble men from their chambers into the chamber where they should sup, and caused them there to sit downe, and that done, their seruice came vppe in such abundance both costly and full of subtilties, and with such a pleasant noise of instruments of musicke, that the French men (as it seemed) were rayte into a heavenly paradise. The Cardinall was not yet come, but they were merrie and pleasant. Before the second course, the Cardinall came in bowled and spurred, all sodainely amongst them, and bade them Proface: at whose comming there was great ioie, with rising euerie man from his place. The cardinall caused them to sit still and keepe their rounnes, and being in his apparell as he robe, called for a chaire & sate in the midd of the high table. Anone came by the second course, with so many dishes, subtilties, and deuises, aboue a hundred in number, which were of so godly proportion & costly, that I thinke the Frenchmen neuer saw the like, the wonder was no lesse than it was woth this indeede. There were castles with images, in the same Pauls church, for the quantity, aswell counterfeted, as the Painter should haue painted it on a cloth or wall. There were beasts, birds, and personages, most liuely made and counterfeted, some fighting with swords, some with guns, & crossbowes, some baughting and leaping, some dancing with ladies, some on horses in complete harnesse, suiking with long and sharpe speares, with many more deuises. Among all other was a chesse-boorde made of spiced plate, with men there of the same, and for the good proportion, and because the French men be vertie expert in that play, my lord Cardinall gave the same to a gentleman of France, commanding there should be made a godly case for the preservati on thereof in all haste, that he might conuey the same into his countrey. Then toke my lord a bole of gold filled with spocrase, and putting off his cap, said: I drinke to the king my soueraigne lord, and next, unto the king your master, and therewith dranke a god draught: and when he had done, hee desired the grand master to pledge him cup and al, the which was well woth 500. markes, and so caused all the boords to pledge these two royall princes: then went the cups so merrily about, that manie of the French men were faine to be led to their beds.

Then rose by the Cardinall, and went into his private chamber to pull off his bootes, and to chist him, and then went he to supper in his private chamber.



and making a verie short supper, returned into the chamber of presence among the Frenchmen, vsing them so louingly and familiarly, that they could not commend him too much: and whilst they were in communication and other pastimes, all their liueries were serued to their chambers, euery chamber had a basin and an ewer of silver, a great liuerie pot of silver, and some gilt, yea and some chamber had two liuerie pots, with wine and beere: a silver candlestick, both white and plaine, hauing in it two lizes, and a staffe forch of wore, a fine manchete, and a cheat loafe. Thus was euery chamber furnished through all the house: and yet the cupboards in the two banquetting chambers not once touched.

Thus, when it was more than time conuenient, they were conueied to their lodgings, where they rested that night.

In the morning they dined with the Cardinall, and so departed to Windsor. After the returne of the strangers from Windsor, which place, with the order thereof they much commended: The day approached that they were by the king invited to the court, where first they dined, and after dancing & other pastimes by them done, the time of supper came on. Then was the banquetting chamber in the tilt yard at Greene wich, to the which place these strangers were conducted by the noblest personages in the court, where they did both sup and banquet. But to describe to you the order, the dishes, the subtilties, and strange deuises of the same, I lacke both a head of fine wit, and also cunning in my bowels to declare these wonderfull deuises. But this ye shall understand, although it were maruellous sumptuous at Hampton court, yet that notwithstanding this banquet excelled the same, as far as golde doth excede silver in value of weight for weight, and the beholders professed neuer to haue seene the like.

King Henry  
banqueteth  
the French am-  
bassadors at  
Greene wich.

In the midst of this banquet, there was tourneying at the barriers, with lusty gentlemen in complete harness very gorgeous on foot. Then was there the like on horsebacke. And after all this was the most goodliest disguising or enterlude made in latine, the plaiers being so rich, and of so strange deuises, that it passeth my capacity to expound.

This done, there came such a number of the fairest ladies and gentlewomen that bare any byte of beauty in all the realme, in most richest apparell that might be deuised, with whom the gentlemen of France danced, untill a gorgeous maske came in of gentlemen, who danced and masked with these ladies. This done, came in a maske of ladies: these ladies took each of them one of the Frenchmen to dance and to maske: these women maskers spake good French to the Frenchmen, which delighted them very much to heare these ladies speake to them in their mother tongue.

Thus was this night consumed, from the due of the clocke untill three of the clocke after midnight, and then euery man departed to their lodgings. After all this solemne chere at a daie appointed, they resorted to the court to take their leaue of the king and other noble men: then came they to Westminster vnto the cardinall, of whome they receiued the kings rewards, the which were these: euery man of honour and estimation had plate, some to the

value

value of thre or foure hundred pound, and some more, and some lesse, besides other great giftes receiued before of the king, as gownes of veluet with rich furrer, great chaines of golde, and goodlie horses, with diuers other giftes, and the least of them had a sum of crownes of gold: the worst page amongst them had twentie crownes for his part: and being thus noble rewarded, they departed.

A French Cra-  
er chased to the  
Tower wharffe  
of London.

A French craer, of 30. tunne, being manned with eight and thirty French men, and a Flemmish craer of seauen and twentie tun, and foure and twentie Flemmings, meeting at Wargate, the one chased the other along the river of Thamis to the Tower wharffe of London, where sir Edmond Walsingham lieutenant of the Tower, staied them both, and tooke both their captaines and men.

The 17. day of Iune, the terme was adourned to Michaelmas, because of the sweating sicknesse that then raigned in the city of London, and there was no such watch at Midsummer, as before time had bene accustomed: of this sicknes died manie sodainlie in the kings court, namely sir William Compton, sir Francis Points, and other, who died with little warning. The king for a space remoued almost euery daie till he came to Wittenhanger, a place of the abbot of Saint Albons, and there he with the queene, and a small company about them, remained till the sicknes was past.

King Henries  
marriage cal-  
led in question.

Before the cardinals going into France in the preceding yeere, it was talked among the people, that king Henry (as ye haue heard) was by some perswaded, that his marriage with queene Katherine could not be good nor lawfull, wherefore he determined to haue the case examined, cleared and adiudged by learning, law, & sufficient authoritie. The cardinall was by some put in blame for that scruple now cast into the kings conscience, for the hate he bare to the Emperour, and therefore he did not only procure the king of England to soine in friendship with the French king, but also (as they said) sought a diuorce betwixt the king and the queene. But howsoever it came about that the king was thus troubled in conscience concerning his marriage, it followed, that to haue the doubt clearly remoued, he called together the best learned of the realme, which were of seuerall opinions, wherefore he thought to knowe the truth by indifferent iudges, lest peraduenture the Spaniards and other would say that his owne subjects were not indifferent iudges in this behalfe, and therefore wrote his cause to Rome, as also (as ye haue heard) sent to the Vniuersities of Italie & France for their opinions: and desired the court of Rome to send into the realm a legate which should be indifferent, and of great and profound iudgement to heare the cause debated. At whose request the whole consistorie of the Colledge of Rome, sent thither Laurence Campeius a Priest Cardinall, a man of great wit and experience, which had bene sent thither before in the 10. yeere of this king, as ye haue heard, and with him was soined in commission the Cardinall of Poike, and Legate of England. This cardinall Campeius by long iourneies came into England, and much preparation was made to receiue him triumphantlie into London: but he was so fore beread with the gout, that he refused all such solemnities, and desired that he might without

E. Hall.

Cardinal Cam-  
peius came to  
London.

without pompe he conueied to his lodging for his more quiet and rest: and so on the 9. of October he came from S. Mary Puertes by water to the Bish. of Bathes place without Temple barre, where hee was visited of the cardinal of York, & diuers other estates and prelates: and after he had rested him a season, he was brought to the K. presence, then being at Wyndeswell, by the cardinal of York, and was caried in a chaire between 4. persons, for he was not able to stand, & the cardinal of York & he sate both on the right hand of the K. throne, and there one Francisco secretary to cardinal Campeius made an eloquent oration in Latine: in which he rehearsed first, with what cruelty the emperors soldiers had handled the pope, what tyrannie they had shewed to the cardinals and priests, what sacrilege and spoile they had committed in S. Peters church, how they had violated virgins, ravished mens wives, and in conclusion, spoiled, robbed, and tormented all the Romans and inhabitants in the citie of Rome. And further he shewed what friendship the colledge of Rome founde at the K. hands, & the French kings in the time of that tribulation, that if they had not ioined together, the city of Rome with all their gouernors had bin brought to utter ruine: for the which he saide, pope Clement and all his Colledge of Cardinals, and the Senators of the Citie, with all the Citizens rendred to the king their heartie thanks, and promised him their loue and fauor, and amittie perpetuall.

Oration

To the which Oration Doctor Foxe Prouost of Cambridge, made a discrete aunswere: and as to the first point, hee declared that the King much lamented to heare his friendes; yea, or any other Christian men to bee handled with such tyrannie: and as touching the seconde point, hee sayde that the king did but the dutie of a Christian Prince to relieue his friendes being in captiuitie, for the which hee would that the whole citie of Rome should giue thanks to God, and not to him. After which aunswere made, the two Legates communed secretlie with the King a long space, and after departed to their lodging. Of the comming of this Legate the people, especiallie Women, talked largely, and said, that the king would for his owne pleasure haue another wife, & had sent for this Legate to be divorced from his Quene, with manie foolish wordes, insomuch, that whosoever spake against the marriage, was of the common people abhorred and reproued, which common rumour was related to the king. Wherefore he like a prudent prince, willing all men to know his intent and purpose, caused all his nobilitie, iudges, and counsellors, with diuers other persons, to come to his place of Wyndeswell on Sondaye the 8. of Nouember at afternoone, in his great chamber, and there to them sayde, as neere as I coulde carie awaie (saith Hall) in these wordes following: Our trustie and welbeloued subiectes, both you of the nobilitie, and you of a meaner sort, it is not vnknowne to you that we, both by gods pteuision, and true and lawfull inheritance, haue reigned ouer this realme almost 20. yeres: during which time, wee haue so ordered vs, thanked bee God, that no outward enemy hath oppressed you, nor taken any thing from vs, nor we haue invaded no realme but we haue had victorie and honor, so that we thinke you nor none of your predecessors neuer liued more quietlie, more wealthie, nor

Oration answered.

The K. oration.

in more estimation vnder anie of our noble progenitors. But when we remember our mortality, and that we must die, then we thinke that all our doings in our little time are clereely defaced, and worthe of no memorie, if we leaue you in trouble at the time of our death. For if our true heire bee not known at the time of our death, see what trouble shall succed to you and your children. The experience thereof some of you haue seene, after the death of our noble grandfather Edward the 4. and some haue heard what manslaughter continued in this realme betwene the houses of Yorke and Lancaster, by the which dissension this realme was like to haue bene clereely destroyed. And although it hath pleased God to send vs a faire daughter of a noble woman and me, begotten to our great comfort, yet it hath bene tolde vs by diuers great clarkes, that neither she is our lawfull daughter, nor her mother our lawfull wife, but that we liue together abominably and detestably in open adultery, insomuch, that when our ambassade was last in France, and motion was made, that the D. of B. should marrie our said daughter, one of the chiefe counsellors to the French king saide: It were well done to know whether she be the king of Englands lawfull daughter, or not: for well knowne it is, that he begate her on his brothers wife, which is direally against Gods law, and his precept. Thinke you (my lords) that these wordes touch not my bodie and soule: thinke you that these doings doe not daily and hourly trouble my conscience and ver my spirits: Yes: we doubt not but if it were your owne cause, euerie man would seeke remedie, when the perill of your soule, and the losse of your inheritance is openly laid to you. For this onely cause I protest before God, and in the word of a prince, I haue asked counsell of the greatest clarkes in Christendome, and for this cause I haue sent for this legat, as a man indifferent, only to know the truth, and to settle my conscience, and for none other cause, as God can iudge. And as touching the D. if it be iudged by the law of God, that she is my lawfull wife, there was neuer thing more acceptable to me in my life, both for the discharge of my conscience, & also for the good qualities and conditions which I know to be in her: for I assure you all, that beside her noble parentage of the which she is descended (as all you know) she is a woman of most gentleness, of most humilitie, and burannes, yea, and of all good qualities appertaining to nobilitie, she is without comparison, as I these 20. yeres almost haue had the true experiment, so that if I were to marrie againe, if the marriage might be good, I would surely chuse her aboue all other women: but if it be determined by iudgement, that our marriage was against Gods law and clereely void, then I shall not only sorrow the departing from so good a lady and louing companion, but much more lament and bewaile my infortunat chance, that I haue so long liued in adultery to Gods great displeasure, and haue no true heire of my bodie to inherite this realme. These be the sorres that bere my minde, these be the panges that trouble my conscience, and for these griefes I seeke a remedy: therefore I requyre of you all as our trust and confidence is in you, to declare to our subjects our intent, according to our true meaning, and desire them to praise with vs that the truth may be known, for the discharge of our conscience, & sauing of



of our soule : and for declaration hereof I haue assembled you together, and now you maie depart.

To see what countenance was made amongst the hearers of this oration, it was a strange sight, for some sighed & said nothing, other were sorry to heare the K. so troubled in his conscience : others fauouring the D. much sorrowed, that this matter was now opened, and so euery man spake as his hart serued him : thus much Hall. And thus G. C. The cardinall of Poike saith he, being prouoked to declare his opinion, and wisdom in the aduancement of the kings purpose, who thought it not mete to wade too far alone, or to giue his hasty iudgment in so weighty a matter, desired of the K. licence to aske counsell of men of famous learning, both in the diuine and ciuill lawes, that obtained, by his legantine authoritie, he sent his commission out for all the bishops of the realme that were learned in either of the said lawes, or had in any high estimation for their prudent counsell and iudgement, in princelie affairs of long experience. Then assembled those noble prelates and notable clarks of both vniuersities of Oxford and Cambridge, as also of diuers cathedrall churches of this realme accounted learned, and of witty discretion in determination of doubtfull questions. Then was this matter of the kings case consulted of from day to day, that it was to the learned a goodly hearing : but in fine the ancient fathers of both lawes, departed with one iudgement, contrary to the principall expectation. Then was it thought expedient, that the K. should send out his commissioners into all the vniuersities of christendom, to bring with them the definition of their opinions in the same vnder the seale of euery vniuersitie, which they obtained. Having now a sure staffe to stand by, these proceedings declared to the cardinall, he sent againe for the bishops, to whom he declared the trauell of these commissioners. And for affirmance thereof, shewed them the instruments of euery vniuersity vnder their seuerall seales. They went once againe to consultation. It was then concluded, that the king should send to the pope, declaring the opinions of these vniuersities, authorized by their common seales : to the which it was thought that the consent of these prelates of this realme should be necessary to be sent thither, altogether comprised in an instrument, sealed with all their seales annexed to the said instrument. Not long after the ambassadoys were assigned to trauell in the matter, hauing certaine instructions, among which one was this, that if the Pope would not giue iudgement definitive in the kings case, to requite another commission to be granted vnder lead, to stablish a court to be kept in England, for that purpose directed to the lord cardinall and legat of England, and to the cardinal Campeius, who was then (though he were a stranger) bishop of Bath (the which the king had giuen him) to determine, and iustly to iudge according to conscience and discretion : To the which, after long suite made, and the good will of the same Cardinall obtained to trauell into England, the pope granted to their suite, and the cardinall arrived in England, as ye before haue heard.

Now after some deliberation and consultation in the ordering and vsing of the kings matters, and his commission, and the articles of his ambassade  
leues,

serene and read, and digested, it was determined, that the king and Quene his wife should be lodged at Wyndesore. And then in the blacke Friars a certayne place was there appointed most conuenient for the k. and quenes repaire to the Court, there to bee kept for the disputation and determination of the case, whereas these two legates sate as iudges, before whom the king and Q. were ascited and summoned to appere: which was a strange sight, and the newest deuise that euer was read or heard of before in anye region, story, or chronicle, a king and a Quene to be constrained by procelle compellatoze to appere in anye court as common persons within their owne Realme and dominion, to abide the iudgements and decrees of their owne subiects, being the royall diademe and prerogative thereof. We shall vnderstande (as I haue sayde before) that there was a court erected in the blacke Friars in London, whereas sate these two cardinals for Iudges in the same, in the moneths of Aprill, Maie, June, and Iulie. Nowe will I set you out the manner and order of the same court: first, there was a court platted in Tables and Benches in manner of a Consistorie, one seate rayled higher for the Iudges to sit on than the other were. Then as it were in the midst of the sayde Iudges aloft about them 3. degrees high, was a cloth of estate hanged, with a Chaire royall vnder the same, wherein sate the king, and besides him, some distance from him sate the Q. and vnder the Iudges set sate the scribes and other necessary officers for the execution of the procelle, and other thinges appertaining to such a court: the chiefe scribe was D. Steuens, after B. of Winchester, and the apparator, who was Caller of the Court, was one Cooke (most commonlie called Cooke of Winchester.) Then before the king and the Iudges within the court sate the Archbish. of Canterb. D. Warham, and all the other bishops. Then stood at both endes within, the counsellors learned in the lawes, as well the kinges as the Quenes. The doctors of law for the king, were doctor Simphon that was after bishop of Chichester, and doctor Bell, that was after bishop of Worcester, with diuers other, and doctors in the same law on the same side were, doctor Peter, doctor Tregonel, with others. On the other side for the Q. were doctor Fisher B. of Rochester, doctor Scandish, and doctor Ridley, a verie small man of stature, but surelie a great and excellent cleaerke in diuinitie. Thus was the court furnished. The Iudges commaunded the crier to proclaime silence whilste their commission was reade, both to the court, and to the people assembled. What done, the Scribes comaunded the crier to call the king by the name of king Henry of Englande, come into the Court, &c. With that the king answered and sayde: Here. Then called hee the Quene, by the name of Katherine Quene of Englande, come into the Court, &c. Who made no answer, but rose incontinent out of her Chayze, and because shee coulde not come to the king directlie, for the distance seuered betweene them, shee went about by the Court, and came to the king, kneeling downe at his feete in the sight of all the Court and people, to whom shee sayde in effect these wordes, as folloeweth: *Spz* (quoth shee) I desire you to doe mee iustice and right, and take some pittie vpon mee, for I am a poore woman, and a stranger, borne out of your dominion, hauing heere no indifferent Counsell, and lesse assurance of friendship.

An. reg. 21.  
The R. marriage  
argued in open  
court at the  
Blackfriars.

Records of Q.  
Katherine.

friendship: Alas sir, what haue I offended you, or what occasion of displeasure haue I shewed you, intending thus to put me from you after this sort: I take god to my iudge, I haue been to you a true and an humble wife, euer conformable to your will & pleasure, that neuer contraried or gainesaid anie thing thereof, and being alwaies contented with all things wher in you had anie delight or baliance, whether litle or much, without grudge or countenance of discontentation or displeasure: I loved for your sake al the whom you loued, whether I had cause or no cause, whether they were my friends or enemies. I haue bene your wife these twentie yeres or mo, and you haue had by me diuers children, and when ye had me at the first, I take God to be my iudge, that I was a verie maid, and whether it be true or no, I put it to your conscience. If there be anie iust cause that you can alledge against me, either of dishonestie, or matter lawfull to put me from you, I am content to depart to my shame and rebuke: and if there be none, then I praye you to let me haue iustice at your hand. The king your father was in his time of such an excellent wit, that he was accounted among all men for wisdome to be a second Salomon, and the king of Spaine my father Ferdinando was reckoned one of the wisest princes that reigned in Spaine manie yeres before: it is not therefore to be doubted, but that they had gathered as wise counsellors vnto them of euerie realme, as to their wisdomes they thought mete, and as to me seemeth there were in those daies as wise and well learned in both the realmes, as be now at this date, who thought the marriage betwene you and me good and lawfull: therefore it is a wonder to me to heare, what new inuentions are now inuented against me that neuer intended but honestie: and now to cause me to stand to the order and iudgement of this court, ye should (as seemeth me) doe me much wrong, for ye maie condemne me for lacke of answer, hauing no counsell but such as ye haue assigned me: ye must consider that they cannot be indifferent on my part when they be your owne subiects, and such as ye haue taken and chosen out of your owne counsell, whereunto they be priuie, and dare not disclose your will and intent. Therefore I humble desire you in the way of charitie to spare me, vntill I may know what counsell and aduise my friends in Spaine wil aduertise me to take, and if you wil not, then your pleasure be fulfilled: and with that she arose vp, making a low curtisie to the king, and departed from thence, supposing that she would haue resorted againe to her former place. But she toke her way straight out of the court, leaning vp on the arme of one of her seruants, who was her general receiuer, called M<sup>r</sup>. Griffith. The king being aduertised that she was readie to go out of the house, where the court was kept, commanded the crier to call her againe, who called her by these words, Katherine Q. of England, come into the court: with that quoth M<sup>r</sup>. Griffith, Madam, ye be called againe. On, on (quoth she) it maketh no matter, it is no indifferent court for me, therefore I will not tarry, go on your waies: and thus she departed without any further answer at that time or anie other, and neuer would appeare after in any court. The king perceiving she was departed thus, and considering her words which she pronounced before him, said to the audience these words in effect: For as much (quoth he)

as the Quene is gone, I will in her absence declare vnto you all: She hath been to me as true, as obedient, and as comfortable a wife, as I would wish or desire: she hath all the vertuous qualities that ought to be in a woman of her dignity, or in any other of a baser estate: she is also surely a noble woman by her conditions will well declare the same. With that (quoth cardinall Wolsey) Sir, I most humbly require your highnes, to declare before all this audience, whether I haue bene the chiefe and first mouer of this matter vnto your maiestie or no, for I am greatly suspected herein. My Lord Cardinall (quoth the K.) I can well excuse you in this matter: marie (quoth he) ye haue bene rather against me in the tempting hereof, than a setter forward or mouer of the same: the speciall cause that moued me vnto this matter, was a certaine scrupulositie that pricked my conscience, vpon certain words spoken at a time when it was, by the B. of Bayon the french ambassadoz, who had been hither sent vpon the debating of a marriage to be concluded betwene the princesse our daughter the ladie Mary, and the Duke of Orleans, second son to the K. of France, and vpon the resolution and determination of the same, he desired respite to aduertise the king his master thereof, whether our daughter Mary should be legitimate, in respect of this my marriage with this woman, being sometime my brothers wife: which words once conceived within the secret bottome of my conscience, engendred such a scrupulous doubt, that my conscience was incontinently accombyed, vexed and disquieted: whereby I thought my selfe to be greatly in danger of Gods indignation, which appeared to be (as me seemed) the rather, for that he sent vs no issue male: & all such issues male as my said wife had by me, died incontinent after they came into the world, so that I doubted the great displeasure of God in that behalfe. Thus my conscience being tossed in the waues of a scrupulous conscience, & partly in despaire to haue any other issue than I had already by this ladie now my wife, it behoued me further to consider the state of this realme, and the danger that it stood in for lacke of a prince to succede me, I thought it good in release of the weightie burden of my weake conscience, & also the quiet state of this woorthie realme, to attempt the lawe therein, whether I might lawfully take another wife more lawfully, by whom God might send me more issue, in case this my first copulation was not good, without any carnal concupiscence, and not for any displeasure or mistaking of the quenes person and age, with whom I would be as well contented to continue, if our marriage may stand with the lawes of God, as with any woman aliv: in which point consisteth all this doubt that we go about now to trie, by the learning, wisdome, & iudgement of you our prelates and pastors of all this our realme and dominion now here assembled for that purpose, to whose conscience and learning I haue committed the charge and iudgement, according to the which, I will (God willing) be right well content to submit my selfe, and for my part obey the same: wherein, after that I perceiued my conscience so doubtful, I moued it in confession to you my lord of Lincoln then ghostly father: and for as much as then you your selfe were in some doubt, you moued me to aske the counsel of all you my lords: whereupon I moued you my lord of Canterburie, first to haue your licence,



cence, in as much as you were metropolitane, to put this matter in question, and so I did of all you my lordes, to which you granted vnder your seales, and that I haue here to be shewed. That is truth, if it please your grace, quoth the archbishop of Canterburie, I doubt not but my brethren here present will acknowledge the same: So sit not so, vnder your correction, quoth the bishop of Rochester, for you haue not mine: So, ah, quoth the king, loke here, is not this your hand and seale, and shewed him the instrument with seales: So forsooth, quoth the bishop. How saie you to that, quoth the K. to the archbishop of Canterburie: Sir, it is his hand and his seale, said my L. of Canterburie. So my lord (quoth the bishop of Rochester) indeed you were in hand with me to haue both my hand and seale, as other of my lordes haue done, but then I said again to you, that I would neuer consent to anie such act, for it was much against my conscience, and therefore my hand and seale should neuer be set to any such instrument. God willing, with much more matter touching the same communication betwene vs. You saie truth, quoth the archbishop of Canterburie, such words you had vnto me, but you were fully resolu'd at last, that I should subscribe your name, and put to your seale my selfe, and you would allow the same. All which, quoth the bishop of Rochester, vnder your correction my lord, is not true. Well, well (quoth the king) it maketh no great matter, we will not stand with you in argument, you are but one man. And then the king rose vp, and the court was adioyned vntill another daie.

The next court daie the cardinals saie againe, at which time the counsell on both sides were there ready to answer: the kings counsell alledged the matrimonie not to be lawfull at the beginning, because of the carnall copulation had betwene prince Arthur and the Quene. This matter being verie vehementlie touched on that side, and to proue it, they alledged manie reasons and similitudes of truth, and being answered negatiuelie againe on the other side, it seemed that all their former allegations were verie doubtfull to be tried, and that no man knew the truth. Yes (quoth the bishop of Rochester) I know the truth: how know you (quoth my L. cardinal) the truth more than anie other person: Yes forsooth my lord (quoth he) *Quia ego sum professor veritatis*, therefore I know the truth: I know that God is truth it selfe, and he neuer saith but truth, and God said: *Quos Deus coniunxit, homo non separet*. And for as much as this marriage was ioined and made by God to a good intent, I saie that I know the truth, and that man cannot breake vpon anie wilfull occasion that which God hath made and constituted. So much doth all faithfull men (quoth my lord cardinal) know as well as you, yet this reason is not sufficient in this case, for the kings counsell doe alledge diuers presumptions to proue that it was not lawfull at the beginning. Ergo it was not ordained by God, for God doth nothing without a due order, therefore it is not to bee doubted, but if the presumptions be true, which they do alledge to be most true, then the confusion was, ne could not be of God. Therefore I saie to you my lord of Rochester, ye know not the truth, vnlesse ye can auoid their presumptions by iust reasons. Then quoth doctor Ridley, it is a shame and a great dishonour to this honorable presence, that anie such presumption should be alledged

in this open court, which be too detestable to be rehearsed: what (quoth my lord cardinall) *Domine doctior magis reuerenter?* No, no, my L. (quoth he) there belongeth no reuerence to be giuen to this matter, for an irreuerent matter would be irreuerently answered: and there they left, and proceeded forth with other matter.

Thus the court passed from session to session, and date to date, that at a certaine date of their session, the king sent for my L. cardinall to come to him to Wyndesore, who to accomplish his commandement went to him, and bring there with him in communication in his priue chamber from 11. unto 12. of the clocke at none and past, my L. cardinall departed from the L. and took his barge at the Blacke friers, and went to his house at Westminster. The Bishop of Carlisle being in his barge, said vnto him, winding his face, it is a hot date quoth he: Yea my L. (quoth the cardinall) if ye had been as well chased as I haue bin within this howre, ye would saie it were verie hot: and as sone as he came home to his house at Westminster, he went incontinent to his naked bed, where he had not laine full two howers, but that my L. of Wilshire came to speake with him of a message from the L. My Lord vnderstanding of his coming, commanded he should be brought to his bed side, and he being there, shewed him the L. pleasure was that he should incontinent go with another cardinall vnto the Q. (who was then in Wyndesore in her chamber there) to perswade with her by their wisdomes, and to aduise her to surrender the whole matter into the kings hands, by her owne consent & will, which should be much better to her honour, than to stand to the trial of law, and thereby to be condemned, which should seeme much to her dishonour. To fulfill the kings pleasure, my L. said he was readie, and would prepare him to go thither out of hand, &c. Then my L. arose, and made him ready, taking his barge, and went straight to Wyndesore place to cardinall Campeius, and so went together to Wyndesore, directly to the queenes lodging, & being in her chamber of presence, they shewed the gentleman vsher that they came to speake with the Q. grace. The gentleman vsher aduertised the queen, that the cardinals were come to speake with her: with that she rose vpp, and with a skeine of white thread about her neck, came into her chamber of presence, where the cardinals were attending, at whose coming, quoth she. Alacke my lords, I am verie sorie to make you attend vpon me, what is your pleasure with me? If it please your grace (quoth cardinall Wolsey) to go into your priue chamber, we will shew you the cause of our coming: My lord (quoth she) if ye haue any thing to saie, speake it openly before all these folke: for I feare nothing that yee can say against me, but that I would all the world should heare and see it, and therefore speake your minde openly I praye you. Then began the cardinall to speake to her in Latin: Praise god my L. (quoth she) speake to me in English. for I can (I thanke God) both speake and vnderstand English, although I vnderstand some latin. Forsooth (quoth the Cardinall) god madam, if it please your grace, we come both to know your minde how you are disposed to do in this matter betwix the king and you, and also to declare secretly our opinions and counsell vnto you, which we do only for very zeale and obedience we beare vnto your grace.

my lord (quoth she) I thanke you for your good will: but to make you answer in your request, I cā not so suddenly, for I was set among my maids at woꝝk, thinking full little of any such matter, wherein there needeth a longer deliberation, and a better head than mine to make answer; for I need of counsell in this case, which toucheth me so nere, and for any counsell or friendship that I can find in England, they are not for my profit: what thinke you I praise you my lords, will anie English man counsell me, or be friendly to me against the pleasure, that be his subiects? nay forsooth; and as for my counsell in whom I will put my trust, they be not here, they be in Spaine in mine owne country: and my lords, I am a poore woman lacking wit to answer to any such noble persons of wisdom as you be in so waighty a matter, therefore I pray you, be good vnto me poore woman, destitute of friends here in a forren region, and your counsell also I will be glad to heare: and therewith she toke the cardinall by the hand, & led him into her private chamber with the other cardinall, where they taried a season talking with the quene: which communication ended, they departed to the king, making to him relation of her talke, and after returned home to supper. Thus this case went forward from court to court, til it came to iudgement, so that enery man expected iudgement wold be giuen the next day, at which day the king came thither, and set him down in a chaire within a doze, in the end of the galerie (which opened directly against the iudgement seate) to heare the iudgement giuen, at which time, all their proceedings were openly read in Lat in. That done, the kings counsell at the barre called for iudgement, with that (quoth Cardinall Campeius) I will not giue iudgement till I haue made relation to the pope of all our proceedings, whose counsell and commandement in this case I will obserue, the matter is too high for vs to giue anie hasty iudgement, considering the highnes of the persons, and the doubtfull occasions alledged: and also whose commissioners we be, vnder whose authority we sit, it were therefore reason that we should make our chiefe head a counsell in the same, before we proceed to iudgment definitiue. I come not to please for fauor, meede, or dread of any person alieue, be he king or otherwise, I haue no such respect to the person, that I will offend my conscience, I wil not for the fauor or displeasure of any high estate, do that thing that should be against the will of God, I am an old man both weake and sickly, that loke dailly for death, &c. And for as much as I do vnderstand, hauing perceiurance by the allegations in the matter, the case is very doubtfull, and also the party defendand will make none answer, but doth rather appeale from vs, supposing that we be not indifferent, considering the kings high dignitie and authority within his owne realme, which he hath ouer his subiects, and we bring his subiects, the thinketh that we cannot do iustice for feare of displeasure. Therefore to auoide all these ambiguities and doubts, I will not waide any further in this matter, vntill I haue the full opinion and assent of the pope, and such other of more experience, or as be seene better in such doubtfull lawes, than I am: therefore I will adioyne the court for this time, according to the order of the court of Rome, from whence semblable sursoitacion is deriued: and if we should go further than our commission doth warrant vs, it were great follie

The Duke of  
Suffolke his  
speech touching  
the Cardinals.

and much to our blames, and maie be accounted breakers of the order of the high court, from which (as I said) our authoritties be deriued. And with that the court was dissolued, and no more done. Then slept forth the duke of Suffolke from the king, and spake with an haile countenance the se woordes: It was neuer merite in England (quoth he) while we had any cardinals among vs: which woordes were set forth both with countenance and vehemencie, that all men marvelled what he intended, to whom no man made answer. Then the Duke spake againe in great despight, to the which our Cardinall (perceiuing his vehemencie) soberlie made answer, &c. This matter continued thus a long season, and my Lord Cardinall was in displeasure with the king, for that the matter in his suite toke no better successe to his purpose, notwithstanding my L. excused him by his commission, which gaue him no authoritie to proceed in iudgement without knowledge of the pope, who reserued the same to himselfe. At the last they were aduertised by their post, that the Pope would take deliberation in the matter, untill his courts were opened, which should not be before Bartholomew tide next. The king considering the time too long ere it should be determined, thought it good to send an ambassadoe to the pope to perswade with him, to shew such honorable fauor vnto his maiestie, that the matter might sooner be ended than it was like to be, doctor Stephen Gardener secretary was thither sent, and there tarried till the latter end of sommer. The king commanded the queene to be removed out of the court, and sent to another place: and his highnes rode in his progresse. And when M. Secretarie was returned from Rome, Cardinall Campeius made suite to be discharged, and was admitted to returne to Rome.

Stephen Gardener the kings  
secretary sent  
ambassadoe.

Cardinall Campeius toke his iourney towards Rome, with the kings reward, but that it was I am vncertaine: neuertheless after their departure it was reported vnto the king by the counsell, that cardinall Campeius was departed, & caried with him great treasures of my L. cardinals of England, to be conuayed in great sums to Rome, whither they surmised he would secretly repaire out of the realme: insomuch as they caused a post to ride after the cardinall to search him. And when they ouertoke him at Caleis (where he was staied untill search was made) there was not found so much money as he receiued of the kings reward, and so he was dismissed, and went his wale.

After that Cardinall Campeius was thus departed and gone, Michaelmas terme drew on, against which time my L. cardinall resorted vnto his house at Westminster: and when the terme began, he went vnto the hall in such like sort and gesture, as he was accustomed most commonly to do, and sate in the Chancerie being then Chancelor: after which date he neuer sate more.

The next daie he tarried at home expecting the comming of the Dukes of Suffolke & Norfolke, who came not that daie: but the next day, to wit, the 18. day of October, they came thither vnto him, to whom they declared the kings pleasure, which was that he should surrender and deliuer by the great scale into their hands, and to depart simplie vnto Ather, which was an house situate nigh vnto Hampton court, belonging to the bishopricke of Winchester. The cardinall demanded of them their commission that gaue them such authoritie:

who



who answered againe, that they were sufficient commissioners, and had authority to doe no lesse by the kings mouth: notwithstanding he would in no wise agree in that behalfe, without further knowledge of their authority, saying: That the great seale was deliuered him by the kings person, to enjoy the ministration thereof, with the roome of the Chancelor, for the terme of his life, wher of for his surety he had the R. letters patents: which matter was greatly debated betwene him and the dukes, with manie great and heinous words, insomuch that the dukes were faine to depart againe without their purpose, and rode to Windsor to the king, and made report accordingly: but the next day they returned againe, bringing with them the kings letters. Then the cardinal deliuered vnto them the great seale, & was content to depart simply, taking with him nothing but only certaine prouision for his house: and after long talke betwene him and the dukes, they departed with the great seale of England, and brought the same to the king. Then the cardinall called all his officers before him, & tooke account of them for all such stufte wherof they had charge, and in his galerie were set diuers tables, wherupon laie a great number of goodly rich stufte, as whole pieces of silke of all colours, velvet, satin, damaske, taffata, grograin and other things: also there lay 1000. pieces of fine Holland cloth, There was laid on euery table books, reporting the contents of the same, and so was there inventories of all things in order against the kings coming. He caused to be hanged the wals of the galerie on the one side, with cloth of gold, cloth of tissue, cloth of siluer, and rich cloth of bodken of diuers colours: on the other side were hanged the richest sute of copes of his owne prouision made for his colleges of Oxford and Ipswich, that euer was seene in England. Then had he two chambers adjoining to the galerie, the one most commonlie called the guilt chamber, and the other the counsell chamber, wher in were set by two broade and long tables vpon trestles, wherupon was set such a number of plate of all sortes, as was almost incredible. In the guilt chamber were set out vpon the table nothing but guilt plate, and vpon a cupboard and in a window was set no plate but gold, very rich: and in the counsell chamber was all white & parcell guilt plate, and vnder the table in baskets was all old broken siluer plate, and bookes set by them, purporting euery kind of plate, and euery parcell, with the contents of the ounces thereof. Thus was all things prepared, giuing charge of all the said stufte, with all other remaining in euery office, to be deliuered to the R. to make answer to their charge: for the order was such, that euery officer was charged with the receipt of the stufte belonging to his office by indenture. Then all things being ordered, as is before rehearsed, my lord prepared him to depart by water, and before his going sir William Gascoigne being his treasurer, came vnto him (to whome he gaue among other the charge of the deliuerie of the said goods to be deliuered vnto the king) and said vnto the cardinall then being his lord and master. Sir (quoth he) I am loy for your grace: for ye shal go straight way to the tolwer, as I heare say. Is this the good comfort and counsel quoth my R. cardinall vnto him (that you can giue your master in aduersity? It hath ben alwaies your natural inclination to be very light of credit, & much moze light of reporting

Cardinal dis-  
charged of the  
great seale, and  
departed from  
Dorke place  
simply.

lies. I would you should know sir William, and all those reporters, that it is untrue, for I neuer deserved to come there, although it hath pleased the king to take my house readie furnished for his pleasure at this time. I would all the world knew that I haue nothing but it is his of right; for by him, and of him I haue receiued all that I haue: therefore it is of conuenience and reason, that I render vnto his maiestie the same againe with all my heart: therefore go your waies, and attend well to your charge. And therewithall hee made him readie, and then with his train of gentlemen and yeomen, which was no small number, hee took his barge at his priuie staires, and so went by water vnto Putney: at the taking whereof, there was walking vp and down in Thames as full of boates, filled with people of London, expecting the cardinals departing by water, supposing that he should haue gone to the toluer, whereof they loied verie much. ¶ Wauering and newfangled multitude, is it not a wonder to consider the mutabilitie of this vncertaine worlde, the common people desireth alwaies those thinges for the newelties sake, which after turneth them to small profit or commoditie? For if the sequels be wel and directly waied and considered, they had small cause to reioice at his fall. What hath succeeded, wise men do know, and the common sort themselves haue felt: wherefore to wonder at it were but a follie, to studie the remedie, it profiteth not: for thus it hath euer bene, and will alwaies be, do what yee will to redresse the same it boteth not. I cannot see, but alwaies men in authoritie bee disdained with the common sort of people, and they most of all that do obserue and minister iustice: for where they please some one that receiueth the benefit of the law at their hands, according to iustice, they in likewise displease the contrary part, supposing to sustain wrong where they haue right. Thus all iustices be in contempt with the people alwaies, for ministration of their duty, yet most some such bee alwaies elected, and deputed so to do, for else if the world should bee without inquisition and order, there should be too much error and abhominacion. When he was arrived with all his train at Putney, being vpon the land, he took his mule, and euerie man took their horses; and riding not past a paire of butts length, he espied a Gentleman come riding in posse downe the Hill in the Towne of Putney: And demanding of his Gentlemen about him, what hee was that came riding downe so fast, forsooth Sir (quoth they) it is master Noris, as it seemeth to vs; and by and by, hee came to my Lorde, saluting him and sayde: Sir, the Kinges maiestie commendeth him vnto you, and commaunded me to shewe you, that you bee as much in his fauor as euer you were, and so shall bee: therefore hee would that you shoulde bee of good cheere, and take no thought, for you shall not lacke. And although hee hath done thus unkindlie towards you, it is moze for the satisfiying of some, than of any indignacion. And yet you knowe well that hee is able to recompence you againe, and re-store you to wisse so much: and thus he had me that I shoulde shewe you, and willed me to bid you to take all this matter in patience: and sit for my part, I trust to see you in better estate then euer ye were. But when he had heard master Noris report the good and comfortable wordes of the king, hee quickly lighted from his mule, all alone, as though he had bene the yongest amongst his

Wauering of  
the newfangled  
multitude de-  
scribed.

Cardinal Wol-  
sey arrived at  
Putney, and  
what followeth  
there at that  
tyme.

his men, and incontinent kneeled downe in the dirt vpon both his knees, holding vp his hands for toy of the kings most comfortible message: master Noris lighted also, espying him so sone vpon his knees, and kneeled by him, and toke him in his armes, and asked him how hee did, calling vpon him to credite his message: *¶* Master Noris (quoth he) when I consider the soifull newes that you haue brought me, I could do no lesse than greatly reioyce, euery word pierced so my hart, that the sodain toy surmounted my memozy, hauing no regard or respect to the place, but I thought it my duty, that in the same place where I receyued this comfort to laud and praise god vpon my knees, and most humbly to render to my soveraign lord my hartly thanks for the same. And as hee was talking thus vpon his knees to Master Noris, he would haue pulled off a velvet night cappe which he ware vnder his black hat, and scarlet cap, but he coulde not vndo the knot vnder his chin: wherefore with violence hee rent his laces of his cap, and pulled his said cap from his head, and kneeled bare headed: and this don, he rose vp, and mounted againe vpon his mule, and so rode forth by the high wate in the Towne, talking with Master Noris. And when hee came vppon Putney heath, where Master Noris should depart from him, master Noris gaue him a ring of golde with a stone, and saide vnto him, that the king sent him the same for a token of his good will, which ring (quoth he) the king saith ye know very wel. It was the priate token betweene the king and him, when the king would haue ante expectall thing sped at his hands: then said he to master Noris, if I were lord of the realme, the one halfe thereof were too small a reward to giue you for your paines and good newes: but good master Noris, consider with mee that I haue nothing left me, but my clothes vpon my backe, therefore I shall desire you to take this small reward at my hand (the which was a litle chaine of gold made like a flagen chaine, with a crosse of gold, wherein was a peece of the holie crosse, which he continuallie ware about his neck next his boode:) and said further moze; master Noris I assure you, when I was in prosperitie, although it seem but smal in value, yet I would not gladly haue departed with the same for a thousande pounce, therefore I shall require you to take it in good woorth, & to weare it about your neck continually for my sake, and to remember me to the king, when ye shall see oportunitie, vnto whose highnesse I shall most instantlie require you to haue me most humble commended, for whose charitable disposition towardes me, I can but praye for the preservation of his royall estate. I am his obedient subiect, his poore chaplain, and bead man, and so will be during my life, accounting my selfe nothing, nor to haue any thing but onelie of him, and by him, whome I haue iustlie and trulie serued to the best of my grosse wit: and with that he toke master Noris by the hand bare headed, and so departed. And when hee was gone but a small distance, he returned againe, and caused Master Noris to be called to him: when master Noris was returned, hee sayde vnto him, I am lozie (quoth he) that I haue no token to sende to the king: but if yee will at my request, present the king with this poore foole, I trust he will accept him: for he is for a noblemans pleasure, forsooth woorth 1000. pounce: so master Noris toke the foole, with whome my lord was faine to send six of his tallest yeomen to helpe him to conuey the foole

Watch the foole  
cardinals foole  
giuen to the a.

to the court, for the poze sole toke on like a tirant rather then he would haue departed from my L. but not withstanding they conuicted him, and so brought him to the court, where the king receiued him verie gladielie.

After departure of Paſt. Noris with his token to the king, my Lorde rode ſtraite to Aſhere, which is an houſe belonging to the Biſhoppſicke of Elincheſter, ſituate in the countie of Surreie, not far from Hampton Court, where my L. and his familie continued the ſpace of thye or ſoure weekes, without either beds, ſhertes, table clothes, or diſhes to eat their meate in, or therewith to baie anie, holwe it there was good prouiſion of all kinde of victuall, and of beere, and wine, whereof there was ſufficient, and plentie enough: but my L. was compelled of neceſſitie to borrowe of maſter Arundell, and of the biſhop of Carleile, plate and diſhes, both to drinke in, and eate his meate in. Thus my Lorde with his familie continued in this ſtraunge eſtate untill after Walowetide.

On Alhalowne daie when the cardinall had finiſhed his ſeruice, hee returned into his chamber, and called for his dinner, who was ſerued in his priuie chamber, and there dined among bluers his Doctors, among whom maſter Thomas Cromwell dined: and ſitting at dinner, it came to paſſe that in communication of his gentlemen and ſeruaunts true and faithfull ſervice, which my Lorde much commended, Maſter Cromwell tooke an occaſion, to tell my Lorde that hee ought in conſcience to conſider the trueth, and good ſeruice that they had doone him in his neceſſitie, which did not forſake him in weale nor in woo, and ſaide: Sir, it ſhall be well doone for your grace to call them before you, both Gentlemen which bee woorthie perſons, and alſo Pro-men, and let them vnderſtande, that yee right well conſider their paines and trueth, with their faithfull ſervice, and to giue them your commendation, with good wordes, the which ſhall bee to them great courage, to ſuſtaine your miſerie with paines and patience, and to ſpende their life and ſubſtance in your ſeruice. Alas, Thomas (quoth my Lorde) yee knowe I haue nothing to giue them, and wordes without deedes bee not often well taken, for if I hadde but as I late hadde, I woulde departe with them ſo frankelie, as they ſhoulde bee well contente: But nothing hath no ſauour: and I am both aſhamed and alſo ſozie, that I am not able to requite their faithfull ſervice. And although I doe reioyce, as I maie, to conſider the fidelitie that I ſee in the number of my ſeruaunts, who will not forſake mee in my miſerable eſtate, but bee as diligent, and as ſeruiceable about me, as they were in my great triumph and glozie: Yet doe I lament againe as beheimentlie the want of ſubſtance to diſtribute among them. Why Sir, (quoth Maſter Cromwell) haue yee not heere a number of Chaplaines, to whom yee haue departed liberallie with Spirituall promotions, inſomuch, as ſome maie diſpende by your Graces preferment a thouſande pounde by yeere, and ſome ſiue hundred Markes, and ſome more, and ſome leſſe: You haue not a Chaplain within your houſe, or belonging vnto you, but he maie ſpend well at the leaſt, by your procuremente and promotion, three hundred Markes yeerelie, who haue had all the proſite and gaines at your handes: and your other ſeruauntes

Maſter Tho.  
Cromwel his  
counſel to the  
Cardinall.



seruantes nothing: and yet haue your seruantes taken much more paines in one daie, then all your idle Chaplaines haue doone in a yere. Therefore if they will not freelie and friendelie consider your liberalitie, and depart with you of the same goods gotten in your seruice, now in your great indigence and necessitie, it is pittie that they liue, and all the worlde will haue them in indignation and hatred, for their ingratitude to their Master. I thinke no lesse Thomas (quoth my Lorde:) wherefore I praise you cause all my seruants to assemble without in my great Chamber after dinner, and see them stande in order, and I will declare vnto them my mind. After that the wordes ende was taken vpp, Master Cromwell came to the Gentleman Vsher and saide. Hearde you not (quoth hee) what my Lorde said? Yes Sir, quoth hee, I did; why then, quoth hee, call all the Gentlemen and yeomen vpp into the great Chamber, and so it was doone: the Gentlemen placed on the right side of the Chamber, and the Yeomen on the other side, and at the last my Lord came out in his rochet vpon a biolet gowne like a bishop, who went straight to the vpper end of the saide chamber, where was the great Windowe, standing there a while, his Chaplaines about him, beholding the goodlie number of his seruants, who coulde not speake vnto them vntill the teares ranne downe his cheekes, which few teares perceiued by his seruantes, caused the fountaines of water to gush out of their faithfull eyes in such sort, as it woulde cause a cruell hart to lament. At the last, after he had turned his face to the window, and dried his moisted cheekes, he spake to them in this sort in effect. Most faithfull gentlemen, and true harted Yeomen, I do not lament to see you about mee, but I lament in a maner, a certaine ingratitude on my behalfe towards you all, in whom hath bin a great default that in my prosperitie haue not done so much for you as I might haue done either in deed or in word, which laie in my power then to do, but then I knew not the seluel and special treasure I had in my house of you my faithfull seruantes; but now experience hath taught me, and with the eyes of my discretion I do perceiue the same. There was neuer thing that repented me more that euer I did, then both the remembrance of my great and most obliuious negligence, & unkind ingratiued that I haue not promoted, preferred, and aduanced you all, according to your demerits; howebeit, it is not unknowne vnto you all, that I was not so fullie furnished of temporal promotions in my gift, as I was of spirituall preferments; and if I should haue preferred you to anie of the Li. offices, then should I haue run in the indignation of the Kings seruants, who would not much let to report behind my back, that there could no office in the Li. gift, escape the cardinal & his seruantes; and thus should I haue run in open slander before all the worlde. But now it is come to this passe, that it pleased the king to take all that euer I haue, into his hands, so that I haue nothing to giue you: for I haue nothing left mee but my bare clothes vppon my backe, the which are simple in comparison that I had, howbeit, if it might doe you anie good, I woulde not sticke to diuide the same among you, but my good gentlemen and Yeomen, my trustie and faithfull seruants, and of whome no prince had the like, I shall require you to take some patience with me a while; for I doubt not, but that the king considering my

The Cardinals  
words to his  
gentlemen and  
yeomen.

suggested.

suggested offence by mine enemies, which is put against me to be of small griefe or hart, for so great and sodaine an overthrow will shortly restore me to my living, so that I shall be more able to deuide my substance among you, whereof ye shall not lacke, for whatsoeuer shall chance hereafter to be an ouerplus and superfluitie of my reuenues, at the determination of my p̄cey account, it shall be distributed among you: for I wil neuer during my life, esteeme the goods of riches of this world any other wise, then which shall be sufficient to maintaine the state, that God hath, and shall call me to. And if the king doe not so shortly restore me, then will I write for you, either to the king, or to any noble man within this realme to retaine your seruice: for I doubt not but the king or any noble man of this realme will credite my letter in your commendation: therefore in the meane time I would aduise you to repaire home to your wiues, such as haue wiues, and some of you that haue no wiues, to take a time to visit your parents in the Countrey. There is none of you all, but once in a yere ye would require licence to see and visite your wife and other your friends: take this time therefore in that respect, and in your return I wil not refuse you to beg with you. I consider that your seruice in my house hath bin such, that ye be not apt to serue any man vnder the degree of a king: therefore I would aduise you to serue no man but the king, who I am sure wil not refuse you. Therefore I shall desire you to take your pleasure for a month, and then ye may come againe: and by that time I trust the k. will extend his mercy vpon me. Sir (quoth M. Cromwel) there be diuers of these your peomen that would be glad to see their friends, but they lacke money: therefore here be diuers of your chaplaines who haue receiued at your hands great benesses, & liuings, let them shew themselves vnto you as they be bound to do: I thinke their honesty and charity is such, that they will not see you lacke, that may do you good or pleasure. And for my part, although I haue not receiued of your graces gift one peny toward the increase of my liuing, yet wil I giue you this toward the dispatch of your seruants: and therewith deliuered to my lord 5. l. in gold: and now let vs see what your chaplains will do, I thinke they wil depart with you much more liberally than I, who be more able to giue you a pound then I a penie, go to masters (quoth he) to the chapleins: Insomuch as they gaue to my l. liberallie, some 10. l. some 20. nobles, some 5. l. and so some more, & some lesse, as their powers would extend at that time: by means whereof my lord receiued among them, as much money, as paid the peomen 10. s. a peece towards their quarters wages, and as much money as would paie euery of them for a months boord wages: and then they departed do home into the hall, where some determined to go to their friends, and some would not depart from my lord, untill they might see him in better estate. My lord returned into his chamber lamenting the departure from his seruants, making his moane to Master Cromwell, who comforted him the best he coule, and desired my lord to giue him leaue, to go to London, whereas he woulde either make or marre (which was alwaies his common word.) Then after a little communication with my lord in secret, he departed, and toke his horse, and rode to London. At whose departing he said to my lords gentlemen, fare well,

After Cromwell  
well his com-  
fort and gift to  
the cardinall.

Cromwell  
went to London  
to make of to  
marre.

well, ye shall heare shortly of me, and if I speede well, I will not faile to be here againe within these two daies, and so he rode on his tourneie, Ralph Sadler, since a knight, was then his clearke, and rode with him. After my L. had supped that night, and all men got to bed, being Alhalowne daie about midnight, one of the porters wakened the gentleman vsher, & tolde him that there were a great number of horsemen at the gate, that would com in, saying that it was Sir Iohn Russell: the gentleman vsher had the porter goe downe, and make a great fire in the lodge to drie them, for it had rained al that night most vehementlie. The saide gentleman vsher rose, cast on his night Colvne, and went to the gates, and asked who was there: with that Master Russell spake, and the gates were opened, Sir Iohn Russell went to the fire to drie him, and saide he came from the king on message to my Lorde, Sir, quoth the gentleman vsher, I trust your newes be good. Yea I promise you on my fidelitie, and so tel him, that I haue brought him such newes wat will please him well. The cardinall was wakened, and told of the tourneie taken by Sir Iohn Russell that troublesome night: I praise God al be for the best quoth my lorde: Yes quoth the gentleman vsher, he told me it was such newes, as ye would greatly reioice to heare: wel then, quoth he, God be praised, and welcome be his grace, go ye and fetch him to me, and by that time I will be ready to talke with him.

Sir Ralph  
Sadler.

Sir Iohn Russell  
sent to the cas-  
tall.

When Sir Russell was come to my lord he had cast on his night gowne, vnto whom Sir Russell made most humble reuerence vpon his knee, whom my Lorde stopped vnto, and toke him vp, and bad him welcome: Sir (quoth he) the King commendeth him vnto you, and deliuered him a great ring of gold, with a turkes for a token, and willed me to bid you be of good cheere, for he loueth you as wel as euer he did, and is soze for your trouble, whose minde runneth much vpon you: insomuch that before his grace sate downe to supper, he called mee vnto him, and desired me to take the pains secretlie to visit you, and to comfort you the best of my power. And Sir I haue had the sorest tourneie for so litle a waite, that euer I had to my remembzance; my lord thanked him for his paines and good newes, and demanded of him if he had supped, and he said naie; wel then quoth my L. cause the cookes to prouide some meat for him, and cause a chamber to be prouided for him, that he maie take his rest a while vpon a bedde; all this commandement was fulfilled, and in the mean time my L. and Sir Russell were in secret communication, and in the end Sir Russell went to his chamber, and said he would tarie but a while, for he would be at the court, at Crénwiche again before dase, and would not for anie thing that it were known that he had bin with my L. that night. And so being in his chamber, hauing a smal repast, rested him a while vpon a bedde, while his seruantes supped, and dried them. And that doone, incontinent hee rode a waie with speede againe to the court. After this within a while, my lord was restored to plate, besseel, and household stuffe, of enerie thing necessarie some part, so that hee was better furnished than before.

Nowe to returne to master Cromwell, to see howe hee hath sped since his departure. The case stood so, that the Parliament should begin in *crastino anni*

Th Cromwell,

Parliament at  
the Blacke  
Friers.

The Cardinall  
indightred in the  
premunire.

*mayum*, or thereabouts: and hee being within London deuised with himselfe to be one of the Burgessees of the Parliament, and chanced to meeete with one Sir Thomas Rush knight, a speciall friende of his, whose sonne was appointed to bee a burgesse, of whome he obtained his come, and so put his foote into the Parliament House: so that within two or thre dayes after his departure from my lord he came againe to Athere, with a pleasant countenance: and saide, that he had once aduentured to put in his foote, where he would be better regarded or euer the Parliament was finished. Then talked hee with my Lord, and after his talke, he rode againe to London, because he would not be absent from the Parliament in the Morning. There was nothing doone against him in the Parliament house, but he sent to my Lorde to knowe what answere hee might make in his behalfe: Insomuch, that there was nothing alledged against my lord, but that he was readie to make answere thereto: Insomuch, that at the length his honest estimation, & earnest behauior in his Masters cause, grew so in euerie mans opinion, how that hee was the most faithfull seruant to his Master of all other, wherein hee was greatlie of all men commended. Then was there brought in a Bill of Articles into the parliament house, to haue my Lorde condemned of treasons, against which bill Master Cromwell inueyed so discretelie with such wittie perswasions, and deepe reasons, that the same coule take no effect. Then were his enemies constreyned to indight him in a premunire, all which was to intitle the king to his goods and possessions, the which hee hadde obtained and purchased for: the maintenaunce of his Colledges in Oxforde and Ipswich, whereof hee was then in building, in the most sumptuous wise: wherein when my Lorde was demanded by the Iudges which were sent vnto him to knowe his minde, and to take his aunswere therein, hee aunswered them in this wise: my lordes Iudges (quoth hee) the Kings highnesse knoweth, whether I haue offended his Maestie or no, in vsing of my prerogatiue legantine, for the which I am indightred. I haue the Kings licence in my Coffers, vnder his hande, and broade Seale, for the exercising and vsing thereof in the most largest wise, the which nowe are in the handes of mine enemies. Therefore because I will not stand in question with the king in his owne cause, I will here presentlie confesse before you the indightment, and put mee wholie to the mercie and grace of the King, trusting that he hath a conscience, and a discretion to consider the trueth, and my humble submission and obedience, wherein I might right well stand to the tryall thereof by Justice: but thus much you maie saie to his highnes, that I am wholie vnder his obespance and will, & do submitte my selfe to all things that shall bee his Princelie pleasure, whose will and commandement I neuer disobeyed or repugned, but was alwayes contented, and gladd to please him before God, whome I ought most chieflie to haue obeyed, the which nowe mee repentes: notwithstanding, I most heartilie requaire you to haue mee vnto his royall Maestie commended, for whome I doe and will during my life, praye to God to sende him much prosperous honour and victorie ouer his enemies, and therewith they tooke their leaue and departed. Shorltie after the king sent the duke of Norfolk vnto him in mes-  
but



but that it was, was kept secret. My lord being aduertised that my lord of  
 Norfolk was comming euen at hand, he caused all his gentlemen to waite  
 vpon him downe through the hall into the base court to receiue the duke at the  
 gates, and commanded all his peomen to stand in order still in the hall: and he  
 himselfe with his gentlemen went to the gates, where he receiued my lord of  
 Norfolk bare-headed, who embraced each other: and so led him by the arme  
 through his hall into his chamber. And when the duke had passed through vnto  
 the vpper end of the hall, regarding the number of tall peomen that stood  
 on each side thereof, he turned againe to the peomen and saide: Sirs (quoth  
 he) your diligent and faithfull seruice vnto your Maister in this his calamitie,  
 hath purchased you of all men, noble, and ignoble, much honestie, insomuch,  
 that the King commaunded me to saie to you in his name, that for your true  
 and louing seruice that yee haue doone to your Maister, his highnesse will see  
 you at all times furnished with seruices according to your demerites: with  
 that my Lord put off his cappe, and saide to my Lord of Norfolk, sir (quoth  
 he) these men bee all approued men, wherefore it were pittie they shoulde  
 want anie seruice: and beeing sozie that I am not able to doe for them as my  
 heart wisheth, I will therefore requite you my good Lord, to bee good Lord  
 vnto them, and extende your charitie amongst them, where or when ye shall  
 see occasion at anie time hereafter, and that yee will prefer their diligence and  
 faithfull seruice vnto the king. Doubt you not my lord (quoth he) but I will do  
 for them the best in my power, & whereas I shall see cause I will be earnest  
 suiter for them to the king: and some of you I will haue my selfe in seruice for  
 right honest men, and as you haue begun, so continue, vntill ye heare more of  
 the kings pleasure, Gods blessing and mine be with you, and so went vp into  
 the great chamber to dinner, whom my lord cardinall thanked, and saide vnto  
 him: yet my Lord of all other noblemen I haue cause to thanke you, for your  
 noble & gentle heart, the which you haue shewed me behinde my backe, as my  
 seruaunt Th. Cromwel hath reported vnto me: but euen as ye be a noble man  
 in deede, so haue you shewed your selfe no lesse to all men in calamitie, and in  
 especiall to me, whome ye haue brought down from my high estate: but now  
 againe beeing in this miserable state, ye haue extended your fauour most ho-  
 nourable, with great charitie, &c. The dinner ended, the cardinall and duke  
 went into my Lordes priuie Chamber, where they continued in consultati-  
 on: and being there, it chanced Maister Shelley the Iudge to come thither, who  
 was sent from the King, whereof relation was made to my Lord: which cau-  
 sed the duke and him to breake vp their communication. And as the duke de-  
 sired to goe to a Chamber, hee mette with Maister Shelley, to whom Maister  
 Shelley resorted. And after hee had made relation of the cause of his comming  
 hee desired my Lord of Norfolk to tarrie, and to assist him in dowing of his  
 message: whome hee denied, and saide, I haue nothing to do with your mes-  
 sage, wherein I will not meddle, and so departed into a Chamber, where hee  
 tooke his rest for an houre or two: and in the meane time my Lord issued out  
 of his priuie chamber, and came to maister Shelley to know his message, who  
 after due salutations, did declare vnto him that the Kings pleasure was to haue  
 my

Duke of Norfolk  
 took sent to the  
 cardinall.

Iudge Shelley  
 sent to the Car-  
 dinall.

my Lordes house, called Bozke place, neere Westminster, belonging to the Bishoppe of Bozke, and to possesse the same, according to the lawe of his realme: his highnes hath sent for all the Judges, and for all his learned counsell to know their opinions for the assurance thereof, whose opinions be fullie resolved that your Grace must make a recognisance, and before a Judge to acknowledge and confesse the right thereof to belong to the king and his successors, and so his highnes shall be assured therof: wherefore it hath pleased the king to appoint and send mee hither to take of you the same recognisance, hauing in your grace such assurance, as that ye will not refuse so to do. Therefore I shall desire your grace to know your pleasure therein. *Shelley* (quoth my Lorde) I knowe that the king of his owne nature is of a roiall stomacke, not willing more than iustice shall leade him vnto by the lawe: And therefore I counsell you, and all other Judges and learned men of his counsell, to put no more into his head than lawe that maie stande with conscience: for when yee tell him this is the law, it were well done ye should tel him also, that although this be the law, yet this is conscience: for law without conscience is not met to be giuen to a king by his counsel, to be ministred by him, ne by anye of his ministers; for euery counsellor to a king ought to haue a respect to conscience before the rigor of the law. For *Laus est facere quod decet, non quod licet*. The king ought for his roiall dignitie and prerogative to mitigate the rigor of the law, where conscience hath no more force. And thefore in his princely place he hath constituted a chancelor to order for him the same. And heretofore the court of Chancerie, hath bene commonly called the court of conscience, because it hath iurisdiction to commaund the law in euery case to desist from the execution of the rigor of the same, whereas conscience had most effect. Therefore I saie to you, that in this case, although you and other of your profession perceiue by the orders of the lawe, that the king maie lawfully do that thing which yee requyre of me: how say you master Shelley, may I do it with conscience, to giue that a waile which is none of mine from me and my successors? if this bee the lawe and conscience, I praye you shewe me your opinion. Forsooth my Lorde (quoth he) there is a great conscience: but hauing regarde to the kings high power, and to a better purpose, it maie the better stand with conscience: who is sufficient to recompence the church of Bozke with double the value. That I knowe wel, but here is no such condition (quoth my L.) but onlie a bare & simple departure with anothers right. For if euery bish. that maie, should so do, then might euery prelate giue away the patrimony of their dignities, which should be but smallie to the kings honor. Well I will not stand with you long in this matter. Let me see your commission: to whome master Shelley shewed the same. And that seene, *Passer Shelley*, quoth he, yee shall shewe the kings highnes that I am his most faithfull subiect, obediencer and brad-man, whose roiall commandement and request I will in no wise disobey, but fulfill his pleasure in all such things wherein yee fathers of the law saie, that I maie lawfully do, therefore I charge your conscience to discharge me, howbeit shewe his highnes from mee, that I most humbly desire his maiestie to call to his most gracious remembrance, that there is both a heauen and hell. And there withall the

the cleark took and wrote the recognisance, and after some secret talke they departed. Then rose the Duke of Norffolke from his repast, and after some communication with my lorde, he likewise departed. Thus continued my lorde at Ather, who receiued daily messages from the court, some good, and some as euill, but no euill than good: for his enemies procured his disquietnesse what they could, as some daie they would cause the king to sende for foure or fife of his gentlemen from him to serue the king, and another daie they would take awaie some of his promotions, or some of their promotions whome he had preferred before. Then would they fetch from him some of his peomen, insomuch as the king took sixtene of them at one time into his guard. This was his life for a long time, so that there was not one daie, but or euer he went to bedde, he had an occasion greatlie to chafe, and frette the heart out of his bodie, but that he was a wise man, and bare all things in patience. At Christmasse he fell verie sore sicke, most likelie to die, whereof the king being advertised, was verie sorie, and sent Doctor Buts his Physician vnto him; to see in what estate he was. Doctor Buts came vnto him, finding him lying verie sicke in his bedde: and perceiving the danger returned to the king, of whome the king demaunded, saying: Haue ye saine yonder man? Pea sir (quoth he.) How do you like him (quoth the king?) Sir (quoth he) if ye will haue him dead, I warrant him, he will be dead wthin these foure daies, if he receiue no comfort from you shortly: Parte (quoth the king) God forbid that he should die: I praye you master Buts go againe vnto him, and doe your cure vnto him, for I would not lose him for twentie thousand pound. Then must your grace (quoth master Buts) send him first some comfortable message, as shortly as ye can: cuen so I will (quoth the king) by you, and therefore make speede to him againe, and ye shall deliuer him this ring from me for a token, in the which ring was ingrauen the kings Image, within a rubie, as like the king as coulde bee deuised. This ring hee knoweth right well, for hee gaue me the same, and tell him that I am not offended with him in my heart any thing at all, and that shall hee knowe shortly: therefore bid him plucke vpe his heart, and bee of good comfort, and I charge you, come not from him untill ye haue brought him out of daunger of death. And so Doctor Buts departed with speede to Ather, after whome the king sent Doctor Cromer the Scot, Doctor Clement, and Doctor Wotton, to consult with master Buts for my lordes recoverie.

After master Buts had bene with my Lorde, and deliuered the kings tokens vnto him, with the most comfortable wordes that he could deuise in the kings behalfe, he reioyced not a little, and advanced him in his bedde, and receiued the tokens most ioyfullie, thanking master Buts for his paines and good comfort: Master Buts tolde him furthermore that the kings pleasure was that he should minister vnto him for his health, and to soyne with him for the better and most assured waies, he hath sent hither doctor Clement, doctor Cromer and doctor Wotton. Therefore my lorde (quoth he) it were well done they were called in to visit you, and to consult with them: to this mess-

Cardinal like to haue died.

Cromwell a  
suite: to the K.  
for the cardinal.

The Cardinal  
first builder of  
Hampt's court:  
for the which  
house, the king  
gaue him Rich-  
mond in ex-  
change.

Cromwell his  
king.

on my lord was contented to heare their iudgements, and it was not long ere they had brought him out of danger, and within foure daies set him on his seate, and got him a stomacke to meate, all which done, they took their leaue to depart, refusing bitterlie all rewards profered them, saying the king had giuen them especiall commandement that they should take of him nothing, for at their retourne he himselfe would reward them. Thus my Lord continued at Alher untill Candlemas, against which feast the king caused to be sent to my lord three or foure cart lodes of stuffe, as bedding, plate, hangings, kitchen stuffe, &c. Then commanded he master Cromwell to make earnest suite to the king, that he might remove from thence to some other house: which suite at the kings hands master Cromwell obtained, for the king was contented he should remove to Richmond, which place my lord had a little before repaired to his great costes: for the king had made an exchange thereof with him for Hampton court. All this was done without knowledge of the kings counsell: for if they might haue had vnderstanding hereof before, then would they haue perswaded the king to the contrarie: but when they knew of the kings grant and licence, although they dissimuled their minds in the kings presence (yet were they afraid of him, least his nigh resort to the king might moue the king at some byaide to haue resorted vnto him, and to haue called him home againe, considering the great louing affection that the king daily shewed vnto him: wherefore they doubted his rising vp againe, if they found not a meane shortly to remove him further from the king. Inso-much that they thought it conuenient for their purpose to moue the king vpon considerations which they inuented, that it were verie necessarie that my Lord should go downe into the north vnto his benefice, where he should be a good state for the countrie, to the which the king condescended. Whereupon my Lord of Norfolke bade master Cromwell to saie to him, that he must go home to his benefice: who at his next repaire to my lord (then lying at Richmond) declared to him how it was determined that he should go home to his benefice. Well then Thomas (quoth my lord) we will go to Winchester. I will (quoth master Cromwell) shewe my lord of Norfolke what yee saie: and so he did. What should he do there (quoth the Duke?) naie let him go to his Archbishoppke of Poike, where his honoz and more charge lieth: and so shewe him. The lordes who were not his friends, moued the K. to giue my lord a pension of 4000. markes out of Winchester, and the rest to distribute among his nobilitie and seruants, and so in like wise to diuide the reuenues of Saint Albons, whereof some had three hundred marks, and some an hundred pounds, and so some more, and some lesse. And all the reuenues of the lands belonging to his Colledges of Oxford and Ipswich, which the king toke into his owne hands: whereof master Cromwell had the receipt and gouernance afore by my lordes assignment. Wherefore it was thought verie necessarie, that he should so haue still, who executed all things thereof so exaclie and wittily, that he was had in great estimation for his behauiour herein, and also for the true and faithfull demeanoz towards his lord and master. Then it came to passe, that those to whome the king had giuen anie annuities or fees for terme of life



by paffent, would not be good, but onely during my lordes life, forasmuch as the king had no longer state therein, the which he had by reason of my lordes attaindoz, in the premunice, and to make their estates good and sufficient for the terme of their liues, there was none other thiffe, but to obtaine my lordes confirmation of their paffents. And this to bee brought about, there was no meane but to sue to master Cromwell to attaine the same at my Lordes handes, who they thought the best instrument for the purpose. Then began euerie man, both noble men and gentlemen, who had ante paffents of the king out of Winchester or Saint Albons, to make suite to master Cromwell, to sollicite the cause to my lord, to get therein his confirmation, and for his paines therein, both worthily rewarded him, and euerie man to shew him such pleasure as should be at all times in their feuerall powers, whereof they assured him: wherein master Cromwell perceiued an occasion giuen him to helpe himselte, and to bring to passe that hee long sought for, intending to worke in this matter according to their desires, the soner to bring his owne enterprise and purpose to passe. Then at his next returne to my lord he moued this matter to him, and so perswaded with him, that they both wrought together to bring master Cromwell in place where hee might doe good to my lord, and also to himselte. And now he hauing the ordering and disposition of the landes of these Collicoges, he had great occasions of suites, besides his continuall accesse to the king, by meanes whereof he getwe into the kings fauour, who reputed him to be a vertie wise man, and a meete instrument to serue his grace.

Now the lordes thought long to haue the cardinall remoued further out of the kings way, wherefore among other of my lordes, the duke of Norfolke said to M<sup>r</sup>. Cromwell: Cromwel (quoth he) me thinke the cardinall thy master maketh no haste to go northward, tell him, if he go not away, but shall tarrie, I will teare him with my teeth: therfore I would aduise him to prepare himselte awaie as shortly as he can, or else he shall be sent for ward. These wordes M<sup>r</sup>. Cromwell reported to my lord at his next repaire to him, who then had an occasion to resort to him for the dispatch of the noble and gentlemens paffents. And here I will leaue off this matter, and speake of other things that in this meane time happened.

The lady Margaret dutchesse of Sauoy Ant to the emperoz, & the lady Lewes dutchesse of Angolessme, mother to the French king, met at Cambray in the beginning of the moneth of June last past, to treat of a peace, where were present docto<sup>r</sup> Tonstall bishop of London, and sir Tho. Moore chanceloz of the duchie of Lancaster, commissioners for the K. of England. At length through diligence of the said ladies, a peace was concluded betwene the emperoz, the pope, the kings of England, and of France. This peace was called the womans peace, and was proclaimed by heraults, with the sound of trumpets in the cite of London, to the great reioicing of the merchants, who in time of the wars had sustained much hinderance.

The 26. of October at Greenwith, sir Th. Moore late chanceloz of the duchie of Lancaster, was made lord chanceloz of England, and the next daie led

Bitter wordes  
of the duke of  
Norfolke. a-  
gainst the car-  
dinall.

Peace between  
the Emperoz  
and the king of  
England.  
Sir Thomas  
Moore Chan-  
celoz of Eng-  
land.

into the chancery by the dukes of Pozzfolk and Suffolk, and there swayne.

States created

The 8. of December was Th. Boilein viscount Rochford created earle of Wiltshire: Rob. viscount Fitzwater, earle of Suffer, and George L. Hastings earle of Huntington at Woke place by Westminster.

1530

The new Testament printed in English.

William Tindall hauing translated the new Testament into English, and caused the same to be printed beyonde the seas, manie of the m were conuicted into Englund, and there made sale of, as good merchandise, for many men desired to haue them, but this translation was forbidden by the K. to bee used of his subiects: for his counsell, namely the bishops affirmed that the same was not truly translated, and that therein were prologues and pcefes sounding to heresse, with vncharitable railing against bishops and the clergy. The king therefore commanded the Bishops, that they calling to them the best learned men of the Vniuersities should cause a new translation to be made, that the people without danger might read the same for their better instruction in the lawes of God.

Ann. reg. 22.

Ambassadors to the emperor and pope.

The K. vnderstanding that the Emperoz and the Pope were appointed to meete at Bononie or Boloigne, where the emperoz should bee crowned, sent thither an ambassade from him the earle of Wiltshire. Doctor Stokesley elected bishop of London, and his almoner doctor Edward Lee, to declare both vnto the pope and emperoz the law of God, the determinations of the vniuersities in the case of his marriage, & to require the pope to do iustice according to trueth, and also to shew to the emperoz, that the king did moue this matter, onely for discharge of his conscience, and not for anie other respect of pleasure or displeasure earthly: these ambassadors coming to Bonony, were honozable receiued, and first doing their message to the pope, had answer of him, that he woulde heare the matter disputed when hee came to Rome, and according to right he would do iustice. The emperoz answered, that he in no wise woulde do against the lawes of God, and if the court of Rome woulde iudge that the matrimonie was not good, hee woulde bee contented to stand by the dispensation, which he thought to bee of force enough to prooue the marriage lawfull. With these answeres the ambassadors departed, and returned homewards, till they came on this side the mountaines, and then receiued letters from the K. which appointed the earle of Wiltshire to go ambassador to the French K. which then lay at Burdeaur, making shift for mony for the redeeming of his sonnes. And the bishop of London was appointed to go to Padua, and other Vniuersities in Italy, to know their full resolutions and determinate opinions in the kings case of matrimonie: and the kings almoner was commanded to returne into Englund.

Sute to Rome forbidden.

Afterwards king Henry vpon occasion of delate made by the Pope in his controuerfie of disoucement, and through displeasure of such reportes as hee heard had bin made of him to the court of Rome, & thirly pycked forward by some counsellors, to follow the example of the Germans, caused proclamation to be made on the 19. of September, forbidding all his subiects to purchase anie manner of thing from the court of Rome, containing matter preiudiciall to the high authoritie, iurisdiction, and prerogatiue rofall of this Realme,

to the hinderance and impeachment of the kings maiesties noble and vertuous intended purposes.

Cardinall Wolsey hauing licence of the king (as ye haue heard) to repaire into Richmond, was there lodged with in the lodge of the great parke, which was a verie pretie house, there my lord lay untill Lent with a pretie number of his seruants, for the rest went to woꝝd wages. You haue heard tofore what woꝝds the Duke of Norfolke had to master Cromwel, touching my lords going into his benefice of Poꝝke. At such time as master Cromwell tolde these woꝝds to my lord: Maie Thomas (quoth my lord) then is it time to be going, if he take it so, therefore I pray you to go to the king, and saie I would go to my benefice of Poꝝke but for lacke of money, desiring his grace to helpe me with some: for ye maie say that the last money that I receiued from his grace hath bene too little to paie mine olde debts, and to compell me to the painment thereof hath bene too much extremitie, taking my goods from me, wherein I trust his grace will haue a charitable respect: ye maie also shewe my lorde of Norfolke and other of the counsell, that I would depart if I had money. Cromwell went to London, and my lorde remoued out of the lodge into the charterhouse at Richmond, where he lay in a lodging with doctor Collet, made for himselfe, untill he remoued northward, which was in the Passion weeke: and euerie daie resorted to the charterhouse there, and in the after noones hee would sit in contemplation with one of the most ancient fathers of that house in their cels, who conuerted him, and caused him to despise the vaine glorie of the world, and gaue him shirtes of haire to weare, the which he ware diuers times after. When master Cromwell came to the court, he shewed my Lorde of Norfolke, that my lord would gladly go northward, but for lacke of money, wherein he desired his helpe to the king. When was the king moued therein as well by master Cromwel, as by the counsell: which matter the king referred to determine and assigne to the counsell, who were in diuers opinions, so that after long debating it was concluded that he should haue by way of prest a thousand markes of his pension out of Winchester: when this determination was concluded, they declared the same to the king, who straightwaie commanded the same thousande markes to be deliuered out of hande to master Cromwell, and so it was. The king commanded master Cromwell to resort to him againe, when he had receiued the same summe of money: at whose returne to the king, the king said: Shew my lord, although our counsell haue assigned no summe of money for to beare his charges, yet ye shall shewe him in my behalfe, that I haue sent a thousand pound of my beneuolence, and tell him that he shall not lacke, and bid him be of good cheere. Maister Cromwell humbly in my lords behalfe, thanked the king, and therewith departed, and came to Richmond to my lord, to whom he deliuered the money, and thereof it was leuied, that the counsell sent him, and of the money which the king sent him, adding thereto the kings comfortable sayings, wherein my lord did not a little reioice. Then my lord prepared all things for his iourney, and sent to London for liuerie clothes for his seruants that should ride with him: so that all things being furnished towards his iourney, in the beginning

Cardinall  
Collet lay at  
Richmond.

Doctor Collet  
Dean of Paris.

The Cardinals  
maundie.

Sir W. Fitz  
Williams as-  
suerman of Lon-  
don, and trea-  
surer of the  
kings house.

of passion weeke before Easter he set forthward, and rode from Richmond to a place of the abbot of Westminster called Hendon: the next daie he removed to a place where plady Parry lay called the Kie: the next day to Rossford, where he lodged in the priorie: the next daie to Huntington, and there lodged in the Abbey. And the next daie he removed to Peterborough, and there lodged in the abbey, making there his abode all the next weeke, where he kept his solenne feast of Easter, with all his traine, in number 160. persons, hauing with him twelue cartes to carrie his stuffe of his owne, which he sent forth from his Colledge of Oxford, that were there prouided, beside thre score other carts of his dailie carriage of necessaries for his buildings. Upon palme fundaie he went in procession with the monkes. And vpon maundie thursdaie he made his maundie there in our Ladie chappell, hauing 59. poore men, whose fete he washed, and kissed after he had wiped them, he gaue euerie of the said poore men twelue pence in money, thre elles of good cannas to make them thirties, a paire of new shooes, a cast of red herrings and thre white herrings, and one of them had two shillings. Upon easter daie he rose to the resurrection, &c. On thursdaie next he removed to master Fitz Williams knight (sometime a merchant tailor of London, and then of the kings counsell, who dwelt within thre or foure miles of Peterborough) where he was foyfullie receiued, and had honorable entertainment. On mundaie next he removed vnto Stamford, and the next daie to Grantham, and was lodged in the house of master Hall. The next night he lodged in the Castle of Newark, where he remained the next daie, and from thence rode to Southwell, and there continued the most part of that summer, not without great resort of the most worshipfull of the countrey. And diuers noble men hauing occasion to repaire into the same countrey there, thought it good to visit my lord as they travelled, of whome they were most gladly entertained, and had right good chere: whose noble and gentle behauior caused him to haue much loue in the countrey of all kinde of people: he kept there a noble house, where was both plentie of meate and drinke for all commers, and also much almes giuen at his gate vnto the poore of the towne and country. He vsed much charity and clemencie among his tenants and other: he made managreements betwene gentlemen and gentlemen, and betwene some gentlemen and their wiues, and other meane persons, the which had bene long before a sunder and in great trouble, making for euerie of them (as occasion serued) great assemblies & feasts, not sparing his purse where he might make amittie. It chanced vpon Corpus Christi euen, in the night, when my lord and all his household were at rest in their beds, there knocked at the gate two gentlemen, the one named master Brierton one of the gentlemen of the kings private chamber, and master Wrietherley, who were come from the king in post to speake with my lord. These were let in, my lord was raised, and came to them into the dining chamber: they seeing him in his night apparell, did to him due reuerence, whom he toke by the hands, demanding how the king his soueraigne lord did. Sir (said they) right well and merry, we must desire to talke with you apart: With a good will (quoth he.) After long talke, they toke forth of a little maile a little coffer covered with



with graine belnet, and bound with bars of silver and gilt, with a locke and a gilt key, with the which they opened the chest, out of the which they toke an instrument or booke containing more than a skinne of great parchment, having manie seales hanging to the same, whereunto they put more iware for my lordes seale: the which my lord sealed, and subscribed his name with his owne hand, and deliuered the same againe vnto them, desiring them to take a bed: for it was somewhat past midnight. But they saide they would straight way ride to the earle of Shrewsburie, to be with him ere he were stirring: so my lord caused them to eat such colde meate as was readie, and to drinke a boile or two of wine: that done, he gaue each of them foure olde soueraignes of fine golde, and so they departed. In this sort and manner my lord late at Southwell untill about the latter end of grasse time, then he removed to Rewike, an abbey, to Kufford and Blith abbey, and so to Scroby, where he continued till after Michaelmas, exercising many deedes of charity, a commonly euery sunday he would trauell vnto some poore parish church, and there would say his diuine service, and cause one of his chaplaines to preach vnto the people: that done, he would dine in some honest house of the towne, where should be distributed to the poore a great almes in meat and drinke, as of monie. About the feast of S. Michael, he removed to Calwood castle within 7. miles of Pozke, where he lay long after with much honor and loue of the countrey, doing deedes of charitie, and held there an honorable household for all comers, and also built and repaired the castle, hauing artificers and laborers about the number of 300. persons daillie in wages, &c. At length being thereunto perswaded by the doctors of the church of Pozke, he determined to be stalled there at Pozke minster the next mundaie after Alhallowne day, against which time due preparation was made for the same, but not in so sumptuous wise as were his predecessours. My lord sent his gentleman vther to Pozke, to foresee things there that should bee ordered and provided for the solemnitie, which should haue bene as meane as could be. Upon Alhallowne daie one of the head officers of the Church of Pozke, which should haue the most dooings in all this stallation, was with my lord at dinner at his house of Calwood, and sitting at dinner they fell in communication of this matter, and of the order thereof, saying, that my lord should go on foote from a chappell of Saint Iames, without the gates of the citie vnto the minster vpon cloth, the which should be distributed among the poore after his passage. My Lord hearing this, made answer in this wise: Although our predecessours did go vpon cloth, so we intend to go on foote from thence without any such gloze, for I take God to witnes, I do not intend to go thither for any triumph or gloze, but only to performe the rules of the church, to the which I am bound. And therefore I desire you all, and will command other my seruants to go as humble thither without anie sumptuous or gorgeous apparell, other wise than in decent maner: for I doe purpose to come to Pozke vpon Sundae at night next, and to lodge in the deans house, and vpon munday to be stalled, and there to make but a dinner for you of the close, and for other worshipfull gentlemen that shall chaunce to come thither to the same, and to suppe with some of the residences, and

Cardinal Col-  
ley at Calwood.

Preparation  
for installing  
the cardinall.

the next daie to dine with the Maſoz, and then to prepare home hither againe. The daie being once knowne vnto all the countrie, which coulde not bee hid, the worshipfull Gentlemen and other, as Abbots and Priors sent in such provision of victualles, that it is almost incredible, as of fat beaſts and muttons, wilde fowle, and veniſon both red and fallowe, and other daintie things such as would haue plentifully furnished the feaſt. All which things were vnknewen to my lord, for as much as hee being preuented and diſappointed of his purpose, by reason that he was arreſted of high treason, as ye ſhall heare hereafter, ſo that moſt part of this Sommer provision, was ſent vnto Poſke that ſame daie of his arreſt, and the next daie following: for his arreſt was kept as cloſe and ſecret from the countrie, becauſe they doubted the common people, which had him in great eſtimation and loue, for his great charitie and liberality which he vſed daily amongſt them. It is appointed by the king & counsell, that Sir Walter Waſh knight, one of the kings priuate chamber, ſhoulde be ſent downe with a commiſſion into the North vnto the earle of Northumberland, who was ſometime brought vp in houſe with the cardinall, and they twaine being iointlie in commiſſion to arreſt the Cardinall of high treason: Maſter Waſh tooke his horſe at the court gate about noone vpon Alhalowne daie, toward the earle of Northumberland. And now we haue 3 occaſion to declare what happened about the ſame time, which peraduenture ſignified the troubles following to the cardinall. The cardinall ſitting at dinner vpon Alhalowne day, hauing at his bowdes end diuers chaplaines ſitting at dinner, ye ſhall vnderſtand that the cardinals great croſſe ſtood in a corner at the tables ende, leaning againſt the hanging, and when the bowdes ende was taken vp, and a conuenient time for the chaplaines to ariſe, one doctor Auguſtine a Venetian, & phyſition to the cardinall, riſing from the table with the other, hauing vpon him a great golwe of boiſſerons veluet, ouerthrew the Croſſe, which trailing downe along the tappet, with the point of one of the croſſes, brake doctor Boners head, that the blood ranne downe, the companie there ſtanding, greatlie aſtonied with the chaunce. The Cardinall perceiuing the ſame, demaunded what the matter meant of their ſodayne amaze? and they ſhewed him of the fall of his Croſſe vpon doctor Boners head: and hath it, quoth he, brake anie blood? Yea forſoth my Lord quoth they: with that he caſt his head aſide, and ſaide ſhaking his heade, *Malum Omen*, and therewith ſaide Grace, and roſe from the Table, and went to his Chamber. Nowe marke the ſignification how the Cardinall expounded this matter at Pomfret after his fall. Firſt ye ſhall vnderſtand that the Croſſe which hee bare as Archbiſhoppe of Poſke, ſignified himſelfe, and Auguſtine the Phyſition who ouerthrew the Croſſe, was oncle hee that accuſed the Cardinall, whereby his enemies caught an occaſion to ouerthrowe him: it fell vpon doctor Boners head, who was Maſter of the Cardinales faculties and Spirituall iuriſdictions, and was then damaged by the ouerthrowe of the Croſſe: yea, and moreouer drawing blode of him, betokened death, which shortly after did enſue. About which time of this miſchaunce, the ſame verie daie and ſeaſon Maſter Waſh tooke his horſe at the Court, as nigh as coulde bee iudged, and ſo muſt needes bee taken for a

Doctor Boners  
head broke.

ſigne

signe or token of that which followed. Nowe the appointed time drew neere  
 of his scaulation, and sitting at dinner vpon the Friday next before the Mon-  
 daie, on the which daie hee intended to be scauled at Porke, the Earle of Nor-  
 thumberland and Maister Walsh, with a great companie of Gentlemen of the  
 earles house, and of the country, whom he had gathered together in the kings  
 name, came into the hall at Catwood, the officers being at dinner, and the car-  
 dinall not fullie dined, being then in his suites. The first thing that the earle  
 did after hee had set order in the hall, hee commanded the porter at the gates to  
 deliuer him the keies thereof, who would in no wise obey his commandement  
 although he were roughly threatened, and straitly commanded in the kings  
 name to make deliuey of them to one of the earles seruants: sir (quoth hee)  
 seeing that ye do but intend to set one of your seruantes in my place to keepe  
 the gates, I know no seruant that ye haue, but I am as able as he to do it, and  
 keepe the gates to your purpose, whatsoeuer it be; and also the keies were de-  
 liuered me by my L. and mast. wherefoze I pray you to pardon me, for whatsoe-  
 uer ye shall command me to do in the ministracion of mine office, I shal do  
 it with good will: with that (quoth the earle) hold him a booke, and commanded  
 him to laie his hand thereon: thou shalt sweare (quoth he) that thou shalt well  
 and true lie keepe the gates to the kings vse, and to do all such things as mee  
 shall command, and that ye shall let passe neither in nor out at these gates, but  
 such as ye be commanded by vs, and with this oth, hee receiued the keies at the  
 earles hands. Of all these doings knew the cardinal nothing, for they stoppe d  
 the staires, so that none went vp to the cardinals chamber, and they that came  
 down, could no more go vp again: at the last one escaped, who shewed the cardis-  
 nal that the earle was in the hall: whereat the cardinal marvelled, and woulde  
 not beleue him, but commanded a gentleman to bring him the truth, who go-  
 ing downe the staires, saw the earle of Northumberlande, and returned, and  
 said it was very he: then (quoth the cardinal) I am soze that we haue dined,  
 for I feare our officers bee not prouided of anie store of good fish, to make him  
 some honorable chere, let the table stand (quoth hee) with that hee rose vp, and  
 going downe the staires, hee encountred the Earle comming vp with all his  
 suite, and as soone as the Cardinal espied the Earle, he put off his cap, and said,  
 my Lord, ye be most heartilie welcome, and so embraced each o'her: then the  
 cardinal tooke the earle by the hand, and had him vp into his chamber, whom  
 followed all the number of the Earles seruantes. From thence, he led him  
 into his bed chamber, and they being there all alone, the Earle saide vnto the  
 cardinal, with a soft voice, laying his hand vpon his arme, my L. I arrest you  
 of high treason: with which wordes the Cardinal beeing marueylouslie affo-  
 nished, standing both still a good space, at the last, quoth the Cardinal, what  
 authoritie haue you to arrest mee? Forsooth my lord, quoth the earle, I haue  
 a commission so to do: where is your commission, quoth he, that I may see it?  
 Saie sir that you make not, saide the earle: well then, quoth the cardinal, I  
 will not obey your arrest. But as they were debating this matter betwene  
 them in the chamber, so busie was M. Walsh in arresting doctor Augustine at  
 the Doze in the Pallace, saying vnto him, go in traitor: or I shall make thee.

Cardinal arre-  
sted.

Augustine doc-  
tor of physick ar-  
rested of treason

At

At the last master Walsh being entered the cardinales chamber, beganne to plucke off his hode, and after kneeled downe to the cardinall, vnto whome the cardinall said, come hither gentleman, and let me speake with you: sir here my L. of Northumberland hath arrested me, but by whose authoritie hee theweth not: if ye be iointed with him, I pray you shew me. And ade my lord, quoth sp. Walsh, hee theweth you the truth: well then, quoth the cardinall, I pray you let me see it. Sir, I beseech you, quoth master Walsh, hold vs excused: there is annexed to our commission certaine instructions which you maie not see: well quoth the Cardinall, I trowe yee are one of the kinges priuie Chamber, your name is Walsh, I am content to yeld to you, but not to my lord of Northumberlande without I see his commission: the worst in the kinges priuie Chamber is sufficient to arrest the greatest peere of the Realme by the kinges commaundement, without anie Commission, therefore put your Commission and authoritie in execution, spare not, I will obeye the kinges will: I take God to iudge, I neuer offended the King in worde nor deed. Then the earle called into the Chamber dyuers Gentlemen of his owne seruantes, and after they had taken the Cardinales keyes from him, they put him in custodie of the earles Gentlemen, and then they went about the house to set all things in an order: then sent they Doctor Augusine a waie to London with as much speeche as they coude, who was bounde vnto the horse like a Traytor, but it was Sundaie towarde night ere the Cardinall was conueied from Calwood, and lodged that night in the Abby of Pomfret. The next daie hee remooued toward Dancaster, and was there lodged at the Blacke Friers, the next daie he was remoued to Sheffield parke, where the earle of Shrewsbury with his ladie, and a traine of Gentlemen and Gentlewomen receiued him with much honor: And the cardinall being thus with the earle of Shrewsbury, continued there 18. daies after, vpon whome the earle appointed diuers gentlemen to attend continuallie, to see that hee shoulde lacke nothing, beeing serued in his owne Chamber, as honourable as he had bene in his owne house, and ouer euerie daie the Earle woulde repaire vnto him, and commune with him. After the Cardinall had thus remayned with the Earle of Shrewsburie about a fortnight, it came to pas at a certain time as he sate at his dinner in his owne Chamber, hauing at his bordes ende a messe of Gentlemen and chaplaines to keepe him companie, towarde the ende of his dinner, when hee was come to eating his fruites, his colour was perceyued often to chaunge, whereby hee was iudged not to bee in good health: whereupon, one of his Gentlemen sayde: Sir, me seemes you are not well at ease: to whome he answered with a loud voice, forsooth no more I am, for I am, quoth he, taken sodainelie with a thing about my stomack, that lieth there along, as colde as a whetstone. which is no more but wind, I pray you go to the Poticarie, and inquite of him if hee haue anie thing that will breake wind vptoward. Then went he to the earle, and shewed him what estate the cardinall was in, and what hee desired: with that the Earle caused the poticarie to be called before him, and demanded of him if he had any thing that woulde breake wind vptowarde in a mans bodie, and hee answered hee had such geare. Then, quoth the Earle, fetch mee some: thorn the Poticarie

Cardinal lodged at Sheffield with the earle of Shrewsbury.

The cardinall sicketh.



Poticarie fetched a white confection in a faire Paper, and shewed it to the Carle, who commaunded one to giue the assaie thereof before him, and then the same to bee brought to the Cardinall, who receyued it vpper all at once into his mouth: But immediatlie after, surelie hee auoyded much wind bywarde. Lo, (quoth hee) yee maie see that it was but winde, and nowe I am well eased, I thanke God, and so he rose from the Table, and went to his prayers: And that doone, there came on him such a loosenesse, that it caused him to goe to his Stoole. And not longe after the Carle of Sh:ewsburie came into the gallerie to him, with whome the Cardinall met, and then sitting downe vpon a Bench, the Carle asked him howe hee did, and hee most lamentable aunswered him, and thanked him for his gentle entertaynement: Sir, (quoth the Carle) if yee remember, yee haue often wished to come before the King, to make your answere, and I haue wzitten to the King in that behalfe, making him p'suie of your lamentation that yee inwardlie haue re- ceined for his displeasure, who accepteth all your wrongs therein, as friends bee accustomed to do in such cases: wherefore I would aduise you to pluck vp your heart, and be not agast of your enemies, I doubt not but this your iourney to his highnes shall be much to your aduancement. The king hath sent for you that woorthypfull knight Master Kingstone, and with him 24. of your olde ser- uants, now of the guard, to the intent yee maie safelie come to his maiestie: sir (quoth the Cardinall) I trow master Kingstone is Constable of the tower: yea, what of that, quoth the Carle? I assure you hee is elected by the king for one of your friends: Well, quoth the cardinall, as God will, so be it, I am sub- iect to fortune, being a true man, readie to accept such chances as shal follow, and there an end. I pray you where is M. Kingstone? quoth the carle, I wil send for him: I praie you so do, quoth the cardinall: at whose message he came, and as soone as the Cardinall espied him, he made haste to encounter him, and at his comming hee kneeled to him, and saluted him in the kings behalfe, whom the Cardinall bare-headed offered to take vp, and said: I praie you stande vp, kneele not to me, I am but a wretch replete with miserie, not esteeming my selfe but as a vile abiect, vtterlie cast awaie without desert as God knoweth. Then saide M. Kingstone with humble reuerence, Sir, the king hath him com- mended vnto you: I thanke his highnes, quoth the cardinall, I trust hee be in health: yea, quoth M. Kingstone, and he commanded me to say to you, that you should assure your selfe that he beareth you as much good will, as euer hee did, and willet you to be of good chere, and where report hath bene made, that ye should commit against him certaine heinous crimes, which he thinketh to bee vntrue, yet he can do no lesse than to send for you to your trial, and to take your iourney to him at your own pleasure, commanding me to be attendant vpon you. Therefore sir I pray you when it shall be your own pleasure to take your iour- ney, I shall be ready to giue attendance: Master Kingstone, quoth he, I thanke you for your nemes, and sir, if I were as lusty as I haue ben of late, I would ryde with you in Horse, but I am diseased with a sike that maketh mee verie weakie: but I shall with all speede make me readie to ryde with you to Wor- tow. When night came, the Cardinall waied vertie like with the Laske,

the which caused him continually to go to the steele al that night, in somuch, that he had that night 50. steeles: therefore in consideration of his infirmittie, they caused him to carrie all that day: and the next daie he toke his journey with master Kingstone and them of the guard, till he came to an house of the earle of Shrewsburies, called Hardwike hall, where he lay all night verie euill at ease. The next daie he rode to Pottingham, and there lodged that night more sicke: and the next day he rode to Leicester Abbey, and by the waie wared so sicke, that he was almost fallen from his mule, so that it was night before he came to the Abbey of Leicester: where at his comming in at the gates, the Abbot with all his couent met him with diuers torches light, whom they honorably receiued and welcommed: to whom the Cardinall said: father abbot, I am come hither to lay my bones among you, riding so still untill he came to the staires of the chamber, where he alighted from his mule, and master Kingston led him vp the staires, and as soone as he was in his chamber he went to bed. This was on the saturday at night, and then encreased sicker and sicker, untill Mondae, that all men thought he would haue died. So on Tuesdaie S. Andrewes euen, master Kingston came to him and bad him good morrow, for it was about fife of the clocke, and asked him how he did: sir, quoth he, I carrie but the pleasure of God, to render vp my poore soule into his hands: not so sir, quoth master Kingston; with the grace of God, ye shall liue and do better well, if ye will be of good chere: nay in god sooth master Kingston, my disease is such, that I cannot liue: for I haue had some experience in Physicke. Thus it is, I haue a flure with a continuall feauer, the nature whereof is, that if there be no alteration of the same within eight daies, either must ensue excoziation of the entrailes, or framie, or else present death, and the best of them is death, and as I suppose this is the eight daie, and if ye see no alteration in me, there is no remedie, saue, though I maie liue a daie or twaine after, but death must ensue. Sir, quoth master Kingston, you be in such peniturnes, doubting that thing, that in god faith ye neede not. Well, well, master Kingston, quoth the Cardinall, I see the matter how it is framed: but if I had serued God as diligentlie as I haue done the king, he would not haue giuen me ower in my gray haire: but this is the iust reward that I must receiue for the diligent paines and studie that I haue had to doe him service, not regarding my seruice to God, but only to satisfie his pleasure: I praye you haue me most humble commended vnto his Royall maiestie, and beseech him in my behalfe to call to his princelie remembrance, all matters proceeding betwene him and me from the beginning of the worlde, and the progresse of the same, and most especiallie in his weightie matter, and then shall his graces conscience know whether I haue offended him or no, &c. Master Kingstone farewell: I can no more saie, but I wish all things to haue good successe, my time draweth on fast, and euen with that he began to draw his speech at length, and his tong to faste, his eyes being set, whose sight fayled him, then did they put him in remembrance of Christ his Passion, and caused the peomen of the guard to stand by to see him die, and to witnes of his words at his departure: and incontinently the clocke stroke eight, and then he gaue vp the ghost, and departed

Speech of the  
Cardinall to  
master King-  
ston.

The Cardinall  
dierh.

departed this present life, which caused som to cal to remembrance how he said the day before, that at eight of the clock they should lose their master: One of them looked on the other, supposing that either he knewe or prophesied of his departure.

Here is the end and fall of pride and arrogancy of men exalted by fortune to dignities: for I assure you in his time hee was the haughtiest man in all his proceedings alive, having more respect to the honor of his person, than he had to his spirituall profession, wherein should be shewed all meeknes, humility and charity, the discussing whereof any farther I leave to diuines.

Example of  
pride and arro-  
gancie.

After that hee was thus departed, master Kingstone sent a posse to the king, advertised him of the departure of the cardinall by one of the gard, that saue and heard him die. And when mast. Kingstone and the abbot had consulted for the order of his buriall, it was thought good that he should be buried the next daie following: for master Kingston would not tarrie the returne of the posse: and it was thought good, that the Spaloz of Leicester and his brethren should be sent for, to see him personallie dead, to auoyde false rumors that mought happen. In the meane time the body was taken out of the bedde, who had by on him next his bodie a shirte of haire, besides his other shirte of holland: now having put upon his deade corpes, all such ornaments, as hee was professed in, when he was made Bysshoppe and Archbysshoppe, as Garter, Crosse, Ring, and Pall, with all other things due to his order and dignitie: and lying thus all daie in his Coffin open faced, euerie man that would might see him there dead, as the Spaloz, his brethren, and other did. About foure or fve of the clocke at night, he was carried downe into the Church, by the Abbot and chanoins, and service was sung for the funerals. And about foure of the clocke in the morning master Kingstone and his seruantes came into the Church, and there carried the executing of diuers ceremonies, and then was hee buried in the midst of our ladies chappel, and by that time it was fve of the clocke in the morning. Then prepared euery man to horseback being S. Andrewes day the apostle, & so toke their iourney to the court. And thus ended the life of this rich cardinal of England, whose historie, who list to read with a cleare eie, maie behold the mutabilitie of vaine honors, and brittle assurance in abundance, the vncertaintie of dignities, the flattering of fained friends, and the sickle fauor of worldly princes: whereof this L. cardinal had felt and tasted both of the sweet & sowre in each degrees, as floting from honors, losing of riches, deposed from dignities, forsaken of friends, and the mutabilitie of princes fauor: of all which things hee had in this world, the full felicitie, as long as fortune smiled vpon him, but when she beganne to frowne, how soone was hee deprived of all these mundaine ioies, and vaine pleasures, which in twentie yeeres with great tra- uaille and studie he obtained, was in one yere and lesse, with great care and sorow lost and consumed. O madnesse! O sonde desire! O foolish hope! O greedy desire of vaine honor, dignities, and riches! of what vnconstant hope and trust is it, in the false fained countenance and promise of fortune, where- fore the Prophetesse sayde full well: *The saurissat & ignorat cui congregabit ea.* Who is certayne that hee shall leaue his ryches that hee hath gathered in the world,

would, vnto them whome he hath purposed: The Wiseman saith: That an other whome peradventure he hated in his life, shall spende it out, and consume it.

The clergy condemned in the premunire.

The Clergie of England, being iudged by the L<sup>d</sup>. learned counsell to bee in the premunire, for maintaining the power legantine of the cardinal, were called by procelle into the kings bench to answer, wherfore in their conuocation they concluded a submission, wherin they called the king supream head of the church of England, according to the law of God, and not other wise, and were contented to giue the king 100000. poundes, to pardon their offences touching the premunire.

R. H. supream head of the Church.

1531

When the parliament was begun the 6. of Januarie, the pardon of the spiritual persons was signed with the kings hand, and sent to the Lordes, which they consented to, and signed the bill. But when the same came downe to the commons it could not so easlie passe, because diuers froward persons would also that the L<sup>d</sup>. should pardon the laity aswell as the spirituality, saying that all men which had dealt with the Cardinall were in like danger: This their saile and bold demand was thought more then reason, for that they would seeme to enuie other mens wealth, and also to restraine the king of his libertie: but at length they seemed to be sorrowfull for that they had dealt so vnaduisedly, and then the king sent them their Pardon, for the which they humble thanked him.

Conclusions against the kings marriage.

The 30. daie of March the Lorde Chancelor, and diuers other Lordes, both Spiritual and Temporal, came into the Common house, and there the Lorde Chancelor declared what the king had done, touching the doubt of his marriage, to knowe the opinions of learned men of diuers Vniuersities in Christendome, and there were reade the determinations of the same Vniuersities, which they had written and sealed, concluding, that the kings marriage could not be lawfull: there were shewed also diuers booke diuine, by doctors of foraine nations, which were to the same effect, but were not reade, for that the daie was spent.

A cooke boiled in Smithfield.

The 5. of April one Richard Rose a cooke, was boiled in Smithfield, for poisoning of diuers persons, to the number of 16. or more, at the Bishop of Rochesters place, amongst the which Benet Curwine gentleman was one, and he intended to haue poisoned the bishoppe himselfe, but hee ate no potage that daie, whereby hee escaped, marie the poore people that ate of them, manie of them died,

An. reg. 23.

King Henry sent vnto the Quene diuers Lords of the Counsell, about the last of Maye, the which Lordes in her Chamber at Greenwich, declared vnto her the determinations of the Vniuersities concerning the marriage betwixt them two, and demanded of her, whether shee would for the quietnesse of the kings conscience, put the matter to foure prelates, and foure temporal lords of the realme: but she still affirmed her selfe to be his lawfull wife, and therefore would abide in that point, till the court of Rome had made a finall ende therein.

Chantery priests of London down against their bishop.

The chanterie priests of London being called afore the bishop, who would haue



haue had them contrbutaries toward the payment of the 100000. l. granted to the k. for his pardon of the premunire, kept such a stir, in breaking into the Chapter where the Bishop sate, that the Bishop was faine with faire words to dismisse them for the time: but after vpon complaint made to the Lorde Chancelor, dyuers of them, and of their partakers were arrested and committed to prison, to the number of fiftene priests, and fwe late men, some to the Tower, and some to the Fleet, and to other prisons, where they lay long after.

This yere king Henry tooke into his hands, the Hospitall of Saint Iames, nere vnto Charing Crosse, and all the medowes to the same belonging, <sup>The k. house at S. Iames built 1532.</sup> com-  
pounding with the Sisters of that house, they to haue pensions during their liues. And then builded in place of the said hospitall, a goodlie mansion, retel-  
ling still the name of S. Iames: hee also there inclosed a parke with a wall of  
bricke, nowe indifferently seruing to the saide mansion, as also to his place of  
Whitehall at Westminster.

After Christmas the Parliament beganne againe, in the which the Com-  
mons declared themselues to be soze agreed, with the cruelties of the ordi-  
naries, that called men afoze them *ex officio*. At length a booke was drawn of  
all their griefes, and the same deliuered to the king by the speaker, who hum-  
bly beseeched him in the name of the Commons to take such direaion therein,  
as to his highnes might seme expedient: whereunto the king answered hee  
would take aduice, and heare the partie accused speake. In this Parliament  
was made an act, that bishops should pay no more annuities, or other wisse mo-  
nie for their buls to the pope, for it was affirmed that there had bene paid for  
buls, of bishops and other, sith the fourth of Henry the seuenth, 60000. pounde  
sterling.

1532  
Parliament.

The parliament began againe after Easter, there was a motion made to  
helpe the king with mony towardes his charges about the edifying of pylles  
and other fortifications, vpon the borders foreaneust Scotland, both for better  
habitation to bee hadde there, and also for restraint of the Scottes that vsed to  
make inuasions: there was therefore a fiftene granted, but not inacted at this  
season, because that sodainly began a pestilence in Westminster: wherefoze  
the parliament was proroged.

Ann. reg 24.

The 15. of May, sir T. Moore after great suite made by him, was discharged  
of his chancelorship.

The twentieth eyght of Maie, Frier Elstowe standing in the Roode losse of  
the Friers Church at Greenwich, contraryng the Preacher doctor Curwine,  
sayde hee lyed, befoze the king, and was for the same sent to prison. This  
Doctor Curwine was sometime Deane of Hereforde, after Archbyschoppe  
of Duvelin in Irelande, and lastlie Byschoppe of Exeter in Queene Marias  
dayes.

A stout frier  
told the Prea-  
cher befoze the  
k. that hee lied.

The 4. of June the king dubbed Tho. Audley knight, made him keeper of the  
great seale, and not long after lord chancelor.

The 15. of June, 5. men were hanged and quartered at tower hill, for coining  
and clipping of the coine.

Lorde Audley  
made L. chance-  
lor.  
Coiners and  
clippers execu-  
ted,

Christ's church  
suppressed.

In the month of July, the king suppressed the priore of the holie Trinitie commonly called Christ-church in London, he sent the Chanons of that house to other priories, and gave their church, plate, and lands, to sir Thomas Audley, late made keeper of the great seale.

The thye and twentieth of August, William Warham archbishop of Canterburie, deceased after he had late archbishop eight and twentie yeres and thye moneths, he was buried at Canterburie, Thomas Cranmar succeded in the archbishopricke.

The Tower  
repaired.  
Marchionesse  
of Pembroke.

The king repaired the tower of London, namely the White Tower.

The first of September the Lady Anne Bolleine was made Marchionesse of Pembroke at Windsor, and then was given her by the king, one thousand pound by yere, out of the bishopricke of Durham.

King Henry  
landed at  
Caleis.

The eleuenth of October King Henry landed at Caleis, with the Duke of Richmond his bastard sonne, the Duke of Norfolk the Lord Treasurer of England, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marquesse of Excester, the Carles of Darbie, Arundale, Orford, Surrey and Rutland, the Viscount Lisle king Edward the fourth his bastard sonne, the Lord Marrauers, the Lord Sands Lord Chamberlaine of the Kings house, the Lord William Haward, the Lord Bray, the Lord Montague, the Lord Cobham, the Lord Mordant, the Lord Daubney, the Lord Grey, the Lord Clinton, the Lord Vaux, the Lord Mounteagle, the Lord Rocheford, with diuers other Lordes: the Bishops of Winchester, London, Lincolne, and Bath: Sir William Fitz William Treasurer of the kings house, Sir William Pawlet Comptroller, Sir William Kingstone Captaine of the Garde, Sir Iohn Page, Sir James Bolleine, Sir Anthonie Browne, Sir Edward Neuill, Sir Thomas Cheiney, Sir Iohn Russell, Sir Richard Page, Sir Ralph Eldercare, Sir Edward Baynton, Sir Edward Santener, Sir Griffith Deane, Sir Iohn Dudley, Sir Iohn Femer, Sir Henrie Long, Sir Anthony Hungerford, Sir Iohn Brudges, Sir Arthur Hopton, Sir Anthony Wingfield, Sir William Paston, Sir Edmond Bedingfield, Sir Thomas Strange, Sir William Hawre, Sir Edward Wotton, Sir William Askewe, Sir Iohn Marleant, Sir William Barington, Sir William Essex, Sir Giles Strangeweis, Sir Edward Chamberlaine, Sir Giles Caple, Sir Iohn Sent-Iohn, Sir Walter Hungerford, Sir William Gascoine, Sir Lionel Norris, Sir Edward Boloine, Sir Thomas Lisle, Sir Iohn Ashton, Sir Thomas Palmer, Sir William Boloine, Sir William Finche, Sir William Pellam, Sir Thomas Rotherham, Sir Iohn Norton, Sir Richard Sands, Sir Iohn Neuill, and thirtie Esquires, with many Gentlemen, and all their traines.

Provision in  
the towne of  
Caleis.

The towne of Caleis had at this season 24. C. beds, and stabling for two thousand horses, besides the villages about.

The 21. of October, King Henry rode toward Boloigne, and was by the way at Sandingfield met by the French king, and many nobles of France, who rode all to Boloigne, and were there lodged.

King H. rode  
to Boloigne.

The twentie five of October, whilst the king lay thus in Boloigne, the French king called a chapter of the companions of his order called Saint Michell, of whome the king of England was one, and so he there created the

Dukes

Dukes of Norfolke and Suffolke, to be companions of the same order, who being brought to the Chapter had their collars delivered to them, and were sworn to the statutes of the order. The same daie, they departed out of Boloigne toward Caleis: without the towne of Caleis, about the distance of two miles, the Duke of Richmond the kinges base sonne, with a great companie of noble men, which hadde not bene at Boloigne, met them, and saluting the French k. embraced him in most honorable and curteous maner. Then they passed forward to Hevenhambidge, and so to Caleis, where was such provision made for the receiving of them, as well for lodging, plate, and all such other furniture of household, as also of all sort of viandes, wines, and other necessaries, & it seemed wonderful. The French kings train was 1200. horse or more, among the which was the king of Navarre, the Cardinall of Roaine, and manie Dukes, Bishoppes, and great Estates of France, Calcoigne, Bytaine, and Poymandy: but there was lodging enough in Caleis, not onlie for them, but also for manie other, so that there were about 8000. persons lodged within the Towne at that time. Whilest these two kings lay at Caleis, king Henric made the king of Navarre knight of the Garter. The next daie, the French king, with the king of Navarre, and all the great Lordes of France, rode againe to Boloigne: and king Henry of Englande rode with them to Sandringfield, where hee made the French king a collie banquet. At this entertaine, there was a communication of a joint armie to bee made by them both, agaynst the Turke, who hadde at that time a great armie in Hungarie. The two kings should bying into the felde agaynst him fourescore thousand men, whereof 10000. to bee horsemen with artillerie and furniture, but the enemie of peace (the diuell) stirred all christian princes agaynst the Emperour, for that they feared he sought to be monarch of all Italie. Whereupon king Henry of England sent presentie to the French king, by the Lord of Poimerie the French ambassador 50000. crownes. The king of England feared & the Emperour, for queene Katherine his Aunts sake (whome the saide king had refused to be his lawfull wife) would ioine with the Pope agaynst him, therefore hee made great complayntes to the French king agaynst the saide Pope, for the wrong hee did him in the matter of deuorise, and namelie in that hee woulde constrainne him to goe in proper person to Rome, or else to sende thither a Deputie with sufficient pporie to aunswere the lawe, which the sayde king helde for rigorous: furthermoze hee requested the French king that they shoud might sende Ambassadors together agaynst the Pope to summon him to a counsell, to see what abuse and great wronges hee had done agaynst Christian Princes, and their subiects, and eracting of the clergie of England, and that the same, by the saide counsell, might bee reformed. To this the French king agreed, and forthwith willed the king of Englande to make all sure at home, and let him alone to deale abroad, but not to call the Pope to any counsell, for that by their two powers, hee was otherwise to be dealt withall. Thus was the king of Englande now bent agaynst the Pope, where of late hee hadde given monethlie threescore thousande angelles, towardes the paye of an army vnder Mounsier de Foys, for the popes deliuey, when he was holden

The pope to bee  
summoned to a  
Counsell.

prisoner in Castle Angell, by the late Duke of Barbons souldiers, and the prince of Orange.

The banquet being ended at Sandringfield, as is aforesaid, the three kings departed like loving brethren in great amitie. Whilst the king of England was in the French kings dominions, he had the upper hand, and likewise had the French king in the dominions of the king of England. And as the French king paid all the English mens charges at Boloigne, so did the king of England pay the French mens charges at Caleis.

The fourteenth of November the king returning into England landed at Dover.

1533

King Henry kept his Christmase at Greenwich, and after Christmase, sir Thomas Audley keeper of the great seale, was made Lorde Chancellor of England.

King Henry  
married the  
Lady Anne  
Boleine.

King Henry privately married the Lady Anne Boleine in his closet at Whitehall, on the five and twentieth day of January being S. Paules day: Mistress Anne Savage boze by Quene Annes traine, and was her selfe shortly after married to the lorde Berkeley, doctor Rowland Lee, that married the king to Quene Anne, was made Bishop of Chester, then Bishop of Countrey and Lichfield, and president of Wales.

Parliament at  
Westminster.  
Sure to Rome  
forbidden.

And then began the parliament, in the which was chosen Speaker Humfrey Wingfield Gentleman of Exeques Anne. In this parliament was enacted, that no person should appeale for any cause out of this realme to the court of Rome, but from the Commissary to the Bishop, and from the Bishop to the Archbishop, and from the archbishop to the king, and all causes of the kings to be tried in the upper house of the Conuocation. It was also enacted the same time, that Quene Katherine should no more be called Quene, but Princesse Dowager, and the widowe of Prince Arthur.

Ann. reg 25.

After that the king perceived his new wife to be with childe, he caused all officers necessary to be appointed to her, and so on Easter eue being the 12. day of Aprill, she went to her closet openly as Quene, and was proclaimed Quene of England: and then the king appointed the day of her coronation to be kept on Whitsonday next following, and writtings were sent to all Sheriffes, to certifie the names of men of forty pound lands, to rectifie the order of knightthode, or else to make fine for the same. The assailement of which fine was appointed to Thomas Cromwell master of the kings iewel house, who so used the matter, that a great summe of money was leuied to the kings vse by those fines.

Open of 40. l.  
land, knighted,  
or fined.  
W. Cromwell  
master of the  
kings iewel  
house.

The matter of appeale made by Quene Katherine, whereunto she still sticked, and by no meanes could be remoued from it, was communed of both in the Parliament house, and also in the conuocation, where it was so handled, that manie were of opinion, that not onlie her appeale, but also all other appeales made to Rome, were void, and of none effect, for that in ancient councelles it had bene determined, that a cause rising in one prouince should not be determined in an other. This matter was opened with all the circumstances to the Ladie Katherine Dowager, the which persisted still in her former



her opinion, and would by no meanes reuoke her appeale to the court of Rome. Whereupon the Archbishop of Canterbury docto<sup>r</sup> Thomas Cranmer accompanied with docto<sup>r</sup> John Stokesley bishoppe of London, Stephen Gardener bishoppe of Winchester, the bishopps of Bathe and Lincolne, and diuers other learned men in great number rode to Dunstable, which is five miles from Amphyll, where the princeesse Dowager laie, and there by one docto<sup>r</sup> Lee she was ascited to appeare before the said Archbishop in case of matrimony in the saide towne of Dunstable: but shee made default and appeared not, wherefore she was called peremptorily euery daie 15. daies together, and at the last for lacke of appearance, by the assent of the learned men there present, she was diuorced from the king, and the marriage declared to be holde and of none effect.

Katherine  
Dowager  
ascited.

Katherine  
Dowager  
diuorced.

In the moneth of Maie Pope Clement sent an orator to the king, requiring him to appeare personally at the generall Councell, which was appointed to be kept in the yere following: but when his commission was shewed, at the earnest request of the king, there was neither place nor time certaine specified for the keeping of that councell, and so with an vncertaine answer to an vncertaine demaunde, he departed, but not vnrwarded. Notwithstanding the king vnderstanding that the Pope, the Emperour, and the French king should meete at Pise in Iune following, he appointed the duke of Suffolke, the Lord Rocheford brother to Quene Anne, Sir William Pawlet controller of the kings house, Sir Anthony Browne, and Sir Francis Brian knights, to go in ambassage to the French king, and both to accompanie him to Pise, and also to commune with the pope there, concerning his state in the kings diuorce. These made their provision ready, and so with the number of eight score horses they went to Douer, and passing ouer to Calcis, toke their waie through France, to accomplish their ambassade as they had charge.

King Henry  
required to ap-  
peare in a gene-  
rall councell.

The kings highnesse addrested his letters to the Maior and communalte of London, signifying vnto them, that his pleasure was to solemnize the coronation of his most deare and welbeloued wife Quene Anne at Westminster on Whitsondate next ensuing, willing them to make preparation, as well to fetch her grace from Grenewich to the Tower by water, as to see the Citie garnished with pageants in places accustomed, for the honour of her grace, when she should be conueyed from the tower to Westminster. Whereupon a common councell was called, and commandement giuen to the Waterbailies, of which craft the Maior was, that they shoulde prepare a Barge for the Waterlois, with a wafter, and a foyke, garnished with banners, like as they vse when the Maior is presented at Westminster, on the morrowe after the feast of Saint Simon and Iude. Also all other Craftes were commanded to prepare Barges, and to garnish them, not onely with their banners accustomed, but also to decke them with targets by the sides of the Barges, and to set up all such seemely banners and Bannerets, as they had in their Whalles, or could get to furnish their said barges, and euery barge to haue minstrels, according to which commandement great preparation

Preparation  
for coronation  
of quene Anne.

was made for all things necessarie for such a noble triumph.

The nine and twentieth date of May being thursdaie, the Maior and his brethren all in Scarlet, and such as were knights had collars of Esses, and the residue having great chaines, and the Councell of the Citie assembled with them at Saint Mary Hill. And at one of the clocke descended to the new faire to their barge, which was garnished with manie godly banners and streamers and richly conered, in which barge was Shalmes, Shage, butches, and diuers other Instrumentes of Musicke, which played continually.

The coming  
by water from  
Greenwich.

After that the Maior and his brethren were in their barge, seeing that the companies to the number of fiftie barges were ready to waite vpon them, they gaue commandement to the companies, that no barge should row nearer to another, than twice the length of the barge, and to see the order kept, there were three whirries prepared, and in euery part one of them two officers to call on them to keepe their order.

After which commandement given, they set forth in order, as hereafter is described. First, before the Maiors barge was a foisse, for a wafter full of ordinance, in which foisse was a great red Dragon continually moving and casting wilde fire, and round about the saide foisse stood terrible monstrous and wilde men casting fire, and making hideous noise: next after the foisse a good distance came the Maiors barge: on whose right hand was the Bachelers barge, in the which were trumpets, and diuers other melodious instruments: the deckes of the saide barge and saile yarde and the top castles were hanged with rich cloth of golde and silke: at the foreship and the sterne were two great banners rich beaten with the armes of the King and the Quene: and on the top castle also was a long streamer newly beaten with the said armes: the sides of the barge was set full of flags and banners of the deuises of the companies of Haberdashers and merchant Adventurers, and the lasserers of cordes were hanged with innumerable Pensels, hauing little belles at the endes, which made a godlie noise, and was a godly sight, wauering with the winde: on the out side of the barge were three dozen Scutcheons in metall, of the armes of the King and Quene, which were beaten vpon square Brekeram deuised, so that the right side had the Kings colours, and the lefte side the Quenes, which Scutcheons were fastened on the clothes of Golde and siluer, hanging on the deckes: on the lefte hande of the Maior was another foisse, in the which was a mount, and on the mount stood a white Faulcon crowned vpon a roste of Golde, enuironed with white roses and red, which was the Quenes deuise: about which mount sate Virgins singing and playing melodiously: Next after the Maior followed his fellowship the Haberdashers: next after them the Mercers: then the Grocers, and so euerie companie in his order, and last of all the Maiors and Sheriffes officers, euerie companie hauing melodye in their barge by themselves, and godly garnished with banners, and some couered with silke, and some with arras or such like, which was a godly sight to behold: and in this order they rowed by Greenwich to the point beyond Greenwich, and there they turned backward

In an other order, that is to wete, the Maiors and Sheriffes officers first, and the meanest craft next, and so ascending to the uppermost craft in order, and the Mayor last, as they go to Paules at Chrismasse, and in that order they rowed downe-ward to Greenwich towne, and there cast anchor, making great melodie. At thre of the clocke, the Quene apparelled in rich cloth of Golde, entred into her barge, accompanied with diuers Ladies and Gentlewomen, and incontinent the Citizens set forward in their order, their minstrels continually playing: and the Bachelers barge going on the Quenes right hande, which she took great pleasure to beholde. About the Quenes barge were many noble men, as the Duke of Suffolke, the Marquesse Dorset, the Earle of Wilshire her father, the Earles of Arundale, Darby, Rutland, Worcester, Huntington, Suffer, Orford, and manie bishops and noble men, euerie one in his barge, which was a godly sight to behold: she thus being accompanied rowed towards the Tower: and in the meane waite the ships which were commaunded to lie on the shoare for letting of the barges, shot diuers peales of guns, and ere she landed, there was a marvellous shot out of the Tower, I neuer heard the like: and at her landing, there met with her the Lord Chamberlaine with the officers of Armes, and brought her to the King, which receiued her with louing countenance at the posterne by the water side, and kissed her, and then she turned backe againe and thanked the Mayor and the Citizens with manie goodlie wordes, and so entred into the Tower.

Posterne of the  
tower by the  
waters side.

After which entrie the Citizens all this while houered before the Tower, making great melodie, and went not aland, for none were assigned to lande but the Mayor, the Recorder, and two Aldermen: but to speake of the people that stood on euerie shoare to behold this sight, he that saw it not will not beleue it.

On Fridate at dinner serued the King all such as were appointed by his highnes to be knights of the Bath, which after dinner were brought to the chambers, and that night were bathed, and shynen according to the old vsage of England, and the next daie in the morning the king dubbed them according to the ceremonies thereto belonging, whose names hereafter ensue nineteene in number.

Knights of the  
Bath.

The marquesse Dorset.

The earle of Darby.

The lord Clifford, sonne and heire to the earle of Cumberland.

The lord Fitz Walter, sonne and heire to the earle of Suffer.

The lord Hastings, sonne and heire to the earle of Huntington.

The lord Mountague.

The lord Vaux.

Sir Henry Parker, sonne and heire to the lord Morley.

Sir William Winfore, sonne and heire to the lord Winfore.

Sir Iohn Mordant, sonne and heire to the lord Mordant.

Sir Francis Weston.

Sir Thomas Arondale.

Sir Iohn Hudlestone.

Sir Thomas Poynings.

Sir Henry Sauell.

Sir George Fitz William of Lincolneshire.

Sir Iohn Tindale.

Sir Thomas Ierne.

The conveying  
of queene Anne  
thorough the  
city to West-  
minster.

On Saturdate the one and thirtieth daie of Pale, the Quene was conueyed through London in order as followeth: To the intent that the horses should not slide on the pauement, nor that the people should be hurt by horses, the high strates, where-through the Quene should passe, were all grauelled from the Tower vnto Temple barre, and rayled on each side, with in which rayle stode the craftes along in their order from Grace church, where the merchants of the Stilyard stode vntill the little conduit in Cheape, where the Aldermen stode, and on the other side of the strate stode the constables of the Citie, appparelled in veluet and silke with great stanes in their hands, to canse the people to giue roume, and keepe good order: and when the strates were some what ordered, the Paloz in a gowne of crimosin veluet, and a rich collar of esles, with two footemen clothed in white and red damaske, rode to the Tower, to giue his attendance on the Quene, on whome the Sheriffes with their officers did awaite vntill they came to the Tower hill, where they taking their leaue rode downe the high strates, commanding the constables to see roume and good order kept, and so went and stode by the Aldermen in Cheape, and before the Quene with her traine should come, Grace-strate and Coznehill were hanged with fine scarlet, crimosin, and other grained clothes, and in some places with rich arras, and the most part of Cheape was hanged with cloth of tisse, golde, veluet, and many rich hangings which did make a goodly shewe, and all the windowes were replenished with Ladies and Gentlewomen to behold the Quene and her traine, as they should passe by.

The first of the Quenes companie that set forwarde, were 12. French men belonging vnto the French Ambassadoz, clothed in coates of blew veluet, with sleeves of yelow and blew veluet, their horses trapped with close trappers of blew farfenet poudered with white Crosses: after them marched gentlemen, esquires, knights, two and two: after them the iudges: after them the knights of the Bathe in violet gownes with hodes purled with miniver like doctors: after them abbots: then barons: after them bishops: the earles and the marquesses: then the lord Chancellor of England: after him the archbishop of Yorke, and the ambassadoz of Venice: after them the archbishop of Canturburie, and the ambassadoz of France: after rode two esquires of honor with robes of estate rolled and worne banlozlike-wise about their neckes, with caps of estate, representing the Dukes of Normandy and Aquitaine: after them rode the Paloz of London with his mace, and Garter in his coate of armes, which bare also his mace of Westminster hall: after them rode the lord William Howard with the marshals rod deputy to his brother the Duke of Norfolke marshall of England, which was ambassadoz then in France,

and



and on his right hand rode Charles Duke of Suffolke for that date high constable of England, bearing the warder of silver appertaining to the office of constableness, and all the Lordes for the most part were clothed in crimson velvet, and all the Quènes seruants or officers of armes in scarlet: next before the Quene rode her Chancelor bare-headed: the sergeants and officers at armes rode on both sides of the lordes: then came the Quene in a white litter of white cloth of golde, not couered or bailed, which was led by two palestres clad in white damaske downe to the ground, head and all, led by her footmen: shee had on a kittle of white cloth of tisse, and a mantle of the same furred with ermine, her haire hanging downe: but on her head shee had a coise with a circlet about it full of rich stones: ouer her was borne a canapie of cloth of gold with foure gilt stauces, and foure silver belles: for bearing of the which canapie were appointed sixtene knightes, foure to beare it one space on each side, and foure an other space, according to their owne appointment: next after the Quene rode the Lord Browgh her chamberlaine: next after him William Coffin master of her horses, leading a sparc horse with a side saddle, trapped downe with cloth of tisse: after him rode seven ladies in crimson velvet, turned up with cloth of gold and of tisse, and their horses trapped with golde: after them two chariots couered with red cloth of golde, in the first chariot were two ladies, which were the olde Dutchesse of Suffolke, and the olde marchionesse of Dorset: in the second chariot were foure ladies all in crimson velvet: after them rode seven ladies in the same sute, their horses trapped and all: after them came the thirde chariot all in white, with six ladies in crimson velvet: next to them came the fourth chariot all red, with eight ladies also in crimson: after whom followed thirtie gentlewomen all in velvet and silke, in the liuerie of their ladies, on whom they gaue their attendance: after them followed the garde in coates of Goldsmiths worke, in which order they rode forth till they came to Fan-church, where was made a pageant all of childzen apparellled like merchants, which welcommed her to the Citie, with two proper propositions both in French and in English: and from thence she rode vnto Grace church corner, where was a costlie and marvellous cunning pageant made by the merchants of the Stilyard, therein was the mount Peruassus with the fountaine of Helicon, which was of white marble, and foure streams without pipe did rise an ell high and met together in a little cop above the fountaine, which fountaine ranne abundantly with racht Rhenish wine till night, on the mountaine sate Apollo, and at his fete sate Caliope: and on euerie side of the mountaine sate foure muses playing on seuerall sweete instruments, and at their fete Epigrams and poesies were written in golden letters, in the which euerie muse according to her propertie praised the Quene.

From thence the quene with her traine passed to Leaden hall, where was a goodly pageant with a tipe and heavenly Rose, and vnder the tipe was a goodly roset of golde, set on a little mountaine enuironed with red roses and white, out of the tipe came downe a fancon all white, and set vpon the roset, and incontinent came downe an Angell with great melodie, and set a close

crowne of gold on the faulkens head : and in the same pageant sate S. Anne, with all hir issue beneath her: and vnder Mary Cleopha sate hir foure childzen, of the which childzen, one made a goodly Oracion to the Quene of the fruitfulness of S. Anne, and of her generation, trusting, that like fruit should come of her. Then she passed to the conduit in Cornhill, where were the three Graces set in a throne, afore whome was the Spring of Grace, continuallie running wine : afore the fountaine sate a poet, declaring the property of euery Grace: that done, euery Lady by hir selfe according to hir property, gaue to the Quene a seuerall gift of Grace.

That doone, she passed by the great Conduite in Cheape, which was newelie paynted with Armes and deuises, out of the which Conduite, (by a goodlie Fountayne set at the ende,) ranne continuallie wine, both white and Claret all that afternoone : and soe she rode to the Standart, which was richly paynted with Images of Kinges and Quenes, and hanged with banners of armes, and in the toppe was marueylous sweete Harmonie, both of songs and Instrumentes.

Crosse in cheap  
newly gilt.

Then she went forwarde by the Crosse, which was newelie gilt, till she came where the Aldermen stoode, and then Maister Baker the Accorder came to her with lowe reuerence, making a proper and briefe proposition, and gaue to her, in the name of the citie, a thousand marks in golde, in a purse of golde, which she thankesfully accepted with manie good words, and so rode to the little Conduite, where was a rich pageant full of melodie and songs, in which pageant were Pallas, Iuno, & Venus, and afore them stoode Mercurie, which in the name of the three goddesses, gaue vnto her a ball of Gold, diuided in three, signifying three gifts which these three goddesses gaue to hir, that is to say, wisdom, riches, and felicity.

As she entered into Pauls gate, there was a pretie pageant, in which sate three Ladies richly clothed, and in a circle on their heade was written *Regina Anna*, prosper, preceede, and raigne. The lady in the middelt had a tablet, in the which was written *Veni amica, coronaberis*, and vnder the tablet sate an angell with a close crowne. And the lady sitting on the right hand had a tablet of silver, in which was written, *Domine dirige gressus meos*. And the third lady had a tablet of gold, with letters of azure written, *Confido in Domino*, and vnder their feet was written :

*Regina Anna paris regis de sanguine natam,  
Et paries populis aurea sacra tuis.*

And these Ladies cast downe Waters, on the which she sayde two verses were written.

From thence she passed to the East end of Pauls church against the school, where stood a scaffolde, and childzen well apparelled, which saide to her diuers goodly verses of Poets translated into English, to the honor of the R. and her, which she highly commended. And then she came to Ludgate, which gate was new garnished with gold and bisse, & on the leades of S. Martins church stood a goodly

godly quere of singing men and childzen, which sang newe Ballets made in praise of her grace.

After that she was past Ludgate, she proceeded toward Fleetstreet, where the conduit was newlie painted, and all the armes and angels refreshed, and the shalmes melodiously sounding. Upon the conduit was made a Tower with foure turrets, and in euery turret stood one of the cardinall vertues with their tokens and properties, which had severall speeches, promising the Quene neuer to leaue her, but to be aiding and comforting her: and in the midst of the tower closely was such severall solemne instruments, that it seemed to be an heavenly noise, and was much regarded and praised: and besides this, the conduit ran Wine, claret and red all the afternoone, so she with all her company, and the Maior, rode forth to Temple bar, which was newlie painted and repaired, where stood also diuers singing men and childzen, till shee came to Westminster Hall, which was richly hanged with cloth of arras, and newlie glazed, and in the midst of the hall she was taken out of her litter, and so led vp to the high deske vnder the cloth of estate, on whose left hand was a cupboard of tennages high, marueylous rich and beautifull to beholde, and within a little season was brought to the Quene with a solemne seruice in great standing Spice plates, a boyde of Spice, and subtleties, with Iporasir, and other Wines, which shee sent downe to her ladies, and when the ladies had drunke, she gaue hartly thanks to the lords and ladies, and to the Maior, and other that had giuen their attendance on hir; and so with hersele with a few ladies to the White hall, and so to her chamber, and there shifted hir, and after went in hir barge secretly to the king to his manor of Westminster where she rested that night.

On Whitsontide the 1. of June the Maior clad in crimosin velvet, with his collar, and all the Aldermen and Sherifs in scarlet, and the counsel of the city, took their barge at the crane by seven of the clock, and came to Westminster, where they were welcommed, and brought into the hall by M. Treasurer, and other of the kings house, and so gaue their attendance till the Quene shoulde come forth: betwene eight and nine of the clocke shee came into the hall, and stood vnder the cloth of estate, and then came in the kinges Chappell, and the monks of Westminster, all in rich coapes, and many Bishops and abbots, in Coapes and Miters, which went into the midst of the hall, and there stood a season, then was there a ray cloth spread from the quenes standing in the hall, through the pallace and sanctuary, which was railed on both sides, to the high altar of Westminster, after that the ray cloth was cast, the officers of armes appointed the order accustomed. First went gentlemen, then Esquires, then knights, then aldermen of London in their cloakes of scarlet, cast ouer their gownes of scarlet.

Coronation of  
Queene Anne.

After them, the Judges in their mantles of scarlet and robes: then followed the knights of the Bath, being no lords, every man hauing a white lace on his left sleeue: then followed barons and vicounts in their parliament robes of scarlet: after them came Earles, Marquesses, and Dukes in their Robes of Estate, of Crimosin velvet, furred with Ermin, powdered according to their degrees.

degrés. After them came the Lord Chancelloz in a robe of Scarlet, open before, bordered with lettice. After him came the kings chappell, and the monks solemnely singing, with procession. Then came abbots and bishops mitred, then Sergeants and officers at armes: Then the Mayor of London with his mace, and Garter in his coate of armes: then the marques Dorset in his robe of estate, which bare the Scepter of gold, and the earle of Arundell, which bare the rod of iuorie with the doue both together: then alone the earle of Oxforde high Chamberlaine of England, which bare the crowne. After him the duke of Suffolke in his robe of estate, for that day being high Steward of England, having a long white rod in his hand, and the Lord William Howard with the rod of the marshalls ship, and euery knight of the garter had on his collar of the order. Then proceeded forth the Quene in a circote and robe of purple velvet, furred with Ermine in her haire, colfe, and circlet, as she had the Saturdaye, and ouer her was borne the Canapie, by foure of the Cinque portes, all in Crimofin, with points of blew and redde hanging on their Accurs, and the Bishoppes of London and Winchester bare vp the laps of the Quenes robe, and her traine which was verie long, was borne by the old Dutchesse of Suffolke. After her followed Ladies, being Lordes Wiues, which had circotes of scarlet, with narrow sleeves, the breast all lettice, with barres of pouders according to their degrés, and ouer that, they had mantles of scarlet furred, and euery mantle had lettice about the neck like a neckerchiefe, likewise powdered, so that by the powderings their degrés might be knowne. Then followed Ladies being Knights Wiues, in Cownes of Scarlet, with narrow sleeves without traines, onely edged with lettice, likewise had all the quenes Gentlewomen.

When shee was thus brought to the high place made in the middell of the Church betweene the queere and the high altar, shee was set in a rich Chaire, and after that shee had rested a while, shee descended downe vnto the high Altar, and there prostrated her selfe while the bishop of Canterburie said certain collects ouer her. Then she rose, and the bishop annointed her on the head and on the breast, and then she was led vp againe to her chaire, where after diuers orisons saide, the archbishop set the crowne of S. Edward on her head, and then deliuered her the Scepter of gold in her right hand, and the rod of Iuory with the doue in the left hande, and then all the quere sung *Te Deum, &c.* Which done, the bishop toke off the crowne of S. Edward bearing heaule, and set on her heade the Crowne made for her, and so went to masse, and when the offering was begunne, she descended downe and offered being crowned, and so ascended vpp againe and sate in her Chaire till *Agnus*, and then shee went downe and knéled before the high altar, where she receiued of the archbishop the holy sacrament, & then went vp to the place agayne. After that Masse was done, she went to S. Edwards shrine, and there offered. After which offering done, shee withdrew her into a little place made for that purpose on the one side of the queere. Now in the meane season euery dutchesse put on her bonet a cozonell of gold wrought with flowers, and euery marchionesse put on a beuery cozonell of gold, and euery countesse a plain circle of gold without flourcs, and



and every king at armes put on a crowne of copper and gilt, all which were woone till night.

When the Queene had a little reposed her, the companie returned in the same order that they set forth, and the Queene went crowned, and so did the ladies aforesaid: her right hand was sustained by the earle of Wiltshire her father, and her left hand by the L. Talbot, deputy for the earle of Shrewsbury, & Lord Furniwall his father. And when she was out of the sanctuary within the pallace, the trumpets played marvellous freshly, and so she was brought to Westminster hall, and so to her withdrawing chamber: during which time, the lords, Judges, maiors and aldermen, put off their robes, mantles, and cloakes, and tooke their hodes from their neckes, and cast them about their shoulders, and the Lordes sate onelie in their circotes, and the Judges and Aldermen in their gownes, and all the Lordes that served that daie served in their circotes, and their hodes about their shoulders. Also dyvers officers of the kings house being no Lordes, had circotes and hodes of Scarlet, edged with miniver, as treasurer, controller, and master of the iswell house, but their Circotes were not gilt.

While the Queene was in her Chamber, every Lord and other that ought to do service at the coronation, did prepare them according to their duetie, as the Duke of Suffolke high steward of Englands, which was richlie apparelled, his doublet and sacket set with orient pearle, his gowne crimosin beluet embrothered, his courser trapped with a close trapper, head & all to the ground of crimosin beluet, set full of letters of gold of Goldsmithes worke, having a long white rod in his hand. On his left hand rode the Lord William, deputy for his brother, as earle marshall with the marshalls rod, whose gown was crimosin beluet, and his horse trapper purple beluet cutte on white satin, embrothered with white Lions. The earle of Orford was high chamberlaine, the earle of Essex carver, the earle of Sussex sewer, the earle of Arundell chiefe butler, on whom twelve citizens of London did giue their attendance at the cupbord: the earle of Darby cupbearer, the viscount Lisle panter, the L. Burgeyny chiefe larder, the L. Bray almoner for him and his copartners, & the maior of Orford kept the buttery bar, and Th. Wyat was chosen ewerer for sir Henry Wyat his father.

The sitting at  
dinner of  
Queene Anne.

When all things were readie and ordered, the Queene vnder her canopy came into the hall and washed, and sate downe in the midst of the table vnder her cloth of estate. On the right side of her chaire stood the countesse of Orford to do so, and on her left hand stood the countesse of Worcester all the dinner season, which dyvers times in the dinner time did holde a syne cloth before the Queenes face when she liste to spitte, or doe otherwise at her pleasure: and at the Tables ende sate the Archbyschoppe of Canterburie on the right hande of the Queene, and in the midst betwene the Archbyschoppe and the countesse of Orford stood the Earle of Orford with a white staffe all dinner time, and at the Queenes feete vnder the table sate two gentlewomen all dinner time. When all these things were thus ordered, came in the duke of Suffolke, and the Lorde William Howard on horsebacke, and the sergantes of armes before

before them, and after them the sewer, and then the knightes of the Bashe, byring in the first course, which was eight and twenty dishes, besides subtleties, and ships made of ware, marvellous gorgeons to behelde, all which time of seruice the trumpets standing in the windowe at the neather ende of the hall, played.

When the was serued of two dishes, then the Archbishops seruice was set downe, whose sewer came equal with the third dish of the Quenes seruice on his left hand. After that the Quene and the Archbishoppe were serued, the barons of the Ports began the table on the right hand next the wall, then at the table sate the masters and clerkes of the Chancerte, and beneath them other Doctors and Gentlemen. The table next the wall on the left hand by the cupboorde was begunne by the Maior and Aldermen, the Chamberlaine, and counsell of the Citie of London, and beneath them saue substantiall merchants, and so downeward other worshipfull persons. At the table on the right hand in the middelt of the hall sate the lord Chancellor, and other temporary lordes: on the right side of the table in their circotes, and on the left side of the same table sate bishops and abbats in their parliament robes: beneath them, sate the Judges, Sergeants, and the Kings Counsell: beneath them, the knightes of the Bashe. At the table on the left hande in the middle part sate Dutchessees, Marquessees, Countessees, Baronessees in their robes, and other Ladies in circotes, and Gentlewomen in gownes, all which Gentlewomen and Ladies sate on the left side of the table along, and none on the right side, and when all were thus set, they were incontinent serued so quicklie, that it was marvellous, for the seruitors gaue so good attendance, that meat, no drinke, no anie thing else needed to be called for, which in so great a multitude was marvell. As touching the fare, there could be deuised no more costlie dishes, no subtleties. The Maior of London was serued with foure and thirtie dishes at two courses, and so were all his brethren, and such as sate at his table. The Quene had at her second course foure and twentie dishes, and thirtie at the third course, and betwene the last courses, the kings of armes crowned, and other officers of armes cried larges in thre partes of the hall, and after stode in their place, which was in the bekens of the kings bench: and on the right hand out of the cloyster of Saint Stephens Chappell was made a little closet, in which the king with diuers ambassadours stode to beholde the seruice, the Duke of Suffolke, and the Lord William rode oftentimes about the hall, chæring the lordes, ladies, and maior, and his brethren.

After they in the hall had dined, they had wafers and spocrase, and then they washed, and were commanded to rise and stand still in their places before the tables or on the fourmes till the Quene had washed. When she had taken wafers & spocrase, the table was taken vp, and the Earle of Rutland brought vp the surnape, and laide it at the boordes end, which immediatly was drazone and cast by master Reade marshall of the hall, and the Quene washed, and after the archbishop, and after the surnape was withdrazone: then she rose, and stode in the middelt of the hall place, to whom the earle of Suffre, in a goodly  
spice

like plate, brought a boſe of ſpice and confections. After him, the Maſor of London brought a ſtanding cup of gold, ſet in a cup of aſſay of gold, and after that ſhe had drunke, ſhe gaue the maſor the cup, with the cup of aſſay, becauſe there was no couer, according to the claime of the Citie, thanking him and all his brethren of their paine.

Then ſhe vnder her canapie departed to her chamber, and at the entry of her chamber, ſhe gaue the canapie with bells and all to the barons of the poſts according to their claime, with great thanks: then the Maſor of London bearing his cup in his hand, with his brethren, went through the hall to their barge, and ſo did all other noblemen and gentlemen, for it was ſixe of the clocke.

On Mondaye were the ſiſſes at the tilt before the kings gate, where the Maſor and his brethren had a goodly ſtanding, but there were few ſpeares broken, by reaſon the hoxes would not cope.

On Wedneſdaie the king ſent for the Maſor and his brethren to Weſtminſter, and there he himſelfe gaue vnto them hartie thanks, with manie goodly words.

On Fridaye euen deceased Mary the French Quene, ſiſter to King Henry the eight, and wiſe to Charles Duke of Suffolke, and ſhe was buried at Saint Edmundsborte.

Justing.

Mary II. French  
Quene ſiſter de-  
ceased.

The ſiſt of Iulie Quene Katherine was proclaimed Prince Arthures widowe.

The ſeuenty of Iuly two merchants were murdered on the Thames by one Wolfe and his wiſe.

It was this yere enacted, that butchers ſhould ſell their beſte and mutton by weight, beſte for a halfe penny the pound, and mutton for thre farthings: which being denied for the great commoditie of the realme (as it was thought) hath proued farre otherwiſe, for at that time fat oren were ſold for ſixe and twenty ſhillings and eight pence the pce, fat weathers for thre ſhillings and foure pence the pce, fat calves of the like price, a fat lamb for twelue pence. The butchers of London ſold penny pieces of beſte for the reliefe of the poore, euery pce two pounce and a halfe, ſometime thre pounce for a penny: and ſiſtene, ſometime fourtene of theſe pieces for twelue pence: mutton eight pence the quarter, and an hundred weight of beſte for foure ſhillings and eight pence: that price it hath growen to ſince it needeth not to be ſet downe. At this time alſo, and not before, were foraine butchers permitted to ſell their fleſh in Leaden hall market of London.

Beſte and mutton  
ſold by  
weight.

The 7. of September being ſunday, betwene thre and foure of the clocke at after none, the Quene was deliuered of a faire Ladie, for whoſe good deliuerance *Te Deum* was ſung incontinently, and great preparation was made for the chriſtning. The Maſor, and his brethren, and ſonie of the chiefe Citizens were commanded to be at the chriſtning the Wedneſdaie following. Upon which daie the Maſor Sir Stephen Peacocke in a gowne of crimſin beluet, with his collar of eſſes, and all the aldermen in ſcarlet with collars and chaines, and all the counsell of the citie with them toke their barge at one of the

Birth of Ladie  
Elizabeth, and  
her chriſtning.

the

the clocke, and the Citizens had another Barge, and so rowed to Crænwich, where were many lords, knights, and gentlemen assembled: all the walles betwene the kings pallace and the Friers, were hanged with arras, and all the way strewed with græne rushes. The Friers Church was also hanged with rich arras: the font was of silver, and stood in the midst of the church thre steps high, which was couered with a fyne cloth: and dyuers Gentlemen with Aprones and Towels about their Peckes, gaue attendance about it, that no filth shoulde come to the fonte:ouer it hung a square Canapye of Crymolin Sattin, fringed with Golde, about it was a rayle, couered with redde Saie, betweene the queere & bodie of the church was a close place with a pan of fire to make the Childe readie in. When all these thinges were ordered, the Childe was bzought to the Hall, and then euerie man set forwarde: First the citizens two and two, then gentlemen, Esquires, and Chaplaines, next after them the aldermen, and the Mayor alone, and next the kings counsell, then the kings chappell in coapes, then barons, bishops, earles, the earle of Essex bearing the couered basons gilt, after him the Marques of Worcester with a taper of virgin wax, next him the Marques Dorset bearing the salt, behind him the ladie Mary of Rosfolke bearing the crismoe, which was verie rich of Pearle and Stone. The old dutchesse of Rosfolke bare the childe in a Mantle of Purple velvet, with a long traine furred with Ermine. The Duke of Rosfolke with his marshals rodde went on the right hand of the saide dutchesse, and the duke of Suffolke on the left hand, and before them went officers of armes, the countesse of Kent bare the long traine of the childes mantle, and meane betwene the childe and the countesse of Kent went the earle of Willshire and the earle of Darby on either side, supporting the said traine in the middelt: ouer the childe was borne a rich canapye by the Lord Rochford, the lord Hufley, the Lord William Howard, and the Lord Thomas Howard the elser. After the childe followed mante ladies and gentlewomen. When the childe was come to the church doore, the Bysshoppe of London mette it with diuers Bysshoppes and abbots mitred, and beganne the obseruances of the Sacrament. The Godfather was Lord Thomas Archbysshoppe of Canterburie: the Godmothers were the old dutchesse of Rosfolke, and the old marchionesse of Dorset widowes, and the childe was named Elizabeth, and after that all thinges were done at the church doore, the childe was bzought to the Font and chylined: and that done, Gattar chiefe king of armes cried aloud: God of his infinit godnes send prosperous life and long to the high and mighty princesse of Englande Elizabeth, and then the trumpets blew, then the childe was bzought vp to the altar, and the gospel said ouer it. After that immediatly the archbishop of Canterbury confirmed it, the marchionesse of Worcester being Godmother: then the bisshoppe of Canterburie gaue vnto the princesse a standing cup of golde, the Dutchesse of Rosfolke gaue to her a standing cup of golde fretted with pearle, the marchionesse of Dorset gaue thre gilt boles pounsed, with a couer, and the marchionesse of Worcester gaue thre standing boles grauen, al gilt with a couer. Then was bzought in wafers, confects, and ipocrasse, in such plenty, that euery man had as much as he woulde desire: then they set forwarde, the trumpets afore going



going in the same order toward the kings palace as they did when they came thitherward, saying that the giftes that the Godfather and godmothers gave, were borne before the child by 4. persons, that is to saie, first sir John Dudley bare the gift of the Ladie of Excester, the Lord Thomas Howard the younger bare the gift of the Ladie Dorset, the Lord Fitz Walker bare the gift of the lady of Rossefolke, and the Lord of Worcester bare the gift of the Archbishop of Canterbury, and all the one side as they went was full of stafetothes, to the number of six hundred, born by the gard and other of the kings servants: and about the child were many other proper tothes born by gentlemen. And in this order they brought the pyncesse to the quæns chamber doore, and then departed.

The spall went to the kings chamber, & tarried there a while with his brethren the Aldermen, and at the last, the dukes of Rossefolke and Suffolke came out from the king, and reported to the spall and his brethren, that the king thanked them heartilie, and commaunded them to giue them thanks in his name, and from thence they were had to the seller and thanke, and so went to their barge.

About this time the crafty praaises of one Elizabeth Barton, named the holy maide of Kent, came to light, and were discovered, so that shee and her adherents in November following, were brought to the Star chamber, and there before the kings counsell confessed their fained hypocritie and dissimuled holiness, traiterous purposes and intentes. The names of those her adherentes, which were presented with her before the lords in the Starre chamber, were as followeth: Richard Master parson of Aldington in Kent, Edward Bocking doctor; of disintitie a monke of Canterburie, Richard Dering monke also of Canterburie, Edward Twaites Gentleman, Thomas Laurence Regisser to the Archdeacon of Canterburie, Henry Golde parson of Alder Marie in London, Hugh Rich frter obseruant, Richard Risby, and Thomas Golde gentleman. These were aduoged upon their confession, to stande at Pauls Crosse in the Sermon time, where they with their owne handes shoulde severallie deliuer each of them to the preacher a bill declaring their subtil and superstitious doings, which thing they did the Sunday next following, standing upon a stage or scaffolde before the Crosse, the bishop of Wango late abbot of Hyde there preaching, shewed their offences, from whence they were committed to the tower of London.

In this meane time the Scottes were not quiet, but robbed the kinges subtiedes both by sea and lande, whereupon the king caused them to bee requested, not onlie by the Borderers and other to them associate, which entering the marches, burnt manie of their Wiles and strong holdes; but also he set forth certaine Shippes, which entered into their streames, and fetched out many of those prizes, which they had taken out of their haucens, yet was there no warre proclaimed.

At the suite of Ladie Katherine Dowager, a curse was sent from Rome, which accursed both the king and the Realme. This curse was set vp in the towne of Dunkerke in Flaunders (for the bringer thereof durst approach no nêerer)

Elizabeth  
Barton, holy  
maide of Kent.

The Scottes  
moued was.

A curse procured  
from Rome.

the clocke, and the Citizens had another Barge, and so rowed to Grenewich, where were many lords, knights, and gentlemen assembled: all the walles betwene the kings pallace and the friers, were hanged with arras, and all the way strewed with greene rushes. The friers Church was also hanged with rich arras: the font was of silver, and stood in the midst of the church thre steps high, which was couered with a fyne cloth: and dyuers Gentlemen with Aprones and Towels about their neckes, gaue attendance about it, that no filth shoulde come to the fonte:ouer it hung a square Canapye of Crymossin Sattin, fringed with Golde, about it was a rayle, couered with redde saie, betwene the queere & bodie of the church was a close place with a pan of fire to make the Childe readie in. When all these thynges were ordered, the Childe was brought to the Hall, and then euerie man set forwarde: first the citizens two and two, then gentlemen, Esquires, and Chaplaines, next after them the aldermen, and the Mayor alone, and next the kings counsell, then the kings chappell in coapes, then barons, bishops, earles, the earle of Essex bearing the couered balons gilt, after him the Marques of Excester with a taper of virgin wax, next him the Marques Dorset bearing the salt, behind him the ladie Mary of Rosfolke bearing the crismoe, which was verie rich of Pearle and Stone. The old dutchesse of Rosfolke bare the childe in a Mantle of Purple beluet, with a long traine furred with Ermine. The Duke of Rosfolke with his marshalls rodde went on the right hand of the saide dutchesse, and the duke of Suffolke on the left hand, and before them went officers of armes, the countesse of Kent bare the long traine of the chldes mantle, and in came betwene the childe and the countesse of Kent went the earle of Wilshire and the earle of Darby on either side, supporting the said traine in the middelt: ouer the childe was borne a rich canapye by the Lord Rochford, the lord Hussy, the Lord William Howard, and the Lord Thomas Howard the elder. After the childe followed manie ladies and gentlewomen. When the childe was come to the church doore, the Bpshope of London mette it with diuers Bpshoppes and abbots mitered, and beganne the obseruances of the Sacrament. The Godfather was Lorde Thomas Archbpshope of Canterburie: the Godmothers were the old dutchesse of Rosfolke, and the old marchionesse of Dorset widowes, and the childe was named Elizabeth, and after that all thynges were done at the church doore, the childe was brought to the Font and christened: and that done, Garter chiefe king of armes cried aloud: God of his infinit godnes send prosperous life and long to the high and mighty pynesse of Englands Elizabeth, and then the trumpets blew, then the childe was brought vp to the altar, and the gospel said ouer it. After that immediatly the archbishop of Canterbury confirmed it, the marchionesse of Excester being Godmother: then the bishoppe of Canterburie gaue vnto the pynesse a standing cup of golde, the Dutchesse of Rosfolke gaue to her a standing cup of golde fretted with pearle, the marchionesse of Dorset gaue thre gilt boles pounsed, with a couer, and the marchionesse of Excester gaue thre standing boles grauen, al gilt with a couer. Then was brought in wafers, confects, and spocrasse, in such plenty, that every man had as much as he woulde desire: then they set forwarde, the trumpets afore going

going in the same order toward the kings pallace as they did when they came thitherward, saying that the giftes that the Godfather and godmothers gave, were bozne before the child by 4. persons, that is to saie, first sir Iohn Dudley bare the gift of the Ladie of Excester, the Lord Thomas Howard the younger bare the gift of the Ladie Dowlet, the Lord Fitz Walker bare the gift of the lady of Rossefolke, and the Lord of Excester bare the gift of the Archbyschop of Canterbury, and all the one side as they went was full of stasse torches, to the number of five hundred, bozn by the gard and other of the kings servants: and about the child were many other proper torches bozn by gentlemen. And in this order they brought the pyncesse to the quæns chamber doore, and then departed.

The ppaioz went to the kings chamber, & tarried there a while with his brethren the Aldermen, and at the last, the dukes of Rossefolke and Suffolke came out from the king, and reported to the ppaioz and his brethren, that the king thanked them heartilie, and commaunded them to giue them thanks in his name, and from thence they were had to the seller and dranke, and so went to their barge.

About this time the crafty praisses of one Elizabeth Barton, named the holy made of Kent, came to light, and were discovered, so that shee and her adherents in November following, were bzought to the Star chamber, and there before the kings counsell confessed their fained hypocrisie and dissimuled holiness, traiterous purposes and intentes. The names of those her adherentes, which were presented with her before the lords in the Starre chamber, were as followeth: Richard Master parson of Aldington in Kent, Edward Bocking doctor of divinitie a monke of Canterburie, Richard Dering monke also of Canterburie, Edward Twaites Gentleman, Thomas Laurence Regisser to the Archdeacon of Canterburie, Henry Golde parson of Alder Marie in London, Hugh Rich frter obseruant, Richard Risby, and Thomas Golde gentleman. These were adjudged vpon their confession, to stande at Pauls Crosse in the Sermon time, where they with their owne handes shoulde severallie deliuer each of them to the preacher a bill declaring their subtil and superstitious doings, which thing they did the Sunday next following, standing vpon a stage or scaffolde before the Crosse, the bishop of Wangoz late abbot of Hyde there preaching, shewed their offences, from whence they were committed to the tower of London.

Elizabeth Barton, holy maid of Kent.

In this meane time the Scottes were not quiet, but robbed the kinges subtiedes both by sea and lande, whereupon the king caused them to bee requited, not onelie by the Borderers and other to them associate, which entering the marches, burnt manie of their Villes and strong holdes; but also he set forth certaine Shippes, which entered into their streames, and fetched out many of those pyses, which they had taken out of their haucens, yet was there no warre proclaimed.

The Scottes mooued war.

At the suite of Ladie Katherine Dowager, a curse was sent from Rome, which accured both the king and the Realme. This curse was set vp in the towne of Dunkerke in Flaunders (for the byinger thereof durst approch no neerer)

A curse moued from Rome.

nearer) where it was taken doone by one William Lock a Mercer of London: because (as it was said) that the lady Katherin Dowager had procured this curse of the pope, the duke of Suffolke was sent to hir, as then lying at Wugden beside Huntington, where according to that hee had in commandement, he discharged a great sort of her household seruants, and yet left a conuenient number to serue hir like a princeesse, which were sworn to serue her, not as a queen, but as princeesse Dowager: but such as toke that othe theie bitterly refused, and would none of their seruice, so that she remained with a small number of seruants about her.

1534.  
Holy Walde of  
Went attained.

After Christmasse the Parliament beganne, wherein the forenamed Elizabeth Barton, and other her complices were at saynted of treason, for sundrie practises by them put in vze, sounding to the bitter reproch, perill, and destruction of the Kinges person, his honour, fame, and dignitie, for they hadde put into the heades of manie of the Kinges subiects, that to the said Elizabeth Barton was giuen knowledge by reuelation from god and his Saints, that if the king proceeded to the diuorce, and married another, he shoulde not be a king of this Realme one moneth after, and in the reputation of God, not one day nor houre.

This Elizabeth first through sicknesse, being oftentimes brought as it were into a trance, whereby her visage and countenance became maruellously altered at those times when she was so bered: at length by the encouraging, procurement and information of the forenamed Richard Master parson of Aldington, she learned to counterfeite such manner of trances, as in her sickness by force of her disease she had bene acquainted with, so that shee shewed vnto the people dyuers maners, and sundry alterations of the semblable parts of her bodie, craftilie vttering in her saide fained trances dyuers counterfeited vertues and holie wordes, tending to the rebuke of sin, and reproofing of such new opinions as then began to be spread. And to bring the people the more in beleefe with hir hypocritical doings, she was counselled to say, that she should neuer be perfectlie whole, till she had visited an image of our Lady at a place called Court at strate, within the parsh of Aldington aforesaide. Whither was she brought, and by the meanes of the said Richard Master and Edward Bocking there was assembled a two thousand persons at the date appointed of hir thither comming to see the miracle. At which time she being thither brought also: all that assemble & multitude of people, she falsly fained & shewed in the chapel of our Ladie of Court at strate manie alterations of her face, and other outward sensible partes of her bodie: and in those trances she vttered wondrous wordes, as she was before subtilly induced by the sayde Edward Bocking and Richard Master. And amongst other things she vttered, that it was the pleasure of God, that the saide Bocking should be her ghostlie father, and that shee shoulde be a religious woman. And within a while after such fained trances, she appeared to the people to be sodaynelie releued from hir sicknesse by the intercession of the image of our Ladie being in the said chapel, by reason of which hypocritical dissimulation, the sayde Elizabeth was brought into a marvellous fancy, credite, & good opinion of a great multitude of



of people of this realme, and to increase the same by the counsell of the said Edward Bocking she became a nunne in the priorie of Saint Sepulchres at Canterburie, to whome the said Edward Bocking had commonly his resort: and by conspiracie betwene her and him, she still continued her dissembled frances, alledging that in the same she had reuelations from almighty God and his Saints: and among other, that which as before we haue mentioned, touching the kings marriage, as ye haue heard. This matter proceeded so farre, that there was a booke written by her complices, namely, by Thomas Laurence Register to the archdeacon of Canterburie, of her fained miracles, reuelations, and hypocriticall holinesse. All things were handled so craftilie, that not onely the simple people, but also the wise and learned were deceiued by the same: in so much, that William Warham late Archbischoppe of Canterbury, and Iohn Fisher bishop of Rochester, and diuers other being informed thereof, gave credit thereunto. All which matters and many other had bene traiterously practised amongst the parties many yeres, chiefly to interrupt the diuorce, and so to destroy the king, and depriue him of the crowne and dignitie roiall of the realme, as in the act of their attaindoz made more at large doth appeare.

In this Parliament also was made the act of succession, for the establishing of the crowne, to the which euerie man was swozne being of lawfull age.

During this parliament, euery sunday at Paules crosse preached a bishop, declaring the pope not to be supzeme head to the Church. Also in other places of this realme great troubles were raised about preaching, namely, at Wythlow where M<sup>r</sup>. Latimer preached, and there preached against him one master Hobberton, and doctor Powell, so that there was great part-takings on both sides: inso much that diuers priests and other set by billes against the Maior, and against master Latimer, but the maior (permitting lay men to preach) caused diuers priests to be apprehended and cast into Newgate with bolts vpon them, and diuers other ran away and lost their liuings, rather than come in the maiors handling.

Bishops preach  
against the  
Pope.

Latimer pre-  
ached at Wythlow  
Chron. Britlow.

The 30. of March the parliament was proroged, and euery lord and knight and burgesse were swozne to the act of succession, and subscribed to a schedule fixed to the statute. And then were commissioners sent into all parts of the realme, to take the like oth of all men and women.

The lordes  
swozne to the  
succession.

The 20. of Aprill, Elizabeth Barton a nunne professed, Edward Bocking and Iohn Dering, two monks of Chyffs church in Canterbury, and Richard Ribley and another of his fellowes of the same house, Richard Master parson of Alington, and Henry Golde priest, were drawn from the tower of London to Tibborne, and there hanged and beheaded, the nunnes head was set on London bridge, and the other heads on gates of the city: these as ye before haue heard, were attainted by parliament. At which time also were attainted of misprision for the same matter, Iohn Fisher bishop of Rochester, and Iohn Adeson his chaplaine, Thomas Able priest, Thomas Golde gentleman, and Thomas Laurence register to the archdeacon of Canterbury.

Wholy maide of  
Brent her head  
set on London  
bridge.

*An. reg. 26.*  
 Lord Dacres  
 of the north ar-  
 raigned & quit.

The ninth of July was the lord Dacres of the north arraigned at Westminster of high treason, where the duke of Norfolkke sat as Judge and high steward of England, where the said lord Dacres being brought to the barre with the are of the tower before him, after the indygnment read, so improwed the same, answering euerie part and matter therein contained, and so plainlie confuted sir Ralph Fenwike, and Musgraue his accusers, who had brought in their false Scottes for witnesses, which were there present readie to avouch their false accusations, that to their great shames and his honour, he was found that daie by his peeres not gilltie, to the great reioycing of the people, who made a great shoute for ioy, when they heard the wordes, not gilltie pronounced.

Frith burnt.

The 22. of July John Frith was burned in Smithfield for his opinions concerning the sacrament: at the same time also suffered with him at the same stake one Andrew Hewet a yong man, by occupation a Tallow.

Friers houses  
 suppressed.

The 11. of August were all the places of the obseruants friers at Chancery, Canterburie, Richmond, Newmarke, and Newcastle put downe, and Augustine friers set in their places for the time, and the obseruants were put in places of the gray friers.

The Place by  
 Charing crosse  
 burnt.

The 16. of August, was burned the kings stable at Charing crosse, of olde time called the Pelwee (for that the kings hautes were there melwed & kept) wherein was burned many great boxses, and great store of hay.

T. Cromwell  
 master of the  
 rolles.

The 21. of September, doctor Tailor master of the rolles, was discharged of that office, and Th. Cromwell swoone in his place, the 9. of October.

The popes au-  
 thoritie abro-  
 gated.

The 3. of Nouember, the Parliament began at Westminster, wherein the Pope with all his authoritie was cleane banished this realme, and order taken that he should no moze be called Pope, but bishop of Rome, and the R. to be taken and reputed as supreme head of the church of England, hauing full authoritie to reforme all errors, heresies, and abuses of the same. Also the first frutes and tenths of all spirituall dignities and promotions were granted to the king, with a subsidie of the lattie of twelue pence in the pound, with a fifthenthy and a tenth.

First frutes and  
 tenths given to  
 the king.

1535

The earle of Wilsbare died prisoner in the tower of London, and his sonne Thomas Fitz Garet rebelled in Ireland, and toke all the kings ordinance, sending to the Emperour, requirring him to take his part. Amongst other he slew doctor Allen bishop of Duclien, and robbed all such as would not obey him: wherefore the king sent thither sir William Skeuington with a number of soldiers.

*An. reg. 27.*  
 Charter-house  
 monks executed

The 29. of Appril, John prioz of the Charterhouse at London, Augustine Webster, prioz of Beual, Thomas Laurence prioz of Erham, Richard Reginalds doctor, a monke of Shon, and John Haile Vicar of Chisleworth, were all condemned of treason, who were drowen, hanged and quartered at Tbozne the fourth of May, their heads and quarters set on the gates of the citie all saue one quarter, which was set on the Charter-house at London.

Polled heads  
 commanded.

The eight of May, the king commanded all about his court to poll their heads, & to giue them example, he caused his owne head to be polled, and from thence

Henceforth his beard to be notted and no more shaven.

The five and twentieth daie of May, was in S. Pauls church at London examined nineteene men and sixe women bozne in Holland, whose opinions were: first, that in Christ is not two natures, God and man: secondly, that Christ toke neither flesh nor blood of the virgine Marie: thirdly, that children bozne of infidels shall be saued: fourthly, that baptisme of children is to none effect: fifthly, that the sacrament of Christs bodie is but bread onely: sixthly, that he who after his baptisme sinneth wittingly, sinneth deadly, and cannot be saued. Foureteene of them were condemned, a man and a woman of them were burned in Smithfield, the other twelue were sent to other townes there to be bznt.

Hollanders  
condemned for  
heresies.

The eighteenth of June, three monkes of the Charter-house at London, named Thomas Exmew, Humfrey Middlemore, and Sebastian Nidigate were dazwen to Tiborne, and there hanged and quartered for denying the kings supremacie.

Charter-house  
monks executed

The two and twentieth of June, doctor Iohn Fisher Bpshophe of Rochester, for denying the kings supremacie, was beheaded on the tower hill, his head was set on London brydge, and his bodie buried within Barking churchyarde.

Bishop of Ro-  
chester behea-  
ded.

The first of July, sir Thomas Moore was beheaded on the tower hill, for the like denfall of the kings supremacie: and then the bodie of doctor Fisher bishop of Rochester was taken up and buried with sir Thomas Moore both in the tower.

Sir T. h. Moore  
beheaded.

Doctor Foxe the kings almoner was made bishop of Hereford: and Hugh Latimer bishop of Worcester: Iohn Hilsey called the blacke frier of Bristow, was made Bishop of Rochester.

In August, the lord Thomas Gerard son to the earle of Hilbare, was taken in Ireland, and sent to the tower of London.

In October the king sent master Thomas Cromwell, and doctor Lee, and other, to visite the abbeies, priories, and nunneries in England: these were ordainted to be the principall visitors, who put forth all religious persons that would go, and all that were vnder the age of foure and twentie yeeres: and after closed by the residue that would remaine, so that they shoule not come out of their places, and toke order, that no man should come to the houses of women, nor women to the houses of men, but onely to heare their seruice in the churches: all religious men that departed, the abbot or prior to giue them for their habite a priests gowne, and for tie shillings of money: the nuns to haue such apparel as secular women weare, and to go where they would. They toke out of monasteries and abbeies, their reliques and chiefest iewels to the kings vse, they said.

Abbeies visited

The 11. of Nouember was a great procession at London of all the religious men, three bishoppes, and foure abbots mitred, which was for toy the French king was recovered of his health.

Procession.

In the moneth of December, the names of all chauntries were taken, and who had the gift of them.

Names of  
Chauntries.

Katherine Dowager deceased.

1536

A parliament.  
Rob Greene.  
Small houses  
suppressed

Ann, reg. 28.

The eyght of Iannarie dyed Ladie Katherine Dowager at Hymbalton, and was buryed at Peterborow.

The twentieth nine of Iannarie, Queene Anne was deliuered of a man Child before her time, which was bozne deade.

In a Parliament begunne in the moneth of februarye, was granted to the king and his heires all religious houses in the realme of Englande, of the value of two hundred pounde and vnder, with all landes and goods to them belonging: The number of these houses then suppressed, were 376. the value of their landes then 32000. pound, and more by yere, the moueable goods as they were solde, Robine Hoods pennie woorthes, amounted to more than one hundred thousande poundes, and the religious persons that were in the sayde houses, were cleerlie put out, some went to other greater houses, some went abroade to the worlde. It was (saith mine autho;) a pitifull thing to heare the lamentation that the people in the Countreie made for them: for there was great hospitalitie kept among them, and as it was thought more then tenn thousand persons, maisters and seruauntes had lost their linings by the putting downe of those houses at that time.

Justs at Greenwich.

On Maie daie was a great Justing at Greenwich, where were Challengers the Lorde Rochforde and other: and Defenders Henrie Norrice and other. From this Justes King Henrie sodaynelle departed to Westminster, having onlie with him 6. persons: of which sodain departure many men marueyled.

On the next morrowe, George Boleine Lorde Rochforde, Brother to the Queene, and Henrie Norrice, were brought to the Tower of London prisoners. Also the same daie, about fise of the clocke in the afternoone, Quene Anne Boleine was brought to the Tower of London by Sir Thomas Audley Lorde Chancellor, the Duke of Norffolke, Thomas Cromwell secretarie, and Sir William Kingstone Constable of the Tower. And when she came to the Tower Gate entering in, she fell on her knees before the saide Lordes, beseeching God to helpe her, as shee was not guiltie of that wherof shee was accused, and then desired the sayde Lordes to beseech the Kinges grace to bee good vnto her, and so they left her there Prisoner.

On the 15. of Maie Quene Anne was arraigned in the Tower of London on a scaffold for the purpose made in the kings hall, before the Duke of Norffolke, who sat under the cloth of estate as high steward of England, with the Lord Chancellor on his right hand, the Duke of Suffolke on his left hand, with marqueses and lordes, &c. and the earle of Surrey sat before the duke of Norffolke his father, as earle marshall of England: The kings commission being read, the Constable of the Tower, and the Lieutenant brought the Quene to the barre, where was made a Chaire for hir to sit downe in, and there her inditement was read, wherunto she made so wise and discret answers, that she seemed fully to clere herselfe of al matters laid to hir charge; but being tryed by hir pères, twenty 6. in number, wherof the duke of Suffolke was chiefe, she was by them found guiltie, and had iudgement pronounced by the Duke of Norffolke, to be byent on the greene in the Tower, or elle to haue hir head

smitten



smitten off, as the kings pleasure should be further knowen, and so she was conuained to warde againe: the lady Kingston, and the lady Bolein her Aunt attending on her. And then immediatly, the lord Rochford the Quenes brother was likewise arraigned and condemned: the Mayor of London, his brethren the aldermen, the wardens, and foure persons mo of euery the twelue principall companies being present.

The seuentéene date of May, the lord Rochford brother to the Quene, Hentie Norrice, Marke Smeton, William Brierton, and Francis Weston, all of the Kings priuie Chamber, about matters touching the Quene, were beheaded on the tower hill, the lord Rochfords bodie with the heade was buried in the chappell of the tower, the other foure in the churchyarde there.

On the ninetēth date of May about eight of the clocke in the morning, Rob. Greene. Quene Anne Bolein was brought to the greene within the tower of London, by the white tower, the lord chancelor, the duke of Richmond, the duke of Suffolk, with the most of the kings councill, as earles, lords, and nobles of the realme being present, also the Mayor of London, with his brethren the aldermen, and sheriffes, and certaine of the principall companies of the citie, &c. All these being on a scaffold made there for the execution, the said Quene Anne saide as followeth: Masters, I here humbly submit me to the lawe, as the lawe hath iudged me, and as for mine offences, (I here accuse no man) God knoweth them, I remit them to God, beséeching him to haue mercie on my soule, and I beseech Iesu saue my Soueraigne and master the King, the most goblest, noblest, and gentlest Prince that is, and long to raigne ouer you, which wordes she spake with a smiling countenance: which done, she kneeled downe on both her knees, and said, To Iesu Christ I commend my soule, and with that word suddenly the hangman of Calets smote off her head at one stroke with a sword: her body with the head was buried in the quire of the chappell in the tower.

Quene Anne  
beheaded.

The twentieth of May, the king married ladie Iane daughter to sir Iohn Seimour knight, which at Whitsontide was openlie shewed as Quene, King H. married lady Iane. and on tuesdaie in the Whitson weeke, Sir Edward Seimour was created viscount Beauchampe, and Sir Walter Hungerforde made Lord Hungerforde.

The 8. of June began a parliament, and the cleargie helde a conuocation in Pauls church, where after much disputing and debating of matters, they published a booke of Religion, entituled, Articles deuised by the kings highnes. In the which booke is mentioned but thre sacraments. Articles of religion deuised by the king.

On Saint Peters night, the king and Quene stood at the Mercers hall, and saw the watch most brauely set forth.

The 29. of June, the king held a great iusting and triumph at Westminster, where were ordained two lighters made like ships to fight vpon the water, one of the which brest in the midst, whereby one Gates gentleman, a servant of master Kneucs was drowned in his harnesse. In the other, a gunne brest her chamber, and maimed two of the mariners.

Triumph at  
Westminster.

T. Cromwell  
Lord keeper.

After that the earle of Wilshire and Diamond, called Sir Thomas Bolein, had deliuered the kings priuy seale, whereof he was *Custos*, into the kings hands: Thomas Cromwel secretary to the R. and D. of the rolles, was made L. keeper of the said priue seale. And Christopher Hales the kings attorney, was made maister of the Rolles, and maister Baker Recorder of London was made the kings attorney.

Th. Cromwell  
lord priuy seale  
vicegerent.

The 9. of July, the L. Fitzwaren was created earle of Bath, and the morrow after T. Cromwel was made lord Cromwel.

Henry Duke of  
Richmond.

The 18. of July lord T. Cromwel was made knight, and high vicar generall ouer all the spirituallty vnder the king, and saue diuers times in the conuocation among the bishops, as head ouer them.

Lord Thomas  
Howard sent to  
the Tower.

The 22. of July, Henry duke of Richmond and Somerset, earle of Nottingham, a bastard son of R. Henry, borne at Blakmore in Essex, of the lady Tailor boise, that time called Elizabeth Blunt, died at saint James, and was buried at Cheshford in Dorsetshire.

This moneth of July, lord Thomas Howard, youngest brother to the duke of Dorsetshire, was sent to the tower of London, for making a priue contract of matrimonie with the Ladie Margaret Dowglas, daughter to the Queene of Scots by the earle of Angus, and niece to king Henry of England: the saide lord Thomas was attaint by parliament, and also the said lady Margaret Dowglas was after committed to the tower for the same.

Pater noster,  
creede, and com-  
mandements.

Commotion in  
Lincolneshire.

In September, Thomas Cromwel lord priuy seale, and vicegerent, sent out vnder the kings spirituall seale, certaine iniunctions to the prelates and clergie of the realme, charging Curates to preach and to teach their parishioners, the *Pater noster*, *Aue* and *Creede*, the commandements and articles of the faith in English, with other articles.

Commotion  
appealed.

In the beginning of October, at a tise for the Kinges subsidie kept in Lincolneshire, the people made an insurrection, and gathered nigh twentie thousand persons, who take certaine lords and gentlemen of the country, causing them to be sworne to them vpon certaine articles which they had devised, and such as refused to sweare, they kept prisoners, and beheaded a priest, who was the bishop of Lincolnes chancelor: Against those the king did send the Duke of Suffolk, the earle of Shrewsburie, and the Earle of Rutlande with a strong power, whereof when the rebelles heard, they desired pardon, brake by their armie, and departed home, but their Captaynes were apprehended and executed.

A priest and a  
butcher executed.

The ninth of October, a priest and a butcher were hanged at Windsoze, by martiall lawe, for wordes spoken in the behalfe of the Lincolneshire men, the butcher wished the good fellows (as he termed them) in Lincolneshire, to haue the flesh on his skell, rather than to sell it at such price as hee was offered: the priest standing by, likewise wished them to haue it, for he said they had need of it. Also James Mallet doctor of lawe, late chaplaine to Q. Katherin, for like wordes was executed at Cheshford in Essex.

Commotion in  
Dorsetshire.

The men of Lincolneshire beeing pacified, within six daies after began an insurrection in Dorsetshire for the same causes: there people gathered to the number

number of 40000. who took the archbishop of York, and the L. Darcie, and caused them to be swoyne to their partie.

He shall not enter into this your pilgrimage of grace for the common wealth onely, but for the love that you do beare to Gods faith and the church militant, and the maintenance thereof, and the preservation of the kings person and his issue, and the purifying of nobilitie, and to the intent to expresse all villainies blond, and euill counsaillers against the common wealth, from his Grace, and the private counsell of the same. And that ye shall not enter into our said pilgrimage for no particular profit to your selues, nor doe any displeasure to any private person, but by the counsell of the common wealth, ne to murder or sleie for any enuy, but in your hart to put away all feare fro the common wealth, and to take before you the crosse of Christ, and in your harts his faith, to the restitution of Gods church, and to the suppression of erronous opinions.

God saue the king.

Against those rebelles, the King sent the Duke of Suffolke, the Duke of Suffolke, the Earle of Shrewsburie, and the Marquesse of Excester, with a great armie, with whome a battaile was appointed to haue bene fought, on the feue of Saint Simon and Iude: but as God woulde, there fell such raine the night before, that the two armies coulde not mete: Whereupon, they desired the Duke of Suffolke to sue vnto the kings maiestie for their pardon, and that they might haue their liberties, &c. which the duke promised, and rode poste to the king then lying at Windsor, to knowe his pleasure, and so appeased them. Sir Robert Aske, that was chiefe of this rebellion, came to London, and was not onely pardoned, but rewarded with great gifts.

Death of the rebels in York. Wyre.

Commonion appealed.

Sir Ralph Eure kept Skarborough Castle in the North, being five weekes besieged by the rebels, twentie daies whereof he and all his companie (which were his onely friends, seruants and tenants, and serued for good will to him) were forced to sustaine themselves with bread and water, and yet kept the same safe to the ende of the said rebellion, and so deliuered it to king Henrie, who sent him sone after to serue in the borders against Scotlande, where in great credite he continued his seruice, keeping the Scots without doing hurt to England, and with such obedience of them, as within twentie miles of the borders of Scotlande for against him, there was not a Scot but at his commandement, and so continued till he was killed in Anno 1545.

Sir Ralph E. nere his good seruice in the north.

The 13. of November, master Robert Pagation a graue citizen, and a mercer of London, was slaine with a gun, as he was going from his house, by Soper lane end, to moztowe masse in S. Thomas of Akers, now called the Percers chappell in cheape: but the murderer was neuer openly knowne, till by his owne confession made many yeres after, when he came to the gallows at Banberie where he was hanged for felonie.

Robert Pagation murdred there.

The 22. of December, the Thames being frozen, the king and quene lane rode through London to Chertwich.

The 3. of February, was Thomas Fitzgarter, sonne and heire to the earle

1537

The earle of  
Hilbare & flue  
of his vnckes ex-  
ecuted.  
A new commo-  
tion in Worke-  
shire.  
Another conspi-  
racie.

of Hilbare, beheaded, and flue of his vnckes drawn, hanged, and quartered, at Tyborne for treason.

In the same moneth Nich. Musgraue, Tho. Gilby, and other stirred a newe rebellion, and besieged the city of Carlisle, from whence they were driven, and manie of them taken and put to death. Also the same moneth, sir Frauncis Bigot, sir Robert Constable, and other began a conspiracie, and for the same were attainted.

Abbot of  
Whalley and o-  
ther hanged.

The 10. of March, John Paslew bachelor of diuinitie then being the 25. abbot of the abbey of Whalley in Lincolnshire, was executed at Lancaster, and the same daie with him was hanged, drawne, and quartered, John Eastgate a monke of the same house, whose quarters were set vp at diuers towne in that shire. And on the 13. of March W. Haydoke a monk of Whalley was hanged at Whalley, in the field called Bedeamgules, and there hanged long time after. About the same time, the abbot of Sawley in Lancashire, with one Althebe a monke of Cernaur, were executed. Also Robert Hops abbot of Wharfe in Bedfordshire, with the prior of the same house, and the parson of Puddington, were executed at Tyborne.

Lincolnshire  
men executed.

The 29. of March were 12. men of Lincoln drawn to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered, 5. were priests, and 7. were lay men, 1. one was an abbot, a suffragan, doctor Mackerel: another was the vicar of Louth in Lincolnshire, and two priests.

*Ann. reg. 29.*  
A commotion  
in Sommer-  
setshire.

In April, throught certaine commissions sent into Sommer setshire to take by coigne, the people began to make an insurrection, which was by M. Powlet & other alaid, the beginners to the number of 60. were condemned, thereof 14. were hanged and quartered, one of them was a woman.

In June the L. Darcy, the L. Husley, sir Rob. Constable, sir Thomas Percy, sir Frauncis Bigot, sir Stephen Hamelton, sir Iohn Bulmer and his wife, George Lomley, Nich. Tempest esquire, Robert Aske, W. Thurst abbot of Sfontaines, Adam Sodbury abbot of Cernaur, the abbot of Riuers, W. Wold prior of Birlington, were all put to death: sir Robert Constable at Hull, ouer the gate called Benerley gate: Aske hanged in chaines on a towre at Worke: Margaret Cheyney, other wise lady Bulmer, burned in Smithfield: lord Darcy beheaded at Tower hill: lord Husley at Lincoln, and the other six in number, suffered at Tyborne.

Cromwell  
knight of the  
Barter.

The 26. of August, the L. Cromwell L. priuy seale, vice Roy, and bicker general, was made knight of the garter.

Prince Ed-  
ward boine.

The 12. of October, about two of the clocke in the morning, was boine at Hampton court prince Edward, and M. Jane his mother left hir life the 14. of October: the 18. of October, the prince was made Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and earle of Chester.

Edward Seymour L. Beauchamp, the Quenes brother, was made Earle of Hertford, and sir William Fitz Will, lord admirall, was made Earle of Southampton, and M. William Powlet was made treasurer of the kings house, Sir Iohn Russell comptroller of the kings house, M. Henedge, M. Long, M. Kneuet of the kings priuie chamber, M. Coffin, M. Listar, and M. Seymour the quenes brother,



brother, brother.

On Ashdowne euen, lord Thomas Howard brother to the Duke of Norfolk, died prisoner in the tower of London, and was buried at Chertford, and then the Ladie Margaret Dowglas was pardoned, and released out of the Tower.

The Howard  
deceased.

The 12. of Nouember, the corps of R. Iane was with great solemnity carried from Hampton court toward Windsor, and there buried in the middell of the quire.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Greenwich.

The 24 of February being Sunday, the rood of Worley in Kent, called the rood of Grace, made with diuers vices, to moue the eyes and lips, was shewed at Pauls Crosse by the preacher, which was the bishop of Rochester, and there it was broken, and plucked in peeces.

1538  
Rood of grace  
shewed at  
Pauls.

The 25. of February, sir Iohn Allen priest, and also an Irish gentleman of the Carers, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Doctor Ioh. Forest a frier obseruant, was apprehended, for that in secret confession he had declared to manie the kings subiectes, that the king was not su-  
preame head of the Church, whereas before he had ben sworn to the same supremacy, vpon this poynt hee was examined, and answered that hee tooke his oth with his outwarde man, but his inwarde man neuer consented there-  
vnto: then being further accused of diuers hereticall opinions, hee submitted himselfe to the punishment of the Church, but hauing moze libertie than be-  
fore, to talke with whome hee woulde, when his abjuration was sent him to read, he utterly refused it. Whereupon he was condemned, and after ward on a paire of new gallowes set vp for that purpose in Smithfield, he was hanged by the middle and arme pits quiche, and vnder the gallowes was made a fier, wherewith hee was bent and consumed, on the 22. daie of Maie: there was a scaffold set vp before the prisoner, whereon was placed sir Richard Gresham Lord Maior of the city, the dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk, the lord admiral, the lord priuie seale, and diuers other of the counsell, besides a great number of Citizens and other: also a pulpet was there set, in the which master Hugh Latimer Bishoppe of Worcester preached a Sermon, confuting the friers errors, and mouing him to repentance, but all auailed not: so that in the end, when the Bishop asked him what state he would die in, the frier with a loude voice answered and said, that if an angell should come downe from heauen, and teach him any other doctrine then hee had receiued, and beleued from his youth, hee would not now beleue him, and that if his body should be cut ioint after ioint, or member after member bent, hanged, or what paine soeuer might be doone to his bodie, he would neuer turne from his olde profession: more he saide to the Bishop, that 7. yeeres past he durst not to haue made such a sermon for his life. And so hee was hanged and bent, as afoze is shewed: and an huge great Image named Daruell Gatherm, hauing bene brought out of Wales to this gallowes in Smithfield, was there bent with the saide frier Forest. In the night next following, the rood at Saint Margarets Patens by the tower street of London, was pulled downe, and broken in peeces, with his Tabernacle.

An. reg. 30.  
Frier Forest  
bent.

fire in Rood  
lane.

And

And about 3. nights after, to wit, the 27. of May was a great fire in the same S. Margarets parish, not far from the church, the which fire among the Basket-makers there consumed more then a dosen houses, and nine persons men and women bzent to death.

Abbeies suppressed.

Bartons abbey in Suffex, Martine abbey in Surrex, Stratford abbey in Essex, Le wis in Suffex, and other were suppressed to the kings vse.

The images of our ladie of Walsingham and Ipswich were brought bp to London, with all the iewels that hung about them, and diuers other images both in Englande and Wales, whereunto anie common pilgrimage was vsed, for auoiding of Idolatrie, all which were bzent at Chelsey by T. Cromwel private seale.

The ninth of August, Edmond Conesby one of the Groomes of the Kinges Chamber, was executed at Tyborne, for counterfeiting the Kinges Seale manuell.

Hangingman hanged.

The 1. of September being Sondag, one Cratwell Hangingman of London, and two other, were hanged at the worstling place by Clerken-well, for robbing a booth in Bartholomews faire.

The 2. of September, Edw. Clifford gentleman was executed at Tyborne, for counterfeiting the kings priuy signet.

The Bible in every church to be read.

This moneth of September, Thomas Cromwell lord priuy seale, bicegerent to the kings highnes, sent forth insunctions to all bishops and curates throughe the realme, charging them to see that in euerie parish church, the Wyble of the largest volume, printed in English, were placed, for all men to reade on: and that a booke of register were also prouided and kept in euerie parish Church, wherein shall bee wrytten euerie wedding, chrisning, and burying withyn the same parish for euer.

Register booke in every church to be kept.

Tho. Becket's shrine.

S. Austines abbey at Canterburx was suppressed, and the shrine and gods taken to the kings treasury, as also the shrine of Thomas Becker in the priore of Chyist church, was likewise taken to the kings vse. This shrine was builded about a mans height, all of stone, then upward of timber plain, withyn the which was a Chest of yron, containing the bones of Thomas Becker, skull and all, with the wounde of his death, and the pære cut out of his skull layde in the same wound. These bones (by commandement of the lord Cromwel) were then and there bzent, the timber worke of this shrine on the outside, was couered with plates of gold, damasked with golde wire, which ground of gold was againe couered with iewels of gold, as rings, 10. or 12. cramped with gold wyer, in to the said ground of golde, many of those rings hauing stones in them, bzaches, images, angelles, precious stones, and great pearles, &c. The spole of which shrine, in gold and precious stone, filled two great chests, such as 6. or 8. strong men coulde doe no more, then conueie one of them at once out of the church. The monks of that church were commanded to change their habites, in to the apparell of secular priests.

Tho. Becket's bones bzent.

Friers in London suppressed.

The hospital of S. Thomas of Abers in London, the blacke friers, the white friers, the gray friers, and the charterhouse monks in London, were suppressed, and so all other religious houses immediately after.

In the month of November, John Nicholson, otherwile Lambert, a priest, <sup>Lambert bzent.</sup> was accused of heresie, for holding opinion against the bodily presence in the sacrament of the aulter: he appealed to the king, who favorably consented to heare him at a day appointed. Against the which day in the palace at Westminster, within the kings hall, there was set up a throne or siege royall for the king, with scaffoldes for the lords, and a stage for Nicholson to sit and speere. Divers articles were ministered to him by Thomas Cranmer archbishoppe of Canterbury, Latimer bishop of Worcester and other, but namely the king pressed him sore, and in the end offered him pardon, if he would renounce his opinion, but he would not, wherefore he was condemned, had iudgement and was bzent in Smithfield.

The 5. of November, Henry Courtney marquisse of Excester, and earle of Denonshire, and sir Henry Poole knight, Lord Mountacute, and sir Edward Neuill brother to the lord of Burgaunie, were sent to the Tower, being accused by sir Geoffrey Poole brother to the lord Mountacute, of high treason, who were indighted, for devising to maintaine, promote and aduance, one Reginald Poole, late Deane of Excester, enemy to the king, beyonde the sea, and to depriue the king.

The 24. of November, foure anabaptists, thre men and one woman, all dutch, bare sagots at Paules crosse. And on the 29. of November, a man and a woman dutch anabaptists, were bzent in Smithfield. <sup>Anabaptists bare sagots and were bzent.</sup>

The first daie of December sir Thomas Audley, was made baron Audley of Malock.

The marquisse of Excester, earle of Denonshire, and Henry lord Mountacute, were arraigned on the last of December, at Westminster, before the lord Audley that was lord Chancellor, and for that present high steward of England, where they were found gilty. The third daie after were arraigned sir Edward Neuill, sir Geoffrey Poole, two priests called Crofts and Colens, and one Holland a marriner, all attainted. And the 9. of January were Henrie marquisse of Excester, Earle of Denonshire, Henry L. Mountacute, and sir Edward Neuill, beheaded on the tower hill. The two priests, Crofts and Colens, and Holland the marriner, were hanged and quartered at Tybozne, and Geoffrey Poole was pardoned. <sup>1539 Marquisse of Excester and ather executed.</sup>

On Ash-wednesday John Iones, John Potter, and William Manering were hanged in the princes liuerie (because they were the princes seruants) on the south side of Paules church-yarde, for killing of Roger Cholmeley esquire in the same place. <sup>Execution in Paules church garde.</sup>

The 3. of March, sir Nicholas Carew of Bedington, in the county of Surrey, knight of the Garter, and master of the kings horse, was beheaded on the tower hill, for being of counsell with Henry marquisse of Excester, and Henry Poole lord Mountacute. <sup>Sir Nicholas Carew beheaded.</sup>

The 9. of March, the king created sir William Powlet knight, treasurer of his household, lord Saint John, sir John Russell comptroller of his household, lord Russell, and sir John Parre lord Parre. <sup>States created.</sup>

The 28. of Aprill, began a Parliament, in the which Margarete countesse <sup>Ann. reg 31.</sup> of.

of Salisbury, Gertrude wife to the marquisse of Worcester, Reginald Poole, sir Adrian Fortescue, and Thomas Dingley knight of Saint Johns, and diuers other were attainted: And all the religious houses in England suppressed and vn-suppressed were granted to the king for euer.

Blocke houses  
bulld.

King Henry being informed that the pope by instigation of cardinal Poole, had moued and stirred diuers princes and potentates of Christendome to invade the Realme of England, without delay rode towarde the sea coastes, and sent diuers nobles to suruey all the portes, and places of danger, where any meete and conuenient landing place might be doubted, as well on the borders of England, as also of Wales, in which dangerous places he caused bulwarkes and forts to be erected: and further he caused the lorde Admirall earle of South-hampton, to prepare in a readinesse his naue of ships for defence of the coastes: besides this he sent forth commissions to haue generall musters taken through the Realme, to vnderstand what able men he might make account of: and further to haue the armour and weapons sene and viewed, sir William Forman knight then Mayor of London, was commanded to certifie the names of all the able men within the citie, and liberties thereof, betwixt the ages of 16. and 60. with the number of armes and weapons, whereupon the said Mayor and his brethren, each one in his warde, toke the number accordingly, whereof they aduertised sir Thomas Cromwell lord priue seale, who certified the king, and then he commanded a conuenient number of the most able to be mustered.

Great muster  
at London.

The 8. of May, the citizens of London mustered at the Wiles ende all in bright harnes, with coates of white silke, or cloth, and chelines of golde, in three great battailes, the number was 15000. beside musketers, and other wayters, who in goodly order passed through London to Westminster, & so through the Sanctuary, and rounde about the parke of S. James, and returned home through Holborne.

No watch at Widsommer.

Doctor Shakston bishop of Salisbury, and doctor Latimer bishop of Worcester, resigned their bishopricks into the kings hand the first of July.

Vicar of Wad-  
sworth and other  
executed.

The 8. of July, Griffith Clarke vicar of Wandsworth, with his Chapelaine and his seruant, and sirer Waire, were all foure hanged and quartered at S. Thomas Waterings: whose inditement I haue not heard of, and therefore not able to set downe the cause of their execution.

The 10. of July, sir Adrian Fortescue, and Thomas Dingley, were beheaded, for matter whereof ye haue heard.

On Easter daie there were fiftie saile discovered, that late in the Downs, and for that it was neither knowne, what they were, nor what they intended, all the able men in Kent were raised and mustered in armour the same daie.

The 7. of September deceased doctor John Stokesley, Bishop of London, and was buried in our Ladie chappell of Paules church, on the 14. of September.

The 20. of October, the quire of Paules went to their chapter house, with the



the bishop of Chichester being then deane of Pauls, who made to thm a collation, and then elected there by the kings commission, doctor Edmond Boner, by these words: We elect Edmond bishop of Hereford now beyond the seas, Bishop of London, and then desired the audience to pray for him, the Bishop beganne, and the quire followed, from the chapter house where the election was made, vp to the quire, &c.

Bishop of London elected.

In this meane time, to wit, in the moneth of September came to London, Duke Frederike of Banier, the Pallgrau of Rhine, the Breshall of Hanz, Frederike Prince elector of Saronie, and the Chancellos of William Duke of Cleue, Gulicke, Gelberland, and Berghen. These were conducted to Windsor, where epyght daies together they were continuallie feasted, and pastimes shewed them in hunttings and other pleasures, so much as mought bee. The Pallgrau shortly after departed homeward, and was princelie rewarded: And at that present was the marriage concluded betwixt the king, and the lady Anne sister to the duke of Cleue, and great preparation was made for the receiuing of her.

Duke of Banier and Pallgrau of Rhine came into England.

In the moneth of Nouember, Hugh Faringdon abbot of Reading, and two priests, named Rug and Onion, were hanged and quartered at Reading. The same daie was Richard Whiting Abbot of Glasseburie hanged and quartered on Toxe Hill, besides his Monasterie, Iohn Thorne and Roger James monkes, the one Treasurer, the other Under-treasurer of Glasseburie Church, were at the same time executed. Also shortly after Iohn Bech Abbot of Colchester was executed at Colchester, all for denying the kings supremacy.

Abbots executed.

The 5. of December, the abbey of S. Albons was surrendered, by the abbot and monks there, by deliuering the couent seale into the hands of T. Pope, D. Peter, master Cauendish, and other the kings sisters.

Abbey of S. Albons surrendered.

In the moneth of December, were appointed to waite on the kings person 50. Gentlemen, called Pensioners or Speares, like as they were in the first yeere of the king, vnto whom was assigned the summe of fiftie poundes the peece yeerelie, for the mayntenance of themselves, and euery man two Horses, or one Horse and a Gelding of service.

Pensioners appointed.

The third of Januarie, was the Lady Anne of Cleue receyued at Blackheath, and brought to Grenewich with great triumph: and the first daie of the same moneth shee was married to King Henrie.

1540

It is married lady Anne of Cleue.

After Christmasse, the Priory Church of Saint Marie Querie in Southwarke, was purchased of the king by the inhabitantes of the Borowle, doctor Gardener Bishoppe of Winchester putting to his helping hand: they made thereof a parish church, in place of two small parish churches, the one of Mary Magdalene, in the said priory church, the other of S. Margaret on the hill.

S. Mary Querie made a parish Church.

The twelfth of March, Henrie Bowcher Earle of Essex, riding a young Horse, was cast, and brake his necke, at his manour in Essex. Hee was the eldest Earle in Englande.

Earle of Essex deceased.

The nineteenth of March, Iohn Vere Earle of Orforde, high Chamber-layne of Englande, deceased at his manour of Hedingham in Essex.

Earle of Orford deceased.

The

Priests at Ca-  
leis executed.

The tenth of Aprill, Sir William Peterfon Priest, late commissarie of Ca-  
leis, and Sir William Richardson Priest of Saint Maries in Caleis, were both  
there drawne, hanged, and quartered, in the Market place for the suprema-  
cie.

Cromwel earle  
of Essex.

The 18. of Aprill, sir T. Cromwell L. private Seale, was created earle of Es-  
sex, and high chamberlaine of England, and his sonne Gregory was made lord  
Cromwell.

Subsidy and  
fourte fiftenees.  
Hospital of S.  
John of Jeru-  
salem in Eng-  
land dissolved

In a parliament which beganne the 18. of Aprill, was granted to the king a  
subsidie of 2 s. the pound lands, and 12 d. goods, and fourte fiftenees towards the  
kings great charges in building of blockhouses. Moreover the corporation  
of the knights of the Rhodes, or knights of S. John of Jerusalem in England  
and Ireland, was utterly dissolved and made void, the king his heires and suc-  
cessors, to have and enjoy all the mansion house, church, and all other edifices,  
buildings, and gardens to the same belonging, nere to the city of London, cal-  
led the house of S. John of Jerusalem in England: and also the hospital, church  
and house of Kiplmain in Ireland, with all castles, honours, manors, meases,  
landes, tenementes, rentes, reuerfions, seruises, woods, meadowes, pastures,  
parkes, warrens, &c. in England and Ireland, with all the goods, cat tailles, &c.  
Wil. Weston knight prior of the said hospital of S. John of Jerusalem in Eng-  
land, during his life to have an annuall rent of 1000. pounds, and such reason-  
able portion of the goods and cat tailles of the said house as the king shall ap-  
point him. John Raulson knight prior of S. John of Jerusalem in Ireland, 500.  
marks, with a reasonable portion of goods. Clement West 200. l. T. Pemberton  
80. l. G. Russell 100. l. G. Ailmur 100. l. John Sutton 200. l. E. Bellengam 100. l.  
E. Browne 50 l. E. Hufe 100. marks, Ambrose Caue 100. marks, William Tirell  
30. pound, John Raulson 200. markes, A. Rogars, Oswald Maslingberd, and o-  
ther 8. each of them, 10. pound p. ann. with portion of the goods as the king  
should limite, so that the pensions appointed to the said knights and brethren  
amounted to 2870. pound the yeres out of the lands to that hospitall appertai-  
ning, &c.

Ann. reg. 32.

The 24. of Aprill, Tho. L. Audley, L. chancelor of England, and sir Anthony  
Browne pp. of the h. horse were made knights of the garter.

Anabaptists  
brent.

The 29. of Aprill one named Maundeucld, another named Colens, and one o-  
ther were examined in S. Margarets church, and were condemned for anabap-  
tists, and were on the 3. of May brent in the high way beyond Southwarke to-  
wards Belwenton.

Taking of cha-  
llengers.

On Maie daie, was a great tryumph of Jousting at Westminster, which  
Jousts had ben proclaimed in France, Flanders, Scotland, and Spaine, for al  
commers that woulde, against the challengers of Englande, which were Sir  
John Dudley, sir Thomas Seymer, sir Thomas Poininges, sir George Carewe  
knights: Anthony Kington, and Richard Cromwel esquires, which said challen-  
gers came into the lisses that daie richlie appa-relled, and the ir horses trapped  
all in white beluet, with certaine knights & gentlemen ryding afore them, ap-  
parelled all in white beluet, & white sarfenet, and all their seruants in white  
doublets, and hosen cut after the Burgonian fashon: and there came to iust  
against

against them the said day of defendants, 46. the earle of Surrey being the foremost, L. Wil. Heiward, L. Clinton, and L. Cromwell son and heire to Th. Cromwell earle of Essex, and chamberlaine of Englands, with other, which were all rightlie appavelled. And that date sir Iohn Dudley was overthrown in the field by mischance of his horse, by one Paister Breime defendant, neuer the lesse he brake diuers speares valiantly after that: and after the said lusts were don, the saide challengers rode to Durham place, where they kept open household, and feasted the king and quene, with hir ladies, and all the court.

The 2. of May Anthony Kingston and Ric. Cromwell were made knights at the said place.

The 3. of May, the said challengers did Courney on horseback with swords, Courneying. against them came 29 defendants: sir Iohn Dudley and the earle of Surrey running first, which the first course lost both ther gauntlets, and that day sir Ric. Cromwell overthrew M. Palmer in the field off his horse, to the great honoꝛ of the challengers.

The sixt of May, the sayde Challengers fought on foote at the Barriers, and agaynst them came thirtie Defendants, which fought ballantlie, but sir Richard Cromwell overthrew that date at the Barriers, Paister Culpeper in the fild: and the sixt of May the sayde Challengers brake vp their household.

In the which time of their house-keeping, they had not only feasted the king, quene, ladies, and the whole court as is aforesaid, but also on the Tuesday in the Rogation weeke, they feasted al the knights and burgesles of the common house in the parliament: and on the morowe after they had the Maye of London, the aldermen, and all their wiues to dinner, and on the Friday they brake vp, as is aforesaid.

The 7. of May sir W. Weston knight, L. pꝛior of S. Iohn of Jerusalem without Smithfield died, and neuer receiued any part of his pension, and the king toke all the lands that belonged to that house, and to that order, into his hands, to the augmentation of his crown: and gaue to euery of the challengers aboue written, for a reward of their ballantnes 100. marks, and a house to dwell in of perely revenues out of the said lands for ever.

The 26. of May, was sent to the tower doctoꝛ Wilson, and doctoꝛ Sampson bishop of Chichester, for releueing certayne prisoners which had denied to subscribe to the kings Supremacie: for the same offence Richard Farmer Grocer of London, a rich and wealthie citizen, was committed to the marshalsea, and after arraigned and attainted in the premunire, and lost all his goods, his wife and childzen thrust out of doores. Also the keeper of Petegate was sent to the marshalsea, for giuing liberty to doctoꝛ Powell and doctoꝛ Abell his prisoners to go vnder baile.

Richard Farmer in the premunire.

The 9. of July, T. L. Cromwell earle of Essex being in the counsell chamber, was sodainly apprehended, and committed to the tower of London. The 19. he was attainted by parliament, of heresie and high treason, as appereth by the same attaindoꝛ which I haue seene and read, but for beare to set downe the same being long.

On the 28. of July, the said Thomas Cromwell was brought to the scaffold on the tower hill, where he spake these words (as was then noted) I am come hither to die, and not to purge my selfe, as may happen some thinke I will, for if I should so doe, I were a very wretch and miser. I am by the law condemned to die, and I thanke my Lord God that hath appointed me this death for mine offences: for sithence the time that I came to yeres of discretion, I haue liued a sinner, and offended my Lord God, for the which I aske him heartlie forgiveness. And it is not vnknowne to many of you, that I haue been a great traucailer in the world, and being but of a base degree was called to high estate, and sithen the time I came threunto, I haue offended my prince, for the which I aske him hartly forgiveness, and beseech you al to pray to God with me, that he will forgive me. O father forgive me, O sonne forgive me, O holy ghost forgive me, O thre persons in one God forgive me. And now I pray you that be here to beare me record, I die in the catholike faith, not doubting in any article of my faith, no nor doubting in any sacrament of the church. Many haue slandered me, and reported that I haue bene a bearer of such as haue maintained euill opinions, which is vnttrue: but I confesse, that like as God by his holy spirit doth instruct vs in the truth, so the diuell is readie to seduce vs, and I haue bene seduced: but beare me witnes that I die in the catholike faith of the holy church, and I hartly desire you to pray for the kings grace, that hee may long liue with you in health and prosperitie, and after him that his sonne prince Edward that goodly knyght may long raigne ouer you. And once againe I desire you to pray for me, that so long as life remaineth in this flesh, I waue nothing in my faith. And then made he his praier which was long, and after committed his soule to the hands of God, and so laid him downe, and patiently suffered the strokes of the axe, by the hands of him who illaureably performed his office. At the same time also with the said earle was beheaded the lord Hungerforde of Beilsbery, who at the houre of his death seemed so vniquiet, that many iudged him rather frenzie than otherwile: he suffered (as it was said) for buggerie.

Thomas lord  
Cromwell be-  
headed.

Thomas Cromwell (as before is shewed) was attainted by parliament, but neuer came to answer. He was bozne in Putney a village in Surrey by the Thamis side, about 4. miles west from London, and was son to a black smith (in his latter daies a byuer) after whose deceale, his mother was married to a sherman in London. This Thomas notwithstanding the baseness of his birth, through a singular excellency of wit, ioyned with industrious diligence of mind, grew to such a sufficient ripenes of vnderstanding and skill in ordering of twaightie affaires, that he was thought apt and fit to any rowth or office wherunto he should be admitted, which being apercelued of the cardinall Wolsey, he toke him into seruice, & making him his sollicitor, imployed him about businesse oftentimes of great importance, wherein hee acquit himselfe with such dexteritie, as answered alwaies the credite to him committed. At the fall of the cardinall he got him to the court, saying he would make or marre, as before ye haue heard: where, being once aduanced into the kings seruice, he behaued himselfe so aduisedly in matters which he toke in hand, that in short time



time he rose to the greatest authoritie that might be in this realme, under the maiestie of the king, wherein peradventure forgetting the fall of his late master cardinall Wolsey (a notable spectacle) he fell himselfe, as ye haue heard.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 25. day of June, the k. caused the quene to remoue to Richmond, perswading it should be more for her health & pleasure, by reason of the cleere and open aire there. But on the 6. of July, certaine lordes came downe into the nether house of the parliament, and expressely declared causes, for the which the marriage was not to be taken latofull: and in conclusion, the matter was by the conuocation cleerely determined, that the king might lawfully marry where he would, and so might she: and thus were they cleerely diuorced. And by the parliament it was enacted, that she should be taken no more for Quene, but called the lady Anne of Cleue.

King Henry di-  
uorced from  
lady Anne of  
Cleue.  
Lord Leonard  
Gray sent to  
the tower.

This yere the lord Leonard Gray brother to Thomas marques Dorset, being the kings lieutenant in Ireland, was reuoked home, and vpon his coming to London, was sent to the tower.

Sixe Doctors,  
three hanged,  
and three hanged.

The 30. of July were drawne from the tower of London to west Smith- field Robert Barnes doctor of diuinity, T. Gerard parson of Hurry lane, and William Ierom vicar of Stephenheth, bachelors in diuinity: also Edward Powell, Thomas Able, and Richard Fetherstone all three doctors. The first three were drawen to a stake & there burned. The other three were drawen to a gallowes, and there hanged, headed and quartered. The three first as appeareth in their attainders, were executed for diuers heresies. The last three for treason, as in their attainders was mentioned, to wit, for denying the kings supremacie, and affirming his marriage with quene Katherine to be good: of the which argument doctor Powell wrote a booke which was printed in quarto, and I haue seene it.

The 4. of August, Thomas Empton sometime a monke of Westminster, which had bene prisoner in Newgate more than three yeres, was brought before the Iustices of goale deliuerie at Newgate, and for that he would not aske the king pardon for denying his supremacie, nor be sworne thereto, his monkes cole was plucked from his backe, and his body reppied till the king were informed of his obstinacie. The same 4. of August were drawen to Tyburne 6. persons, and one led betwixt twaine, to wit, Laurence Cooke prior of Dancaster, William Horne a lay brother of the Charterhouse of London, Giles Horne gentleman, Clement Phillip gentleman of Caleis, and servant to the lord Lisle, Edmond Bromholme priest, chaplaine to the said lord Lisle, Darby Gening, Robert Bird, all hanged and quartered, and had bene attainted by parliament, for deniall of the kings supremacie.

Seauen per-  
sons executed.

The eight of August, Ladie Katherine Howard daughter to Edmond lord Howard, nece to the duke of Norfolk, was shewed openly as Quene at Hampton court.

K. Henry mar-  
ried.

The latter end of this sommer, was bitter fallly through this realme greaf death by a strange kinde of ague and flure, with some pestilence: in which season was such a drought, that welles and small riuers were dried vp, so that much cattell died for lacke of water.

Dry sommer.

The twentie two of December, Ralph Egerton seruant to the lord Audley lord chancelloz, and Thomas Harman seruant to master Flighewood, were executed: the one for counterfeiting the kings seale in leade, wherewith they had sealed diuers Wattens counterfeited and antidated, making strangers denisons, vnder the names of diuers clerks of the chancery: the other for writing them. One Tuckfield being of their faction, robbed the lord Audleys chappell, of the chalice, pyre, basons and candlesticks of siluer, and fled, who breing afterward apprehended at Caleis, which to lowne he would haue betrayed, hee slew himselfe with a dag.

1541

*Ann. reg. 33.*  
A new commo-  
tion in Powke-  
shire.

In Aprill, certaine persons beganne a new rebellion in Powkeshire, which were shortly after taken, and put to execution in diuers places: of which, Leigh a gentleman, Tatarfall a clothier, and Thornton a yeoman, were put to death at London: Sir John Neuill knight, a ten persons or mo were put to death at Powke.

Countesse of  
Salisbury be-  
headed.

The 27. of Maie, Margaret countesse of Salisburie, sometime daughter and heire to George Duke of Clarence, wife to sir Richard Poole knight, and mother to cardinal Poole, was beheaded in the tower of London, being neuer arraigned nor tried before, but condemned by act of parliament.

Damport and  
Chapman han-  
ged.

The 9. of June, Damport and Chapman, two of the kings gard, were hanged at Greenwich for robbery.

Sir Edmond  
Kneuet arrai-  
ned for striking  
in the court.

The tenth of June, Sir Edmond Kneuet knight of Dorsetshire, was arraigned before the kings Iustices (sitting in the great Hall at Greenwich), master Gage comptroller of the kings household, master Suchwell, sir Anthonie Browne, sir Anthony Winkfield, Maister Wisley, and Edmonde Pecham confessor of the kings household, for striking of one Maister Clere of Dorsetshire, seruant with the Earle of Surrey, within the kings house in the Venice Court. There was first chosen to go vpon the said Edmond a quest of gentlemen, and a quest of yeomen, to inquire of the said stripe, by the which inquests, he was founde guiltie, and had iudgement to lose his right hande: whereupon was called to do the execution, first the sergeant chirurgion, with his instruments appertaining to his office: the sergeant of the Woodyarde with the mallet and a Blocke, whereupon the hande shoulde lie: the master cooke for the king with the knife: the Sergeant of the larder to set the knife right on the joint: the Sergeant farrier with his searing yrons to seare the Veines: the Sergeant of the poultrie with a Cocke, which cocke shoulde haue his head smitten off vpon the same blocke, and with the same knife: the yeoman of the chandery with seare clothes: the yeomen of the scullery with a pan of fire to heat the yrons: a chafer of water to cole the ends of the irons: and two fourmes for all officers to set their stufte on: the sergeant of the seller with wine, ale, and beere: the yeomen of the elyze in the sergeantes steele who was absent, with bason, elyze, & towelles. Thus euery man in his office ready to do the execution, there was called forth Sir William Pickering knight marshall, to bring in the said Edmond Kneuet, and when he was brought to the bar, the chiefe iustice declared to him his trespassse, and the said Kneuet confessing himselfe to bee guiltie, humbly submitted him to the kings mercy: for this offence he was not onelic iudged

judged to lose his hand, but also his bodie to remaine in prison, and his landes and goods at the kings pleasure. Then the saide Sir Edmond Knevet desired that the king of his benigne grace, would pardon him of his right hande, and take the left: for (quoth he) if my right hande bee spared, I maie hereafter do such good service to his grace, as shall please him to appoint. At this submission and request, the Iustices forthwith informed the king, who of his goodnes, considering the gentle heart of the saide Edmond, and the good report of lordes and ladies, granted him pardon, that he should lose neither hande, lande, nor goods, but should go free at liberty.

The Lord Leonard Gray beeing indited of certaine pointes of treason by him committed, as was alledged against him, during the season that hee was the Kings Lieutenant in Ireland, to witte, for deliuering his nephew Giralde Fitz Gerarde, Brother to Thomas Fitz Gerarde before executed, and also for that hee caused certaine Irishmen to invade the landes of the Kings friends, whom he fauoured not: The 25. of June he was arraigned at Westminister in the Kings Bench, and appointed to bee tried by knightes, because hee was a Lord by name, and no lord of the parliament, but he discharged the Jurie, and confessed the inditement, whereupon he had iudgement, and on the 28 of June being St. Peters euen, he was beheaded at tower hill, where he ended his life very quietly and godly.

The Lord Leonard Gray beheaded.

This noble man, as he was come of high linage, so was he a right valiant and hardy personage, hauing in his time don his prince and country good service, both in Ireland, France, and other places, greatly to his commendation, although now his hap was thus to lose his head.

The same day that he suffered, there were executed at Saint Thomas Waterings three gentlemen, John Mantel, John Frouds, and George Roidon. They died for a murther committed in Suffex (as their inditement imported) in companie of Thomas Fines Lord Dacres of the South. The truth whereof was thus. The saide lord Dacres through the lewd perswasion of some of them, as hath bene reported, meaning to hunt in the parke of Nicholas Pelham esquire at Loughton in the same Countie of Suffex, beeing accompanied with the saide Mantell, Frouds, and Roidon, John Cheiney, and Thomas Isley gentlemen, and Richard Middleton and John Goldwel yeomen, passed from his house of Hurstmonseur the last of Aprill in the night season, toward the same parke, where they intended so to hunt, and comming into a place called Piskelap in the parish of Whillingley, they founde one John Busbrig, James Busbrig, and Richard Somener, standing there together; and as it fell out through quarrelling, there ensued a frate betwixt the saide Lord Dacres and his company on the one part, and the saide John and James Busbrig and Richard Somener on the other, insomuch that the saide John Busbrig receiued such hurt, that he died thereof the seconde of Maie next ensuing; whereupon as well the saide Lord Dacres, as those that were there with him, and diuers other likewise that were appointed to go another waie to meete them at the saide parke, were endited of murther, and the seauen and twentieth of June the Lord Dacres himselfe was arraigned before the lordes Audley of Walden, then lord chancelor, sitting

L. Dacres of the South arraigned.

that daie as high Stelward of England, with other pæres of the realme about him, who then and there condemned the said L. Dacres to die for that transgression: and afterwards the nine and twentieth of June being Saint Peters daie, at eleuen of the clocke in the forenoone, the Sherifs of London accordinglie as they were appointed, were readie at the tolwer to haue receiued the saye prisoner, and him to haue led to execution on the Tower hill. But as the prisoner should come forth of the Tower, one Heire a gentleman of the lord chambers house came, and in the kings name commanded to stay the execution til twis of the clock in the afternoone, which caused manie to thinke that the king would haue granted his pardon. But neuer the les at thre of the clock in the same afternoone hee was brought forth of the Tower, and deliuered to the Sherifs, who led him on foote betwixt them vnto Tyborne, where he died. His bodie was buried in the church of Saint Sepulchers: he was not past foure and twentieth pæres of age when he came thus through great mishap to his end: for whom manie fore lamented, and liketwise for the other thre gentlemen, Mantell, Frouds, and Roidon, but chiefly for the said young lord beeing a right towardly gentleman.

The 1. of July, a Welchman a minstrel, was hanged and quartered for singing of songs, which were interpreted to be prophesying against the B. Sir Dauid Genson knight of the Rhodes was drawn through Southwark to S. Thomas of Watrings, and there executed for the supremacy.

In the month of August, the B. took his progresse toward Dorke, and passed through Lincolnshire, where was made vnto him an humble submission, &c. About this time Westminster and Wilsow were made bishopricks.

On Christmas euen at seuen of the clock at night, began a great fire in the house sometime named Elsing spittle, then the house of Sir Iohn Williams M. of the kings iewels, where manie of those iewels were bent, and more imbezelled, as was thought.

The Ladie Katherine Howarde, whom the king hadde married, for her vnchaste liuing committed with Thomas Culpepper and Frauncis Derham, was by Parliamente attainted; Culpepper and Derham were put to death at Tyborne the tenth daie of December. Culpepper was headed, his bodie buried at Saint Sepulchers Church by Newgate; Derham was quartered, &c.

The 23. of January the B. was proclaimed king of Ireland.

The 12. of February, the lady Howard, other wise called M. Katherine, and the ladie Iane Rochford for being of her counsell with Th. Culpepper, were both beheaded within the tolwer of London.

In the beginning of the moneth of March died Arthur Plantagenet Viscount Lisle, Bastarde sonne to Edward the fourth, in the Tower of London vntattainted, when he should haue been deliuered and set at libertie (as it was said) the occasion of his trouble in the tolwer, rose vpon suspition that he should be ppiute to a practice which some of his men (as Philpott and Brindholme executed the last yere) had consented vnto, for the betraying of Coleis to the French whilist he was the kings Lieutenant there. But after that by due tryall it was

Progresse to  
Dorke.

Westminster  
and Wilsow  
made bishop-  
ricks.  
Fire at Elsing  
spittle.

1542

H. the king  
of Ireland.  
M. Katherine  
beheaded.



was knowne that he was nothing guiltie to the matter, the king appointed sir Thomas Wriothesley his secretarie to go vnto him, and to deliuer vnto him a ring with a rich diamond for a token from him, and to will him to be of good cheere, sith it was manifestlie proued that hee was void of all offence, for hee should find that he would make account of him, as of his most true and faithfull kinsman, and not onelie restore him to his former libertie, but otherwise be readie to pleasure him in what he could. Master Secretarie set forth this message with such effectuall words, as he was en eloquent man, that Lorde Lisle toke such an immoderate ioie thereof, that his heart beeing oppressed therewith, hee died the night following through too much reioicing (as was said.) After whose decease, to wit, the 12. of March, sir John Dudley was at Westminister created Viscount Lisle, by the right of his mother lady Elizabeth sister and heire to sir John Gray Viscount Lisle, who was late wife to Arthur Plantagenet viscount Lisle late deceased, as ye haue heard.

Lorde Lisle died  
in the tower.

The 17. of March, Margaret Daue a maid, was boiled in Smithfield for poisoning of three households that she had dwelled in.

A maid boiled  
in Smithfield.

The 28. of March, the Parliament sitting, George Feres Burgesse for the town of Plimmouth, was arrested in London vpon a condemnation, whereupon the sergeant at armes of the common house was sent to the counter in Breadstreet to fetch him, but the clerks would not deliuer him, till the sherifs came themselves, who in the end deliuered him: howbeit, this matter was so taken in the common house, that the sherifs, the clerks, and fine officers, with the party plaintiff, were sent to the Tower, and there laie two daies, and were then deliuered by the speaker and common house: the Sherifs were deliuered from all charges, except twenty pound for their fees.

The sheriffs of  
London sent to  
the tower.

Ann. reg. 34.

In May the king toke a loane of money, of all such as were valued woorth fifty pound or vpwrd in the booke of subsidie.

In the moneth of August, James Earle of Desmond in Ireland, came and submitted himselfe to the king, and so returned.

The earle of  
Desmond.

The first of October, the great Oneale of Ireland was created Earle of Tirconnell, and his base son Mathew Oneale baron of Donganow, for Shane Oneale the only son of his body lawfully begotten was then little esteemed.

The great O.  
neale.

The duke of Norfolk entred Scotland the 21. of October, burning and wasting all the marches, and there taried without any battel profered by the R. of Scots, but till the midst of Nouember.

Duke of Norfolk  
sotke entred  
Scotland.

After the departure of our army from Scotland, the king of Scots made a roade into England, and did much harme, but at the last sir Thomas Wharton and sir William Musgrave with a few of the borderers, met the Scottes, where they being in number 15000. were ouerthrowne: in which conflict was taken the earle of Cassels and Glencarne, the Lord Maxwell admirall of Scotland and Warden of the West marches, the Lord Flemming, the Lord Somerwell, the Lord Oliphant, the Lord Gray, the Lord Oliuar Sinclair, &c. more then two hundred of the better sort, and more then 8. hundred of meaner persons. They toke also foure and twenty peeces of ordinance, 4. cartes laden with speares, and ten pavilions. The king of Scots tooke such griefe and inwarde thought

Scots ouer-  
throwne.

for this ouerthrow, and also for the murder of an English herault that was slaine at Dunbar by one Lech an English man (the which for the rebellion in Lincolnshire was fled into Scotland) that he fell into a feuer, and died. Of the prisoners before named 21. of them were brought by to London, and on the 19. of December entred the citie at Bishops gate, and so were conuained to the tower, where they remained the space of two daies, and vpon S. Thomas day the apostle, they were conueied to Westminster, sir Iohn Gage Constable of the tower riding before them, and the lieutenant of the tower riding behinde them, they rode two and two together, and eight of them being earles and lordes had new golwines of blacke damaske furred with blacke conies, coates of blacke veluet, and doublets of satten, &c. all newe of the kings charge. Comming thus before the kings counsell in the starre chamber, the lord charcelor declared to them their vntruth and unkindnesse, for the which the king had cause of warre against them, as well as for the deniall of their homages, and also for their traitorous inuasions made into his realme without defiance, and also for keeping his subiects prisoners without redemption, contrarie to the lawes of the marches, for the which doings, God as they might well perceiue had scourged them. Howbeit the king more regarding his honor than his princely power, was content to shew them kindnes for unkindnes, right for wrong. And although he might keepe them in streight prison, yet he was content that they should haue libertie to be with the nobles of the realme in their houses, and so according to their estates they were appointed to dukes, earles, bishops, knights and gentlemen.

The 22. of December came tidings of the king of Scots death. And vpon Saint Iohns daie in Christmas weeke, the foresaid lords of Scotland were brought to the court then at Greenwich, where they had great chere, and were lodged within the court. And here it is to be considered, that where the king of Scots had left no issue but only one daughter: the king and his counsell perceiuing a meane now offered, whereby without warre the two realmes might be vnitied: the Scottissh lords hauing first made the motion themselves for a marriage to be had betwixt Prince Edward and their yong Quene, the king required them to helpe to the furtheraunce of that matter, which might be such benefite to themselves and their countrey. This they promised faithfully to doe, and as well by themselves, as their friends, to bring the same to effect, so much as the king could require, whereupon the king was not onely contented to release them home, but also highly rewarded them with rich gifts.

The 30. of December, they departed from the court, and the morrow after eight of them dined with sir Iohn Coats then lord maior of London, and the rest with the sheriffes, and had very great chere. On New-yeres day they departed from London home wards toward Scotland, and by the way dined at Enfield there to beholde the prince, whom they highly commended, for the great liking they had of his person, from thence they kept on their iourney till they came to the north partes, where they found the Duke of Suffolke the kings lieutenant there, and with him they remained till such pledges were come forth

Portion of a  
match between  
prince Edward  
and the quene  
of Scots.

forth of Scotlande, as it was covenanted they shoulde leaue behinde them. The Duke after he had receiued the hostages, permitted them to depart, and so they returned into Scotland, where they were ioyfully welcomed home, to their friends. With them went the earle of Angus, who had bene banished Scotland, and hauing remained here in England a long time, receiued of the kings for a thousand markes by yere: and likewise his brother sir George Dowglas, who had 500. markes by yere, likewise of the kings gift. They were now both restored home into their countrey, and that was (as was saide) by the last kings will. The said earle of Angus, and diuers of the lords that had bin prisoners here in England, were made of the priuy counsell of the realme, by the earle of Arraine, that was chosen gouernor to the yong quene, and of the realme, as next helpe apparent. Notwithstanding that, the archbishop of S. Andrewes Cardinall, enemy to the K. of England, had a will (forged as some haue said) expelling how the king had made him gouernor, as well of the quene as realme, whereupon the said earle, according to his right, as he pretended, with the helpe of his friends toke vpon him the authoritie of gouernor, and put the said cardinall in prison, and deliuered sir Robert Bowes, and the other English prisoners, by their bondes, according to the custome of the marches.

The 9. of February, a proclamation was made, whereby the people were licenced to eate white meates in Lent. But straightly forbidden the eating of flesh. Whereupon, shortly after the earle of Surrey with diuers lords, knights, and gentlemen, were imprisoned for eating of flesh in the same Lent, contrary to the said proclamation.

White meate  
licenced to be  
eaten in Lent.

The 8. of May one Lech sometime Baylie of Lowth, who had killed Somerset one of our heraulds of armes at Dunbar in Scotland, was beheaded at Tyborne and there hanged and quartered. And the 12. of June, Edward Lech his brother, and with him a priest for the same fact, were likewise executed at Tyborne.

An. reg. 35.  
Somerset an  
herault killed.

King Henry minding wars with France, made great preparation and provision aswell of munitions and artillery as also of brasse ordinance, amongst the which, at that time, by one Peter Bawd a French man borne, a gunfounder, or maker of great ordinance, and one other Allen, called Peter van Collen, a gunsmith, both the kings souldiers, who conferring together, deuised and caused to be made, certaine mortar pieces, being at the mouth, from 11. inches vnto 19. inches wide, for the vse whereof, the said Peter, and Peter caused to be made certaine hollow shot of cast yron, to be stuffed with fierworke, or wilde fire, whereof the bigger sort for the same, had scrues of yron to receiue a match to carry fire kindled, that the fierworke might be set on fire, for to breake in small pieces the same hollow shot, whereof the smallest piece hitting any man would kill or spolie him. And after the kings return from Wales, the said Peter Bawd by himselfe, in the first of Edw. the first, did also make certaine ordinance of cast yron, of diuers sorts, and formes, as Falconets, Fatwons, Minions, Sakers, and other pieces: vnto this Bawd, Iohn Iohnson his covenant seruant, suruiuing his master, did likewise make and cast yron

Mortar pieces  
cast for shooting  
of wilde fire.  
R. Crokhay.

First yron pieces  
cast in the  
first of Edward  
the first.

ordinance, cleaner and to better perfection, to the great use of this land: his sonne Th. Iohnson is yet living, a speciall workeman, in the yere 1595. hee made 42. cast pieces of great ordinance of yron for the earle of Cumberland, Wemy Canons weying 6000. or 3. tunne the piece.

The 3. of June, the Obrine a lord in Ireland, and divers of the wilde Irish, submitted them to king Henry.

In July the said Obrine was created earle of Clawpiscarde.

Henry married lady Katherine Par.

The 12. of July, king Henry married lady Katherine Par, late wife to the L. Latimer and sister to the Marques of Northampton at Hampton court, and then was she proclaimed quene.

Great subsidie.

This yere in a parliament holden at Westminster a subsidie was granted to the king to be paid in thre yeres, every Englishman being worth in goods 20.s. and upward to 5.l. paid 4.d. of every pound, from 5.l. to 10.l. 8.d. from 10.l. to 20.l. 16.d. from 20.l. and upward of every pound 2.s. Strangers, as well denizens as other, being inhabitants, doubled this sum: and every stranger not being an inhabitant that was 16. yeres of age and upwards paid 4.d. of every pole. And for lands, fees, and annuities, every one bozne within the kings dominions paid 8.d. of the l. from 20.s. to 5.l. and from 5.l. to 10.l. 16.d. from 10.l. to 20.l. 2.s. and from 20.l. upwards 3.s. Strangers still doubled the sum. The cleargie granted a subsidie of 6.s. the pound, to be paid of their benefices, and perpetuities in thre yeres, and every priest having but an annual stipend, 6.s. 8.d. 10. as in the statute.

Going to Calis.  
Dart.

About the same time the king of England, and the emperoz, sent Garter, and Toysonodor kings at armes, to demand the performance of certain articles of the French k. which if he denied, they were commanded then to besiege him, but he would not suffer them to come within his lande, and so they returned. Wherefore the k. of Engl. caused the demands to be declared unto the French ambassadoz at Westminster. And in the month of July the k. sent over 6000. men, under the leading of sir John Wallope, accompanied with sir T. Seimer marshall, sir Robert Bowes treasurer, sir Richard Cromwell captaine of the horsemen, and sir George Carew his lieutenant. There were likewise sir T. Palmer, sir John Rainsfoorth, sir John Seint-Iohn, & sir John Gascoigne knights, that were captaines of the footemen: they were appointed to joine with the emperozs pinner, and so to make war into France: they departed from Calis the 22. of July. The 3. of August open war was proclaimed betwixt the emperoz and the k. of England on the one party, and the French king on the other party, as enemy mortall to them both, and to all other christian kings as he that had confedered himselfe with the Turke.

Open warre  
proclaimed.

The armie that was sent over under the leading of Sir John Wallope, passed forth from the marches of Calis, and keeping alongst betwixt the borders of the French and Burgontans pales, and condies, and toying with the emperozs forces, Spaniards, Wallons, and Dutch, came at length before Landarsey, a towne lately fortified by the French, within the borders of the emperozs dominions, to the which they laid strong siege. At length the emperoz, having dispatched his wars against the D. of Cleve, who had submitted himselfe



himselfe into him, came now to the siege of Landersey, with a mighty power of sundry nations, so that the towne was sore constrained, & in danger to haue been lost, if at that present the French king had not likewise with him an huge armie of French men, Swichars, Lantsquits, Italians, and other, came to the rescue, pitching downe his campe, making countenance as if hee ment presently to haue giuen battaile: and verilie it was thought that two such powers as were there at that time so nere together should neuer haue departed without battaile. The Emperour thinking surely to fight, raised his siege, and drew his people into the fieelde. The Frenchmen thereby espying their aduantage, put as well fresh men as viduals, and all kinde of munition necessarie into the towne, and in the meane while kept the Emperours men occupied with hotte skirmishes: but now after the towne was thus relieved, which thing the French king onely wished to accomplish, the next daie when the emperour was readie with his army inranged in battailes to haue fought with his aduersaries, the French king put his armie also in order, but hauing no minde to come forthward, he trised forth the daie, and in the night following secretly departed with as much haste as possible. When the next morning had discovered the French mens flight, it was no neede to bid diuers troupes of the Emperours armie to hie after them: but some made too much haste, for the French king suspecting what would insue, appointed his eldest sonne Henry the Dolphin, to remaine behinde with the reerward, accompanied with diuers noble captaines, which ordered their people in their retire with such warinesse, that such of the Emperours campe as aduentured ouer rashly, fell within danger of such ambashes as were by the waie laide in places of aduantage: and so diuers were taken, as sir George Carew, sir Thomas Palmer knight, porter of Calceis, Edward Bellengham and others. Nevertheless a great number of the French men were snapped by, slaine, and taken in no small numbers by their enemies that followed them. This was after Halowmtide, so that now by reason the winter was farre entered, the Emperour brake by his campe, and licensed the most part of the people to depart home.

In the meane space, to wit on the 28. of Iuly, Anthony Parson, Robert Test-  
wood, and Henry Filmer, were bzent at Windsor. And a great death of pesti-  
lence was at London, and therefore Michaellmas terme was adourned to  
Saint Albons.

Terme kept at  
S. Albons.

About Alhalowmtide, a road was made into Scotland, by the garrison there, A road made  
sir Ralph Euars with the men of Lindall and Kidsoale bzent in the middle into Scotland  
marches of Scotland, Thesford with 15. other townes, killed 18. Scots, and  
toke 300. prisoners, 1500. cattell, and 4000. sheepe: Brian Leychener bzent  
18. townes, killed 12. Scots, toke 200. prisoners, 600. cattell, 2000. sheepe,  
and 300. geldings. The west borderers with the helpe of the Scots of Lidsoale,  
bzent 21. townes, killed 8. Scots, toke 160. prisoners. 500. cattaille, 1000.  
sheepe, and 100. geldings, sum of the townes bzent, 55. Scots killed 38. pri-  
soners taken 560. cattaille taken 3500. geldings 800. sheepe 7000. and much  
household stuffe.

The

The 18. of December, the archbishop of Canturburies palace at Canturbury was bzent, and therein was bzent his brother in law, and other men.

L. Parre made  
earle of Essex.

The twenty foure of December, William Lord Parre brother to the queen, who had married the daughter and heire of Henry Boucher Earle of Essex, at Hampton court was created earle of Essex, and sir William Parre knight, brother to them both, was made Lord Parre of Boxton, and Chamberlayne to the Queene. And on Newe-yeres daie Sir Thomas Wriothesley, the Kinges secretarie, was made Lord Wriothesley of Titchfield.

1544  
Foure eclipses.

This yeere chanced foure eclipses, one of the Sunne the fouretenth of January, and thre of the Moone at sundrie times.

In the beginning of Lent, Lord Edward Seymer earle of Hertford, was made Lieutenant of the North, and sent thither with an armie.

Germaine  
Gardner and  
other executed.

The seauenth of March, Germaine Gardner, and Larke parson of Chelsea were executed at Tyborne, for denying the Kinges supremacie. With them was executed, for other offences, one Singleton. And shortly after, Ashbey was likewise executed for the supremacie.

The twelfth of March, Sir John Dudley Lord Lisle, Lord Admirall, with a great Raite, departed towarde Scotland.

House blowne  
up with gun-  
powder.

The fourth of Aprill a Gunpowder house, called the Blacke Swanne in East Smithfelde, was blowne vpp, and therein burned five men, a boie, and a woman.

Ann. reg. 36.

On Maie euen, dyed Lord Thomas Audley Lord Chancellour of England. After whome succeeded Lord Thomas Wriothesley.

An army sent  
into Scotland.

The third of May, sir John Dudley Viscount Lisle high Admirall of England, arrived with his flete of 200. saile in the Frith of Scotland, where hee landed diuers of his men, and toke there diuers vessels. The 4. of May he landed the residue of his men at Lieth, and from thence marched forward in three great battayles, whereof the sayde Lord Admirall ledde the Vawarde, the Earle of Shrewsburie the Rerewarde, and Edward Seymer Earle of Hertford Lieutenant Generall of the Battayles. Here they founde the Scottes to the number of six thousand horsemen, besides manie footemen ready to stop their passage, who at the first, made as they would haue set on the Vawarde, but after certaine shotte on both sides, they todaynelie, leauing their artillerie behinde them, fled towarde Edenborough, the foremost in fleeing was the cardinal of Saint Andrewes, the Earle of Huntley gouernor, Murrey and Bothwell, and then the Englishmen entered the towne of Lieth, where they found such riches, as they thought hadde not bene in ante Towne of Scotland. The next daie our armie went towarde Edenborough; and when they approached neere, the Proposse of the Towne with other profered to haue deliuered the same, vpon condition, that the people might departe with Bagge and Baggage, and the Towne to bee safe from fire. Whereunto our Lieutenant answered, that hee was sent thither to take vengeance vpon them for their detestable falsehood, and that vnlesse they would yeelde vpp the towne simple without condition, and cause man, woman, and child to depart into the fields, submitting them to his pleasure, hee would put them to the sword, and their

Lieth taken and  
spoiled.

Towne

Towne to the fire. The Provost answered, that it were better for them to stand to their defence, and so departed, and forthwith the Lord Lieutenant caused the Toward to march towards the towne, which they did so couragiously with helpe of the English gunners, that then kept the Scots from their ordnance, and so entred Caniegate, and there slew a great number of the Scots, and set fire on the Towne, which continued three dayes after burning. Shortly after came to the Lord Lieutenant by land, William Lord Eurie warden of the East March of England, and governor of Barwicke, with his sonne sir Ralph Eurie, and joined themselves with the armie thus lying in Leth, where after their comming they did such exploits, in riding and wasting the Countrey, that within seven miles euerie wate of Edenborough, they left few places, either pile, village, or house unbrent. And besides this, they brought great numbers of cattaille daylie into the armie, and not without much good suffice which the inhabitants of Edenborough had for safety of the same conuerted out of the Towne.

Edenborough  
brent.

Lord Eurie.

The names of knights made at Leth, by the earle of Hertford generall, on the 11. of May: The lord Clinton, the lord Coniers, sir William Wroughton, sir T. Holcroft, sir Edward Dorell, sir John Luterell, sir I. Ienins, sir T. Waterton, sir Charles Howard, sir George Blunt, sir Peter Mewtas, sir Ed. Warner, sir Ralph Bulmer, sir Hugh Cholmeley, sir T. Lee, *alias* doctor Lee, sir Richard Legh, Sir Peter Legh, sir John Legh of Both, sir Laurence Smith, sir Wil. Vauesour, sir Richard Shirborne, sir Ro. Stapleton, sir T. Holt, sir W. Deuenporte, sir Ralph Leicester, sir Humfrey Bradborne, sir T. Maluerie, sir Frauncis Horhorne, sir I. Masly, sir Leonard Beckwith, sir T. Cokayn, sir Peter Freshwell, sir Richard Egerton, sir Anthony Neuill, sir I. Neuill, sir W. Radcliffe, sir George Bowes, sir Brian Brereton, sir William Brereton, sir Roger Brereton, sir E. Waren, sir Bryan Leyton, sir Robert Worfeley, sir Thomas Talbot, sir Hugh Calueley, sir Thomas Clerc, Sir Richard Holland, sir T. Venobles, sir John Constable, sir Edmonde Trafford, Sir John Aharton, sir Richard Cholmeley, sir Philip Egerton, Sir Hugh Willoughs by, Sir Robert Constable, sir W. Woodhouse, Sir Edmond Sauage, Sir Thomas Gerard.

Earle of Hert-  
ford made  
knights at  
Leth.

The 13. of May the Englishmen brake down the ptre of the hauen at Leth, and brent euery sticke of it. This done, and hauing shipped their great artillery, and picked forth all such Scottish ships as were meet to serue, they tooke vpon them to returne home by land. Amongst other ships, they tooke out of Leth hauen, there were two of notable fairenes, the one called the Salamaunder, the other the Unicoon; the rest of the Scottish shippes beeing taken awaie together with their owne ships, were for the most part pestered with the spoile and bottles of the souldiers and mariners.

The sixteenth of May the armie and flete departed from Leth, both in one houre, the towne being set on fire, and burned to the ground. The english army encamped that night at a place called Soton, scauen miles from Leth, where they brent the castle, and spoiled the grounds about it. The same date was Haddington brent, with an house of Bunnies, and an house of Friers. The next night they encamped beside Dunbar, and in the morning brent the Towne,

Leth burned.

Haddington  
brent.  
Dunbar brent.

Towne, and marched forward, and on the eighteenth daie of May they entered into Berwikke, so ending their boiage.

About the same time the Earle of Lenox fledde out of Scotlande into the realme of England, where he was right gladlie receiued by king Henry, and shortly after he obtained in marriage the ladye Mary Dowglas, neere to King Henry, and returned with a competent crewe of English men, but finding no such friendship amongst his countymen as he looked for, he returned without atchieuing the enterprize which he had taken in hand.

*Bafe money coined.*

In this meane space, to wit, on the 16. of May, proclamation was made for the enhaunsing of gold to 48.s. and silver to foure shillings the ounce. Also the king caused to bee coined base moneyes in great abundance, which was since that time, to wit, in the first yeere of King Edward the first, called downe, from twelue pence to nine pence, from nine pence to five pence: and in the seconde yeere of Quene Elizabeth called in to hir maiesties mints, and there refined.

*Procession in English.*

In the moneth of Iune, the Letanie or Procession was set forth in English, with commandement by the king to be generallie used in euery parish Church.

*An armie into France.*

The king tooke order for the leuying of a mightie Armie to passe ouer into France, according to the appointmēte made with his confederate friende the Emperour, against the French king. There were therefore appointed thre Battailles: The Forwarde under the leading of the Duke of Suffolke: the Battaille vnder the Duke of Suffolke, which also was counted the Kings Battaille, because hee minded to bee present with the same in person, and the Rerewarde was ledde by the Lord Russell, Lord Priuie Seale. Those of the Forwarde vnder the Duke of Suffolke, were apparelled in blew Coates garded with redde, and had cappes and hosen after the same sute, partie blew, and partie redde. The Battaille vnder the Duke of Suffolke in Coates, Cappes, and hosen in like maner, but the colours blew and yealow. The Duke of Suffolke, and the lord priuie Seale, accompanied with diuers other noble men, as the Earle of Surrey Marshall of the field, the Earle of Orford, the Lord Grey of Wilton Lieutenant of Hains, the Lord Ferrers of Chartley, and Sir Richard Deuereux his sonne and heire, they brought with them a great number of Welshmen, Sir Thomas Cheynce Lord Warden of the Portes, the lord Mountioy, Sir Francis Bryan knight, Sir Thomas Poynings Captaine of Gloucestre, and diuers other, passed ouer to Calais about Whitsonde, and from thence forward to France, left Bo-loigne on their right hande, and keeping forward towarde Puterell, joined with an Armie which the Emperour had raised for that purpose, vnder the leading of the Countie of Buren, Admirall of the lowe Countreys, and so these Armies being vnited in one, came before Puterell, and there laide Siege to the Towne, being well manned, and furnished with all thinges necessarie for defence, as well in munition as in victuall, the chiefe Captaine of which Towne, was Mounſire de Bitz, one of the Marshalles of France.



The Duke of Suffolke with the kings armie passed ouer, accompanied with the Earle of Arundell marshall of the field, the Lord Seint Iohn, and the Bishoppe of Winchester, Sir Iohn Gage, comptroller of the kings house, Sir Anthonie Browne, Master of the kings horse, with diuers other Captaines, the which on the nineteenth of Iuly came before Boloigne, and encamped on the eastside of the same Towne, aloft vpon the hill, and after remoued into a valley, where after many sharpe skirmishes, they first entered the base Towne, being lesse and forsaken by the inhabitants, which hauing set fire on their fishing nets, and other such baggage, vnder couert of the smoake, got them vp into the high Towne, before the Englishmen coulde espie them.

After this the old man, a towler standing without the towne for a direction to them that were to enter the hauen, and now being kept by 16. souldiers, was yeldd by by them.

The Frenchmen within the towne, being dispoyled of these two places, yet spared not to shoote off from their walls and bulwarks, doing what they could, and namely from the Castle, and græne bulwarke, they did much hurt to the Englishmen with their shotte.

The 14. of Iuly B. Henry in person, accompanied with diuers noble men, passed the Seas from Douer to Caleis, and on the 26. of Iuly encamped before Boloigne on the north-side, within lesse then three quarters of a mile of the Towne, where he remained till the Towne was surrendered into his hands: the Kings lierie was red garded with yealowe. Besides the trenches which were cast and brought in manner rounde about the Towne, there was a mount raised vpon the east side, and diuers pieces of artillerie planted alofte the same, the which together with the mortar pieces, soe annoyed them within, battered downe the Stæple of our Ladie church. To conclude, the batterie was made in most forceable wise in three seuerall places, and the walls, towlers, and castle were undermined, and the towne within so beaten with shotte out of the campe, and from the mount and trench, by the mortar pieces, that there were verie few houses left whole therein. The towne thus standing in great distresse, there were 200. Frenchmen and Italians, which enterpsied vnder the conduct of Ioucurtio to enter the Towne in covert of the night, which exploit they so warily atchieued, that by meanes of a priell that coulde speake the English tong, they passed by the scowzers, and through the watch, so as the most part of them were got ouer the trenches, ere it was knowne what they were: to the number of an hundred and twentie of them got into the towne, but the residue being intercepted, were either taken or slaine. At length when a piece of the castle was blottedt bype, and the breaches made as was thought reasonable, the assault was giuen by the admirall lord Dudley that was come thither by the sea, which he had scoured, after his retorne out of Scotland. This assault was courageously giuen, and also manfully defended, so that when the assailants had perceiued in what estate the breach stood, and what provision they within had made for defence of their towne, which was great, they were called backe, and retired, but not without

Duke of Suff.  
folke with a pos-  
ter lay before  
Boloigne.

King Henry  
went to Bo-  
loigne.

Boloigne as-  
saulted.

lost.

Boloigne yeeld-  
ed to K. Henry.

losse on both sides, especially of them within: for during the assault, the great artillerie did beate still vpon them that presented themselves at the breaches to repulse the assailants, and so diuers of their valiant captaynes and brave souldiers were slaine at this assault: shortly after, the captaynes within the towne, doubting to be eassones assaulted, and perceiuing themselves in extreme danger to lose the towne by force, if they provided not the sooner, by rendring it, to saue themselves: they sent forth two of their chiefe captaynes, Mounsier Semblemount, and Mounsier de Veruine, gouernoꝝ of the towne, his retinue was contented to deliuer the towne to his grace, with condition that they might passe with bag and baggage, which request the king granted, and so the next day the duke of Suffolke rode into Boloigne, vnto whom, as vnto the king the keies of the towne were deliuered, and in the afternoone departed all the French men. The number of all the men of war that were strong, and able to serue were of horse-men 67. of fote-men 1563. of hurt men 87. of women and children 1927. beside a great number of aged and sicke persons, not able to depart with the rest.

K. Henry entred  
Boloigne.

The 25. of September, the king hauing the sword bozne before him by the lord Marquesse Dorset, like a conqueror rode into Boloigne, and the trumpeters on the wals sounding. In the entring, there met him the duke of Suffolke, and deliuered vnto him the keies of the towne, and so he rode forth to his lodging that was prepared on the south side of the towne, two daies after the king rode about the towne, within the wals, and appointed that our Ladye church of Boloigne should be taken downe, and in place thereof a mount to bee made, for strengthening of the towne: finally, after that hee had set things in order for the safe keeping of the town, he appointed sir Iohn Dudley, Lord Lisle, high admirall of the seas, to be his deputy of the same towne, and then taking the seas, he returned into England, landing at Dover on the first of October.

The 9. of October in the night, the French men came vnatwares vpon the Englishmen in base Boloigne, and slewe of them a great number: howbeit, they were shortly after chased from thence, and the base towne holden after in good quiet.

Prisles taken.

This yere was taken by the kings shippes of the West countrey, and of the English coast the number of 300. French shippes and more, so that the Grey Friers Church in London was laide full of wine, the Austin Friers and Blacke Friers, were laid full of hearing, and other fish that was taken going into France.

A beneuolence  
demanded.

1545

The king demanded a beneuolence of all his subiects, Spiritual and Temporal, towards his wars in France and Scotland.

And the twelfth of January the lord Chancelor, the duke of Suffolke, and other of the Kings Councell began to sit at Baynards Castle, where they first called before them the Mayor and Aldermen, &c. And because Richard Read Alderman would not agree to pay as they set him, he was committed vpon a great paine to serue the king in his wars of Scotland, who departed from London the thre and twentieth of January, where he was taken prisoner.

ner, &c. Also sir William Roche Alderman, for words of displeasure taken by the kings counsell, was by them sent to the Fleet, where he remained till Passion Sunday.

Sir William Roche sent to the Fleet.

The five and twentieth of Januarie, there camped on the West side of Boloigne beyonde the haueu, an army of French to the number of foureteene thousand, where they lay ten daies, and the first of February, were put to flight, by the earle of Hertford, and sir John Dudley lord Admirall then being deputie of Boloigne.

The 13. of February, a priest was set on the pillorie in Cheape, and burnt in both cheekes with the letters F. and A. and a paper on his head, wherein was writtten For false accusing, which iudgement was giuen by the Lorde Chancelor in the Star Chamber, a notable example of Justice: great cause haue I to wish the like Justice had been ministred vnto him, that after he had defrauded me of my worldly goods, sought to haue depriued me of my life, by likewise accusing me of many articles (seauen score and odd) suborned witness (detected of perjury, burnt in the hand for felony, and such like) which all could proue neuer one article against me, befoze the Archbishop of Canterbury, and other her maiesties high commissioners, (as appeareth in their register) by whom I was answered, there was no remedie against the accuser, by meane of a statute late made, &c. Whereupon the false accuser of his master and eldest brother, sweareth to some, he neuer did any such acte: to other, that all those articles were true, and also largely (to the like effect) libelleth against me.

False accuser set on the pillorie, and marked in the face, as he and other the like haue well deserved.

In the beginning of March, a road was made into Scotland toward Gedwoth, by the Englishmen, who at the first got great praise, but they were so greedy, and went so farre, that a great army of Scots beset them with three battels, where the Englishmen for the most part were slaine and taken at Baner Hotwaghe, among whom sir Ralph Eure lord Eure, and warden of the Cast Marches was slaine, and R Read Alderman of London, with other taken prisoners by the Scots. T. Wriothesley L. chancelor made knight of the garter.

Alderman of London taken prisoner.

Trinitie terme was adioyned because of the wars.

About the 25. of June was a great tempest of winde in Darbithire, where through trees were ouer-turned, and diuers Churches, chappels, and houses, were vncouered. Also in Lancashire, there fell hailestones as big as mens fists, which had diuers prints in them, some like mens faces, some like Gun holes, &c.

An. reg. 37.

Hailestones figured like mens heads.

The nineteenth of July, the French kings nauie comming out of Heluauen, and Depe, arriued on the coast of England in Sussex, afore bright Hamstead, where they set certaine of their souldiers aland to burne: but the Beacons were fired, and the men came downe so thicke, that the Frenchmen fled and did little hurt.

Frenchmen arriued in Sussex.

The 19. of July, by misfortune of shooting a Gun in one of the Hedgehogs a ship, afore Westmister, a firken of gun-powder fired and slew seuen men, and the eighth leaped into the Thames, and was drowned.

Shen burnt in the hedgehog.

The

Mary Rose  
was drowned.

The 20. of July the king being at Portsmouth, a goodly shippe of England, called the Mary Rose, with sir George Carrow the capitaine, and manie other gentlemen were drowned in the midst of the haven, by great negligence.

Frenchmen  
landed in the  
Ile of Wight.

The 21. of July, the French galleies and nauy came afoze Portsmouth Haven, and landed certaine of their army in the Ile of Wight, at Saint Helens Point, and there burned and encamped about 2000. men: but they were soon daies after, the whole fleet removed from the Wight to a place in Sussex, called Newhaven, foure miles from Lewes, and there landed manie capitaines and souldiers, who by the valiantnes of the gentlemen and yeomen of Sussex, were slaine and drowned in the Haven a great number of them, and the rest hardly recovered their ships and galleies.

Frenchmen  
landed at  
Newhaven in  
Sussex.

In the moneth of August, deceased at Gullforde Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolke, and lord great master of the kings householde, who was honorable buried at Windsor.

Earle of Here-  
ford went into  
Scotland.

In August the earle of Hereford was sent into Scotland, with an army of 12000. men, where hee destroyed diuers townes, and greatly endamaged the Scots.

Lord Admirall  
brent Creppott

The 9. of September sir Iohn Dudley, L. Lisle, L. admirall of England, landed with 6000. men at Treppott in Normandy, and there bent the towne and abbey with other houses about it, and 30. ships with a barke that lay in the haven, with losse of 14. Englishmen, and so returned.

Chautries, col-  
ledges, & hospi-  
tals, giuen unto  
the king.

The 24. of November began a parliament, wherein was granted to the K. a subsidy of 2.s. 8.d. of the pound in goods, and 4. s. of the pound in lands. Also all collicoges, chauuntries, and hospitals, were committed to the K. order, to alter and transpore, which he promised to do to the glory of god and the common profit of the realme.

E. Hall.  
H. Henry his  
Oration.

The 24. of December the Parliament was proroged, on the which date the K. comming into the house to giue his roial assent vnto such acts as were passed, the speaker made vnto him an eloquent oration: to the which, although the custome hath alwaies bin that the Lord chancelor should make the answer, it pleased the K. at this present to make the answer himselfe, which hee uttered as here followeth, set downe by Edward Hall.

Although my chancelor for the time being, hath before this time used verie eloquentlie and substantiallie to make answer to such Orations, as hath bin set forth in this high Court of Parliament, yet is hee not so able to open and set forth my minde and meaning, and the secrets of my heart in so plaine and ample maner, as I my selfe am, and can do: wherefore I taking vpon me to answer your eloquent oration. M. speaker, say that where you in the name of our welbeloued commons, haue both praised and extolled mee, for the notable qualities that you haue conceived to bee in mee, I most heartily thanke you all, that you haue put me in remembrance of my duetie, which is to indoe not my selfe to obtain and get such excellent qualities and necessary vertues as a prince or gouernor ought to haue, of which gifts I recognise my selfe both barren and bare: but of such small qualities as God hath indued me withall, I

remember



render to his goodnes my most humble thankes, intending with all my wit & diligence to get and acquite to me such notable vertues and princely qualittes as you haue alleadged to be coꝛpozated in my person: these thankes for your louing admonition and good counsell first remembꝛed, I esteeme thanke you againe, because that you, considering our great charge, not for our pleasure, but for your defence, not for our gaine, but to our great cosse, which wee haue lately sustained, as well in defence of our and your enemies, as for the conquest of that ffortresse, which was to this Realme most displeasante, and shall hereafter by Gods Grace bee to our Nation moste profitable and pleasaunte, haue freelite of your owne minds granted to vs a certaine subsidie, here in an act specified, which verily we take in good part, regarding more your kindnes, than the profite thereof, as hee that sets more by your louing heartes, than by your substance. Besides this heartie kindnes, I cannot alittle reioyce when I consider the perfitt trust and confidence, which you haue put in mee, as men hauing vndoubted hope, and vnfaigned beleefe in my good doings and iust proceedings for you, without my desire or request haue committed to mine order & disposition, all chantries, colledges, hospitals, & other places specified in a certaine act, firmly trusting that I will order them to the glory of god, and the profit of the common wealth: surely if I contrary to your expectation should suffer the Ministers of the Church to decaye, or learning, which is so great a lewell to be minished, or poore and miserable to bee vnrelieued, you might saie, that I, beeing put in so speciall a trust, as I am in this case, were no trustie friend to you, nor charitable to mine owne churche, neither a louer of the publicke wealth, nor yet one that feared God, to whom account must be rendꝛed of al our doings. Doubt not I pray you, but your expectation shal be serued more godly and godly than ye will wish or desire, as hereafter ye shal plainly perceiue. Nowe sithence I finde such kindnes on your part towards me, I cannot chuse but loue and fauour you, affirming, that no Prince in the worlde more fauoreth his subiects, than I doe you, nor no subiects or commons more loued and obeyed their soueraign Lord than I perceiue you do me, for whose defence my treasure shall not be hidde, nor if necessitie require, my person shall not be vnaduentured: yet although I wish you, and you wish me to be in this perfitt loue and concord, this friendly amitie cannot continue except both you my lords temporal, and my lords spirituall, and you my louing subiects studie and take paine to amend one thing which surely is amisse, and farre out of order, to the which I most heartilie require you, which is. That Charitie and concord be not among you, but discord and dissention beareth rule in euery place: Saint Paul saith to the Corinthians the 13. Chapter, Charity is gentle, charity is not enuious, charity is not proud, and so forth in the same chapter. Behold then what loue and charity is amongst you, when the one calleth an other heretike, and anabaptist, and hee calleth him againe Papist, hypocrite, and Pharisey: bee these tokens of charity amongst your selues? No, no, I assure you that this lacke of Charity amongst your selues will bee the hinderaunce and allwaing of the feruent loue betwene vs, as I said before, except this wounde be salued and cleerlie made whole, I must needes iudge the fault and occasion

of this discord to be partlie by negligence of you the fathers and preachers of the spirituality: for if I know a man which liueth in adultery, I must iudge him lecherous, and a carnall person: if I see a man boast and bragge himselfe, I can not but deeme him a proud man. I heare daily that you of the cleargie preach one against another, teach one contrary to another, enuying one against another, without charity or discretio: some be too stiffe in their old *Mumfimus*, other be too busy and curions in their new *Sumpfimus*: thus all men almost be in barysty and discord, and few or none preach truly and sincerely the word of God, according as they ought to doe. Shall I iudge you charitable persons doing thus? No, no, I cannot so do: alas how can the poore soules lue in concord, when you preachers so to amongst them in your sermons debate and discord? of you they looke for light, and you bying them into darknes. Amend these crimes I exhort you, and set forth Gods word, both by true preaching and good example giuing, or els I, whome God hath appointed his vicar and high minister here, will see these diuisions extirpate, and these enoynties corrected, according to my very duty, or els I am an vnprofitable seruant, and vntrue officer. Although I saie the spirituall men be in some fault that charity is not kept amongst you, yet you of the tempozalltie bee not cleere and vnspotted of malice and enuie, for you raise on bishops, speake slanderouslie of priests, and rebuke and taunt preachers, both contrarie to god order, and christian fraternity: if you knowe surely that a Bp. or preacher, preacheth or teacheth peruers doctrine, come and declare to some of our counsell or to vs, to whom is committed by god the high authoritie to reforme and order such causes and behauiours, & be not iudges your selues of your owne fantastical opinions and vaine expositions, for in such high causes you may lightly erre: and although you be permitted to read holy scriptures, and to haue the word of god in your mother tong, you must vnderstand it is licenced you so to do, only to inform your consciences, and to instruct your childezen and familie, and not to dispute and make Scripture a railing and a taunting stocke, against priests and preachers, as manie light persons do. I am verie sozie to knowe and heare howe vnreuentlie that most precious treasure the worde of God is disputed, rymed, sung, and sangeled in euerie Alehouse and Tauerne, contrary to the true meaning and doctrine of the same: and yet I am euen as much sozie that the readers of the same, followe it in dooing so faintly and coldelic: for of this I am sure, that charitie was neuer so faint amongst you, and vertuous and godlie liuing was neuer lesse bled, nor God himselfe amongst christians was neuer lesse reuerenced, honored, or serued: therefore, as I saie before, bee in charity one with another, like brother and brother: loue, dread and serue god, to the which I as your supreme head and soveraigne Lord exhort and require you: and then I doubt not, but that loue and league, that I spake of in the beginning, shall neuer bee dissolved or broke betwene vs. And to the making of lawes which we haue now made and concluded, I exhort you the makers to be as diligent in putting them in execution, as you were in making and furthering of the same, or else your labor shall be vaine, & your common wealth nothing releued. Now to your petition, concerning our tollall assent, to be giuen to such actes as haue passed both the houses,

they

They shall be read openly, that ye may heare them. And so beeing read his grace assented, and so rose and departed.

Many proper feates of armes were exploited and done in this meane while betwixt the English and the French about Boloigne.

On the morrowe after the feast of the Epiphantie, there came a conuoie of victualles towards the French Fort builded besides Boloigne, garded with three or foure thousande Rauncequents, vnder their Coronell, the Reingraue and certaine Frenchmen. The earle of Surrey then lieutenant of Boloigne advertised thereof, made out with such power as hee might conueniently spare out of Boloigne, and the olde man, to cut off those victualles; but coming to encounter with the enemies at S. Estiennes he was put to flight, Sir Edward Poyninges captain of a band called the B. gard of Boloigne was slain in that conflict, with sixtene or sirtene other Captaines, besides officers and common souldiers.

1546  
Englishmen  
put to flight by  
the Reingraue.

In the latter end of March, the stewes on the banks side of the Thamis, in Southwarke was put downe, by the B. commandement, which was proclaimed by sound of trumpet no more to bee privileged or bled as a common bordell, but the inhabitantes of those houses, to keepe good and honest rule, as in all other places of the realme.

The stewes put  
downe.

The 27. of Aprill, being Tuesday in Easter weeke, W. Foxley potmaker for the mint in the tower of London, fell asleep, and so continued sleeping and could not be wakened with picking, cramping, or other wise burning whatsoeuer, till the first day of the next terme, which was full 14. daies, and 15. nights, for that Easter terme beginneth not afore 17. daies after Easter. The cause of his thus sleeping could not be knowne, though the same were diligently searched for by the kings physicians and other learned men, yea the king himselfe examined the said W. Foxley, who was in all points found at his wakening to be as if he had slept but one night, and liued 41. yere after, to wit, till the yere of Christ 1587.

Ann. reg. 38.  
W. Foxley  
slept more then  
14. daies, and  
as many nights  
without was-  
king.

The 18. of May, there were 4. of the B. ships, and 4. pinnaces abroad on the seas afore the haven of Hamble tow, and there came an 8. of the French galleies to set vpon them, there was great shooting betwixen them, but at the last one of the galleies was taken, in the which were 280. souldiers, and 140. rowers. The rest of their galleies packed away. Whereouer while the campe lay thus at Hamble tow, it chanced y one day a mutenie rose among the Lanquenets against their captaine, so that they got themselves into order of battell, seised vpon the great artillery, and shewed countenance, as if they would haue set vpon the residue of the whole campe. Hereupon every man was commanded to repaire to his ensign, and the Spaniards came and ioined themselves with the Englishmen ready to take such part as they did. At length by the diligence of the ch. estains, and good countenance of the English souldiers & Spaniards, the tumult was staied, and 6. of the principall beginners therof were hanged.

A French gal-  
ley taken.

The 21. of May, the French army came and encamped beyond Boloign at the church on the hill, & the morrowe after the earle of Hertford marched with his power to a place within 2. miles of them, and certain horsemen & footmen

Itt 2.

went

went forth and skirmished with them, and in the mean time the artillery ceased not to shoot off, as well from the French Campe, as from Boloigne, and the Old-man. This day were slain 14. Frenchmen, and 2. taken prisoners: and 3. of the English part were taken, and so the earle of Hertforde returned to his camp, and left the Lanquents upon the hill, encamped before the enemies, not 2. miles distant from them, in which place a fort was begun to be raised, which was called the fort of Boloigne beage.

The 23. of May, the soldiers of Boloign and the Lanquents skirmished with the Frenchmen, and slew and took of them about the number of 7. score, of the which there were 40. of them in velvet coats, and some with chains.

In this meane while, by the motion of diuers Princes, a meeting was had of diuers Commissioners appointed to treat of some peace, to bee concluded betwixt the two kings of England and France, herupon there came to Gwisnes for the K. of Englande, the earle of Hertforde, the bishop of Winchester, Sir Iohn Dudley viscount Lisle, baron of Paupas, and high admiral of Englande, Sir William Paget the kings Secretarie, and Doctor Nicholas Wotton Deane of Canterburie: For the French king there came to Arde, Mounfier Claude Danebaulte Admirall of France, the Byschoppe of Curcor, Mounfier Reymond chiefe president of Roane, the Secretarie Boucherell. These mette diuers times betwixt Arde and Gwisnes. After long debating, on the seventh of June a peace was concluded, which peace was with heraultes and sound of trumpets, proclaimed at London on Whitsonday, being the 13. of Iune, and the same daie was a generall Procession, before the which was borne all the richest Silver crosses in London, to wit, of euery church one, then proceeded all the parish clearkes, condocts, quirksters, and priests in London, with the Maire of Pauls, all of them in their richest coapes, singing: Then the companies of the Citie in their best liueries. The Loyde Maior, the Aldermen and Sheriffs in scarlet, &c. All these went from Pauls church through Cheape, and Cornhill vp to Leaden hall, and so back again to Pauls. And this was the last shew of the rich crosses and coapes in London: for shortly after they, with other their church plate were called into the kings treasury and wardrobe. And the same daie was the same Peace likewise proclaimed in the Citie of Paris, in Roan, & other places: the first article of which peace was, that the French king paying to the K. of England 800000. crownes, within the terme of 8. yeres, he should haue Boloign again to him restored, which in the mean time should remain in the hands and possession of the king of England.

Moreouer for the full establishing of the peace, and for to receiue the French K.oth, the viscount Lisle A. admirall, with the B. of Durham, and diuers other lords and gentlemen to the number of more than 100. all in velvet coates and chaines of gold, with 45. yeomen seemely appointed, went into France from Boloign, the 10. of Iuly, & came to Bellune, a town beyond Paris, where the French K. lay: by whome, and the Dolphin his son, they were royally receiued, feasted & banqueted: and hauing done that for the which they came, the said lord admirall Dudley the 1. of August took his leaue of the French K. who rewarded him with a cupbowde of plate of gold, valued at 1500. pound. The Lords

Peace proclaimed,  
and generall  
procession.



also and gentlemen had chaines of gold giuen to them, and yeomen had 1200. crownes bestowed amongst them, and so they returned into England.

The 16. of July were burned in Smithfield for the sacrament Anne Akew alias Keime, Io. Lassels, Nicholas Oorden, priest, Io. Adlam tailor, and Doctor Shaxton sometime bishop of Salisbury preached at the same fire, and there re-  
canted, perswading them to do the like, but they would not.

Anne Akew &  
other burnt.

The 21. of August came into England Claude de Honnebald high admirall of France, who brought with him the sacre of Diep, and 12. galleies, hee landed at the tower Wharffe, where he was honorably receiued, and brought to the Bishop of Londons palace, where he lodged two nightes, and then rode to Hampton court where the king lay. By the way prince Edward receiued him with a company of 500. coates of beluet, with one piece of cloth of golde, and halfe the coat embroidered with gold: there was in all to the number of 800. horses. And so the French admtrall came to the court, giuing the prince the upper hand as they rode; and at the entrie gate of the court, the L. chancelor and al the L. counsell receiued him, and brought him to his lodging.

Admirall of  
France came to  
London

On Bartholomew day the king admitted him to his presence, welcommed him, and in great triumph went to the chappell, where the L. receiued his oath, to performe the articles of the league. I omit to speake of huntinges and banquettings, which was wonderfull. But on the 27. of August, he being rewarded with a cupbord of plate to the value of 1200. l. hee returned to London, and so to his galleies, and departed homeward: besides the L. gift, he had giuen to him by the city of London two flagons gilt, and two other parcell gilt, valued at 136. l. besides wine, wax, &c.

D. of Rosfolke  
& earle of Surrey sent to the  
Tower.

The 12. of December Th. D. of Rosfolke, and Henry Earle of Surrey his son and heire upon certain surmises of treason, were committed to the tower of London, the one by water, the other by land, that the one knew not of the others apprehension.

The 3. day of January, the late dissolved church of the grey friers in London was opened, and masse sung there; and that day preached at Pauls crosse the bishop of Rochester, who declared the kings gift to the city of London, for the relieuing of the Poore people, which gift was by Patent vnder his great seale, S. Bartholomewes Spittle in Smithfield, latelic valued at 305 pounde 6. shillings and 7. pence, and surrendered to the king, the church of the said grey friers, valued at 32. pounde, 19. s. and seauen pence, and surrendered, and two parish Churches, the one of S. Nicholas in the Shambles, the other Saint Ewine in Newgate Market at Martiske lane end, all to bee made one parish, in the said church of the Grey friers: and in landes hee gaue for the maintenance of the same church, with diuine seruice, reparat[i]on, &c. 500. markes by yere for euer, and this church to be named Christs church, founded by king Henry the eight.

H. his gift to  
the city of London.

The thirteenth date of Januarie, the king then lying dangerously sick, the Earle of Surrey was arraigned in the Gaile hall of London, before the lord Mayor, the lord chancelor, and other lords and iudges being there in commission; some thinges hee flatly denied, weakening the credit of his accusers, by

1547  
Earle of Surrey  
arraigned &  
beheaded.

certaine circumstances, other hee excused with interpretations of his meanings to proue the same to be far other wise than was alleadged against him: the speciallest matter, therewith he was charged, was, for bearing certaine armes that were said belonged to the king and prince: the bearing whereof he iustified, that as he toke it, he might beare them, as belonging to his ancestors, and withall affirmed that he had the opinion of the heraults therein, and so to his indictment he pleaded, not guilty. And for that he was no lord of the parliament, he was enforced to stand to the triall of a common inquest of his countrey, which found him guiltie, and thereupon he had iudgement of death: and shortly after, to wit, on the 19. of January he was beheaded on the tower hill.

Tombe for king  
Henry the 8.  
made by cardinal  
Wolsey.

The king lying dangerously sicke (as yee haue heard) and in great perill of death, made his last will and testament, dated the thirtieth daie of December, the 38. yere of his raigne, &c. Wherein, amongst other things, he appointed his body to be buried in his colledge, or free chappell at Windsoze, in an honourable tombe prepared, and at that time almost finished for that purpose, which tombe I haue seene, with this inscription cast in the grates or inclosure thereof (being copper) *Henricus octauus rex Anglie, Francia, dominus Hibernie, fidei defensor*: he appointed the tombes of king Henry the first, and of Edward the fourth to be more princely made in the same places they then stode: one thousand markes to be giuen in almes to the most needy, in as short time as may be after his decease, and to twelue more knights, to each of them 12. pence the day for euer, and euery yere to each of them a long gowne of white cloth, with the garter embzodered vpon the breast, with a shield and crosse of S. George, and a mantle of red cloth, &c. He appointed his first heire to the crowne to be prince Edward: the second, lady Mary daughter to Maene Katherine: and the third to be the lady Elizabeth, by Maene Anne Bolcine. More, he toke order, that during the minoritye of his sonne prince Edward, his executors should be counsellors and ayders to him in all things, as well concerning priuate as publike affaires, they were in number sixtene, whose names insue as followeth:

Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury.

Thomas Wriothesley lord chancelor.

Sir William Pawlet knight of the order, lord Seint-Iohn, and great master of the household.

Sir Iohn Russell knight of the order, lord ppyup seale.

Sir Edward Seimor knight of the order, earle of Hertford, great chamberlaine.

Sir Iohn Dudley knight of the order, viscount Lisley, baron of Salpas, high admirall of England.

Cuthbert Tunstall bishop of Durham.

Sir Anthony Browne knight of the order, and master of the horse.

Sir William Paget knight of the order.

Sir William Herbert knight.

Sir Edward Mountacute knight, chiefe iustice of the common pleas.

St

Sir Thomas Bromely knight, one of the iustices of the kings bench.

Sir Anthony Denny knight.

Sir Edward North knight, chancelor of the Augmentations.

Sir Edward Wotton knight, treasurer of Calais.

Dona; Wotton deane of Canterbury and of Poike.

And furthermore, for the speciall trust and confidence which the king had in the Earle of Arundell, and the Earle of Essex that then were, Sir Thomas Cheyny knight treasurer of household, Sir John Gage knight controller of household, Sir Anthony Winkefield knight vicechamberlaine, Sir William Peter knight, one of the principall secretaries, Sir Richard Rich knight, Sir John Baker knight, Sir Ralph Sadler knight, Sir Thomas Seimor knight, Sir Richard Southwell knight, and Sir Edmond Pechem knight: he appointed that they, and every of them should be of counsell, for the ayding and assisting of the forenamed counsellors and executors, &c. He deceased at Westminster on the eight and twentieth day of January, being friday, in the yere of Christ 1547. beginning the yere at Christmas, but after the account of the church of England, in anno 1546. when he had reigned seven and thirtie yeres, nine moneths, and odde daies, and was buried at Windsor with great solemnitie.

The last of January being munday Prince Edward was proclaimed king, <sup>Biafe San.</sup> by the name of Edward the first, and the same date he came from Cnauilde to the Tower of London.

## Edward the sixt.



Edward the first borne at Hampton court (by the decease of H. Henry his father) began his raigne the 28. of January, and was proclaimed K. of England, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, and of the churches of England and also of Ireland the supreme head immediately in earth vnder God, &c. on the 31. of last day of January, in the yere of Christ after the Church of England 1546. but after the account of them that begin the yere at Christmas 1547. being then of the age of nine yeres. And the same day in the afternone the saide young king came to the tower of London from Hertford, and rode into the City at Aldgate, and so along the wall by the crossed Friers to the Tower hill, & entered at the red bulwarke, where he was receiued by Sir John Gage constable of the tower, and the lieutenant on horseback. The Earle of Hertford riding before the king, and Sir Anthony Browne riding after him: and on the bridge next the warde gate, the archbishop of Canterbury, the lord Chancellor, with other great lords of the Councell receiued him, and so brought him to his chamber of presence, where they were sworn to his maiesty.

An. reg. 1.

Ro. Gicena.

Earle of Hert-  
ford made lord  
protector.

The first of February, the earle of Hertford was nominate, elected and chosen, by al the executors, to be protector and chiefe gouernor of the kings person, until he came to his lawfull age of 18.yeres, and so was he proclaimed.

king Edward  
made knight.  
Lord Protector of  
London made  
knight

The first daie of February the earle of Hertford lord protector in the tower of London, endued King Edward with the order of knighthood: and then immediately the king standing by, under the cloth of estate, Henry Hoblethorne lord Mayor of London was called, who kneeling downe, the king toke the sword of the lord protector and made him knight, which was the first that euer he made. Then the lords called the iudges and communed with them, and then euery of them came befoze the king, who put forth his hand, and euery of them kissed it: then master William Poite-man one of the iudges of the kings bench was called forth, whom the king made knight, and then the king mouing his cap departed to his priuie chamber againe.

The 14. of February the corpes of B. Henrie the eight, was with great solemnitie and honor conueied vnto Spon, and the next day to Windsor, and there buried in the colledge.

Duke and lords  
created.

The 17. of February sir Edward Seimer earle of Hertford, and lord protector was created duke of Somerset: the lord William Parre earle of Essex, was created marquisse of North-hampton: sir Iohn Dudley lord Lisle, lord admiral, was created earle of Warwike and lord Chamberlaine of England: sir Thomas Wriothesley and lord chancelor, was created Earle of South-hampton: sir Thomas Seimer the kings vncle was made lord of Sudley and high admirall: sir Richard Rich was made lord Rich: sir William Willoughby was made lord Willoughby of Parham: sir Edmond Sheffield was made lord Sheffield of Wnterwike.

Pauls steeple  
lay at anchor.

The nineteenth of February B. Edward rode from the tower of London, accompanied with his nobilitie through the citie of London towards Westminster, and as he passed on the south side of Pauls churchyard, a man of the nation of Arragosa, came from the battlements of the Steeple of Pauls church vpon a cable, being made fast to an anchor by the Deanes gate, lying on his breast, atding himselfe neither with hand nor foote, but spreading the m abroade, and after ascended to the midst of the cable, where he tumbled and plaid many pretty toles, whereat the king and the nobles had good pastime.

King Edward  
crowned.

He was crowned at Westminster on the twentieth daie of February. And there was the same day proclaimed a general pardon of all maner of persons sauing fire, to wit, the duke of Northfolke, Edward L. Courtney eldest sonne to the Marquisse of Erceffer, M. Foskew, M. Throkmorton, Cardinall Poole, and Doctor Pates.

The 6. of March, the great scale of England was taken from sir Thomas Wriothesley, and on the morrow the same was deliuered to the lord Seint Iohn lord great master.

1547

The 11. of Aprill being munday in the Easter weeke, the Complin (being a part of the euening prayer) was sung in English, in the kings Chappell. Also the same month of Aprill, doctor Glasier preaching at Pauls crosse, affirmed there, that the Lent was not ordained of God, to be fasted, neither the eating



eating of flesh to be forborne, but that the same was a politike ordinance of men, and mought therefore be broken by men, at their pleasures. More on the 15. of May being Sunday, Doctor Smith master of Whittington Colledge in London, doctor of divinitie, and reader of the same in the kings Colledge at Oxford, recanted at Pauls crosse, declaring his former books, and teachings to be erroneous, and hereticall. Also on the nineteenth of June, one Peren did recant in the parish church of S. Andrew Underhaff in London, where he had before (to wit on S. Georges day) preached that it was good to worship the pictures of Christ, and of Saints, but now hee saide he had bene deceived, and was soyle that he had taught such doctrine, &c.

On the same 19. of June was a Dirige sung in every parish church in London, for the French king late deceased (to wit on the 22. of March last before passed) also the church of S. Paul in London, being hanged with blacke, and a sumptuous herse set vp in the quire, a Dirige was there sung, and on the next morrow, the archbishop of Canterbury, assisted of eight Bishops, all in rich miters and other their pontificals, did sing a masse of Requiem, and the bishop of Rochester preached there a learned Sermon.

The first of July two priests were arraigned, and condemned in the Guildhall, for keeping of certain reliques, amongst the which there was the left arme and shoulder of a Monk of the Charterhouse, on the which arme, was written, it was the arme of such a monke, which suffered martyrdome under king Henry the eight.

The 9. of July 15 galleies of France, passed through the narrow seas into Scotland, where they destroyed the Castle of S. Andrewes, wherein were certaine Scots, that had in the same Castle murdered the cardinall of S. Andrewes. And on the 8. of August the said galleies returned again into France.

In the month of August, Edward Duke of Somerset lord protector as generall, and John Dudley earle of Warwicke lord lieutenant, with a noble army were sent into Scotland, and neer to Edenborough at a place called Pussleborough the Englishmen and Scots met, where betwene them the tenth of September was fought a cruell battell. The victorie thereof fell to the Englishmen, and of the Scots were slaine 14000. and taken prisoners 1500. whereof many were gentlemen, and not above 60. Englishmen slaine: more of this ye may reade in master Patten his booke extant intituled, The expedition into Scotland.

Pussleborough field.  
Wm. Patten,

The 2. of September the French Gallies, did take a pinnace of the kings, called the Km, betwene Calais and Dover.

The lord protector, and the rest of the Councell, sent commissioners into all parts of the realme, willing them to take all images out of their churches, for the avoiding of idolatry, with them were sent divers preachers, to perswade the people from their beades, and such like ceremonies: and at that time the going in procession was forbidden to be used: and the Gospel, & Epistle was commanded to be read in English. And the 5. of September the kings commissioners did sit in Pauls church there to reforme, such ceremonies and superstitions. And on the 8. of September the Litanie was sung in English in Pauls

Pauls Church, betwene the quire and the high altar, the singers knéeling, halfe on the one side and halfe on the other side. And the same day, the Epistle and Gospell was read in English at the high masse in Pauls church. And on the 11. of September, Edmond Bonner bishop of London was by the Council committed prisoner in the fléete. And on the 25. of September Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester was likewise committed to the fléete. And Nicholas Ridley was made bishop of Rochester.

The 24. of October, Richard lord Rich, was made lord chancelor.

Parliament at  
Westminster.

The 4. of November, the parliament begun at Westminster, and that same day masse was sung before the lordes of the parliament in the English tong. Sir Iohn Baker knight, chancelor of the fruites and tenthes was speaker of the common house for the said parliament: In the which was granted to the king, all colledges, chantries, free chappels, hospitals, fraternities, brotherhoods, and guildes. And an acte was made for the receiving of the sacrament, in both kindes of bread and wine; and the statute of the six articles was repealed.

Colledges,  
chantries, free  
chappels, and  
hospitals given  
to the king.

The 17. of November was begon to be pulled downe the Roode in Pauls church with Mary and Iohn, and all other images in that church, and then the like was done in all the Churches in London, and so throughout England, and terres of scriptures were written upon the wals of those churches against Images, &c. And on the 24. of December the parliament was proroged.

In the 1. of January doctor Latimer preached at Pauls crosse, which was the first sermon by him preached in almost eight yeres before, for at the making of the six articles, he being bishop of Worcester would not consent unto them, and therefore was commanded to silence, and gaue by his bishoplike: he also preached at Pauls crosse on the 8. of January; where he affirmed, that whatsoever the cleargie commanded, ought to be obeyed, but he also declared that the cleargie are such as sit in Moyles chaire, and beake not their masters commission: adding nothing thereto, nor taking any thing there from: and such a cleargie must be obeyed of all men, both high and lowe. He also preached at Pauls on the 15. and on the 29. of January. And on the 2. of February being the feast of the purification of our Lady, commonly called Candlemasse day, the bearing of candles in the church, was left off throughout the whole Citie of London.

The 12. of February being Shrouesunday, and the monday, and tuesday following, was great iusts, and warlike seates done in the parke at Chénceswich, where was a castle or fort of turnes, besieged and assaulted, to shew the king the manner of wars, wherein hee had great pleasure. The wednesday following commonly called Ashwednesday, the vse of giuing ashes in the church was also left.

The 7. of March, being wednesday was a pulpit set up in the kings priuie garden at Westminster, and therein doctor Latimer preached before the king, where he mought be heard of more then foure times so manie people as could haue stood in the kings chappel: and this was the first sermon preached there. And this yere the ceremonie of bearing of palmes on palme sunday was left off and not vsed as afoze.

About

About the beginning of the month of March, the K. sent his commissioners into euery shire in England to suruey all Colledges, free chappels, and chantries with bozther hoods as faces in the articles of their commission.

1548  
Surreiours sent out.

Also in the said moneth of March, the K. sent forth his proclamation, with a booke for the order of receiuing of the holy communion of the body and blood of Christ, vnder both kinds of bread and wine to bee ministred by the priest to all persons at Easter, and at all times after, when the people required it. Whereupon at Easter following began the communion and confession in English, but no man constrained thereto except he woulde: but after Easter began the seruice in English in diuers parish churches, and at Whitsonside at Pauls, by the commendement of Doctor W. May Deane of the same Church. Barking chappell nigh the towne of London, and the Colledge Church of S. Martins le Grand nigh the Shambles, were pulled downe. Also the parish churches of S. Nicholas in the Shambles, and Saint Ewines within Newgate, were pulled down, and the parishoners appointed to the late dissolved Greyfriars church which is now named Christs Church, founded by king Henrie the eight. Also the Parish Church at the Strand without Temple bar was pulled downe, with Strand Inne, and Strondbridge, in place thereof to build the Protectors house.

Ann. reg. 2.

The watch which had bene accustomed in London at Midsummer of long time laid down, was now againe vsed, both on the euen of S. Iohn, and of S. Peter, in as comely order as it had bin accustomed, which watch was greatly beautified by the number of more than 300. demilances and light hoisemen that were prepared by the citizens, to bee sent into Scotlande for the rescue of the towne of Haddington and other, kept by Englishmen in Scotland.

Great watch at  
Midsummer &  
S. Peters tide.

On S. Peters euen, mounseur Dasley, lieutenant to the French king, and the Kingraue of France, with the number of 10000. French and Almaines, besides Scots, besieged the towne of Haddington in Scotland, defended by the Englishmen, vnto whose aide shortly after came from Bartwike 1300. hoisemen, which were 700. men of armes and demilances, the Captaines whereof were Sir Robert Bowes, and Sir Thomas Palmer, which hoisemen not long after by the Frenchmen were inclosed, and the most part either starue, or taken with their Captaines before named: neuertheless, our Englishmen defended the towne, often skirmishing with the French, and putting them to the worse, untill the twentieth daie of August, and then came an armie out of England of 16000 of the which 4000. were Almaines, the Kings lieutenant was the Earle of Shrewsburie, the Generall of the Almaines was capitaine Courteney.

The Rege of  
Haddington.

At the coming of this army, the Frenchmen and Scots in peaceable manner departed from before Haddington, giuing our captains and soldiers great commendation for their seruice. Francis earle of Shrewsbury after he had seen the towne besialled and stored with fresh soldiers and munitions, departed into England, and our men kept the Towne of Haddington, oftentimes skirmishing with the Frenchmen and Scottes, till the 20. daie of September, and then came the Earle of Rutlande with 3000. Almaines and as many

Haddington raw  
so by English,  
hoisemen.

hoisemen,

borderers, who caused the towne to be rased, and so brought their Ordnance and carriage to Barwicke, and returned without batell.

B. of Winchester sent to the tower by the L. protector.

A. p. test of Cornwall executed.

On S. Peters day Stephen Gardner B. of Winchester preached in the palace of White hall at Westminster before the k. for the which sermon he was on the morrow after sent to the tower of London.

The 7. of July a priest was hanged and quartered in Smithfelde, for that hee and other in Cornewall had slain Q. Body, one of the Kings commissioners, the others of his societie were put to death in diuers other partes of the Realme.

Great pestilence in London.

This yere a great mortality by the pestilence was in London, therefore commandement was given to all curates and other hauing to do therewith, that no corps should be buried before 6. of the clocke in the morning, nor after 6 of the clock at night, and that there should at the buriall of euery corpse, be rung one bell at the least, by the space of 3. quarters of an houre.

Quene Katherine died.

In September died Quene Katherine, late wife to king Henry, and after married to Sir Thomas Seimer lord admirall; she died of childbirth, being deliuered of a daughter.

Ann. reg. 3.

The 16. of Januarie, Sir Tho. Seimer knight of the garter, baron of Sudley, lord admirall, brother to the lord protector, and vncle vnto king Edward, was arrested, and sent to the tower of London. On the 19. of January Sir William Shepington was also committed to the tower; which Sir William on the 14. of February, was arraigned in the Guild Hall at London, and condemned of treason, for misusing of the kings mint at Wiltow. The lord Th. Seimer vncle to the king was condemned by the Parliament, and neuer came to his answer. This Parliament brake vp on the 14. of March, and on the 20. of March the saide lord Th. Seimer was beheaded on the Tower hill, hee tooke it on his death, that hee had neuer committed or meant anie treason against the king nor realme. The 29. of March doctor Latimer preached before the king at Westminster, and there in his Sermon, declaring manie things against the lord Thomas Seimer late beheaded, he affirmed that in time whyles he was prisoner in the Tower, he wrote letters vnto the ladie Mary, and Ladie Elizabeth the Kings sisters, that they should make some sturre against the lord protector, and reuenge his death.

1549

The 6. of April, proclamation was made for the Masse to bee put downe through the whole realme.

Dance of Pauls pulled downe.

Charnill house of Pauls.

The 10. of April, the cloister of Pauls church in London, called pardon churchyarde, with the dance of death, commonlie called the dance of Pauls about the same cloister coldly and cunningly wrought, and the chappel in the middell of the same churchyard, were all begun to be pulled downe. Also the charnil house of Pauls, with the chappel there (after the tombes and other monuments of the dead were pulled downe, and the dead mens bones buried in the fieldes) were conuerted into dwelling houses and shops.

Church of S. John by Smithfelde blowne vp.

About the same time the steeple, and most part of the church of S. John of Ierusalem, neere vnto Smithfield, most beautifullie new builded, and late finished, by the Lord ppio named Docary, was vndermined, and ouerthrowne with



with gunpowder, the stone whereof was applied in the building of the L. pro-  
tectors house at the Strand.

The 27. of Aprill, diuers anabaptists were examined in our lady chappel of  
S. Pauls church in London, befoze T. Cranmer archb. of Canterbury, Edmond  
Thurby first B. of Westminster, D. Cox, D. Smith, D. Maie Deane of Pauls,  
and D. Cok deane of the arches, and chancelor to the archb. of Cant. these sate  
on the altar of our ladie in iudgement of these anabaptistes, and at their next  
sitting, there sate with them the sherifs of London; and on the next Sundate  
being iow Sundate, one of them named Champenes bare a fagot at Pauls  
crosse, Myles Couerdale preached the rehearsall sermon there: on the next Sa-  
turday the said commissioners sate there againe, befoze whome was brought  
Ioan of Kent, *alias* Ioan Burcher, *alias* Knel, he was condemned: and a tanner  
of Colchester named Puto recanted, and on the morow bare a fagot at Pauls  
crosse, and after that at Colchester. Also that date stood at Pauls crosse a botcher  
an anabap. of Mary Magdal. parish in old Fishstreet, & again h Sunday after be-  
cause he made a mock at the first time: & thus much of h anabap. of that time.

In the moneth of May, by meanes of a proclamation for inclosures, the  
commons of Somersetshire and Lincolnshire made a commotion, and brake  
bp certain parks of sir W. Herberds, and L. Sturtons, but sir W. Herberd slewe  
and executed many of those rebels.

Commotion in  
Somersetshire  
& Lincolnshire.

In July, the commons of Essex & Kent, Suffolk & Norfolk, rose against in-  
closures, and pulled downe diuers parks and houses.

Also the Commons of Cornwall and Devonshire rose against the nobles  
and gentlemen, and required not onely that the inclosures might bee disap-  
ked, but also to haue their old religion, and act of five articles restored: these be-  
sieged the citie of Excester, which was ballantlie defended. Against these re-  
bels was sent Iohn L. Russell Lord priuy seale, with a number of souldiers, who  
entred the city of Excester the 5. of August, where they slew and took prisoners  
of the rebels moze than 4000. and after hanged diuers of them in the towne  
and country about. The L. Gray was also sent with a number of strangers Al-  
maine and Germaine hoysmen, who in diuers condisas slewe manie people,  
and spoiled the country.

Commotion in  
Cornwall and  
Devonshire.

Rebels subdued

The last of July, Wil. L. marques of Northampton, entred the city of Nor-  
wich, and on the next morning, the rebels also entred the towne, burned parte  
thereof, put the L. marques to flight, and slew the L. Sheffield.

Commotion at  
Norwich.  
Lord Sheffield  
slaine.

In this meane time diuers persons were apprehended as aiders of the fore-  
said rebels or reporters of their doctinges, of the which one was the Bailife of  
Romford in Essex, hanged within Aldgate, and an other of Kent, at the bridge  
cot toward Southwark, both on Mary Magdalens day by martiall law.

Partiall Law.

The 8. of August the French L. ambassadoz, did in name of his master the fr.  
king, make defiance vnto the L. of England, and so the wars to begin with all  
their force, & the same night following, all Frenchmen were taken prisoners,  
and their goods registred.

In the beginning of August, the French L. determining to take the Isles of  
Guernesey and Jersey, did set there sodainelie vpon our shippes with a great  
number

The French L.  
galleies invaded  
Guernesey and  
Jersey.

number of galleis, but they were so manfully encountered by the kings navy, that with the losse of a thousand men, and great spoile of their galleis, they were forced to retire into France, and desist from their purpose.

The 16. of August, a man was hanged without Bishopsgate of London, and one other without Albgate, the third at Totenham, the fourth at Waltham, and so forth in diuers other places, all by martiall law.

French men  
apprehended.

The 8. of August, the French ambassadoys gave a defiance to the lord protector, whereupon all French men with their goods being no denizens were apprehended and committed to prison.

The Earle of  
Warwicke went  
against the re-  
bels at Por-  
towich.

The rebels in Dorsettolke and Suffolke encamped themselves at mount Surrey, in a wood called S. Nicholas wood, nere unto Porowich, against whom sir Io. Dudley earle of Warwicke went with an army, where both he & a great number of gentlemen meeting with the rebels were in such danger, as they had thought all to haue died in that place, but God that confoundeth the purpose of all rebels, brought it so to passe, that aswell there as in all other places, they were partly by power constrained, partly by promise of their pardon, perswaded to submit themselves to their prince: the earle of Warwicke entered the city of Porowich the 27. of August, when he had slaine about 5000. of the rebels, and taken their chiefe captaine Robert Ket of Windham Tanner, which might dispend in lands fifty pound by yere, and was worth in mouerales aboue a thousand markes, when he had put to execution diuers of the rebels in diuers places about Porowich, he returned.

Newhamen by  
Boleine woon  
by the French.

The 28. of August tidings was brought to Is. Edward, and the lord protector, that the French men had taken Blacknes, Hamiltew and Newhamen by Boleine, and had slaine all the Englishmen, and taken the kings ordinance and victuals, which was reported to be begun by one Sturton a ballard son of the lord Sturtens, which had betrayed Newhamen, and went himselfe to the French kings service: hereupon the captaine of Boleine Barke for feare of the French army conueyed all the ordinance, victuals, goods, and men of that fort, to the high towne of Boleine, and after their departing, with gunpowder blew by the fort.

Commotion in  
Dorsetshire.

About this time also, a commotion began at Semer in the north-riding of Yorke shire, and continued in the east-riding, and there ended: the principall rasyers thereof were William Ombler of east Hesterton peoman, Thomas Dale parish clearke of Semer, and Steuenson of Semer: being pzevented by the lord president from rising at Waintringham, they drew to a place at Semer by the sea coast, and there by night rode to the beacon at Starton, and set it on fire, and so gathered a rude route: then they went to master Whites house, and took him, and Clopton his wines brother, Sauage a merchant of Yorke, and Bery seruant to sir Walter Mildmay, which foure they murdered a mile from Semer, and there left them naked: their number increased to 3000.

Rebels execu-  
ted at Yorke.

On the one and twentieth day of August, the kings pardon was offered, which Ombler and other refused, who were shortly after taken, and brought to Yorke, where Thomas Dale and other were executed the 21. of September.

The first of September Edmond Boner bishop of London preached a sermon

mon at Paules crosse, for the which he was accused vnto the counsell by William Lacimer, parson of S. Laurence Pountney, and Iohn Hooper, sometime a white monke, and so conuented before the Archbishop of Canterbury and other commissioners at Lambheath on the thirteenth, the sixteenth, the eighteenth, and on the one and twentieth day of that same month he was sent to the sparchalsea in his habite of a bishop, but on the first of October he was deposed of his bishopricke, for disobeying the kings order in religion.

On the first day of October in the morning, the earle of Marwike with other lords of the counsell sent for the lord Dalo; and the Aldermen of London, to his place in Holbozne, where was declared to them by the lord Chancellor and other of the kings counsell, diuers abuses of the L. protector, concerning the kings person, and his affaires both in England and also in Scotland, and other his pecces beyond the seas. And that after none was kept a court of the aldermen in the Guild hall, where was shewed a letter, from the king and the lord protector for to haue one thousand men of the citie, well harnessed with weapons for defence of the kings maiesties person. And another letter also from the lords of the counsell, to haue two thousand men to aide them, for defence of the kings person: and also, that the citie should bee well kept with watches both day and night, &c.

And the same first day, the king being at Hampton court, the lord protector caused proclamations to be made in diuers towne nere to the court, for men to aide the king against the lords, and also sent letters to diuers townes to the same effect: whereupon great assemblies of people were made at Hampton court. And in the night of the same day, he conueyed the king to Windsor, with a great number of horsemen and footmen.

My lords, we commend vs most hartly vnto you: and whereas the kings maiestie was enformed that you were assembled in such sort as y<sup>e</sup> doe notwe remaine there, was aduised by vs, and such other of his counsell, as were here about his person, to send master secretary Peter vnto you with such a message as whereby might haue ensued the suretie of his maiesties person, with preservation of his realme and subiects, and the quiet both of vs, and your selues, as master secretary can well declare vnto you, his maiestie, and we of his counsell here, do not a little maruell that you stay still with you the said master secretary: and haue not (as it were) boundes to send an answer to his maiesty, neither by him, nor yet by any other. And for our selfe, we do much more maruell, and are right loy, as we and you haue good cause to be, to see the manner of your doings, bent with force and violence to bring the kings maiestie and vs to those extremities, which as we doe intend, if you will take none other way but violence, to defend vs, as nature and our allegiance both binde vs to extremitie of death, and put it vnto Gods handes, who giueth victory as please him. So if our reasonable conditions and offers will take no place, as hitherto none hath bene signified vnto vs from you, nor we doe not vnderstand what y<sup>e</sup> doe require or seeke, nor what y<sup>e</sup> do meane, and that y<sup>e</sup> speake no hurt of the kings maiesties person: as touching all other priuat matters, to auoide the effusion of christian blood, and to preserve the kings

a letter from  
the lordes at  
Windsore to  
the lordes at  
London.

maiesties

maiesties person, his realme, and subiects, ye shall finde vs agreeable to any reasonable conditions that you will requite. For we do esteeme the Kings wealth and tranquillity of the realme more than all other worldly things, yea more than our owne liues. Thus praying you to sende vs a determinate answer herein by M. secretary Peter (or if ye will not let him go) by this bearer, we beseech God to giue both you and vs grace to determine this matter as may be to Gods honor, the preservation of the king, & the quiet of vs all, which may be, if the fault be not in you. And so we bid you most hartly farewell. From the kings maiesties castle of Windsor the 7. day of October, 1549.

Your L. louing friends, E. Somerset, &c.

A letter from  
the duke of Som-  
erset to the  
earle of War-  
wike.

My lord, I cannot perswade my selfe that there is any ill conceiued in your heart as of your selfe against me, for that the same seemeth impossible, that where there hath been from your youth and mine so great a friendship and amity betwixt vs, as neuer for my part to no man was greater, now so suddenly there should be hatred, and that without iust cause, whatsoeuer rumours and brutes, or perswasion of others haue moued you to conceiue, in the sight and iudgment of almighty God, I protest & affirme this vnto you, I neuer meant wrong to you than to my selfe, wherefore my lord, for God sake, for friendship, for the loue that euer hath bin betwixt vs, or that hereafter may be, perswade your selfe with truth, and let this time declare to me and the world your iust honor, and perseverance in friendship, the which God be my witness, who seeth all hearts, was neuer diminished, nor euer shall be whilst I liue. And because my heart and minde shall be more plaine and open than my writings: this bearer master Hobie shall declare vnto you the effect thereof at length, to whom I pray you giue credite, &c. the 8. of October, 1549.

A letter from  
the lords at  
Windsor to  
the lords at  
London.

After our hartly commendations vnto your good L. we haue receiued from the same a letter by master Hunnings, dated at London yesterdaie, whereby you doe vs to vnderstand the causes of your assemble there, and charging the lord protector with the manner of gouernment, require that he withdraw himselfe from the kings maiestie, disperse the force which hee hath leised, and bee contented to be ordered according to iustice and reason. And so you will gladly commune with vs, as touching the suretie of the kings maiesties person, and the order of all other things, with such conformance on that behalfe as appertaineth, and otherwise you must (as you write) make other account of vs, than you trust to haue cause, and burden vs, if things come to extremities. To the first point we verily beleue, that as brutes, rumors, and reports, that your lordships intended the destruction of the lord protector induced his grace to flee to the defence which he hath assembled, excuse your lordships, hearing that his grace intended the like destruction towards you, haue been moued to doe as you haue done, so as for lacke of vnderstanding one of any others right meaning, things be growen to such extremities, as if the sauing of the kings maiesties person, and the common weale, take not more place in his grace and your lordships, than private respect or affaires, you see, we doubt not, as we doe, that both our king, our countrie, and also our selues shall as verily as God is God, be bitterly distressed and cast away. Wherefore, might



if please you, for the tender passion of Iesus Christ, vse your wisdom, and temper your determination in such sort, as no blood bee shed, nor crueltie used, neither of his graces part, nor of your lordships; for if it come to y<sup>e</sup> point, both you and we are like to see presently with our eyes, that which euery being of all our hearts will blad to behold. Wherefore, as true subiectes to the kings Maiestie, as faithfull Counsellors, though unworthie Counsellors to his Maiestie and his realme, and as lamentable petitioners, we beseech your lordships most humble, and from the bottome of our hearts, to take pity of the king and the realme, whereof you be principall members, and to set apart *Summum ius*, and to vse at this time *Tum bonum & equum*; and thinke not that this is written for anie private feare or other respect of our selues, but for that vnbondedlie we heare and know more of this point with your fauors, than you there do know; yea, and howsoeuer it shall please you to account of vs, we are true men to God, to the king, to the realme, and so will we liue and dy whersoeuer we be, and in respect of them thre esteeme little anie other person or thing, no not our owne liues; and hauing cleere consciences, as somewhat sooner ill maie followe, vpon the vse of extremitie there, that neither now is, nor shall be found fault in vs, and so quieting our selues we rest. Now to that you would haue the lorde protector to do, for his part his grace and wee haue commited herein, & much to our comfortes and yours also, if it shall like you to waite the case, who is contented if you will againe for your parts vse equity, to put that now in execution which many times he hath declared by his wordes, that is to saie, so as the king and the realme maie be otherwise well serued. hee passeth little for the place he now hath. May be doth consider, that by the kings Maiestie with all your aduices, and the consents of the nobles of the realme he was called to the place (as appereth in writing vnder his maiesties great Seale and Signe, wherunto your owne handes also and ours, with all others the Lordes of the vpper house in parliament are subscribed): And therefore in biglent sort to be thus thrust out against his will, he thinketh it not reasonable: he is here with the kings person, where his place is to be. and we bee heere with him we trust in God for the good seruice of the king, the weale of the realme, and the good acquitting both of his Grace and of your Lordships, which was most heartilie desire, and see such hope heere thereof, as if you bee not too sore bent vpon the extremities, as is reported, and as equitie canne take no place, my Lordes grace maie liue in quiet, and the kings Maiesties affaires maintained in such order, as by his Maiesties Counsellors shall bee thought conuenient; marie to put him selfe simple into your handes, hauing harde as both we and he haue, without first knowledge vpon what conditions, it is not reasonable. Life is swete my Lords, and they saie, you seeke his bloude and his death; which if ye do, and maie haue him other wise conforable to reason, and by extremitie dyue him to seeke extremitie againe; the bloude of him and others that shall die on both sides innocentlie, shall bee by God iustlie required at your handes. And when peradventure you would haue him againe vpon occasion of seruice, you shall soethink to haue lost him. Wherefore god my Lords, we beseech you againe and againe, if you haue conceiued

any such determination, to put it out of your heads, and incline your hearts to kindnesse and humanitie, remembryng that he hath neuer been cruell to any of you, and why should you be cruell to him: as we trust you be not, what soeuer hath been said, but will shew your selues as conformable for your parts, as his grace is contented, for the zeale he beareth to the king and the realme, to bee for his part, as this bearer sir Phillip Hobbie will declare vnto you, to whom we praye you to giue credite, and to returne him hither againe with answer hereof. And thus beseeching the liuing God to direct your hearts to the making of a quiet end of these terrible tumults, we bid your lordships most hartlie well to fare. From the kings maiesties castle of Windsor the eight of October, 1549.

Proclamation  
against the lord  
protector.

These letters notwithstanding, the same eight of October, after a common council in the Guild hal at London, whither all the lords of the counsell came, the lord Chancelor and other declared diuers abuses of the lord protector, desiring the citizens to be ayding and assisting with them, for the preserving of the kings maiesties person, which they greatly feared, being in his adversaries hands. The lords dined with master Yorke one of the Sheriffs, and in the afternone proclamation was made in diuers places of the citie with trumpets, heraults, and kings at armes, wherein was contained diuers articles touching the euill gouernment of the lord protector.

First they charged him with making inward diuision, whereby the quiet state of the realm left by king Henry the 8. was now disturbed, and thousands of the kings naturall subjects slaine.

Item, the losse of his maiesties peeces beyond the sea, which his highnes father (not long before his decease) wan to the honor of himselfe, and commoditie of the realme, not without the auenture of his owne person.

Item, that in all times of the wars in France and Scotland he hath enriched himselfe, and builded sumptuous and faire houses, leauing the kings poore souldiers unpaid of their wages.

Item, that he hath labored to make himselfe strong in all countries.

That he hath subuerted all lawes, iustice, and good order of the Realme, whereby he hath fearfully shaken the chaire of the kings state.

That he hath little esteemed the graue aduice of the kings good and faithfull counsellors.

That he hath little regarded the order appointed by the late Is. Henry the 8. for the gouernment of the king his sonne, his realmes and dominions in his tender age.

That he hath labored to sowe diuision in the realme among the nobles, gentlemen, and commons.

Finally, that it is easie for euery man to see what losse the king and realme haue of late suffered by his wilfull negligence, and lacke of prouision and furniture of the peeces beyond the sea. Subscribed,

The lord Rich Chancelor.

Lord Saint. Iohn lord great master.

Lord Marques of North-hampton.

The earle of Marleshe lord great chamberlaine.

The earle of Arundell lord chamberlaine.

The earle of Shrewsburie.

The earle of Southampton.

Sir Thomas Cheiney treasurer of household.

Sir Iohn Gage constable of the tower.

Sir William Peter secretarie.

Sir Edward North knight.

Sir Edward Mountague knight, chiefe Justice of the common place.

Sir Ralph Sadler knight.

Sir Iohn Baker knight.

Sir Edward Wotton knight.

Dooor Wotton deane of Canterburie.

Sir Richard Southwell knight.

The tenth of October, by a common counsell at the Guild hall, was granted five hundred men of the citie, (100. to be horsemen) to bee readie on the next morrow: and this day the lords dined with master Turke one of the sheriffes of London.

The 11. of October, the lords sitting at the L. great masters, sir Anthony Wingfield captaine of the gard was sent to the king at Windsor, and seuered the L. protector from his person, and caused the garde to watch him till the lords comming. On the morrow, the lord chancelor with the rest of the counsell, rode to Windsor to the king, and that night the lord protector was put in warde into Beauchamps tower in the castle of Windsor.

The 14. of October in the afternone, the duke of Somerset was brought from Windsor, riding betwixt the earles of Southampton, and of Huntingdon, through Oldbozne in at Pelagate, and so to the tower of London, accompanied with diuers lords and gentlemen, with 300. horse: the lord maior, sir Ralph Warren, sir Iohn Gresham, master Recorder, sir William Lock, and both the sheriffs, and other knights sitting on their horses against Soper lane, and all the officers with halbarbs, and from Holbozne bridge to the tower, certaine aldermen or their deputies on horse-backe in euery stræte, with a number of householders standing with bills as he passed. There was with him committed to the tower, sir Michaell Stanhope, sir Thomas Smith, sir Iohn Thin knights, Wolfe of the priuie chamber, and Grey of Reading.

The 17. of October, king Edward came from Hampton court to his place in Southwarke, then called Suffolke place, and there dined, where after dinner he made master Iohn Yorke one of the sheriffes of London knight, and then rode through the citie of London to Westminster.

Now when the duke of Somerset was first apprehended, Steph. Gardener B. of Winchester then being prisoner in the tower (as before ye haue heard) was bozne in hand, he should be set at libertie, in hope wherof he prepared him new apparell for that purpose, thinking verily to haue come abroade within eight or tenne daies: but when he was forgotten, and nothing said vnto him, by the space of one moneth after, he thought it good to put the lords in remem-

U b b 2.

bance

Short letters  
of Stephen  
Gardiner bishop  
of Cluncheſter.

byance by his letters, wherein (after commendations had vnto them) he wrote as followeth: I haue continued here in this miserable priſon now one yeare, one quarter and one moneth, this ſame day that I write theſe my letters, with want of aire to relieue my body, want of booke to relieue my mind, want of god companie, the onelie ſolace of this world, and ſinallie, want of a iuſt cauſe why I ſhoulde haue come hither at all. Poſe of this Letter came not to my hands, but that the lordes tooke it in good part, & laughed verie merrilie thereat, ſaying, hee had a pleaſant brade, for rewarde whereof they gaue him leaue to remaine ſtill in priſon ſixe or ſixe weekes after, without ſaying or ſending a my word to him, which when he conſidered, then hee wrote to them this letter following.

After my due commendations to your good lordſhips: Howſoeuer the time is ſtoien from you with the multitude of buſineſſes and varietie of matters, where with ye be trauelled, whereby ye rather want time (as I ſuppoſe) than bee glatted with it; yet with mee (being alone comfortles in this miserable priſon) the time paſſeth moze ſenſibly, and as the griefe groweth in length, ſo it bringeth moze encombrance and trauell with it. And being now the time of parliament, whereof I am a member in my owne grace, called vnto it by writ, and not cut from it by any fault, but only by power kept here: It is a double calamity to be detained in priſon by ſo intolerable wrong, and excluded from this aſſembly ſo much againſt right. I haue ſuffered the like in the late laſt protectorſ time againſt all reaſon; which god hath giuen you power now to reforme. And among manie other things which in his time were wronged amuſſe, no one thing (as I ſuppoſe) was of worſe example, ne moze prejudiciall to the good order of the high court of Parliament, which is the direction of all maner liues, lands, and goods in this realme, than to allowe for a preſident, that any one man being member thereof, might without cauſe be excluded, and ſo letted to ſerue there his maner in publike matters, for the wealth of the realme, and ſuch other private cauſes as do occurr. If the ſtrength of the parliament be not impaired by wrong in one, becauſe right conſiſteth not in number, it ſhall be at the pleaſure of him that ruleth, to do the ſame in more. Whereby others may take more harme then I, as experience hath ſhewed in ſuch examples. But I knowe it becommeth me not to reſaie the ſtrength of that court, ne the order of it: the lawyers of this realme knowe that, and to theſe knowledge I ſubmit my iudgment, and take for good that they allowe. But this I dare ſay, when religion is entreated in a generall council of Chriſtendom, if the rulers of the council let any mans repaire thither that hath right to be there: what ſoever is there concluded, is in the lawes of the world abroad taken of no force, by excluding of one member wrongfullie that ſhould furniſh the bodie, which I write vnto your lordſhips, for the good opinion I haue of you, truſting that ye intend not to uphold or followe the late lord protectorſ doings by wrong, but ſo faſhion your proceedings, as they maie agree with iuſtice at home, and ſeem agreeable to reaſon, to others abroad: being ſo aſſured of mine innocencie, that when your lordſhips ſhal heare what can be ſaid againſt me & mine answer thereunto, there ſhal appeere cauſe why I ſhould haue had praife, thanks & commendations



tions of the late L. protector (if truth, honestie, and due obedience might looke therfore) and no cause of trouble or displeasure at al, so wrongfully haue I ben tormented in this prison, so boldly dare I speake to you of my cause, with such an opinion and estimation of your wisdoms which I know, and reuerence, as I ought not, ne would not vainly hope to abuse you with words: but vpon certain confidence of your indifferencies, verily I trust that ye will deeme & take things in such sort, as being plainly and truly opened, shall appeare vnto you by-matter indeed. In consideration whereof, I renew my suit vnto your lordships, instantly requiring you that I may be heard according to iustice, & that with such speed, as y delay of your audience giue not occasion to such as be ignorant abroad of my matter, to think that your lordships allowed and approved the detaining of me here. Which without hearing my declaration I trust ye will not, but haue such consideration of me, as mine estate in the common wealth, the passing my former life amongst you, and other respects do require, wherein you shall bind me, and do agreably to your honors and iustice: the free course whereof, you haue honorably taken vpon you, to make open to the realm without respect, which is the onely establishment of al commonwelths, and therefore the zeale of him was allowed that said, *Fiat iustitia, & ruat munda*: signifying, that by it the world is kept from falling indeede, although it might seme otherwise in some respect, and some trouble to arise in doing it. And this I write, because in the late L. protectors time there was an insinuation made vnto me, as though I were kept here by policie, which with the violation of iustice toke neuer good effect, as I doubt not of your wisdoms ye can and will consider, and do therefore accordingly: for the effectual execution whereof I shall not faile to praise almightie God with the preservation and increase of your honors. From the tower. Thus much concerning these letters haue I thought good to set downe, for that I find not the same otherwise extant in larger discourses of the said B. writings.

The 29. of Nouember, Robert Ket and William Ket his brother were deliuered out of the tower of London, to sir Edmond Windham knight, and the-rixe of Norfolk to be conuayed to Norwich, where Robert Ket was hanged in chaines on the top of Norwich castle, and William Ket likewise hanged on the top of Windham steeple.

Robert Ket and  
William Ket  
hanged.

In the moneths of Nouember and December, the Scots toke Burtirrage in Scotland, and other holds then possessed by Englishmen, where the Scots slue man, woman, and childe, except sir Iohn Lutterell the captaine, whome they toke prisoner.

Holds lost in  
Scotland.

The lords of the counsell resorted to the tower of London, and there charged the lord protector with sundrie articles, which he confessed, and subscribed vnto them as followeth.

1 First, you did take vpon you the offices of protector and gouernor vpon condition expessed: y and specially, that ye would do nothing in the kings affaires publike or priuate, but by the assent of the late kings executors, or the most part of them.

2 Item, you contrarie to the same condition and promise, of your owne

Ubb 3.

authoritie

authoritie did staie and let iustice, and subuerted the lawes as well by your letters, as by your commandement.

3 Item, you caused diuers persons rested and imprisoned for treason, murder, manslaughter, and felonie, to be discharged and to go at large, against the lawes and statutes of this realme.

4 Item, you haue made and ordained lieutenants for the kings armies, and other the kings waightie affaires, vnder your owne writings and seales.

5 Item, you haue communed with the ambassadozs of other realmes, discussing alone with them the waightie matters and causes of this our realme.

6 Item, you haue sometimes rebuked, checked, and taunted as well privately as openly, diuers of the kings most honorable counsellors, for thetewing and declaring their minds & aduices or opinions against your purpose in the kings waighty affaires, saying sometime to them, that they were not worthy to sit in counsell, and sometimes saying to them, that you had not to open matters to them, and ye will be otherwise aduised, and that ye would if they were not agreeable to your opinions, put them out, and take in other at your pleasure.

7 Item, ye had and held against the lawes, in your own house, a court of requests, and thereby did enforce diuers of the kings subiects to answer for their free holds & goods, and determined the same to the subuersion of the same lawes,

8 Item, you being none officer, without the aduice of the council, or the more part of them, did dispose the officers for money of the kings gifts, and granted leases and wards of the kings, and gaue presentations of the kings benefices and bishopricks, hauing none authoritie so to do: and further, ye did meddle with selling of the kings lands.

9 Item, you commanded multiplication and alcumistrie to be practised, thereby to abate the kings come.

10 Item, you are charged that ye haue diuers & many times both openly and priuately said & affirmed, that the nobles and gentlemen were the only causes of the dearth of things, whereby the people rose & did reform things themselves.

11 Item, you caused proclamations to bee made concerning inclosures, whereby the common people hath made diuers insurrections, and leued open war, and destroyed and spoiled the kings subiects, which proclamation went forth against the wils of all the counsell.

12 Item, you caused an intencion with certaine articles thereunto annexed, to be made out concerning inclosures, commons, highwaies, decaying of cottages, and diuers other things, giuing the commissioners authoritie to heare and determine the same causes, to the subuersion of the lawes and statutes of this realme, whereby much sedition, insurrection, and rebellion haue risen and grown among the kings maiesties subiects.

13 Item, you suffered the rebels and traitors to assemble and lie in camps and armies against the kings nobles and gentlemen, without any speedie subduing or appeasing them.

14 Item, you did comfort and encourage diuers of the said rebels, by giuing to them diuers summes of your owne money, and by promising to diuers of them fees, rewards, and seruiccs.

15 Item,

15 Item, you in fauor of the saide rebels did against the lawes, and caused proclamation to be made, that none of the said rebels or traitors should be punished or bereed by anye manner of person, for anye of their offences in the said rebellion, to the clere subuersion of the lawes here.

16 Item, you haue said in the time of rebellion, that you liked well the doings and proceedings of the said rebellious and traitors, and said that the cowardinesse of gentlemen gaue occasion to the common people to arise: saying that better it were for the commons to die, than for to perish utterly for lacke of liuing.

17 Item, you said that the lords of the parliament were loth to incline themselves to reformation of inclosures and other things, therfore the people haue good cause to reforme the things themselves.

18 Item, you asser the report and declaration of the defaults and laches reported to you by them that did suruey Boloigne, and the peces, you saide you would neuer attend the faults.

19 Item, you would not suffer the kings peces beyonde the sea called Petuhamen and Blacknes, to be furnished with men and victuals, although that ye were aduertised of the defaults therein by the captaines of the said peces, as by others, and was also aduertised by the kings counsell, whereby the French king being the kings enemy was encouraged and comforted to inuade and win the said peces to the kings great losse and dishonor.

20 Item, also you said, ye would not suffer the noble men and gentlemen to subdue and to repressse the said rebellious in time conuenient, neither would you giue any authoritie to the said nobles and gentlemen, to the subduing of the said rebels, but wrote your letters to them to speake faire to the rebels, and to handle them gently.

21 Item, you haue caused the first of October last past, at Hampton court for the defence of your owne cause, diuers seditious bills to be written in counterfected handes, and secretly to be throwen abroad in diuers partes of this realme, thus beguiling the good people, &c. meaning thereby for to stir and raise by the kings subjects vnto armoz and open war.

22 Item, when that the kings maiesties priuate counsellors of their loue and zeale that they did beare vnto the king and the realme, did counsell at London to come to you, to the intent to commune with you charitably, to amend your doings and misgouernance: you hearing of their assembly, did cause to be declared by letters in diuers places, the said lords to be traitors to the k. to the great disturbance of the realme.

23 Item, you declared and published vntruely as well to the kings maiestie and other the yong lordes attendant vpon his maiesties person, and to the kings subjects at diuers and sundrie times and places, that the said lordes at London minded to deströie the king, and you required the king neuer to forget it, but to reuenge it, and likewise required the said yong lordes to put the king in remembrance thereof, to the intent to make sedition and discorde betwene the kings maiestie and his lords.

24 Item, you said in the month of October last at Hampton court, and the

eight of the same month at Windsor, or at one of the same places these wordes:  
The lords of the counsell at London doe intend to kill mee, but if I die, the 31.  
shall die, and if they fannish me, they shall fannish the king.

25 Item, you caused and procured by your owne letters, the kings people in  
great number to rise, and assemble in armes after the maner of war, to your  
aid and defence.

26 Item, the 9. of October last, you did of your own head sodainly remoue the  
kings maiesties person late in the night from Hampton court to Windsor,  
without anie provision there made for his Grace, whereby his highnesse was  
not onelie in great feare, but tooke also such disease as was to his great pe-  
rill.

27 Item, you caused your owne servants and friendes at Hampton court,  
and at Windsor to be harnessed with the kings armes, the kings graces ser-  
uants hauing none armes nor harnesse.

28 Item, you caused at Windsor your own person in the night time to be  
garded in harnesse by many persons, leauing the kings maiesties person un-  
garded, and woulde not suffer his owne gard or seruants to be next the kings  
person, but appointed your seruants and friends to keepe the gates.

29 Item, you minded for to fly to Harsey or to Wales, and laide posse hoyle  
and a bote and men for the same intent.

Edward D. of  
Somerset his  
first submission.

I Edward Duke of Somerset, haue read and considered these saide 29. ar-  
ticles before specified, and doe acknowledge my saide offences, faultes, and  
crimes, done and con'ined in the same, and most humble prostrate on my  
knees, do fullie and wholie submit my selfe to the most abundant mercy and  
clemencie of the kings Maiestie, for the moderation of my saide offences,  
hauing my full trust and confidence, that his Maiestie with the aduise of his  
highnesse most honourable counsaile, will consider mine offences, faultes,  
wordes, and proceedings, that if anie of my said offences be by his clemencie,  
pardoned, remitted, or otherwise discharged, that I maie enioie the benefite  
thereof, although the same become unknowne. And farther I do most hum-  
bly beseech all my Lordes and other his maiesties most honorable counsaile,  
not onelie to be meanes to his maiestie, to take awaie and consider mine of-  
fences to haue proceeded more of ignorance, negligence, follie, wilfulness, and  
for lacke of good consideration, than of anie cankered or malicious hart, enill  
intent or thought, tending to any treason to his maiesty or realme: but that it  
may please his maiesty by the charitable aduise of their good lordships to haue  
pity vpon me, my wife, and children, and to take some mercifull way with me,  
not according to the extremity of his lawes, but after his great godnes and  
clemencie, whereunto whatsoeuer it shall bee, I doe most humbly with all my  
hart submit my selfe. Written with mine owne hande the 23. day of Decem-  
ber, in the 3. yeere of the raigne of our soueraigne L. king Edward the 6.

1550  
States created

The 19. of January, Sir John Russell lord priuie seale, was created earle of  
Bedford: and lord Saint John lord great maister. was created Earle of Wil-  
shire: and Sir William Paget comptroller of the kings house, was made Lord  
Paget.



The same day at night, were murdered by S. Pulchers church against the kings head without Pelagate of London, two captaines that had serued the king at Boloigne and elsewhere, the one was sir Peter Gambo, the other Filicirga; which murder was committed by Charles Gauaro a Flemming, who came post from Bertwike to do that act: on the morrow, he with three of his companie was taken in Smithfield by the lord Paget, and sent to Pelagate, and the foure and twentieth of January, they were all foure, Charles Gauaro, Balthasar Gauaro, Nicholas Disalueron, and Francis Deualasco, had in a Cart to Smithfield, & by the way at the place where the murder was done, Charles Gauaro had his right hand stricken off on the cart whele, and then all hanged in Smithfield.

Peter Gambo  
& another cap-  
tain murdered

Gauaro and o-  
ther hanged.

The 22. of January, John earle of Bedford, William L. Paget, sir Wil. Peter Knight, one of the Kings Secretaries, and sir John Mason Knight, chiefe clearks of the Counsell, were sent into France Ambassadors to the French King.

The 27. of January, Humfrey Arundell esquire, Thomas Holmes, Winslowe and Bery, captaines of the rebels in Deuonshire, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Ann. reg. 4.  
Rebels executed.

On Candlemas day, William L. Saint-Iohn earle of Wiltshire, L. great master, and president of the Counsell, was made Lord Treasurer: John Dudley earle of Warwike, lord great chamberlaine, was made lord great master, William Parre Marques of Rothampton, was made Lord great Chamberlaine: Lord Wentworth was made L. chamberlaine of household: Sir Anthony Wingfield captaine of the guard, was made comptroller of the kings house: and sir Thomas Darcy knight, was made viz. chamberlaine, and captaine of the Guard: and the earle of Arundell late lord Chamberlaine, with the Earle of Southampton, were put off the counsell, and commanded to keepe the ir houses in London.

New officers

The submission of the D. of Somerset prisoner in the tower, made the 2. of february.

I am most fearefull and full of heauinesse my verie good Lordes, to vnderstande that my last letters were no better accepted at your lordships handes, to whome I am bounde during my life, for your most gentle and merciful dealing with me, that it pleased your godnesse to bring my case to a fine. I trust your Lordships neuer thinke that I euer did or wolde intende to stande against the kings Maiestie and your lordships godnes, or that I wolde goe about to iustifie my cause, seeing his maiestie and your Lordships offereth clemencie, merche and pardon. Although the fine be to me impoitable, yet I doe commit my selfe wholie to his highnesse, and your Lordships mercies, I pray onelie the moderation of it: And did couet to declare to your godnesse mine inhabilitie to beare it: And yet referred all to his Maiestie, and your wisdom, goodnesse, and discretion. And I most humble desire your Lordships not to thinke that I was about to contende with your Lordships, when I did speake of my conscience, I might erre, in that I thought I did for the best, as I doe acknowledge and confesse, that neither I am the wisest man in the

Edward D. of  
Somerset his  
second submission.

world.

woꝝlde, noꝝ yet if I were, I shoulde not escape without a most singular grace, but manie times I shoulde offende: But I leaue all that, and most humble, simple, wholie, and lowlie, I submit my selfe to the Kings Maiestie, and to your good loꝝdships: appealing from the rigour and extremitie of his Maiesties lawes, to his maiesties great mercie and clemencie, praying your goodnesse to bee meanes to his Maiestie not to bee offended with mee, noꝝ to exclude his maiesties mercie and benignitie from me, foꝝ my rudenes and lack of discretion, but to accept my god minde as one that faire woulde doo that were well. And then I cannot, oꝝ haue not doone that thing I ought to do, I woulde gladlie amende, and am readie at all times, without condition to doo and suffer willingly that thing that your honours will appoint mee, accepting that clemencie oꝝ mercie soeuer I obtayne to bee of his Maiesties, and your goodnesse: most humble on my knees praying, his Maiestie and your good Loꝝdshippes to pardon mine offences, and to order mee foꝝ the me as to his mosse high mercifull clemencie shall appeere conuenient. And finally flying from extremitie of iustice, desire mercie, as you be and are called most mercifull counsellours, not imputing my writings, and doings hitherto as of stoutenesse oꝝ stubbornnesse, but onelie foꝝ lacke of discretion and wisdom. Foꝝ the which once againe I require pardon: sauoꝝ to be shewed. And if it pleased your good loꝝdships to heare me, I trust ye should find me loyaly vnto your honours, and so conformable vnto your loꝝdships orders, that I trust to make amends, and obtayne pardon foꝝ my former folly. And thus I most humbly commit your good loꝝdships to almighty God: To whome I shall alwaies pray that ye maie long continue in honoꝝ. From the Tower the 2. of Februarie.

D. of Somerset  
deliuered.

The 6. of Februarie the D. of Somerset was deliuered out of the tower, and that night he supped at sir Io. Yorks, one of the Sherifs of London.

The 10. of Februarie one Bel a Suffolke man, was hanged and quartered at Tyborne, foꝝ mouing a new rebellion in Suffolke and Essex.

After diuers meetings of our ambassadoꝝ with the Loꝝdes of Fraunce, at Boloigne, a small peace was concluded, vpon condition, that the French king paying a certaine summe of monie to the King of Englande, shoulde haue rendered to him the Towne of Boloigne, and all the Fortes thereunto belonging, with all such artillerie and munition as was there at the taking thereof by the English: foꝝ the performance thereof, hostages were by both parties to be deliuered, so that on the last daie of March a generall peace was proclaimed betwene the kings of England and France, the emperoz and the Scottes.

Proclamation  
of peace.

The 8. of Aprill, hostages on either part were deliuered, at a certaine place appointed betwene Arde & Wisnes, where at the deliuerance of the hostages of our party, was the L. Cobham deputy of Caleis, sir Io. Wallope knight, captain of the territory and castile of Wisnes, sir Mawrice Denice knight treasurer of Caleis, and Frauncis Hall comptroller of the same toton, with diuers Gentlemen and other. And on the French part, were Mounfier de la Raspor, Mounfier Chastillon, Mounfier de Traye, & other. The hostages foꝝ the English were

were the duke of Suffolke, the earle of Hertford, the L. Matreuers, the L. Talbot, the L. Strange, and the L. Fitzwater. On the French part, duke de Angyne, Marques de Mayne, Mounſier Memorancie conſtables ſon of France, Mounſier Vieſdame de Charters, la Tremoile, Mounſier Haueden, the admirals ſonne of France.

The citizens of London, of diuers miſteries, and corporations, hauing certain chantery lands, for priests wages, obits and lights, ſuppreſſed into the King's hands by act of parliament, valued by the commissioners to 1000. l. the yere, purchaſed the ſaid yereley quitrents of the King for 20000. l. to be paid within 8. daies after, by the counſailes commandement: which cauſed the ſaide corporations to ſell much of their beſt lands, far better cheap than they had bought their quitrents, as after 16. or 14. yeres purchaſe, &c.

The King ſolde chantry lands.

Alſo the Lozde Maior of London, and the aldermen purchaſed all the liberties of Southwarke which was in the kings handes, and coſt the Citie about 1000. markes.

Liberties of Southwarke purchaſed.

The eight of Aprill, the Duke of Somerſet came to the court to the Kings Maieſtie at Greenwich, where hee was honourable receiued of the King and his Counſaile, and dined with the King, and was ſwoyne of the Primate Counſaile.

D. of Somerſet ſwoyne of the counſaile.

The 12. of Aprill, docto: Nich. Ridley B. of Rocheſter, was inſtalled biſhop of London in S. Pauls church.

Docto: Ridley biſhop of London. Boloigne yielded to the French.

The 25. of Aprill, the towne of Boloigne was yielded to the French king, and all the marches of the ſame, and all Engliſhmen claerlie auoided, which was done by compoſition, for a ſum of money to be paid to the King of England, and pledges for the ſame deliuered, as is afore touched. Thoſe pledges, to wit, the D. of Suffolke, and other were redeliuered by the parties aforeſaide, at the deliuey of the towne.

The 2. of May, Ioan Knel, alias Butcher, or Ioan of Kent, was bzent in Smithfield for hereſie, that Chriſt took no fleſh of the virgin Mary. There preached before him at the ſtake, to haue conuerted him from her hereſie, D. Story, but hee not regarding his doctrine, ſaid to him he lied like, &c.

Ioan Butcher bzent.

Ric. Lion, Goddard Gorran, and Ric. Ireland, were executed the 14. of Maie, for attempting a new rebellion in Kent.

Rebels of Kent executed.

Trinity terme was adiorned til Michaelmas, for that the gentlemen ſhould keepe the commons from commotion.

Term adiorned

The 3. of Iune, the L. Liſle ſon and heire to the earle of Marwiſke, was married to the D. of Somerſets daughter at Shene, the King's Maieſtie being there preſent.

A marriage.

This yeere Saint Barnabies date was kept Holydate, and the ſame date at night the high Altar in Pauls Church was pulled downe, and a Table ſet where the Altar ſtoode, with a Table dazone beneath the Steppes, and on the Sundaie next a Communion was ſung at the ſame Table, and ſhortly after all the Altars in London were taken downe, and Tables placed in their rowes.

S. Barnaby kept holie. High altar in Pauls pulled downe.

The 30. of Iulie, Thomas Lozde Wriotheſley Earle of South-hampton, knight

knight

Earle of Sou-  
thampton de-  
ceased.

knight of the garter, and one of the executors to king Henry the 8. deceased at Lincolne place in Doboene, and was buried in S. Andrewes church there.

In the month of August, a miller, servant to the miller at Battalebridge in Southwarke, was set on the pillorie in west Cheape of London, and had both his eares cut off, for seditious wordes by him spoken against the duke of Somerset, as that he had proclaimed himselfe king in the countrey, which was false.

Grig a coun-  
terfeit physiti-  
on, worthily  
punished.

Also in the month of September, Grig a poulter of Surrey, taken among the people for a prophet, in curing of diuers diseases by words and praesers, and saying he would take no money, &c. was by commandement of the Earle of Marwicke, and other of the counsaile, set on a scaffold in the Towne of Crotton in Surrey, with a paper on his breast, wherein was written, his deceitfull and hypocriticall dealings. And after that on the eight of September set on the pillorie in Southwarke, being then our ladie saire there kept, and the Mayor of London with his brethren the aldermen riding through the saire, the saide Grig asked them and all the citizens forgiveness. Thus much for Grig.

Not so easie to  
turne a crooked  
body straight,  
as to turne a  
mustard quene  
nor one leape  
out of a docket  
maketh a doc-  
tor.

Of the like counterfeite physition haue I noted (in the summarie of my Chronicles Anno 1382.) to be set on horse-backe, his face to the horse-taile, the same taile in his hande as a bridle, a collar of Jordans about his necke, a whetstone on his breast, and so led through the citie of London, with ringing of basons, and banished. Whereunto I had added as followeth. Such deceitners no doubt are many, who being neuer trained vp in reading, or practise of physicke and Chirurgie, boast to do great cures, especially vpon women, as to make them straight that before were crooked, corbed, or crumped in any part of their bodies, &c. But the contrary is true, for some haue receiued gold, when they haue better deserued the whetstone. These wordes tending generallie against all such counterfeite physitions, hath bin so hardly taken to hart, by one priuate person, not of the best, or second sort, (but my common aduersary) that he hath largely libelled against me, to my great slander, but to the full bewraying of himselfe, as one touched more then other, that being wiser, helde their peace, I forbore to answer his libelling, as I haue before borne his false accusing, and other greater matters, still referring my cause to the Almighty: who abhorreth lying lips, and maketh the proud to stumble.

Prou. 27.  
Ierem. 50.

1551  
Arden mur-  
dered.

On Saint Valentines daie, at Feuertham in Kent, one Arden a gentle man was murdered by procurement of his owne wife, for the which fact, shee was the fourteenth of March bent at Canterburie: Michaell masser Ardens man was hanged in chaines at Feuertham, and a maiden bent: Mosbie and his sister were hanged in Smithfield at London: Greene which had fled, came againe certaine yeres after, and was hanged in chaines in the high way against Feuertham, and Blacke Will the ruffian that was hired to doe that act, after his first escape, was apprehended, and bent on a scaffold at flushing in Zelnd.

Bishop of Win-  
chester deposed

Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester, hauing bene diuers times comeli- ed from the Tower of London to Lambeth, (to wit, on the 15. and the 18. of December,



December, the 8. the 12. and the 16. of January, the 13. and 14. of February) and at euery the said times, examined by the archbishop of Canterburie, and other the kings high com. iudges, he was now on the said 14. of February depriued of his bishopricke, and committed againe to the tower: Into his place was translated doctor Poyner, late bishop of Rochester: and master Iohn Scorie was made bishop of Rochester.

The 5. of Aprill, sir Thomas Darcey Cheschamberlaine, and captaine of the garde, was created lord Darcey at Greenwich.

The 24. of Aprill, George of Paris a dutch man was byent in Smithficld An Arrian byent for an Arrian.

The 25. of May about none, was an earthquake at Blechingly, Godstone, Earthquake. Eitsey, Wigate, Croydon, Benington, Alberie, and diuers other places in Southery.

In the month of Iune, the earle of North-hampton, the bishop of Ely and ther, were sent ambassadors into France, who were there honorably receiued and entertained. And after that came diuers lords of France into England, who were lodged at Suffolke place in Southwarke.

The 9. of Iuly, the base monies (coyned in the time of King Henry the eighth, and king Edward the first) was proclaimed the shilling to go for 9 pence First fall of the base monies. the groate for 3. pence, which toke effect immediately after the Proclamation was made.

The 15. of Aprill, the infectious sweating sicknesse began at Shrewsbury, Sweating sicknesse. which entered not in the North part of England but all the ende of September. In this space what number died, it cannot be well accomplished, but certaine it is that in London in fewe daies 960. gaue vp the ghost: it began in London the 9. of Iuly, and the 12. of Iuly it was most vehement, which was so terrible, that people being in best health, were sodainly taken, and dead in foure and twenty houres, and twelue, or lesse, for lacke of skill in guiding them in their sweat. And it is to be noted, that this mortalitie fell chiefly or rather on men, and those also of the best age, as betwene thirty and fortie yeres. fewe women, nor children, nor olde men died thereof. Sleeping in the beginning was present death, for if they were suffered to sleepe but halfe a quarter of an houre, they neuer spake after, nor had any knowledge, but when they wakened fell into panges of death. This was a terrible time in London, for many one lost sodainly his friends, by the sweat, and their money by the proclamation. Seauen honest householders did sup together, and before eight of the clocke in the next morning, six of them were dead: they that were taken with full stomacks escaped hardly. This sicknesse followed English men as well within the realme, as in strange countreies: therefore this nation was much afraid of it, and for the time began to repent and remember God, but as the disease relented, the deuotion decayed. The first wache died in London 800. persons.

The 17. of August, the shilling which of late was called downe to nine. Second fall of base monies. pence, was called downe to 6. d. the groate to 2. d. the halfe groate to one penny, the penny to an halfe penny.

The

The last of August, Sir Francis Ingelfield, maister Walgrau, and maister Rochester, being the chiefe of the lady Mary the kings sisters house, were committed to the tower of London.

The 10. of October D. Daie bishop of Chichester, and doctor Herhe bishop of Worcester, which had lien long prisoners in the Fleet, were deposed of their Byshopricks, by the bishop of London in Paules church, and sent againe to the Fleet.

Dukes & earles created.

The 11. of October, at Hampton court, lord Marquesse Dorset, was created duke of Suffolke: the earle of Marwarke was created duke of Northumberland: the earle of Wiltshire was created Marques of Winchester: sir Wil. Herbert lord of Cardife, master of the horse, was made L. of Carmarden, and created eyle of Pembroke. The king also made William Cecill his secretary, M. John Cheeke one of his scholemasters, M. Henrie Dudley, M. Henry Newill knights.

D. of Somerset brought to the Tower.

The 16. of October, Edward Seimer Duke of Somerset, the Lorde Gray of Wilton, sir Ralph Vane, sir Thomas Palmer, sir Myles Partridge, sir Michael Stanhope, sir Thomas Arundell knightes, and diuers other Gentlemen, were brought to the Tower of London. The next morrowe, the Dutchesse of Somerset was also brought to the Tower.

Liberties of the Stilyard sealed

The liberties of the Stilyard were sealed into the kings hands for diuers causes forfeited, contrarie to the entercourse.

New coines of gold and siluer.

The 30. of October, was proclaimed a new coine both of golde and siluer, to wit, a whole soueraign of fine gold of 30.s. Another peece of fine gold called an angelet of 10.s. The third peece called an angelet of fine gold of 5.s. Another peece of crowne gold called a soueraign of 20.s. the halfe soueraign of crowne gold of 10.s. the third peece of crowne golde of 5.s. the fourth peece of crowne gold of 2.s.6.pence.

A peece of siluer of 5.s. sterling, the second peece of 2.s.6.d. sterling, the third peece a shilling of 12.d. sterling, the 4. peece of 6.d. sterling, of smaller monie a peny of the dubble rose, not sterling but base, an hallepenny of the single rose, the 3. peece a farthing with a port close.

The Queene of Scottes comming to London.

The Queene of Scots being lately arrived at Portsmouth, comming out of Fraunce, and desiring licence of the king to passe through Englande into Scotland, was honorably receiued, and conuied towards London: on the second day of Nouember, the said Q. came by water from Hampton court, and landed at Pauls wharffe, from whence she rode accompanied with diuers noblemen and ladies of England, beside hir own train of Scotland, to the bishop of Londons palace, where she receiued (presented by the chamberlain of London, as a gift of the city) certaine kinds of victuals for hir prouision, as beafes, muttons, beales, swans, and other kind of poultry meates, with breade, suell, wine, beere, wax, &c. On the 4. of Nouember the said Q. rode to the White hall at Westminster, in hir chariot, accompanied with the lady Margaret Dowglas, the dutches of Richmond, the dutches of Suffolke, the Dutches of Northumberland, with diuers noble women of Englande, and Ladies of Scotland, following after her: the Dukes of Suffolke and Northumberland, and the lord

Treasurer

Treasurer receiuing her within the court gate, all the guard standing in each side: and at her entring into the hall, the king stode in the upper ende of the hall, the Earle of Warwike holding the sworde afore the king, shee kneeling doونه, the king tooke her vp, and kissed her, and by the hande led her vp into her chamber of presence, and so from thence to the queenes chamber of presence, where hee kissed all the ladies of Scotland, and so departed for a while. And that daie shee dined on the Quenes side with the king, the kings seruice and hers comming both togither, the kings on the right hande, the quenes on the left hande, shee sitting by the king apart by his cloth of estate: All the great ladies of England, and the ladies of Scotland, dined in the quenes great chamber, all most sumptuously serued. After dinner, the king shewed vnto the Q. his galleries, gardens, &c. and about foure of the clock he brought hir down by the hand into the hall, where he kissed hir, and so she departed to the bishops palace as afore.

The 6. of Nouember the saide Scottish Quene departed towarde Scotlande, shee rode from Paules through all the high streetes of the Citie, out at Bishops gate, accompanied with diuers Noble men and women, to conueie her through the Citie to Shorditch Church, the Duke of Northumberlande hauing of Horsemen standing in Cheape-side with Fauelines 100. persons, whereof 40. Gentlemen apparelled in blacke Veluet, garded with white, with beluet hats, and white feathers, and chaines of gold about their neckes, next them stode 120. horsemen of the earle of Pembroke, with blacke Fauelines, hats and feathers, next them stode 100. of the lord treasurers gentlemen and yeomen, with Fauelines, which three ranks of horsemen, compassed from the crosse in Cheape, to Birchen lane end: and when the said nobles had brought her to Shorditch church, they tooke their leaue and departed; the Sheriffs of London had the conduction of her to Maltham towne end, where they left her, and harbengers were sent afore into euery shire to the Borders of Scotland, that euery shirif in euerie shire, accompanied with the gentlemen of the country, should receiue hir, & make prouision for lodging and victualing both for hir selfe, family, and hoxes, till she came to the borders of Scotlande at the charges of the shires.

D. of Scots returned towards Scotland.

The earle of Arundell and the L. Paget sent to the towler.

The 30. and last of Nouember, by commandement from the Li. counsell, order was taken in London, that euery household should see to his familie, and keepe his house, hauing in a readinesse that daie a man in harness in euerie house, but not to go abroad till they should be called, if neede were: and further, that on the night following there should bee kept a good and substantiall watch of householders in euery ward, which was so done.

And on the next morrowe being the first of December, the Duke of Somerset was had from the towler of London by water, and that London bridge at foue of the clocke in the morning, and he went to Whitehall, where was made readie a great Scaffold in Whitehall-gate, and there the said Duke appeared before the Lords and peers of the realm, the Lord William Poulter marques of Winchester and lord high treasurer of England, that day sitting

D. of Somerset assigned and condemned.

Endes

under the closh of estate as high steward of England, the indictment of the said duke being read, he was immediately arraigned on the same of felony & treason, and after tried by his peers the nobles there present, which did acquit him of the treason, but found him guilty of the felonie: whereupon after their verdict giuen, he had iudgement to be had from thence to the place he came from, and from thence to the place of execution, there to bee hanged till hee were dead: but the people in the hall supposed he had bene clerely quit, when they saw the are of the tower put downe, made such a shuke casting bype of caps, &c. that their crye was heard to the long Acre beyonde Charing crosse, which made the lords assented. About siue of the clocke at night the said duke laied at the Crane in the Mintrie, and so was had through Candleweke stræte to the towler.

Muster of host-  
men before king  
Edward.

The 7. of December, there was a muster before the king in S. James field beyond Charing crosse, the king sitting on horse-backe with his privie counsell about him. First came the kings pensioners riding all in complete harnesse, foure trumpeters riding before them: then the kings standard, and every pensioner had two men following after them with their speares: then followed a hundred of the lord treasurers men with a trumpet and a standard afoze them: next a hundred of the Duke of Northumberland's men, with a trumpet and a standard, fortie of them in beluet coats on their harnesse: next the lord priute scales men, a hundred, with a trumpet and a standard: next the marques of North-hamptons men a hundred with a trumpet and a standard: next the earle of Rutlands men fiftie, with a trumpet and a standard, twenty of them in beluet cassocks on their harnesse: next the earle of Huntingdon, fiftie with a trumpet, and a standard: next the earle of Pembrokes men, 100. with a trumpet and a standard: next the lord Darcie 50. with a trumpet and a standard: last of all the L. wardens of the Cinqueports 100. with a trumpet and a standard. All these rode twise afoze the king siue in a ranke all in complete harnesse, and well horsed.

The 20. of December, doctor Tunstall bishop of Durham, which had long laine at his house by Colharbard in Chamis stræte, was had from thence to the tower of London.

1552

The 21. of December, the great seale was taken from the lord Rich being then lord Chancellor of England, by the Duke of Northumberland, and the earle of Pembroke in the afternoon: and on the next morowe the keeping thereof was committed to doctor Godtrike bishoppe of Ely, one of the kings counsell, he was sworne lord chancelor on the 22. of January in the Chancery, the lord treasurer gave him his oth.

Duke of Som-  
erset behead-  
ed.

The 22. of January Edward duke of Somerset was beheaded on the towler hill. The same morning early the constables of every warde in London (according to a precept directed from the counsell to the Maior) streightly charged euery household of the same citie not to depart any of them out of their houses before ten of the clocke of that day, meaning thereby to restrain the great number of people, that otherwises were like to haue bene at the said execution: notwithstanding by seuen a clock the tower hill was couered with a great



a great multitude, repairing from all parts of the citie, as well as out of the suburbs, and before 8. of the clocke the duke was brought to the scaffold inclosed with the kings gard, the sheriffs officers, the warders of the towler, & other wolth halbarbs: the duke being ready to haue been executed, suddenly the people were diuised into a great feare, few or none knowing the cause: wherefore I thinke it good to write what I saw concerning that matter.

Great feare  
with small cause

The people of a certaine hamlet, which were warned to be there by 7. of the clocke to giue their attendance on the lieutenant, now came through the posterne, & perceiuing the D. to be already on the scaffold, the foremost began to run, crying to their follovers to follow fast after, which suddenness of these men being weaponed with bills and halbarbs thus running, caused the people which first saw them, to thinke some power had come to haue rescued the duke from execution, and therefore to crie away, away, whereupon the people ran some one way some another, many fell into the towler ditch, and they which carried thought some pardon had been brought, some saide it thundered, some that a great rumbling was in the earth vnder them, some that the ground moued, but there was no such matter, more than the trampling of their fete, which made some noise.

The 17. of February, on which day was receiued the booke of the reliefe of all the wardes of London towards the new hospitals by the kings commissioners. The counsell dined at M. Cowpers the sherife, and after dinner master Thomas Courteys alderman came thither to speake with the lord chancelor for a matter he had depending afore him in the chancerie, but for his misdeemeanor in words and signes to the lord chancelor at that time, the said M. Courteys was committed to ward in the Fleet.

The 26. of February, sir Ralph a Vane and sir Miles Partridge were hanged on the tower hill, sir Michael Stanhope with sir Thomas Arundel were beheaded there: all which foure persons toke on their death that they neuer offended against the kings maiestie, nor against any of his counsell.

Ann. reg. 6.  
Sir Ralph a  
Vane and other  
executed.

The last of Aprill, through negligence of the gun-powder makers, a certaine house nere to the Tower of London, with three last of powder, was blowne vp and bent, the gun-powder makers being sixteen in number, were all slaine.

House blowne  
up with gun-  
powder.

The 16. of May, was a godly muster of horsemen made before the king in the parke at Greenwich.

Muster of  
horsemen.

Vnder the kings banner, his band of pensioners, in number 150. euery pensioner two great horses and a gelding, the lord Bray their lieutenant.

The lord Marques of Winchester high treasurer, vnder his banner the faulcon, one hundred men.

The duke of Northumberland great master of the kings household, vnder the white lyon and the ragged staffe, fiftie.

The duke of Suffolke, vnder the vntcorne in the star, an hundred and ten.

The earle of Bedford lord priuie seale, vnder the goat, an hundred.

The marques of North-hampton high chamberlaine, vnder the maiden head, an hundred.

The earle of Warwicke master of the kings hozses, vnder the white lyon, fiftie.

The earle of Huntington vnder his banner, fiftie.

The earle of Rutland vnder the peacocke, fiftie.

The earle of Pembroke vnder the greene dragon, fiftie.

The lord Darcie vnder the maidens bodie, fiftie.

The lord Cobham vnder the Sartzens head, fiftie.

The lord Clinton lord admirall vnder the anchor, fiftie.

The lord Warden of the fine ports, vnder the rose in the sunne beames, an hundred.

Ro. Greene.  
Garter and  
George taken  
from the lord  
Paget by the  
kings appoint-  
ment.

In the moneth of Aprill befoze Saint Georges daie, Garter the king of armes was sent by the kings maiestie, to the lord Paget prisoner in the tower of London, to fet and take from him the saide lord Paget the Garter and George, pertaining to the order of the garter, which garter and George, the said king at armes called Garter toke from the said lord Paget in such order as the same was deliuered to him when he was made knight of the same order. And the said lord Paget was well content (as it seemed) to part therewith, seeing it was the kings pleasure it should be so. The king sent the same garter and George to the Earle of Warwicke sonne and heire to the Duke of Northumberland, who was made knight of the said order, in roime and place of the other.

Grey friers in  
London an hos-  
pittall.

The 26. of July, began the preparing of the Grey friers house in London for the poze fatherlesse children: and also in the latter end of the same month, began the repairing of Saint Thomas hospitall in Southwarke, for poze impotent and lame persons.

A monster.

The thirde of August, at Middleton eleuen miles from Oxford, a woman brought forth a childe, which had two perfect bodies from the nauell vpward, and were so ioined together at the nauell, that when they were laid in length, the one head and body was eastward, and the other west: the legs for both the bodies grew out at the midst where the bodies ioyned, and had but one issue for the excrements of both bodies: they liued eightene daies, and were two men children.

Great fishes.

The 8. of August, were taken at Riuinborough thre great fishes called dolphins: and the weeke following at Blackwall, were fire more taken, and brought to London, the least of them was more than any horse.

This moneth of August, began the great prouision for the poze in London, towards the which euery man was contributozie, and gaue certaine money in hand, and covenanted to giue a certaine weekeley.

Great fishes  
taken.

The 7. of October, were thre great fishes called Whirlepoles taken at Grauesend, which were drawen vp to the kings bridge at Westminster.

A prest by the  
merchant ad-  
uenturers.

In this moneth of October, the king demanded of the merchant aduenturers by way of prest of euery broad cloth then shipped to Batomes mart, twentie shillings sterling to be paid at Antwerp for certaine debt there, and they to haue the kings band for the repayment thereof, which did at that time amount to more than 48000. pound.

The

The 17. of October, the Sergeants feast was kept at Graies Inne by Mobborne, master Robert Brooke recorder of London being the principall of the new Sergeants, and five more besides him: the lord maiors and aldermen being bidden to the saide feast, rode from the lord maiors house by Fridate strate through cheape, and out at Newgate all in their scarlet gownes to the said Graies Inne.

Sergeants  
feast.

The first of Nouember, being the feast of all Saintes, the new Service booke called Of common praier began in Paules church, and the like through the whole citie, the bishop of London Doctor Ridley executing the seruice in Paules church in the forenone in his rochet onely, without coape or vestment preached in the quire: and at afternone he preached at Paules crosse, the lord maiors, aldermen, and crafts in their best liueries being present: which Sermon tending to the setting forth the saide late made Booke of Common prayer, continued till almost five of the clocke at night, so that the maiors, aldermen, and companies entered not into Paules church as had been accustomed, but departed home by torchlight. By this Booke of Common praier all coapes and vestments were forbidden through England, and prebends of Pauls left off their hoods, the bishoppes left their crosses, &c. as by an act of parliament more at large is set out.

Booke of com-  
mon praier.

After the feast of all Saintes, the upper quire in Saint Paules church in London where the high altar stood, was broken downe, and all the quire thereabout: and the table of the Communion was set in the lower quire where the priests sing.

The 23. of Nouember, the chyliden were taken into the hospitall at the Gray friers called Christs hospitall, to the number of almost foure hundred. And also sicke and poore people into the hospitall of Saint Thomas in Southwarke, in which two places, the chyliden and poore people should haue meate, drinke, lodging, and cloth, of the almes of the citie.

First chyliden  
in Christs  
hospitall.

The 3. of December, the earle of Arundell was discharged of imprisonment out of the towler of London, and went from thence to his place by the Strand.

On Christmas day in the afternone, when the lord maiors and aldermen rode to Paules, all the chyliden of Christs hospitall, stood in aray from Saint Laurence lane in Cheape toward Paules, all in one livery of russet cotton, the men chyliden with red caps, the women chyliden her chiefes on their heads, all the masters of the hospitall foremost: next them the Physicians and foure surgeons, and betwene euery twenty chyliden one woman keeper, which chyliden were in number 340.

First shew of  
the chyliden in  
Christs hospi-  
tall.

The king kept his Christmas with open household at Grænelich, George Ferrers gentleman of Lincolns Inne, being lord of the merrie disportes all the twelve daies, who so pleasantly and wisely behaued himselfe, that the king had great delight in his pastimes.

1552  
Lord of merie  
disportes.

On munday the fourth of January, the said lord of merrie disportes came by water to London, and landed at the towler wharfe, entered the towler, and then rode through towler strate, where he was receiued by Sergeant Vawce lord of misraile to John Mainard one of the sherifs of London, and so conducted

The sherifes  
lord of misraile.

through the citie with a great company of yong lordes and gentlemen to the house of sir George Barne lord maior, where he with the chiefe of his company dined, and after had a great banquet, and at his departure, the lord maior gave him a standing cup with a cover of silver and gilt, of the value of ten pound for a reward, and also set a hogthead of wine and a barrell of beere at his gate for his traine that followed him, the residue of his gentlemen and servants dined at other aldermens houses, and with the sheriffs, and so departed to the tower wharfe againe, and to the court by water, to the great commendation of the maior and aldermen, and highly accepted of the king and counsell.

*An. reg. 7.*

A parliament.

In the month of January, the king fell sicke of a cough at White hall, which grievously encreased, and at the last, ended in a consumption of the lights.

The first of March began a parliament at Westminister, and all the lordes spirituall and temporall assembled that daie in the White hall in their robes, where a sermon was preached in the kings chappell by doctor Ridley bishop of London, and his maiesty with diuers lordes received the communion. Which being done, the king with the lordes in order, went into the kings great chamber on the kings stee, which that day was prepared for the lordes house: the king sitting under his cloth of estate, and all the lordes in their degrees, the bishop of Ely doctor Godrike lord Chancelor, made a proposition for the king: which being ended, the lordes departed. This was done, because the king was sickely.

The morrow after, the burgeses sate in the common house at Westminister, and chose for their speaker master Diar, one of the late made sergeants at the law.

The 3. of March being good friday, the parliament brake up, and was clayed by dissolued at the kings palace of White hall at 7. of the clocke at night.

The 3. of Aprill, being munday after Easter day, the children of Christs hospitall in London came from thence through the citie to the sermon kept at S. Maries spittle, all clothed in plonket coates and red caps, and the maiden children in the saure livery, with kerchiefs on their heads, all which with their matrones and other gouernors were there placed on a scaffold of eight stages, and there sate the same time, which was a goodly shew.

*Widwell given to the citie at London.*

The tenth of Aprill, the lord maior of London was sent for to the court at White hall, and there at that time the kings maiesty gave to him, to the commonaltie and citizens, for to be a worke-house for the poore and idle persons of the Citie of London, his place of Widwell, and seven hundred markes land of the Sauoy rents, with all the beds, bedding, and other furniture of the hospitall of the Sauoy, towards the maintenance of the said worke-house of Widwell. And the hospitall of Saint Thomas in Southworke, king Edward confirmed the said gift, by his charter dated the six and twentieth of June next following.

The 11. of Aprill, the lord maior was presented to the king in his palace of White hall at Westminister, and was made knight by his maiesty, and the same day the king remoued in the afternone to Greenwich.

In this month of Aprill and in May, commissioners were directed through England,



England, for all the church goods remaining in cathedrall and parish churches, that is to say, Jewels of golde and silver, crosses, candlesticks, censers, chalices, and all other such like, with their ready money, to be deliuered to the master of the kings Jewels in the tower of London, all coopes and vestments of cloth of gold, cloth of tistue, and silver, to the master of the kings wardrobe in London, the other coopes, vestments, and ornaments to be sold, and the money to be deliuered to the kings treasurer sir Edmond Peckham knight, reseruing to euery church one chalice or cup, with table clothes for the communion board at the discretion of the commissioners, which were for London the lord Bishop, the lord chiefe Justice, with other.

Jewels and church plate called into the kings hands.

The 20. of May, by the encouragement of one Sebastian Cabot, three great ships wel furnished were set forth for the aduenture of the unknowne voyage to Posconia, and other east partes by the north seas, diuers merchants and other being free of that voyage, yeldeo towards the charges of the same five and twenty pounds apiece. Sir George Barnes and sir William Garrard being the principall doers therein.

Voyage to Posconia.

About the same time two other ships were sent to seeke aduentures southwards.

Whiles king Edward lay dangerously sicke, lord Gilford the duke of Northumberland fourth son, married lady Iane the duke of Suffolks daughter, whose mother being then allue, was daughter to Mary king Henries sister, which was first married to the french king, and after to Charles duke of Suffolke. Also the earle of Pembrokes eldest son married lady Katherine, the said dukes second daughter. And Martin Keies gentleman porter, married Mary the third daughter of the duke of Suffolke. And the Earle of Huntingtons son called lord Hastings, married Katherine youngest daughter to the duke of Northumberland.

Three notable marriages at Durham place.

King Edward being about the age of 16. yeres ended his life at Greenewich, on the first of July, when he had reigned six yeres, five moneths, and odde daies, and was buried at Westminster. He was in this his youth a prince of such forwardnes in vertue, learning, and all godly gifts, as seldome hath been scene the like.

King Edward deceased.

The 8. of July, the lord maior of London was sent for to the court then at Greenewich, to bring with him six aldermen, as many merchants of the staple, and as many merchant aduenturers, vnto whom by the counsell was secretly declared the death of king Edward, and also how he had ordained for the succession of the crowne by his letters pattents, to the which they were sworn, and charged to keepe it secret.

King Edwards death opened.

The 10. of July in the afternone about 3. of the clocke, lady Iane daughter to Francis Dutchesse of Suffolke, (which Lady Iane was married to the lord Gilford Dudley, fourth sonne to the duke of Northumberland) was conveyed by water to the tower of London, and there receiued as Quene. After five of the clocke the same afternone, was proclamation made of the death of king Edward the first, and how he had ordained by his letters pattents, bearing date the 21. of June last past, that the ladie Iane (as is aforesaid) should

Lady Iane proclaimed queene.

be helte to the crowne of England, and the helte males of his body, &c.

Gilbert Port  
punished in  
Cheape.

The 11. of July, Gilbert Port taylor to Ninion Saunders vintner, dwelling at S. Johns head within Ludgate, who was accused by the saide Saunders his master, was set on the Pillory in Cheap with both his eares nailed, and cleane cut off for words speaking at the time of the proclamation of Ladie Iane, at which execution was a Trumpet blowne, and a Herault in his coat of armes read his offence, in presence of William Garrard one of the Sheriffes of London.

Ben drowned  
at London  
bydige.

About 5. of the clocke the same day in the afternone, Ninion Saunders master to the said Gilbert Port and Iohn Owen a gunmaker, and both gunners of the tower, comming from the tower of London by water in a Whirrie, and shoting London bydge towards the Black friers, were drowned at S. Mary Lock, and the whirry men saved by their Dres.

Lady Mary  
proclaimed  
Queene at  
Dorwich.

The 12. of July, the lady Mary sent to Norwich to be proclaimed there, which they refused to do, for that they were not certain of the kings death: but on the next day after they did not only proclaime hir, but also sent hir men and munition to aid her.

Preparation to  
go against Lady  
Mary.

The same twelfth of July, word was brought to the Councell, being then in the tower with the ladie Iane, that the ladie Mary, eldest daughter to King Henry the eight, was at Weninghall castle in Dorffolke, and with her the earle of Bath, Sir Thomas Wharton sonne to the Lorde Wharton, Sir Iohn Mordant sonne to the Lorde Mordant, Sir William Drurie, Sir Iohn Shelton, Sir Henry Bedingfield, Master Henry Iernigham, Master Iohn Sulierde, Master Richard Frelton, Master Sargeant Morgan, M. Clement Higham of Lincolnnes Inne, and diuers others, and also that the Earle of Suffr, and Master Henry Ratchiffe his sonne were comming towards her: whereupon by speedie counsell it was there concluded, that the Duke of Suffolke with certaine other noblemen, shoulde go towards the ladie Mary, to fetch hir by to the tower: this was first determined: but by night of the same date, the said voiage of the Duke of Suffolke was cleane dissolved by the spectall meanes of the lady Iane his daughter, who taking the matter heauilie, with weeping teares made request to the whole councell, that hir father might tarry at home in her company: whereupon the counsell perswaded with the duke of Northumberland, to take that voiage vpon him, saying, that no man was so fit therfore, because that he had atchieued the victorie in Dorffolke once already, and was therfore so feared, that none durst once lift vp their weapon against him: besides that, he was the best man of war in the realme, as wel for the ordering of his rampes and souldiers both in battell and in their tentes, as also by experience, knowledge & wise doings, he could both animate his army with witty perswasions, & also pacify and alay his enemies pride with his stout courage, or else to dissuade them if need were, from their enterpryse. Finally said they, this is the short and long, the Queene will in no wise grant, that her father shall take it vpon him: wherefore (quoth they) we think it good, if it may please your grace, it lieth in you to remedy the matter. Well (quoth the duke then) since ye thinke it good, I and mine will go, not doubting of your fidelitie to the queens maiesty

which

which I leaue in your custody: So that night he sent for both lordes, knightes and other that shoulde go with him, and caused all things to bee prepared accordingly: then went the counsell in to the ladie lane, and tolde her of their conclusion, who humbly thanked the Duke for reseruing her father at home, and beseeched him to vse his diligence, whereto he answered, that he would do what in him laie.

The morrow following, great preparation was made, the Duke early in the morning called for his owne harnesse, and sawe it made ready at Durham place, where he appointed all his retinue to meete.

The same day carts were laden with munition and artillery, and felds pieces were set for ward.

The same forenoon the duke moued erstwhiles the counsell to send their powers after him, as it was before determined, & same to meet with him at Belsmarket, and they promised they would. He said further to some of them: My lordes, I and these other noble personages, with the whole army that nowe go forth, as well for the behalfe of you and yours, as for the establisshing of the Englishnes, shall not onelie aduenture our bodie and liues amongst the bloudie strokes and cruell assaults of our aduersaries in the open fields, but also we do leaue the conseruation of our selues, children, and families at home here with you, as altogether committed to your truth and fidelities, whom, if we thought ye woulde through malice, conspiracy, or dissention leaue vs your friendes in the byters and betraie vs, wee coulde as well sundry waies foresee and prouide for our owne safegardes, as anie of you, by betraying vs, can doe for yours. But nowe vpon the onelie trust and faithfulness of your honors, whereof wee thinke our selues most assured, wee do hazarde our liues, which trust and promise if yee shall violate, hoping thereby of life and promotion, yet shall not God conuict you innocent of our bloods, neither acquitte you of the sacred and holie oth of alleageance made swelie by you to this vertuous lady the queenes highnesse, who by your and our enticement, is rather of force placed therein, than by her owne seeking and request. Consider also, that Gods cause, which is the preferment of his woode, and feare of papistes entraunce, hath beene (as yee haue heere before alwaies saide) the originall ground whereupon yee euen at the first motion graunted your good willes and consentes thereunto, as by your handes writing appeareth: and thinke not the contrarie, but if yee meane deceyte, though not forthwith, yet heereafter God will reuenge the same.

Duke of Northumberland sent against the lady Mary, his words to the Ladies.

I can saie no more, but in this troublesome time with you to vse constant hearts, abandoning all malice, enmie, and pinate affections: and therewith, all the first course for the lordes came vp, wherefore the duke shut vp his talke with these wordes: I haue not spoken to you in this sort vpon anie mistrust I haue of your truthes, of which alwaies I haue euer hitherto conceiued a trusty confidence, but I haue put you in remembrance thereof, what chauce of variance soeuer might grow amongst you in mine absence, and this I prae you, with mee not woode god speede in this iourney, than yee woulde haue to your selues. My lord, saith one of them, if ye mistrust any of vs in this matter, your

grace is far deceived, for which of vs can wash his hands cleane thereof? and if we shoulde thinke from you as from one that were culpable, which of vs can excuse himselfe to be guiltles? therefore herein your doubt is to far cast. I pray god it be (quoth the duke) let vs go to dinner: and so they sate down. After dinner the duke went in to the D. where his commission was by that time sealed, for his lieutenant shippe of the army, and then toke his leaue of hir, and so did certaine other lords also.

Then as the Duke came through the counsell chamber, hee tooke his leaue of the Earle of Arundell, who praised God bee with his grace, saying, he was soze it was not his chance to go with him, and beare him companie, in whose presence he could find in his heart to spend his bloude, euen at his feete: then the earle of Arundell tooke Thomas Louell the Dukes bote by the hande, and saide, fare well gentle Thomas with all my heart. Then the duke, with the L. Marques of Northampton, the L. Grey, and diuers other, tooke their barge, and went to Durham place, and to White hall, where that night they mustered their men: and the next daie in the morning, the Duke departed with the number of 600. men, or thereabouts. And as they rode thorough Shorditch, saith the duke to the Lord Grey, the people presse to see vs, but not one saith God speede vs.

The same day sir Iohn Gates and other went out after the duke.

By this time word was brought to the tower, that the Lady Mary was fled to Flamingham castle in Suffolke; where the people of the countrey almost wholy resorted to hir; and that William L. Windsor, sir Edward Hastings, Sir Edmond Pecham with others, were proclaiming Quene Mary in Buckinghamshire, sir Io. Williams in Dorsetshire, &c.

About this time, sixe Ships well manned, that were appointed to lie before Portsmouth, and to haue taken the ladie Mary if she had fled that waie, were by force of weather driven into the Hauen, where one Maister Ierningham was raising powder on the Ladie Maries behalfe, who hearing thereof, came thither, whereupon the captaines tooke a boate and went to the ships, but the Sailers and Souldiers asked Maister Ierningham what he would haue, and whether he would haue their Captaines or no? and he said yea: marie said they shall haue them, or we will throwe them into the bottome of the Sea, but the Captaines sayde forthwith, that they would serue Quene Marie willingly, and so brought forth their men, and conuected with them their great Ordnance: At the comming of these Shippes the ladie Marie was woonderfull ioyous, and afterwarde doubted little the Dukes puissance: but when newes thereof was brought to the Tower, each man there beganne to draw backward, and ouer that, word of a greater mischief was brought to the Tower, that is to saie, that the Noblemens tenants refused to serue their lords against quene Marie.

The duke thought long for his succors, and wrote somewhat sherpelie to the counsell at the tower in that behalfe, as well for lacke of men as of munition, but a slender answer had he againe: And from that time forward certaine of the counsell, to wit, the earle of Pembroke, and sir Th. Cheyney lord Warden,

and



and other, sought to get out of the Tower to consult in London, but couide not yet.

The 16. of July, being Sunday, doctor Ridley Bishop of London, by commandment of the counsell preached at Pauls crosse, where he vehemently perswaded the people in the title of the ladie Iane, late proclaimed Q. and inuited earnestly against the title of lady Marie, &c.

The same 16. of July, the lord Treasurer was gone out of the tower to his house in London at night, and forthwith about 7. of the clocke the gates of the tower vpon a sodain were shut vp, and the keyes bozn vp to the lady Iane, which was for feare of some packing in the T. treasurer, but he was fetched again to the tower, about 12. of the clocke in the night.

The 18. day, the D. perceiving that the succors promised came not to him, and also receiuing from some of the counsell letters of discomfirt, hee returned from Bury backe againe to Cambridge.

The 19. of Iulie, the Councell, partlie moued with the right of the ladie Mariess cause, partlie considering, that the most of the realme was wholy bent on her side, chaunged their mindes, and assembled themselves at Baimardes castle, where they communed with the Earle of Pembroke: And the earle of Shrewsburie, with Sir Iohn Mason Cleark of the Councell, spake to the lordes spaiors secretly, that he with the Sheriffes and such other of the Aldermen with the Recorder, as he thought best, to make him and the Councell at Baimardes Castle, within lesse than an houre: which they did, where the counsell declared to the lordes spaiors and his brethren, that hee and they must ride with them into Cheape to proclaim a newe Quene, which was the ladie Mariess grace, daughter to King Henry the eight; and they riding from thence to Pauls Church-parke, and into Cheape, the people were so assembled, that the Lordes couide not ride by them to the Crosse, where spaior Gattar king at armes in his rich Coate of armes, with a Trumpet beeing readie, the Trumpet was sounded, and then they proclaimed the ladie Mary, Daughter to King Henry the eight and Quene Katherine, Quene of Englande, Fraunce, and Irelande, defender of the faith, &c. Which Proclamation ended, the Lordes spaiors, and all the Counsell rode to Pauls Church, where the Canticle of *Te Deum* was sounge. And the same night the Earle of Arundell, and the Lordes Pager, rode in posse to Quene Mary with thirtie horse with them.

The counsell  
assembled at  
Baimardes ca-  
stle.

Lady Mary  
proclaimed  
Quene.

The 20. of Iulie, Iohn Duke of Northumberland, beeing then in Cambridge, and hauing sure knowledge, that the ladie Mary was by the Nobilitie and others of the Counsell remaining at London proclaimed Quene; about five of the clocke the same night, he with such other of the nobilitie as were in his companie, came to the market crosse of the towne, and calling for an Herald, himselfe proclaimed quene Mary, and among other he thewe vpp his owne cappe, and within an houre after he had letters from the counsell, by the bandes of Richard Rose herault: Dated at Westminster the 20. of Iune in some following.

Duke of Northumberland  
proclaimed  
Mary at Cambridge.

In the name of our Soueraigne Lady Mary the Quene to bee declared to  
the

Counsellors let-  
ters to the Duke  
of Northum-  
berland.

the Duke of Northumberland, and all other of his band of what degree soever they be.

Ye shall command and charge in the Quenes highnesse name, the saide Duke to disarm himselfe, and to cease all his men of war: and to suffer no part of his army to doe any villanie, or any thing contrary to the peace: and himselfe to forbear his coming to this citie untill the Quenes pleasure be expressely declared unto him. And if he will shewe himselfe like a good quiet subiect, we will then continue as wee have begunne, as humble suiters to our soueraigne lady the Quenes highnesse for him and his, as for our selues. And if he do not, we will not faile to spend our liues in subduing him and his.

Item, ye shall declare the like matter to the Marquesse of Dorsethampton, and all other noble men and gentlemen, and to all men of war being with any of them.

Item, ye shall in all places where ye come, notifie it, If the Duke of Northumberland do not submit himselfe to the Quenes highnesse, Quene Marie, he shall be accepted as a traytour. And all we of the nobilitie that were counsellors to the late king, will to the uttermost portion, persecute him and his to their utter confusion. Thom. Cant. archbishop, Thomas Elie Chancelor, Will. Winchester Marquesse, I. Bedforde Earle, H. Suffolke Duke, F. Shrewsburie Earle, W. Penbrough Earle, Thomas Darcy Lozde Chamberlaine, R. Cotton, W. Peter secretarie, W. Cecill second secretarie, I. C. I. Baker Chancelor of the tenth, I. Mafen master of requests, R. Bowes master of the Kols.

Duke of North-  
umberland  
arrested.

The rumour of these letters was no sooner abroad, but euery man departed. And shortly after, the Duke was arrested in the Kings Colledge by one master Slegge, Sergeant at armes. At the last letters were brought from the counsell at London, that all men should go each his way: Whereupon the Duke said to them that kept him, Ye doe me wrong to withdraw my libertie, for ye not the Counsellors letters without exception, that all men should go whither they would: At which wordes, they that kept him and the other Noble men, let them at libertie, and so continued they for that night, insomuch, that the Earle of Marwick was readie in the morning to haue rode awaie, but then came the Earle of Arundale from the quene to the Duke into his Chamber, who went out to meete him, and as soon as he sawe the Earle of Arundale, he fell on his knees, and desired him to be good to him, for the loue of God, consider (saith he) I haue done nothing but by the consents of you and all the whole Counsell: My Lord (quoth the Earle of Arundell) I am sent hither by the Quenes maiestie, and in her name I doe arrest you: and I obey it my Lord (quoth he) I beseech you my Lord of Arundell (quoth the Duke) vse mercie towards mee, knowing the case as it is: my Lord (quoth the Earle) ye should haue sought for mercie sooner, I must doe according to my commandement, and therewith he committed the charge of him, and of other to the guard and gentlemen that rode by.

The 25. of July, the Duke with other were brought by to the Tower of London, under the conduct of Henry Earle of Arundale, with a great number of light horse-men, bowes and speares, they came into London at bishops gate, all the streets as he passed by standing with men, in harnessse aforesaid every mans doore, till hee came to the Tower wharfe: the prisoners names that came in at that time, were the Duke of Northumberlande, the Earle of Warlike, the Earle of Huntingdon, the lord Hastings, lord Ambrose Dudley, lord Henrie Dudley, sir Andrewe Dudley, sir Iohn Gates, Henrie Gates, sir Thomas Palmer, doctor Sands, but when they came to the Tower, the Earle of Arundell discharged the lord Hastings, and had him awaie with him.

Duke of Northumberland brought to the Tower.

On the five and twentieth, the lord Marquess of Northampton, the bishop of London, the lord Robert Dudley, and sir Robert Corbet were brought from the Quenes campe into the Tower. And thus was the matter ended without bloodshed, which men feared would have brought the death of many thousands.

Queene Mary.



Mary, the eldest daughter of King Henrie the eight, *An. reg. 1.* began her raigne the first of July, in the yere 1553. when she dissolved her campe at Framingham, which was to the number of 13000. men, the Earle of Sussex being lieutenant of the armie: victuals were of such plentie, that a barrell of beere was solde for five pence with the caske, and foure great loaves of bread for a penny.

The 27. of July, sir Roger Cholmely lord chiefe Justice of the kings bench, sir Edmond Mountague lord chiefe iustice of the common place, were sent to the Tower, on the next morrow Henry duke of Suffolke, and sir Iohn Cheeke were had to the Tower.

On the 30. of July, the lady Elizabeth sister to the Quene, rode from her place at Strand, (where she had lien the night before) through the city of London, out at Aldgate toward the Quene, accompanied with 1000. horse, of knights, ladies, gentlemen and their servants.

On the 31. of July, the duke of Suffolke was discharged out of the tower, by the earle of Arundell, and had the quenes pardon.

Queene Mary came from Mansfield in Essex, to London on the 3. of August, being brought in with her nobles very honorably, and strongly, the number of helmet coats that did ride before her, as well strangers as others were 740. and the number of ladies and gentlewomen that followed, was 180. The earle of Arundale riding next before her, bare a sword in his hand, and sir Anthony Browne did beare by her traine. The lady Elizabeth her sister followed.

loved her next, and after her the lord marquisse of Excesters wife. The garde followed the ladies, and after them Northamptonshire and Dorsetshire men, and then Buckinghamshire men, and after them the lords servants: the whole number of horse-men were esteemed to bee about 1000. The Quene staid without Aldgate, before the stage, whereon the poore children of the hospitall were placed, and one of them made to her an Oracion. Sir George Barnes then lord Mayor, with the Aldermen, brought her into the citie, the lord Mayor riding next to the earle of Arundale, with a Scepter or mace in his hand. A great peale of ordinance was shotte off at the Tower of London, when the Quene entered the Citie through Aldgate, by to Leaden hall, then downe Grace stræte, Fanchurch stræte, Marke lane, Tower stræte, and so into the Tower, where Thomas duke of Norfolk, doctor Gardener late Bishoppe of Winchester, Edward Courtney sonne and heire to Henry marquisse of Excestre, the Dutchesse of Somerset, prisoners in the Tower, kneeling on the hill within the same tower, saluted her grace, and she came to them and kissed them, & said, these be my prisoners. On the next morrow, Edward Courtney was made marquisse of Excestre, and the other fornamed prisoners pardoned, and discharged in the Quenes chamber.

The 5. of August, Edmond Bonner late Bishop of London, prisoner in the Marshalsea, and Cuthbert Tonsall the olde bishop of Durham prisoner in the Kings bench, had their pardons, and were restored to their Sees. Shortly after all the Bishops which had bene deposed in the time of king Edward the first, were restored to their Bishopricks, and the other which were placed in king Edwards time, removed: also all beneficed men that were married, or would not forsake their opinion, were put out of their livings. & other known to be of the contrarie part, were set in the same, especially if any were alive, that had of late bene put out of the same, as bishop Daie of Chichester, Heath of Worcester, &c.

Sir Nicholas Hare master of the Hols, was made keeper of the great scale, for the space of a fortnight or thereabout.

The 9. of August, in the afternoon, the Quene helde an Obsequie in the tower for king Edward, the dirge being sung in Latin, and on the morrowe a masse of Requiem, whereat the Quene with her ladies offered. The same daie the corpes of king Edward was buried at Westminster, the lord Treasurer, the Earle of Pembroke, and the Earle of Shrewsburie being chiefe mourners, with diuers other noble men and other. Doctor Daie Bishop of Chichester preached at the said burfall, and all the seruice with a Communion was in English.

The 11. of August, certaine gentlemen minding to passe under London bridge in a whirrie, were there ouerturned, and 7. of them drowned, one was master T. Bridges sonne.

The 13. of August, master Bourne a Chanon of Pauls preaching at Pauls crosse, not onely praised for the dead, but also declared, that Doctor Bonner bishop of London (late restored, and there in presence) for a sermon by him made in the same place, vpon the same Gospell, was about foure yeres since,

Bishops restored  
and other  
displaced.

Burfall of  
king Edward.

Men drowned  
at London  
bridge.



since, vnlawfully cast into the vile prison of the Marshalsea, and there kept during the reigne of king Edward: which saying so offended some of the audience, that they breaking silence, said the bishop had preached abomination, or ther some cried (meaning of the preacher) pull him out, pull him out, and some being nere the pulpit, began to cline, wherewith the preacher stepped backe, and one Maister Bradford a preacher of King Edwards time, stepped into his place, and gentlie perswaded the audience to quietnes and obedience, alleading 3. Paul to the Romans: Let every soule submit himselfe to the authoritie of the higher powers, &c. Neuer theles master Bourne standing by Maister Bradford, one threw a dagger at him, which hit a side post of the pulpit, and rebounded back again a great way, whereupon M. Bradford brake off his speech, and forced himselfe with the helpe of Io. Rogers another preacher, to conuete M. Bourne out of the audience, which with great labor they brought into Pauls Schole.

A dagger  
throwne at the  
preacher.

The 18. of August, Iohn Dudley Duke of Northumberlande, William Parre Marques of Dorhampton, and Iohn Carle of Marthwicke son and heire to the duke, were arraigned at Westminister hall, befoze Thomas D. of Dorfolke, high steward of England, where the duke of Northumberland with great reverence towards the iudges, protested his faith and alleageance to the queen, whome he confessed greivously to haue offended, and said, that he meant not to speake any thing in defence of his fact, but requested to vnderstande the opinion of the court in two points. First, whether a man doing any act by authoritie of the princes counsell and by warrant of the great seale of England, and doing nothing without the same, might bee charged with treason for any thing which he might do by warrant thereof. Secondly, whether any such persons as were equally culpable in that crime, and those, by whose letters and commandements he was directed in all his doings, might be his iudges, or passe vpon his tryall as his Peeres.

Duke of Northumberland  
and other arraigned.

Whereunto was answered, that as concerning the first, the great Seale (which he laid for his warrant) was not the seale of the lawfull Queene of the realme, nor passed by authoritie, but the seale of an vsurper, and the refoze could bee no warrant to him. As to the second, it was alledged, that if any were as deeply to be touched in that case as himselfe, yet so long as no attaindo: were of record against them, they were neuer the les persons able in law to passe vpon any triall, and not to be chalenged therefore, but at the princes pleasure. After which ans were, the Duke vsed few words, but confessed the inditement, by whose example the other prisoners arraigned with him did the like, and thereupon had iudgement.

And when iudgement was giuen the duke saide, I beseech you my lordes, all to be humble suiters to the M. maiestie, and to grant mee foure requestes, which are these. First, that I maie haue that death which noble men haue had in times past, and not the other. Secondlie, that her Maiestie will bee gracious to my childe, which maie hereafter do good seruice, considering, that they went by my commandement, who am their father, and not of their owne free willes. Thirdly, that I maie haue appointed to mee some learned man

for the instruction and quiet of my conscience. And fourthlie, that shee will send two of the counsell, to commune with mee, to whome I will declare such matters as shall be expedient for her and the common weale: and thus I beseech you all to pray for me.

On the nineteenth of August were arraigned at Westminster, Sir Iohn Gates, Sir Henry Gates, Sir Andrew Dudley, and Sir Thomas Palmer, where without anie quest they pleaded guiltie, and submitted themselves to the Quenes mercie, and so hadde iudgement.

The twentieth of August, Doctor Watson, Chaplaine to the Bishoppe of Winchester preached at Paules Crosse, by the Quenes appointment, and for feare of the like tumult, as had beene the Sundae last past, certain lordes of the Counsell repaired to the Sermon, as the Lorde Treasurer, the Lorde Prinsie Seale, the Earle of Bedforde, the Earle of Pembroke, the Lorde Wentworth, the Lord Rich, and Sir Henrie Gernigam captaine of the gard, with 200. of the guard, which stode about the Preacher with halberts. Also the Maior had warned the companies of the citie to be present in their liuries, which was well accepted of the Quenes counsell, and the Sermon was quietlie ended.

Preacher at  
Paules Crosse  
guarded.

Duke of North-  
umberland  
beheaded.

The twentie two of August, Sir Iohn Cage Lieutenent of the Tower, deliuered to the Sheriffes of London, by Indenture these prisoners following: first Sir Iohn Gates was brought forth, and set at the Garden Gate, then the Duke of Northumberlande, was likewise brought forth, and Sir Thomas Palmer after him: When the Duke and Sir Iohn Gates mette, Sir Iohn saith the Duke, God haue mercie vpon vs, for this date shall ende both our liues, and I praye you forgie me what soeuer I haue offended, and I forgie you with all my heart, although you and your counsell was a great occasion hereof: Well my Lorde quoth Sir Iohn Gates, I forgie you, as I woulde bee forgiven, and yet you and your authoritie was the originall cause of all togither, but the Lorde pardon you, and I praye you forgie me. So either making obeisance to other, the Duke proceeded, and when he came vpon the Scaffold, hee putting off his Coloure of Crane coloured Damaske, leaped vpon the East Raile, and saide to the people: God people, all you that be here present to see mee die, though my death bee odious, and horrible to the flesh, yet I praye you iudge the best in Gods woordes, for hee doth all for the best. And as for mee, I am a wretched sinner, and haue deserved to die, and most iustlie am condemned to die by lawe. And yet this Acte wherefore I die, was not altogether of mee (as it is thought) but I was procured and induced thereunto by other, I was, I saie induced thereunto by other: Howbeit, God so bidde that I shoulde name anie man vnto you, I will name no man vnto you, and therefore I beseech you looke not for it. I for my part forgie all men, and praye God also to forgie them. And if I haue offended any of you here, I praye you and all the worlde to forgie mee; and most chiefeilie I desire forgiveness of the quenes highnesse, whome I haue most greivously offended. And I praye you all to witness with mee, that I depart in perfect loue and charitie with all the worlde, and that you will assist me with your prayers.

praiers at the houre of death. The rest of his speech almost in euerie point, was the like as hee hadde saide in the Chappell of the Tower, in the daie before, saying, when hee hadde made confession of his beleefe, hee hadde these wordes. And heere I doe protest vnto you good people, mosse earnestlie, even from the bottome of my heart, that this which I haue spoken is of my selfe, not being required nor moued thereunto by any man, nor for any flatterie, or hope of life, and I take witnesse of my Lorde of Worcester heere, mine olde friende and Ghostlie father, that hee founde mee in this minde and opinion, when hee came to mee; but I haue declared this onelie vpon mine owne minde and affection, and for the zeale and loue that I beare to my naturall Countreie. I coulde good people rehearse much more euen by experience that I haue of this euill that is happened to this Realme by these occasions, but you knowe I haue another thing to doe, whereunto I must prepare mee, for the time draweth awaie. And now I beseech the Queenes highnes to forgive mee mine offences against her Maiestie, whereof I haue a singular hope, for as much, as she hath already extended her goodnesse and clemencie so farre vpon mee, that where as she might forthwith, without iudgement or anie further tryall, haue put mee to most vile and cruell death, by hanging, drawing, and quartering, for as much as I was in the field in armes against her highnesse, her Maiestie neuertheless of her most mercifull goodnesse suffered me to be brought to my iudgement, and to haue my triall by law, where I was most iustlie and woorthilie condemned. And her highnesse hath now also extended her mercie and clemencie vpon mee, for the manner and kinde of my death. And therefore my hope is, that her grace of her goodnesse will remit all the rest of her indignation and displeasure towards mee, which I beseech you all most heartilie to praye for, and that it maie please God long to preferue her Maiestie to raigne ouer you in much honour and felicitie. After hee had thus spoken he kneeled downe, saying to them that were about him; I beseech you all to beare me witnesse that I die in the true Catholike faith, and then saide the Psalmes of *Miserere* and *De profundis*, his *Pater noster*, and five of the first Verses of the Psalm, *In te Domine speravi*, ending with this verse; Into thy handes O Lorde I commend my spirit; and when hee had thus finished his praiers, the executioner asked him forgiveness, to whome hee sayde: I forgive thee with all my heart, and doe thy parte without feare. And bowing towarde the Blocke, hee saide, I haue deserued a thousande deaths, layde his heade vpon the Blocke and so was beheaded. Whose bodie with the heade was buried in the Tower, by the bodie of Edward late Duke of Somerset, so that there lieth before the high Altar, in St. Peters church two dukes, betweene two queenes, to wit, the duke of Somerset, and the duke of Northumberland, betweene queene Anne, and queene Katherine, all foure beheaded.

burials in the Tower.

At the same time and place also, was likewise beheaded Sir Iohn Gates, Sir Iohn Gates and Sir Thomas Palmer, which Sir Iohn Gates in that place used these or like wordes. My comming hither this daie good people is to die, whereof I assure you all I am well woorthie: for I haue liued as bitiouslie and wickedlie all.

Sir Iohn Gates and Sir Thomas Palmer beheaded.

all the daies of my life as any man hath down in the world. I was the greatest reader of scripture that might be of a man of my degree: And a troupe follower thereof not liuing: for I did not read to the intent to be edified thereby, nor to seeke the glory of God: but contrariwise, arrogantly, to be seditious, and to dispute thereof, and privately to interpret it after my owne haine and affection. Wherefore good people I exhort you all to beware howe, and after what sort you come to read Gods holie word; for it is not a trifle, or playing game to deale with Gods holie mysteries: stand not too much in your owne conceits, for like as the bee of one flower doth gather honie, and the spider poison of the same, euen so you, except you humbly submit your selues to God, and charitablely reade the same to the intent to be edified thereby, it is to you as poison, and worse: and it were better for to let it alone. And then after hee had asked the Quenes highnes forgiveness, and all the world; he desired the people of their charitie to pray vnto God with him for remission of his sinnes, and then refusing the kerchiefe laide downe his heade, which was stricken off at three blowes. Sir Thomas Palmer, as sone as he came to the scaffold, toke euery man by the hand, and desired them to pray for him; then putting off his gown, hee leane upon the Cast Rayle, and saide these wordes in effect: My Masters (quoth hee) God saue you all: it is not vnknowne vnto you therefore I come hither, which I haue woorthily well deserued at Gods handes, for I know it to be his diuine ordinance, by this meanes to call mee to his mercie, and to teach mee to know my selfe, what I am, and whereunto we are all subiect: I thanke his mercifull goodnes, for he hath caused me to learne more in one little dark corner in yonder Towre, than euer I learned by any traual in so many places as I haue bin, for there (I say) I haue seen God, what he is, & how vnscardeable his wonderful works are, and how infinit his mercies be; I haue seen there my selfe thoroughly, and what I am, nothing but a lump of sin, earth, dust, and of all vilenes most vilest; I haue seen there and know what the world is, how vaine, deceitfull, transitorie, and short it is, how wicked and loathsome the works thereof are in the sight of Gods maiesty, how he neither regardeth the manaces of the proud men and mighty ones, neither despiseth the humblenes of the poore and lowly which are in the same world. If in alie, I haue seen there what death is, how nere hanging ouer euery mans head, and yet how vncertaine the time, and how vnknowne to all men, and how little it is to be feared; and should I feare death? or be sad therefore? haue I not seene two die before mine eyes? Yea, and within the hearing of mine eares? No, neither the sprinkling of the blood, or the shedding thereof, nor the bloody fire it selfe shall make me afraid; and now taking my leaue to the same, I pray you all to pray for me: come on good fellows (quoth he) art thou hee that must do the deed? I forgive thee with all my hart, and then kneeling down, laying his head on the blocke, said, I will see how meet the blocke is for my necke, I pray thee strike not yet, for I haue a few prayers to saie, and that done, strike on Gods name, god leaue haue thou, his prayers ended, and desiring each man to pray for him, hee laide downe his heade againe, and so the executioner toke it from him at one stroke.



The 23. of August, the Quene deliuered the great Seale to doctor Gardener bishop of Winchester, and made him lord chancelor.

New lord  
chancelor.  
Latin service.

The 27. of August the seruice began in Latine to be sung in Pauls church in London.

The first of September, the Q. demanded a prest of the city of London of 20000. l. to be repayed againe within foureteene daies after Michaelmas next following, which summe was lent of the aldermen, and 120. commons.

Prest to the  
Quene.

The third of September, Edward Courtney was created earle of Denonshire at Richmond.

Earle of Denonshire created.

The lord Fencers of Chartley, the lord chiefe iustice, sir Roger Cholmley, the L. Mountague, sir Io. Cheeke, and other, were deliuered out of the tower.

The 4. of September was proclained certaine new coines of gold and silver, a soueraigne of gold of 30. s, the halfe soueraigne 15. s, an angel of 10. s, the halfe angel 5. s: of silver, the groat, halfe groat, and penny. All base coines to be currant as before.

New coines.

Also the same day by proclamation, was pardoned the subbidie of foure s. the pound lands, and two s. eight d. the pound of moueable goods, granted in the last parliament of king Edward the first.

Subbidie pardoned.

The 12. of September the Quene remoued to S. James.

The 14. and 15. of September master Latimer and doctor Cranmer archbishop of Canterbury were sent to the tower of London.

The 27. of September, Q. Mary came to the tower by water, accompanied with the Lady Elizabeth her sister, and other ladies, before whose arrivall was shot a great peale of guns.

The last of September, Quene Mary rode through the Citie of London towards Westminster, sitting in a chariot of cloth of tisse drawn with fire horses, all trapped with the like cloth of tisse. She sate in a gowne of purple velvet furred with powdered ermine, hauing on her head a caule of cloth of tinsel, beset with pearle and stone, and aboue the same vpon her head, a round circlet of gold beset so richly with pretious stones, that the value thereof was inestimable, the same caule and circlet being so masse and ponderous, that she was faine to beare vpon her head with her hand, and the canopy was borne ouer her chariot. Before her rode a number of gentlemen and knights, then iudges, then doctors, then bishops, then lords, then the counsell: after whom followed the knights of the Bath, thirtene in number, in their robes, the bishop of Winchester lord Chancelor, and the marquesse of Winchester lord high treasurer, next came the duke of Norfolk, and after him the Earle of Arundell, who bare the sword before her, the maior of London in a gowne of crimson velvet bare the scepter of gold, &c. after the Quenes chariot, sir Edward Hastings led her horse in his hand: then came an other chariot, hauing a covering all of cloth of silver all white, and fire horses trapped with the like, therein sate the lady Elizabeth and the lady Anne of Cleue, then Ladies and Gentlewomen riding on horses trapped with red velvet, and their gownes and kirtles likewise of red velvet: after them followed two other chariots

Coronation.

couered with red sattin, and the hozes betrapped with the same, and certaine gentlewomen betwene euery of the saide chariots riding in crimosin sattin, their hozes betrapped with the same, the number of the gentlewomen fording were 46. besides them in the chariots. At Ffanchurch was a costly pageant made by the Genowayes: at Grace-church corner there was another pageant made by the Casserlings. At the vpper ende of Grace strate there was an other pageant made by the Florentines verie high, on the top whereof there stode foure pictures, and in the midst of them and most highest, there stode an angell all in greene, with a trumpet in his hand, and when the trumpetter who stode secretly in the pageant did sound his trumpe, the angell did put his trumpe to his mouth, as though it had bene the same that had sounded, to the great maruelling of many ignozant persons: this pageant was made with three thousand fares of gates, &c. The conduit in Coznehill ran wine, and beneath the conduit a pageant made at the charges of the citie, and another at the great conduit in Cheape, and a fountaine by it running wine. The standart in Cheape newe painted, with the waites of the Citie aloft the roof playing. The crosse in Cheape newe washed and burnished. One other pageant at the little conduit in Cheape next to Paules made by the Citie, where the aldermen stode: and when the Quene came against them, the Recorder made a short proposition to her, and then the chamberlaine presented to her in the name of the maior and the city, a purse of cloth of gold, and 1000. marks of gold in it: then she rode forth, and in Paules churchyard against the schole, one Maister Haywod fate in a pageant vnder a vine, and made to her an oration in Latine and English. Then was there one Peter a Dutch man stode on the weatherecoke of Paules keple, holding a streamer in his hand of fives yardes long, and waving thereof, stode sometime on the one fote, and shoke the other, and then kneeled on his knees, to the great maruell of all people. He had made two scaffoldes vnder him, one aboue the crosse, hauing torches and streamers set on it, and one other ouer the bole of the crosse, likewise set with streamers and torches, which could not burne the winde was so great: the said Peter had sixtene pound thirtene shillings and foure pence giuen him by the citie for his costs and paines, and all his stoffe. Then was there a pageant made against the deane of Paules gate, where the queristers of Paules plaied on vials, and song. Ludgate was newe repaired, painted, and richlie hanged, with minstrels playing and singing there: then was there another pageant at the conduit in flete strate, and the Temple barrc was newe painted and hanged. And thus she passed to White hall at Westminster, where shee toke her leaue of the lord maior, giuing him great thanks for his paines, and the Citie for their cost. On the morrow, which was the first daie of October: the Quene went by water to the olde palace, and there remained till about eleven of the clocke, and then went on fote vpon blew cloth, being railed on either side vnto Saint Peters Church, where shee was solemnlie crowned and annointed by the Bishop of Winchester, which coronation and other ceremonies then vsed according to the olde custome, was not fully ended till it was nigh foure of the clocke at night that shee returned

turned from the Church, before whom was then bozne three swords sheathed, and one naked. The great seruice that day done in Westminster hall at dinner by diuers noble men, would aske long time to write. The Lorde maior of London and twelue citizens kept the high cupbord of plate as butlers, and the Quene gaue to the Maior for his fee a cup of golde with a couer waiping seventene ounces.

The 5. of October, the parliament began at Westminster, sir Iohn Yorke, Parliament. and Henry Dudley, were deliuered out of the Tower.

The 25. day of October, the Barge of Grauesende, a Catch running vpon her, was ouerturned, and foureteene persons drowned, and sixtene saued by swimming. Grauesend Barge ouerturned.

Cardinall Poole, who had long time bene forth from this realme, and now in great estimation in the court of Rome, was sent for by Quene Mary to returne into his countrey of England. Cardinall Poole.

The 3. of Nouember, the weathercocke of Paules was set vp, which cocke waiped forty pound, his length from the bill to the taile was foure fote, and his breadth ouer the wings three fote and a halfe, the which cocke being of copper, was ouer gilt. Weathercock of Paules.

The thirteenth of Nouember, Doctor Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, Ladie Iane that was before proclaimed Quene, and the lorde Guilford her husband, and the Lorde Ambrose Dudley, were arraigned at the Guild hall of London, and condemned of treason: sir Henry Gates was deliuered out of the Tower.

The Parliament was dissolved on the first of December. And on the one and twentieth of December, began throughout England the Church seruice to be done in Latin, as was enacted by the last Parliament, and as the same had ben left in the last yere of K. Henry the eight. The Lady Iane had the liberty of the Tower, to walke in the Quenes Garden and on the hill. The Lorde Ambrose Dudley, and the Lorde Gilsford Dudley, had the liberties of the ports where they were lodged: the Marquesse of Northampton had his pardon and was deliuered. Latin seruice in the church.

In the beginning of the month of Ianuary, the Emperour sent a noble man called Edmond, and certaine other Ambassadors into England to conlude a marriage betwene K. Philip his son, and Quene Mary of England.

The 14. of Ianuary, doctor Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester, Lord Chancelor of England, in the chamber of presence at Westminster, made to the Lords, Nobility, and Gentlemen, an Oracion very eloquent, wherein he declared that the Quenes Maiestie, partly for amity, and other waighty considerations had, after much suite on the Emperours and Prince of Spaines behalfe made, determined by the consent of the Counsell and Nobilitie, to match her selfe with the saide Prince in most godly and lawfull matrimo-  
nie: and declared further, that she should haue for her iointer 30000. dockets by the yere, with all the low-countrey of Flanders, and that the issue (if there happened any) betwene them two lawfully begotten, should be heire as wel to the Kingdome of Spaine, as also to the said low-countrey. He said therefore

that they were all bound to thanke God that so noble, worthy, and famous a Prince would vouchsafe so to humble himselfe, as in this marriage to take vpon him rather as a subject, than otherwise, for the Quene and her counsell should rule all things as she did before, and that there should be of the council no stranger, neither to haue the custodie of any forts, or Castles, &c. nor beare any rule or office in the quenes house, or else-where in all England, with diuers other articles there by him rehearsed, wherefore he said the quens pleasure and request was, that like good subjects for her sake, they would most louingly receiue him with reuerence, loy and honor.

The next day, the Lord maior of London, with his brethren the aldermen, were sent for to the court, and to bring with them fortie of the head commons of the citie, vnto whom before the counsell, the lord chancelor made the like oration, desiring them to behaue themselves like good subjects with all humbleness and reioycing.

Robert Dudley sonne to the late duke of Northumberland, was arraigned at the Guild hall of London of high treason, he confessed the indictment, and had iudgement giuen by the earle of Sussex, to be drawne, hanged, boyled and quartered.

Within five daies after, there was worde brought to the court, how that sir Peter Carow, sir Gawine Carow, sir Thomas Deny with diuers other, were by in Devonshire, in the resisting of the king of Spaines comming thither, and that they had taken the city of Excester, and castle there into their custodie.

About the thre and twentieth or foue and twentieth day of January, sir James a Crofts departed from London toward Wales, as it was thought, to haue raised power there.

#### Conspiracy.

The purpose of the Quenes marriage was so grieuously taken of diuers men, that for this & for religion, they in such sort conspired against the quene, that if the matter had not broken out before the time by them appointed, men thought it would haue brought much trouble and danger.

#### Commotion in Kent by sir Thom. Wyatt.

The 25. of Januarie, sir Iohn Gage lord Chamberlaine, certified the lord maior of London, that sir Thomas VVyat with certaine other rebels, were by in Kent about Maidstone, whereupon great watch was kept, and that night the lord maior rode about to peruse the same, and euery night after two aldermen did the like: in the daytime the gates of the Citie were warded by substantiall citizens.

The 26. day of January was brought into the tower as prisoners, the lord marquisse of Northampton, sir Edward Warner, and other. And the same night there went out certaine of the gard, and other against the Kentish men. And the city of London began to be straighly kept and watched by hardned men, by the appointment of the lord treasurer, who had the day before sent for the lord maior and aldermen, and giuen them so in charge for safety of the city. And the same day, or rather on the day before, the duke of Norfolk with his power went downe toward Grauesend.

About the which time the lord Burgaunoy, by chance, encountred with sir Henry Ile (one of sir Thomas Wyats faction) and Aue 2. or 3. of his men, he dy-  
ing



ling with the rest of his company to Wyats campe.

The 27. of January, the Lorde Treasurer came to the Guilder hall from the counsell, to request the citizens to prepare 500. footemen well harneessed to go against Wyat, which was granted and made ready the same night, and on the morrow were deliuered to their capitaines, and sent to Graueland by water.

The D. of Norfolk  
folk sent against  
Wyat.

The 29. of January, the D. of Norfolk lieutenant of the army, and with him the earle of Arundell, M. Henry Ierningham capitaine of the guard, with a great number of the guard, and other souldiers, and the capitaine and souldiers that were sent from London, minded to assault Rochester Castle, where Wyat and his people late, so that vpon Thursday they were set in arraie towards Rochester byrge, which was kept by Wyats companie, and furnished with 3. or 4. double canons: but before the setting forwarde of these men, the D. sent master Nory an Herault vnto Rochester, with the Proclamation of pardon to all such as would desist from their purpose, who comming to the byrge, woulde haue gone through into the citie, but they that kept the byrge would not suffer him till that the capitaine came, who at the last graunted the same to be read in the citie, but holding a bag against him, cried, speake softly, or els they would shoot him through, so that they would not suffer the people to heare the Proclamation: which beeing ended, each man cried they had don nothing wherefore they should need any pardon, and in that quarrel which they had taken in hand, they woulde liue and die: neuertheles, at the last Sir George Harpar receiued the pardon outwardly, and being receiued vnder the D. of Norfolks protection, came on forwarde against the Lientishmen, and euen as the companie were set in a readines, and marched forwarde toward the byrge, Bret beeing capitaine of the 500. Londoners, of which the more parte were in the forwarde, turned himsele about, and drawing out his sword, saide these or like wordes: Passers wee go about to fight against our native Countrymen of England and our friends, in a quarrel vnrighful, & partly wicked, for they, considering the great miseries which are like to fall vpon vs, if wee shall be vnder the rule of the proude Spaniards or strangers, are here assembled to make resistance of their comming, for the auoiding of so great inconueniences likely to light, not onely vpon themselves, but on euery of vs & the whole realme, wherefore I thinke no English hart ought to say against them, much lesse by fighting to withstande them: wherefore I and others (meaning such as were in that ranke with him) will spend our blood in the quarrel of this worthy capitaine M. Wyat, and other gentlemen here assembled: which words once pronounced, each man turned their ordinance against their followers, and thereupon cried, a Wyat, a Wyat, of which sodaine noise, the Duke, the capitaine of the guard and other, beeing abashed, fled forthwith: immediatlie came in master Wyat and his companie on horsebacke, rushing in amongst as well the guard as the Londoners, and saide, so manie as will come and tary with vs shall bee welcome, and so manie as will depart, good leaue haue they, and so all the Londoners, part of the gard, and more than three parts of the rest, went to the campe of the Lientishmen, where they still remained. At this discomfiture, the Duke lost eight Peeces of Brasse, with all other munition

What strength-  
ned with the D.  
ordnance.

and ordurance, and himselfe with fewe other hardly escaped.

The last of January, Wyat and his compaignie came to Dertford, and the next day they came full and whole to Greenwich and Depeford, where they remained thursday, friday, and the forenoon of satterday. On the friday, which was Candlemas day, the most part of the householders of London, with the maior and aldermen were in harnesse, yea this daie and other daies the iustices, sergeants at the law, and other lawyers in Westminster hall, placed in harnesse.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 25. of January, Henry duke of Suffolke, father to the lady Iane, flying into Leiceestershire and Warwicks shire with the lord John Grey, and the lord Leonard Grey and a small company in diuers places as he went made proclamation against the queenes marriage with the pince of Spaine, &c. but the people inclined not to him.

The first day of february, proclamation was made at London, that the duke of Suffolke was discomfited, and fled with his two brethren. And also that sir Peter Carow, with his uncle sir Gawine Carow and Gibbes, were fled into France: and further, that the queene did pardon the whole campe of the Kentishmen, except Wyat, Harpar, Rudstone, and Isely, and that whosoever could take sir Thomas Wyat, except the saide four persons, should haue an hundred pound lands to him and his heires for ever.

Q. Mary came  
to the Guild  
hall in London.

The same day in the afternoon being Candlemas euen, the commons of the city assembled in their liberties at the Guild hall, whither the queene with her lordes and ladies came riding from Westminster, and there after behement words against Wyat, declared, that she meant not other wise to marry than the counsell should thinke both honorable and commotions to the realm, and that she could continue unmarried, as she had done the greatest part of her age, and therefore willed them truly to assist her, in repressing such as contrary to their dueties rebelled. When she had done, vnderstanding that many in London did fauour Wyats part, she appointed lord William Howard lieutenant of the citie, and the earle of Pembroke generall of the fildes, which both prepared all things necessary for their purpose.

Lord William  
Howard lieutenant  
of the city.

Wyat came in-  
to Southwarke

In the meane season, to wit, the third daie of february, about three of the clocke in the afternoon, sir Thomas Wyat and the Kentishmen marched forward from Depeford towards London with sixe ancientes, being by estimation about two thousand, which their coming so sone as it was perceiued, there was shot off out of the White tower sixe or eight shot, but missed them, sometime shooting ouer, and sometime short. After knowledge thereof once had in London, forthwith the drawe bridge was cutte downe, and the bridge gates shut. The maior and sherifes harnessed, commanded each man to shut in their shops and windowes, and to be readie harnessed at their doores, what chance soever might happen. By this time was Wyat entred into Kent street, and so by Saint Georges Church into Southwarke. Himselfe, and part of his compaignie came in god array downe Barmondsey strate, and they were suffered peaceably to enter Southwarke without repulse, or ante stroke stricken, either by the inhabitants, or of any other: yet was there many men of the

the countrey in the Innes, raised and brought thither by the lord William and other, to have gone against the said VVyat, but they all toynded themselves to the Gentlemen, and the inhabitants with their best entertained them. Immediately upon the said VVyats coming, he made proclamation, that no soldier should take any thing, but that he should pay for it, and that his coming was to resist the Spanish king. Notwithstanding, forthwith divers of his companie being Gentlemen (as they saide) went to Winchester place, made hauncke of the Bishops goods, (hee being lord Chancelor) not onely of his vituals, whereof there was plentie, but whatsoeuer else, not leaving so much as one Locke of a doze, but the same was taken off and carried awaie, nor a booke in his gallerie or librarie vncut, or rent into pieces, so that men might haue gone by to the knees in leaues of bookes, cut out and shrowne vnder fete.

The Bishop of Winchester's library and other his goods spoiled in Southwarke

At the bridge fote he laid two pieces of ordinance, and began a great trench betwene the bridge and him. He laid one other piece of ordinance at Saint Georges, and one going into Barmondsey strate, and an other toward the Bishop of Winchester's house.

On Shrove-tuesday the first of February sir Thomas VVyat removed out of Southwarke, toward Kingston bridge, which was done upon this occasion. The night before his departing out of Southwarke, by chance as one of the lieutenants men of the Tower named Thomas Menchen rowed with a sculler ouer-against the Bishop of Winchester's place, there was a water-man of the Tower staires, desired the said lieutenants man to take him in, who did so, which being espied of VVyats men, seuen of them with barguebuffes, called to them to land againe, but they would not, whereupon each man discharged their piece, and killed the said water-man, which forthwith falling downe dead, the sculler with much paine rowed through the bridge to the tower wharfe with the lieutenants man, and the dead man in his boate, which thing was no sooner knowen to the lieutenant, but that euen the same night, and the next morning, he bent seauen great pieces of ordinance culuerings, and demie-cannons full against the fote of the bridge, and against Southwarke, and the two steeles of Saint Oliues, and Saint Mary Querles, besides all the pieces on the white Tower, one culuering on Dueling Tower, and three fauconets ouer the water-gate: which so soon as the inhabitants of Southwarke vnderstood, certaine both men & women came to VVyat in most lamentable wise, saying, Sir, we are all like to be bitterly vndone and destroyed for poor sake, our houses shall by and by be throwen downe vpon our heads, to the bitter spoile of this borough, with the shot of the Tower, all ready bent and charged towardes vs, for the loue of God therefore take pittie vpon vs: at which wordes, he being partly abashed stayed a while, and then saide: I praye you my friends be content a while, and I will some ease you of this mischiefe, for God forbid that you, or the least here should bee killed or hurt in my behalfe. And so in most spacie manner he marched awaie. As he marched towardes Kingstone, he met, by chance a merchant named Christopher Dorell, whom he called, saying, Cousin Dorell, I praye you commende

VVyat removed out of Southwarke.

VVyat marched toward Kingstone.

me vnto your citizens the Londoners, and say vnto them from me, that when liberty & freedom was offered them, they would not receiue it, neither would they admit me to enter within their gates, who for their freedom, and the disburthening of their griefes, and oppression by strangers, would haue frankly spent my blood in that their cause and quarrell, but now well appeareth their vnthankfulness to vs their friends which meaneth them so much good, and therefore they are the lesse to be moned hereafter, when the miserable tyranny of strangers shall oppresse them, and so he went forwaite.

This day about 4. of the clocke in the afternone he came to Kingston vpon Thames, ten miles west from London, where finding the bridge to be broken, as a .30. fote or thereabout to be taken away, sauing the postes that were left standing, & the other side kept by 200. men, he caused two peeces of ordinance to be planted against them, whereupon they durst not abide: then caused he certaine sailers to swim ouer the Thames, who towed the westerne barges, which there had been tied, and so brought them ouer, by which meanes he passed the water: it was wonder to see what paines he and others toke, whilest the number of souldiers bapted in the towne, he caused the bridge to be repaired with ladders, planks, and beames, the same being tied together with ropes, so as by ten of the clocke in the night, it was in such plight, as both his ordinance, and companies of men might passe ouer without peril. And so about 11. of the clocke, Wyatt with his band, without resistance marched towards London, meaning to haue borne at the court gate before day of the next morning. They came almost to Batnford or euer they were descried by his quens scouts, who there by chance meeting Bret & his company, Bret said to the scout, backe villaine, if thou go further to discouer any thing here, thou shalt die out of hand, so the scout returned in great haste: but as God would haue it, before he came within fire miles of the citie, staying vpon a piece of his great ordinance, which was dismounted by breach of the wheeles, his comming was discovered, & it was 9. of the clocke of the day following, before he came to Hyde parke, as ye shall heare anone. Whilest Wyatt and his counsell were devising how to raise his ordinance dismounted, many of his society slipped from him, among the which, M. Harper was one, who went to the court, and opened al the premises aforesaid, to the D. and counsel, where Wyatt was, what had chanced, and what was his intention. The breaking of the said gun was such an humderance to his enterprize, that all about him were amazed, and at their wits end, because by that means, the hours was broken of appointment, wherefore, Vaughan, Bret, and other appoynted souldiers and counsellers, such as had wise heads in other affaires, as Doctor Poinet and other, did counsell the said Wyatt to march forwards and keepe his appointment, and to let the gun lie, which in no wise he could be perswaded to do. Doctor Poinet therefore, considering how many of his confederacie was stolne away from him, he began to perswade with captaine Bret, and other his friends to shift for themselves, as he would do, and at that very place where the gun did breake, he took his leaue of his secret friends, and said he would pray vnto God for their good successe, and so did depart, and went into Germany, where he died.



The same day in the afternoon, were two men hanged on a gibbet in Pauls churchyard by marshall law, the one John Egerley servant to the duke of Suffolke, and late Sheriffe of Leicesters, the other a Baker, one of the white coates sent out of the Citie against Wyat: and the same day came tidings, that the duke with his brethren were taken.

Execution in Pauls churchyard.

The same day towards night, there was laden 10, or 12. carts with ordinance, as bills, pikes, spears, bowes, arrows, powder, shot, Mouels, mattocks, ballists, and other munitions, 2. culverings, 1. sacre, 3. faucons, and a fauconet, all which stufte staid in Pauls churchyard.

The same night also about five of the clocke, a trumpetter went about, and warned all horsemen and men of armes to be at S. James field, and all footmen also to be there by five of the clocke in the next morning.

The Quenes scout upon his returne to the court, declared Wyats bring at Baintford, which sodaine newes, made all in the court wonderfully astraide, Drummes went through London at foure of the clocke in the morning, commanding all souldiers to armor, and so to Charing crosse.

Wyat hearing that the Earle of Pembroke was come into the felde, hee staid at Linights bridge untill day, where his men being very weary with travail of that night, and the day before, and also partly scabied and faint, hauing receiued small sustenance since their comming out of Southwarke restlesse: There was no final adu in London, and likewise the Towre made great preparation of defence. By ten of the clocke the earle of Pembroke had set his troupe of horsemen on the hill in the high way about the new bridge, ouer against S. James: his footmen were set in two battels, somewhat lower, and nearer Charing crosse, at the lane turning downe by the bricke wall from Flington ward, where he had set also certaine other horsemen, and hee had planted his ordinance vpon the hill side. In the meane season, Wyat and his compaignie planted his ordinance vpon a hill beyond S. James, almost ouer against the parke corner, and himselfe after a few words spoken to his souldiers, came down the old lane on foot, hard by the court gate at S. James, with foure or five ancients, his men marching in god array. Cuthbert Vaughan and a two ancients turned downe toward Westminster. The earle of Pembrokes horsemen honored all this while without moving, untill all was passed by sauing the taile, vpon which they did set, and cut off: the other marched forward in array, and neuer staid or returned to the aide of their taile: the great ordinance shot off freshly on both sides: Wyats ordinance ouerhot the troupe of horsemen. The Quenes ordinance, one piece strake thre of Wyats compaignie in a ranke vpon the heads, and slaying them, strake through the wall into the parke: more harme was not done by the great shot of neither partie. The Quenes whole battaile of footmen standing still, Wyat passed along by the wall towardes Charing crosse, where the said horsemen that were there, set vpon part of them, but was sone forced backe.

Wyat in Saint James field.

At Charing crosse there stode sir John Gage lorde chamberlaine with the garde, and a number of other, being almost a thousand, the which vpon Wyats comming, shot at his compaignie, but at the last fled to the court gates, which certaine

certaine pursued, and forced with shot to shut the Court Gates against them. In this repulse the said lord chamberlain and others were so amazed, that many cried treason in the court, and had thought that the Earle of Pembroke, who was assaulting the taile of his enemies, hadde gone to Wyat, taking his part against the Queene: there was running and crying out of Ladies and Gentlewomen, shutting of doores and Windows, and such a shynking and noise, as was wonderfull to heare. Wyat with his men marched still forward all along to Temple bar, and so through Fleet streete till hee came to the Bell Sauage an Arme nigh unto Ludgate, without resistence, his men going not in anye good order or array. It is saide, that at Strand, certaine of the Lordes treasurers band, to the number of thre hundred men, whereof the lord Chidoke Powlet his sonne was captaine, met them, and so going on the one side, passed by them on the other side, without anye thing saying to them. Also this is more strange, the said Wyat and his company passed along by a great compaignie of harneiled men which stood on both sides the streets, without anye withstanding them. And as hee marched forward through Fleetstreete most with their swords drawne, some crying, Queene Mary hath graunted our request, and giuen vs pardon: other said, the Queene hath pardoned vs. Thus some of Wyats men, some say it was Wyat himselfe, came euen to Ludgate and knocked, calling to come in, saying there was Wyat, whome the queene had graunted to haue their requests, but the lord William Howard stood at the gate, and saide, auunt traitor, thou shalt not come in heere. Wyat a while staied, and rested him vpon a stall ouer-against the Bell Sauadge gate, and at the last seeing hee could not get into the citie, and being deceiued of the aide hee hoped for, returned backe againe in arraie to wardes Charing Crosse, and was neuer stopped till hee came at Temple barre, where certaine horsemen which came from the ficke, mette them in the face, and then beganne the fight agayne, till Clarentius an Herault came and sayde to Walter Wyat: Sir, you were best by my counsell to yeelde, you see this daie is gone against you, and in resisting, you canne get no good, but hee the death of all these your soldiers, to your great perill of soule: perchance you maye finde the Queene mercifull, and the rather, if yee stint so great bloudeshed as is like heere to be. Wyat herewith being somewhat assonted (although he saide his men bent to fight) saide, Well, if I shall needes yeelde, I will yeelde me to a gentleman, to whome sir Maurice Berkeley came straight, and bad him leape vp behinde him, and an other tooke Thomas Cobham and William Kneuer, and so carried them behinde them vpon their horses to the court, then was taking of men on all sides. It is saide, that in this conflict, one pikeman, setting his backe to the wall at Saint Iames, kept sequentene horsemen off him a great time, and at the last was slaine. The whole number on both sides slaine at this battell passed not fortie persons, as farre as coude bee learned by them that viewed the fildes, but there were manie more hurt. The noise of women and children, when the conflict was at Charing Crosse, was so great, that it was heard to the toppe of the white tower, and also the great shot was well discerned there out of Saint Iames fildes: there stood vpon the leades the Marques of Northampton,

Wyat taken.

hampton, Sir Nicholas Poyntes, Sir Thomas Pope, Maister Iohn Seimer, and other.

Apparient to  
the Tower.

About fise of the clocke, Thomas Wyat, William Kneuet, Thomas Cobham, two brethren named Mantels, and Alexander Bret, were brought by sir Henry Ierningham by water to the tower prisoners, where sir Philip Denny receiued them at the bulwarke, and as Wyat passed by he saide, go traitor, there was neuer such a traitor in England: to whome sir Thomas Wyat turned and said, I am no traitor, I woulde thou shouldest well knowe, thou art more traitor than I, it is not the pointe of an honest man to call mee so, and so went forth: then he came to the tower gate, sir Thomas Bridges lieutenant tooke in through the wicket, sir Mantel and said: Ah thou traitor, what hast thou and thy companie wrought? But he holding downe his head saide nothing: then came Thomas Kneuet, whome Maister Chamberlaine gentleman porter of the tower tooke in: then came Alexander Bret, whome sir Thomas Pope tooke by the bosome, saying: Oh traitor, how couldest thou find in thy heart to worke such a villanie, as to take wages, and beeing trofled ouer a bande of men, to fall to her enemies, returning against her in battell? Bret answered, yea, I haue offended in that case; then came Thomas Cobham whome Sir Thomas Poyntes tooke in, and saide, Alas maister Cobham, what winde headed you to worke such treason? and hee answered, oh Sir, I was seduced. Then came in Sir Thomas Wyat, whome Sir Iohn Bridges tooke by the collar, and said; O thou villaine and unhappie traitor, howe couldest thou finde in thy heart to worke such detestable treason to the Queenes Maestie, who gaue thee thy life and liuing once alreadie, although thou diddest before this time beare Armes in the field against her, and nowe to yelde her battell, to her maruellous trouble and fright? If it were not (saith he) but that the law must passe vpon thee, I woulde sticke thee through with my dagger; to the which Wyat holding his armes vnder his side, and looking greuouslie with a grimace looke vpon the lieutenant, said, it is no mastery now, and so passed on. Thomas Wyat had on a Gyrt of mase, with sleeves very faire, thereon a beluet cassocke, and a yellow lace, with the wardblace of his bag hanging thereon, and a paire of bootes and spurs on his legs, and on his head a faire hat of beluet, with broad boneworke lace about it.

VWilliam Kneuet, Thomas Cobham, and Bret were the like apparelled.

On the morowe, and next day following were brought into the tower prisoners, George Cobham, sir VWilliam Cobham, Anthony Kneuet, Hugh Booth, T. Vane, Robert Rudstone, sir George Harpar, Edward VWyat, Edw. Fog, George Moore, and Cutbert Vaughan; which Cutbert being a verie handsome man, sir Thomas Bridges at his entrie into the Tower, did wonderfullie repproh him, calling him ranke traitor, and said that hanging was too good for him: to whom this Vaughan answered with a stout courage saying; I pray God to sende you charitie, and I woulde all men knew it; I am as true a man to the queene and common wealth, as any man that I shall leaue behinde mee, and for death, I care not for it.

The tenth of February, the Earle of Huntington, and other Gentlemen;  
and

and to the number of 300. horsemen, brought into the Tower as Prisoner the D. of Suffolk, and the L. John Grey his brother from Countrey, where the D. had remained three daies after his taking in the house and custody of Christopher Warren alderman there.

The 11. day sir Henry Mley, who had fled, was brought into the tower prisoner in an old frecke coat, and old paire of hose, all his apparell not worth 4. s. The same day came in two of the Culpeppers, one Cromer, and T. Rampton the Duke of Suffolks secretary.

The 12. of February being Monday, about tenne of the clocke, there went out of the tower to the scaffold on the tower hill, the L. Guilford Dudley son to the D. of Northumberland, husband to the lady Jane Gray, daughter to the D. of Suffolke, who at his going out, took by the hands sir Anthony Browne, M. John Throckmorton and many other gentlemen, praiesing him to pray for him: and without the bulwarke gate M. Thomas Okeley one of the Sheriffs of London receiued him and brought him to the scaffold, where after a small declaration, he kneeled down and said his praies, then holding by his eyes and hands to heauen, with teares, at the last he desired the people to pray for him, and after was beheaded: his body being laide in a car, and his head in a cloth, was brought into the chappell within the tower, where the lady Jane, whose lodging was in master Partridges house, did see his deade carcasse taken out of the car, as well as shee did see him before alius going to his death, a sight to hir worse than death.

By this time was there a scaffold made vpon the greene, ouer-against the white tower, for the lady Jane to die vpon, who with hir husbande was appointed to haue been put to death on the Friday before, but was staied till then: this lady being nothing at all abashed, neither with feare of her owne death, which then approached, neither with the sight of the dead carcasse of her husband when he was brought into the chappell, came forth, the lieutenant leading her, with countenance nothing abashed, neither her eyes anie thing moistened with teares (although hir gentlewomen Elizabeth Tilney and mistress Helen wonderfully wept) with a booke in her hand, wherin she praied until she came to the said scaffold, wheron when she was mounted, she was beheaded: whose deathes were the more hastened for feare of further troubles and str for hir title, like as hir father had attempted.

The same day was brought into the tower as prisoner by the lord chamberlaine and 200. of the gard, Edward Courney earle of Devonshire, who as hee passed by the lieutenant, being asked the cause of his thither comming, answered, he could not accuse himselfe.

The 14. and 15. of February, about the number of 50. of Wyats faction were hanged on 20. paire of gallowes made for that purpose in diuers places about the citie.

The 17. of February was proclamation made, that all strangers shoulde auoid the realme within foure and twentie daies next ensuing, vpon paine of their goods to be confiscate, all free denizens, merchantes, and ambassadours excepted.



The same leuentéenth daie of februarye the Duke of Suffolke was conueied to Westminster by the clearke of cheeke and the guard, at his going out he went with a cheerefull and a vertie skoute countenance, but at his retourne vertie pensue and heauie, desiring all men to praise for him, the Lorde Courteney lying in the Bell tower saw both his going out and returning, hee breuing arraigned, and the earle of Arundell sitting vpon him in iudgement, hee saide it was no treason for a péere of the realme, as he was, to raise his potwer, and to make proclamation, onely to auoid strangers out of the realme, and thereupon he asked the sergeants at law standing by whether it were or no, but they would say nothing: then was it laid to his charge, hee mette with 200. men in armes, the Quéenes lieutenant the earle of Huntington, which was treason against the Quéene, forsomuch as the lieutenant representeth the prince; to the which he answered, that he knew not the said earle to be such a lieutenant, but quoth he, I met him indeed with 50. men or thereabouts, and would not haue shrunke from him if I had had fewer, by which wordes hee was sounde to bee guiltie of treason. Whereouer, he partly accused his brother the Lorde Thomas, who said, as he said, perswaded him rather to fly into his country, than to abide, sith it was to be feared, he should againe be committed to the tower, whereas being in his country amongst his friends and tenants, who darst fetch him? Touching other articles laid to his charge he said he neuer knew of them, saying that one should say at his table once at supper, that he would vnder take for need, only with 100. men to set the crowne vpon Courtenays head, and so hee was condemned.

The 18. of februarye, Alexander Bret one of the Captaines of the Londoners that fled to Wyat, and 22. persons more of the Kentishmen, were deliuered to the sherife of Kent, to be executed in diuers places of Kent, but for the most part, they were all pardoned. This Bret going out of the tower embraced M. Chamberlaine the gentleman porter, & desired him to commend him to sir T. Wyatt, then praising al men to pray for him, he said, I am worthy of no lesse punishment than I now go to suffer, for besides my owne offence, I refused life and grace threé times offered, but I trust God doeth all for the best, that I might repent, and thereby obtaine grace.

The 20. of februarye William Thomas late clearke of the counsell, William Winter, and Sir Nicholas Throckmorton were sent to the Tower, and on the next morrow were Sir Iames a Crofts and the Lorde Thomas Grey sent to the Tower.

The 20. of februarye certaine of Wyats faction, to the number of 400. and more were ledde to Westminster, coupled together with halters about their necks, and there in the tiltyard, the Q. (who looked forth of hir gallery) pardoned them.

Kentishmen  
pardoned.

The 23. of februarye Henry Grey duke of Suffolke was beheaded on the tower hill, his wordes on the scaffold were these: Good people, I am come hither to die, being iustly condemned for my disobedience against the Q. highnesse, of whom I do most humbly aske forgiveness: doctor Vveson answered and saide, my Lord, her grace hath already forguén you: then saide the Duke,

D. of Suffolke  
beheaded.

I beseech you all good people, to let me bee an example to you for obedience to the Q. and the magistrates, for the contrary therof hath brought me to this end. I desire you all to beare me witness, that I die a true christian man, beleuing to be saued by none other meanes but by almighty God, through the passion of his son Iesus Christ: and now I praise you to praise with mee: then kneeling downe, & doctor Weston with him, they said the psalme of *Miserere mei Deus*, and *In te Domine speravi*, the duke one verse, and doctor Weston another, which done, he put off his gowne and dublet, knit the kerchiefe about his eyes, held by his hands, laid his head ouer the block, which head at one stroke was taken from him.

The 26. of February William Thomas had almost slain himselfe, by thrusting a knife vnder his paps.

The 11. of March, Wil. L. Howard admirall of England, was created baron of Effingham at Westminster.

The 14. of March, the earle of Bedford L. priuy seale, chiefe ambassado; to the prince of Spain, set forward on his vantage to fetch him hither.

The 15. of March, sir T. Wyat was arraigned at Westminster, of whose arraignment you maie reade in larger volumes, wherein I haue bestowed my labors.

The 18. of March being Palm Sunday, the lady Elizabeth the Q. sister, was by the L. treasurer and the earle of Sussex conueied to the tower of London, from Westminster by water.

The 24. of March, were released out of the tower, the Marques of Northampton, the L. Cobham, sir Wil. Cobham, Iohn Few Williams, Culpepper, H. Vane, Iohn Harington, Corbet &c.

Parliament.

The 2. of April, the parliament began at Westminster, which was appointed to haue bin kept at Oxford.

Barons created.

The 5. of April sir I. Williams was created baron of Lame at S. Iames.

The 7. of April sir Edw. North was created baron of Chartlege by writ at S. Iames.

Cat hanged in Cheape.

The 8. of April, sir Iohn a Bridges was created baron Chandois of Sudley at S. Iames. The same 8. of April, being then Sunday, a cat with hir head thorn, and the likenes of a vestment cast ouer hir, with hir fore feet tied together, and a round peece of paper like a singing cake betwixt them, was hanged on a galloves in Cheape, nere to the crosse, in the parish of S. Mathew, which cat being taken downe, was caried to the Bish. of London, and he caused the same to be shewed at Pauls crosse, by the preacher D. Pendleton. The 10. of April D. Cranmer archb. of Cant. D. Ridley B. of London, and Hugh Latimer once B. of Worcester, were conueied prisoners from the tower of London to Windso; and after from thence to Oxford, there to dispute with the diuines and learned men of the contrary opinion.

Disputation at Oxford.

Thomas Wyat beheaded.

The 11. of Aprill, sir Th. Wyat was beheaded on the tower hill, and after quartered, his quarters were set by in diuers places, and his head on the galloves at Hay hill nere Hyde parke, from whence it was shortly after stolne and conueied awaie. This sir Tho. Wyat before his coming down out of the

the tolwer, was conueyed by the L. chamberlaine, and the Lord Shandos to the tower ouer the water gate, where the L. Courneye late, and there he remained in talk more than halfe an houre, but what was spoken betwixt them I know not. Then was he brought downe, and at the garden pale, the L. chamberlain took his leaue of him, and likewise did master secretary Bourne, to whome sir Thomas Wyat saide, I praye you to pray for me, and be a meane to the queene for my poore wife and children, and if it might haue pleased her grace to haue geanted me my life, I trust to haue done her such good seruice as should haue recompensed mine offence: but since not, I beseech God to haue mercie on me, to the which master Bourne made answer, and so Wyat came toward the hill betwixt Doctor Weston and the lord Shandos: when he was vpon the scaffold, he desired all men to pray for him and with him, and then said in effect these or the like words: Good people, I come presentlie here to die, being thereto lawfully and worthily condemned, for I haue sore offended against God and the queenes maiesty, I trust God hath forgiven me, and will take mercy vpon me; I beseech the M. maiesty also of forgiveness: She hath forgiven you quoth Doctor Weston: then, quoth he, let euery man betwixt holwe hee taketh any thing in hande against the higher powers, vnlesse God be prosperous to his purpose it will neuer take good effect or successe, thereof you may now learn of me, and I pray God I may bee the last example in this place, for that or any other like. And where it is said and noised abroad, that I should accuse the lady Elizabeth and the lord Courneye, it is not so good people: for I assure you, neither they nor any other now ponder in holde was p'suite of my rising before I began, as I haue declared no lesse to the M. councill, and that is most true. Then said doctor Weston at those words, marke this my masters, he saith that, that which hee hath shewed to the councill in writing of them is true, and so without any more talke sir Tho. Wyat turned him, and put off his gowne, trusted his points, then taking the earle of Huntington, the L. Hastings, sir T. Stranguish, and many other by the bandes, hee plucked off his dublet and wastcoat, and then kneeling downe, laid his head to the block, and raising himselfe againe on his knees after a few wordes spoken, with his eyes lifted vp toward heauen, hee knit the kerchiefe ouer his eyes, and holding by his bandes, sodainlie laide downe his heade, which the executioner tooke from him at one stroke.

The senetenth of April, were led to the GUILDE HALL in London to bee arraigned sir Nicholas Throckmorton and sir James a Croft, Robert Winter, and Cuthbert Vaughan being also had thither to witnes against them, where that day was no more arraigned but sir Nicholas Throckmorton, who tarrying from 7. of the clocke in the morning untill almost siue at night was by verdict of the Iurie quit; hee pleaded not guiltie, and that he was consenting to nothing, &c. But the Iurie which quit him, was commanded to appeere before the Councill at an houres warning, and the losse of siue hundred pounds the p'ce.

On Saint Marks day or the 25. of April, they were before the councill in the Starred Chamber, and thence about two of the clocke Thomas Whetstone

Haberdaſher

Sir Nicholas  
Throckmorton  
arraigned.

Haberdasher forzman, and Emanuell Lucar merchant tailor were sent to the tower, and the rest to the Fleet prisoners.

Lord Thomas  
Grey beheaded

The 27. of Aprill, lord T. Grey, brother to the late duke of Suffolke, was beheaded on the tower hill.

The 29. of Aprill, sir James a Croft knight was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, found guiltie of high treason, and had iudgement.

The 9. of May, VWilliam Thomas esquire was arraigned at the same Guild hall, for conspiring the quēnes death, was found guiltie, and had iudgement of death.

William Tho-  
mas executed.

The 14. of May Garrard fitz Garret was created earle of Hilbate, and baron of Ophelley, for him and his heires, at S. James.

The 18. of May, VWilliam Thomas was drawn from the tower of London to Liborne, and there hanged, beheaded, and quartered, who said at his death hee died for his country, &c.

The 19. of May, lady Elizabeth was conveyed from the tower of London by water to Richmond, from thence to Windsor, and so by the lordes VWilliams to Ricote in Oxfordshire, and from thence to Woodstocke.

The earle of  
Devonshire  
sent to Foz-  
dingay.

The 25. of May, Edw. Courtney earle of Devonshire was deliuered out of the tower by sir Ralph Chamberlaine of Suffolk, and sir Th. Tresham knights, who conveyed him to Fordingay castle in Northampton shire, there to remaine vnder their custodie.

A gun shot at  
the preacher.

The 10. of June, doctor Pendleton preached at Pauls crosse, at whome a gun was shot, the pellet whereof went very nare him, and light on the church wall. But the shooter could not be found.

The 22. of June, was proclamation made, forbidding the shooting in hand-guns, and bearing of weapons.

Ann. reg. 2.  
A spirit in a  
wall.

The 15. of July, Elizabeth Croft a wench about the age of 18. yeres, stood vpon a scaffold at Pauls crosse all the sermon time, where she confessed, that she being moued by diuers lewde persons therunto, had vpon the 14. of March last before passed, counterfitted certain speeches in a wall of an house without Aldersgate of London, through the which the people of the whole Citie were wonderfully molested, for that all men might heare the voice, but not see her person. Some said it was an angel: a voice from heauen, some the holy ghost, &c. This was called the spirit in the wall: shee had laine whispering in a strange whistle made for that purpose, which was giuen hir by one Drakes, seruant to sir Anthony Neuill: then were there diuers companions, one named Myles, clearie of S. Butolphs without Aldersgate, a plaier, a weaner, Hill clearie of S. Leonards in Foster lane, and other confederate with hir, which putting themselves among the prease, took vpon them to interpret what the spirit said, expressing certaine seditious words against the quēne, the prince of Spaine, the masse, confession, &c.

The 19. of July the prince of Spaine arrived at Southampton, the 4. daie after he came to Winchester in the evening, and there going to church was honorably receiued of the bishop, and a great number of nobles: the next daie he met with the quēne, with whom he had long familiar talke.



On S. James day, the marriage was solemnized betwene him and queene Mary, at which time the emperours ambassadoz being present, pronounced, that in consideration of the marriage, the emperour had giuen unto his sonne the kingdome of Naples. The solemnitie of this marriage being ended, the king of hebraites proclaimed their title as followeth: Philip and Mary by the grace of God, King and Queene of England, Fraunce, Naples, Hierusalem, and Ireland, defenders of the faith, princes of Spaine and Sicilie, archdukes of Austrich, dukes of Millaine, Burgundy and Brabant, counties of Alsperge, Flanders and Tyrol: which being ended, the trumpets blew, the king and queene came forth hand in hand, and two swordes borne before them. Shortly after king Philip and queene Mary remooued from Winchester to Basing, from thence to Windsor, where on the first of August the king was staled in the noble order of the garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the earle of Suffex was made knight of the garter.

The marriage of king Philip and queene Marie. The kings style.

The 11. of August, the king and queene remooued to Richmond, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the noble men and ladies, the king in one barge, the queene in another, & landed at the bishop of Winchesters staires nere to S. Mary Queries church, and so passed through that place and parke into Suffolke place, where they rested that night. And the next day being the 18. of August, they rode through Southwarke ouer the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great prouision of the citizens, pageants in places accustomed, the crosse in Cheape new gilt, &c. and passing through Paules churchyard, a man came sliding, as it were flying vpon a rope, to Paules steeple down to the beanes wall.

A mā sliding from Paules steeple.

The second of September, sir Anthony Browne maister of the kings horse, was made vicount Montague for him & his heires males, with the gift of twenty marks the yeare of Surrey, at Hampton court.

In this moneth of September, deceased Thomas Howard duke of Norfolk at Framingham in Norfolk, and was honorably buried amongst his ancestors.

The 2. of October was brought into the tower of London twenty carts laden with 97. chests, each of them a yard and fower inches long, filled with siluer bolion to be coyned, conducted by certaine Spaniards, and English men of the kings garde.

Siluer bolion brought to the tower.

The six & twentieth of October, a Spaniard was hanged at Charing crosse for killing of an English man in fight there, he was seruant to sir George Gifford, there was offered for his life by other strangers five hundred crowns, but all that would not stay iustice.

A Spaniard hanged.

The 4. of Nouember being sonday, three priests that being married, would not leaue their wiues, and two lay men that had two wiues apiece, were punished alike, for they went on procession about Paules church in white sheets ouer them, and either of them a taper of ware in the one hand, and a rod in the other, and so they sate before the preacher at Paules crosse during the sermon, and then were dyspled on the heades with the same rods.

Cardinali Poole came into Englad.

The twelfth of Nouember, the parliament began at Westminster.

The 24. of Nouember, cardinall Poole came out of Brabant into England,

A a a

and

and was received with much honour: he was by parliament restored to his old dignitie that he was put from by king Henry, and shortly after came into the parliament house, where the king, queene, and other states were present. Then he declared the cause of his legacie, first exhorting them to returne to the communion of the church, and restore to the pope his due authoritie. Secondly, he aduertised them to give thanks to God that had sent them so blessed a king and queene. Finally, he signified, for so much as they had with great gentlenesse restored him to his honour and dignitie, that he most earnestly desired to see them restored to the heavenly court, and unitie of the church.

The next day the whole court of parliament drew out the forme of a supplication, the summe wherof was, that they greatly repented them of that schisme that they had liued in, and therefore desired the king, queene, and cardinall, that by their meanes they might be restored to the bosome of the church, and obedience of the sea of Rome.

The next day the king, queene, and cardinall being present, the lord chauncellor declared what the parliament had determined concerning the cardinals request, and offered to the king and queene the supplication before mentioned, which being read, the cardinall in a large oration declared how acceptable repentance was in the sight of God, &c. And immediatly making prayer vnto God by authoritie to him committed, absolved them. When all this was done, they went all vnto the chappell, and there singing *Te Deum* with great solemnitie, declared the ioy that for this reconciliation was pretended.

The 28. of Nouember, the lord maior of London, with the aldermen in scarlet, and the commons in their limeries assembled in Pauls church at nine of the clocke in the forenoone, where doctor Chadley one of the prebends preached in the quire in presence of the bishop of London, and nine other bishops, and read a letter sent from the queenes counsell, the tenor wherof was, that the bishop of London should cause *Te Deum* to be sung in all the churches of his diocesse, with continuall prayers for the Quenes maiestie, which was conceived and quicke with child: the letter being read, he began his sermon with this Anthetime: *Ne uisum est Maria, inuenisti enim gratiam apud Deum.* His sermon being ended, *Te Deum* was sung, and solenne procession was made of *Salve festa dies*, all the circuit of the church.

The queene  
bruted to be  
with child.

The king &  
the cardinall  
came to  
Pauls and  
heard the  
sermon.

The second of December, cardinall Poole came from Lambeth by water and landed at Pauls wharfe, and from thence to Pauls church, with arosse, two pillars, and two pollaxes of silver borne before him. He was there received by the lord chauncellor with procession, where he taried till the king came from Westminster by land at eleven of the clocke, and then the Lord chancelor entered Pauls crosse and preached a sermon, taking for his theame these words: *Frater, sceleres quia hora est iam nos de somno surgere, &c.* In the which sermon he declared, that the king and queene had restored the Pope to his supremacie, and the three estates assembled in the parliament, representing the whole body of the realme, had submitted themselves to the same. The sermon being ended, the king departed towards Westminster, and with him the lord cardinall, with the crosse onely borne before him.

The 27. of December, Emanuell Philibert prince of Piemont, and duke of Savoy, with other lords, were receiued at Grauelend by the lord priuie seale and other and so conueyed along the riuer of Thamiz vnder London bridge: to Westminster.

Prince of Piemont.

The ninth of Januarie, the prince of Orange being receiued at Grauelend, was conueyed along the riuer of Thamiz. & landed at the duke of Suffolks place.

1555  
Prince of Orange.

The 12. of Januarie, the said prince of Orange, with other lords, was conducted by the lord chamberlaine to the towre of London, where was shewed vnto him the ordinance, artillerie, munitions, and armorie, with the mint, &c. and so was brought into the white towre, from whence as he returned through the long gallerie, all the prisoners saluted him, vnto whom the prince said, he was sorie for their captiuitie, and trusted the king and queene would be good vnto them: at his departing from the towre, he gaue the gunners ten peeces of Flemish gold at 5 s. the peece, and the warders other ten peeces as a reward.

The 18. of Januarie, the lord chancelor, the bishop of Ely, the lord treasurer, the earle of Shrewsburie, the controller of the Queenes house, secretarie Bourne, and sir Richard Southwell: maister of the ordinance and armorie, came to the towre of London, and there sitting in commission, discharged prisoners as followeth: the late archbishop of York, sir Iohn Rogers, sir James Crofts, sir Nicholas Throckmorton, sir Nicholas Arnold, sir Edward Warner, sir George Harper, sir William Sentlow, sir Andrew Dudley, sir Gawin Carrew knights, William Gibs esquire, Cuthbert Vaughan, Harington, Tremaine, and others.

Prisoners discharged.

The fourth of Februarie, Iohn Rogers vicar of Saint Sepulchers was hyst in Smithfield.

Iohn Rogers brent.

The seauenth of Februarie, the lord Strange being married to the earle of Cunnberlands daughter at the court, the same day at night was a goodly pastime of luogo de Canne by cresset light.

luogo de Can.

The 12. of Februarie, 99. horses, and two carriages laden with treasure of gold and siluer, brought out of Spaine, was conueyed through the citie to the towre of London, vnder the conduct of sir Thomas Gresham, the queenes merchant, and other.

The 18. of Februarie, Thomas Thurlebe bishop of Ely, and Anthonie lord Montacute with other, took their iourney towards Rome, ambassadors from the king and queene.

Ambassadors sent to Rome.

Against Easter, the lord Courtney earle of Deuonshire, came againe to the court, and about ten daies after, the lady Elizabeth came likewise to the queene, both at Hampton court, where the queene had taken her chamber to be deliuered of child, but all proceeded contrarie: for she neither had child, nor great hope to haue any.

Earle of Deuonshire deliuered.

The 14. of March, Iohn Russell earle of Bedford died at his house neare Tuike bridge by the Sauoy, sometimes the bishop of Carliles house, and on the 22. of the same moneth was conueyed to Cheneis in Buckinghamshire his thirde house, and there honorably entred.

On Easter day, a priest sometime a monke of Ely and also of Bicester named William Branch alias Flower, with a wood knife wounded another priest as he

William Flower brent at Westminster.

was ministring the sacrament to the people in Saint Margarets church at Westminster: for the which fact, the said William Flower the 24. of Aprill had his right hand smitten off, and for opinions in matters of religion was burned in the same stuarie nigh to Saint Margarets churchyard.

Ambassadors sent over to Calcis.

In May, cardinall Poole, the lord chancelor, the earle of Arundale, and the lord Poget went over sea to Calcis, and were unto Marke treated with the emperours and French kings commisioners, for a peace to be had betwene the said princes, cardinall Poole being president there, who returned againe into England about the midst of June, without any agreement making.

A counter-fet king Edward whipped.

The tenth of May, William Constable *alias* Fetherstone, a Millers sonne about the age of eighteene yeares, who had published king Edward the first to be alive, and sometime named himselfe to be king Edward the first, was taken at Eltham in Kent, and conveyed to Hampton court, where being crammied by the counsell, he required pardon, and said he wist not what he did, but as he was persuaded by many: from thence he was sent to the Marshalsea, & the 22. of May he was caried in a cart through London to Westminster with a paper on his head, wherein was writtten, that he had named himselfe to be king Edward. After he had bene carried about Westminster hall before the Judges, he was whipped about the pallace, and through Westminster into Smithfield, and then banished into the North, in which countrie he was bozne, and had bene sometime Lackey to sir Peter Mewtas.

Bradford brent.

*Ann. reg. 3.*

The first of July, Iohn Bradford was burned in Smithfield. This Bradford was a man of very sober and honest life, and therefore the bishops would gladly have had him recant and abiure his opinions.

The 12. of August, was a terrible fight on the sea betwene the Duchmen & Frenchmen neare to Rumney marsh, wheremas eleven ships were brent & sunke.

The necessity of the poore by God relieved.

In this moneth of August, in Suffolke at a place by the sea side, all of hard stone and pibble, called in those parts a shelve, lying betwene the townes of Dorford and Alborough, where neuer grew grasse, nor any earth was ever scene, there chanced in this barren place, suddenly to spring up without any tillage or sowing, great abundance of peason, whercof the poore gathered (as men iudged) above an hundred quarters, yet remained some ripe, and some blossoming, as many as ever there were before, to the which place rode the bishop of Norwich, and the lord Willoughby, with others in great number, who found nothing but hard rockie stone the space of three yards under the rootes of those peason, which rootes were great and long, and very sweet, &c.

Disputation at Christs hospitall, as had bene accustomed at S. Bartholomewes in Smithfield.

On Bartholomew euen, after the lord maior and aldermen of London had ridden about Saint Bartholomewes faire, they came to Christs hospitall within Newgate, where they heard a disputation between the scholars of Paules schoole, Saint Anthonies schoole, and the scholars of the said hospitall, for whom was provided three games, which was three pens, the best pence of silver and gilt, valued at 5. s. woon by a scholar of Saint Anthonies schoole, and the maister of that schoole had 6. s. 8. pence: the second, a pen of silver parcell gilt, valued at 4. s. woon by a scholar of Paules schoole, and his waiffer had 5. s. in money: the third a pen of silver, valued at 3. s. woon by a scholar of the said hospitall, and his ma-

ister



ster had 4. shillings, and there were two priests maisters of Art appointed for iudges, which had each of them a siluer rule for their paines, valued at five shillings eight pence the peece. The disputation being ended, the maior and aldermen entered the hall where the children of the hospitall use to dine, and had fruit and wine and so departed.

King Philip went ouer seas, and landed at Calcis on the fourth of September, where he was honorably receiued by the lord deputie, & the maior of the staple of Calcis, an alderman of London named sir Andrew ludde, who presented his maiestie with a purse and a thousand marks of gold in it: that night the king was lodged in Staple inn: & on the morrow he departed from Calcis toward Brussels in Brabant, to visite the emperor his father: he gaue at his departing among the souldiers of the towne of Calcis a thousand crownes of gold, and there accompanied him in his iourney of English lords, the earle of Arundel lord steward of the Queenes house, the earle of Pembroke, the earle of Huntington and others.

King Philip  
went ouer  
into Fläders

On Michalmas euen, the prisoners that lay in the counter in Wyndstreete, were remooued to a new counter made in Woodstreet of the cities purchase and building, the which remoouing was confirmed by a common counsell assembled at the Guild hall for that purpose.

New counter  
in Wood  
street.

On the last of September, by occasion of great wind and raine that had fallen was such great clouds, that that morning the kings palace at Westminster, & Westminster hall was overflowed with water vnto the staire foot going to the Chancery and Kings bench, so that when the lord maior of London should come to present the sheries to the barons of the erchequer, all Westminster hall was full of water, and by report there that morning, a whirrie man rowed with his boat ouer Westminster bridge into the pallace court, and so through the Staple gate, & all the wooll staple into the kings street: and all the marshes on Lambeth side were so overflowed, that the people from Newington church could not passe on foote, but were caried by boate from the said church to the pinfold, neare to Saint Georges in Southwarke.

Great land  
waters.

The 16. of October, docto<sup>r</sup> Ridley & maister Latimer were burnt at Oxford. In October and Nouember a parliament was holden in the which the queen yielded vp vnto the spirituall men, the first fruits & tenths of all bishoprikes, benefices, & ecclesiasticall linings. In this parliament was graunted to the king & queen a subsidie of the laitie from 5. pound to 10. pound, 8. pence of the pound, from 10. pound to 20. pound 12. pence of the pound, & from 20. pound upward 16. d. of the pound, & all strangers double, and the clergie granted 6. s. of the pound.

Ridley and  
Latimer  
brent.

First fruits  
and tenths  
restored to  
the clergie.  
A subsidie.

Docto<sup>r</sup> Storie and other were appointed by the cardinall to visite euery parish church in London and Middlesex, to see their roodlofts repaired, and the images of the crucifixe, with Mary and Iohn thereon to be fired.

The 12. of Nouember, Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester chancelor of England deceased at Porke place, or White hall by Westminster, whose body was from thence conueyed by water to Winchester house in Southwarke, where being inclosed in lead, he was laid in a vault of bricke made for that purpose, in S. Mary Queries church, and there rested for a time, but the parole of blacke beluet laid ouer his coffine was stolen and so cleane conueyed away, that the

D. Gardener  
deceased.

same was neuer heard of. From thence on the foure and twentieth of February next following, he was translated and caried from the said parish church of Saint Mary Queric, through Southwarke toward Wlinchesser, there to be buried in his cathedrall church as he had appointed by his testamēt, his coyps was set in a chariot couered with blacke, and a picture made like vnto him, lying on his coffin, with a miter on the head, a coape of cloth of gold on the bodie of the picture, gloues on the hands, rings on the fingers, &c. The lord vicount Monacute, the bishop of Ely, and other his executors riding to the burial with about two hundred hofe of gentlemen and yeomen all in blacke, &c.

1556

On New-years day, the Queene gaue the great seale to doctor Nicholas Heath archbishop of Yorke, and made him lord chancellor: she likewise gaue the priuie seale to the lord Pager, and made him lord priuie seale: these were both Londoners borne.

In this moneth of February, the lord maior of London and the aldermen entered into Bridewell, and tooke possession thereof, according to the gift of king Edward, now confirmed by Queene Mary.

The millers  
son faining  
to be king  
Edward.

The 26. of February, William Constable *alias* Fetherston was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, who had caused letters to be call abroad, that king Edward was aliue, and to some he shewed himselfe to be king Edward, so that many persons both men and women were troubled by him, for the which sedition the said William had bene once whipped and deliuered, as is aforesaid: But now he was condemned, and the 13. of March he was drawne, hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Blazing star.

A blazing starre was scene at all times of the night, the 6. 7. 8. 9. and 10. of March.

Doctor Crā-  
mer burnt.

The 21. of March, doctor Cranmer archbishop of Canterburie was burned at Oxford: and the same day cardinall Poole sang his first masse at Greenwich in the friers church: on sunday next he was consecrated archbishop of Canterbury.

Cardinall  
Poole arch-  
bishop.

The 25. of March, being the feast of the Annunciation of our lady, cardinall Poole receiued the pall with the then bled ceremonies and solemnities at Bow church in Cheape.

Newgate on  
fire

The 28. of March, at ten of the clocke before noone, a part of Newgate called Mannings hall, was byent to the ground, and no prisoners lost. A conspiracie was made by certaine persons, whose purpose was to haue robbed the D. exchequer, called the receit of the exchequer, in the which there was of the D. treasure about 50000. l. the same time, to the intent they might be able to maintain war against the queene. This matter was vttered by one of the conspiracie named White, whereby Vdall, Throckmorton, Peckham, Iohn Daniel & Stanton were apprehended, and diuerse others fled into Fraunce. Sir Anthonie Kingstone was apprehended, and died by the way comming toward London.

Conspiracy.

The 28. of Aprill, Iohn Throckmorton and Richard Vdall were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered.

Throckmor-  
ton and o-  
ther execu-  
ted.

The 19. of May, William Stanton was likewise executed.

The 8. of June, William Rossey, Iohn Dedike, and Iohn Bedell were executed at Tyborne.

The

The 18. of June, one Sands a younger son to the lord Sands, was hanged at Sands haged  
S. Thomas of Waterings, for a robbrie that he and other had committed on for robbrie.  
Whitsonday last, of 4000. l.

The 27. of June, 13. persons being condemned for opinions concerning the Thirteene  
Sacrament, were brent at Stratford the Boim. brent at  
Stratford.

The 8. of July, Henry Peckham sonne to sir Edmond Peckham, and Iohn Ann. reg. 4.  
Daniel were hanged and headed on the Tower hill, for being of counsell with the Daniel and  
that should haue robbed the queenes treasure of her exchequer, and their bodies bu- Peckham.  
ried in Barking church.

About this tyme one Cleber, which sometime kept a schoole at Dys in No- Conspiracie  
folke, with three brethren, whose names were Lincolne pretended an insurrecc- in Norfolk,  
on, and would haue gathered the people at a marriage, vnto the which the brethren  
promised either of them to bring an 100. horse with men: at which time by them  
appointed, the said Cleber gaue charge to a seruant of his, to watch in a lane nigh  
to the church where they should meete, and alsoone as he saw any horse-man com-  
ming thitherward, to giue him warning with all speed. So it chaunced (by the  
will of God) that certaine men riding through that lane to some other place about  
their businesse, came about such an houre as Cleber had appointed, vpon sight of  
which men, his said seruant returned to his maister, and told him that his friends  
were come: & immediatly the said Cleber stode vp in the parish church of Parle,  
and read a traiterous proclamation of purpose prepared, which being ended, and  
seeing his part was too weake, for that his mates were not come, began to fye:  
but one maister Shireman pursued and tooke him at a towne called Epe in Suf-  
folke, and was kept in prison untill the next Sessions at S. Edmondsburie, and  
his three mates being brought to him, were there all together drawne, hanged  
and quartered.

In the last yeare began the hot burning feuers, wherof died many old persons, Seven alder-  
so that in London there died 7. aldermen in the space of 10. moneths, whose men decea-  
names were, Henry Herdson, who deceased the 22. of December, 1555. sir Ri- sed in Londo  
chard Dobs, late maior, sir William Laxton late maior, sir Henry Hoblethorne  
late maior, sir Iohn Champaneis blind, late maior, sir Iohn Ayleffe late sherife, &  
sir Iohn Gresham late maior, who deceased the 23. of October anno 1556.

This yeare, on the 19. of September the rose pence being base monies coyn- Abbot of  
ned in the raigne of Henry the 8. and Edward the 6. were by proclamation for- Westmister  
bidden to be any longer currant in England, but in Ireland to passe as before. False accu-  
sers set on the  
pillorie and  
brent in both  
cheekes:  
would to  
God all such  
fals accusers  
were so well  
marked,  
wherby they  
mought be  
knowne for  
such as they  
pall are.

The 21. of Nouember, Iohn Fecknam late deane of Paules in London, was  
made abbot of Westmister, was stilled, and tooke possession of the same: and  
14. monkes more receiued the habite with him that day of the order of S. Bennet.

The said 21. of Nouember, a man was brought from Westmister hall ri-  
ding with his face to the horse taile, and a paper on his head, to the standard in  
cheape, & there set on the pillorie, and then burned with an hote yron on both his  
cheekes, with two letters F. and A. for False Accusing one of the court of the co-  
mon place in Westmister of treason: the like iustice I once wished to the like ac-  
cuser of his maister and eldest brother, but it was answered, that in such case could  
be no remedie, though the accuser himselfe were in the same fault found the princ-  
pall are.

pall offender : where through it followeth, the accuser neuer shewed signe of shame (the way to Repentance) but terribly curseth, and blasphemously sweareth he neuer committed any such act, though the same be registered before the honorable, the Quenees Maiesties high Commissioners : and what horrible slaunders, by libelling and otherwise with threats of murder he dayly bruteth against me, the knower of all secrets, God I meane, knoweth, unto whom I refer my cause, being comforted with this sentence of the prophet Dauid : fret not thy selfe with these cursed harmefull men, neither enuie angerly these workers of wickednesse, for like grasse anon shall they be cut downe, and like the greene freshly bent of the flower shall they wither away, &c.

Psal. 37.

A stranger would haue murdered the keeper of Newgate.

The 16. of December, Gregorie Carpenter, blacke smith, a Frenchman borne, was arraigned for making counterfeite keyes, wherewith to haue opened the lockes of Newgate, to haue slaine the keeper, and let forth the prisoners, at which time of his arraignment, hauing conueyed a knife into his secue, he thrust it into the side of William Whitrents his fellow prisoner, who had giuen witness against him, so that he was in great perill of death thereby, for the which fact he was immediately taken from the barre into the streete before the Iustice hall, where his hand being first taken off, he was hanged on a gibbet set up for that purpose : the keeper of Newgate was arraigned and indicted for that the said prisoner had weapon about him, and his hands loose which should haue bene bound.

1557.  
Gunshot into the Court at Grenewich.  
Ambassador from Russia and Muscouia.

The 4. of Januarie, a ship before Grenewich (the Court being there) shot off his Ordnance, one peece being charged with a bullet of stone, which passed through the walls of the Court, and did no more hurt.

In the yeere 1556. an Ambassadour from the high and mightie Euan Valduich Emperour of all Russia, great Duke of Volodimer, Moscouia and Pologrode, Emperour of Cassan and of Astrachan, &c. sent by the Sea from the port of Saint Nicholas in Russia, his honorable Ambassadour surnamed Osep Napea, to the famous and excellent Princes Philip and Marie, King and Queene of England with certaine letters, together with certaine presents and gifts, as a manifest argument of a mutuall amitie to be made and continued betwene their Maiesties and subiectes, for the commodities of both Realmes, and people : which Orator was the twentieth of Iulie imbarked in a good English ship named the Edward Bonauenture, belonging to the company of the English Merchants, Richard Chancellor being graund Pilot, and Iohn Bucklande Maister of the said ship. In which was laden, ware, oyle, tallow, fures, felts, yarne, &c. to the summe of twentie thousand pound sterling, together with fiftene Russies :ouer and aboue ten other Russies shipped in an other ship called Bona Speranza, with goods to the value of fife thousand pound sterling, which ships in their iourney towards the coast of England, were by contrarie winds leuered the one from the other, to wit, the said Bona Speranza with two other English ships, the one named the Philip and Marie, the other the Conscientia, were driven on the coast of Norway, where the said Conscientia was scene to perishe on a rocke, and the Bona Speranza secured to winter there. The third being the Philip and Marie, arrived in the

Chanis



Thamis nigh London y<sup>e</sup> 18. of April, in y<sup>e</sup> yeare 1557. The Edward Bonaventure trauesing the seas foure moneths: finally the tenth of Nouember the said yeare 1557. arriued within the Scottissh coastes, where by extreme stormes, the said ship being braten from her ground, shales, was driuen vpon the rockes on shore, where she brake and split in peeces, in such sort, as the grand pilote, taking the boate, of the said ship, trusting to attaine the shore, and so to saue the bodie of the said ambassadour, and seauen of the companie. the same boate was by darke night overwelmed and drowned, wherein perished, not onely the said Richard Chancelor drowned. ground pilote, with seauen Russies, but also diuerse mariners, the ambassadour with a few others with much difficultie saued. In which shipwracke not onely the said shippe was broken, but also the goods laden in her was by the rude people of the countrie, rifled and carried away. As soone as by letters it was to the company in London knowne of the losse of their pilote, men, goods, and ships: the Merchants obtained the Queenes letters to the Lady Dowager of Scotland, for the gentle entertainment of the said Ambassado<sup>r</sup> with his traine, and restitution of his goods, & also addrested two Gentlemen, maister Lawrence Huisse docto<sup>r</sup> of the ciuill Law, and George Gilpin with money, and other requisites into Scotland, to comfort him and his there, and also to conduct him into England, so that on the 14. of Februarie, the said Ambassado<sup>r</sup> left Scotland, comming towards England, hauing attending vpon him the said two English Gentlemen and others, came the 18. day of Februarie to Barwike, where he was honorably receiued by the Lord Wharton, Lord Warden of the east Marches: he prosecuting his voyage vntill the 27. of Februarie, approached the citie within 12. miles, where he was receiued with 80. merchants with chains of gold, and goodly apparell, riding, who conducting him to a merchants house fower miles from London, receiued there a quantitie of gold, beuet, & silke, with all furniture thereto requisite: the next day being the last of Februarie, he was by the merchants aduenturers for Russia, to the number of 140. persons, and so many or more seruants in one liuerie, conducted towards the citie of London, where by the way he had not onely the hunting of the fore, &c. but also by the Queenes Maiesties commandement was receiued by the Viscount Montague, he being accompanied with diuers lustie knights, esquiers, gentlemen and yeomen, to the number of 300. horse, led him to the north parts of the Citie of London, where, by 4. merchants richly apparelled, was presented to him a faire richly trapped horse, together with a footcloth of crimosin beuet, enriched with gold laces, whereupon y<sup>e</sup> ambassado<sup>r</sup> mounted, riding towards Smithfield bars, the L. maioz accompanied with the aldermen in scarlet did receiue him, and so riding thorough the citie of London, in the middle betweene the lord maioz and Viscount Montague, a great number of merchants, and notable personages riding before, was conducted into his lodging in Sanchurch street. At his first entrance into his chamber, there was presented vnto him on the queenes behalfe, for a gift and present, one rich peece of cloth of tissue, a peece of cloth of gold, another peece of cloth of gold raised with crimosin beuet, a peece of crimosin beuet in graine, a peece of purple beuet, a peece of damaske purpled, a peece of crimosin damaske: which he thankfully accepted. In this his beautifull lodging, he abode expecting the kings reparaire

repaire out of Flaunders into England: whose highnesse arriuing the 21. of March, the same ambassadoꝝ the 25. of March ( the day twelue month he tooke his leaue from the emperoz his maister) was honorably brought to the king and queene at Westminster, where arriuing at the bridge, was there receiued with 6. lords, conducted into a chamber, where by the lords Chancelor, Treasurer priuy seale, Admirall, bishop of Ely, and other counsellors, he was saluted, and consequently brought unto the kings and queenes presence, sitting vnder a stately cloth of honor. Where after he had deliuered his letters, made his oration, giuen two timber of sables, and the report of the same made both in English and Spanish, was with much honor, eschoones remitted by water to his former lodging, to the which within two daies after by assignement of the king and queene, repaired and conferred with him two graue counsellors, the bishop of Ely, and sir William Pecer: knight chiefe secretarie, who after diuerse talkes and conferences, finally concluding vpon such treaties and articles of amitie, as the letters of the kings and queens maiesties vnder their great seal of England, to him by the said counsellors deliuered, both appeare.

A league &  
articles of  
amitie con-  
firmed.

The 24. of Aprill, was celebrated the solemnitie of the noble order of the garter at Westminster, the said ambassadoꝝ was conducted to the court by the lords Talbot & Lumley, to her maiesties presence, where he tooke his leaue with commendations to the emperoz, which being done, he was led vnto y<sup>e</sup> chappell, where was prepared for him a stately seate, wherein he accompanied with the duke of Norfolk, the lords aboue mentioned and other, was present at the whole seruice: the diuine seruice being done, he was remitted and reduced to his barge, and so to his lodging. The merchants hauing prepared foure goodly and well trimmed ships, laden with all kinds of merchandizes apt for Russia, the same ambassadoꝝ baled downe the riuer of Thamis, from London to Grauelend, where he with his traine and furniture, was imbarcked towards his voyage homeward on the 3. of May. It is to be remembred, that during the whole abode of the said ambassadoꝝ in England, the company of merchants did frankly giue to him and his, all manner of cosles and charges in victuals, riding from Scotland to London, during his abode there, and vntill setting of saile aboard a ship.

Gifts sent to the king and queene of England by the emperoz of Russia, and spoiled by the Scots after the shipwracke.

First, 6. tymber of sables, rich in colour and haire.

Item, twenty entire sables, exceeding beautifull with teeth, eares & clauers.

Item, 4. lining sables with chaines and collers.

Item, 30. lizarnes large and beautifull.

Item, 6. large and great skins, very rich and rare, woꝛne onely by the emperoz for woꝛthines.

Item, a large and faire ierfawcon for the wild swan, crane, goose, and other great fowles, together with a dym of silver, the hoopes gilt, vled for a lure to call the said hauke.

Gifts sent to the Emperoz of Russia, by the king and queene of England.

First, two rich peeces of cloth of tisse.

Item, one fine peece of scarlet.

Item,

Item, one fine violet in graine.

Item, one ayur cloth.

Item, a notable paire of brigandines, with a marian couered with crimolin beluct. and gilt nailes.

Item, a male and female lions.

Gifts giuen to the ambassadoꝝ at his departure.

First, a chaine of gold of a 100. pound.

Item, a large bason and ewer of siluer and gilt.

Item, a paire of pottle pots gilt.

Item, a paire of flagons gilt.

Charles lord Sturton and his men cruelly murdered maister Argile and his sonne: he caused them to be stricken downe with clubbes, then their throates to be cut, and after to be buried in his owne house 15. foot deepe, for the which he was arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and after conueyed from the towre of London through the citie, and so to Salisbury, and there hanged with foure of his men seruants, the 6. of March.

Lord Sturto  
executed,

King Philip returned into England, and landed at Douer on the 18. of March, and the 23. of March passed through London with the queene and nobles of the Realme.

K. Philip re-  
turned into  
England.

Thomas Stafford, and other hauing conspired diuers treasons against the King and Queene, fearing iust punishment for their deserts, fled beyond the Seas, and there remayning attempted diuers times to stirre rebellion within this Realme, by sending Bookes, Billes, and letters, written and printed, farced full of vntruthes, and at length the said Stafforde, and other English rebels, and some strangers, entered this Realme, on the fower and twentieth of Aprill, and tooke by stealth the Castle of Skarborough in the countie of Yorke, and let out a shamefull Proclamation, wherein he traytfroulie called and affirmed the Queene to be vnrightfull and most unworthie Queene, and that the King had brought into this Realme the number of twelue thousand Spaniardes, and that into their hands were deliuered twelue the strongest holdes in this Realme. In which Proclamation the said Stafford named himselfe Protector, and gouernor of this Realme, but he with the other his complices, by the good diligence of the Earle of Westmerland and other noble men, were apprehended on the last of Aprill.

T. Stafford  
tooke Skar-  
borough ca-  
stle.

The last of Aprill, Thomas Percy esquire, was made baron Percy at Westminster, and on the next morrowe which was the first of May, he was created Earle of Northumberland, and the Queene gaue him all the lands which had bene his ancestors remaining in his hands.

Percy Earle  
of Northum-  
berland.

The eight and twentieth day of May, Thomas Stafford was beheaded on the Tower hill, and on the morrow three of his companie, to wit, Stretchley, Bradford, and Proctor, were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered.

Thomas  
Stafford  
beheaded.

The 7. of June, so: that the French King had supported the treason of the Duke of Northumberland, and also the trayterous band of Wiat, and not long after when the diuell put in the heads of Dudley, Ashton and others their complices,

Warre with  
France.

complices, to enter into a new conspiracie, the said kings ambassadour was not onely priuie, but receiued them into his house, there to assemble and contriue their malicious and diuellsish enterpryse: & although the said king were advertised thereof by our ambassadoys, neuerthelesse, Dudley, Ashton, and others flying into France, were both receiued of the king, and also maintained with annuall pensions by him giuen, contrarie to his promise. Also he hath receiued sundrie famous pirates, and notozious enemies, and of late he sent Scalford with other rebels, who he had entertained, furnished with armour, money, munition and ships, to surprise the castle of Skarborough: proclamation was made to giue warning to our subiects to forbear all traffike with any of that Realme, and to repute the French king and his subiects as open enemies, &c.

The last of Iune, the lord Philip Howard, sonne of Thomas Duke of Norfolk, was borne in London, at the earle of Arundels house without Temple bar, which house sometime belonged to the bishop of Bath, and shortly after was christened in the queenes chappell at Westminster in a font of gold, where Philip king of Spaine, and Nicholas Heath archbishop of Poike, then chancelor of England were his godfathers in proper person, and the ladie Elizabeth duchesse of Norfolk his great grandmother, was his godmother. This lord Philip was the onely begotten child of the said Duke, borne of the ladie Marie, daughter and heire of Henry firz Allen, the last earle of Arundell of that name. To whome the inheritance and dignitie of the said Earle therefore descended.

The 6. of Iuly, the king passed ouer to Calcis, and so into Flaunders, where he made great prouision for warre against the French king. The same moneth, the Queene sent ouer an armie of a thousand horsemen, foure thousand footmen, and two thousand pioneers, to ayde king Philip, whercof the earle of Pembroke was Generall. The lord Robert Dudley maister of the Ordnance.

English men  
sent to Saint  
Quintins.

Lady Anne  
of Cleue,  
*Ann. reg. 5.*

Noblemen  
of France  
taken prisoners.

Saint Quintins won.

Deare and  
plentie.

The 15. of Iuly, died the lady Anne of Cleue at Chelsea, and was buried at Westminster on the 3. of August.

The 10. of August, were taken of Fraunce the chiefest captaines, the Duke of Montmorency Constable of Fraunce, and his sonne Monsieur de Merne, the Duke of Monpencier, the Duke of Longuille, the Marshall of Saint Andrew the Reinegrauie colonell of the Almains, Roche du Maine, the count de Rochefort, the Vicount of Touraine, the baron of Curton, the prince of Mantua, besides many gentlemen and captaines.

The eighteenth of August, the towne of Saint Quintins was taken by king Philip, with the helpe of Englishmen, at the siege whercof the lord Henry Dudley, youngest sonne to John late Duke of Northumberland, was slaine with a gunne: which Henry Dudley and sir Edward Windesore were the first that advanced banner on the wall.

This yeare before harvest, wheat was sold for foure marke the quarter, mault at 44. s. the quarter, beanes and rie at 40. s. the quarter, and pease at 46. s. 8. d. But after harvest, wheat was sold for 5. s. the quarter, mault at 6. s. 8. d. rie at 3. s. 4. d. so that the penny wheat losse that wayed in London the last yeare but 11. ounces Troy, waied now 56. ounces Troy, according to the list set down by the

maior



Major at that time. In the countrey, wheat was sold for 4. shillings the quarter, mault for foure shillings eight pence, and in some place a bushel of rie for a pound of candles, which was foure pence.

The 7. of September, at 7. of the clocke at night, in a blacke rainy cloude in the west was seene a raineboorn, the moone in the east risen one houre before, and faire shining, and at the full the day before.

This yeare in Michaellmas terme, men might haue seene in Westminster hall at the kings bench barre, not two men of law before the Iustices, there was but one named Foster, who looked about, and had nothing to do, the Iudges looking about them. In the common place, no mo sergents but one, which was sergent Bouloise, who looked about him, there was elbowe roome enough, which made the lawyers complaine of their iniuries in that terme.

The 20. of Nouember, sir Thomas Tresham knight, receiued the order of the Crosse, and was made lord prioz of S. Iohn of Ierusalem in England.

The first of Ianuarie, the duke of Guise with a great armie of French men, entred a plot of ground, entrenched at Sandgate, and there diuiding his power into two parts, sent the one with certaine peeces of ordnance along the downes towards Rislebanke: and the other with battering peeces to Newnam bridge, which two forts both at one time they shot at, and loone recovered without resistance, for there was not a man in them, for they priuily fled into the towne of Calcis. The next day therefore the Frenchmen began a battery from the sandhills, next Rislebanke, against the wall of Calcis, betwixt the watergate and the prison, and continued the same by the space of two or three daies, untill they had made a little breach, but not yet laugtable, neither was it meant, but to make the Englishmen to haue the lesse regard to the defence of the castle, where they were ascertained to haue an easie entrie: so that while the Englishmen trauelled to defend that breach, the Frenchmen being passed through the ditch full of water, entred the castle, and thought to haue entred the towne that way: but by the prowess of sir Anthonie Agar knight, and marshall of the towne, they were put backe into the castle, but the same sir Anthonie Agar lost his life, and this was on the first of Ianuarie. The same night William L. Wentworth, deputie or lieutenant of the towne, sent Nicholas Fellowes *alias* Gwins, and Richard Turpin *alias* Hams to the castle to demaund parle, which they graunted, putting forth of the postern two French gentlemen, and receiued in pledge of them into the castle I. Hiefield, master of the ordnance, and Edmond Hall a constable of the staple. Hereupon they falling in talke, at length agreed, that the towne with all the artillerie, victuals and munition, should be yeilded to the French, the liues of the inhabitants saued, they vnder safe conduct to pass: whither they would, leauing the lord deputie with 50. other, such as the duke of Guise should appoint, to remaine prisoners, & to be put to raunsonne. The next morning, the Frenchmen entred the towne and possessed it. And forthwith, all the men, women and children were commaunded to leaue their houses, and to go into certaine places appointed for them, there to remaine till order were further taken for their sending away. The places appointed for them to remaine in, were chiefly foure, the two churches of our lady, and of Saint Nicholas, the deputies house, and the staple, where they rested part

A small term at Westminster.

Lord prioz of S.Iohus.

1558  
Calcis besieged by the French.

The towne of Calcis was deliuered to the French on the 5. of Ianuarie.

The French men entred the towne of Calcis on the 6 of Ianuarie.

of

of that day, the night following, and the next day till the afternoone. And while they were thus in these foure places, proclamation was made in their hearings, straightly charging them that were inhabitants of the towne of Calceis, having about them any mony, plate, or icwels to the value of foure pence, to bring the same forthwith, and lay it on the high altars of the said churches upon paine of death, bearing them in hand they should be searched. By reason of which proclamation there was made a sorrowfull offering, and while they were at this offering in the churches, the Frenchmen rised their houses, where they found inestimable riches & treasure: but especially in that towne, ordinance, armour, & other munitions, as the Frenchmen write, besides the great riches of gold & silver, coine, icwels, plate, woolls, & other merchandize (which was inestimable,) there were found 30. peeces of brasse mounted on wheeles, & as many of yron, with such furniture of powder, pellets, armour, victuals, & other munitions of war scarcely credible. On the next day being y<sup>e</sup> 7. of January in the after noon a great number of y<sup>e</sup> meanest sort were suffered to passe out of the towne in safety, being guarded through the army with a number of Scottish light horsemen, who used the Englishmen very well & friendly, and after this, every day for the space of 3. or 4. daies, there were sent away diuerse companies, till they were all avoided, those excepted that were reserved prisoners.

There were in the towne of Calceis, 500. English souldiers in ordinarie pay, & of the towne men about 200. fighting men: & there were in the whole number of men, women & children, as they were accounted going out of the gate, 4200. persons or thereabout. The lord Wentworth depurte of Calceis, sir Ralph Chamberlaine capitaine of the castle, Iohn Harlestone capitaine of Rusebanke, Nicholas Alexander capitaine of Petonham bridge, Edward Grimstone controller, Iohn Rogers suriour, with other to the number in al of 50. were sent prisoners into France. The losse of this towne seemed strange to many men of great experience, the same towne being so many yeres so strongly fortified with all munitions that could be deuised, should now in so short space be taken of our enemies without fight or slaughter of any man, more then sir Anthonie Agar, as ye haue heard. The counsell of England had with all expedition raised a great power, to haue bene sent for the defence of that towne, but it auailed not, for such a tempest of wind arose, as the like in many yeaes had not bene seene, whereby no ship could brooke the sea, by means whereof our men were forced to remaine at Dover in a readinesse to haue passed the seas, till netwies was brought the towne was lost as ye haue heard, and then every man returned to his home. And shortly after, to wit, in the same moneth of January y<sup>e</sup> strong forts of Guisnes and Harnes, though most valiantly defended by the lord Gray of Wilton and others, English men, was wonne by the French, & by them possessed: whereof maister George Ferrers hath written at large, for he collected the whole historie of M. Mary, as the same is set downe under the name of Richard Grafton.

The 18. of Januarie, Edward Hastings knight of the garter, lord chamberlaine to the Q. was created baron Hastings of Loughborough at Westminster.

Aparliament.

A prest to

the queene.

The 20. of Januarie began a parliament at Westminster.  
In the moneth of March, a prest was granted to the queene by the citizens of London, of twentie thousand pound, which was leuied of the companies, for the which

G. Ferrers  
in the reigne  
of queene  
Mary.

which summe to be repaid againe, the Queene bound certaine lands, and also allowed for interest of the money twelue pound of every hundred for a yere.

The 28. of Aprill, Francis the French kings eldest sonne called the dolphin, was married vnto Mary Stewart daughter and sole heire of Iames the fift late king of Scotland, in the citie of Paris, with great pompe and triumph.

Queene of  
Scots married  
into  
France.

The losse of Calcis being generally grievous to the whole realm of England, but specially to queene Mary, she ceased not to trauell with king Philip her husband, as with her owne counsell, & lords of the realm which way should be best to reuenge this iniurie, especially now whilst the French king was occupied in wars with king Philip, to endamage some of his countries by way of inuasion, & to surpris some of his townes upon a sudden. And amongst sundry deuises none was thought so fit to be attempted as an haueu to wone in Britaine called Brest a towne as well for the situation thereof convenient to receive fresh succors, & victuall out of England by sea, as also for that it was knowne to the queene & her counsell at that present not to be furnished with any garrison of souldiers sufficient to repulse the power of a prince upon a sudden. Wherefore there was immediately order giuen to Edward lord Clinton then high admiral of England, with all expedition to prepare himselfe, with all the queenes ships of war, furnished with soldiers, munition, & victuall, to ioyne with the admirall of king Philip, who had like order fro his said king to ioyne with his navy of England, for the atchieuing of this enterprise.

In the meane time while K. Philip being absent from the low countries, was occupied with his wars in France, monsieur de Thermes captain of Calcis, being a man very expert in the wars, taking out of Calcis so many of his soldiers as might be spared from thence adioyned to the all the forces of the French garrisons in Artoys, Follonois, & Picardy, whercof together with the soldiers of Calcis, being to the number of 700 footmen, & 300. light horsemen, there were assembled 14. ensignes of the French footmen, 18. Companies of Almaines, 4. or 500. men at armes of France, beside the light horsemen Scots, amounting in the whole to the number of 9000. footmen, & 1500. horsemen, entered into Flanders with full determination to spoile king Philips countrie along the sea coast, & namely a proper haueu town called Dunkerke, & with like purpose to haue surprised the town of Graueling. This captain of pollicie passing by the towne of Graueling laid siege to a little towne not far from thence called Berghes, which he won with final resistance. And without long staying marched on to Dunkerke, & planting a siege there, battered the same so warply with the canon, that within lesse then foure daies he won the towne which he like as the other put to sack, & after setting the towne on fire, he with his French men spread abroad, wasted the most fruitful quarter of that part of Flanders almost to Detroppe: the army withdrew, & incamped within halfe a mile of Graueling. The countie Egmont lieutenant generall for king Philip in the low countrie, assembled all the power as well of king Philips garrisons, as also of men of war in the low country, to the number of 14. or more footmen, & 2. or 3. Companies of horsemen, determining so to affront the French, that either they should passe no further into the country, or at the least to impeach the fro the siege of Graueling: monsieur de Thermes hearing of this power assembled, made all possible hast toward Graueling, where he was no sooner arrived, but that he saw his enemies readie ranged

Dunkerke in  
Flanders  
brent.

ranged in the field, by reason whereof his studie was now nothing else but how he might bring home his army in safety to Calcis. The countie Egmond clypping the Frenchmens bent to march away with the spoile of the countie, cut betwixen the ayre and home, placing his battels in such order, that the Frenchmen had no way to passe, but vpon the sands betwixt the towne and the sea: whereas by good chance lay a great flecte of D. Maries ships of warre, within the danger of whole gunshot the Frenchmen had no shift, but to passe as their iourney lay: and so being forced either to faniish or to fight at diladuantage. Monsier de Thermes without staying any longer, caused his haungard to passe ouer the riuer somewhat nere the towne to auoid the shot of the English ships, and staid vpon the further side for the residue of his battels: there came such thicke haile shot of artillerie out of the towne on the one side, and from the English ships on the other side, that there was a full batterie made vpon the Frenchmen on all sides, which they neuertheless abode without breaking order for the time, when suddenly appeared before them two great troupes of horsemen of 1500. a peece, part forward Butters, and part Burgonians, whereof the one in front, and the other in flanke, gaue strong charges vpon the French bantgard, who being well backed with their other battels, slowly repulsed those two first troupes. Thus both parties being at a stay, the countie Egmond with 1800. men of armes, and his foote battels following, before the French had well recouered breath, recharged vpon them with all his forces together so terribly, that he shokt all their battell, and the number take the to flight, the victorie was soone had, by reason the Almaines beaten backe with the artillerie, as well of the towne as of the ships, brake their order, and came not to the shooke, whereby the whole charge of the battell rested vpon the Frenchmens heads. This field was foughten the 13. of July, vpon the sea sands nere to Graueling, where besides those that were slaine which were esteemed to the number of fise thousand, there were taken pylsoners the marshall de Thermes captain of Calcis, monsier Senerpont gouernor of Boloigne, monsier Villebon gouernor of Picardie, monsier Annabaute sonne to the late admirall, monsier de Moruilliers gouernor of Abuille, monsier de Channe gouernor of Corbier, beside a number of gentlemen, captaines and soldiers, but specially the bands of Calcis went to wracke, so as very few returned home. The admirals before named knew nothing of this matter, wherefore, following their prescribed course, and ioyning together at the place appointed, sailed from thence with prosperous wind, and on the nine and twentieth of the same moneth, with seuen score ships of warre appeared before the haven of Conquet in Britaine: at whose arriual there, they sounded their trumpets, and with a peale of great ordinance, gaue a loude salue to the Brittaines: and by eight of the clocke the same morning, the Englishmen maiming forth their ship-boates, recouered landing, and within short time became masters of the said towne of Conquet, which they sacked and bent with a great abbey, & many pretty towne and villages nere thereabouts, where our men found great store of pillage.

Towne of  
Conquet  
renew.

This being done, the Englishmen withdrew downe to the sea side, where their ships lay readie to receive them. But the Flemmings being covetous of the spoile, passing further into the land, before they could recover their ships againe, were



were encountered by the power of the countrie, by whom there were slaine of them to the number of foure or five hundred. The admirall perceiuing the power of the countrie greatly to increase, thought it not best to attempt any assault against the towne of Brest, or to make longer abode there, but returned home.

In this meane time, while king Philip and the French king with two most puissant armies affronted each other nere unto the water of Somme, either of them being obstinately bent to drive the other out of the field, for which cause they entrenched their camps: diuers conferences were had concerning peace, and at the last concluded vpon all controuersies, except the restitution of Calcis, required by the ambassadoys of Queene Marie, which the French part would in no wise heare of, by reason of which difficultie, this treatie could take no effect, nor come to good conclusion. King Philip thinking himselfe bound to stand in that case with the Queene his wife, did therfore stay a long time before he concluded peace with the French king.

A treatie of peace about the deliuerie of Calcis.

The second of Iuly, the Lord Wentworth and diuerse other that had bene gouernours of Calcis, were attainted of treason being then in France.

The 11. of Iuly, within a mile of Nottingham was a maruellous tempest of thunder, which as it came through two townes, beate downe all the houses and Churches, the bells were cast to the out side of the Church yards, and some webs of lead foure hundred foote into the field, withen like a paire of gloves. Ann. reg. 6. Tempest at Nottingham

The riuer of Trent running betwene the two townes, the water with the mud in the bottome was carried a quarter of a mile, and cast against the trees, the trees were plucked vp by the rootes, and cast twelue score off. Also, a child was taken forth of a mans hands two speares length high, and carried a hundred foote, and then let fall, wherewith his arme was broken, and so died. Five or six men thereabout were slaine, and neither flesh nor skin perished: there fell some hailestones that were fifteene inches about, &c.

This yere in haruell tune, the quartaine agues continued in like manner more vehemently, than they had done the last yere passed, wherethrough died many olde people, and specially priests, so that a great number of parishes were vnserved, and no curates to be gotten, and much cogne was lost in the field for lacke of workemen and laborers. Quartaine agues raged sore.

In the beginning of this yere, corne rose to foureteene shillings the quarter, and wood wared scant in London, and was sold for thirteene and foureteene shillings the thousand of billets, and coles at ten pence the sacke, by reason of the great death and sicknes the last summer for lacke of helpe and cariage. Corne and wood deare.

King Philip being absent out of the realme (as ye haue heard) and Queene Marie being dangerously sicke, ended her life at her manor of Saint James by Charing crosse the seventeenth of Nouember, in the yere 1558. when she had reigned five yeres, foure monethes and odde daies. The same day deceased cardinall Poole at Lambeth, and a little before, two of her physicians, besides diuerse bishops and noble men. Queene Marie was buried at Westminster, and cardinall Poole at Canterburie.

# Queene Elizabeth.

Ann. reg. 1.



LIZABETH our most gracious and soueraigne Lady, borne at Greenwich, second daughter to king Henry the eight, to the great comfort of England, was with full consent proclaimed Queene of England, Fraunce, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. on the 17. of Nouember, in the yeare of our Lord God 1558. Forthwith the ports and hauens were stopp'd, and none suffered to passe out of the realme without licence. Proclamation was made, forbidding all men to preach, save such as

should be appointed: also to alter any rites or ceremonies used in the church, save as it was in her Graces chappell.

The Queene cometh from Hatfield.

The 19. of Nouember, Queene Elizabeth came from bishops Hatfield in Hertfordshire, unto the lord Northes house in the late dissolved Charterhouse of London, the Sherifes of London meeting her grace at the farther end of Barnet towne within the shire of Middlesex, and so rode before her, till she came to the Charterhouse gate next Aldersgate, where her grace remained.

The Queene remooueth to the towre.

On monday the eight and twentieth of Nouember, about two of the clocke in the after noone, Queene Elizabeth rode from the lord Northes house along by the Barbican in at Creeplegate, then along by the wall to Bishopsgate, which gate was richly hanged, where the waites of the city plaid, and ouer against the kings-head tauerne, a scholler of Paules schoole made a short oration to her maiesty in Latin verses, the company of Mercers standing in their railes next the scholler, & so all the other companies of the city in order from thence to Hart lane end next unto Barking church in tower streete, the lord maior of London riding with maister Garter king at armes, bearing a scepter before her maiesty, which lord maior met her at the Charterhouse gate next Aldersgate, where maister Recorder saluted her grace in the name of the lord maior and the whole city, and so with lords, knights, and gentlewomen richly apparelled, brought her to the tower of London: but when her grace entered at Hart lane, a peale of guns began to be shot off at the tower, which continued almost halfe an houre.

The fift of December, the Queene remooued by water from the towre to Somerset place neare to the Strand.

Sir Thomas Cheney treasurer of the household and lord warden of the cinque ports, diseased the 8. of December.

Sir Nicholas Bacon Attourney of the court of wards, was made lord keeper of the great seale of England the 20. of December.

Queene Mary, buried.

The 13. of December, the corps of queene Mary was honorably conueyed from Saint James to the abbey of Westminster, and there placed vnder a rich heart decked with penons, banners, and scutchions of the armes of England and Fraunce, where she remained that night, and on the morrow after the masse of Requiem, and a sermon preached by Docteur White bishop of Winchester was ended, she was buried in the chappell of king Henry the seventh on the north side.

The foure and twentieth of December, was sollemne obsequie kept in the abbey

of Westminster for Charles the first late Emperoz, which deceased in Spaine in the month of September last past: Queene Maries hearse yet standing, altered with the armes of the Emperoz, and richly hanged with a rich pall-cloth of gold lying on the hearse, the Emperors ambassadoz being chiefe mourner, with other peers and Lords of England assistant with him, &c.

Obsequie  
for Charles  
the emperor

The first of Januarie, the lord Maior and Aldermen gaue in commandement to euery ward in London, that the parson or curate in euery parish church in London, should reade the Epistle and Gospell of the day in the English tounge in the masse time, and the English procession then vsed in the Queenes chappell, according to a proclamation sent from her maiestie and priue counsell, proclaimed in the Citie of London the 13. of December, which commandement was that day obserued in most parish churches of the citie.

1559.  
Procession,  
Epistle, and  
Gospell in  
English.

The ninth of Januarie in the morning, the image of Thomas Becket which floode ouer the doore of the Mercers chappell in London toward the streete, was found broken and cast downe, and a bill set on the church doore deprauiing the letters by thereof.

Image of  
T. Becket  
throwen,  
downe.

The twelfth of Januarie, the Queenes maiestie remooued from her place of White hall to the Tower by water, the lord maior of London and his brethren the aldermen in their barge, and all the Craftes of the citie in their barges richly decked with targets and banners of euerie mysteric. The batchelors of the maiors companie in their barge, with a foyst, hauing three tops, trimmed and richly decked to waite on them, which shot off guns all the way: all these awaited on her Maiestie, who tooke her barge about two of the clocke in the after noone, the lord maior following after, and euery company in order with great melodie of muscalle instruments, till her grace was through London bridge, and landed at her priue staire of the tower wharfe, and then the maior after leave taken and thanks of the queene, returned through the bridge with the floud, and landed at the three cranes wharfe in the binetree.

The 13. of Januarie were created in the tower of London, these noble men following, sir William Per knight was created marques of Portsmouth, Edward Seymour was made viscount Beauchamp & earle of Hertford, lord Thomas Howard viscount of Wyndon, sir Oliuer Saint Iohn knight, lord Saint Iohn of Bletfall, Sir Henry Carew knight, lord Carew of Hundisdon.

The fourteenth of Januarie, at which time the Londoners had made sumptuous provision of pageants and otherwise, as hath bene accustomed, the queenes maiestie passed through the city of London to her palace at Westminster: the next day she was crowned by doctor Oglesborne bishop of Carlile.

Coronation.

The five and twentieth of Januarie, began a parliament at Westminster, before the states whereof, doctor Coxe late come from beyond the seas, and some times schoollmaister to king Edward the first, made a learned sermon.

Parliament.

In this parliament, the first fruits and tenthes were graunted to the crowne, and also the supream gouernement ouer the state Ecclesiasticall.

The first  
fruits and  
tenthes grā-  
ted to the  
crowne.

Likewise, the booke of common prayer and administration of the Sacraments in our bulgar tounge was restored, to be done as in the time of K. Edward the first.

Moreover, in the time of this parliament a motion was made by the common

Motiō made  
to her maie-  
stie for ma-  
riage.

Answer of  
her maiesty.

Alex. Eue-  
ham,

house, that the Quenees maiesty might be sued vnto, to graunt her graces licence to the speaker, knights, citizens and burgesses to haue access vnto her graces presence, to declare vnto her matter of great importance, concerning the state of this her graces realme. The which petition being mooued to her grace, she most honourably agreed and consented therunto, and assigned a day of hearing: when the day came, the speaker and common house resorted vnto her graces pallace at Westminster called the White hall: and in the great gallery there, her grace most honorably shewed her selfe ready to heare their motion and petition. And when the speaker had solemnly and eloquently set forth the message, the speciall matter whereof was, to moue her grace to marriage, whereby to all our comforts we might enioy the royall issue of her body to raigne ouer vs, &c.

The Quenees maiesty after a little pause, made this answer following. I shal haue good cause so do I giue you all my hearty thanks for the good seale and louing care you seeme to haue, as well towards me, as to the whole estate of your countrey: your petition I perceiue, considereth of thre parts, and mine answer to the same shall depend of two.

And to the first part I may say vnto you, that from my yeares of vnderstanding, sith I first had consideration of my selfe, to be borne a seruitor of almightie God, I happily chose this kind of life, in the which I yet liue, which I assure you for mine owne part hath hitherto best contented my selfe, and I trust hath bene most acceptable vnto God. From the which, if either ambition of high estate offered to me in marriage by the pleasure and appointment of my Prince, whereof I haue some records in this presence (as you our treasurer well know) or if eschewing the danger of mine enemies, or the auoiding of the perill of death whole messenger, or rather a continuall watchman, the princes indignation, was no little time daily before mine eyes, by whose meanes, although I know, or iustly may suspect, yet I will not now vtter, or if the whole cause were in my sister her selfe, I will not now burthen her therewith, because I will not charge the dead: if any of these, I say, could haue drawne or dissuaded me from this kind of life, I had not now remained in this estate where in you see me, but so constant haue I alwaies continued in this determination, although my youth and words may seeme to some hardly to agree together: yet is it most true, that at this day I stand free from any other meaning, that either I haue had in times past, or haue at this present, with which trade of life I am so thoroughly acquainted, that I trust God, who hath hitherto therein preserved and led me by the hand, will not of his goodnesse suffer me to go alone.

For the other part, the manner of your petition I do well like, and take it in good part, because that it is simple, and containeth no limitation of place or person, if it had bene otherwise, I must needes haue misliked it very much, and thought it in you a very great presumption, being brutting and altogether vnmett for you to require them that may command, or those to appoint, whose parts are to desire, or such to bind & limite, whose duties are to obey, or to take vpon you to draw my loue to your likings, or to frame my will to your fantasie: for a guardon constrained, and gift freely giuen can neuer agree together. Neuerthelesse, if any of you be in suspect, that when soeuer it may please God to incline my heart to another



another kind of life, you may well assure your selues, my meaning is not to do or determine any thing, wherewith the realme may or shall haue iust cause to be discontented. And therefore put that cleane out of your heads, for I assure you, what credit my assurance may haue with you, I cannot tell, but what credit it shall deserue to haue, the sequels shall declare, I will neuer in that matter conclude any thing that shall be preiudiciall to the realme: for the weale, good and safety whercof, I will neuer thinke to spend my life. And whom soeuer my chance shall be to light vpon, I trust he shall be such, as shall be as carefull for the realme and you, I will not say as my selfe, because I cannot so certainly determine of any other, but at the leastwise by my good will and desire, he shall be such, as shall be as carefull for the preservation of the realme, and you as my selfe. And albeit it might please almighty God to continue me still in this mind to liue out of the state of marriage, yet is it not to be feared, but he will so worke in my heart and in your wisdomes, as good prouision by his helpe may be made in conuenient, whereby the realme shall not remaine destitute of an heire, that may be a fit gouernour, and peraduenture more beneficiall to the realme, then such of-spring as may come of me. For though I be neuer so carefull of your well doings, and inuind euer so to be, yet may illue grow out of kind, and become perhaps vngenerous. And in the end this shall be for me sufficient, that a marble stone shall declare, that a Queene hauing reigned such a time, liued, and died a virgin. And here I end, and take your comming vnto me in good part, and giue vnto you all such thanks my hartie thanks, more yet for your zeale and good meaning then for your petition.

The seventeenth of Februarie, one of the queenes takers of fresh fish, for abusing his authority, was set on the pillory in Cheape, where he stood three market daies, from nine of the clocke till twelue of the clocke, which punishment with more (whercof I write not) was by commandment of the Queene by her owne mouth, as a good example of iustice.

In the Easter holidays, preached at the Spittle, doctor Bill the queenes almoner, doctor Cox, & maister Horne, the two last came lately from beyond the seas.

On Low Sunday, the 2. of Aprill, maister Samepson, lately come from beyond the seas, made the rehearsal Sermon at Pauls crosse: but when the Lord Maior and aldermen came to their places in Pauls Churchyard, the pulpet doore was locked, and the key could not be heard of: whereupon the lord Maior sent for a smith to open the locke, which was done, and when the preacher should enter the place, it was found very filthy and vncleane: moreover, the Clerger that had the key of the place where the bishops and prelates use to stand to heare the sermon, could not be found: whereupon certaine gentlemen, with a forme brake open the doore. This disorder chanced by reason that since Christmase last past, there was not a sermon preached at Pauls crosse, for an inhibition had bene sent from the counsell vnto the bishop of London, that he should admit no preacher, because of the controuersie betwixt the bishops, and them of the clergie that were newly returned into the realme from beyond the seas.

The last of March, the parliament yet continuing, a conference was begun at Westminster, concerning articles of religion betwixt the bishops and other of the clergie,

Rob. Greene  
a taker set  
on the pil-  
lorie.

Preachers at  
the Spittle,  
and at Pauls  
crosse.

Conference  
appointed  
betwixt the  
old bishops  
and other  
clergie,

clergy on the one part, and certaine learned preachers, of whom some had bene in dignity in the Church of England, before that time on the other part. The declaration of the proceeding wherein, and the cause of the breaking up of the same conference by default and contempt of certaine bishops, part of the said conference was published in a treatise printed by Richard Iugge and Iohn Cawood, printers to the Queenes maiesty as followeth.

The Queenes most excellent maiesty, hauing heard of diuersity of opinions in certaine matters of religion, amongst sundry of her louing subiects, and being very desirous to haue the same reduced to some goodly and Christian concord, thought it best by the aduise of the lords and other her priuy counsell, as well for the satisfaction of persons doubtfull, as also for the knowledge of the very truth in certaine matter of difference: to haue a conuenient chosen number of the best learned of either part, to conferre together their opinions and reasons, and thereby to come to some good and charitable agreement. And hereupon by her maiesties commandement, certaine of her priuy counsell declared this purpose to the Archbishop of Yorke (being also one of the same priuy counsell) and required him that he would impart the same to some of the bishops, and to make choise of eight, nine or ten of them, and that there should be the like number named of the other part: and further also declared to him (as then was supposed) what the matters should be: And as for the time, it was thought meete to be as soone as possible might be agreed vpon. And then after certaine dayes past, it was signified by the sayd archbishop, that there was appointed by such of the bishops to whom he had imparted this matter, eight persons, that is to say, foure bishops, and foure doctours, who were content at the Queenes maiesties commandement to shew their opinions, and as he termed it, render account of their faith in those matters which were mentioned, and that specially in writing, although he sayd they thought the same so determined, as there was no cause to dispute vpon them.

It was hereupon fully resolved by the Queenes maiesty, with the aduise aforesayd, that according to their desire, it should be in writing on both parts, for auoiding of much alteration in words, and that the sayd Bishops should, because they were in authority, of degree superiours, first declare their minds and opinions to the matter, with their reasons in writing: and the other number being also eight men of good degree in schooles, and some hauing bene of dignity in the church of England, if they had any thing to say to the contrary, should the same day declare their opinions in like manner. And so each of them should deliuer their writings to the other, to be considered what were to be improued therein, and the same to declare againe in writing at some other conuenient day, and the like order to be kept in all the rest of the matters: all this was fully agreed vpon with the archbishop of Yorke, and so also signified to both parties. And immediatly hereupon diuerse of the nobility and states of the realme, understanding that such a meeting and conference should be, and that in certaine matters, whereupon the court of Parliament consequently following, some lawes might be grounded: they made earnest meanes to her maiesty, that the parties of this conference, might put and read their assertions in the English tongue,

tongue, and that in the presence of them of the nobility, and others of the parliament house, for the better satisfaction and inhabling of their owne iudgements, to treat and conclude of such lawes as mought depend thereupon. This also being thought very reasonable, was signified to both parties, and so fully agreed vpon, and the day appointed for the first meeting to be the friday in the forenoone, being the last of March, at Westminster Church, where both for good order, and for honour of the conference, by the Queenes maiesties commandement, the Lords and others of the priuie counsell were present, and a great part of the Nobilitie also: and notwithstanding the former order appointed and consented vnto by both parties, yet the bishop of Winchester, and his colleagues, alleaging they had mistaken that their assertions, and reasons should be writtten, and so onely recited out of the booke, layd their booke was not readie then writtten, but they were ready to argue and dispute, and therefore they would for that time repeat in speech that which they had to say to the first proposition. This variation from the order, and specially from that which themselves had by the sayd archbishop in writting before required, adding thereto the reason of the Apostle, That to contend in words is profitable to nothing but to subuersion of the hearer, seemed to the Queenes maiesties counsell somewhat straunge, and yet was it permitted without any great reprehension, because they excused themselves with mistaking the order, and agreed that they should not faile but put it in writting, and according to the former order, deliuer it to the other part, and so the said Bishop of Winchester and his colleagues appointed Doctor Cole Drane of Paules to be the utterer of their minds, who partly by speech onely, and partly by reading of authorities writtten, and at certaine times being informed of his colleagues what to say, made a declaration of their meaning, and their reasons to their first proposition, which being ended, they were asked by the priuie Counsell, if any of them had any more to be said: and they said no. So as then the other part was licensed to shew their mindes, which they did according to the first order, exhibiting all that which they meant to be propounded in a booke writtten, which after a prayer and inuocation made most humble to almighty God, for the enduing of them with his holy spirite, and a protestation also to stand to the doctrine of the Catholike Church, builded vpon the Scriptures, and the doctrine of the Prophets and the Apostles, was distinctly read by one Robert Horne Bachelor in Divinitie, late Drane of Duresme. And the same being ended with some likelihood, as it seemed, that the same was much allowable to the audience, certaine of the Bishops began to say contrarie to their former answer, that they had much more to say to this matter: wherein although they might haue bene well reprehended for such maner of cauillation, yet for auoyding of any mistaking of orders in this colloquie or conference, and for that they should utter all that which they had to say: it was both ordered and thus openly agreed vpon of both parts in the full audience, that vpon the monday following, the Bishops should bring their minds & reasons in writting to the second assertion, and the last also if they could, and first read the same, & that done, the other part should bring likewise theirs to the same. And being read, each of them should deliuer to other the same writtings.

And in the meane time the bishops should put in writing, not onely all that which Doctor Cole had that day uttered: but all such other matters as they any otherwise could thinke of for the same, and as soone as they might possible, to send the same booke touching that first assertion to the other part, and they should receive of them that writing which maister Horne had there read that day, and upon monday it should be agreed what day they should exhibite their answers touching the first proposition. Thus both parts assented thereto, & the assembly quietly dismissed. And therefore upon monday, the like assemblie began againe, at the place and houre appointed, and there, upon what sinister or disordered meaning is not yet knowne (though in some part it be vnderstanded) the Bishop of Winchester and his colleagues, and especially Lincolne, refused to exhibite or read, according to the former notorious order on friday, that which they had prepared for the second assertion. And thereupon by the Lord keeper of the great seale, they being gently and fauourably required to keepe the order appointed: and that taking no place, being secondly as it behooued, pressed with more earnest request, they neither regarding the authoritie of that place, nor their owne reputation, nor the credite of the cause, utterly refused that to doo. And finally, being againe particularlie euerie of them apart distinctly by name, required to vnderstand their opinions therein, they all sauing one (which was the Abbot of Westminster, hauing some more consideration of order, and his duetie of obedience than the other) vterlie and plainelie denied to haue their booke read, some of them as more earnestly than other, some so also, some other more indiscreetelie, and vnreuerently then others. Whereupon, giuing such example of disorder, stubburnesse and selfewill, as hath not bene seene and suffered in such an honourable assemblie, being of the two Estates of this Realme, the Nobilitie and the Commons, besides the presence of the Queenes Maiesties most honorable priue Counsell, the same assemblie was dismissed, and the godly and most Christian purpose of the Queenes Maiestie made frustrate. And afterward for the contempt so notoriously made, the Bishops of Winchester and Lincolne, hauing most obstinately both disobeyed common authoritie, and varied manifestly from their owne order, and especially Lincolne, who shewed more folly than the other, were condignly committed to the Tower of London, & the rest (sauing the Abbot of Westminster) stood bound to make dayly and personall apparance before the counsell, & not to depart the citie of London and Westminster, vntill further order were taken with them for their disobedience & contempt.

The three propositions, whereupon conference was determined to haue bene at Westminster.

1 It is against the word of God, and the custome of the ancient Church, to vse a tongue vnknowne to the people, in common prayer, and the administration of the Sacraments.

2 Euery Church hath authoritie to appoint, take away and change ceremonies and ecclesiasticall rites, so the same be to edification.

3 It cannot be proued by the word of God that there is in the Masse offered by a sacrifice propitiatorie for the quicke and the dead.

The bishop of Winchester.

Doctor Harpsfield.

The names  
of such as

The



The bishop of Lichfield.  
The bishop of Chester.  
The bishop of Carlile.  
The bishop of Lincolne.  
Doct<sup>r</sup> Cole.  
Maister Grindall.  
Maister Horne.  
Doct<sup>r</sup> Sands.

Doct<sup>r</sup> Langdal.  
Doct<sup>r</sup> Chadsey.  
Doct<sup>r</sup> Scory B. of Chichester.  
Doct<sup>r</sup> Coxo.  
Maister Whithead.  
Maister Gess.  
Maister Aylmer.  
Maister Iuell.

had conference in the propositions aforesaid.

The bishops and doct<sup>r</sup>s sate on the one side of the quire at a table, and the other learned men sate at another table on the other side of the quire. And at the upper end thereof at another table sate the queenes counsell to haue hard some good conclusion of the said conference, but it came to small effect as ye haue heard.

The 5. of Aprill the bishops of Winchester, doct<sup>r</sup> White, and of Lincolne, doct<sup>r</sup> Kealon, were committed to the towre of London.

In this meane time a treatie of peace, which had bene in hand the last yeare, betwixt the two kings of Spaine and Fraunce, was now renewed againe, and the deputies were appointed to meete at Chalkau Cambresy, a fife miles distant from Cambray. For the king of Spaine, the Duke of Alua, the prince of Orange, the bishop of Arras, Rigoines de Silua Earle of Hellito, Monsieur Vigilius Zwischen knight, and president of the priue counsell in the Low countries, who was letted by sicknesse, and could not come. For the French king there came the cardinall of Lozayne, the Constable, the Marshall of Saint Andrey, the bishop of Orlance, and Claude de Aubespine the said kings secretary.

Treatie of peace renewed.

For the Queene of England, the bishop of Elye, the Lord William Howard baron of Effingham, lord Chamberlaine to the said Queene, doct<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Wotton, deane of Canterburie and Porke. After this treatie had continued long, and now rested nothing to stay them from concluding a generall peace, but onely the article touching Calais, at length that matter was also accorded by a speciall treatie betwixt the Queenes maiestie of England and the French King. The substance of which article was, that Calais should rest in the French mens hands for the terme of 8.

Commissioners for the prince.

yeeres, and at the end of that terme, to render the same to the Queenes highnes, or for default thereof, to forfeite vnto her the sum of 500000. crownes: & for surety hereof, to deliuer sover hollages, such as her Maiestie should thinke sufficient. It was concluded also a firme peace betwixt the Realmes of England & Scotland, such fortresses to be rased as had bene built, and made by the Scots and French in the borders towarde England. Sir Iohn Mason knight secretarie for the French young, was sent ouer in post with instructions vnto the English commissioners, after whose coming, within two or three daies, a generall peace was concluded betwixt all the parties. And so on the 7. of Aprill, the said peace was proclaimed, to wit, betwixt the Queenes maiestie on the one party, and the French king on the other, their Realmes, Dominions & Subiects, and likewise betwixt her Maiestie and the king Dolphin & Queene of Scots his wife, their Realmes, Dominions and Subiectes. This Proclamation was made at London by Garter & Noerrey kings at armes accompanied with three other heraults, and fife trumpeters, the Lord Maior and Aldermen in their skarlet gownes, being present on horsebacke.

Guicciardin Peace concluded with condition to deliuer Calais to the English.

Peace proclaimed.

The

Lord Wentworth arraigned and quit.

The 22. of Aprill, Willm lord Wentworth late deputie of Calcis, was arraigned at Welsminster vpon an inditement of treason found against him, in the late Q. Maries daies, for the losse of Calcis, but he was acquit by his peeres, the lord Harqueste of Northampton, sitting that day as chiefe steward of England: so he was deliuered presently vnto his house, without returninge to any prison.

The 8. of May, the parliament brake vp, in which parliament, besides other things before recited, a subsidie was graunted to the queene of two shillings eight pence the pound of mooueable goods, and foure shillings of lands to be paid at two seuerall payments of euery person, spirituall and temporall.

Church service in the English tongue

The 8. of May being Whitsunday, the seruice in churches began according to the booke of common prayer, set forth and established by this last parliament, corresponding to that of king Edwards time.

Citizens of London mustered at Greenwich.

The 2. of July, the citizens of London had a muster afore the Ducenes maiestie at Greenwich in the parke, of 1400. men, whereof 800. were pikemen all in fine corselets, 400. harquebuts, in shirts of maille, with morirs, and 200. halberters in alman riuets, which were furnished and set forth by the companies of the citie of London: they had to euery hundred two wiffelers richly apparelled, and twelve wardens of the best companies riding in coates of blacke velvet to conduct them with drums and fifes, and six ensignes, all in ierkins of white byrdges latten, cut and lined with blacke larsenet, with caps, holts, and skarfes according, the captaines Robert Constable and maister Saunders, brought them in battell ray afore the Queene, euen as they should haue fought, which made a goodly shew before her Maiestie, the emperours and French kings ambassadours being present.

Bishops deprined.

In the moneth of July, the old bishops of England then living, were called and examined by certaine of the quenes maiesties counsell, where the bishops of Yorke, Ely, and London with other, to the number of thirteene or fourteene, for refusing to take the oth touching the Ducenes supremacie and other articles, they were deplued from their bishopricks. And likewise were diuerse deanes, archdeacons, parsons, and vicars, deprined from their benefices, and some committed to prison in the tower, Fleet, Marshalsea, and kings bench.

Commissioners.

Commissioners were likewise appointed for the establishing of religion through the whole Realme. For London were appointed sir Richard Sackuile knight, Doctor Horne a Deuine, Doctor Huicke a Ciuillian, and maister Saluage, who called before them diuerse persons of euery parish, and swore them to enquire and present vpon certaine inuincions.

Inuincions.

Houses suppressed.

Also the houses of Religion crested by queene Mary, as the priorie of S. Iohn of Ierusalem by Smithfield, the nunnes and brethzen of Sion and Sherne, the blacke friers in Smithfield, and the friers of Greenwich were all suppressed: the abbot and monkes of Welsminster were put out, a deane, prebends, and canons placed there, and so named the colledge of Welsminster, founded by Q. Elizabeth.

Church images burned.

On the euen of Saint Bartholomew, the day and the morrow after, &c. were burned in Paules church yard, Cheape, and diuerse other places of the citie of London, all the roodes and other images of Churches, in some places the coopes, vestments, altar clothes, bookes, banniers, spulchers, and rood lofts were burned.

The

The 5. of September there fell a three houres tempest at London in y<sup>e</sup> forenoon in the end whereof a great lightning with a terrible clap of thunder, strake the spire (being stone) of the steeple of Whallowes Church in Bredstreete, about a ten foote beneath the top, out of the which fell a stone that slew a dogge, and ouerthrew a man playing with the same dogge, and not long after the same spire was taken downe by the Church wardens, to save the charges of repairing. And at the same instant, by the same tempest, one of the south doozes of S. Diones Church in Fanchurch streete, with the dooze of the reueltrie of the same Church, were both stricken through and broken.

Churches in London stricken and broken by tempest.

The 8. and 9. of September. a solemne obsequie was kept in Paules Church at London, for Henrie the second of that name King of France, who decessed about the 10. of July last past, of a wound received the 29. of June, in running at tilt in solemne Jousts holden at Paris, in honor of the mariage celebrated betwixt his sister the lady Margaret of France, and Philibert Duke of Savoy. He was stricken on the bise with a lance, as he ranne against the Counte Montgomerie: the spiltis entring by the sight of his head peece, and piercing through his cie into his head, so perished his braine, that there was no meane to save his life. The obsequie for him was kept in very solemne wise, with a rich hearse made like an imperiall crowne, susteyned with eight pillars, and covered with blacke velvet, with a balence fringed with gold, and richly hanged with scutichions, penons, and banners of the French Kings armes, without any lights. And on the beere was laid a palle of cloth of gold, with a coate armour of the armes of France, and a crest with an imperiall crowne standing vpon the beere. Doctor Parker Archbishop of Canterburie elect, Doctor Barlow bishop of Chester elect, and Doctor Scory bishop of Hereford elect, executing at the dirige of the evening song in English, they sitting in the Bishops of Londons seate, in the upper quire in surplices, with doctors hoods about their shoulders. The chiefe mourner, was the Marquess of Winchester Lord Treasurer, assisted with ten other Lords mourners, with all the heraults in blacke, and their coate armours uppermost.

Obsequie for the French king.

On the morrowe being the 9. of September, a Sermon was preached by Doctor Scorie in place of Doctor Grindall Bishop of London. After the Sermon, sixe of the Lords mourners received the Communion with the Bishops, which bishops were in copes on their surplices, onely at the ministracion of the said Communion. Which being finished, there was a great dinner kept in the Bishop of Londons palace by Paules, where the mourners apparelled them, and so ended the solemnities of the said obsequies.

About the last of September, John Duke of Finland, second sonne to Gustavus King of Swethen, was sent by his father to treat a marriage for his eldest brother Ericus, with the Queenes Maiesie of England, he arrived at Harwich in Essex, and was there honorably received and enterpayned by the Earle of Orford: which said Earle, and the Lord Robert Dudley, with a goodly band of gentlemen and yemen, conveyed him to London, where he was received of divers knights and gentlemen of the Court, on the 5. of October, and was with his traine of about the number of 50. persons well hoysed, conveyed to the bishop of

Ambassador from Swe. then

of Wincheſters place in Southwarke, where he was lodged during his abode here, and remooued from thence 2. daies before Eaſter homeward, and ſped on his meſſage, as may appeare by that which ſolloweth taken out of *Iohannes Leuenclay. comment. de bellis Noſcorum.*

*Ann. reg. 2.* Ericus king of Sweden, ſonne of Guſtabus late king of the ſaid kingdome having committed to priſon his brother Iohn Duke of Finland, whom a little before he had employed into England on an amballaſſage to the Queenes maieltie, whom he ſued to for marriage, and had his ſute reſieſed: againe, the ſecond time ſolicited her maieltie in the ſame ſute, notwithstanding (to his great diſhonour, and (as it fell out) his iuſt diſgrace) he attempted the ſame matter with the youngell daughter of Philip Landgraue van Heſſen, at whole hand (having the ſecond time bene reſieſed of her Maieltie here) the matter being knowne there, he alſo not onely received a deniall, but the lady was by her father beſtowed vpon Adolfe Duke Van-Holt, vnkle of Frederike king of Denmarke, then enemy of the ſaid Ericus.

*Iohannes  
Leuenclay.*

*Troubles in  
Scotland.*

*Frenchmen  
ſent into  
Scotland.*

The 22. of December, Chamberlen that was captaine of the caſtle of Calcis, and Hurleſtone that was captaine of Riſebank were condemned of high treaſon, becauſe they left their charge, when the French men came thither.

In this meane time, through controuerſie raiſed betwixt the Scottiſh nobilitie, and the queene Dowager of Scotland, which chaunced ſpecially about matters of religion, certaine of the lords there minding reformation therein, and the queene reſiſting them to her power, diuerſe companies of ſouldiers and men of warre, were ſent out of Fraunce into Scotland to aide the ſaid queene, where they were placed in diuerſe towneſ and forts, to the diſpleaſure of the more part of the Scottiſh nobilitie, who were forced to ſue vnto the queene of England for aide to expell the French. Their ſute was the better liked of for that it was doubted leſt the French men vnder pretence of bringing an armie into Scotland to appeaſe the Scots, might attempt ſome inuaſion here in England, conſidering that by procurement as was thought of the duke of Guiſe, vnkle to y<sup>e</sup> queene of France and Scotland, a title ſhould ſeeme to be pretended by his neece the aforeſaid queen, as might be gathered by coniectures. The names of the lords of Scotland that made ſute for aide againſt the French men at this ſeaſon were theſe:

*Confederate  
Lord. in  
Scotland.*

The duke of Chateau le reault.

The earle of Arraine his ſonne.

The lord Iames, prioz of Saint Andrew.

The earle of Arguile.

The earle of Glencarne.

The earle of Rothouſe.

The earle of Southerland.

The earle of Mentithe.

The earle of Huntley.

The earle of Catnes.

The earle of Errolle.

The earle Marſhall.

The earle of Doxtou.

The earle of Caſtills.

The earle of Eglinton.

The earle of Mentrös.

The lord Ruthuen.

The lord Boyde.

The lord Ogletre.

The lord Erskin.

The lord Droonond.

The lord Hume.

The lord Roole.

The lord Chreighton.

The lord Leuingſton.

The lord Somerwell.

The Maſter of Lindley.

The Maſter of Martwill.

The



The Queenes maiestie with aduice of her graces counsell, considering of this waightie businesse, and withall, foreseeing the malicious purpose of her aduersaries, and how the Queene of Scots was in Fraunce married and gouerned, so as she was not able to vse the libertie of her crowne, did thinke it best to prevent such mischiefs as might ensue, if timely remedy were not vsed, to displace such dangerous neighbours the Frenchmen, that began to nestle themselves thus strongly so neare at hand. Hereupon was a power raised and sent forth, both by sea and land, the duke of Norfolk being appointed Generall, and sent into the North for the direction thereof. And first maister William Winter appointed vice Admirall of the Queenes nauie, Northwards made saile towards Scotland, and waiting along the coast, in the moneth of Januarie, came into the Forth, and so to the rode of Lieth, and there cast anchor, as well to impeach y<sup>e</sup> landing of such Frenchmen as might happily be sent forth of Fraunce against the Scottissh lords of the congregation, as also to keepe them that lay in Inlceith from victuals: moreover after that the army by land was come together into the North parts and had sojourned a while at Berwicke, and thereabouts, the Lord Grey of Wilton being appointed Generall of the said armie, departed with the same, and marched to Coltingham, where they encamped that night.

Aide giuen  
to the Scots  
against the  
French in  
Scotland.

1560

The 30. of March, sir James Croft, & sir George Howard, departed fro Berwicke to the armie, with all the launces and light horsemen, containing the number of 1250. horses. The number of footmen, more then 6000. The chiefe gouernors of which armie were these: The lord Gray of Wilton lieutenant Generall, sir James Croft assistant with him in that charge, the lord Scrope lord Marshall, sir George Howard, generall of the men at armes and demilances, maister Barnaby fitz Patricke his lieutenant, sir Henry Percie generall of the light horsemen: Thomas Huggens esquire, prouost marshall, Thomas Goner maister of the ordinaunce, maister William Pelham captaine of the Pioners, Edward Randell esquire sergeant maior, maister Thomas Borrough, maister Curbett Vaughan, maister Williams, and maister Cornewall corporals, this day at night the armie encamped at Dunglas, and thereabout.

The last of March, the army marching by Dunbar, there issued out of the towne certaine horsemen and footmen, offering to skirmish, towards whom certaine of the English launces and pishetts, with certaine harquebusiers made forwards, but they kept themselves within their strength, two of the enemies horsemen, and one footman were slaine. This done the army marched on to Linton bigges, where the footmen encamped that night. The horsemen lay at Haddington and in diuers other small townes, sir James Croft lay at Clarkington west of Haddington, at the lord of Cockburnes house. The first of Aprill, the camp remooued to Salt Preston, and there incamped: this evening, sir James Croft, with diuers of the captaines in his company, met with the earle of Arraine, the lord James prior of Saint Andrews, the maister of Maxwell, sir William Kirkcaldy lord of Orange, and diuers other of the Scottissh nobilitie with three hundred horse in their traine.

After they had saluted each other, they rode together to Salt Preston, where the lord Grey lord lieutenant met them, where they entred into communication, and

and after departed. The 2. of Aprill, the lord Grey, sir James Croft, y<sup>e</sup> lord Scrope, sir George Howard, with other capitaines rode to Huskelborough church, whither came to them the duke Chateau le Reault, with his sonne the earle of Arraine, the earles of Arguile, Glencarne, Southerland, Wentithe, and Rothus, the lord James prior of Saint Andrewes, the lord Ruythuen *alias* Riuer, the lord Ogletree, the lord Boyde, the maister of Hartwell, the L. of Dunsstone, the maister of Lindsey, the bishop of Galloway, the abbot of Saint Colines Inch, the abbot of Culros, the lord of Pettitrow, the lord of Cunningham head, y<sup>e</sup> lord of Grange and other, about 200. horse, there they late in counsell and departed for that night.

On the 3. of Aprill, the lord Grey, sir James Croft, the lord Scrope, sir George Howard, sir Henrie Percy, and diuerse other capitaines and gentlemen, rode vnto Pinkey, a house of the abbot of Dunfernes, where the earle of Arraine and the lord James Steward, with diuerse other noble men of Scotland meeting them, did conduct them into the said house, where they had long conference together, and after dinner they returned with the lord lieutenant vnto Salt Plesson.

The fourth of Aprill, five young gentlemen appointed to passe into England for pledges, their names were, lord Claude Hamilton, fourth sonne to the duke Chateau le Reault, Robert Dowglas, Archebald Cambell, lord of Longhennel, George Gream second sonne to the earle of Wentithe, James Coningham, sonne to the earle of Glencarne.

The sixt of Aprill, the campe raised from Salt Plesson and marched forwards, halfe a mile from Yesterike, beneath a Cragge called Arhurs scate, the duke of Chateau le Reault, the earle of Arraine, the earle of Arguile, the lord James prior of Saint Andrewes, and the rest of the noble men of Scotland, accompanied with two hundred horsemen, and five hundred footmen, staid for the coming of the English armie, whereupon the lord Grey, sir James Croft, the lord Scrope, sir George Howard, and sir Henry Percie repaired to them, & had conference there with the duke, and other the Scottish lords that were in his company.

In the meane while the army staid, but yet at length the horsemen, the vanguard and battell, were commaunded to march forth, who accordingly passed along by the place where the duke and Scottish lords stood, untill they approached nere to Yestericke: There came Trombull, the Queene Regents trumpet, to the lord lieutenant, and brought with him a safeconduct, given vnder the hand and seale, for the safe repaire of sir James Croft, sir George Howard, and six other to accompany them. Whereupon, they preparing themselves, departed towards Edenborough, where the said Queene as then lay within the castle. There went with them maister Sommerlet, maister Peihain, and foure other gentlemen. Whilest they were in conference with the Queene, the Frenchmen to the number of nine hundred or a thousand shot, backed with five hundred corslets and pikes, and about fiftie horsemen, were come forth of Lieth, vnder conduction of maister Doylell, and the countie Martigues coronell of the French footemen. The Lord Grey vnderstanding thereof, came vp to the hill, appointed an officer at armes called Rouge Croft: to go vnto them, with commandment from him, that they should retire their forces forth of the field into the towne of Lieth: for if it were not for the promise which he had made to the queene Dowager, he would

cause

cause them to depart. The herault doing his message, receiued answer, that they were vpon their maister and mistresse ground, and therefore meant not to remoue from it. Rouge Crosse returning with this answer, was sent againe, to commaund them estoons to go their way backe to Lieth, for if they did not, they should be sent away with a mischiefe. But bineth had the herault done this second message, when the French men stepping forth, discharged a whole bolie of their shot into the field against the Lord Grey and his companie. Hereupon, the Englishmen and they fell in skirmish, which continued for the space of foure houres and more, so hote and earnestly mainteyned on both parts, that the like had not lightly bene scene long time before: yet at the length the Englishmen droue the French footemen ouer the hill, and wan the Crag from them, and put them from a Chappell, where they had stood a great while, vsing it for a couert from the Englishmens shot. Then the enemies that were in Lieth shot off diuers peeces of their great artillerie out of the Towne against the Englishmen, who on the other part brought forth two field peeces, and covered them with a troupe of horsemen, and hauing planted them to some aduantage, discharged the same among the enemies, who perceiuing that, gaue place, and sodainly the English demulances gaue a charge on them, brake in amongst them, and slue diuerse of them, whereby they were forced to retire backe into Lieth, being followed well-neere to the gates of the Towne. There were slaine in this skirmish of the French about 140. beside them that remained prisoners. Of the Englishmen there were also diuerse slaine, and many hurt. The same day sir James Croft and sir George Howard returned from the D. Regent, after they had spent a long time in talke with her.

The seuenth of Aprill, a new french was cast beside the Crag, and thereon two peeces of ordinance planted. The eight of Aprill, the Frenchmen shot at the English campe very sore out of Saint Nicholas steeple, where were planted two great peeces of ordinance, although they did no great hurt: but the same night the Englishmen cast a trench beyond the Crag, and placed in the same trench certaine small peeces of artillerie, which went off the next day against the enemies, and they likewise shot off against the English. The twelfth of Aprill, a bullet of a great peece of ordinance, being shot out of Lieth, did light in the camp and slue three men: but they were answered againe with our Canons. The foureteenth day of Aprill, being Easter day, the Englishmen shot off their great Ordinance, and the Frenchmen answered them againe all that day. The footemen also skirmished, so that diuerse were hurt on both parties. The same day the pile of Blacknesse was surrendered to maister Winter. The same day, 9. French men apparelled like woomen came forth of Lieth, and counterfeiting some light demeanour, trained one of the English scowts within their danger, whom they tooke, and chopped off his head, which they set vpon the toppe of one of their Church steeples. The sixteenth day of Aprill, a fittie horsemen, and about five hundred harquebusiers, who making to the new trenches, were vpon the English men that warded vpon such a sodaine, that they slue and wounded no small number, and possessing the trenches awhile, stopped the touch holes of three peeces of the artillerie, tooke maister Mawrice Barkeley prisoner, and his ensigne:

Pile of  
Blacknesse  
surrendered  
to the Eng-  
lish.

Brian

Brian Fitz Williams was sore wounded, &c. The alarme being brought to the campe, sir James Croft and other repaired towards the trench with all expedition, and perceiuing the French men to be maisters of one of the trenches he commanded captaine Vaughan with his band to enter the trench, and to relecue those that were hardly beset of the Frenchmen, which was done with such manhood, that the enemies were expelled, and sixtene of them slaine: captaine Sommerlee and captaine Reade with their bands followed them, as they retired, and maister Arthur Grey with certaine demulances, and charging them with great courage, draue them into the towne, and made of them great slaughter, but Arthur Grey was shot through the shoulder. The 16. of Aprill, a supply of 2200. footemen came to the campe, ouer whom was captaine sir Andrew Corbet, sir Rowland Stanley, sir Thomas Heskeith, sir Arthur Manwering, sir Laurence Smith, maister Francis Tunstall maister Edward Littleton, captaine Caruell, Philip Shurley, and David Morris. They were garded with 500. horsemen, sir Ralph Sadler, sir Francis Leake, sir Iohn Foster, and sir Nicholas Strange, hauing charge to see them safely conducted, who after they had brought the past all danger of enemies, left the in safety by the way, and were come a day or two before them to the campe.

The 17. of Aprill, Maister Winter caused diuerse of the ship boats, being well manned, to giue a great alarme at the side of the towne towards the water, discharging many ballies and harquebusers of croke into the towne, during which time there was a piteous cry made by the women and children within the towne. The 20. of Aprill, many peeces were shot off out of the trenches into the towne. There issued out at the gates one hundred shot, to haile such of the Englishmen as came forth to offer skirmish, the pioneers both Scots and English were occupied in making of a new trench neare to the towne.

The twentieth of Aprill, the Bishop of Valence, accompanied with sir Henry Percie, and thye hundred horsemen, came to Lleslericke, the Lord Lieutenant, sir James Croft, the lord Scrope, and sir Raffe Sadler, met him at the further end of the ward. After they had receiued him with salutations, he was conducted by Rouge crosse from the campe vnto Edenborough, and so vp to the castle to confer with the Queene Dowager. He was no sooner in the castle, but there issued forth of Lieth the number of two hundred Frenchmen, and began a hot skirmish, which continued two houres, at which diuerse were slaine on both parts. The same night, nine peeces of ordinance were planted in the new trench, so that the next day the same peeces were shot off toward the steeple of S. Anthonies Church, whereby the peeces of ordinance that lay in the same steeple, were dismounted by them, and likewise those that lay in the steeple of Saint Nicholas Church, where a Gunner was slaine that stood at one of them, the peece and the gunner tumbling downe both together: a great peece of this church was beaten downe, and the steeple defaced. The Bishop of Valence after he had talked with the Queene, returned to commune with the Lords of the congregation.

The 23. of Aprill, the Pioners Scottish and English, were busied in casting of trenches.

On the 24. of Aprill, there issued out of Lieth seauentene horsemen, who offered the skirmish, and vnder the place called little London, 300. or 400. of their shot were



were placed, at length certaine of the English Launces gaue a charge vpon their horsemen, who therewith retiring drew the Englishmen within danger of their shot, but the French were forced to retire, without any great hurt done to the Englishmen.

The 25. of Aprill, the Pioners finished the new fort, named Mount Pelham, to the gard whereof Captaine Vaughan was appointed gouernor with 1200. souldiours. This fort was raised on the south side of the towne, the plot whereof was cast square with foure bulwarkes at euery corner, and 12. battering peeces planted in places conuenient. This day, there issued out of Litch on the East side, 70. or 80. horsemen, and 200. harquebussiers offering the skirmish, towards whom certaine of the English light horsemen made, and charging them, drew the backe to their footemen, who with their shot receiued the light horsemen so sharply, that they were forced to retire: in the which retire Iames Hamilton a Scottissh man was taken prisoner. This day captaine Perich, and captaine Hayes, hauing charge of a troupe of light horsemen, vnder sir Henry Percy, and the lord of Gange, were taken prisoners before Dunbar, and to the number of 20. or 30. other were likewise taken or slaine. The same night also 2000. footemen with the pioners, were sent to the other side of the towne, beyond the Canon milles, where the pioners cast a trench for the safe lodging of the army, which remooued the next day from Yellericke downe into the valley by the said Canon milles, called the red Braies. As the army was incamping, certaine of the enemies horsemen and footemen skirmished with the English Launces and light horsemen a long time, there were two Frenchmen slaine with their horses also. In time of this skirmish, two Canons were conueyed and planted in the new trench, which discharged diuers shot at the enemies.

The seuen and twentieth of Aprill, the great artillerie was planted aloft on the hill aboue the campe, within lesse than a curiours shot of the towne walls, and the pioners were set a worke to cast new trenches, from the place where the same ordinance was lodged vnto Mountpelham, drawing so neere vnto Litch, as the harquebussie might reach them that watched and warded within the great bulwarke. The French kept the same day a trench which they had made without the towne, continually shooting at the English men in the campe, but the same night the English men won that trench from them, slue diuers of them therein with their shot, which being done, they gaue a great alarme to the towne both by land and water, the ship-boates shooting off against the towne very hotly, and they within the towne likewise at the English men. The same night was the great ordinance planted, and maister Markham hurt. The 28. the said great ordinance went off, and shot continually the more part of the day. The bishop of Valence departed the same day towards Bartwike, and this night sir George Howard, that had bene sent backe to Bartwicke, to signifie to the D. of Norfolk the estate of the siege, returned with sir Richard Lee, being conducted with 500. horsemen.

The 30. of Aprill, the great artillerie were shot off very hotly, and the French likewise shot off theirs, and comming forth of the towne, skirmished with the Englishmen: this night the pioners made new trenches towards the South bulwarke. The last of April, a sodaine fire was raised within the towne, which hugely encreased and continued the most part of the night following: at the beginning

When it first appeared, the English ordinance was shot off to the place where the fire was, which shot together with help of the wind that was very great did marvellously augment the same fire: neuertheless the French at that present time offered a skirmish, & continued the same neare the space of two houres. It was appointed, that certaine bands should make alarme to the towne, in so much that capitaine Vaughan, with diuerse other souldiers of Mountpelham entered the ditch, and approached the walls, but retired without receiving any great hurt. The first of May, the Frenchmen early in the morning set by their may-poles in certaine bulwarkes and 14. ensignes, the which being discovered of them in the campe, they saluted them with a peale of great ordinance, and likewise the French answered them againe, and so continued the most part of that day.

The second of May, the pioneers made the trenches for the artillery to be planted in batterry. The night following they placed the artillery in the new trench, and the next morning, the same batterry went off, and continued all that day. The night ensuing, the pioneers made a trench by the Citadell, wherein they might lodge some shot, and capitaine Vaughan with diuerse of the bands in Mountpelham, gave two fierce assaults to the towne, entered the ditches, and viewed the flankers: whercupon the French shot off the same flankers, and munning their walls, shot off two or three bolies of their final artillery, slaying and hurting to the number of twenty Englishmen, among other little Norton was one.

The fourth of May, there were three ensignes appointed to gard the new trenches, and towards night the Frenchmen that were in the trench vnder the Citadell, made a sally vpon the Englishmen that garded the layd trench, but could not preuaile. The same night the Englishmen conueyed two culuerings ouer the water to scoure the mills, and before the break of the day they had brent one of the same mills. The fift of May, 4. souldiers belonging to our great ordinance set fire & brent the other mill. This day also, as French gentlemen came forth to discover the English trenches, capitaine Reade commanded one of his souldiers to shoot at them, but through misshap his peece burst, and a shiuer thereof brake the arme of the sayd capitaine.

The sixt of May, the English ordinance on the further side the water, began to shoot off against the enemies very hotely. This day the earle of Arguile, and diuerse other noble men of Scotland, came to Edinburgh with two thousand horsemen and footemen, who shewed themselves in order of a muster on the hill vnderneath the castle, which being perceiued of the French within Lieth, they shot of three great peeces of artillery at them, but hurt them not. The night ensuing, the great ordinance in the English mens trenches and bulwarkes, continued shooting on euery side: and herewith commandement was giuen by the lord lieutenant and the counsell, that the whole army should be ready armed by midnight. In the morning by two of the clocke, diuerse bands passed forth towards the towne, and entering the ditches offered to scale, other capitaines with their men approached the bulwarkes, and other were appointed to enter beside the milles. Beside the English bands, there were a thousand Scots ioyned with them, wherof five hundred with capitaine Vaughan and other were commanded to attempt the bulwarke next to Mountpelham, and other five hundred went with

such English captaines as were commanded to assault the breach.

Moreover, as well the lances as light horsemen, were assigned to guard the fields: sir George Howard with the lances keeping betwixt the fort of Mountpelham and the sea westward, and sir Henry Percy with the light horsemen, betwixt the campe and the sea eastward. The rest of the footmen that went not to the assault, were also appointed to guard the trenches and field, in such wise as was thought expedient, and upon warning given by captain Randall sergeant major, such as had bin commanded to give the assault in their severall appointed places, pressed with courage, & boldly adventured to climbe the walls, and enter at the breaches, but yet their attempt wanted the wished successe: for what through the policy of the french, in stopping the currat of the river that night, & what by reason of the unfitness of the ladders, being too short, the assailants were repulsed, & were forced to retire with the losse of 7. or 8. score englishmen, or more, which were slaine outright, besides those that were wounded, being at the least two or three hundred.

The 8. of May, sir George Howard and sir Richard Lee departed toward Barwike with certaine companies of horsemen for their safe conduction.

The ninth of May, the frenchmen wrought within the towne to fortifie and repara the breaches. The same day also the french had manned to the sea-wards a bote fraught with fifty harquebusiers, meaning to convey them over to Insketh, but the English ships discovering them, prepared certaine botes to encounter the, whereof they being aware, returned.

The 10. of May, maister Ingleby, captain Pickman, and captain Browne came to the campe from Barwike with a supply of foure hundred & fifty souldiers.

The twelfth of May about midnight, the frenchmen to the number of two hundred sallied forth of the towne, minding to give a camulado to the Englishmen that kept watch in the trenches at the west side of Mountpelham, but they were detected and repulsed.

The fifteenth of May, sir Francis Leake came to the campe with a supply of five hundred men from Barwike.

The one and twentieth of May about seven of the clocke at night, there issued forth of Lieth six horsemen and a hundred footemen harquebusiers, marching toward Mountpelham to offer skirmish: whereupon captain Vaughan went forth to them very orderly, and skirmished with them a prety while, in the end the frenchmen were drinen to retire. The same night maister Francis Sommerlet and other captaines were appointed to keepe a fort built about the campe, and tooke the name of him being captain thereof, & was called Sommerlets mount. The 22. sir Peter Carew came to the campe, being sent from the court. The 24. of May at night about seven of the clocke, the french sallied forth to the number of 200. footmen and 20. horsemen, meaning, as it appeared, to haue worne the trenches from the Englishmen, whereupon a fore skirmish followed, diuers slaine, and many hurt on both parts: yet in the end the french were drinen home by force. The same day the frenchmen of Dunbarre tooke an English hoy laden with beere, beefe and bacon.

The eight of June sir Iohn Newill with three hundred men, captain Bridges, and captain Drewry, with other three hundred, set from Barwike towards the

Queene  
Dowager  
of Scotland  
deceased.

campe, where they arrived on the 10. of June, on which day the queene Dowager departed this life.

The thirteenth of June, sir William Cicill principall secretary to the queenes maiesty, with sir William Cordall, and doctor Worton deane of Canterbury and Pojke came to Barwicke, appointed commissioners on her said maiesties behalfe to treat of an accord with the countie de Randon, and the bishop of Valence commissioners sent for that purpose from the French king and his wife Mary queene of Scots.

The fourteenth of June a certaine number of Frenchmen came forth of Lieth to gather cockles on the sands towards Mountpelham, whercof the Englishmen perceiving, set vpon them, slue 70. and tooke 16. of them prisoners.

The sixteenth of June, the forenamed commissioners came to Edeborough, and as maister Secretary and the other passed the English forts and campe, they were saluted with a gallant peale of harquebusiers.

The seventeenth of June about eight of the clocke, an abstinence of warre was concluded; warning being given by the discharging of two peeces of ordinance out of the castle, and then the Frenchmen shewed themselves vpon their rampiers.

The 22. of June, the abstinence of warre was broken off.

The 4. of July about 3. of the clocke in the afternoone, the French came out of Lieth to gather cockles, whereupon the lord lieutenant bring at that present in Mountpelham, sent a drum vnto monsieur Doysell, to signifie vnto him, that his souldiers had gone further without their bounds then they might do by the order taken by the commissioners of both parts: Doysell answered, that they were no souldiers, but poore people which went to gather cockles for their releefe and sustentance. The drum layd, that if they kept not themselves within their appointed limits, the lord lieutenant meant to send them backe not greatly to their ease: whereunto Doysell replied, that if he so did, he would do the best he could to ayde the: hereupon the English horsemen and footmen of Mountpelham gaue a charge vpon them, and slue of them to the number of 50. and tooke certaine prisoners.

The first of July issued put of Lieth foureteene horsemen, and a hundred footmen, which offered the skirmish, but vpon the shooting of the great artillery from Mountpelham, they retired home againe into the towne. The night following about twelue of the clocke, one Scatargood an English man that was a gunner, and had fained himselfe to flee from the English campe for manslaughter into Lieth, and was received of the frenchmen, beleewing that he had meant no deceit, came out of the towne, after he had remained there about seven dayes, in which meane while he had vnderstood fully the state of the towne, and now vpon his returne, made relation thereof as he knew.

The first of July, the lord Grey lord lieutenant, sir William Cicill secretary, and sir Ralph Sadler about three of the clocke in the after noone, gaue order, that there shold no pece be shot, nor shew of hostility made until seven of the clocke the same night: and herewith sent Gerueys Clifton vnto all the souldiers that watched in the trenches and bulwarkes on the west side of Lieth, to command them to obserue the like order, and sir Iohn Neuill was sent with like order vnto the souldiers that lay in Somerset mount.

The



The peace now being concluded, on the seventh of July, Sir Francis Leake, and Peace concluded in  
 Sir Gerueis Clifton, accompanied with two French gentlemen were sent to the  
 towne of Lieth, to signifie unto monsieur Doyfell, the bishop of Amiens, Labrof- Scotland,  
 se, Martignes, and other the French lords and captaines, that they were come thither by commaundement from the commissioners to cause the peace already concluded, to be proclaimed, which accordingly was done in manner following:

The most mightie princeesse, Elizabeth by the grace of God, Queene of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. And the most christian king Francis and Mary, by the same grace of God king & queene of Fraunce and Scotland, haue accorded vpon a reconciliation of a peace and amitie to be inuolably kept betwixt them, their subiects, kingdomes and countries, and therefore in their names it is straitly commaunded to all manner of persons borne vnder their obediencies, or being in their seruice, to forbeare all hostilitie either by sea or land, and to keepe good peace each with other from this time forwarde, as they will answer thereto at their bittermost perils. Immediately after this proclamation was ended, Sir Francis Leake, and Sir Gerueis Clifton were brought to monsieur Doyfells lodging, where was prepared for them a banquet of thirtie or fortie dishes, & yet not one either of flesh or fish, saving one of a powdered horse, as was aduouched by one that auouched himselfe to haue tasted thereof.

Articles of the peace, thirteene in number, were to this effect.

1 First, the French king and queene do not onely relinquish the stile, title and armes of England and Ireland, but do also bind themselves from henceforth to forbeare any more to vse or beare the same, and shall forbid their subiects the using of the same stile, in what sort soeuer it be, within any of their countries or dominions, forbidding also as much as in them lyeth, the wearing or quartering any manner of waikes the armes of England with those of Scotland or France.

Articles of peace at the siege of Lieth.

2 All such letters patents, or other writings as haue bene heretofore made, wherein the said title is mentioned, or whereunto any stile concerning the said armes is annexed, shall be reformed, and new made, without putting to them the title or armes of England or Ireland, and that all manner of writings or instruments concerning the said title, and being sealed with the said armes, not being renewed or reformed within sixe moneths after the publication of this treatie, shall be void and of none effect.

3 Scotland shall be gouerned by a counsell of twelue of the noblest of that country, which nobilitie shall be taken out of foure and twentie, to be first chosen by parliament, by the three estates there, and of those twelue, seven shall be named by the Scottish queene, and five by the lords of the parliament.

4 All things passed there since March 1558. shall be ouerpasse and forgotten, and by parliament the surety of the same shall be confirmed, and euery man restored to his office in that realme.

5 No French man shall haue any office in Scotland.

6 Sixe score French men souldiers only shall remaine in Scotland, viz. thre score in Dunbar, & 3. score in Inskith, & those to be monthly mustered, and payed by the counsell of the realme, and to be iustified by the lawes of Scotland.

7 No munition nor victuals shall be brought into Scotland, but from sixe moneths

moneths to fire moneths, and then onely for those places, and for the said number of fire souldiers.

8 No forraigne ships or men of warre shall be from hencefoorth brought into Scotland, but by the consent and will of the Scots.

9 Lieth shall be demolished by the victo of the Quenes maiesties commissioners, and in such sort as they shall thinke convenient.

10 The new buildings of Dunbarre shall also be rased.

11 Matters of religio in Scotland be overpassed in silence without any alteration.

12 The league betweene the Quenes maiestie and the nobilitie of Scotland is also passed over without any reuocation.

13 Finally, in the treatie betweene her highnesse, and the said French king and queene, the said king and queene, are by the speciall clause bound to her highnesse to performe and keepe the said covenants that touch the Realme and subiects of Scotland.

After that this peace was then fully established, the French men were embarked at Lieth in English vessels, those onely excepted that were appointed to remaine as pledges with the English men till the ships came backe againe, and a few other that were permitted to passe through England into their country.

Houses  
blowne vp.

The first of July, through shooting of a game which brake in the house of one named Adrian Arren a Dutch man in Crooked lane, and setting fire on a firen barrell of gun powder, foure houses were blowne bp, and diuerse other were shattered, nine men and women were slaine, and diuers other were bruised.

The third  
fall of the  
base money.

On Michaclmas euen before noone, was published by proclamation, that the tesson coyned for twelue pence, and in the raigne of king Edward the first called downe to fire pence, should now forthwith (of the best sort, marked with the port-culcis, be taken for foure pence halfe peny, the second, marked with the greyhound for two pence farthing, the third and worst sort, not marked as afore, not to be taken for any value: the groate should be taken for two pence, the two peny peece for a peny, &c. And shortly after, her grace restored to her subiects fine sterling money, for their corrupt and base coine, calling the same to her maiesties mints, according to the rate before mentioned.

New coine  
of fine siluer.

The 9. of October the French crovne that went currant for 6. shillings foure pence was proclaimed to be fire shillings.

Ann. reg. 3.

The quenes maiestie made great preparation of armor, munition, and powder, to be in a readinesse to defend her realme, if need should happen.

1561  
The mer-  
chant Tai-  
lors free-  
schoole.

The one and twentieth of March, a notable grammar schoole was founded by the maister, wardens, and assistants of the worshipfull companie of the merchant Tailors of London, in the parish of Saint Laurence Pountney in the same city: Richard Hills late maister of that company having giuen five hundred pound toward the purchase of an house, called the Harroze of the Roole, sometime the duke of Buckingham, wherein the schoole is kept.

Wil. Geffrey  
whipped.

The 10. of Aprill was one William Geffrey whipped from the Marshalsea in Southwarke to Bedlem without Bishops gate of London, for that he professed one Iohn Moore to be Christ our Saviour: on his head was set a paper wherein was writt as followeth: William Geffrey a molt blasphemous heretik, denying Christ

Christ our Sauour in heauen. The sayd Gessiey being stayd at Bedlem gate, John Moore was brought forth, before whom William Gessiey was whipped till he confessed Christ to be in heauen. Then the sayd John Moore being examined, and answering ouerthwartly, was commanded to put of his coate, dublet and shirt, which he seemed to do very willingly, and after being tied to the cart, was whipped an arrowes shoote from Bedlem, where at the last he also confessed Christ to be in heauen, and himselfe to be a sinfull man: then was John Moore sent againe vnto Bedlem, and William Gessiey to the Marshalsea, where they had laine prisoners nigh a yere and a halfe, the one for professing himselfe to be Christ, the other a discipule of the same Christ.

A false christ  
whipped.

This yere was such a scarcity of wheate and other graine, that sir William Chester maior of London, and other the principall magistrates of the city, were forced to make prouision for wheate & rie from beyond the seas, to a great quantity, which was a releefe, not only to the citizens, but also to the countreies neare adioyning.

On Wednesday the fourth of June, betweene foure and fise of the clocke in the afternoone, the steeple of Paules in London, being fired by lightning, brast forth (as it seemed to the beholders) two or three yards beneath the foote of the crosse, and from thence bent downe the sphere to the stone woрке and bels, so terribly, that within the space of foure houres, the same steeple, with the roofes of the church so much as was timber, or otherwise combustible, were consumed, which was a lamentable sight, and pitifull remembrance to the beholders thereof.

Paules steeple on fire  
by lightning.

The length of Paules church in London is twelue score Taylors yards, which is seven hundred and twentie foote: the breadth thereof is one hundred and thirty foote: the height of the steeple was fise hundred and twentie foote, whereof the stone woрке is two hundred and sixtie foote: and the spere which now is burnt, was likewise two hundred and sixtie foote: the height of the body of that church is one hundred and fiftie foote.

After this mischance, the Q. maieslie being much grieved for the losse of so beautifull a monument, directed her highnesse letters to the Maior of London, willing him to assemble the citizens, to take some order for speciall ayde & helpe for the repairing againe of the same, and she of her most gracious disposition, to giue a comfort vnto other, for the furtherance thereof, did presently giue and deliuer in gold 1000. marks, & a warrant for 1000. load of timber to be taken out of her maiesties woods or elsewhere. And the citizens of London granted one beneuolence, & three sixtiens to be forthwith paid. And the cleargie of England vnder the prouince of Canterbury granted to giue the fortieth part of the value of their benefices, being charged with first fruits, & not being charged with first fruits, to pay the thirtieth part. And the cleargie of the diocesse of London granted to giue the thirtieth part of their benefices, being in first fruits and the 20. part being out of first fruits. And immediately by the commandement of her maieslie, her priue counsell tooke order, that fise citizens of London, and two of the cleargie of the church of Paules had charge to ouersee, and set forward this woрке, who made such expedition, that within one moneth next following the burning thereof, the same was covered with boords and lead, after the manner of a false rooffe: and the greatnes of the woрке dispatched in so short time could scarcely be credited of any

but such as saw the same. And the cause of this great hast, was for feare of raine which might haue perished the vaults, to the destruction of the whole church: and before the said yeare was fully ended, all the five stes of the said Church were framed of new and maine timber, and couered with lead, and fully finished. And the same yeere also the great rooffe of the west end was framed and made of new and great timber in Porskeshire, and brought to London by sea, and set vp and couered with lead, and fully finished. And in like manner within the said yeere, the whole rooffe and frame of the east end of the said church was made in Porskeshire, and brought by sea to London, and after set vp as the rest of the roofes, but the roofes of the north and south ends of the same church remained couered with boords till 1564. that the bishop (as I am informed)ooke vpon him the charge of repairing them, and for the same laid out 720. pound, and so that woork ceased to proceed any further.

*Ann. reg. 4.  
New coines.*

The sixteenth of November, the Queenes maiestie published a proclamation for diuers small peces of siluer money to be currant, as the six pence, foure pence, three pence, two pence, and a penny, three half pence, and three farthings: & also forbad all foraine coines to be currant within the same realme, as well gold as siluer, calling them into her maiesties mints except two sorts of crownes of gold, the one the French crowne, the other the Flemish crowne: whereupon for the space of halfe a yeere, was weekly brought into the Tower of London, 8000. 10000. 12000. 16000. 20000. 22000. pound of siluer plates: & as much or more in pistolets, and other gold of Spanish coines, & one weeke in pistolets and other Spanish gold 2500 pound, all these to be coined with the queenes stamps.

The 26. of December, sir Ambrose Dudley knight, called lord Ambrose Dudley second sonne of Iohn late Duke of Northumberland, was created baron Lisle, and afterward the same day earle of Warwick at Westminster.

1562.  
Monstrous  
birthes.

This yeare in England were many monstrous birthes: in March a mare brought forth a foale with one body, and two heads, and as it were a long taile growing out betweene the two heads. Also a sow farrowed a pigge with foure legges like to the armes of a man child, with hands and fingers, &c. In April a sow farrowed a pigge with two bodies, eight feete, and but one head, many calues and lambs were monstrous, some with collers of skin growing about their neckes, like to the double ruffes of shirts and necker-thicks then vsed. The foure and twentieth day of May, a man child was borne at Chichester in Suffex, the head, armes, and legges whereof, were like an Anatomie, the breast and belly monstrous bigge from the navel, as it were a long string hanging: about the necke a great collar of flesh and skin growing like to the ruffe of a shirt or neckerchiefe, comming vp about the eares pleyting and folding, &c.

Declaration  
of her maiestie,  
causes  
why to arme  
her subiects  
aGainst France.

The realme of France being in great trouble about this season, by means of ciuill dissension and warres that rose amongst themselves, the queenes maiestie and her honorable priuy counsell being enforeced thereof, first published a booke entituled, A declaration of the Queenes Maiestie, containing the causes which haue constrained her to arme certaine of her subiects for defence both of her owne estate and of the most christian king Charles the ninth her good brother, and his subiects. The booke folloiweth thus:

Although



Although the miserable and afflicted estate of the realme of France is to be lamented of all christian princes and nations, and requireth some good remedy, not onely for preservation of the king there, with the queene his mother, and the subjects of that realme from danger and ruine: but also for the stay of the rest of christendome in peace, and to be free from the like ciuill warre, into the which, as it appeareth by these strange dealings in the sayd realme, it is meant the same shall fall: yet there is no prince that hath more iust cause to haue regard hereunto, nor that hath more indifferently and earnestly intended the recovery of quietnesse, and accord therein, then the queene maieesty of this realme of England, both by her owne gracious disposition, and by aduise of her counsell. For as the matter is now plainly disclosed to the world, and as her maieesty hath proued the same sufficiently by her owne late experience, she is not onely touched as other princes ought to be, with great compassion and commiseration for the vnnaturall abusing of the french king her good brother, by certaine of his subjects, the danger of his person and his blood, the lamentable and barbarous destruction, harocke and spoile of so many christian innocent people beyond all measure: but her maieesty also euidently seeth before her eyes, that if some good remedy be not by Gods goodnesse prouided in season, the very fire that is now kindled and dispersed there, is purposely meant and intended to be conueyed and blowne ouer to midaine this her crowne and her realme. Which great perill, although it be so plainly seene to all wise and prouident men both at home and abroad, that they cannot mislike her care and prouidence to remedy the same in time, yet hath her maieesty thought not vnnecessary to notifye some part of her dealings herein, so as it shall well appeare how sincerely her maieesty hath both hitherto proceeded with her neighbours, and how plainly and vpright she is determined to continue.

The queene of England nearest touched with the French troubles,

First, it hath bene well seene to the world how well disposed her maieesty was euen at the beginning of her raigae, to the restitution of peace to christendome, that for leue thereof, was contented to forebear for certaine yeeres the restitution of a portion of her ancient dominion, when all other parties to the same peace, with whom and by whose alliance her crowne sustained losse, were immediately restored to the most part of their owne in possession: and yet it cannot be forgotten within how short a space, or rather no space after, and by whom, and vpon how great euident and iust causes as well by meanes of force and armes first taken, as by other open attempts against her M<sup>ty</sup>. She was constrained to prepare like armes of defence onely, euen for her whole crowne and kingdome, and to unity therewith for the safetie of her next neighbors from a plaine tyrannie. And also how sincerely her maieesty proceeded therein: first by sundrie requestes and meanes made, to forebear their attempts: next, by open declaration of her intent to be onely for defence of her selfe, and by the whols handling of the matter: and lastly, by the euent and issue of the cause, all the world hath cleerely vnderstood.

2. April 1559. The peace made at Calceau in Cambresy. The towne of Calceau to be restored to the queene of England.

The proceedings for the quietnesse in Scotland. 20. April 1560.

After which dangerous troubles pacified the Q. of Scots at her returne to her country, feeling the great commoditie hereof following, both to her selfe and her realme, a vnderstanding the sincere dealing of the Q. maieesty in all her former actions, did by diuers means giue signification to her maieesty of a great desire to enter with her into a straighter kind of amitie: whereunto her maieesty being

1562. An en-  
terview ac-  
corded by  
the queene  
of England,  
for her & the  
Queene of  
Scots.

1. March  
1562. The  
slaughter at  
Vassy.

29. Aprill  
1562. Sir  
Henry Sid-  
ney lord pre-  
sident in  
Wales,  
Particular  
appetite,  
cause of the  
common  
troubles.

Ordo. of the  
great parlia-  
ment at Or-  
leance in la.  
1560.

The edict. 17.  
of Jan 1562.  
The slaugh-  
ters at Vaf-  
sey, Paris,  
Sens, Tho-  
louse, Blois,  
Tours, Ang-  
ers, and o-  
ther places,  
by credible  
estimation  
reported out  
of France, to  
the number  
of 100000.  
persons be-  
twixt the 1.  
of March,  
and the 20.  
of Aug. last.

16. Iuly  
1562. An  
Ambassade  
intended by  
the queene  
of England.

of her owne nature much enclined, readily accorded. And how far and prosperously they both proceeded therein by many and sundrie mutuall offices of friendship, alswell the good will shewed by her maiestie to the Queene of Scots vnles, the Guiles, and to all her friends and ministers passing and repassing through this her realme, as also the accord of the enteruiues intended betwixt them both this last sommer, hath well declared.

But in the midst of these her M. quiet and peaceable determinations, she hath bene to her great griefe utterly disappointed, and constrained for her owne interest to attend and intermeddle in the pacification of these great troubles in France nere to her realme, the same being stirred by by such as both were her last manifest great enemies, and haue also they know how continued the cause of mistrust till this day, by manifest arguments of iniustice, which her maiestie is content to conceale, for the great affection that she beareth to the Scottish M. First her maiestie at the beginning, doubting by the increase of these French troubles, that not onely that realme should fall into danger of ruine by diuision, as it now is, but also, that the rest of christendome, and specially her owne realme, both for the necessitie thereto, and for the respects of them which were the principall authozs and parties in these troubles, should be also disturbed and brought to danger: used all the meanes that might be by messages, by solicitations, by aduise, yea by a speciall ambassade of a person of good credit, to haue some mediation made betwixt these parties being at controuersie. But such was the policy and violence of the one partie in hastily proceeding euen at the first, as no mediation could be heard of or allowed. And yet could not her M. discontinue her good intent, but seeing the cruelties increase, the bloodshedding and murders continued: yea, which was most perilous, the young king and the M. his mother being sodainly assailed, and found without force, were directed & dratone altogether by the very authozs of the troubles, to suffer their name & authoritie to be abused, euen to the killing of the kings owne vnarmed innocent people, the spoyling of his rich towne, the breaking of his best aduised Councillors, the persecuting of his own blood and his nobilitie, the destroying of his faithfull approoued seruants, with many such other heapes of mischiefs: and all these for no other cause but for the particular appetites of some and to breake with violence the ordinances of the realme, specially those which were lately deuised by the long and great councill of the realme, both for quietnesse in matters of religion, and for the reliefe of the Kings estate diuers waies.

And finally, her M. vnderstanding very certainly of an open destruction & subuersion there put already in vze, & likewise intended against all states and persons professing the gospel abroad, her maiestie thought it very needful to thinke of some other meanes of more efficacie, to induce the authozs of those troubles, to giue eare to some reasonable motions of accord, & not to adventure the ruine of a realme for their particular appetites: and therefore determined to send a solenne ambassade of a certaine number of personages of her councill, being of great authoritie, experience, & indifferencie, to repaire into France, to assay how some way might be reasonably deuised for these extremities, by preserving of both parties indifferently, to the seruice of the K. their soueraigne, according to their essays of birth and calling.

But this manner of proceeding also could no wise be liked nor allowed, neither could

could answer be had hereunto from the good young king, nor the timorous queene his good mother, without the only direction of that part, which both began and continued the troubles from the beginning.

And whilst her Maiesty was thus well occupied, meaning principally the weale and honour of the king her good brother, and secondly, well towards both the parties being at division, without the preiudice of either: a plaine contrary course and proceeding was vsed against her Maiesty, by the which was made manifest what was further meant and intended by them that had so oftentimes refused to heare her Maiesty speake for mediation and accord. All her Maiesties subiects and marchants as well of her cities of London and Exeter, as of other port towne in the west parts of the realme, being at that very time in diuers parts of the country of Britaine, resorting thither only for trade of marchandises, and ready to returne to their owne ports, were in the same time apprehended, spoiled miserably imprisoned: yea, such as sought to defend themselves, cruelly killed, their ships taken, their goods and marchandise sealed, and nothing sayd nor deuised to charge them, but only furiously calling them all Hugonots, a word though very strange and foolish to many of the honest marchants and poore mariners: yet fully sufficient to declare from whence these commandements came, and what their intent is to prosecute, when their time shall serue them: neither were these spoiles small or few, but in value and number great and many: neither done by priuate fury, but by publike officers who were also maintained by gouernours of the countries: yea none of her maiesties subiects were spared that could be taken, though some escaped with great hazard. Well, heretofore complaint was made where it ought to be, but therein hath bene as small regard had, as was before for robbing of her maiesties owne messengers with her letters from her ambassador, and yet the fact unpunished without any satisfaction for the same: wherein her maiesty surely noteth and pitieth the lacke rather of authority, then of good will in the King or the queene his mother, or the king of Spaine his lieutenant: but seeth manifestly by this and by all other proceedings, in what hard termes the estate of the young king is set, that can neither be permitted to preserue his owne people and seruants, his owne lawes and ordinances, neither to answer to other princes and people in forme of iustice, that which he ought to do.

Upon these and other former dangerous enterprises against her maiesty and her crowne, may it well appeare to all persons of indifferent iudgement, how these violent proceedings in Fraunce, conducted at this time by the duke of Guise and his adherents, do touch the queenes maiesty, much nearer for her state and realme then any other prince of Christendome. Wherefore seeing the authority of the king & the queene his mother with their quiet good counsellors, cannot at this time haue place to direct their affaires neither towards their owne people, nor towards their neighbours, neither can any mediation sought by her maiesty for concord be allowed: but contrariwise, the tender persons of the king and the queene his mother be manifestly abused, and dangerously caryed about for the particular pleasures onely of a few persons, and specially those of Guise, to wast the kings countries, to sacke and spoile his rich and great towne, to kill and murder the multitude of his good and true subiects: and seeing also the quarrell manifestly

30. Iuly.  
19. August.  
1561.  
Spoiles of  
English ships  
of London,  
Exeter, and  
Falmouth &  
other places  
committed  
by the Frésh  
in Britaine.  
20. August.  
1562. ambaf-  
sadors men  
robbed with  
the queenes  
letters.

The principall quarrell  
is to subuert  
religion.

Caleis.

1560.

French armies sent by  
way of Scotland and  
other deuises,  
to claime  
the crowne  
of England,  
&c.

Perill and  
doubt of the  
restitution  
of the towne  
of Caleis,  
&c.

manifestly published and prosecuted both by writing and otherwise by them, is to subuert the whole profession of true religion through Christendome by force, without mercy, and thereby to stir vp a ciuill bloody lamentable war in all Christendome. Lastly, seeing they which be the authors and maintainers of all these diuisions, are well knowne to the world to be the same, that when time serued them, bent their whole endeouours to offend and diminish the crowne and dignity of this realme of England, and of late time for the exaltation of their particular house, deuised vniuersally to assaile the whole crowne of England by sundry waies, though by Gods goodnesse their practises and counsels turned for that time to their owne confusion: As by the same goodnesse they shall at all times hereafter.

How may her maiesty, without note of manifest unkinnesse to her deare young brother and confederate, of unmercifullnesse to her next neighbours his subiects, of uncarefullnesse to the common quiet of Christendome: and lastly, which is nearest to her selfe, of meere negligence to the surety of her owne estate, her country and people, suffer these few trouble some men first to destroy and shed the blood of a number of Christian people, whose blood by nearnesse of place to her maiesties realme may be stopped, or some wayes saved, next to surpriue & take such townes and hauens, whereby their former long intended and manifest practises against the crowne of this realme, may be most easily for them and dangerously for this realme, put in vze and execution? Wherefore for these reasonable, euident, urgent, and necessarie considerations, and not without the lamentable and continual request of the French kings subiects her maiesties next neighbours, crying to her maiesty onely for defence of themselves, their ports and townes from tyranny and subuersion, during this their kings minority, or at the least during this his vnhabilitie to pacifie these troubles: Her maiesty hath put certaine numbers of her subiects in order both by sea and land, to saue some part of her good brothers innocent people from this tyranny, slaughter and ruine, and to preserve some speciall townes and ports of importance, for the king her good brother, that they come not into the possession of them: who if they had them, might more easily thereby prosecute their old particular practises against this realme, as in times lately past they did manifestly attempt, whereby of necessitie they must needs endanger the perpetuity of the peace betwixt the French king and her maiesty, and so consequently, though against the meaning of the king, deprive her maiesty of her good right to her towne of Caleis and the members thereof: Whereof it behooueth her maiesty, as things be handled to gaue good regard. And in this sort her maiesty doubteth not, but the sinceritie of her doings, tending onely to procure Christian quietnesse by saving of Christian blood, shall well please almighty God, content the king her good brother, when he shall be in estate and liberty to ponder the same indifferently, and serue also for the iust and naturall defence of her selfe, her peoples and countries: and finally by Gods grace shall establish the continuance of some more assured peace and concord betwixt both their maiesties and countries, so as either of them may quietly enjoy and rule their owne. And in the meane tyme, her maiesty assurcth the sayd king, the queene his mother, the king of Nauarre, and all his good counsellours and subiects, that whatsoeuer any

unlawfull



malicious or discontented person shall sinisterly report of her intent and doings: Her M<sup>ty</sup>. meaneth nothing herein, but sincerely, & as y<sup>e</sup> necessitie of the time & cause requireth, without usurping any thing, or doing wrong or violence towards any the french kings subiects, protesting before God and all the world, that her meaning is for a necessarie defence onely of the true and good subiects of the french king, which otherwise apparantly in this troublesome time should be violently killed or destroyed: and so consequently her M<sup>ty</sup>. intendeth by all manner of meanes possible, to keepe and continue good peace with the said king and all his countries, and to neglect no reasonable meanes that may procure libertie to himselfe, & quietnesse betwixt his subiects, which then shall succede when it shall please almighty God to giue to the first and chiefe authors of these troubles, grace to content themselves with their owne estates, and to liue within the compasse of their degrees like quiet subiects and fauourers of the common peace and tranquillitie of Christendome. A matter more necessarie at this time to be sought for, rather by coniunction of Christian princes and states in vnitie of mind and loue of peace and concord, then in this sort by sword and fire, by private deuises and secret factions to stir a diuision and ciuill warre in Christendome, vnder the cloke and pretence of religion.

These causes thus published at the request of the French themselves, namely, monsieur de Vidame then capitaine of Petoehauen, the bailife of Roane, the treasurer of Diepe and other, profering the foresaid townes whereof they had charge, vnto her maiestie (if it would please her to further their proceedings of the Gospel, for that her maiestie was true inheritor not onely to those townes, but to all the whole kingdome of Fraunce, as they themselves confessed. In the moneth of September, her maiestie sent a band of her subiects to the towne of Petoehauen in Normandy: who were embarked at Portsmouth, because that haven is most apt for transportation to that place, vpon whose arriuall the townes-men and inhabitants ioyfully surrendered themselves and their towne into the possession of the Queenes maiestie, which was kept by Englishmen from this moneth of September in Anno 1562. vnto the 29. of July then next following in the yeare 1563, as more at large shall be shewed. For the conduction of such forces as were to be sent ouer, her maiestie ordained the lord Ambrose Dudley earle of Warwick to be her principall lieutenant, capitaine generall, chiefe leader and gouernour of her said subiects, that should in such wise passe ouer into Normandy. Hereupon the said earle the 17. of October, tooke shipping at Portsmouth in the haven there, being aboard himselfe in the Queenes ship called the New barge, and setting forward sailed all that afternoone, and the night following directly towards Petoehauen: but in the morning when he was within twentie miles of the towne of Petoehauen, the wind suddenly changed contrarie to his course, so that being driuen to returne, about the next midnight he arriued in the Dotones, and there remained at anchor till the next morning, and then was set on land by boate at Sandon castle besides Deale, and the same day at night came to Douer, and there lay till the 28. of October, and then taking ship againe sailed forth, but finding the wind nothing prosperous to his course, after he had lien all that night and day following, tolling on the seas, he was constrained backe againe to the haven of Douer, where

The queenes maiesties intent to procure peace, and to obferue it.

They of Guise to liue in their degrees with out superioritie ouer the king and the rest of his blood.

A free generall counsell by the consent of christian princes meeter then ciuill warre, to bring the Church to vnitie.

A band of English soldiers sent to Newhauen.

Earle of  
Warwike  
landed at  
Newhauen.

Ordn of the  
Lord lieuten-  
nant & other

he remained till the 28. of October, and on the 29. he landed at Newhauen, where he was most ioyfully receiued with a great peale of artillerie. The 30. of October, there came to Newhauen from Diepe 50. light hoſemen Scots, brought by one of maiſter Killigrewes ſeruants. The laſt of October, the earle of Warwikes commiſſion was proclaimed in Latin, Engliſh, and French, by Blew Mantell purſuant at armes, which being ended, his lordſhip went into the church, & there ſir Adrian Poinings knight Maſhall, gaue him his oth, and then my lord gaue the ſaid ſir Adrian his oth, and after him were ſworn Cuthbert Vaughan controller, Iohn Fiſher knight poſter, William Bromfield maiſter of the ordinance, William Robinſon, Walter Bailiffe, and captaine T. Wood clarke of the counſel. The ſecond of Nouember, the earle of Warwike with the knight maſhall and the controller, rode out of Newhauen to Hauteuille, and ſo towards Mondouille accompanied with all the hoſemen Engliſh and Scottiſh, and a thouſand footmen. The Scottiſh men and Montgomeries band paſſed ſooth and ſkirmiſhed with them of Mondouille, and the Scots brought away with them a bootie of 300. ſheepe, but in the moyning they were returned backe againe by commaundement of the earle of Warwike. Maiſter Controllers ſouldiers went as far as Harſlew, and there ſkirmiſhed with them of the garrilon, but without any hurt to either part. The 4. of Nouember, a barke of Newhauen belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into the hauen of the ſame towne 4. Britains laden with Caſcoine wine to the quantitie of 200. tuns, which they meant to haue brought to the enemies, but was diſcharged in Newhauen, and ſtood the Engliſh in good ſtade. The 6. of Nouember, a great alarme was raiſed in the towne of Newhauen, for vpon the hills on the north ſide of the towne, the Keingraue & other ſhewed themſelues with 2000. footmen, & 500. hoſemen: and therewith the Keingraue ſent a trumpet to the towne, to aduertile the L. lieutenant, that he was there on the hills, & that if it might pleaſe him to promiſe vpon his honour & by the faith of a gentleman that he might come and go ſafe, he would be glad to come and ſee him, and talke with him. Wherevpon y lord lieutenant taking with him certaine captains and gentlemen, rode ſooth of the towne, and ſent beſore him ſir Adrian Poinings the maſhall with Stephen Medcalfe her maiſties trumpeter, vnto y Keingraue, who talking with him, returned and met with the lord lieutenant, who therewith paſſed forward, and meeting with the Keingraue, they embraced each other, and conferred together: and the Keingraue told the lord lieutenant, that he was come to be his neighbour, with ſuch other merry ſpeech, and after taking leaue each of other, they returned. The countie Montgomerie and monſieur Beauuoys had ſome talke alſo with the Keingraue, caſting out bitter words in reprooſe of the duke of Guife, and other whom they hated. The Keingraue comming backe to his army, forayed all the countrie, and dyoue away the more part of all the cat-tell that they could find, and comming to the church of Hauteuille, where an hundred and ſiftie of Montgomeries band lay, they ſkirmiſhed with them, and in the end Montgomeries ſouldiers were forced to retire, and abandon the place, & came to Newhauen: but the next morrow they returned, tooke the church, and kept it againſt the enemies as afore.

The 11. of Nouember, a proclamation was made in the name of the lord lieutenant,

lieutenant, as well for good orders to be kept by the soldiers against the French inhabitants of the towne, & reforming of certaine greivances whereof the French had made complaint, as also for their comming to church to heare common praier and preaching at due times, for the avoiding of unlawfull games, &c. The 12. of November, there went out of Newhaven towards Hartlew three bandes of French men, containing about sixe hundred footemen, and suddenly they were beset by the Almains & French men of the garrison of Hartlew, so that the French men of Newhaven were driven to take the village of Graule, where they maintained the skirmish for the space of two howers, till the lord lieutenant sent forth with the controller the number of one thousand footemen, and all the English and Scottissh horsemen, and maister Beauvoys with diuerse French horsemen who comming before Hartlew, fell in skirmish with the enimies, to whose succour there issued forth of Hartlew a great number of the Almains both horsemen and footemen: but the Englishmen behaved themselves so valiantly, that they deate them out of the field into the towne: and the Englishmen returned to Newhaven with honoꝝ, hauing not lost past eight of their soldiers, that were slaine, and six hurt.

The 13. of November, a pinnesse of the French men that belonged to Newhaven, being gone forth the night before, brought into the haven a ship laden with Rochell wine five and twentie tuns, that was bound to the enemies. The 14. of November, another ship fraught with twentie tuns of Calcoune wine was brought in as a prise, taken by a barke of Newhaven. The 17. of November, a proclamation was made concerning orders taken by the lord lieutenant, that no English man nor French man should shoote off any harquebut within the towne, nor that any French man, except monsieur Beauvoys, or monsieur Briquemaule, or their companies should be out of their lodgings after nine of the clocke at night till the next morning on paine of death, except in alarmes.

The 23. of November, the Reingraue was scene on the north hills of the towne with fower score horsemen, wherupon the Scottissh horsemen and three bands of footemen issued out, marched vp towards the same hills in hope to meete with the enemies, but they were retired towards Hondcuille, and so nothing was done.

The 25. of November, a soldier was hanged in the market place in Newhaven, and therewith proclamation made that none should take any thing forcibly from the French, on paine of death. The same day came into the haven hoves and boates laden with wine, cider, parris, wheate, becke, bicker, meate, &c. The same day also there landed at Newhaven sixe hundred soldiers under the leading of Auerie Darcie, Reignald Higate, and William Twedie. The same day the Queenes ship called the Hare comming from Portsmouth, arrived at Newhaven, and in her came sir Iohn Portinarie, a man of great experience in fortification, they were by the way assailed by a French ship of ninie tuns and better, but they that were aboard the Hare banquished the enimies, tooke the same ship, and brought her with them, being laden with wines. The same day sir Iohn Moore landed at Newhaven, bringing ouer with him five hundred soldiers for a supply of the garrison.

The 8. of December, monsieur de Beauvoys, capitaine Francis Somerset, and capitaine

Prises of wine brought into Newhaven.

A soldier executed. Prises brought into Newhaven.

A present  
from the  
Reingraue  
to the lord  
lieutenant.

Castell of  
Tankerville  
taken by the  
of Newha-  
uen.

A skirmish  
before Har-  
tew.

Lord Grey  
of Wilton  
deceased.

County  
Montgome-  
rie gouver-  
nor of Diepe  
1563.

The castle of  
Tankerville  
surrendered,

captaine Edward Horley, with diuers other captaines and gentlemen, rode to the Reingraue, lying at a faire house not far from Mondouille, where they dined with him, had great cheere, and returned to Petowhauen. The Reingraue sent for a present to the earle of Warwike a great horse, very faire, with saddle and bridle, effeemed to be well woorth an hundred pound. The same day at night, the double Rose with other boates passed out of the haven, Edward Dudley and captaine Iohn Warde, being aboard with other to the number of an hundred good soldiers, sailing downe the riuer, landed besides Tankerville, and lay close all that night in a wood: in the morning monsieur Bimarre ensigne-bearer to the countie Montgomerie, with six or seauen French men vnarmed went to the castle gate, & there fell in talke with monsieur Dimence, that was captaine of that fortresse, hauing about him ten soldiers. Whilst they were thus in talke, the English men and French men comming forth of the wood that was there at hand, reared up their ladders at the breach, which was made the summer before, and entering by the same, came downe into the base court. Which thing when the French soldiers that kept talke at the castell gate perceiued, the captaine beholding as good as three score armed men within the castell at his backe, he suddenly yeilded himselfe, and in this sort was the castell taken, and the captaine brought prisoner to Petowhauen. The 12. of December, the earle of Warwike, monsieur de Beauuois & monsieur de Bricquemault, with all the horsemen, and 3000. footemen, passed forth of Petowhauen vnto Hartlew, out of which towne issued 700. Reisters of the retinue of countie Reingraue, & 300. footemen, who fell in skirmish with the French & English very hotly, but the English drave them to the gates of Hartlew, & slue them there, and vpon the walls of the towne: yet was there not slaine past seuen of the English part. The 17. of December, the countie Montgomerie and sir Hugh Paulet arrived at Petowhauen in one of the Quenes ships called the Aide.

Whilst things passed thus in Normandy, there ended his life at home the honourable baron and famous captaine, William lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the most noble order of the garter, at that present gouernor of Barwike, & warden of the East marches against Scotland, he deceased the 25. of December at Cheshunt in Hertfordshire.

The 26. of December, the county de Montgomerie tooke shipping at Petowhauen rode, accompanied with fouer hundred harquebussiers Frenchmen, and sailed to Diepe there to be gouernor of that towne.

The first of January, were apprehended captaine Blondell, captaine Moucombel, monsieur de Mainie, and Vitanua, with others, for some conspiracy or traiterous practise which they went about and had contriued.

The same day captaine Edward Horley with 200. souldiers, and captaine Francis Blunt with 100. tooke shipping at Petowhauen rode, and sailed to Diepe, there to remaine with the county Montgomerie.

The ninth of January, a great tempest of wind and thunder happened in the towne of Leicester, which vncovered 411. baires of houses, and ouerthrew many.

The sixteenth of January, the castle of Tankerville was surrendered to the Reingraue, after he had laine about it eight dayes, with two thousand horsemen and



and footemen. The 19. of Januarie, there landed at Newhauen capitaine Tremaine with sixtie horsemen very well appointed to serve there. The 24. of Januarie, Francis Clarke Frenchman arrived at Newhauen with two tall ships of his owne, right well appointed for the wars, bringing with him three rich prizes.

The fift of Februarie, two ships of Britaines laden with Calcoine wine, butter, becon, salt, and other victuals, were brought into Newhauen by a shalop of Billebeuf, that was resiant with other Frenchmen in Newhauen, and had taken these two vessels as they were going to victuall the enemies. The first of Februarie, three mightie ships of war belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into Newhauen three rich prizes laden with leeks, bassards, sugar, oranges, graines, and other marchandises. This Clarke had not bene forth past five weekes at this time, and yet he had got aboute 18. prizes well worth the summe of 50000. pounds. The 7. of Februarie, was Hundeto summoned by an herault sent from the french admirall, monsieur de Chatillon, The 8. of that moneth, the said admirall came before Hundeto with 6000. horsemen, Keisers, and other of his own retinues, beside footemen, and 1000. horsemen of the countries thereabout, and about five of the clocke at night, there was a great peale of ordinance shot off at Newhauen for a welcome to the said admirall.

Prizes brought into Newhauen.

The 12. of Februarie, the french galliasse of Newhauen passing forth and working about Hundeto to seeke adventures in hope of luerie, by reason the lord admirall of France lay thereby at Tonque, roade at an anchor, whilest some that were aboard in her went aland to gaine somewhat of the enemies, but they within Hundeto perceiuing this, made out their great galliasse with 50. mariners and soldiers, who coming upon the galliasse of Newhauen, put her in great danger of taking, but waiping anchor drew toward the shore, tooke in the rest of their companie, and stood at their defence, behauing themselves so well, that continuing in fight aboute a long hower, at length they ouercame their enemies, slew 7. of them, wounded 37. tooke their galliasse, and brought her to Newhauen with thirtene bels, diuers coapes and church ornaments, sterpe, and other spoiles which they had got abroad in the countrie, together with 43. prisoners, and the artillerie of the galliasse. The fourteenth of Februarie, there came from the lord admirall of France lying then at Tonque, monsieur de Roben and monsieur de Grandemont a knight of the order, monsieur Telegnie the admirals sonne in law, & diuers other french gentlemen to confer with the lord lieutenant, who received them right gladly, and made them great cheere: they remained there till the 18. and then departed and went to Cane, whither the said lord admirall was remooued, and had entred the towne, preparing to besiege the castell. The same day monsieur Briquemaul and sir Nicholas Throckmorton knight arrived at Newhauen. The admirall Chatillon kept the castell of Cane besieged, within the which was the marques Dalbeuf, there were sent vnto him from Newhauen the sixe and twentieth sir Nicholas Throckmorton, monsieur Brique-maul and monsieur Beauvoys with a thousand souldiers french, and as many English: so wit, capitaine Zouch, capitaine Twedie, capitaine Higate, each of them two hundred, capitaine Iohn Warde, capitaine Parkenson, capitaine Saule, and ma-

Galliasse of Harlew taken by them of Newhauen.

Sir Nicholas Throckmorton. Aide from Newhauen to the siege of Cane.

A present  
from the  
Reingraue  
to the lord  
lieutenant.

Castell of  
Tankerville  
taken by the  
of Newha-  
uen.

A skirmish  
before Har-  
lew.

Lord Grey  
of Wilton  
deceased.

County  
Montgome-  
rie gouver-  
nor of Diepe

1563.

The castle of  
Tankerville  
surrendered,

captaine Edward Horsey, with diuers other captaines and gentlemen, rode to the Reingraue, lying at a faire house not far from Mondouille, where they dined with him, had great cheere, and returned to Prewhaueu. The Reingraue sent for a present to the earle of Warwike a great horse, very faire, with saddle and bridle, esteemed to be well worth an hundred pound. The same day at night, the double Rose with other boates passed out of the haven, Edward Dudley and captaine John Warde, being aboard with other to the number of an hundred good soldiers, sailing downe the riuier, landed besides Tankerville, and lay close all that night in a wood: in the morning monsieur Bimarre ensigne-bearer to the countie Montgomerie, with six or seauen French men vnarmed went to the castle gate, & there fell in talke with monsieur Dimence, that was captaine of that fortresse, hauing about him ten soldiers. Whilest they were thus in talke, the English men and French men comming forth of the wood that was there at hand, reared up their ladders at the breach, which was made the sonner before, and entring by the same, came downe into the baste court. Which thing when the French soldiers that kept talke at the castell gate perceiued, the captaine beholding as good as three score armed men within the castell at his backe, he suddenly yeilded himselfe, and in this sort was the castell taken, and the captaine brought prisoner to Prewhaueu. The 12. of December, the earle of Warwike, monsieur de Beauuois & monsieur de Bricquemault, with all the horsemen, and 3000. footemen, passed forth of Prewhaueu unto Harlew, out of which towne issued 700. Reisters of the retinue of countie Reingraue, & 300. footemen, who fell in skirmish with the French & English very hotly, but the English drave them to the gates of Harlew, & slue them there, and vpon the walls of the towne: yet was there not slaine past seven of the English part. The 17. of December, the countie Montgomerie and sir Hugh Paulet arrived at Prewhaueu in one of the Quenes ships called the Aide.

Whilest things passed thus in Normandy, there ended his life at home the honourable baron and famous captaine, William lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the most noble order of the garter, at that present gouernor of Barwike, & warden of the East marches against Scotland, he deceased the 25. of December at Chestnut in Hertfordshire.

The 26. of December, the county de Montgomerie tooke shipping at Prewhaueu rode, accompanied with fower hundred harquebusiers Frenchmen, and sailed to Diepe there to be gouernor of that towne.

The five of January, were apprehended captaine Blondell, captaine Moucombel, monsieur de Mainie, and Vitauua, with others, for some conspiracy or traitterous practise which they went about and had contriued.

The same day captaine Edward Horley with 200. souldiers, and captaine Francis Blunt with 100. tooke shipping at Prewhaueu rode, and sailed to Diepe, there to remaine with the county Montgomery.

The ninth of January, a great tempest of wind and thunder happened in the towne of Leicester, which vncovered 411. baies of houses, and ouerthrew many.

The sixteenth of January, the castle of Tankerville was surrendered to the Reingraue, after he had laine about it eight dayes, with two thousand horsemen and

and footemen. The 19. of Januarie, there landed at Petowhauen captaine Tremaine with sixtie hoysmen very well appointed to serue there. The 24. of Januarie, Francis Clarke frenchman arrived at Petowhauen with two tall ships of his owne, right well appointed for the wars, bringing with him three rich prizes.

The fift of Februarie, two ships of Britaines laden with Calcoine wine, but-ter, becon, salt, and other victuals, were brought into Petowhauen by a shalop of Killebeuf, that was resiant with other frenchmen in Petowhauen, and had taken these two vessels as they were going to victuall the enemies. The sixt of Februarie, three mightie ships of war belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into Petowhauen three rich prizes laden with lecks, bassards, sugar, oranges, graines, and other marchandises. This Clarke had not bene forth past five weekes at this time, and yet he had got about 18. prizes well woorth the summe of 50000. pounds. The 7. of Februarie, was Hundeto commoned by an herault sent from the french admirall, monsieur de Chaillon, The 8. of that moneth, the said admirall came before Hundeto with 6000. hoysmen, Kesslers, and other of his own retinues, beside footemen, and 1000. hoysmen of the countries thereabout, and about five of the clocke at night, there was a great peale of ordinance shot off at Petowhauen for a welcome to the said admirall.

The 12. of Februarie, the french galliasse of Petowhauen passing forth and westing about Hundeto to seeke adventures in hope of luerie, by reason the lord admirall of France lay thereby at Tonque, roade at an anchor, whilst some that were aboard in her went aland to gaine somewhat of the enemies, but they within Hundeto perceiving this, made out their great galliasse with 50. mari-ners and soldiers, who coming upon the galliasse of Petowhauen, put her in great danger of taking, but waiping anchor dretw toward the shore, took in the rest of their companie, and stood at their defence, behaving themselves so well, that continuing in fight about a long hower, at length they overcame their ene-mies, slew 7. of them, wounded 37. tooke their galliasse, and brought her to Petowhauen with thirtene bels, diuers coapes and church ornaments, wepe, and other spoiles which they had got abroad in the countrie, together with 43. prisoners, and the artillerie of the galliasse. The fourteenth of Februarie, there came from the lord admirall of France lying then at Tonque, monsieur de Roben and monsieur de Grandemont a knight of the order, monsieur Telegnie the admirals sonne in law, & diuers other french gentlemen to confer with the lord lieutenant, who received them right gladly, and made them great cheere: they remained there till the 18. and then departed and went to Cane, whither the said lord admirall was remooved, and had entred the towne, preparing to besiege the castell. The same day monsieur Briquemaul and sir Nicholas Throckmorton knight arrived at Petowhauen. The admirall Chaillon kept the castell of Cane besieged, within the which was the marques Dalbeuf, there were sent unto him from Petowhauen the nine and twentieth of februarie, seven canons, two deny culuerings, and one minion. The sixe and twentieth sir Nicholas Throckmorton, monsieur Brique-maul and monsieur Beauvoys with a thousand souldiers french, and as many English: to wit, captaine Zouch, captaine Twedie, captaine Higate, each of them two hundred, captaine Iohn Warde, captaine Parkenlon, captaine Saule, and ma-

Prizes  
brought into  
Newhauen.

Galliasse of  
Harlew ta-  
ken by them  
of Newha-  
uen.

Sir Nicholas  
Throckmor-  
ton.  
Aide from  
Newhauen  
to the siege  
of Cane.

Montgomery taketh a shalope, he goeth to Cane.

The castle of Cane surrendered to the admirall.

The French appointed to depart from Newhauen.

Mr Wheeler, capitaine Fisher lieutenant with his band, each of the with his hundred, and capitaine Pelham with the labozers, were embarked in the roade of Petowhauen, and sailed forth towards Cane to come to the siege, which the Admirall of France had layd to the castle there. The same day, as county Montgomerie had embarked at the hauen of Diepe in an English vessell, and was coming towards Petowhauen, there came from thence three shalops, by the appointment of the Reingraue, which made towards Montgomerie, whose meaning when he perceived, he set upon the strongest of the same shalops, so that there followed a sharpe conflict betwixt them, but in the end the victory fell to Montgomerie, the shalope being taken, the capitaine and master slain, and three English兵 soldiers rescued, which the said shalops had taken. Montgomerie here with arriving at Petowhauen, and bringing with him his wife was ioyfully received, and went aboard againe, and sailed to Cane there to conferre with the admirall. The first of March, they began to batter Cane in such wise, that about foure of the clocke in the after noone they within the towne began to parley, but it took no effect. And then went off the artillery againe till night, and in the morning, the battery esloozes began, and before that two tires of the sayd artillery had gone off, they within offered againe to parley, and finally agreed by composition to yeeld, and so that same day the castle was surrendered unto the French admirall, and the marques Dalbeuse and other that had kept that place departed.

The third of March, the towne of Bayeur was yeelded to the admirall, and on the morrow following, Falaise, and after Saint Lo, with diuerse other townes and castles yeelded unto him.

The 10. of March, the great galley and the foysles were sent from Petowhauen with a canon, and shot powder, &c. to Hunkew, where they met with Monsieur de Mouy, that came thither with a faire company of horsemen, and diuerse footemen, French: and of the Englishmen, capitaine Tutie with his two hundred, and capitaine Fisher with his hundred. The canon was immediately planted, and shot off a fire times. Whereupon they within began to parley, and in the end agreed to yeeld by the castle unto Monsieur de Mouy with condition: and so left the castle unto Monsieur de Mouy, whereby his souldiers as well English as others gained greatly by the spoile: whereas Monsieur de Beauuoy had by the admirall Chatillons commandement, charged by proclamation, all strangers, foreigners, and French souldiers to depart the towne of Petowhauen by the 23. of March last past: and that all other, hauing their wiues and families, should depart with them, or within foure dayes after, to giue ayde for the keeping of the townes of Hunkew, Cane, Bayeur, Falaise, Saint Lo, and other places, lately brought under the obedience and authority of the prince of Condy, vnder paine for making default, to be taken as good prisoners of warre, to those that should apprehend them. Proclamation was also thereupon made in the lord lieutenants name, the 26. of March, that it should be lawfull to the queens maiesties subiects to apprehend and take as their good and lawfull prisoners, all such as contrarie to the former proclamation should remaine in the towne of Petowhauen after five of the clocke after noone of the day next following (those persons onely excepted whose names were enrolled, remaining with the lord lieutenants Secretarie.



The 7. of April the Keingraue with 400. horsemen, and about 500. footmen, came downe the hill, betwixt Saint Adolphes and Englefield, where sir Hugh Pawlet knight met with him, by appointment of the lord lieutenant, accompanied with 40. horsemen, and 1000. English footmen, and after they had talked together, sir Hugh Pawlet returned into Petowhauen, and the Keingraue to Mondouille.

On Easter euen, two souldiers that serued vnder captaine Parkenson were hanged in Petowhauen, for running away to the Keingraue.

The first of May, Garter king at armes, arrived at Petowhauen, bringing with him the garter to Ambrose earle of Warwike the lord lieutenant, chosen on Saint Georges day last past, to be one of that most noble order.

The 17. of May, proclamation was made, that all manner of furniture and apparell, appertaining to ships, within the garrison, haue, or roade of the towne of Petowhauen, should be brought in, or a note to be given thereof in writing to the lord lieutenant and counsell there.

The 22. of May, about one of the clocke in the morning, the Keingraue with 500. horsemen, and 22. ensignes of footmen, came downe to a village called Theure, neare vnto the new fort, which by order of the lord lieutenant was lately before begun to be built. The enemies meaning was, to haue taken the same fort by a sudden assault, but the English scouters gaue intelligence to the lord lieutenant thereof, who incontinently going to the bulwarke Ryall, set out by the Posterne captaine Ward with his 100. souldiers, and captaine Parkenson with his 100. to passe to the fort, there to be an ayde and defence to them that lay in the same. About thre of the clocke in the morning the Keingraue suddenly with his bands of horse and footmen, gaue them in the fort a hot alarme, and immediately the earle of Warwike came in charge to captaines, Read, Appleyard, Tutty, Souch, Antwilell, Warde, Morton, and Parkenson, hauing with them 1000. footmen and 200. horsemen, to set vpon the enemies in the village of Theure, neare adioynning vnto the said new fort, where the English souldiers beat backe their enemies, slue and tooke of them to the number of an hundred, besides thirty faire horses, and an ensigne, and set fire on the towne, because the enemies should not come to encampe therein as their purpose was.

Alarme giuen to the new fort by Newhauen.

The 26. of May, the Frenchmen in number aboue three thousand horsemen and footmen, came downe towards the wind-mills, neare to the bulwarke called Saint Adolphes, against whom the English horsemen and footmen issued forth of the towne, giuing them a hot skirmish, where were slaine two hundred of the French, besides two hundred and aboue that were hurt. Amongst the English, captaine Tremayne and about some twelue persons more were slaine: but the French were diuised to retire. The first of June, at seuen of the clocke at night, the Keingraue having layd in the village of Theure an ambush of fire hundred horsemen, and fiftene hundred footmen, there came downe also betwene the abbey and the village called Englefield towards the towne, the number of a thousand footmen, which began a very hot skirmish, first at the new fort, comming euen hard to the ditches, where the Englishmen manfully encountered them. Herewith also, the Keingraue

A great skirmish.

Another  
skirmish.

appointed other to come downe and approach the bulwarkes of Saint Andrewes, Saint Francis, Michall and other, round about the towne, so that there were of them the number of five thousand, that were employed in this skirmish, which was maintained right fiercely, for the space of two houres, till in the end the enemies were forced to giue place, with the losse of five hundred of their men, Almains; Frenchmen and other. Of English men there were hurt, captaine Ielbert, and captaine Pelham, and about fifteene other hurt and slaine.

Captaine  
Randoll  
knight mar-  
shall.

Sir Thomas  
Finch.

The 7. of June, the first canon-shot light within the towne of New-hauen, neare to the bulwarke of Saint Andrewes. The ninth of June, arrived at New-hauen three Captaines with their bands of an hundred the peece, being of the garrison of Warwike. Also the same day landed there Edward Randoll, appointed to be knight Marshall. For you must vnderstand that sir Adrian Poinings being knight Marshall, vpon his returne into England went not backe againe: and then was sir Thomas Finch of Kent appointed to go ouer to supply the roomth of knight Marshall, who making his prouision readie, sent ouer his brother Erasmus Finch to haue charge of his band, and his kinsman Thomas Finch to be prouost marshall, whilst he staying till he had euery thing in a readinesse to passe ouer himselfe, at length imbarqued in one of the Quenes shippes, called the Greyhound, hauing there aboord with him besides three score and five of his owne retinue, foure and fortie other Gentlemen, two of them being brethren to the Lord Wentworth, to wit, Iames Wentworth, and Iohn Wentworth with diuerse others, who in the whole (accounting the mariners) amounted to the number of two hundred persons and byward: and as they were on the further coast towards New-hauen, they were by contrarie wind and foule weather diuen backe againe toward the coast of England, and plying towards Ric, they forced the captaine of the shippe a very good sea-man, named William Maline, and also the maister and mariners, to thrust into the hauen before the tyde, and so they all perished, seuen of the meaner sort onely excepted, whereof three dyed shortly after they came on land. After this mischauice, Edmond Randoll was appointed knight Marshall.

The 15. of June, the captaines Richard Saunders, and William Saul, with their bands of an hundred souldiers a peece, and captaine Drurie with two hundred arrived at New-hauen, and the next day after arrived captaine Roberts with an other hundred souldiers. On the seuenteenth day sir Francis Knowles, vice-chamberlaine to the Quenes maiesties house, landing at New-hauen, sent to victuall the state of the towne.

The 18. of June, two souldiers were executed for drawing weapon against their captaine.

The 28. of June, the French men came downe to the village of Theure, and there very neare to the fort, beganne a skirmish with the English men: there were of them tenne ensignes of footemen, and two hundred horsemen, this skirmish lasted three houres, and yet not past foure persons slaine. The night following, they placed five canons betwixt the Towne and the bricke-billes, and likewise other peeces of Artillerie at the foresaid Village

of theire, so that they shot both into the towne and fort. The first of July about midnight, they issued forth of their trenches, and skirmished with the English scouts, drove them under the bulwarke of Saint Adressle, and there perceiving that the Englishmen had provided to sally out, after a long skirmish they retired. About the third of July, there landed nine hundred soldiers well appointed all in yellow clokes, and blew, Captaine Sanders was hurt in the legges whereof he dyed. The twelfth of July, about foure of the clocke in the morning, the French laid batterie to the Bulwarke of Saint Adressles, continuing the same all that day. They also dismounted the same day the Ordinance in the steeple of Newhaven, and beat downe the great bell, cleane defacing the steeple: the same evening, was William Robinson squire, baylife of Newhaven, slaine with a shot, and William Bromfield, maister of the ordinance hurt, whereof he died shortly after.

The 14. of July, sir Hugh Pawlet knight landed at Newhaven, bringing with him eight hundred soldiers. The same day came downe the Frenchmen to the number of 3000. even hard to the gates of the towne, beating the English men out of their trenches, but in the end they were forced to retire, and not past twentie English men slaine, and about an hundred hurt: but the French lost (as was thought) about foure hundred horsemen and footmen. The same day, the little Galliasse called the Fore, went out of Newhaven, fraught with fire men, to flanke alongst the shore, and to beate the French men with her shot, but a line-slope fell into a barrill of powder and set it on fire together with the vessel, so that she suddenly sunke, and all that were aboard in her were lost, saving sixteen that saved themselves by swimming.

A Galliasse  
of Newha-  
uen brent.

The 21. of July, the Constable of France, and many other lords of France came to the abbey of Grauille, where the marshall Brissac was lodged, who had the generall charge in the army, before the comming of the laid Constable.

Constable of  
France came  
to the siege  
of Newhaue.

The 23. of July, the Constable came to the trench that was cast over against the bulwarke of Saint Adressle, alongst by the sea side, and sent his trumpet to summon the towne. The Lord lieutenant appointed sir Hugh Pawlet to go forth and make the answer in his name, which was in effect, that the Queens maiestie had appointed him and others to keepe the Towne, and therefore they meant not to deliver it to any other person, without her Graces commaundement. The English men were no sooner departed, but that the enemies having planted eight canons in batterie against the castle and bulwarke of the haven, caused the same to be shot off, continuing the batterie untill the eight and twentieth of July.

The 28. of July, the prince of Condy, and the duke of Montpensier, came to the campe and alighted at the Constables lodging, went from thence to the trenches to relieue the marshall Montmorancie, and to supplie his roomth, whilst he might in the meane time goe to suppe with his father, and so to take his rest: Monsieur Desree, and the other that had charge about the planting and ordering of the artillerie, used such diligence, and were so earnestly called vpon and encouraged by the prince of Condy, continually remaining in the trenches, that on the 27. in the morning, the artillerie beganne to batter the bulwarke

The prince  
of Condie  
came to the  
campe be-  
fore Newha-  
uen.

of Saint Adressle and other places. This was not done without great daunger of the pioners and men of warre that guarded them: for as the French desperately made these approches, they were made by the English gunners to tell the bitter fruite thereof: but such was the multitude of the French men that were now assembled in hope to recouer that towne, (which being possessed by the English, cut off all trafique from Roane, Paris and other places) that with their generall ayde, and drawing the water downe to the sea, the marishes were made passeable and firme ground, which to men of great experience was thought a thing impossible. The Castle, the walls, and other defences of the Towne, were battered, breaches made, and the trench, which before the coming of the Constable, was but brought to the point over against the bulwark of Saint Adressle, was now within fower daies advanced neere hand the space of two miles, vpon the cauley or breach which was all of stone, without any earth to couer them, so that they were driuen to make the best shift they could with wool-lackes, sand-bags, baskets, and fagots. Yet all this had neuer come to passe, without infinite slaughter, and farre more losse of French blood, if the great mortalitie of pestilence (which entred the Towne about the beginning of Sommer) through a venimous infection, had not so greatly increased, that it slue daily great numbers of men, so that the streets lay euē full of dead corpes, not able to be remooued, by reason of the multitude that perished. And now the shot of the canon, lying within a fere an twentie paces of the Towne, was so terrible, as the like had not bene lightly heard of, and sundrie breaches there were, which were already made, namely, two verie great and easie to be entered: All these dangers and miseries notwithstanding the Earle of Marwicke with his Capitaines and souldiers, in couragious order, stood at those severall breaches, ready to defend the same, if the enimies had presumed to haue giuen the assault, which when the Constable perceiued, he caused a trumpet to sound the blast of emparley, that talke mought be had for the concluding of a composition betwixt both the parties, to auoyd the imminent slaughter and effusion of blood: which offer seeming not vnnecesse, both parties concluded that parley should be had. The eight and twentieth of July therefore, the Constable came to the end of the trenches next to the towne, where sir Mawrice Denis, treasurer of the towne, sir Hugh Pawler, capitaine Horley, capitaine Pelham, capitaine Iohn Shute prouost marshall, and Nicholas Malby Secretary to the lord Lieutenant, came forth and passed ouer the haue to commune with him, and during the parley betwixt them, a truce was accorded, and assented to by both partes. But the Constable tooke vpon him to haue onely authority to accept or refuse such conditions as should be offered or agreed vpon by the English commissioners in this treatie: and so at length they passed certaine articles in forme as followeth. First, that the earle of Marwicke should render the Towne of Newhauen into the hands of the Constable of France, with all the artillerie and munitions of warre then being in the Towne, belonging to the French king and his subiects. Item, he should leaue the ships that were in the Towne at that present, belonging to the king or his subiects, with all their

Plague of  
pestilence in  
Newhauen.

A truce ac-  
corded, and  
articles ag-  
reed vpon,  
for surren-  
der of New-  
hauen.



their furniture, and generally all such merchandize and other things, being at that present within that Towne, as either belonged to the king or his subiects. Item, the said Earle should presently deliuer into the hands of the Constable, the great Tower of the said haven, so that the souldiers thereof enter not into the Towne: and that the said earle should deliuer fower such hostages as the said Constable should name. Item, that the next day by eight of the clocke in the morning, the said earle should withdraw his souldiers from the fort, to deliuer it immediately into the hands of the said Constable, or his deputies, at the said houre. Item, that all prisoners should be deliuered on either side, without paying any ranfome. Item, that the Constable should for his part suffer the said Earle of Warwike and all those that were in garrison in the said Newhaven to depart, with all things whatsoever that belonged to the queene of England or her subiects. Item, that for the departure aswell of the said Earle, as the removing of his souldiers and other things: the said Constable agreed to give them five dayes, to begin the twentieth nine of July, during the which they might frankly take and carie away the said things. Item, the said Constable did likewise permit, that all the ships and English vessels appointed for the portage and conveying away of the said things, should safely and freely passe in, to, and fro the said haven, without any stay or impeachment, either by the French or other. The former hostages were appointed to be maister Oliver Maners, brother to the Earle of Rutland, Captaine Pelham, Captaine Horsey, and Captaine Leighton. In witness whereof, the said Lords, the Constable of France, and Earle of Warwike signed these articles, the eight and twentieth of July. The last of Julie, the most part of the Englishmen tooke ship and departed homewards: for glad was he that could get soonest out of that burtholsome ayre: manie sick persons yet were left behinde, impotent, and not able to helpe themselves a shippe boorde, the miserie whereof Edward Randolph esquier, high marshall of the Towne (who was appointed to tarrie and see the buttmost of the composition accomplished) perceiving, mooved with naturall pittie of his countreyemen relinquished without comfort, caused the said sick persons to be caried aboord, not sparing his owne shoulders, at that time feeble and full of the plague, himselfe and his men still bearing and helping the poore creatures on ship boord: a rare fact, worthy reward, and no doubt in remembrance with God, the true recorder of mercifull deserts. Beside the meaner sort of those that died at Newhaven of the pestilence, during the siege, I finde noted as chiefe, Cuthbert Vaughan Comptroller of the Towne, Francis Somerset cousin to the Earle of Worcester, Auerie Darcie brother to the Lord Darcie, John Zouche, brother to the Lord Zouche, Edward Ormesby, Thomas Drurie *alias* Poignard, Richard Croker, John Cockson, Thomas Kenish, John Prowde, William Saule, Wilfride Answell, these of the plague. There were diuerse also that were slaine in the fildes, as both the Tremaynes brethren, Nicholas and Andrew, Captaine Richard Saunders, with master Robinson and master Bromfield, also one Leighton a gentleman, and diuers other.

Edward Randolph  
his pitiful-  
nesse deser-  
uing com-  
mendation.

108. Parishes  
in London  
besides 11.  
in the  
suburbs.

As yee haue heard, the plague of pestilence being in the Towne of Petowauen, through the number of soldiers that returned from thence into England, the infection therof spread into diuers parts of this realme, but especialy the citie of London was so infected, that in the same whole yeere, that is to say, from the first of Januarie, 1562. till the last of December, 1563. there died in the City and liberties thereof containing, 108. parishes of all diseases, 20. M. 3. C. 72. and of the plague, (being part of the number aforesaid) 17. M. 4. C. 4. persons. And in out parishes adioyning to the same citie, being 11. parishes, died of all diseases in the whole yeere, 3. M. 2. C. 88. persons, and of them, of the plague, 2. M. 7. C. 32. persons so that the whole number of all that died of all diseases, as well within the Citie and liberties, as in the out parishes, was 23. M. 6. C. and 60. and of them, there died of the plague, 20136.

Tempest at  
London.

The 8. of July, in the morning, hapned a great tempest of lightning & thunder, wherethrough a woman and three kine were slaine in the Couent garden neere to Charing crosse. At the same time in Essex a man was toyne to peeces as he was carrying hay, his barne was bozne downe, and his hay bzent: both houses and trees were rent in many places.

The counsell of king Philip at Burels commanded proclamation to be made in Antwerp and other places, that no English ship with clothes should come into any places of their low countries: their colour was (as they said) the danger of the plague, which was that time in London, and other places of England: notwithstanding, they would gladly haue gotten our woollens: other causes they alledged, as the raising of imposts as well vpon goods inwards as outwards, as well vpon Englishmen as vpon strangers, &c. Also for that in the first parliament of the Queenes maiestie, by a statute then made, diuers wares and commodities were forbidden to be brought into this Realme out of Flaunders or other places being wrought there, which was done to the end to let our subiects a worke heere, as by the statute doth appeare, for that no man English or stranger might ship out any white clothes vnderest. being of the price aboue fower pound, without licence, &c. but the Queenes maiestie through sute of our marchant aduenturers, caused the wooll fleete to be discharged, and our cloth fleete was sent to Em-den in east Friseland about Easter next following, in Ann. 1564.

Threefold  
plague to  
the poore  
Citizens of  
London.

Forasmuch as the plague of pestilence was so hot in the citie of London, there was no Terme kept at Michaelmasse: to be short, the poore Citizens of London, were this yeere plagued with a three fold plague, pestilence, scarcitie of money and dearth of victuals: the miserie whercof were too long heere to write, no doubt the poore remember it, the rich by flight into the countries made shift for themselves.

Earthquake.

An earthquake was in the month of September in diuers places of this realme, specially in Lincolne and Northamptonshire.

Ann. reg. 6.  
Lightning  
and thunder.

From the first day of December, till the 12. was such continuall lightning and thunder, especially the same 12. day at night, that the like had not bene seene nor heard by any man then liuing.

In the month of December, was driuen on the Shore at Grimsbie in Lincolne-shire, a monstrosous fish, in length 19. yardes, his taile fifteene foote broad  
and

and five yards betwene his eyes, twelue men stood vpright in his mouth to get the oyle.

For that the plague was not fully ceased in London, Hillarie Terme was kept at Hertford castell besides Ware.

1564.  
Terme kept  
at Hertford.  
Peace with  
France pro-  
claimed.

This yecre an honorable & ioyfull peace was concluded, betwixt the Queenes Maiestie and the French King, their Realmes, Dominions, and Subiects, which peace was proclaimed with sound of trumpet, before her Maiestie, in her Castle of Windlesore, then being present the French Ambassadors. Also the same peace was proclaimed at London on the 13. day of Aprill. And shortly after the Queenes Maiestie sent the right Honorable sir Henrie Carie lord Hunsdon, accompanied with the lord Strange, besides diuers knights and gentlemen vnto the French king, with the noble order of the Garter, who lying then at Lyons, he there presented vnto him the said order, and Garter king at armes vntied him therewith, obseruing the ceremonies in that behalfe due, &c.

The plague (thanks be to God) being cleane ceased in London, both Easter and Midsummer Terme were kept at Chelshminster.

Through the earnest sute of the Armourers there was on the vigile of S. Peter a watch in the citie of London, which did onely stand in the highest streets, as Cheape, Cornhill, and so forth to Aldgate, which watch was to the commons of the citie as chargeable, as when in times past it had bene commendable done.

Watch on  
S. Peters  
cuen.

The 5. of August, the Queenes maiesty in her progresse came to the University of Cambridge, and was of all the students (being inuested according to their degrees taken in the Schooles) honourably and ioyfully receiued in the kings Colledge, where she did lye during her continuance in Cambridge. The daies of her abode were passed in scholasticall exercises of Philosophie, Physicke, and Diuinity: the nights in Comedies and Tragedies let forth partly by the whole University, and partly by the students of the kings Colledge.

Abr Hartwel  
The queenes  
progresse  
thorough  
Cambridge.

At the breaking vp of the Diuinity act, being on Wednesday the 9 of August (on the which day she rode through the towne, and viewed the Colledges, those goodly and ancient monuments of the kings of England, her noble predecessors) she made within Saint Maries church a notable oration in Latine, in the presence of the whole learned University, to the students great comfort. The next day she went forward on her progresse to Finchingsbrooke by Huntingdon.

The twentieth day of September, arose great clouds in the riuer of Chamis, wherethrough the marshes neare adioyning were overflowed, and many cattile drowned.

Great clouds  
in the Tha-  
mis.

The creation of sir Robert Dudley knight of the garter & maiesty of the hoose to the queenes maiesty, who was created baron of Denbigh, and after earle of Leicester on Michaellmas day at Saint James, with the gift of the manor of Killingworth, and other things there to him and his heires, to the yearly value of foure and twenty pound and better. First, the sayd lord attended on the Queenes highnesse to the chappell, and from the chappell to seruice, and when he was returned to the chaber of presence, the sayd lord with other departed to the lord Chamberlains chamber, and shifted them, the sayd lord Robert in his surcote with the hood, his mantle borne before him by the lord Hunsdon, and led by the lord

Creation of  
a baron.

Clinton

Creation of  
an earle.

Clinton L. Admirall by the right hand, & the lord Strange on the left hand in their parliament robes, Garter bearing the patten, and before him the officers of armes, and so proceeded into the chamber of presence, where the queenes highnesse sat under the cloth of estate with the noble men on each side of her, the ambassadoz of Fraunce was also present with another stranger an Italian, and when the sayd lord with the other came in the queenes sight, they made their obeisance three times, the sayd lord kneeled downe, after the which Garter presented the letters pattenes to the lord Chamberlaine, and he presented the same to the queenes highnesse, who gaue it to sir William Cicill secretary, who read the same with a loud voyce, and at the words of *Creatimus*, the lord of Hunsdon presented the mantle to the queenes maiesty, who put on the same, whereby he was created baron of Denbigh for him and his heires, then the patent was read out to the end, after the which he deliuered it to the queene againe, and her highnesse gaue it to the said lord, who gaue her maiesty most humble thanks, and he rose vp and departed to the chamber they came from, the trumpets sounding before him. Then he bestowed him of those robes, & put on the robes of estate of an earle, and being led by the earle of Sussex on the right hand, and the earle of Huntington on his left hand, the earle of Warwicke bearing his sword the pommel upward, and the gold about the same, all in their robes of estate, the lord Clinton lord Admirall in his parliament robes bearing his cap with the coronall, Garter before him bearing his patten and the other officers of armes before him, they proceed as afore, into the chamber of presence, where, after they made their obeisance, the sayd earle kneeled downe, and Garter deliuered his patten to the lord Chamberlaine, who gaue the same to the Queenes maiesty, and her highnesse gaue the same to sir William Cicill Secretary to reade, who read the same, and at the words *Cincturam gladij*, the earle of Warwicke presented the sword to the queenes highnesse, who girt the same about the necke of the new earle, putting the point vnder his left arme, and after her maiesty put on his cap with the coronall, then his patten was read out to the end, and then the sayd secretary deliuered it againe to the queene, and her highnesse gaue it to the sayd new earle of Leicester, who gaue her humble thanks for the same, and then arose and went into the counsell chamber to dinner, the trumpets sounding before, and at dinner he sat in his kirtle, and there accompanied him the forsayd ambassadoz of Fraunce, and the sayd Italian, with diuerse other earles and lordes: and after the second course, Garter with the other officers of armes, proclaimed the queenes maiesties stile, and after, the stile of the sayd earle, for the which they had fifteene pound, to wit, for his baron five pound, and for his earldome ten pound, and Garter had his gowne of blacke velvet garded with three gardes of the same, layd on with lace, lined thorough with blacke taffeta, and garded on the inner side with the same, & on the sleeves 38. paire of aglets of gold.

*Du tresnoble & puissant seigneur Robert Comte de Lecestre, Baron de Denbigh, Cheuiler du tresnoble Ordre de la Jarretiere, & grand Esquier de la Roynie nostre Souueraigne.*

Obsequy for  
the emperor

The second of October in the afternoone, and the morrow in the fore noone, a solemn obsequie was holden in Saint Pauls church in London, for Ferdinand the late emperor departed.

The



The 7. of October at eight of the clocke at night, the north parts of the element seemed to be covered with flames of fire, proceeding towards the middle of the firmament. where, after it had staied nigh one houre, it descended west, and all the same night (being the next after the change of the moone) seemed as light as it had bene day. Ann. reg. 7.

The 20. of Poucember in the morning, through negligence of a maiden with a candle, the stuffe falling in an hundred pound waight of gun-powder, three houses in Bucklersbury were soze shaken, and the maide died two dayes after.

The one and twentieth of December began a frost, which continued so treacely, that on New-yeares euen people went ouer and along the Thames on the ice from London-bridge to Westminster, some played at foote-ball as boldly there, as if it had bene on the dry land, diuerse of the court being then at Westminster, shot daily at prickes set vpon the Thames: and the people both men and women went on the Thames in greater number then in any streete of the city of London. On the third day of January at night it began to thaw, and on the fifth day was no ice to be seene betweene London-bridge and Lambeth, which caused great floods and high waters, that bare downe bridges and houses, and drowned many people in England, especially in Yorkshire. Oues bridge was booke away with other.

The Thames frozen ouer.

1565.

Oues bridge borne downe.

The third of February, Henry Steward lord Darnley, about the age of nineteene yeares, eldest sonne of Matthew earle of Lennox (who went into Scotland at Whitson tide before) hauing obtained licence of the queenes maiesty, tooke his journey toward Scotland, accompanied with sixe of his fathers men, where, when he came he was honorably receiued, and lodged in the kings lodgings, and the followring following, married Mary queene of Scotland.

Henry Stuart married the queene of Scots.

About this time for the queenes maiesty were chosen and sent commissioners to Bridges, sir Anthonie Browne viscount Montacute knight of the honourable order of the garter, doctor Wotton one of her maiesties honourable counsell doctor Haddon one of the maisters of requests to her highnesse, with other: maister doctor Aubrey was for the marchant aduenturers of England. They came to Bridges in Lent, Anno 1565. and continued there till Michaelmas following, and then was the diet prolonged till March in 1566. & the commissioners returned into England.

Commissioners sent to Bridges.

The two and twentieth of April, the lady Margaret countesse of Lennox was commaunded to keepe her chamber at the White hall, where she remained till the 22. of June, and then conueyed by sir Francis Knolles and the gard to the tower of London by water.

Lady Lennox sent to the tower.

On Midsummer day, Odonell Mac Cartie More chief: captaine of that name in Ireland, was created baron of Malency, and afterward the same day earle of Glanker at White hall.

On Saintes Peters euen at night, was the like standing watch in London as had bene on the same night twelue monethes.

Watch at Midsummer.

The 16. of July, about nine of the clocke at night began a tempest of lightning and thunder, with showers of haile, which continued till three of the clocke the next morning so terrible, that at Chelmsford in Essex 500. acres of coyne were destroyed, the glasse windowes on the east side of the towne, and of the west & south sides

Tempest at Chelmsford.

sidcs of the church were beaten downe, with also the tiles of their houses, beside diuerse barnes, chimneies, and the battlements of the church which were ouerthrowne. The like harne was done in many other places, as at Leedes, Cranebrooke, Douer, &c.

Margraue  
& marques  
of Baden.

Christopher prince and Margraue of Baden, with Cicely his wife sister to the king of Sweethland, after a long & dangerous iourney, wherein they had trauelled almost 11. moneths, sailing fro Stokeholme, crossing the seas ouer into Lifeland, from whence by land they came about by Poland, Prulce, Pomerland, Heckeburge, Friseland, and so to Antwerpe in Brabant, then to Calcis, at the last in September landed at Douer, where they were met and receiued by the lord Cobham with a goodly traine of knights and gentlemen. And at Canterbury the lady Cobham with the like traine of ladies and gentlewomen met them, and at Graulend the lord Hunsdon with the gentlemen pensioners met them, and so on the 11. day of September they came to London, where they were met and receiued by the earle of Sussex, the countesse his wife, and their traine, and so brought to the earle of Bedfords place neare vnto Iuic-bidge, where they were lodged, and within fower dayes after, that is to say, the fifteenth of September she trauelled in child-bed, and was deliuered of a man-child, which child the last of September was christened in the queenes maiesties chappell of White hall at Westminster, the queenes maiesty in her owne person being godmother, the archbissop of Canterburie and the duke of Norfolk godfathers: at the christening the queene gaue the child to name Edwardus Fortunatus, for that God had so graciously assisted his mother in so long and dangerous a iourney, and brought her so safe to land in that place which she most desired, and that in so short time before her deliuerance.

Mariage of  
the earle of  
Warwike.

The eleuenth of Nouember, the right honorable Ambrose earle of Marwike married Anne eldest daughter to the earle of Bedford: for the honour and celebration of which noble marriage, a goodly challenge was made & obserued at Westminster at the tilt, with each one sixe courses: at the turney twelue strokes with the sword, thre pusses with the punchion staffe: and twelues blowes with the sword at barriers, or twenty if any were so disposed.

Robert Thomas  
slaine.

At ten of the clocke the same day, a valiant seruiceable man called Robert Thomas, maister gunner of England, desirous also to honour the feast and marriage day, in consideration the sayd earle of Marwike was generall of the ordinance within her maiesties realmes and dominions, made three traines of great chambers, which terribly yeldded forth the nature of their voyce, to the great astonishment of diuerse, who at the firing of the second, was unhappily slaine by a peece of one of the chambers, to the great sorrow and lamentation of many.

Ann. reg. 8.

Paules gate  
blowne open

The foure and twentieth of December, in the morning there rose a great storme and tempest of wind, by whose rage the Thames and seas ouerwhelmed many persons, and the great gates of the west end of Paules church in London (betwene the which standeth the brazen pillar) were, through the force of the wind then in the westerne part of the world, blowne open.

Order of S.  
Michaell.

1566.

In January, monsieur Rambuley a knight of the order in Fraunce, was sent ouer into England by the French king Charles the ninth of that name, with the order

order, who at Ullindore was stalled in the behalfe of the sayd French king, with the knighthood of the most honorable order of the garter: and the foure and twentieth of January, in the chappell of her maiesties palace of White hall, the sayd monsieur Rambuley inuested Thomas duke of Norfolk, and Robert earle of Leicester with the sayd order of Saint Michael.

The marques of Baden, and the lady Cicely his wife, sister to the king of Swethen, who came into this land the moneth of September last past, as before is declared, being then by the queenes especiall appointment at their arrivall honorably receiued by the lord Cobham, an honorable baron of this realme, and the lady his wife one of the Queenes maiesties priuy chamber, now in the moneth of April, Anno. 1566. hauing receiued certaine gifts of the Queenes maiestie, amongst the which one was a cup of gold with a couer waying 132. ounces and a halfe, departed the same againe, the marques a few dayes before his wife, being both conducted by a like personage the lord of Burgauncy to Dover.

The marques of Baden returneth.

Certaine houses in Cornhill, being first purchased by the citizens of London at their charges for certaine thousands of pounds, were in the moneth of February cryed by the bel-man, and afterward sold to such persons as should take them downe and carry them from thence, which was so done in the monethes of April and May next following. And then the ground being made plaine at the charges also of the city (hauing cost them one way and other, more then five thousand pound) possession thereof was by certaine aldermen in name of the whole citizens, giuen to the right worshipfull sir Thomas Gresham knight, agent to the Queenes highnesse, there to build a place for marchants to assemble in at his owne proper charges, who on the seuenth of June layd the first stone of the foundation, being bricke, and forthwith the workemen followed vpon the same with such diligence, that by the moneth of Nouember in the yeare of our Lord 1567. the same was couered with slate.

The Burse in Cornhill.

And on the 22. day of December, in the yeare of our Lord 1568. the marchants of London, left their meetings in Lombard streete, at such times as they had accustomed there to meete, and this day they came into the new Burse, builded by sir Thomas Gresham, as is afore shewed.

The commissioners before named appointed for the matters of slaunders, keeping their diet at Byrges agreed to referre the whole matter to the princes on both sides, and if they could not agree, then the marchants to haue forty dayes to repaire home with their merchandise, and in the meane time, all things to stand as they were then. Our commissioners departed from Byrges about the 26. of June.

The 31. of August, the Queenes maiesty in her progreffe came from Woodstocke to the Uniuersity of Oxford, and was of all the students, which had looked for her comming thither two yeares, so honorably and ioyfully receiued, as either their loyalty towards the Queenes maiesty, or the expectation of their friends did require. Concerning orders in disputation, and other academicall exercises, they agreed much with those, which the Uniuersity of Cambridge had vsed two yeares before. Comedies also and Tragedies were played in Christs Church, where the Queenes highnesse lodged. Among the which, the Comedy entituled

The queens progreffe to Oxford.

Palemon.

Missfortune  
at Oxford.

Palemon and Arcet, made by maister Edwards of the Queenes chappell, had such tragicall successe as was lamentable: for at that time by the fall of a wall and a paire of staires, and great pzeale of the multitude, three men were slaine.

The sixt of September, after disputations, the Queene at the humble sute of certaine of her nobilitie, and the king of Spaines Ambassadors, made a briefe oration in Latine to the Uniueritie, but so wise and pithe, as England may reioyce that it hath so learned a pynce, and the Uniueritie may triumph, that they haue to noble a patronesse.

The sixt of September after dinner, her grace coming from Christs Church ouer Carfax, and so to Saint Maries, the scholiers standing in order according to their degrees, euen to the east gate, certaine doctors of the Uniueritie did ride before in their scarlet gownes and hoodes, and maisters of Art in blacke gownes and hoodes. The Maior also named maister Williamus with certaine of his brethren, to the number of fourteene or fiftene, did ride before her in scarlet to the ende of Magdalen bridge, where their liberties ended: but the doctors and maisters went forward still to Shot-ouer, a mile and more out of Oxford, because their liberties extended so farre, and there after Orations made, her highnesse with thanks to the whole Uniueritie, bade them farewell, and rode to Ricote to maister Norrice house an eight miles from Oxford.

Souldiers  
transported  
into Ireland.

The valiant capitaine Edward Randolfe esquire, lieutenant of the ordinance, and colonell of a thousand footemen, in September last past was with his band embarked at Bisslow, and within few daies after landed at Knokefergus in the North parts of Ireland, and went thence by water to a place called Derry, by which passeth the riuer of Longfoile: there the said colonell in short space fortified, to the great annoyance of Iohn Oneale, and by great foresight and experience, garded himselfe and his charge, till the said Oneale, (to hinder and disturb his abode there) the 12. of Nouember arriued with a great army of Kerne Galatoglasses and horsemen, with whom the said capitaine Randolfe encountered, and him there so discomfited, as after that conflict he durst neuer approach the Queenes power, and to his perpetuall fame the said capitaine by reason of his bold and hardie onset that day lost his life.

Young prince  
of Scots  
christened.  
*Ann. reg. 9.*

Charles James the sixt of that name, sonne to Henrie Stewart lord of Darnley, and Marie, king and queene of Scots, was bozne in Edenborough castle the nineteenth of Iune last past: and the eighteenth of December, this yeere solemnly christened at Striueling, whose godfathers at the christening were, Charles King of France, and Philbert Duke of Sauoy, and the Queenes maiestie of England was the godmother, who gaue a font of gold curioulle wrought and enameled, wayeing 333. ounces, amounting in value to the summe of 1043. l. 19. s.

1567.  
K. of Scots  
murdered.

The tenth of Februarie in the morning, Henrie Stewart lord of Darnley befoze named king of Scots, by Scots, in Scotland was shamefully murdered, the reuenge whereof remaineth in the mightie hand of God.

The 22. of Februarie, the lady Margaret Douglas countesse of Leunox, mother to the said king of Scots, was discharged out of the tower of London.

This



This yeare deceased many aged people, so that in London within the space of ten moneths last past died seven aldermen of London, the first Edward Banks deceased the ninth of July, Anno. 1566, Richard Chamberlaine late Sherife, sir Martin Bowes, sir Richard Malorie, sir William Hewer, & sir Thomas White late maiors, then Richard Lambart one of the Sherifes for that yeare, the fourth of Aprill, Anno. 1567.

Seven aldermen deceased in London.

The 22. of Aprill, by great misfortune of fire in the towne of Olfestrie in Wales twelue miles from Shrewsburie, to the number of two hundred houses, that is to say, seven score within the wals, and three score without in the suburbs, besides cloth, corne, cattle, &c. were consumed, which fire began at two of the clocke in the forenoone, and ended at foure, to the great maruelling of many, that so great a spoile in so short time should happen. Two long streets with great riches of that towne were bent in Anno 1542. And likewise of woole in Anno 1544.

The towne of Olfestrie bent thirle in 30. yeares.

The 24. of Aprill, the Sergeants feast was kept at Graies Inn neare vnto Wolboyne, and there were at that time made seven new Sergeants of the law.

Sergeants feast.

The 27. of May, in the towne of Milnall in Suffolke eight miles from Newmarket. 37. houses, besides barnes, stables, and such like were consumed with fire in the space of two houres.

Milnall in Suffolke bent.

Shane Oneale, who had most traiterously rebelled against the queenes maiestie in Ireland, and had done many great outrages in the parts of Ulster, was this yeare with his great losse manfully repelled from the siege of Dundalke by the garrison thereof, and afterward through the great valiancy of sir Henry Sidney knight of the order, and lord deputie of Ireland, he was so discomfited in sundry confus'ds, with the losse of 3500. of his men, that now foreseeing his declination to be imminent, he determined to put a collar about his necke, and disguising himselfe, to repaire to the lord deputy, and patiently to require his pardon to haue his life. But Neil Mackeuer his secretary, who had incited him to this rebellion perswaded him first to trie and treat the friendship of certaine wild Scots that then lay incamped in Clan Iboy, vnder the conducting of Alexander Oge and Mee Gilliam Buske, whose father and vncle Shane Oneale had lately killed in an overthrowe giuen by the Scots: neuertheless, he well liking this perswasion, went to the layd campe the second of June, where after a dissembled entertainment, and quaffing of wine, Gilliam Buske burning with desire of reuenge of his fathers and vncles death, and ministring quarrelling talke, issued out of the tent, and made a fray vpon Oneales men, & then gathering together his Scots in a thong, suddenly entered the tent againe, who there with their slaughter swords, betwix in peeces Shane Oneale, his secr. tary, and all his company, except a very few which escaped by flight.

Shane Oneale discomfited. Statuta Regni Hibernie. Edmond. Campion.

Shane Oneale slaine.

The 8. of June, sir Thomas Sackuile knight was created baron of Buckhurst at Westminster in the queenes palace.

On Saint Johns euen at night, was the like standing watch in London, as had bene on Saint Peters euen in the yeare before passed.

Watch at Midfomer.

The 19. of July, Charles Iames the young prince of Scotland, after a sermon made by Iohn Knoles, was crowned K. of Scots at Sterling church, where were read certaine comissions with the queenes priuy scale at them for the establishing of

Coronation in Scotland.

et

of the same. The first for her resignation of the crowne, and gouernement of the young prince her sonne. The second, to authorize the earle of Murray to be regent during his minority. The third, to giue authority and power to seauen other, ioyning with the sayd earle of Murray, in case he should refuse to exercise the same alone, that is to say, the duke of Chatileroi, the earles of Lennox, Argile, Athelinton, Glencarne and Marre: the commissions being ended, the bishop of Skilly with two superintendents, proceeded to the coronation, the earle Morton and lord Hume tooke oath for the king, that he should rule in the faith, feare, and loue of God, to maintaine the religion then preached in Scotland, and persecute all aduersaries to the same, with many other particular causes: he was then annointed, and had the royall robe put on him, he had the crowne vpon his head, the sword by his side, and the scepter in his hand. At the bringing to him of euery of which were praiers made for euery particular thing in the Scottissh tongue, wherein the whole ceremony was made and done.

Maximilian  
the emperor  
knight of the  
garter.

Maximilian Emperour the second of that name, being elected into the most honorable order of the garter, the honourable Thomas earle of Suffex, &c. knight of the same order, was appointed by the Queenes maiesty to go vnto the sayd emperour with the sayd order of the garter, who being honorably accompanied with Roger lord North, sir Thomas Mildmay knight, Henry Cobham esquire, one of the pensioners, and others, departed from London the 25. of June vnto Douer, and there embarked, landed at Calais, and his traine at Dunkerke, and so passed through the Low countries to Antwerpe in Brabant, where he was honorably receiued by the English marchants and others, there he visited Madame de Parma regent of the said countries, then resident within the sayd towne. And from thence he passed vnto Colein, where his lordship & traine tooke the riuer of Reine, passing by the city of Herts vnto Oppenham, and from thence by land through the countrie by the city of Alorues and Spirens til he came to Ulmes, standing on the riuer Danow, where he arrived on the 21. of July, and the 23. his lordship rode in post to Aulspurge, nine dutch mules from Ulmes: from thence he departed the 25. of July, & met with his traine at Donewert, being come downe by the said riuer of Danow. From thence he kept his iourne by Ingollstade Reinspurge, by Passaw and other townes, till he came to Linz, where his Lordship staid the first, second and third of August, by reason of high waters, and on the fourth of August passed by Stoaanne and Cronz, by the sayd riuer of Danow, and so arrived at the city of Vienna the fift of August, where he was receiued of the lord Smackoms, hauing twelve horses ready with their footclothes for his lordship and the best respected of his traine, and so brought to the Emperour, by whom he was right honourably receiued, and after ward conducted to his lodging, where all provision was made at the Emperours charges: and here his Lordship continued vntill the 14. of January. In the which time of his abode, the Emperour very often had the sayd earle forth with him vnto such pastimes of hunting the hart, boare, and such like, as that countrey yeeldeth. After this, vpon the Queenes maiesties letters brought out of England by maister Henry Brooke alias Cobham, one of her maiesties gentlemen pensioners, the sayd earle of Suffex vpon Sunday the fourth of January in the afternoone, presented and deliuered vnto the Emperours

Aug. reg. 10.

Emperours maiestie in his chamber of presence, the habiliments and ornaments of the most noble order of the Garter, Sir Gilbert Dethike knight, *alias* Gatar principall king at armes, & officer for the said order, and William Dethike then Rouge Crosse also officer of armes giuing their attendance in their coates of armes. And the Emperour at his inuesture of: he said habiliments, gaue unto the said Gatar his Moyst gotone, and vnder garment, furred throughout with Lusernes, and then proceeded thence into a great chamber, adorne in forme of a chappell, where as all the other ceremonies belonging to the said order were accomplished, and the same night the said Earle supped with the Emperours maiestie, both being in their robes of the said order. And shortly after his lordship with certaine of his companie taking leaue of the Emperour, departed from Vienna the fourteenth of Januarie vnto Perussat, and so through the countrey of Stire vnto Grantz, the chiefe citie of Carinthie, where he tooke leaue of the archduke Charles, and from thence returning passed those parts of the Alpes, vnto Siltzburg, where he met with the other parts of his traine, and so by iourneies came againe into England vnto the Quenes maiestie, about the later end of March.

After a drie sommer followed a sharpe winter, with such a scarcitie of fodder and hals, that in diuers places the same was sold by weight, as in Yorkshire, and in the Peake, hay was sold for five pence the stone: there followed also a great death of cattell, especially of horse and sheepe.

In the month of Januarie, the Quenes maiestie sent into the narrow Seas three of her ships, named the Antelope, the Swallow, and the Tide, and one Barke named the Phenix, the which were manned with five hundred men: and her highnesse appointed the charge of those ships and men, to maister William Holstoke esquier, Comptroller of her highnesse ships, who had commandement to staie the subiectes of king Philip. and according to his duety & charge, he vsed such diligence, that on the 11. of March next following, he met with eleuen saile of Flemish Hoies, vpon Boloigne, which came from Roane, and in them fortyer hundred and odde Tuns of Calcoigne and French wines, which they intended to haue conuied into Flaunders, but William Holstoke stayed all the said Hoies, and sent them to London, where they made their discharge, and the Flemings disappointed.

Moreouer, on the 28. of March, the said William Holstoke seruing in the Antelope at that present admirall, in his companie being William Winter the yoonger, (at that time Viceadmirall) seruing in the Tide, and I. Basing Captaine of the Swallow, and Thomas Geuerley Captaine of the Phenix, met in the narrow Seas with fourtene saile of great Hulkes, which were come out of Portingale, and bound to Flaunders, their chiefe lading being Portingale salt, and yet had good store of Spanish Riads of plate, and also great store of spices, the which fouretene Hulkes did maintaine their fight for the space of two houres, and after that they did perceiue they could not preuaile, the said William Holstoke and his companie tooke 8. of the same hulks, whereof 6. were sent into the riuer of Chamis, and the admirall and vizadmirall of the said Hulkes, being two great ships, which W. Holstoke himselfe did take, were conuied to Hartwich, and there discharged.

1568.

Haie sold by weight.

Ships sent to the seas against the subiects of king Philip.

Great  
winds.

The 28. of March, through vehement rage and tempest of windes, many vessels in the Thamis, with two Tiltboates before Grauesende were sunke and drowned.

Queene of  
Scots arri-  
ued in Eng-  
land.

In the Month of May, the Queene of Scots escaping out of prison through the meanes of George Dowglas, brother unto the lord of Rochford her keeper, leuied a power of 6000. men thorough the helpe of the earles of Argile, Eglinton, and Rothes, and Glau de Hamilton, sonne to the Duke of Shallowellerault, and other, which was discomfited in battell by the Courtenoy the earle of Murray, and 14. Hameltons slaine, and 30. men taken prisoners, among whom were the lords Seton & Ros, the Queene escaped & fled into England.

The 16. of May, Marie queene of Scots, after her escape out of Lughleuen, where she had bene imprisoned, arrived at Wierkington in England, hauing in her companie to the number of sixtene persons, besides foure watermen, where she was slaid, Captaine Read with 50. soldiers were appointed to attend upon her, and conuied her to Carlisle, and from thence to Bolton castle, belonging to the lord Scrope, who with sir Ralph Sadler sent downe for that purpose, had the custodie of her, till she was committed to the earle of Shrewsbury.

Archbishop  
of Yorke de-  
ceased after  
he had spoy-  
led his pa-  
lace.

Peter Ra-  
mus.  
Cardinall  
Castilion  
came into  
England.

The 26. of June, deceased Thomas Yoong archbishop of Poike, in the manor of Sheffields, belonging to the earle of Shrewsbury, he was honorably buried at Poike. This Thomas Yoong pulled downe and destroyed the great hall & palace of Poike in Ann. 1562. which sometimes had bene sumptuously builded by his predecessor Thomas, surnamed the elder, archbishop of Poike, about Ann. 1090. &c.

This yeere cardinall Eder Castilion, and the bishop Arles flying out of France into England, arrived at the Tower wharffe on the 12. of September, and were there receiued by sir Thomas Gresham, and other, and from thence conueyed to sir Thomas Greshams house in Bishops gate streete, where they were lodged. On the next morrow in the forenoone the said cardinall (in his short cloke, and a rapier by his side) with sir T. Gresham, and other, rode to the French Church, from thence to the Exchange in Cornhill, and then to Saint Pauls Church, and so backe againe to dinner. On the twentieth of September the said cardinall rode to the Court, &c. he remained in England till the yeere of our Lord 1570. and then died at Canterburie, and was there buried in Chills Church.

Monstrous  
fishes.

The 11. of October, were taken in Suffolke at Downham bridge neere unto Ipswich, eightene monstrous fishes, some of them containing eight and twentie foote in length, the other 24. or 21. foote in length at the least.

New Con-  
duit at Wal-  
broke.

An. reg. 11.

At the costes and charges of the citizens of London, a new Conduit was builded at Walbrooke corner, neere to Downegate, which was finished in the month of October, the water whereof is conueied out of the Thamis.

The 29. of December, the English merchants and their goods in the towne of Antwerpe, were arrested by commandement of the Duke of Alua.

The 4. of Februarie following, the English merchants of the staple, with their goods, in the towne of Bridges, was also arrested. Whereupon on the twentieth of January it was proclaimed at London, that the bodie and goods, of all that were borne under the King of Spaines dominions, throughout England should be arrested, which was done, and the Spanish Ambassador was committed



committed to the custodie of maister Parry, M. Knevet, and M. Knowles.

The 17. of Januarie, Philip Melitell a French man, and two English men, were drawne from Newgate to Tiborne and there hanged, the French man quartered, who had coined gold counterfett, the English men, the one had clipped silver, the other cast Telfons of tinne.

1569  
A French  
man execu-  
ted.

The 28. of March, the Prisoners well appointed in armour on horsebacke, mustered before the Queenes maiestie in Hyde parke beside Westminster.

Mustre of  
Prisoners.

A great Lotterie being holden at London in Paules Churchyard, at the West doore, was begun to be drawne the 11. of Januarie, and continued day and night till the sixt of May, wherein the said drawing was fully ended.

The 17. of May, George lord Dacre of Gaysloke, sonne and heire of Thomas lord Dacre, being a child in yeres, and then ward to Lord Thomas Howard duke of Norfolk, was by a great mischaunce slayne at Thetford in the house of sir Richard Falmesthorne knight, by meane of a vaulting horse of wood, standing within the same house, upon which horse as he meant to haue vaulted, and the pinnis at the feete being not made sure, the horse fell vpon him and brused the braines out of his head.

George lord  
Dacres slain

The 27. of August, Andrew Gregoreuich Sauin, ambassadour from Muscouie, landed at the Tower wharfe, and was there receiued by the lord Maior of London, the Aldermen and Sherifes in scarlet, with the merchants aduencurers in robes of blacke velvet all on horsebacke, who conuied him riding through the citie to the Muscouie house in Seeding lane there to be lodged.

Ambassador  
from Muscouie.

The plague of pestilence somewhat raigning in the citie of London, Michaelmas Terme was first adourned vnto the 3. of Nouember, and after vnto Hilarie terme next following.

Terme ad-  
ourned.

The 11. of October, Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolk, was brought fro Burnam beside Windsor by land to Westminster, and from thence conueyed by water to the tower of London prisoner, sir Henry Neuill being his keeper.

Duke of  
Norfolke  
sent to the  
Tower.  
The Earles  
of Northum-  
berland and  
Westmerlād  
rebelled.

On Monday the fourteenth of Nouember, Thomas Percie Earle of Northumberland being at Copcliffe, receiued the Queenes maiesties letters to repaire to the Court, and the same day at night, certaine conspirators perceiuing the said Earle to be wauering and vnconstant of promise made to them, caused a seruant of his called Bekewich, (after he was laid in his bed) to bustle in, and to knocke at his chamber doore, willing him in hast to arise and shift for himselfe, for that his enemies (whom he termed to be sir Oswold Viltrop, & maister Vaughan) were about the Parke, and had beset him with numbers of men, whereupon he arose, and conueyed himselfe away to his keepers house: in the same instant, they caused the bels of the towne to be rung backward, and so raised as many as they could to that purpose.

The next night, the Earle departed thence to Branpith, where he met with Charles Neuill Earle of Westmerland, and other their confederates, after which time, by sundrie proclamations, they abusing the Queenes subiects, commanded them in her highnesse name to repaire to them in warlike manner, for the defence & suretie of her Maiesties person, sometimes affirming their doings to be with the aduise & consent of y nobilitie of the realin, who indeed were wholly bent (as ma-

nifelly appeared) to spend their liues in dutifull obedience, againſt them and all other traitors, ſometimes pretending for conſcience ſake to ſeek to reforme religion, ſometimes declaring that they were driuen to take this matter in hand, leſt otherwiſe foraine Princes might take it vpon them, to the great perill of this Realme.

Rebels rent  
the Bible.

The 16. day, they came to Durham, and forthwith went to the Minſter, where they tare the Bible, Communion bookes, and other ſuch as there were. The ſame night they went againe to Bannſpith, and on the morrow to Watington, where they had holl-water, but no Haſle for want of beſtiments. Fro thence they ſent their horſemen to gather together ſuch numbers of men as they could.

Ann. reg. 12

The 18. the earle of Northumberland went to Richmond, then to Northalerton, after to Boro'-bridge, and on Sunday the 20. of Nouember, he with his lady counteſſe of Northumberland, met againe with the earle of Weſtmerland at Ripon, and there had Haſle, where to get the more credit among the fauourers of the old Romiſh religion: they had a Croſſe with a banner of the ſeuen wounds borne before them by Richard Norton, and that night they went to Boro'-bridge, and on the monday to Wetherby, on which day at night ſome bands of them entred Tadcaſter, and tooke a 200 footmen, chaſing their captaines which were leading them towards Poſke to the earle of Suſſex. On tuesday, they muſtered on Clifford moore, nigh vnto Bannham moore, where they were 1600. horſemen, and a foure thouſand footmen, which was the greateſt number that euer they were. From thence, they intended to haue marched toward Poſke, but

The number  
of the rebels.

their minds being ſuddely altered, by report they heard that ſir George Bowes had muſtered within the Biſhopricke, and Richmondſhire, and leuied great bands. On the Wednesday they returned againe to Wetherby: on Thursday to Northalerton: on Friday to Richmond: on Saturday Weſtmerland went to Rabies his owne houſe: on Sunday at night the Earle of Northumberland came to him there. On Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday, they muſtered in all Richmondſhire and the Biſhopricke, beſtowing their footmen in bands vnder captaines leading: and the ſame day, which was the laſt of Nouember, they beſieged Barnard or Barne caſtell vpon Teſe, builded by Barnard Baylioll, about Anno Domini 1174. which caſtell was valiantly defended by ſir George Bowes and Robert Bowes his brother, the ſpace of eleuen daies. In the meane ſpace, the Earle of Weſtmerland and his ladie went to Durham with ſeuen or eight hundred horſe, where they remained till the thirteenth of December, in which ſpace, to wit, the ſeventh day of December, ſir John Foſter Warden of the middle marches, accompanied with ſir Henry Percie, did giue to the ſaid Earle a great ſkirmiſh. The ſixt of December, ſir George Bowes put forth of the caſtell two hundred horſemen, whereof two perſons were ſlaine, and thirtie taken by the Rebels. The tenth of December, ſir George Bowes deliuered the ſaid Caſtell, vnder compoſition to depart with armour, munition, bagge and baggage, and forthwith marched with his gariſon towardes Poſke. In this meane time, to wit, on the foure and twentieth of Nouember, the queenes Maieſtie had cauſed the ſaid Earles of Northumberland and Weſtmerland to be proclaimed traitors, with all their adherents and fauourers, and forthwith prepared an armie to be ſent out of the South for their ſuppreſſion. The Lord

Bernards  
caſtle be-  
ſieged.

Skirmiſh  
with the re-  
bels.

Bernards  
caſtle deli-  
uered to the  
rebels.

The earles  
of Northum-  
berland and  
Weſtmer-  
land pro-  
claimed  
traitors.

Scrope

Scrope Warden of the west marches, had called vnto him the Earle of Cumberland, and other Gentlemen of the countrey, and they kept the citie of Carlile. Thomas Earle of Suffex the Queenes maiesties Lieutenant generall in the North, had on the seventeenth of Nouember there published the like Proclamation (in effect) as after was published by her Maiestie against the said Rebels, and also sent out to all such Gentlemen as he knew to be her Maiesties loving subiects vnder his rule, who came vnto him with such number of their friends, as he was able in five daies to make about five thousand horsemen and footemen, and so being accompanied with Edward Earle of Rutland his lieutenant, the lord Hunsdon Generall of his horsemen, William Lord Eure, who had the leading of the Rearward of the footmen, and sir Ralph Sadler treasurer, who all came to Yorke with their seruants, on Sunday the eleuenth of December, they marched from Yorke towards Topcliffe: the twelfth they tarried at Seday, where sir George Bowes with his power coming from Barnards Castell (as is aforesaid met him, and was made Marshall of the armie: then they went to Northalton, to Smerston, to Croftbridge, and so to Aclay, on the which day the Rebels fled from Durham (having called their company Christopher Neuill from Hertlepoole, who were fortifying there) to Erham, where they abode three daies.

The earle of Suffex the Queenes lieutenant generall in the North against the rebels.

The Earle of Suffex Lieutenant with his power, went from Aclay to Durham, then to Newcastle, and the twentieth of December to Erham, from whence the Rebels were gone the night before to Naworth, where counselling with Edward Dacres concerning their owne weaknesse, as also how they were pursued by the Earle of Suffex and his power of seven thousand, men almost at their heeles: and moreover, that the earle of Warwike, the lord Clinton, lord Admirall of England, and Walker lord Ferrers, Viscount Hereford, with a greater armie of 12000. out of the South, whereof the said earle of Warwike was Generall, was not farre behind them at Boro'-bridge.

The earle of Warwike sent against the rebels.

The next night, the two Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland, with sundrie of their principall gentlemen, unknowne to their associates, fled to Berlaw in Scotland: the other Rebels were shortly after taken by the Earle of Suffex and his power, without any resistance.

The Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland fled.

The fourth and fift of Ianuarie, did suffer at Durham to the number of threescore and six Constables and other, amongst whom, an alderman of the towne named Struwar, and a priest called parson Piomtree were the most notable: then sir George Bowes Marshall, finding many to be faultors in the foresaid rebellion, did see them executed in euery market towne and other places, betwixt Newcastle and Wetherby, about 60. miles in length, and 40. miles in breadth, as himselfe reported vnto me.

1570  
Rebels executed at Durham.

The one and twentieth of Ianuarie, a prentise was hanged on a gibbet at the North end of Finch lane in London, (to the example of other) for that he the thirteenth of December had stricken his maister with a knife, whereof he died.

The two and twentieth of Februarie, Leonard Dacre of Harley in the Countie of Yorke Esquire, hauing raised a number of people, the lord Hunsdon & other setting on him with a company of balliant souldiers, slue many of his

Leonard Dacre fled into Scotland

Rebels executed at  
Yorke.

people, and forced him to flie into Scotland.

On good Friday, the 27. of March, Simon Digby of Alketoe, Iohn Fulthorpe of Helbecke in the Countie of Yorke Esquires, Robert Peneman of Stokesley, Thomas Bishop the younger of Poklinton in the same Countie of Yorke Gentlemen, were drawne from the Castell of Yorke to the place of execution, called Knaues-mire, halfe a mile without the Citie of Yorke, & there hanged, headed, and quartered, their foure heads were set on the foure principall gates of the Citie, with foure of their quarters: the other quarters were set in diuerse places of the countrey: Oscolph Glesby was with them drawne to the gallows, and returned againe to the castell.

Earle of  
Pembroke  
deceased.

William Harbarr Earle of Pembroke, baron of Cardife, knight of the Charter, one of the priuie counsell, and lord steward of the Queenes maiesties household, deceased at Hampton Court on the fiftenth of March, he gaue great gifts to the Queene, to the Earle of Leicester, to the household, and diuers other, and was buried in Saint Pauls Church at London the 18. of Aprill: the blacks giuen at his buriall came to the value of 2000. l. and a sumptuous monument was raised for him on the North side the quire in Pauls, at the foote of Iohn of Gaunr, duke of Lancaster.

The Earle of  
Suffex made  
a iourney in-  
to Scotland.

The 17. of Aprill, the Earle of Suffex Lieutenant generall in the North, with the Lord Hunsdon Lord gouernor of Barwicke, and Warden of the east marches, and maister William Drewry high marshall of Barwicke, with all the garrison and power of the same, began a iourney into Scotland, & the same night came to Marke, twelue miles from Barwicke, and so the next morrow entered into Tiudale, and marching in warlike order, they bent, ouerthrew, rased and spoyled all the Castles, Townes, and villages of their enimies, till they came to the castell of Holle, standing in a strong marish belonging to the lord of Bucklugh, which likewise was rased, ouerthrowne and bent, and so marched forward and bent the whole countrey before them, till they came to Craling. The same day, Sir Iohn Foster Warden of the middle marches, with the garrison and force of the same, entered likewise into Tiudale vpon Erpes gate, 16. miles from Marke, where in like order they bent, rased, and spoyled the countrey before them, till they came to a strong castell called Craling, in the possession of the mother of the lord Fernherst, which likewise they ouerthrew, rased, and bent. There both the armies met, and so marched by the riuer of Tiuite, rasing, burning, and spoiling Castles and pyles along the riuer, till they came to Geddoorth, where they both lodged, and were courteously receiued. The next day the lord Ch. Ford Warden of the middle marches of Scotland, came in with all the principall men of his kintred to the lord Lieutenant, and did submit themselves, and were assured, for that they had not receiued the English rebels, ayding or assisting them, neither had made any inuasion into England. The nineteenth, the armie deuided into two parts, the one part whereof passed the riuer of Tiuite, and bent the Castell of Fernherst, and all other Castles and Townes belonging to the Lord of Fernherst, Huntill and Bedzell, and so passed to Hint, where both the armies met againe, and so bent on both sides the riuer, till they came to a great towne called Hawicks, where they intended

Sir Iohn  
Foster with  
a garrison  
entred Scot-  
land.



to haue lodged, but the Scots had vnthatched the houses, and bent the thatch in the streets, and themselves fled with most part of their goods, but by the industrie of the Englishmen, the timber was also burned with the thatch, sauing one little house of stone of Dunlanrikes, wherein my lord lay that night. The 20. day, the armie marched forwards to a house of the lord of Bucklugh, which they ouerthrew with poulder, and then marched Northward to the riuer of Tiuet, where they bent and spoyled such Castles, pyles and townes, as belonged to the lords of Fernherst and Bucklugh, their kinsmen and adherents, and that night returned to Gedwozth. The one and twentieth day, part of the armie went to the riuer of Bobwent, vnder the leading of the said marshall, where maister George Heron, keeper of Ciuidale and Ridsdale, with them of that countrey, met with him, and toyning together, rode on, burning and spoyling all on both sides of the riuer, and the other part marched to the riuer of Trile, where they wasled and bent all on both sides the riuer, and returned to Kilsley, where the lord Lieutenant lodged of purpose to besiege Hwome Castell in the night, and the Lord Gouvernor with his companie went to Warke, to bring the ordinance from thence in the morning, which was disappointed by the negligence of such as were put in trust for those matters, who suffered the carriage horses to returne to Barwike the day before, which should haue drawn the same, the lacke whereof caused the Lord Lieutenant with the whole armie, to returne to Barwike the two and twentieth of Aprill, in which time there was neuer any shew by the Scots made, to resist or defend their countrey.

The lord Scrope Warden of the west marches, entered Scotland the eighteenth of Aprill, bent and spoyled those parts almost to Dornfrees, he had diuers conflicts, gaue sundrie ouerthrowes, tooke many prisoners, and returned safely. During all these inuasions, the marches of England in all places were so guarded by the Lord Eucers, sir George Bowes, and other of the Bishoppicke, as the Scots durst not once offer to enter into England, so that not one house was burned, nor one coeue taken out of England. There were raised, ouerthrowne, and bent in this iourney, aboue fiftie strong Castles and pyles, and aboue three hundred Townes and Villages, so that there be verie few in the countrey, that either haue received our English Rebels, or inuaded England, that either haue castell, pile, or house for themselves or their tenants, besides the losse of their goods. The 26. the lord Lieutenant accompanied with the lord gouernor, the marshall and diuers lustie gentlemen, captaines and soldiers, to the number of three thousand, set forward to Warke, and so to Hwome Castell, which Castell they besieged till the same was yielded, the lord Gouvernor, the Marshall, and diuers other, tooke possession for our soueraigne Ladie the Queenes maiestie, and expelled the Scots that were therein, to the number of 168. persons, in their apparell on their backs onely, without armoz, weapon, bagge or baggage, among whom there were two Englishmen, one Hiliard the Earle of Northumberlands man, and a bagarant person named William Godfwher, which both were carried to Barwike and there executed the 24. of May. The L. Lieutenant placed in the castell Captaine Wood, and Captaine Pikeman, with 200. souldiers, and so returned to Barwike the 29. of Aprill, where he rested

The lord  
Scrope en-  
tered Scot-  
land.

Rebels ex-  
ecuted at  
Barwike.

very euill at ease, hauing in the trauell taken ouermuch cold, wherewith he was dyuen into an extream ague.

Knights  
made by  
the earle of  
Suffex.

The fourth of May, he sent maister Drewry Marshall with the number of two thousand, to take Faulst Castell, which at the first coming was deliuered to the Marshall, who expelled the Scots in number ten, and placed 14. of our Englishmen against all Scotland, it is so strong a place, and so returned to Barwik. The eleuenth of May, the lord Lieutenant made foure knights, viz. Sir William Drewry, sir Thomas Manners, sir George Care, sir Robert Constable. And the same day, sir William Drewry being Generall, set forth toward Eckenborough with diuers footbands with shot, armed pikes, and pieces of great ordnance, to ioyne with the earles of Leunor, Herton, Glencarne, and Harre, and other of the kings power of Scotland, in pursuing of the English rebels, and such of the Scots as supported them as the Duke Hamilton, and other who were in armes at Lithcor, twelue miles from Eckenborough, to defend their cause. The foresaid new knights with their bands came to Eckenborough, the thirteenth of May, and there rested three nights, and departed from thence to Lithcor, where the Regent was slain. The 17. the footemen marched to Faulkirke, five miles from Sterling, and sir William Drewry with the horsemen, marched to Starling to see the King, whom they found so perfect in all things as age and nature could permit. The 18. they departed to the footbands, and so together marched to Glasco, where the lord Hamilton had besieged a house of the kings, but hearing of their coming, he fled with dishonor, and the losse of nine & twentie of his men. The 19. the generall with other horsemen and some shot, passed to Dumbarton, to view the straites of the castell there, being kept by the lord Fleming, the bishop of Saint Andrewes, and other his adherents, to the Queene of Scots use. Our generall sent his trumpetor to require a parley with assurance safely to returne, wherunto the lord Fleming subtilly consented, and minding so to wound him into his danger, conuied certaine shot, and armed men into a secret place, so that our generall coming alone to haue parley, his trumpetor not returned, they shot at him, meaning to haue slain him, but he bestowed his pistolets as freely at them as they at him, and returned to his companie and so to Glasco: from whence sir George Care, being maruellouslie offended with the subtil dealing of the lord Fleming, wrote a letter of challenge to combat with him body for body, which the lord Fleming by his letter of answer refused, wherupon sir George Care wrote a sharp and pithie reply, &c.

The one and twentieth day, our generall accompanied with the gentlemen and horsemen, went to Dunbittion againe to parley with the lord Fleming, vpon his promise that he would meete him three miles from the said castell, but the place of parley being viewed, was found to be subiect to the shot of the castell, & therefore our general required another place, which would not be grated by the Lord Fleming.

The 22. the lord of Leunor, the lord Glencarne, & the Lord Simple, with their friends and tenants, came to our generall, & mustered before Glasco, to the number of foure thousand horsemen and footemen.

Hamilton in  
Scotland be-  
sieged.

The 23. our generall with the whole army marched toward the castell of Hamilton, & there had parley with the captain; whose name was Arthur Hamilton, but

but he would not deliuer the castell, whereupon, our ordinance being placed, was shot very sore, but did no great harme, for that they were field peeces.

The fourte and twentieth day, our generall gaue commons to the said castell which would not yeeld, whereupon he sent to Starling for bigger ordinance for the batterie, and so went from thence, accompanied with the earles of Leinor and Mortaine, with the horsemen and certaine shot, marched in the country to a faire house of the Abbots of Kelwing nere adioyning whose name was Gawyn Hamilton, which house they burned, & utterly spoyled, with seauenteene houses more of good countenance of that name, whereof one was the lord Lanhampe, which had married with the sister of James Hamilton of Sidwylhough, which slue the Regent. There was burned seauen other faire houses therabouts, not of that name, but of alie: besides those, there were diuers of their kindred & alie, that came in with humble submissio, & assured themselves, promising their obedience to their king, &c.

The 25. of May in the morning, was found hanging at the bishop of Londons palace gate in Pauls church-yard, a Bull, which lately had bin sent from Rome, containing diuerse horrible treasons against the Queenes maiesty for the which one Iohn Felton was shortly after apprehended, and committed to the Tower of London.

A Bull from Rome hanging on the bishop of Londons gate.  
The Nortons executed.

The 27. of May, Thomas Norton and Christopher, of Yorkeshire, being both condemned of high treason, for the late rebellion in the North, were drawn from the Tower of London to Tiborne and there hanged, headed and quartered.

The 27. of May, the castle of Hamilton was yeilded to sir William Drewry generall of our army, and by him presently spoyled and burnt, there was in the house 34. men.

Hamilton in Scotland yeilded to the English.

The 28. sir George Care with the horsemen came to Lithco, where the whole army met. This day, a very faire house, with the whole towne of Hamilton was burnt. The 29. they burnt an house of the dukes called Kempell, and another at Lithco, the whole towne, and diuerse other faire houses was yeilded to our generall, who returned to Edebrough, and so to Barwike the third day of June.

A conspiracy was made by certaine gentlemen and other in the country of Porffolke, whose purpose was on Midsummer day, at Harlesons faire, with sound of trumpet and drum, to haue raised a number, and then to proclaim their diuclish purpose, under pretence against strangers and other. This matter was uttered by Thomas Kete one of the conspiracy, vnto Iohn Kenley, who forthwith sent the same Kete with a Constable to the next Justice, before whom and other Justices, he opened the whole matter, whereupon maister Drewry immediately apprehended Iohn Throgmorton, and after him, many gentlemen of the city of Porffolke, and the county of Porffolke, who were all committed to prison (and at the next Sessions of gaile deliucry at the castle of Porffolke, the seauenteenth of July, before sir Robert Carlin knight, Lord chiefe Justice, Gilbert Gerard the queenes Attourney generall, and other Justices) ten of them were indicted of high treason, and some others of contempt, diuerse of them were condemned, and had iudgement the one and twentieth of August, and afterward three of them were hanged, bowelled and quartered, which were Iohn Throgmorton of Porffolke gentleman, who stood mute at his arraignment, but at the gallows confessed

Conspiracy in Norfolk.

confessed himselfe to be the chiefe conspirator, and that none had deserved to die but he, for that he had procured them: with him was executed Thomas Brooke of Rollesbie gentleman the thirtieth of August, and George Redman of Cringlford gentleman was likewise executed the second of September.

The duke of  
Norfolke  
remoued.  
Felton ar-  
raigned.

The fourth of August, the duke of Norfolk was remoued from the tower of London to the Charter house neare unto Smithfield.

The same day was arraigned at the Guild hall of London Iohn Felton, for hanging a bull at the gate of the bishop of Londons palace, and also two young men, for coyning and clipping of coine, who all were found guilty of high treason, and had iudgement to be drawne, hanged and quartered.

Felton and  
others exe-  
cuted.

The 8. of August, Iohn Felton was drawne from Newgate into Pauls church-yard, and there hanged on a galloines new set vp that morning before the bishops palace gate, and being cut downe aliue, he was bowelled and quartered. A few this, the same morning, the sherifes returned to Newgate, and so to Tiborne with two young men which were there executed for coyning & clipping as is aforesayd.

A iourney  
into Scotland  
by the earle  
of Sussex.

The 22. of August, the earle of Sussex lord lieutenant generall for the queenes maiesty in the north, and the lord Scrope warden of the west marches, and diuers other, marched from Carleile with the queenes army and force of the North, as well of horsemen as footemen into Scotland, passing ouer the riuers of Elke, Leuine, and Darke, which riuers of Darke parteth England and Scotland, and so to Doynocke wood, belonging to Edward Vrone the lord of Bonshaw, and then to Annona, a strong house of the Lord Harris, which they rased and ouerthrew with other therabouts: from thence to Hodhain, which they bent and blew vp: from thence to Kinnell, a towne belonging to the lord Cowhill, which they bent: from thence to Dornfries, which they sacked and spoiled of such paltry as the fugitiues had left, and also rased and ouerthrew a sumptuous house belonging to the queene of Scots, in the keeping of the lord Harris: then passing the riuers of Lougher they bent and spoiled Cowhilles and Powtrackes, and returned to Dornfries, and so to the towne of Bankend, which they bent, with another house pertaining to William Maxwell of the Isles, and so to the castle of Carlawozaeke, standing in a marshy iust to an arme of the sea, which parteth Durnedall and Galway, which castle they blew vp, and returned homeward, transporting their ordinance ouer quick-sands and bogs, wher neuer the like was done before, and so came to Doynocke wood.

The queene  
was infor-  
med, he had  
brent 300.  
townes and  
villages, and  
spoiled 50.  
stone castles

The 28. of August, they marched towards Carleile, where by the way they bent and ouerthrew two houses, the one being Arthur Greames *alias* Carelile, the other, Rich George, two notable theuees. The same day at night after the lords coming to Carleile, he made knights, sir Edward Hastings, sir Francis Russell, sir Valentine Browne, sir William Hilton, sir Robert Stapleton, sir Henry Curwen, sir Simon Musgraue.

Knights  
made by the  
earle of Sus-  
sex.

High waters,  
which drown-  
ed many.

An. reg. 13.

The first of October at night, happened a terrible tempest of wind and raine, both on the sea and land, by meanes whereof many ships and other vessels were drowned about midnight the waters overflowing, drowned many meadowes, pastures, townes, villages, cattell, houses and goods, to the utter vndoing of a great number of subiects of this realme: besides the losse of many men, women, and children.



children, some drowned in their beds, some in the wayes travelling, &c.

The 23. of January, the queenes maiesty accompanied with her nobility, came from her house at the Strand called Sommerfet place, and entered the city of London by Temple barre, Fleetstreete, Cheape, & so by the north side of the Burse, to Sir Thomas Greshams in Bishops gate street, where she dined. After dinner, her grace returning through Cornhill, entered the Burse on the south side, and after her highnesse had viewed euery part thereof about ground, especially the Pawne, which was richly furnished with all sorts of the finest wares in the city. She caused the same Burse, by an herault and a trumpet to be proclaimed, the Royall Exchange, so to be called from thenceforth, and not otherwayes.

1571.

Royall Exchange.

The seuenteenth day of February, at a place called Minnastone, neare Martech hill in the county of Hereford, was seene the ground to open, and certaine rockes with a peece of ground, remooued and went forwarde the space of foure dayes, making at the first a terrible noise as it went on the earth: it remooued it selfe betwene six of the clocke in the euening and seuen the next morning, forty spaces, carrying great trees and shepccotes, some shepccotes with three score sheep in them, some trees fell into the chinkes other that grew on the same ground, grow now as firmly on a hill, and some that stood east, stand west, and those that stood west, stand east. The depth of the hole where it first brake out, is thirty foot, the breadth of the breach is eight score yeards, and in length about twenty score yeards. It ouerthrow Kingstone chappell. Also, two high wayes be remooued nigh one hundred yeards, with the trees of the hedge-rows. The ground in all is six and twenty acres, and where tillage ground was, there is pasture left in place, and where was pasture, there is tillage ground gone vpon it. The ground as it remooued, draue the earth before it, and at the lower part ouerwhelmed the ground, so that it is growne to a great hill of twelue fadome high. It remooued from saterday till monday at night following, and so staid.

A strange kind of earth moving.

In the moneth of february, Sir Thomas Sackeuile baron of Buckhurst was left in ambassade from the Queenes maiesty to Charles the ninth French king, as well to congratulate for his marriage with the daughter of the emperor Maximilian, as for other weighty affaires. And as his ambassage was great, so was his charge no lesse in furnishing himselfe and his traine accordingly, being both in number and furniture, such in euery point as did appertaine: and his receiving and entertainment in Fraunce by the king and others, was agreable thereto, for he was receiued vpon the coast by the gouernours of the fortified townes right honourably, by order from the king. Among other, the Bournoisell was one, who being very well mounted and appointed, left not his lordship before he came to the court, and from thence accompanied him backe untill his embarkement homewards. In the maine countries, he was accompanied with the gouernours and nobles of the places about: and in the good townes where he passed, he was presented by the chiefe magistrates, though his lordships rewards ouer valued their presents.

Sir Thomas Sackeuile sent into France.

At his approach neare to Paris, he was encountred on the way by two Marqueses of Trans and Saluces, this being of the house of Sauoy, and the other of the family of Foix. These wanted not such as accompanied them, euen of the best sort,

fort. At the lord ambassadors first audience, which was at the castle of Madrid or therwise called Boloigne neare Paris, where the K. the lay, the queenes Amaine coaches very brauely furnished were sent to Paris for him, in one of the which his lordship with the marquesse of Trance rode toward the court, very narrowly escaping from a shewd turne, by reason the same coach was ouertrothome, by the duche wagoners their negligence, who in a brauery galloping the field, made an ouer short turne, wherewith the marques was sore bzused. The lord ambassador at his arrivall, was very honorably receiued, he was banqueted by diuerse, and that very sumptuously, which by him was not vnrequited, but his reward at the kings hand was onely a chaine, waying one thousand french crownes. At this present, the riuer of Sayne, that runneth through the city of Paris, was not passable with vessels, by reason of the great frosts, and thereby not onely all kind of victuals but also hay and wood was hard to come by, and not to be had but at exorbitant prices, the countrie thereabouts hauing bene sore harried and spoiled by the ciuill tumults: by reason wherof, not onely the lord of Buckhurst for the space he remained there, but also sir Henry Norrice, and maister Francis Walsingham her intellies Ambassadors, liegers successiuelly, were diuven to an increase of expences, paying for euery thing they bought an higher price then had bene accustomed. After that my lord Buckhurst had bene feasted and banqueted by the king, and others of the french nobilitie, and had accomplished the points of his ambassage, he tooke leaue of the king, and departed homewards, arriuing here in England a little before Easter.

**A parliament.** The second of April, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein was granted to the queenes maiessty (toward her great charges, in repressing the late rebellion in the North, and persuing the sayd rebels and their fautors, which were fled into Scotland (by the cleargy, a subsidy of 6. s. in the l. and by the temporality two fifteenes, with a subsidy of 2. s. 8. d. in the l.

**Iustices at Westminster** The first, second, and third of May, was holden at Westminster before the Queenes maiessty, a sollemne Iust, at the tilt, turney, and barriers. The challengers were Edward earle of Orford, Charles Howard, sir Henry Lee, and Christopher Hatton esquier, who all did very valiantly, but the chiefe honour was giuen to the earle of Orford.

**Doctor Story executed.** The first of June, Iohn Story a doctoz of the cannon law, who before had bene condemned of high treason, was drawne from the tower of London to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, his head set on London bridge, and his quariers on the gates of the city.

**A combate appointed at Fuchill.** The 18. of June, in Trinity tearme, there was a combate appointed to haue bene fought for a certaine Honour and demaine lands belonging thereunto, in the Isle of Hartie, adioynning to the Isle of Sheppey in Kent, Simon Low and Iohn Kyme were plaintiffs, and had brought a writ of right against Thomas Paramore, who offered to defend his right by battell, wherempon the plaintiffs aforesayd, accepted to answer his challenge, offering likewise to defend their right to the same Honour and lands, and to prooue by battel that Paramore had no right nor no good title to haue the same.

Hereupon the sayd Thomas Paramore brought before the Judges of the common place at Westminster, one George Thorne, a bigge, broad, strong set fellow, and

and the plaintifs brought Henry Nailor maister of defence, and seruant to the right honorable the earle of Leicester, a proper slender man, and not so tall as the other: Thorne cast downe a gauntlet, which Nailor tooke vp. Upon the Sunday before the battell should be tried on the next morow, the matter was stayed, and the parties agreed, that Paramore being in possession should haue the land, and was bound in 500. pound to consider the plaintifs, as vpon hearing the matter the Iudges should award. The Queenes maiesty was the taker vp of the matter, in this wise: It was thought good, that for Paramores assurance, the order should be kept touching the combat, and that the plaintifs Low and Kime should make default of appearance, but that yet such as were sureties of Nailor, their champions appearance, should bring him in, and likewise those that were sureties for Thorne, should bring in the same Thorne in discharge of their band, & that the court should sit in Tuthill fields, where was prepared one plot of ground one and twenty yeards square, double railed for the combat, without the west square, a stage being set vp for the Iudges, representing the court of the common pleas. All the compasse without the lisses, was set with scaffolds one above another, for people to stand and behold. There were behind the square where the Iudges sat, two tents, the one for Nailor, the other for Thorne. Thorne was there in the morning timely. Nailor about 7. of the clocke came through London, apparelled in a dublet and galeysgascogne breeches, all of crimolyn latten cut and raced, a hat of blacke velvet with a red feather and band, before him drums and fifes playing: the gauntlet that was cast downe by George Thorne, was borne before the sayd Nailor vpon a swordes point and his basson (a staffe of an elle long, made Taper-wise, tipped with borne) with his shield of hard leather, was borne after him, by Askam a yeoman of the Queenes gard: he came into the pallace of Westminster, and staying not long before the hall doore, came backe into the kings streete, and so along through the sanctuary, and Tuthill streete, into the field, where he stayed till past nine of the clocke, and then sir Ierome Bowes brought him to his tent, Thorne being in the tent with sir Henry Cheiney long before. About ten of the clocke, the court of common pleas remoued, and came to the place prepared: when the Lord chiefe Iustice with two other his associates were set, then Low was called solemnely to come in, or else he to lose his wit of right. Then after a certaine time the sureties of Henry Nailor were called to bring in the sayd Nailor champion for Simon Low, and shortly thereupon sir Ierome Bowes leading Nailor by the hand, entred with him the lisses, bringing him downe that square by which he entred, being on the left hand of the Iudges, and so about till he came to the next square iust against the Iudges. and there making curtesie, first with one leg, and then with the other passed forth till he came to the middle of the place, and then made the like obersance and so passing till they came to the barre, there he made the like curtesie and his shield was held vp aloft ouer his head: Nailor put off his neather stockes, and so bare foote and bare legged, saue his silke scauilionions to the anckles and his dublet sleeves tied vp aboue the elbow, and bare headed, came in as is afore sayd. Then were the sureties of George Thorne called to bring in the same Thorne. and immediatly sir Henry Cheiney entring at the upper end on the right hand of the Iudges, used the like

The quarrell  
of combat  
raied.

order

order in coming about by his side, as Nailor had before on that other side, and so coming to the barre with like obeisance, held up his shield, proclamation was made in forme a followeth: The Iustices command in the Quenes maiesties name, that no person of what estate, degree, or condition that he be, being present, to be so hardy to giue any token or signe, by countenance, speech, or language, either to the proouer or to the defender, whereby the one of them may take aduantage of the other: and no person remooue, but still keepe his place: and that euery person and persons keepe their staues and their weapons to themselves: and suffer neither the sayd proouer nor defender to take any of their weapons or any other thing, that may stand either to the sayd proouer or defender any auail, vpon paine of forfeiture of lands, tenements, goods, chattels, and imprisonment of their bodies, and making fine and ransom at the Quenes pleasure.

Orde of the  
proouer.

Then was the proouer to be sworn in forme as followeth: This heare, you Iustices, that I haue this day neither eate, drinke, nor haue vpon me either bone, stone, ne grasse, or any inchantment, sorcerie, or witchcraft, where-through the power of the word of God might be increased or diminished, and the diuels power increased: and that my appeale is true, so helpe me God and his saints, and by this booke.

After all this sollemne order was finished, the lord chiefe Iustice rehearsing the manner of byping the writ of right by Simon Low, of the answere made thereunto by Paramore, of the proceeding therein, and how Paramore had chalenged to defend his right to the land by battell, by his champion George Thorne, and of the accepting the triall that was by Lowe, with his champion Henry Nailor, and then for default in appearance in Lowe, he adiudged the land to Paramore, and dismissed the champions, acquitting the sureties of their bands. He also willed Henry Nailor to render againe to George Thorne his gantlet, whereunto the said Nailor answered, that his lordship might commaund him any thing, but willingly he would not render the said gantlet to Thorne except he could win it: and further, he chalenged the said Thorne to play with him halfe a score blowes, to shew some pastime to the lord chiefe iustice and the other there assembled: but Thorne answered, that he came to fight, and would not play. Then the lord chiefe Iustice commending Nailor for his valiant courage, commanded them both quietly to depart the field, &c.

A woman  
brent at  
Maidstone.

The sixteenth of July Rebecca Chamber, late wife to Thomas Chamber of Bergettsellham, was found culpable of poisoning the said Thomas Chamber her husband, at the assises holden at Maidstone into the countie of Kent: For the which fact (having well deserved) she was there brent on the next morrow.

D. of Norf-  
folke sent to  
the tower,  
Bishop of  
Salisbury  
deceased.

The tenth of September, the Duke of Norfolk was remooued from the Charterhouse to the tower at London prisoner.

The two and twentieth of September, deceased Iohn Iewell Bishop of Salisbury, in his life a most eloquent and diligent preacher, but a far more painefull and studious writer, as his workes remaining beare witness, whereby his fame shall neuer die.

The christi-  
ans victory

The ninth of Nouember, great reioycing was made at London with banquetting and bonfires, for joy of the late come newes of a maruellous victorie obtained



obtained by the christian army by sea, against the Turkes, the sixt of October last past, wherein were taken and sunke of the Turkes gallies and brigantines two hundred and thirty, there were slaine of the Turkes more then 30000. besides a great number of prisoners taken, and about twelue thousand christians that had bene slaves with the Turkes, were set at liberty. The christians lost 7. gallies. and were slaine about sixe or seuen thousand.

against the  
Turkes.

An. reg. 14.

Earle of  
Kent.

The thirteenth of December, Reynold Grey was by the queenes maiestie restored earle of Kent.

The thirteenth of January, deceased William Peter knight, who for his iudgement and pregnant wit, had bene secretary and of priuy counsell to foure kings and queenes of this realme, and seuen times lord ambassado: abroad in foraine lands: he augmented Creter colledge in Oxford, with lands to the value of an hundred pound by yeare: and also builded ten almes houses in the parish of Ingershorne for twenty poore people, ten within the house, and ten without the house, hauing euery one two pence the day a winter gone, and two loads of wood, and among them, feeding for six kine winter and sommer, and a chaplaine to say them service daily.

1572.

Sir William  
Peter deceased.

The sixteenth day of January, the Lord Thomas Howard duke of Norfolkke was arraigned in Westminster hall, before George lord Talbot earle of Shrotonbury high steward of England for that day, and there by his peeres, to wit, nine earles one viscount, and sixteene barons, found guilty of high treason, and had iudgement accordingly.

Duke of  
Norfolkke  
arraigned.

The eleuenth day of february Kenelme Barney, and Edmond Mather were drawn from the Tower of London: and Henry Rolfe from the Marshalsea in Southwarke, all thre to Tiboyne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered for treason: Barney and Mather for conspiracy against some of her maiesties priuy counsell, and Rolfe for counterfeiting the Queenes maiesties hand.

Mather, Barney, & Rolfe  
executed.

The Queenes maiesty hearing credibly by report, that certaine lewd persons, vnder pretence of executing commissions for inquiries to be made for lands concealed, contrary to her maiesties meaning, chelenging lands, stockes of monney, plate, &c. lettng not also to make pretence to the bells, lead, and other such things belonging to parish churches or chappels: Her maiesty meaning speedily to withstand such manner of vnlawfull practises, commanded, that all commissions then extant, and not determined, for inquisition of any manner of concealments, should be by *Superfides* out of her cheschequer reuoked. And also appointed speedy remedy to be had against such extortioners, as more at large appeareth by a proclamation, concluding thus: finally, her maiesty would her Iustices of assise to haue some speciall care, not onely to the premises, but also to the reforming of certaine couetous and iniurious attempts, of diuerse that of late time by other colour then for her maiesties hse, had taken away the lead of churches and chappels, yea and bells also out of steeple, and other common goods belonging to parishes, an example not to be suffered unpunished nor vnrformed. And so her maiesty chesones charge her Iustices of her assise to provide seuerer remedy, both for punishment and reformation thereof. Dated at Westminster the thirteenth of february, the fourteenth yeare of her raigne.

Conueyers  
of bells, lead,  
and other  
Church  
goods are to  
be punished  
to the example  
of their  
too many  
followers.

The

Sir William  
Powlet lord  
treasurer.

The tenth day of March, deceased sir William Powlet knight, lord Sent-Iohn earle of Wiltshire, marquisse of Winchester, knight of the honourable order of the garter, one of the queenes maiesties priuy counsell, and lord high treasurer of England, at his manor of Basing in Hampshire. This worthy man was boine in the yeare of our Lord 1374. in the fourteenth yeare of king Edward the 4. at Filderton de la Noxe in Wiltshire on Whitsonday, and liued about the age of ninety and seauen yeares, in fire kings and queenes dayes. He serued fire kings and queenes, Henry the seventh, Henry the eight, Edward the first, queene Mary, and Q. Elizabeth. All these he serued faithfully, & of them was greatly fanoyed. This man in his time passed many offices, for in the time of the late K. Henry the 8. he enioyed successiue the roomes of maister of the wards & liueries, controller, treasurer, lord chamberlaine, and lord steward of the kings howthold, and lastly, lord treasurer of England in the time of king Edward the first, which he continued about one and twenty yeares: he was aduanced to sundry honours for by the said king Henry the eight he was created lord Sent-Iohn of Basing, and knight of the garter, and by king Edward the first he was aduanced to be earle of Wiltshire, and marques of Winchester. Himselfe did see the children of his childrens children growne to the number of one hundred and three: a rare blessing giuen by God to men of his calling.

Pikemen &  
shot trained  
vp in Londō.

The five and twenty and fire and twenty of March, by the commandement of the queenes maiesty her counsell, the citizens of London assembling at their seuerall halls, the maisters chose out the most likely and aduise persons of euery their companies, to the number of three thousand, to whom they appointed to be pikemen and shot, the pikemen were forthwith armed in faire cossets and other furniture, according therunto: the gunners had euery of them his caliuier, with the furniture, and murrians on their heads. To these were appointed diuerse valiant captaines, who to traine them by in warlike seates, mustred them thise euery weeke, sometimes in the artillery yard, teaching the gunners to handle their peeces sometimes at the Hiles end, and in Saint Georges field, teaching them to skirmish. In the which skirmish on the Hiles end the tenth day of Aprill, one of the gunners of the goldsmithes company, was shot in the side with a peece of a scowring sticke left in one of the caliuers, whereof he died, and was buried the twelfth of Aprill in Saint Pauls churchyard, all the gunners marching from the Hiles end in battell ray, shot off their caliuers at his graue.

Muste at  
Greene-  
wich.

On May day they mustred at Grenewich before the queenes maiesty, where they shewed many warlike seates, but were hindered by the weather, which was all day showing, they returned that night to London, and were discharged on the next morrow.

Earles of  
Essex and  
Lincolne  
created.

The fourth of May, Water Deuereux, lord Ferrers of Chartley, and viscount of Hereford, was created earle of Essex: And Edward Fines lord Clinton and Say, high Admirall of England, was created earle of Lincolne, at Grenewich.

Barons  
made.

The eight of May, the parliament began at Westminster: and that same day in the parliament by the Queenes maiesties writs, sir Henry Compton knight, lord Compton in the Hoke, sir Henry Cheyny knight, lord of Tudington, sir William Pawlet knight of Basing, and sir Henry Norrice knight, lord of Ricote, were

were called barons into the higher house. In this parliament, for so much as the whole realme of England was exceedingly pestered with rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars, by means wherof daily happened divers horrible murders, theses, and other great outrages, it was enacted, that all persons above the age of foureteene yeres, being taken begging, vagrant, and wandring misorderly, should be apprehended, whipped, and burnt through the grille of the right eare, with a hot yron of one inch compasse for the first time so taken.

Rogues burned through the eare.

The foure and twentieth of May, Martin Bullocke was hanged on a gibbet by the well with two buckets in Bishops gate streete of London, for robbing and most shamefully murdering of a merchant named Arthur Hall, in the parsonage of Saint Martine by the said well. This Martin had procured the said Arthur Hall to come to the said parsonage, to buy of him certaine plate: but after the said Arthur had well viewed the same, he said, this is none of your plate, it hath docto Gardeners marke, and I know it to be his: that is true said Martin Bullocke, but he hath appointed me to sell it, &c. After this talke, whiles the said Arthur was weighing the plate, the same Martin fetcht out of the kitchin a thicke washing beetle, and coming behind him, strake the said Arthur on the head, that he felled him with the first stroke, and then strake him againe, and after tooke the said Arthurs dagger, and sticked him, and with his knife cut his throat, and after would haue trussed him in a Danske chest, but the same was too short: wherupon he tumbled him downe a paire of staires, and after thinking to haue buried him in the cellar, his legges being broken with the first fall, and stiffe, he could not draw him downe the cellar staires being winding, wherefore he cut off his legges with an hatchet, and in the end, trussed him with straw in a dytch, and saying it was his apparell and bookes, caused the same to be carried to the waters side, and so shipped to Ric. But as God would haue it, there was suspicion gathered against the murder, wherby he was examined before Alderman Branch one of the Sheriffes of London, but seemed so innocent and guiltlesse in that case, that one Robert Gee a cloth-worker, being of good credit, undertooke for his fourth-comming: wherupon Bullocke slept away, first to Westminster, where taking boat, he was rowed by the riuer westward till he came to Oakingham in the forest 8. miles beyond the towne of Windsoze: from whence (by Gods providence) he came backe againe unto London, where he lodged at the red lion in Holborne. In the meane time Robert Gee, vpon knowledge had that Bullocke was slept asleepe, was not only had in suspicion, but also committed to ward, albeit so, as he had libertie to send abroad such as should make sure after Bullocke, & amongst other, one of his seruants was sent to Ric, after the dytch, & coming thither, the same dytch was opened, where the mangled corps of Hall was found, wherby the truth of the matter came to light, & by the will of God, Bullocke was at the same time discouered at the place in Holborne afore mentioned, & there apprehended, receiued, as ye haue heard, due punishment for his wicked fact.

Martin Bullocke hanged.

The 26. of May, the right honorable earle of Lincolne, departed from London toward France ambassador, being accompanied with the lords Gregory lord Fines lord Dacres, the lord Rob. Rich, the lord Talbot, the lord Sands, and Hen. lord Clinton, sir Arthur Chamberowne, sir Ierom Bowes, and sir Edw. Hastings

Earle of Lincolne ambassador into France.

ffff

knights,

knightes, with diuers other gentlemen who taking ship at Douer, cut ouer to Bo-loigne, where they were very honorably receiued, and from thence conueyed by iourneis to Paris, where they were lodged in a house of the kings named le Chateau de Loure, being attended on by the kings officers. Fiue daies after, they went to the king at a house called Maduill, where the king with his two brethren, the admirall, and the most part of the nobles of France met them a distance from the place, and brought them into the house, where they dined, and remained till Sunday following, from whence the king and his nobles, with the nobles of England came to Paris: the king, his two brethren, & our ambassadoz riding in one coach together, and the Nobles of England and France being so placed, also in coaches came to the said Castell of Loure, and there dined. After dinner, the king, our Ambassadour, with the Nobilitie of both realmes, went to a Church named Saint Germaine, where the French king, his brethren, and nobilitie heard euensong, the noble men of England withdrawing them into a chappell, till euensong was done, were then fetched thence by the nobles of France, to the king and his brethren that awaited their coming, where was confirmed the league (which had bene concluded at Blois the nineteenth of Aprill) deputies being there for the French party, Francis Memorencie, Reignold Biragne, Sebastian de Lanbepine and Paul de Foix. And for the Queene of England, sir Thomas Smith, and maister Walshingham ambassadoys. This being done, they departed without the walles of Paris, to a garden of pleasure, where they supped: after supper the king departed to his place of Maduill, and the nobles of England to the castell of Loure. On monday the admirall feasted the Nobles of England. On tuesday the Duke of Anio<sup>w</sup> the kings brother: and on wednesday the Duke of Alanson his younger brother, and so passed in banquetting and feasting, with rich gifts on both parts.

On friday, the nobles of England tooke leaue of the king: and on Sunday came to S. Dennis, and after to Boloigne, where they tooke ship, and returned into England the fourth of July.

The Duke of  
Norfolk  
beheaded.

The second of June in the morning, betweene the houres of seven and eight of the clocke Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolk was beheaded on a scaffold vpon the Tower hill.

French am-  
bassadors.

About the ninth of June, Francis Duke of Memorencie chiefe Marshall of France gouernour and lieutenant of the Isle of France, generall vnto Charles the ninth king of France, and Paule de Foix of the priuie councill to the said king, and Bertrande de Saligners, lord de la Mothesenalon, knights of the order of Saint Michael, ambassadoys for the same king, arrived at Douer.

The 14. day they shot London bridge towards Sommerhit house at the Strand, where they were lodged.

League with  
France con-  
firmed at  
Westmin-  
ster.

The 15. day being Sunday, the said ambassadoys repaired to the White hall, where they were honorably receiued of the Queenes maiestie, with her nobility, and there in her graces chappell, about one of the clocke in the after noone, the articles of treatie, league, or confederacie and sure friendship concluded at Blois the nineteenth of Aprill, as is aforesaid, betwixt the Queenes maiestie, and the French king, being read, the same was by her maiestie and his ambassadoys confirmed, to be observed and kept, without inuocation or violation, &c. The rest



of that day with great part of the night following was spent in great triumph, with sumptuous banquets.

The 18. of June, the feast of Saint George was holden at Windsor, where S. Georges the french ambassadours were royally feasted. and Francis Duke of Memorycy was created knight of the most honorable order of the garter

S Georges  
feast at  
Windsor.

The 28. day of June, the aforesaid ambassadours departed from London towards France.

The 14. of June, Thom L. Wharton deceased in his house of Chancery row at Westminster. he 2. baron of his name, leaving behind him his son.

The 12. of July, the Queenes maiestie at White hall made sir William Cecil lord of Burghley, lord high treasurer of England: lord William Howard baron of Effingham, late lord chamberlaine, lord privie seale: the earle of Sussex lord chamberlaine: sir Thomas Smith principall secretarie: and Christopher Hatton esquire capitaine of the guard, &c.

Lord treasur-  
er, lord pri-  
uy seale, lord  
chamberlain  
with other  
officers.  
Earle of  
Northum-  
berland be-  
headed.

Thomas Percie earle of Northumberland, late of Topcliffe, who had bene before attainted by parliament of high treason, as being one of the principall conspirators in the late rebellion, since fled into Scotland, as is aforesaid, being there taken, was sent to Barwicke in the moneth of July, and deliuered to the lord Hunsdon then capitaine of gouernor of that towne, and was now on the two and twentieth day of August beheaded at Poyle, about two of the clocke in the afternoone, on a new scaffold set up for that purpose in the market place.

In this month of August sir Thomas Smith one of the Queenes maiesties privie counsell, carefully tending the reformation of Ireland, sent his sonne Thomas Smith esquire thither, with a colonie of Englishmen, to inhabite the Ardes in Ulster.

English men  
sent to Ulster  
in Ireland.

About the beginning of the moneth of October, the queenes maiestie sent down to the towne of Portsmouth, the honorable Robert Dudley earle of Leicester, & sir Francis Knowles knight, treasurer of her household, to set in hand with fortifications of that towne and countrie neare adioyning, against the inuasion of the French or other, if the same should happen to be attempted by arrivall there.

The towne  
of Portes-  
mouth re-  
paired.

The 18. of November in the morning, was scene a starre northward very bright and cleare in the constellation of Cassiopeia, at the backe of her chaire, which with three chiefe fixed stars of the said constellation, made a Geometricall figure losenge-wise, of the learned men called Rombus: this star in bignesse at the first appearing seemed bigger then Iupiter, and not much lesse then Venus when she seemeth greatest: also the said starre neuer changing his place, was carried about with the daily motion of heauen, as all fixed starres commonly are, and so continued (by little and little, to the eye appearing lesse) for the space of almost sixteene moneths, at what time it was so small, that rather thought by exercise of oft viewing might imagine the place, than any eye could iudge the presence of the same: and one thing is herein chiefly to be noted, that by the learned skill and consent of the best and most expert Mathematicians, which observed the state, proprietie, and other circumstances belonging to the same starre, it was found to haue bene in place celestiallyl farre above the moone, otherwise then ever any comet hath bene scene, or naturally can appeare. Therefore it is supposed, that

Ans. 15.  
A strange  
star appea-  
red.

the signification thereof is directed purposely and specially to some matter not natural, but celestiall, or rather supercelestiall, so strange, as from the beginning of the world neuer was the like.

Earle of Dar  
by deceased.

The 24. of Nouember, Edward earle of Darby, lord Stanley, and Strange, of Knocking, Lord and gouernor of the ile of Man, knight of the noble order of the garter, and one of the Queenes maiesties priue counsell, deceased at his house called Latham in Lancashire. His life and death deseruing commendation, & creating memorie to be imitated, was such as followeth: His fidelitie vnto 2. kings and 2. queenes in dangerous times, and great rebellions, in which time, and awayes (as cause serued) he was lieutenant of Lancashire and Cheshire, & lately offered 10000. men to the queenes maiestie of his own charge for the suppression of the last rebellion. His godly disposition to his tenants, neuer forcing any seruice at their hands, but due payment of their rent: his liberalitie to strangers, and such as shewed themselves gratefull to him: his famous house-keeping, 220. li. checkroll neuer discontinuing the space of 42. yeares: his feeding especially of aged persons twice a day 60. and od, besides all comers, thrice a weeke appointed for his dealing dayes, & euery Good-friday these 35. yeares one with another, 2700. with meate, drinke, money, and money worth. There was neuer gentleman or other that waited in his seruice, but had allowance from him to haue as well waiges as otherwise for horse and man. His yearely portion for the dispences of his house 4000. pounds: his sunning in setting bones dislocated or broke: his deliuery of his George and seale to the lord Strange, with exhortation that he might keepe it so unpotted in fidelitie to his prince as he had: and his ioy, that he dyed in the queenes fauour: his ioyfull parting this world, his taking leaue of all his seruants, by shaking of hands, and his remembrance to the last day. He was buried at Dunelm kirke on the fourth of December, in most honorable manner.

Hall & Wil-  
kinson exe-  
cuted.

The 28. of Nouember, Iohn Hall gentleman, and Oswald Wilkinson late of Porke, and gailor of Porke castell (being before arraigned & condemned of treason) were drawn from the tower of London to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

Great frost  
and a sharpe  
winter.

This yeare a great and sharpe frost almost continually lasted from before the feast of all Saints, till after the feast of Epiphanie of our Lord, with sometimes great and deepe snowes, and sometimes rains, which freezed as fast as the same fell to the ground, wherethrough at Wrotham in Kent, and many other places, the armes and boughs of trees, being overcharged with ice, brake off and fell from the stocks of the same trees: also the wind continued north and east, till after the Ascension day, with sharpe frosts and snowes, whereby followed a late spring.

1573.  
Lord Priue  
seale decea-  
sed.  
Erle of Wor-  
cester sent  
into France.

The twelfth of Januarie, William lord Howard baron of Effingham, lord priue seale, knight of the noble order of the garter, and one of the priue counsell, deceased at Hampton court.

The eighteenth of Januarie, William lord Sommer set earle of Worcester, began his iourney towards France to the chusing of the kings daughter there. in stead of the Queenes maiestie of England, who sent with him a font of gold for that purpose, weighing 326. ounces. The said earle with many of his company were robbed vpon y sea by pirates of much of their baggage & 3. or 4. of their men slaine.

aine. In France he and his traine were honorably receiued. At the christening he gaue the child to name Elizabeth, & returned into England the 27. of February.

In the moneth of February, through sundry haynous complaints, brought to the Quene's maiesty and her counsell, of pirates that kept the narrow seas doing many robberies, as also the robbing of the earle of Worcester (as is aforesayd) her highnesse, by the aduise of her honourable counsell, tooke order with the lord admirall of England, that he should send to the seas ships and men to scoure the narrow seas, and to apprehend so many pyrats ships as might be met with: and for the better doing thereof, it pleased her maiesty to send one of her owne ships named the Swallow, to be the admirall, vnder the charge of William Holstocke of London esquire, controller of her highnesse ships, who had with him the Gillian, the barker Garret, and the barker of Parmouth, and 360. able mari-ners, gunners and souldiers in the sayd three ships, and one barker which scow-ered the narrow seas, from the northfore-land as farre westwards as Falmouth in Cornewall, and tooke twenty ships and barkes of sundry nations, viz. English, French, and Flemings but all pirates and in fashon of war. He apprehended in those ships and barkes to the number of 900. men of all nations, and sent them to ward, to Sandwiche, Douer, Wlight, and Portsmouth, whereof three of them that robbed the earle of Worcester, were shortly after executed at Wlight: also the sayd William Holstocke did rescue and take from the abovesayd pirats ships fifteene other marchants ships, laden with marchandise, that were their prizes, be-ting of sundry nations, & set at liberty the sayd fifteene marchants ships & goods, which done, he returned to Portsmouth, and there ended his voyage in March.

Peter Ramus in his commentaries of the wars of Fraunce writeth thus. The earle of Worcester passing into Fraunce, certaine Frenchmen and Flemings set vpon him, tooke from him one of his ships, and killed certaine of his men: where- vpon the Queene of England taking displeasure, sent the lord Admirall (saith he) wherein he mistooke the matter, for maister William Holstocke was sent (as is aforesayd) who set vpon all the ships French and Flemings, tooke and caried a- way what so came to hand, so that twenty of Montgomeries ships were lost, who was going to Rochell with the number of fiftie ships well furnished out of En- gland, with money there borrowed (but neuer repayed) thus his naue being di- minished of those twentie ships, when he sawe the kings naue neare to Rochell, he directed his course another way, landed at Bel Isle, and tooke both the Isle and Castle.

The fourth of March, a man was hanged in chaines in Saint Georges field beyond Southwarke of London, for murdering the gailor of Hortham in the same field.

The 17. of March deceased Reinold Grey of Ruthen, earle of Kent at Berne- ley, and was buried at Saint Giles without Creeplegate.

About the same time died Edmond lord Chandois.

The 25. of March being Wednesday in Easter weeke, and the feast of the An- nunciatio of our Lady, George Browne cruelly murdered two honest men neare unto shooters hill in Kent, the one of them was a wealthy marchant of London, named George Sanders, the other Iohn Beane of Woolwich: which murder was

Earle of Worcester robbed on the sea.

Pyrats on the West seas.

Pyrats exe- cuted.

Peter Ra- mus.

A man han- ged in Saint Georges field.

Earle of Kē deceased.

George San- ders mur- dered at sho- ters hill.

committed in manner as followeth.

On Tuesday in Easter weeke (the foure and twentieth of March) the sayd George Browne receiuing secret intelligece by letter from mistresse Anne Drewry, that maister Sanders should lodge the same night at the house of one maister Barnes in Woolwich, and from thence go on foote to Saint Mary Cray the next morning, lay in waite for him by the way, a little from Shooters hill, and there slue both him and Iohn Beane, seruant to maister Barnes: but Iohn Beane hauing ten or eleuen wounds, and being left for dead, by Gods prouidence reuiuied againe, and creeping away on all foure, was found by an old man and his maiden, & conueyed to Woolwich, where he gaue euident markes of the murtherer.

Immediately vpon the deed doing, Browne sent mistresse Drewry word thereof by Roger Clement (among them called trusty Roger) he himselfe repaired forthwith to the court at Greenwich, and anon after him came thither the report of the murther also. Then departed he thence vnto London, and came to the house of mistresse Drewry, where, though he spake not personally with her, after conference had with her seruant trusty Roger, she provided him twenty pounds that same day, for the which she layd certaine plate of her owne, and of mistresse Sanders to gage. On the next morrow being thursday (hauing intelligence, that Browne was sought for) they sent him five pounds more by the same Roger, warning him to shift for himselfe by flight, which thing he foresawed not to do: neuertheless the lords of the queenes maiesties counsell, caused so speedy and narrow search to be made for him, that vpon the eight and twentieth of the same moneth, he was apprehended in a mans house of his owne name at Rochester, and being brought backe againe to the court, was examined by the counsell, to whom he confessed the deed, as you haue heard, and that he had oftentimes before pretended and sought to do the same, by the instigation of the sayd mistresse Drewry, who had promised to make a marriage betwene him and mistresse Sanders (whom he seemed to loue excessively) neuertheless he protested (though vntuly) that mistresse Sanders was not priuy nor consenting thereunto. Vpon his confession he was arraigned at the the kings bench in Westminster hall the eighteenth of Aprill, where he acknowledged himselfe guilty, and was condemned as principall of the murder, according to which sentence, he had iudgement, and was executed in Smithfield on Monday the 20 of Aprill, at which time also vntuly (as she her selfe confessed afterwards) he laboured by all means to cleare mistresse Sanders of committing euill of her body with him, as also of procuring or consenting to the murther of her husband, and then beginning to sing a Psalm, O Lord turne not away thy face, &c. he flung himselfe belides the ladder, and so shortned his owne life: he was after hanged by in chaines neare vnto the place where he had done the fact.

In the meane time mistresse Drewrie an her man being examined, as well by their owne confessions, as by falling out of the matter (and also by Brownes appachment thought culpable) were committed to ward. And after mistresse Sanders being deliuered of child, and churched (for at the time of her husbands death she looked presently to lye downe) was vpon mistresse Drewries mans confession, and other great likelihoods, likewise committed to the Tower, and

George  
Browne han-  
ged in Smith  
field.



on Wednesday the sixt of May arraigned with mistrisse Drewrie at the Guild hall, the effect of whose inditement was, that they by a letter writtten had bene procurers of the sayd murther, and knowing the murther done, had by money and otherwise releued the murderer: whereunto they pleaded not guilty, howbeit, they were both condemned as accessaries to mistris Sanders death, and executed in Smithfield the thirteenth of May, being Wednesday in Whitson weeke, at which time they both confessed themselves guiltie of the fact. Trustie Roger mistrisse Drewries man was arraigned on Friday the eight of May, and being there condemned as accessary, was executed with his mistris at the time and place aforesayd. Not long after, Anthony Browne, brother to the fornamed George Browne, was for notable felonies conveyed from Newgate to Forke, and there hanged.

Anne Sanders, Anne Drewrie, and trustie Roger hanged.

Anthony Browne hanged at Yorke

The tenth of Aprill, seven pirats, which (among other) had bene taken on the north seas, were led from Southwarke to Wapping, and five of them were there hanged: the other two had their pardon at the gallies.

Pirats hanged at Wapping.

The 17. of Aprill, a chandlers wife without Aldersgate of London, who had practised her husbands death by poisoning and other wayes, was set on the pillorie in Cheape, with three other women, who had bene of her counsell, two of them were with her there whipped.

Four women on the pillorie.

This yeare the Queenes maiesty of England, being moued by the Regent of Scotland, in the behalfe of the young king of Scots her cousin, sent a power of 1500. Englishmen to the siege of Edenborough castle, sir William Drewry knight marshall of Barwoike, to be generall of her forces there, with captaines as follooweth, sir Francis Russell knight, captaine Reade of Barwoike, and these folloowing also, captaine Yaxley, captaine Wood, captaine Brickwell, captaine Pike-man, captaine Gamme, captaine Cace, captaine Carew, captaine Erington poynt marshall, captaine Atoll, captaine Sterlee captaine of the pioners, and captaine Barton also of the pioners. Diuerse other gentlemen also went thither to serue of their owne free wils, as sir George Carie knight, sir Henry Lea knight, maister Thomas Cicill maister Michael Carie, maister Henrie Carie, maister William Knolles, maister Thomas Sutton, maister Cotton, maister Kelway, maister Diar, maister Tilney, maister William Killigrew, maister William Selby, and other. Sir William Drewry with the captaines, gentlemen, and number of souldiers before mentioned, passed from Barwoike to Lieth, from whence on the 25. of Aprill they marched on to Edenborough, entered the towne, and the same day summoned the castell in forme as follooweth:

Aide sent in to Scotland against the castle of Edenborough.

Sir William Kirkaudie, sometime of Gange knight, for as much as the Queenes maiesty your soueraigne lady, upon the earnest request of her deare cousin the king of Scots, your soueraigne lord, made to her highnesse by his regent, nobility, & states of this realme, after all good meanes vled to haue reduced you to dutifull obedience of his authoritie by treaty, which hitherto you haue not duly harkened vnto, to the onely hinderance of the vniuersall peace in this realme, by withholding that his highnesse castle, meaning as it seemeth, to reserue the same for a receptacle of foraine forces, to the manifest daungers both of this realme and of my soueraignes, and therefore necessarie to remoue so perillous a daunger to

Thomas Churchyard.

both the realmes, for which consideration her maiesty hath sent her aide & succors of men ordnance and munition, binder my charge & leading, for the repugnation & recovery of the sayd castle, to the said kings use and behalfe, and therfore according to her maiesties commandement and commission, this shall be in due manner to warne, requite, and sommon you, that you render & deliuer the sayd castle, with the whole ordnance artillery, munitions, iewels, household-stuffe, and such other implements within the same, to me & the use and behalfe of the king your soveraigne, & his regent in his name, immediately after this my letter of sommons, or knowledge of the same, shall come to you: which if you obey, as of duty you ought, then shall I in her maiesties name interpone my seife to trauell with the regent, counsell, and nobility here for the safety of your liues, &c. Otherwise if you continue in your former obstinacy, abiding the canon, then no further to looke for grace or favor, but you and the rest within that castle to be pursued to the uttermost, and holden as enemies to her maiesty, your owne soveraigne and country. Given at Edenborough by me sir William Drewry knight, generall of her maiesties forces now in Scotland, this 25. of April, 1573.

The Lord Grange captaine of the castle, notwithstanding this sommons, refused utterly to yeeld the castle, who thereupon received such answer from the generall, as stood not to his contentation. Whereupon were the pioners set in hand to cast trenches, and to raise mounts in places convenient to plant the ordnance upon. And then began the siege of the castle in five places, where were erected five mounts. The first was for the regent, called the kings mount. The second for sir William Drewry generall there. The third was governed by sir George Carie. The fourth by sir Henry Lea. The fifth by maister Thomas Sutton maister of the ordnance in the north part of England. There was at this siege as is reported 1500. Englishmen, and of Scots five hundred, or rather 1500. there was also one with another peeces of artillery 30. to wit, 6. canons nine halfe canons, nine culverings, sixe sakers. They within spared not to bestow such as they had, as well at the pioners as souldiers, in so much that diuerse were hurt, and some slaine, before the trenches and mounts might be brought to perfection, but they within escaped not free, especially after that the trenches & mounts were brought in state to defend the assailants, who watching and warding in the trenches, answered them within the castle very roughly. On the 17. of May began the battery of the castle, so that there were thirty canons shot off against the same, and so well bestowed at Davids tower, that by the ruines thereof then and after, the force of the English canons were easie to be scene. The 18. 19. and 20. of May, the canons and demy canons were not idle, but the one and twenty the whole battery began on each side the castle from the trenches and mounts very hotly, & still they within ceased not to make answer againe with their artillery, killing and hurting diuers both English and Scots, but such was the diligence of the English gunners, that they displaced the ordnance in the castle, and strooke one of their chiefe canons iust in the mouth, whereby the same was broken in peeces. The 26. of May, the assault was given at seven of the clocke in the morning to the Spurre, which by the hardy manhood of the assailants was won, and was no sooner entered by the Englishmen, but that the generals ensigne was set and fixed upon the front  
and

and top thereof, to the great discomfort of them within the castell. In the meane time whilst these were appointed to give the assault thus to the Spurre, there were certaine English men and Scots commaunded to make a countenance of an assault at the west side of the castell, whereby those that assaulted the Spurre might the more easily obtaine their purpose, but they rashly adventuring further than they had in commaundment, were beaten backe and repulsed, with 28. or 30. of their company slaine and hurt. The same day toward night, they within the castell by a drumme demaunded parley, which being graunted, with assurance of all hostilitie from that houre vnto the 28. of May, the lord Peterroe was let downe by a rope from the castell, and afterward the lord Grange himselfe capitaine of the castell, and Robert Melvin came likewise downe to talke with the Generall, and such other as were appointed to accompanie him: hereupon at length, to wit, the said 28. of May, the castell was surrendered into the hands of sir William Drewrie, and so it rested in his possession for the time, and his ensigne was set vp and spread during the same time in sundrie places of the castell, and afterwards to the great honour of England, by him it was deliuered vnto the vse of the king of Scots, and part of the spoile of the castell was given to the soldiers, the canons and artillerie, with certaine other instruments, left to the king. If the English men by force had taken it, it was decreed that they should haue had the whole spoile except the artillerie, & so should haue enioyed it by the space of three daies.

Edinburgh  
castell yeel-  
ded to the  
Englishmen.

Causes of deliuerie of the castell were these :

1 Lacke of water: the well within the castell was stopped and defiled by the ruines of the castell : the other well without the castell could not serue them, for that there was a mount made to hinder them. Another water there was which was unknowne to them which were without, and was taken from them when the Spur of the castell was taken, out of the which they were wont to haue a pint a day for every souldier.

2 Diuerse sickes.

3 Diuerse hurt.

4 Not many to maintaine the castell, which had no space to take any rest they were splitted and overwearing.

5 Diuerse diuided in opinion.

6 Some were no souldiers.

7 No aide was to be looked for.

The 16. of June, the prisoners were deliuered by the said sir William Drewrie in presence of sundry Scots and Englishmen, vnto the regent, and that done, the same day the said sir William Drewrie with his power departed toward Barwicke. The names of the prisoners were these, sir William Kerkaudie lord of Grange, and Capitaine of the castell of Euenborough, the lord Hume, the lord Ledington Secretarie, the Lord of Peterroe constable of the castle, the countesse of Arguile, the ladie of Ledington, the ladie of Grange, with others: in all to the number of men, one hundred fiftie foure, women thirtie foure, boyes ten.

The twentieth of June, betwene the houres of one and two of the clocke in the afternoone,

Haile in  
Northamp-  
tonshire.

afternoone, a great tempest of haile & raine happened at Toucester in Northamp-  
tonshire, wherethrough fire houses in that towne were bozne downe, and four-  
teene more soze perished with the waters which rose of that tempest, the haile-  
stones were square and six inches about: one child was there drowned, and ma-  
ny sheepe and other cattell, which when the water was fallen, many of them  
were lying on the high hedges, where the waters had left them.

Thomas  
Woodhouse.

The 16. of June, Thomas Woodhouse a priest of Lincolnshire, who had  
lien long prisoner in the Fleete, was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, and  
there condemned of high treason, who had iudgment to be hanged and quartered,  
and was executed at Tyborne the 19. of June.

Earle of Es-  
sex and the  
lord Rich  
with other  
sailed into  
Ireland.

The 16. of August, Walter earle of Essex, accompanied with Robert lord  
Rich, and diuers other gentlemen, embarked themselves in severall ships at Lier-  
pool, and the wind sitting very well, tooke their voyage towards Ireland. The  
earle after many and great dangers on the sea, at length wan Copemans Islands,  
from whence in a pinnesse of captaine Percies he was brought safe to Knockfer-  
gus. The lord Rich with the like daungers landed at castell Kilslicke, where being  
met by captaine Malby, maister Smith, and maister Moore Pensioners, was co-  
ducted to Inch abbey maister Malbies house, where he had in a readinesse on the  
morrow morning an hundred and fiftie horsemen for their safegard to Knockfer-  
gus, beside fiftie kernes which went a foot through the woods: there was amongst  
these a thirtie bowes with a bagpipe, the rest had darts. Sir Brian Mac-Phelin  
had praped the country, and taken away what was to be carried or dyuen, but  
on the first of September he came to Knockfergus to the earle of Essex, and there  
made his submission: 2 number of kine were esteemed 30. M. beside sheep & swine.

After him Ferdorogh Macgillasticke the blind Scots son, Roze, Oge, Mac-  
willine did the like, and diuers other sent their messengers to the earle, to signifie  
that they were at his lordships disposition, as the baron of Dongarroto, Conde-  
nel, Odonel, and the captaine of Kilulto. The earle of Essex hauing the coun-  
trie of Clamboy and other.

Earle of Es-  
sex captaine  
General of  
Ulster in  
Ireland.

The Queenes maiestie of England directed her letters to the lord deputie of  
Ireland, willing him to make by commission the earle of Essex captaine General  
of the Irish nation in the prouince of Ulster, and to diuide the countrey woon,  
Clamboy and elsewhere, &c.

Peter Bur-  
chet wound-  
ed maister  
Hawkins.

The 11. of October, Peter Burchet gentleman (of the middle Temple) with  
his dagger, suddenly assailed, cruelly wounded, and meant to haue murdered a  
seruiceable gentleman named Iohn Hawkins esquire, as he with sir William  
Winter and another gentleman rode towards Westminster, in the high streete  
neare to the Strand beyond the Temple bar of London, for which fact the said  
Burchet being apprehended and committed to the tower, was after examined co-  
cerning the fact, who answered that he tooke the said maister Hawkins for ano-  
ther gentleman, to wit, sir Christopher Hatton: and being further examined, he  
was found to hold certaine erroneous opinions, for the which he was sent to the  
Zollards tower, from thence being called into the Consistorie of Pauls  
church, before the right reuerend father Edwin bishop of London, and other,  
and by them examined, he stood in his opinions, till the sentence of death,

Peter Bur-  
chet found  
to be an he-  
retike.



as an heretike was readie to haue bene pronounced against him on the fourth of November: but through the earnest perswasions of diuers learned men, who tooke great paines in that matter, it was said he renounced, forswore, and abiured his opinions for erroneous and damnable, promising neuer to returne to them, and also willingly to do and performe all such penance as the bishop his Domaric should impose him, but nothing was done, wherefore on the ninth of November by commandement of the Counsell, the said Peter Burcher was remooued from the Tollards tower to the Tower of London, where on the next morrow about noone, whilst one of the twaine that had by appointment kept him company was gone to some, and locked the doore after him, leaving the other with him, called Hugh Longworth, who stood at a window reading in the Bible, the said Burcher walking vp and downe in the chamber, tooke a bullets end out of the fire, and knocked the said Longworth on the head, and left not till he had stricken him starke dead: and then drawing him behinde the chamber doore, he awaited the coming vp of the other, likewise to haue dispatched him, but the other opening the doore, and missing his fellowe from the window where he left him: taking good regard, espied him lying behinde the doore, which he clapped to, ran downe for more helpe, and returning found his fellowe murdered as is aforesaid shewed. For the which fact on the next morrow, he was arraigned and condemned at Oldeshemster, and from thence returned to Somerslet house at the Strand, where he remained that night. And the next morrow being the 12. of November, he was brought out to a gibbet, set vp for that purpose, nigh the place where he wounded maister Hawkins, he had no speech, nor shewed signe of repentance, but was by force and strength of men partly drawing, partly boine and thrust vp to the gibbet, where after his right hand being stricken off, and nayled to the gibbet, he was hanged.

Peter Burcher abiured his heresie. Peter Burcher submitted himselfe to do penance as it was said.

Peter Burcher killeth his keeper.

Peter Burcher hanged.

This yeere about Lammes, wheate was sold at London for three shillings the bushell, but shortly after it was raised to foure shillings, five shillings, six shillings, and before Christmas to a noble and seven shillings, which so continued long after: beefe was sold for twenty pence and two and twentie pence the stone, and all other flesh and white meats at an excessive price, all kinde of salt fish very deere, as five herrings two pence, &c. yet great plentie of freish fish, and oft times the same very cheape: bay salt at three shillings the bushell, &c. All this dearth notwithstanding (thanks be giuen to God) there was no want of any thing to him that wanted not money.

An. reg. 16.  
1574.

Dearth without scarcitie.

The fourth of Aprill being Palme Sunday, there was taken saying of masse in the lord Morleies house within Aldgate of London, one Alban Dolmas priest, and the lady Morley with her children and diuers others, were also taken hearing of the said masse. There was also taken the same day and howe for saying masse at the lady Giffords in Trinitie lane, one Oliver Heywood priest, and for hearing of the said masse the said lady Gifford, with diuers other gentlewomen. There was also taken at the same instant in the lady Brownes house in Coto lane for saying masse, one Thomas Heywood priest, and one Iohn Cooper priest, with the lady Browne: and diuers other were likewise taken, being hearers of the said masse. All which persons were for the same offences indicted, convicted, and had

Priests saying masse apprehended.

the

the law according to the statute in that case provided. There was also found in their severall chappels, divers Latine bookes, beades, images, palmes, chalcres, crosse vestments pires, pates, and such like.

Peter Ramus

Countie Montgomerie was taken in Roymanrie in the castell of Donfro, on the 27. of May.

A monstrous fish.

The ninth of July, at five of the clocke at night, in the isle of Thanet besides Ramelgate in the parish of Saint Peter vnder the clift, a monstrous fish or whale of the sea did shoot himselfe on shore, where for want of water, beating himselfe on the sands, he died about sixe of the clocke in the next morning, before which time he roved, and was heard more then a mile on the land. The length of this fish was two and twentieth yards, the neather iaw twelue foote the opening, one of his eyes being taken out of his head, was more then sixe hogies in a cart could draw, a man stood byright in the place from whence the eye was taken, the thickest from the backe whereon he lay, to the top of his belly (which was upward) was fourteen foote, his taile of the same breadth, betwene his eyes twelue foote, three men stood byright in his mouth, some of the ribs were sixteen foot long, his tounge was sixteen foot long, his liuer two cart loades, into his nostrils any man might haue crept: the oile being boyled out of the head was parmacetic, the oile of his body was whitish, and sweet of tast.

Obsequie at Paules for the French king.

The sixteenth of August, a solemne obsequie was kept in Saint Pauls church at London for Charles the ninth king of Fraunce, who being poisoned, deceased on the thirtieth of May last before passed.

Peter Ramus Agnes Bridges and Rachel Pinder at Paules crosse for counterfeiting to be punished.

The sixteenth of August being sonday, Agnes Bridges a maid about the age of twenty yeares, and Rachel Pinder a wench about the age of 11. or 12. yeares, who both of them had counterfeited to be possessed by the diuell, (whereby they had not onely maruellously deluded many people, both men and women, but also diuers such persons as otherwise seemed to be of good wit and understanding) stood before the preacher at Paules crosse, where they acknowledged their hypocriticall counterfeiting, with penitent behauiours, requiring forgiveness of God and the world, and the people to pray for them. Also their severall examinations and confessions were there openly read by the preacher, and afterwards published in print, for the further posteritie hereafter to beware of the like deceiuers.

A lad of 18. yeares old drowned in a chanell at London.

The fourth of September in the afternoone, such a storme of raine happened at London, as the like of long time could not be remembred, wherethrough the channels of the citie suddenly rising, ranne with such forcible course towards the common shores, that a lad of the age of 18. yeares, minding to haue lept over the chanell neare vnto Downegate, was borne ouer with the streame, and by the same carried from the conduit there towards the Thamis, with such a swiftnesse, that no man with stauces or otherwaies could stay him, till he came against a cart wheele & stood in the water gate, afoze which time he was drowned & stark dead.

Termes adiourned, Two tides in one houre.

Michaellmas terme, which had bene adiourned by proclamation, began at Westminster on the first of Nouember. The same first day in the morning there happened two great tides at London in the Thamis, the first by course, the other within one houre after, which overflowed the marshes, with many baulks and fillers neare adioyning.

The

The fourteenth of November being Sunday, about midnight following, divers strange impressions of fire and smoke were seen in the air, to proceede forth of a blacke cloud in the north towards the South, which so continued till the next morning that it was day light. The next night following, the heavens from all parts did seeme to burne marvellous ragingly, and over our heads the flames from the horizon round about rising did meete, and there double and roll one in another, as if it had bene in a cleare forname.

Firey impressions.

The eighteenth day at night, were very stormie and tempestuous winds out of the south (I have not knowne the like out of that quarter) especially at midnight till the next morning that it was day light. These are to be received as tokens of Gods wrath readie bent against the world for sinne now abounding, and also of his great mercie, who doth but onely shew the rod wherewith we daily deserve to be beaten.

An. reg. 17.  
Tempest of wind.

This yeare at London after harvest, the price of wheate began by little and little to fall from seven shillings to three shillings the bushell, at which price it stayed little or nothing rising or falling all the yeare after, but bay salt was raised from three shillings to foure, five, and six shillings the bushell, the like whercof had never bene seene or heard within this realme.

Bay salt deare.

The foure and twentieth of Februarie, the feast of S. Marthie, on which day the faire was kept at Cokenburie, a strange thing happened there, for after a flood which was not great, but such as thereby the meadows neare adioyning were covered with water, in the afternoon there came downe the river of Tuon great numbers of flies and beetles, such as in sommer evenings use to strike men in the face, in great heapes, a foot thicke above the water, so that to credible mens judgement, there were seene within a paire of but-lengths of those flies about an hundred quarters. The muls thereabouts were damned by with them for the space of foure daies after, and then were cleansed by digging them out with shovels: from whence they came is yet unknowne, but the day was cold and a hard frost.

1578  
Flies in Februarie, the number strange.

The 26. of Februarie, betweene foure and six of the clocke in the afternoon, great earthquakes happened in the cities of Yorke, Worcester, Gloucester, Bristow, Hereford, and in the countries about, which caused the people to run out of their houses for feare they should have fallen on their heads. In Tewkesburie, Wydon, and other places the dishes fell from the cupboards, and the bookes in mens studies from the shelves. In Dorseton chappell the people being on their knees at Evening prayer, the ground moving, caused them to runne away in great feare that the dead bodies would have risen, or the chappell to have fallen: part of Rotherham castle fell downe, with certaine brick chimnies in gentlemen houses. The bell in the stire hall of Denbigh was caused to toll twice by shaking of the hail &c.

Earthquake.

On Easter day, which was the third of Aprill, about nine of the clocke in the forenoone, was disclosed a congregation of Anabaptists Dutchmen, in a house without the barres of Aldgate at London, whercof seven and twentie were taken and sent to prison, and foure of them bearing fagots recanted at Pauls crosse on the sixteenth day of May, in forme as followeth:

Anabaptists bare fagots at Pauls crosse.

Whereas I I. T. R. H. being seduced by the diuell the spirit of error, and by false

false teachers his ministers, haue saue into certaine most detestable and damnable heresies, namely :

- 1 That Christ tooke not flesh of the substance of the blessed virgine Mary.
- 2 That infants of the faithfull ought not to be baptiz'd.
- 3 That a christian man may not be a magistrate, or beare the sword or office of authority.
- 4 That it is not lawfull for a christian to take an oath.

Now by the grace of God, and through conference with good and learned ministers of Christ his Church, I do vnderstand and acknowledge the same to be most damnable and detestable heresies, and do aske God here before his church, mercy for my sayd former errors, and do forsake them, recant and renounce them, and abiure them from the bottome of my heart, professing that I certainly beleue,

- 1 That Christ tooke flesh of the substance of the blessed virgine Mary.
- 2 That infants of the faithfull ought to be baptiz'd.
- 3 That a christian man may be a magistrate, or beare the sword and office of authority.
- 4 That it is lawfull for a christian to take an oath.

And further I confesse that the whole doctrine and religion established & published in this realme of England as also that which is receiued and preached in the Dutch church here in the city, is sound, true, and according to the word of God, whereunto in all things I submit my selfe, and will most gladly be a member of the sayd Dutch church, from henceforth utterly abandoning and forsaking all and euerie Anabaptistieall error.

Archbishop  
of Canter-  
bury decea-  
sed.

The 17. day of May, about midnight following the right reuerend father in God Matthew Parker, doct<sup>r</sup> of diuinity, archbishop of Canterbury, deceased at Lambeth, and was there honorably buried.

This reuerend father examined thoroughly the English translation of the holy Scriptures, wherein he partly vsed the helpe of his brethren bishops, and other doct<sup>r</sup>s, and caused the same to be newely printed in the largest volume, for the furniture of many churches then wanting. Also making diligent search for the antiquities of the Byttons, and English Barons, to the end those monuments might be carefully kept, he caused them to be well bound and truely covered and such whereof he knew very few examples to be extant (among the which was Matthew Paris, Matthew Florilegus, Thomas Walsingham & other, all which he receiued of my hands) he caused to be printed. The famous palace of his see at Canterbury, first builded by Stephen Langton one of his predecessors, & since by long continuance decayed, and in Thomas Crammers time consumed with fire, he reuined builded, and fully restored with the charges of more then 14.000 £.

He founded a grammar schoole in Kichdale in the county of Lancaster.

To Corpus Christi colledge in Cambridge he procured 13. scholarships, and bare the charges in making and furnishing two chambers for scholars, and the inward library of the same colledge.

Item, he gaue to the outward and inward library of the sayd colledge, a goodly company of printed bookes, and a great number of written bookes, of great antiquity and much value.

Item,



Item, he procured to the sayd colledge, the patronage of Saint Mary Church in London.

Item, he hath founded two fellowships in the sayd Colledge, and procured one Charter of Mortmaine to the sum of 100. l. by yeare.

Item he hath giuen to the same Colledge of silver plate double gilt, 309. ounces, 3. quarters, and surrendered to them a lease with the imprisonment of 14. l. 8. s. yearly for 17. yeares.

Item, 100. l. to the maintenance of a fire in the hall, from Halamas to Cardenas and by his last will and testament, 500. l.

Item, to diuerse schollers chabers within the sayd Colledge, diuerse bedsteds, with sufficient bedding and bookes to remaine for euer.

Item, he hath founded for euer five sermons to be preached in diuerse places of Norfolk every yeare in rogation weeke, and 40. s. to be deuoted at Norwich to the poore and other.

Item, to the city of Norwich one basin and ewer of silver and double gilt 173. ounces.

Item, to the towne of Hattal in Norfolk for euer an annuity of 50. s. to be deuoted to the poore, with a sermon in Rogation weeke.

Item, to Gurnal and Calus Colledge one schollership, with a standing cup & a pot of silver double gilt 55. ounces 3. quarters, and one nest of goblets with a couer silver and gilt with a number of good bookes to their library.

Item, to Trinity hall one schollership, a standing cup and a pot of silver & gilt, 53. ounces, a nest of goblets silver and gilt with a couer, & bookes to their library.

Item, to the Uniuersity library sixtie old auncient written bookes, and 50. printed bookes, &c.

The 21. of May being Whitson-euen, one man and ten women Anabaptists dutch were in the consistory of Pauls condemned to be bent in Smithfield, but after great paines taken with them, onely one woman was conuerted, the other were banished the land.

The 12. of June, stood at Pauls Crosse 5. persons Englishmen of the last term The family of Loue, who there confessed themselves viceroy to detest as well the author of that sect H. N. as all his damnable errors and heresies.

The 22. of July, two Dutchmen Anabaptists, were bent in Smithfield, who died in great horror with roaring and crying. The 30. of July in the afternoone was a great tempest of lightning & thunder. wherethrough both men and beasts in diuers places were stricken dead. Also at prime fell great abundance of hail, whereof the stones in many places were found to be 6. or 7. inches about.

The fourth of September, being Sunday about leuen of the clocke in the morning, a certaine glasse house which sometime had bene the Crossed friers hall, neare to the tower of London, brast out on a terrible fire, whereunto the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Sheriffes with all expedition repaired, and praesid there all means possible by water-buckets, hookes, and otherwise to haue quenched it, all which notwithstanding, whereas the same house in a small time before had consumed great quantity of wood by making of fine drinking glasses, now it selfe hauing within it neare eight thousand billets of wood, was all consumed

Anabaptists  
banished.

Five persons  
of the family  
of loue stood  
at Pauls  
crosse.  
Anabaptists  
bent.  
Thunder &  
hail.

The glasse  
house burnt.

to the stone wals, which wals greatly defended the fire from spreading farther, and doing any more harme.

Four children at one burden.

The 26. of September, a Poulters wife in the parish of Christs church with- in Newgate of London, was deliuered and brought to bed of foure children at one burden, all females, or maiden children, which were christened by the names Elizabeth, Mary, Margaret, and Dorothy, and the same day moneth the mother was buried, but all the foure children living and in good liking were borne to church after her.

1576.  
God punisheth perjury.

The 11. of february, Anne Aueries widow, forswearing her selfe for a little money that she should haue paid for fire pound of towre, at a shop in Woodstrete of London, fell immediatly downe speechlesse, casting vp at her mouth in great abundance, and with horrible stinke, the same matter which by natures course should haue bene voided downewards, till she died: a terrible example of Gods iust iudgement vpon such as make no conscience of falsly swearing against their brother.

Archbishop elected.

The 15. of february, Edmond Grindale sometime bishop of London, late archbishop of Porke, was in the Chapter house of S. Pauls church at London, elected archbishop of Canterburie.

Tilt-boate drowned.

The 5. of March in the night, through a great flaw of wind then in the north-west, a tiltboate with about the number of 31. persons men and women, coming from Grauelend toward London, were all drowned, one boy excepted.

Greene hanged.

The 30. of May, Thomas Greene goldsmith was drawn from Newgate of London to Tibborne, and there hanged, headed and quartered, for clipping of coine both gold and silver.

Frobishers first voyage for the discovery of Cataya.

The 15. of June, Martin Frobisher, being furnished of aduenturers, with two small barkes and one pinnelle departed from Blacke mall, vpon his voyage for the discouerie of a passage to Cataya, by the North-west seas. Vpon the 1. of July he had sight (as he iudged) of Frisland, but durst not approach the same, by reason of the great ice that lay alongst the coast: not far from thence he lost his pinnelle, & one of his barks, who mistrusting the danger of tempests returned home, with report y<sup>e</sup> their Generall Martin Frobisher was cast away, which captaine notwithstanding continued his course North-west beyond any man y<sup>e</sup> hath heretofore discovered, & the 20. of July had sight of a high land, which he named Q. Elizabeths Foreland: and after that another Foreland with a great passage, deuinding (as it were) the two maine lands asunder, this place he named Frobishers Straies. After he had passed firtie leagues further, he went on shoare, found the same to be inhabited with sauage people, caught one of them into his Barke, and returned into England in the moneth of August following: one of his company brought from thence a peece of blacke stone, much like to a sea-cole in colour, which being brought to certaine goldfiners in London, to make assay thereof, found it to hold gold, and that very richly for the quantity as they affirmed, but other sayd the contrary, and so it prooued.

A stone sayd to be gold, which was a meere receipt.

A woman brent at Tunbridge.

The 29. of July, a woman was brent at Tunbridge in Kent, for poisoning of her husband: and two dayes before, a man named Oxley, was hanged at Maidstone for being accessarie to the same fact.

A strang-

A strange peece of worke, and almost incredible, was brought to passe by an Englishman borne within the city of London, and a cleark of the Chancery named Peter Bales, who by his industry and practise of his pen contrived and writ within the compasse of a peny, in Latine, the Lords prayer, the Creede, the ten Commandments, a prayer to God, a prayer for the queene, his polie, his name, the day of the moneth, the yeare of our Lord, and the raigne of the queene: And at Hampton court he presented the same to the queenes maiesty in the head of a ring of gold, covered with a Chisell, and presented therewith an excellent spectacle by him deuised for the rather reading thereof, wherewith her maiesty read all that was writtten therein, and did weare the same vpon her finger.

A strange writing writt in the compasse of a peny.

Also about the same time Marke Scalliot black-smith borne in London, for triall of workmanship, made one hanging locke of yron, Steele, and brasse, a pipe key filed three square, with a pot vpon the shaft, and the bow with two flcs, all cleane wrought, which weyed but one graine of gold or wheate corne: he made also a chaine of gold of 43. linkes, to the which chaine the locke and key being fastned and put about a fleas necke she drew the same, all which locke, key, chaine and flea, weyed but one graine and a halfe, as is yet to be seene vpon Coync-hill by Leaden hall, at the sayd Marks house.

The moneth of August, many complaints being brought to the Queenes maiesty and her counsell vpon the fluslingers, for great spoyle and robberies by them daily committed vpon her highnesse subiects, her maiesty gaue order to put foure good ships, and two barkes of her owne to the seas, vnder the charge of maister William Ho' Stocke esquire, comptroller of all her highnesse ships, with 1100. men, bisualled for six weekes, in which time was by them taken eight fluslingers ships and barkes, prizes, and 220. sea rousers in them, who were sent on land to sundry prisons.

Pyrats and sea rousers taken, and sent to prison.

Walker Deuereux earle of Essex, and earle marshall of Ireland, knight of the order of the garter, falling sicke of a lakke on the 21. of August was grievously tormented by the space of 22. dayes, and deccased on the 12. of September at Ducliu in Ireland.

Walker Deuereux earle of Essex died

The 10. of Nouember, in the city of Worcester, a cruell and vnnaturall brother (as another Caine) murdered his owne naturall and louing brother, he first smote out his braines with an axe, then cut his throte, and after buried him vnder the harty of a chimney, thinking thereby (though wrongfully) yet quietly to haue enioyed his brothers goods long before in his possession, but not long after this secret murder conuining to light, the murderer was rewarded according to his deserts.

A murderer of his brother hanged.

An. reg. 19.

The 17. of March, through a strange tempest which hapned in the North neare to a towne called Richmond, not onely cottages, trees, barnes, and haystackes, but also the most part of a church called Patrike Brumton, was ouerthrowne, with most strange sights in the ayre both terrible and fearefull.

1577.  
Patrike Brumton ouerturned.

The 26. of March, the new Conduit neare vnto Oldborne, and a standpart with one cocke at Oldborne bridge, were begun to be founded by William Lambe, sometime gentleman of the chappell to king Henry the eight, now citizen and clothworker of London, the water whereof is conueyed in pipes of lead from

Charitable acts of Maister Lambe. Oldborne conduit built.

from diuerse springs to one head, and from thence to the said conduit and standart more then 2000. yards in length, all which of his owne costs and charges, amounting to the sum of 1500. pounds, was fully finished the 24. of August in the same yeare more of his charitable acts, I haue set downe in my summaries of the Chronicles.

Tower on  
London  
bridge taken  
downe.

This yeare in the moneth of Aprill, the decayed stone house, called the tower vpon London bridge, was begun to be taken downe, and the heads of traitors being remooued thence, were set on the gate at the bridge foot towards Southwarke. And on the 28. of August next following, sir Iohn Langley lord Mayor of the citie of London, laid the first stone of a new foundation of a tower in the same place, which tower was most beautifully finished in the moneth of September, in the yeare of Christ 1579.

Second  
voyage to  
Cataya.

The 31. of May, Martin Frobisher with one ship and two barkes furnished for that purpose, sailed from Harwich in Essex, towards Cataya by the north west seas, & entered his straits, beyond Queene Elizabeths Foreland about 30. leagues, where he went on shoare, and finding store of gold ore, as it was vntuly said, fraught his ship and barge, caught a man, woman and child of that countrie, and then on the 24. of August returning from thence, arrived at Milford haue in Wales on the 20. of September next following, but neither the man, woman, nor child liued long in this countrie, nor his ore proued gold but dross.

Strange  
sickness at  
Oxford.

The 4.5. and 6. daies of July, were the assises holden at Oxford, where was arraigned and condemned one Rowland Tenkes for his seditious tongue, at which time there arose amidst the people such a daunce, that almost all were smothered, very few escaped that were not taken at that instant: the Iurores died presently. Shortly after died sir Robert Bell lord chiefe Baron, sir Robert de Olie, sir William Babington, maister Weneman, maister de Olie high Sherife, M. Dauers, M. Harcourt, M. Kirlie, M. Pheteplace, M. Greenwood, M. Foster, M. Nashe, Sergeant Baram, maister Steuens, &c. there died in Oxford 300. persons, and sickned there, but died in other places 200. and odde from the 6. of July to the 12. of August, after which day died not one of that sickness, for one of them infected not another, nor any one woman or child died thereof.

Tempest in  
Suffolke.

On sonday the 4. of August, betwene the houre of 9. and 10. of the clocke in the forenoone, whilst the minister was reading of the second lesson in the parish church of Blithborough a towne in Suffolke a strange and terrible tempest of lightning and thunder brake through the wall of the same church into the ground almost a yard deepe, brake downe all the people on that side aboue twenty persons, then rent the wall by to the Westrie, clef the doore, and returning to the steeple, rent the timber, brake the chimes, and fled toward Bongey six miles off. The people that were stricken downe, were found groueling more then halfe an houre after, whereof a man more then forty yeares, & a boy of fifteene yeares old were found stark dead, the other were scorched. The like flash of lightning and cracks of thunder rent the parish church of Bongey nine miles from Norwich, working in sunder the wiers and wheelles of the clocke, slue two men which late in the bell-frey when other were at procession, and scorched another which hardly escaped.

An. reg. 20.  
Sergeants  
seale.

The 19. of Nouember, the new Sergeants at the law, seven in number, held their



their feast in the Temple at London.

The 30. of November, Cuthbert Mayne was drawne, hanged, and quartered at Lawncestone in Coynewall, for preferring Romane power.

Cuthbert  
Maine executed.

And here I thinke good to set downe a declaration sent by the Queene's maiestie of England vnto the King of Spaine, containing a iustificacion of her proceedings with the States of the low countries.

The Queene's maiestie being giuen to vnderstand of diuerse most slanderous and false brutes given out touching her proceedings and dealings with the States of the Low countries, tending as it were to make her the authour and principall nourisher of the ciuill troubles in the said countries: and doubting that the sowers and spreaders abroad of the said brutes, to seek by all meanes they may to induce her good brother the king of Spaine to beleue the said false and malicious surmises to be true, with meaning thereby to breed a breach & interruption of the good amitie betweene them: her Maiestie hauing therefore nothing more in recommendation then her honour, and to be reputed a Prince that desireth to maintaine and continue good amitie with the Princes her neighbours (whatsoever hath bene giuen out maliciously to the contrarie) being able to iustifie her whole actions before God and the world, aswell towards him as other Princes her neighbours, hath thought it very expedient for the earnest desire she hath to satisfie the said king, to set downe in writing a declaration (such as she will maintaine to be true in the word of a Prince) of her proceedings with the States, to the end the said King being truly informed therein, such causes and scruples of suspicion, as might any way hinder the good amitie betweene them, might be remooued, and the same restored to as great perfection and integritie as hath bene heretofore betweene any their progenitors, which said declaration, tending to that good end aboue mentioned, her Maiestie also hath thought meete to accompany aswell with an aduise vnto the said king, what way in her opinion were most fit for him to take for the continuance of the said countries vnder his obedience, and the restoring of the vnto their former quietnesse and repose, as also with her resolution in those cases of the Low countries, in case the said king shall not condescend to take some way of pacification, according to her Maiesties most sincere and friendly aduise.

A declaration  
sent by the  
Queene to  
the king of  
Spaine.

And first touching her proceedings with the States, she doubteth not but that if the king shall resort to his owne knowledg: and call to remembrance how often silence the first breaking out of the ciuill dissention in those countries, her Maiestie hath mooued him by sundrie ministers, sent as well vnto himselfe as vnto his vnder-gouernours in the said countries; forwarning both him and them of the mischicks presently then fallen out, and aduised him to take some speedie way for the prevention of the same, he cannot but in honour and conscience confesse, that her Highnesse hath therein discharged the dutie of a faithfull friend, and good ally in that behalfe. Of which aduise if it might please him to haue taken profite, those his countries being presently in a most perplexed state, had bene stayed from the ruine and destruction they are now apparantly running into, his people and subiects preserved from slaughter and bloodshed, his rich towncs continued vnspoiled, and the whole gouernement kept from perill of alienation: and if herein for her

G g g g

Maiesties

Maieslies iustificacion, neither these friendly offices, nor the word and faith of a Prince may suffice, yet her owne accounts themselves may serue to iustifie her in the eyes and sight of all the world: That she hath sought to continue those countryes vnder the Kings obedience, and hath not at any time intended to impatronize her selfe of any part of them, a matter which perhaps other Princes hauing like aduantages offered by some part of his people, would not haue refused, and therefore may thinke her selfe euill dealt withall, in case so rare an example should be so hardly or rather unfriendly interpreted. And as her Maieslie hath not left any good office vndone towards the King and his ministers tending to pacification, and the perswasions of those countries vnder his obedience: so on the other side, she hath not omitted by sundrie messengers sent both to the Prince of Orange and the States, aswell to perswade them to cease their ciuill warres, and to take some way of peace and agreement amongst themselves, as also to continue their auncient obedience vnder the said King their naturall Lord and soueraigne, being prouoked thereto vpon secret, but yet verie true and certaine aduertisements giuen her of great offers made vnto them by some (whom she forbeareth to name for good respects) to haue withdrawen them from their obedience. And herein it besides many perswasions vled by messengers sent of purpose to aduise them to continue their obedience to the King, her Maieslie had not furnished them in the time of their necessitie with a portion of money, aswell to serue them for the speedy execution of the pacification then in Treatie betweene Don Iohn and them, as for the keeping of them from a desperate putting off themselves into the hands of other princes, it did manifestly appeare that the pacification and accord had not bene so soone made, and that they for lacke thereof should haue bene diu-en for their defence, to haue deliuered some part of those countries, to the possession of such as would not haue bene remooued without the spending of many millions, and the losse of many thousand mens liues. Of the true cause of this support, her Maieslie is the more willing to make mention, for that she is insourued, that notwithstanding her good and sincere meaning in that behalfe, other wrong and sinister interpretations haue bene made of the same, as the like also hath bene done of other her proceedings. Amongst the rest, her Maieslie hath thought it expedient to answer one calumnie contained in a letter fathered on Don Iohn, and published in a booke lately set out by the States in their Iustificacion, by the which her Maieslie is charged to haue encouraged the Prince of Orange not to stand to the pacification, and withall did for his better encouragement, offer vnto him any assistance she could yeeld (a matter most slanderous and vntue) for that her Maieslie being giuen to vnderstand by the Viscount of Gaunt, sent vnto her from Don Iohn, how he found himselfe greued with the Prince of Orange, for that (as he affirmed) the said Prince did not obserue the said pacification, her Maieslie did immediatlie dispatch an expresse messenger vnto the said Prince, both to charge him with Don Iohns accusation, as also to aduise (and that most effectually) to obserue duely the said pacification, vling towards him some threats in case he should seek to violate the same, wherein she could find no other

other disposition, but that he was most desirous to keepe all the parts of the said pacification, as the onely meane of the ending of the long ciuill warre. The like aduise did she also giue to the States, receiuing no lesse contentment of the pacification, being ratified first by Don Iohn, and then afterwards by the King, then they to whom the benefite thereof did most properly and peculiarly appertaine. Her Maiesties proceedings and dealings with the Prince and States hauing bene such as hath bene before allcaded and deduced, she doth appeale to the King himselfe, who she thinketh will truly and fully looke into the truth of the matter, and also to all others that shall not be transported with passion, whether the said proceedings are not to be maintained to be both iust and honourable, whatsoeuer hath bene maliciouslie giuen out to the contrarie. And herein hir Maiestie is perswaded, that hardly any other Prince that hath some waies bene so unfriendly dealt withall, and found so little account made of her aduises giuen both to the King and to his gouernours of those countries, would haue dealt in such friendly sort as she hath done: notwithstanding the said discouragements, her Maiestie thinketh it honourable for her, and meete for the place she holdeth, being the ancients allie that the Kings progenitors as Dukes of Burgundy haue, to continue still her former course in giving friendly counsell vnto the King. can not but proceede to the second point aboue mentioned, which is to yeeld her aduise, what way in her opinion, is to be taken for the appeasing of the present troubles, and the continuing of them vnder his obedience.

First, it is apparant that the pacification is broken, and as great hostilitie increased on both sides as may be, whereof she is heartily loze: the end, if it go on, will be an bitter desolation of the countries, or the lesse or alteration of them from the kings obedience, for helpe whereof her maiestie thinketh the best and expedientest remedies to be, that it would please him to receiue his subjects to his grace and fauour, that he would permit them to continue in their auncient liberties & charters, that he would commaund the due and iust execution of the pacification, and that he would appoint such a gouernour of his owne blood, as might like him and be gratefull to them, whereby they with great contentation might yeeld to him all due obedience, continue in their religion according to his pleasure, and do all things accorded in the pacification: which by reason of the great distrust growne on both sides, betwene Don Iohn and them, can neuer take effect, so long as Don Iohn shall remaine gouernour, for it seemeth they haue put on a determination, that rather then they will endure y<sup>e</sup> hard dealing which they think themselves assured they shall receiue by his gouernment, they will throw themselves into the protection of any other prince. They charge him with the breach of the pacification: he on the other side offereth to stand to his iustificacion, charging them with the said breach. Her Maiestie hauing heard the allegations of the ministers sent hither, both from Don Iohn, and the States, meaneth not to be a iudge betwene the, hauing rather a greater desire to reconcile the if she could, & to do them both good, than to discourse the faults & blemishes of either party. To reconcile the she findeth it impossible, and therefore for the stay of the troubles and of those mischiefs that otherwise are like to ensue, the onely way of remedie will be to make

choise of some other tied to him by proximity of blood to be substituted vnder him in that gouernment, by which temperate course the troubles may well be appeased, the great effusion of blood auoyded, and the countries continued vnder his obedience, which otherwise are like to be alienated from him. If he shall like to follow this aduise, she seeth no disposition in the people to change their king, being dutifully minded towards him, with intention (in this behalfe they may be reckoned) to innouate nothing, but to maintaine, and duly obserue the late pacification made at Gaunt.

And like as for the contentment of the States and the appealing of the troubles she wisheth Don Iohns renouation: so considering how euill affected he sheweth himselfe toward her, alwell by letters intercepted, as by secret practises and dealings with the Queene of Scots, a matter very dangerous to the good quiet of her state, as the bearer can more amplie informe him touching diuerse particularities in this behalfe: she can not but in respect of the continuance of the good amitie which she wisheth to be betwene the King and her Maiestie, be the more earnest to presse the King therein, looking for no continuance of good amitie and good neighborhood, so long as a minister so euill affected towards her shall reside there, and being desirous that such ministers might be employed on both sides, as would desire rather to increase the amitie than to hinder it.

This her aduise tending to none other end, but to preserve those countries vnder her obedience, and the continuance of good amitie betwene them, she hopeth the King will accept in no lesse friendly part then it is by her sinceritie meant. And in the meane time untill his minde be knowne in this behalfe, her maiestie fearing the great forces prepared by Don Iohn, with the assistance of the French already marching towards him, will driue her auncient friends the states of the low countries, to the one of these two extremities: either to be overcome by foraine forces, and so endangered to foraine seruitude: or else constrained for the withstanding thereof to giue themselves ouer to some other prince, both which can not but be perillous to the king presently, dangerous to her Maiestie hereafter, and an vtter destruction to the whole countrey. Her highnes therefore for the benefit of the said King, & the auoyding of her owne perill (vpon promises and assurance giuen by the said states, to yeeld the king his due obedience, & make no further innouation in matters of religion, but to obserue the pacification of Gaunt) hath promised for the causes & respects aboue mentioned, to yeeld them a support of money and men, onely to stay them from further danger of alienation, or else their ruine.

Which proceedings of hers, if the King shall not be induced to like of, whereby her Maiestie shall discouer that his intention is by force of armes to alter and dissolue the ancient forme of gouernment, and by taking away their ancient lawes and liberties, to make it a land of conquest, and to people it with garrisons of men of warre. And that the end and scope of his intention should tend to that which is discouraged by Elconedoes letters, wherein he writeth that the enterprise of England is of more facility then the enterprise of the Isles, whereby her Maiestie shall perceiue the disposition of so ill a neighbor to her and her royall estate, then her Maiesties resolution is to employ all the power she shall be able to make for the defence of her neighbors, and preservation of her owne estate.



As on the contrary side, if he shall incline to their reasonable demand in giving them such a gouernor as they can better like of, then of Don Iohn, and they notwithstanding shall go on in disobedience against him, & make other innouations contrary to the promises they haue giuen and professed to her, she will turne her face against them, and in assistance of the king yeeld him the best ayde she can to bring them to reason and conformitie. And in the meane season, untill she may be thoroughly informed hereof, she hath thought good, for auoyding of effusion of christian blood, and for many other good and necessary respects, to deale both with Don Iohn and the States for a surceance of armes which if he shall refuse to yeeld vnto, and the States shall be willing, because she seeth it manifestly, that it concerneth the Kings honor, and profite of his countrey, she will not cease to go on with like offices towards them, as she hath begun. Thereby onely to defend them from foraine tyrannie, to keepe them in the kings obedience from aliening themselves to any other potentate, and to defend her selfe and her dominions from the perils that thereby she seeth manifestly to ensue.

The seuenteenth day of Januarie, Simon Pembroke dwelling in Southwarke, being a figure singer, and vehemently suspected to be a coniuier, by commandment of the ordinarie Judge of those parts, appeared in the parish Church of Saint Sainour, at a court holden there, which Simon being busied in entertaining a Proffor, and hauing money in his hand, leane his head vpon a pewe, wherein the proffor stood: which after he had done a certaine space, the proffor began to lift vp his head, to see what he ayled, and found him departing out of life, and straightway the said Simon fell downe ratling a little in the throat, and neuer spake word after: this was done euen as the Judge came into the church, who said it was the iust iudgement of God towards those that bled sorcerie, and a great example to admonish other to feare the iustice of God. After his clothes being opened, there were found about him five diuelish Bookes of coniuration and most abhominable practises, with a picture of time of a man hauing three dice in his hand, with this writing, Chaunce Dice fortunately, and diuise papers of such like matters, as he had dealt in for men, such as are mentioned in Leuiticus the twentieth Chapter and the sixt verse: If any soule turne himselfe after such as worke with spirits, and after soothsayers, to go a whooring after them: (saith the Lord,) I will put my face against that soule, and will cut him off from among my people.

1578.  
Example of  
sorcerers.

Leuit. ca. 29.

The third of Februarie, early in the morning Iohn Nelson, for denying the Queenes Supremacie, and such other traitorous words against her maiestie, was drawne from Newgate to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Nelson executed.

The 7. of Februarie, one named Sherewood was drawne from the Tower of London to Tyborne, & there hanged, bowelled & quartered for the like treason.

Sherewood  
executed.  
Pirates hanged.

The ninth of March, seauen Pyrates were hanged at Wapping.

The fifteenth of Februarie, Iohn de Loy a Frenchman, and five English Gentlemen, were conueyed from the Tower of London toward Porwich, there to be arraigned and executed, for coynning of money counterfeit.

Counterfeiter  
of coine.

The tenth of March deceased the Lady Margaret countesse of Leunor, and was honorably buried at Westminster the third of Aprill.

Lady Leunor  
deceased.

Frobishers  
third voyage

The 31. of May, Martin Frobisher with 15. saile of good ships, manned, hired, & other waies well appointed, departed from Harwich in Essex, on his 3. voyage towarde Cataya. And on the 31. of July, after many attempts, & sundry times being put backe by Islands of ice in his streights, he recovered his long wished port, & came to anchor in the Islands, newly by her maiesty named Meta Incognita, where (as in the yeare before) they freight their ships with the like pretended Gold ore out of the mines, & then on the last of August returning thence, arrived safely in England about the first of October, but their Gold ore after great charges proved worse then good stone, whereby many men were deceived, to their bitter bewoings.

Ac. reg. 21.

Cassimere  
receiued.

The 22. of January, about 7. of the clocke at night, John Cassimere Count Palatine of Rhene, duke of Bauare, landed at the Tower of London, was there by diuerse noblemen and others honourably receiued, and conueyed by candle light, and torch light to sir Thomas Greshams house in Bishops gate streete, where he was receiued with sounding of trumpets, drums, fifes and other instruments of musicke, and there both lodged and feasted till Sunday next, that he was by the nobility fetched to the court at Westminster, where he talked with her maiesty, and after lodged in Sommerset house. In the weeke following, he hunted at Hampton court. On Monday the first of February, he beheld a valiant Jussling and running at the Tilt at Westminster: on the next morrow he saw them fight at barriers with swords on horsebacke. On Tuesday he dined with the Lord Maior of London: On Wednesday with the Dutches of Suffolke, at her house called the Burgokening or Barbican, by red crosse streete: On Thursday at the Stillyard, &c. On the 8. of February, the queene made him knight of the garter, by deliuering to him the collar, and putting the garter on his leg at White hall: and on the 14. of February, he departed from London homewards, with great rewards given by the queenes maiesty, the nobility, men of honor, the maior of London, and the citizens of that city.

Deepe snow.

The 4. of February, and in the night following, fell such abundance of snow, that on the first in the morning, the same was found at London to lye two foote deepe in the shallovell, and otherwise, being driven by the wind, very boysterous in the North-east, on banks, an ell or yard and halfe deepe, in the which drifts of snow in the countries, many cattell, and some men and women were ouerwhelmed and lost: it snowed till the 8. day, and freazed till the tenth. Then followed a thaw with continuall raine a long time after, which caused such high floods, that the marshes & low grounds being drowned for the time, the water rose so high in Westminster hall, & after the fall thereof, some fishes were found there to remaine.

Great land  
water floods,

Lord keeper  
deceased.

The 20. of February, deceased sir Nicholas Bacon, lord keeper of the great seale of England, who was honorably buried vnder a sumptuous monument or tombe (by him in his life time erected in Paules church of London the 9. of March. He also in his life time gaue for 6. schollers, to be found in Benet Colledge at Cambridge, to each of them 2. £ 6. s. and 8. d. the yeare for euer.

The 24. of Aprill, fell such a snow betwixt the houres of foure of the clocke in the morning, and nine of the clocke before noone, that at London some was found to lye almost one foote deepe.

The

The 25. of Aprill, sir Thomas Bromley, knight, was made lord Chancellor of England.

Sir Thomas  
Bromley L.  
Chancellor.  
Alderman  
Kympton  
committed  
to the fleete.

The 26. of Aprill, William Kympton Alderman of London was by the lord Chancellor sent to the fleete, about a letter late by him receiued, from the Vicar of Hadley in Middlesex beside Barnet. This letter amongst other matters mentioned of a pale pulled downe at Northhall, by the commons there, &c. for concealing of which letter the said Alderman was committed as aforesaid. And on the 15. of May, was in the Starred chamber condemned to pay 500. marks fine, and to remaine prisoner at the pleasure of her maiestie.

The 4. of May, were arraigned at Barnet in Hartfordshire, certaine men of Northall, Hyngs, and the parts neere adioyning, for pulling downe a pale at Northall, late set vp (on the common ground) by the Earle of Warwick, eight of them were condemned, two were bent in the hand, two were hanged betwixt Barnet & Wethestone, the other foure condemned remained prisoners in Hartford. Soole long after many were bound to appeare at the next life, & such as could not put in baile for their appearing were committed, &c. Mathew Hamont of Hetharset, by his trade a plowgh wright, three miles from Norwich, was conuicted before the bishop of Norwich, for y he denied Christ to be our Saviour. At the time of his appearance it was objected, that he had published these heresies following.

Men hanged  
at Barnet for  
a riot made  
at Northall.

An heretike  
brent at  
Norwich.

That the new Testament and Gospell of Christ are but mere foolishnesse, a fable of men, or rather a mere fable.

Item, that man is restored to grace by the mere mercie of God, without the meane of Christs blood, death and passion.

Item, that Christ is not God, nor the Saviour of the world, but a mere man, a sinfull man, and an abhominable Idoll.

Item, that all they that worship him are abhominable Idolaters: And, that Christ did not rise againe from death to life by the power of his Godhead, neither, that he did ascend into heauen.

Item that the holy ghost is not God, neither that there is any such holy ghost.

Item, that baptism is not necessarie in the Church of God, neither the vse of the Sacrament of the body and blood of Christ. For the which heresies, he was condemned in the consistorie, and sentence was read against him by the bishop of Norwich, the 14. of Aprill, and thereupon deliuered to the Sheriffes of Norwich, and because he spake words of blasphemie against the Queenes maiestie, and others of her counsell, he was by the Recorder master Sergeant Windham, and the Maior sir Robert Wood of Norwich, condemned to lose both his eares, which were cut off the thirteenth of May in the market place of Norwich, where he confirmed his blasphemous speeches against our Saviour Iesus Christ for the which on the twentieth of May he was bent in the raffell ditch of Norwich.

The first of June, deceased Robert Horne Doctor of Diuinitie, Bishop of Winchester at Winchester place in Southwarke, & was buried at Winchester.

Bishop of  
Winchester  
deceased.  
Traiterous  
son of Tho-  
mas Apple-  
tree.

The 17. of July, the Queenes maiestie, being on the river of Chamis, betwixt her highnesse Mannour of Grenewich and Detford, in her priue barge, accompanied with the French Ambassador, the earle of Lincoln, & maister Chyamberlaine, &c. with whom she entered discourse about weightie affaires: it chanced, that

one

one Thomas Appletree a young man and seruant to maister Henry Cary, with two or three children of her Maiesties chappell, and one other being in a boate on the Chamis, rowing vp and downe betwixt the places aforesaid, the aforesaid Thomas Appletree had a caluer of harquebuse, which he had three or four times discharged with bullet, shooting at random very rashly, who by great misfortune shot one of the watermen, being the second man next unto the bales of the sayd barge, laboring with his oare (which fate within fire foote of her highnesse) cleane through both his armes: the blow was so great and grievous, that it moued him out of his place, and forced him to cry and scritch out piteously, supposing himselfe to be slaine, and saying he was shot through the body. The man bleeding abundantly, the queenes maiesty shewed such noble courage as is most wonderfull to be heard and spoken of, for beholding him so maimed, she neuer basted thereat, but bad him be of good cheere, and sayd he should want nothing that might be for his ease, &c. For the which fact the sayd Thomas being apprehended, and condemned to death: was on the 21. of July brought to the water side, where was a gibbet set up, directly placed betwene Deford and Greenwich, & when the hangman had put the rope about his necke, he was by the queenes most gracious pardon deliuered from execution.

John Fox  
prisoner in  
Turky.

This yeare Iohn Fox of Woodbridge, William Wickney of Portsmouth, and Robert More of Harwich Englishmen, hauing bene prisoners in Turky about the space of thirteene or fourteene yeares with more then two hundred and sixtie other Christians of diuerse nations, by killing their keeper, maruellously escaped, and returned to their native countries.

Floods.

In September and October fell great winds and raging floods in sundry places of this realme, wherethrough many men, cattell, and houses were drowned. In the towne of Newport the cottages were borne downe, the coyne lost, pasture ground ouerwhelmed, and cattell drowned. In the towne of Bedford the water came vp to the market place, where cupboards, chests, stools and founnes swam about the houses, their ferrell, coyne and hay was wrackt and borne away. Also the towne of Saint Edes in Huntingdonshire was ouerflowed suddenly in the night, when all men were at rest, the waters brake in with such a force, that the towne was almost all defaced, the swans swam downe the market place, and all the towne about, the boats did floate. Gornamchester was suddenly suppressed, their houses floden full of water when men were at their rest, their cattell were destroyed: about the 14. of October, the sea did swell, the marchants lost their goods, many were drowned, which were after found in great numbers.

An. reg. 22.  
Sir Thomas  
Gresham  
deceased.

On Saturday the 21. of Nouember, Sir Thomas Gresham knight Agent to the queenes highnesse (who had in his life time builded the Royall Exchange in London, as is aforesaid shewed) deceased at his house in Bishops gate street of London, and was buried in the parish church of saint Ellen there. By his last will and testament, dated An. 1579. he gaue to 100. poore men, so many blacke gownes of 6.s. 8.d. the pce, to 100. poore women the like gownes at the day of his buriall. The Royall Exchange and all the buildings thereto belonging, the one moety to the maiorie and communalty of London and their successors for 50. yeares, vpon trust that they do performe, as shall be declared, & the other moety to the mercers



for 50. yeares in like confidence. The maior and communalty to find 4. to reade lectures, of Diuinity, Astronomy, Musike, and Geometry, within his dwelling house (which he gaue for that purpose) in Bishops gate streete, the sum of 50. l. the peece. More 53. l. 6. s. 8. d. vnto 8. almshouses in his 8. almshouses in the parish of S. Peter the poore, to euer each 6. l. 13. s. 4. d. To the prisoners in Newgate, Ludgate, Kings bench, Marshalsea, and the counter in Woodstreet 50. l. to wit, to each 10. l. The Mercers to find 2. men to reade lectures of Law, Philosophie, and Rhetorike, within the same his dwelling house of S. Ellen in Bishops gate streete, the sum of 150. l. to wit, to euery reader 50. l. More 100. l. for a dinner 4. times in y<sup>e</sup> yeare, to the whole company in y<sup>e</sup> mercers hall, for euery dinner 25. l. And more, 50. l. to the hospitals of Christ church, S. Bartholomews, S. Thomas, Bedlem, & the Counter in the Poultry, to each yearely 10. l. And in the said 50. yeares to procure licence, which he trusted would not be denied, considering the goodnesse of the suite, and then to haue all the Exchange, Pawne, and house with the appurtenances for euer.

Henry Fits Allen (the last of that name) earle of Arondale, deceased on the 24. of February, and was buried at Arondale on the 22. of March.

On the 28. of March, Francis *alias* Marmaduke Glouer was hanged on a gibbet set vp for that purpose, by the Standard in Cheape, for willingly murdering Sirgeant Grace, after he was by him arrested.

1580.  
One hanged  
in Cheape  
for murder.  
Earthquake.

The 6. of Aprill being Wednesday in Easter weeke, about 6. of the clocke toward euening, a suddē earthquake hapning in London, & almost generally throughout England, caused such amazednes of the people as was wondrous for the time, & caused them to make their earnest prayers vnto almighty God. The great clocke bell in the palace at Westminster, strake of it selfe against the hammer with shaking, as diuerse clockes & bells in the city & elsewhere did the like: the gentlemen of the Temple being at supper, ran from the tables, and out of their hall with their kniues in their hands, a peece of the Temple church fell downe, some stones fell fro Pauls church: And at Christs church in the sermon while a stone fell from the top of the church, which killed out of hand one Thomas Grey an apprentice, & another stone also brused his fellow seruant named Mabel Eueret, so that she liued but 4. dayes after: diuerse other were sore hurt with running out of the church: diuerse chimnies in the city, part of the fell downe, the houses were so shaken. The earthquake continued, in or about London not passing one minute of an houre, & was no more felt: but eastward in Kent and on the sea coast it was felt thre times: as at Sandwich at five of the clocke, the land not onely quaked, but the sea so foamed, that the ships tottered. At Dover also at the same houre was the like, so that a peece of the cliffe fell into the sea, with also a peece of y<sup>e</sup> castle wall there: a peece of Saltwood castle in Kent fell downe, and in the Church of Hode the bells were heard to sound. A peece of Suttin church in Kent fell downe, the earthquake being there both heard and felt. And in all these places and other in east Kent, the same was felt thre times to mooue, to wit, at five, at nine and at eleven of the clocke.

The 19 of Aprill the ferry at Lambeth was drowned with five men & foure horses, other two men and five horses swam to land, and were saued.

Ferry at  
Lambeth  
drowned.  
Earthquake  
in Kent.

The first of May, after 12. of the clocke in the night, was an earthquake felt in diuerse

diuerſe places of Kent, namely at Aſhford, great Chart, &c. which made the people there to riſe out of their beds, and run to the churches, where they called vpon God, by earneſt prayers to be mercifull vnto them.

This yeare were many monſtrous birthes, and ſtrange ſights to beſeene, which I ouerpaſſe in this place, for that I haue partly touched them in my ſummaries.

Francis  
Drake his  
voyage round  
about the  
world.

Alſo this yeare maſter Francis Drake returned into England, hauing ſailed round about the world (as is affirmed) thus it was begun: on the 13. of December, in the yeare of Chriſt 1577. he ſet ſaile from Plimoth with a ſcette of 7. ſhips to wit, the Pellicane admirall, the Harigold, the Elizabeth, barke Benedick, and a pinnace: he ſell with the cape Canbine on the coaſt of Barbary the 25. of y ſame moneth, and ſo coaſting along, the 27. of December found an Iſland called Hog: adoy, lying one mile diſtant from the maine: in this Iſland the generall erected a pinnace, which he had with three other brought ready framed out of England, which being finiſhed he departed the laſt of December. On the 17. of January he arrived at cape Blank, & left the ſame on y 22. of that moneth, & on the 27. ſell with cape de Verde: on the 30. of January he ſell with an Iſland called Saint Iago: hauing put off cape de Verde in the beginning of February, they ſaw no more land vntill the ſixt of April 1578. that they ſell with the coaſt of Braſill, in the latitude of 33. degrees beyond the line, and with much ado entred the riuer of Plate: from whence departing he ſell with the ſtraite of Magelan the 20. of Auguſt, and paſſed through with three ſhips onely, hauing call off the other two as impediments, where, after they had bene toſſed many daies to and fro, in the night the ſixt of October the Harigold, wherein maſter Iohn Thomas was captaine, parted from the generall, and was no more heard of. And ſhortly after, the other wherein maſter Iohn Winter was captaine parted alſo, who hauing loſt his company, came home againe through the ſtraites. The golden Hind (or Pellicane I thinke) held on her courſe to Chily, Lima, Coquimbo, Arica, Panama, & ſo all along the backe ſide of America to the line-ward, and paſſed the line the ſixt day of March, and the ſixteenth of March being on land at the Ile of Caones, he paſſed ſouth north-ward till he came to the latitude of fortyſeuen, thinking to haue come that way home: but being conſtrained by fogges and cold winds to forſake his purpoſe, came backward to the line-ward the tenth of June 1579 and ſtayed in the latitude of thirty eight to graue and trim his ſhip, vntill the five and twenty of July: and from thence ſetting his courſe ſouthweſt, he ſell the thirde of October with an Ile 8. degrees from the line northward, and the 4. of Nouember he ſell with Ternate one of the Iles of Moluca, where being curioſly entertained of the king, he tooke in certaine tun of cloues, and came homeward to a little Iſland, where he ſtayed to trim his ſhip 26. daies, where he furniſhed himſelfe with wood, and erected a ſmiths forge for to make ſuch yron worke as was needfull for the repairing of his ſhip: and from thence the 12. of December he went toward Malaca, but not able to continue his courſe weſtward for the wind, was conſtrained to recouer the north of the Iles of Selchers: after this the ninth of January comming towards Iaua maior they ran themſelues vpon ground, and ſtucke faſt twenty houres, not looking but for death, but eſcaping that danger, they continued their courſe ſtill weſt, & came to Iaua maior alſo named, and there touching they bent their courſe ſouthweſt to y cape of Sona Speranca, the after they kept

their course north west, and fell with the coast of Ginea, from thence bending their course north north west, they came to the line, and then shaping their course north and by west, they came to the height of Azores, where finding the wind westerly, they came home into England in the yeare 1580. And in the yeare next following, to wit, 1581. on the fourth of Aprill, her maiestie dining at Deptford in Kent, after dinner entered the ship which captaine Drake had so happily guided round about the world, and being there, a bridge that her maiestie had passed over, broke, being upon the same more then 200. persons, and no man hurt by the fall, and there she did make captaine Drake knight in the same ship, for reward of his service his armes were given him, the world in a ship, which ship by her maiesties commandement is lodged in a pocke at Deptford, for a monument to all posterity of that famous and worthy exploit, whereof a worshipfull gentleman maister William Borough in his preface to a booke intituled, A discourse of the variation of the compasse, or magneticall Needle, hath these words: So now at length (saith he) our countryman sir Francis Drake, for valourous attempt prudent proceeding and fortunate performing his voyage about the world, is not onely become equall to any of them that liue, but in fame farre surpassing.

Sir Francis Drake knighted, and his commendation.

On the tenth of October (some say on the seuenth) appeared a blasing star in the south, bushing toward the east, which was nightly scene dimunishing of his brightnesse untill the 21. of the same moneth.

Blazing starre.

The 17. day of October were made eight sergeants at law, to wit, first William Fleetwood Recorder of London, the second, Edward Flowerdew, the third, Thomas Snagge, the fourth, William Periam, the fift, Robert Halton, the sixt, Iohn Clench, the seuenth, Iohn Puckering, the eight, Thomas Walmesley, maister Snagge was sicke, and therefore had a writ directed to two maisters of the chancery to take his oath, and so was swoyne in his chamber at Greys Inne, the other seven were swoyne at Westminster, and yeld their feast in the new Temple at London.

Sergeants feast.

The 19. of October proclamation was published at London for the apprehension and seuerer punishing of all persons suspected to be of the family of loue.

Proclamation against the family of loue.

There arriued vpon the west coast of Ireland certaine companies of Italians and Spaniards, sent by the Pope to the ayde of the earle of Desmond in his rebellion, which fortified themselves strongly neare Smertwicke, in a fort which they call Castle del oze, there erecting the popes banner against her maiestie, which when the lord Grey of Wilton deputy of Ireland vnderstood, he marched thitherward, & the 6. of Nouember hearing of the arriual of the Swifeshure, the Tigar, the Tide, the Herlion, and other of the queenes maiesties ships, and also of three barkes fraughted from Limericke and Roike with victuals, on the morrow after marched towards the fort, vnto the which he gaue so hotte an assault, that on the ninth of Nouember the same was yeilded. all the Irish men and women hanged, and more then foure hundred Spaniards, Italians, & Biscayes put to the sword, the colonell, captaines, secretary and other (to the number of twenty) saved for ransom. In which fortresse was found good store of money, basket, bacon, oile, wine, and diuerse other provisions of victuall, sufficient for their company for halfe a yeare, belesse any more powder, shot, & other furniture for 2000. men and bywards.

Victory against the Irish and other in Ireland.

The

An. reg. 23.  
Randall hanged for con-  
furing.

The 28. of Nouember, were arraigned in the kings bench, William Randall, for confuring to know where treasure was hid in the earth, and goods feloniously taken were become, Tho. Elkes, Thomas Lupton, Ralfe Spacy, & Christopher Waddington, for being present: Randall, Elkes, Spacie and Waddington were found guiltie, and had iudgement to be hanged, Randall was executed, the other were repluced.

1581.  
Proclamation  
on against  
Iesuites.

About the twelfth of Januarie, proclamation was published at London, for the revocation of sundry the Quenees maiesties subiects remaining beyond the seas, vnder colour of study, and yet liuing contrarie to the lawes of God and of the realme. And also against the retaining of Iesuites and massing priests, sowers of sedition, and other treasonable attempts, &c.

Iusting at  
Westminster

Parliament  
at Westminster.

The 16. day of Januarie, the lords & barons of this realme began to sit in the parliament house at Westminster: and on the twentieth day of Januarie the Quenees maiestie went from White hall to the parliament house by water. Whereas a great challenge of iustes was signified by way of deuise before her maiestie on Twelke night last past, to haue bene perfoymed the fifteenth day of Januarie, her maiesties pleasure was, for diuers considerations the same should be deferred untill the two and twentieth day of the same moneth: on the which day the same was most couragiously accomplished in the accustomed place at Westminster, where many stauces were broken, but through the great concourse of people thither repairing, many of the beholders, as well men as women, were sore hurt, some maimed, and some killed by falling of the scaffolds overcharged.

Mice deu-  
our the  
grasse in  
Daneley.

About Hallowtide last past, in the marishes of Daneley hundred, in a place called Southminster in the countie of Essex, a strange thing hapned: there suddenly appeared an infinite multitude of mice, which overwelming the whole earth in the said marishes, did there and gnaw the grasse by the rootes, spoiling and raiuing the same with their venomous teeth, in such sort, that the cattell which grazed thereon were smitten with a murreine, and died thereof, which vermine by policie of man could not be destroyed, till at the last it came to passe that there flocked together all about the same marishes, such a number of owles, as all the shire was not able to yeeld: whereby the marsh-holders were shortly deliuered from the veration of the said mice.

Banqueting  
house at  
Westminster

This yere (against the coming of certaine ambassadoys out of France) by her maiesties appointment, on the five and twentieth day of March in the morning being Easter day) a banquetting house was begun at Westminster, on the south west side of her maiesties palace of White hall, made in manner and forme of a long square, 332. in measure about, 30. principals made of great mass, being 40. foote in length a peece, standing vpright, betweene euery one of the mass, ten foote asunder and more, the wals of this house were closed with canuas, and painted all the outsidies of the same most artificially, with a worke called ruslike much like stone. This house had two hundred, ninctie and two lights of glasse. The sides within the same house was made with 1. heights of degrees for people to stand vpon: and the top of this house was wrought most cunningly vpon canuas with workes of iwie and holly, with pendants made of wickar rodde, and garnished with



with Bay, Rue, & all maner of strange flowers garnished with spangles of gold, as also beautified with hanging tofeans made of hollie and iuie. with all maner of strange fruits, as pomegranates, oranges, pompions, cucumbers, grapes, with such like spangled with gold and most richly hanged: betwixt these tooles of haies and iuie were great spaces of caruies, which was most cunningly painted, the clouds with flarres, the sunne and sun-beames, with diuerse other coats of sundry sorts belonging to the queenes maiesty, most richly garnished with gold. There weres of all maner of persons working on this house, to the number of 175. Two men had mischances, the one broke his legge and so did the other. This house was made in three weekes and thre dayes, and was ended the 18. of Aprill, and cost 1744. l. 19. s. 6. d.

On the 16. day of Aprill, arrived at Douer these noblemen of Fraunce (commissioners from the French king to her maiesty) Francis Burbon prince Dolephine of Auergne, Arthur Coslaie marshall of Fraunce, Lodowic Lutignian lord of Laneoc, Trauerkins Caercongin county of Tillir, Bertrand Salingurons lord Moihfenelon, monsieur Manaislour, Barnabie Brislen president of the parliament of Paris, Claude Pinart, monsieur Marchemont, monsieur Veraic, these came from Grauesend by water to London, where they were honourably receiued and entertained, and shortly after being accompanied of the nobility of England, they repaired to the court, and banquetting house prepared for them at Westminster as is aforesayd, where her maiesty receiued them, and afterward in that place most royally feasted and banqueted them. Also the nobles and gentlemen of the court desirous to shew them all curtesie possible, prepared a triumph in most sumptuous order, vpon Whitson monday and tuesday: the chiefe challengers of which attempts were, the earle of Arundell, Frederike Lord Willinsse, Philip Sidney, Foulke Girell, and other: the defendants to the number of one and twenty, all which of them ranne fire courtes against the former challengers, who performed their parts valiantly. On the tuesday they went to the tourney, where they did very nobly, and after that to the barriers, wherewith they fought courageously, &c. as moze at large I haue set downe, in the continuance of Reine Woolles Chronicle.

Noblemen of France arrived in England.

Justing, turningey and barriers.

The one and twenty of June in the night, certaine young men, drawing ropes thwart the streete, on both sides the crosse in Cheape, to stop the passage, did then fasten ropes about the lowest Images of the layd crosse, attempting by force to haue plucked them downe, which when they could not do, they plucked the picture of Christ out of his mothers lap, whercon he late, and otherwise defaced her, and the other Images by striking off their armes. Whereupon proclamation was made, that who so would browze the doers should haue forty crowones. But nothing came to light, for euery one of them kept others counsell, till their dying dayes.

Crosse in Cheape defaced.

Thomas Burcher brewer (for that he & others on the 27. of June had congregated themselves in west Smithfield of London, and in other places, in maner of rebellion) was on the 30. of June whipped from Newgate to west Smithfield, and was there rescued, taken from the bedles, and sent away to shift for himselfe:

Men whipped, and sent on the pillory.

for

for the which fast on the 21. of July, other foure, to wit, three shomakers and a brewer, were whipped from Newgate to the middell of west Smithfield, and there set on the pillorie, whercon they stood from ten till twelue of the clocke.

Bishop of  
Ely deceased

Two men of  
strange sta-  
tures.

The thirteenth of July, Richard Coxo Doctor of Diuinitie, sometime schoole-maister to king Edward the first, deane of Westminster, and of Christs college in Oxford, and since bishop of Ely, deceased and was buried at Ely.

This yeare were to be seene in London, two Duchmen of strange staturs, the one in height seuen foot and seuen inches, in breadth betwixt the shoulders three quarters of a yard and an inch, the compasse of his breast one yard and halfe, and two inches: and about the wast, one yard, quarter, and one inch, the length of his arme to the hand a full yard: a comely man of person, but lame of his legges (for he had broken them with lifting of a barrell of beere.) The other was in height but three foot, had neuer a good foot, nor any knee at all, and yet could he daunce a galliard, he had no arme, but a stumpe to the elbowe or little more on the right side, on the which singing, he would daunce a cup, and after tolle it about three or foure times, and euery time receiue the same on the said stumpe: he would shoote an arrow neare to the marke, flourish with a rapier, throw a botole, beate with a hammer, beu with an ale, sound a trumpet, and drinke euery day ten quarts of the best beere if he could get it. In my life on the seauenteenth of July sawe the taller man sitting on a bench bareheaded, and the lesser standing on the same bench, and hauing on his head a hat with a feather, was yet the lower. Also the taller man standing on his feete, the lesser (with his hat and feather on his head) went bynight betwene his legs and touched him not.

Euerard  
Hauncear-  
raigned and  
executed.

Prisoners  
arraigned  
for not com-  
ing to  
church.

Iohn Stubbs  
and William  
Page lost  
their hands.

Monsieur  
D. of Anio.

An. reg. 24.

The eighteenth of July, Euerard Haunce a seminarie priest, was in the sessions hall in the old Baily arraigned, where he affirmed that himselfe was subiect to the Pope in ecclesiasticall causes, and that the Pope hath now y same authoritie here in England that he had an hundred yeres past, with other trayterous speeches, for the which he was condemned to be beheaded, hanged, botwelled and quartered, and was executed accordingly on the last of July.

At the same sessions were brought from the Fleet, the Gate-house at Westminster, Newgate of London, and the Counters, hundrie prisoners indicted for refusing to come to the church, all which being consulted by their owne confession, had indgement accordingly to pay twentie pounds for euery moneth of such their wilfull absence from the church.

The thirtieth of October were arraigned at Westminster hall Iohn Stubbes, Hugh Singleton, and William Page, these were all three condemned to lose their right hands, for writing, printing, and dispersing a libell, which they intituled, the Gaping Gulph, against monsieur Francis Duke of Anio the French kings brother. And on the third day of Nouember they were all led to Westminster, where Iohn Stubbs, and William Page lost their hands by chopping off, but Hugh Singleton had his pardon.

The first of Nouember, monsieur Francis Duke of Anio, the French kings brother, and other nobles of Fraunce (hauing lately arrived in Kent) came to London, and were honorably receiued, and retained at the court with banquetting

and diuerse pleasant shewes and pastimes, &c.

On the 20. of Nouember, Edmond Campion Jesuit, Ralfe Sherwine, Lucas Kerbie, Edward Rishon, Thomas Coteham, Henrie Orton, Robert Iohnson & James Bosgraue, were brought to the high bar at Westminster, where they were severally, and al together indicted vpon high treason, for that contrary both to loue & duty, they forooke their native country, to liue beyond the seas vnder the Popes obedience, as at Rome, Rheimes, and diuers other places, where (the Pope ha- uing with other princes praised the death and depriuation of our most gracious princeesse, and viter subuersion of her state and kingdome, to aduance his most ab- hominable religion) these men hauing bowed their allegiance to the Pope, to obey him in all causes whatsoeuer, bring there, gaue their consent, to aide him in this most traiterous determination. And for this intent & purpose they were sent ouer to seduce the harts of her maiesties louing subiects, and to conspire and praide her graces death, as much as in them lay, against a great day, set and appointed, when the generall hauocke should be made, those onely reserued that ioynded with them. This laid to their charge, they boldly denied, but by a iurie they were approued guilty, and had iudgement to be hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

The first of December, Edmond Campion Jesuit, Ralfe Sherwine, and Alex- ander Brian seminarie priests, were drawne from the Tower of London to Cle- boyne, and there hanged, bowelled, & quartered. Lookt more in my continuation of Reine Woolfes chronicle.

The first of February the Quences maiestie with her whole court, accompa- nied the monsieur Francis Duke of Anio, from Westminster to Canterburie, where, when she had sealed all the french nobilitie, either tooke leaue of other, & her maiestie returned. The 6. of the same month the D. lodged at Sandwich, & on the next morning tooke the sea, bring accompanied of the earle of Leicester, the lord Hunsdon, the lord Howard knights of the garter, the lord Willowby, Lord Windfore, L. Sheffield, L. Howard and lord Audley, M. Sidney, sir George Cary, M. Iohn and Robert Carie, all three sonnes of the said Lord of Hunsdon, M. William Howard, brother of the said lord Howard, sir T. Sherley, sir T. Perot, sir Will. Russell, sir Will. Drury and sir George Bowser knights, & a great num- ber of Gentlemen, so as the whole traine that attended on the earle was 100. gen- tlemen, and more than 300. seruing men. The lord Hunsdon had of gentlemen and other to the number of 150. and the lord Howard had as many, all which sailed in fiftene ships to Flushing in Zeland. where the prince of Orange, & the States of the low countries receiued the Duke, and our English nobilitie with great ioy, conducing them from thence to Middleborough, & then to Antwerpe, where before the twentieth day of the same moneth, the States with great solem- nitie created the said Monsieur Duke of Anio, Duke of Lothar, Brabant, and marquesse of the sacred empire, and prince of the low countries, &c. And our nobi- lity returned into England.

Iohn Paine priest, being indicted of high treason for words by him spoken to one Eliot, was arraigned and condemned at Chelmsford on the last of March, and was there executed on the second day of Aprill.

The fifteenth of Maie, about ten of the clocke in the night, a blazing star ap- peared, descending in the north-west, the beard wherof streaked south-west.

h h h

On

Ant. Monday.  
Campion  
and others  
arraigned.

Campion  
and others  
executed.

1582.  
Monsieur  
returneth  
to the sea.

Monsieur  
created  
duke of Lo-  
thar, Bra-  
bant, &c.

Iohn Paine  
executed at  
Chelms-  
ford.  
A blazing  
starre.

*Ant. Monday.*  
Seminaries  
executed.

On the 28. day of May, Thomas Ford, Iohn Sherr, & Robert Johnson pteffis, hauing bene before indicted, arraigued, and condemned for high treason intended, as ye haue heard of Campion and other, were drawne from the Tower to T-borne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Philip Price  
hanged.

And on the thirtieth of May, Luke Kirby, William Filby, Thomas Cottam, & Laurence Richardson, were for y<sup>e</sup> like treason in y<sup>e</sup> same place likewise executed.

The 2. of June, Philip Price was hanged in Fleetstreete of London, for killing a sergeant that had arrested him.

Lord Wil-  
loughby am-  
bassador in-  
to Denmark.

The fourteenth day of July, Peregrine Bartie lord Willoughby of Eskby appointed Ambassadour to Frederike the king of Denmarke with the garter, embarked at Kingstoun vpon Hull, and prosperously arriued at Elsinore in Denmark on the twentieth day of the same moneth. On the fourteenth of August the said king received the robes of the order, ware the Garter, Coller, and George: and the lord ambassadour returning with his traine, arrived at Byemholme in Rosfolke on the twentieth of September. More at large of this and other, I haue set downe in the continuation of maister Reine Weckes chronicle.

Lecture in  
Surgerie to  
be read.

This yeare was first founded a publike lecture in Surgerie to begin to be read in the college of Physicians in Knightriders streete of London, in Anno 1584. on the first of May, and so to be continued twice euery weeke, to wit, wednesday and friday for euer, by the honorable Iohn lord Lomley, and Richard Caldwell doctor of Physicke: the reader whereof to be Richard Forster doctor of Physicke.

Misfortune  
by gunpow-  
der.

The nineteenth of July, certaine ferkins of gunpowder (to the number of sixteen) and as many or more ferkins of surgeon, laden in a carre vpon Gally key, neare vnto the tower of London, some small portion of the same powder being shed on the ground, the horse in the said carre stroke fire with his foote, and fiered all together, wherethrough the surgeon was blowne out of the carre, some into the Chamis, some else where, one ferkin was driuen through a loamed wall that was boorded ouer, into a house there by. The Crane on the wharfe with the houses neare adioyning were sore broken, many men and horses sore blasted, so that three men and seuen horses died thereof.

Tempest in  
Norfolke.

The twelfth of August there rose a great tempest of lightning, thunder, whirlwind and raine, with hailstones fashioned like to the rowels of spurres, two or three inches about in the countie of Norfolke, betwene y<sup>e</sup> townes of north Walsham and Worsted the towne wherein the making of worsted, commonly called Norwich worsted, was first practised and tooke there beginning, which tempest beat the coine flat to the ground, rent vp many great trees, and shiuered them in peeces, or wound them like withs. At Denning, more then a mile from Worsted, the west doore of the church, weighing more then 300. pound waight, was lifted off the hookes, and throwne ouer the font within one yard of the chancel doore, the top of the church was riuen bp, and the lead as it were blowne cleane away, five webs of lead were ruffled bp together, like as they had bene cloths of linnen cloth, and blowne into the field without the churchyard. Also at east Ruffen were many barnes blowne downe, and houses incrouered.

An. reg. 25.  
Terme kept  
at Hartford.

This yeare Michaelmas terme was returned from the Vias thereof, untill the fourth returne of the same called Menle Michaelis, & from the said return, untill the



the returne commonly called *Craftino animarum* next ensuing, and then recou-  
red from Westminster to the castle of Hartford in Hartfordshire, there to begin in  
the said *Craftino animarum*, and to be continued till the end of the said terme,  
which was done accordingly.

This yeare Peter Morris a Dutch man, but a free denison having made an  
engine for that purpose, conveyed Thamis water in pipes of lead ouer the steeple  
of S Magnus church, at the north end of London bridge, and so into diuers mens  
houses in Thamis streete, new Fish streete, and Gasse streete by vnto the north-  
west corner of Leadon hall (the highest ground of the citie of London, where the  
wall of the first maine pipe ran first this yeare 1582. on Christmasse euen: which  
maine pipe being since at the charges of the citie brought by into a standerd there  
made for that purpose, and diuided into foure severall spoutes, ranne foure waies  
plentifully seruing to the vse of the inhabitants neare adioyning that will fetch it,  
and also cleansed the chanel of the streetes north toward Bishops gate, east to-  
wards Aldgate, south towards the bridge, and west towards the Stocks mar-  
ket: no doubt a great commoditie to that part of the citie, and would be far grea-  
ter, if the said water were maintained to run continually, or at the least at euery  
tide some reasonable quantitie, as at the first it did.

Thamis wa-  
ter convey-  
ed to the  
highest  
ground of  
London.

Now to returne to Monsieur his successe after the great dignities, authorities,  
and titles bestowed on him, as ye haue partly heard (but is set downe at large in  
a particular treatise thereof, which I haue placed in Reine Woolles chronicle.)  
Francis of Valois, the kings onely brother, Duke of Lothere, Brabant, Lim-  
bourg, Gelders, Anio, Alanson, &c. earle of Flanders, Holland, Zelant, &c.  
marquesse of the sacred empire, lord of Friseland, &c. hauing now indifferently  
well with his good succelles had in the victualling and reinforcing the sieges of  
Cambray and Lochem, and winning the towncs of Alast and Endonan) gotten  
the hearts of the people, and by that meanes placed his Frenchmen in Dunkerke,  
Winneburgh, Dinmide, Dermond, Chino, and other places, thought now be-  
sing young and euill counsell) to make himselfe a more absolute Prince, according  
to the titles giuen him, and not to rule with the aduise of the States of the coun-  
tries. Wherefore hauing come to him out of Fraunce the Marshall Byron,  
with great troups of Swissers, and Frenchmen, he now causeth them all at one  
time, to wit, on the seventh of Ianuarie, to inuade so many towncs as they  
could make themselves maistres of, which with them tooke effect in the aboue na-  
med towncs, but at Bruges they were put out. And at Antwerpe on the said  
seauenth day, vnder the pretence to muster his army without the towne, by-  
on the very noone time of the day when the Citizens were at dinner, he causeth  
two gates (as vncertaine by which he would go) to be opened for him, and the  
chaines ouerthwart the streets to be unchained, which (for some suspition had of the  
Frenchmen without) were locked: then he issued out with all his Court and a  
great number of gentlemen, very braue, mounted on great horses about 200. many  
of them being secretly armed vnder their garments, and comming to S. James  
gate, at the bridge without met him certaine of his companies of horsemen, and  
footemen, who staid themselves on both sides the way, making as it were a lane  
for the Duke to passe by with a few of his: who being past them, made token to

Francis de  
Valois his  
exploits and  
successe.

The moni-  
eur attemp-  
teth against  
the States  
of Antwerp  
and was o-  
uerthrowne.

Monſieur overthrown  
at Antwerp,  
his French-  
men ſlaine,  
and many  
taken priſo-  
ners.

Noblemen  
of France  
ſlaine.

Generall  
Norriſſe with  
23. enſignes.

the with his cap, to invade y city: wherupon his men killed y watch, with y Colonel Viereendell y stood bare headed, to ſee their prince paſſe. Then entered y gate 17. enſignes of footmen, & foure colonels of horſemen the Swiſſers following, & the duke crying to the march, march, *La ville eſt gagnée, mais ne pillons point*. being thus ſtrongly entered they cried, *Ville gagnée, vive la meſſe*, and tooke in on both ſide the Bulwarkes, turned the ordinance towarde the city, and came by diuerſe ſtreets almoſt to the miſt of the city. The citizens at their dinners hearing the alarum, very furioſly iſſued out, with ſuch weapons as firſt came to their hands, and ſet vpon them, firſt by the by lanes, and other ſome chayned vp the ſtreets, and ſo barred them from going any further. They turne all againſt the ſouldiers that were entered the city with moſt violent ſhot. In the meane ſpace the citizens neare and about the gate with their harquebules beſtove their ſmall ſhot as thicke as haile out of windowes vpon the gate, where firſt they killed a horſe, and then diuers men entering, which troubled the other following, y a great number was euen in the very gate killed, & ſo heaped one vpon another that the gate was ſtopped, whereby all that were entered within the city, in leſſe then in one houres ſpace were killed or taken priſoners. Wherein the citizens behaved themſelues ſo valiantly, & ſo manly, that many for lacke of leade pellets tooke their monney out of their purſes, bowed it with their teeth, and put it in ſteed of pellets in their harquebules. In this ſkirmiſh of ſo liſtle ſpace, were ſlaine about 1530. freſh horſemen, and footmen, told at the burying, and more then 2000. priſoners taken, amongſt the which were the earle of Fernaugus, the biſhop of Conſtance, and many other notable perſonages. And amongſt the dead were the earle of S. Agnau, & his ſon, the earle of Challeaurouille, the ſon of the marſhall of France Biron: monſieur de Saiſonnall gouernor of Milnoy, the ſon of the L. Mirabeau, and others. A marvellous act of citizens in their defence without any ſouldiers againſt old ſouldiers & tried men of armes, and number of ſo great nobility. The prince of Orange with others had reſuſed to go forth, and his danger was not ſmall, with other gentlemen more, and lords of the religion. The prince Dolphin, the earle of Linnall and others were with the duke lookers on, and interceſſours for their friends, whom they reckened dead. After that ſaſt, the duke with his campe was forced for lacke of victuals and neceſſaries, to retire him with his army toward Machlin, and from thence with great difficulty, paſſing great waters, with loſſe of many a man, got to Doornond, where he was kept in by the generall Norris, with 23. enſignes Engliſhmen and Scots, ſo that he lacked victuals, and neceſſaries, whereby he was forced, as alſo to haue his priſoners reſtored, to enter into a treaty with the ſtates, to ſurrender all the towneſ by his men poſſeſſed, and to retire him to Dunkirke: where further with the ſtates, by interceſſion of princes was hoped a reconciliation to be made. But he ſeing the countrey unwilling, and finding himſelfe ſicke (through melancholie as was thought) retired from Dunkirke toward Fraunce. And ſo loone as he was retired, the Prince of Parma for King Philip, cauſed Dunkirke to be beſieged, ſeue Frenchmen left within it. And as the ſtates generall, and the prince of Orange would haue ſent thither to reſcue the towne, the marſhall Biron with his Frenchmen and Swiſſers, the Flemings, chiefly they of Gaunt, partly for hatred of the French,

French, and partly that many now were become Spanissh, would not suffer him to come ouer into Flaunders, whereby Dunkerke was forced to surrender: and this losse being imputed to the Duke, increased his sicknesse, so that he died at Chateau Thierie the 10. of July. Anno 1583. and was royally buried at Paris, and now to our matters at home.

The thirtieenth day of Januarie, in the parish of Armitage, in a place called Blackmoze in Dorsetshire, a peece of ground containing three acres, remooued from the place where it was first planted, and was carried cleane ouer another close, where Alder and Willow trees grew, the space of fortie goads (euery goad containing 15. foote) and hath slopt vp a high way that directed totowards the market towne of Cerne, and yet notwithstanding the hedges wherewith it was inclosed, inuironed it still, and the trees stand thereon bolt vpriight, sauing one Oake that is well nigh twenty goads remooued: the place where this ground had his being, is left like vnto a great pit.

The same 13. day of Januarie being sonday, about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, the old and underpropped scaffolds round about the Beare garden, commonly called Paris garden, on the Southside of the riuer of Chamis ouer against the citie of London, ouercharged with people, fell suddenly downe, whereby to the number of eight persons men and women were slaine, and many others sore hurt and bruised to the shortening of their liues. A friendly warning to such as more delight themselves in the crueltie of beasts then in the works of mercie, the fruits of a true professed faith, which ought to be the sabboth daies exercise.

The third of Februarie being sonday, William Bruister Haberdasher (a man of more then 60. yeares old) being lodged ouer the southwell porch of Saint Brides church in Fleetstreete, with a woman named Mary Breame (whome the same Bruister had bailed out of Bridewell) were both found smouldered to death, in manner as shall be shewed. On the same sonday in the morning a wedding being celebrated in that church, a strong sauer was smelt, which was thought to be the burning of old shoes, or such like in some gentlemans chamber neere thereabouts, but in the afternoone before eurning prayer, the parishioners espied a smoke to issue out of Bruisters chamber, and thereupon made hast to his doore, which they found fast locked on the inside, and were forced to breake it open, and yet could not enter till they had ripped vp the lead and rooffe of the chamber, to let out the smouldering stench: which being done, they found Bruister dead, sitting on a settle by the beds side (in his apparell and close trussed) his right thigh and right arme vp to the elbow bent with the fire of a small pan of coales that stood before him. The woman also lay dead ouer the pan, so that her armes were bent, with the neather part of her bodie before to the breast, and behind to the shoulders, and nothing else in the chamber bent but the bottome of the settle wheron Bruister sat. Marie Breame had bene accused by her husband to be a nice woman of her bodie, but her husband being a bad man, and hauing spent faire and large possessions and all whatsoeuer, hauing but two pence left in his purse, hung himselfe on a tree, against a stone wall at Harten abbey in Surrey about Whitson-tide, in Anno 1592.

The 16. of Aprill in the morning, Thomas Worth and Alice Shephard were

hanged

hanged

1583

A strange kind of earth moouing in Dorsetshire.

Eight persons killed by the fall of a scaffold at the Beare garden.

Wil. Bruister and Marie Breame smothered to death, though some fable to the contrarie.

Houses  
blowne vp  
with gun-  
powder.

hanged at Shooe lanes end in Fleetstreet of London, for killing of an apprentice in the same lane. Also the same day about eight of the clocke in the morning, a gunpowder house in Fetter lane, and diuerse other houses neare adioyning were blowne by, with the spoile of 1500. weight of powder, and two men and one woman were slaine, and diuerse other persons as well men as women and children were sore hurt, some blasted with the flames, some bruised with timber that fell vpon them.

Alasco of  
Poland.

Albertus Alasco free baron of Lasco, Vaivoda, or palatine of Siradia in Poland, arrived at Harwich in Essex, & on the last of Aprill came by water to Winchester house in Southwarke, where he remained for y<sup>e</sup> most part of his abode here.

Thacker  
and Coping  
hanged at  
Bery for  
bookes.

Elias Thacker was hanged at Saint Edmondsburie in Suffolke on the fourth of June, and Iohn Coping on the first of the same month, for spreading certaine bookes, seditiously penned by one Robert Browne against the booke of Common prayer established by the lawes of this Realme, their booke so many as could be found were burnt before them.

Earle of Suff-  
sex deceased

On the 9. of June deceased Thomas Ratcliffe earle of Sussex, lord Chamberlaine to her maiestie, and knight of the garter, at Bermondsey besides London, & was on the 8. of July conveyed through the citie of London toward Peters hall in Essex there to be buried: first went before him 45. poore men in blacke gownes, then on horsebacke 120. seruing men in blacke coates, then 25. in blacke gownes or clokes, besides the heraults of armes and others, which bare his helme, crell sword, coate of armes, and banners of armes, &c. then the deceased earle in a chariot covered with blacke velvet, drawn of foure goodly geldings: next after him was led the earles steed covered with blacke velvet, then sir Henry Ratcliffe the succeeding earle chiefe mourner, and 8. other lords all in blacke, then the lord maior and aldermen of London riding in murrey, then y<sup>e</sup> gentlemen of Greis Inn, and last of all the worshipfull merchant Tailors in their liuries, for that the said earle was brother of their companie, as many noble men & famous princes kings of this realme before him had bene, as more at large I haue set downe in my funerarie, the eighteenth yeare of H. 7. the maior and aldermen, the gentlemen of Greis Inn, and the merchant Tailors accompanied the corpes to the bars without Aldgate, and returned.

Archbishop  
of Canter-  
burie decea-  
sed.

Edmond Grindall bishop of London, translated to be archbishop of Yorke and then of Canterburie, deceased at Croidon in Surrey on the first of July, and was there honorably buried vnder a faire monument for him raised. This archbishop in his life, and by appointment to be finished after his death, founded a grammar schoole at Saint Beghes in the countie of Cumbreland where he was borne, with a schoole house for the maister and scholars to be endued with thirtie pound by yeare, the schoolemaister to haue twenty pound, and a scholer to teach as Master 5. marks by yeare, the rest to be bestowed according to his statutes. To Duenes collidge in Oxford twenty pounds by yeare to maintaine one fellow, and two scholars to be taken out of his said schoole, and to that collidge he gaue the most part of his bookes, he forgauethem fortie pounds, and gaue them in plate 87. ounces and a quarter. To Pembroke hall in Cambridge, he gaue 22. l. by yeare, whercof 40. s. for the maintenance of a Greeke lecture, & the other 20. l. for a fellow, & 2. scholars



to be likewise taken out of his schoole: to this colledge he gaue some bookes, and plate 40. ounces & halfe. To Hagdalen colledge in Cambridge, he gaue five. l. by yeare for one scholer to be taken out of his said schoole. To Christs colledge in Cambridge plate 45. ounces. To the 8. little poore almes houses in Croydon 50. l. to be bestowed in land for their reliefe. To the citie of Canterburie 100. l. to be employed vpon a stocke to set the poore on worke, which stocke (as I am informed) was neuer put to so good an vse.

Bernard Randolph esquire, senior sergeant to the citie of London, deceased on the 7. of August. This man in his life time deliuered 900. l. of good and lawfull money of England to the company of fishmongers in London, and bequeathed by his testament 1000. pounds more, all to be employed in charitable actions, as I haue set downe in my summarie, and in Reigne Woolles chronicle.

In the moneth of Iune, were sent to the seas a ship called the bark Talbot, and a small bark, both manned with 100. men vnder the charge of the worshipsful W. Borough esquire, cleark of her maiesties nauie, for apprehending of certaine outrageous sea-rouers, who for y they were many in number & wel appointed, so boldly behaved themselues, as y shortly after it was confidently bruted, y they had vanquished in fight the said ship & bark: but within few daies after, beyond all expectation, they were by the said W. Borough & his company discomfited & taken to y number of ten saile (whereof three were prizes, & some of the chiefe pirats, namely, Thomas Walton, alias Purser, Clinton, Ackinson, Wil. Ellis, Wil. Valentine, alias Bigh, Tno. Beuen, John Pollard, Edm. Copinger, Ro. Woodman, & John Euans, who on y thirtieth day of August were hanged at Wlapping in the Wlose besides London. Walton as he went toward the gallies rent his venetian breeches of crimosin taffata, and distributed the same to such his old acquaintance as stood about him, but Ackinson had before giuen his murrey velvet doublet with great gold buttons, & his like coloured velvet venetians laid with great gold lace apparell too sumptuous for sea rouers which he had worne at the seas, and wherein he was brought vp prisoner from Corfe castell in the isle of Porbeck to London) vnto such friends as pleased him.

Sea rouers apprehended and executed.

On the 17. day of Sept. Iohn Lewes, who named himself Abdoir, an obstinate heretike, denying the Godhead of Christ, & holding diuerse other detestable heresies (much like to his predecessor Mathew Hamond) was burned at Norwich.

Iohn Lewes brent at Norwich.

On y 22. of Sep. Albertus de Lasco, palatine of Siradia in Poland, before spoken of, when he had well viewed y order of our English court & nobilitie, with other places of this realme, especially y Uniuer. of Oxford, he returned into Poland.

Palatine of Siradia in Poland returned.

The 23. of September, Iohn White gift doctoz of diuinitie, sometime maister of Trinitie colledge in Cambridge, and afterward bishop of Worcester, was at Lambhith translated to the archbishopricke of Canterburie.

Doctor Whitegift archbishop of Canterburie.

The 10. of October, at Caister in Norfolk, about two miles from Parimouth, there was a fish by force of y easterly wind driuen on shore, y length whereof was from the necke to the taile 17. yards & a foot, y head was great, for the chap of the iaw was 3. yards & a quarter in length, with teeth of 3. quarters of a yard copasse, great eyes, & 2. great holes ouer them to spout out water, her taile was 14. foote in breadth, in thickenesse from the backe to the belly she was 4. yards and an halfe.

A monstrous fish taken.

Slade and  
Bodie exe-  
cuted.

John Slade schoolemaister, and John Bodie maister of art, being both condemn-  
ned of high treason for maintaining of Romane power, were drawne, hanged,  
bowelled, and quartered: Slade at Winchelsea on the 30. of October, and Bodie  
at Andover on the 2. of November.

An. reg. 26.  
Horse stea-  
lers hanged  
ten at once.

One Dietch a notable horse stealer was apprehended, and at the sessions holden  
at Newgate on the fourth of December 19. times indicted, where he confessed 18,  
who also betwene the time of his apprehension and the sayd sessions, apprehended  
many for stealing of horses, whereof ten were hanged in Smithfield on the first of  
December, being horse market there: he also holpe diuerse men to their horses a-  
gaine, and tooke of every one of them 10. s. the peece, or more, whereby he made  
15. l. toward his charges.

Desmonds  
head set on  
London  
bridge.

James earle of Desmond in Ireland, secretly wandering without any succour,  
being taken in his cabine by one of the Irish, his head was cut off, and sent into  
England, where the same, as the head of an arch rebel, was set on London bridge  
on the 13. of December.

The towne  
of Nant-  
wich brent.

The same 13. of December, through negligence of vndiscrete persons betwix  
in the towne of Nantwich, the fire being carelesly left, upon some light matter, &  
so burst forth to the roofes of the house, and in short time increased, that from the  
west end of the towne the flame was disperfed so furiously into the towne,  
that in short space a great part of the towne was burned downe to the ground, &  
there was consumed about the number of 200. houses, besides brew houses,  
barnes, stables, &c. in all about 600. houses.

Someruill,  
Arden, and  
other arraign-  
ed.

About this time, John Someruill a furious young man of Elsworth in War-  
wickshire, of late discovered and taken in his way comming with full intent to  
kill the queenes maiesty, whom God long prosper to raigne ouer vs, confessed the  
treason, and that he was mooued therunto in his wicked spirit, by certaine tray-  
terous persons his kinsmen and alics, and also by often reading of certaine sedi-  
tious bookes lately published, for the which the sayd Someruill, Edward Arden a  
squire in Parkhall in Warwickshire, Mary Arden his wife father and mother in  
law to the sayd Someruill, and Hugh Hall priest, being with other before indicted  
at Warwicke, were on the 16. of December arraigned in the Guild hall of Lon-  
don, where they were found guilty and condemned of high treason. On the 19. of  
December, John Someruill, and Edward Arden, being brought from the tower  
of London to Newgate of the same city, & there shut vp in seuerall places: within  
two houres after, Someruill was found (desperatly) to haue strangled himselfe.  
And on the morrow being the 20. of December, Edward Arden was drawne fro  
Newgate into Smithfield, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered: whose  
head with Someruills head was set on London bridge, and his quarters on the  
gates of the city, but the body of Someruill was buried in the Mooresfields neare  
vnto the windmills.

1584.  
Carter exe-  
cuted.

On the 10. of January, at a sessions holden in the Justice hall in the Old bailey  
of London, for gaole deliuey of Newgate, William Carter of the city of London,  
was there indicted, arraigned, and condemned of high treason, for printing a sedi-  
tious and trayterous booke in English, entituled, A treatise of schisme: and was  
for the same (according to sentence pronounced against him, on the next morrow  
drawne.

drawne from Newgate to Tiborne, and there hanged, botwelled, and quartered. And forthwith against slanderous reports spread abroad in seditious bookes, letters, and libels thereby to inflame our countrey men, and her maiesties subiectes, a booke was published, intituled, A Declaration of the fauorable dealing of her maiesties commissioners, &c. which booke also I haue caused to be set downe in the Continuation of the chronicle, first collected by Reigne Wolfe, and finished by Raphaell Hollenshed.

The 22. of Januarie John Watson bishop of Winchester deceased at Wolsley, and was buried at Winchester on the 12. of Februarie.

The tenth of Februarie, were arraigned at Westminster John Fen, George Haddock, John Munden, John Nutter, and Thomas Hemerford, all five found guilty of high treason, in being made priests beyond the seas, and by the Popes authoritie, since a statute made in *Anno primo* of her maiesties raigne, and had iudgement to be hanged, botwelled, and quartered: which were all executed at Tiborne on the 12. of Februarie.

The 21. of May, Francis Throckmorton esquire was arraigned in the Guild hall of the citie of London, where being found guilty of high treason, he was condemned, & had iudgement to be drawen, hanged, botwelled, & quartered. The 10. of July next following, the same Francis Throckmorton was conveyed by water from the tower of London to the Blacke friers staires, and from thence by land to the sessions hall in the Old bailey without Newgate, where he was deliuered to the sherifes of London, laid on a hurdle, drawne to Tiborne, & there executed according to his iudgement. A discovery of whole treasons, practised & attempted against the Quenes maiestie & the realme, were in the moneth of June published and printed in a booke intituled, A true and perfect Declaration of the treasons practised and attempted by Francis Throckmorton &c. And the same I haue set downe in the continuation of Reigne Wolfes chronicle.

The 19. of July, Robert baron of Denbigh, the onely son and heire of Robert earle of Leicester, departed this mortall life, being then of the age of thre yeares & somewhat more, at Wansted in Essex, whose funerail was there honorably kept on the first of August, and after his body was conueied to Warwike, and there in the chappell of Richard Beauchampe earle of Warwike, honorably interred on the 20. of October. The 12. of Nouember, the quenes maiestie (returning after her progresse) came to her manor of S. James, where the citizens of London to the number of 200. the grauest for in coats of velvet, & chaines of gold on horse backe, and 1000. of the companies on foote (hauing with them 1000. men with torches ready there to giue light on euery side, for that the night drew on / receiued and welcomed her: And on the 24. day of the same moneth, her maiestie and the lords rode to the parliament, which was that day begun at Westminster.

In the moneth of January deceased Edward Fines lord Clinton, earle of Lincoln, and lord admirall of England, knight of the garter, and one of her maiesties priuy counsell, a man of great yeares and seruite, as well by sea as by land, he was buried at Windsoꝝ.

The 21. of January, Iesuites, Seminaries, & other massing Priests to the number of 21 late prisoners in the tower of London, marthalsea, & kings bench, were

Bishop of Winchester deceased.  
Seminaries executed.

Francis Throckmorton arraigned and executed.

Baron of Denbigh deceased.

The Londoners receiue the quene from her progresse.

An. reg. 27. Parliament at Westminster.

1585. Earle of Lincoln deceased.

Seminaries and other banished shipped England.

The Earle  
of Darby his  
ambassage  
into France.

shipped at y<sup>e</sup> towne wharfe to be coueyed towards France, & banished this realme for euer, by vertue of a commission from her maiesty, as may more fully appeare by the same commission, set doونه in my cōtinuation of Reine Woolfes chronicle.

Henry earle of Darby, appointed by her maiesty ambassador to Henry the 3. french king, and to inuest him with the order of the garter, tooke his leaue of the queenes maiesty at Grenewich the 20. of January, and with him such gentlemen as were present were admitted to kisse her highnes hand, M. Cooke Claenceaux appointed to attend in that boyage in place of Garar whose roome was boyde, and Robert Glouer Somerset herault, likewise appointed to that iourney noblemen & gentlemen attending on the earle of Darby, the L. Sands, Frederike L. Winsor maister Scrope son and heire to the L. Scrope, maister Windsor brother to the L. Windsor, sir Richard Sherborne, sir Ralph Brierton, maister Anthony Cooke maister Gerard son and heire to sir Thomas Gerard, maister Fleewood, maister Nudigate, maister Stallage gentleman usher, the queenes seruants, maister Crompton, maister Smith, maister Denton, maister Miles, maister Thomas Arde steward, maister Fox controller, maister Newton gentleman usher, maister Philips chaplaine, maister Alexander gentleman of the horse, maister Morecroft phisition: The earles waiting gentlemen, maister Dawnie son & heire to sir Iohn Dawnie, maister Legh son and heire to sir Pierce a Legh, maister Warren, &c. On the 26. of January, the earle with his traine passed from London to Grauesend, where taking post horses, they rid to Sittingborne, and from thence to Dover, where they embarked & landed at Calais on the 1. of february. On the 3. of february, y<sup>e</sup> earle with his whole traine went from Calais to Boloigne to bed, where they were very well entertained. On the 4. of february, they rid to Montreuil, on the 5. to Abbeuil, where they were met with 150. shot of harquebusiers. On the 6. they tooke their iourney to Amiens, where of monsieur Creuicure accompanied with 100. gentlemen, & best citizens, they were met halfe a mile without the towne, y<sup>e</sup> night the sayd Creuicure presented the earle with great store of very large & good fresh water fish, and the towne with wine of diuers sorts, the day following being Sunday, the sayd Creuicure invited the earle to dinner, which dinner was highly commended. After dinner, the earle with his traine went to Bethnill to bed, the next night to Cleremount, where he staid tuesday and wednesday: the tenth of february he went to Luzarch. On the 11. to S. Denis, where by the way he was met by sir Edward Stafford, her maiesties ambassador resident with the french king, who brought with him diuerse gentlemen of England, to the number of thirty horse, and so accompanied him to Saint Denis, where they kept company all the day following being Friday. On Saterday, his honor made his entry into Paris about two or three of the clocke at afternoone, there being of the lord ambassadors traine more then two hundred horse, and mid way betwene S. Denis and Paris, there met with them sent from the king, the duke of Montpensier a prince of the blood, the lord of Caignie, le Chapell aux Vifius, countie de Lude, de Piennre, de Malicorn, de la Mothienilon, who had sometimes bene ambassadour ligger in England, Destrie, Dabin, de Fontaines, de Cornillon, the marques of Curton, the countie de Grignan, all counsellors to the counsell, and knights of the holy Ghost. The duke of Tremouille, the countie Brisac, de Creance, Sancerne,



Sancerre, and of Lazure, with a great number of lords and barons, gentlemen of the chamber. These did accompanie the earle of Darbie unto Hostell de Longe-neuill sometime called the Hostell of Aniou, there was his lordship with the other lords and gentlemen lodged, where was three tables very sumptuously furnished for them, all of the kings cost, the one table in the great chamber, for the lords and gentlemen servants to her maiestie, the other in the hall for the earle of Darbies gentlemen and the third in a gallerie beneath for gentlemen servants, besides liuerie into euery chamber, both of ware, wood, wine, and such like, in as great plenty as could be desired. On Sunday the 14 of february, y<sup>e</sup> said earle betwixt the houres of two & thre in the afternoone, went from his lodging by a posterne through the garden, accompanied with the said lords, De la Moth Fenelon, de Curton, and Grignan, together with other, and found the capitaines of the regiment of the kings garde, making two ranks on either side of the streete, beginning from the posterne to the Louure gate, who welcommed him in the kings behalf. Without the gate of the said Louure, he was receiued by the Lieutenants of the great Prouost of France and his archers. At the Louure gate by the tier de Montegnie, capitaine thereof to his maiestie, and his archers, which archers together with those of the great Prouost made two ranks from the said gate of the Louure, to the foote of the staires: from which foote, his Lordship was receiued by the tier de Perdillon, the French Lieutenant of the Smithers of the Kings guard, which from the foote of the said staires to the doore of the hall made two ranks, for his lordships passage. At the entrie of the hall, his lordship was receiued by the tier de Chasteau Vieux knight of the holy ghost, and capitaine of the archers of the Kings guard, who likewise from the said doore vnto the doore of the antichamber, made two ranks: from the doore of the antichamber, his lordship was receiued by tier de Combault of the holy ghost, chiefe maister de Hostelle to his maiestie, and by his gentlemen waiters: and there in the said antichamber, all the said earle of Darbies officers and gentlemen wearing liueries, were appointed to stay, and the Queenes seruants that proceeded next, went still forward: at the entrie of the chamber of estate, his lordship was receiued by the tier de Liencourt knight of the holy ghost, chiefe esquire of the kings esquire, and the other esquires of the esquire, together with the lieutenant of the hundred, gentlemen of his Maiestie, who made two ranks from that chamber doore to the chamber of audience, euery of them hauing halbarts in their hands. At the entrance of the antichamber, his Lordship was receiued by the Duke Ioieulx, accompanied with the gentlemen of the kings chamber ordinarie, who made two ranks from that chamber doore to the doore of the chamber royall. Into the said chamber royall first entred all the Gentlemen the Queenes Maiesties seruants, the lords that had receiued and accompanied the said earle and Lords: and the said Duke de Ioieulx accompanied the said earle of Darby vnto the bars that stood about the hall pace, or mounting floore in the said chamber, where the king stood at his beds feete, accompanied without the said barriers, on his right hand with the Cardinals of Bourbon, Vandome & Ioieulx, & on the left hand with the lords, y<sup>e</sup> princes of Contie, the countie de Soissons, & D. Montpensier, princes of y<sup>e</sup> bloud: the dukes of Brucers, Delbeuse, de la Tremouille, de Retz, Monsieur le Châcellor,

the

ſier de Vilequier, du Bonchafe, de la Valette, Dantragues, de la Chapelle aux Vrfius, Cauignie, la Vanguion, counte de Mawleurier, Clermont, Dantragues, de Larchant, and other knights of the holy ghoſt, and counſellers of the eſtates in great number. The ſaid earle with the L. ambaffador ordinarie of England, aloneely entred within the ſaid haltpace within the barriers vnto his maieltie, of whom they were receiued with great curteſie, & as amiable countenance as could be, & the earle deliuered the Duchenes maielties letters vnto the king with great reuerence, & then making rehearfall of that he had in charge to ſay, the ſaid ambaffador preſented vnto the king the lords Sands and Windſore, and other the Engliſh knights and gentlemen, which all one after another mounted vpon the haltpace, kiſſed their hands, & did their reuerence vnto the king. Then the earle tooke his leaue, and was conducted by all the lords and captaines vnto the place where they had firſt receiued him. Afterward he went to ſalute the queene mother, & at the entrance into her chamber, he was receiued by Monſieur de Lanſac knight of the holy ghoſt, & knight of honor vnto the ſame queene, whom he found accompanied with her neece the princeſſe of Loraine, ſtanding at her beds head, the princeſſe of Condie and Fontie, and the duches of Peuers ſtanding at the beds feete, the duchelles of Dufe, and of Re, and other ladies & gentlewomen in great number. From thence his lordſhip was conueyed to the queene regents chamber, at the entrance whercof he was receiued by the countie de Fieſque knight of the holy ghoſt, and her knight of honor, finding her accompanied with the duchelles of Montpenſier & Loieulx, who ſtood at her beds feete, the lady of Roideu her lady of honor, and other ladies & gentlewomen in great number, & then returned to y<sup>e</sup> ſaid hoſſel de Longueuille. On monday the 15. of february, the K. by Monſieur le Mothſenelon ſold the lord ambaffador his mind, touching the receit of y<sup>e</sup> order, that he intended to receiue it on Thursday following in the after noone, at y<sup>e</sup> Auguſtine friers, which was done accordingly, with a mantle of blew velvet, and a hood, & collar of the order, with a booke of the ſtatutes of the order, which all were inueſted vpo the king, in a place called Hailon de nauralles, but y<sup>e</sup> oth was miniſtered vnto the king in y<sup>e</sup> friers church, *Magnificat* being ſung. On the 28. of february, y<sup>e</sup> ambaffador with his traine tooke their leaue, at whoſe returne fro y<sup>e</sup> court to his lodging, he was preſented y<sup>e</sup> night with a rich cupboord of plate, worth 1200. l. at the leaſt: & vnto maiſter Clarenceaux was giue a chaine of gold, worth 120. l. & better, of 236. links, to maiſter Somerſet a chaine of 150. links, worth 100. marks, & to Thomas Milles a chaine of the ſame value. On Thursday next, the earle with his traine ſet forthward homewards from Paris vnto S. Denies, & ſo were lodged all the way, in the ſame lodgings that beſore they had bene receiued in, and arrived proſperouſly in England, from Bolotigne to Douer the twelfth of March, & on the Tueſday following were brought to the queenes maielties preſence at Greenwich, who graciously welcomed them home.

William  
Parry executed.

The 2. day of March William Parry, was dratone from the towter through the city of London to Weſtminſter, and there in the palace court, hanged, bowelled and quartered for high treaſon, as may appeare by a booke ertant, intituled, A true & plaine declaration of the horrible treaſons prauiſed by W. Parry, &c. & I haue ſet downe the ſame booke in the continuance of Reine Woolſes Chronicle.

This

This yere sir Walter Mildmay knight, Chancelor of the Exchequer, and one of her maiesties priuie counsell, founded a colledge in the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, bp:n the houle and ground of the late frier preachers Dominiks, or blacke friers, in the preachers streete, and named it Emanuell colledge.

Emanuell  
Colledge  
founded.

The 29. of March, the parliament was dissolved, at the breaking vp whereof, the Queenes maiestie made an Oration in the Parliament houle, to such effect as followeth. My Lords and ye of the lower houle, my Silence must inuie the owner so much, as to suppose a substitute sufficient to render you the thanks that my hart yeeldeth you : not so much for the safe keeping of my life for which your care appareth so manifest) as for the neglecting your priuate future perill, not regarding other way then my present state, no prince herein (I confesse) can be surer tied or faster bound then I am, with the linke of your good will, and can for that but yeeld a hart and head to seeke for euer all your best : yet one matter toucheth me so nere as I may not ouerskip : religion, the ground on which all other matters ought to take roote, and being corrupted may mar all the tree : and that there be some faultfinders with the order of the clergie, which so may make a slander to my selfe & the Church, whose ouer-looker God hath made me, whose negligence cannot be excused, if any schismes or errors hereticall were suffered. Thus much I must say, that some faults & negligences may grow & be, (as in all other great charges it hapneth) & what vocation without ? all which if you my lords of the clergie do not amend, I mind to depose you, looke you therefore well to your charges, this may be amended without heedles or open exclamation. I am supposed to haue many studies, but most philosophical: I must yeeld this to be true, & I suppose few & be no professors) haue read more. And I need not tel you & I am so simple & I vnderstand not, nor so forgetfull, & I remember not, & yet amongst my many volumes, I hope gods booke hath not bene my seldomest lectures, in which we find & which by reason (for my part) we ought to beleue, & seeing so great wickednes & griefes in & world, in which we liue but as way-faring pilgrimes, we must suppose & God wold neuer haue made vs but for a better place, & of more comfort then we find here. I know no creature & breatheth, whose life standeth hourly in more perill for it then mine own, who entred not in any state without sight of manifold dangers of life & crown, as one & had the mightiest & greatest to waile with. Then it followeth, & I regarded it so much, as I left my selfe behinde my care. And so you see, that you wrong me too much (if any such there be) as doubt my coldnes in that behalfe : for if I were not perswaded that mine were the truth of Gods will : God forbid I should liue to prescribe it to you. Take heede lest Ecclesiastes say not too true: They that feare the hoie frost, the snow shall fall vpon them. I see many ouer-bold with God Almighty, making too many subtil scannings of his blessed will, as lawyers do with humane Testaments: the presumption is so great, as I may not suffer it (yet minde I not hereby to animate Romanists, which what aduersaries they be to mine estate, is sufficiently knowen) nor tolerate new-fanglednesse. I meane to guide them both by Gods true rule : in both parts be perils, and of the latter I must pronounce them dangerous to a kingly rule, to haue euerie man according to his own censure to make a doome of the validitie and priuie of his princes government, with a common baile & cower of Gods word, whose followers must not be iudged but by

Parliament  
dissolved.  
The queenes  
maiestie her  
Oration.

primate mens exposition, God defend you from such a Ruler that so euill would guide you. Now I conclude, that your loue & care neither is nor shall be bestowed vpon a carelesse Prince, but such as for your good will passeth as little for this world as who careth least, with thanks for your free subsidie: a manifest shew of the abundance of your good wills, the which I assure you, but to be employed to your weale, I could be better pleased to returne then receiue. Thus much her Maiesties Oration. In this parliament a subsidie of 2. s. 8. goods, and 4. s. lands was granted, and two fifteenes by the laitie.

4000. Londoners trayned vp with shot, &c.

In the month of Aprill about the 14. day, by commandement of her Maiesty, the citizens of London appointed out of their companies of the same citie, to the number of 4000. men, with armes, ensignes, drums, fises, and other furniture for the wars, the greater part whereof were shot, the other were pikes, and halberds in faire coslelets: all those to be trayned by vnder expert capitaines, with sergeants of the bands, wisers, and other necessary officers, mustered, and skirmished dayly at the Hiles end, and in Saint Georges field: and on the 18. of May (having ouer night set forward out of S. Georges field) mustered in the parke at Grenewich, and skirmished before the Queenes maiestie, who gaue to them great thanks for their aduinitie and paines.

Earle of Arundell sent to the Towre. Earle of Northumberland found to haue murdered himselfe.

The 25. of Aprill, Philip Howard earle of Arundell was brought prisoner into the towre of London, for attempting to haue passed y<sup>e</sup> seas without licence, &c.

Copie of the inquisition by the crowner.

The 21. of June, Henrie Percy earle of Northumberland, prisoner in the Tower of London, vpon vehement suspicion of high treason, was there found dead, and also of his owne diuelish intent, and of his malice before pretended, to haue murdered himselfe, as moze at large may appeere, by inquisition made by a substantiall Iurie, taken before the crowner of London, as followeth *verbatim* with the record.

Verdit of the Iurie.

An inquisition taken at the citie of London, that is, within the Tower of London, in the parish of Alhallowes Barking, in the wards of the Tower of London, on Monday being the 21. day of June, in the yere of the raigne of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth by the grace of God, Queene of England, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. the 27. before William Squire Gentleman, Coroner to our said Soueraigne Lady the Queene within the Citie of London and the liberties of the same, vpon the view of the body of Henrie Percie knight, late earle of Northumberland, late prisoner there within the Tower of London aforesaid, for suspition of high treason by him supposed to be done, there lying dead, and slaine: by the othes of Nicholas Wheeler, Simon Horsepoole, T. Gardener, William Leaufson, Owen Morgan, Henry Lodge, William Abraham, William Horne, Thomas Russell, Iohn Porter, Robert Dowe, Anthony Hall, William Curtis, Thomas Wood, Matthew Dolman, Thomas Martin, Richard Slesford, Iohn Trot, Philip Smith, Thomas Tailor, and Henrie Bowdler, of good & lawfull men of the same ward, and of thre other wards to the same ward next adioyning, as the manner and custome is in the citie aforesaid, to inquire how, in what manner, and when the said Henrie Percie late earle of Northumberland came to his death. Which Iurie do say vpon their othes, that on the 21. day of this instant moneth of June, in y<sup>e</sup> yere of the raigne of our soueraigne lady Elizabeth by the grace



grace of God queene of England, Fraunce and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. The 27. aforesayd, and long before the foresayd Henry late earle of Northumberland prisoner in the tower of London situate in the parish of Alhallowes Barking aforesayd, in the ward of the tower of London aforesayd, for suspicion of high treason aforesayd, by him against our soueraigne Lady the Queene supposed to be committed, and the aforesayd earle so remaining prisoner, and being placed in a certaine chamber within the tower of London aforesayd; there prisoner remaining imagining and intending himselfe diuellishly and feloniously to kill & murder before the aforesayd 21. day of June: that is to say, the 16. day of June in the 27. yeare aforesayd, did prepare a certaine bag of iron & Steele of the value of 10. s. & with certaine bullets of lead, & a certaine quantity of gunpowder, contained in a small box, & caused the aforesayd gun, the bullets of lead, and the gunpowder to be brought into the foresayd chamber unto him the sayd earle of Northumberland, & to be deliuered to the same earle then and there by the hands of Iames a Price yeoman to execute his diuelish and felonious purpose and intention, which bag aforesayd, the foresayd earle caused secretly to be hidden in a certaine matresse vnder the bolster of his bed in the chamber aforesayd, and then and there, the foresaid 21. day of June in the 27. yeare aforesayd, betwene the houres of twelue and one in the night of the foresayd 21. day of June, thinking and intending to prosecute and follow his diuelish intention and purpose aforesayd, did bolt the doore of the aforesayd chamber, and the inner part of his sayd chamber towards himselfe, lest any man should foresee or withstand his diuelish, felonious, and malicious intent: and the sayd doore of his foresayd chamber being so bolted, the same earle then and there into his bed himselfe did lay, and vpon this afterward, that is to say, the foresaid one and twentieth of June, in the seauen and twentieth yeare aforesayd, about the houres aforesayd, within the tower of London aforesayd, situate and being in the parish of Alhallowes Barking aforesayd, in the ward of the tower of London aforesayd, not hauing the almighty God or his feare before his eyes, but being moued and seduced by the instigation of the diuell, of his malice aforesayd, pretended, did take vp into his hands the foresayd dagge of yron and Steele, then and there made ready, charged with gunpowder and three bullets of lead, and the aforesayd dagge to the left part of his breast neare vnto the pappe of the same part of his breast, then and there feloniously and diuellishly did put, and vpon the same part of his breast the foresayd dagge did discharge, by reason of the violence of which gunpowder, and of the aforesayd three bullets of lead, the foresayd earle into his body and heart, and through his chine bone, euen into his right shoulder, himselfe then and there with the aforesayd bullets of lead, feloniously and voluntarily did strike, giuing vnto himselfe then and there one mortall wound of the depth of twelue inches, and of the breadth of two inches: of which mortall wound aforesaid, the foresaid earle within the tower of London aforesaid, the day and yeare, parish and ward aforesayd, instantly died. And so the Jury doth say vpon their oathes aforesayd, that the foresayd earle, the day and yeare, and place aboue writen, of his diuelish intent aforesayd, and of his malice before pretended, feloniously and voluntarily himselfe did kill, and murder in manner and

forme

fourme aforesayd, against the peace of our soueraigne lady the queene, her crowne and dignity. But what goods and chattels the aforesayd earle in the time of the felonie and murthre of himselfe aforesayd committed, had, or as yet hath, the Jury know not, &c. in witnesse whereof, &c. This was the verdict of the Jurors, whereby it remained to prouide for the bestowing of his wretched carcasse, which on the 23. day of June was buried in S. Peters church within the sayd towne of London. This was the end of that earle, the mawer of whole murder, and part of his treasons are dilated, as the same was publickly deliuered in the Star-chamber, and after published in a booke intituled: A true and summarie report of the declaration of some part of the earle of Northumberlands treasons, deliuered, &c. And are set downe in my continuation of Maister Reine Woolfes Chronicle.

Entertain-  
ment of the  
deputies for  
the States of  
the Low  
countries.

On the 26. of June arrived at London, deputies for the States of the Netherlands, or Low countries, who were lodged about the tower streete, and had their diet for the time of their abode here very worshipfully appointed (all at the charges of her maiesty) in the clothworkers hall in Wyndhorne lane, neare to the sayd tower streete. These on the 29. of June, being the feast of the Apostle Peter and Paule, repaired to the court, then at Greenwich, where by vertue of their commissions from the united countries, they presented to her maiesty the sovereignty of those countries, to wit, of Brabant, but the commission (for the siege) of Antwerpe not full authorized, of Guelder, of Flaunders, of Holland, of Zeland, of Utrecht, and of Friseland: for Brabant, Iaques de Grise great baily of Bruges, counsellor of the Frankes for Enclerre Rotger of Barfoll gentleman: for Flaunders, Noell de Garlie lord of Shonewalle: for Holland, Iohn Wanderdoelt, lord of Portwaite: Iosse de Menin pensionarie of Dordrecht, Iohn of old Barmelt, pensionarie of Rotterdam, and D. Francis Maelo: for Zeland, Iacob Dales counsellor and pensionarie of Tergoest: for Utrecht, Paulus Buis, D. of the lawes: for Friseland, I. Fritzma gentleman, H. Ansona president of Friseland, and Lads Iangema gentleman. All these falling on their knees before her maiesty, and so remaining for a long space, one of them, to wit, Iosse de Menin counsellor and pensionary of Dordrecht, one of the commissioners for Holland, made to her maiesty this oration in french: Madam, les Estates des Prouinces Vnies des pais, &c. as I haue set downe in Reine Wolfe, with also the same in English thus: Madam, the States of the united prouinces of the Low countries, most humbly thanke your maiesty for the good affection and fauour, which it hath pleased you to shew to the sayd countries in their necessity, and to confirme the same with so many testimonies, and that lastly, after the execrable assault committed vpon the person of the late prince of Orange, at what time it pleased your maiesty to let the sayd States vnderstand by your Ambassadors maister Davison, what care you had of our defence and preservation, and also by Segnieur de Cris, the great displeasure which your maiesty conceived, to see the States frustrated of the hope which they had founded vpon the treatie of Fraunce. But since the care which your maiesty hath alwayes had ouer our good and conseruation is not thereby any whit diminished, but hath more plentifully increased, according as the  
necessity

The depu-  
ties ora-  
tion to her  
maiesty.

the necessitie of our affaires required, for which the said countrie in generall, and euery of vs in particular remaine perpetually bound to your Maiestie, and acknowledge the same with all fidelitie and obedience. And as the said States (Madame) did consider that since the decease of the Prince of Orange, they haue sustained the losse of diuerse of their holdes and good towncs, and that for the preservation of the layde Countrie it is needfull for them to haue a Prince and Soueraigne ruler, which may warrant and defend them against the tyrannie and vniust oppression of the Spaniards and their adherents, which daily more and more enforce themselves, by their greater power, and all other meanes to destroy and overthrow the layde Countreies, and reduce this poore people into perpetuall seruitude, worse then that of the Indians, vnder the importable yoke of the detestable Inquisition of Spaine. Considering also that the bodie of the Townes and Communalities of the aforesaid Countreies haue a firme hope that your Maiestie will not see them perill, according to the desire of their enemies, which make this long and cruell warre, all which outrages, the States of the layd Low countries (following the diligence and band which they owe to the Burgesses and citizens) are to sustaine, repell, and to turne from them, by reason of the manifest tyrannie and seruitude, which the Spaniards attempt to bring in and to lay vpon the poore people, thereby to preserve their liberties, rights, priuiledges, and franchises, with the exercise of the true Christian Religion, whereof your Maiestie by good right carrieth the title of Protectrice and Defendresse, against which the said enemies, and their associates alreadie haue and still do make many leagues, deuise many subtilties, treasons, and ambushes, not ceasing daily to practise and imagine them against the person of your Maiestie, and to the prejudice of the rest of your realmes and states, whom the good God hath preserved untill this present, for the wealth of the Christians, and sustentation of their Churches. Wherefore (Madame) it is so, that for causes, reasons, and other considerations, the said States haue assembled and concluded vpon a good and firme resolution, to haue recourse vnto your Maiestie, sith it is an ordinarie matter amongst all people, and oppressed nations, in their calamities and oppressions to craue support, and fauour against their enemies, of Kings and Princes neare vnto them, but especially of those who be endued with magnanimitie, pietie, iustice, and other princely vertues, to which effect the States haue appointed vs to come vnto your Maiestie, to present vnto the same, the Principallitie, Soueraigntie, and iust gouernment of the said Provinces, vnder certaine good and equall conditions, chiefly concerning the preservation of the exercise of the reformed Religion, and of the ancient priuiledges, liberties, franchises and customes, and next of the administration of the affaires, pollicie, and iustice of the warres in the said countrie. And although that these countreies haue sustained much hurt by these long and continuall warres, and that the enemy hath taken diuerse strong places and fortres in the same countreies: yet there is besides the same in the countreies of Brabant, Gelderland, Flaunders, Palmes, and Querset, many good towncs and places, which defend themselves against the force of the enemy, and the countreies, of Holland, Zeland, Vtrich, and Frisse, be yet (thanks be to God) entire

and whole: in which there be many great and strong towines and places, faire riuers, and deepe Ports and hauens of the sea, out of which your maiestie and your successors may receiue diuerse good seruices, fruites and commodities, wherof it is needlesse here to make any long recitall. Onely this amongst other matters deserueth good and especiall consideration, that the vnitng of those countries, of Holland, Zeland, Frisse, and the towines of Sluze, and Ostend in Flaunders, vnto the Realmes of your Maiestie, importeth so much as the absolute gouernment of the great Ocean sea, and by consequence, and assurance, and perpetuall felicitie for the subiects of your worthie Maiestie: which we most humbly beseech, that it will please the same to condescend vnto vs in the said points and conditions, and in that which followeth, which is, that you will for you and your lawfull successors in the crowne of England, be protectours of the reformed religion, as the principall iusticer and soueraigne gouernour of the said countries: and consequently to receiue the people of the same as your most obedient subiects vnder the protection and continuall safeguard of your Maiestie, they being a people assuredly so faithfull and louing to their princes and lords (be it spoken without haunting) as any other nation is throughout Christendome. In doing wherof (Madame) you shall preserve many goodly churches, which it hath pleased God to assemblie in these latter times in the same countries, at this present in many places grievously afflicted, and you shall deliuer the same countrie and people (of late before the vniust deedes of the house of Spaine) very rich and flourishing, through the great commoditie of the sea, ports, hauens, riuers, traffique, and marchandize, wherof they be naturally endued: you shall I say (Madame) deliuer them from ruine and perpetuall bondage of bodie and soule, being a worke right royall and most magnificient, acceptable to God, profitable to all Christianitie, worthie immortall commendation, answerable to the magnanimitie and heroicall vertues of your Maiestie, and ioyned with the assurance and prosperitie of your dominions and subiects. Whereupon we present vnto your Maiestie the said articles and conditions, reuerently praying the King of kings to preserve your maiestie from your enemies, to increase your glorie and felicitie, and for euer to keepe you in his holy protection.

This oration ended, and the summe thereof considered, it pleased the Queenes maiestie, by direction of her wise and politicke Counsell, to incline her heart to the ease and reliefe of the said oppressed people. And because her owne subiects should not be utterly vnacquainted with her highnesse doings in that case, there was published by authoritie a booke intituled, A declaration of the causes mouing the Quene of England to giue aide to the defence of the people afflicted and oppressed in the Low countries. Dated at Richmond the first of October 1585, and the 27. yeare of the raigne of our soueraigne ladie the Quene. This booke was printed in the Latine, Italian, and English tongue. And I haue let doونه the same in Reigne Woolles chronicle.

Charles lord  
Howard L.  
Admirall.

The fourth of July, Charles lord Howard late lord Chamberlaine was made lord Admirall, and Henry lord Hunsdon was made lord Chamberlaine of household.

The



The fift of July, Thomas Awfield a seminarie priest, and Thomas Welley Aufield and Welley executed. diar, were arraigned at the sessions hall in the Old bailey, found guiltie, condemned, and had iudgement as felons to be hanged: for publishing of bookes containing false, seditious, and slanderous matter, to the defamation of our soueraigne lady the Queene, these were on the next morrow executed at Tiborn accordingly.

On the 16. of July, by the sudden fall of a bricke wall in Chamis streete of London neare unto Dowgate, five persons were overwhelped and slaine, to wit, a man and his wife, the wife being great with child, and two children, the one their owne, the other a nurse child, and a poore man that liued by charitie, having no knowne dwelling place. Five persons slaine by fall of a wall.

On the same sixteenth day of July, was sir Francis Russell knight, lord Russel, third sonne to Francis Russell earle of Bedford, slaine with a dag in the borders of Scotland beside Bartwike, by a Scot boine in those parts, as they met vpon a truce day. And on the next morrow, to wit, the 17. of July, Francis Russell earle of Bedford, knight of the garter, and one of her Maiesties privie counsell (father to the late named sir Francis lord Russell slaine on the borders of Scotland) deceased, and was honorably buried at Cheinies in Bedfordshire, on the eight of September next following. The earle of Bedford and his sonne deceased.

On the thre and twentieth of July, certaine souldiers were pressed in the severall wards of the citie of London, which souldiers being furnished for the wars, and clothed in red coates, all at the charges of the companies and citizens, let forth toward the seas on the thirteenth of August, and were transported over into Holland, Zeland, &c. as other the like souldiers out of other parts of the realme, before had bene transported to serve for the defence of the Low countries under generall Norris, and other approued captaines. Souldiers transported into the Low countries.

On the 4. of August, betwixt the houres of foure and five of the clocke in the morning, at the end of the towne called Motingham in Kent, eight miles from London, in a lane not farre from the houses, the ground began to sinke, three great clines being swallowed up, the tops falling downward into a hole with the rootes upward, turning round in the falling, and driven into the earth past mans sight: and before ten of the clocke that present day, the ground and trees were sunke so low that neither the one or other might be discerned, the hole being sometimes filled with water, and other whiles neither bottome, trees, or water may be perceived. The compasse of this hole was then about fourscore yards, and being sounded with a lead and line of fiftie fadomes, cannot therewith find or feele any bottome. Ground and trees sunke & swallowed vp.

This yeare on the fourteenth of September, sir Francis Drake knight, Generall as well by sea as by land, Christopher Carlile esquire lieutenant Generall, Edward Winkar, Martine Frobisher, Francis Knowles, with diuerse other gentlemen, captaines, and two thousand three hundred souldiers and sailers in five and twentie ships and pinnelles departed from Plimmouth, and passing by the Isles of Bayon and the Canaries, arrived at Saint Iago, which city they tooke and burned: after they sailed to Saint Domingo, which they spoiled and ransomed: from thence to Carthage, which they also with great valour and especiall daunger tooke, spoiled, and ransomed: and retiring homewards Sir Francis Drake his voiage to Domingo and Carthage.

raced, and burned the fort and citie of Saint Augustine in Terra Florida : and the seven and twentieth day of July in Anno 1586. arrived at Plimmouth.

Seminarie  
and massing  
priests ba-  
nished.

On the 15. day of September, to the number of two and thirtie Semina-  
ries, massing priests, and others late prisoners in the Tower of London, Mar-  
tinsale, Kings bench, and other places, were embarked in the Marie Martine of  
Colchester, on the southside of the Thamiz right over against S. Katherines, to  
be transported over into the coastes of Normandy, to be banished this realme for  
ever, by vertue of a commission from her maiestie before specified. These being  
safely transported over to Bologne, wrote their certificate thereof as followeth:

Certificate  
returned by  
the banished  
men.

Whereas upon your Honours commission directed unto Anthonie Hall, and  
Thomas Stockar, for the transporting of vs whose names are under written, in-  
to the coastes of Normandie, who accordingly tooke vs into a barke called the  
Marie Martine of Colchester, on the southside of the Thamiz, right over against  
that part of Saint Katherines next to London bridge, the fiftenth day of Sep-  
tember 1585. according to the computation of England: our will is to testifie  
unto your good honours, that they the said Anthonie Hall and Thomas Stocker  
haue generally so well vsed vs in all respects, that we cannot but acknowledge  
our selues much beholding to so curteous and louing officers: neuertheless com-  
ming along the sea, and meeting with her Maiesties Admirall in the Dotonnes,  
who promising that we should not be disturbed in our course into the Prorince  
of Normandie, according to your Honours sayde commission, we had not from  
him departed two leagues, when as a Flushingier with his people suddenly en-  
tered vpon vs, being peaceably stowed vnder hatches, and in our quiet rest, with  
their drawne swords, their caluirs and their matches flered in their hands, to  
our great terrour and discomfort, the most of vs being very soze sea-sicke, ex-  
pecting at that instant nothing but either the rigorous dint of the sword, or bullet  
of the caluier. Notwith, partly being had by our commissioners with them,  
they departed, after which time, we considering the generall daunger on the seas,  
besought with one consent your Honours commissioners to set vs on land at  
Calice: but they in no wise yeelding thereunto, at last by reason of our im-  
portunitie in such daunger and weakenesse, yeelded to set vs on shore at Bo-  
loigne, partly by reason of the feare we were then put in, and partly for that we  
feared afterward moze vnrasonable measure, but specially the greatest number  
of vs so soze sicke, that very tedious vnto vs it seemed to beare so long and dan-  
gerous a passage. In witnesse whereof to this our certificate we haue all sub-  
scribed our names, the nineteenth of September, 1585. William Gimler, R. Fen,  
Iohn Nele, Christopher Small, &c.

Fredericke lord Windsor died at Westminster vpon the second of Decem-  
ber.

In the moneths of November and December, many hozes and men were  
shipped at the tower wharfe, to be transported over into the Low countries.  
And on the sixt of December, the right honorable Robert Dudley earle of  
Leicester, lord Lieutenant generall (after he had taken his leaue of her Ma-  
iestie and the court) with his traine (which was great) entered the towne  
of Colchester in Essex, where the bailifes and brethren in scarlet gowines  
and

and multitudes of people met him, & so with great solemnitie entred the towne, where he lodged that night, and on the next morrow set forward to Hartwich into the which towne he was accordingly receiued and entertained. On the eight of December, the said earle accompanied with the earle of Essex, the lord North, the lord Audley, sir William Russell, sir Thomas Sherley, sir Arthur Bassett, sir Walter Waller, sir Geruais Clifton, & other knights, esquires and gentlemen, to the number of five or seauen hundred horse brauely appointed, all voluntaries and of his friends, followers and seruants, Captaines and souldiers, with his traine, to the number of fiftie sailes of ships and hories, set forward towards Flushing, with sound of trumpets and drummes, shoutes and prayers of the people for happie and fortunate successe. On the tenth day he arrived at Flushing, where with his whole traine guarded in his owne person by fiftie archers with bowes and arrowes, fiftie halbarders, and fiftie gunners, he was with the intertainment of souldiers, and shot of the Towne and his noble companie before him, entertained by sir Philip Sidney gouernor vnder her Maieslie of the same towne by Graue Maurice second sonne to the deceased prince of Orange, by her Maiesties ambassadoe ligier there, and by the States of the towne, passing honourably entertained, with ringing of bells, and making of bone-fires after their manner, which is to fire greate pitch barrells on the tops of high poles, and then to fire them. He was there feasted and lodged in the Ambassadors house, where according to his accustomed disposition he demeaned himselfe so humbly, that he purchased to himselfe no lesse loue and good liking than among the English. The next day after a Sermon had, and dinner ended, he tooke shipping, and sailed toward Middleborough: in the mid way betwixt Flushing and Middleborough standeth a strong sconce of Raunkens, furnished with English men, at the which he with some of his especiall traine landed, and viewed the same, who returning againe to their ships, were presented on the top of the wals in the front of the sea with fiftie pike men very brauely furnished, hauing their English ensignes displayed, with triumph of shot, sound of trumpets and drums neere two houres together. In the which honorabie triumphes, the whole flecte hauing good winde and faire weather, sailed along to Middleborough, where on the shore side at the landing place, were, vnder nine ensignes displayed with great store of shot, the best States of the countrie attending my lords landing:ouer the gates by the port was painted the red Crosse of England, her maiesties armes, & the States, through which gates the earle and his traine entring, he was thus from his landing to his lodging garded through a lane of musket shot with the ensignes borne before him, with trumpets and drums very royally, almost a quarter of a mile. In the middle of the market place were the English ensignes aduanced, and deliuered vnto him, with the which and the rest borne before him he came to his lodging, where at the intreatie of the States, he staid more than two houres at the gate to see the souldiers marching and their strengthes: after which, because it was neere night, he entred and made his dinner and supper all one. Three of those nine ensignes were new: In the first were her maiesties and the Emperors armes quartered: In the second the earle of Leicester and the

Robert earle of Leicester transported ouer sea to Flushing.

The earles garde.

Sir Philip Sidney gouernor of Flushing.

Three ensignes among the rest.

prince of Oranges armes together: In the third were the seven provinces pecked into her maiesty, all very excellently emblaſoned. In a large table hanged over the gate of the English house in Middleborough, were emblaſoned the armes of her maiesty along about the rest, next vnder that the lord lieutenant's armes on the one side at large, hard by the which was set out the armes of the States and their houses: all which artificially by a chaine were linked together, and fastened to the English armes, vnder which was written at the foote of this frame, *Quos Deus coniunxit, homo non separet*. Thus with great ioy & continuall triumph was he entertained on their Christmas eues eue, after the Romish computation, which they in Zealand and Holland obserue in that order.

The Lord lieutenant feasted in the Christmas time, and first on Christmas eue, as followeth.

On Christmas eue, the States of the towne in the States house, which standeth in the midst of the towne or market place, feasted him sumptuously: In the first course of which feast throughout the table was nothing but boiled meates, all flesh most excellent dainty: In the second course was all roſt meates that could be thought, pigs serued on their feete, and wild foule part in the feathers: In the third course was all kind of baked meates, as foules in pies with their heads and failes unplucked all beset with pendants of her maiesties, the lord lieutenants, the countries, and diuerse English mens armes on the same. The fourth and last course was a rare banquet of incredible workmanship, as a castle of cristall founded on a rocke of pearle, about the which flowed silver streames, in which lay foules, fishes, and beasts of all kinds, some hurt, some slaine, and some gasping for breath, on the top of the which was a faire virgin lady leaning, and giuing her hands over the castle to succour them, very wonderfully wrought. There was wine in abundance, musick of all sorts, variety of all things, and wonderfull welcomes. This feast began at cleuen of the clocke before noone, and continued till siue in the after noone.

Lord lieutenant feasted the States on Christmas day.

The next day being Christmas day, the earle to requite the States cost, invited them all, whom he feasted very royally after the English fashion. On Saint Stephens day he feasted the widow princeſſe of Orange, with her second sonne countie Maunce, and their traines so sumptuously as beſeemed his and their honours. Here dispatching his weighty affaires he continued seven dayes, after which he determined to saile towards Dort, which by iudgement of the countrie is not past ten houres sailing at the most. On the 17. of December (after the account of England) with faire wind and weather, the whole flecte of Dutch hoies hoised by saile toward Dort, but on the sudden, being onward on their iourney, the ayre was so ouercast with mists, that they knew not how to saile for succour, neither backward nor forward: the reason was this: The riuer they had to saile through, was none other then an ouerflowne country, full of old foundations of houses, churches, and castles, so that the clearest aire did no more then safegard the hopes from daunger. The 20. day, my lord with some other landed at Williamſtate or Rag on hill, where he dined, and went aboard againe. On the one and twentieth of December, diuers ships of men of war and others, with the States of Dort in them, met our flecte on the water, where betwixt their ships and ours was at the meeting of the earle great triumphs with shot, in which came many small scouts of succor to hasten the traines to shore, where in good time they entered  
Dort



Went very royally and triumphantly. On the port to gard his person was set his owne gard of archers, shot, and haibards. And ouer the gate of entrance was her maiesties, the earles and the States armes cimblasoned. When he was landed, & conducted by the States, he passed from the port through a lane of musket shot, all Dutch, braue and well appointed, with 8. ensignes displayed before him in the midst whereof was the English ensigne aduanced, whence with 800. shot he was brought to his lodging. After whose entrance they & the great shot continued triumphing an houre and moze: here he continued a day and two nights with singular entertainment, and verses which I ouerpasse. On the 23. of December, the earle tooke scouts to passe to Rotherdame by a riuer of fresh water very narrow, where the boates or scouts are some by men, some by horses dragged along the riuer: but in his passage the night being cleere, suddenly there arose so great a tempest, that it put the small vessels in great daunger, but after an houre the weather wared calme, and the night cleere, only a Dutch captaine and three or foure of his men were drowned: toward night he dyet to neare to the towne of Rotherdame, where on the water he was met with thre barges of pleasure, in euery of which was 12. sailers, the first all in blew ierkins and benetians, with red caps and whole cyppes white satire like. In the second 12. all in buffe. In the third 12. all in flagg thynnmed like very braue, with their oares red and white: in these boates were great stoe of fire workes and rockets to cast into the aire, and at the sterne of euery one were cressets, which towards night were lighted, and on the water made an excellent shew. Thus with trumpets sounding all the way, was he brought to Rotherdame by water to his lodging in the middle of the towne. On the other side of them, on the bankes stood ranks of souldiers all with musket shot, betwixt euery foure of them was placed a torch or cresset burning: & thus he entred his lodging, where the States accompanied him to supper that night. Here the inhabitants were ioyfull of the English mens coming, making much of the traine. The townes men had made very memorably in the middle of the market place, the whole proportion of Erasmus in a pulpet, as though he were preaching, holding a booke of the paraphrasis on the Gospels in his hand, vnder whom was written Erasmus Rotherodame. The earle made hast towards Delph, being from thence accompanied with the States, his barges of pleasure, & whatsoeuer was thought honorable. They came late to Delph, somewhat darke, but lighted by cressets along the narrow riuer, on the which many rockets & fire workes were used. On the landing port stood great stoe of musket shot, with many new ensignes like a lane for him to passe through, all which brought him to his lodging, which was the house wherein the prince of Orange was slaine, ouer the gate of which house were verses which I ouerpasse. On the 25. of December, the earle was feasted of the States very royally, and on the next morrow the earle feasted them, amongst whom was the princesse of Des, with a company of honorable ladies and gentlewomen: at the table was dutch musicke of all kinds. And it is to be noted, that the further the earle went vp into Holland, the brauer the countrey was, and the better was his lordship welcomed, as appeared by his excellent entertainment: from thence he remoued on the 27. of December to Donhage, where he determined to keepe his standing court. In the evening

Lord lieuten-  
nant entred  
Dort.

Lord lieuten-  
nant entred  
Rotherdame

The Lord  
lieutenants  
entring  
Delph.

Lieutenant  
entredh Dū-  
bags.

the earle by cresset light, torches, and deuises of fire worke, entred into the towne of Dunhage with his traine of English men, besides the states of Rotherodame and Delph, with those of Dunhage that met him on the water, with musket shot very many. At the entrance of my lord by water on the riuer met him certaine fisher men, which presented Peter, James, and Iohn at their harborough: by them Christ walking on the water, who commanding them to cast out their nets the second time, they drew in abundance, wherewith they made shew of presentment to the earle. for the which with thanks he passed by. Further on the riuer late the representation of Mars and Bellona, who uttered speeches vnto him as he passed. At his landing met him a troupe of horsemen, furnished and trapped antike in colours, before whom hauing fetched many courtes, they rode away. At the entrance of the fairest streete, there were on each side of the same galleries, raised a mans height each against other, all hung with blacke bairis, on both which galleries on each side stood fiftene virgins all clad in white, with branches of palme or bore wreathed about, wore candles light in their hands, euery of which did reuerence vnto the earle, these stood a speares length distant each from other. Betwixt euery one hung a looking glasse, and betwixt euery glasse vpon a pretie antike pearsh stood a ware candle burning, and at each end of the gallerie stood a champion, and a blacke Hooze, the one supporting the armes of England, and the other the armes of Holland. This shew was very proper: all the way as the earle passed through were artificially made gates raised of rageged stauies, and vpon euery snagge stood a small ware candle burning, by which hung the armes of diuerse craftes men of the towne. The streete all the way was hanged with broade clothes, vpon the which were placed store of red roses on sheets of paper painted. At the next turning he was entertained with this shew. Over a gate vpon a very high scaffold was a conceined battell fought betwene the English souldiers and the Spaniards, the English men still preuailling: vnder which were written verses to that effect. Passing forward, was a lofty scaffold very faire builded, with her maiesties armes at large placed: on the top stood seuen vergins, representing the seuen prouinces, euery virgin holding a speare, and the armes at large emblazoned, which prouince she did signifie, in the middell of them stood Minerva armed, incompassed about the body with the armes of England, vpon whom all the rest seemed to relie. All which were represented vnto her maiesty by necessity, an old Champion. The next was on the like scaffold, seuen persons presenting the seuen liberall sciences in their kinds, yeelded to the earle by desert: out of euery window hung lanthornes and candles, and euery streete was furnished with cressets, torches, and linkes light: one device that hung in the middell of the streete contained eight and thirty lanthornes and severall lights burning. Besides these, against my lords gate, a barber had on a wall placed threescore or more basons of bright copper, and in the middell of euery one a ware candle burning was placed, in the middell of all was painted a Rose and Crowne, this made a faire shew. Over the entrance of the court gate was placed aloft vpon a scaffold, as if it had bene in a cloud, Arthur of Britaine, whom they compared to the earle. within were hoboyes, cornets, and diuers kinds of musike: And thus they brought him to his lodging, and after he

A shew of  
barbers ba-  
sons.

was

was entred in a great hall of that house, they discharged such bolies of shot as was wonderfull to heare. In y<sup>e</sup> night they used fire works of rockets, squibs, wheels, and bals of fire, with a dragon that continued casting out fire an houre, wonderfull artificially made. The next day, on the river adioyning to my lords lodging, they devised a running as it were at the tilt in boates, which was thus: From each end of the river came a boate running with fire oares, in the sterne of which on the top stood a man armed in a red wastcoate, with a staffe in his rest, having a but end of cozke: now each meeting other with these staues both fell into the water, where spare boates were ready to succour them, for away went their horses: this sport with fresh men they continued till the earle was weary of it.

On the third day of January, the earle with three hundred horses in their furniture very bravely with his retinue entred Leidon, where by the way he was met by the best of the towne, first by twelue Burgomaisters clad in long blacke gownes, and on their shoulders was the towne name in large letters of silver: next them twelue of the chiefest Burgesses, and then many on horsebacke, all in blacke velvet. At his entrance into the towne all over his head and downe to the ground on each side, was hanged with lay of diuers colours to his lodging, himselfe with a canopy carried over his head was brought to his seate, against the which was a stage, on the which stood two men like poets, who presented severall shewes, as first a woman representing the towne then famine assaulting her, then sicknesse, then Spanissh seruitude, then hope to be succoured, ayde promised, and at the last, liberty, victory, and triumph, verses, &c. And after the lord lieutenant had bene there feasted and banqueted, on the 5. of January he came from Leidon to Dunhage. The 10. he mustered part of his horsemen, to the number of 500. or more, & then pointed them into severall garrisons, & to severall gouernors, the earle of Essex was y<sup>e</sup> day made generall of the horses. The 11. day, the lord lieutenant came from Dunhage to Leidon. The 12. a generall fast was proclaimed through Holland, Gelderland, and Friesland, which was kept with great zeale, the lord lieutenant spent that day till night with hearing of preaching, reading, and singing of Psalmes: neither he nor his eating any thing till night. The 19 of January, he came from Leidon to Dunhage.

The 24. of January, the prince of Portingall came to Dunhage. The 25. the lord lieutenant was installed and swoyne, & likewise all the States swoyne to the queene. The maner of y<sup>e</sup> installing was thus: At Dunhage is a marvellous faire hall, at the upper end whereof are five or six large steps ascending, which do reach to a faire chamber, at the upper end whereof on high was placed a cloth of estate, in the midst whereof were the armes of England, and against them my lord was seated, on each side of him two steps descending, late twelue of the principall States, and below them late the residue, to the number of twenty, right before my lord, but fours or five steps descending. On the right hand of my lord did stand the prince of Portingall, next him the lord Morley, next maister Noris gouernour of Munster, next William Russell, and sir Robert Germin, with diuerse men of great account. On the left hand of my lord did stand the Graue Maurice, next the earle of Essex, sir William Stanley, sir Robert Stapleton, & sir T. Parrar, with diuerse other of great account. Thus being placed, a dutchman made

1586.

Lord lieutenant entred Leidon,

A generall fast proclaimed.

The prince of Portingall came to the lord lieutenant. The earle of Leicester installed, and the States sworn to the queene. Persons of honour and worship.

The Heu-  
nant feaſteth  
the States.

Captaines  
with their  
companies  
muſtered,

Captaine  
Willowby  
died.

Title & ſtate  
of Excellen-  
cie giuen to  
the earle of  
Leiceſter.

a large oration in Dutch, declaring the cauſes of the matter in hand, with thanks to the Queenes Maieſtie, and the lord lieutenant. Then was read in Latine the covenants betwene the States, the Queene and my Lord: this done, the covenants were deliuered to my Lord, which he deliuered to the States, and the States deliuered an other vnto him: then was my Lord demanded to botwe the ſame by oath, who holding his hand to heauen did ſweare to the covenants. The like did the States, holding vp their hands botwe to performe. Then againe were the States ſwoorne to the Queene and my L. her lieutenant in thoſe affaires. This done my Lord gave to them ſeuerrall thanks, and they ſeuerrally did giue him the like, which being done, my Lord paſſed thorough to his chamber, the trumpets all ſounding before him. This day my Lord ſeaſed all the States moſt ſumptuouſlie, ſo that they had their fill both in their bellies, and heads. This day after dinner the ſouldiers of the Colone, which were three enſignes, came into the court furniſhed, and did there ſhew themſelues with drum and ſife: at night were aboue an hundred ſiers byent about my Lords houſe. The eight and twentieth of Januarie, companies muſtered by T. Digs, muſter maſter generall in Guelder, Frieſeland, and Holland, were as followeth: Maſter Norris colonell gentleman, 236. colonell Morgan two hundred & ninetie, Captaine Wotton a hundredeth thirtie ſixe, Captaine Powle a hundredeth and ſeauenteene, Captaine Baskerfield foureſcore, Captaine Yorke foureſcore and ſixe, Captaine Hunnings a hundredeth and eleven, Captaine Vdall ſeuentie ſeuene, Captaine Powell ninetie foure, Captaine Hart threeſcore and eight, Captaine Price a hundredeth twentieth three. Captaine Wilſon, a hundredeth fortye ſixe, Captaine Blunt a hundredeth twentieth ſeauen, Captaine Burrowes a hundredeth and ten, Captaine Harlow, a hundredeth twentieth foure, Captaine Shawe, foureſcore & foure, Captaine Enge threeſcore and nine, Captaine ſir Walter Wallar a hundredeth thirtie ſeauen.

The ſecond of February, Captaine Willowby died at Hage, and was three honozable buried. In the third of February, all the yemen of the garde, tooke their oath, whom reuniting to the conſcience of their charge, we purpoſe now to touch the peremptorie authoritie committed to the ſaid Lord lieutenant, by common conſent of the States, and ſo by degrees to deſcend to other occurrents concerning theſe Nether-lands.

A placcard containing the authoritie giuen by the States of the Lowe Countries, vnto the mightie prince, Robert Earle of Leiceſter, Baron of Denbigh, &c. for the gouernement of the ſaid Lowe Countries: tranſlated out of Dutch into Engliſh as followeth.

The generall States of the vniued Provinces of the Lowe Countries, to all thoſe which ſhall ſee or heare theſe preſent writings, health and dilection. Euen as it hath pleaſed her Maieſtie of England mercifully to ſend ouer into theſe Countries the high and mightie prince and Lord, Robert Earle of Leiceſter, Baron of Denbigh, and one of the priue counſell, knight of the noble order of the Garter, and not onely to admit and inſtitute his Excellencie, as chiefe head aboue all militarie ſouldiers, on hoſte or foote, which her Maieſtie hath ſent, or ſhall ſend ouer hereafter into theſe Countries, and to the end to aſſiſt vs  
with



with counsell and aduise, according to his great experience, policie and wisdom in the direction of publike affaires of the land, as well touching the feates of warre, as otherwise, in conseruation of all that which most tendeth to the profite of the foresaid land, to bring backe and reduce the same into such good order and rule as it hath bene in times past, to the ende that so much the better and orderly, he may resist the force and tyrannie of our enimie, and to frustrate all his practises: but also beside this, to honor and enrich his foresaid Excellencie, with greater authoritie, might and commandement, about all her maiesties Admirals and Viceadmirals, and ships of warre, to command them all, and to imploy them to the seruice of these Countries, and in such order as his Excellencie shall find needfull for the same Countie: and that his Excellencie following her Maiesties commandement, desirous to shew the effect of the good will and affection which he beareth to these affaires, and to the preservation of the same, and also of the true Christian Religion, and hath imployed himselfe so willingly in the foresaid matters, that his Excellencie for that onely cause hath left and abandoned his native Countries and goods, and transported himselfe hitherto amongst vs: so that her Maiestie and his Excellencie could neuer haue done or shewed vnto vs a greater benefite than this. Therefore are we resolved with good and ripe deliberation, to certifie all men by these presents, that we haue desired, accepted, and authorised the foresaid mightie and honorable Prince Lord Robert Earle of Leicester, &c. to be our gouernor and generall Captaine ouer all the vniited Provinces, and associate Cities and members of the same. And we giue vnto his Excellencie, besides the authoritie of hir Maiestie giuen vnto him the highest and supreme commandement, and absolute authoritie above and in all matters of warfare by sea and by land, to execute and administrate the same to the resistance of the enemy, euen as his Excellencie shall thinke most commodious to the preservation of those Countries: and so further, to do all such things as appertaine to the office of a generall Captaine. And furthermore, we commit the administration and vse of policie and iustice ouer the foresaid vniited Provinces, and associate Cities and members of the same into his hands, to execute and administrate the same with such power and authoritie, as haue had in times past all the other gouernors of these Lowe Countries before him, and especially, as haue bene exercised, and lawfully administered in the time of Charles the first, reserved onely the Lawes and priuiledges of the foresaid Countries: also with especiall power to collect profits, and receiue, and administrate all the contributions, which are agreed and condescended, or shall hereafter be consented or agreed, to the maintenance of the warres: and also, that which is or shall be deliuered hereafter into his Excellencies hands: and this all according to the vertue of other letters and missiues written more at large touching the same agreement. All which former charge and commission, his Excellencie through our earnest desire hath accepted, and hath deliuered sollemne othe and assurance into our hands: first of all, for the preservation of the true Christian Religion, and maintenance of the priuiledges and rights of these lands and Provinces, members, and Cities of the same. We therefore ordaine and com-

maund

maund all gouernours of Prouinces and cities, all Admirals, and Viceadmirals, all officers, Coloners, Captaines, their officers and souldiers by sea and land, and furthermore all other counsellors, officers, treasurers, receiuers, bailifes, Burgonasters, Marshals, magistrates, gentlemen, burgers, and other inhabitants and subiects of these lands, of what qualitie or condition soeuer, that they and euerie of them do acknowledge his foresaid Excellence in the qualitie of gouernment and captaine generall ouer the foresaid united prouinces, to honor, respect, and obey him as they ought to do, without making any difficultie in doing the same, vpon paine of falling in the displeasure and anger of his Excellence, and to be punished according to the heauinesse of the fault, and as reason shall require. And to the end that no body should pretend ignorance, we command expresse to make knowne these ordinances, to proclaime and publish them; where as men are accustomed to proclaime all publications, proceeding, and commaunding to proceede with rigor against all disdainers and neglectors of the same, according to the order of punishment before mentioned, without any fauour or dissimulation to the contrarie, because we haue thought the same to be expedient for the preservation of the Countrie. Given in our congregation and assemblie in the Hage, the 6. day of Februarie, 1586. by ordinance of the foresaid generall States.

This placard thus passed, the Lord lieutenant did ordaine certaine speciall men natiues bozne, of the counsell, to the intent that such affaires as chanced to secur, might by them be conueniently managed: the names of which counsellors with the places of their charge I ouerpass.

Having thus far discoursed of the lord lieutenants passing from place to place, and the manner of his entertainment: the obseruation of time doth vge vs ere we proceede any further, to deliuer a peece of seruice done by colonell Skinke, and then to proceede in the commemoration of the lord lieutenants entertainment in other places.

Skinke tooke  
the towne of  
Warle.

On the 21. day of Februarie, Skinke not lying still from indanuning the enemye, did take the towne of Warle, and the castle thereto belonging, the manner wherof was thus: himselfe lying in Wendelo, a towne in part besieged, left his men with the Graue Maurice, charging the not to depart till such time as they heard from him, which they fulfilled: he came with two or three men from Wendelo to his men, no man knowing his enterpise, caused them in the morning to be ready, and so passed on till mid day at which time they were not far from Warle: Skinke espying a thirtie wagons, clad certaine of his men in the Bours apparell, sent them into the towne to sell the victuals, which they followed, and one of them brake his wagon in the gate, so that the gate could not be closed: One of them shooting off a dagge gave Skinke warning, and he sodainely entered the towne without resistance, and tooke both it and the Castell. This towne is thought not so strong as profitable, yet varie strong. In it are diuers saltpits which do make great store of salt, which salt doth serue a great part of the countrie to Cullen, and further altogether serued the enemye of salt, which now he wanteth. About the first of March he left the Towne, burning it and spoiling the Countrey, the cause was this. There was an armie coming to stay his passage, which

which he hauing 300. horses did assaile, slue 1000. souldiers, tooke fine ensignes and sent to the lord lieutenant. Thus did balaunt Skinke, whom we will leaue and returne to matter of delight.

On the first of March, the lord lieutenant came from Hage to Leiden, and the third of March from Leiden to Harlem, whose entertainment there was with orations, representations, verses, shewes, &c. not inferior to those of other townes. On the fourth of March the Lord lieutenant, saw the Earle of Essex colonell, and Sir William Russell colonell muster and trayne by Harlem, to the number of two hundred horse. He was there feasted and banketted. And on the tenth of March he came from Harlem to Amsterdam, and by the way was met with diuers men of warre well shipped, which brought him by a long riuer that went into the Towne, ouer the which riuer were three strong bridges, plated full of armed souldiers, on the first bidge was planted ten or twelue peeces of ordinance, which after his honor was past, were shot off, the souldiers on euery bidge discharging by volies in braue manner: being past these bridges, he was met with two great pageants in this manner: two boates were made in monstrous greatnelle, on the one the shape of a horse swimming, on the other the likeness of a fish, on each of them a man riding, signifying the god Neptune: both these, one on the one side, and the other ouer the other side, did accompanie him to his landing, which was at the market place, where were planted great numbers of armed men with shot. Right before him where he landed was a scaffold, whereon was placed diuers shewes and representations, with verses, &c. The day and night following fire works, and afterward banketting, &c. The 20. of March, the Lord lieutenant came from Amsterdam to a castle called Mullen, 4. miles from Poerden, and there did dine, and from thence he came to Poerden to supper and to bed. On the 22. he came from Poerden to Utrecht, where his receiving was nothing inferior to most of the rest.

The Lord lieutenant came to Harlem.

The Lord lieutenant going to Amsterdam.

The Lord lieutenant came to Vtricht.

On the 26. of March, the Earle of Essex went to Leger with his horsemen, where he began a new worke. The 28. the Earle was feasted by Graue Maurice, on the which day in the morning there was charge giuen to all the English souldiers in the towne, that they should march from thence to Hage, which for that they wanted pay they refused, and raised a mutinie, for the which one of captaine Polles men was taken and put in ward, whereupon the rest of his followers seeing this, came to the gaole, burst the locks of the doores, and tooke out the prisoner, for the which there was fine apprehended, and three of them were hanged. On the same day was hanged the secretarie to the Countie Hollocke, which secretarie was a counsellor to the betraying of the Towne of Graue. The 30. of March, the Earle feasted the Nobilitie and Bourgeses of Utrecht, where there wanted nothing that might fill their bellies or their heads.

Earle of Essex went to Leger. A mutinie among the souldiers.

About the first of Apill, Generall Noris tooke the scone called Lite. On the fourth of Apill, was a sore conflict betwene the Male-contents & the English, the enimies being foure thousand were vanquished by Generall Noris with one thousand men, whereof he lost a great number, and slue 1200. Spaniards. The letter of Generall Noris to the L. lieutenant I haue set it downe in master Reine Woole and Holinshead.

Generall Noris tooke a scone at Lite.

The

Feast of S.  
George ob-  
served at  
Vtricht.

W. Seager.

Martin  
Skinke  
knighthed,

The three and fortieth of Aprill, the Earle of Leicester lieutenant, and gouernour generall of her maiesties forces in the Low countreies of the united prouinces, making his residence at that time in Vtricht (a great and goodly towne vpon the frontiers of Holland) kept most honourably the feast of Saint George therein, the proceedings whereof being so princely performed to the honour of our nation in the view of so many thousand straungers, I could not chuse (hauing gotten the true and faithfull description, by one William Seager *alias* Portciose, an officer at armes in that seruice) to make some briefe remembrance of the manner thereof, to wit: The streets of Vtricht being large and faire, were rankt and set with eight ensignes of Burgesses, richly appointed, wearing scarfes knit like roses white and red vpon their armes, betwene whom from the court of my Lord vnto the cathedrall Church called the Dome, the proceeding was on horse backe. First rode the trumpetters apparelled in scarlet, layd with silver lace, sounding their trumpets most royally, their banner roses being displayed, and richly lined with my Lords armes: then followed the Gentlemen, Captaines, Colonels, and her Maiesties swoyne men to the number of fortie horse, richly adorne in cloth of gold, silver, and silkes of all colours. After came sixe Knights, foure Barons, with the counsell of Estates, the earle of Essex accompanied with the Bishop of Cullen Prince Elector, and the Prince of Portingale rode by himselfe: next proceeded the Captaine of the gard, the treasurer, and controller of the house hold, bearing their white slaues: after whom followed two Gentlemen vthers, and Portciose herault in a rich coate of the armes of England: then came my Lord most princelike, inuelted in his robes of the order, garded by the principall Burgers of the towne, which offered themselves to that seruice, besides his owne gard, which were a sittle halbarders in scarlet clokes, garded with purple and white veluet. He being thus honourable brought vnto the Church, after due reuerence done vnto the Queenes Maiesties state, which was there erected on the right hand, he tooke his owne stall on the left, by certaine degrees lower: then began prayers, and a Sermon made by maister Knewstubs my Lords chaplaine, after which, my Lord proceeded to the offering, first, for her Maiestic, and then for himselfe, the which he performed with such decorum and Princely behauiour, that all generally spake most honourably of him. These solemnities being done, his Lordship returned as he came, leauing behind him the Earle of Essex, and certaine Gentlemen to accompany the Princes and the Ladies of the court. His court was a faire and large house, belonging in times past to the knights of the Rhodes, in which was a very great hall, richly hung with tapisserie: at the vpper end whereof was a most sumptuous cloth and chaire of estate for the Queenes Maiestic, with her armes and shiles thereon, and before it a table couered with all things so requisite, as if in person she had bene there: on the left hand, almost at the tables end, was my Lords trencher and stoole, for he would haue no chaire. The tables being couered, and all degrees assembled, my Lord before the state of her Maiesty, knighted a Dutch Gentleman, called Martin Skinke, for his manifold seruices done to his countrie, the which

done,



done, the vssers marshalled the feast. At the table on the right side of the hall sate the yooing Prince of Portingall, the Prince elector and his wife, the Princes Simeie, the Earle of Essex, the Graue Mures and his Lady, and betwixt euerie Ladie was an English Lord, or knight placed. On the left side sate the States and chiefe Bourgers of the Towne, and the graund prior of Amersforde, (who came to see the feast) was by my Lords appointment placed vppermost at that table. Then began the trumpets to sound in the seruice which was most prince-like and abundant, serued on the knee, carued and tasted to her Maiesties trencher. The side tables being furnished all in silver plate, and attended on by Gentlemen, sundrie sorts of musickes, continued the entering of the first course, which done and auoyded, the trumpets sounded in for the second, which was all baked meates of beastes, and fowles, the beastes, as lions, dragons, leopards, and such like, bearing phaines or armes, and the fowles, as peacocks, swans, pheasants, turkie cocks and others in their naturall feathers spread as in their greatest pride, which sight was both rare and magnificent. This seruice being placed on hir Maiesties boord, the beastes on the one side, & fowles on the other, the lion lying couchant at her Highnes trencher, the vssers cried, a hall, which being made, with much a doo (by reason of the multitude) they brought vp betwene them, with three reuerences to the state, Portclove Herald, inuelted with the armes of England, who in Latine, French, and English, pronounced the Quenes Maiesties vsuall stile of England, France, and Ireland, defendresse of the faith, &c. crying three times, largesse. Then began the trumpets to sound, and the Dutch men to caroule to the health of her Maiestie, the welfare of my Lord, and to the prosperities of the vniued prouinces, and nothing wanted wherein either estate, magnificence, or ioy might be expressed. To be brieke the feast ended, and tables voyded, there was dauncing, vaulting, and tumbling, with the forces of Hercules, which gaue great delight to the strangers, for they had not seene it before, and thus they passed the time, till euensong and then departed. At supper being all assembled againe, great was the feast, and plentifull the cheere: and after supper began the barriers betwene challengers & defendants men of armes, wherein the Earle of Essex behaued himselfe so valiantly, that he gaue all men great hope of his noble prowesse in armes. The Barriers done, and either part retired with equall praise, (though not with equall blowes) there was a most sumptuous banquet prepared of Suger meates for the men of armes, and the Ladies: which banquet being finished, my Lord wishing them all good rest, tooke his leaue, and so this honourable feast brooke vp about twelue of the clocke at midnight.

who promised to shew Portclove 70. enignes that he had won in the field.

A sumptuous feast, and full of deuises.

On the 24. of Aprill, our English men that were in the enterprise before Graue retired, having set Graue in sufficiencie both of victuals and munition, and in their retracket set vpon a sconce called Knols sconce, which was yeilded vpon com-  
position. The next day our men or some part of them came before Emple sconce, and presently won it without the losse of any man.

H. Archer.

Knols sconce won, & Emple sconce.

The 26. of Aprill, the lieutenant of sir Martin Skinke, his maister being with my Lords Excellencie, knowing of a companie of footemen Spaniards, he with certaine of his horse laid themselves in ambush, set vpon them, killed thirtie of them,

them, and tooke 81. and caried them to their garrison.

View of  
horsemen  
at Newkirke  
and boores  
taken.

Reyne.

Wagonie.

Arnam.

Prince of  
Parma in  
great dan-  
ger.  
A great  
sconce fired.

Enemy re-  
pulsed out  
of Graue.

The 4. of May, his Excellency did view all his horsemen, being in number about thirtene or fourteene hundred by Newkirke, on a great heath betwene Newkirke & Amersford. And this day his Excellencies gard being sent to Newkirke to keepe the towne; tooke a seuentie boozes, that were purposed to haue spoyled Newkirke. The seuenth of May, his Excellencie remoued from Amersford to Arname, and passed through Reine, and Wlagonet. Reine is a proper strong towne, situate on the riuer of Reyne, pleasant, and defensible, roundly compact together. Wlagonet standeth by a creeke of water comming to the Reyne, and within twentie score yeards of the Reyne, this towne is a strong towne, and stands most pleasant, wanting nothing but peace. Arnam is a faire towne, strongly enuironed with wals, rampiers, and other matter of strenght, it also standeth on the riuer of Reyne, on the one side of the towne the ground is most fertile and pleasant, on the other side is a great heath most barren, all the country is spoyled, abbeyes, faire houses, and doozes are all wasted, neither any house standing, nor any man there dwelling. Duert the Reyne against this towne is a sconce, onely for defence of the boozes, if the enemy come to destroy and take from them their cattell, to which sconce both the boozes runne, and also dyne their cattell. Within one mile of this towne is the sconce of Arnam, which our Englishmen won the last yeare, this sconce is wondrous strong, being compassed with such rampired wals, and deepe ditches, that it is almost inuincible. It standeth on the one side of the Reyne. At this sconce was captaine Henings a braue gentleman slaine at the winning of it, and there is buried: of other tozones I leaue farther to describe, and turne to the accidents. The 9. of May, the Prince of Parma with others, came to view the towne of Graue, which a canonicere saw, and discharged his canon, wherewith he tooke away the hinder part of his horse, and missed the prince but a little, so that he byuled him sore. The same day they of Graue shot fire bales into the greatest sconce of the enemy, and by good lucke one of them lighted among the powder in the sconce, set it on fire, which with such violence brake forth, that it blew vp the Spaniards most terribly, and layd the sconce flat. About this time the enemy battered the bafe towne of Graue, and presently vpon the battery entered, which the souldiers of the towne suffered, but in fine they set on them, slue 400. and purged the towne againe.

The 12. of May, sir Martin Skinke obtained a little peece of ground enuironed with water, neare vnto Pemegan, where he intrenched himselfe, so that the towne could not hurt him, and his ships of warre comming doونه to him, nothing could passe by the riuer of Reyne to the towne but he commaunded it. The 14. of May, our men lying at Pemegan sconce, there reuolted to them out of the towne two bozes. The sixteenth his excellency passed from Arnam to the campe at Pemegan: this day the castle of Lenow was yelded him, and the same day came fure bozes to our men from Pemegan. The eighteenth of May, the enemies entering Graue, lost 500. men.

Hemart, for his yelding of Graue, comming to Bonnell was there apprehended and caried to Ultricht, adiudged to dye, and was executed with two other captaines.

The

The 20. of May, early in the morning the strong fort of Pennegan was yielded to his Excellencie in this sort, to depart like souldiers, which was graunted, and they to the number of 156. souldiers very brave passed by his Excellencies lodging at Brankharst: there was in all at the siege of this sconce of Pennegan slaine about fortye souldiers and pioners, and twenty hurt. Now to returne to other accidents, such as in the meane time happened in England.

This yeare the Queenes maiestie tooke order for the propling and inhabiting of the countreys, late belonging to the earle of Desmond and his rebellious companions, to which end diuerse honorable and worshipfull gentlemen provided to be undertakers of signories there, whereof some went into the said countrie, others according to order taken, sent their people, amongst which were sir Christopher Hatton, sir Walter Rawlie, sir William Courtney, sir Richard Molinues, sir George Bourcher, sir Edward Fieton, sir Valentine Browne, sir Walter Luson, John Popham, her maiesties attorney generall and other.

Desmond in Ireland peopled of the English nation.

The 19. of Januarie, Nicholas Deuorox was condemned for treason, in being made a Seminarie priest at Rhemes in Fraunce, since the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, in Anno primo of her Maiesties raigne, and in remaining here after the terme of fortye daies after the dissolution of the last Parliament.

Also Edmond Barbar being made priest as aforesaid, and comming into this realme after the said terme of fortye daies, was likewise condemned of treason, and both dyawne to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered on the 21. of Januarie. And on the same day a wench was burned in Smithfield for poisoning of her Aunt, and mistresse, and attempting the like to her vncke.

Seminarie priests executed.

On the feast day of the purification of our blessed Lady, Doctor Iohn Whitegill archbishop of Canterburie, William lord Cobham, warden of the five Ports, and Thomas lord Buckhurst, were chosen and taken to be of her Maiesties priuie counsell.

Archbishop of Canterburie called to be of the priuy counsell T. Louelace lost his eares for traitorously practising to enjoy the goods and lands of his nearest kinne.

The 11. of Februarie, Thomas Louelace was brought prisoner from the Tower of London to the starre chamber, against whom her Maiesties attorney did informe, that the same Louelace, vpon malice conceiued against Leonard Louelace, and Richard Louelace his cousin germanes, had falsely and diuellishly contriued and counterfetted a very trayterous letter in the name of Thom. Louelace (another brother of the said Leonard and Richard then resident beyond the seas) purposing, that the same Thomas should thereby incite and prouoke the said Leonard to procure the said Richard to execute her Highnesse destruction with other circumstances of treason. This letter he cast in an open high way, pretending thereby, that vpon the discouerie thereof, his said kinsmen Leonard and Richard should be dyawne in question for the treasonable matter against her Maiestie in that bill contained, euen in the highest degree, for which offence her maiesties attorney prayed, that the said Thomas then prisoner, might receiue condigne punishment. Whereupon the court adiudged that he should be carried on horsebacke about Westminster hall, with his face to the horse taile, and a paper on his backe wherein to be written: For counterfetting of false and trecherous letters against his owne kindred, containing most trayterous matter against her Maiesties person. And fro thence to be carried in y<sup>e</sup> manner, & set on y<sup>e</sup> pillory in the palace

for traitorously practising to enjoy the goods and lands of his nearest kinne. Praise worthie iustice, the like whereof is to be wished to the like treacherous practiser, and libeller against his eldest brother, after he had defrauded him of his goods and leascs.

at WUestminster, and there to haue one of his eares cut off: also to be carried in like manner into London, and set on the pillorie one market day in Cheape, with the like paper. After that carried into Kent, and at the next assise there to be set on the pillorie with the like paper, and his other eare to be cut off. Also to be set on the pillorie one market day at Canterburie, and an other at Rochester in the like manner: and at euery the foresaid places, this order taken touching his offence to be openly read, the sentence whercof was duly executed in the pallace at WUestminster, in Cheape, &c.

Straunge  
sicknes and  
death at  
Excester  
through  
stench of the  
prison.

Powell.

The 14. of March, at the assises kept at the citie of Excester in Deuonshire before sir Edmond Anderlon, lord chiefe Iustice of the common pleas, sergeant Floriday, one of the barons of the exchequer, and other Iustices, there happened a strange sicknesse, first amongst the prisoners, and then amongst other persons, and besides the prisoners, many of all degrees died thereof, namely sergeant Floriday, sir Iohn Chichester, sir Arthur Bassier, and sir Barnard Drake knights, Thomas Carew, R. Caric, Iohn Fortescue, Iohn Waldren, and Thomas Risdone esquires, and Iustices of peace: of the common people died very many, Constables, Rues, Tithingmen, and Iurozs, and namely of one Iurie, they being twelue in number, there died 11. of them. This sicknesse was imputed to certaine Portugals then prisoners in the said goale. For not long before, one Barnard Drake esquire had bene at the seas, and meeting with certaine Portugals come from new found land, and laden with fish, he tooke them as a good prize, and brought them into Dorthmouth haven, and from thence they were sent, being in number about 38. persons, vnto the goale of the castle of Cron, and there were cast into the deepe pit and stinking dungeon. These men had bene before long time at the seas, hauing no change of apparell, nor lyen in bed, and now lyng on the ground without succour or reliefe, were soone infected, and all for the most part were sicke, and some of them died, and this sicknesse very soone after disperled it selfe among all the residue of the prisoners in the goale, of which disease many of them died, but all brought to great extremities and very hardly escaped. These men when they were to be brought before the foresaid Iustices for their triall, many of them were so weake and sicke, that they were not able to go nor stand, but were carried from the goale to the place of iudgement, some vpon handbarrowes, and some betwixen men leading them, and so brought to the place of iustice. The sight of these mens pitifull cases, being thought to be hunger starued, rather then otherwise diseased, moued many to pittie them, &c.

A straunge  
worm found  
in the heart  
of an horse.

The seuenteenth of March, a straunge thing happened, the like whercof before hath not bene heard of in our time. Maister Dorington of Spaldwicke in the countie of Huntington esquire, one of her maiesties gentlemen Pensioners, had a horse which died suddenly, and being ripped, to see the cause of his death, there was found in the hole of the heart of the same horse a straunge worme, which lay on a round heape in a kall or skinne of the likenesse of a toade, which being taken out, and spread abroad, was in forme and fashion not easie to be described, the length of which worme diuided into many greines to the number of fiftie (spread from the body like the braunches of a tree) was from the snout to the



the end of the longest greine 17. inches, having foure issues in the greines, from the which dropped forth a red water: the bodie in bignesse round about was three inches and an halfe, the colour whercof was very like a makarell. This monstrous woyme found in manner aforesaid, crawling to haue got away, was stabbed in with a dagger and died, which after being dried, was shewed to many honorable persons of the realme.

The eighteenth of Aprill, in the assises holden at London in the Justice hall, William Thomlon alias Blackborne made priest at Rhemes, and Richard Lea alias Long made priest at Lions in Fraunce, and remaining here contrarie to the statute, were both condemned, and on the 20. day of Aprill drawne to Tyboine, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Seminarie priests executed.

The first of May, deceased Sir Henry Sidney knight of the garter, lord president of Wales, and was honorably buried at Penshurst in Kent on the one and twentieth of June.

Sir Henry Sidney deceased.

The eight of May being sonday, in the afternoone, Henry Ramelius chancelor for Germanie, ambassador from Fredericke the second king of Denmarke, unto the Queenes maiestie of England, came into the riuer of Chamis with his ships so farr as blacke wall, where he was receiued by Gilbert lord Talbor, and by him conueyed by water along to Greenwich, and so to the towne wharfe, where he arriued and was honorably receiued of the lord Cobham, and other great Estates, and by them conueyed through the Tower streete, Fanchurch streete, and Grace streete into Bishopsgate streete, to Crosby place, where he was lodged, and remained till he had finished his ambassade at the Queenes charges, and returned on the 30. of May towards Denmarke.

Ambassador from the king of Denmarke.

The seuenteenth of May, Philip earle of Arundell was conueyed from the Tower of London to Westminster, and there in the Starre chamber, by the counsell condemned to pay 10000. pound fine for his contempt, and to remaine in prison at the Queenes pleasure.

Earle of Arundell condemned to pay 10000. pound.

A commission was directed from her Maiestie, tending to the ratifying of a firme league of amitie betweene her Maiestie and James king of Scots, which league being articulated, commissioners were appointed, Edward earle of Rutland, William lord Evers, and Thomas Randolph esquire, who with their traine came to Berwike on the 19. of June, where the ambassadors of Scotland being present, they accomplished the matter according to the commission, the articles of the said league in all and every part sufficiently confirmed on the first of July: which being done, the said earle of Rutland with his traine returned home, maister Randolph went into Scotland to take his leaue of the king, and returned into England about the 15. of August.

League with the Scots.

The 18. of June, Henry Elks cleerke and batchelor of art, for counterfeiting y<sup>e</sup> D. sign mannel to the presentatiō of the parsonage of Allaints in Hastings, directed to the archbishop of Canterburie, or to his commissarie generall (the diocess of Chichester being void) that he might be instituted parson there, was drawne to Tyboine and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Elks executed for counterfeiting the queenes seale.

A lotterie for marvellous rich and beautifull armor, was begunne to be drawne at London in S. Pauls churchyard, at the great west gate (an house of timber &

A lotterie at London for rich armor.

boord bring there craft d for that purpose) on S. Peters day in y<sup>e</sup> mourning, which lotterie continued in drawing day and night, for the space of two or three daies.

Thomas  
Candish his  
voiage about  
the world.

This yeare M. Thomas Candish (having of his owne proper charges new built from the keele, and furnished with all things necessarie for 2. yeares provision) a brave ship called the Desire of 140. tuns, and a lesse of sixtie tuns named the Content, ioyning therunto a barge of fortye tuns named the Hugh Gallant, (in which small fleet were 125. men) set saile from Plimmouth on the 21. of July, and began his famous voyage round about the globe of the earth, entring in at the streight of Magellan, and returning by the cape Bona Speranza, which voyage he finished in the space of two yeares, and lesse then two moneths, arriving at Plimmouth the 9. of September in Anno 1588. of the which voyage & other ye may reade at large in a booke intituled, The principall navigations, voiaiges, and discoveries of the English nation made by sea, or overland to y<sup>e</sup> furthest distant quarters of y<sup>e</sup> earth, published by R. Hakluyt maister of Art in An. 1589.

Services in  
Ireland by  
sir Richard  
Bingham  
against the  
Burkes.

This yeare (as in the last proceeding) fell great troubles in Ireland in Connaght, which because they are memorable, and no lesse happily then valiantly appeared, I will set downe the causes and foundations thereof, with all the particular services and successes, as I have received them, confirmed under the hands and testimonies of diuerse captaines and gentlemen employed in the said service.

All Connaght  
quiet through  
sir R. Bingham  
good  
government

In the moneth of September, in Anno 1585. at a sessions holden at Doonemony in the county of Mayo, within the prouince of Connaght by sir Richard Bing. knight, chiefe commissioner and gouernour of the said prouince (sir Nichol. White Maister of the rols then being present, and employed with him for the perfecting of the last composition made within y<sup>e</sup> said prouince) the countie of Mayo, and the whole countie stood then in generalitie, through the good and politique government, and the iust and vpright dealing of the said sir Richard Bingham on peaceable and quiet termes, without any face of alteration. And the most part of y<sup>e</sup> gentlemen and freeholders of that countie resorted to the said sessions before: nevertheless, when now by meanes of this composition & agreement betweene her M. and them, they perceiued y<sup>e</sup> the names, titles and superiorities of their chiefe L. and specially of M. W. the chiefe of the septs of that countie should cease, extinguish, & for ever after be determined: it did not a little grieue them, although some of them not long before had expostulated y<sup>e</sup> like refoymation. The plot of this composition was deuised by sir R. of purpose, to take away the greatnesse of the Irish lords, with their names of Macs & Oes, that the inferiour subiect might be freed from their Irish customes, cuttings and vnrasonable exactions, & (by knowing what was their owne) be dratone to depend euer after vpon the state, & not on those Irish lords or gentlemen: which also might not only much auail her Maestie in time of any stirs or reuolts (by drawing the common people from following the great & chiefe lords, but also bring a more certaine yearly rent, or reuenuue into her highnes coffers then formerly was accustomed. When the people perceiued these their old customes & vblages like to take end, they deuised with themselves for the preventing thereof, and according to their old customed manner, euer by them vsed in all their discontentments, they tooke by their weapons, armed them against the state, thinking by sirs and boyles to winne the reuocation of this settled and determined resolution, and so to be left againe in their old customes and vblages.

A wife and  
politike de-  
uise of sir R.  
Bingham to  
strengthen  
the govern-  
ment and  
weaken the  
Irisherie.

The Irish  
into rebellio  
when they  
are discon-  
sented.

This their purpose appeared in one Thomas Roe Burke, a chiefe gentleman of that sept, who at this very instant, during the sayd sessions at Doonme-mouie, kept himselfe within a strong castle of his, standing in an Island on Loghe make, euen within the sight of the gouernour and the other commissiōners, refusing to come at them, albeit they had severall times sent for him. Sir Richard Bingham perceiuing that the coales of troubles were now layd together, and would shortly after kinde and become an angry fire, if the same were not politickely and warily preuented (dissembling the matter as if it were of no moment) he betthought him of the best and safest remedy to meete with this inconuenience. And knowing well that those Burks had euer bene very bad and loose people, such as very hardly continued themselves two yeares together with in a due course or compasse of obedience, he saw that the onely way to stop this gap, was either to cut off or to apprehend and lay vp in durance as pledges two or three of the best of that sept, such as were most dangerous for the inciting of sturs, and the drawing of others into action. And therefore vpon his returne out of that county to Roscomon, he dealt with the Sherife of the county of Mayo, for the apprehension of the sayd Thomas Roe. The Sherife not long after sent his subsherife to put this matter in execution, who being resisted and hurt by the sayd Thomas Roe, and not otherwise able to apprehend him, wounded him in such sort as he thereof died. This Thomas Roe, being thus slaine was not much lamented, no not euen of his owne kindred, for he was an oppressor of them, and doubtlesse it was thought by wise men that the death of this man, and the hanging of two others of that surname at Roscomon, which had deuised for the drawing of Scots into the prouince, had preuented the sturs and troubles that after ensued, and at that time seemed to haue a beginning, had not some men depending on the state through enuy and malice to sir Richard Bingham & his good and happy gouernement, perswaded diuers others of that sept of the Burks to haue a care of themselves to be vpon their keeping, & to trust no officer, nor to come to any such till their pardons should be by them procured from the lord Deputy. These mens names I forbear to remember, because they haue since that time made it knowne before the lord Deputy and counsell of the realme, that in giuing such caueats to y Burks, they meant nothing lesse then to hartten them into rebellion against the state, and to attempt such bad actions as afterwards they did. Of this counsell y Burks (which of themselves were seditious inough, in whose minds did shl sticke the abolishing & taking away of their M.W. with their old Irish customes & cuttings) tooke hold and conuerted the same to an apt & commodious occasion offered them, for their better assembling together into a conuenient number. And moze effectually to win the hearts of many men to follow this their intended enterprise, they made the Clandonnells, the loies, & most of the countrey belceue, that sir R. Bingham hauing already taken from these men their ancient customes & libertie's, would also deliuer the like measure to them, & take from them also their liues, if they did not well looke vnto themselves. By this meanes they drew many vnto them, perswading themselves that they might safely assemble together in companies without feare of interruption, for by the friendship of their foresayd counsellors which were in Dublin, their assemblies should there be thought as a thing by the done for their defence & safety. They also knew

Thomas Roe Burke would not come at the gouernour.

Sir Richard Bingham's care to preuent a mischief.

Thomas Roe Burke resisting the sherife is slaine.

These two were Moyler Oge Burke and Thebor Keoghe.

Bad officers vfed by men depending on the state.

The Burks turne the counsell of sir Richard Bingham's backe friends to serue their purpose. Slanderous lies to set forwards rebellion. The simple Irish are more wiser then we take them to be.

Privy tray-  
tors do more  
hurt then o-  
pen rebels.

The rebels  
deuise to  
make the  
action ge-  
nerall.

Castle Ne-  
calley man-  
ned and  
kept by the  
Burks.

Mahowne  
Obrian be-  
sieged in ca-  
stle Clano-  
wen by sir  
Richard  
Bingham.  
Mahowne  
Obrian slain  
and Clano-  
wen won  
and rased to  
the ground.  
Sir Richard  
Bingham  
offere:h  
mercy to the  
Burks, but  
they refuse  
it.

Castle Ne-  
calley be-  
sieged by sir  
Richard  
Bingham.

that sir Richard Bingham being restrained from following them in this or other their actions, without direction fro Dublin, could not st p or prevent them in their first beginning, by reason whereof they would in short time draw together & ioyne to them the greatest part of the countrey, whereof some should be drawne to assist them in open hostility, and some others in secret and under-hand dealing, of which sort the latter should still seeme subjects & true as neare as they could in y<sup>e</sup> bosome of the state. And to make themselves the stronger, and to draw the whole p<sup>ro</sup>vince into action with them, they gaue it forth, y<sup>e</sup> their case was euery mans case within the same: And that as their ancient customes & liberties were infringed, and their liues sought to be taken away, so should it also fare with the rest of the said p<sup>ro</sup>vince. And here for an entrance into this rebellion, the sons of Edmond Burke of castle Barry being many (which Edmond was an old man, one of the competitors of y<sup>e</sup> M. Williamship, & a most bad affected member to the state, and his wife as bad as himselfe, together with Edmond Kerragh Burke, Riccard Burke y<sup>e</sup> Diuels Hookes sonne, Moyler Oge Burke, Walter M. Danie Bane, Cahir M. Connell, and diuers others, associating vnto them many idle persons, entred into a castle in Loghmaske called castle Pecalley, and manned the same together with Thomas Roes castle, whereof mention is made before, which castle after Thomas Roes death, was now in the possession of his brother Riccard Burke called the Pall of Ireland: which castles they kept in rebellious manner against the state, refusing to come at any of her maiesties officers. About this time sir Richard Bingham lay at the siege of Clanoenen in Thomond, a strong pile, manned and kept against her maiesty by Mahowne Obrian a most dangerous enemy to the state, a chiefe champion of the Popes, and a great praefiser with forein powers, for the inuasion of this realme of Ireland. At this siege sir Richard Bingham had but 100. English souldiers, and some few kerne of the countrey, by reason whereof he was driuen to no small paine in skirmishing, watching, and warding with so few men: neuerthelesse, within seven dayes after he won the castle and slue the sayd Mahowne Obrian & the ward within, and rased the said castle, without the furtherance of any great ordinance. After y<sup>e</sup> sir R. marched from this castle to castle Pecalley, within the which the traytors were and inclosed themselves. At his first coming thither he parled with them, aduising them to remember the obedience which they owed to her maiesty, and to yeld themselves to her maiesties mercie, assuring them that in so doing they should find that fauour in all respects that other her highnesse subjects did. But they (minding nothing lesse then to submit themselves, on any such conditions) sayd they would not do any hurt, but keepe themselves there in safety, for that they were fearefull to trust any Englishman, alleadging many frivolous and impertinent causes moouing them to stand vpon their gard. Whereupon sir Richard proceeded to besiege them in the sayd castle, which was a strong round fortresse erected farre within the Loghe, vpon a small compasse of ground, so scanty by the wall, that scarce a landing place was left vnto it. The siege was all by water in boates, and could not otherwise be attempted. Insomuch that sir Richard going about to burne a boate or two of theirs that they had docted and layd by vnder the castle wall, to the end they might not escape away, and that also he might watch and ward them with few



men having but a small company there, and those also sore wearied, huzled with stones and galled with shot at the siege of Clanoven / was forced by the sudden rising of contrary weather, which much favoured the enemy, to leave the attempt with the losse of his boates, and two or thre of his souldiers, himselfe and others bring in the sayd boate, hardly escaped by the helpe of other boates, which other boates came not in time to his succour, through the negligence of such as he had put in trust with them, and appointed to come and ioyne with him. The boate which he lost the enemies got, in which and in another boate of their owne (before sir Richard could returne to charge them with a fresh supply from his camp lying on the shoate) they shipped themselves, and with great celerity escaped into the woods, fearing that at the next charge, sir Richard would haue won the castle. Captaine Mordant and others had the chase of them by water. These traytours being thus escaped to the woods and mountaines out of the castle Decalloy, their accomplices also fled out of the other castle. Both which and our strong pile of Farrowe M. Donnels, sir Richard rased to the ground, for that they were not fit or stood seruiciable to be kept by the English, and were very dangerous to be in the possession of the Irishie. Richard Burke *alias* the Pall of Ireland a man of no small account among his sept, and all the ill affected Irishie repaired to sir Richard at his first comming to castle Decalloy, being in deed the chiefe of their confederacy. This man under colour of dutifull subiection, intended to haue betrayed sir Richard and all his company: but (intelligence hereof being giuen, and many apparant proofes had of his trayterous intentions and desires) this Pall of Ireland was soone executed by marshall law: this man was assuredly the most dangerous member in all the county of Mayo, especially for the drawing in of Scots, a thing which sir Richard ever doubted, and which the Burkes undoubtedly intended.

After this the gouernour sir Richard Bingham tooke order for the following of those Burkes to the woods and mountaines, which were now growne to be some fourescore swordes, he leuied some forces on the countrey, and with them and his owne company of an hundred souldiers, he so hunted them from bush to bush, and hill to hill, that in short time no newes was to be heard where any of them were. After this the gentlemen of the countrey which had not combined with them, seeing the rebels to be diuine to their holes and fastnesse in hiding manner, by meanes whereof the souldiers could do nothing vpon them, offered to sir Richard that if he would draw his forces out of the countrey, they would undertake the seruice against the rebels, and either kill them, or banish them at their owne cost and charges, without abating any peny of the composition rents due to her maiestie by them in lew thereof: hereunto sir Richard assented, finding it a good policy to set one of them against another. But here hauing these bad Burks at a great aduantage, & in a hard distressed case, when they were thus at y<sup>e</sup> lowest ebbe, sir Richard receiued speciall and strait charge and commaundement from the lord Deputy to protect them, & he receiued also a protection ready signed by the lord Deputy to that end, which thing, though the matter and manner of it much grieved him, he handled it in the best sort he could to saue the credit of the state and wrought deuises to diuine them to seeke their protections, which when they did,

Sir Richard Bingham frustrated of his purpose.

The traytors fled out of castle Decalloy.

Traytors of Ireland are cunning in running away.

Three strong castles euertrowne by sir Richard Bingham. Sir Richard Bingham in danger to haue bin betrayed. Richard Burke the Pall of Ireland hanged.

The Burks were so hunted in the woods and mountaines that no news could be heard of them.

The gentlemen of the countrey offer to pursue the traytors at their own charges.

The Burks are comforted and reprieved by a protection.

Things  
closely had  
led among  
the English,  
are neuer  
thelesse  
knowne to  
the Irishrie.

The Burks  
rebell the  
second time.  
The Ioyes in  
Yrconnaght  
murder her  
maiesties  
officers.  
The leuying  
of men to  
send into the  
Low coun-  
tries, caused  
many idle  
persons to  
resort to  
the rebels.

The Burks  
stood vpon  
vnrasona-  
ble termes.

The gover-  
nour willing  
to haue  
drawne the  
Burkes to  
peace.

he granted it vnder his owne hand, and the scale of the prouince, as formerly was accustomed, and in such causes ought to be done. But although this was closely handled by the gouernour sir Richard Bingham, yet the Burks had intelligence that the lord Deputy had protected them, and commaunded the gouernour to per- forme it, which, as is to be gathered, they had learned from some well-willers of theirs out of Dublin: this made the gentlemen very high and hauty minded and was to them a foueraigne preparatiue, for to vnderstate new and greater stirrs and broiles then before they had begun. For the peace being such as the state offered it, and they sought it not, continued but a small time, although they had giuen in a simple pledge for the performance thereof. After the Burks were thus protected, sir Richard Bingham repaired to his dwelling house and from thence, vpon occa- sions) to Dublin, where he had not long stayed when the Burks roulded againe now the second time, ioyning vnto them the Clangibbons, the Clandonuels, and the Ioyes in farre greater number then before, which sayd Ioyes, the more to manifest their bad and trayterous intentions, and the better to assure their complices of their fast dealing in this combination, murdered certaine of the offi- cers of Yrconnaght and their men, to the number of fiftene or sixtene. About this time order came from the lord Deputy for the leuying of me within this pro- uince for the seruice in the Low countries. The hute thereof and the repaire hi- ther of Francis Barckley sent by the lord Deputy for the leuying of the sayd men, caused many idle men who had no zeale to serue beyond the seas, to ioyne them- selues with the sayd Burks then in action against her maiesty. And thus these Burkes, hauing had an enteruiew of peace and a pawling time to gather head a- gaine and increase their forces, stood on very lofty termes, and sayd they would haue a M. William, or else they would go into Spaine for one: also they would haue no sherie within that county, nor be subiect to answer in appearance at any assize or sessions. These points and termes they stood on, and articulated the same accordingly, with many other vnrasonable demaunds which they would haue to be granted, or otherwise they wold in no wise yeeld to haue peace with the state. At the beginning of this second revolt, for that the gouernor was willing to haue dyatone them to peace (if by any reasonable meanes he might haue done the same without any indignity to the state) he sent vnto the commissioners, viz. the L. archbishop of Tuam, the L. Bremingham baron of Athency, T. Dillon esquire chiefe iustice of the prouince, Gerrald Comerford esquire attorney of the same, & others to parley with them, and to examine the cause of those their insolent attempts: vnto whom they answered in effect, as is aforesayd, deliuering them the sayd articles in writing. And euen during the time of the commissioners abode in the coun- trey, they did not forbear to burne and spoyle the same. All which notwithstanding a tyme of peace was granted vpon conditions in a sort to their liking for eight dayes by the sayd commissioners, that in the meane time the lord Deputies pleasure might be signified to the gouernor how he would haue them to be proce- ded withall, and direction sent accordingly. But (after this also was granted them) the commissioners were no sooner departed out of those parts, then they be- gan to breake downe diuers castles, and to burne many townes in the plaine and champaigne baronies. And the more to make knowne their trayterous and wicked purposes

purposes, they proceeded against her maiesty in most odious and vndutifull speeches, saying: What haue we to do with that Caligaghe, how vniwise are we, being so mighty a nation, to haue bene so long subiect to a woman? the Pope and the king of Spaine shall haue the rule of vs, and none other. Sir Richard (notwithstanding all this) did forbear to raise forces, and to serue vpon them (greatly to his disaduantage) for that he had receiued many and earnest cautions from the lord Deputy to forbear the beginning of any warre against them. But in the meane time the rebels grew to be very strong, and were now increased to the number of seuen or eight hundred men, and had also sent Edmond Kerragh Burke, and Iohn Iccleau brother to Walker Kiritagh Burke to practise with the Scots, and to draw them into the prouince to their succour and aide, aduertising the Scots by the sayd messengers, that the time was then to subdue Connaght, for the queene had few or no souldiers in the realme, they were all employed into the Low countries. This fire kindled and flamed in such sort that now it was high time to take in hand the quenching thereof: neuertheless sir Richard of himselfe durst do nothing against them for that he was aduised and willed by the lord Deputy to do nothing in that case without his lordships aduise & directiō, which (when he had long looked for) at length he receiued, although somewhat late, the effect whereof was, that the sayd lord Deputy & the counsell concurred in opinion with sir Richard, that the conditions which the Burkes required were so vnrasonable, as neither subiect ought to demaund them, ne yet the state without great indignity could yeeld vnto them, and therefore resolved and willed sir Richard to prosecute them with such forces as he had or could leaue, except he could find them to stand on more dutifull termes then afore is sayd. Hereupon the gouernor leued such forces as he thought might suffice to answer the seruice both effectually and speedily, for he found and saw that lingring seruice could not but greatly charge her maiesty, and much encourage the enemy: (a soft kind of warre that hath bene too too long vsed in this realme.) First, hauing taken order for the assurance of the countrey behind him, he marched towards the countie of Mayo, the 12 of July 1586. with his owne garrison forces which were 100. footemen and 50. horsemen, and came to Ballinroba the 14. day of the said moneth: here he spent sir or leauen daies, as well in parling with the said Burkes, as also in gathering of his whole forces together, hither came to him the earle of Clanrickard with 30. horsemen and one hundred kearne, also many gentlemen of the countrey came hither, namely the L. Bremingham lord baron of Athenrie, sir Hubbert M. Dany knight, Teig Okelley, and diuers others: hither also came in the supply of forces which he had leued within the prouince, viz. a hundred footemen of captaine Mordantes, a hundred footemen vnder captaine Merriman, and a hundred footemen vnder captaine Moltean, besides diuers companies of light kearne to the number of sir or seuen hundred: & then hauing employed the earle of Clanrickard, the archbishop of Tuam, the bishop of Kilmore, the lord Bremingham, Thomas Dillon in office of the prouince and others in parling with the Burkes one day, and finding that no reasons nor perswasions might win them to peace, he executed certaine of their pledges, which they before had put in for their loyaltie and good behauiour (for it appeared to this politike and wise gentleman sir Richard

Bingham,

They giue ill speeches of her maiesty.

Sir R. great patience & discretion, more desirous of peace than warre. The Burkes were grown to seuen or eight hundred men & sent for Scots to aid them. The much abridging of provincials doth hinder the seruice.

The L. deputie & counsell directed sir R. to prosecute the Burkes. Sir. R. soone perceiueth discommodities of lingring wars.

Sir Richard Bingham's forces draweth to him.

The gouernor desirous to win the rebels by faire means. Sir Richard executeth the pledges of the Burkes.

The English  
forces deu-  
ided into two  
companies.

Dangerous  
news spread  
in the campe  
by a Moun-  
taine messenger.

The hie  
messenger  
hanged.  
Foure or  
fue thou-  
sand head of  
cattell taken  
from the  
traytours.  
The booty  
wilely con-  
uerted to a  
good vse by  
the gouer-  
nour.

The Rebels  
are brought  
lowe, and of-  
fer to sub-  
mit them-  
selues.

Bingham, that the sparing of rebels pledges heretofore had done no small hurt in this realme, by encouraging the to ill actions, trusting vpon the accustomed mercy shewed to the like pledges: and then he marched to the Abbey of Ballenubbee, the two and twentieth of July: and from thence he sent his forces of footemen and kearne into the mountaines and woods to seeke the rebels in their fastnesse, which aforesaid forces was led by Captaine John Bingham, who had the charge of the garrison band, which behaued himselfe so well therein, that within the space of five or euen weekes they all submitted themselves to the state: himselfe with the earle of Clanrickard, and the hoshmen kept the champaigne and plaine country, as well for the defence of her maiesties good subiectes in those parts, as also to keepe the enemye from escaping away from the forces sent into their laide fastnesse. About this time there came an espiall out of Mounster, beinge sent, if it were as he said, as a messenger from those parts to Francis Barkley prouost marshall of Connaght. This espiall the more to encourage the traitors, and to animate others to ioyne with them, gaue it forth, that the earle of Leicester was slaine in the lowe Countries, and the most of the English forces ouerthrowne there: that there were 2. great armies of Spaniards landed in England, and that there was a great nauy of Spanish ships in Baltimore, that the king of Scots was in armes against her maiestie, and that her highnesse was sicke, and in great danger of death: vpon which vntrue seditious rumoz and report, sir Richard caused the Authoz and messenger thereof beinge a bad runnagate to be executed by martiall law. And now the footemen within the mountaines, and himselfe in the champaigne, so hunted the Burkes and their accomplices from place to place, that within the space of three weekes they began to be tame, and they had taken from them in that time the number of foure or fve thousand head of cattell, whereof sir Richard Bingham reserved towards the defraying of the extraordinary charges of the iourney the number of one thousand. All the rest were bestowed on the captaines and their companies, and the officers of the field as bootie, according to the custome in this country seruices, or else giuen to the kearne and light footemen as a consideration of their entertainments, which thereupon were discharged and dismissed from that seruice. Besides the depriuing these rebels of their cattell, as aforesaid, there were slaine of them about the number of fve or sixe score of all sorts. The rest in short time after diuided themselves, flying from caue to caue, and from one groue of wood to an other, where they might best hide themselves, sending in messengers to the gouernor to beseech him of mercie and pardon, and offering to submit themselves with all humblenesse. Whereupon it was when they were thus broken, that the gouernor discharged the kearne he had, as aforesaid, together with all Irish hoshmen of seuerall parts of the prouince, contenting all of them, either with some portion of the praies and booties gotten, or else with his owne money, his owne hoshmen and footemen, and the three bands of supplies aforesaid he staid from the seruice for a space, as well to refresh them, as also to giue time and leaue to the enemyes to come in freely without feare, which otherwise would haue possessed them, had the forces bene still vp and done in the woods. This beinge done they submitted themselves one after an other in sort following: Videlicet,

Ewster



Ewster M. Donnell chiefe of the Gallowglasses came in, submitted himselfe, & put in his sonne pledge for himselfe and his sept, the next Edmond Burke M. Richard Euerrine one of the strongest amongst them sonne to the last M. William faue one, came in and submitted himselfe, giuing in his sonne as pledge: after whom William Burke *alias* the Blind Abbot the chiefe of that surname, Edmond Burke of Castle Barry being dead, which claimed to be M. William, submitted himselfe very humbly, offering one of his sonnes as pledge. But (for that sir Richard liked not the sonne that he offered, but demanded his eldest sonne whom he knew to be a good pledge) he departed againe, yet within two dayes after, when he saw the gouernour would haue sent in his forces amongst them againe, he came to him, submitted himselfe, and brought his eldest sonne for a pledge: Moyler Oge Burke submitted himselfe. The loies did in like manner submit themselves, and also Riccard Burke *alias* the Diuels Hookes sonne, all these gaue in good pledges for the obseruation of the peace. These men upon their submission were so pined away for want of foode, and so ghaisted with feare within fewen or eight weekes, by reason they were so roundly folloved, without any interine of rest, that they looked rather like to ghosts then men. Edmond Burkes sonnes of castle Barry persisted still in the action. Their father was the man whom they sought to haue made M. William. till he was executed by course of the common law. This man was very old, yet was he put to death for these causes ensuing: he was a notable traitor, and the encourager of his sonnes to this action, during whose life, both they, and he, had a hope he should be M. William. To the end therefore they should be carried away no longer with the deceitfull twinges of this baine hope, and so the sooner dratwne to submission, he was indicted, arraigned, condemned and executed, as in like cases is accustomed. The gouernour might haue hanged him by martiall law, but rather made choice to haue it orderly done, as aforesaid, to the end her maiestie might haue his lands by escheat upon his attainder (for he had a good quantitie of land.) After this the said sonnes of Edmond Burke (seeing their father, and in him all their hope dead) offered to submit themselves, so as they might haue enioyed their fathers lands. But herein the gouernour referred them to the resolution of the lord Deputie and counsell to be further heard in that point, which they somewhat liked of, and then they offered the eldest brothers sonne as pledge: but the gouernour refused to take any child or other pledge, saving one of those brethren, which were in number five or seauen: but that they utterly denied to do: whereby it was well perceived they carried very bad intentions. At this time, whilst these men stood thus upon the pinch of submitting them, newes came to the gouernour, that 2000. Scots came ouer y<sup>e</sup> riuer of Barne toward Sligo with Edmond Kerragh Burke and Jo. Niclaue, who were sent by the Burkes their kinsmen, as you haue heard before, to dratw in those Scots for y<sup>e</sup> better defence of their quarell, which Scots were promised by the Burkes that they should inhabit the countie, so as they would banish out the Englishmen & defend the said traitors. These newes hindered a thorough pacification within the countie of Mayo: neuertheless this prouident & circumspect gouernour sir Richard B. n. ham, hauing already reduced and brought things there to so good a state, as before is said, dispatched the earle of Clanrickard

The rebels were so folloved, that they looked more like ghosts then men.

Edmond Burkes sons of Castell Barry persisted still in the action.

Edmond Burke of Castell Barry hanged.

The cause why the gouernour did do this execution.

The gouernours purpose in hanging of Ed Burke tooke good effect.

Newes came that the Scots were entering into the prouince which reports hindered a perfect and final pacification.

With

Sir R. staied  
himselfe to  
leade all  
things in the  
safest maner.  
Newes  
brought to  
the gover-  
nor that the  
Scots were  
come downe  
neere to  
Roscomon.  
The gover-  
nor rideth  
great iourneis  
for feare his  
complices &  
the Scots  
shoulde meete  
before his  
comming.  
Sir R. comes  
to Sligo.  
Sir Ar. O-  
neale, and  
Hugh Mac  
Gwier aided  
the Scots.  
The Scots  
were of all  
sortes be-  
tweene 3. or  
4. thousand.  
The cause  
why the Sc.  
staied about  
the Earne.  
The Scots  
would nor  
come into  
champaine  
ground.  
The Scots  
were the  
bolder to  
passe for-  
ward into  
the coun-  
trei, because  
sir R. wanted  
supply of En-  
glish forces.

with thirtie or fortie horsemen, and two bands of footemen, sending also pre-  
sently after them another band of footemen, all which ioyned with George  
Bingham, squier, brother to the said sir R. who was then shirife of the countie of  
Sligo, and leuied threer some shot, and horsemen before the comming of the said  
forces. These companies being thus united, stood upon guard and defence of the  
borders of the prouince, which caused the Scots not to make so much and so great  
hast to come forwarde, as otherwise they would haue done. Sir Richard staied  
in the countie of Maio a small time after the sending away of his said companies,  
of purpose to order things there more effectually for the defence of the countie, & for  
the prosecution of those few bad Burkes which yet continued in action against her  
Maestie: which being done in such good sort as the danger and necessity of that  
time could allowe, he then set forwarde towards Sligo, with a hundred foote-  
men and five and twentieth horsemen that were remaining with him: but upon his  
setting forth, he had newes brought him, that the Scots were dravne through  
ORoweys countie into the Maowghery or plaines by Roscomon to pray and  
spoele the same, by meanes whereof he rode a great daies iourney, and came that  
night neere to Roscomon, and lay that night foure miles from it, from whence  
(vnderstanding contrarie that the Scots were betwene Sligo and Bوندزويس)  
he rode the next day to the towne of Sligo, being well-nigh threer score En-  
glish mules, but the footemen he left to march away after him with as much  
conuenient speed as they might. His highway was to passe by the abbey of Boile,  
where he found sir Thomas Letrange, and other the risings out of the countie,  
whom he had appointed to lie there for the defence of the countie of Roscomon, he  
left them there for that time, and so came to Sligo the eight and twentieth of Au-  
gust. At his comming thither he was giuen to vnderstand that the Scot-  
es lay still incamped at the Earne, some on the one side, and some on the other side, to the  
number of so many as he was before aduertised, with some increase of horsemen  
and footemen, for sir Arthure Oneale, and Hugh M. Gwyer had ayded them  
with some forces, so as their forces was now about 2000. as it was said, of able  
men, besides women, boyes, and churles, whereof they had great store. I take it  
neere as many more, with great store of carriages. The comming of sir Richard  
so soone to Sligo, and the newes of the pacification within the countie of Maio,  
made them stay long about the Earne and Bوندزويس, either to expect more  
forces to come and ioine with them, or some new broiles to be raised in the countie  
behinde the gouernor by their confederates, which might cause him to deuide his  
forces, which were then foure hundred English and Irish, and about threer score  
horsemen, besides the risings out of the countie which were about a hundred  
horsemen and two hundred kearne: A force far too weak to haue encountered with  
the Scots, except they might haue bene gotten in a champaine ground. To which  
like place of disadvantage they had no intention to come, for of the 400. the Go-  
uernor had 300. which were Irish, and for the most part men but newly trained.  
He wrote to the L. Deputie to send him 2. other bands of 50. horsemen, for that  
there was no trust in the Irish horsemen, which horsemen & footemen (if they had  
come sooner than they did) had either cleane discouraged or sufficiently withstood  
the Scots from comming into the prouince at all. Sir Richard lay at Sligo, & the  
foote

foote of the Curlewes with his said forces fronting the Scots, and withstanding their entrie into the countrey (expecting still a supply from the lord Deputy) the space of fourteene daies: the Scots drawing on by little and little through O Rowiks countrey upon mountaines, woods and bogs towards the Curlewes, with intention to passe that waies into Maio, encamped euer in such fallnesse as he could not by any meanes come at them, without great disadvantage. At the length although sir R. kept the passage straightly upon them (for the watching of which he was obligen to divide his companies into sundrie places far distant from each other) yet in an exceeding foule, tempestuous & darke night, they deceiued him, for after he had watched & waited for their comming till 10. of the clocke at night, hearing before night y they had remoued their campe, & were rather going backe againe then coming towards him, he left to watch abroad any longer, & bestowed himselfe and his companies in places of securitie, which he did, supposing that (by reason of the abundance of raine which fell that evening, their long absence till that time of the night, and the words of O'Connor Sigo. which assured him that the said Scots had incamped themselves againe for that night. But shortly after this, when the Scots, by reason of some espials of their owne, or some traitterous intelligence out of the gouernors camp, had vnderstanding that sir Richard and his companie had reposed themselves to rest, stole towards the bridge of Kiltowney, neare to which at a castell not far off sir Richard for the defence thereof had placed his footemen, and ffitie Irish horsemen, and so being come priuily to the bridge 3. or 4. hundred of them gate ouer the same before the English footemen came at them: who, as soone as they came in, beat the Scots backe and won the bridge. But here the Irish horsemen did no seruice at all: when the alarm was, sir Richard himselfe was at a place called Knockmullyn, about a mile from the bridge, being also an other passage, where it was thought the Scots would sooner haue passed ouer than at the bridge. At this place the bridge was the onely straight and passage that sir R. knew the Scots could find to passe ouer into the countrey by: but they contrarily waded ouer at a forde not far from the bridge, neuer before knowne by any of the countrey that had or would confesse the same to the English: sir Richard and the horsemen, upon the alarm halled with great speed to the bridge and rode ouer the same without danger both of the enemy and his owne companie (for the night was exceeding darke) and the bullets and arrowes flew to and fro, without regard of any man that might march or ride betwixt them, and hauing passed the bridge (although the ground were ill for horsemen to serue on) yet he charged the Scots, and killed and drownded about 40. or 50. of them. The most part of his horsemen here failed him, some, because they were far off, and the said Irish forces he remoued with his owne ordinary companies into the baronie of Tyeragh, which he chieflie did for to saue the pray of that countrey which was great: he left the great mountaines of Slougan on the left hand, which were before on his right, and marched downe 8. miles into the said baronie, consisting of plaine ground with some bog in it of twenty miles in length, lying all along by the sea. In the same he came to a towne or village called Ardglasse, where he camped the second night, & hauing intelligence by espials that the enemy lay on y other side of the mountaines, not far fro an Abbey called Banneda

The Scots  
encampe in  
O Rowiks  
countrey.

Sir Richard  
reposeth him  
and his com-  
pany to rest  
in a sore te-  
pestuous  
night, the  
cause why.

The Scots  
come by  
steth to the  
bridge of  
Kiltowney.  
The English  
beare backe  
the Scots  
from the  
bridge.  
Sir Richard  
lay at an o-  
ther strait  
or passage.  
The Scots  
find an vn-  
known forde  
to passe  
ouer.  
Dangerous  
seruice.  
Sir Richard  
charged the  
Scots.  
Sir Richard  
doth re-  
moue into  
Tyeragh to  
saue the pray  
of the coun-  
trety.

A politike  
deuise of sir  
Richard to  
bring the  
Scots into  
security.

The supplies  
sent by the  
lord Deputy.

Sir Richard  
in some di-  
stresse for  
want of vi-  
suall.

The scarcity  
of the campe  
supplied by  
captaine  
Woodhouse.

Edmond  
Mac Costel-  
logh a gen-  
tleman of  
the country.  
The Scots  
proclaime  
themselves  
lords of the  
country.

in maruellous fast and strong ground, he tooke with him good guideship, he passed the sayd mountaines with his forces, and encamped that night at Deconron a towne of the bishop of O Hartes. At his being here he gaue it forth in policy, that the enemy was marching vp through Callen toward the inner and ciuile countries, as the lord Breninghams countrey, and the county of Roscomon. And thereupon he hastned by great dayes march to a castle called Moygarry, which stood in a streight, and in a fit and apt place to answer the seruice vpon them, if they had passed into the sayd countries. Sir Richard did this, to draw the Scots into an assured beliefe of their owne security, to win such aduantage of ground of them, as afterwards was gotten, for vpon the newes of sir Richards returning backe, they grew somewhat carelesse, and perswaded themselves (as also they were informed) that he was returned home to Roscomon, and durst not by reason of his small forces encounter with them, as after shall appeare well. Lying at Moygarry, the monday at thre of the clocke afternoone, newes was brought him from his brother George Bingham, that an hundred footemen of maister vicepresident, vnder the conduct of lieutenant Hunt, had passed the Courlews, whereupon the gouernour dispatched messengers to them: whereupon they came vnto him the same night. The morrow after being tuesday, he remooued to a castle called castle More, in the barony of Costellogh 5. miles from Moygarry, and a place as commodious to answer the seruice as the other was. Here came in to him 100. footemen of sir William Sturles, vnder the conduct of lieutenant Iaques, & 50. of sir George Bowchers footemen vnder the leading of lieutenant Day, with 25. horsemen of sir Henry Haringtons, & 15. of maister Wingfields. These men were brought in by captaine Gren Omoloy, whom he had sent forth for that purpose fife or seuen dayes before. Lying here, sir Richard & his company were in some distresse for want of victuals, but he was supplied by captaine Woodhouse, who brought him some beecues out of the plaine and champion countries. At this place sir R. B. with his companies lay tuesday and wednesday till noone, for it was long before the beefe was killed and made ready to sustaine them. By that time the espials which were before sent forth to discover the enemy, returned, bringing newes that at their last remooue from Clannary, they tooke their way toward Trdnary, a castle neare to Tirawly, and standing on the riuer of Moine, thinking to passe that way into the barony of Tirawly. This being knowne, sir Richard dealt with his guide to bring him the nearest way he could thither. At 12. of the clocke at noone vpon wednesday aforesaid, he remooued fro castle More, & marched towards the abbey of Bauned, all vnder the high woods & mountaines, through a place called the Aitter, in the barony of Costellogh, & came to the sayd abbey two houres within night. This abbey stands two miles from the woods in a plaine and open place: here the guide whose name was Edmond Mac Costellogh found out a priest which had that day broken from the Scots, with whom he had bene prisoner. The priest the sayd Edmond brought to the gouernour, of whom he learned most assuredly, that the Scots were all encamped at Trdnary, and had there proclaimed, that all the countrey was theirs, that sir Richard was returned to Roscomon, and that all his forces had forsaken him, and therefore whosoever would willingly come vnto them, should be friendly receiued to their fauour, and haue no hurt.

Sir



Sir Richard dealt with this priest to be his guide to bring him where the Scots were: but the priest durst not undertake it, except a couple of horsemen of the O Haries which he named might be sent with him: the gouernor willed him to fetch those two gentlemen of the O Haries, which he did, and returned to him againe an houre after midnight. These two gentlemen sent away two espialles to discouer the Scots more certainly, and about three of the clocke in the morning when the moone gaue light, sir R. arose, and addresting himselfe and his company, marched towards Belcleare 4. miles from the Abbey in the highway towards the enemy: here one of the espials came in, bringing newes, that the Scots lay still incamped at Ardunary, which was 12. miles from the aforesaid Abbey of Baundea, and 8. miles from the Abbey of Belcleare. At his marching from hence the night forsooke him and his companie, and they forsooke the highway and marched ouer the mountaines both horsemen and footemen, with all their cariages, carying themselves in a hearse altogether, keeping the bottoms and low places by circumference waies, with as great silence as was possible. This mountaine was in breadth 4. or 5. miles, which sir R. with his forces past about nine of the clocke. And after he had marched a mile into the hard ground, and were not about two miles from the enemy, he made alte to draw all his forces together, & there gaue order & direction for the fight. From whence himselfe with his horsemen rode towards the enemy, and left the footemen to come after, with a speedy march. Sir R. with his horsemen being now come within halfe a mile of the Scots camp, sent out halfe a dozen horsemen as scouts aforesaid to discouer them, & the manner of their camp, which horsemen came euen amongst their cabbins, & gaue them a loud baine & fearefull alarum, & so retired to sir R. who that time came to the top of the hill neare to them, where he might take view of all the ground betwixt him & the castle where the Scots lay. Now he sent away post after post for the battell, and the loose shot to come in to him, for the enemy was risen and arrayed in battell, and made head towards him in their greatest brauerie: sir Richard entertained them with skirmishing to winne time, and draw them by higher to the hard ground till the footemen might come in, who approached with such silence that the Scots neuer suspected any such companies to be at hand: but when the shot began to approach them, sir Richard charged them roughly, and thoroughly with his horsemen, beate backe their loose wings to their battell, draue them to a little bogue, and killed many of them. After which he againe retired, and caused some of his shot on horse-backe to alight from their horses, and therewithall entertained them with a second charge, about which time his loose shot, and the whole battell of footemen came in, and then the footemen charged them in the foreward, and himselfe with his horsemen in the flanke, in such sort, that they soone discomfited and ouerthrew their whole force, and draue them to the riuers side, where he and his companie slue and drowned them all sauing 80. or thereabouts, which stripped themselves, and by swimming ouer the riuer of Moine into Tiratoly, saued themselves, leauing their weapons & apparell behind them. There were no more saued of all their forces; and of all sorts of them but these, and a 100. and od that went the day before into Tiratoly for a pray with some of the Burkes. But such as swam ouer the riuer, as aforesaid were afterwards killed in

Sir R. marched toward the Scots,

He giued direction for the fight. A scout sent to discouer the Scots.

Sir Richard commeth within view of the Scots. He skirmisheth with them. He killeth some with his horsemen.

The Scots killed and drowned.

in

Scots killed in the county of Sligo by maister George Bingham esquire, and the gentlemen of the countrey. Some of the Scots slaine by their old friends. Scots slaine and drowned 3000. Two of the Englishmen slaine. The names of the captaines imployed. The number of the English forces.

The great troubles and cares taken by sir Richard.

The good husbandry of sir Richard for the queene. He spared not his owne purse to further the service. Sir Richard forced to buy his powder. The overthrow of the Scots.

in their returne and flying towards the north in the county of Sligo by George Bingham esquire brother to the gouernour, being then chiefe of the county of Sligo, together with the helpe of the gentlemen of the countrey, diuerse also of them which were absent for this layd pray whilest the battell was fought, and certaine of their horsemen, which were then also foraging abroad for horsemeate, were afterwards slaine in their returne and flying homewards, euen by some such as when they came first forwarde and were strong, were their great friends. The number of fighting men slaine and drowned, as hath bene well knowne and tried out, were fourtene of fiftene hundred, besides horse and foote boyes, women, churles, and childen were as many more, so as in the whole there died of them that day and the day after in their flying homewards, three thousand persons, and of the English companies were not slaine past two persons, and these also through their otiose folly in being too forwarde for the spoyle, but many men and horses were hurt and galled. This day the chiefe leaders of them, James Mac Connellson, viz. Donnel Gocum, & Alexander Carrogh were slaine, together with all the rest of their leaders, and the chiefe Burks which dreyne them into the prouince. In this seruice was imployed vnder sir R. Iohn Bingham captaine of 100. footemen, Nicholas Mordant captaine of the like number, captaine Merryman of the like company, William Mollean captaine of the like number, besides the lieutenants afore rehearsed sent from the lord Deputy, and certaine leaders of horsemen. And besides captaine Woodhouse, captaine Greene, which had no charge, and maister Newton, and captaine Betaghe, which had charge of some horsemen, the whole company were in name about 600. footemen, and by poll about 500. besides 90. horsemen, whereof fifty were of the garrison of the prouince, and the other forty were sent by the lord Deputy. This ouerthrow was great, and the paines and policies therein taken and bled great, but the seruices in Sligo, the watching & trauels at the strights before the Scots came into the countrey was much more greater: but the wonderfull care and industry of sir Richard in those seruices, which continued out in it 13. or 14. weekes together, not once comming home to his house in that time, and faring hardly, and lying on the ground and on strato a great part of the sayd time was to be noted, and in him highly commended. Yea ouer and aboue all this, although he created three severall companies of footemen, each of them consisting of a hundred men with their officers, and certaine horsemen which continued in pay during all the sayd time, besides five or six hundred kearne, which also had pay ouer and aboue her maiesties allowance, yet he so handled the matter, with the goods of rebels, which by strong hand he got from them, and with 3. or 4. hundred pound of his mony, he defraied the extraordinary expences of the sayd seruices, not charging her maiesty with any one groate thereof, or any of the subiects of the countrey either for victuals or any other thing, other then some small matter, which the risings out brought, or which souldiers in comming to him or going from him ate, where they came for a night in a place: yea he charged himselfe in this case (that being granted of powder from her maiesties store in Dublin) he was driuen to furnish himselfe thereof, for his ready mony in Galway. Lastly, this seruice was such as drowned and cut off all the old beaten Scots which bled to haunt Ireland, insomuch that now (it is sayd) there are not forty such to beare

such to beere by head in all that realme of Ireland to the great behoofe and comfort of the same, to the great ease and benefite of her Maiestie, and to the eternall commendations of this worthy gentleman sir Richard Bingham for euer.

In the moneth of July, diuerse trayterous persons were apprehended, and detected of a most wicked and detestable conspiracie against her Maiestie, and also of minding to haue stirred vp a generall rebellion throughout the whole realme: for ioy of whose apprehension, the citizens of London on the 15. of the same moneth at night, and on the next morrow caused the bells in the churches to be rung, and bonefires in their streets to be made, and also banquetted euery man according to his abilitie, some in their houses, some in the streetes with singing of Psalmes & praising God, for preserving her Maiestie and people of this land, which doings of the citizens were so well accepted of her Maiestie, as by her letters to them directed may appeare, the copie wherof being read openly in a great assembly of the commons in the Guild hall of that citie the 22. of August, before the reading wherof, master James Dalcroft one of y<sup>e</sup> Counsellers of that citie, in the absence of y<sup>e</sup> Recorder, made this speech hereafter following. But first her Maiesties letters.

Great reioy-  
cing for ap-  
prehending  
of traitors.

To our right trustie and welbeloued, the lord maior of our citie of London, and his brethren the aldermen of the same.

Right trustie and welbeloued, we greet you well, being giuen to vnderstand how greatly our good and most louing subiects of that citie did reioyce at the apprehension of certaine diuellish and wicked minded subiects of ours, that through the great and singular goodnesse of God haue bene detected, to haue most wickedly and vnnaturally conspired, not onely the taking away of our owne life, but also to haue stirred vp (as much as in them lay) a generall rebellion throughout our whole realme: we could not but by our owne letters witnesse vnto you the great and singular contentment we receiued vpon the knowledge thereof, assuring you, that we did not so much reioyce at the escape of the intended attempt against our owne person, as to see the great ioy our most louing subiects tooke at the apprehension of the contriuerers thereof, which to make their loue more apparant, they haue (as we are to our great comfort informed) omitted no outward shew that by any externall act might witnesse to the world the inward loue and dutifull affection they beare toward vs. And as we haue as great cause with all thankfulness to acknowledge Gods great goodnesse towards vs, though the infinite blessings he layeth vpon vs, as many as euer prince had, yea rather, as euer creature had: yet do we not for any worldly blessing receiued from his diuine maiesty so greatly acknowledge the same, as in that it hath pleased him to incline the hearts of our subiects euen from the first beginning of our raigne, to carrie as great loue towards vs as euer subiects caried toward prince, which ought to moue vs (as it doth in very deepe) to seeke with all care, and by all good meanes that appertaine to a Christian prince, the conseruation of so louing and dutifull affected subiects: assuring you that we desire no longer to liue, then while we may in y<sup>e</sup> whole course of our government cary our selfe in such sort, as may not only nourish and continue their loue and good will towards vs, but also increase y<sup>e</sup> same: we thinke meete, that these our letters should be communicated in some generall assembly to our most louing subiects the commoners of that city.

By the  
Queene to  
the Lord  
Maior of  
of London,  
her letters.

Given vnder our signet at our castell of Windsor the 18. of August 1586. in the 28. yeare of our raigne.

Maister  
James Dal-  
ton his ora-  
tion.

Right worshipfull, my good countrie men and citizens of this most noble citie of London: Since the late bruite and report of a most wicked and traiterous conspiracie, not onely to take away the life of our most gracious Soueraigne, (whome God graunt long to liue and raigne ouer vs) but also to stirre vp a generall rebellion throughout the whole realme: the great and vniuersall ioy of you all of this citie, vpon the apprehension of diuerse of that most wicked conspiracie, of late declared and testified by many outward acts and shewes, hath brought in the Queenes most excellent maiestie such a gracious contentment, that it hath moued her Highnesse by her letters signed with her owne hand, to signifie vnto my lord maior of this citie and his brethren, her most noble and princely acceptation thereof, and that in such sort as thereby may appeare, that her Highnesse hath not moze, no not so much reioyced at the most happie escape of the wicked mischiefe intended against her owne person, as at the ioy which her louing subiects, and namely you of this citie of London tooke at the apprehension of the practisers of that intended treason. By occasion whereof her highnesse brought to a thankfull remembrance and acknowledging of Gods infinite blessings bestowed on her, comparable with any prince or creature in the world, no wooldly thing moze or like accounteth of, then of the heartie loue of her louing and faithfull subiects many waies and many times before now, but especially by this our great ioy in this sort at this time, and vpon this occasion shewed.

And that her exceeding great loue and acceptation of our reioycing may the moze appeare vnto you, it hath pleased her Highnesse in the same letters to declare, that she desireth not longer to liue among vs, then she shall maintaine, continue, nourish and increase the loue and good will of her subiects towards her. And this her Highnesse hath willed to be made knowne vnto you all, with this, that she will not faile with all care, and by all good meanes that appertaine to a Christian prince, to seeke the conseruation of you all so louing and dutifully affected subiects. This her maiesties pleasure in part now declared, and moze to be made knowne to you by her owne letters, which you shall heare read: my lord maior and his brethren haue required me to declare vnto you all, that they do highly reioyce and thanke God for the happie day of the good acceptation of this your great ioy, and my lord himselfe hath willed me to giue you all heartie thanks in his name, for that in the time of his seruice your dutifull behauiours haue gotten to the citie so noble and worthie a testimonie of dutie and loyaltie of so noble and worthie a Queene. Now for as much as Gods blessings wonderfully abound, and one ioy comes vpon another, let vs not be vnthankfull to God, but acknowledge his goodnesse, and attribute the same (as indeede we ought) to the sincere religion of Almighty God, most godly established by the Queenes most excellent Maiestie, which hath taught vs to know God aright, our dutie to our Soueraigne, and to loue our countrie, and hath made vs dutifull and obedient subiects, reioycing at all good things happening to her Maiestie, her realme, or to any in her noble seruice, the true effects of a true and good religion: whereas the contrinners thereof, and immoderate affecters of the Romish religion, and supersti-

tions,



flons, being bothe of the true knowledge of God, haue declined from God, their allegiance to their prince, their loue to their countrie, and haue become inuention of mischiefs, hunters and spreaders abroad of false and seditious rumours, such as ioy at no good thing, but contrariwise reioyce at euerie euill successe, the banges and marks of their profession, who haue before this, in this realme and in other her highnesse dominions, stirred by rebellion, foraine inuasion, and many times practised the very death and destruction of the Queene her selfe, the ruine and subuersion of the whole realme, the proper effects of their Romish religion. We haue beheld all these things, and scene in our daies the ruine and mischiefs inuented against others, fall vpon the inuentours themselves: and haue knowne the wicked and violent hands of diuerse of them, diuellishly to kill and murder themselves, when most trayterously they would, and most happily they could not slay the Lords annointed. As we haue knowne all these things, so God be thanked, that by a better religion, hauing bene better taught, we haue bene no partakers of their wicked deuises, but haue put to our helping hands as occasion hath serued, and euer readie to ouerthrow the authours and deuilers thereof. And I haue no doubt, but we of this noble citie, who hitherto haue bene alwaies readie dutifully and faithfully to serue her Maestie vpon all occasions (her Highnesse now so graciously accepting onely of our reioicing at the apprehension of her enemies, euen the least part of the dutie of a good subiect to so good a Queene) will be readie every one with all that he can make, and with the uttermost adventure of all our liues, speedily to be reuenged vpon ail such as shall diuellishly and traiterously attempt or put in vze any mischiefe to her noble person, and in the meane time will haue a better eye and care to all suspicious and discontented persons, to their sayings and doings, to their false bruits and reports, to the places and corners of their haunt and resort, to their harboyers, companions, aiders and maintainers.

God vphold and continue his religion among vs, and increase our zeale therein, which hath made vs so louing and loyall, and so beloued and acceptable subiects to so worthie a prince, and roote out that wicked and Romish religion, that hath made so many disloyall and trayterous subiects: to whom is both odious and ieksome the long life and prosperous raigne of our most noble Queene Elizabeth. God confound all such traitors, and preserve her Highnesse long to liue and raigne ouer vs.

The 7. of September, certaine of these diuellish and wicked subiects were indicted: first, for intending treason against the Quenes owne person: secondly, for stirring ciuill wars within the realme: and thirdly, for practising to bring in foraine power to inuade the realme: seuen of them appeared at Westminster on the 13. of September, who all pleaded guiltie and were condemned, but had iudgement on the next morrow. On the 15. of September, other seuen were likewise arraigned, who pleading not guiltie, were found guiltie by 12 Jury, & had iudgment.

These traytors 14. in number, were executed in Lincolnes Inne fields on a stage or scaffold of timber strongly made for that purpose, euen in the place where they had used to meete and to confer of their trayterous practises, there were they hanged, boiuelled, and quartered, seuen of them on the 20. of September, to wit,

J. Ballard priest, Anthony Babington esquire, I. Sauvage gentleman, Rob. Barnwell gentleman, Chidioke Tichborne esquire, Charles Tuncy esquire, Ed. Abington esquire. The other seven were likewise executed on the 21. of September, to wit, Thomas Salisbury esquire, Henry Dun gentleman, Edward Jones esquire, John Trauerse gentleman, John Charnocke gentleman, R. Gage gentleman, Ierom Bellamie gentleman, &c. as I haue more at large set downe in Reigne Wolls and Holinsheds chronicle.

The Royall Merchant and other foure ships of London their victory against 13. gallies of Castile and Malta.

The merchants of London being of the corporation for the Turkie trade intending onely a merchants voyage, prouided and furnished with all things belonging to the seas, five tall and stout ships appertaining to London, to wit, y<sup>e</sup> Merchant Royall, the Tobie, the Edward Bonaenture, the William and John, the Susan: these five departing from the coast of England in the moneth of November, 1585. kept together as one fleet, till they came as high as the isle of Sicilie within the Leuant, where each ship tooke leaue of the rest, and separated themselves to particular ports, wherunto they were bound, one for Tripolis in Syria, and other for Constantinople, and the rest to other places: but before they deuised themselves they agreed, after the lading of their goods at their seuerall ports, to meete at Zante an yland neare to the maine continent of the west part of Africa. These accordingly (their businesse first performed, failed not to keepe promise, and arriued at Zante within the compasse of the time afoze limited, here they staid in this port till the necessities of each ship were supplied, and nothing wanted to set out for their returne. In this port the newes was fresh of two generall armies and fleets lying in await to intercept them, the one consisting of thirtie strong gallies, and that fleet howered about y<sup>e</sup> straits of Gibraltar. The other army had in it twentie gallies, whereof some were of Sicilie, and some of the yland of Malta, vnder the charge of Iohn Andreas Dorea a captaine seruing y<sup>e</sup> king of Spaine. The Merchant Royall was appointed admirall of the English fleet, & the Tobie vice-admirall, by whose orders the rest promised to be directed, and each ship bowed not to breake from the other. Thus in good order they left Zante, & committed themselves to the seas, and proceeded in their course without sight of any enemy, till they came neare to Pantalarra an yland betwene Sicilie and y<sup>e</sup> coast of Affrike, into the sight wherof they came the 13. of July, and the same day they descried thirtene sailles, 11. gallies, and two frigots lying in waite for them. As soone as the English ships had espied them, they made themselves readie to fight, the gallies more and more approached them, and in their banners the armes of Sicilie & Malta: they sent their frigots to our admirall, demanding of him whence they were: who answered, of England: they asked why they delayed to send or come to Don Pedro de Luna their Generall, to acknowledge their dutie to him in the name of the Spanissh king lord of those seas: our men replied, y<sup>e</sup> they ought no such dutie to him, nor would acknowledge any, &c. Whereupon in the end the fight began betwene them, and continued very hot for the space of five houres, what slaughter was made among the Spaniards the English men were vncertaine: but they supposed the same to be so great, y<sup>e</sup> they wanted men to continue y<sup>e</sup> charging of their peeces: wherupon with shame they withdrew themselves, and the Englishmen contented in respect of their deepe lading, rather to continue their voyage

borage then to follow the chace, ceased from further blowes, with the losse onely of two men slaine and one other hurt in the arme, whom maister Edward Wilkenlon captaine of the admirall, with his good wraod did so comfort, that he nothing esteemed the smart of his wound in respect of the honour of such a victorie, and shamefull repulse of the enimie. The English ships proceeded in their navigation as high as Algier, a port towne upon the coast of Barbarie, where they refreshed themselves, and tooke such supplie of fresh water and victuals as they needed, and put to the sea looking to meete with the second armie of the Spanissh king, which waited for them about the mouth of the streight of Gibraltar, which they were of necessitie to passe: but coming neare to the said streight, it pleased God to raise a very darke fog, so that one ship could not discerne another, by means whereof, together with the faire easterne winde that then blew, they passed with great speede through the streight: but yet the Spanissh gallies had a sight of them when they were come within thre English miles of the towne, & made after them in all hast possible, but in vaine: they shot off their ordnance in the sea, as if they had bene in the midst of them. But thus it pleased God to deride and delude all the forces that the king of Spaine had provided to distress the English, who notwithstanding passed through both his armies: in the one little hurt, and in the other nothing touched, and arrived at Cith the 18. of September, in the yeare of our lord, 1586.

Now to returne to the service in the Low countries done by his Excellencie & other under his charge, after the yielding of the strong fort of Rimegan which was on the 20. of May, as ye haue heard before: it followeth, that on the 21. of May his Excellencie returned to Arnam and there sojourned. On the 22. of May, there passed towards Barrikes hoofe 11. or 12. hundred men most bravely furnished of our English nation. The 25. of May, was brought before Barrikes hoofe sence two canons, which shot at the sence that day, & on the next morrow in the morning was the same sence yielded to his Excellencie. the soldiers putting themselves to his mercie, who pardoned them, & let them passe with life onely. In this sence were found alive about 60. persons, the rest were slaine in the siege. At the yielding of this sence count Hollocke found one of his cosins, to which when he beheld, he said, Ha villaine, art thou become a traitor to thy country & his excellencie? I avouch, & thou art none of my blood, & with his rapier thrust him in & slue him.

The 24. day of May, the enemy played before Graue with their ordnance, and presently assailed it, but they of the towne being led by the county Embrigh did repulse them so sufficiently, that the enemy lost neare a thousand men.

On Whitstunday, Peregrine Barrie, lord Willoughby of Erskbie lying at Berganapome, understanding of a great convoi that was coming to Antwerpe, let upon it, and tooke it, there were of wagons 480. laden with victuals, oyle, salt, and wine taken, which had to draw those wagons a thousand mares and horses, there were 200. men slaine by our horsemen and footmen, and 400. taken prisoners that were sent with the convoi to haue the defence thereof. The Lord Willoughby tooke a threescore wagons into his towne of Berganapome, and burned the rest, and for the salt, oile, and wine, he brake up the heads of the vessels, and let them be spoiled.

*H. Arber.*  
Service in  
the Lowe  
countries by  
his Excellencie,  
Berke hoofe  
woon.

County  
Hollocke.

An over-  
throw given  
to the ene-  
mie at  
Graue.  
Lord Wil-  
loughby took  
a convoi at  
Antwerpe.

Bariks hoofs  
sconce ouer-  
throwne.

The 30. of May, sir Iohn Norris was sent to take order for the overthrowing of Bariks-hoof: sconce which was done, for that it was thought not meete to be kept with viem, his Excellency hauing the sconce at Nemegan that kept the river of Wall, and the sconce made by Skinke at Thelhouse kept both the river of Wall and the Reine, for that this sconce standeth at the entrance of these two great riuers: And for that his Excellency had Arman sconce at the ioyning together of Tell-Reyne, and Dowlsborough riuers. In this meane time to wit on the 26 of May, the enemy spared no kind of shot to annoy the towne of Graue, but thundered with canons at it as it had bene musket or caluice. He had at it 8. canons, 20. smaller peeces, as culuerings and demy canons, &c. The Graue of Embrike seeing the assault to be so hot, and fearing the event (although he had written to his Excellency that he should not care for Graue, but go about his other businesse on the 27. of May entred parley with the enemy, and presently let in his souldiers, which seeing certaine English men and others more faithfull then the rest, straight tooke a place of strength, and kept without victuals thre dayes in despite of the enemies and after seeing no way to be releued, they departed by composition. And thus was the strong towne of Graue lost by the county Embrough, who after came to Hudson, sent for foure of the burgesse of the towne, for what purpose was not knowne, but thought to perswade them to betray the towne, but 3. of them returned, the fourth not found, but thought to be with y<sup>e</sup> prince of Parma. As for the county Embrough as he was walking with 3. or 4. other captaines of Graue, he was with 4. other captaines surprisid by some of our side, & brought to his Excellency on the 2. of June to Wyndhurst, & were committed to prison.

Graue lost  
to the ene-  
my.

His Excel-  
lency remo-  
ueth from  
Armen to  
Nemegan.

The last of May, his Excellency with his whole companies of souldiers and gentlemen passed from Armen to the campe before Nemegan, where his pavilion was pitched, and presently he sent a 2000. men toward Tille, to keepe the water from the enemies passage.

Tille and the  
Amon ther-  
of, his strage  
dealings  
with messen-  
gers.

The fourth of June, his Excellency first hauing sent Skinke and captain Williams, with diuers other cororats of horse and gentlemen, towards Wendelo (for that the prince of Parma had begun to besiege it) came from the legat at Nemegan to Tille where he rested that night. The gouernour of Tille, called the Amon being a man of great courage, and a protestant, vled the prince of Parma in this sort, the prince sending a trumpeter to parley with him, he straight wayes without any talke hanged him vp. The prince wondering he heard not of his trapper, sent a drumme to know what was become of him, vnto whom the Amon answered, your trumpeter is hanged, and thou shalt be downed, & so it was done without any more words. This towne is situate in the Betto, whose ground is the most fertile or onely place of fertility in Guelderland. The towne is strong, the one side the Amon may at his pleasure downe, the other is so strong with rampiers, wals, and fortres, that the Amon protesteth that he regardeth no prince or princes power in the world. He hath halfe a score ships of war at his appointment, wherby he commandeth all the waters about him, he hath alwayes shewed a singular loue to our nation, especially to his Excellency, inso much that he vowed to keepe the towne to his ble. so long as he liued.

The fift of June, his Excellency passed from Tille to Somell, there was the castle



castle of the Warneborough, and for that he tooke part with the prince of Parma, his house was bent and spoiled. The beauty of the towne of Bomell is in two streets, crossing one the other, very large and faire, at the crossing of which streets, there is a very faire market place, the towne is strong though little, and sufficiently appointed with ordinance and munition. It standeth in an Island very fertile and sweete, having such store of orchards, gardens, and other pleasures, as it passeth all others: on the top of the steeple of the church in this towne, the country lieth so plaine about it, that one may see all these townes following, Pennegan, Maganin, Arnam, Keyne, Clucke, Colinborough, Utrike, Uiana, Surcom, Hudson, Fatinghamballe, Graue, Cille, Haole castle, and Baryn castle.

The towne  
of Bomell.  
Warnebo-  
row castle  
spoiled.

The 9. of June, his Excellency came from Bomell to Garcome downe the river Malle, leauing at Bomell a garrison of three hundred Dutchmen, with those of the towne, who at the first could hardly brooke the garrison, till they were perswaded by countie Hollocke passing toward the towne. There was fire of fouer ensignes of his Excellencies souldiers on the banke of the river, which did discharge braue volies of shot, then was there on each side the river a mightie sence full of souldiers, which gaue their volies of shot, then the ordinance of the towne went off: and entring the towne, he was entertained by the Burgesses, and passing thorough the towne, on both sides were placed souldiers in great number. On the next morrowe his Excellency went into the castle of the towne, which is marvellous strong. This towne is very rich, for there are many rich merchants, which passe to all parts of the world usuall. The river Malle runneth through the midst of this towne, and the rivers of Reine and Haze on each side. The towne is very strong, for that round about the countrey may be drowned. His Excellency with his whole traine were here marvellously welcommed, and well vsed, for victuall, lodging, &c. There is by this towne, another towne of great force, called Worcome, by the castle of Zulien, this Worcome is in greatnesse but a billage, but in situation and strength, a thing of great importance: it standeth in the same Island that Zulien standeth in. It is Graue Maurice his towne, and kept his garrison of souldiers.

Garcome.

Worcome.

The 10. of June, a post came to his Excellency, from coronell Skinke and captaine Williams, with letters: the effect whereof were, that the sayd sir Marcio Skinke, and captaine Williams, staying not farre from Uento (which the duke as then besieged) and longing to shew the zeale they had to the seruice of her maiesty of England, set out with their horsemen in the night, all the Dutch men for the most part forsaking them, so that with him was not about 160. horses, with these he set forward, killed the still watch, & passing farther killed also two courses of gard fully appointed, and entring by force the quarter that the prince of Parma was in, they killed a number of noblemen and gentlemen: but in the returne the enemy well appointed set on our men, and scattered them, to some losse, but the greater sort escaped: the skirmish being ended, and our men retiring, Captaine Williams was one of the hindmost of them all, and he cried (being yet in the enemies campe) where is Williams, where is Williams, and another answered, before before, and thus he escaped.

The 13. of June, his Excellency went to Dort with a small traine, where being come about five of the clocke in the afternoone, the Burgers made him such great cheere, as was thought to haue bene impossible for so short a time of prouision. The 14. he tooke ship towards Utrike from Dort, being waisted with an hoyle full of souldiers of the towne.

Verlo lost  
to the ene-  
my.

The 22. of June, the enemy attained Venlo, a towne of great importance and strength: there was in this towne, not only the wife of Skinke, and his children, but also the treasure, hoyle, and (for the most part) the furniture that Skinke had, this towne had in it of souldiers, to the number of five or sixe hundred, all of Skinke men well appointed and braue souldiers.

The 23. of June, his Excellencie passed to Colingborough about nine english miles from Utrike, only to visite the Graue of Colingborough, where hee diued, viewed the towne, and returned to Utrike, taking with him the laide Earle of Colingborough.

Berganap-  
lome.

The 29. of June his Excellencie passed from Utrike to Dort. The 30. of June, he remooued from Dort, to Williams state or Ragon hill. The same day Countie Hollocke ouerthrew a cornet of hoyle belonging to Breda, with the helpe of Maister Robert Sidneyes cornet, sir Philip Sidneyes cornet and other. The said Countie Hollocke practised to haue a conuoy passe from out of Brabant, to Berganaplome, which y<sup>e</sup> enemy being warned of by spies, that this conuoy was guarded but with some sixtene or twenty hoyle, the gouernour of Breda sent out his cornet or strength of hoyle to this exploit: but some few of them, being either afraid to meddle with our men, or doubting the true occasion that happened, staid behind the rest. Captaine Welch an english man, which a great time had serued y<sup>e</sup> enemy, had y<sup>e</sup> leading of y<sup>e</sup> hoyle at Breda, but passing to this exploit, countie Hollocke with maister Robert Sidneye beset them round, which the enemy no sooner perceived, but yielded, so there was taken captaine Welch and a thirty hoyle, & as many men. The 31. of June his Excellency early in the morning passed from Williams state to Berganaplome, & about thre of the clocke in the afternoone he arriued there, and presently passed to the strong castle of old Alaw: this towne is in the entrance of Brabant, 20. english miles from Antwerpe, upon the same riuer that Antwerpe standeth. It is a towne now almost ruined, though before in the prosperity of it it was not much inferior to Antwerpe, there are few people but souldiers, the Burgers forsaking their goodly builded houses, are gone to other places. This towne is subiect in two places to hills of firme ground, which are the places that make this towne far weaker then otherwise it would be, yet wonderfully rapped with bulwarks, wals, and flankers in all places. The L. Willoughby hath wonderfully enlarged the strength of this towne: further he hath made two very strong bulwarks in two places of the towne, at the haue of the towne, and from the towne a slight shot or more, are 2 mighty sconces, which stand by the riuer side, which indeed are of more strength then the towne, & they are to command the towne: a 2. english miles from the towne standeth a ruinated towne in an Island, & by this riuer whose situation is such, as for strength it might be made a braue place, for arc & otherwise, this towne is called Roma's ward, against the which standeth a strong sconce, and so along the riuer to the towne standeth diuerse the like,

Romars  
ward.

like, to command the riur and passage to the towne: the castle before named, that his Excellency went to view at his arriuall at this towne, is also such as no reasonable force can win, alwayes once a yeare victualled and manned afresh, this castle regardeth not the canon shot, it is so rampred. The 1. of July, his Excellency passed from Berganaplonie to Suricksea, a towne in Zeland, and in an Island so called. In this Island also is another towne called Biewers hauen, a very strong towne, this Island is most fertile. The 2. of July his Excellency passed to Doxt. And the same day passed from Berganaplonie 3000. men that were there newly arrived, to Stenberge, a towne greatly noyous to the garrison of Berganaplonie, for when they passed into Brabant upon any exploit, they were letted by the soldiers of this towne: this iourney was so closely kept, that our men shot at the walls of Stenbergen ere any of that towne knew for what cause so great a number of men were gathered.

Suricksea.

Stenbergen.

The 2. of July, there entred into Flaunders, the Graue Maurice, the prince of Oranges sonne, and sir Philip Sidney, lord gouernour of Flushing, with other, to the number of foure thousand footemen, and three thousand horsemen. The fourth of July, Graue Maurice tooke on him to cut the bankes of the sea, to drowne the land of Masse, hauing with him two thousand men, the rest of the army passed with sir Philip Sidney into Flaunders, and surprised the towne of Arell, there were slaine of souldiers of that towne three hundred, besides the Bourgers that made resistance, which were likewise slaine. This done, they came to Drope, or Drope, a towne of great importance, this they entred and tooke in it five hundred boozes, which were kept to do seruice, and to be ransomed. Graue Maurice with his two thousand men so pleted the bankes, that in short time he had made it sufficient for the water, not onely to enter, but to drowne all the country, but the wind stood so contrary, that no water to the purpose entred at that time, onely the bankes lay open. In the meane time our men tooke five sconces, and put all to the sword that they found in them, and this was their entrance into Flaunders. The towne of Arell is not farre from Antwerpe, and about the same distance from Gaunt, and not five english miles from either, the land of Masse wherein this towne standeth, is the onely paradise of those lands, and most fertile place of all other. The eight of July, Graue Maurice returned to Middleborough, leauing all occasions to sir Philip Sidney gouernour of Flushing. The tenth of July, coronell Yorke brought to his Excellency to Dunhage, five ensignes of the enemies, all which were taken from the enemy in the towne of Arell, and the sconces.

Sir Philip Sidney entred Flaunders. Arell surprised by the English.

Drope.

Five sconces taken by the English.

In this meane time, to wit, on the ninth of July was Paulus Buce a great state and a polirike man taken at Utrike and put in prison, and very shortly after was taken another named Peter Fullistine, and likewise committed to prison. The 14. of July, his Excellency commanded the gates of Utrike to be enclosed, and all the bridges to be drowne, all the men both English and Dutch souldiers to be in armes, and further proclaimed that all men that loued the queene of England, should presently be armed to the uttermost, which being done, the English souldiers were placed on the walls, with commandement, that no Burger whatsoever should come thereon, but presently they should take from them their upper gar.

Utrike in armes by commandement of his Excellency.

garments, which if they refused, they should be straight slain. Also a straight search was made in the Towne for suspicious persons, and there were taken three which were committed to prison. The cause of this stir was this, it was reported, that there were come into the towne 500. of the enemies, in boozes apparell to betray the towne, but it was not so.

About this time, sir Philip Sidneys comet at Housdon, and certaine Dutch cornets, to the number of a hundred horse or more, with a two companies of footemen, entred into Brabant, taking booties, and spoyling the country, which being knowne to the enemies, they sought to intrap our men, and with a three hundred horse, and certaine companies of footemen, they set upon our horse, put them to retreat, and pursued them far: but our men, by swimming and goodnesse of their horses, escaped for the most part, onely a cornet of Dutch & one other officer of them were slain, our footemen brought their bootie into such streights and fens, that the enemies could not indomage them, so that they brought their booties safe to Housdon.

The 15. of July, sir Philip Sidney, Lord gouernor of Flushing, the Lord Willoughby, with those powers they had receiued from the garrison of Arel, considering the coming in of the water into the land of Masse, which might sufficiently defend that countrie, remooued the campe. The lord Willoughby to Bergenapsume, where he was gouernor, sir Philip Sidney passed the sea with a three thousand men: whose enterprise shall be shewed hereafter. This sir Philip Sidney, at or before the taking of Arel, within an English mile of the Towne, called so many of his souldiers together as could heare him, and there made a long Oration, wherein he declared what cause they had in hand, as Gods cause, vnder, and for whom they fought, for her Maiestie; whom they knew so well to be so good vnto them, that he needed not to shew, against whom they fought, men of false religion, enemies to God and his Church: against Antichrist, and against a people whose unkindnesse both in nature and in life did so excell, that God would not leaue them unpunished: further, he perswaded them that they were Englishmen, whose valour the world feared and commended, and that now they should not, either feare death or perill whatsoever, both for that their seruice, they ought to their Prince, and further, for the honor of their Countrey, and credit to themselves. Again, the people whom they fought for were their neighbors, alwaies friends, and well-willers to Englishmen. And further, that no man should do any seruice worth the noting, but he himselfe would speake to the vttermost to prefer him to his wished purpose. Which oration of his did so liuke the minds of the people, that they desired rather to dye in that seruice, then to liue in the contrary.

The 14. of July, sir William Pellam, lord marshall of the field, came to Dunhage. The 16. of July, his Excellency remooued from Dunhage to Brill, in which passage he tooke to crosse the water at the dooye of Sluce so called, being passed the water, he entred the land betwene two sconces, a quarter of a mile or more from the towne, where he was entertained with all the sconces shot both of great ordinance and smaller shot, passing by land he came to the towne, where the gouernour sir Thomas Cidell entertained him both with chere and otherwise, most honorably.

Sir Philip  
Sidney his  
oration.

Brill.



honorably. This towne is on the mouth of Haze, where the water is in breadth foure miles English. The Island of Brill is great, more than twentie miles ouer, in it are Dorps not so well built as rich. On the 19. his Excellencie returned from the Brill to Dunhage.

In this meane space, to wit, on the 16. of July, the enemy entered Peuce, after a long assault, in which assault, he lost thre thousand men. This Towne of Peuce was forthwith burned downe to the ground by the lackies and boyes belonging to our soldiers, there remained whole but eight houses.

Nuce burned by the English boyes.

The 21. of July, his Excellency made a banquet to diuers great personages of those Countreies, as the lady Bredo, lady of Tiana, the Paligranes wife, the county Egmonets daughters, the prince of Oranges daughter, with a number more. In which banquet wanted not what might be had to augment their cheere, either in musicke, dauncing, fire works or otherwise.

The 22. of July, the garrison of Sutfin issued out, to the number of neare two hundred, and came to Arnem, tooke some cattell and other things, and returned, wherupon master Anthony Sherley came to captain Willson gouernor of Arnem, and required that he and his company might issue out and reuenge this iniurie, which at length was granted: then master Sherley chose out to the number of fourescore footemen, and 20. horsemen and sent them out, which the enemy seeing, to incite our men forward, set the booty not far from Sutfin, on a hill, and laide a fourescore of their men in an ambush betwene Arnem and the booty, the twenty horsemen came to them, which they let passe in a streight, but no sooner past but they discharged on them and seeing no more thought to slay or take them all, but no sooner had they charged the horse, but master Sherley charging them behinde, the horsemen returned, and so what on the one side, and on the other, they slue of them the number of 80. & tooke 12. prisoners, which with the booty, they brought againe to Arnem hauing lost but one man, and two men hurt.

Of Sutfin.

About this time, master Butlers cornet, lying at Deuentrie, issued out and tooke from Sutfield or Sutfin, of cattell to the number of foure hundred Cowes, and sixtene Hares of great price, in this maner. Those of Sutfield had by the riuer side a great marish, all so ditched in, that no horse could passe ouer by any possible meanes: but they of Deuentrie and Campyn consulting together, did one night at a lowe water passe into the marish ouer by the side of the Towne, and brought without losse of any man of our part, foure hundred and odde Beastes, and sixtene Hares, most of them sold for fine pound a Hare, amongst the souldiers. This exploit with others did greatly pinch those of Sutfield, for that the milke of those beastes were to them a great reliefe.

The 26. of July, maister Robert Sidneis cornet, lying at Sertrienberge passed with some of county Hollocks horse, to the number of an hundred, and passed on purpose onely towards Breda, but being within sight thereof, they espied a number of cattell issuing forth of the Towne (for feare of our garrisons in those parts) vp towards high Brabant, hauing to conuey them some 300. shot, and a 100. or 12. lances, our men seeing so fit a booty vnlooked of their part, charged and put to flight the shot and horse, cut betwene the Towne and the cattell,

Robert Sidneis took a booty.

and

and tooke from them six hundred oxen, seauen hundred sheepe, & threescore mares, and some boares, all which they caried to Certenberge, to the great reliefe of the souldiers there.

**Mountford.** The second of August his Excellencie passed from the Hage to Utrike, he dined at Tergowme, from thence he came by Oden water, & from thence to Mountford, a strong towne, at night he came to Utrike, where by the Lord North he was received with great shoy of shot.

**Mewes yeelded to the enemy.** In this meane time, to wit, on the 29 of July, the enemy lying part before Berke, the residue came before Mewes, which towne was no sooner summoned, then it yeilded to the ennemie, and on the next day they tooke a little Towne called Alpyen, both these townes belonged to the Graue Maurice.

**Berke.** The second of August, the enemy hauing passed by Berke as before, diuers of his company were cut off as straglers, and further a great sort of horse, the men that were taken were hanged: amongst whom a yong lad which was taken, confessed to Skinke that as the prince passed by Berke, on a hill made this speech, My souldiers (quoth he) you may see here this Towne, neither great nor strong, but so manned, that assure your selues you shall receiue blowes inough, and no wealth, wherefore we may now passe with no dishonor, but if we stay here long, it will be dishonor to passe away, therefore say what you minde to do, and presently they were all contented to depart, and so they passed from the Towne. The third of August, the prince seeing he could not passe any thing by water, but Berke letted it, besides he had a conuoy of venison, wine, &c. which was by them of Berke taken away with fiftie men that had the conducting thereof, the prince noting that the principall men that annoyed him, were there where the prince saw the Towne wreake, he returned to it againe: for Skinke had no sooner taken the fiftie men, and others, but asking them whose men they were, and they answering the princes, they were straightwaies hanged, which doings of Skinke caused the prince to returne his army to Berke, on the said third of August, on which day he passed with three cornets of horse from Alpyen where his munition lay, to Orlon, a Towne of the Duke of Cleues, a small league from Berke, and came with certaine to viewe the Towne of Berke, which Skinke perceiuing, straight issued out of the Towne with certaine horse and foote, and charged the prince which had three cornets of horse, and five hundred footemen, yet Skinke put him to the retrace to Alpine to his quarter there.

The fourth day he came with his maine battell and passed on the south side of the Towne, though often times he were charged, and lost many of his men, yet he abode there.

**The Lord Marshall and other entred Brabant, Irish kernes.** On the third of August, the Lord Marshall, the Generall of the Horse, &c. with some thousand horse and footemen passed in the night farre into Brabant, and came early in the morning to the great Dorpe Oell Stiluoysbenke, set it on fire, and burned it to the ground: There was with the Lord Marshall two hundred Kernes, who showed their courages, for none were so ready to burne, nor so ready to kill all that came in their danger, so that fewe escaped them. Comming further they came to a Dorpe more like a good Towne, nor

not farre from Sattinghambulle, wherein is a castle, and a strong sconce, but the wild Irish kernes, neither fearing shot nor threat, ranne by the sides of the sconce, tooke it presently, and put to the sword all in it, and tooke the provision to themselves. Those of the towne had crossed the way with trees in such sort, as the horsemen could not passe to the towne but with great labour, but the Irish entered the towne onely, and burned it to the ground, saving none that came to their hands, so our men returned to Gertenberge, not loosing foure of their Irish men.

The sixt of August, his Excellency passed from Ulrike to Tergowe, where Tergowe. he stayed till the seventh, being honorably entertained: this towne is very strong, situate so, that all the countrey round about may speedily be drowned. About this towne is the greatest nurseries of fruite that men there present had ever scene, and by them thought sufficient to serve many countries, with trees of all sorts, but peares especially. The ground about Tergowe of a 14. score broad, is nought else but the most brave trees that can be scene. This towne hath the most faire market place that hath bene scene of many, in the midst whereof standeth a faire State house, in the which his Excellency did eate and was lodged. The 7. of August, his Excellency passed from Tergowe to Ulrike, by the which he must passe through Odonwaters, by the Burgers of which towne, he was honorably received all the towne throughout over head was hanged with garlands of flowers for his welcome. The 19. he passed from Ulrike to Keyne, and there stayed all night. The next day he passed to Arnarn. About this time a ship was sent from the bishop of Cullen to the prince, laden with canon shot, and powder, the maister of which ship, either mistaking the bishop, the prince, or their religion, so soone as he came where he might well recouer Bercke, where Skinke and his force lay, he by one meanes or other, so opened the ship that the water entered, so that he and the rest were forced by that means to retire to Bercke. In this ship was a commodary of good account with the Prince, whom the maister of this ship did convey to Skinke, who was no sooner come, but Skinke entered iudgement with him, and he desiring to be used like a gentleman, Skinke answered he should be hanged with his face toward the enemies campe, for, sayth he, I know you desire to see your friends, and so it was done. This losse of provision made the prince want of his will, for battery of the towne, onely planting five canons in two places. Further, at the same time, there came news to his Excellency, that the horse and footmen of Elder had often put the enemy to losse, and had taken 150. horses from them, besides a number of them slaine.

A ship sent  
to the prince  
but came to  
Skinke.

Sir Martin  
Skinke hanged  
a commodary.

The 17. of August, Sir John Norris passed over Isell by Arnarn sconce (a bridge of boats being there made) with some 3000. english footmen, and 6. or 7. hundred horse. And about the same time, the prince remooved some part from Bercke to Alpyne, a dutch mile from Bercke. The 21. of August, the lord Marshall passed over the riuer by Arnarn sconce, with 3000. footmen, and 600. horse toward the legar. The 23. of August, his Excellency passed over the water by Arnarn sconce with 2000. or more footmen, and 100. or more lances. The Irish Irish kernes, kernes were no sooner come to the campe, but that they passed neare the enemy, and

Eltham,

and brought from thence a 100. cowes. The 24. of August, the leiger rose, and passed to Eltham: there is neither Eltham, and upper Eltham, both haue bene houses of religious women, most sumptuously built: the rather standeth neare the Keyne: the upper standeth an english mile from the Keyne vpon an high hill, and in such a place, as few the like for prospect: where a man standing may behold 100. parish churches. This cloister was of such credit and estimation, that none came there by the order of the place, but she was a barons daughter at the least. The lady Anne of Cleue was brought by in this cloister. The 27. of August, his Excellency passed from Arnaim to the campe at Eltham. The 28. he caused all the English to be marshalled into squares, and two preachers made to them 2. sermons in the field by the hill side of Eltham cloister. The 30. of August his Excellency passed from Eltham to Dowlborough with all his army, except only those that the night before were sent to lye about the towne. On the north side was an Island, to the which was sent the Scots regiment, which by night with their pioneers did intrench within 80. yards of the north part: On the west side came the regiment of sir T. Sherley. On the east side was the regiment of sir William Stanley & sir L. marshall: on the southeast side was his Excellency with the regiment of the L. Audley. All the residue, as sir Iohn Norris, Sir Digby, and diuers other regiments as well English as Dutch, were placed betwene these quarters, euery one in part induoying is intrench neare the ports, so that the same night, though with some alarmis from the towne, were the whole ports of the towne intrenched, so that none could issue without danger. The same night also that his Excellency came before Dowlborough, himselfe in person with the lord marshall in the night, with their gards, went from their tents to view by fourth trench, being neare the towne, there was a bafe shot at them, which though all were together, yet rebounding amongst them all, hit by lord marshall on the belly, pierced his busse ierkin, his dublet, and hurt him somewhat: this shot missing his Excellency, made the returne. The last of August, there was nothing but intrenching, and some volleys of each side, for that the ordinance was not come. The first of September came our ordinance, which being landed, & drawn neare the places of battery, some of the demy canons discharged, to displace the ordinance of the towne, which was in part done, but againe in other places mounted. This day his Excellency remooued from the east or southeast side to the west side into an Island, the riuer Iffall running by it. The 2. of September halfe an houre before sun-rising, began the battery of Dowlborough, & was so thoroughly plied, by with 9. battering perces a maruellous breach was made. In time of which battery captaine Williams was shot through the arme, yet in this siege not 20. men lost, and a 20. hurt. About one of the clocke they agreed to parley, all our battels being ranged in squares before the towne to assault. The souldiers had made by breach more strong then before with feather-beds, dung, timber, &c. & made in by inside a great fight, but fearing an assault, which they knew wold be furious, they (as was said) agreed to parley: the conditions were, that the souldiers should passe away with their liues onely, the Burgers should haue all they had at his Excellencies mercy: these things being agreed, about foure or five of the clocke in the after noons, all the souldiers with their wiues passed ouer the breach away. The women that passed with the souldiers, it was a grie-

The English  
men mar-  
shalled.  
Dowlb-  
rough besie-  
ged by his  
Excellency.

His Excel-  
lency in dan-  
ger, and  
sir William  
Pelham lord  
marshall was  
hurt.

Dowlb-  
rough yel-  
ded to his  
Excellency.



uous thing to see how they were ransacked, till the earle of Essex and diuers other gentlemen came downe the breach, & by smiting & beating the soldiers, made them leaue off rising them: his Excellencies expresse commandement was, that none should take ought from the towne, but that was not obserued, for much of the goods was spoiled. Captaine Borowes was appointed to keepe the towne, whose ensignes with captaine Prices colors was set in the breach. The captaines & soldiers that were sent to saue the towne from spoile, did to the contrarie, for they made harocke and most horrible spoile, wherewith his Excellencie was greatly displeased. The fift of September his Excellencie went into the towne, and there dined, and after viewed the towne. The same day maister Anthony Sherley and other captaines came to the campe, and declared that the ennemie came to Well, and with a peece of ordinance beate backe our ships wherein our men were, and killed some of them, & further beate them downe the riuer. The towne of Dowlborough standeth by the riuer Well, an arme or issuing of the Reine by Arman sconce, & runneth along through the countrey of Quar Well, it runneth also by Suthfield, and is in the prouince of Suthfield and sixe English miles from Suthfield, and sixe miles or more from Arman. It standeth in a most fertile soile, pleasant & fruitful ground. It is of reasonable strength, having high wals, not rampired but in certaine places, having a water running round about it, it is about the bignesse of Arman, nigh an English mile & a halfe compasse. The order of the assault of this towne as it was determined, sir Iohn Norris had the honoz giuen him to enter the great breach, sir William Stanley with his regiment had the seconding of sir Iohn Norris, county Hollocke had giuen him the small breach with his regiment. These ranged themselves in the most brauest manner, but his Excellencie offered parly as ye haue heard. The 9. of September word came, that sir Martine Skinke was gotten fed out of Berke, & the 11. the same Skinke, captaine Thomas with some other braue souldiers lances came to the camp before Dowlborough. The 12. of September his Excellencie with all his forces came from Dowlborough, & that same night incamped himselfe before Suthfield, but he feared want of a bridge could not go ouer the water, this night he intrenched himselfe very neare in diuers places, and on the morrow he made a bridge, which passed ouer to the other side. The 15. of September his Excellencie leauing sir Martine Skinke in his absence passed to Deuentry, but shortly returned, for that he was informed that the prince with his whole force was marching towards Suthfield. This towne of Suthfield is very strong, being in diuers places parted, in all which places is such strength, as all must be woon ere the towne be woon. It standeth a good distance from the riuer Well, but hath a sconce on Well of incredible strength, for Hollocke with all his force, and our English men a two yeres since lay at it three quarters of a yere, but could not win it: but now his Excellencie began to bessege it, and for that his forces were not sufficient to incampe it round about, he framed himselfe to do his best to win the sconce, for by that meanes he might the more easly win the towne. The first night our men intrenched at a Church beside the Towne, but for that they thought after it was not so commodious, they passed not for it, and therefore went on the other side of the water to insonce the sconce, for that out of it there

His Excellencie incamped before Suthfield.

there issued both horse and footemen, which did greatly annoy our camp, for none could passe or repasse from Devenrie, or otherwise stir from the strength of the camp, but they were taken or in danger, if not rescued. The 18. of September, Skinke tooke on him to make a sconce neare the enemies sconce, which the same night he began, though the towne shot soe at him, & also the sconce, yet he followed his worke, & so fortified it, that it was sufficient for greatnesse to hold men to keepe it, and sufficient for strength to hold out what the enemies shot could do against it, & this sconce Skinke kept on y<sup>e</sup> side the water, that passage could not so well come to the sconce, but he did sinke their boats. His Excellencie the next night caused another sconce to be made iust by the enemies sconce, so that y<sup>e</sup> ennemie was by these two sconces so kept in, that they were kept from issuing out for their pleasure. The 20. of September, the ennemie lying not far off at Langanham a towne of ours, distant from Suthfield an 8. or 9. miles English, sent in the night into Suthfield certaine cornets of horse, which were suffered to enter by our men, and further to passe away againe to the enemies campe, they brought nothing into the towne to relieue it: moreover, all the whole English camp lay on the other side of the towne ouer the water, so that readily a sufficient power could not be made.

A fight before Suthfield.

Sir William Stanley and sir Iohn Norris became friends that before were enemies.

The 22. of September, was the most braue fight performed of our side that could be. The ennemie this night put into Suthfield some hundred wagons with victuals, which being perceived, streight waies sir William Stanley went with his owne company, which were some 200. to stand as a buscado, sir Iohn Norris ouertooke him, being sent to the seruice, & said to sir W. Stanley: There hath bene (said he) some words of displeasure betwene you and me, but let all passe, for this day we both are employed to serue her Maiestie, let vs be friends, and let vs die together in her Maiesties cause. Quoth sir William Stanley, if you see me not this day by Gods grace serue my prince with a valiant and faithfull courage, account me for euer a coward, and if neede be I will die by you in friendship. Thus the long quarrell begun in Ireland was here ended, with such friendship as made all men reioyce: both of them serued so forwarde this day, that the one could not tell how much to commend the other, onely the one serued with footemen, the other with horse: sir W. Stanley marched with his footemen, but the enemy was come to the Church where our men had at the first placed themselves, there was of the enemies 2200. muskets, and 800. pikes, which were now to gard the place of their refuge, (to wit, the intrenched Church.) The Lord Audley with some hundred and fiftie men, by great suite made to his Excellencie, attained at length to go, who made so great haste, that he ouertooke sir William Stanley ere the skirmish began, which was hot, but the Lord Audley and sir William Stanley not liking the hot volleys of musket shot, pressed neare the enemy, and themselves at the push of the pike with their men, put the whole company of the enemy to retreat to the holde, which done, they retyped a little backe out of the musket shot, and there made a stand: the Earle of Essex Lord generall of the horse, the lord Willoughby, sir William Russell, and sir Iohn Norris with their cornets came to charge the enemy. There were of the enemy fiftene cornets, of which sixe or seue were Albanys, the rest were Spaniards or Italians. The Albanys issued, which our men charged so furiously, that

It was thought at the first shocke there were a thirtie or fortye of the enemies overthrowne, then our men went to the curtellar, which they so furiously plyed, that the enemye after some thre quarters of an houre retreated to their pikes, losing of foote and horsemen, as the prisoners since taken confesse, besides hurt, an hundred men of their bruest, amongst which was the countie Ancoball, also capitaine George the commaunder of all the Albanoyles was taken prisoner, besides neare twenty commaunders, some capitaines, some ensigne bearers, lieutenants and other officers: but to sir Iohn Noris he gaue the first charge, who with his pistoll in his hand offered to discharge it on a braue man, but his pistoll would not go off, which he seeing, stroke it on the head of his enemye and overthrow him. The lord Willoughby with his launce in his rest met capitaine George and unhorsed him, so that he fell into a ditch, and cryed to the L. Willoughby, I yeeld your prisoner, for that you be a seemely knight, (this he spake in French: ) the lord Willoughby came not to take prisoners, but passed on with his curtellar in his hand, & his whole cornet after so furiously, that it was wonder to see, y<sup>e</sup> lord Willoughby was so forward, that oftentimes. but twise especially he was like to be taken prisoner, his haubers were pulled off from him, but rescued by our side. When y<sup>e</sup> skirmish was done & all retreated, capitaine George being in his Excellencies tent, would not graunt to be prisoner to any but to him who unhorsed him, whome he knew if he saw him in his armor, the L. Willoughby came in armed, this is the knight that I am prisoner to, & I yeeld to him, said he, to the L. Willoughby had y<sup>e</sup> prisoner ad- iudged to be his. The 3. the earle of Essex charged with his cornet, who so encouraged his men, for the honor of England said he, my fellowes follow me, & with that he threw his launce in his rest, and overthrow the first man, & with his curtellar so behaued himselfe that it was wonder. Sir William Russell with his cornet charged so terribly, that after he had broke his launce, he with his curtellar so played his part, that the enemye reported him to be a diuell & not a man, for where he saw sixe or seuen of the enemies together, thither would he, and so behaue himselfe with his curtellar, that he would separate their friendship. Among the rest sir Philip Sidney so behaued himselfe, that it was wonder to see, for he charged the enemye thysie in one skirmish, and in the last charge he was wounded with a musket shot through the thigh, to the great griefe of his Excellencie and of the whole campe, who being brought to my lord lieutenant, his Excellencie said: O Philip, I am sorie for thy hurt, and sir Philip answered: O my lord, this haue I done to do your honor and her Maiesties seruice. Sir William Russell conning to him, kissed his hand, and said with teares: O noble sir Philip, there was neuer man attained hurt more honorably then ye haue done, nor any serued like vnto you. He was conueyed to Arnam, where he continued till his end in such kind of godly behauiour, that both the preacher did wonder at it, and the chirurgions admire, the one seeing his wise godlinesse, the other his valiaunt courage with patience to abide all kind of paines. The cornet of sir Philip Sidney was at this time at Deuontrie, vpon this occasion, his Excellencie feared Deuontrie, for that it had often bene in question of reuolting, but the prince of Parma hauing occasion to be employed other waies, could not come that way: now (as is aforesaid) his Excellencie fearing that while he were winning one towne he might lose another, the

Sir Philip Sidney had his death wound.

prince being so neere, sent sir Philip Sidneyes cornet, his owne cornet, and maister Robert Sidneyes cornet all into Deuentrye, and of foote folke captaine Flud with his souldiers, and captaine Ward with his: this was the cause sir Philip Sidney was alone without his cornet at this seruice. Sir Thomas Parrat also was at this seruice, and serued most brauely. All the time this skirmish was with these cornets, so our footmen were in fight with the enemye, and by fine force made them once againe retire to their safetrie. The enemye being retired to his strength, al our horse made a stand by the musket shot, which played on them sore, and braued the enemye, bidding him come forth if he durst, but he would not: which sir Io. Norris seeing, rode to his Excellencie, and bad him be merry, for said he, you haue had this day the honorablist day that euer you had, for a handfull of your men haue driuen the enemye three times to retrain this one day. Further he willed his Excellencie either to send for more strength, or else to sound the retrain, which last request he graunted, for that his strengths were otherwise employed, and so the retrain being sounded both by drum and trumpet, our captaines came backe in good order, eury man to his quarter with great praise and honour. The lost men of account at this fight, captaine Martine, and captaine Thomas Welch is thought to be dead, he came with Skinke from Berke in hope now to be in more safetic: the lost of foote and horse, dead, about forty.

The 25. of September our men seeing y great advantage that a certaine ylland lying in the riuer betwene the sconce and the towne, would do them, and further that there was therein some souldiers of the enemye, which greatly annoyed them in shooting as they passed any way, our men therefore set vpon it, skirmished with the souldiers, and put them to flight, many of them leaping into the riuer were drowned, some were killed, but in fine our men insconced there, and the towne shot at them, but did them little hurt.

The 28. of September, his Excellencie with a great part of his campe removed to the other side of the towne, and there began to intrench: leaning the sconces well manned, it was thought the towne was neuer so well victualled, for by his Excellencie the prouant was cut off, and eury soldier had halfe a crowne a weeke, which greatly contented them, and this was paid to them truly, so that a souldier might by this meanes be able to pay the victualler, & that made many resort to the campe. Further, Deuentrye was so neare, that by that meanes victuals were brought the more fully to the campe, for at Deuentrye is great plentie of victuals. The horsemen had foure shillings the weeke loane, to find them and their horse, which was better then the prouant: his Excellencie knighted maister William Hatton and maister Henry Vmpton, who were then sent for to returne into England to their friends.

The 29. of September, our men set vpon the lope sconce of the enemye, which with some difficultie they obtained, but after thinking to win another sconce, there were many of them slaine, as well as on the other side was the like of woyle: there were of our men slaine and hurt aboue an hundred. In this lope sconce as was reported, there were five fights, which were woon that night, and certaine trenches of the enemye, and further intrenched almost round about the great sconce, so as they of y lane could now hardly issue out, or any come in to th.

The

W. Hatton &  
H. Vmpton  
knighted.



The second of October, in the night there passed into Zutphen five thousand of the princes folke, a foure thousand footmen and a thousand horsemen, these passed into the towne all in order without trouble of our campe: these companies brought no carriages into the towne, but all the wagoners were to come after. The victuals which the princes power had gotten in Drent and Twent was conveyed into Zutphen permitted by his excellencie, for that his men were otherwise employed, those of Longham did cut off some stragglers of the princes power as they passed by them. The fourth of October, they of the sconce at Zutphen called for a parley, which was graunted, and countie Hollocke for that he spake Dutch slept out of our sconce, and parlied with them, and after long talke, one of the souldiers shot a musket, which as countie Hollocke was speaking, shot into his mouth, and out by his eare, so that it smote away theirowell hanging at his eare. The fifth of October came to Deuentrie many of our horses, and about midnight, taking all the garrison of horses in the towne, passed from thence to Langham, where they also tooke the horses of the garrison, and went about an exploit, which was, they hearing of a conuoy of victuals conuoying to Suthfield, they determined to haue cut it off, but they could not meete with it. There was of our men at this exploit pretended a five or sixe hundred horse, the leader whereof was sir William Russell. The same fifth of October, early in the morning our canons being placed against the lesser sconce, they playd at it till three or foure of the clocke, at which time maister Edward Stanley leader of sir William Stanleyes companie came to assault the breach, but before he came to the breach, the enemy had a fight or trench full of souldiers placed there for to offend vs, and defend the sconce, which souldiers all at once discharged their muskets, killing onely one man. Edward Stanley entred the trench with all his men, killing some of the enemies, and the rest fled. In this trench he stayed till our canons had made the breach cleare, then maister Edward Stanley before his men, clamoured by the breach, but a braue man of great stature captaine of the sconce stood alone in the breach with a pike, and thrust at him, which pike with the one hand he defended, and with the other caught hold to get vp, till at the last he was throwne downe by a bullet throwne out of the sconce: the second time he assaulted the breach, but this captaine so defended it, and kept him downe as was wonderfull: and although our men with the canon did play on the breach, yet he still fought, and did not stirre till at the last a canon out of the Island strooke the ground from vnder him, so that he fell out of the breach into the sconce: but in fine this braue leader of our men led them by the breach, and first entred the same, then was the fight in the sconce, where at the first our men killed foure or five, at the second the like, at the length, they hauing made a traine, three or foure of our men were bent, but the souldiers of the sconce fled out at a little wicket, which our souldiers chanced to light on, and killed to the number of thirtie, so our men possessed the lesser sconce, with the losse of three or foure of our men, and sixe or seuen hurt. This seruice being done, his Excellencie seeing the valour of maister Edward Stanley, gaue him thanks, and calling captaine Reade knighted them both. This taking of the lesser sconce greatly

Country Hollocke shot into the mouth.

The smaller sconce woon

E. Stanley & captaine Read knighted.

terrified them of the greater sconce. The next night the countie Williams men lying neare them, they with a foze boilie of shot did discharge at them, and bad them haunce by. for said they, you will play but as countie Hollocke did, spend powder and shot, and lose your men, and haunce by when you haue done. This sudden bolty of shot put Graue Williams men in doubt that they would issue, wherefore they had thought to haue giuen alarm, but finding them so quiet after, they stayed their enterpryse, and listened what would follow, and hearing no noise of shew of souldiers, they passed neare the sconce to see the cueit, at length they might see a fire in the sconce which made them to preece neerer, and at length entered the sconce, where they found a ten or twelue men, which fled (as was thought) into the water and were drowned. Thus had the cowardly pratlers made a fire, and ranne away by the light thereof. Thus was the great sconce which was so well manned, so well provided of powder and shot, that they wanted none, yet without assault or charge, breach of any thing to dismay them, they ran away to their better infamy and reproch.

They of the  
Great sconce  
ran away in  
the night.

The seventh of October his Excellencie passed to Arnam, thre to visite sir Philip Sidney lying of his hurt receiued as is afoze shewd, before whose going he made knights these capitaines and gentlemen following: sir Henry Goodyere capitaine of the guard, sir Henry Norris, sir John Borowes, sir John Winkfield, sir Roger Williams, sir Robert Sidney, sir Philip Butler. Those were knighted, sir Henry North, sir Thomas Dennis, sir William Knowles, sir George Farmer, sir George Digby, sir Steward, sir Bewford: besides these, were made knights banarets these following: the earle of Essex, the lord Willoughby, the lord Audley, the lord North.

Knights  
made.

A souldier  
throwne  
from an high  
tower into  
the riuer of  
Reine.

There was (saith my cousin Henry Archar) a strange thing happened at Beris in the tyme of Skinkes government there, which I thought good to impart. As the souldiers were repairing and working to make the towne strong, a souldier coming by said, you worke and worke, but the enemy will haue the towne within this weeke: which words being both noted and taken grieuously that he should so discourage the souldiers, he was taken and carried to Skinke, who without any circumstances condemned him to be throwne off the great staple of the towne into the Reine, which was accomplished. But he falling off from a monstrous height, light in the water, and rising againe, as the nature of the water is, to raise one vp frome of thise, he had both life and memoire, such as he offered to swim, and crawling got out of the water: but Skinke had taken such an hatred against him, that he caused him to be bound hand and foote, to haue bene cast againe into the riuer of Reine, sauing that coronell Morgan being there, so perswaded him, that the poore mans life was saued.

The ninth of October countie Hollockes cornet of horses lying at Langham, tooke a firtie wagons, which had carried the conuoy before spoken of, into Suthfield, and a fiftene of them being laden with hurt men that were wounded in the sconce, he put them all to the sword, and tooke the wagons into Langham.

The 15. of October, his Excellencie passed from Deuenterie to Arnam to sir Philip

Philip

Philip Sidney there lying sick, as is afore shewed.

On the 17 of October, the said sir Philip Sidney, knight, a most valiant and towardly gentleman, sonne and heire to sir Henry Sidney (late afore deceased) of his hurt receiued at Zutphen in Gelderland deceased, vpon whose departure he so bled his mind and tooing, that the preacher that came to instruct him in his extremitie, might rather learne of him than teach him his assurance in the promises of Christ. From thence he was brought by water to Flushing, where he was kept eight daies, on the first of Nouember he was brought to the sea side by the English garrison, which were twelue hundred, marching three and three, shot, halberds, pikes, & ensignes all trailing, the burgers of the towne following: his body being imbarked, the small shot gaue him a triple bolly, then the great ordinance, &c. On the first of Nouember he was landed at the Tower towarke, and conueyed to the Minories without Ald-gate, on the east side of the citie of London, from whence on the thirteenth of February next following, he was conueyed to Saint Pauls Church in London, in order marshalled by Ro. Cooke *alias* Clarenceaux king at armes. Inprimis, poore men in blacke gownes 32. for he was so many yeares old, sergeants of the band, fife and drum, ensigne trailed, lieutenant of footemen, the corporals, trumpets, Bidon trailed, lieutenant of his horse, conductors to his seruants, the standard borne by a gentleman, his gentlemen and yeoman seruants 60. physicians and chirurgion, steward of house, esquiers of his kindred and friends 60. knights of his kindred and friends 12. the preacher & chaplaines, the penone of his armes borne, the horse for y<sup>e</sup> field led by a footeman, a page riding with a broken lance, the barbed horse led by a footeman, a page riding carrying a battle-axe the head downward, yeomen officers to the heraults, the great banner borne by a gentleman, Portcose bare the gilt spurs, Blew mantell the gauntlets, Rouge Dragon bare the helme and crest, Richmond the shield of armes, Somerset the coate of armes. Clarenceaux king at armes, gentleman officer to the corps, two bannerols, the corps couered with a pall beluet, carried by 14. yeomen, 2. bannerols following. sir Robert Sidney chiefe mourner, mourners assistant, 4. knights, two gentlemen officers to the noblemen, y<sup>e</sup> carles of Huntingdon, Leicester, Pembroke, and Essex, barons, Willoughby and North, States of Holland leuen, all these in blacke, the sword bearer of London riding on horsebacke, the lord Mayor and aldermen on horsebacke in murrey: the company of the Grocers of London in their liuerie 120. Citizens of London practised in armes 300. marched three and three in the foreward, the captaine, lieutenant, and three targets, muskettiers foure ranks, drums and fife, small shot 20. pikes 20. ranks, halberds foure ranks, chiefe officers of the field, drums, fife, and ensigne. In y<sup>e</sup> reeward, halberds three ranks, pikes fiftene ranks, drums and fife, small shot 15. ranks, muskettiers three ranks, &c. And when his corps was thus conueyed into Pauls church, where he was honourably enterred, they honoured him with a double bolly of shot and so departed.

The 18. of October, his Excellencie passed with great sorrow, for the losse of his nephew sir Philip Sidney to Ulrike: and on the same 18. and 19. dayes of October, sir William Standley gaue in charge to his officers, chieftaines & commanders, as also to his souldiers, that they should go into Deuentry by 15. by tenne,

Sir Philip Sidney deceased at Arnam.

Sir Philip Sidney buried at London.

Sir Philip Sidney free of the Grocers in London.

A politike exploite, at Deuentry, atchieued by sir W. Pelham lord Marshall.

by fire and by thee, which commandement they did fulfill, so that for the most part they got them into the towne, being nothing mistrusted of the Burgers, they got into harbours and close places, that they were not espied. Also other capitaines sayd to their souldiers, if you will go five or six, or somewhat more to Deuentry to recreate your selues, take with you store of powder and shot, for feare of the enemy, which liberty they were ready to take, and performed accordingly, so that there was by this meanes gotten into the towne well knowne 1200. english souldiers: on the 12. day in the morning came sir William Stanley with some troupe of his men, and in the afternoone sir Wm Pelham lord marshall, likewise with his troupe. The counsell of States, with maister Killegrey, maister Kirly, and other were debating of matters all this day with the Burgomasters, nothing mentioning of the garrison that there should be placed: further those of Southfield in disdaine, did tel those that passed by their towne to Deuentry, that they should hve them, or the gates would be shut. The lord marshall being come to his lodging, sent for all the Burgomasters, which were in the counsell as before, who being come, he told them, that his Excellencie, both for their owne safety, and suppression of the enemy, was fully determined to put in a garrison of men there, and for that before time he had found them strange in granting, he had sent him thither, for that the campe was now ready to breake up, to know in short their determination, whether they would receiue a garrison or not, and for that his haste required no long stay, they to give him answer on the next morning by 8. of the clocke, that he might send word to Utrike to his Excellency, which the Burgomasters promised to answer according to his request: now all this night did sir William Stanley and others, with the lord marshall take counsell what were best to do, which was agreed that all the souldiers secretly should on the morrow at 7. of the clocke, be in the market place with their furniture: this order being taken, all with quiet rest, but the Burgers which made that night a double watch, and chained all the streetes, made fast all passages, and further did make and man all the ports most strong.

In the morning early, by 6. of the clocke, all the Burgomasters were assembled in the state house, to agree of this purpose. About 7. of the clocke the Lord Marshall came to the state house, with diuers gentlemen, and others, who knocked and were let in, straight sir W. Stanley also entred with his traine al appointed for the purpose, by this time were all our Englishmen assembled in the market place, which the townes men seeing were in pitious feare, the women crying out for feare to be spoiled. The lord Marshall asked them a direct answer, whether they would haue a garrison or not: give me quoth he, a direct answer, for I must so haue it. One of the principal Burgomasters rose softly, & stole away, which being told the lord Marshall, he said: fetch me presently him that is gone, or before the living God, before whom I stand, you shall all die for it, and delay not sayd he but do it, & straight was he fetched againe. Then demanded he for what cause, that this night ouer all other, they had made so strong a watch, wherefore they had chained their streetes, &c. but they answered not: well sayd he, euerie one of you let his hand to this bill, and deliuer ouer your authority, to thole whom his Excellencie hath set downe, or before God you shall all die, you haue not to deale with a nation

simple,

Lord Marshall  
shall his  
courage at  
Deuentry.



simple, or foolish, or such as will be led in this or the like sort, coming hither to spend their goods, toile their bodies, and venture their liues, and not to be accounted such as your subtilty should ouerreach. They forthwith at his command (being sore afraid) set their hands to the bill, and gaue their authority ouer to others, all protestants appointed by his Excellency: well said he, send one of you straight to all those Burgers that are on the wals and rampiers, and command them to passe to their dwellings, and to let them forthwith be vnarmed, which was presently done. Then he commanded the, to bring to him the keyes of all the ports, or gates, vpon the like paine before spoken of, which was also done, with storing both the old and new officers to the queene of England. This being done, all that before were suspected to be enemies to the Englishmen, were turned out of their places of authority. There was a 4000. souldiers, all Burgers in this towne, which for the most part watched and warded, besides a number others, as too rich for such paines, boozs, which are all counted to be a 1200. fighting men, wherfore it requireth great care and wisdom to deale in this sort. The campe at this time brake for the most part vp, to the garrisons, and all those companies that were appointed to the sence went from Utrike on the 22. of October.

The 23. of October the States of those parts came from Deuentry to Utrike, where with his Excellency they sate in counsell, of determining all the 24. day from morning till night. The 28. early in the morning, his Excellency passed from Utrike, and came that night late to Rotherdame: On the 29. his Excellency passed from thence to the Hauge, where he staid some small time. The 8. of November he went to Delph, where he was banqueted, & went that night to Dun- hage. On the 16. he passed from Hauge to Rotherdame: and on the 17. to Dort. On the 18. he tooke shipping to passe from Dort to Flushing, and being passed a seuen English miles from Dort, the yce was so great, and so oppressed his ships that it indamaged the most strong ship in the flecte, so that perforce his Excellency was forced to land at Dope, a pooze village, and in a wagon to passe by land to Rotherdame, and there prepared ships, and when the wind serued he passed towards Flushing, but calmnesse of the wind caused his stay against the Isles of Alcoro whererein Flushing standeth, but in the morning he landed at Cam- phere, and thence in a wagon he passed to Middleborough, and from thence to Flushing, where he tooke shipping towards England.

The 22. of November, the honorable lord Robert earle of Leicester, lieutenant generall of all her maiesties forces in the vniited prouinces of the Low countries, returning from thence, arrived at London, & went late that night to the Court at Richmond, where he was not so suddenly come, as forwardly welcome of her maiesty, and the rest: and thus leauing the seruire done in those vniited prouinces, the Low countries or Netherlands (whercof thus far I had receiued aduertisements from my good friend, and neare kinsman Henry Archer, one of his Excellencies gard) I returne to matters at home.

The 8. of October last before passed, I. Low, I. Adams, and Richard Dildale, being before condemned for treason, in being made priests by authority of the bishop of Rome, were dyawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

The earle of Leicester returneth from the Low countries, and arrived in England.

Seminary priests executed.

Ludgate of  
London new  
builded.

Parliament  
at Westmin-  
ster.

An. reg. 29.

Proclama-  
tion against  
the queene  
of Scots.

Douer ha-  
uen repai-  
red.

One of the west gates of the city of London, commonly called Ludgate, was this yeare new builded, at the charges of the citizens of the same city, amounting to fiftie hundred pound or moze.

The 29. of October, the archbishop of Caunterbury, the lord treasurer, and the earle of Darby, representing the queenes maiesties person, began the high court of parliament by prore, which session of parliament was at this time assembled, for triall of matters concerning Mary the queene of Scots, &c.

The 2. of December, the session of parliament brake up, and was proroged untill the 15. of February, the substance of matter handled in the same session concerning the queene of Scots, is set downe at large in a letter learnedly penned, and published in print, directed to the honorable the earle of Leicester, and as I haue set downe in my continuation of M. Reigne Woolfe and Holinsheds Chronicle.

The 5. of December, the lord maior of London, assisted with diuers earles, barons, the aldermen of London in their scarlet, the principall officers of the city, the greatest number of the gentlemen of the best account in and about the city, with the number of 80. of the most grauest and worshipfullest citizens in coates of beluct, and chaines of gold, all on horsebacke, in most solenne and stately manner, by sound of foure trumpets, about ten of the clocke in the forenoone, made open and publike proclamation, and declaration of the sentence lately giuen by the nobility against the queene of Scots, vnder the great seale of England, bearing date at Richmond the fourth of December, being openly read by maister W. Sebright, Towne clerke of London, and with loud voyce solemnely proclaimed by the sergent at armes of the sayd city, in foure severall places, to wit, at the crosse in Cheape, at the end of Chancery lane in Fleet-Street ouer against the Temple, at Leaden-hall corner, and at S. Magnus corner neare London bridge, during which time, like solenne proclamations were made with great solemnity in the county of Middlesex, namely in the palace at Westminster, without Temple bar, and in Holborne, by the sherifes of London and Middlesex, assisted with sundry noblemen and gentlemen of good account, and the Iustices of peace of the sayd county, to the great and wonderfull reioycing of the people of all sorts, as manifestly appeared by ringing of bells, making of bonfires, and singing of Psalmes in euery of the streetes and lanes of the city.

The queenes maiesty granted to the towne of Douer toward the repairing of their haven, the free transportation of 30000. quarters of wheate, 10000. quarters of barley and malt, 4000. tun of beare, without paying custome or impost, this licence or pattent was sold to a couple of marchants of London, named Iohn Bird, and Thomas Wats, after the rate of three shillings and foure pence the quarter of wheate, and 2. s. 8. d. for euery quarter of barley or malt. And the licence for beare being sold to diuers, amounted to 4000. markes at the least: moze there was granted by parliament. Anno. 23. Elizabeth, that for euery vessell or trayer whereof her subiects were owners or partners, being of burden twenty tuns or bpward, loading or discharging within this realme, or passing too or fro any forrein countrey during the space of 7. yeares then next ensuing, there should be payd for euery such voyage by the maister or owner of all such vessels, &c. three pence for euery tun of the burthen of such ship, which grew to 1000. pounds yearly at the least.

The

The queenes maiesty foreseeing the generall dearth of graine, and other victu- als, growne partly through the unreasonable of y<sup>e</sup> yeares past, partly through the uncharitable greedynesse of such as be great coyne maisters, but especially through the unlawfull and ouermuch transporting of graine into foraine coun- tries, vnder colour of licence granted, by the aduise of her honorable counsell, pub- lished a proclamation and booke of orders to be taken by her iustices for reliefe of the poore, notwithstanding all which, the excessive prices of graine still increased, so that wheate was sold at London for 8. s. the bushell, and in some other parts of the realme, for 10. s. 12. s. 13. s. &c.

1587.  
Proclama-  
tion for  
graine.

The 8. of February, being wednesday (according to sentence lately giuen by y<sup>e</sup> nobility) Mary Steward queene of Scots, about ten of the clocke before noone, was executed, and suffered death, by beheading vpon a scafold set vp for that pur- pose in the great hall of the castle of Fotheringhay, in presence of George Tabor earle of Shrewsbury, Henry Grey earle of Kent, principall commissioners, and o- thers the gentlemen of the countrey neare adioyning, to the number of about 300. He was as appertained to a queene) royally buried at Peterborough on the first of August next following.

Queene of  
Scots behea-  
ded.

The 15. of February, the parliament began at Westminster, where in was gran- ted to her maiesty towards her charges for the defence of this realme, a subsidy by the cleargy of 6. s. the p. and of the temporality 2. s. 8. d. goods, & 4. s. lands, with 2. fifteenes, &c. The 20. of February, a strange thing happened, a man hanged for felonie at S. Thomas Waterings, being begged by the Chirurgions of London, to haue made of him an Anatomy, after he was dead to all mens thinking, cut downe, stripped of his apparell, layd naked in a chest, throwne into a carre, and so brought from the place of execution through the Borough of Southwarke ouer the bridge, & through the city of London to the Chirurgions hall neare vnto Cr- plegate: the chest being there opened, and the weather extream cold, he was found to be alive, and liued till the 23. of February, and then died.

Parliamen-  
t at Westmi-  
ster.  
A man han-  
ged begged  
for dead, and  
liued three  
dayes after.

The same 23. of February, a gun powder house at Rabyse, was blowne bp, a- bout ten of the clocke before noone.

Gun pow-  
der house  
blowne vp.  
Lord Chan-  
celor decea-  
sed.

The 12. of Aprill, sir Thomas Bromley knight, lord Chauncelor of England deceased, and was honorably buried at Westminster on the second of May. About the same time deceased sir Raspe Sadler, Chancelor of the Dutchie of Lancaster, and one of her maiesties priuy counsell. Also on the 16. of Aprill, deceased the Dut- ches of Somerset, at Hanworth, and was buried at Westminster. More, Edward earle of Rutland, baron Roes of Hamlake, lord of Trusbut and Beauoire, knight of the honorable order of the garter, departed this life at London, on the 14. of A- prill, and according to his desire was honorably conueyed from thence to his castle of Beauoire, and buried in the parish church at Bedford, the 15. of May, where ma- ny of his noble ancessors and parents are honorably intombed.

Chancelor  
of dutchie  
deceased.  
Dutches of  
Somerset  
deceased.  
Earle of  
Rutland  
deceased.

The 29. of Aprill, sir Christopher Hatton knight, captaine of the gard, vice- chamberlain, and one of her maiesties priuy counsell, was made lord Chancelor of England at Croydon, in the archbishop of Caunterburies house, where he re- ceiued the great scale in the gallery there. And the third of May, being the 1. day of the terme, he rode from His place in Oldborne, to Westminster, there to take his

Sir Christo-  
pher Hatton  
Lord Chan-  
celor of En-  
gland.

oath,

T. Fenner,  
Service of  
Sir Francis  
Drake at  
Cales, and  
Cape S.  
Vincent.

oath, before whom went about the number of forty his gentlemen in one lincie blew, and chaines of gold, diuers Pensioners, and other gentlemen of the court, vpon foote-clothes, the officers and clarks of the Chancerie, and then the Lord Chancellor, hauing on his right hand the Lord Treasurer and on the left hand the Earle of Leicester, after whom rode certaine of the Nobilitie, the Iudges of the realme, many knights, and lastly a great troupe of their retinue.

In this meane time, the most fortunate service for England, performed by Sir Francis Drake in Cales the 19. of Aprill with his latell exploits in Cape S. Vincent, and Cape-laker, done the 21. of May, written by a gentleman of his companie, was such as follooweth.

He hauing discovered (by aduise of 2. ships of Middleborough that came from Cales, with whom he met in 40. degrees the 16. of Aprill) and by them vnderstanding that there was great prouision in Cales, and therabout, appointed to come for Lissboyne, he with all speed possible did bend his force thither, to cut off their power and prouision: so as the 19. of Aprill, an houre before sun setting, he entered the harbour of Cales, & his fleet: there checked with him at the entering thwart the towne, 6. gallies: but they in short time retired vnder their fortresses. There fled some 20. french ships to port Royall, & some Spaniards, which could not be hindered of the sight, by reason of the shields. There were sunke by Sir Francis, at his coming in with shot, one argosie of 1000. tun, furnished with 30. peeces of brasse, & richly laden. There were to the number of 38. ships undertaken before night, & bissons of the Rode: 30. hulks Hollanders confiscated to the king, and their goods sold to the kings vse, 24. of them were fired, the other 6. were at port Royall laden with wines & bread, & to be presently full laden for Lissboyne. One carrike of 1400. tuns appertaining to the Marques of S. Cruse, fired. Five great Biskies fired, 4. of them labing and taking in of victuall for the kings prouision for Lissboyne, the first a ship of a 1000. tun, bound for Lissboyne, hauing in hir great store of pipes, much yron, nalles, spikes, yron hoopcs, and such like, fired. One Shatterey laden with wines, of 250. tuns, for the kings prouision, which the English brought to sea, and discharged part of her wines for prouision of the fleet, and then fired her. Three flee boates of about 400. tuns laden with biscit, whereof they fired one, & kept the other two. Ten barkes more laden with wines, raisins, figges, oyle, wheate & such like: they fired, by supposition 38. ships & barks fired, sunke & brought away, amounting in iudgement to 13000. tun of shipping, &c. this was for the first exploit. The second was as follooweth, about the 21. of May, they assaulted the castle of Cape-laker, and three other strong holds, all which they tooke, some by force and some by submission. They took at severall times of shipping, barks, & caruels about 100. laden with hoopcs, gally oares, pipe stauces, timber, and other prouisions of the king of Spaines, for the furnishing of his forces intended against England, which they burned, and consumed all the fischer boats, and nets therabouts, to their great hinderance. Thence they came before the haven of Lissboyne, anchoring neare vnto call Cales, where the Marquesse of S. Cruse was with his gallies, and seeing them chase his ships a store, to take and carry away his barks and caruels, was content to suffer them there quietly to tarrie, and likewise to depart, and neuer charged them with Cannon shot.

The



The 18. of June Robert earle of Leicester, was made V. steward of household, & R. Deuereux earle of Essex, was made H. of her maiesties horse. The 25. of June, Robert earle of Leicester tooke shipping at Margate in Kent towards the Low countries, wher he remained not long, but returned. This yeare was a late spring and a cold summer so that at midsummer pealen in the coods at London (where they be most forward) were sold for 8. v. the pecke, yet afterward great plenty, & sold for 8. d. the bushell, or better cheape, no cherries ripe till S. James tide, or Lammass, & then such plenty, that they were sold for a peny the p. and not above. The moneth of September vehement cold, white frosts, winds boysterous in þ north, sometime haile, snow and flete, and yet a reasonable good haruell for corne praised be God.

The 7. of September. Sir Thomas Hineage was made hitechamberlaine. The queenes maiesty hauing diuers waies vnderstood the great and diligent preparation of the king of Spaine, in diuers parts both by land and sea, nor onely of the strongest ships in all places within his dominions, but also of all sorts of prouision and munition necessarie for a mighty flete, which was to come from Spaine and Portingale, for the furnishing & better direction wherof he had drauone together into the places aforesaid, the most principall and ancient captaines and souldiers, aswell of the kingdomes of Naples, and Sicilie, as of Lombardy and other parts of Italy, and the more remote parts of India, as by euery one was long before very euidently perceiued, by reason that the preparation of these things together with the ships, mariners, and souldiers, the diuers sorts and quantitics of victuall, the great number and diuers kinds of artillery, with the summe of euery seuerall kind, were sufficiently specified vnto all countries by certaine pamphlets, laying forth at large the whole intent, the which pamphlets were printed and published in Spaine and Portingale, and other prouinces of Chyristendome, with this title: The most puissant and most happie flete of the King of Spaine, against the Realme of England: her Maiesty, I say, hauing in this manner receiued so open and manifest information hereof, as also certaine intelligence of horsemen, and footemen, sent in so great number, that they were sufficient for the furnishing of diuers campees in the Low countries, vnder the gouernement of the duke of Parma his lieutenant generall for those prouinces, and withall knowing the multitude of the ships of war, and the possibility that the sayd king had, to transport his souldiers out of Flanders, & land them in England, not sparing to giue out thereupon open and free report, that all that prouision was for the inuasion & conquest of England: her maiesty therfore furnished her selfe by sea with a mighty flete, & by land with no lesse diligence to resist such great forces as by all nations were reported to come against her: for it was neuer knowne in the memory of man, that so great preparation was euer heretofore at one time made out, either by King Philip himselfe, or yet by the Emperour Charles the fift his father, although his power were much more, and his occasions of warre farre greater. The diligence therfore of the Englishmen, answerable vnto the care of the Prince, was such, and so great, that her Maiesty was prouided of a mighty flete to defend her by sea from the enemy betwene the first of Nouember in this yeare 1587. and the 20. of December next ensuing, a time very short for such a prouision, most excellently furnished of all things necessary for such a purpose. The

Earle of Leicester L. steward of household. Earle of Leicester went into the Low countries. A very cold spring, summer, and haruest. Peiruccio Vbalino. A navy to the seas prepared and furnished.

charge

charge of which nauie was commended vnto the right honorable Charles Lord Howard, baron of Effingham, lord high Admirall of England, who for his place and office, noble courage, experience in martiall affaires, and nobilitie of blood and descent, was thought most fit to be employed in that seruice: he had in his company a sufficient number of honorable, worshipfull, and valiant personages, desirous to serue their prince and countrey in such a cause as this: likewise of seafaring men and private souldiers, so competent a number, as might be answerable vnto the power of so great a prince in so weightie a cause. The lord high admirall therefore with those forces keeping for a season the narrow seas, & channell between England and Flaunders, sir Francis Drake knight, was by the aduise of the lords of the counsell, & his honor so commanding it, sent towards the west parts with certaine of the Queenes ships and others, from certaine ports of England thereabout, being in all about the number of fiftie saile of all sorts, there to attend the lord high admirall his coming with greater forces, if occasion should require. In the meane season the lord admirall, with his viceadmirall the lord Henry Seymer, kept the narrow seas, accompanied with 20. ships more, very well furnished at the charges of the citizens of London, besides many other from diuers parts on that side the realme, that lieth from the towne of Douer by to the north-ward, which met altogether in good order, and well appointed for the wars.

1588.

Now to speake somewhat more particularly of this preparation, made as well by land, as by sea, to withstand the inuasion intended, (& after attempted) by the Spanish Armado against this realme. The generall forces of the realme were appointed to be mustered, trained, & put in a readines in the severall shires, for the defence of the land: there was also a leuite made of 2. seuerall armies, the one to make the body of a camp to reside at Tilbury in Essex, to encounter with the enemy if he should attempt to land in any place in that countrey, wherof the right honorable lord Robert earle of Leicester, V. steward of her Maiesties household, was appointed lieutenant generall, as also of all the armies leuied against foraine inuasion: the other to be employed for the gard of her Highnes person, vnder the charge and gouernment of the right honorable the V. Hunsdon, Lord Chamberlaine to her Maiestie, and appointed by her Highnesse lieutenant of the said armie.

A campe at  
Tilbury in  
Essex.

The campe of Tilbury vnder the charge and gouernment of the right honorable the earle of Leicester, was consisting both of horsemen and also of footemen, which were raised out of all the shires following.

Horsemen.			Footemen.	
	Lances.	Light horse.		
Bedford shire	17.	40.	Bedford	500.
Buckingham	18.	83.	Buckingham	500.
Hartfordshire	25.	60.	Hartford	1000.
Kent	50.	100.	Surrey	1000.
Suffolke	50.	200.	Barkshire	1000.
Essex	50.	100.	Oxford	1000.
Middlesex	35.	88.	London	1000.
Surrey	8.	98.	Suffolke	3000.
			Essex	5000.
			Kent	5000.
			Norfolke	3000.
	Summe	769.		
	353.		Summe	22000.

This

This number of foote men was allotted for the campe at Tilbury, but the number assembled amounted only to 16500.

The army for the gard of her Maiesties person under the charge of the Lord Chamberlaine, consisting both of horse and foote leuted out of these shires following.

Horsemen.			Footemen.	
	Lances.	Light horse.		
Glocester	20.	100.	Glocester	2500.
Somerset	50.	100.	Somerset	4000.
Sussex	20.	100.	Sussex	2500.
Wilton	25.	100.	Wilton	2300.
Barkeshire	10.	85.	Cambridge	700.
Oxford	23.	103.	Northampton	600.
Cambridge	13.	40.	Leicester	500.
Northampton	20.	80.	Warwicke	500.
Leicester	9.	70.	Huntingdon	400.
Warwicke	17.	76.	Dorset	1000.
Huntingdon	6.	26.	Susfolke	3000.
Dorset	120.	0.	Hartford	500.
Susfolke	70.	230.	Surrey	500.
Norfolke	80.	321.	Barkshire	500.
			Oxford	150.
Summe	481.	1431.	Worcester	400.
			Southampton	2000.
			Devon	2000.
			London	5000.
			Middlesex	1000.
			Summe	34050.

The Lords and other of her Maiesties privy counsell, and sundry others of the nobilitie of the realme, being appointed to repaire unto the court, to attend upon her maiesties person, of their free and voluntary disposition, furnished, arrayed, and put in very comely order their troupes both of horsemen and footemen, and presented the same unto her maiesties view at her manor of Saint James.

The navy set forth and armed to the seas (as ye have heard) consisted partly of other maiesties ships, partly of the ships of her subiects, which were furnished out of the port townes, wherunto they belonged. Of this navy the chiefest and greatest part was under the charge of the lord Charles Howard lord Admirall, the rest of the ships in great number were assigned unto the lord Henry Seimier, ammirall of that fleet, to gard the narrow seas, and to impeach the issuing forth of the ships and vessels prepared for the duke of Parma at Dunkirke, &c. to ioyne in the enterprise of the Spanish Armado.

The states also of the united provinces in the Low countries, sent about the number of 40. ships out of Holland and Zeland, well appointed and furnished in war-

The Navy  
to the seas  
against the  
Spanish  
Armado.

warlike manner, which ioyned with the English fleet, under the charge of the  
said lord Henry Scimer, playing vpon the coast of Durtkirke and Flandreas.

Ships vnder the lord Admiralls charge.

Her maiesties ships, from Duinborough toward Plimmouth  
in the moneth of January last past, vnder  
Sir Francis Drake.

The Reuenge,  
The Hope,  
The Nonperill,

The Swiftsure,  
The Aide.

from Duinborough toward Plimmouth the 16. of May vnder the L. Admirall.

The Beare,  
The Triumph,  
The Elizabeth Ionas,  
The Victory,  
The Arke,  
The Bonauenture,  
The Lion,  
The Mary Rose,  
The Dreadnought,  
The Foresight,  
The Swallow,  
The White Lion.

The Gift of God,  
The Barke Burre,  
The Royall Defence,  
The Golden Lion,  
The Braue,  
The T. Bonauenture.

Pinnaces foure :

The Diana,  
The Passport,  
The Moone-shine,  
The Reliefe.

Of Britlow.

The Minion,  
The Vnicorne,  
The Handmaid,  
A pinnace.

Of Barstable.

The Galeon Dudley,  
The God saue her,  
The Tyger.

Of Excester.

The Bartholomew,  
The Rose,  
A Pinnace.

Of Plimmouth.

The Minion Elkon,  
The Sparke,  
The Hope,  
The T. Drake,  
The Barke Bond,  
The Barke Bonnar,  
The Barke Talbot,  
The Flic-boate,

The White Lion, the Lord Admirals,  
A Pinnace,

Pinnaces,  
The Charles,  
The Moone.

Other ships of the best sort.

The Galeon Leicester,  
The Royall Marchant,  
The Roe Bucke Sir W. Rawleys,  
The Edward Bonauenture,  
The Golden Noble,  
The Hopewell of London.

By the Londoners of their charge  
ships 16.

The Hercules,  
The Toby,  
The Senturion,  
The Minion,  
The Margaret and Iohn,  
The Assention,  
The May Flower,  
The Primerose,  
The Red Lion,  
The Tygar,



A pinnace, the lord *Sheffields*.

A pinnace, sir *William Winters*, and sundrie others of the West parts.

*Ships vnder the lord Henry Seimers charge.*

*Her maiesties Ships.*

The Rainbow,

The Vantgard,

The Antilope,

The Bull,

The Tyger,

The Scowr,

The Tremontany,

The Achates.

The Sunne,

The Merlin,

The Signet,

The Spie,

The Fancie,

The gally Bona,

The Brigandine,

The George a hoy.

Other English Ships there were from the ports of the North parts of the realme, besides Flemmish ships of Holland and Zeland, in number fortie. As also ten ships of war, by the Merchants aduenturers of England, at their owne proper costes and charges set out of the citie of London, vnder the charge of capitaine Henry Bullenham (ouer and aboue the other sixteene ships, and foure pinnaces, set out at the cities charges) to wit,

The Panfie,

The Roselion,

The Anthony,

The Salamander,

The Providence,

The Dolphin,

The Iewell,

The Antelop,

The Toby,

The George noble.

The lord high Admirall with his forces keeping for a season the narrow seas & channell betwene England and Flanders, sir Fran. Drake knight, mentioned here also in honor of his desert, was by the aduise of the lords of the counsell, & his honor so commanding it, sent towards the west parts, with certaine of the *M. Ships*, and others fro the ports of England (as is aforesaid) being about 54. or 56. saile of all sorts, there to attend the *L. high Admirall* his comming with greater forces, if occasion should so require. In the meane season the *L. Admirall* with his vice-admirall the Lord Henry Seimor kept the narrow seas, accompanied with twentie ships more, very well furnished, at the charges of the citizens of London, besides many other from diuers parts on that side of the realme, that lieth from the towne of Douer vp to the northward, which met altogether in good order, and well appointed for the warres.

*Prtruccio  
& baldino.*

*The Lord  
Admirall  
kept the nar-  
row seas.*

And here the *L. high Admirall* vnderstanding for a certaintie, that the fleet of the enemy was already lanchd & at the sea, he weyed anchor, and leauing the lord Seimor with sufficient forces of the *Queenes Ships*, & other vessels to watch what the Duke of Parma would do, or was able to undertake by sea, and parting from thence the 21. of May to the westward with her maiesties navy, and 20. ships of London, with some others, he arriued at Plimouth the three and twentieth of the same month, where sir Francis Drake with more than fifty saile which he had vnder his charge, met with the Lord Admirall in very good order. And then the two nauiies being ioyned together into one, the Lord Admirall made sir

ſir Francis Drake his viceadmirall : he that had ſcene theſe together, would haue commended it to haue bene a moſt royall ſteele, about two hundred ſaile, adding nine voluntaries, or aduenturers, furniſhed by the gentlemen of Deuonſhire and ſiſterne victuallers from London, the leaſt being of one hundred and twentie tun, all very well furniſhed for the fight, and a number of goodly men that were faine to returne home for lacke of entertainment, for there was choiſe both of mariners and ſouldiers.

Arriuing at Plimmouth (as is ſaid) his lordſhip preſently gaue order for pro- uiſion of victuall for the whole navy, that it might want nothing that ſhould tend to the neceſſary ſervice enſuing.

This prouiſion being complete, he reſolued with himſelfe to put ſooth to the ſea againe about the 30. of May aforeſaid, but the winde not ſeruing his turne, he kept himſelfe abroad, ſailing by and downe within the ſteeue betwene Uſſant and Silly, attending ſome ſight or report of the enemies ſteele : where hauing waited a certaine time, ſomewhiles drawing neare to the coaſt of France, and ſometimes to the coaſt of England, he returned, being thereto enforced by a great tempeſt with his whole navy into the port of Plimmouth about the ſixt of June, to reſreſh his company there.

In the meane ſeaſon there were diſcovered betwene Uſſant and Silly cer- taine ſhips of the Spaniſh ſteele, not about the number of fourtene, which were knowne to be ſeuered from the whole ſteele by violence of the aforeſaid tempeſt : but beſore they could be encountred withall by any of y<sup>e</sup> Engliſh nauie, the wind came about, whereby they had oportunitie to returne backe againe, ſauing them- ſelues from all perils in their haven called the Groine, into the which alſo the reſt of the Spaniſh ſteele was put prouide themſelues a new of other things which they wanted, and ſpecially of freſh water. Of this thing the Lord Ad- mirall had intelligence and aduertisement from ſundry parts, as alſo that the Spaniſh ſteele was by great fortune diſperſed and ſeuered into diuerſe places, through penury of many and thoſe neceſſarie things, through diſeaſes and mor- talitie of men, although the report hercof could not afterwards be veriſied, where- of the certaine truth was, that being troubled with tempeſt, they were comman- ded to come a ſhore at the Groine.

The lord Admirall therefore ſeeing the coaſt of England and France cleare and free from all danger, as by diligent ſearch it was vnderſtood, reſolued by the aduice and opinion of his counſell, to take the aduantage of the next winde that ſhould blow from the North, that paſſing to the coaſt of Spaine he might find the enemies ſteele ſo diſperſed in the Groine, and in other parts of Calitia where they had driven by the ſtorme.

This was put in execution betwene the 8. and 10. of the moneth of July, the winde being then at the North, which within a while changing vnto the South, after that he was come within 40. leagues or thereabout, of the coaſt of Spaine, made him to caſt a doubt of that which afterwards happened indeed. For laying this beſore him as his principall care, according to the charge laid vpon him by her maiestie, to be diligent and carefull for the defence of the coaſt of England, and conſidering

considering that with the wind which was now changed & very good to make for England, the enemy might set out & passe for England without discovery of his fleet, he returned backe with the whole naue, & the 12. of the same month he arrived at Plimmouth, there accordingly to provide himselfe of all that was necessarie.

The 19. of July, his honor had intelligence by a barke or pinnace, whose captain was Thomas Fleming, amongst other behind in the fleet for discovery, that the Spanish fleet in number by estimation 138. sailes, was discovered neare unto y<sup>e</sup> Lizard, the wind being then south & by west. And therefore albeit that by reason of the great number of English ships which were in Plimmouth it was with that wind very hard to bring them forth from thence: (as the military art of the sea, and the condition of their affaires required) yet was there such diligence bled by the L. admirall and the rest by his example, as they inducured therein with such aduise and earnestnesse, that many of the ships at the length warped out of y<sup>e</sup> haven, as if the wind had bene wholly favourable unto them: which thing could not haue fallen out, but through the long and certaine skill which y<sup>e</sup> English maisters generally haue in marine discipline. To the which reason this may be added, that they were all of one nation, of one tounge, and touched with a grieuous and equall hatred toward their enemies, being mightily perswaded of their forces. Wherupon we may in such cases assure our selues of what importance it is in sea-faring matters, for a fleet of any prince whatsoeuer, inuading any foraine state or kingdome, to incounter with a fleet ready for defence in such manner as y<sup>e</sup> English nauy was, for so much as the fleet inuading being provided diuersly of maisters and officers, differing one from another in custome, language & conceit, cannot in any measure giue any assured hope of certaine victorie how honorable soeuer y<sup>e</sup> commander be: many of the ships therefore came forth, by reason that the men were moued in the foresaid respects to labor diligently, & so much the rather, by how much the captains & chiefe officers both by counsell and hand, shewed themselves more diligent & industrious. By this means y<sup>e</sup> 30. day of July y<sup>e</sup> L. admirall accompanied with 54. ships, came forth with the same wind y<sup>e</sup> the enemy had from the south-west, which thing certainly was not esteemed a small thing to be done, in regard as well of the wind as of y<sup>e</sup> narrownesse of y<sup>e</sup> place it selfe. The Spanish fleet being manifestly discovered about 140. miles from Edsson, & clearly seene of every one toward the west, & so far off from Foy as the English fleet was, that is, 25. English miles. The next morning being y<sup>e</sup> 21. of July, all y<sup>e</sup> ships which were now come out of y<sup>e</sup> haven, had got the wind of the Spaniards, & approaching somewhat nearer, found y<sup>e</sup> their nauy was placed in battell ray, after the manner of a moone crescent, being ready with her hoznes & her inward circumference to receiue either all, or so many of the English nauy as should giue her the assault, her hozns being extended in widenesse about the distance of 8. miles, as was informed. The reason of their arranging in this order, arose vpon the foresight of the D. of Medina Sidonia generall of the Spanish fleet, who approaching the coast sent out a small ship to spy somewhat concerning y<sup>e</sup> English fleet, & hearing by certaine fishermen taken prisoners, y<sup>e</sup> our fleet was in Plimmouth, he prepared himselfe as aforesaid, for the auoyding of all such chances as might after befall: wherupon about 9. of y<sup>e</sup> clock before noone, the L. Admirall commanded his pinnace called the Disbaine,

The Spanish  
fleet disco-  
uered.

to giue the defiance vnto the duke of Medina: after which he himselfe in the Ship called the *Arce* went forwost, as was conuenient, & began hotly to fight with a great ship which was admirall of the Spanish fleet, in which ship he thought by reason of certaine likely coniectures, the duke of Medina to be, considering also the ship was so well accompanied by others. The fight with her continued so long and so hot, that diuerse other ships, yea the most part of the Spanish fleet came to her succour.

In the meane season the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake, with maister John Hawkens, & maister Martin Frobisher, fought with a galeon of Portugal, to wherein they thought Don Martin de Ricaldes the vice-admirall to be. This fight was so well maintained for the time it continued, that the enemy was enforced to leaue his place, and to giue way gathering toward the east. In the which point of remoouing, a great galeon wherein Don Pedro de Valdes went for captaine, falling foule with another ship of their fleet, was depriued of her fore-mast, so that she could not follow the body of the fleet that forsooke her, to the great maruell of the Englishmen themselves, whereby Don Pedro became prisoner, as after shall be declared. Furthermoze also there was at this time a great ship of Biscay about 800. tons in burthen, fore battered in fight, by casualtie of their owne powder, was set on fire, part therof blowne up and their people slaine, and so left to aduerture with the people that remained, so that being utterly unable at y<sup>e</sup> night to helpe her selfe, she was succoured by y<sup>e</sup> galliasses, & for y<sup>e</sup> time laued in y<sup>e</sup> body of the fleet.

But to returne to our purpose: This first skirmish continued not about two houres, because the lord Admirall considering that he wanted as yet fortie ships, which could not so readily come forth of the haven, thought he should do better seruiue if he stayed their continuing before he proceeded any further, beating behind vpon the enemy, lest he should bring the rest too much in hazard, and therefore he thought it not profitable too much to embolden and pricke those forward that he had with him, in a matter that was not greatly conuenient, either for the honour of the realme, or his owne person, neither did the militarie discipline of the English nation purchased by long experience at the sea, giue him leaue to do it. And therefore he put forth his flag to call the other captaines to counsell, who agreeing vnto his determination, receiued instructions concerning the order that they were to keepe in following the Spanish fleet. Then hauing giuen libertie to every man to returne to their charge, he gaue order likewise to his vice-admirall sir Francis Drake to appoint the watch for that night, and to beare out the light.

The same night the Spanish fleet lay about 14. miles off from the fleet.

The next day following early in the morning it was vnder the wind not so farre off as Berie.

In the meane time the English fleet wanting light, because the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake leauing his place to followe nine hulkes, which were discovered in the evening very late, it came to passe that all the other ships stayed behind, not knowing that they were to followe, or whither to direct themselves: so that there mought haue followed some great inconuenience, had they had to do with an enemy more practised in our seas: but as it seemed by report, y<sup>e</sup> said vice-admirall was mooued to do this by meanes of a certaine curious diligence, and a  
militant:



militarie suspicion, growing in his mind vpon certaine and very probable coniectures, grounded on circumstances of matter considered in his mind: and therefore he gaue them the chase, thinking that they had bene enemies. But being overtaken and their officers examined, and being knowne to be friends, or at the leastwise not enemies, he permitted the to go their way, returning himselfe vnto the fleet the day following.

The lord Admirall notwithstanding accompanied with the Beare, and the Marie Rose comming a little behind his sterne, by reason of the cleareness of the aire, followed the enemy all þ night within a Culuerin shot. By occasion whereof the rest of the fleet was cast so farre behind, that the morning after the nearest part thereof could hardly descrie the tops of the other ships, and many of the were cleane out of sight, so that with all the force of their saile they could hardly come al together the whole day following untill the evening.

The next day the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake being in the Queenes shippe called the Revenge, having also the Roe-bucke, and a pinnace or two in his company, tooke Don Pedro de Valdes, who, as was said before, had lost the fore-mast of his ship: and having receiued the said Valdes as his prisoner, and certaine other gentlemen of most account that were therein, he sent the ship together with þ prisoners vnto Dartmouth, vnder the conduct of the Roe-bucke, & he himselfe made toward the lord Admirall, vnder whose lee he came that night. This ship or galeon of 1150. tuns, in which Don Pedro de Valdes Generall of the ships of the army of Andalusia was, had in it three hundred and foure souldiers, one hundred and eightene mariners, brasse ordnance fire and fortie peeces, shot and bullet 2. thousand and three hundred, powder one hundred and fourtene quintals, lead for the muskets two and twenty quintals, match nineteene quintals, and so euery ship in the fleet according to his burthen had the like prouision, as is set downe in a booke extant in the Spanish tongue (which booke I haue seene at the hands of the worshipfull maister Anthony Radcliffe alderman of London.)

A great galeon with Don Pedro taken.

The same day being the 22. of July, a little before the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake was returned vnto the fleet, the Spaniards forsooke the ship which the day before was spoiled by fire: to the which ship the lord Admirall sent the L. Thomas Howard, and with him maister Iohn Hawkens, who being in the cock-boat of the Wiffogie, went aboord her, and there found a lamentable sight, for all the vppermost decks of her being torne and spoiled by the fire, there were in her fifty men miserably burnt with the powder. The stinke in her was so great, and the ship it selfe so filthy, that the lord Howard departed presently from her: and returning with maister Iohn Hawkens to the lord Admirall, they informed him of that they found and saw there: for which cause there was presently commaundement giuen, that the little pinnace of captain Fleming should conduct her vnto some port of England, where they might most commodiously helpe themselves: whereupon it was carried to Weymouth the next day following. For all the mishap that befell this ship, they vnderstood that the Spaniards had taken out of her all the best things that they could, casting off the bulke of her, together with certaine grosse stuffe therein, as for that time altogether vnprofitable.

A carack taken and sent to Weymouth.

The night last before mentioned there befell a great calme and thereupon foure

Spanish gallies secured themselves from y<sup>e</sup> rest of their fleet. This thing made the Englishmen to doubt, that that night they had resolved to give the onset upon some of their lesser ships, imagining that they might annoy them the rather, for that they were the reerward of the fleet, but afterwards the gallies (whatsoever the occasion was) interrupted nothing, either for that they saw they could not safely do it, or else because their minds were not thoroughly settled upon that which before they thought to do.

The morning following being the 22. of July, the wind was at northeast, whereupon the Spaniards came backe upon the Englishmen with the advantage of the wind, directing their course toward the land: the which course was not profitable for the Englishmen. Therefore to take the advantage of the enemy, they cast about towards the west with a reasonable compass, their ships being very good both of saile and storage, that they might bring about their purpose. Now y<sup>e</sup> Spaniards to hinder their intent after they perceived it, offered to come neere a-boord to fight with them, trusting in the huge gratiell and height of their ships: the which offer of theirs the Englishmen refused not, but began presently to bring themselves in battell array, which the enemy perceiving, he also did the like. In this case the Arke, the Lion, the Beare, the Elizabeth Jonas, the Whitore, and certaine other ships were content to follow the ship called the Donpariglia.

In the meane season the Triumph with other five ships of London, namely, the Merchant Royall, the Centurion, the Margerie Joan, the Mary Rose, and the golden Lion were so far to the reerward, and so far severed from the rest of the fleet, that the gallies undertooke to give them an hard assault: but they were well entertained by the ships for the space of an houre and a halfe, untill at the length some of the Queenes ships comming to succour the Triumph and the Londoners, dealt so well in the matter, that the gallies were driven to retire. The wind came about at this present to the southeast, and afterwards to the south-west and by south, at which time a certaine number of Squadron of the Queenes, together with other Merchants ships gave assault unto the Spanish fleet, and that so furiously to the westward of them, that the Spaniards were all enforced to give them way: for which cause the lord admirall considering both the discommoditie and daunger wherinto the Triumph and the other 5. ships were come, he called other of the Queenes ships that were not far off, and gave them strait commandement to follow him, and to charge the enemies which were to the westward with all their force, giving further order to them all, not to discharge any one peece of ordinance before they should come within a musket shot of the enemy, in as much as that was the onely way to succour the ships of their friends with the great damage of the enemy. This was well performed by the Arke, the Elizabeth Jonas, the Galeon Leicester, the golden Lion, the Whitore, the Mary Rose, the Dread nought, and the Swallow: which thing the duke of Medina perceiving, he also came forth with sixtene of his best galleons, to hinder and impeach the Englishmen in the defence of the Triumph, seeming in this case to pretend that the reason of y<sup>e</sup> fight did so require, whereas the regard of his honor did no lesse enforce him unto it, because it seemed inconvenient y<sup>e</sup> he should in every thing be inferior to y<sup>e</sup> Englishmen, & therefore he made large promises unto those by whose means y<sup>e</sup>

Whitore

victorie could be gotten: howbeit the Spaniards in the end were enforced to giue place and to retire vnto their array of battell. In this conflict one William Cox capitaine of a litle pinnace called the *Chiolet*, belonging to sir William Winter, behaved himselfe very valiantly against the enemies in the greatest brate of this encounter: but within a litle while after he lost his delight, wherewith he was not very well acquainted, and his life, by a great peece of ordinance.

Toward the evening foure or five Spanish ships came out from the rest of the fleet from the southward, against whom certaine of the English ships came, and namely the *May-flower* of London, which discharged certaine peeces vpon the enemy with a very honorable declaration of the marine discipline, & being accompanied by other ships that were there found, they all behaved themselves no lesse diligently (which thing was not at first hoped for, shewing their desire tempered with a wish) of other company. The conflict continued from the morning vnto the evening, the *V. Admirall* being at all times ready and vigilant in all adventures that might fall out: and thereupon he was sometimes more, and sometimes lesse egre in the conflict, as necessitie required, giuing thereby euident example how others should behave themselves. It might well be said, that for the time, it was not possible to see before this battell, in this sea, so hard a conflict, nor so terrible a spoile of ships, by reason of the pellets that flew so thicke euery way: to conclude, there was neuer scene so vehement a fight, either side endeuoring thorough an head-strong and deadly hatred the others spoile and destruction. For albeit the musquetiers and harquebuziers were in either fleet many in number, yet could they not be discerned or heard, by reason of the more violent and roaring shot of the greater ordinance, that followed so thicke one vpon another, & played so well that day on either side, that they were thought to be equall in number to common harquebuziers in an hot skirmish. The battell was not onely long, but also neare at hand, within halfe a musket shot, and that to the great advantage of the English men, who with their ships, being excellent of saile and stirrage, yet lesse a great deale than the Spanish ships, and therefore more light and nimble, fought not at all, (according vnto their manner otherwise) to board them, but keeping themselves aloofe at a reasonable distance, continually beate vpon the hull and tacklings of their enemies ships, which being a great deale higher, could not so conueniently beate the English shippes with their ordinance.

This long conflict being finished, and euery one retiring vnto his part, the next day following, which was the 24. of July, was passed without any thing done, because, by reason of the fight the day before, there was spent a great quantitie of powder and shot: wherupon the lord Admirall sent diuerse barkes and pinnaces to the shore for a new supplie of such munition. For her Maestie prudently foreseeing each thing necessarie for her men, ordained that there should be sufficient provision made, according as should be needfull, as well of victuals as of munition. It seemed moreover that day, that the Spanish fleet was nothing grieued with that dayes respite, but were all of them indifferently glad of that breathing, in as much as thereby they had good opportunity to looke to their leaks, whercof, no doubt, they had a great number, for they had caried away

The English fleet  
deuided into  
four  
squadrons.

many shewd stripes from their enemies, their hurts being of great likelihood so much the more, in that the Spaniards were pent up in a narrow roome.

This day the lord Admirall for certaine convenient reasons deuided the whole body of the fleet into four squadrons, by meanes of which diuision the enemy might be greatly, and more continually troubled. The first squadron he kept for himselfe: the second he assigned vnto sir Francis Drake his viceadmirall: the third to maister Iohn Hawkins: the fourth to maister Martin Frobisher, and after noone he gaue order, that in the night six of the marchants ships in each squadron should charge the Spanish fleet, in as many parts at one & the same time, & at midnight the enemy might be kept occupied. This order taken 'as it was very likely' might haue had as good effect as it was wisely giuen: but by reason of a great calme which fell out, no part of this aduilement could be accomplished, fortune interrupting good counsell.

The next day being the five and twentieth day of July, or Saint Iames day, there was a great Spanish galcon left behind her company to the south-ward neare to the squadron of maister Iohn Hawkins, so that the barkes belonging vnto the great ships, were within musket shot of her: by reason hereof three of the gallies and another ship that was in manner of a galcon, and well appointed, came from the Spanish fleet to succour this galcon. Against whom went out the lord Admirall in the Arke, and the lord Thomas Howard in the golden Lion, and drew so neare being towed by their boates, that they did them much harme, where-by one of them requiring the helpe of the rest, being succoured by them, returned vnto the fleet. And from another, by meanes of a shot comming from the Arke, there was taken away her light and throwne into the sea: the third lost her becke, where-by these two ships, the Arke, and the golden Lion declared this day to each fleet, that they had most diligent and faithfull gunners, desirous as well of the common good, as of the private honour of their leaders the lord Admirall, and the lord Thomas Howard which went in them: which commendation might rightly be imparted with them concerning this happy euent, because the calme was so great, that albeit the two fleets were well able to behold the fortune of each of their friends, yet notwithstanding they could not helpe them at all: at the length the wind beginning somewhat to rise, the Spaniards tooke the oportunitie thereof, and put themselves forward to helpe those of their side, and succoured them honorably. After this time the gallies, in whose puillance the greatest hope of the Spanish fleet was founded, were neuer scene to fight any more, such was their entertainment that day.

The two fleets notwithstanding approaching nigh one vnto another began a conflict, but they continued it but a while, except one ship called the Pon-pariglia, and another called the Mary Rose, which hauing taken in their topsailes laied themselves there, to make as it were a certaine experience of their manhood vpon the Spanish fleet, behauing themselves honorably for a season. In which time the triumph being to the northward of the Spanish fleet, was so farre off, that doubting that certaine of the Spanish ships would assault her to the wind ward, they succoured her with diuers boates that got the wind easily: for the Beate and y Elizabeth Jonas, euen at one instant hauing knowledge of the danger wherein

the



the other were dyeto neare vnto them, desiring both in regard of the honoz of their common wealth, and also for the preservation of their friends and countymen, to be partakers of the like danger and difficulty.

Wherupon each ship doing her duty, they ioyntly saued the Triumph from all harme, and recovered the wind. And thus this dayes worke ended: whereof I may say that the conflict was no whit shorter then the day it selfe.

At this present the Englishmen considering the great waste of powder and shot that had heretofore bene made, the lord Admirall determined not to assault the enemy any more, untill he were come nigh vnto Douer, in which place he should find the fleet under the charge of the L. Seimor, & sir Willia Winter, who were ready to ioyne with him, that thereby he might both fortifie himselfe with a great number of ships, and in this manner provide themselves of munition from that part of the realme. Upon friday therefore being the 26. of the month of July, ceasing from fighting, the lord Admirall (as well for their good deserts and honorable seruice, as also to incourage others to like valor) was desirous to aduance certaine personages to the degree of knighthood, for that behauing themselves manfully, as well with their ships as their good aduise, they were worthy that degree of honour: and so much the more worthy, in that being farre separated from all courtly fauour, which many times imparteth the chiefest honours vnto the least deseruing men, they declared their valour in the eyes of either fleet.

Therefore the two lords, viz. the lord Howard, and the lord Sheffield, Roger Townesend, John Hawkins, and Martin Frobisher, were called forth, and the order of knighthood giuen them by the lord Admirall, as their generall.

Knightes  
made for  
seruice.

This day there came to the seruice of her maiesty in her fleet diuers gentlemen, honourable both by bloud and place, but much more in respect of their courage and vertue, for that in these publike affaires, and so necessary seruice of the warres, they willingly offered their seruice in the defence of their country, and honour of her Maiesty.

This day also, and the next, being the seuen and twentieth, the Spaniards followed their course quietly before the English fleet. In which time the earle of Sussex, the lord Buckhurst, sir George Carie knight, & the captaines of the forts and castles thereabout, sent their men with powder, shot, and victuals, to the lord Admirall to assist and helpe the army. The same 27. day towards the euening, the Spaniards dyeto nigh to Calcis under the coast of Picardy, and there suddenly cast anker, almost right against the left hand of the haven to the west-ward, a little less then five miles from Calcis Clenes: the English fleet also cast anker with- in a culuerin shot of the enemy to the westward.

The Spanish  
fleet flyeth,  
and is cha-  
sed by the  
English.

In the meane season the lord Seimor, and sir William Winter ioynd with the L. Admirall, whereby the English fleet increased to the number of 140. ships of all sorts: but the Spaniards with all speede sent tidings vnto the duke of Parma of their arrivall, who at this present was at Bruges, who hauing retained with him all his leasaking in many dayes before to this purpose, yet proceeded no further in the matter for that time, although for such time as the king had limited him, he for his part tooke as much care as might be looked for at his hands: for hauing

already imbarcked a certaine number of souldiers, he was carefull in like manner to dispatch the rest as soone as they should be ready, that they might take opportunity to come forth, furnishing them abundantly with victuall and munition. But in the meane time such a chance fell out as made frustrate, not only his, but the conceipt also of the duke of Medina, and wholly ouerthrew their enterprise, for the lord Admirall hauing by certaine notice vnderstood, that the duke of Parma had prepared a great number of runs of water, and 10000. chosen footemen to be imbarcked for the ioyning with the fleet, which could not be auoided, if the duke of Medina were not compelled to auoide that place, knowing also the euident perill that was to be feared, if the Spanish fleet should be sufferd to refresh it selfe, and to be furnished with so many souldiers, he applied his wits so in the deliberation of these matters of waight and importance, hauing the consent of others more practised, that no time might be lost for the furtherance of this seruice, and forsomuch as the forces of the enemy were not yet united and ioyned together, therefore the 28. of this moneth at midnight, he provided 8. small ships-dressed with artificall fire, to the intent to deuiue the same vpon the Spanish fleet. This thing was diligently & effectually brought to passe vnder the charge of capitaine Yong & capitaine Prowle, two valiant and couragious men: by reason hereof the enemy was not only inforced to brake his sleep, but the fire coming so suddenly vpon him, to cut his cables, to let slip his ankers, and to hope by salles as the only way to saue his fleet from so imminent and unexpected a mischance. Furthermore, by meanes of this tumult & confusion, the chiefe galiassell fell forole with another ship, vpon the cable of whose anker her sterne was set so fast, that they could not loose her all the night long, so that the next day following she was inforced with her oares to make toward the land, & to draw nigh to the hauens mouth of Calcis, to saue her selfe in that place: but not knowing that water, and hauing no profitable and conuenient counsell for the time, she fell vpon a shelfe. This thing being in good time espied by the L. Admirall, he sent thither his greatest boate vnder the charge of Amiens Preston his lieutenant, and together with him Thomas Gerard, sonne and heire to sir Gilbert Gerard maister of the Rowles, & maister Haruy two of her maiesties gentlemen & seruants, and others of the court and of his owne seruants, who fought with her, but vncqually, for that the ship being grauelled could with her force preuaile but little. In this conflict it chanced y<sup>e</sup> a musket shot stroke Hugo de Moncada chiefe captaine of y<sup>e</sup> galiassell a noble & valiant man, in the head: the which mishap ioyned with the difficulty of stirring themselves in their defence, bred such a despaire in euery man, that the greater sort leapt into y<sup>e</sup> water to saue themselves by swimming into the haueu, although many of the perished in the water. By this disorder of the enemy, the Englishmen being more secure, tooke her, and sacked her to their great commodity, about 100. men being entred into her, and their company increasing more and more. Whereupon monsieur Gordon gouernor of Calcis, a man of good estimation in respect of his prerogative in that place, sent his nephew to giue the Englishmen to vnderstand, that they should content themselves with the ordinarie spoile, & that they should leaue behind them the great ordinance, as a thing belonging vnto him by vertue of his office: the which message being sent the second time vnto men more intentiue vnto their pray, then other mens reason, made the gentle-

gentleman to be euilly entertained by our men, in such sort, that they would haue forcibly taken from him some things about him, thinking him to be a Spaniard : whereat M. Gordon being offended, caused certaine peeces of ordnance to be discharged from the towne, and then the Englishmen departed, leauing the galliasse at his pleasure, after the losse of some souldiers, hauing notwithstanding sacked 21000. duckets of gold, appertaining vnto the king, and 14. coffers of mouables of the duke of Medina, with some other, both mony and mouables of other particular men, and some prisoners, among whom was Don Roderigo of Mendoza, and Don Iohn Gonzales de Solirauo binder-captaine of the galliasse.

During the time of surprisling of which galliasse, sir Francis Drake vice-admirall being in the ship called the Reuenge, accompanied with Thomas Fennar captaine of the Ponpariglia, with the rest of that Squadron, set vpon the Spanish fleet, giuing them an hote charge. Within a while after, sir Iohn Hawkins in the *Uicoy*, accompanied with Edward Fenton captaine of the *Mary Rose*, with George Beelton captaine of the *Dread nought*, and Richard Hawkins in the *Swallow*, with the rest of that Squadron, put themselves forward and brake through the middest of the Spanish fleet, where there began a vehement conflict continuing all the morning, wherein euery captaine did very honorable seruice : among the rest captaine Beelton deserued speciall praise. Vnto this fight came the lord Admirall, accompanied with the earle of Cumberland, the lord Thomas Howard, the lord Sheffield, and in that place where the fight was made, and the victory was gotten, they were publickly commended. Not farre from this place there was a great Spanish golcon scene, which was set vpon on the one side by the earle of Cumberland, and George Riman in the *Bonaenture*, and on the other side by the lord Seimor, in the ship called the *Rainbow*, and sir William Winter in the *Wantgard*, yet she saued her selfe valiantly, gathering into the body of the fleet, although with ill successe, for she was so beaten and so terribly rent and tozned with our great ordnance, y the night following, in y sight of her owne fleet she sunke, her men (as it was thought) being saued. After this, captaine Fenton in the *Mary Rose*, and a Spanish galcon met together, being east and west one of another yet no nigher then that their shot might play safely, and sic betweene them without any great hurt. Captaine Fenton notwithstanding, and those that were with him, were worthily commended for their seruice begun and accomplished, with such prosperous boldnesse. The same day the deeds of sir Robert Southwell were scene and worthily commended. Also was praised Robert Crosse captaine, who in the ship called the *Hope*, gaue a signe of valour to be in him.

It fell out also the same day, that the L. Henry Seimor, & sir William Winter did so thoroughly beate two Spanish galcons although they were of the chiefest of them, and y best provided, that they were enforced to withdraw themselves to the coast of Flanders, where, soasmuch as they were in a very euill taking, as well in respect of the murther of their men, as the manifold leakes of their ships, they were surpris'd, and without fight rised by the Zelanders, and with all the men in them caried as prisoners vnto Flushing. Among these the chiefest was Don Diego Pimentello, a man very famous among this countrey people. It seemeth hereby, that in these conflicts many of the Spanish ships perished. After this

battell

battell which was made the 29. of the moneth of July, the Lord Admirall the 30. day ordained, that the lord Seimor and sir William Winter should returne with their fleet vnto their appointed office in the chanell, which was to keepe the coast from the danger that the Duke of Parma seemed to threaten. The which Duke had already lost the oportunitie of being able to do any thing for the accomplishing of the common intention of the Spaniards: because the sodaine and vnlooked for departure of the Duke of Medina with the whole fleet from the coast of Calceis, caused the whole care of the aforesaid Duke that he tooke vpon the maine land, to become void, so that he did not imbarke the rest of his men to ioine with the Duke of Medina.

The Lord Admirall therefore determined to followe the Spanish fleet onely, so long, vntill they might be shot vp to the northward, whither the Spanish fleet directed her course, but to what end, it was not knowne. And that he with the same winde might come to the Frith, which is vpon the coast of Scotland, if so he be saw the enemie passe those parts. Vtherupon he thought moreover, that it was good to stay his fleet from attempting ought vpon the Spaniards, vntill he should haue good intelligence of their purpose, thereby to worke a meane vtterly to disperse and ouerthrow them. But the Spaniards kept their course about the Islands of Orkeney, declaring thereby, that they minded to returne that way into Spaine along by the north coast of Scotland, which as skillfull men coniectured would be to their euident danger, as it fell out afterward: perceiuing therefore the purpose of the enemie when he was shot by 55. degrees & 13. minutes to the north ward, and 30. leagues off from Newcastle, the L. Admirall resolued with himselfe to let the Spanish fleet keepe on her way. The Spanish fleet therefore as for her owne welfare it was requisite, hauing gone on so far before, the lord Admirall resolued to put into the Frith in Scotland, aswell to refresh himselfe with new victuals, as also to dispatch certaine other matters which he thought necessary. But the wind being much westward & against him, the day following he changed his course, and turned into England with the whole fleet the 7. of August, although by reason of a tempest part of the ships put into Douer, part to Harwich, the rest into Parmouth. And thus much of the seruice by sea, wherein God hath giuen to the English a wonderfull victorie.

The Spanish fleet passing (as aforesaid) into those seas which for y<sup>e</sup> most part are quiet & calme enough, whether it were giuen to and fro in them with contrary winds, or by some other fatall accident that fell out, it continued therein tolled by and downe vntill the end of September, with fearefull successe & deadly shipwracke along the whole coast of Ireland: so that the Duke of Medina Sidonia was inforced to leaue there behind him about the nuber of 17. good ships, besides those 15. that were thought to be lost in the moneths of July and August, & so to returne into Spaine. The persons lost in Ireland were esteemed to be about 5500. so that all being accounted together, it is certainly aouched that all the ships that were lost amount to the number of 32. & the men accounted one with an other, arise to the number of 13500. or more. The prisoners also of all sorts in England, Ireland, and the low Countries, arise to the number of 2000. and more. As for the losse of the ordinance, & the commo<sup>r</sup> or priuate treasure, or whether

Spaniards  
ouerthrown  
in Ireland.

the



the Duke after he was preserved from the former fearefull & mortall dangers, lost any more ships, or no, or last of all, how many he brought home with him againe into Spaine, I know not, and therefore leaue any further to write of that matter.

Now (as you haue heard before) the campe in the meane time, being kept at Tilbury in Essex, under the charge of the earle of Leicester L. Steward, &c. the 9. of August, her maiestie repaired thither, where all the whole campe being set in order of battell, both horse and footmen, she passed through euery ranke of them, to their great comfort and reioycing, and was lodged that night and the night next following, in the house of maister Edward Rich, a Justice of that shire in the parish of Hoynedon. On the next morrow being the tenth of August, her maiestie returning to the campe, beheld the same, they being all trained in the best order that might be, and on the eleventh of August returned to Saint James, and shortly after the campe was dissolved.

Her maiestie went to the camp at Tilbury in Essex.

Camp at Tilbury dissolved.

And on the 20. of August, M. Nowell deane of Paules at Paules crosse, in presence of the lord Maior and Aldermen in scarlet, the companies in their best liveries, preached a sermon, mouing them to giue laud & praise vnto Almighty God, for the great victory by him giuen to our English nation, by the overthrow of the Spanishe fleet and our enemies.

Sermon of thanksgiving at Paules.

The 26. of August, at the sessions hal without Newgate of London, were condemned sixe persons, for being made priests beyond the seas, and remaining in this realme contrary to a statute thereof made: foure temporall men for being reconciled to the Romane church: and foure other for receiuing and abetting the others. And on the 28. W. Deane and H. Webley were hanged at the Shiles ende, W. Gunter at the Theater, R. Moorton and Hugh Moore at Lincolns Inne fields, T. Acton at Clarkenwell, T. Felton and James Clarkson betwene Brainford & Hounslow. And on the 30. of August, R. Flower, Ed. Shelley, R. Leigh, R. Martine, I. Roch and Margaret Warde gentlewoman (which Margaret had conuicted a robd to a priest in Bideowell, whereby he let himselfe downe and escaped) were hanged at Tiborne.

6. Seminars and 8. other executed.

The 4. of September, deceased Robert Dudley earle of Leicester, lord steward of her Maiesties household, lieutenant generall and marshall of all England, at Coenebury in Oxford shire, from whence he was conuicted to his castell of Kenelworth, & from thence to Warwike, where he was honorably interred. In which towne of Warwike, he had in his life time, of an olde guild (giuen him by the townes men for that purpose) founded an hospitall for 12. poore men, indowing the same with lands to the yearely value of 200. P. and better, and 52. loades of wood ready cut and made out of Kenelworth wood, &c.

Robert earle of Leicester deceased.

The eight of September, the preacher at Paules crosse moued the people to giue God thanks for the overthrow of our enemies the Spaniards, and there were shewed eleuen ensignes or banners taken in the Spanishe ships by our men, these ensignes were set vpon the lower battlements of Paules Church, before the preacher and the audience, (which was great) all sauing one streamer, wherein was an image of our Lady, with her sonne in her armes, &c. and this was held in a mans hand ouer the pulpit. And the same banners were on the next morrow hanged on London bridge towards Southwarke, where

Ensignes taken from the Spaniards, & shewed at Paules crosse.

where then was kept our Lady faire, for all beholders to their great reioycing. The 23. of September, a seminarie priest named Flower, was hanged, headed, and quartered at Kingstone.

Seminarie  
priests exe-  
cuted.

The fifth of October, I. Weldon, and W. Hartley, made priests at Paris, and remaining here contrarie to a statute, were hanged the one at the Shiles ende, the other nigh the Theater, & Robert Sutton for being reconciled to the sea of Rome, was hanged at Clarkenwell.

An. reg. 31.  
Sermons &  
thanksgiving  
vnto God for  
victorie a-  
gainst the  
Spaniards.

The 17. of Nouember being Sunday, D. Cooper bishop of Winchester preached at Pauls crosse, at the which sermon her maiesty appointed to haue bene present, for whose receiuing great prouision was made, but her highnesse comming thither was put off till the Sunday next following. The 19. of this moneth being Tuesday, was this yeare kept holy day throughout the Realme, with sermons, singing of Psalmes, bone-fires, &c. for ioy, and a thanks giuing vnto God, for the ouerthrow of the Spaniards our enemies on the sea, and the citizens of London assembled in their liueries, had that day a sermo at Pauls crosse tending to this end.

Her maiesty  
came to  
Pauls, and  
there heard  
the sermon.

The 24. of Nouember being Sunday, her Maiestie hauing attendant vpon her the priuie counsell and nobilitie, and other honorable persons as well spirituall as temporall in great number, the French Ambassadors, the Judges of the realme, the heralds, trumpeters, & all on horse-backe, did come in a chariot-throne made with foure pillars, behind to haue a canapie, on the top whereof was made a crowne imperiall, and two lower pillars before, whereon stood a lion and a dragon, supporters of the arms of England, drayn by two white horses fro Sommerset house to the Cathedrall church of Saint Paule, her footemen and Pensioners about her: next after rode the earle of Essex maister of her horse, leading her Maiesties horse of estate richly furnished: after him a great number of Ladies of honor, on each side of them the garde on foote in their rich coates and halberds in their hands. At what time before she came at the Temple bar, Edward Schets Cornuiss an officer of her priuie chamber, gaue her maiestie a iewel containing a Crapon, or Toade stone set in golde, which she graciously accepting, said, it was the first gift she had receiued that day. The same day also her highnes receiued a booke entituled, the Light of Britaine, by the gift of Henrie Lee of Wiltshire gentleman the author thereof.ouer the gate of the Temple bar were placed the waites of the citie. And at the same barre the Lord Maior and his brethren the Aldermen in scarlet, receiued and welcomed her Maiestie to her citie and chamber, deliuering to her hands the scepter, which after certaine speeches had, her highnesse redeliuered to the Maior, and he againe taking his horse, bare the same before her. The companies of the citie in their liuries stood in their railes of timber, couered with blew cloth, all of them saluting her highnesse as she proceeded along to Pauls church, where at the great west doore, she dismounting from her chariot-throne betwene the houres of twelue and one, was receiued by the Bishop of London, the Deane of Pauls, and other of the Cleargie, to the number of more than fiftie, all in rich coapes, where her highnesse on her knees made her hartie prayers vnto God: which prayers being finished, she was vnder a rich canapie brought through the long west Ile, to her Trainers in the quire, the cleargie singing the Letanie: which being ended, she was brought to a closet, of purpose

Gifts to her  
Maiestie.

purpose made out of the north wall of the church, towards the pulpit Crosse, where she heard a Sermon made by doctor Pierce bishop of Salisbury, and then returned through the church to the bishops palace, where she dined and returned in like order as afore, but with great light of torches, to Sommer set house.

Seminary priests in the moneth of December, recanted at Pauls crosse, to wit, William Tocker and Anthony Tiell.

Seminary  
priests re-  
canted.

The 1. of January at night, a great wind in the northeast, buttled many houses, ouerturned trees, and other wise did great harmes both by land and seas

1589.  
Tempest of  
wind.

The 30. of January, the queenes maiesty came from Richmond to Chelsey, & so to Westminster, and was receiued by the maior, aldermen, and commons of her city of London, in coates of velvet and chaines of gold, all on horsebacke, with the captaines of the city to the number of forty, betwixt five and sixe of the clocke by torch-light.

The fourth of february began the parliament at Westminster.

Parliament  
at Westmin-  
ster.

In this moneth of february, diuers souldiers for abusing their captaines for the Low countreies were punished at London and elswhere in other places, some were set on the pillorey with their eares nailed, some their tongue pierced with an aule, some hanged on trees, &c. without the city for example to other.

About this time Francis Ket master of Art of Wilmoutham in Dorsetshire, was conuicted before Edmond bishop of Norwich, for holding diuers detestable opinions against Christ our Sauour, and was burnt neare to the city of Norwich.

Francis Ket  
burnt at  
Norwich.

The 29. of March being Easter eue the parliament brake up at Westminster, in the which parliament was granted to her maiesty 2. subsidies of 12. s. 8. d. the 1. and foure pennes, and a tenth.

Parliament  
dissolued.

The 14. of Aprill, Philip Howard earle of Arundell was arraigned at Westminster of high treason, and was found guilty by his peeres, and had iudgment accordingly.

Earle of Arundell  
arraigned.

The relation of the whole fleet vnder the charge of sir Iohn Norris and sir Francis Drake, in the moneth of Aprill, for the enterprise of Spaine and Portugale, deuided into five squadrons, as followeth.

The first Squadron.  
The Reuenge of her maiesty.  
The Tygre of London.  
The barke Reinolds.  
The Prudence of Portsmouth.  
The Vineyard of London.  
The Gift of God of Harwich.  
The Daniell of Yarmouth.  
The Centurion of London.  
The Thomas of Plimmouth.  
The Swift of Douer.  
The Primerose of Portsmouth.  
The Emanuell of Dartmouth.  
The Mary flower of Brickleysey.  
The Diana of Hampton.

The Greyhound of Plimmouth.  
The Aduice of her maiesty.  
Dutch ships.  
The red Lion of Elsnore.  
The blacke Eagle of Hamborough.  
The Abraham of Olbroke.  
The Tobias of Woffepe.  
The three Kings of Amsterdam.  
The Crab of Memlicke.  
The Cat of Memlicke.  
The Bonuoe of Hem.  
The Swart Horne of Fieoland.  
The Hager of.  
The Isager of Hussen.  
The Robert of Memlicke.

The

The Fortune of.  
 The Greyhound of Bassè.  
     The second Squadron.  
 The Nonparelle of her maiesty.  
 The Samaritan of London.  
 The Roger & Katherin of Newcastle.  
 The James of Ipswich.

The William of Ipswich.  
 The May-flower of Yarmouth.  
 Ehe Golden Noble of London.  
 The Fortune of Plimmouth.  
 The Mary Iarmans of Linne.  
 The Godspeed of Hampton.  
 The Gift of Hampton.  
 The William of Linne.  
 The Golden Hind.  
 The Phenix of Dartmouth.  
 The red Lion of Ipswich.  
 The Gregory of London.

    Dutch ships.

The yong Froe of Hamborough.  
 The Sea rider of Hamborough.  
 The Isager of Hussen.  
 The Grondzell of Grotebroke.  
 The red Lion of Campned.  
 The Fortune of Waterland.  
 The Nightingale of Alcumer.  
 The grey Horle of Copeman hauen.  
 The Yegre of Fieled.  
 The Buronight of Bergho.  
 The Mermien of Amsterdam.  
 The Yegar of Horne.  
 The Angell of Amsterdam.  
 The Fortune of Bassè.

    The third Squadron.

The Dread nought of her maiesty.  
 The Edward Bonadventure.  
 The Toby of Harwich.  
 The Tyger of Plimmouth.  
 The Pellicane of Alborough.  
 The William of Wels.  
 The Crescent of Dartmouth.  
 The Salomon of London.  
 The Susan of Blackney.  
 The Bartilmew of Exmouth.

The William and Iohn Linne.  
 The Antilope of Plimmouth.  
 The Nightingale of Portsmouth.  
 The white Lion.  
 The Reliefe of Portsmouth.  
 The Mary Katherine, a hoy.  
     Dutch ships.

The Murion of Hamborough.  
 The white Falcon of Hamborough.  
 The Basse of Horne.  
 The blacke Rauen of Memlicke.  
 The Isagre of Fieled.  
 The Vnicorne of  
 The Browne fish of Horne.  
 The Fortune of Palmerin.  
 The red Hart of Woaring.  
 The Hope of Seclueling.  
 The Mole of Horne.

The white Fish of Grotebroke.

    The fourth Squadron.

The Swiftsure of her maiesty.  
 The Toby of London.  
 The Hopewell of Orford.  
 The Gift of Dartmouth.  
 The Greyhound of Alborough.  
 The Charity of Newcastle.  
 The Minion of Foy.  
 The Free gift of Linne.  
 The Valentine of Blackney.  
 The Barke Slegar.  
 The Antilope of Linne.  
 The Iohn of Grelany.  
 The George Bonauen. of Blakney.  
 The Handmaid of Bristow.  
 The Handmaid of Clichefter.  
 The Emanuel of Harwich.

    Dutch ships.

The Fortune of Hamborough.  
 The blacke Rauen of Waterland.  
 The Olephant of Menlicke.  
 The Iarman of Encusen.  
 The red Lion of Edam.  
 The Pellicane of Hem.  
 The blacke Rauen of Edam.  
 The Angell Gabriell of Horne.



The Saint Peter of Encusen.  
 The William of Encusen.  
 The Crab of Horne.  
 The Yagre of Horne.  
 The red Lion of Amsterdam.  
 The fift Squadron.  
 The foresight of her maiestie.  
 The Marchant Royall.  
 The Elizabeth of Yarmouth.  
 The Minion of Plimmouth.  
 The May-flower of Linne.  
 The Stephen of Dartmouth.  
 The barke Bonner of Plimmouth.  
 The Robin of Douer.  
 The Vnicorne of Brisslow.  
 The Francis of Ric.  
 The barke Hawkins of Plimmouth.  
 The William of Plimmouth.

The Barke Parnell of Brikelfey.  
 The Hart Anne of Chatton.  
 The Iohn of Newhauen.  
 The William of Ipswich, a hoy.  
 Dutch ships.  
 The Hope of Hamborough.  
 The Bonner of Grotobroke.  
 The Chistmaker of Skauant.  
 The Foxe of Elcomoke.  
 The flying Hart of Horne.  
 The red Lion of Oldbroke.  
 The Rose of Haster.  
 The Fortune of Menlicke.  
 The Popenger of Dongerda.  
 The Minion of Warring.  
 The Iudith of Campin.  
 The swart Rutter of Amsterdam.  
 The Mill knape of.

Principall officers of the Flaue.

The two Generals : sir Iohn Norris, sir Francis Drake.  
 Viceadmirall capitaine Thomas Fenner.  
 Colonels of the five Squadrons, sir Francis Drake, sir Iohn Norris, capitaine Thomas Fenner, sir Roger Williams, sir Edward Norris.  
 The Rereadmirall capitaine William Fenner.  
 The Lieutenants colonels of the Squadrons, capitaine Thomas Drake, capitaine Sackfield, capitaine Garton, capitaine Gorn, capitaine Winter.  
 The Secretarie of the Flaue.  
 The Surucioz generall of the victuals, Marmaduke Dorrell.  
 The Vice-treasurer of the navy, master Stallenge. & Surucioz capitaine Flicke.  
 The Capitaine generall of the watch capitaine Bowyer, Lieutenant of the ordinance capitaine Lancaster, the Provost marshall capitaine Cripe, Husler master capitaine Delbars, the maister of the discoveries capitaine Foxcroft, Transporter capitaine Musgrave.  
 The Corporals of the Squadrons, capitaine Yoong of the Revenge, capitaine Segar of the Pompey, capitaine Baker of the Dreadnought, capitaine Wilde of the Swift, sir, capitaine Cripe of the Foresight.  
 Captaines of the watch, capitaine Wall of the Revenge, capitaine Champnell of the Pompey, capitaine Gifford of the Dreadnought, capitaine Norwood of the Swift, sir, capitaine G. Drake of the Foresight.  
 Clarke of the score, maister Iohn Audley.  
 Principall maisters, Th. West, Rob. Wignoll, Iohn Benner, Rob. Hart, Roger Talant, Richard Burrell.

The 18. of Aprill, sir Iohn Norris and sir Francis Drake Generals, with five Voies for  
 of her Maiesties ships 20. ships of war, and 140, fit for burden having in them a Portingale,  
 choise

choise companie of knights, captaines, gentlemen and soldiers, departed from Plimmouth, and on the 23. of the same moneth arrived at the Goyne. The 26. they tooke the lower towne by assault, together with great store of ordnance兵具, vituals, cables, ropes, and other furniture for shipping.

About the first of May, they fought with the Spaniards at Puente de Burgos Bridge, where the enemy fled with losse of 700. men.

The seventh of May, the lower towne of Goyne was burned, and on the ninth our fleet set sail, the 13. the earle of Essex, with maister Walter Deuereux his brother, sir Philip Butler, sir Roger Williams, and sir Edward Wingfield met with our fleet. The 16. the whole namie arrived at Penicha in Portingale, where in despite of the enemies, our people were set aland, and the same day won both the towne and castill of Penicha. After this they divided the armie, whereof part marched with sir Iohn Norris by land to Lisbon, the rest with sir Francis Drake passed by sea to Castales. The 24. our men entered the suburbs of Lisbon, where they obtained rich spoiles, and plenty of every good thing. The 27. the armie being victored, was found to be weake, and of small force to sustaine so great a siege as that was like to be, besides the want of powder, and some other necessaries: for which causes, after counsell taken, they left Lisbon, and came to Castales, without any great fight or skirmish, where they tooke the castill, and thence returned for England. There followed them nine galleies, who fighting with two English merchants ships, by cunning of the Queenes ships, discharging but one peece at them, they retired, & so our ships came safely to Uligo, where landing our men the towne was taken, & the country wasted, &c. More at large this matter is published in print both in Latine and in English.

The 21. of June, sir Francis Drake arrived at Plimmouth, and on the third of July, sir Iohn Norris with the rest of the fleet arrived there also.

Great lightning and thunder.

The first of August at night, was the greatest lightning and thunder that had at any time bene seene and heard about London, in the memorie of any man living, and yet thanks be giuen to God little hurt heard of.

Disordered soldiers executed.

Sir Iohn Norris & sir Francis Drake being returned, as ye have heard, many of their sailers and soldiers, shortly after their landing, fell sicke, and died of a stanchie bred amongst them on ship-board, other some of the so rudely behaved themselves about the country, about the court, & elsewhere, that many men misliked of their doings, and diuers of them being apprehended, on the 27. of August one was hanged on the end of a signe at an Inne doore in the towne of Kingstone upon Thames, for a terror to the rest. The 29. of August, two more were hanged in Smithfield, two at the Tower hill, two besides Westminster, & one at Tiborne.

Men furnished into France.

About the 21. of September, the citizens of London furnished a thousand men to be sent over into France, to the aiding of Henry late king of Navar, then challenging the crowne of France, as rightfull inheritor by lawfull succession. Also diuers shires in England sent into France to the same aide, some shire a thousand, as Kent and other shires, and some shires lesse, &c. All which companies were sent over into France, under the conductin of Peregrine Barrie lord Willoughby and Crisby.

The first of November, Ledowike Griuell of Wilcote in the county of Warwike

Marlowe esquire, was brought from the Tower of London to Westminster, and there at the kings bench bar, being accessory to murder, where with hee was charged, was arraigned and found guiltie: but standing mute, hadoe iudgement to be pressed to death, and was accordingly executed in the gaole of the kings bench in Southwarke on the 14. of Nouember, on the which day for committing the murther, as principall, his man was hanged in the Palace court at Westminster.

Robowike Griuell pressed to death.

In this moneth of Nouember, the Citizens of London were sundry times frighted by casualtie of fire about New Fishstrate, three times in one weeke, the Citizens raised, lightes hanged out at euery doore, and euery man labouring for his owne safety, as more at large appereth in my Summarie of the Chronicles.

An. reg. 32. Citizens of London fited by fires.

The 5. of Ianuary, about nine of the clock in the euening, before the Twelfth day, began a great and terrible tempest of wind in the south west, which continued with great vehemencie till about 11. of the clocke of the same night, this in the citie of London blew the tiles off mens houses, ouerthrew many chimneies, and caused manie men feare the ouerthrowe of their houses: one of the three west gates of Saint Pauls Church, to wit, that next to the Byshoppes palace was broken, with the bolts, bars, and lockes of the same gate, so that it was blowne ouer. In the countreie, houses and barns were bozne ouer, and some of them blowne far from the places wherein they stode, besides trees in great numbers blowne by by the rotes. On the Seas, no man can tell what harmes were done, by ships and barks cast away. About Southampton the ships and barks riding at anchoz, were driuen a land and sunke, the like was neuer sene thereabouts.

Tempest of wind great and violent.

Southwest gate of Pauls blown open.

In this moneth of Iannarie, Nicols one of her maiesties purueors was hanged, for that hee conuerted to his owne vse certaine prouision taken of her subiects for her maiesties vse.

Purueor hanged.

The 21. of february, Ambrose Dudley earle of Marlowe deceased at his house in Strande strate nere unto Que byschope, towarde Westminster, and was honozably buried at Marlowe.

Ambrose Earle of Marlowe deceased.

Christopher Bales made piteff beyond the sea, was convicted of treason, for remaining in this Realme contrarie to a statute. Also Nicholas Horne and Alexander Blage, convicted of felonie, for relieuing of Bales, contrarie to the like statute, those were all executed on the fourth of March, Bales was hanged, bowelled, and quartered in Fleetstrate, at Fleetwar Lane ende, Horne hanged in Smithfelde, and Blage hanged at Graues Inne lane end.

Bales and other executed.

The fift of March, a French was burned in Saint Georges ffield with out Southwarke, for poisoning of her mistres and other.

The sixte of Aprill about Midnight, deceased Sir Frauncis VValsingham Knight, principall Secretarie to her Maiestie, and Chauncelor of the Duchie of Lancaster, at his house in Seding Lane of London, and was about tenne of the clocke in the next night following, buried in Pauls church with out solemnitie.

1590 Sir Frauncis VValsingham deceased.

This yere on the wednesday in Easter weeke, by shooting of a gunne in the

Do o o

towne

Wolfrun-  
hampton byent

to toun of Wolfrunhampton in Staffo;rdshire about the number of 80. houses were byent.

An. reg. 33.  
Ambassadors to  
the princes of  
Germany;

The vicount of Tureine, nowe Duke of Bullion by the late marriage of his wife, was sent in ambassage from Henry the 4. now King of France, vnto her maiestie, to intreate her to interpose her credite with the princes Protestants of Germanie, for the raising and sending of an Arme of Masters, or horsemen vnto the aide of the saide French King his Maister, against those of his owne Subiectes, &c. that doe oppose themselves against him, vnder the name of the Holie League: whereupon her Maestie addrested Sir Horatio Palauicino Knight, with commission to come with the saide Princes touching those preparations. In the performance of which Ambassage was spent all the Winter season with such good successe, that thereupon this army of the maine horsemen was lent and sent into France about the ende of the summer following,

1591  
Men sent into  
Bytanie.

In the moneth of Aprill, three thousand footemen were sent from hence into Britaine in France, vnder the condaction of sir John Norris knight, to come with the prince Dombes, sonne of the Duke Montpensier, and generall of the French kings forces in that prouince: which companies haue since beene from time to time supplied.

Coppinger and  
Arthington  
preached on a  
sabbath in Cheape

The 16. date of Iulie in the morning, Edmond Coppinger and Henry Arthington gentlemen, repaired to one Walkers house nere vnto Broken wharf of London, where conferring with one of their sear, named William Hacker of Dwindale in the County of Northampton yroman, they offered to annoint him king, but Hacker taking Coppinger by the hand, said: You shall not neede to annoint mee, for I haue bene already annointed in Heauen by the Holie ghost himselfe. Then Coppinger asked him what his pleasure was to be done. Go your way both (said he) and tell them in the city, that Christ Iesus is come with his fan in his hand to iudge the earth. And if any man aske you where he is, tel them he lies at Walkers house by Broken wharfe; and if they will not beleue it, let them come and kill me if they can: for as truly as Christ Iesus is in heauen, so truly is hee come to iudge the worlde. Then Coppinger saide it shoulde be done forthwith: and thereupon went forward, and Arthington followed, but ere hee coulde get downe the staires, Coppinger had begun below in the house, to proclaime newes from Heauen of exceeding great merue: that Christ Iesus was come, &c. with whome Arthington also cried the same words aloud, following him along the streets from thence by Watling streete, and Oldchange toward Cheape, they both adding beyond their commission these words: Repent England, repent. After they had both thus come (with a mightie concurse of the common multitude) with an vniforme cry into Cheape nere vnto the crosse, and there finding the throng and preale of people to encrease about them, in such sort as that they coulde not well passe further, nor be conuenientlie hearde of them all as they desired: therefore they gotte them vnto an emptie cart which stood there, wherein they stood not onelie vpon the wordes of their former cry, but they reading something out of a paper, went moze particularlie ouer the office and calling of Hacker,



Hacker, how he represented Christ, by partaking a part of his glorified body, by his principal spirit, and by the office of securing the god from the bad with his fan in his hand, and of establishing the Gospel in Europe, &c. telling also the people, where they saw him, where he laie and remained: that they were two Prophets, the one of Mercie, the other of Iudgement, sent, and controuersed called by God to assist him in this great worke, and were witnesses of these things, &c. And thereupon the one of them pronounced Mercie, great comfort, and unspeakable loves to all that should repent presently, bee obedient, and embrace this acceptable message, and oportunitie offered: And the other denounced terrible Iudgement if they repented not, which should even presently (also) fall vpon them, and especially vpon the City of London: affirming, that all that beleueed them not, were condemned bodie and soule: with other matter against her Maestie, and some of her honorable Primate Counsaile, which I ouerpasse. And whereas they had purposed to haue gone with the like Crie and Proclamation, through other the chiefe partes of the Citie, the pzease was so great, as that they were forced to go into a Tauerne in Cheape, at the Signe of the Permayde, the rather because a Gentleman, beeing of his acquaintance, plucked at Coppinger, whiles hee was in the Carte, and blamed him for his demeanour and speeches. From whence they went by back lanes, but yet crying (as afore) Repent England, repent, &c. to VValkers house at Broken Wharfe. This strange accident being quicklie blowne through the citie, all was in a buzze, and a kind of astonishment, what to thinke of the matter: and being speedilie brought to hir maiesties eares, two of hir honorable counsaile were presently dispatched vnto London, to take further notice of the whole matter: so that about one of the clocke in the afternoone, Coppinger was sent for, whiles Hacker and Arthington were brought before those honorable counsellors and others at the Lords Palours to bee examined; whose examinations I ouerpasse: but in the ende it was thought good, that Hacker should come to triall; so that on the twentieth fire of Iulie, hee was brought from Bidelwell to the Sessions House, nere to Newgate, before the Lord Palour and other Iustices, where being arraigned, hee was by two seuerall inditements founde guiltie; as to haue bitered and spoken dyuers most false and traiterous words against her maestie, to haue razed and defaced her Maesties Armes; as also a certaine Picture of the Queenes Maestie, and did maliciouslie, and traiterouslie thrust an yron Instrument into that part of the sayde picture that did represent the Breast and heart of the Queenes Maestie, &c. He had Iudgement, and on the 28. of Iulie, he was brought from Newgate towards the place of execution after ten of the clocke in the morning, albeit by reason of the incredible multitude then in the streets, but especially in Cheape. All the waie that hee was dragged vpon the hurdle, hee continued his counterfeite baine; one while crying out, Ichouah, Messias; Ichouah, Messias: another while crying out thus, loke, loke, howe the heauens open wide, and the sonne of God cometh downe to deliuer me; when hee came vnder the gibbet (which reared hard by the Crosse in Cheape) hee was exhorted to aske God and the Queene forgiveness, and

Hacker arraigned.

Hacker hanged in Cheape.

to fall to his prayers: but he in stead thereof, set to railing, and cursing of the Q. maiesty, most villanously, and then began a most blasphemous and execrable prayer, against the diuine maiesty God. They had much adoe to get him by the ladder, where he was hanged and after bowelled and quartered.

Coppinger dis-  
ed in Wyndwell.

On the next day, being the nine and twentieth of Iulie, Edmond Coppinger, hauing wilfullie abstained from meate ( as was sayde ) dyed in Wyndwell. And Arthington longe after in the Counter in Woodstrete, was reserued in hope of perfecte repentaunce. More of this pee male read in a Booke extaunte, intituled, Conspiracie of pretended Reformation, &c.

Earle of Essex  
sent into  
France.

In the moneth of Iulie, Robert Earle of Essex, Vassier of her maiesties horse, a yong nobleman of great valour and exptation, was by her highnesse appointed to haue the charge & conduction, as her maiesties lieutenant general, of 4000. footemen, and some number of horsemen, and pioners, sent into France, for the assistance of the French king, against the confederates of the league. In which expedition his Lordship was also honorably accompanied, with sundrie Gentlemen and soldiers that voluntarie followed him in this service. During the time that the Earle intended these French Warres, Walter Deuereux a yong gentleman, and forward in partiall actions; and brother to the earle, was slaine with a small shot before Roane in Normandie.

Proclamation  
against Iesu-  
ites and Semi-  
naries.

In the moneth of October, a proclamation was published, containing a declaration of the manifest troubles pretended against the crown and estate, by Seminaries and Iesuites, soborned by the pope and king of Spaine, to infect his maiesties subiects with the poison of their seditious religion, and vnder colour thereof, to traine them vnto their pretended treasons, for the betraying of this estate vnto the Spanishe tyranny and inuasion. For the better preventing of which imminent dangers, a speciall charge was thereby giuen vnto all her Maiesties officers and ministers, vigilantlie to looke vnto their seuerall charges of the forces appointed to be in a readines, for the necessary defence of the realme. And for the better repressing of the fraudulent attempts of those Iesuits, the very seducers of all treasons and rebellions, disguising themselves in their habit and apparell, sometimes like gentlemen, and sometimes like serving men, and so insinuating themselves into the families and seruices of noblemen, ladies, and gentlemen, to couer themselves from suspition and apprehension: It was by the saide proclamation prouided, that speciall commissioners shoulde bee appointed in all Shires, Cities, and portre Townes of this Realme, to inquire out this viperous broode, and such as male bee reconciled by their enchantmentes, thereby farther charging all manner of persons of whatsoeuer degree or condition, to retaine none into their houses, without due examination of their conditions, maner of life, & conformitie in the religion, and to keepe thereof a Register, to be shewed vnto the saide Commissioners, if they shall demaunde the same, vpon suspicion of the disloyaltie of any such persons.

Not long after the publishing of this proclamation, her maiesty addrested  
commissions

commissions vnder the great seale of England, generally into al parts and diuisions of the Realme, for the purposes aforesaide: The faithfull execution whereof, according to the orders prescribed, will in time discour and bnumaske these Iesuiticall hypocrites, and diminish the ouer great swarmes of them, spreading their secret poison into the hart and bowels of this politicall bodie, in dangering the sense, feeling, and life thereof.

In the moneth of October, to wit, on the 28. day, Bren O Royrke, a great man of Ireland, was arraigned at Westminster, where he was found guiltie of high treason, and after for the same executed at Tyborne on the 3. of November, as hereafter more at large insueth.

The articles contained in the inditement against Bren O Royrke, Lorde of a great territorie and countrey in Ireland, named Breny I Royrke, who accompted himselfe to haue descended of one of the Monarches that were in Ireland heretofore: at his arraignment at Westminster on S. Simon and Iudes day, Maister John Ly of Rathbide a gentleman out of Ireland, being assigned by the lordes of the councell and commissioners to enterpret betwixt the Judges, and the saide O Royrke, who did expounde and declare in Irishe the Articles ensuing, and also all speeches uttered by the Judges, and the saide O Royrke, to the good liking of all the saide Judges and others that were present.

That the saide Bren O Royrke sought the depriuation of his maiesty from her regal seat, the destruction of his person, and the overthrow of his realme of Ireland, at Downaher and other places in Ireland, the 2. of July, in the 28. yere of his maiesties reigne.

That the saide O Royrke stirred by and procured Alexander Mac Coonel, and Denell, Mac Coonel being enemies to her Maiestie and her saide Realme of Irelande: to raise forces against her Maiestie in Irelande, and after that rebelled and succoured them the second of August, the twentie eight of her Maiesties reigne.

That the saide O Royrke at Downaher aforesayde, caused the picture of a woman to bee made, setting to her Maiesties name, and caused it to bee tied to an horse tayle, and to bee drawne through the mire in derision of his maiestie. And after caused his Galliglasses to helpe the same in pecces with their eyes, uttering diuers traitorous and rebellious words against her maiestie.

That the saide O Royrke, when Sixtus the fift of that name was Pope, and Philip the Spanishe King had bent their forces against Englande, and after dispersed by her Maiesties fleet, till they came about Scotland, and so to Irelande, and arriuing there, the sayde O Royrke did entertaine, releue, and succour, at Downaher aforesaide, and other places, diuers of the saide Spaniards, which were employed to this intended inuasion. And after proclamation being giuen by the lord Deputy vpon paine of death, that no man should keepe anie of the saide Spaniards, but they to bee sent to his Lordeshippe, by a date limited: yet the sayde O Royrke kept the sayde Spaniards till the sayde Lorde Deputy went with her Maiesties Forces to the North, at

Commissions for inquisition to be made of suspected persons.

Bren O Royrke of Ireland arraigned.

which time, the saide O Royrke conueied them through the North with a Spanishe Frier, and an Irish Frier in their companie, and so to Spaine, without making the saide Lorde Deputie of Irelande acquainted therewith: and after receiued letters by the Frier from the saide King of Spaine, gratulatory for the entertainment he gaue to the saide Spaniards anno 30. of her maiesties raigne.

That the saide O Royrke procured and caused one Thady O Harte and his sect, with diuers others to enter into actuall rebellon against hir maiestie, so that the said Thady and others did burne Ballymote and other places, and after that done, the saide O Royrke did relieue and succor the saide traitors, that were entered into the said rebellon.

That the said O Royrke did enter and burne Ballingasse with diuers other villages in the county of Roscoman, and murdred O Kena at Copleier, Christopher Caddell, and diuers others of hir highnes loiall subiectes, and spoiled and carried away the praies of the said towne.

That the saide O Royrke did violentlie enter into the Towne of Knocke, Mullen, and diuers other villages in her maiesties realme of Irelande, in the barony of Tyrrell in the county of Sligo, and burned the saide Towne, and murdred one Chenem Wood a gentleman, with diuers others of her maiesties loiall subiectes within the said Barony of Tyrrell, and so continued his outrages, untill he was constrained by her Maiesties forces to fly into Scotland.

That the said O Royrke being fled into Scotland, did stirre by certaine Scots there to insurrection, and to ioinie with himselte their forces against hir maiestie in the Realme of Irelande. And also offered at Glasco unto the King of Scots, if he would maintaine him and suffer his subiects to go and ioinie with him, that he would bring the realme of Irelande to his subiection: contrarie to his duty, and in contempt of hir maiesties lawes, the 9. of March, anno 33. of hir maiesties raigne.

Also it did appere by the saide Bren O Royrke his speeches made in the towne, where he said, that if the Spaniards had first come into Irelande, as they did into Englande, that Irelande had bene their owne, and that hee woulde do them a peece of seruice: which speeches were sufficient proofe of his traitorous mind towards hir graces maiestie.

To conclude, the said O Royrke, after manie speeches by the Judge and him uttered, beeing at the barre, saide, that hee woulde not consent that anie inquest or Iurie shoulde passe vpon him, vnlesse hee might haue a weekes respite to be giuen him, and all those writings sent by William Fitz Williams, Ryfien, Bingham, and others in Irelande to be deliuered him, and a good man of lawe to be assigned vnto him, and the same man of lawe to be sworne to deale as truelie for him, as hee woulde do for the Queenes heire apparaunt, if hee were in his place. And besides this, that hee woulde haue the Queenes maiestie to bee one of the Iurie to passe on him. This his refusal to bee tryed was entered, at the request of her Maiesties learned Councell. And after entrie so made: the saide John Ly, beeing interpreter, was willed by the lord chiefe



chiese Justice to tell him that the law was, if hee woulde refuse to bee tried by twelve men, then iudgement must bee giuen according to the quality of those Articles of treason wherewith hee was charged, and being obstinate therein, was guiltie of his owne death, yet that notwithstanding, hee refused tryall. Then the saide Iohn Ly expounded vnto him his iudgement, which was as ensueth.

That the saide Bren O Royrke shoulde bee taken from thence to the place from whence hee came, there to be laide vpon an Hurdle, so to bee drawne to the place of execution, there to bee hanged vntill hee were halfe dead, then to bee let downe, and his members and bowels to bee taken out and bent in the fire, his heade to bee stricken off, his bodie to bee quartered, and his head and bodie to bee disposed at her Maiesties direction. This being expounded to him by the said Ly, he answered nothing, but said, if that were their will, let it be so.

Vpon Wednesdaye the 3. of November, Bren O Royrke was drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, his members and bowelles burned in the fire, his heart taken out, and holden vp by the hangman, naming it to be the archtraytors heart, and then did he cast the same into the fire, then was his heade stricken off, and his bodie quartered. But before this was done: the said O Royrke yet standing vpon the cart, Master Iohn Ly aforesaid, willed him in Gods behalfe to remember the filthy and odious treasons that hee committed against her maiestie, with many other good exhortations, to draw him to repentance, and to aske her maiestie and all the world forgiveness; and he to forgive all the world: yet he obstinately answered that he would not, but said, that if the Q. would haue granted him space, and all such writings, as the officers in Irelande, viz William Fitz Williams, and Dicke Bingham sent against him, to be giuen him to make answer to them, and also to giue him his life, that then he woulde aske her forgiveness, and from henceforth serue her truclie. And further saide, that hee did thinke little that the King of Scottes woulde haue sent him to the queene without safety and god assurance of his life, and remittall of his offences.

The said Iohn Ly did further bze and entreat the said O Royrke to repent, and to aske forgiveness (as afoze) and likewise to forgive, and that, that was the onely way for him to come to the heavenly kingdome; and also told him that all the standers by, requested and praised him so to do: he answered and willed them to make meanes for themselves to come to God, and that hee woulde make meanes for himselfe, but no more coulde bee had of him, but fell to his prayers. The said Ly told him againe, y he could not lawfully pray being so obstinate, hard hearted, and to die without repentance, but it would not be, and so the carte went from him. Also Meylerns the Lord archbishop of Cashell in Irelande being present, was willed by the standers by, to counsaile the said O Royrke, and the saide Archbshoppe requestling him to call to God, with other good exhortations: The sayde O Royrke turned vpon him and sayde, hee had moze neede to looke to himselfe, and that hee was neither here nor there.

Bren O Royrke  
executed at Ty-  
borne.

Ann. reg. 34.

Christopher  
Horton Lord  
Chancelor de-  
ceased.

The twentieth of November, Sir Christopher Horton knight, lord Chancellor of England, deceased at his house in Holborne, commonlie called Elie house, because it belongeth to the Bysshoppe of Elie. On the sixteenth of December, hee was honourable buried in Saint Pauls Church at London, one hundred poore people hauing gownes and cappes giuen them, going before him, of Gentlemen and yeomen, in gownes, cloakes, and coates, more than three hundred, with lords of the counsell, and other, besides foure score of the gard that followed, a most sumptuous monument is since for him raised in Pauls Church.

Order taken for  
the ensealing of  
writings in ab-  
sence of a Lord  
Chancelor.

After whose death, none being elected to succede him in that office and dignitie, her Maiestie committed the charge of the ensealing of all Writings with the great Seale of Englande (thereunto it shall bee requisite to haue the same annexed) vnto the Lord Burghley Lord Treasurer of England, the Lord Hunsdon Lord Chamberlaine of her highnes household, the Lord Cobham Lord Warden of the Cinque Portes, and the Lord Buckhurst, being all lords of her privy counsell. And for the administration of iustice, during the time of this vacancie of the office of the Lord Chancellor, her Maiestie likewise authorised by speciall commission, vnder the great Seale of Englande, Maister Clinche, and Maister Francis Gawdy, two of the Iustices of her bench, and Maister Windam, and Maister Piriam two of the Iustices of the Court of the Common Pleas, to sit as chiefe Judges for the determining of causes in the Court of the Chancery, and to continue their turnes successiue during the terme time, according to the order prescribed in their commission.

Seminaries &  
their abettors  
executed.

The 10. of December, 3. Seminary priests for being in this realme contrary to the statute, and 4. other, for relieuing them, were executed, two of them, to wit, a Seminary named Ironmonger, and Swichen Wels gentleman, in Greies Anne felde, on the North side of Holborne, Blakton and White Seminaries, and three other their abettors at Tisborne.

John L. Burke  
murdered.

The fourteenth of Januarie, Captaine Arnold Cosby an Irishman, did forceably sit vpon John Lord Burke (also an Irishman) neere to the Towne of Mansworth in the Countie of Surrey, and there vpon a diuelishe and malicious intent (for they had fallen out twelue monethes before, and fought at Greenwich, but were made friends) did wilfullie murder him there, giuing him one mortall wound with a Rapier, by meanes whereof, the saide Lord Burke fell downe, and after that the saide Arnold Cosby with a dagger gaue vnto the saide Lord Burke, one and twentie or more greuous and seuerall woundes, of the which saide great woundes, the foresaide Lord Burke died within two houres after, for the which fact, the saide Cosby was hanged on a gibbet neere vnto Mansworth, where hee had committed the saide murder on the 27. of Januarie.

Arnold Cosby  
hanged.

Tho. Pormorte  
executed.

The eightene of Februarie, Thomas Pormorte was convicted of two seuerall high treasons, the one for being a Seminary Priest, and remaining in this Realme, and the other, for reconciling John Barwys Haberdasher against the forme of the statute. The sayde John Barwys was then likewise convicted

convicted of high treason, for being so reconciled, and also of felonie, for relieving the saide priest, against the forme of the statute.

Thomas Pormorte was executed in Paules churchyard, on the west ende towards Ludgate, on the 20. of February in the afternone.

In the moneth of Februarie, Sir Edmond Yorke knight, conducted over into France two thousand footmen well appointed, sent from hence for service of the French King, which bypon their arrivall, remained under the charge of Sir Roger Williams, being then generall of the English companies there.

Souldiers sent into France.

The 30. of March, certaine saylors, five in number were hanged on the Tower wharfe, for stealing of gunpowder, pertayning to her Maiesties service.

1592

Sailors executed on the tower wharfe.

The 27. of Aprill, Sir Iohn Parrat knight was arraigned at Westminster, found gilty of treason, & had iudgement in the same place on the 16. of June, He was returned to the tower, wherein he fell sicke and died.

Sir Iohn Parrat arraigned.

The fourth of Maie, a Tiltboate of Grauesend having in the same boate about the number of fortie persons was overrun by an hoy, so that the greater part of those people were drowned over against Greenwich, the court then being there.

Tiltboate drowned.

The fourth of June, Sir Iohn Puckering being made lord keeper of the great seale, rode to Westminster and was there swoyne.

Sir Jo. Puckering L. keeper.

The 21. of June, one Kerby a gentleman in countenance, but a cousoner in quality was set on the pillorie without Aldersgate, and lost one of his eares there, and on the 23. of June he was on the pillorie in cheape.

A cousoner on the pillorie.

In this month of June, a yong man was hanged in Smithfield, and a woman there burned, both for poysoning of her husband and a goldsmith.

A woman dyed in Smithfield for poysoning of her husband.

The merchant Taylers in London did this yere founde and builded faire almes houses of hycke and timber, covered with slate, upon a plot of ground nere unto East Smithfield by the Tower of London, which plot of ground was given to them by Richard Hils sometime master of that companie, as also one hundred loades of timber by Anthony Ratchiffe of that societie, alderman: In those almes houses, fouretene charitable men brethren of the saide merchant taylers yet living, haue placed fouretene poore aged sole women, which recceue everich of them of their founder, sixtene pence or better wkele, besides eight pound sixtene shillings yerele paid out of the common treasure of the said companie.

Almes houses founded by the merchant taylers.

The fourth of September, a woman was burnt in Smithfield, for poysoning of her husband.

A woman dyed in Smithfield.

Wednesday the first of September, the wind west and by south, as it had been for the space of two daies before herie boisterous, the river of Thames was made so boide of water, by forcing out the fresly, and keeping backe the fault, that men in divers places might go 200. paces over, and then sing a song to the land. A Collier on a mare, rode from the north side to the south, and backe againe on either side of London byldge, but not without perill of drowning both wales.

River of Thames high toid of water.

The terme kept  
at Hertford.

This yere Michaellmas terme was kept at Hertford in Hertford shire 20.  
miles from London, and began on *Crasina animarum*.

An. reg. 35.

The thirde of Nouember at night, deceased sir Iohn Parrat prisoner in the  
Tower of London.

A butchers  
daughter whip-  
ped for afir-  
ming her selfe  
to be a kings  
daughter.

The 13. of December, a certaine gentlewoman by the Councels com-  
mandement was whipped through the city of London, for affirming her selfe  
to be the daughter of Philip king of Spaine, as she had bene perswaded by  
some accounted southsayers, after proued liers, for she was knowne to be a  
butchers daughter in Caltechapec.

One hanged  
for murdering  
his master.  
Parliament.  
Barrow and  
Greenwood  
arraigned.

The 17. of February, a boy was hanged in Fen-church strate, for mur-  
dering of his master.

The 19. of February, the Parliament began at Westminster.

The 21. of March, Henry Barrow gentleman, Iohn Greenwood clarkie, Da-  
niell Studley girdeler, Saxio Billor gentleman, Robert Bowley fishmonger,  
were indited of felony at the Sessions hall without Newgate before the ma-  
ior, the two lordes chiefe Iudices of both benches, and sundry of the Iudges  
and other commissioners of Oyer and determiner: the salde Barrow and  
Greenwood for writing sundry seditious booke, tending to the slander of  
the Queene and state: Studley, Billor, and Bowley, for publishing and setting  
forth the same booke, and on the 23. they were all arraigned at Newgate,  
found guiltie, and had Iudgment. On the last of March Henry Barrow and Iohn  
Greenwood were brought to Tyborne in a carry, and there fastened to the  
gallowes, but being slaine and returned for the time, they were there hanged  
on the 6. of Aprill.

1593

Parliament  
broke vp.

The 10. of Aprill the Parliament brake vp at Westminster, for the time,  
wherein was granted thre subsidies of 2.s. 8.d. the pound goods, and foure s.  
lands, and 6. sixtines.

Diction of her  
maiesty to the  
parliament  
men.

Oye Lordes, and you my commons of the lower house, were it not that I  
know no speeches presented by any other, nor wordes deliuered by any substi-  
tute, can be so deeply impzinted into your mindes, as spoken by her selfe,  
whose order and direction was but foliowed and deliuered by the lord Keeper,  
I could be content to spare speech, whom silence better pleaseth then to speake:  
And because much hath been spoken, much lesse shall I nowe neede to speake  
of mine owne indisposition of nature, and small desire in private respect to  
be enriched by you present, which wordes shall not witnesse, but deeds by your  
former experience, hauing expended what I haue receiued, to the preseruati-  
on and defence of your selues. And thus much I dare assure you, that the  
care which you haue taken for my selfe, your selues, and the common weale,  
that you do it for a Prince, that neither careth for any particular, no, nor for  
life, but so to liue, that you may flourish. For before God and in my conscie-  
ence, I protest, whereunto many that know me can witnesse, that the great  
expeience of my time, the labour of my studies, and the traueil of my thoughts,  
chiefely tendeth to Gods seruice, and the government of you to liue in a flour-  
ishing and happy estate, God forbid you should knowe anie change thereof.  
Many worse princes than my selfe you haue had, but one only excepted (whom



In the duty of a childe I must regard, and to whom I must acknowledge my selfe farre shallow) I may truly say, none whose loue and care can be greater, or whose desire can be more to fathome deeper for pzeuation of danger to come, or resisting of dangers, if attempted towarde you, shall euer bee found to errede my selfe: In loue I say towarde you, and care ouer you. You haue heard in the beginning of this parliament, some doubt of danger, more then I would haue you to feare: Doubt only should be, if not pzeuented; and feare, if not pzeuided for. For mine owne part, I protest I neuer feared, and what feare was, my heart neuer knew. For I knew that my cause was euer iust, and it stode vpon a sure foundation, that I should not faile God assisting the quarrell of the rightwise, and such as are but to defende. Glad mought that king my greatest enemy be, to haue the like advantage against me, if in truth for his owne actions, he might truly so say. For in ambition of glorie I haue neuer sought to enlarge the territories of my land; nor thereby to aduance you. If I haue vled my forces to keepe the enemy farre from you, I haue thereby thought your safetie the greater, and your danger the lesse. If you suppose I haue done it in feare of the enemy, or in doubt of his renenge, I know his power is not to pzeuaile, nor his force to feare me, hauing so mighty a protector on my side. I would not haue you returning into the countrey to strike a feare into the mindes of any of my people, as some vpon the arrivall of the late nauie, dwelling in a Paritane shire fled for feare farther into the middle of the land, but if I had bene by him, surely I would haue taught him to haue shewed so base and cowardly a conrage, for euen our enemies holde our nature resolute and valiant, which though they will not outwardly shew, they inwardly knowe. And whensoever the malice of our enemies shall cause them to make any attempt against vs, I doubt not but we shall haue the greater glorie, God fighting for those which truly serue him, with the iustnesse of their quarrell. Only let them know to be wary, and not to be found sleeping, so shall they shew their owne valour, and frustrate the hopes of the enemies. And thus farre let me charge you that be lieutenants, and you that in shires haue the leading of the most choise and seruicable men vnder your bands that you see them sufficiently exercised and traped, so oft as neede shall require, that the wantes of any of them be supplied by others to be placed in their rowmes, and that all decaies of armour be presently repaired and made sufficient. The enemy finding your care such, and so great to pzeuide for him, will with the lesse courage thinke of your disturbance. To conclude, that I may shewe my thankefull minde, in my confidence neuer hauing ben willing to draw from you, but what you should contentedly giue, and that for your selues, and hauing my head by peres, and experience better staied, whatsoeuer any shall suppose to the contrarie, therin that you maie easily beleue that I will enter into any idle expences. Now must I giue you all as great thanks, as euer priuce gaue to louing subiects, assuring you that my care for you, hath, and shall errede all my other cares of worldly causes, what soeuer.

About the same time Penry a Welchman, a pñcipal penner and publisher

Penry apper-  
bended & hanged,  
of

The terme kept  
at Hertford.

This yere Michaelmas terme was kept at Hertford in Hertfordshire 20.  
miles from London, and began on *Crastina an:marum*.

An. reg. 35.

The third of Nouember at night, deceased sir John Parrat prisoner in the  
Tower of London.

A butchers  
daughter whipp-  
ped for asser-  
ting her selfe  
to be a kings  
daughter.

The 13. of December, a certaine gentlewoman by the Councels com-  
mandement was whipped through the city of London, for affirming her selfe  
to be the daughter of Philip king of Spaine, as she had bene perswaded by  
some accounted southsaycers, after proued liars, for she was knowne to be a  
butchers daughter in East cheape.

One hanged  
for murdering  
his master.  
Parliament.

The 17. of February, a boy was hanged in Fen-church strate, for mur-  
dering of his master.

Barrow and  
Greenwood  
arraigned.

The 19. of February, the Parliament began at Westminster.

The 21. of March, Henry Barrow gentleman, John Greenwood clarke, Da-  
niell Studley girdeler, Saxio Billot gentleman, Robert Bowley fishmonger,  
were indited of felony at the Sessions hall without Newgate before the ma-  
ior, the two lordes chiefe Iudices of both benches, and sundry of the Iudges  
and other commissioners of Oyer and determiner: the salde Barrow and  
Greenwood for writing sundry seditious booke, tending to the slander of  
the Quene and state: Studley, Billot, and Bowley, for publishing and setting  
forth the same booke, and on the 23. they were all arraigned at Newgate,  
found guiltie, and had iudgment. On the last of March Henry Barrow and John  
Greenwood were brought to Tyborne in a carry, and there fastened to the  
gallowes, but being slaine and returned for the time, they were there hanged  
on the 6. of Aprill.

1593

Parliament  
broke vp.

The 10. of Aprill the Parliament brake vp at Westminster, for the time,  
wherein was granted thre subsidies of 2.s. 8.d. the pound goods, and foure s.  
lands, and 6. shillenes.

Oration of her  
maiesty to the  
parliament  
men.

My Lordes, and you my commons of the lower house, were it not that I  
know no speeches presented by any other, nor wordes deliuered by any substi-  
tute, can be so deeply imprinted into your mindes, as spoken by her selfe,  
whose order and direction was but foliowed and deliuered by the lord keeper,  
I could be content to spare speech, whom silence better pleaseth then to speake:  
And because much hath been spoken, much lesse shall I nowe neede to speake  
of mine owne disposition of nature, and small desire in priuate respect to  
be enriched by you present, which wordes shall not witness, but deeds by your  
former experience, hauing expended what I haue receiued, to the preseruation  
and defence of your selues. And thus much I dare assure you, that the  
care which you haue taken for my selfe, your selues, and the common weale,  
that you do it for a Prince, that neither careth for any particular, no, nor for  
life, but so to liue, that you may flourish. For before God and in my conscie-  
ence, I profess, whereunto many that know me can witnesse, that the great  
experience of my time, the labour of my studies, and the trauell of my thoughts,  
chiefely tendeth to Gods seruice, and the gouernment of you to liue in a flour-  
ishing and happy estate, God forbid you should knowe any change thereof.  
Many wiser princes than my selfe you haue had, but one only excepted (whom

in

In the duty of a child I must regard, and to whom I must acknowledge my selfe farre shallov) I may truly say, none whose loue and care can be greater, or whose desire can be more to fathome deeper for pꝛeuention of danger to come, or resisting of dangers, if attempted towarde you, shall euer bee found to excede my selfe: In loue I say towarde you, and care ouer you. You haue heard in the beginning of this parliament, some doubt of danger, more then I would haue you to feare: Doubt only should be, if not pꝛeuented; and feare, if not pꝛouided for. For mine owne part, I protest I neuer feared, and what feare was, my heart neuer knew. For I knew that my cause was euer iust, and it standeth vpon a sure foundation, that I should not faile God assisting the quarrell of the rightwise, and such as are but to defende. Glad mought that king my greatest enemy be, to haue the like aduantage against me, if in truth for his owne actions, he might truly so say. For in ambition of glorie I haue neuer sought to enlarge the territories of my land; nor thereby to aduance you. If I haue vsed my forces to keepe the enemy farre from you, I haue thereby thought your safetie the greater, and your danger the lesse. If you suppose I haue done it in feare of the enemy, or in doubt of his renenge, I know his power is not to pꝛeuaille, nor his force to feare me, hauing so mighty a protector on my side. I would not haue you returning into the countrey to strike a feare into the mindes of any of my people, as some vpon the arrivall of the late nauie, dwelling in a Maritane shire fled for feare farther into the middle of the land, but if I had bene by him, surely I would haue taught him to haue shewed so base and cowardly a contrage, for euen our enemies holde our nature resolute and valiant, which though they will not outwardly shew, they inwardly knowe. And whensoever the malice of our enemies shall cause them to make any attempt against vs, I doubt not but we shall haue the greater glorie, God fighting for those which truly serue him, with the iustnesse of their quarrell. Only let them know to be wary, and not to be found sleeping, so shall they shew their owne valour, and frustrate the hopes of the enemies. And thus farre let me charge you that be lieutenants, and you that in shires haue the leading of the most choyce and seruicable men vnder your bands that you see them sufficiently exercised and trayned, so oft as neede shall require, that the wantes of any of them be supplied by others to be placed in their rowmes, and that all decayes of armour be presently repaired and made sufficient. The enemy finding your care such, and so great to pꝛouide for him, will with the lesse courage thinke of your disturbance. To conclude, that I may shewe my thankfull minde, in my conscience neuer hauing ben willing to draw from you, but what you should contentedly giue, and that for your selues, and hauing my head by pꝛeres, and experience better staied, what sooner any shall suppose to the contrarie, then that you maie easily beleue that I will enter into any idle expences. Now must I giue you all as great thanks, as euer pꝛince gaue to louing subjects, assuring you that my care for you, hath, and shall excede all my other cares of worloly causes, what soener.

About the same time Penry a Welchman, a pꝛincipall penner and publisher

Penry appoynted  
handed & signed,  
of

of bookes, intituled Martin marre prelate, was apprehended at Stebenheth, by the Vicar there, and committed to prison. In the moneth of Maie, he was arraigned at the kings bench at Westminster, condemned of felonie, and after warde sodainly in an afternone, concealed from the Gaile of the kings bench to Saint Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, with a small audience of beholders.

Court of assise kept in Saint Georges field for feare of the plague.

The 19. of July, the court of assise for Surrey was holden and kept in S. Georges field, a tent being set vp for that purpose, many prisoners were there arraigned, condemned and had iudgement, nineteene were byent in the hand, but none executed. This assise was ended the same day, which was thought would haue bene thre daies worke, for the Iustices (all duties being paide) made haste alwaie for feare of being infected with the pestilence by repaire of people thither.

No Bartholmew faire at London.

This yere also, no Bartholmew faire was kept at London, for the auoyding of concourse of people, whereby the infection of the rest, or plague might haue increased, which was then verie hot in that citie, so that on the thre and twentieth of October, deceased sir William Roe then lord maior: The first of Nouember, William Elken alderman: The fift of December, sir Rowland Howard alderman, and the ninth of January, sir Wolstone Dixie alderman. The whole number deceased this yere in the citie, liberties, and suburbs absoyning, as well of the plague as of other diseases, from the nine and twentieth of December in the yere 1592. untill the twentieth of December 1593. was as followeth: within the wals of all diseases 8598. where of the plague was 5390. without the walles, and in the liberties 9295. of the plague 5385. so that within the Citie and liberties of all diseases died 17893. where of the plague was 10675.

A seminary executed.

The 18. of February, one named Harington a seminary priest, was by awn from Pelwgate to Tyborne, and there hanged, cut downe aline, strugled with the hangman, but was bowelled and quartered.

Rodericke Lopez arraigned.

The last of February, Rodericke Lopez a Portingale (as it was saide) professing physicke, was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, found guilty, and had iudgement as of high treason, for conspiring her maiesties destruction by poison.

An Irish man executed.

The first of March an Irish man was arraigned at Westminster, and on the next morning earlie hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Great windes ouerturned trees.

In this moneth of March was many great stormes of winde, which ouerturned trees, steeple, barns, houses, &c. namely in Worcester shire, in Beaulley forrest many Oakes were ouerturned. In Hoxton wood of the said shire, more then 1500. Oakes were ouerthrowen in one day, namely on the thurs day next before Palmesunday. In Stafford shire the steeple in Stafford towne was rent in pieces along through the midst, and throwen vppon the church, where with the said rose is broken, 1000 l. will not make it good. Houses and barnes were ouerthrowen in most places of those shires. In Canke wood more then 3000. trees were ouerthrowen, many steeple more or lesse about 50. in Stafford shire were perished, or blowne downe.

1594

The



The 11. of Aprill, a raine continued very soze more then 24. houres long Great raine.  
and withall, such a winde from the north, as pearced the wals of houses, were  
they neuer so strong.

The 14. of Aprill, a woman was bzent in Smithfield for marthering of her A woman bzent  
in Smithfield.  
husband.

The 16. of Aprill, Ferdinando Earle of Darby deceased at Latham, whose Ferdinando  
earle of Darby  
deceased.  
strange sickness and death, gathered by those who were present with him at the  
time thereof, was such as followeth: his diseases apparant, were vomiting of  
sower or rustie matter with bloud, the yealow faundes: melting of his fat,  
swelling and hardnesse of his spleene, a vehement hichcocke, and sower daies  
before he died, stopping of his water.

The causes of all his diseases were thought by the physicians, to be partly a  
surfet, and partly a most violent dissempering himselfe with vehement exer-  
cise, taken foure daies together in the Easter weeke.

The 5. of Aprill about fixe of the clocke at night he fell sicke at Louthly;  
where he vomited thrice.

The 6. he returned to Latham, and feeling his health to sinke more & more,  
sent to Chester for a doctor of physicke.

The 7. before the coming of the doctor, he had cast 7. times, the colour of  
his vomits was like to fontie or rustie yron; the substance verie grosse and  
fattie: the quantitie about seven pintes, the smell not without offence, his wa-  
ters were in colour, smell, and substance not unlike his vomites. The same  
night he took a glister to draine the course of the humors downeward, which  
wrought five times and gave some ease.

The 8. he took a gentle infusion of Rubarb and Spanna in a draught of chic-  
ken broth, which wrought very well nine times.

The 9. because of his continuall bleeding by mouth with his vomits, he was  
instantly intreated to be let bloud, to direct and stay the course thereof, but by  
no meanes he could be perswaded thereunto, wherefore that daie onely so-  
mentations, oyles and plaisters were outwardly applyed, to stay and comfort  
his stomacke.

The 10. he took one other glister, which wrought well five times.

The 11. he took one other purge which wrought with great ease 9. times  
upon the humors. The same night he took a little diascordium with the syrope  
of limons and scabions water, which somewhat staied his stomacke and gave  
him some rest.

The 12. because his vomiting continued still, hee was moued to take a  
vomit; that thereby the bottome of his stomacke might be scoured and clean-  
sed from so vile and lothsome matter therewith he was troubled: but by no  
perswasion he would yelde thereunto; notwithstanding the same daie hee  
took a medicine to procure sweat, but preuayled not, the very same night his  
water staide upon a sodaine, to the astonishment of all.

The thirtieth, all meanes were offered to prouoke water as glister  
drinckes, fomentations, oyles, pultises, plaisters and stirrings, but nothing  
happelle succeded.

The

The 14. and 15. was vsed an instrument called a Casteter, which being conuected into his bladder, was strongly sucked by the Chirargion but no water followed.

The 16. day about five of the clocke at night, he most deuoutly yielded his soule to God.

In all the time of his sickness, he often toke Bezars Stone, and Unico:nes hozne, his pulse was euer good, his strength indifferent, the number of his vomites were 52. and of his stools 29. his phyfitions were doctor Canon, doctor Ioynar, doctor Bate, doctor Cale.

A true report of such reasons and coniectures, as caused many learned men to suppose him to be bewitched.

The first of Aprill being the mondate before his hono<sup>r</sup> fell sicke, a woman offered vnto him a supplication, or petition, wherein her request was, that it would please him to giue, or assigne her a dwelling place nere vnto himselfe, that she might from time to time reueale vnto him such thinges with speede, which God reuealed vnto her for his god. This petition was thought vaine and therefore refused.

On the fourth of Aprill, he dreamed that his ladie was most dangerously sicke to death, and in his sleepe being sore troubled therewith, he wept, sodainly cried out, started from his bedde, called for helpe, sought about the chamber, betwixt sleeping and waking, but being fullie awaked was comforted, because he found her well: here we omit strange dreames, or distainctions of diuers graue men, which happened before or about the time of his sickness.

On the sixt of Aprill, in his chamber at Ironsley about five of the clocke at night, there appeared sodainly a tall man, with a gasly and threathing countenance, who twise or thise seemed to crosse him, as he was passing through the chamber, and when he came vnto the same part of the chamber where this shadow appeared, he presently fell sicke, and there vomited thise. After Go:borne one of his secretaries attending then vpon him sawe nothing, which more amazed him. The same night he dreamed that he was in fighting, and twise or thise stabbed to the heart, and also wounded in manie other places of his bodie.

The 10. of Aprill about midnight, was founde in his bed chamber by one master Halsall, an Image of ware with haire, like vnto the haire of his hono<sup>r</sup>s head, twisted through the belly thereof, from the nauell to the secrets: This Image was spotted, as the same master Halsall reported vnto master Smith, one of his secretaries, a daie before anie paine grew, and spots appeared vpon his sides and bellie. This Image was hastily cast into the fire by master Halsall, before it was viewed, because he thought by burning thereof, as he said, he should relieue his lord from witchcraft, and burne the witch who so much tormented his lord, but it fell out contrary to his loue and affection, for after the melting thereof, he more and more declined.

The 12. of Aprill, one Iane a witch demanded of master Goberne, whether his hono<sup>r</sup> felt no paine in the lower parts, and whether he made water as yet  
or

or no: and at that verie time notwithstanding all helpes, his water bitterlie stopped, and so remained till he died.

Sir Edward Filton, who with other Iustices examined certaine witches, reporteth, that one of them being bidden to saie the lords prayer, said it well, but being coniured, in the name of Iesus, that if she had bewitched his honor, she should not be able to saie the same, she could neuer repeate that petition, For-giue vs our trespasses, no not although it was repeated vnto her.

A homely woman, about the age of fiftie yeres, was found mumbling in a corner of his honors chamber, but what God knoweth. This wise woman (as they termed her) seemed often to ease his honor both of his vomiting and hickocke, but so it fell out, which was strange, that when so long as hee was eased, the woman her selfe was troubled most vehemently in the same manner, the matter which she vomited, being like also vnto that which passed from him. But at the last, when this woman was espied by one of the doctors tempering and blessing (after her manner) the iuice of certaine herbes, her pot where into she streined the iuice, was tumbled downe by the said doctor, and she rated out of the chamber, notwithstanding she did still saie that she would not cease to ease him, although she could not perfectly helpe him, because hee was so strongly bewitched. All physicke wrought verie well, yet had he none or little ease thereby, his diseases were many and his vomits, with stopping his water grievous, yet euer his pulse remained as good and perfect as euer it did in time of his best health, till one quarter of an houre before he died. He himselfe in all the time of his sicknesse cried out that the doctors laboured in vaine, because he was certainly bewitched. He fell twice into a traunce, not able to moue, hand, head, or foote, when he would haue taken physicke to doe him good. In the ende, he cried out often against all witches and witchcraft, reposing his onely hope of saluation vpon the merites of Christ Iesus his Saviour.

One excellent speech, can not be omitted amongst many in the time of his sicknesse, especially the day before he departed, at which time he desired one of his doctors, whom he especially loued, to perswade him no longer to liue, because (saith he) although out of thy loue, thou wouldest stirre vp hope of life, and doest imploie all thy wit, arte, and trauaile to that ende, yet knowing for a certaintie that I must now die, I pray thee cease, for I am resolved presentlie to die, and to take awaie with me onely one part of my armes, I meane the Eagles winges, so will I die swiftly into the bosome of Christ my onely sauour. And with that he sent for his Ladie, and gaue her his last Vale or farewell, desiring her to take away and loue his doctor, and also to giue him some ieuell, with his armes and name, that hee might be remembered: the which thing, immediatly after his death was most honorably performed. His spirituall physicians, were the bishop of Chester, and master Lee his chaplatine.

In the moneth of May, namely on the second day, came downe great water  
floods, by reason of sodaine showres of haile and raine that had fallen, Great water  
floods.  
which bare downe houses, yron milles, the prouision of coales prepared for  
the

the said milles, it bare awhite cattell, &c. in Suffex and Surrey: to the great losse of manie.

The second of May the new sergeants at law in number tenne, held their dinner or feast (as it hath bene tearmed) at the newe Temple in Flate-Streete.

B. of London  
deceased.

The third of June, deceased John Elmer bishop of London at Fulham, and on the 26. of June, was solemnly entered in his cathedrall Church of Saint Paule, befoze S. Thomas chappell.

Dorset, Lopez  
and other Por-  
tingales exe-  
cuted.

The 7. of June, Rodericke Lopez, with two other Portingales, were conuined from the Tower of London by the lieutenant, vnto the olde Swan, and from thence by water to Westminster, there being brought befoze the kings bench barre, the lieutenant was called to bring in his prisoners, which hee there deliuered, and was discharged of them. Then was it by the court declared vnto them, how they had bene charged with high treason against her maiestie, had bene tried, found guilty and had receiued iudgement; therefore it was demanded of them, what they could say for themselves, and should not suffer death accordingly: whereunto one of the Portingales began in his language to tell a long tale, but was willed to be short, which he answered could not be done without circumstance, &c. whereupon he was willed to holde his peace. The second answered by writing in his language, which being read by an interpreter, the Quenes attourney had faile, for it was not true. Rodericke Lopez in English made his submission, and affirmed hee neuer thought harme to her maiestie, &c. Then was called the marshall of the kings bench, and appearing, hee was charged with the prisoners, to conuaine them to the prison of the kings bench, and there to deliuer them to the Sheriffes of London, with a writte to see them executed: so were they conuained by water from Westminster to the bishoppe of Winchesteres staires in Southwarke, from thence to the kings bench, there laide on hurdles, and conuained by the Sheriffes of London ouer the brydge, by to Leaden hall, and so to Tyborne, and there hanged, cutte downe aliue, holden downe by strength of men, dismembred, bowelled, headed and quartered, their quarters set on the gates of the citie.

Ships sent to  
the seas by the  
citizens of Lon-  
don.

The 15. of July, by a common counsell in the Guild hall was granted (according to precept from her maiesty) that fife ships, and two pinnaces should be set forth to the seas at the charges of the citizens, the same to be readie with men, munition, and victuals for thre moneths, by the last of July. More, on the 17. of July the same common counsell according to another precept, granted 450. men on foote to be likewise set out by the citizens, towarde the charges whereof, a fiftene was sealed, and collected.

Souldiers set  
out by the Lon-  
doners.

Great raines.

This yere in the month of May, fell many great howyes of raine, but in the moneths of June and July, much more: for it commonly rained euery day, or night, till S. James day, and two daies after together most extreamly, all which, notwithstanding in the moneth of August there followed a faire harvest, but in the moneth of September fell great raines, which raised high waters, such as flated the carriages, and bare downe brydges, at Cambridge,

Brydges at  
Cambridge  
and at Ware  
borne downe.

Ware,



Ware, and else where, in many places. Also the price of graine grew to be such, as a strike or bushell of Rie was sold for five shillings, a bushell of wheat for five, seven, or eight shillings, &c. for still it rose in price, which dearth happened (after the common opinion) more by means of our much transporting, by our owne merchants for their private gaine, than through the unseasonableness of the weather passed.

Price of graine  
great, when  
God sends  
plenty.

This yere Bevis Bulmar Gentleman, set vpp an Engine at Boker-  
sharfe, thereby, from thence to conuay Chamis water vp into the Citie, suf-  
ficient to serue the whole west part thereof, being conuayed into mens houses  
by pipes of lead.

Chamis water  
conuayed into  
the citie of  
London.

The same gentleman on the 18. of October gaue vnto sir Richard Martine  
then lord Mayor of the city of London, and to the citie for euer, one cup of sil-  
uer with a hauer waighing 137. ounces of fine, better then the sterling, the sil-  
uer of which cup, with other, was by his means digged out of the mine in  
England, in the moneth of August last before passed.

A silver mine  
found in Eng-  
land.

The 30. of December a woman was bent in Smithfield, for coyning of  
money.

An. reg. 37.  
A woman bent

The same 30. day Doctor Fletcher Bishop of Worcester, in Pauls church  
was elected bishop of London.

D. Fletcher  
B. of London.

The 26. of Januarie, the Earle of Darby married the Earle of Orfords  
daughter at the court then at Cranewich, which marriage feast was there  
most royally kept.

Earle of Dar-  
by married.

The tenth of February two Souldiers or Captaines named Yorke and  
Williams, were executed at Tyborne.

Yorke & Will-  
iams executed.

The 20. of February, Southwell a Jesuit, that long time had laine prisoner  
in the Tower of London, was arraigned at the kings bench barre: he was  
condemned, and on the next morrow drawne from Petegate to Tyborne,  
and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

Southwell  
executed.

The 20. of Aprill being Easter day in the afternone about five of the clock,  
it thundered and lightened sore, with some raine, notwithstanding the wea-  
ther very colde, and so continued the rest of that moneth, and also the moneth  
of May.

1595  
Great thunder  
and lightning.

This yere by means of the late transporting of graine into foraine  
countries, the same was here growen to an excessive price, as in some pla-  
ces from foureteene shillings to foure markes the quarter, and more, as the  
poore did feele, for all thinges els, that soeuer was sustenance for man, was  
likewise raised without all conscience and reason. For remedie whereof,  
our merchants brought backe from Danke much Rie, and some wheate  
(not of the best) but passing deare, yet serued the turne in such extremitie,  
Some pzentifes and other yong people about the citie of London, being pri-  
ued of their victuals, more then they had bene accustomed, tooke from the  
market people in Southwarke, butter for their money, paying for the same  
but 3. d. the pound, whereas the owners would haue had 5. d. For the which dis-  
order, the said yong men, on the 27. of June were punished by whipping, set-  
ting on the pillozie and long imprisonment.

Dearth of corn  
& other victuals

Disordered  
youths pun-  
ished.

Coiners han-  
ged.

After the same time certaine men for coining were hanged: Also a seru-  
ner in Holborne was hanged, bowelled and quartered, for counterfeiting of a  
new paitent, and setting to the seale of an elde.

Thursd yowths  
on the tower hill  
apprehended.

The 29. of June, being Sunday in the afternoone, a number of unruly  
youths on the tower hill, being blamed by the warders of Tower street ward,  
threw at them stones, and drove them backe into Tower streete, being har-  
ned the reunto by sounding of a trumpet, but the trumpeter hauing been a sol-  
dier, and many other of that companie were taken by the Sherifs of London  
and sent to prison. About 7. of the clocke the same night, Sir John Spencer lord  
maior rode to the tower hill, attended by his officers and others, to see the hill  
cleared of all tumultuous persons, where, about the middle of the hill, some  
warders of the tower, and lieutenants men being there, tolde the maior, that  
the sword ought not in that place to be borne vp, and therefore two of the  
them catching hold of the sworde, some bickering there was, and the sworde  
bearer with other hurt and wounded: but the lord maior, by his wise and dis-  
crete pacification, as also by proclamation in her maiesties name, in short  
time, cleared the hill of all trouble, and rode backe, the sworde bearer bearing  
vp the sword before him.

Proclamation  
for staying of  
unlawfull as-  
semblies.

The Quenes maiestie being informed of the se, and sundry other disorders  
committed in & about her city of London, by unlawfull assemblies: And some  
attempting to rescue out of the hands of publike officers such as had bin law-  
fully arrested, whereby the peace had bin violated and broken: Her maiestie,  
for reformation the reof, by proclamation dated the 4. of July, straightly char-  
ged all her officers, both in the city, and places nere adioining in the countie  
of Middlesex, Kent, Surrey and Essex, that had authority to preserve the peace,  
and to punish offenders, more diligently, to the best of their powers, see to the  
suppression of all offenders against the peace, vpon paine to be not only re-  
moued from their offices, but to be also punished as persons maintaining or  
comforting such offenders. And because the late unlawfull assemblies & routs  
were compounded of sundry sorts of base people, some prentises, and some o-  
thers wandring, idle persons of condition Rogues & vagabonds, and some  
colouring their wandring by the name of souldiers, her maiesty, for better di-  
rection to her officers of Justice, and inquisition to be made, notified her plea-  
sure to her counsell, to prescribe orders to be published, and straightly obser-  
ued, and for that purpose a Prouost marshall with sufficient authority to ap-  
prehend all such as should not be readily reformed and corrected by the ordina-  
rie officers of Justice, and that without delay to execute vpon the gallowes by  
order of martiall law. The orders prescribed, were the same day also by pro-  
clamation published. Sir Th. Willford knight, was appointed prouost marshal  
for the time, he rode about, and through the City of London daily, with a num-  
ber of men on horsebacke, armed, with their cases of pistols, &c. This marshal  
apprehended many vagrant and idle people, brought them before the iustices,  
who committed them to diuers prisons. On the 22. of July were arraigned in  
the Guild hall of London 5. of those unruly youths that were apprehended on  
the Tower hill, they were condemned of high treason, had iudgement to be e-  
drawne,

Sir Thomas  
Willford pro-  
uost marshall  
for London.

Tumultuous  
youthes execu-  
ted on the tow-  
er hill.

by stone, hanged, and quartered, and on the 24. of the same moneth they were  
drowne from Newgate to the tower hill, and there erected accordingly.

In this time of dearth and scarcity of victuals, at London, an hens eg was Dearth of victuals.  
sold for a penny, or three eggs for two pence at the most, a pound of sweet butter  
for 7. d. and so the like of fish or flesh, exceeding measure in price, such was  
our sins deserving it.

The 17. of November, a day of great triumph, for the long and prosperous  
reigne of her maiestie, at London, the pulpet Crosse in Bowles churchyarde  
newe repaired, painted, and partly inclosed with a wall of bricke: Doctor  
Fletcher bishop of London preached there in praise of the queene, and praier for  
her maiestie, before the lord maior, Aldermen, and citizens in their best luxu-  
ries. Which sermon being ended, vpon the church leades the trumpets soun-  
ded, the cornets winded, and the quistrillers sung an antheme. On the steeple  
many lightes were burned: The tower shot off her ordinance, the belles were  
ringing, bonefiers made, &c.

*Ann. reg. 38.*

The 5. of February, two marshals were chosen and appointed in the citie  
of London, for the apprehending of vagrant and other disordered persons.

*Two marshals  
at London.*

The 20. of February five men for cosoning and counterfeiting of commis-  
sions, were set on the pillory in west Cheape, some of them had their eares na-  
iled and cut off, other that had before lost their eares, were nowe burnt in their  
cheekes and foreheads.

*Consoners set  
on the pillorie.*

This yere a certaine Pinnace was made by an house Carpenter, in the  
great green yard of the Leaden hal in London, it was of burthen about some  
5. tun: this was made to be taken a sunder, & set together with vices: the same  
was finished, and launched out of the Leaden hall on the 12. of March in the  
night, being drowne by strength of men, and of horses on a sled, with wheles  
made for that purpose, towards Aldgate, where against the parish church of S.  
Katherine Christs church, the wheles taking fier on the axletrees, were broken  
about one of the clocke in the morning, where it staid till the next night, and  
then was drowne to the Tower hill, where the same was calked and pitched.  
And on the 20. of March drowne and launched into the riuer of Thames at the  
water gate by the tower, and from thence by water drowne to Radcliffe, and  
there tackled.

*A pinnace made  
in the Leaden  
hall of London.*

The 9. of Aprill being good friday, in the afternone, the lord maior and alder-  
men of London being in Bowles church yard, hearing the sermon at Pauls  
crosse, were sodainlie called from thence, and forthwith by a precept from  
her maiestie and counsell, pressed 1000. men, which was done by 8. of the clocke  
the same night, and before the next morning they were purued of all maner  
of furniture for the wars, readie to haue gone towarde Douer, and so to the  
aide of the French in Calais against the Spaniards, but in the afternone of  
the same Saturday they were all discharged: notwithstanding on the 11. of  
Aprill being Easter day, about tenne of the clocke before none, came a newe  
charge, so that all men being in their parish Churches readie to haue receiued  
the Communion, the aldermen, their deputies, constables, and other officers,  
were saine to close by the Church doozes, till they had pressed so manie men to

*1595  
Soldiers pres-  
sed and dis-  
charged.*

*Soldiers  
pressed on Ea-  
ster day.*

Souldiers sent  
to Douer to  
haue bin trans-  
ported ouer  
to Caleis.

Lord keeper  
deceased.

A Declaration  
of causes why  
the Queene  
sent her nauy  
to the seas.

be souldiers, that by twelue of the clocke, they had in the whole Cittle 1000. men, and those, forthwith furnished of armour, weapons and all thinges necessarie, were for the most part that night, and the rest on the next morning sent awaie towarde Douer, as the like out of other partes of the Realme: but about a weeke after they returned backe againe, for the French had lost Caleis.

The last of Aprill at night, deceased Sir Iohn Puckering Lord Keeper of the great Seale, he died of a dead palsey, wherewith hee had bene taken on the five and twentieth of Aprill at night, and was buried at Westminster.

About this time was published a booke intituled, A declaration of the causes mouing the Quenes maiestie of England, to prepare and sende a Nauie to the seas, for the defence of her Realmes against the King of Spaines forces, to be published by the Generals of the saide Nauie, to the intent that it shall appeare to the world, that her maiestie armieth her Nauie onely to defende her selfe, and to offende her enemies, and not to offend ante other, that shall forbear to strengthen her enemy, but to vse them with all lawfull fauours.

To all Chyistian people, to whom this declaration shall come to be read, or heard gréeting. We Robert Earle of Essex, and Cwe, vicount Hereford, lord Ferrers of Chartley, Bourgcher and Louane, &c. and Charles lord Howard, baron of Effingham, lord high Admirall of England, &c. hauing the charge of a Royall nauie of ships, prepared and sent to the seas, by the most excellent Princeesse, the ladie Elizabeth, Queene of England, France and Ireland, &c. doe giue all men knowledge that the saide nauie vnder our charge is by her maiestie prepared and sent to serue on the seas, for defence of her maiesties realmes, dominions, and subiects, against such mightie forces, as we are aduertised from all partes of Chyistendome, to bee already prepared by the king of Spaine, and by further prouisions of men and ships daily sent for, are to be mightily increased, to invade her maiesties Realmes: as heretofore in the péere of our Lord 1588. was attempted (euen then there was a Treatie continued by both their Commissioners for a Peace) with a greater Army then euer before in his time was set to the seas: though by Gods godnes, and the valour and wisdome of her Noble and faithfull Subiects, the same was notably made frustrate. And because her Maiestie hath godd intelligence of perfite amitie with all Kings and Princes of Chyistendome, sauing with the King of Spaine, who hath this manie yeres most vniustly professed openly great enimitie by diuers actions, both against her Royall person, and her people, and Countries, without anye iust cause first giuen on her Maiesties part. Therefore we saide the Earle, and Lord Admirall, doe ascertaine all persons, that were are most straightly commanded by her excellent Maiestie to forbear from offending in this our Voyage of anye maner of persons of what Nation soeuer, except the saide Kings naturall Subiects, or such others borne Strangers, as shall giue to the saide King manifest ayde, with Men, Shippes, Artillerie, Munitiall, and other Warlike prouisions for inua-  
sion



tion of her Maestie. Which her Maesties commandement we meane dutifullie to obserue: and doe the refone giue weight charge to all persons that shall serue in this Spanie vnderneath vs. vpon paine of extreme punishment to obserue the same, &c.

R. Essex. C. Howard.

The 6. of Maie, sir Thomas Edgerton master of the Kolls, was made lord keeper, and had deliuered vnto him the great seale. The 11. he rode (accompanied of the nobilitie and others in great number) to Westminster, and there toke his place.

New Lord  
Keeper.

On Sundate the eight of August, great triumph was made at London, for the good successe of the two Generals, and compaigns in Spaine, the winning, sackiug, and burning of the famous towne of Cadiz, the ouerthrowe and burning of the Spanishe Spanie, and other accidents, as here followeth.

Triumph at  
London for  
good successe  
at Sea.

Anno Domini 1596. her Maestie sent a great flete to the seas consisting of 17. or 18. of her Royall shippes, and thre of the L. Admirals, and of Merchants shippes and men of warre, and victualers about 100. and to these the States added foure and twenty: so that the whole flete being assembled at Plimmoth, was about 150. saile.

An Abstract of  
the exp. dition  
to Cadiz 1596.  
Drawne out of  
Commentaries  
written at large  
thereof, by  
a Gentleman  
who was in the  
voyage.

This Royall flete was commanded by the most noble and fortunate in all his aduentures, the L. C. Howard (now Earle of Nottingham, high admirall of England in the Arke Royall, wherein, by Gods fauor & her maiesties auspices) he defeated the great Spanishe flet in the yere 1588. And by the right honorable and renowned lord, Robert D'Eureux earle of Essex and Cw, and master of her maiesties horse and ordnance: both jointly her maiesties Lieutenants generall for this expedition by sea and land; their authoritie and power being equall, sating that the one had the precedence at sea, the other at land: the Earle was shipped in a newe built and very warlike shippe called the Du repulse. The Vice admirall of the whole flete was the L. Thomas Howard second sonne to the duke of Suffolke in the Piranore. The Rere admirall was sir Walter Rawleigh Captaine of her maiesties garde and lieutenant of Cornwall in the Masspate, both new ships. The Admirall of the flet of the States was Ion van Duvenoord lord of Warmonot, in the Neptuneus a ship of 400. tonnes.

This whole flet was diuided by the L. L. Generals into fure squadrons, euerie one of these Chiefs aforesaid had their particular squadron, and Vice admirall. The first squadron was lead (as it was his right) by the lord high admirall of England: the second by the earle of Essex: the third by the lord Thomas Howard: the fourth by sir W. Rawleigh; the fift by Mounfier Du venoord: And strait commandement was giuen throughout all the flete that euerie shippe should waite vpon the Admirall of his squadron. The Vice admirals of these squadrons were, sir Robert Southwel (son in law to the lordes admirall of England) in the Lyon, to the lord Admirall: sir Francis Vere lord marshall in the Rainbow, to the earle of Essex: sir Robert Dudley son to the earle of Leicester in the Ponpareille, to the L. Th. Howard: Captaine Robert Crosbie in the Swiftsure, to sir Walter Rawleigh: and Ion Gerbranson in the B. of Holland, vice admirall of the Hollanders.

The fure squad.  
with their Ad-  
mirals and vice  
admiral.

The lords Generals while they lay at Plimmouth (to arme or furnish them- selues with euerie thing necessarie for so great an army) gouerned their charge with verie good iustice and martiall discipline: and for instance hereof briefly this I obserued: Two souldiers were hanged vpon the wo with pa- pers vpon them shewing their offences: vpon the one paper was written: For drawing his sword, and raising mutinie against his Commander. Vpon the other, For running away from his Colours.

His name was  
Hammon.

There was also a lieutenant that had taken firtie pounds to discharge men that were pressed in Wales, he was disarmed by proclamation, and ad- iudged to repay the money and banished the army.

A souldier also in a dutch regiment that had killed one of his companions, was by order of martiall law tied to the partle murdered, and so throwen both into the sea: And in fero afterward an English souldier was shotte to death by other souldiers, for killing a dutch sea Captaine. The lords Gene- rals at Plimmouth also published a declaration of his iust causes which moued her maiestie to set forth this flecte against the king of Spaine: admonishing also the subiects of all other princes and states, of their danger if they ayded the said king with shippes, victuals or munition, which was translated into Italian, French, Dutch and Spanish, and dispersed.

The souldiers were mustred at Plimmouth and trained every day by their Captaines, Colonels and Commanders. The chiefe Commanders and offi- cers of the army by land (besides the earle of Essex, and the lord admirall ioint Generals as aforesaid) were, sir Francis Vere lord marshall, sir John Wink- field Campmaster generall, sir Coniers Clifford sergeant maior, sir George Carew master of the ordinance, master Astley secretarie, captaine John Buck prouost marshall, captaine Oliuer Lambert quarter master. The Colonels of the regiments of the army were, the earle of Sussex, sir Christopher Blunt, sir Thomas Gerrat, sir Richard Winkfield, and sir Edward Winkfield of the vo- luntaries: besides the regiments of both the generals, whose lieutenants co- lonels were, sir Mathew Morgan, and sir Vill. Woodhouse, of equall ranke with colonels: and besides the regiments of the lord Marshall, of the Camp- master, of the Sergeant maior, and of the Dutch, commanded or to haue bene commanded by the Count Lodowicke, and all these regiments contai- ned not aboue 10000. men.

Th: Queenes  
Prayer.

And in this meane time of all these businesse at Plimmouth, the Queenes Maiestie (well considering that the lord of hostes blesteth the hostes and for- ces of godly Princes, and giveth victorie to the faithfull armies) made a ve- rie deuout prayer to Almighty God for the god successe of the flecte, and sent it by Captaine Ed. Conway to the Generals, commanding that it should be daily saide throughout all the flecte. And here also they receiued instructions for appointing their priuate counsell for this expedition, viz. the lord Thomas Howard, sir W. Rawleigh, sir Francis Vere, sir George Carew, and sir Coniers Clifford: and here they ordered that there should be two flags vsed to be hanged in the shrowdes of the lord Admirals shippe about counsell causes, the one a flagge of the armes of England with a warning piece to call the select coun- sell,

sell, and the other the flagge of S. George hanged in the same place to call the common counsell of all sea captaines and masters of ships, and besides that euerie shippe in the flæte should hang vpon their mizen parce a white pendant foure elles long,

And they sent to euerie shippe certaine instructions sealed vp, with strait commandement to the Captaine the reof not to open them untill such time as they were come to the South cape, vntlesse they hapned in the meane time to bee seuered from the flæte by storme, or other misfortune: and if they hapned to be taken by the enemy, then to hurle them so sealed ouer bord. But for bzenitie sake I passe ouer thus these and other like preparatiues to this journey: and come to the matter.

By these instructions the Bay of Cadiz was appointed their Rendezuous.

The first daie of June all the souldiers and mariners being embarked, and the winde comming to the North-west and by north, the lord Admirall of England being aboard the Arke, commanded his master gunner to shote off a peece to giue warning to all the flæte to weigh anchors and set sailes: which they did incontinent, and thus being vnder sayle (the lord Admirall leading) they sayled the same daie and night as farre as a plementoric in Cornewall called Dodmans point: but the winde scanting they were faine to retorne againe, the greater ships into the sound of Plimmouth, and the lesser ships into Causton bay by spectall cation of the lords Generals, least anie mariners should retorne againe to Plimmouth: which they also prevented by sending commandement to the maior & gouernor of Plimmouth that they should suffer no boates from the flæte to come ashore.

The next daie following being the 3. of June we set saile againe, and in a good houre, for from that time till wee came to Cadiz, we had faire weather and the winde prosperous: but we neuer came within sight of Spaine till we came to the cape of S. Vincent, and thereabout vpon the 18. daie of the same moneth the L. Admirall toke an Irish Barke that came but a daie or two before from Cadiz, of this Irish man the lord admirall enquired what forces were in Cadiz, what shipping in the Bay, what newes of the English flæte: to whom the Irish man answered, that in the towne were no forces more then ordinarie, but in the Bay there were 20. gallies and about 50. saile of ships, whereof foure or fve were of those Gallions of the kings which are called the twelue Apostles, & two great Gallies, three Fregates, three Renantillas or Argosies, two great Biskaines, the rest were merchants ships rich, and most of great burden, and the lading of these ships was munition, coine, wine, oyle, silkes, cloth of gold, gold lace, quicke silver and about 1500. quintals of ware, and diuers other rich merchandise: and some were bounde for the Indies, some for Britaine, some for Lisbonne, and some for other places: and that there was no speech (that he heard) of the comming of any English flæte thither. By this time the Earle of Essex was come aboard the Arke, and there was a flagge of the armes of Englnd hanged in the shroldres, and after consultation, and euery man returned to his owne shippe, the lords Generals hastened their course to Cadiz, and vpon the 20. day of this moneth being sundae early in the morning we came all to anchor within halfe a

They of Cadiz had aduertisement from Sp. that the day before we came thither, of 80. saile of English ships seen off of Lagos, as D. Pa. a. reported.

league of S. Sebastian a frerie at the west end of Cadiz.

The Generals attempted presently to land nere to this Frerie at a descent called the Colietta, they filled many boates and barges with souldiers, and leaders, but the weather was verie fowle, and the water went so high that two boates with some 80. souldiers armed sanke, whereof some were drowned, the others by helpe of other boates were saued, and set aboord their owne ships againe. This mischance did not happen as anie token that God was displeased with our enterpryse (as the sequell shewed) but that we mischose the daie attempting so great a worke vpon his daie of rest. And it was also a mercie of Almightie God: for we could not haue landed there without great difficulty and much losse, for besides that the place was strong of it selfe, the Spaniards had brought all the strength that they could to it.

The next daie being munday early in the morning, the Spanish flée which rode at our coming before the towne vnder the fortres and bulwarks thereof (by the aduise of Diego Soto master of the S. Phillip the Admirall ship) shot with the tide within the point of the maine land, and Castle of Puntall in the straites of the Bay: immediately after the English flée weighed, and came to ancho: nere the same place where the Spanish flée rode before, and there the fort S. Phillip and the rest plaide vpon our ships with their great ordinance, and the Gallies were very busie: but by the Generals commandement sir John Winkfield in the Vanguard hauing some other lesser shippes joined to him, took them to taske, and so laured them that they were glad to seeke to saue themselves; they crept by the shore, first to the Puntall, and from thence into the Bay, and so to the Bridge called Puente de Suaco, where striking their masses and by helpe of certaine engines vpon the Bridge (contrarie to the expectation of the Generals) they went rounde about the Ile of Leon, and came to Rota. But the eie and care of the lords generals was chiefly fixed vpon the Gallions and other great ships before mentioned: whereupon they resolved to send that most noble Gentleman and great sea Captaine the lord Thomas Howard to encounter with them in the Ponpareille, adioyning to him some selue ships of the Queenes (for the place was so narrow that hardly ten ships could come to fight:) The other that were employed in this enterpryse with the lord Thomas, were sir Walter Rawleigh, sir Robert Southwell, sir Francis Vere, captaine Robert Crosse (aboord whome the Earle of Sussex was) sir George Carew in the Mary rose, and Captaine Alexander Clifford in the Dreadnought and the Alcedo of London. And although it were agreed in counsell that the lords Generals should not hazard their shippes of greatest burthen and of most charge in those straites and shoales; yet the earle of Essex could not endure to be onely a looker on in so honorable an action, but he put in amongst the thickest of them, and fought very gallantly: which the lord Admirall seeing (and being not able to bring in his owne shippe) took his long boat and went presently aboord the Spanishe, & went into the fight also, taking with him his noble young sonne now the lord William Howard of Effingham, being at those young peres very desirous to seeke and share honor with the oldest captaines at all hazards.

The Battaille  
at sea.

The



This fight lasted till past none, and then the Gallions being cruelly rent and tozned, and so much slaughter in them, that the bloud gushed out at the scowp holes, some resolved to flie to Porto Real, some to burne their ships, some ran their ships aground: diuers Spaniards lepte into the water, whereof some swamme ahoze, some were drowned, some taken, some slaine. The L. Admirall beholding this miserable spectacle of a conquered fortune in these distressed Spaniards swimming about their ships and craving mercie, had compassion of them, and toke his boate and rewe by and downe amongst them forbidding these cruelties, & preventing the firing of the Spanish ships so much as was possible, which the Spaniards remaining aboard in this desperate beaten estate chiefe intended, and first they fired the S. Philip a ship of 1500. tunnes, by whose side a pinnace of Sir Robert Southwells was burned, but the men were saved. They fired also the S. Thomas, and the S. Juan (as Signior Fantonio affirmed to me in his house in Cadiz) but the other two Apostles S. Spatheu, and S. Andra ships of 1200. tunnes apiece were preserved from fire, and flats, and brought safe into England.

The battaille by sea being thus happily fought and victory obtained, the lords Generals (not willing to lose any opportunity) presently set in hand the landing of the souldiers, and in a verie little space there was such diligence vled, that the earle of Essex was aland nere the Puntall about a league from Cadiz, with 8000. foot and pikes: he was accompanied with the earle of Sussex, the earle Lodowike of Bassaw, the lord Harbert sonne and heyre to the earle of Worcester, the lord Bourke of Ireland, Sir Edw. Winkfield, Sir Robert Druery, Sir Thomas German, Sir Anthony Standen, master S. Laurence, master Alexander and master Will. Ratcliffes brothers, and diuers other gallant gentlemen aduenturers.

As soone as this lord Generall was landed he dispatched presently three colonels with their regiments to the Puente de Suazo, the Sergeant maior, and Sir Christopher Blunt, and Sir Thomas Gerard, with charge so to empelch the passage of that bridge that there might be no meanes left for any succours to come into the Isle of Leon to helpe the Spaniards, and to breake downe that engine, by helpe whereof the Gallies might passe, and also to surpris 02 force the Castle at the bridge fote called by the dutch Herods house: they did somewhat ruinate the bridge, and returned to Cadiz that same night. But the dutch (which presently after the Earles landing toke the fort at Puntall) toke also after ward that Castle of Leon at the bridge fote (as E. Meternus writeth) but I neuer heard so much before. The Earle of Essex hauing for his guide Captaine W. Morgan, marched apace with his army toward the towne, although in no hope to lodge within it that night: vpon the way he was encountered with 400. or 500. canalleroes or horsemen of Xeres, and 600. or 700. footmen, but they were without any great difficultie beaten backe, and ran into the towne, offering to shut the gates; but the Earle made such haste as he entered with his troups pell mell with them: and some made such shift to get into the towne that they climbed over the wals, shewing our men by that means another way to enter the towne if they could not haue got in at the gates, which

The Captaine of this Castle was Don Martin Chaydi, a Bishop.

they soon learned and put in practise: and by this the L. Admirall was landed with his battaile of some 12. or 15. hundred, and followed the earle with a very round march: hee was accompanied with all the chiefe commanders by sea, and capitaines of ships and their retinue, as the lord Thomas Howard, and sir Walter Rawleigh, who was not able to march so fast as the rest, by reason that he was hurt in one of his legs with a splinter in the fight with the Gallions. There were also in this march the young lord William Howard, sir Robert Southwell, sir Edward Hoby who bare the lord Admirals ensigne, master W. Paget, sir R. Leuson, master Philip Woodous, master John Townesend, master R. Weston, master Mathew Browne, capitaine Robert Mansell, master Miles Corbet, master George Bucke, master John Morgan, master Th. Woodous, and diuers other gentlemen aduenturers, and men of qualitie, whose names I doe not now remember.

When the lord Admirall came into the towne, he found the Earle of Essex skirmishing and fighting with the Spaniards, who fought and fled still before him, others threw downe stones from the battlements of their houses, which annoyed much our souldiers, and some were hurt thereby. But after that the forces of both the Generals were ioyned together, the fight and resistance of the Spaniards continued not long, but they fled into the Castle and into the Ciuada or towne house in the market place adioyning to the Castle, and into other their strong places. And here sir John Winkfield riding vpon a nagge vnarmed, hauing bene hurt before in the thigh was shot in the head from a lope in the Castle, whereof hee instantly died: yet before night the Ciuada was taken, and therein the Generals lodged that night, and they were masters of the whole towne (the castle and the fort S. Philip excepted) both which also in the morning were rendred the one to the earle of Essex, and the other to the lord Admirall, and their red ensignes displayed vpon the tops and wals of them. And the next night the earle lodged in the frierie of S. Francis: and the lord admirall in the house of Don N. Ruygoes whose sonne was capitaine of S. Philips fort, where he had 12. or four hundred pikes and shot, and eight faire brasse pieces of Ordnance, & wine and bread good plentie, as I my selfe sawe being at the taking in of this fort by the commandement of the Lord Admirall.

The conditions whereupon the Corregidor and the rest of the chiefe of the towne yielded were these: they should haue their liues saued, and onely their wearing clothes permitted them: all the rest of their goods and wealth should be spoyle and pillage to the souldiers, and should pay besides to the Generals for their ransom five score thousand ducates: and for the payment hereof, the Generals tooke forty of the chiefeest Regidores, Caualleroes, Cleargie men and merchants for Rehenes or Pledges, and brought them into England, and here kept them till the money was payde. And now proclamation was made that no English man should offer violence to any religious person, to any woman, or childe, or any other of the Spanish nation in Cadiz: and the Generals sent away boates, barges, and pinnaces, first with the Ladies and the religious, and then the men & all other of the inhabitants of Cadiz to Por-

to Santa Maria, excepting the Rehenes, and the prisoners of some English Captaines. The women were suffered by the Generals to weare so much apparell as they were able to beare upon them, and all their iewels: and because none of them should be spoiled by our ruder soldiers and mariners, the lord Generals themselves stood at the water gates and saw their safe imbarcking. The lord Admirall also let go the rich Bishop of Cusco, who was his prisoner without any rancome, onely he promised to send him a horse which he hath not yet performed. In this interim also the L. admirall appointed the rereadmirall to take some of the lesser of the Quéenes ships and merchants ships (that drew but little water for their more safetie) to go after the Spanish shippes which were fled to Porto Reale, and there either to take them, or to sinke or to fice them, if they would not yield. But while this was determined, offer was made of two millions to the earle of Essex for the saving & ransoming of those ships and their lading. The L. admirall would by no meanes agree that the ships should bee left to the Spaniards, nor ransomed: but onely the merchandice. But the Duke of Medina Sidonia Admirall of Spaine decided this controuersie: for he being then at Porto Santa Maria, and alwaies ill affected to them of Cadiz, gaue order that the next morning before daie the whole flete at Porto Reale should be fiered, which was put in execution: yet neuer the lesse our men made such haste thither that they recovered much merchandise and bluer's pieces of ordinance & other things, but none of the ships could be saued.

Thus this whole flete which was valued by some of the best of the Spaniards at tenne or twelue millions of ducates, was all either taken, sunke, or burned in a short space. In the towne of Cadiz were 1500. pipes of wine, 2000. chests of sugar, great store of rice, much coine and plate and rich furniture in their houses: The L. had also much rich merchandice in his Duainas or Warehouses, and a great deale of treasure in the castle, all which shoulde haue bene preserved (and all that soeuer else was the kings peculiar goods) for her maiesty by her right, if some had, or could haue performed the trust committed to them. But the losses which pinched the king most (his ships excepted) were the 1200. pieces of ordinance which were taken or sunke in his ships and his fortres, and armoz in his armorie to arme five or six thousand men. All which riches, treasure, munition, merchandice, viaduall, &c. of the kings and of his subjects there aboard the ships and in the towne, I heard valued by Pedro de Castilla the kings Indge of the contratation, and Don Juan de Soto a principall sea man, and Signior Fantonio the rich Florentine, three graue and well experienced men) to bee worth twenty millions of ducates at the least.

These things being thus happily atchieued, and sir John Winkfield vertehonorably buried in Santa Cruz the chiefe church of Cadiz, with all the funeral solemnities of warre, the drums and trumpets sounding dolefully, the shot bearing the noses of their pieces downward, the pikes traped, his body was borne by sir knights, the Generals threw their hand kerchiefs wet from their eyes into the graue, and at the instant the most part of all the shot great  
and

and small aboard and ashore were discharged.

The 27. day of June being Sunday, the **LL. Generals** with all the Chiefe and gentlemen of the army heard a sermon at **S. Francisco**; where after dinner they made a great many knights, even all almost that did deserue it, or affect it, or not neglect and refuse it (as some did;) this great Indulgence of fortune, and exceeding accesse of honoz to them in this atchieuement, made them not onely bountifull, but prodigall of honoz. But two berie woozthe Capitaines (which were hurt in the fights at the entring into the towne) were knighted before the towne was all won: **Sir Samuel Bagnol**, and **Sir Arthur Savage**. The rest which were knighted at the Frterie and afterward, were,

**Robert earle of Sussex**

**Count Ludouik of Nassau**

**Don Christoforo prince of Portugall**

**The L. Harbert Somerset**

**The L. Richard Bourke of Ireland**

**Sir William Howard, sonne of the  
lord Admirall**

**Sir Robert Dudley**

**Sir George D' Eureux**

**Sir Henry Neuill**

**Sir Edwin Rich**

**Sir Richard Leueson**

**Sir Anthony Astley**

**Sir Henry Lenard**

**Sir Horatio Vere**

**Sir Arthur Throckmorton**

**Sir Miles Corbet**

**Sir Edward Conway**

**Sir Oliuer Lambert**

**Sir Anthony Cooke**

**Sir Iohn Townesend**

**Sir Christopher Heydon**

**Sir Fr. Popham.**

**Sir Philip Woodous**

**Sir Alexander Clifford**

**Sir Maurice Barkley**

**Sir Charles Blount**

**Sir George Gifford**

**Sir Robert Crosse**

**Sir James Skydmore**

**Sir Vrien Leigh**

**Sir Iohn Lee**

**Sir Richard Weston**

**Sir Richard Wainman**

**Sir James Wootton**

**Sir Richard Rudall**

**Sir Robert Mansell**

**Sir William Mounson**

**Sir Iohn Boules**

**Sir Edw. Bowes**

**Sir Humf. Druell**

**Sir Amias Preston**

**Sir Robert Remington**

**Sir Alexander Ratcliffe**

**Sir Iohn Bucke**

**Sir Iohn Morgan**

**Sir Iohn Aldrige**

**Sir Will. Ashinden**

**Sir Mathew Browne**

**Sir Thomas Acton**

**Sir Thomas Gates**

**Sir Iohn Stafford**

**Sir Gylly Merike**

**Sir Thomas Smith**

**Sir Will. Pooley**

**Sir Thomas Palmer**

**Sir Robert Louell**

**Sir Iohn Gilbert**

**Sir William Haruy**

**Sir Iohn Gray**

**Sir Ion Van Duuenvoord**

**Sir Melchior Lebben**

**Sir Peter Regemorte**

**Sir N. Medkerke**

**Dutch.**

There was great dispute about the keeping of Cadix, and the opinions of all the able soldiers and seamen asked: but because it appeared not better it might certainly at all needes be relieved with men, munition, and victuals,



and for other causes best knownen to the Generals, it toke no effect.

The next day being munday, the L. Admirall went aboard, to set things in order in the flæte, and to make readie for a new enterprise: and by his example also to drawe the sea men and mariners to their shippes that were loth to come out of the towne.

About this time the L. Admirall receued (from his olde acquaintance, since 1588.) the duke of Medina Sidonia Admirall of Spaine, two very honorable answeres to two letters which hee had before writtten to him about the exchange of prisoners, Spanish for English in the Gallies: the Dukes answer was that he liked well of the motion, and would do in it so much as lay in him. But (he saide) that that charge was more particularly in the Adelantado of the Gallies, to whom he would write, which he performed so effectually, that within a day or two the Adelantado sent a principall Captaine to the L. Admirall, and he made a full agreement for the exchange of English prisoners in the Gallies for Spanish prisoners in our Hopes: and upon the fift of July following, about 40. of our English prisoners were deliuered aboard the Arke by the Gally called La fama, and promise for the rest which was afterward duly accomplished. This gally La fama wherof Don Iulian Hurtado was Captaine, came from Rota to the English flæte with a white flagge of safe conduct, according to the order of warre, but an ignorant sea Captaine made a shot at her as she passed by him, and hurt and killed thre men in her, whereat the lord admirall was much grieved, and greatly offended with the Captaine, and threatened to haue hanged him: but the Captaine of the Gally and Don Payo Patin one of the Rebenes, made earnest suite to the L. Admirall for his pardon, which they obtained.

The Duke of Medina Sidonia's letters to the L. Admirall.

The Earle of Essex staide all this while in the towne with the rest of the commanders & captaines and companies of the army by land, which he suffered not to be idle. Upon the 28. day the ordinance was taken from the walls, Castles and fortes. Upon the 30. day of June in the night hee made a rode into the Ile, and burned and rased and spoyled, all that mought serue the enemy to any strength or reliefe. The next day he set pioneers a worke to rase and besage the forts and castle in the towne. The first of July, the Calver of the Cusabua was battered downe. And lastly, upon the fourth of July set the whole towne on fire (the Churches excepted) and saw all his men embarked, & came aboard last. And the next day the whole flæte set saile, & steered their course to the westward: and in the mean time besides the negotiation (which I speake of before with the gallies) the 6. of July the Generals sent a Pinnace into Barbary with 40. slaves which had escaped out of the gallies & came to them for succour. And about this time sir Anthony Ashley was sent into Englands to make report to her maiestie what had passed hitherto, and for other secret affaires of the lords Generals.

From this time till we came to Faro, there was nothing done, but often meetings for consultation about their next enterprise, & how to get viuals & fresh water: saying that the Gallies in a calme caught by a flieboat of ours bound for Engl. In this course we passed first by Rota, and by the point of Chiptona

Chylona néere unto which lie the Rocks called the Salmedinas, and by the Duke of Medinas Tower, or Almadana for Tunny fishing: and by Arenas Cordas in the mouth of the Bay of S. Lucar, and by Aymont in Portugall, and then we doubled the cape S. Mary, and so came before Faro a principal towne of Algarua, where they resolved to land.

But first the Generals sent both their Lieutenants of their ships, sir Amias Preston, and sir Will. Mounson, and Captaine William Morgan, to discover the passage to the towne by the channel in their Pinnaces in the evening, and to view the place, to espie the forces, and to learne what flagge that was, which they saw at their comming before the towne, and to seeke for fresh water and victuals, and such like instructions. They brought answer the next morning, that the people were fled and had carried away their goods, and that they could not as yet finde any fresh water nor victuals: but yet for all this in the afternone the lords Generals landed with all their forces: but the L. Admirall being not well, and having little hope of any reliefe there for their wants, returned aboard his shippe taking sir Edward Winkfield with him, who was lame of a hurt which he had receiued at Cadiz in one of his legges, and indeede it was the earle of Essex his earnest desire that the L. admirall (seeing him so ill) should returne to his ship and take that valiant knight with him.

The Obedience  
of the Gallies.

Whilest the lord Admirall lay here at anchor, the flate of the Gallies came, and anchored close by the English flate: but the L. admirall sent a ship presently to them to command them in his name to depart from thence and goe further off: which commandement they obeyed as readily, as if the Admirall of Spaine had sent it, and I rather note this because I thinke it was the first commandement that they euer obeyed, being giuen them by an enemy upon their owne coasts.

The earle of Essex being landed (as I said before) and being desirous to doe some exploit vpon the Terra Firma of Spaine, being also prouoked hereunto the rather by the enemy (who made braue shewes of horse and foote vpon the coast all alongst as we sayled by) he marched with his army that night to Faro (being about some two leagues from the place where we landed) hee took the towne with ease, for the inhabitants had abandoned it and carried away most of their goods (as he was enformed before) there was in the Munnerie some stiffe left, and in the Bishops palace, and a Library of booke valued at 1000. markes: there was also in the towne some fruites, and wines, and a few hennes: and in the fort there was some pieces of great Ordnance, whereof one was the fairest and longest Culuerin which the king of Spaine had, as it was esteemed. And here the earle appointed Captaine Brea a valiant gentleman, and of very able body, to march into the Countrey with 800. souldiers of the strongest, chosen out of diuers bands: he marched some two or thre leagues and found a towne called Lothera which he took and bent, without any resistance, but he saw a farre off troupses of horse and foote, (but none) approached him: but if any of his souldiers stragled, or were left sick vpon the way (as many were) hee found them at his returne pittifully mangled, some with their hands chopt off, some had their nostrils slit, and others killed.

In this Iourney he got aboue a hundred Colwes and Dren, and some Swine, for victuall, and was brought by an old Portugall to a well of good fresh water, but small store: and so returned to Faro to the lord Generall, who after he had sacked and fiered the towne, the third day returned to the fleet.

And now being all aboord againe, the Generals with their counsell helde a new consultation what was else to be done, and how victuals and fresh water might be supplied: some had great desire to go for Lagos: but ere any thing was resolved, the fleet was past the cape S. Vincent where a strong Northerly winde took vs and forced vs to hale off into the sea some 80. leagues from the Cape, and towards the Isles of Azores: and here they called a counsell againe, and resolved to go for those Islands, there assuring themselves to haue plenty of fresh water and victuals, and there to lie for the Caraks and West Indian fleet, and to encounter with the 25. Spaniards men of warre, which lay at the Isles (as the Generals were aduertised.) But neither did this purpose hold, for the windes coming contrarie, they held a new consultation, and that was to beare in with the coast of Spaine and Portugal, and to search what shipping was in the harbours thereof as they passed. And this course was thought the best, and kept for the most part untill we came before the Groyne & Ferola. From thence master George Buck was dispatched by the lords Generals to her maiesty, to make relation of that which had passed in the army since the fleets departure from the Bay of Cadiz: and other particular busines of their Lordships for her maiesties seruice.

The LL. Generals thus being come before the Groyne the first of August, and finding no shipping there nor in Ferola, now lastly resolved to come for England, and the rather by reason of the generall wants of victuals and fresh water, and for that there were many sick men in the Masspite and in diuers other ships of the fleet, and for a great leake that was sprung in the Mount-guard, and for that (which moued their Lordships most of all) her maiesties commandement that they should stay forth but five months in this voyage. All which reasons duly considered, the lords generals now shaped their course directly for England, and vpon the 7. and 8. daies of August they arrived with their whole fleet in Plimouth safely thanks be giuen to Almighty God, who hath so blessed her maiesty and her ministers in all her designs and enterprises, with so much honor and good successe, as he hath made her the mirror of all princely felicitie in this world. Thus far of the expedition to Cadiz.

The first of August.

In this meane space, to witte, on the 15. of June, Richard Flercher Bishop of London deceased, at his palace in Paules church pard, and was buried in his Cathedral Church.

Bishoppe of London deceased.

The 22. of July, the right honorable Henry Cary Baron of Hunsdon, and L. Chamberlaine to the queene, deceased at Somerset house in Strand street, without Temple bar, and was honorably buried at Westminster.

Lord chamberlaine deceased.

About the same time also deceased the right honorable sir Francis Knoles, one of her Maiesties priuite Counsell.

The 15. of August betwene the houres of eight and nine of the clocke at night, a house of timber, lately set by very high, and not fullie finished, nere to

Open laine by fall of an house.

to

to Saint Brides Church in Fleetstreete, sodainly fell downe, and with it one old house adioyning, by the fall whereof the good man named Cox, with a man seruant and a childe were killed.

Duke of Bo-  
loine came into  
England.

The twentie nine of August, the Duke of Boloine being arrived in England, came to the Court then at Greenwich, and there by her Maiesties othe confirmed the league of amity and peace betwixt the two Realmes of England and France: and shortly after soldiers were sent ouer to aide the French, in their wars against the Spaniards.

The Earle of  
Shrewsburies  
ambassage into  
France.

Presently vpon the departure of the Duke of Bullion, the right honorable Gilbert Earle of Shrewsbury was sent into France to take the oth of Henry the fourth French king, for the confirmation of the saide League, as also to inuest the said king with the order of the Cartar: the manner whereof being carefullie obserued by M. William Segar then Somerset Herald, I haue set downe according vnto his owne description as followeth.

He departed from Douer on Thursday the 16. day of September 1596. and arrived at Dêpe in France the Thursday seauen night following, where both the Ambassadors, the right Honorable the Earle of Shrewsbury, and sir Anthony Myldmay Knight, were very nobly entertained, and feasted, the first night by the Commander of Dêpe, Mounſieur de Chaste, who was inuested the next day to dinner and requested by the Earle, and so during the vnhipping of their horse, and other their prouisions, their Lordships passed the time in hunting for two or three daies.

Monday the 27. following, the Earle set forward to Roane, the capitall Towne of Normandie, and was mette on the way by Mounſieur Feruagues, and his traine, who conducted his L. that night to the Castle of Clere, where he lodged.

Tuesday his L. proceeding on was encountered within two miles of the Citie of Roane, by the Duke Mountpencier, the kings Lieutenant thereof, and about 200. horse, of nobles and gentlemen his attendants, who bringing his Lordshippe to his lodging, after some ceremonies of honorable entertainment, toke his leaue: his Lordships lodging was in the market place, called Le March Veux, in a very faire house, furnished with rich hangings and tapits, three clothes of estate, and two standing beds.

The Wednesday seuenight following, being the fift of October, the king made his rottall entrie into Roane, in which entring sundrie messages passed betwene the King and the Ambassadors, praying them not to thinke the time long of his comming, for that he was to attende a preparation which the townes men had purposed for his welcome, having neuer bin in the citie before: the maner whereof, for it was verie princelie, and full of rare deuises, I haue thought good to insert.

In the suburbs of the towne on the farther side of the river, was newlie erected for the king a most statelie roome, made of plaister of Paris, where his highnes stode with his Nobilitie to beholde the companies, and severall Classes both of horse and foote, and to receiue the townes mens submissions as they passed, which was most humbly perfoymed by fire of everie company,

and



and of his Maiestie most grationlie accepted.

First the Order of the Friers Capuchins followed their Crosse, being of wood, vpon which a Crowne of Thornes and three great nayles were fixed, their habit was Russet, all bepatched, girt with hempen cordes, shirted with haire-cloth, and bare footed, wearing sandals onely. This order may haue but one habit for a man during his life, they seede standing, and sleepe sitting, they liue by almes, and are much esteemed of the people.

Secondly, the Gray Friers being Cordelers followed their Crosse of silver. This order haue a Librarie in their house, containing fire and fiftie paces in length, with three rowes of desks all along, replenished with manie excellent booke both of Philosophie, and the Fathers, the most parte Manuscript.

Large Librarie  
of booke in  
Roane.

Thirdly followed the Carmelites, and Celestins. Fourthly, the Jacobins. Fifthly, the Augustins. Then proceeded the Priests, and Chantries of the towne in their Surplices, singing, bearing 42. Crosses of silver, which was the last number of the parishes, and chappels in the towne, and euery crosse had a great banner of a Saint, richly painted thereon, besides two tapers of white ware in aulter candlesticks, borne by youths, and euery taper armed with an Escutcheon of the kings armes.

Then followed the Spint-masters of Poimandie, the merchants of the Viscounty of the Riuer, Receiueurs, Customers, Treasurers, Advocates, Procurators, and other officers of the palace.

Then came Batchelers, and Passers of Arte, Doctors of Physicke, Ciuill lawes, and Diuinitie. All these degrees were clothed in very faire and reuerent garments, of damaske, satten, and blacke beluet, long and large, and for the most part riding vpon mules, distinguished by virgers that made way before them.

Then followed in Gownes of purple cloth, and hoods of the same, with square cappes on their heads, the Officers and Councillers of the Chamber of Poimandie, in which is kept their high court of Chancerie, and Parliament.

Then came riding on mules to the number of forty in Scarlet, called De la robe rouge, being Judges, and Officers of estate, belonging to the saide Chamber.

After them toke place, the foure Presidents of Poimandie in Robes of scarlet, furred with Calaber, wearing on their heads great caps of maintenance of blacke beluet.

Then proceeded the fenerall bandes of the Towne, containing foure regiments of foote, and three coronets of horse, suted in greene, russet, and carnation satten, and beluet, garnished with silver lace, their hats, plumes, scarfes, and shoes white: the furniture of their muskets, fether stauces, and partisans, suitable to their colours, their ensignes, cornets, and standards all white, embelasoned with the kings armes, and enriched with his deuisse, which was a Roman H Crowned, betwene two branches (as I take it) the one an Olive, the other a Laurell, his motto, or word, *Hic dedit, Hic dabit vltra*.

After

After vpon great Confers rode for tie enfant d' Honeur oꝝ Henchmen, the properest and choicest young men of the towne, sued in greene Weluet horsemens coates, richlie laced with Siluer, their Caparisons and trappings answerable, their plumes, scarfs, and bootes white.

Then came all the Gallantes and young Gentlemen of the French court (coquetting and fetching vp their great horse) accompanied with diuers of the Nobilitie, as Barons, Vicountes, and Earles, the Knightes of the Saint Esprite were knowne by their blew Ribandes, and white Crosses hanging thereat.

The Chauncelloꝝ Mounseieur Cheuernay rode alone after his mace.

The Archbishop of Rheims, did ride betwene the Bishops of Anisw and Curenay.

Then marched the Kinges thre guardes after their Drummes and Fifes. The Swislers with shotte and pikes, the Scots and French with Halberds, the Kings Trumpets in horsemens coates of greene Weluet, and verie well mounted, then tooke they place, and sounded oftentimes, as they passed. Mounseieur Suraine P. of the ceremonies, and one of the Captaines of the garde rode together, after whome followed thre Heraultes, Anisw, Picardie, and Byptaine, inuessed in rich coates of Purple Weluet, embroidered with the Armes of France, each bearing his name in capitall letters of gold vpon the left manch.

Then followed two Sergeants of Armes, carrying maces before the person of the King, who that daie was mounted on a white Courser, his owne apparell plumes, and horses furniture white, wearing the order of the Saint Esprite at a boade blew Ribande about his necke. About his person were his Garde of Scottes, and certaine footemen in white. And after him followed the Duke de Neuers, Duke de Namours, Duke Joyeuse, and others.

Leaue wee the King going to the Citty, and let vs by the waie of preparation know how the same was ordered for his entertainment.

Some five oꝝ six daies before the King made his entrie, the Bailiffes of Roane commanded by sounde of Trumpet that all the streets through which his maiestie shoulde passe, shoulde be clenfed, sanded, and their signes taken downe, hanging forth their fairest coveringes, and Tapits at their Windows, and to crie Viue le Roy as hee passed. All which beeing in a readines, the Windows full of people of all degrees, the streets garded with certaine ensignes of muskets, and infinite numbers of common people in euer y quarter.

His Maiestie by this time was come to an bitter gate betweene the bridge and the Suburbs, which in the late warre had bene more than halfe ruind. This gate in two oꝝ thre daies with plaister of Paris they had halfe repaired, and the other halfe remained in ruin for explication of a deuise, which was thus. On the toppe of the Gate were certaine personages made of Plaister, some carrying of stones, some mortar, some heauing, some leveling, and al so liuelie, that they seemed to want nothing, but verie motion. Vpon the arche of the

the part repaired safe Apollo, with his lyze, vnder whome in goulden letters,  
was wrytten this prophesie.

*Henrico totum reparabitur aspiciere regnum.*

And ouer the Portall,

*Gallicarum urbium restitutorem,*

The king being past this gate, hee came to the first Gate of the Bridge,  
which was made of twelue columns about foureteene foote of height, the base  
bodie, Capitall, fræze, and Cornish, after the order Ionica. Ouer the Arche  
thereof in a table of embossed work safe a personage representing Porman-  
die, resting her backe against two Leopardes (the Armes of the Dutchie) in  
her left hande, she helde a Hart, her right hande she put forth to a figure, re-  
sembling the king, who seemed to raise her vp, vnder her was wrytten, Da  
miseræ dextram, and ouer her certaine drops distilling from the Heauens.  
Then in golden letters vnder the kings armes (which was embased with lola  
palmes) were these verses in French thus englished.

O doubled branches, for Conquerors ordaind,  
If Henries name, for Crownes hath you not gaind,  
Bowing downe your toppes, for to be wretched  
You cannot giue him your honors triumphant,  
No more then this streame, can yeeld water currant,  
Vnlesse from higher spring it be receiued.

The king hauing viewed the deuice, and read the verses, passing further  
vnder the rose or bault of the gate, ouer his head certaine cloudes opened,  
and there descended vpon him the similitude of the holie ghost, and an angell  
presented vnto him a sword, called the sword of peace, before the opening of  
which cloud, a voice was heard, as from God saying:

Heauenly mouing spirits, stable intelligences,  
Cleauue through, make way for this sprites descent,  
Presenting from one heauen, of thousand influences  
To one speciall monarke, one speciall present.

Henries mine annointed, he feares me, I him loue,  
Yeeld him due honor, the honor shall be mine:  
All kings are Gods, and as my selfe aboue,  
Dispose both good and bad, on earthly line.

**The Angell descending saith:**

Stay mighty monarke stay, the heauenly monarke sends  
To thee this sword of peace, with good and happy day:  
Take it, but in thy blisse, a modest heart intends,  
Himselfe who raiseth, fals; and Gods loue loseth aye.

He hath giuen thee the sword in fields victorious,  
And that which to no other could be giuen so:  
One more of peace did rest for thy hand glorious,  
Receiue it from aboue, for to command below.

Threefold great by these, thou maist thrice happy make,  
 France vnder thee to yeeld, thy scepter greatnes brings;  
 Pursue this good (therefore) the price for gracious take,  
 The which about thy browes, makes thousand laurels spring.

**The Angell ascending saith:**

Reioice yee heauens, since peace which yor hath lesie  
 Returned is on earth, to dwell with Henry,  
 Who for his neighbours good, of ioy berefte  
 Merits for his, that men one day be sory.

Earth do as much, tapet thy selfe with flowres  
 And sundry fruites, that henceforth may encrease,  
 All things without mans Art, or handy laboures:  
 For golden age is where there raigneth peace.

Then liue thrice happy, and content this prince,  
 Who chiefe of world, and peace, is made this day,  
 Of all the world heele make but one prouince,  
 If there be kings, these kings shall him obey.

After these wordes deliuered by the angell, the king proceeded ouer the  
 bzidge of Roane, which was garded by sixe or sixe hundred swissers, al in bright  
 armour, and Spanissh pikes, untill hee came to the other gate of the bzidge,  
 which entered into the towne, the building of which gate was after the order  
 rustique, rising thre degrees, hauing vpon the one corner of the first degree, a  
 bound with a Cupid riding on his backe, vnder which was written, *Dux A-*  
*mor est fidei.* And on the other corner, an Ore, with another Cupid, subseri-  
 bed, *Vires franantur Amore.* Vpon the corners of the second degree, stood foure  
 Tritons, or mare men with trydents in their hands, and aboue them vpon  
 the third degree, was erected a personage representing Roane, with a lambe  
 standing, and laying one foote vpon the knee of the figure, ouer which was  
 written, Nowe, it is to be vnderstood, the lambe is the armes of the Citie,  
 which in an Epigram made vnto the king was thus described.

O King your lambe before our wretched broile,  
 Was wont to beare vpon her humble backe  
 The golden fleece, like that of Colchos Ile,  
 But certaine newcome Argonauts (alacke)  
 Haue her oft times so barely cut and shorne,  
 That on her body poore, and all forlorne,  
 You scarce with paine, can find at all to pull  
 One simple fleece, or litle locke of wooll.

The King passing through this gate, the towne had prepared for him a Ca-  
 napie of purple beluet, richly embrodered with his armes, and device, and  
 flower delices strewed all ouer, which canapie was carried ouer him by fire  
 benchemen



henchemen apparelled in one sute. From thence he went by the stræte called La Rue du Pont, where was set vp a verie stately Pyramid, about 100. fote of height, on which was set forth in painting of Copper colours the labours of Hercules, on the toppe thereof was a great Sunne of golde, bearing the King crowned H vpon the pointes of his brames: the Spire of this Pyramid was carried from the Base, or Pedestall by foure Sphinxes gullt, and on the one side of the said Base, was wrytten Hercules Gallicus, and on the other side in letters of golde vpon sable, french verses thus Englished.

Hercules, and Henry, are semblable  
In vertues, wordes, and Actes,  
But that Hercules is in the fable,  
And Henry in the Factes.

Here the King turned downe the stræte called Ozou, where were set vpp two statues of plaister, vpon Antique Bases, both vndernamed in Graeke characters. The first called stable viatoie, helde in her one hand a Palme, and in the other an imperiall Crowne, and Scepter, treading vpon armour, and other martiall engines. The other figure was quicke sighted Iustice, holding a sword and ballance, and treading vnder her fete a number of visors, or maskes, signifying falsehoods, betwene them both was wrytten in golden letters vpon Azur, certaine french verses to this effect.

Kings which for honour, beare name of August  
(Or happy Cæsars) preferred by History,  
Acknowledge Henry more valiant and iust,  
Would beare no other but the name of Henry.

So the Kings Maestie riding through the stræte named Le Rue de la Viscount, at the stræts end opposite his coming forth into the high stræte, there was raised a doctike pillar about 20 fote of height, on the toppe whereof stood Fame, treading downe death, holding a crowned H in one hand, and a trumpet with a banneroll of France in the other, which when the kings trumpets in passing by sounded, Fame raised her trumpet to her mouth, and seemed to sound also, turning her selfe rounde about, which motion was most cunningly wrought by an engine belowe within the Base. And vpon the out side of the Base, leaning against the pedestall, sate Pallas, and Peace; treading vpon Enuie, who was set forth like a fute, with haire of Snakes, and a murdering knife in her hand:ouer these figures sate Historie wryting, and looking vp to Fame, vnder whom were wrytten the se Latin verses.

*Delicium historia, & fama sed vera canentis,  
Henricum reges exemplar habete futuri;  
Ut fuisse populos, & bello, & pace regatis.*

Of future kings example take by Henry,  
Histories delight, and Fames most true report,

That you may rule, and gouerne prosperously,  
Your people both in warre and peacefull sort.

Under these verses was painted a Lyon breathing forth Bees, but without either motto, or allusion.

The King passing on through the Diall gate, there was an Arboꝝ resembling Apollos temple curiously wrought of herbage, and fashioned like wreathed pillars; adioyning to which was a little wood, where on a wall was painted in prospect diuers Metamorphoses, as Daphne pursued by Apollo and turned to a Laurell: Pan embracing Siringa, as she became Pipes: Europa & Iupiter, & such like. In which Arboꝝ was excellent musique heard, both for voice, and instruments. All which being a while listened vnto by his maiestie, he proceeded to the strates end, turning to our Ladie church (called Possardame) where was erected a most magnificent Arch triumphall of plaister, after the order Corinthique, on the toppe whereof vpon a great Globe of the worlde, stood the figure of the King in his Royall Robes, supported by two personages, the one Prudentia who crowned him with a crowne of Starres, the other Fortitude, who offered him a scepter wreathed about with Laurell: before him sat Occasion, behinde him Clemencie; and round about him late armours, ensignes, drummes, trumpets, and other martiall instruments; at either corner sat a huge Lyon of golde supporting the armes of France and Nauarre, and on the one side of the gate stood Enuie, bound in chaines feeding of her own hart, and on the other side a man of armes sitting a sleape on a drummes head, by whom was written Securitie.ouer the Portall gate, under the Globe were written Latin verses thus translated.

To some for feare, to some for Clemencie,  
Are prizes giuen; but fourth King Henrie  
Excelling other kings in both, and both conioynde  
In him by wisdome, hath also adioynde,  
Vnto these three, a fourth (occasion)  
Which if it stand, with lawes probation,  
Hath sworne her selfe to be companion,  
Yoking worldes to France by king Borbonion.

Opposite to this Arch triumphall, vpon two Rustique pillars (distinguished about 20. fote asunder) stood two figures of plaister, the one of Saint Lewis in his kinglie Robes, holding a Scepter in one hand, and a verge in another; on the top whereof was a hand pointing to the king which stood on the Globe, with this verse underwritten. *Macte tua uirtute mea maxima sumps.* The personage on the other pillar, was Sambetha, one of the Sibils, who likewise pointed to the kings proposition, and presented to the beholders a table with this prophecie in Latin, Englished thus.

Sambetha I of Sibils chiefe, an Hebrew by ofspring,  
Glad Oracles bring to the French, and vnto thee O King,

The earth did neuer boast her selfe of any childe so much,  
As France (O Henry) shall reioice that thou their king art such.  
Peace being to the people brought a thousand armies strong,  
Dreadlesse shall march and follow farre thy battailes all along,  
Where Tagus, and Durias swell, with goodly golden sand,  
And where Idume for thy selfe holdes woorthy palmes in hand.  
Thou being Captaine, souldiers shall returne with laden spoiles  
Of Easterne and the Westerne wealths, and shall bring to their foiles,  
Triumphant signes, and trophies backe; O King their countrey wone,  
Fame shall eternall crownes thee giue, for that which thou hast done.  
Live thou therefore now all our yeeres, and Nestors longest date,  
Worlds loue, to people giuing lawes, made quiet by thy state.

The king going through this Arch Triumphall, he presently entred the cathedral church of Postredame, with all the ecclesiasticall pompe that might be, from whence, after certaine ceremonies which entertained him for a time, he returned more privately in his coach to his Court, being some times a Cardinals house, adioyning to Saint Owins Church, and thus the kings entrie ended with the day, being performed with great honoz, charge, and applaudments of all sorts of people.

Thursday the 7. of October, the right honorable LL. Embassadors had audience of the king, who most princely received, embraced, and welcommed them both, as also all other the Lordes, knightes, and Gentlemen their attendants.

Satterday the 9. of October the fidelitie or othe of confederation betwene the king and the Quenes maiestie of England was verie solemnly taken in the church of S. Owen, in the presence of the French nobility, lords spirituall, and temporall, who that day toke the right hand of the quire.

Act of fidelitie  
taken by the  
French king.

Sunday being the morrowe after, the order of the Garter was most royally performed in the saide Church, where both the Princes had their estates, and armes created. The Quenes Maiestie being Soueraigne of the order had that day the right hand of the quire, and so had the right honorable Earle, her maiesties Embassador his armes, style, and stall accordingly. Before her maiesties estate sate Master William Dethicke, Garter principall king of armes in his Robe of the Order. Before the Earle stood William Segar Somerset Berault. Next unto the Earle sate the lord Embassador Lieger. Then the lord Cromwell, the lord Rich, and all other knightes, and gentlemen, according to their qualitie. On the left hand sate the king, betwene the two Bishops of Antioiw, and Cureur. Before the kings estate sate his Chancelor Mounfier Cheuerny alone. And before him stood Anioiw, Picardy, and Britaine, heraulds of armes. In the stals sate the knightes of the Saint Esprit, who (as farre as I doe remembre) were these, Duke Montpensire, Duke de Neuers, Duke de Namours, the Prince de Vandemont, Duke Montmerancie Constable, and his brother the Admirall, Duke Loyeuse, Duke de Bullion, the Marshall de Rotz, and the Marshall Maignon.

The French  
king inured:  
with the order  
of the Garter.

All things being accomplished with much honor, the kings maiestie trusted and sworn, the vespers ended, and the benediction given by a bishop in his Pontificalibus, the king taking the Earle by the hand, returned as they came, attended upon by the nobility, who two, and two proceeded before the m. That night the king and the Earle supped together under one estate in the house of Duke Monpenier; there also was a generall feast for all the English.

Thursday being the 14. of October the king took the Earle into his coach, and went to the bridge of Roan, to see a sea fight upon the River, which was performed by two French shippes, against two supposed Spanish, and one Basiliian (large boates armed and prepared for that purpose, with muskets, pikes and Hargubuse a Crocke) where after one houres fight, the Basiliian was sunke, and the Spaniards forced to flee, by the French. This pastime was done by the townesmen, for the kings more delight.

On Fridaie the right honorable Earle with his attendants took leaue of the kings maiestie, and kissing his hand departed with great loue, honor, and reputation.

Saterday the sixteenth of October his lordshippe set forth of Roan, and came that night to Dépe, being accompanied with the commander thereof, Monsieur de Chaste, where he remained for conuenient passage, tenne daies after.

The 26. of October, the Quenes maiesties Shippes being come, his lordship embarked himselfe in the Admirall, and arrived at the Downes nere Dover the day next following.

Reiwardes giuen by the right honorable Gilbert Earle of Shrewsbury  
in his Embassage of France.

To Monsieur Suraine a Chaîne of gold of 100. pound.

To the chiefe Comptroller a Chaîne of 80. pound.

To the second Comptroller a Chaîne of 62. pound.

To the third Comptroller a Chaîne of 58. pound.

To Madam Matrigna a martiall woman, a Jewell of 20. pound.

To Monsieur Ciuille 100. crownes.

To the Cookes, and other Officers of the Kings, 600. crownes.

To the Musicians 20. pound.

To sir Henry Palmer Admirall of the Quenes Shippe in which his lordship went, a Jewell of the Quenes picture, and a ring sent to his Lady.

To the Mariners of the Quenes Shippes in way of largesse amongst them 150. pound.

Reiwardes giuen by the King.

To the Earle her Maiesties Embassador, a Jewell with a very rich Diamond the rein.

To master Garter principall of Armes, 500. crownes.

To Somerset Herald 200. crownes.

This yere, like as in the moneth of August, so in September, October,  
and



and Nouember, fell great raines, whereupon high waters ouerflowing the low grounds; wheate and other graines grew to great price, so that wheate meale was solde at London for ten shillings the bushell, Rie at five shillings, Ote meale at eight shillings the bushell, &c.

Great land wa-  
ters.

The 17. of Nouember, a day of great triumph for the long, prosperous, and triumphant raigne of her Maiesie, at the Court, the Earle of Cumberland Champion for the Quene, the Earles of Essex, Bedford, South-hampton, and Sussex, with other, ran at the tilt most brauely.

Ann. reg. 39.  
Great triumph  
for the prospe-  
rous raigne of  
her Maiesie.  
Tempest in the  
City of Willes

Sunday the fift of December, great numbers of people being assembled in the Cathedrall church of Wells, in Somersetshire, in the sermon time before none, a sodaine darknesse fell among them, a storme and tempest following, with lightning and thunder, such as ouerthrew to the ground them that were in the body of the church, all which church seemed to be on a light fire, a lothsome stench following, some stones were stricken out of the bell tower, the wheels and pions of the horologe were molten, and no timber bent; which tempest being ceased, and the people come to themselves, some of them were found to be marked with sundry figures in their bodies, and their garments not perished.

The moneths of December, January and Februarie continued colde and moiste, also March colde, but drie with extreme frosts, Aprill colde showres, Maie colde and drie, &c. by meane of which weathering, and provision for the ships at sea, all kinde of victuals kept at an high price, as well fish as flesh, white meate, and what soeuer.

1597

In the moneth of May, souldiers were pressed in the citie of London, to the number of 550. with all their furniture and charges of the Cittizens: these were for a long time daily trayned in the fields, out of which were picked 400. and the rest dismissed: These, and other the like picked men out of diuers shires, about the number of five thousand, most brauely furnished of all things necessary, (and some superfluitie, for no cost was spared of the voluntaries) were sent to Seas, and set from the west coastes of England, about the tenth of Iuly.

Souldiers  
trained.

This sommer arriued here an Orator from the King of Polonia, and had audience at the court then at Greenewich on the 25. of Iuly, whose Oration in Latin, beginning, *Serenissima princeps, domina Clementissima, &c.* was presently, most learnedly and eloquently answered by her maiesie, also in Latin; the effect whereof in English folloiweth.

Answer of her  
Maiesie to the  
Orator of the  
King of Po-  
land.

Oh, how was I deceiued: I looked for an embassage, but thou hast brought a complaint vnto me. I vnderstood by thy letters, that thou wert a Legate, but I finde thee a Herault, neuer in my life heard I such an Oration. I marvell truly, I marvell at so great, and such vnaccustomed boldnes in a publike assembly. Neither do I thinke, if the king were present, that he would say so much, but if peraduenture hee hath committed any such thing to thy charge (which surely I much doubt) this is the cause: That where the King is young, and not by blood, but by election, and newly elected, both not so perfectly vnderstand the cause of handling these businesses with other Princes, which either

his auncestors haue obserued with vs, or perhaps others will obserue, that afterward shall succede in his place. For thy part: Thou seemest to me, to haue read many booke, but not to haue come vnto the booke of Princes, but altogether to be ignorant what is conuenient amongst kings. For thou that makest often mention of the lawe of nature, and nations, know that this is the lawe of nature and nations, that when warre doth happen amongst princes, it is lawfull for the one of them to intercept the warlike helpes of the others, brought from any place, and to be ware lest they fall to the losse. This I say is the lawe of nature and nations. Whereas thou doest rehearse a newe affinitie with the house of Austria, which now thou makest so famous, forget not that there haue bene of the same house, that would haue bereft the kingdome of Polonia from thy king. But for the rest, which be not to be spoken of at this place, and time, because they are many, and to bee considered of, one after an other: Thou shalt expect that, which thou shalt vnderstand of some of my Councell, to whom I will assigne this matter. In the meane time farewell and be quiet.

In this moneth of August, the price of wheate in the markets at London, fell from thirteene shillings the bushell to ten shillings, & six pence, & from nine shillings to six shillings, and so to three shillings two pence, but then arose againe, to the late olde, and greatest price.

Embassado:  
from Den-  
marke.

This yeere also, Arnald Whitfield Chancelor of the Resolue in Denmarke Embassadour, and Christian Barnice his assistant, from the king of Denmarke, arrived here, and were lodged in Fenchurch streete: these had audience at the court then at Tibals in Essex, on the seventh of September, they made certain requests, which her Maiestie presently answered without pause, to every point of their embassage.

Embassado:  
.

The first, he required that where as there had remained a long league of amitie betwene the two Crownes of England, and Denmarke, both in the life of the late deceased king and his predecessors, that it might please her maiestie to confirme and continue the same to the king his master, now newly adopted and crowned.

Her Maiestie.

Her Maiestie granted thereunto, on condition the king his master would proue no worse then his progenitors had done, and in all Christian loue accepted thereof.

Embassado:  
.

His request was, that whereas there was great and continuall warres betwene her maiestie, and the king of Spaine, whereby much christian blood was shed, to the king his master, and all other christian kings great griefe, and to the great damage, and danger of Christendome, that it would please her maiestie, if in her wisdom she did see it conuenient to giue her consent, that the king his master might make a motion of peace, and if he found both parties thereto addicted, to procede further for the effecting thereof.

Her Maiestie.

Her Maiestie replying, said, she thought the king his master was too young to knowe the cause of the breach of the league betwene her maiestie and Spaine, and as it was not broken by her Royall consent, nor by anie of hers, so it should not bee sued, nor sought for by her maiestie, nor anie in her behalfe,

behalfe, for said she: Know now, and be it knowne to the king your master, and all princes christened, or heathen, that the Quene of England hath no make to craue peace, for I assure you (saide she) that I neuer endured one houre of feare, since my first comming to my kingdome, and subiects.

He was to desire, if it might stand to her maiesties god liking, open traf. *Embassadoy.*  
like with Spaine, and that the gods might not be staide on the narrow seas, as it hath heretofore bene.

Her Maiestie saide, if any his masters, or subiects gods so staied, it was her Maiestie. to her unknowne, but if he had any such just complaint, he should, the matter being made to her counsell knowne, haue such redresse, as should well content his master, and subiects.

He was to returne the Carter that her maiestie had bestowed vpon the *Embassadoy.*  
king lately deceased, as the manner of all foraine Princes is to doe.

Her Maiestie accepted thereof, but tolde him she was sozie to receiue it of her Maiestie him, for thereby she was put in minde of the losse of a most honorable brother and louing friend, and so that she were assured of his kings lone and friend. This in the like sort, she would hereafter to the king his master do the like fauour.

The Embassadour hauing his Audience the daie that her maiestie was *Embassadoy.*  
borne, toke thereby occasion to saie, that sithen it had pleased God, on that daie (which hee was informed was her maiesties birth daie) to glorifie the world with so gracions a creature, who had brought so great happinesse to the Realme, and the neighbour kingdomes, hee doubted not but that the king his master should in that happie daie, haue an happie answer of his request, &c.

I blame you not to expect a reasonable answer, and a sufficient, but you *Her Maiestie.*  
may thinke it a great miracle, that a childe borne at foure of the clocke this morning, should be able to answer so learned and wise a man as you are, sent from so great a Prince as you be, about so great & waighty affaires you speake of, and in an unknowne tong, by this of the clocke in the afternone.

And with him more prudent and gracions wordes she ended, and gaue him leaue to depart.

The 23. of October, the right honorable lord Charles Howard, lord high *Carle of Nottingham created.*  
Admirall of England, was created Carle of Nottingham at Westminster.

The 24. of October began the Parliament at Westminster: on the which *Parliament at Westminster.*  
daie diuers people were smothered, and crushed to death, passing betwixt White hall, and the Colledge church, to haue seene her maiestie, and nobilitie riding to the said parliament, sir Thomas Gerrard knight marshall, and his men, making way before them.

The 27. of October, her maiestie went by water to the parliament house and proroged the said parliament, till saturday the first of Nouember.

This yere against Christmasse, pepper was solde at London for eight shillings the pound, Reysons for six pence the pound, Gascoine wine, white and claret for two shillings eight pence the gallon. *Ann. reg. 40. Pepper eight shillings the pound.*

The 20. of December, being S. Thomas the parliament was put off till the 11. of January, on the which day they sate againe.

A great frost.

A great frost the ten first daies of January, so that the river of Thamis was at London very nere clozen and frozen ouer, but then it thawed.

Ambassadors into France.

Sir Robert Cecil principall secretary, M. Harbert master of the requests, sir George Carew lieutenant of the ordinance, & others prepared for their embassage into France, and set saile from Douer about the 19. of February.

Angare hanged for murdering of his father.

The 25. of January one named Ainger was hanged at Tyborne, for wilfully and secretly murdering of his owne father, a gentleman and counsellor of the law at Grales Inne, in his chamber there.

Parliament dissolved.

The ninth of February, the parliament hauing granted for defence of the realme three subsidies of 4. s. the pound lands, and 2. s. 8. d. the pound goods, and fire sixtienes; was dissolved and brake vp.

A cold spring after a cold winter.

In the month of March, the beginning thereof, three or foure daies together were hot, more then ordinary for that time of the yeare, but the residue of that month, and the next following very bitter cold, with great windes still west, with haile, snow, &c.

1598

Lightning and thunder  
Twisford towne burned.

The 26. of March in the afternone great lightning, thunder and haile, and the weather still cold.

On the thirde of Aprill, the faire and rich towne of Twisford towne in Deuonshire was bzent by casualltie of fire, beginning in a poore cottage, a woman there frying pancakes with strawe (for lacke of other felwell) the same fired the house, and so the towne, about one of the clocke in the afternone: the rage of which fire, lasting one houre and a halfe, consumed 409. houses, burned downe: one hundred and fifty thousand pound consumed in money, plate, merchandise, household stoffe, and houses, fifty persons, men, women, and children consumed: an almes house preserued with poore men therein, in the midst of the flames: 2000. pound weekly was bestowed there in the market on mundaies, in Deuonshire houses: 9000. people maintained by the cloathing of that towne, in Denon, Cornwall, and Somerset shires. It was the Earle of Deuonshires chiefe seate, where yet standeth his Castle, or court place, (has much of this towne, was certified to her maiestie, and was thought of many to be a iust punishment of God vpon that towne for the vniuersallnes of the rich, and small regard of the poore, which were daily seene to perish in the streets of that towne, for lacke of reliefe.

Our ambassadors returned out of France.

The first of May, sir Robert Cecil secretary, M. Harbert squire master of Requests, sir George Carew lieutenant of the ordinance, and other the ambassadors, returned out of France, and came to the Court.

Caleis returned to the French.

About the latter end of May, or beginning of June, Caleis & other towne in France, lately holden by the Spanish nation, were vpon compositions of peace, rendred to the French king.

A challenger of all men at defence was hanged.

The 10. of Iuly, 19. for felonie were hanged at Tyborne, and one pressed to death at Newgate. Also Iohn Barrese a Burgonian, and Spencer, that had lately come ouer, and chalenged all professors of that arte, was hanged with-out Newgate, for killing an officer of the Citie that had arrested him for debt,

such



such was his desperatenesse, and brought such rewarde as ought to bee mer- ample to other.

The 12. of July, one Jones, alias Buckley a Priest made beyonde the seas, hauing bene arraigned at the kings bench, and there condemned of trea- son for coming into this Realme, contrarie to a statute, was drawne to S. Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered, his head set vpon the pilsorie in Southwarke, his quarters in the high waies to wardes Newington, Lambheath, &c.

A Seminary  
priest executed  
at S. Thomas  
of Waterings.

On the 4. of August, sir William Cecill knight of the Order, lord Burghley, master of the wards and liberties, high treasurer of England, a famous coun- seller to the queenes maiesty all her raigne, and likewise had been to Edward the first, who for his singular wisdom was renowned throughout all Europe, departed this mortall life at his house by the Strand, his bodie was conueied to Westminster with solempne funerall, and from thence secretly to Stam- ford, and there buried amongst his auncestors.

Lord treasures  
deceased.

The fift of September, being Tuesday in the afternoone, lightening, and thunder at London, two great Crackeres, as it had bene the shooting of, great Ordinance, some men smitten at the Powderne by the Tower of Lon- don, and one man slaine at the byldgehouse in Southwarke ouer against the Tower of London.

Lightning and  
thunder.

The 2. of October, the earle of Cumberland came aland about Limehouse or Radcliffe besides London, being returned from the seas, and hauing a- mongst other valiant actes, made spoile of the strong towne, and Castle of S. Iohn de Porta-rico, &c.

Earle of Cum-  
berland return-  
ed from the  
sea.

The 9. of Nouember, Squire of Cheneuich was arraigned at Westmin- ster, condemned of high treason, and on the 13. drawne from the Tower to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

Squire execu-  
ted.

The 14. of Nouember, the queenes maiesty came to Westminster, and was there most royally receiued by the maior of London, aldermen and sheriffs in scarlet, and a great number of the wealthy Citizens in velvet coates, and chaines of gold, all on horsebacke, in the euening by torchlight.

In the moneth of December great frosts, the Thamis nigh ouer frozen at London brdge, but thawed about one weeke before Christmas, & began again to freeze on S. Iohns day the 27. and a great snow on the 28. so that the Tha- mis was againe nigh frozen as before, but on Pelopores day it thawed.

Ann. reg. 41.  
Great frosts.

In the beginning of the moneth of January, souldiers in Essex and di- uers other shires, as also in the City of London, were pressed, and furnished of al things necessary for the wars, were sent into the low Countries, there to remaine in seruice, and place of olde souldiers, from thence to be transported and sent into Ireland. All subsidy men in the city, were sessed at eight pence the pound goods or lands towards this charge.

Souldiers into  
the low coun-  
tries.

Also in this moneth great loanes of money were demanded, and granted by the citizens of London, besides all other charges, at that time.

In the month of Feb. about the 28. day, a fifteenth was granted and paid by the citizens of London, for the setting forth of more souldiers into Ireland.

Souldiers sent  
into Ireland.

The

1599  
Earle of Essex  
lieutenant ge-  
nerall, rode  
through the Ci-  
tie of London  
towards Ire-  
land.

The 27. of March, about two of the clocke in the afternone, the right hono-  
rable Robert earle of Essex, lieutenant generall, lord high marshall, &c. depar-  
ted from Seding laue, through Fenchurch street, Grace street, Cornhill,  
Cheape, &c. towards Fildon, Highgate, and rode that night to S. Albons, to-  
wards Ireland, he had a great traine of Noble men, and gentlemen, on horse  
backe before him, to accompany him on his iourney, his coaches followed  
him. He had also (by the pleasure of God) a great shoyre, or twaine, of raine,  
and haile, with some claps of thunder as he rode through the citie.

The months of March, Aprill, and May, cold & drie, but on Whit Sunday great  
raie, and high waters, the like of long time had not beene seene: the months  
of June, and July, hot and drie for the most part, thus much for weathering.

Ships prepa-  
red to the seas,  
and men train-  
ed for the  
warre, by the  
Londoners.

This yere in the moneth of August, the beginning thereof, politically pre-  
uenting danger that might be feared to happen, by occasion of some prepara-  
tion of shipping reported to haue bene made in Spaine, and to be intended  
to the annoyance of this estate: The Citizens of London were charged, with  
the furnishing and setting forth to the sea, of twelue ships, since encreased to  
fifteene. Also with 6000. men, and furniture for the warres, which men, with  
all speede, and as it were on a sodaine were made in a readinesse. Three thou-  
sand of them were daily trained in the field vnder Captaines, Citizens of the  
same city, from the first of August, &c. The other three thousand appointed to  
attend vpon her maiesties Royall person, were also likewise trained vnder  
Captaines, in braue furniture, for they were householders, of accompt, all  
which their charges, was partly borne by themselves, the residue perforce  
by subsidies, leuied of the citizens.

In this meane time, to witte on the first of August at night by commande-  
ment from her maiestie, the chaines were drawne oorthwart the strates and  
lanes of the City, and lanthorns with lights, of candles (eight in the pound)  
hanged out at euery mans doore, there to burne all the night, and so from night  
to night, vpon paine of death, and great watches kept in the strates, which  
hanging out of lights so continued, some foureteene nights or longer.

Horsemen and  
foote men train-  
ed in the shires  
and mustered  
at London.

In this meane space, many thousands of horsemen and foote men, cho-  
sen persons, well appointed for the warres, trained vpper in armour with  
braue liueries, vnder valsaunt Captaines, in diuers shires, were brought  
vpper to London, where they were lodged in the suburbs, townes, and villa-  
ges nere adioyning, from the eight of August, till the twentieth, or thre  
and twentieth: in which time the horsemen were shewed in Saint James fielde,  
the footemen trained in other grounds about the Citie, and then all discharged  
homewards, with charge to be alwaies readie at one houres warning. And  
so it followed that on the five and twentieth of August, being saturday at night,  
postes were sent after them, to recall the horsemen, presently to returne to  
London, with all speede possible: which charge they prepared to performe. But  
on monday following the saide postes, were likewise sent to staie them at  
home, or to returne them backe, whose forwarding in seruice of her maiestie  
was such, as the like hath not bene seene, or heard of, towards any prince of  
this realme, or other, to the great happinesse, and comfort of her Maiestie,  
whom

whom God (amongst many other blessings) hath blessed with so dutifull, loving, and obedient subiects.

The 26. of August being Sunday, before sixe of the clocke in the morning, by commandement from her maiestie, the 3000. souldiers, trained by by the citizens, were all in armour in the streets, attending on their Captaines till past 7. of the clocke, at which time, being thoroughly wet by a great shewre of raine, were sent home againe for that day.

On the next morrow being the 27. the other 3000. citizens, householders, and subsidie men, shewed on the piles ende, where they trained all that daie, and other daies following vnder their Captaines, also citizens, untill the 4. of September, and so ceased their training for that time, and what soeuer had bene feared, a good peace within this realme hath since followed, which God long time continue and increase amongst vs.

On Michaellmas eue, the right honorable Robert Earle of Essex, lieutenant generall, lord high marshall, &c. being returned out of Ireland, came to the Court at Ponsich, and spake with her maiestie.

The 13. of Nouember, the maiors, aldermen, and sheriffes of London, in scarlet, and the commons a great number of them in velvet coates, & chaines of golde, all on horsebacke, receiued the Quenes maiestie at Westminster by torch light.

After the 17. of Nouember was Iustings diuers daies at Westminster, with other triumphes. *An. reg. 42.*

Sunday the 23. of December, winde west and by south, boysterous and great, wherethrough the toppes of many chimneies were ouerthrowne, lead blowne off churches, trees, and barnes blowne downe, with also a tiltboate from London towardees Chawesend, lost against Woolwich, with 30. persons, men and women, whereof eleuen were saued. *Winde boisterous: Tiltboate and people drowned*

The 11. of January, Henry Adlington, a fencer was hanged without the barres of Alogate, for killing of a man there, and after hanged in chaines on the piles ende.

The 20. of January began a frost, that within one seuen night after the river of Thamis was nigh ouer frozen at London bridge. *Great frost.*

The 7. of February, the honorable Charles Blunt lord Mountjoy, hauing taken his leaue at the Court, departed through Holborne towardees Ireland, as lieutenant there, souldiers out of diuers shires were sent before him, and also after him in this moneth of February, namely the Citizens of London at their owne charges furnished and sent three hundred at that time into Ireland. *Charles Blunt L. Mountjoy departed towardees Ireland lieutenant there.*

The 23. of March being Easter day it snowed and was extream cold, and so continued till the last of March. *1600*

It snowed on the 30. of March, and on the 4. of Aprill, which whole moneth following, with also the moneth of May was cold and drie, with frosts enerie morning, except some three daies little raine, which coldnes of the spring, and drynesse of the ground, made men doubtfull of any good haruest to succede, whereupon, and by meanes of some late transporting over the seas, procured by

by the Justices of the shires, but more by unconscionable farmers hoarding up their coine, badgers, and other coine-mongers, keeping the same from the markets, or extorting that price they listed, even upon a sodaine, namely, wheate was raised from three shillings to five, seven and eight shillings the bushell, still increasing their price. Untill the Quænes most excellent Maie<sup>tie</sup>, perceiving how bitter a thing the scarcitie of victuals is to the poorer sort of her people, published by proclamation that her Maie<sup>ties</sup> had, not onely recommended precisely to her counsell and other principall ministers, that all manner of graine might bee kept within the Realme, but likewise directed them to punish such ingrocers, and foreshallers of coine as by greedinesse laboured to racke things up to vnrasonable prices, &c. since the which time the price of graine, hath highly fallen, as bring in hurters hands.

Looke the pro-  
clamation.

Souldiers sent  
to Ireland.

In the moneth of July, two fiftiēnes were granted, and collected by the Citizens of London, toward the furniture, and setting out of 300. souldiers into Ireland. Also out of diuers shires souldiers were likewise furnished, and sent.

This yere in the moneth of Aprill, Richard lord bishop of London, with two other Commissioners, to witte, doctor Parkins, and doctor Swale, were sent in Embassage to Emden, there to treat with the Commissioners from the king of Denmarke. Those returned into England the eight of July next following. In which service the said Reverend father so wisely, bountifullie, and honorably carried himselfe, that her Maie<sup>ties</sup>, verie gratioudly accepted his proceedings.

Doctor Ban-  
craffe Lord of  
London retur-  
ned from Em-  
den.  
Conspiracy a-  
gainst the king  
of Scots.

Tuesday the fift of August, Charles James king of Scots in Scotland escaped a strange and strong conspiracie, practised by the Earle Gowry and his brother, as at large appeared in a booke thereof extant, first published and printed in Scotland, and since in England.

Meanes for  
an intreaty of  
peace to be had.

A Peace beeing concluded at Aersin in France, in the yere 1598. betwæne Henry the fourth king of France and Navarre, and Philip the second king of Spaine: the Quænes Maie<sup>ties</sup> of England was likewise invited by the French king, her Confederate and Allie, to dispose her selfe vnto a like treaty of Amittie with Spaine. To the effecting whereof, he had procured the consent of the king of Spaine then living. After whose decease, Philip the 3. succeeding his father in the Crowne, the same was againe renewed and solicited by Andreas of Austria the Gouvernour of the low Countreies, and the Bishop of Constance, both for the house of Burgundy and kingdome of Spaine, afterwards ratified by the Archduke Albert returned out of Spaine with the Infanta his wife. Upon which former promise made vnto her maie<sup>ties</sup>, there was at length induced, to condescend vnto a treatie of peace at Bologne in France, a place chosen by mutuall agrément on either side, with the assent and good liking of the French king: whither both Princes sent their embassadours, furnished with ample power and authoritie in that behalfe, where the English Embassadours arrived the sixteenth day of May, in this present yere of our Lord God 1600. being the date prestred for this assembly, and the Spanishe the twentieth of the same moneth. The Commissioners on the



the English side were these: sir Henry Neuill knight, her Maiesties ordinary Embassadoꝝ resident with the French king, John Harbert esquire, her maiesties second secretarie of Estate, Robert Beale esquire, her maiesties secretarie in the North parte, and Thomas Edmonds esquire, her maiesties secretarie for the French tong. The Commissioners for Spaine were Baltazar de Caniga & Fonseca, Embassadoꝝ resident for the king of Spaine, with the Archduke of Austria in the lowe Countries, and Ferdinando Carrillo Doctor of the Ciuill lawe: vnto whom were adioyned on the Archdukes part John Richardoꝝ president of the Councell of the saide Archduke, and Lewis Verreyken the saide Archdukes Audencer. The Commissioners on both sides being viewed and considered of, some question for the precedence and superiority of place fell into disputation and debate, her maiestie chalenging the same as due vnto her before the time of the Emperoz Charles (as appeareth by Volateran) in the time of king Henrie the seventh her Highnesse grandfather, when this selfesame difference betwene both these crownes comming into question, the Pope preferred England, and adiudged vnto this crowne the most honorable place. But for as much as the same was contradicted by the Spanish Commissioners, who not onely refused to yald preescancie vnto her maiestie, but also to admit of an equalitie, or of anie other indifferent and middle course, whereby the honor of her maiestie might be preferred: the present treatie (which hitherto was performed only by some private visitations and conferences of some one or two of the Commissioners on either side, without comming to anie generall meeting or colloquie) was on the second day of August in the yere aforesaid for this time belaid, and by mutual assent of the Commissioners on both sides, according to their seuerall authorities respectiuelly granted vnto them in this behalfe, suspended, vntill the ende of fiftie daies following, in which meane while it might be vnderstande what should be the determination of both Princes for a further proceeding in the saide Colloquie of peace, at some other time, and place: wherein as yet no certaine resolution hath bene hitherto taken.

Commissioners sent out to treat of a peace to be concluded.

Our commissioners for peace returned out of France.

Embassadoꝝ from Morocco and Barbary.

About the 8. of August, arrived at Dover, certaine Embassadoꝝ and assistants, firste in number, sent from the king of Marocco, in Barbary; these were by certaine English Gentlemen conducted to Grauesend, and from thence, by sir Thomas Gerard knight marshall, and other gentlemen, with the Barbarie merchants towards London, where they were landed at the Tower wharffe on the 15. of August, from whence they were conveyed in foure Coaches to the Royall Exchange, and there lodged in the house of Anthonie Radcliffe esquire, of London merchant tayloꝝ.

The 20. of August they rode in Coaches through Cheape, to Westminster, from thence by water ouer to Lambhith, and thence again in Coaches to the Court at Honesuch, where they were honorably entertained, and returned the same night to their lodging at London.

The 10. of September, the saide Embassadoꝝ of Barbary were againe continued to the Court then at Watlands, there to take their leaue of her maiestie, but were required to staie to see the Iusting and other triumphes at Westminster.

Westminster on the seventeenth of November.

Souldiers sent  
to Ireland.

In the moneth of September souldiers press, in, and about the Citie of London, to the number of three hundred and fiftie masterlesse men, vagrant persons: and such like out of other partes of this realme to be sent into Ireland: Divers of them running from their Captaines and Colours, being afterward taken, were hanged for example to other.

Ambassadors  
from Rowia  
and Muscouia.

The 18. of September, certaine Ambassadors from Muscouie, or Rowia, landing at the Tower wharffe, were there receiued by the Aldermen of London in scarlet, the Muscouie merchants, and a number about two hundred) of the principall companies, in velvet coates, and chaines of golde, all well mounted on horsebacke, conueied them riding in eight Coaches, from the Tower vp to Aldgate, from thence to the Leaden hall, downe Grace Stréte, by Frenchurch Stréte, and then downe Rode lane towards Welings gate, and there lodged in the house sometime pertaining to Sir Cuthbert Bucklegham.

The 14. of October the said Ambassadors from Rowia and Muscouia, rode to the Court and had audience before hir maiestie.

Trinitie hospitall  
in Croydon  
founded.

This yere the most reuerende father Iohn Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury, did finish that notable & memorable monument of our time, to wit, his hospitall of the holy Trinitie in Croydon, in the County of Surrey, by him there founded and builded of stone and bricke, for reliefe and sustentation of certaine poore people. As also a faire scholl house for the encrease of literature, together with a large dwelling house for the scholl master his vse, and these premises he hath through Gods favorable assistance in his own life time performed and persited, for that (as my selfe haue heard him say) he woulde not be to his executors, a cause of their damnation, remembreing the good advice that an ancient father hath left written to all posteritie: *Tutor via est, ut bonum quod quisquis post mortem sperat agi per alios, agat dum vivit ipse, per se*: It is a way farre more safe for a man to doe good and charitable deedes by himselfe whilest he liueth: then to hope that others will doe the same for him after his death.

Gregorie.

On Thursdaie the thirteenth of November, her Maiestie being most honourable attended on, by the most honourable Prelates, and Nobles, and Judges of the Realme, was receiued nere vnto Chelsep, by the Lord Mayor of London, with his brethren the Aldermen all in scarlet, besides to the number of five hundred Citizens, in Coates of velvet, and chaines of gold, on horsebacke, euerie of them hauing two staffe to ches to attende on them: And they all waited on her, to her royall Pallace at Westminster.

An. reg. 43.

The 17. of November, and the 43. yere of hir maiesties raigne, there were most princely Iusts performed at White hal in honoz of the quéens holyday, by three earles, foure lords, seven knights, and nine gentlemen, hir maiesties pensioners. At these iusts was so great an assembly of people, as the like hath not bin seen in that place before: There were also present sundry ambassadors, as namely from the French king, the king of Barbary and Fez, & the emperor of Russia. There was no great harme that hapned (thanked be God) considering the multitude; but that one arme or branch of a great Elm broke, which

stood

stood in the parke, by being ouer laden with people; and from whence there fell thre men, that were soze bzused and dangerously hurt.

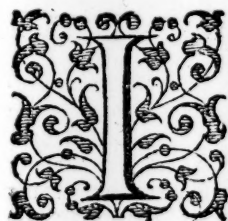
Thus good Reader, I haue brought these my Annales of England (nowe latelie enlarged with notes of antiquitie, not before published in our Vulgare) from the first comming of Bruce into this Island (of whome it is saide it tooke the name of Britaine) vntill this present yeere of Christ 1600. and the 43. of the most happie raigne of our soueraigne Ladie Elizabeth, whose Partitie, I praye God long and manie yeeres to prosper, and ratigne ouer vs, to his glorie.

*The seauen ages of the World.*

<b>T</b> HE first age from the creation of <i>Adam</i> to the flood of <i>Noe</i> , which continued yeeres,	1659
2 The second from <i>Noe</i> to <i>Abraham</i> ,	292
3 The thirde from the birth of <i>Abraham</i> till the departing of <i>Israel</i> out of Aegypt.	503
4 The fourth from the departing of <i>Israel</i> out of Aegypt, till the building of the Temple.	482
5 The fift from the building of the Temple, till the captiuitie of Babilon.	414
6 The sixt from the captiuitie of Babilon, till the birth of our Sauour Iesus Christ.	614
7 The seauenth beginning at the byrth of our Sauour Iesus Christ, hath continued till this present yeare of our Lord 1592. and shall last to the worlds end.	
¶ The age of the VVorld at the byrth of our Sauour Christ, was 3962.	
The age of the VVorld this present yeare of our Lord, 1600. is 5562.	

¶ Of the Vniuersities in England, and Colledges

in the same, with the founders, and principall benefactors.

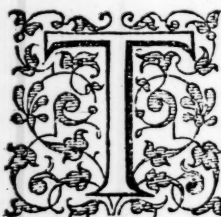


I haue before time reioiced (saith Erasmus Roterdam) that Englande was so well furnished with so manie men of excellent learning, but now I begin to enuie her felicitie, for that shee so flourisheth with all kinde of literature, that by taking the commendation thereof from other Regions, she doth as it were markehouliie obscure them. And yet this commendation is not as now first due to England, in the which (it is well knowne) haue bene of long time, men of great learning. The Vniuersities prooue this to be true. which haue for their antiquities and worthines, contended with the most auncient, and moost vniuersities in the world.

Colledges.

Colledges and Hals in the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, to  
the number of 21. indowed with lands and possessions for maintenance of  
*Students in all manner of Sciences, first he accounted according*  
to the time of their beginnings, although at this day by the  
altering of foundations they are but 16. left.

The common  
Schooles.



The common Schooles of the Vniuersitie haue bene of such auncient continuance, as there is no certaine mention how or when they began. But the faire new building which now standeth foure square, like vnto the fashion of a Colledge, was made by successe of times vpon the costs of the Vniuersitie, and diuers benefactors in order as hereafter followeth.

First, the Philosophie Schoole aboue and beneath, sometime called the Schoole of Canon lawe (that is to saie, the West side of the same quadrant) was builded at the charges of the Vniuersitie, and other good benefactors, since the yere of our Lord God, 1136. The Schoole of Diuinitie, and ouer that the newe Chappell (that is to say, the North side) was begun by the Vniuersitie vpon contributions and collections of sundrie persons. But the same was finished in the yere of Christ, 1400. by the erectours of Sir William Thorpe Knight, sometime chiefe Justice of Englande. The Schoole of Art, and ouer that the olde Librarie (that is to saie, the South side) was made by the Vniuersitie of the ruines of the olde Schooles. The gate of the same Schooles, with the walkes on each side thereof, and the newe Librarie (that is to saie, all the East side) was builded at the costs of Thomas Rotherham Archbyschop of Yorke, with some contribution of the Vniuersitie in the yere of Christ, 1470. And in the yere, 1476. was perfected, as now it standeth.

**Peter colledge.** Saint Peters Colledge, commonly called Peter House, was founded in the time of King Henry the third, by Hugh Balsham prior of Ely, in the yere of Christ 1256. This was after enlarged in the time of King Edward the second, by master Robert Lyrling, who gaue a house with the appurtenances, wherein sometime dwelled the religious men called *Frates de sacco* or *de penitencia Iesu Christi*. Likewise another house was giuen by Ryherus de Aylesham and Iohn of Felmingham. But the indowment was giuen by the saide Hugh Balsham, who was after the 15. bishop of Ely, and finished the Colledge in Anno 1284.

**Michael house.** The Colledge or house of Saint Michael, was founded by Herueus or Herueus de Stanton, sometime Chancellor of the Erchequer, and a canon of Yorke and Wells, who obtained licence of King Edward the seconds in the seuententh yere of his raigne, to erect the same Colledge for a certaine number of Schollers and Chaplaines, to be governed by a master according to his owne ordinaunces and rules: granting farther by the same licence to the saide Herueus, power to vnite vnto his Colledge the aduowson of Saint Michaels church in Cambridge, which was after moze largely indowed with lands and rents,



rents, as well by him as by diuers other good benefactors of latter time. At this day it is taken into Trinitie Colledge founded by King H. the eight.

The Uniuersitie Hall or Colledge was founded by the Chancelor and masters of the Uniuersitie of Cambridge, in the yere 1326. And the 19. yere of King Edward the second (master Richard Badew being then Chancelor) by on a ground, whereupon stood two houses belonging of old time to the saide Chancelor and Uniuersitie in Milnestrate. King Edward the third in the 20. yere of his raigne, gaue licence of Mortmaine to the master and schollers of the saide new erected Colledge, to take lands and tenements to the yereley value of forty pounds for ever, for their maintenance in study, at the request of the Chancelor and masters of the said Uniuersitie. Since that it was much increased by master Walker Thacksted master of the same Colledge. But now it is united into the foundation of the lady Elizabeth de Burgo countesse of Clare.

Uniwersity  
Hall.

The Kings Hall or Colledge had his first originall of King Edward the second, who of his owne deuotion maintained there for a time 32. schollers, in studie of learning and knowledge, who for certaine yeres after were payde their salaries or stipends, sometime by the sheriffe of Cambridge, sometime by the prior and couent of Saint Neotes or Needes, and sometime out of the Erchequer. But King Edward the third by his charter dated the seueneth daie of October, in the 11. yere of his raigne, erected there a Colledge in the honor of God and his blessed mother S. Mary the virgin, and all holy Saints, for a master and 32. schollers, calling it by the name of the Kings Hall. The ground whereof he purchased of master Robert Croiland, and after indowed it with lands and possessions, which so continued a Colledge till the time of King H. the 8. who united the same to his new foundation of Trinitie colledge.

Kings Hall.

Clare Hall was founded by the lady Elizabeth de Burgo widow, sometime the wife of John de Burgo Earle of Ulster in Ireland, daughter of sir Gilbert of Clare Earle of Gloucester, and one of the heires of sir Gilbert of Clare her brother the last Earle of Gloucester, she was first married to John Burgh earle of Ulster in Ireland, after to Theobald of Clerdon, and thirdly to sir Roger Damary, and had issue by them all, she taking into her foundation the forenamed Uniuersitie Hall by the resignation of master Walter Thacksted master of the saide house, and the consent of master Richard Badew the first founder, called it all vnder the name of Clare Hall: and became the only founder thereof in the time of King Edward the third, about the yere of our Lord 1347.

Clare Hall.

Pembroke Hall was founded by the lady Mary of Valentia Countesse of Pembroke, wife of Audomare de Valentia earle of Pembroke, and daughter of Guido Earle of Saint Paule in France, she obtained licence of King Edward the third (whose cosen she was) to founde this Colledge of a master and thirtie schollers or moe, at her pleasure: And to assigne them for their habitation a place in Cambridge of her owne inheritance, with thre other messuages which she purchased, and 100. l. of yeerlie rent in aduowsons of churches for ever, and called it Aula de Valence Maria, Anno 1347.

Pembroke Hall

Corpus Christi  
Colledge.

The Colledge of *Corpus Christi* & our blessed lady, commonly called *Bennet Colledge*, was founded by the alderman and brethren of *Corpus Christi* guild, and the brethren of our Lady guild in Cambridge, at the instance of the first Henry Duke of Lancaster, who in the 26. yeere of king Edward the third, obtained a licence of *Portmain* for the said alderman and brethren, that upon a messuage to them belonging in Cambridge, they might erect this colledge for schollers, chaplaines, and others, to be gouerned by a master, according to their rules and ordinances. By the same licence was also appropriated into the colledge for euer the aduowson of *S. Bennets church* standing before their gate. This duke of Lancaster in the 28. yeere of the said king Edward the third, was elected alderman of the same guildes, who recognised the statutes of the colledge not by the dukes seale, but by the seale of the alderman of those guildes.

Trinity Hall.

*Trinity Hall* was of olde time an hostell or house of studie. And in the time of king Edward the thirde, John Cranden prior of *Ely* and his count procured the same hostell for their monks to studie in. To this house were added three other dwelling houses by master Richard Ling Chancelor of the *Uniuerstie*, and Archibald of *Norwich*, master Walter Elueden, and master Simon Rekinghale parson of *Kollesby*, either of them one house. And in the 28. yeeres of the reigne of king Edward the thirde, master Robert Stratton, John Trunch, Walter Bakton, Walter de Aldeby, and Peter de Bitterings, gaue toward the enlargement thereof one messuage and seuen pieces of void ground. And likewise the said Walter Bakton, and Peter Bitterings, and Thomas Walsingham, gaue one other messuage called *Draxes entrie*. All which being thus laid together, were after purchased by master William Bateman bishop of *Norwich*, who by the kings licence builded thereon the Colledge, as now for the most part it standeth, in the worship of the holy *Trinity*, and indowd it with lands and possessions, and became founder thereof, though since it hath bene increased by diuers good benefactors: hee deceased at *Autun* in *France* (where he was sent on the kings message) the first day of *Januarie*, in the 11. yeere of his consecration, and of our Lord God 1354.

Gonville Hall.

*Gonville Hall* was founded by Edmond *Gonville* parson of *Terlington* in *Norfolk*, in the two and twentieth yeere of king Edward the third, who for that purpose obtained a licence at the suite of sir Gualter de Manney, to erect a colledge for a master and twentie schollers, to be students in the art of *Logicke* and other sciences, upon a ground where sometimes stode three houses and a garden in *Lutbotow lane*, which he purchased for his money. And in the 26. yeere of the same king, the rowne of that colledge was enlarged by the gift of two other houses, the one by the Chancelor and masters of the *Uniuerstie*, and the other by the master and brethren of *Saint Johns hospitall* in *Cambridge*. This Edmond *Gonville* at his decease having a good summe of money, commended the further finishing of the same colledge to master William Bateman bishop of *Norwich*, which he performed both in the buildings and indowment with lands, and caused it to be named *Gonville Hall*. At this day it is vnitied into the colledge of *doctor Caius*, and called by the name of *Gonville and Caius colledge*.

The

The Colledge of Gods-house was first founded by master William Bingham parson of Saint Iohn Zacharie in London, vpon a tenement and thre garden plats in Milnestrate, which he bought for his money, and procured licence of king Henry the first, in the twentieth yere of his raigne, to erect the re- on his said colledge for 25. persons and a prouost, to be geuernd by such rules and statutes, as should be assigned vnto them by the said William Bingham, and by William Wimbell, William Millington, and William Gull doctors of diuinitie, and Iohn Tilney doctor of Law, and the longest liuer of thent. This colledge was chiefly erected for such as should professe the study of Grammar, whereof (as it seemeth) there was great want in those daies, not only in both the vniuersities, but also throughout the realme. In few yeres after k. Henry being determined to found his great Colledge of our Lady and S. Nicholas, obtained of the saide William Bingham a resignation of that house and ground for his said new colledge, and in stee thereof gaue vnto him two other places in the Preachers strete, belonging sometime the one of them to the abbot of Miltie, and the other to the priorelle of Deny, therewith he also granted a licence of Portmaine for one hundred pound by yere towards their maintenance for ever. But shortly after the said William Bingham in the yere 1447. resigned vnto the said king Henry the foresaid colledge, to the intent that hee should be accounted the onely founder thereof as he was indebe. But now it is annexed to Christs colledge founded by the lady Margaret countesse of Richmond and Darby.

The Kings Colledge of our blessed ladie and Saint Nicholas was first founded by king Henry the first, vnder the name of a Rector and schollers, in the nineteenth yere of his raigne. And after in the one and twentieth yere of his raigne, he translated the forme of that foundation into the name of prouost and schollers. Edward the fourth in displeasure withowen from this Colledge so much land as the founder had giuen them, and after restored them to the yeerly valew of five hundred markes. After that king Henry the seventh finished the same worke of that notable chappell begun by king Henry the first, and king Henry the eight finished the glasing, stalles, and pavement of fine Marble. This colledge was ment by king Henry the first, to haue bene one of the beautifullst houses in this land, the plat whereof is more particularly set out in this my Annales.

The Colledge of Saint Margaret and Saint Bernard, commonlie called *Queenes Colledge*, was first begun by Quene Margaret wife to king Henry the first, and daughter of Reyner king of Sicillie and Jerusalem, who procured Portmaine for the same of 100. pound by yere, in anno 1441. at the intercession of master Andrew Duckett, parson of Saint Buttolphes in Cambidge, sometime principall of Bernard Hostel, which Hostel he purchased and gaue to the said colledge. And by his owne money and helpe of others, purchased certaine other tenements and builded the colledge, being the first president of the same: and gaue as well in his life time, as by his testament, diuers summes of money and parcels of land: procuring likewise certaine giftes of George Duke of Clarence, of Cicely Dutches of Poike, of Richard

duke of Glocester, and Anne dutchesse of the same, of Edward earle of Salisburie, of Maude countesse of Arford, and Marmaduke Lomelie bishop of Lincoln, sometime Chancelor of the Vniuersitie. But the creation of this foundation goeth now in the name of king Henry the first, as appeareth by his charter dated the third day of December in the 25. yere of his raigne, who made the same vpon his owne ground, where now it standeth in Milne streete, for one president and foure fellowes or mo, as their liuelode should extend, according to such rules and statutes as should be deuised by Ma<sup>r</sup>. Iohn Somerset, chancelor of the Erchequer, Iohn Langton chancelor of the Vniuersitie, Richard Cawdreie, Peter Hirford, Gilbert Northington, and Thomas Bolyn, and by the longest liuers of them. After all which, queene Elizabeth the wife of king E. the 4. made perfect the defectes of that Colledge, in the yere 1465. King Richard the 3. endowd this colledge, with 500. markes the yere lands.

Katherine Hal.

Katherine Hall was founded by Ma<sup>r</sup>. Robert Woodlarke docto<sup>r</sup> of Divinity, chancelor of the Vniuersitie, and prouost of the kings Colledge, to the honor of our blessed Ladie and S. Katherine, the virgin and marty<sup>r</sup>, in the time of E. Edward the 4. about the yere of Christ, 1475. for the number of one Ma<sup>s</sup>ter and three fellowes or mo, vpon a certaine messuage in Milne streete, by him purchased, wherewith he also obtained of the said king a licence of mortmaine for 40. markes of yereley rent towards their maintenance for euer. Since it is enlarged by other good benefactors.

Jesus colledge.

Jesus Colledge was of old time a Monasterie of religious women of S. Kadegund, which monasterie being destitute of government, the edifices fallen in decaye, the gods and ornaments of the church wasted, the lands diminished, and in conclusion a small number of nunnes left, being but two, whereof the one ready to depart, and the other an infant, were brought into such povertrie, that they were not able to relieue themselves, and therefore forced to depart and leaue the house desolate: whereupon Iohn Alcocke bishop of Elye, obtained licence of king Henry the 7. in the yere 1497. to found in place thereof a Colledge to the honor of the holy Trinitie, and our blessed Ladie, and S. Iohn the Euangelist, and S. Kadegund the virgin, for the number of one maister, sixe fellowes, and a certaine number of schollers, to be gouerned by such rules and statutes as he should appoint vnto them.

This Iohn Alcocke was bozne at Beuerley in Yorkshire, and builded a free schole at Rinkstone vpon Hull, and a chappell on the southside of the parish church wherein his parents were buried: He builded likewise a most beautifull monument in the great church of Elye, where himselfe lieth buried, and did in his time so many and so good actes, as would require a long treatise to set them forth. The rents of this Colledge, and the number of fellowes and schollers haue been moze amplified at seuerall times by sir Robert Reade knight, chiefe Justice of the common Pleas, docto<sup>r</sup> Eleston, docto<sup>r</sup> Royson, and docto<sup>r</sup> Fuller.

Christs Colledge.

Christs Colledge was first begun by King Henry the first, and after his decease by the ladie Margaret Countesse of Richmond and Derby, daughter and heire of Iohn Duke of Somerset, and mother of king Henry the seventh,



in the place where sometime the Colledge of Gods-house stode in the Wyre, chers street, which colledge was first founded by William Bingham parson of Saint John Sabary in London and other, but because it came neuer to perfection, she obtained of the said King her sonne his charter dated the first day of Maye in the 20. yere of his raigne, and the yere of our Lord God 1505. to increase the number of students there, translating it according to her disposition, so that from thenceforth it should be called Christs Colledge, where in she allowed by her Will to the number of 60. persons, with servants to them convenient and necessary. The Abbey of Creeke being dissolved the lands were given to that colledge.

A master, six  
schollers, twelve  
and 47.  
schollers dis-  
pens.

Saint Johns Colledge was of ancient time an Hospitall of regular chanoons, founded by Nigellus the second bishop of Ely, and treasurer to King Henry the first, in the yere of Christ 1134. After him many yeres Hugh Balsham, alias Norwold bishop of Ely, obtained licence of King Edward the first in the yere 1280. to translate the order of that house, and placed therein a certain number of schollers, to cohabite among the religious persons, assigning to each part their portions by their owne consents, aswell of the landes as the goods: so that alwaies y<sup>e</sup> more people of ancient time there relieved, should not be defrauded of their accustomed charitie.

Saint Johns  
Colledge.

The noble ladie Margaret countesse of Richmond and Derby, being informed, that the number of religious brethren was greatly diminished, and now brought but to two, the house decayed, and the lands and goods wasted, procured licence of her nephew King Henry the 8. to erect in the same place a Colledge in the worship of S. John the Euangelist, but she being prevented by death, left the execution thereof to her executors, Richard Foxe Bishop of Winchester, John Fisher Bishop of Rochester, Charles Somerset lord Herbert, afterward created Earle of Worcester, Sir Thomas Louell, Sir Henry Marney, and Sir John S. John Knights, Henry Horneby, and Hugh Ashton clerkes, who with her goods finished the buildinges, and with the remaine of the lands that was in the house before, amplified with her owne landes, founded the said Colledge for a master and fifty schollers, in the yere 1509.

Magdalen Colledge was first an Hostell or Hall, inhabited by diuers monks of sundry monasteries (and therefore of old called Ponks Colledge) being sent from their abbeies to the Vniuersity for to study.

Magdalen  
Colledge.

Edward Duke of Buckingham had an intention to bestowe great cost in the building thereof, who builded by the hall in the yere of Christ 1519. whereupon it was for a time called Buckingham Colledge.

But these buildinges being left by the duke vnperfect, were after brought to some better passe by the prior of Ely, and the abbots of Ramsey, and Walden, and so continued a place of study for the monks till the generall suppression of monasteries made by King Henry the 8.

At length the Lord Thomas Audeley Baron of Walden, and Chancelloz of England, founded there a colledge vnder the name of S. Mary Magdalen, and indowd it with possessions, in the yere of our Lorde 1542. But being prevented by death, so that what he had begun, he left vnfinished, Sir Chri-

stophor Wray Lord chief Justice of England repaired and beautified it.

Trinitie Col-  
ledge.

Trinitie colledge was founded by King Henry the eight, in the yere of Christ 1546. This colledge was erected in the plat where sometime Edward the thirde builded his colledge called the Kings hall, therunto was also ioyned one other colledge called Michaell house, founded by Hericus de Stanton in the time of King Edward the second. And yet a thirde house called Whistwicke Hostell: All which thre houses the King tooke into his newe colledge, with the possessions and buildings to the same belonging, and called it by the name of Trinitie colledge. The possessions thereof were greatly enlarged by the gift of Quene Mary. Shee gaue thre hundred thirtie eight pounce lands by yere: in whose time the saide chappell of that colledge was also builded about the yere of Christ 1557.

Begun but not  
finished.

Gonville and  
Caius colledge

Gonville and Caius colledge was first begun by Edmond Gonville, as before is said. John Caius Doctor in Physicke sometime fellowe and lately master of the saide colledge, hath enlarged that house, and now made a seconde foundation thereof, with giuing certaine manors and landes to the same, in the yere 1557. and calling it by the name of Gonville and Caius colledge.

Emanuel Col-  
ledge.

Emanuel colledge was founded by Sir VValter Myldmay Knight, chamberlour and vnder treasurer of the Exchequer, and one of the Princes counsell to our Soueraigne Lady Quene Elizabeth, about the yere of our Lord 1584. vpon the house and grounds of the late frier preachers, or Dominick friers, in the preachers strete.

And thus far of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, with the Colledges and Halles in the same.

## ¶ The Vniuersitie of Oxford was instituted by King

Alfred a Saxon, after the birth of Christ 873. yeeres:

*And bath Colledges.*

Uniuersity  
Colledge.



Uniuersitie Colledge (as some haue written) was founded in the time of K. Alfred, by sir William Archdeacon of Duresme, in the yere 873: but in a booke intituled, the acts of the bishops of Derham, I find that the said Colledge was builded by William bishop of Derham, in the 12. yere of the reigne of William the Conqueror, to wit, in anno 1081.

The Vniuersitie Church, alias S. Marie Church, was begun to be reedified in the time of doctor Fitz-James after bishop of London: he procured much moncy towards the building of it. The battlements of it were full of Minnacles, but by tempest were most of them throught downe in one night.

Bailiol colledge

Bailiol Colledge was founded in the time of Edward the first, by Iohn Bailiol, father to Iohn Bailiol King of Scotland, in the yere of Christ 1263.

Berton col-  
ledge.

Berton Colledge was founded in the time of Henry the third by Walter Merton, sometime chanon of Bailes, and also of Salisbury, at a Towne by Boneluch called Maldon in Surrey, in anno 1264. and after in Edward the first time, he being bishop of Rochester, translated the same to Oxford in the yere

père 1274. This Walter Merton deceased in anno 1277.

Excester colledge was founded in the time of Edward the second, by Walter Stapleton bishop of Excester, 1316. Excester Colledge.

And augmented in the time of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth, by Sir William Peter knight, in the père of Christ 1566.

Diall colledge was founded in the time of Edward the second, by Sir Adam Browne Almoner of the saide king, the recorde calleth king Edward the second founder, the père of Christ 1323. Diall colledge.

Queenes colledge was founded in the time of Edward the thirde, by Robert Eglisfield, in his owne grounde, and by him called the Queenes Hall: hee was chapleine to the Lady Philip, wife to the same Edward, the père of Christ 1340. Queenes Colledge.

Peto colledge was founded in the time of king Richard the second, by William Wickham bishop of Winchester, in the père of Christ 1379. Peto colledge.

He also founded a colledge in the cite of Winchester, by the like name of Peto colledge, in anno 1389. Wincolne Colledge.

Lincolne colledge was founded in the time of Henry the first, by Richard Fleming bishop of Lincolne 1430. and augmented in Richard the thirde time, by Thomas Rotheram bishop of Lincolne, in the père 1479.

Aloules colledge was founded in the time of king Henry the first, by Henry Chicheley archbishop of Canterbury, in the père 1437. King Henry the 6. gaue to it foure Priories alias, to wit, Alberbert in Salope, Runney in Kent, Langenith in South Wales, Wleden Pinkney in Portsmouthshire: And therefore the foundation of this colledge was giuen to him, as appeareth by the chartar, recorded in the Towre. Hee also founded Bernard colledge in Oxford, since suppressed by king Henry the eight, and now redified by Sir Thomas White, and by him called Saint Iohns colledge. Pope hee founded a colledge at Higham feris. with almes houses there.

Trinity Schoole was founded in the time of king Henry the first, by Humphrey duke of Gloucester: he gaue 129 booke to the library 1447. Trinity Schoole.

Wigdale colledge was founded in the time of king Henry the first, by William Wainfler bishop of Winchester 1459. He builded a good part of Eaton colledge, begunne by Henry the first: he builded a free-schoole at Wainfler in Lincolnshire, seuen miles from Alford toward Boston. Wigdale Colledge.

Wase-nose Colledge was founded in the raigine of king Henry the seuenth by VWilliam Smith Bishop of Lincolne, who deceased in the père 1513. Wase-nose colledge.

The same VWilliam Smith sometime Bishoppe of Lichfelde, ordained an hospitall there for poore folkes, and a Grammar Schoole for poore folkes children. Also at Farnthwoorth, where he and his parentes had their original, he bestowed ten pounde the yeere for ever, to one that shoulde teach a Grammar Schoole.

Corpus Christi colledge was founded in the raigine of Henry the seauenth, by Richard Fox bishop of Winchester, himselfe being a fellow in Pembroke hall in Cambridge: he endowed the same colledge with 110, l. 8. s. 11. d. of p'retely rent for ever 1516. Corpus Christi Colledge.

Chilts church.

Chilts church was founded in the time of Henry the 8. by T. Wolsey cardinal, and archbishop of Yorke, in the yere of Christ 1539.

And finished by the same king Henry the 8. in the yere 1546.

Canterbury Colledge.

Canterbury colledge in Orford founded by Simon Islip Archbyshoppe of Canterbury, in the yere of Christ 1353. and latelie suppressed by Henry the eight, in the 31. of his raigne, and was ioined to Chilts church in Orford.

Trinitie Colledge.

Trinitie colledge, was founded and so named in the raigne of quene Mary, by sir Thomas Pope knight, in anno 1556.

Durham Colledge.

Which colledge was first founded in the time of king Edward the thirde, by Thomas Hatfield Byschop of Durham, and by him named Durham colledge, for eight Monkes and seauen clerkes, admitted by the Byschop of Durham, there to studie, anno 1370.

Robert Walwoorthe Byschop of Durham endowd it with thre boulaters of land, &c. In Haddington and Claxton, with the aduowson of the church of Haddington: which colledge at the suppression by king Henry the eight, might dispend in land as the same was then praised by the visitors 115. ponde, 4. shillings 4. pence.

Saint Johns Colledge.

Saint Johns colledge was founded, and so named, in the time of Quene Mary, by Sir Thomas White Merchant Taylor, anno 1557. Which colledge sometime called Barnard colledge, founded by Henry Chicheley Archbyshop of Canterbury, beeing amongst other suppressed in the raigne of king Henry the eight, and greatlie ruinated; the same Sir Thomas White purchased, and after bestowed large sommes of money in building thereof, and did late the same colledge in verie good lande, nere to the Vniuersitie of Orford, to the yerelie value of 500. ponde, which he purchased with his mony, and hath left order to make it dispend 600. pound the yere.

Barnard Colledge.

In the Vniuersities of England (saith Erasmus Roterodame) there be certayne colledges, in the which there is so much Religion, so streight discipline, in such integritie of life, that if you did see it, you woulde negle in comparison of them, all monkish rules and orders.

All the cities in England, manie Market Townes, and villages, haue free Grammar Schooles erected in them for the further increase of learning and vertue. Vertuous men haue to the perpetuall registering of their good names done these good dedes, learned men haue not bene all the doers. Some therefore for the supplie in other, of that which wanted in themselves, haue done wisely, all to this purpose: that vertue and learning vntied and knitte together, might in this our age make a learned vertuous worlde, haue done goodlie. It were much (they are so manie) in a small rounne to comprehend them, but the chiefe and worthy patrones of the rest are,

Eaton Schole,

Westminster of new,

Winchester,

Paules Schole in London,

Saint Anthonies in London.

Merchant Taylors Schole.

Henry the first 1443.

Quene Elizabeth.

William Wickham B. of Wilt.

John Collet 1510.

By John Tate.

By the Merchant Taylors 1560.

FINIS.



